Divine Principle
In Plain Language

ALSO BY JON QUINN

True Values

12 Before 40:
The Case for Large Families in the Unification Movement

You can read the entire text of these books at my website:

www.DivinePrinciple.com

Divine Principle In Plain Language

The Basic Theology of Sun Myung Moon

by Jon Quinn

Divine Principle In Plain Language: The Basic Theology of Sun Myung Moon

Creative Commons Copyright August 2008 by Jon Quinn and sons

http://creativecommons.org

PRINTING HISTORY
First Printing, May 2002
Twenty-ninth Printing revised March 28, 2019

ISBN 0-9753164-4-3

Published by: Principled Publications
Cover Photo: photos.com

www.DivinePrinciple.com
See website for e-mail address

Printed in the United States of America

My books may be available at special quantity discounts for bulk purchases. If interested, email me. See website for e-mail address

You can read the entire text of this book at my website:

www.DivinePrinciple.com

I hope I inspire you to read Sun Myung Moon's words. In his 60 years of ministry he gave thousands and thousands of speeches. I have quotes in this book from his speeches but what I quote comes to a tiny fraction of his words. I hope the quotes I give will intrigue and motivate you to read him in length. I got most of my quotes from two elders in the Unification Movement who have posted many speeches of Sun Myung Moon. Their websites have been online since the Internet started. Please go to their websites and check out the speeches. Damian Anderson's site is www.unification.net and Gary Fleisher's site is www.Tparents.org. There are also other sites that post his speeches that you may find.

I support Hyung Jin Sean Moon's new Unification Movement called World Peace and Unification Sanctuary or Sanctuary for short. In 2015 he announced he was the rightful successor of his Father, Sun Myung Moon. He disbanded the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (FFWPU) and fired all of its leaders. He is the true heir to his Father's movement and his Mother, Hak Ja Han, is not. Hyung Jin Sean Moon, the son of Sun Myung Moon, has made it clear that all words, pictures, and videos of his Father are free to everyone. They are all in the public domain. I have a picture of Sun Myung Moon in this book and I quote him extensively. This picture and all of his words are public domain and the FFWPU does not have the right to them. I am also allowed to use the picture of Sun Myung Moon because I am following copyright law by giving "commentary" and therefore I am not required to ask permission from the copyright owner.

The content of this book is exclusively the personal opinion of the author. I am not an official voice for Sanctuary. I have not had any communication with Hyung Jin Sean Moon about what I write at the time of the publishing date of this book. If you feel I have written anything that is unprincipled and not true then feel free to tell me. I appreciate feedback – pro or con.

Life-changing words of Sun Myung Moon

"Our society is the realm of death. Who then shall conquer the realm of death and bring it to life? The only hope lies with the appearance of a true religion and a leader of that religion. This is the only hope for the transformation of society from the realm of death to the realm of life." — "True Parents' Birthday", February 20, 1991

We need a new ideology. … This new ideology will also be capable of unifying all the existing religions and ideologies of the world. Therefore, it has come in the form of a new religious or spiritual movement. The Unification movement has been created by God to fulfill that mission. This spiritual movement must first succeed here in America in order to spread throughout the world. The new ideology which the Unification Movement brings is Godism, an absolutely God-centered ideology. It has the power to awaken America, and it has the power to raise the model of the ideal nation of God upon this land.

With that done, the rest of the world will follow America's example and will build the Kingdom of God upon their respective lands. Then we shall all truly become brothers and sisters under one Father, God. This will be a world of love, a world of happiness. Our planet will be one home, and mankind will be one family. God's will, His long-cherished desire from the beginning of time will finally be fulfilled. This will be the eternal, ideal world of God. Indeed, it will be the Kingdom of God on earth. We will build it with our hands.

This is our supreme mission. It is truly our God-given, sacred mission. God is crying out to the world, and we are His instruments. The world must respond to His call. Listen to God's commandment. Initiate a courageous march towards the Kingdom of God on earth. Whatever the difficulty, let it not stop us. Our march is God's, and it will go on to the end. — "God's Hope for America", June 1, 1976, Yankee Stadium, New York

If you can understand about Tamar, you can understand the whole Principle. (October 13, 1970)

CONTENTS

Preface	1
Introduction	4
Chapter 1 — Principle of Creation	6
Chapter 2 — The Fall of Man	107
Chapter 3 — History of Restoration	148
Chapter 4 — Jesus of Nazareth	212
Chapter 5 — Christian History	359

You can read the entire text of this book at my website:

www.DivinePrinciple.com

Preface

In the Preface to the *Exposition of the Divine Principle* we read that it was written by Hyo Won Eu. It is "his teachings with biblical, historical and scientific illustrations. …The first book was titled *Explanation of the Divine Principle* published in 1957 and later revised and titled *Exposition of the Divine Principle* published in 1966." It was revised again in 1996. They write that it is a "text of Reverend Moon's basic teaching." One of the most prominent theologians in America, Marcus Borg, told my wife that he tried to read the Exposition book but it was, he said, "unreadable."

Sun Myung Moon started his movement in Korea. He sent Young Oon Kim as the first missionary to the United States in 1959. She wrote her version of the *Divine Principle* in English titled *Divine Principle and Its Application*. I met the Unification Church in 1973 and her book helped me understand Father Moon's basic theology. There were only a few hundred members in America then. I first heard the *Divine Principe* in lecture form. Mose Durst was the first person who taught me. He used a blackboard and spoke his own version. Most people who find the teachings of Father Moon hear it by attending a lecture from a follower who speaks his own creative version.

In the 1970s the Unification Theological Seminary published a version of the *Principle* titled *The Divine Principle Home Study Course*. In 1974 Father sent the top Japanese teacher of the *Principle* to America. Ken Sudo gave a workshop that lasted for months that I attended. He taught his version and some used his words when they taught the *Principle*. You can read his version at Tparents.org titled *Divine Principle Lectures from the 120 Day Workshop - Ken Sudo*. After this training session Father sent us out to be proselytizers and lecturers. His hope was that these personalized lectures by his young followers would inspire and make many converts. He gave a goal of the American movement to have 30,000 members by 1981. Tragically in 1981 there were only a few thousand members in America. It has been 40 years since and still there are less than 30,000 members in America.

Soon after I joined I witnessed to people and then taught my version of the *Principle*. I eventually expanded on my lectures and

published my version as this book. I have attended many lectures and have learned from each one. Father believes so much in personalized lectures that he had Tom McDevitt make several hours of videos of the *Principle* in his own words, and Father spent millions of can watch Tom's lectures on YouTube. Father Moon has dollars sending these VHS videos to 300,000 Christian leaders in 2001. You never said that the Exposition book is the only *Divine Principle*. He has always endorsed personalized lectures and books. Father had Kevin McCarthy personally give lectures of the *Divine Principle*. Over a five-year period, he lectured to 7,000 Christian ministers. Kevin has made videos of the *Principle* that you can watch on YouTube.

At Tparents.org you can read *The Divine Principle Study Guide*. The heading for the link to the text says, "The Divine Principle Study Guide - Part 1 - Young Whi Kim - May 1, 1973". In the Preface she writes, "When Master's party visited Japan in 1967, we first introduced the original Divine Principle lecture to Japanese members." I joined in 1973 and remember how we called Father "Master". Soon afterwards we stopped and only called Sun Myung Moon "Father."

She goes on say, "At that time I felt the necessity of writing a study guide of the *Divine Principle* for Japanese members, since some Japanese members told me that they wanted the book. I began to write the text in the Japanese language from July 16th and the book, which had 232 pages, came out on July 31st, after I worked day and night continuously. Since that time, that book has been used as a study guide in Japan, and to some extent, in Korea."

"However, I always felt the necessity of making a book which can serve in giving an easy and accurate understanding of the *Divine Principle* to the members, as well as a lecture guide for lecturers. Many people say that the *Divine Principle* is very difficult to understand. So, I wanted to make it as easy as possible for beginners to understand and to apply, and present as a lecture."

"I hope this study guide helps our members to understand the *Divine Principle* more thoroughly, and helps to make them

good lecturers quickly, so that we can accomplish our goal of restoration providence soon. When I get back to Korea, I hope I can finish Part II and present this to our members."

When I gave lectures I used some ideas and diagrams from these lecture guides.

Introduction

The *Divine Principle* is the fundamental theology of Sun Myung Moon. When he was 15 years old he was praying on a hillside in Korea on Easter morning, April 17, 1935, Jesus Christ appeared and told him he had been chosen to fulfill Jesus' mission of teaching the truth from God that would unite the world into one peaceful and happy family.

For years he received revelations from God and saints in the spirit world. In 1945 when he was 25 years old he began his public ministry and started teaching. He was persecuted and finally sent to a communist concentration camp in North Korea. For three years he was tortured. When the Korean War broke out in 1950, he was freed and went to South Korea. In a hut made of mud, straw and discarded cardboard boxes, he began to preach.

Sun Myung Moon says, "The words I speak do not come from theological research or from any books. I speak rather of fundamental principles that I have learned through experience, as I overcame all manner of difficulties and communed directly with God and spirit world." He visited America for the first time in 1965. In a question and answer session he said, "I have talked with many, many masters, including Jesus, on questions of life and the universe and creation and God's dispensation, and many other things. They have subjected themselves to me in terms of wisdom. After winning the victory, they surrendered." (*40 Years in America*).

Whenever I quote from Sun Myung Moon's speeches or books I will give the date the speech was given or the title of the book after the quote. Sun Myung Moon is often referred to as Reverend Moon but the best title to describe him is Father Moon or Father for short.

Many people have been inspired by this theology, a vision of a world utopia and teachings that answer the fundamental questions of life.

ASSOCIATION to FAMILY FEDERATION

In 1954 Sun Myung Moon founded an association named Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity that others called Unification Church. In his autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*, Father reveals, "'Unification Church' became our commonly known name later, but it was given by others." Forty years later, in 1994, he renamed his movement the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. Church buildings are obsolete and the focus is now on families living a godly life in harmonious communities. Father Moon even encourages families to live close together in what he calls "Trinities." He says, "In the future, the home church format, centered on the family unit, gradually will become well established. Ultimately, organized churches, temples and mosques will disappear." (50 city tour 2001)

HAPPINESS

Helen Keller said, "Many persons have a wrong idea of what constitutes true happiness. It is not attained through self-gratification but through fidelity to a worthy purpose." The greatest purpose we can find for our lives is to teach the truth that will set mankind free. The highest truth is the *Divine Principle* or the *Principle* for short and the teachings of Sun Myung Moon. Father Moon says, "The primary function of the Unification Church members is ultimately to educate people." (7-12-1984)

Chapter 1

The Principle of Creation

The poet, Edwin Muir, wrote these words in his *Autobiography*, "Our minds are possessed by three mysteries, where we came from, where we are going, and since we are not alone, but members of a countless family, how we should live with one another." Many people wonder where we came from, why we're here and where we're going. The past, present and future are a mystery that religion and philosophy have tried to explain.

EXISTENCE OF GOD

The noted writer Will Durant has written, "... the oldest problem in philosophy is the existence and nature of God." Is it logical and rational to believe in the existence of God? Is it scientific to believe that the universe has a creator? Many people have asked, "Where did God come from?" "Who created God?" One answer is that God created time, space and matter. God is greater than time.

Sun Myung Moon gives these thoughts about the existence of God:

> Look at the eye. Before it was formed, the eye must have been designed by someone who realized that it would be functioning in an atmosphere of dust and wind. It was designed in such a way to adjust to such conditions. Do you think the eye knew ahead of time what conditions it would face? If it did not, there must be Someone who knew, and who created the eye with the means to protect it. There must be some Intelligence, operating behind the scenes, which had cosmic knowledge. It knew that the earth's heat would cause moisture to evaporate from the surface of the eye, so it made tear ducts to lubricate it. There is Reason

within the design of nature. Look at the eyelids, designed to prevent the serious problem of dust entering the eye. Look at the eyebrows; they were designed to block sweat from running down into the eye. Did the eyebrows appear knowing that they would have this function? Or did the eyes put on eyebrows because they knew this of themselves?

No. There is an Intelligence that knew in advance the environment in which the eye would be functioning and designed the eye precisely for it. (February 1, 1982)

BLUEPRINT EXISTED

You have two eyes that work together to achieve one focus. There is only one focus; you don't see two images. Why does the eye focus automatically? Before each eye ever existed, a concept or a design blueprint existed. The ability to focus didn't come to exist after the eye was created; it was part of the original plan for the eye. The eye was designed in a certain way to fulfill its purpose of proper focus. (March 17, 1957)

We have eyes, eyebrows, nose and mouth. Before that eye came into being do you think the eye itself knew that there was an object for it to see? Do you think that eye knew that there would be air, sunlight, and dust? The eye itself did not know these things. Why did the eye come into being? Eyes came into being in order to see things. Even though the material eye is unaware, the creator behind that eye knows. Is that true? Did the somebody who knew come first or did the eye, not knowing, come first? Somebody knew that there would be dust and air and so the eyelashes were created, like a fine screen. Somebody knew that dust would exist. Also the eye is constantly bathed in liquid. Therefore, somebody knew that there would be heat that would dry the eye and that it would need constant bathing in its own liquid. The eye did not know this.

Now we come to the solution of this age-old question: did the chicken come before the egg or vice versa? Which came first, the entity or the concept? Concept

came first. We also have eyebrows to prevent sweat rolling into our eyes. Therefore it seems reasonable to conclude that somebody knew that there might be sweat on the face. Don't take everything for granted; every day when we wash our face let us give thanks to God. All the wondrous design of the human body God created. Remind yourself daily that God made everything with us and our comfort in mind. (12-4-94)

There is no question but that love is the origin and the initiator. We can even answer the age-old question of which came first, the chicken or the egg? The egg came first! (2-1-83)

When such mystery and beauty exists, how can atheists accept the idea that mankind came into being by accident or chance? Mystery exists not only in human life but everywhere. Sophisticated, intricate beauty can be found in the world of birds, fish, and throughout the creation. When you look at a newborn baby it is almost spontaneous to think, "How perfect is this little baby! God did not forget anything—hair, eyes, ears, ten little fingers. How wonderful!" (6-20-82)

My teaching has always been that there is an origin of the entire universe, and that is God. God exists and God causes everything to exist; from Him, everything started to happen. There is a certain orderliness built in to our existence; all things exist in an orderly and purposeful fashion.

If the universe were nothing more than matter in random motion, then how could we expect any real order within this universe? It is impossible.

Everything revolves. Atoms and even elementary particles rotate. Electrons revolve around protons. The solar system revolves around the sun, and the Milky Way rotates around its galactic core. They are revolving around something that remains still. This universe, with all its varied phenomena, is a huge complex of myriads of these relationships. Therefore, we can think that this universe also revolves around a single core: God, the origin of all creation. (February 14, 1988)

GOD IS THE MASTER SCIENTIST

What if God had placed our eyes on our feet, or our mouth on the back of the head? God gave much thought to the human body's design. The mouth is where it is on the face so the two eyes can watch what we put into it and the hands can best function to feed it. Suppose your eyes were in the back of your head; your mouth might bite your finger and they wouldn't see it happening, and you would lose a finger! You have to admit that God is truly the master scientist! Everyone has little valleys on either side of their mouths, so that when they perspire the sweat doesn't run into their mouths. If the mouth were set deeper into the face then you would constantly have to blow away your sweat, but you don't have to because God prepared better contours for your face. What a mess it would be on a rainy day if your nose were set upside down! Think about it: everything about you is well made, from the hair inside your nose to your teeth. Everything has its role in the order of the body… Is God's thinking random or confused? No, the universe follows His order and logic. (May 6, 1979)

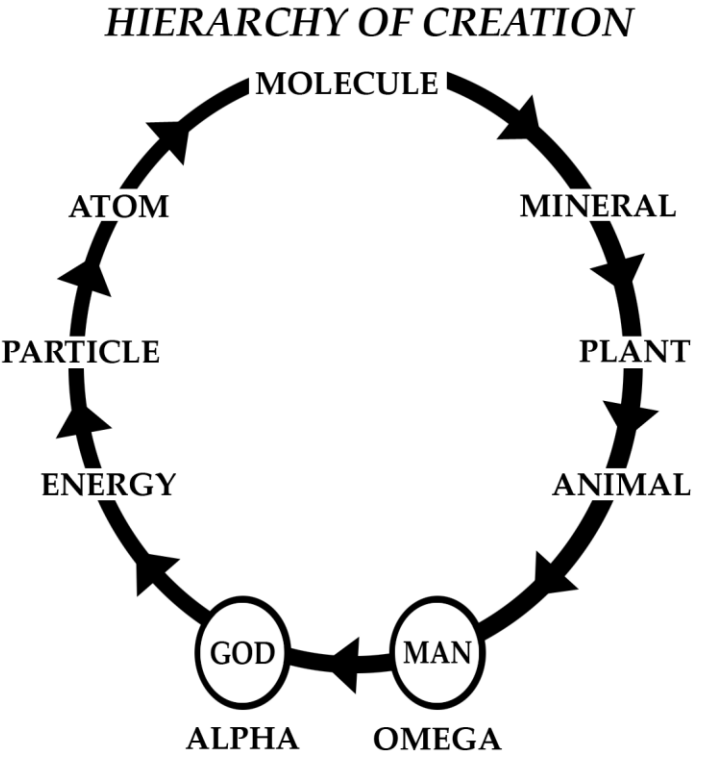
CREATION, NOT EVOLUTION

Countless people have asked and speculated on how God created the world. Many people believe in the theory of evolution that says that life began as two simple cells uniting and forming more cells. Somehow, random mutations took place. These mutant cells united and formed more complex organisms that in turn had mutants that united, and they formed even more complex organisms. In this way the world evolved from simple bacteria and algae or amoebas to plants and animals and finally man from ape-like creatures.

HIERARCHY OF CREATION

This is not how the earth was created. God created the world in an evolutionary manner by creating in a normal progression of simple to complex. From God's energy, particles were formed. From particles, atoms were formed which in turn formed molecules. Molecules form minerals, and minerals serve plants, plants serve animals, and animals serve mankind. A fundamental question has been whether it is spiritual and right to kill and eat animals. Ethical vegetarians are wrong. God made animals, birds and fish for us to

use and enjoy. Father Moon teaches: “In every multiplication, love is involved. Love moves toward one ultimate destination: the love of God. Without this loving action, no creature can be brought upon the earth. The purpose of creation is for the lower creatures to come closer to God through the higher creatures. Therefore, when man eats an animal, that animal becomes part of his body. Since man is the closest creature to God, that animal would rejoice to be eaten, because he is getting closer to the love of God. This is absolutely the law of love. Similarly, we should be willing to sacrifice ourselves to be close to God's love which is the highest level we can attain.” (3-27-90)



DIVINE GUIDANCE
We have to include divine guidance to the theory of evolution. God created the world by plan, not blind chance. God created each organism specially. He created the first amoeba, the first fish, the first deer, the first ape, and the first man.

DARWIN'S *THE ORIGIN OF SPECIES*
Charles Darwin wrote one of the most influential books in history in the 19th century called *The Origin of Species*. It was a best seller that shook the foundation of many people's faith. Unfortunately, most scientists today believe Darwin was basically correct and reject the idea that the universe was planned by a creator and that He has guided the history of the world. One encyclopedia says, "Darwin's theory states that all species evolved from a few common ancestors by means of natural selection." Natural selection is also called "survival of the fittest." It also says, "human beings, chimpanzees, and gorillas evolved from a common ancestor that lived between 4 million and 10 million years ago." This is false. Man is not descended from an ape-like creature. But Evolutionists are correct in that there have been changes within species. Examples of this are the many varieties of dogs and flowers. Human beings have different skin colors. Father Moon explains, "There is no way a lower life form, such as an amoeba, by random action or whim, can become a more advanced animal. The division of species is an absolute boundary that God created and has protected with clarity. Therefore, the theory of evolution is really a satanic theory." (3-27-90)

Those who oppose Darwin's theory are called Creationists who correctly "believe that each species has remained relatively unchanged since the Creation and that no species has evolved from another."

TRIAL OF THE CENTURY — SCOPES MONKEY TRIAL
In 1925 the Tennessee State legislature enacted a law that barred any public school teacher from teaching the theory of evolution. A high school teacher, John Scopes, was arrested for teaching evolution in a biology class. The most famous trial lawyer in America, Clarence Darrow, defended him. He wrote essays with such titles as "The Myth of the Soul" and "Why I am an Agnostic." On the other side was William Jennings Bryan, a legend in American politics and became "the most fervent voice in

the nation against Darwin's theories. He saw 'apeism,' as he termed evolution theory, as an unparalleled threat to the sanctity of the human condition."

During that intensely hot summer in the small town of Dayton, one of the greatest trials in history took place. Many books have been written about this debate between a Darwinian evolutionist and a fundamental Christian Creationist. A famous play, *Inherit the Wind*, is often performed and has been made into several movies. Bryan is portrayed as a pathetic and stupid figure because he takes the *Bible* literally, but the truth is that he is more on the side of truth because he sees the universe as being created by design with man being specially made and not having an ape-like creature as his ancestor. During the trial he correctly said, "There is no more reason to believe that man descended from some inferior animal than there is to believe that a stately mansion has descended from a small cottage."

MISSING LINKS

If the theory of evolution were scientific fact then there would have to be "intermediates or transitional forms to bridge the enormous gaps which separate existing species" *(Evolution: A Theory In Crisis* p. 58). Scientists have never found even one of these so-called "missing links" and they never will. Our minds did not come from animals. Our minds came from our parent God. God created a first man and a first woman. We call them Adam and Eve. Adam and Eve were not born the son and daughter of an amoeba or ape; they were the son and daughter of God.

ADAM & EVE ARE REAL PEOPLE

We all have parents—a father and a mother. Our parents had parents. If we continue back in time we find the original parents of mankind were two people. Sun Myung Moon said in a speech, "There are hundreds of people here, including 10 or 20 nationalities, but only two kinds of people, really: man and woman. From whence does this polarity derive? It derives from our physical parents, who are two human beings. From how many people did each of your parents come? Two. If we trace our ancestry back, there is no exception: every time it is two. Each one of us comes from two. Therefore the original ancestors must have been two. And where did they come from? From an invisible or visible creator? Our ancestors must have come from that invisible

God. Therefore, when we look at the creation, we conclude that God Himself must have original masculinity and original femininity. Then as human beings we inherit these plus and minus characteristics from God." ("True Parents' Completion of Responsibility in View of Providence" December 26, 1999)

Adam and Eve are real people. They are not fictitious or fairy tale creations. We are not descended from various sets of ancestors. If we were, then the various races might be of different quality or even be different species with different value. We all have one common origin—a first man and a first woman. God always works from a central point. And by having the same original parents each of us is a brother and sister to each other living as one family on earth.

CREATIONISTS

The *Bible*, if read literally, says Adam and Eve lived only a few thousand years ago. There are two views of when the earth was formed. Evolutionists say it was billions of years ago. Fundamentalist Creationists read the *Bible* literally and believe the earth was formed just a few thousand years ago. These Creationists are wrong. God created man many thousands of years ago. The Creationists are right in that God was involved at every step of creation. Seven thousand years ago mankind had finally progressed to the point of creating the written word. Since then mankind has progressively grown intellectually.

6,000 YEARS

In the seventeenth century a prominent Anglican Archbishop and theologian, James Ussher, compiled a chronology of events in the *Bible* which became famous because they were widely printed in the margin of the King James Version of the *Bible* for nearly three centuries. Archbishop Ussher placed the creation of the world at 4004 B.C. These 4000 years are comprised of the 2000 years from Adam to Jacob and the 2000 years from Jacob to Jesus. Of course, there have been 2000 years since Jesus to today. So, if we take the *Bible* literally, God created Adam and Eve 6000 years ago. The *Divine Principle* explains that we should read these numbers symbolically, not literally. The first man and woman lived longer than 6000 years ago.

The *Principle* explains that when the *Bible* begins by saying the universe was created in six days, we should read these numbers symbolically. The universe was not created in six literal 24-hour days. Scientists are correct in determining that the earth is millions of years old. There is no conflict between God and science; God is the greatest scientist. The six days in Genesis are symbolic of six gradual periods of time. Second Peter 3:8 says that, "...with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day." God always works through a growth period. The six days represent the six geological periods known as the Azoic, Archeozoic, Proterozoic, Paleozoic, Mesozoic and Cenozoic eras.

Recently, the world of science has made discoveries in genetic research that prove we have a common ancestor mother and a common ancestor father. Scientists are using the names Adam and Eve for the founding father and mother of mankind.

EVE

In a cover story on this breakthrough *Newsweek* magazine in 1988 wrote, "When scientists announced their discovery of Eve last year, they rekindled perhaps the oldest human debate: where did we come from?" "The veteran excavator Richard Leakey declared in 1977: 'There is no single center where modern man was born.' But now geneticists are inclined to believe otherwise.... 'If it's correct, and I'd put money on it, this idea is tremendously important,' says Steven Jay Gould, the Harvard paleontologist and essayist. 'It makes us realize that all human beings, despite differences in external appearance, are members of a single entity that had a very recent origin in one place. There is a kind of biological brotherhood that's much more profound than we ever realized.'"

In 1997, Jonathan Wells, author of *Icons of Evolution: Science or Myth?*, presented a paper at the Twenty-first International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences, which met in Washington, D.C., in November 1997. He says that many biologists today, "Darwin's modern followers," do not see the hand of God in creation: "In 1967 paleontologist George Gaylord Simpson wrote: 'Man is the result of a purposeless and natural process that did not have him in mind' (*The Meaning of Evolution*, revised edition). In 1970, molecular biologist and Nobel laureate Jacques Monod announced that 'the mechanism of

Darwinism is at last securely founded,' and thus 'man has to understand that he is a mere accident' (quoted in H.F. Judson's *The Eighth Day of Creation*, 1979). And in 1986, zoologist Richard Dawkins wrote a best-selling book titled *The Blind Watchmaker: Why the Evidence of Evolution Reveals a Universe without Design*."

DARWIN IS WRONG

But Dawkins can't show any "evidence" even though he confidently writes in the book's opening chapter, "Darwin made it possible to be an intellectually fulfilled atheist." Jonathan Wells goes on to explain that Darwinism is wrong: "Evidence has been accumulating for decades, however, that Darwin's mechanism fails to account for major features of evolution. The fossil record (especially where it is most complete) lacks the innumerable transitional forms that Darwin's theory predicts; ... According to molecular biologist Michael Denton (*Evolution: A Theory in Crisis*, 1986), not 'one single empirical discovery or scientific advance since 1859' has validated Darwin's theory that large-scale evolution is caused by natural selection acting on random variations."

Sun Myung Moon and some of his followers have made some statements about evolution. The following are a few comments from them I found at www.Tparents.org.

In *Guidance for Heavenly Tradition* Young Whi Kim writes:

> **THE SOURCE OF OUR HAPPINESS**
>
> Then what about the earth? We say that the earth is our mother. Everything we need comes from it. Then how old is the earth? Scientists say it is about 4.5 billion years old. And how old are Adam and Eve? We are directly connected to God, the universe, the earth and the first man and woman, so we should know their age as well, don't you think? Scientists have worked hard to find out when man came into existence. Of course there is no accurate record, but most scientists assume that a being similar to man existed about 2 million years ago and that modern man first came into existence about 30

thousand years ago. So Adam and Eve are about 30 thousand years old.

Can you imagine how much time passed before modern man was created? It took an incredibly long time. The first man and woman are at most 30 thousand years old and the universe is 12 billion years old. Thirty thousand years is like a fraction of a second compared to 12 billion. After many long years of preparation God finally created mankind. You won't find this in the *Bible*, but this is what science reveals. Now we can truly understand how hard God worked to prepare for man. His constant desire was to create man; to accomplish His desire He had to work for almost 12 billion years. He had to work so hard and wait such a long time for the coming of the first man and woman. Maybe now you can understand how precious mankind must be to God.

If something only took you an hour to make, you might not value it so much. But if you worked on it your whole life long, investing everything into it, you would want to keep it forever, wouldn't you? Then what about God? He worked for 12 billion years to create the cosmos, the earth and mankind. Would He have done this for a temporary purpose or for eternity? What do you think? For eternity. Yes, God would want His creation to last eternally. He invested so much time and effort that He cannot throw it away easily. Everything was created to exist for eternity.

In 1973 Father Moon spoke publicly for the first time. In his speech "God's Hope for Man" he gave these deep insights:

All of our human traits originate in God. We recognize that there is some human tendency for selfishness. This is natural because at one time God Himself was self-centered. This fact may surprise you, but you must understand that before God created man and the universe, He was all alone, with no one to care for except Himself. However the very instant that God initiated creation, His full concept

of life emerged. God now lives for His counterpart, not for Himself.

What is creation? Creation means nothing more than the Creator, God, projecting Himself into a substantial form. He made Himself incarnate symbolically in the universe, and He made Himself incarnate directly in man. When the spirit takes form, this is creation. God invested Himself in the creation. God's investment of energy is the creation.

The Bible in the book of Genesis makes creation sound simple and easy. Genesis gives us the impression that God's creation is accomplished through the magic of His words. God simply says, "Let there be a world" and presto! — the world comes into being. Then He says, "Let there be man" and poof! — Adam and Eve come into being.

But now it has been revealed that it was not this easy at all. God invested all of Himself in His creation. He did not reserve even one ounce of energy. Creation was His total labor, His total effort of giving all of Himself. When God put His entire heart and soul into the creation of His object, He was investing 100 percent of Himself. Only in this way could He create His second self, the visible God.

Therefore, after His creation, God was no longer existing just for Himself. God began existing for His son and daughter, Adam and Eve. He exists to love, He exists to give. God is the totally unselfish existence. God cannot exist alone. "Love" and "ideal" only take on meaning when partners are in complementary relationship. God initiated creation and made an investment He cannot lose. When God poured all of His love, life, and ideal into His second self, He had to, in a sense, realize a profit. God knew that when He invested all He had — 100 percent — His object would mature and return to Him many, many times over the fruits of love, life,

and His ideal. His object, man, is everything to God. The life of the object attracts God. God wants to go and dwell with His object, man.

Let us look at an illustration. Suppose there is a great artist. If he works at random without feeling, he cannot create anything worthwhile. To create the masterpiece of his lifetime, the artist must put all of his heart and soul into his creation. That is the only way for him to come up with a great work of art. If an artist works in this way, his art becomes his life.

God is the greatest of all artists. When He created His masterpiece, man, He poured His heart into the process. He poured His soul into it. He poured all of His wisdom and all of His energy into it. God wished only to exist for Adam and Eve and all mankind. He saved not a single ounce of energy when He created them. Thus, man has become the life of God.

The following are some insights from some speeches of Sun Myung Moon on how the universe is organized:

Why should creation stop at the level of man? Why haven't sudden total changes in species occurred recently? More and more complex animals appeared throughout the ages, but no creature has appeared which is more highly developed than man. Creation seems to have stopped with man. Do you think that happened because man shouted out, "We are perfectly happy, God. You can stop right here"? Since creation developed up to the level of man and then stopped, then we must conclude that there is a universal will and consciousness which preexisted man and which had already planned the entire creation to conclude at the level of man. (5-29-77)

According to Charles Darwin's theory of evolution and the survival of the fittest, only the strong survive. The weak will be demolished and only strong species will continue. Purely from an

external point of view, evolution describes this upward movement of life we were talking about. Thus there is nothing really wrong with the theory of evolution on the external level. But where does the theory of evolution come to a deadlock? Darwin didn't consider the aspect of love. If his theory were completely true, then man should have continued evolving to a higher being; the process should be continuing. The original mind should be improving and becoming something greater, but is the original mind changing like that? (1-11-87)

People today talk about evolution as a fact; they believe that everything in existence has evolved. But we must ask whether that process of evolution just happened spontaneously, or whether there was some cause or motivation behind it that allowed it to happen. What about the movement of evolution—was it along a straight line or in a circle? That is the kind of question we should ask. Evolution must be moving according to a certain order or discipline and that discipline could be along a straight line or a circular line. But then, could evolution itself determine whether to move straight or in a circle? How about going up and down? There must be a certain will which determines that.

If some life form moved up from a lower level, there had to be something that caused it to develop into a higher form of life. Who determined that it should move up to a higher level? We might ask this question of Charles Darwin, the author of the evolutionary theory: "How could certain forms of life develop into more sophisticated forms? Why didn't they go in the other direction toward a more primitive form? Mr. Darwin, did you order that those life forms should go higher? Are you God?"

Small beings always unite and become absorbed by larger beings. Why do they do that? Why should they bring themselves together into harmony? Why should one atom move together and unite with other atoms, forming more complex elements? Why don't atoms go the other way and become smaller and smaller, getting shattered into pieces? That doesn't

happen. The logical person cannot deny that some concept or purpose pre-existed all these phenomena. (9-7-86)

Man is born and he goes in a certain direction, following what may seem to be a labyrinth; but there is actually an overall direction to his growth. You are constantly being guided by a certain power to move in a certain way. What do you think—do we continually move toward improving ourselves or worsening ourselves? Why are men and women always trying to move toward something better, something improved? Why do we not seek to move toward bad things, such as accidents and disasters? There is some built in mechanism—we might call it a homing device—which guides us toward betterment and improvement. There must be some guiding will which is outside of us. (March 17, 1957)

PLAN IN MIND

Every result begins from a motive or cause. Every existence begins from a motive and unfolds through a process before it materializes as a result. This is the case with all natural phenomena. Human beings did not make it so; rather, this is a basic principle and heavenly law, God's law. For this reason, there is no such thing as the evolution of new species by random mutation. All things exist in order. The world was created by design, in which every existence, as an object-partner of God, arose through a principled process out of that motive [in the mind of God]. Consider successful people: could they succeed without a firm determination in their minds? Starting with a motive and plan in their mind, they prepare the ground and steadfastly push forward to reach their objective. Since this is necessary for an individual to succeed, would it not also be necessary for God, the Creator of this great universe, to attain His objectives? It is the same principle. (May 29, 1960)

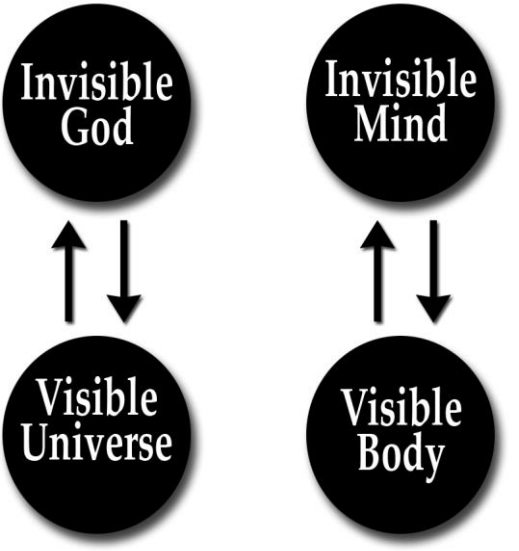
Father Moon teaches that the fundamental problem with the theory of evolution is that there is no love in its worldview: “The theory of evolution doesn’t refer to love at all.” (8-4-96)

Some have speculated that there are other intelligent life forms in the universe. There are no other human beings—no other children of God on other planets in the universe. In the *Master Speaks* (1965) Sun Myung Moon was asked, “Do you have any opinion about flying saucers? Are flying saucers real?” He answered, *“*They appear as a sign of the Last Days. They look real but they are not. It is a spiritual manifestation. The people in them are spirit beings, not physical.” One elder told me that Father was asked if there are other humans on other planets and he said, “We’re it.”

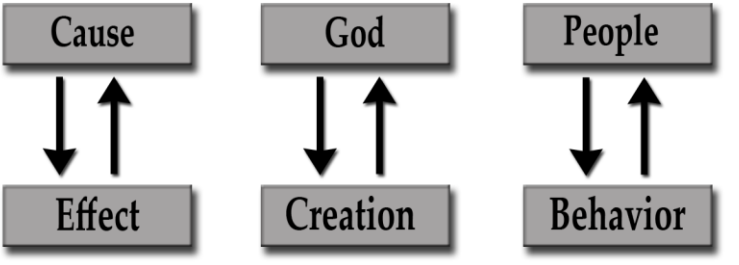
GOD IS INVISIBLE

Sun Myung Moon teaches that God is invisible. We cannot see God. There are many things in this world which we cannot see yet we know they exist. Radio waves, x-rays and the air we breathe cannot be seen. We know of their existence by studying their effects.

Our mind or our thoughts are also invisible. We express our thoughts and ideas with our bodies. God is invisible and expresses Himself in the universe.



Romans 1:20 states that God is invisible: “Ever since the creation of the world His invisible nature, namely, His eternal power and deity, has been clearly perceived in the things that have been made.” By studying the effect, we can know the cause. By looking at creation, we can tell something about our creator, God.



To know a person, we study his or her behavior and achievements. By looking at what a person creates we can tell something about the creator. Likewise, to know God we study His creation. Psalm 19:1 says, "The heavens declare the glory of God; the skies proclaim the work of His hands."

DUALITY OF INTERNAL CHARACTER AND EXTERNAL FORM

Let's look at the world to see God's characteristics. The world can be divided essentially into six categories: human beings, animals, plants, molecules, atoms and particles. Each has a duality of internal character and external form. The internal character of human beings is our minds, and the external form is our physical bodies. Animals have instinct and a body. Plants have an invisible directive nature and a body. Molecules have an invisible force that combines atoms. Atoms are made of particles united by this force. And particles are made of invisible energy. Electricity flows between positive and negative charges. God's internal character is His emotion, intellect and will, and His external form is energy. God made the visible universe from His invisible energy.

	Internal Character	External Form	
1. Mankind	Mind	Body	
2. Animals	Instinct	Body	
3. Plants	Invisible Directive Nature	Body	
4. Molecules	Invisible Force	Atoms	EFFECT
5. Atoms	Invisible Force	Particles	
6. Particles	Invisible Force	Energy	
God:	Emotion Intellect Will	Energy	CAUSE

INVISIBLE ENERGY
The idea that invisible energy is the substance of all visible things was mathematically introduced by Einstein in his formula $E = mc^2$. E stands for energy, m stand for mass or matter and c stands for the speed of light. This is scientific proof of a give and take relationship of invisible energy and visible matter. Invisible energy can change into visible matter and matter can change into energy.

$E = mc^2$

Invisible = Visible

"You cannot see God even in the spirit world. Can you see energy? God is the original source of energy. Therefore, even in the spirit world He cannot be seen." (October 21, 1979)

EVERYTHING IS ROOTED IN LOVE
Father Moon teaches that God is the source of all the energy in the universe which he calls Universal Prime Energy or Universal Prime Force. This is His external form. God's internal character — His emotion, intellect and will is manifested in True Love. Sun Myung Moon teaches that the essence of God is love and therefore "Everything is rooted in love." (5-1-1998) God's love is absolute, unchanging and eternal and His "Universal Prime Force never changes." (5-1-1998)

HEAVENLY FATHER
Father Moon teaches that God is best described as a loving Heavenly Father:

> The fundamental source of all energy is the expression of the Heavenly Father's prime energy, as explained in the *Divine Principle*.
>
> The fundamental force for the changing of the seasons is not formed by human beings. The originating force of all energy used in the created world stems from only one force, given by God. We cannot truly explicate the energy for the existence of the eternal God. That is the energy of God, my

Father, who is the sole creator of humankind. (8-4-97)

The center of love is like pure gold, which has 100 percent conductivity. Electrical current always flows towards something it can consume, generating explosions and sparks when it reaches the core. Electromagnetic current operates throughout the universe, controlling the function of the heavenly bodies. The truth of electricity is also the truth of the universe. Electrical current flows in a circuit; gravity draws everything towards the center. Why? Something comparable to pure gold is at the center of the universe. Universal prime force directs all motion towards the center, maintaining order in the universe.

Without gravity, the universe would fall apart. Likewise, in the world of heart, pure-gold love pulls everything to the center. The pure gold of God's love is the magnetic force, the center of gravity in the world of love. It affects any moving object. People's lives take various courses, but they always return to that pulling power. When you make contact with the golden core of God's love, will He cry out in pain, or laugh with joy and happiness? God is like us; He feels joy when touched by external stimulation. (5-29-1983)

Father Moon teaches:

God exists and He is our Parent. He lives and carries out His work within each person's life. He exists without form. If you think of Him as large, He is infinitely large, but if you think of Him as small, He is also infinitely small. Every human being possesses a mind, but can anyone locate the mind with confidence and certainty?

Energy clearly exists and sustains life, but energy is invisible. In the same way, God absolutely exists with attributes of eternality, changelessness and

uniqueness, but He cannot be seen with the human eye, which is one part of the human physical body. Because God is the original body of energy, we will not be able to see Him even in spirit world.

This is why we say that God is omniscient, omnipotent and omnipresent. Because He has no form, there is nothing to keep Him from going anywhere. He could pass right through your body without you feeling anything. He could step on you as He passes by while you doze off, and you would not know it. Think how convenient that is. What would you do if God were to appear and involve Himself in every little thing you do? If you had to live with God visible to your eyes, what would you do? Probably you would not last a day before having a nervous breakdown. You cannot see the incredible amount of air that is passing through your body even as you sit here. So how could you possibly know how God, who exists without form, passes through you as He carries on His work? Rather than foolishly saying, "Show me God and I'll believe," you should be grateful that God is invisible to our eyes.

The universe in which we live is wrapped in mystery. The size of the vast universe is as great as 21 billion light years across. If a light year is the distance light travels in a year at a speed so fast that it can go around the Earth seven and a half times in a second, then try to imagine what God, who created the universe and manages it, must be like. How large would He have to be, and how heavy? God is the great king of wisdom, so He made it so that He would exist without form, enabling Him to go anywhere in the universe instantaneously or enter even into the eye of a needle. When we search within for the best place to receive God, our greatest treasure, the natural conclusion is, "The heart is the only appropriate place." No place can be safer or more comfortable for Him. The heart is able to stand in the position of God's object partner and exist for eternity by engaging in spherical motion, and this is the reason that human beings can have eternal life.

We truly know God only when we feel Him in our heart and understand the reality of His existence in the course of daily life. We know God's existence only through experience.

When we understand the reality of God's existence directly through experience in our daily life, we will be able to sense God's will from moment to moment naturally. We will be able to act in accordance with His will without being told. We will become people who cannot sin even if we try. It was intended that the formless God would take on substantial form as human beings and exercise dominion with the character and appearance of an owner, not only over all of creation in this world, a world of form, but even over the spirit world. This is why our highest priority in life is to know God with certainty. (5-1-2004)

DUALITY OF MASCULINE AND FEMININE

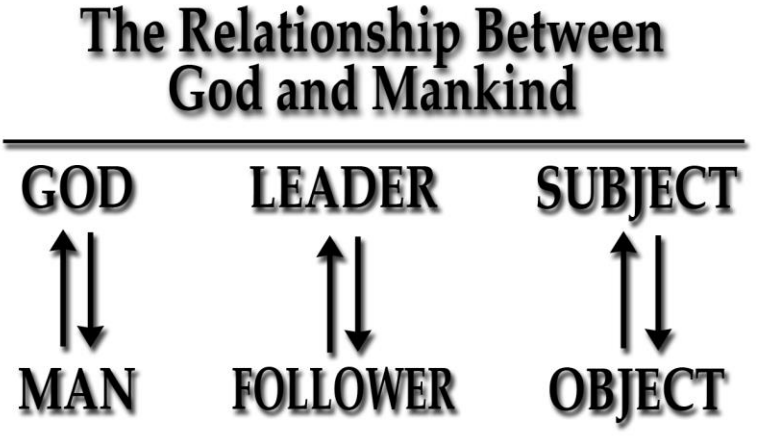
One of the most basic characteristics we see in the world is the duality or polarity of masculinity and femininity. "So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them" (Genesis 1:27). First Corinthians 11:7 states that man "is the image and glory of God." Human beings are divided into men and women; animals into male and female; plants into stamen and pistil; molecules, atoms and particles into positive and negative charges. God projected His dual characteristics of positivity and negativity into all things.

	Masculine	Feminine	
Human Beings:	Men	Women	
Animals:	Male	Female	
Plants:	Stamen	Pistil	EFFECT
Molecules:	Positive	Negative	
Atoms:	Positive	Negative	
Particles:	Positive	Negative	
God:	**Positivity**	**Negativity**	CAUSE

CENTRAL TRUTH — GOD IS OUR PARENT

A fundamental question of mankind is: What is our relationship to God? God is our true parent, and we are His children. Sun Myung Moon said in a speech, "Love is the true ancestor of creation and the force behind generation. During my years of searching for the truth, the first question I asked God was about the essential nature of the universe. The answer was rather simple—the beginning point of the universe is love and the end result is the parent and child relationship. God created mankind and the universe in order to create a world of love through which He could dwell in that Parent/child relationship. This is the central truth and essence of the universe" (6-20-82).

SUBJECT/OBJECT — LEADER/FOLLOWER
An essential part of being a parent is being a leader. God is a true parent and gives true leadership. His desire is for us to be true children who accept and trust His leadership, commands and desires as true and good. Father often uses the terms "subject" and "object" to explain our relationship to God.



We are created to be good objects to God. This does not mean that God is a dictator and we are to be robots. True leadership does not mean pushing someone down but lifting them up with parental discipline, nurturing and love. Although God is to be the leader, He also needs our ideas, love and creativity. Between people there is often a leader and follower relationship. We see this between husband and wife, parents and children, teachers and students, employer and employees, a conductor and an orchestra.

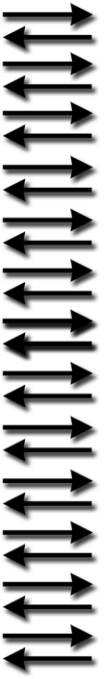
LEADERSHIP
In God's role as subject He fulfills his responsibility to lead, provide, and protect us, His children. Our role and responsibility is to follow and be good objects to God. God made men to be in the subject role and women to be in the object role. Men and women have equal value but different roles and responsibilities. There is equality in value but equality doesn't mean sameness. God is a true leader who guides, provides and protects His children. God wants all men to be true leaders who guide, provide and protect

women and children. God gives vision to men and men give vision to women. Father teaches, “Men are in the subject role and women in the object role” (4-29-79). “The mission of a woman is to follow her husband. She must be for the sake of her husband. The ideal of the Garden of Eden will disappear otherwise.” (rough notes June 7, 2012)

GIVE AND TAKE ACTION

To find real happiness, people must master the art of being a good follower to their leaders and being a good leader to those who follow them. The action between leader and follower is called Give and Take Action. For example, atoms exist and act because of the give and take action between the protons and electrons. Plants exist because of the give and take of xylem and phloem. Plants give oxygen to animals, and animals return carbon dioxide to plants. Each person can exist and act because of the give and take between the arteries and veins, inhalation and exhalation. We need give and take between our mind and body.

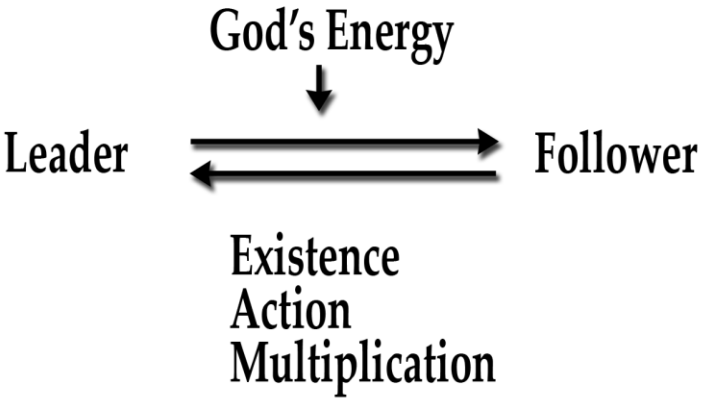
On a human relationship level people need give and take in the family between husband and wife, parents and children, brothers and sisters. Society can function well only if there is harmonious give and take and cooperation for common goals between people, families, groups and nations.

Atoms:	Proton		Electron
Molecules:	Positive		Negative
Plants:	Xylem		Ploem
Animals:	Arterties		Veins
	Instinct		Body
	Inhalation		Exhalation
People:	Mind		Body
Family:	Husband		Wife
	Parents		Children
	Brothers		Sisters
Society:	Families		Families
	Groups		Groups
	Nations		Nations

PAIRS

God created everything in the universe in a relationship of pairs that exist, act and multiply through give and take action, i.e., through interdependent and harmoniously reciprocal relationships. God's eternal, unchanging, absolute vertical energy allows for all horizontal existence, action and multiplication.

GIVE AND TAKE ACTION



If parents have many children they know and love each of them intimately. Even though there are billions of people God loves and knows each person intimately too. And just as parents want give and take with their children, God wants give and take with each of us.

In his many speeches and books Sun Myung Moon teaches in detail about the nature of God. In a speech given publicly in all 50 states of America titled "God's Hope for Man" he gave these insights:

> God created all things, but in all His creation man occupies the supreme and central position. It is therefore very important for us to have a clear understanding of the relationship between God and man.
>
> We are mirrors reflecting the characteristics of God. God is just like you and me. God is the origin. Therefore, our love comes from the love of God. Our life comes from the life of God, and our ideals come from the ideals of God. We feel these are the

most precious things because God first felt these things were most precious. God is the subject of love, the subject of life, and the subject of ideals. We are the objects of love, the objects of life, and the objects of ideals. Therefore, if God is absolute, we are to be absolute. If God is unchanging, we are to be unchanging. If God is unique, we are to be unique. If God is everlasting, we are to be everlasting. Our eternal life is not just a fantasy. It is reality. Since God is eternal, His object, man, must be created for eternity. Otherwise, we cannot reflect the nature of our eternal God.

MAN IS INCARNATE GOD

If there is a God of love, life, and ideals, and that God does not manifest all these qualities in man, His object, then God has defeated His very purpose of creating. God either projected the full value of Himself in His object, or He created nothing at all. God is the subject to man, and we are the objects to God. An object is the full reflection of the subject. So man is the visible form of God, and God is the invisible form of man. Subject and object are one in essence. God and man are one. Man is incarnate God. Otherwise, we would not be able to reflect God's full image. God could not realize His joy, the purpose of His creation. When we as objects are not as perfect as God Himself is perfect, we cannot reflect the full love, life, and ideal of God. So man, the object of God, is as important in value as God Himself. If I made vigorous gestures and shouted to an empty auditorium, I am sure that anyone who saw me would wonder, "Is that man crazy?" But if I have someone to have give and take with, some object out there to respond to me—even one small child in front of me—and I pour out my heart and soul to him, then I am considered normal. The sole difference is the presence of someone as object.

What I am trying to illustrate is the value of an object. As we are the objects to God, He has placed us in a position equal to Himself. Thus, man shares the same value as God and is just as important as

God. Even though God is most high and noble and mighty, He too must have His object. Otherwise He feels no joy. Joy comes when you receive stimulation from the object. Not even God can be joyful alone. You must realize that God created man and the universe for joy. But God's joy remains dormant until He can have give and take with His object.

So far in Christianity, we placed God so high up in heaven, and pushed man so low in hell, that there has been an uncrossable gap between them. A wide and raging river has separated man from God. Men do not dare to reach out to God as a living reality. Man has been unable to realize that God is so close, so real, so approachable, that we can even dwell with Him. We are supposed to be the living temples of God. Yet conventional Christianity has been unable to make that a reality.

God's ultimate purpose in His creation of man is to give to him all His love, all His life, and all His ideal. You are to occupy the entire love of God, to the depth of His heart. By becoming His true sons and daughters, your desire will be fulfilled. That is your ultimate destiny. Then you will be saturated with the love of God. You will be filled with joy and feel overwhelmed by a total satisfaction in life.

There is no limit to joy. Happiness has no end. When you are standing in the love of God, every cell in your body jumps for joy. You breathe in and out with the entire universe. In this state your life is fulfilled. This is how God means us to live, intoxicated in love and joy. And through our joy God receives His joy. The joy of man is the joy of God; the joy of God is the joy of man.

Early in my life God called me for a mission as His instrument. I was called to reveal His truth for Him, as His prophet. I committed myself unyieldingly in pursuit of truth, searching the hills and valleys of the spiritual world. The time suddenly came to me when heaven opened up, and I was privileged to communicate with Jesus Christ and the living God directly. Since then I have received many astonishing revelations. God Himself

> told me that the most basic and central truth of the universe is that God is the Father and we are His children. We are all created as children of God. And He said there is nothing closer, nothing deeper, nothing more ultimate than when father and son are one: One in love, one in life, and one in ideal.

Father teaches these deep insights into our Heavenly Father:

> God, as the subject partner of true love, did establish humankind as the object partner of true love. Accordingly, God can fulfill the ideal of true love only through humankind. The fulfillment of God's purpose of creation is the ideal world where God and humankind are united through absolute love. Human beings were created as the greatest object partners of God's love. They alone in all creation potentially embody the full nature of God and they are born the visible bodies of the invisible God. If a person matures, they become a perfect temple of God—a visible, substantial body in which God can freely and peacefully dwell.
>
> God's overall ideal of absolute true love is realized and perfected through humankind in a vertical parent-child relationship. God created Adam first; he was to be the son of God and, at the same time, the substantial body of God. Later, God created Eve as the object partner of Adam so that Adam and Eve could fulfill the ideal of horizontal love in conjugal love. Eve was to be the daughter of God and also as a bride she was to realize substantially the ideal of the horizontal love of God. (4-16-1996)

Father teaches:
"Adam, created as God's body, would become the true ancestor of humankind. Adam, in other words, would be God incarnate. For the incorporeal God to have dominion over the world of physical beings, to be able to see and hear in that tangible world, He needs a tangible body. The one created to be God incarnate was Adam. Then who is Eve? Eve was Adam's wife, a wife with physical form. If Adam were God incarnate, Eve would be God's wife incarnate. Saying that the holy God would take a wife may sound

shocking, but Adam was created as God's body and he was to take Eve as his wife. Eve, then, would have been God's wife incarnate." (*Cheon Seong Gyeong* pp. 57-58)(22-279, 1969.5.4) and "It is not Adam and Eve's bodies that God likes but their love for each other." (*Cheon Seong Gyeong* p. 336)

PAIR SYSTEM IS FOR LOVE

The *Divine Principle* is a short overview of Sun Myung Moon's teachings. He has written books and given thousands of speeches over a span of sixty years that give amazing revelations about God and the universe. The following are excerpts from a few speeches where he teaches about the pair system. I hope these quotes inspire you to read his words of wisdom and truth in depth:

> When we observe our universe, we recognize that every being exists through the union of paired elements. This is true on all levels, beginning even with the mineral realm. Molecules are made from the union of a positive ion and a negative ion. On the level of plants, existence and reproduction requires the union of stamen and pistil, representing the male and female aspects.
>
> The pair system is even more obvious on the level of animals. Fish, birds, mammals and all animals exist as male and female. Finally, the supreme creations of God, human beings, are either men or women. The first man, Adam, and the first woman, Eve, were the original ancestors of mankind. What is the purpose of the pair system? Why did God create in this way?
>
> The Creator divided all things in male and female so that they might unite through their give and take of love. Through the action of love, each species multiplies and extends its lineage.
>
> Human ambition is limitless and infinite. Then, what is the true goal of this infinite desire of man? For man, it is woman. For woman, it is man. Man and woman can find true love only through each other.
>
> In history, differing views of life, the universe and God have presented unresolved problems. The solution to these problems is to be found when true

man and true woman unite with God in true love, creating absolute oneness. This is the source of absolute value.

Man exists for the sake of woman. Woman exists for the sake of man. Each is to be the object of love of the other.

God is a being of absolute love. He wanted to create objects of love, human beings, upon which He can pour out His love. In doing so, He would naturally look forward to the return of that love from men and women.

The pattern of true love is not that of being served; it is to serve others. When God Himself initially created His object of love, He invested every ounce of His energy—100 percent of His being. This established the pattern of true love. In other words, the tradition of true love as total investment was established by God. At that point, true love became the corner of the universe. And even almighty God chooses to be obedient to it. (4-10-90)

When you observe the things of nature, you can see that the pair system is always in evidence. This system is at work on all levels, whether it is the mineral kingdom, the plant kingdom, or the animal kingdom. Everything exists within the plus and minus, yin and yang system.

The most important thing to understand is the Principle of Creation. First of all, creation began from the atmosphere or surroundings. The basic surroundings for human beings were created first, and that is the universe. In it we see plus and minus, the pair system, male and female. Why do we see that everywhere? For the purpose of achieving True Love. The universe is created for that purpose: the unity of mind and body, male and female, men and women. Why? Because they are looking forward to uniting with their corresponding partner. (4-25-93)

Everything has life, love and lineage. In order to bear fruit the pair system is needed. That is the absolute formula, there is no deviation. Without a pair system there is no multiplication. It is

impossible for one alone to create fruit. One alone cannot become a recipient of original love, life and lineage.

Animals eat plants and then people eat animals. Many think that it is ungodly to do so. Father says that a lower creature which is eaten by a higher creature comes closer to the love of God. Do you follow? This is absolutely the law of love. By the same token, if animals sacrifice themselves for the sake of love of man, for the sake of God we should be able and willing to sacrifice ourselves. We must be always willing and ready. Praise God for making the pair system! (3-27-90)

All beings of the universe, from the most minute creations to the supreme creation of human beings, exist in a pair system. That means there is a subject/object relationship on every level. The whole creation is made to participate in the love of God. They want to unite with that love and have it continue throughout posterity. (4-6-89)

God's act of creation was necessary and we cannot imagine creation without a purpose. There was only one reason God needed the creation: to realize the ideal of true love. God developed life in pairs, from the simplest and lowest levels up to the human level, subject and object and positive and negative, to form reciprocal relationships under the ideal of love. The creation's ideal of love and God's ideal of ultimate love are not separate or different. The Principle of Creation is at work to complete the absolute love of God through the realization of true love between men and women in the human world. This is the reason why, in the beginning, God created one man and one woman, Adam and Eve. (4-16-1996)

This is the reason why all things are in pairs: it is for love. (5-1-93)

GOD IS CALLED "HEAVENLY FATHER" OR "FATHER"

Father Moon explains why we call God "Heavenly Father" or

"Father" even though He has dual characteristics of masculine and feminine:

> Why did God create the universe? The reason is that God wants to realize the relationship of Father and children centering on love. So we can come to the conclusion that the foundation of the universe is the relationship of Father and children. (6-20-82)

> Is God masculine or feminine? (Both.) God has both dual characteristics, but how does He appear, as a masculine God or a feminine God? Masculine is in the subject position and the giving place. Feminine is the object and the receiving place. Do you understand? That is why God is portrayed as masculine, the absolute Subject. (2-5-95)

> Although we know through the *Divine Principle* that God contains within Himself the dual essentialities of masculine and feminine, we also know that God is the universal subject and as such has a primarily positive nature. (1-30-83)

> We know that God exists in both masculine and feminine essentialities, positive and negative characteristics. However since God is the universal Subject, we know through the *Divine Principle* that this is characterized as a masculine aspect. (1-2-83)

> The person who can connect with the vertical lineage of children is not a woman but only a man. It is because a man resembles God. God looks like (or is) the harmony of internal nature and external form, but His shape itself is that of a man. A man is the shape of God and has the seed of His child. (8-2-96)

> Within Him, God has both masculinity and femininity, but to exist as Father, His being is that of a male subject. (8-1-96)

In the Garden of Eden how many men were there? (One.) what about the archangel? (He is not a man.) But suppose you had to include the angel figures? (Four.) Including God it makes five male figures. (11-23-94)

There were five masculine figures in the Garden of Eden. First, there was God, who is the subject partner of the entire created world. Then there was Adam and the three angels, Lucifer, Gabriel and Michael. Eve was the only feminine figure. (50 state tour 2001)

God is our Friend, our greatest Friend. God is our Father, Elder Brother, King, and Creator. How proud we should be to have such a God! (May 26, 1998)

Why did God create the universe? The reason is that God wants to engage in the loving relationship of a father with His children. The relationship of father and children is, in fact, the foundation of the universe. (June 20, 1982)

We should call God, "Father." God is the Father who originally created you. Due to the Human Fall we also need rebirth, but God engendered your first birth. Your physical father was only the bridge over which you came into this world. When you go to dwell in the spirit world, you will not call Him "father" but rather "older brother." You will also not call your physical mother "mother."

People of firmly rooted faith in the spirit realms all call God "Father," just as Christians do on earth. In any given family, the grandfather calls God "Father," the father calls God "Father," the grandchild calls God "Father"— every member of the family calls God "Father." Since God is the Father of all people, all people are brothers and sisters to one another. (November 24, 1968)

> How old is God? For billions of years He has been growing old, waiting. If God had a beard, I am sure it would have grown all the way down to His feet, and if God grew taller every year, there's no telling how tall He would have grown. By what power has He been able to endure and wait for so long? It is nothing else but love. (January 25, 1981)
>
> Japan has worshiped a female Goddess. This will not last. (1-3-2004)
>
> One parent is our Heavenly Father, the Lord of Creation. He is the vertical and invisible True Parent. (8-20-2004)

The Bible says, "For a man is the image and glory of God; but the woman is the glory of man." (1 Corinthians 11:7)

Father Moon teaches that mankind has been right in calling God "Father" for thousands of years:

> God is the subject of affinity. God is the father and our vertical elder brother. In Christianity, they have called God "Father" beginning a thousand years ago. God has been called "Father" for ten thousand years. Thus, God is the father and the elder brother at the same time. How close is this relationship?
>
> God exists in a relationship of a subject partner and an object partner in love. This refers to the reciprocal relationship between a husband and wife. Because a feminine mind exists in God, God's sons and daughters can be born when the masculine mind and feminine mind establish a relationship and unite. In relation to an individual as a son or daughter, God is the father and elder brother. He also maintains the relative realm of a husband that can support the relative realm of the feminine world that exists inside of an individual. Since it is difficult for a relative condition to establish ties with an individual, however, God made Eve out of Adam's rib. He took the rib—belonging to the external entity of the dual

> characteristics—for the female sphere, so that Eve could be in a subject–object relationship with Adam based on her having a similar form. Eve also has plus aspects to her internal character and could naturally establish a relationship–that of wife to her husband. (11-12-2004)

Stephen K. Nomura writes in his excellent paper titled "God as Masculine Subject Partner" *(Journal of Unification Studies* Vol. 4, 2001-2002 - Page 57, read online at www.UTS.edu*)*:

> How we view God is critical for a theocentric philosophy such as Unification Thought. Our view of God is the starting-point for a life of faith as well. For example, why do we call God "Father"? Could we call God "Heavenly Mother"? Is "Heavenly Parent" more correct?"

IDEOLOGY OF PATRIARCHY

God is parental but there is not two Gods we call "He/She", "He and She", "They", "Invisible True Parents", "Heavenly Parent" or "Heavenly Parents." We call God "Father" or "He." Nomura writes, "the correct understanding of *Divine Principle* is that God is most essentially a masculine being who has dual characteristics of masculinity and femininity." This is the ideology of patriarchy.

The *Exposition of the Divine Principle* says God is masculine and the universe is feminine: "As one organic body, the universe exists in a relationship of internal nature and external form, with God as the internal nature and the created universe as the external form. Before the creation God existed alone as the internal and masculine subject partner. He therefore created the universe as His external and feminine object partner. This is supported by the Bible verse which states, 'man . . . is the image and glory of God.' (I Cor. 11:7) In recognition of God's position as the internal and masculine subject partner, we call Him 'Our Father.'" This is why we call our planet "Mother Earth". Jesus said, "Our Father who art in heaven." Father says we call God "Father" "just as the Christians do." (*Owner of Peace, Owner of Lineage*)

MONOTHEISTIC AND PATRIARCHAL

We call God "Heavenly Father" and use the pronouns "He", "His" and "Him." Technically God is our heavenly parent but it is not best to address God as the singular "Heavenly Parent" because it sounds gender-neutral and this might lead to using the pronoun "it". This could also lead to using unprincipled, unisex, awkward language like "He/She". God is not androgynous, "a being neither distinguishably masculine or feminine." And if we call God "Heavenly Parents" then we have two gods and have to use the plural language of "They", "Them" and "Their". Sun Myung Moon's theology is monotheistic and patriarchal. Father Moon called God "Heavenly Father" his entire life. He teaches that God is one person:

> Is God one person or two persons? ["Two persons."] What? God is one person. What kind of person is Ms. Park Jung Min? Would you say she is two people? ["Heavenly Father and Heavenly Mother—Two persons."] God is not those two persons, but in God there are two attributes. Does Ms. Park Jung Min have a conscience? Do you? ["Yes, I have."] Do you have a body? ["Yes."] Those two elements are attributes of one lady named Park Jung Min. God (likewise) has two natures, but God is the masculine subject partner as a body. (10-14-1988)

> What is the Subject Being of masculine character? Do you think it would be good if God were the Subject Being of feminine character? If there were a Subject Being of feminine character, there would necessarily be dualism because there must be a masculine (Subject) Being. Since God is the only God, God has an original masculine form with a subjective nature as a harmonious being of masculinity and femininity. The reason God has a masculine form is for God to have dominion over feminine beings. ("The Path of Religion," Oct. 14, 1988, Sermons 182, p. 61)

> According to the *Principle*, God has dual nature and He is the masculine subject. Why is God not the feminine subject? Because there cannot be two axes

> at the center. God is the upper axis holder and Adam is the lower axis holder. There is only one point, and that point can never be held by two persons. (8-30-87)
>
> Why do we marry? In a word, it is so that we may resemble God's image. As One Entity who exists with dual characteristics." (8-21-2004)
>
> Can you marry twice? You cannot conceive the idea of two Gods in heaven so you can't conceive the idea of two marriages. (4-22-90)

This means that there cannot be dual leaders, co-leaders or egalitarian leadership. "There cannot be two heads. There can be only one head." (4-19-2004)

DUALISM—DITHEISM

Wikipedia defines ditheism as "the doctrine of or belief in two equally powerful gods." "In theology, 'dualism' may also refer to 'duotheism', 'bitheism' or 'ditheism'. In a bitheistic system two deities are not in conflict or opposition, one could be male and the other female (cf. duotheism)." "One well-known example of a bitheistic or duotheistic theology based on gender polarity is found in the neopagan religion of Wicca, which is centered on the worship of a divine couple - the Moon Goddess and the Horned God - who are regarded as lovers."

Hyung Jin Moon teaches:

> Father his whole life prayed, "Heavenly Father, let me carry your cross—Heavenly Father, I love you—Heavenly Father, guide America—Heavenly Father, guide us." He didn't pray to Heavenly Father because he's a chauvinist or a misogynist or a phallocentric man who hates women. He prayed to Heavenly Father because the *Divine Principle* says, yes, God has masculine and feminine within Him but He is the subject position to humanity which is the object. So when you pray to your Father you are praying to the subject—the absolute subject of your life—the center of your life—of everything.

> *Divine Principle* says there is masculinity and femininity in God so [some mistakenly think] there is a Heavenly Father and Heavenly Mother. This is a move away from monotheism to ditheism. You have a real issue if Heavenly Father had a divine heavenly mother. He would have no need for an object partner of love. Well, I guess that means the Principle is completely wrong when it says humanity was necessary to be an object partner to God's love. If Heavenly Mother was there—she's a multidimensional divine being—He can relate with her in so many different levels—not these three-dimensional clay dust-formed people. (1-25-2015)

If God were two beings, a pair, and therefore had a subject/object relationship, why would there have been a need to create humankind as an object partner? God was alone and therefore lonely before He created the Universe. "God, too, feels loneliness when He is alone. He created the heavens and the earth centering on a relational ideal, and His reason was to find true love." (3-27-1994)

MOTHER

Father Moon teaches, "Heaven represents father and Earth represents mother. Your first mother is the woman who gave you birth. Your second mother is the Earth, which supplies all the resources for life. Like a woman, the earth digests everything without complaint… Your third mother is the Holy Spirit." (August 4, 1996) "The womb is the age of water. The earth is the growth stage mother and the spirit world is the completion stage mother." (9-9-1999) Death "is a new birth from the second universal mother's womb into another world, just like when a baby emerges from its first mother's womb." (January 1984) "Just as the fetus receives nutrition from the mother's womb, so we receive nutrition from the planet earth. The earth is our second mother. So we have to love the land. God loves the land and so we have to do so also. God created it for us." (12-19-1999)

HEAVENLY FATHER IS HEAD OF WORLD FAMILY

God is primarily masculine because His primary role is to lead. Father Moon often uses the terms "Vertical" and "Horizontal" when he teaches about relationships. He says, "What kind of

person is God? He is our vertical Father." (10-4-94) God created men to be the primary leaders reflecting Heavenly Father's primary masculine leadership. Just as the universe, including men, are in an objective follower role to God, women and children are in an objective follower position to men. God and mankind make a family. God is our Father and we are His children. Just as God is the head of the world wide family of mankind, men are the heads of their families. Just as we have a vertical relationship with God, women have a vertical relationship with their husband and children have a vertical relationship with their mother in the home. Father explains, "By raising children, a woman is able to understand God. When a woman understands the significance and value of her husband and then they have a child, their relationship establishes the vertical relationship. On the other hand, a man is supposed to love his wife and daughters, just as he loves God and his own father. In that way the power of love can be circulated in your family." (4-1-89)

"God created Adam and Eve in a vertical relationship with Him, intending for them to deploy that in a horizontal relationship with each other. First Adam was created from the image of God, and then Eve was created from the image of Adam. First came the vertical relationship, and from that the horizontal relationship." (April 5, 1981) When Father Moon says Adam and Eve (and therefore all husbands and wives) have a horizontal relationship he is talking about having the same value. In marriage a man and woman do not have equal authority. They have a vertical, hierarchical relationship. Yeonah Moon, the wife of Hyung Jin Sean Moon**,** uses a sports team analogy of the husband in the role of the head coach and the wife in the role of assistant coach.

HUSBAND IS HEAD OF THE HOUSEHOLD

Father often talked about how the sexual organs, the penis and vagina, dramatically illustrate how different men and women are not only physically but spiritually. For example, he said, "Man's sexual organ is made to be erect vertically. Vertical!" Father gave a speech titled "Address at the Eighth Anniversary of the 777 Couples Blessing" on October 22, 1978. He even chose it as being so important that he put this speech into his book *God's Will and the World*. In another speech he said, "Your sexual organ is absolute. You have an absolute part, the palace of your sexual organ. Although it may not look that special, if the sexual organ is used wrongly, the world, history, family and everything is destroyed. Man's sexual organ is made to be erect vertically. Vertical! Man should remain faithful to his cause rather than to woman." (1-1-97)

Here are some more quotes of Father teaching the vertical relationship of husband and wife:

> So when a child is born, it is protected and loved. Who embraces the baby? The mother, who is on the horizontal level, does. Then the mother and all the children are protected by the father. The mother must all the time, day and night, love this vertical love of the father. The whole family must together then turn around the vertical. Mother and children must turn. What makes this? Love (2-1-93).
>
> The role of a woman is to raise her children and to build a proper vertical relationship with her husband (5-26-96).
>
> As you know from the Bible, woman was created from Adam's rib. That means woman was copied from man, so to speak. Many American women try to control their husbands and sons, but that is not the vertical way. The husband or father represents the vertical connection. The elder son represents the right side, and the mother's place is the left side. That means she cannot control the vertical and she cannot control the elder son. These are not my words; this is the original Principle viewpoint. You American women need to know this point. (4-1-89)

In the speech he says “the husband is the head of the household.” One of the most famous passages in the Bible that deals with men leading and wives submitting is Ephesians 5:22-25 that says, “Wives, submit yourselves to your own husbands. ... the husband is the head of the wife.” Wives are to submit “to their own husbands in everything.” Hyung Jin Moon taught this at his Blessing given on April 21, 2015. Watch his video online titled “Covenant of the Blessing.” He also teaches from Emerson Eggerichs’ book *Love & Respect* that elaborates on Ephesian 5:33.

WOMEN CALLED TO BE HOMEMAKERS

Father often teaches about the objective nature of women. For example, he says, “If we say that heaven is a symbol of man, then earth is a symbol of woman. The house is the stage on which a woman’s life is played out. The mother is the center of a nest filled with love for all the members of the family. The family, with the mother at its center, is the basic unit making up the nation and the world.” (August 24, 1992) Father teaches that husbands and wives have equal value but different roles and responsibilities that complement each other. For thousands of years women have lived by the values in Titus 2:5 in the Bible (New King James Version) that says women are made by God to be “homemakers”.

WOMEN CALLED TO BE HELPERS

In Genesis we read that God made the woman to be her man’s helper, “Then the LORD God said, ‘It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him a helper fit for him’” (Gen. 2:18). Every woman’s career should be helping her husband. Yeonah Moon said, “When man and woman come together that is the woman’s real empowerment—living a life centered on God and come together with your husband as a helper—the position that God gave us. That is not a diminishing position, that is a glorified position that God gave us.” (video of sermon titled “Lions of God Arise” given (2-1-2015).

HEAVEN AND EARTH

Father teaches: “Man symbolizes heaven and woman symbolizes earth. Man and woman must come together and realize harmony. Man and woman are different from each other. Man’s muscles are hard, but woman’s are smooth. Men have beards, but women do not. Their voices are different, also. When man and woman are matched in a reciprocal position, harmony is made.” (*Blessing and*

Ideal Family) God is invisible but we can see God with our physical eyes when we see God manifested in the flesh in men and women. Mature, godly men are the concrete bodily form of God. Mature, godly women are God actualized in physical bodily form. Father teaches, "The invisible God can appear as a visible God through Adam and Eve" (8-9-98).

MAN SYMBOLIZES HEAVEN

Father Moon teaches:

> When man and woman become one, the whole universe can be one. Man symbolizes heaven and woman symbolizes earth. Man is in the subject position and he doesn't want anyone to intervene with his affairs. But love and truth can control anybody. Woman wants to receive love and she is passive. In this sense, man is to be a giver and woman is to be a receiver. That is why the oneness of man and woman is the oneness of heaven and earth. Only love can dominate the universe; therefore, you have to consider your spouse as greater than the universe. Our desire is to have an object who can receive and cherish us. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

> Only because of the striving nature of men has mankind achieved what it has so far. Men are made that way; they are designed to reach out for things which they cannot see with their eyes but can only imagine. A man naturally seeks after his dream, his ideal, while women are more concerned with the here and now rather than the future, intangible realm. Isn't this true? This is why we say that man is symbolized by heaven and woman by earth. (6-6-82)

> The husband is the substantial God on earth. Man is the substantial representative of heaven and woman is the substantial representative of earth. When they are harmonized, the ideal is accomplished, filled with joy and song. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

CIRCULAR MOTION

When men and women have give-and-take there is a circular relationship in which the woman revolves around the man who is always stable, steady, dependable, trustworthy and like a rock in the center. Women never "stand in", "act as", or interchange with men. Here is one of many examples of Father explaining this:

> We said that men and women are equal, but there should be a certain order or discipline between them. Equality is one thing and fairness is another; blind equality does not necessarily represent fairness. There is always a certain sequence or priority to be followed. God definitely loves both men and women as His children on an equal level, but there is a priority or sequence.
>
> Which one comes first to God? Why do you women say men come first? In everything there is a double layer, one internal and one external. When you make a circular motion based on this external layer, it goes in all different directions and ultimately is self-destructing. Lasting, peaceful circular motion is always set up around an axis. If you use that central line then no matter how fast or how long you turn there will be no destruction. In everything we need this central axis, which is formed by the person who can take and fulfill the responsibility. The more responsibility that person bears, the farther he advances toward the central position.
>
> Who is designed with a greater capacity for responsibility, men or women? That central responsible subject is man. In biblical tradition the blessing is always given to men because men are ultimately responsible. Blessing always accompanies responsibility. Mankind has traditionally lived like that, with women leaving their homes to marry their husbands and take their names. During war and all the dangerous, pioneering times in history the women were always behind the men, assisting. Men are in the subject role and women in the object role. (4-29-79)

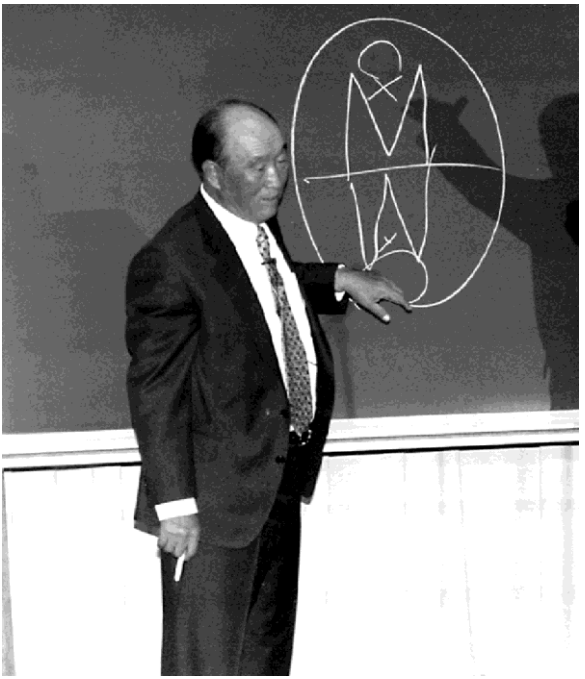
> How can we place woman in the position of the central axis? Who is the subject of the mother? (Father.) (5-26-96)
>
> God is not between subject and object, but is with the subject at the center. Therefore, the subject which is at the center of spherical movement represents God. … the object revolves around the subject. Therefore, the subject is not only the center of revolution, but is also in the position of governing the object. …God created Adam to play the role of His representative to Eve as her center. (*Divine Principle and Its Application* by Young Oon Kim)

WOMAN REVOLVES AROUND THE MAN

Here is another example of Father teaching the concept that women revolve around men in circular motion: "The main topic is the importance of man and woman. Should woman go around men or should men go around women? Western sisters, please respond. Well, the woman is smaller and shorter so actually it is natural that the man should be the center and help the woman. The woman should revolve around the man. Should he abandon her or protect her." (4-24-77) "You can learn a lesson even from dancing. When two people dance, who leads—the smaller woman or the larger man? Automatically, the one who is the larger will be the leader. Always the anchor is the one at the center, the bigger, stronger and taller person, the masculine one. This is the universal discipline; it's not something people can vote on. It's not something I decided, either. It is the way the universe itself designed men and women. That is why men are meant to be the ones to take the initiative; women naturally enjoy being lifted up when dancing. That is harmonious and beautiful. But if a man is twirled around, he feels uncomfortable." (9-7-86)

PATRIARCHY — SUBMISSION TO MALE LEADERSHIP

There is a saying, "A picture is worth a thousand words." Father has given speeches where he used the English letters M for man and W for woman and drew a diagram on the blackboard with the M on top and the W underneath. They neatly fit each other. The diagram is a dramatic example of his core teaching on patriarchy.



The Bible teaches that women are to submit to only one man in their life—their husbands, while men are to submit to all the men who are in leadership over them. Father Moon is in sync with the biblical worldview and ideology of "Submission." One way Father teaches this is by playing with the letters "M" and "W" saying, "M for men is like two peaks and W for women is like two valleys. The peaks must not go down to the valleys and vice versa. But no matter how you Americans think about this, you must follow this truth. Who doesn't like this?" When he says that the "peaks must not go down to the valleys" (11-12-85) he is saying that men always lead women and therefore men and women never interchange these roles. Father has used this play on the letters M

and W several times over the years to make his point about the differences between men and women—that men are always in the subject position to women and women are always to submit to and follow their husbands. In their 52 year marriage Sun Myung Moon and his wife publicly displayed and exhibited a subject and object, leader and follower relationship. In a speech Father gave to members on June 5, 1997 he talked about the letters M and W saying:

> Who is in the position of subject, husband or wife? (Husband) Especially you American women, answer which one is subject. You know clearly. (Men) Women. (Men) The meaning of 'woman' is warning to men. (Laughter) [Father writes on the board] This "M" represents man and "W" represents woman. When they are placed together they are inseparable. Together they create a whole human being. But on this diagram which one is up? (Man) How about here? Which side is plus, up or down? (Up) Even within the English alphabet the "M" is on the top and "W" on the bottom. But some American women claim that women should be subject.
>
> The concept and reality should become one. There should be no separation between them. Which is more precious, the visible or invisible world? (Invisible world) Based upon pragmatism there is no value in the unseen. In general America is enjoying material wealth. But because of this America is losing the concept of God. Therefore man is in the position of subject. If this is the formula, should the husband follow the wife or the wife follow the husband? (Woman should follow man) Who is in the position of subject? (Man)
>
> Some American women might believe that Reverend Moon always puts women down. They might come and sit here and listen to Father's explanation and eventually change their attitude. They will come to realize that Father is not a woman basher, but rather he truly promotes women's values.

> Those of you who are gathered here in front of Father today, show your hands who believe that women are in the position of subject. Especially you American women. Someone may twist reality and claim that Reverend Moon is brainwashing all the women.

There are some who think that Subjects and Objects can interchange. They can "stand in" or "act as" the other. This is not true. It is illogical and irrational. For example, God does not want women to "stand in" or "act as" the head of the house.

Every organization—such as the family, business, church and government—has one person at the top. Father Moon explains: "Each social unit such as the husband and wife and the family and so forth, must be properly centered. The family must be centered upon the head of the family. The tribe must be centered upon its chief. The society and nation have a head of state. From the very bottom, you circle upward all the way to the top. Within every social unit there is a head or a central figure." (9-7-86) For example, the Vice President of America is always in the object position to the President of the United States who is in the subject position. The Vice President never "stands in" or "acts as" the President of the United States if the President is able-bodied and fit. Men and women, like the Vice President and the President of the United States, have give and take and men and the President may do as their wives and the Vice President suggest but at no point do they ever change positions. They have give and take but never interchange positions. When the Vice President talks to the President and gives his suggestions he is always in an object position and never assumes the subject position. Just talking to someone does not change subject/object positions.

MAN IS PRESIDENT OF THE FAMILY

Father says, "Now you know what is the ideal family. The father is there representing heaven, the mother represents earth and then the children represent all mankind. Also, the family represents the sovereign nation. The father is like the 'president' of the family; that means he must take responsibility for upholding all the laws and orderliness of the family. He must be the one ultimately to distinguish between what is right and wrong within that family. If the father is in the position like a judge, then the mother's position is like that of a lawyer. The position of prosecutor is filled by the

law itself. We know that it is necessary to uphold the laws of a country. Likewise, within each family there should be laws which are upheld and enforced by the father. That is one of the father's responsibilities. There is a great distance today between this original standard and the reality of today's families." The "original standard" Father is talking about is the biblical standard of the traditional family.

FAMILY IS ONE SMALL COUNTRY

Father goes on to explain that a family is a "micro-country": "The nation is basically a collection of families in which all the generations are included. Each extended family symbolizes one small country. You must make your family one which is loved and approved of by all those around you—your parents must approve and your children must appreciate it. That is when the man actually becomes the 'president' of his family, which is a micro-country" (6-6-82). The relationship between the President of the United States and the Vice-President is hierarchical. But it is harmonious. They each have equal value as human beings but they have different roles and responsibilities.

HUSBANDS ARE KINGS OF THEIR FAMILIES

"The English proverb 'every man's home is his castle' represents the cultural assumption, handed down from antiquity, that the father is head of his household." Father Moon teaches that the husband is the king in his castle. Father commands all brothers to lead, provide, and protect and all sisters should stay home and teach and nurture their children: "School education should take place in the family, where the mother renders heartistic education and the father renders intellectual education. However, since fathers must work in order to take care of the family" they must depend on their wives to manage the home. The man, he says, is the "king" of his castle and the woman is to "attend" her husband and teach the children, "Women should be the central figures to attend their husbands, who are the kings of their families, and become the teachers of true love by rearing children to be future kings" (*Blessing and Ideal Family Part 2*). Fathers should also take time to teach God's values. Proverbs 4:1 says a father is to teach his children: "Hear, O sons, a father's instruction, and be attentive, that you may gain insight."

PATRIARCHY — HEAVENLY FATHERISM

God is a patriarch. Father calls this concept "Heavenly Fatherism".

In a speech titled "Heavenly Fatherism" he explained that men should be kings of their families and do so by reflecting God's loving kingship. This means men would not be tyrants who lead by using fear. Christians call it "servant leadership." He writes:

> **TRUE KING**
> When we say "kingship" people might be very sensitive and say, "What do you mean 'kingship'?" They are thinking of kinds as they have known them. Everyone can love a true king however. A true king draws people by love. All tyrants, all dictators from the past ruled by fear, so human beings' ideas about a king are very far from God's original idea of a king. All men should be a king in their own family. (9-1-90)

Here are some statements from several speeches where Father Moon elaborates on the concept of men being the king of the family:

> **FATHER IS KING OF THE FAMILY**
> The seed of life which is inherited from our father is almost invisible to the naked eye. However, contained within it is the entire universe. Combined with the flesh of the mother a new human being is created. Proportionately, the flesh of the mother makes up ninety-nine percent of the new child. Even though proportionately there is so much imbalance, still the seed of life is the center and core of the child. Therefore, we should love our father before we love our mother because our father represents the central core and stands in the position of God in terms of giving life to the children. The father stands in the position of king of the family. However, within secular families this concept does not exist.
>
> **CENTRAL AXIS**
> Have you American brothers loved and recognized your mother more than your father? (Our father.) Do you really mean that? (Yes.) If you truly mean what you say, then you are already qualified to enter into the kingdom. Father stands in the position of the central axis. However, if you place your 360 degree

axis on your mother, you don't know where you will end up because that center will float around. Who has the greater tendency to change easily, men or women? (Women.) Then how can we place woman in the position of the central axis? Who is the subject of the mother? (Father.) (5-26-96)

Complement One Another

In this world man stands in the position of king. King is subject. Woman is not subject, no matter how proud a position they possess the object cannot control the subject. American women, be careful. Women need to follow behind their husbands. I can feel that American women don't feel so good about that idea. No matter how you may feel, you have to take an opposite way from now on. America needs *Divine Principle*. This is not Father's viewpoint; this is the divine perspective. You have to know that clearly. Women have wide hips like a cushion whereas man has narrow hips and wide shoulders. So you see they complement one another; woman is wide at the hips and man is wide at the shoulders. Combined into one they make a square box, a secure foundation. (4-18-96)

Father teaches:

The female follows the male. The male follows God. Should the female complain? American woman, Western sisters, should men go around women or women around men? Men are usually larger, so it's better for women to go around men rather than over. The woman should revolve around the man. The woman is smaller and shorter so actually it is natural that the man should be the center and help the woman. Women, are you happy this way? When woman goes round man, should man abandon her or protect her? When man goes hunting or to work, man leaves woman at home, for her protection. Man should have the purpose and be in the position of protector to woman. (4-19-2004)

The husband is responsible to rear the children born to him and his wife to become filial children, patriots to the nation, saints for the world and finally divine sons and daughters of God. In this way, husband and wife relate as subject and object partners. In terms of quality, men and women are equal in value. However, in terms of the order of things, the husband, who holds the seed of life within him, is the subject partner. With her husband as absolute subject partner, a wife and the children should create one heart and one body and offer a true family to God. (4-29-79)

ADAM THE PATRIARCH

How would things have turned out if Adam and Eve, our original ancestors, had not fallen? In the first human family, Adam would have become the patriarch. (Cheon Seong Gyeong)

Do you prefer feminine men or strong, masculine men? Do you women know why you prefer rugged masculine men? Because that is the quality you don't have. That's because God created men and women in complementary relationship. Women are made for conquest of love by men….

COMPLEMENTARY ORDER

Equality is good, but not with blinders. Because you are not losing anything you don't take exception to this, do you? If a woman has to go out at night, she naturally often asks a man to go with her. You women are built as object, not subject. Even if your brother is much younger than you, he goes out at night all by himself without asking one of his sisters to go with him. That's the complementary order of the subject and object relationship which God established. (4-29-79)

Why do you marry? You want to receive love. Women are like that: "I want to receive love!" Man is the center or subject and woman is the object. Women must center upon or follow their husbands.

As the subject and object relationship is solved, it will extend all the way to the nation and to the world. (12-10-89)

Can you imagine a romantic love scene between some strong, John Wayne type man and a beautiful woman, where the man lays down and begs the woman to come to him? You just feel repulsed by that. But when John Wayne assumes the subjective, aggressive role and takes the woman into his arms, you enjoy it. That's natural. Woman cannot fulfill the man's role and man cannot fulfill the woman's role. (5-31-84)

In the book of collections of quotes of Sun Myung Moon titled *The Way of the Spiritual Leader (Part 2)* Father says Subject means Leader:

The Vertical Subject
Who is the vertical subject? There is none other than God who is the vertical subject.

When you go to a school, who is the vertical representative of the school? The vertical representative is the teacher who comes into the classroom. During that time, students must absolutely obey the words of the teacher.

You have to lead. What does it mean to lead? Although the four seasons change, you must uphold the unchanging vertical standard so that what you have led in spring, winter, fall, summer will not change. You cannot say, "Since spring has come, I am bored with the vertical position; how wonderful is the horizontal position. I do not like the vertical position. I will move to the horizontal position." A leader cannot behave in this way.

A subject has to have a strong power of life. Otherwise, one cannot become a subject. Moreover, a subject must contain love. Without possessing love one cannot become a subject. It means that one cannot lead objects. It is the same. Unless one

becomes true and truthful, one cannot become the center. Without love, one cannot become the center. Furthermore, a leader must be able to make progress and lead for eternity. Therefore, he must be true. One cannot become a leader without being connected to the true life and true love. Does this sound right?

What kind of person is the leader, the subject? He is one who takes responsibility for the whole.

What should the subject do? The subject has the responsibility to protect. Moreover, he has to determine the position and direction of the environment. After making the determination, he must protect and be responsible for it.

CENTRAL FIGURE PROVIDES PROTECTION

Who is the central figure? The center is supposed to be responsible for the whole. The center must know how to give everything. The center must take responsibility and know how to protect.

THE SUBJECT MUST PROTECT THE OBJECT

The subject must protect the object. He has the responsibility to protect. Then what does he have to do? He has to lead. He must point out the direction, which will lead to the right way. So should the wife listen to the words of husbands or not? [They should listen] If the husband behaves like a dog, aware only about the horizontal standard, and believes in himself more than God and thinks that he is absolute, then you do not have to obey him. However, if he listens to his conscience, is concerned about the family, society, and nation, then the wife must try to be in harmony with him. She has to follow her husband.

Father teaches:

I invite you to enter into a transcendent state and prayerfully ask God, “What is the center of the universe?”. The answer you hear will undoubtedly

be, “the parent–child relationship”. Nothing is more important or more precious than the relationship between parent and child. This is because it defines the fundamental relationship between the Creator God and human beings. (9-12-2005)

The key to world peace is to bring mind and body into unity and also man and woman into unity, which is another form of mind and body. The core of the American problem lies in the family, and the center of the family is the mother. If the mother plays her role correctly, then that is the way to restore the family. (4-24-94)

When you blessed couples start a family, the husband should lead a public life (life of service) and the wife should be in charge of the family life (the domestic life). Will you be a representative and exemplary family?

The wife should make her husband successful; that is to say that she should be his great supporter. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

Man is to be the plus center, and woman the minus center. This is the way of man and woman harmonizing. If we extend this model, we can see this phenomenon on the surface of the earth, in the mountains and the oceans. Which part of this diagram do you think should represent plus, the lower section or the upper section? [The diagram was a capital M directly above a capital W.] I ask in particular the American ladies here: who is in the position of subject, husband or wife? American women conceive of themselves as subject. Do you follow Father? (Yes; and Father is a man, and this teaches that) the wife is not supposed to walk in front of her husband. You are supposed to follow your husband’s footsteps. It is natural that since usually you are smaller than your husband, your stride is shorter than his and in a normal circumstance you need to make greater effort to

keep up with your husband. This simple concept is very important for American women, because the wrong concept here destroys the family, leading to a proliferation of problems. (8-9-98)

THREE MOST IMPORTANT THINGS

"We must always remind ourselves of the three most important things: love, life and blood lineage. The purpose of God's dispensation is to establish these three things substantially on earth. This is the way the whole world will be restored." (Aug. 20, 1989)

LINEAGE IS MOST IMPORTANT

Father teaches that the most important thing in life is lineage:

> Lineage is more important than life, and more important than love. Life and love come together, to create lineage. Lineage cannot be established if either life or love is missing. Therefore, among the three qualities that define the parent-child relationship — love, life, and lineage — lineage is the fruit. (9-12-2006)

> There is nothing more important to us than love, life and lineage. Among these, which do you think has most value? Many people think that it is love. However, no matter how valuable love and life are, they are horizontal in nature. They appear and conclude within one generation. On the other hand, lineage is vertical in nature and continues forever, generation after generation. (50 state speaking tour 2001)

ROLES

Here are a few quotes from Father where he does his best to teach the differences between men and women. He teaches there are roles for men and women with men always being in the subject position and women always being in the object position:

> Why is man subject and woman object? Because man carries within him the seed of life. Woman does not contain the baby seed. Woman's breasts

are the property of her babies. Her hips are the home of her babies. [Laughter] (4-18-96)

Between men and women, which is the subject? American women say, "The subject is woman." But the universe says "No!" to that, and will even spit on you. As you know clearly, the man is subject and the woman is object. Man is like the bone and woman is like the flesh. Flesh must totally surround the bone, sticking closely to it.

Subject and object must not reverse their order. The order must be straight, the channel must be straight. In America today, the women are trying to become king. The queen is trying to become king, meanwhile trying to push all men down to the level of servant.

What about you American women? Do you sit there and think to yourselves: "When will I ever come to hear Father say that woman is the subject? Will it ever happen, even in a million years?" The answer is no, it will not happen. However, the woman's position, the object position, is absolutely the most beautiful and it is essential. Woman is created for woman's purpose, which is not bad at all. When you follow the universal rule, harmony and happiness will always follow. When you go into the spirit world, this rule becomes totally obvious. (4-25-93)

American women are saying, "We want to be in the bone position. Let the men become the soft flesh." Today America is suffering from terrible confusion; people don't know which side is up. There is no understanding of right order, subject and object, or who takes initiative and who is responsive. What about you American Unification women, are you different? In America, many women pull the men around behind them and the men just follow timidly. I have never seen so many boneless men as in America: "Yes, dear, whatever you say." ...If you women don't change that trend, there can be nothing but darkness for the future of this country. America

will not survive. There must be God's order and sequence, a certain discipline. We must maintain that discipline.

Sometimes I receive the criticism that I am "anti-woman" and "pro-man" but that is not true. I am simply pro-natural law. At this time, many women are trying to take over the societal positions and responsibilities of men; but you are not equipped to do that. You have your own strengths and virtues. Unless you can understand the reality of natural law, you can never understand or make sense of all the crazy things going on in today's world. (9-19-82)

MAN IS FINAL DECISION MAKER

Here is an example of the Oriental way of doing things. National and world affairs are considered very important, and an Oriental man is not allowed to consult with his wife, or any woman, about them. He can consult his son about such things, however, because the father/son relationship has a vertical dimension. When the man turns, his son turns on the same axis. In contrast, women revolve along the perimeter; they are more apt to change their minds, and they are less consistent. Apparently, embedded in women's original nature is a greater possibility for change. If a woman turns around too fast, however, she may spin right off! A man may revolve like a top and never spin off because he turns right at the axis. Therefore, according to Oriental thought, in a traditional household the man can bring up important matters with his son, but not with his wife or any of the women in his household.

Neither Western nor Eastern women understand how it works, but the difference is that the Korean woman accepts and obeys if the man says, "Let us be alone." Even though she does not understand clearly why she has to go away while her son is allowed to be present, she obeys. Because she has heard a lot about this tradition, the Korean woman will obey and go out while the father and son discuss serious matters. If this happened here in the United States, the woman would immediately

retaliate, “What do you mean? You are discriminating against me.” She would feel that if her husband has a problem he should certainly let her know.

Once you talk to a woman, however, there are no secrets. Is the United States a more feminine or more masculine country? It is more feminine because all its secrets leak out. The original nature and God’s intention is for man to maintain the vertical axis. I cannot help it. This is not just my saying, but it is the principle of the universe. The vertical axis is one and not two. Man and woman cannot both be the center.

God has hold of the upper end of the axis and Adam holds the other, defining a sphere. That is how God designed the center of the universe. According to the Principle, God has dual nature and He is the masculine subject. Why is God not the feminine subject? Because there cannot be two axes at the center. God is the upper axis holder and Adam is the lower axis holder. There is only one point, and that point can never be held by two persons.

The final decision in a household in important matters is up to the man, even though the woman may discuss it with him. The man may consider her opinion, but he makes the final decision. Even though he may go through the mother to disclose the decision, the father makes the decision. The mother may implement the decision, but the decision is the father's. The mother cannot directly pass on the inheritance to the sons or daughters, because the father is the axis.

In the United States people do not care about the natural order of things. They are at best confused. They do not know who should make the decisions or why. I am emphasizing this because there are blessed couples here. We have our own blessed families, and this is the heavenly law. The man must manage national affairs, and the woman can manage the home.

If a man and woman divide and each occupies a position, where should the woman be? The man's organ is positioned to give and the woman's to

> receive. Even in the act of love, we should keep that position, the man up and the woman down. Otherwise, she cannot receive. This is the principled view; it is physical law and natural law. This biological law governs all the cosmos, without exception. (8-30-87)

SUBJECT ON RIGHT—OBJECT ON LEFT

Men are the final decision makers in the family. The wife's submissive position is symbolized by her always standing, sitting and walking to the left of her husband. They have equal value but different positions and roles that complement each other. Father said: "There is a common understanding in Asia that the woman stands on the left hand side of her husband" (6-5-97). Mother is always to the left of Father. The only rare exceptions are at some public events where Father is seated next to the podium and Mother has to sit on his right side. Father says, "People say we are a very loving couple. Mother never stands on my right side, always on my left" (5-1-81). "If man is on the right side, woman becomes the left side in order to form a horizontal relationship with the universe. If man is the subject, then woman becomes the object in order to form a vertical, upper and lower relationship with God. Therefore, marriage is not for the sake of just man or just woman. We have to get married in order to follow the heavenly law. This is why man and woman have different aspects. They are born that way in order to match with the heavenly law." (12-19-90) A woman's place is in the home. She has only one leader to stand to the left of. A man's place is in the competitive marketplace. He has many leaders he has to stand to the left of.

Just as a wife is to walk on her husband's left to show respect for his position, a man is supposed to walk on the left of his superior. When George Washington was a boy he was influenced by a little book of maxims titled, "Rules of Civility and Decent Behavior in Company and Conversation." One of the rules says, "In walking ... place yourself on the left of him whom you desire to honor." Father explains that his male translators are to stand to his left. Father said in a speech ("Father's Nation is My Nation" September 2, 1990): "Father is the subject and the subject has to stand on the right. The object, the translator, should stand on the left side." Because the subject stands on the right side, and the object is on the left side, my interpreter stands to the left of me.

That's why I always face the women's side. In every relationship, according to the Principle and whether you like it or not, there has to be a clear subject and object. (9-2-90)

Father gave a speech titled "Glorious True Family" (8-9-98). Here is some excerpts:

> The American woman's concept, "woman first," is not so good. What do you want? Do you want to see God as a female God or male God? [Both.] Father is asking you to make a choice. [Male.] The reason is that man carries the seed of life. Is that true?
>
> In terms of the human body, man is in the position of bone, and woman is in the position of flesh. You may argue about why man should be bone and woman flesh. Bone can exist without much water, but flesh is over 70 percent water. That is why woman's shape is concave, like a container receiving water. The shape of man's love organ is like a bone. That particular organ should be strong like a bone. Then you can make love and function really well. Suppose that particular organ is like regular flesh, then what will happen? Flesh mixed with bone is man's sexual organ. Flesh mixed with water is the woman's body.
>
> Who is the vertical figure? The husband. The wife is the horizontal figure. While woman turns around 360 degrees, man is in the center, not going around 360 degrees.
>
> Do you ladies want your husband to be feminine or masculine? A man-like man is unchangeable. A changeable man is like a woman. The woman's way is to change easily. Again, who is more changeable, man or woman? [Woman.] Then do you want to see your husband standing like a rock or pillar, not talking too much but having a stern appearance, or should your husband be more like a pet dog, moving around and around. [Like a pillar.]

According to Father's teaching, in our family the wife should be like woman and the husband should be like man. That is the only way we can build ideal, glorious and true family. Between man and woman, who has bigger hips? Why? They are like a cushion for sitting long time. That is woman's life. That is natural law. Man's hips are sharp, therefore he cannot sit a long time and goes out running around and working. How wonderful woman's place. That is why woman is originally shaped such a way as a gift from God. Therefore if a woman goes out more than husband, your family, also your nation, will be in crisis.

This good cushion which woman has naturally, women should be able to embrace all the children and grandchildren and eventually present them to the husband and grandparents. So woman is in the queen's position to raise the children of your own family and tribe. Whereas husband is in the king's position of the entire nation. That is why the husband is supposed to go out and to move more. Suppose Father just stayed in Korea for God's providence. Then you wouldn't have any chance to learn about the reality of the Kingdom of God. Instead, Father came out of Korea and came to America.

…when the husband goes to work every morning, if the wife is left behind without having been kissed, then all day long she will feel kind of lonely and sad, saying, well, my husband doesn't feel good today.

In the individual, the mind is in the position of plus, the body in the position of minus. It is the same for both man and woman. They all should become one. Man represents plus, woman minus.

PRIMARY ROLE OF WOMEN

Father Moon teaches that the primary role of women is bearing and caring for children:

> The first priority for a married woman is to bear children. Woman is like a field to receive the seed. That's why you are biologically different from man. Are those differences for your own sake, or for your children? Women's physical characteristics allow her to bear and nurse children.
>
> Because women themselves do not have seeds, they have to receive them from the man. When a wife receives the seed from her husband, a miracle takes place there: either a son or a daughter. The mother provides the flesh of a child, and the father provides the bones. Each person's basic shape is determined by his bone structure, which is from the father.
>
> As females grow up, they start thinking about having children. On the other hand, when males grow up, they tend to think about the world and the universe. This is because man represents God, who is seen as our father, while the earth is represented as a mother. Women have a tendency to desire material goods; they yearn for beautiful and colorful things. Instead of looking upward toward God, they tend to look down to the earth. A man, on the other hand, has the tendency to look up for something bigger and greater. (4-1-89)
>
> Women today like the concept of equality, don't they? But they cannot change the fact that they are different. How can they claim equality when men need two helpings of food and women only one? Men work at heavy labor for hours and hours, but not women. A woman wrestler could never defeat a man. How could men and women be equal then? Only in love are men and women equal. Could you want any better equality? In primitive times a man had to really work to take care of his family. Because man could be independent in this way, God gave woman the one ability that man can never

have, which is childbearing, to balance the different capabilities. But lately women are even refusing to have children. (3-11-79)

PRIMARY ROLE OF MEN

Father Moon teaches that the primary role of men is to provide for his wife and children:

> God thought a lot about how to create women. Instead of making women taller than men, He made women a little shorter, but with bigger hips. Why? Because women are to assume two roles. First, in giving birth to children women need a strong foundation, and second, they will be living most of their lives in a sitting position, so God provided built in cushions. Men have narrow hips without cushions because men are supposed to take the initiative and always be in action. A woman is to be objective, receiving grace from her husband and always sitting home comfortably waiting for him. That is the way it should be. At the same time a man should be masculine, and that is why he has broad shoulders and strong arms. Going out into the world is the man's role. (5-1-77)

> Men have broad shoulders, not for you to boast about but so that you can carry the burdens of your family. You have to work and sweat so that you can take care of your wife and children! (5-31-84)

> The husband is more rugged and stronger so that he can work more and earn money for the family. (5-26-96)

Men should be the sole financial provider of their families and women should be stay-at-home moms. This is the traditional family or biblical family. God's divine plan for the family is for men to compete in the marketplace and for women to be homemakers. They have different roles and responsibilities.

The Bible speaks strongly about men providing: "If any provide not for his own he hath denied the faith and is worse than an infidel" (I Tim. 5:8). This is also translated as "If any one does not provide for his relatives, and especially for his own family, he has

disowned the faith and is worse than an unbeliever." Titus 2:5 commands women to be, "keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed." If a man does not provide he is an infidel and if a woman does not stay at home she is blasphemer. You can't use stronger language than infidel and blaspheme. If we violate God's laws we destroy the family. Marriage and family are sacred and this is why the Bible speaks so forcefully about the traditional roles of men and women.

"As made clear in the Holy Scriptures, the man has the responsibility to provide the living. Since he is also the leader, it falls to him to manage the money and worry about it. Therefore, it is not the wife's responsibility to earn the living, manage the money, or worry about it. She should be given a household budget but she should not be responsible for the overall management of the income" (*Fascinating Womanhood* by Helen Andelin) If a husband and father dies or is incapacitated then the other men in the wife's family and spiritual community should provide for her.

GOD'S NATURE

We have looked at some of the characteristics of God's nature and found that God created the "Pair System" in which the man is in the subject position, the leader position and center position. Woman is in the object, follower position and "revolves" around the man. Father Moon teaches that men are plus and women are minus, men are bones and women are flesh, and men and women have equal value but have different roles such as the man having the role of protector. Let's continue looking at the nature of God and mankind.

GOD'S INTERNAL CHARACTER

What more can we learn of God's internal character by looking at the world around us? The first thing we see is that all races, nations and cultures treasure the love in the family unit. It is a universal and fundamental truth that every person needs and desires a united and loving family because it is in the family that we experience the highest joy and happiness in life. Where does this love originate? From our cause God. God is a God of true love.

In a speech given March 28, 1979 he said: "The family is the building block of the Kingdom of Heaven. …The basic unit of

happiness is not the nation or world, but the family. …The base for the Kingdom of Heaven is the family. The base for the true ideal is the family. The base for the true love and happiness is the family."

Father Moon teaches "The family is the fundamental unit for building peaceful nations and ultimately a peaceful world. (10-20-01).

BEAUTY

When we look at the world around us we see that each person seeks beauty. People love art, music, dance, paintings, literature and poetry. It is human nature to seek beautiful homes, food, cars, clothes, hair styles, cosmetics and jewelry.

The most beautiful artwork is by God. What is more interesting and gorgeous and exciting than human beings? Every person is unique and manifests God's vast love. Every stage of life from babies to elderly is beautiful. We also see God's beauty in nature. It is awe inspiring to see mountains. It is amazing to see the variety of animals and fish. Each one is a masterpiece. God is the ultimate artist. We marvel at the sensitivity and perfection of beauty in the shades of colors in flowers. God is the ultimate painter. Every person's desire for beauty is an effect of God. God is a God of beauty.

TRUTH

Men and women seek truth. This is why people read, express themselves by writing and go to libraries and bookstores. There is a deep desire in mankind to see children receive an education. We are all born with an innate need to learn, explore and grow through knowledge and wisdom. People study science and the humanities to master the environment and human relationships. God is a God of truth.

GOODNESS, JUSTICE AND FREEDOM

Mankind has a conscience that desires to do good works. This is evidenced in charities, volunteer work and the many social and professional organizations that champion high ethical standards. People have through religion and philosophy sought guiding principles of goodness. Our conscience makes us feel remorse when we do wrong, and we feel indignation when we see

wrongdoing. Because our creator is sensitive and idealistic, people are sensitive and idealistic too. One of mankind's greatest ideals is freedom. We honor those heroes who fight against tyranny. God is a God of goodness, justice and freedom.

ORDER AND HARMONY

We see order, law and principle throughout the universe. Incredible order and harmony permeates creation. Kant said, "... the glorious order, beauty, and providential care, everywhere displayed in nature, give rise to the belief in a wise and great Author of the Universe." Kepler said, "The universe was stamped with the adornment of harmonic proportions.... illustrating the glory of the fabric of the world, and of God the Architect." Cicero said, "The celestial order and the beauty of the universe compel me to admit that there is some excellent and eternal Being, who deserves the respect and homage of me." God is a master scientist—a God of law, order and principle.

CREATIVITY

Every person has a deep need to create and to build. We admire and treasure the creations of man, and we stand in awe of the creations of God. We see infinite uniqueness in the universe. Snowflakes have six sides, yet no two snowflakes are the same. How many snowflakes have fallen in history? Every person has two eyes, a nose and a mouth, but no two faces are identical. Even identical twins are not identical. Every human being has a unique personality and a deep need to express that special individuality by creative work. This deep motivation to be creative and to strive for excellence comes from our creator God. God is a God of creativity.

ABSOLUTE VALUES

Mankind seeks eternal, unchanging, and absolute values. A marriage ceremony is when a man and a woman publicly pledge eternal, absolute and unchanging love. We desire to make commitments for life. Many songs are about love that lasts forever. For example, one popular song says:

It's very clear
Our love is here to stay
Not for a year
But forever and a day

In time, the Rockies may crumble
Gibraltar may tumble
They're only made of clay
But our love is here to stay

ETERNAL

People want eternal unity with their families, relatives and friends. We also have the wish for an eternal afterlife because we do not have enough time on earth to express all our love and creativity. Kant said, "... it is plain that the hope of a future life arises from the feeling, which exists in the breast of every man, that the temporal is inadequate to meet and satisfy the demands of his nature." The desire for eternal life and eternal, unchanging and absolute values comes from God. God is eternal, unchanging and absolute.

The universe is in perpetual motion. It not only never runs down, God's love and energy constantly increases forever.

THE PURPOSE OF LIFE

A fundamental question asked by countless people is: What is the purpose of life? God's motivation for creating the world and especially us as His children was love. Simply love. He wanted and needed to share His love. Joy is the true purpose of life. God wanted His sons and daughters to be happy and joyful. To give them the highest happiness, we read in the *Bible* in Genesis 1:28 that He gave Three Blessings: "And God blessed them, and God said to them, 'Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the earth and subdue it; and have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the air and over every living thing that moves upon the earth.'"

Father gave a speech on October 20, 2001 at the United Nations titled "The Path to World Peace in View of God's Will." He talked about the Three Blessings of God saying, "The First Blessing of God to human beings, 'be fruitful', called God's children to become ... true persons." For the Second Blessing, 'multiply', he says that men and women are supposed to become a "True Husband and Wife." Then they are to become "True Parents to their children, inheriting and passing on true love, true life and true lineage from God. ... Then they would have become the Lords of true love. ... This was God's Third Blessing. This is the Blessing

to create a living environment in which we can experience joy and happiness, having dominion over the creation. This includes the care and preservation of the world's ecological balance as true masters of the creation...."

UNIVERSAL PRINCIPLES

He ended his speech saying that we "must transcend the power of politics and national diplomacy" and "ground ourselves spiritually and morally upon God's ideal" and live "according to universal principles" and center our lives on "God and the laws of Heaven."

FIRST BLESSING

The First Blessing is for men and women to be fruitful. When a tree becomes fruitful we mean it has reached maturity and can bear fruit. It has reached its full potential and perfection. This is figurative language meaning we too must reach our full potential and perfection. The *Bible* says, "You must be perfect as your Heavenly Father is perfect" (Matt. 5:48).

GROWTH PERIOD

To reach maturity God created everything to go through a growth period of three stages: Formation, Growth and Completion.

Growth Period

Perfection

3.	**Completion Stage**	**Adult**	**Horse**	**Tree**
2.	**Growth Stage**	**Child**	**Yearling**	**Sapling**
1.	**Formation Stage**	**Infant**	**Colt**	**Seedling**

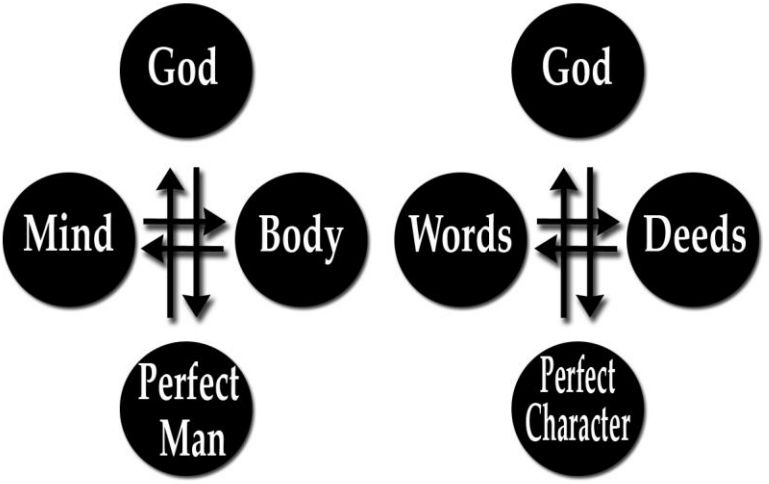
For example, a tree is first a seedling, then a sapling, then a tree. Animals go through three stages such as foal, yearling, and horse. People are first an infant, then a child, then an adult. The *World Book Encyclopedia* says, "Physicians commonly divide pregnancy into three, three-month parts called trimesters" and "Labor has three stages."

God is perfect and for men and women to become one with God they must become perfect also. During this growth period all creation including our physical body grows to maturity automatically. Our spirit does not grow automatically. It takes conscious, creative effort to develop spiritually.

One of God's primary characteristics is creativity. Man must inherit creatorship from God in order to become mature sons and daughters. Every person must fulfill a special condition. God gives us the responsibility to become co-creators. Together with God we create ourselves.

We can only be truly happy when we are spiritually mature. There is an innate gyroscope or nature that drives us to seek perfection.

When the *Bible* speaks of human perfection, it means perfection of heart. Men and women were to have their minds (or words) and their bodies (or deeds) centered on God. When men and women would say good and do good they would have perfect character. Men and women would have the value of God. Every person would be a temple of God: "You are God's temple and God's spirit dwells in you" (I Cor. 3:16).



RULES OF GOD

Sun Myung Moon teaches that "we need to live according to universal principles and rules of God." I do not have the space in this book to go into those principles and rules. I do so in my book *Good Values*. In Father's teachings we learn that we are called by God to follow the rules that God has revealed to him. For example, in one of his speeches he teaches:

> Tell your hand not to touch anything except godly things. Your original, pure mind says your hand should not touch a woman's hand until you are married. Your eyes should look only in the right

direction, your nose should smell only the right things, your mouth should eat only the right things, your hands touch only the right things and so on. (12-1-82)

Father Moon teaches the importance of living a moral life in tune with our conscience so we can find "genuine happiness":

ORIGNINAL MIND

Every person has a God-given original mind that longs to live in a universe, nation, neighborhood and family wrapped in the loving embrace of parents and siblings.

GENUINE HAPPINESS

What kind of person does the world call happy? What is the basis of happiness? Does power and authority bring happiness? Does having tremendous wealth bring happiness? Does happiness come from possessing a unique talent? Does happiness come by becoming a world-renowned scholar or gaining a coveted position? None of these guarantee happiness.

Nothing external can be the basis of eternal happiness. Sooner or later the happiness it brings will fade, stimulating anew the search for happiness. In the end, a person finds genuine happiness in a family that has loving parents, a couple in true love, and children who are devoted and faithful to their parents. …Unity between mind and body means to live in absolute obedience to the voice of the conscience. (America tour speech 2004)

BUILD A HEALTHY SOCIETY

Father Moon encourages every person to care about others, to live for the sake of others rather than being selfish and self-centered: "I would like to see all Unification Church members reacting to their surroundings with a strong conscience not being apathetic at all. You must be people who care and who will work to build a healthy society." (12-27-81)

Here are some more thoughts on fulfilling the First Blessing:

A LIFE OF TRUE LOVE

To resemble God, the original Being of true love, we should become the owners of true love. We should embody true love and practice it in order to develop our character. This is the way each of us can become true parents.

Then, what is a life of true love? True love is the spirit of public service. It brings the peace that is at the root of happiness. Selfish love is a mask for the desire to have one's partner exist for one's own sake; true love is free of that corruption. Rather, its essence is to give, to live for the sake of others and for the sake of the whole. True love gives, forgets that it has given, and continues to give without ceasing. True love gives joyfully. We find it in the joyful and loving heart of a mother who cradles her baby in her arms and nurses it at her breast. True love is sacrificial love, as with a filial son who gains his greatest satisfaction in helping his parents. God created the universe out of just such love: absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal, investing everything without any expectation or condition of receiving something in return.

ROOT OF GOD IS TRUE LOVE

True love is the wellspring of the universe. Once a person possesses it, true love makes him or her the center and the owner of the universe. True love is the root of God and a symbol of His will and power. When we are bound together in true love, we can be together forever, continually increasing in the joy of each other's company. The attraction of true love brings all things in the universe to our feet; even God will come to dwell with us. Nothing can compare to the value of true love. It has the power to dissipate the barriers fallen human beings created, including national boundaries and the barriers of race and even religion.

The main attributes of true love are that it is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal, so whoever practices God's true love will live with

> God, share His happiness and enjoy the right to participate as an equal in His work. Therefore, a life lived for the sake of others, a life of true love, is the absolute prerequisite for entering the Kingdom of Heaven. (50 state speaking tour in America in 2001)

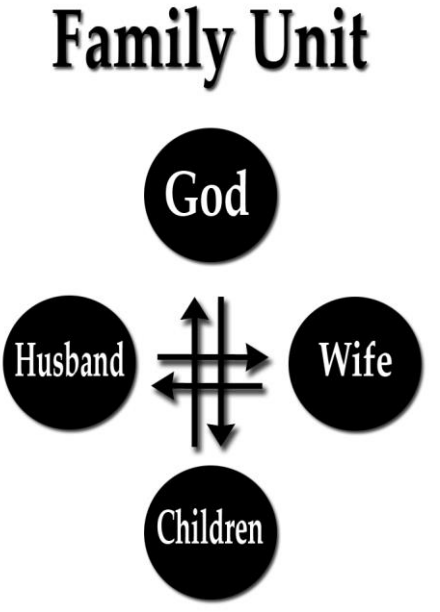
Father teaches that the greatest goal we can have is to become godly people, "Is there anything higher or more precious than to be a son or daughter of God? If anything were higher, then surely human desire would aspire to attain it. But there is nothing higher." (50 state speaking tour in America in 2001)

SECOND BLESSING

The Second Blessing of God was for people to multiply. After reaching perfection, God wants men and women to marry and have a family. When men and women love God, God would return that love. Husbands and wives would love each other with all their hearts and love their children completely. Physically, parents would give their children a good home, clothes and food. Spiritually, the parents would teach them by word and example of God's love and truth. One of God's deepest desires is that boys and girls grow up in a safe environment.

FOUR POSITION FOUNDATION — IDEAL FAMILY
We experience the greatest love in the family. God made the family to be four positions consisting of God, husband, wife, and children. And when there is perfect give and take between all four parts then this would be the basic unit of joy, life, and of society. God's number one goal is for every person to experience true love in an ideal family.

FOUR POSITION FOUNDATION



Sun Myung Moon says:

> Marriage is not a light matter, but should be taken very seriously. Marriage is more serious than your own life, than heaven and earth, than your entire

hope and ideal. When you find happiness in this serious area, you will find ultimate happiness. (From a speech titled "God and the Building of the Kingdom of God," April 17, 1977).

Why, then, do we have to get married? It is because God exists in dual essentialities and men and women must reflect those essentialities. Therefore, men and women must come together and unite in total resemblance of God's image. That is why marriage is one essential factor in your total growth. Marriage is for the purpose of blending men and women into God-like figures, to put people into the image of God so that when they are elevated into spirit world they can enjoy a relationship with God together. We come to the clear conclusion that God created all things and human beings for the purpose of consummating His love. Where can that love be consummated? It can be done while we are here on earth, in the relationship between husband and wife, in the family. Therefore, marriage is the most important event of human life. (1-2-83)

Do you know what is most precious to a man? It is woman. Likewise, what is most precious to a woman is a man. The purpose of life, into which we all are born, for a man is woman, and for a woman is man. Man and woman are born to live for each other. The harmony of their body shapes and of their organs of love are simply made so. (11-28-86)

God made man to have a woman. Man alone is only half a human being. Woman herself is only half a human being. But through marriage they can form a whole human being. (1-1-96)

Is a woman supposed to live for the sake of another woman? A woman's original purpose of creation is for the sake of man. And a man exists for the sake of a woman. Therefore, men and women need each other; they have to meet.

Why do people get married? A nose functions

properly when it has two nostrils. By the same token, a single man or woman is not complete. All your organs should function for the sake of truth. (12-1-82)

Here are more wonderful insights from Sun Myung Moon:

IDEAL FAMILIES

What do you think is God's ultimate purpose for creating human beings? Simply put, it is to experience joy through relating with ideal families filled with true love. (9-12-05)

TRUE FAMILIES

God is Father, the Creator, and human beings are created as His children who are to become one body with Him in true love. True human beings are originally made to live joyously as mind and body unite with God's love, and become intoxicated by it. God created human beings so that He Himself can experience infinite joy watching true families live in happiness. Through His true love He can live together with them. God desired to achieve harmonious oneness with human beings through true love.

God's dream is to realize true love together with human beings. God desires to feel the joy and happiness of true love eternally in the world of heart together with human beings, who are His children, as well as being the highest and the most precious beings of all creation. (6-11-98)

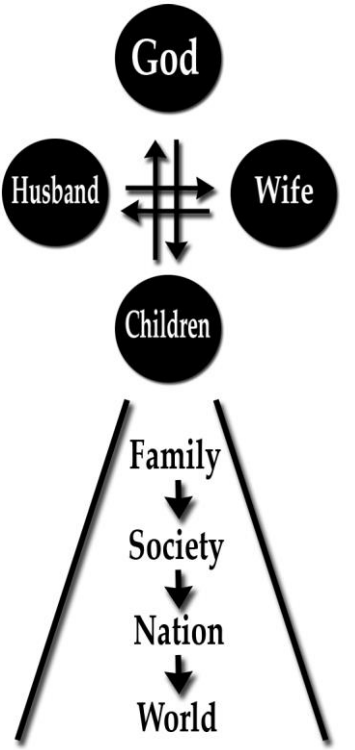
As a husband and wife it is only when we gain the victory with our children, together as a family, that we can say for the first time that we are a family that has realized the ideal and purpose of creation. It is only after the father and mother have become one and then the children and parents have become one that a perfect Four Position Foundation is formed. (5-23-07)

Husband and wife, united with hearts of love, must establish their family beyond any levels of the past,

dedicated toward the goal for the future. Otherwise you cannot enter the eternal Kingdom of Heaven where God dwells. That is the ultimate goal and God's purpose of creation. It sounds like a dream, but it is attainable. Therefore, you must promise me that you will go toward that goal of the ideal family. Those of you who want to become like that, raise both your hands and pledge. (10-13-1970)

ONE WORLD FAMILY

God's plan is for ideal families to form ideal societies that would form ideal nations and an ideal world living as one huge, harmonious family.



THREE OBJECT PURPOSE

In the family there are four positions of God, man, woman and child. Each can be in the subject position and have the other three as its object in giving love. For example, God can be the subject of love to the man, woman and child. The child can be the subject of love to God, to his or her Dad and to the mother. There are 12 directions of love.

Father Moon teaches:

> We have to have a definite idea about God and His grandchildren. God has a triple objective purpose, of three purposes and three objects. The four positions are necessary as a foundation for action and maneuver. God is the almighty subject, but He is not happy alone, so in order to move He had to have objects. This is why He created man and woman.
>
> But those three are not complete either. Since God wanted to move in spherical motion, He needed the fourth position, to form a south pole to His north pole. Subject and object were divided in order to take after God's own image. If plus and minus have give and take, another being of plus and minus is bound to come into being. For these purposes God needed grandchildren. Without having the fourth position, man could only have two objects. If he did not have three objects like God did, then he could not be elevated to the same level as God, or become His perfect object. (June 22, 1980)
>
> The triple objective purpose. Everyone together creates the four position foundation, as the nucleus. This is where all the love relationships are focused—parental love, children's love, conjugal love.
>
> Every form of love is found within the family. Within the triple objective purpose, which encompasses the love between the four elements of

> the family, the number 12 is the result. (January 8, 1984)

The Triple Objective Purpose deals with the family. It does not apply to all the subject/object, to all the leader/follower relationships in the universe. Proper subject/object, leader/follower relationships bring order to the world. In love every member of the Four Position Foundation can interchange or switch positions of subject and object in love. Let's call this fluid, horizontal relationships. Father Moon also teaches that every member has roles and responsibilities in different positions of authority that do not interchange or switch. Let's call this static, vertical relationships of leadership. God is the Subject partner and the universe is the Object partner. God is the leader of the man and the man submits and obeys Heavenly Father's commands. The wife submits and obeys her husband's commands. And the children submit and obey their parent's commands. The circular motion is that of the object revolving, circulating, orbiting around the stable Subject. The Triple Objective Purpose in family relationships is about love, not authority.

NO SWITCHING OF AUTHORITY

Father's youngest son, Hyung Jin Sean Moon, gave a powerful sermon (The Might of Heaven, March 1st, 2015, part 1—see YouTube.com) explaining how subject and object do not "switch" in authority. He teaches that subjects and objects such as husbands and wives never interchange in authority. He says that in the home of his father, Sun Myung Moon and Father's wife, Hyung Jin Nim's mother, Hak Ja Han:

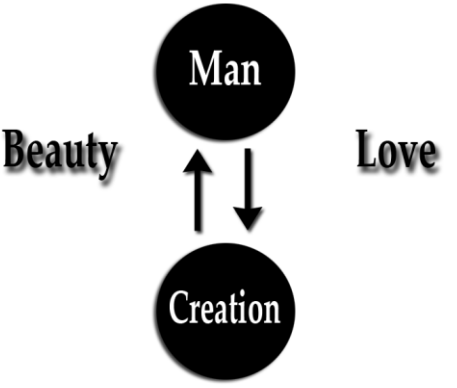
> there is an absolute order. There's a subject and an object. In our house Father makes the decision and we obey because we're objects of his love. A grandchild can go up to him and yank on his beard but that's only because it's in love. The Three Objective Purpose can only be done in love. It's not talking about switching of authority. It's talking about love. There is an order in the kingdom.
>
> Father has a clear order. I can only go to him in love as his object. I can approach him. Sometimes I could be the subject of love. In that situation I'm a little baby and I'm just loving him so much that he's

> overwhelmed by that and he just says. “Wow! This baby is amazing.” In that situation, yes, that baby can be the subject. That doesn’t mean the baby is his king! It doesn’t mean they can switch around. It’s in love. And Mother is equal to Father in love and in value, but in authority there is a clear order.

Subject and Object in hierarchical authority relationships is about respect. In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* Father says, “A true family is a place where a husband and wife each love each other and live for the sake of the other, as if the spouse were his or her mother, father, or sibling. It is a place where the husband loves his wife as he loves God, and the wife respects her husband as she respects God.”

THIRD BLESSING

The Third Blessing is to have dominion over the earth. Dominion means a dominion of love. Centered on God, men and women would love creation. What does creation return? When we love and care for our home and car they return beauty.



When we love our dog or cat, they return beauty too. And, of course, when we love our family and friends, they radiate. God is the Lord of mankind, and God created men and women to be Lords of Creation. We reflect God directly, and creation is in the image of people and indirectly or symbolically reflects God.

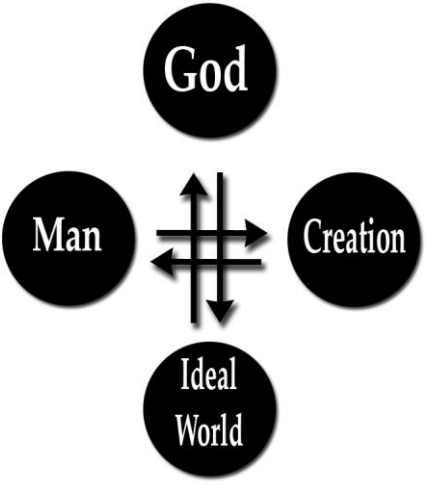
CREATION REFLECTS MANKIND

The creation reflects people in many ways. The earth resembles the human body: The earth's surface covered with plants compares with man's skin covered with hair; the earth's underground waterways compares with man's blood vessels, and the earth's molten core compares with the marrow within man's bones. Human beings and animals have similar body structures. People can imitate all animal sounds. Mankind and plants are similar too. Plant's leaves function like our lungs; xylem and phloem are like arteries and veins. Our bodies are made of minerals such as calcium and iron. Calcium is the fifth most common of the chemical elements in the earth's surface. The human skeleton is made of calcium which is one-fifth of our total body composition. The earth's surface is two-thirds water and our bodies are approximately two-thirds water. We feel joy when we see our reflection in a mirror or a photograph. Because creation reflects us, we receive joy in seeing nature.

IDEAL WORLD

God wants mankind to live in perfect harmony with nature. In God's ideal world there will be perfect ecology with our environment. Billions of people are supposed to use the resources of the earth to build a highly advanced technological civilization in which every person will have all their physical needs fulfilled. Sun Myung Moon says that we should "advocate bringing together material wealth and spiritual values; we value and emphasize both, not abandoning one for the other" (4-1-89).

God's Third Blessing was for mankind to take dominion by building a beautiful paradise on earth—a world utopia—an ideal world.



"We are called to this sacred mission—the building of world peace. Our noble march shall begin today toward that glorious future. Let us build a true world of peace together with God" (*Textbook for World Peace*). God and mankind's dream of world peace can finally come true because we have the ideology of the *Divine Principle* which will unite mankind into one loving family.

UTOPIA

In a speech titled "The Historically Highest Career" given by Sun Myung Moon on November 1, 1983 he said:

> If there is a religion that God wants to see, it must have the clear purpose of fulfilling God's and humanity's desire. That religion alone will become the historically highest religion. We talk about a utopia or the ideal world, but what is it really? ... I want you to clearly understand the definition of the ideal world: it is the world in which people are

intoxicated with true love and live in everlasting joy.

The Unification Movement has the clear goal of utopia centered upon God. The utopian religion is the Unification religion.

Don't ever think that utopia is something unreal or fantastic. Instead, we must convert the everyday things of life into the utopian way; you can only do that through love.

The Unification Movement is truly a historical religion and we are going to live the highest, most honorable career. That is the creation of the true utopian way of life.

KINGDOM OF GOD ON EARTH

At Yankee Stadium in New York City on June 1, 1976 Sun Myung Moon proclaimed that God's dream is an "ideal world" and someday: "We shall all truly become brothers and sisters under one Father, God. This will be a world of love, a world of happiness. Our planet will be one home, and mankind will be one family. God's will, His long-cherished desire from the beginning of time will finally be fulfilled. This will be the eternal, ideal world of God. Indeed, it will be the Kingdom of God on earth."

In a speech titled "Textbook of Love" Father Moon teaches:

What do we mean by the essence of love? The essence of love is not for just an individual but it is for the sake of the whole. For that reason, that essence is enjoyed and appreciated by everybody.

FIRST CAUSE IS GOD

Who is the center of that essence of love? Human beings cannot be the center because we are created, or resultant, beings. Therefore, there must be a causal existence and this being must be the cause of the universe, the cause of the entire creation, including humanity. That first cause is indeed God.

It is important to realize that when people speak of God, they often think of an entity which has nothing to do with themselves or their lives, but that is not the case, God is someone who is already

entwined within you and you are within Him. Let's consider magnetism. The two poles of north and south are automatically related. We could say that they are entwined; they cannot be separated.

Human nature is such that we always desire a fuller relationship of love; we always want to go deeper and deeper into love. It is important to know how we can be harmonized with the essence of love in the universe. First of all, we must think of God as our subject. Each person is always in the position of object to God. What is the subject/object relationship centered upon? It is centered on love. Thus the essential relationship between God and man is that of the subject and object of love. The Parent/child relationship is the essential, universal relationship.

You enjoy saying, "God is my Father," because it sounds good. But I want to know, is God really your Father? A father touches and embraces his child when it is growing up. …Actually, God is the closest being to you. He is the center and the essence of love and you are the fruit of that love, so there is an intimate closeness between you and God.

MIND MASTER OF BODY

When you embrace the universe, you embrace yourself. What kind of self? The true self. When a person achieves that, his mind and his body are entirely harmonious and united. In that case, you will never put the desires of your body before the desires of your mind. Your mind will be the master of your body. When your mind is filled with true love, your body will be obedient to your mind. That was God's original ideal. The original God-given mind has the tendency to embrace the universe, not to just search after selfish gain.

First you must become the kind of man or woman whose mind and body are united, centered upon God, and then you can embrace a person of the opposite sex with the same qualifications.

We are speaking of the textbook of love. What is a textbook? A textbook is a guide; anybody who follows the same guide or formula will achieve the

same results. With the textbook of love, you will first of all embrace your family. What are the components of your family? First there are the grandparents and then the parents. Then there are the children, which is your position, and then the grandchildren.

FAMILY — CENTER OF THE UNIVERSE

The question to ask is, do these four levels of couples belong to God? Are they God-centered or not? The family is the center of the universe; it is the building block and when you duplicate the building block, you build the world.

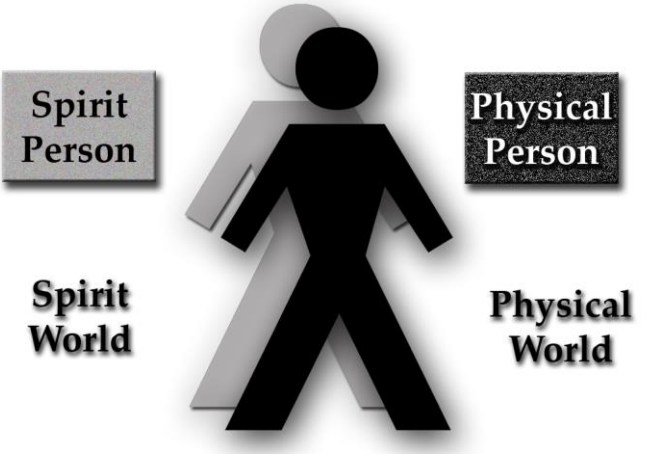
The family is the microcosm of the universe and the textbook of love for universal relationships. (2-5-84)

SPIRIT WORLD

One of the deepest questions mankind has asked is: What happens to us after we die? Is there life after death? And if so, what is it like? The *Divine Principle* clearly reveals the answers to these questions. God's goal is for each person to live a perfect life of love and beauty, not only for eighty, ninety or a hundred years on this earth, but for eternity. After people die on earth God has prepared a spirit world for us to live in. Spirit world looks like this world with the only difference being that its environment with its trees, streams and mountains are even more beautiful than our physical world.

PHYSICAL BODY — SPIRIT BODY

God created our physical bodies to die and become one with the earth. This is natural. Then how are we to get into the spirit world? We go there in our spirit body. Each person has two bodies—a physical body and a spirit body. The *Bible* says, "And the dust returns to the earth as it was, and the spirit returns to God who gave it" (Ecclesiastes 12:7). And "It is sown a physical body, it is raised a spiritual body. If there is a physical body, there is also a spiritual body." (I Corinthians 15:44)



LIFE BEGINS AT CONCEPTION

Father Moon's son, Hyung Jin Nim, says that he asked Father when life began. For many years those in his movement believed it was when a baby took a breath. Hyung Jin Nim says he asked Father about this and he said that was wrong. Life begins at conception. A person gains a spirit body then. So if a woman has a miscarriage she has created a person who lives in spirit world. He or she will be taken care of there and grow to adulthood in spirit world. Therefore abortion is wrong.

The author Raymond Moody has researched thousands of cases of people who had near death experiences and wrote a best-seller called *Life after Life*. On a talk show he told of an experience in a hospital of a woman who had been in an accident and taken to an emergency room. Doctors and nurses worked frantically to save

her and finally brought her back from near death. When she awoke she explained how she had an out-of-the-body experience.

She said she saw them working to make her breathe again. Then she flew up to the roof of the hospital and saw a single red shoe. Then she came back and reentered her body. A surgeon happened to be in the room when she told this story. He was intrigued and had a maintenance man take him up to the roof. He went to the exact place she said the shoe was and sure enough there was the one, red shoe. This woman had traveled with her spirit body.

NEAR DEATH EXPERIENCES

A pediatrician, Melvin Morse, studied many near death experiences of children. He did not believe in an after life when he began his studies. Now he believes. Critics of those who write of people who have had out-of-the-body experiences say that they are simply being fooled by chemicals in the brain, hallucinations from lack of oxygen or the effects of drugs given patients. Morse writes how he found in his research that this is not true. He has written several best sellers such as *Closer to the Light* and *Transformed by the Light*.

The moment we die our spirit bodies immediately enter spirit world. It is far greater than this world. There is no concept of space and time. There are no clocks. Travel is instantaneous. And we do not need to sleep. There is no concern for food and shelter as we have on earth. There is no death. There are no boundaries. No limit of movement. We can fly like a bird.

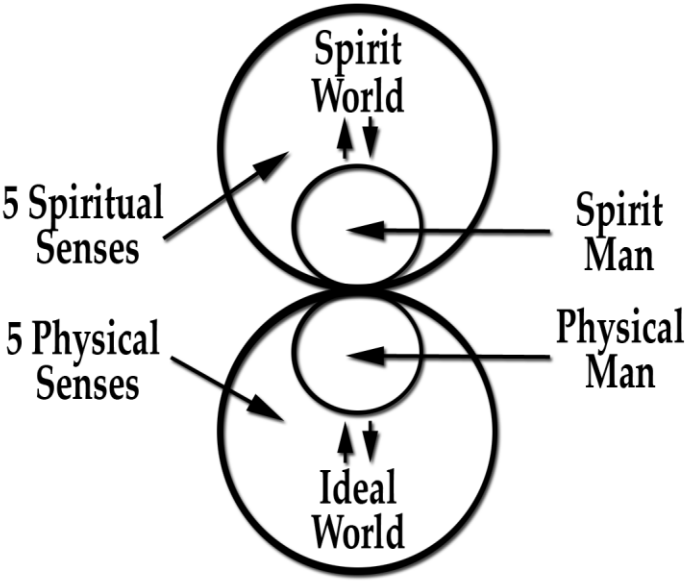
What do we do in spirit world? We spend time giving and receiving love from our spouse, our children, our families, our friends and from God. For eternity we grow in knowledge and our lives increase in excitement. Heaven is not a boring place. For eternity we are on an exciting journey. Spirit world is infinite, and we have eternity to explore it.

If it is so beautiful in spirit world then what is the purpose of living on earth? Although our life on earth is only a flicker of a second in length compared to our eternal life in the spirit world, how we live our life on earth is extremely important. Just as the womb of our mother was where we formed our physical body, this

world is the womb for our spirit body that will live forever in spirit world. We grow our spirit body by living in accordance with God's universal and absolute values.

TEN SENSES

God has given every person five physical senses and five spiritual senses which makes a total of ten senses.



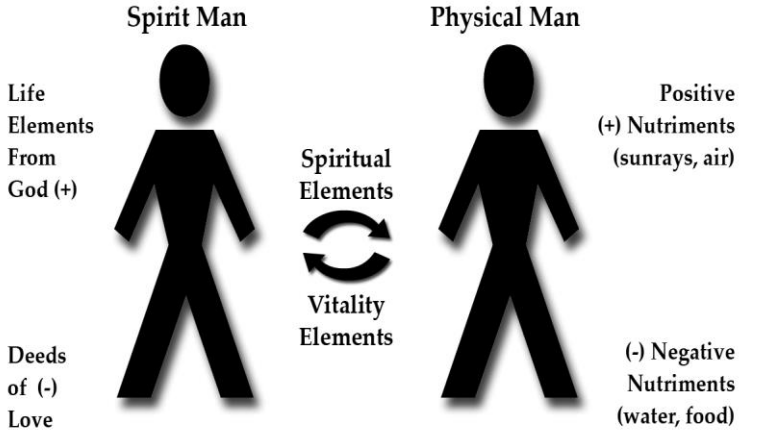
God created us with the ability while we are on earth to see, hear, taste, smell and touch not only this world but spirit world as well. Perfect people on earth would be the mediator between the two worlds. Their spiritual senses would function like that of a radio or television set. They could freely perceive the spirit world whenever they wanted just as a radio or television set can receive radio or television waves.

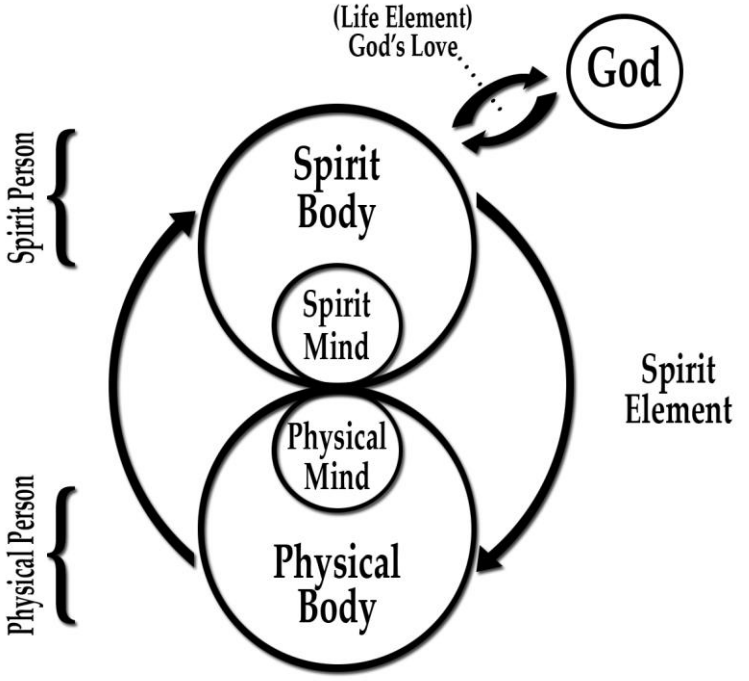
Because we have a spirit body when we are on earth, we could have a relationship with a person who has died and is living in the spirit world. A person on earth could shake hands with someone in the spirit world, and it would be just as real as shaking hands with

anyone on earth. There would never be separation between people. For example, in God's ideal world let's say a married couple lived to old age and the husband died. He could still live with his wife on earth. He would stay with her and be just as real as when he had his physical body. They could still embrace—even sexually.

SPIRITUAL GROWTH

Our physical bodies grow by receiving proper nutriments of air, light, water and food. Likewise, we grow spiritually by receiving spiritual nutriments of truth and love. When our physical bodies do deeds of true love then our spirit body receives vitality elements and grows. As our spirit grows, it gives spiritual elements to our physical body which is felt as spiritual joy or renewed energy.

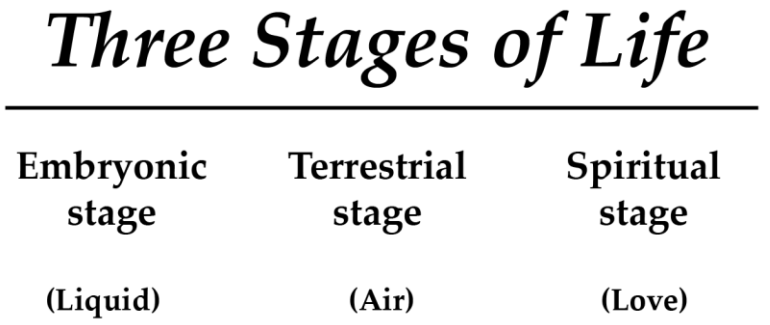




God's plan is for each person to live his or her life on earth receiving love and truth from God and living a life of service. By the time each person physically died, he or she would enter spirit world having grown to moral perfection.

THREE STAGES OF LIFE

There are three stages in our life: the nine months in the womb, our life on earth and our eternal life in the spirit world.



The first stage, the embryonic stage, is our first world where we live in a compact universe of liquid. In these nine months our lungs are prepared to breathe air, but we don't use the lungs until we leave the womb and enter life on earth. The second stage is the terrestrial stage. We breathe air and are to spend our time growing our love lungs to breathe in the spirit world that has no air. We breathe love there. The third stage is the spiritual stage in which we are spirit like God. It is the third and final stage. The first stage, in the womb, is a world of total darkness; the second stage, earth, is a world of half darkness and half light; the third stage, spirit world, is total light.

Father Moon reveals: "In this physical world, we pass through three stages, the era of water, land and light, the world of sun. Centering on the sun's position, the galaxies are always there, but we cannot see them. We have night and day on earth, but the spirit world is always bright, there is no night. We have the eras of water, of air, of love. Love never stops, like sunlight. Love should flow constantly, day and night, pole to pole. That's spirit world. We travel from the world of water to the world of land, and eventually to the world of spirit. This final stage is the era of the sun. The mouth represents the era of water and the nose the era of land. You drink water with your mouth and inhale air with the nostrils. Your eyes deal with light from the sun." (12-19-1999)

We read in a speech titled "The Path of Life For All Mankind" (1999): "Human life can be divided into three periods: life in the womb of about ten months, a physical life of about a hundred years, and life in the spirit world that lasts tens of thousands of years into eternity." … "If we look at our own faces, we also see three stages: the mouth, the nose and the eyes. These reflect the three periods of our lives. The mouth symbolizes the period in the womb, which is a world of material. The nose symbolizes the period on earth, which is the world of humanity. The eyes symbolize the period in heaven, which is the spirit world. … To die means to move from a world of land, where we crawl and walk, to a world where we fly freely. We pass through death in order to become qualified travelers who, with love, can enjoy the entire universe. That is why death is, in reality, a new birth."

Father Moon teaches:

> What is the purpose of dying? We die in order to fulfill our craving to experience all the love of God, which is limited here on earth. In a way, physical death is the discarding of our clumsy physical bodies, these "vehicles" we have used on earth. God enjoys total freedom in the universe; so when He sees His children suffering from so many things here on the earth, He can hardly be happy about it. In God's scheme of creation, "death" is another birth for man. We can achieve liberation from the shackles of our physical bodies and enjoy the kind of freedom God enjoys; so death is really a second birth.
>
> The day the children were born was a day of joy and should be remembered by the parents. Why shouldn't their day of second birth, which we call "death" now, be remembered with joy, as well, since they should be going on to the greatest freedom of all? Some of you might think my subject tonight is very deep and profound and even "weird"; you may wonder why I choose to talk about death on New Year's Day. But I have a good reason to do so; to become men and women of true happiness here on earth, we shall be the people who have conquered the fear of death. …
>
> Once we are given total freedom, we can exercise dominion over the entire universe without any

restrictions. Does that interest you? Everybody is interested in total freedom, total joy, total love; but in order to achieve those things, we must do something before we die. Just simply death would not bring us freedom and joy. We've got to obey God's commandments while we are here on earth. Are you ready to obey God and His commandments to the letter, every iota?

The first law of God has to do with the dual nature of man—one of spirit and one of flesh: mind and body. Mind is subject and body is object. The body must obey the mind; that is a law, the principle. Are you interested in doing that?

Mankind is designed, according to God's creation, to live three distinct lives. The first life is the vegetation period within the mother's womb. When you are conceived, you begin to live a life within water. When you were in your mother's womb, did you desire to leave, or did you want to stay inside? It is natural for the baby to want to stay inside. The door for leaving the womb is very small; so when God tells the baby he has to leave through that door, he would probably say, "Oh, no, no! I can't do it!" In order to leave the mother's womb, an incredible amount of disorder, pressure, and even pain has to happen to the baby. If he recognized that, the baby would not want to go through with it. Until the very moment when the mother gives birth to him, no baby willingly comes out. When the mother gives the final push, reluctantly the baby comes out into the world and starts to cry.

In a way, the process of birth is equivalent to the process of death. It's fearful and unknown. When the baby is expelled from the womb, he has an umbilical cord still attached, through which he has been receiving nourishment. Of course, that cord has to be cut. This seems to be destructive, from the baby's point of view. Until then, he was receiving his breakfast, lunch, and dinner from that supply line. He might think, "Everything is miserable. Even my supply line has been cut off!" When God looks down at the crying baby, would God feel sorry and cry with him, or wouldn't He smile very broadly?

It is the exact sort of transition from this world to the

next world. We think that this is the only life there is; we cling to our little planet. But after a certain time, God knows that we are ready to go into the next world. As a natural consummation of our life, all men and women are supposed to be elevated to the same level of freedom which our Father in heaven can enjoy. That is, the freedom of having a spirit body.

The creation is designed so that parents and children can enjoy life together. The baby comes out of his mother's womb so that he can someday talk and play with his daddy and mommy and they can become a family. By the same token, we are given another birth where we can join with our eternal Father, God, and live with Him forever in the same realm. This has been the plan from the very beginning of creation.

Our life here is like being inside the womb. We need proper nutrition, we need to be healthy, and we need to live according to certain principles and rules of God. Consider the insect: first it is an egg, then a caterpillar, then a butterfly. Haven't you ever wondered why you can't fly, since even tiny insects can? Even the seeds of the dandelion have a little parachute that enables them to fly all over the place. Plants, birds, and insects can fly; what about us? We are supposed to be the supreme creatures of God, but we can't fly! Each of you must have felt like protesting to God, "Why do I always have to walk everywhere? Why didn't you make me capable of flying?" God's answer to you is very simple: "You will fly. All you have to do is wait a little while and you will fly better than any other creature. But while you are on the earth, you must use your time wisely. You are in the workshop of life, where you have to practice my rules."

Each of you wants to know what God's rules are, right? Someone might complain and ask if he can take his body with him to spirit world. That is like asking, "Can I drive my old, clumsy Volkswagen into spirit world?"

There is an insect called a cicada that makes a noise during the summer. For a while, it is encased inside a certain shell and surrounded by liquid. As long as the cicada refuses to break out of this cocoon, he is simply rejecting his wonderful future of flying around from

tree to tree. We are encased inside a shell of flesh here on this earth, destined for a wonderful future. Before now, 1982, we have lived with a certain fear of death. But from now on, we can be free of that fear and understand what death really is. (1-1-82)

What kind of world is the spirit world? It is the eternal world. It has no air like ours on earth but its atmosphere is love. There people breathe the air of love. All human beings are meant to experience this. … We start life in the watery atmosphere of our mother's womb where we receive oxygen and nourishment through the umbilical cord. However, even inside the mother's womb, lungs are developing for breathing air, which is the atmosphere of the next life. Do you follow? The unborn baby has a nose, but since the umbilical cord provides oxygen the nose doesn't function until birth. However, along with the lungs, the nose perfects its capacity to function within the mother's womb.

When the time of birth arrives, the baby experiences a revolutionary shakeup! The previous system for receiving oxygen and food—the umbilical cord—is cut and tied. Since the former existence is severed, as far as the baby is concerned it suffers a kind of death! The end of the world has come! All its previous environment—the placenta, the umbilical cord—is broken, and the fluid that surrounded the baby drains away.

But birth means entering a new womb — that of the universe. We are all living now in the universal mother's womb. In the previous life, we lived in a liquid atmosphere; here we breathe air. While surrounded by amniotic fluid, we were preparing for this present atmosphere. By the same token, while living in this universal mother's womb, we are breathing air but also we are developing our capacity for love. We are preparing for one final stage.

Before birth, many of the baby's capabilities are latent; the nose and the lungs had developed, but they remained dormant. By the same token, the capacity to live in love, which we must nurture while we are on earth, remains dormant until we experience another birth. This new birth is a revolution like our first birth;

it involves some destruction as well.

In the spirit world we don't need a physical body, a physical atmosphere, or physical clothes. There, we take off our shackles and see new horizons as our latent capacities begin to function. We put our ability to breathe love into action. In the sight of God, what people call death is actually a new birth and our entry into eternal life.

LOVE LUNGS

To be able to live in that atmosphere of eternal love, we have to prepare our "love lungs" here. Thus in our short time here on earth, we must nurture our capacity to love and our sensitivity to it. Eventually, we will leave this universal physical womb and be born into the divine womb — the spirit world, the universe centered upon God. God exists at the core of love, so when we awaken into the new world, we too, can exist at the core of love. We can become the center of love.

When we are elevated to the sphere of God's divine love, we have total freedom. We can have a body if we like; or if we don't want a body, we don't have it — we can be like God and function exactly like Him. Love is an absolute prerequisite for this; without love we would choke to death there. Once we are the center of the universe, we can go to the realm of perfect resemblance to God. Ultimately, every person is entitled to be exactly like God; when we move into the divine realm, God is in us and we are in God; we are inseparable. …

SACRIFICIAL LIFE

Why must we be sacrificial? It's not an easy thing. There is no better way to develop our capacity to breathe the atmosphere of love in the next world than by leading a sacrificial life. Sacrifice is the most dramatic and intensive way to complete the love lungs we need in the next world. (12-1-82)

ETERNAL LOVE MAKING

In God's plan every person will eventually find their soul mate, their other half, and be married for eternity. In spirit world we can enjoy having sexual relations with our spouse forever. Father

Moon teaches, “According to the ideal of love, all love relationships in the animal and plant kingdoms are for reproduction only. Human beings are the sole exception. Humankind enjoys freedom in the conjugal relationship of love. This is humanity’s special privilege as the lord of all creation. God gave the blessing and infinite joy of love to His sons and daughters.” (4-16-96)

FAMILY IS THE SCHOOL OF LOVE

We prepare our love lungs by giving and receiving love in the family that is our school of love. The four loves in the family are parental love—the love of parents for children; conjugal love—the love between husband and wife; filial love—the love of children for parents; and sibling love—the love between brothers and sisters.

Parental Love	**Parents → Children** The Love of Parents for Children
Conjugal Love	**Husband ↔ Wife** The Love Between Husband and Wife
Filial Love	**Children → Parents** The Love of Children for Their Parents
Sibling Love	**Children ↔ Children** The Love Between Brothers and Sisters

In Genesis we learn that God created us to be male and female. Every person is to have a soul mate and the two become one flesh. God said, “It is not good that the man should be alone” (Genesis 2:18). God’s plan is that marriages are eternal and every person will have an exciting time exploring love and the universe with

their wife or husband. In the spirit world we will be like angels in the sense that we will not die. In Luke 20:36 we read, "We will be like the angels, for we will never die."

OUR ULTIMATE GOAL

Sun Myung Moon has traveled the Spirit World with his spirit body and teaches what it is like there. Here are some of his insights:

> Mankind also grows through three stages. When you reach the spirit world you will realize why you had to live this way on earth. Our ultimate goal is to become like God — to become perfect like Him and become friends with Him. The fear of death can be eliminated because there is no more death. In the truest sense, death is a new birth! Those who try to deny the existence of spirit world are pitiful people.
>
> Think of the launching of the Apollo and Columbia spacecraft. Once in orbit, they reach a zero gravity stage. They need no additional fuel to maintain their orbit because they meet no resistance at all. By the same token, once we are elevated into the spiritual plane of life, we will find no resistance. We will be able to travel throughout the entire universe in a moment, at the speed of thought.
>
> If there is a star made out of diamonds, wouldn't you want to go see it? Perhaps there is a planet made out of gold and silver. These celestial bodies may be billions of light years away, so even by traveling at the speed of light you would not be able to reach them. But in the spiritual realm, you can go there on the spur of a moment by thinking you can be there instantly. So would you rather live here in this clumsy world for eternity, or upstairs?
>
> I am eager to explore every corner of the cosmos. Given the physical distances of this universe, it might take many billions of light years, but in the spirit world everything is right in front of you. If you want to see something, it appears before you; you don't even have to wait! (12-1-82)

> Do you think you have to worry in spirit world about three meals a day? Or perhaps you have to acquire lots of clothing and comfortable surroundings? How about housing? It's all there. You don't need to work on those things. In spirit world, you can surround yourself with lots

of flowers if you wish. As long as you enjoy them and want them around, they will be there. But the moment you say, "I'm tired of flowers now," they will disappear because you don't want them anymore. Then if you feel like enjoying a great meal, all you have to do is think about it and it will appear before you. How convenient that is!

When you live in that world, you don't have to worry at all about what to eat, what to wear and so forth, but you have to live there for eternity. That's a long time. How would you spend all that time? You've got to do something. In that world, the effort of everyone is concentrated on one thing: how to come closer to the love of God. The occupation every day, all day long is getting closer to God and receiving more of His love. How can you do that? You have to learn how to love the world and humanity here on earth. You must live with that kind of spirit so that you are already eligible to be the recipient of the love of God. Then His love will reach out for you. (1-11-87)

I talk about true love almost every chance I get. You don't know what the spirit world is like, so I am trying to teach and train you so you will be able to fit in there perfectly. In the spirit world, the atmosphere is that of love. If we don't know how to love, we suffocate; we go into hell. In the spirit world God is right at the center, and everyone is competing to get closer to Him. On earth we compete with each other and try very hard to accomplish things — but for what? What motivates people? Getting nearer to God is all we care about and strive for in the spirit world. (8-30-87)

We have learned in this first chapter of the *Divine Principle* that God's plan was for mankind to live as a peaceful, harmonious family in peace and prosperity—a utopia, an ideal world. In the next chapter you will discover why we are not living in an ideal world.

Chapter 2

The Fall of Man

GOD'S PROVIDENCE

In Chapter One we learned that God's primary goal is for His children to live in an ideal world. Human beings have never experienced utopia. Human history has been a nightmare of war—not world peace. The *Divine Principle* reveals for the first time how God has worked in human history to help us build His dream of a utopia. The *Bible* is the greatest book ever written because it reveals the most about God's providence. Providence is defined as "divine guidance or care." God has worked with care throughout human history to guide mankind to fulfill the Three Blessings.

GENESIS

The *Bible* begins by saying that God created Adam and Eve, the original parents of mankind. We learn in the first book of the *Bible*, Genesis, that they tragically fell away from God into ignorance. Many painters and writers such as John Milton in his classic *Paradise Lost* have moved us with their interpretation of what happened in the biblical story of the Garden of Eden.

THE FALL OF MAN

All cultures provide some conception of the origin of evil, many of which are remarkably similar. Ancient Egyptian stories tell of a golden age which was lost by the "ancestress of woman" and of a serpent. In ancient Greek literature Pandora's curiosity led her to release evil into the world.

The story of Adam and Eve in the *Bible* gives us the most information. What happened to Adam and Eve? In Genesis we read that after every time God created He said it was "good," but when He created Adam and Eve it was "very good." This is an understatement. God was delirious with excitement on the sixth day to see his precious children. Then we read that God placed "the tree of life...in the midst of the garden and also the tree of

knowledge of good and evil." And then we read, "... the Lord God commanded the man, saying, 'You may freely eat of every tree of the garden; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall die." Everything was good and pure. Adam and Eve "were both naked, and were not ashamed."

Then tragedy strikes. A "subtle" serpent lies to Eve saying that she will not die if she eats the fruit. She sees "the tree was to be desired" and eats the fruit. She then gives the fruit to Adam who eats. We read that they both then "knew they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves aprons." Then we read they then "hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God among the trees of the garden. But the Lord God called to the man, and said to him, 'Where are you?' And he said, 'I heard the sound of thee in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself.'"

God then says that the serpent who "beguiled" Eve was "cursed; upon your belly you shall go, and dust you shall eat all the days of your life." And Adam and Eve were told their life would be a hard one now. God then drove them out of the garden and we read "at the east of the Garden of Eden He placed the cherubim, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to guard the way to the tree of life" (Gen. 3:24).

TREE OF LIFE — SYMBOLIC

Much of this story is symbolic. The "Garden of Eden" is symbolic for the kingdom of heaven on earth. For a brief time only goodness existed on earth but since the Fall of Adam and Eve the Tree of Life has been barred from mankind. The Israelites in the Old Testament wrote of their desire for the Tree of Life. It is the ultimate hope of mankind. In the Book of Proverbs we read, "Hope deferred makes the heart sick, but a desire fulfilled is a tree of life" (Prov. 13:12). And in Revelation we read, "Blessed are those who wash their robes, that they may have the right to the tree of life and that they may enter the city by the gates" (Revelation 22:14). What is the Tree of Life? What are we missing that makes our "heart sick"? What is this "hope" that is being "deferred"? The *Bible* shows that attaining the Tree of Life will bring happiness. What is the essence of happiness? What Adam failed to achieve in the Garden of Eden was perfection of character—the fulfillment of

the First Blessing. The Tree of Life symbolized Adam who was to be the first person to achieve moral perfection.

What Adam and all people since him have sought is to grow out of their immaturity and become true adults. All adults since Adam fell have become adults only physically but remained spiritually, mentally, emotionally children. No one has ever grown up spiritually. Every person's innermost hope is to become a Tree of Life. We all have an original nature within us that desires to become a true man or a true woman.

Next to the Tree of Life stood the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Next to Adam stood Eve. Eve is the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. The fruit of the tree has often been interpreted as a literal fruit even though the *Bible* does not specify what kind of fruit. Michelangelo painted a tree depicting the Tree of Knowledge on the ceiling of the Sistine Chapel. He shows Eve eating what many think to be an apple and handing one to Adam.

NOT A LITERAL FRUIT

But the fruit couldn't be a literal fruit such as an apple because God is our parent of love who would never put poisonous fruit in front of His children and simply tell them not to eat it. Sin does not come from eating food. The *Bible* says, "Not that which goes into the mouth defiles a man, but that which comes out of the mouth, his defiles a man" (Matt. 15:11). Father says that some believe the "human fall was caused by the ingestion of a literal fruit, but that is ridiculous, because the original sin entails a problem of lineage." (8-9-98)

Fruit trees multiply through the seed contained in the fruit. Likewise, mankind was to multiply through Eve producing children. Eve was the fruit or seed of mankind. Father reveals, "the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil represents Eve's reproductive organ, and God gave the commandment to protect her chastity. When He created us, God invested His entire heart and soul in our reproductive organs. He created them as the palace of true love, the palace of true life, and the palace of true lineage. The story places the fruit in the context of good and evil in order to tell us that if Eve were to have a relationship with a king, she would give birth to a prince, and if she were to have a relationship with a Mafioso, she would give birth to a villain. The quality of

the harvest depends upon the seed that is planted. It was called the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil because it could manifest good or evil" … The commandment given in Genesis 2:17, 'You must not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for when you eat of it you will surely die,' was a strong warning about Eve's love. Eve had to protect her sexual purity until she achieved maturity with a God-centered character and entered into a blessed marriage with God's permission. Had she succeeded, she would have multiplied God's eternal love, life and lineage." (50 State tour America 2001)

The commandment by God to Adam and Eve was the same commandment that all parents should give their children, saying, "My children, you are young and immature. Some day you will marry and have children. If you have children now, you will not be mature enough to be good parents. You must first grow up and become adults before you have sex with another person. Sex now will hurt you, but sex when you are married will be the most holy, loving and meaningful part of your life."

SNAKE IS SYMBOLIC

We read that a snake tempted Eve. This too is symbolic. Only a spiritual being can know God. The snake symbolized an angel. Angels exist. It is fashionable in our secular society to doubt the existence of angels. But the literature of mankind is so filled with references to angels that Mortimer J. Adler, Clifton Fadiman and other writers, philosophers and scholars who compiled the *Great Books of the Western World* series had to include in their book A *Syntopican of Great Ideas*, the idea of angels. They write, "The characteristic skepticism of our age has been directed against the belief in angels generally. It casts doubt by satire or denies by argument the existence of spirits both good and evil.... Moralists have thought it possible to explain human depravity without recourse to the seductions of the devil." But when all arguments are considered it makes more sense to believe in a spirit world and angels.

God created angels before He created Adam and Eve. He created them to be His helpers. He made angels to be in a position of objects and admirers. At every stage of the creation angels gave God stimulation, praise, comfort and joy as God poured out all His energy in the process of creating the universe and His children.

Genesis 1:26 states, “Let us make man in our own image, after our likeness.” God is speaking to the angels here. God had three archangels: Lucifer, Gabriel and Michael. Lucifer was the leader and assigned to directly be Adam and Eve’s teacher. Artists have portrayed angels with wings, and throughout history we have thought angels to be greater than man. This interpretation comes from Psalm 8. The King James Version of the *Bible* says man is a little lower than the angels. This is not true, and the Revised Standard Version is correct in translating the Hebrew to mean God, not angels. Angels are not greater than mankind.

The hierarchy is:

First Corinthians 6:3 says, “Do you not know that we are to judge the angels?” Another incorrect view held about angels is that they are sexless, neuter beings.

The angel closest to God was Lucifer. He knew that God was preparing this universe for His children. For millions of years Lucifer had been the center of love and now Adam and Eve were. Although God loved Lucifer as He always did, He obviously loved His children too. Lucifer was assigned to take care of Adam and Eve. By comparison, Lucifer felt he was loved less. This feeling would have disappeared when he would have received love from Adam and Eve when they reached perfection. Their love combined with God’s would have been a complete love. An analogy would be a foreman of a company who worked for the owner for 25 years from the very beginning and was close to the owner. The owner then focuses on his son. The foreman feels greater than the young son and misses being close to the owner who now is closer to his young son and who gives the company to his son to run. The proper thing to do is for the foreman to help the son. Fallen nature

makes the foreman jealous and resentful for being in a servant position. Everyone has a position in relation to others, and we should not usurp that position.

To compensate, Lucifer turned to Adam and Eve. Since Lucifer was male, he was more attracted to Eve. Lucifer began to spend time alone with Eve. She was young and naive. Lucifer was older, a teacher, and she was excited as Lucifer told her of how God and the angels led by him created this world. Eve admired and trusted him.

As Eve grew she became more beautiful. Lucifer became confused and in his hurt for feeling less love from God, began to hate God.

ORIGINAL SIN

Lucifer was older and knew better but he seduced Eve. They had sexual intercourse. This union brought about the spiritual fall of man. The initial sin, the original sin that destroyed God's ideal was sex outside of marriage. The original sin was sex outside of God's order. Father reveals, "In the Garden of Eden, a woman rode on Lucifer. You have to know they had relationship for more than eight weeks, not just a couple of days, and therefore she came to receive the seed." (Hoon Dok Hae 6-25-2012)

SIN OF ILLICIT LOVE

Father teaches:

> "Could the Fall have been the result of eating the fruit of a tree? The Fall of Adam and Eve was an immoral sin against the ideal of the true love of God. The fact that Adam and Eve needed to obey the commandment shows that they fell in a stage of immaturity, that is to say, during their period of growth. The archangel, symbolized by a serpent, tempted Eve to eat of the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, and she fell spiritually. She later tempted Adam, who was also too immature to eat of the fruit, and they then fell physically.
>
> The only possible sin that could have been fatal in the garden of Eden, where Adam and Eve were in

> communication with God and living in joy, was the sin of illicit love. The first consummated love of the human ancestors, because it was supposed to have been the perfection of the love of God Himself, was to have marked the beginning of a celebration that would continue throughout history, filled with the never-ending intoxication of joy and blessing for God, Adam and Eve and the universe. It was supposed to have been a joyous occasion through which the love, life and lineage of God would have been established within humankind.
>
> By disobeying heavenly law, they established an immoral relationship as the basis for false love, false life and false lineage. As descendants of Adam and Eve, all human beings are born with original sin. The Fall gave rise to conflict between the mind and body within every person, thereby causing our societies to be filled with tainted love and with people who do things that contradict the desire of their original minds." (4-16-1996)

Eve felt great fear and confusion when she realized she had disobeyed God. She felt cut off from God. Knowing that Adam was eventually to be her husband she thought she could get to God by being with him. She immediately went to Adam and seduced him. She hoped that in sex with Adam she could get rid of her fear and confusion. This sexual union between Adam and Eve was the physical fall of mankind. The first union between Lucifer and Eve was the spiritual fall. Eve could have been restored through Adam if Adam had not fallen with Eve. If he had not fallen he could have restored Eve and connected her with God. After Adam's fall no one could intercede with God on their behalf, and they were completely cut off from God.

COVERED LOWER PARTS

After the Fall, Adam and Eve covered their lower parts. We hide what is wrong. If we say something wrong, we cover our mouth. If there is a scar on our body, we cover it with makeup or clothing. It is human nature to try to hide our defects. Father explains, "A child caught stealing a cookie by his mother will instinctively hide his hands or cover his mouth. In the same way, if Adam and Eve

had taken a piece of fruit and put it into their mouth, then they would have hidden their hands or covered their mouth when God called them. The fact that they hid their lower parts instead demonstrates that their crime was committed through the lower parts of their body. … The fall of the first human ancestors allowed Satan to have grandchildren and prevented God from having this experience. … Adam and Eve could not have a marriage ceremony blessed by God. Instead, they married under Satan's dominion. Doing so, they inherited Satan's lineage and multiplied descendants. For this reason, Jesus spoke so sharply when he pointed out that the devil Satan is the father of fallen humankind, 'You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out your father's desire.' (John 8:44) The fall destroyed the eternal relationship of parent and child between God, on the one hand, and Adam and Eve, on the other. Therefore, Adam and Eve were unable to generate the love of true parents, true husband and wife, and true children. Because of this, God never had grandchildren of direct descent. Adam and Eve should have avoided the fall and reached completion, forming one mind and one body as true parents centering on God, their True Parent. Instead, they entered into a relationship with the enemy and found themselves in a position with their body in total control of their mind." (50 city tour America 2001)

We read in the *Bible* how arrogant Lucifer then became: "How you are fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of Dawn! You said in your heart, I will ascend to heaven; above the stars of God I will set my throne on high; ... I will make myself like the Most High!" (Isaiah 14:12-14).

Lucifer is then called Satan, meaning in ancient Hebrew "the adversary." He is compared in the *Bible* to a serpent because he is lowly and speaks with a forked tongue. A serpent's tongue is split in two. This symbolizes a being that utters two different things with one tongue—a being who leads a double life. He appears good but is evil—a liar and a deceiver. The serpent is also a sexual symbol.

Sun Myung Moon teaches:

> Literally, what the Bible expresses as the serpent in the Garden of Eden, is the sexual organ. The snake

gives poison. From a one time connection with the woman's sexual organ, the heavenly world was destroyed. One time. A snake slithers around and when someone comes too close, it strikes out, attacks, and that person is poisoned. Woman is so fearful of that snake mouth. That serpent symbolizes both sexual organs, mans and woman's. The organs that have poison. Once one bites the other, then that is the end. This is what the Fall of Man was about. But now this is the lineage which does not have that poison in it. Once we re-introduce that poison, then everything will perish; it will be contaminated. So what is the snake in the Garden of Eden a symbol of? It is not Satan; it is the sexual organs of both sexes.

A woman's sexual organ is like an open mouth, showing fangs. It wants to bite. You think about it. It is worse than the AIDS disease, a one time connection there and everything perishes. Do you understand? It is most fearful. A one time bite there leads to Satan's world, the dungeon of hell. It is serious. You have a snake, a poisonous snake! Every fallen person has experienced that kind of concept, it is the same for man and woman.

Like opening the mouth and showing all the fangs. Every woman, every man wants to bite. Think about that. Worse than that AIDS disease a connecting there destroys everything. After sexual intercourse everything heads toward perishing, not prosperity. It is the worst, worst situation. The most fearful guy is that one, more than a tiger or lion. From a one time bite there, history was torn down. This is serious. Do you understand? You have a SNAKE! A poisonous snake! Every fallen person experiences that. It is the same for man and woman. It is worse than a snake bite.

America's situation is full of that poison. Therefore, America is completely perishing. Both eyes are like snake's eyes. That place is Satan's world palace. If only one time a man and woman took that poison,

only one time making mistake, all disease is afterwards passed on. (3-1-92)

A serpent, like Satan, quietly strikes with surprise, speed and strength. Lucifer was cursed in Genesis to crawl upon his belly. This means he is cursed to be a miserable being not able to function properly. Dust is lowly. The curse that he had to "eat dust" means that he cannot receive elements of life from God but is condemned to receive evil vitality elements from the sinful world. Dust is a symbol of choking confusion and darkness. Lucifer created at world that is like a dust cloud. Everyone is blind, dirty and fighting for air.

Lucifer, now Satan, took many angels with him. We read, "And that great dragon was thrown down, that ancient serpent, who is called the Devil and Satan, the deceiver of the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him" (Revelation 12:9).

ADAM AND EVE WERE ADULTS

Adam and Eve were young teenagers when they fell. When God gave them the commandment to not have sexual relations they were considered by God to be an adult. Therefore they must take responsibility for their actions. God would not give this commandment to children. We live in a time when there is a period of life we call adolescence that exists between childhood and adulthood. This is not God's design. In Robert Epstein's book *The Case Against Adolescence: Rediscovering the Adult in Every Teen* he writes that for thousands of years there has been teen marriages. In Europe in the Middle Ages "it was common for women to be married by fourteen." He says that three First Ladies married to American Presidents were still "children" by "current standards." He says, "Mary gave birth to Jesus by age 13" because in the "marriage practices of the day Mary was no older than 12 or 13 when she conceived Jesus." Mary was "married off around the time of puberty. It was common in Greek and Roman cultures for females to marry by age twelve or thirteen." "In other eras through most of human history" 13-year-old girls "would have been considered to be a young woman, not a child." He says we should abolish adolescence. One reviewer of Epstein's book said, "This groundbreaking book argues that adolescence is an unnecessary period of life that people are better off without." David Bakan

wrote in an article titled, "Adolescence in America: From Idea to Social Fact": "What, then, do the Scriptures say about adolescence? The answer is: Absolutely nothing! In the Bible, people went directly from childhood to adulthood." I write more about this in my book *12 Before 40: The Case for Large Families in the Unification Movement*.

God's plan was for Adam and Eve to grow up with Lucifer's help. Then God would have blessed them in marriage. They would have had children and soon the whole world would have been filled with perfect people each talking to God directly and no angel's love, which is weaker and lesser than man's and God's love, could ever upset God's ideal.

How could Eve have a sexual relationship with the archangel Lucifer? We have five spiritual senses. Before the fall, Eve's spiritual senses were completely open. Lucifer was as real as Adam. The *Bible* even tells of instances where angels have relationships with men. Angels came to Abraham's house and ate a meal with him (Gen. 18:8). An angel wrestled with Jacob (Gen. 32:25). The Second Letter of Peter says, "God did not spare the angels when they sinned..." (II Peter 2:4). And we read in the book of Jude that angels acted immorally. They left their position, "the angels that did not keep their own position" (Jude 1:6). Angels do not have wings, wear robes and play gold trumpets. They look like us. The *Bible* says that we should be hospitable to strangers because they may be angels, "Do not neglect to show hospitality to strangers, for thereby some have entertained angels unawares" (Heb. 13:2).

Human beings have a physical body and a spirit body. Angels have only a spirit body.

	Physical Body	Spirit Body
Mankind	*Yes*	*Yes*
Angels	*No*	*Yes*

Sun Myung Moon was asked if there are female angels. He answered: "Love is to start between human beings on earth. It is not allowed to start from the angelic world. So there is no love relationship among angels. Until now, the angels have been in a neutral position in terms of love affairs. This doesn't mean that the Archangel was neuter. He was masculine and could therefore tempt Eve. But in terms of love relations, they have been in a neutral position. When the restored angels have a perfect relationship of give and take with God and become positive (plus), then the negative (minus) is to come about naturally. Whether this will be from the existing angelic world or from a new creation, we don't know." (*1965 Master Speaks*)

PETS

In *1965 Master Speaks* we read that Sun Myung Moon was asked, "Will I be able to have animals in the spirit world?" He answered that animals do not go to spirit world but if you loved certain animals a "reflection" of them will be there: "If you love animals, you will have them in the spirit world. Your love toward Sheba will be reflected to the spirit world, and it will be created there as Sheba for yourself. It will be a reflection of your attachment. It will not be Sheba herself, but a reflection of your mind. But it will still please you."

ROOT OF EVIL — IMMORAL SEX

There is ample evidence today that the root of evil, the Fall, was

an immoral sexual relationship. God created the sexual act of love as the most precious, holy and exciting expression of love in our lives. Yet throughout history the act of love has often been regarded as lowly and made a joke of.

The Israelites practiced circumcision which represents a kind of payment or indemnity—a symbolic restitution for the original sin of Adam and Eve. And sexual crimes have caused the downfall of great men and nations. The rampant immorality in the Roman Empire was one of the reasons it lost its spirit and fell.

The *Bible* teaches us that although it is necessary for man to multiply, for those who can, it is best to be celibate. This was to be an indemnity payment for the Fall and implies that marriage has not had the complete sanction of God. The *Bible* emphasizes not getting married. In First Corinthians 7:38 we read, "So that he who marries his betrothed does well; but he who refrains from marriage will do better." Celibacy is encouraged because God's ideal was lost due to the misuse of love. Because the Fall was premarital sex, Satan glorifies this. Today's Hollywood stars routinely fornicate on and off the screen. One of the most famous Hollywood characters is James Bond who made premarital sex glamorous in many popular movies.

God created the universe. He is almighty. He created Lucifer, Adam and Eve. How could this tragedy have happened? God created a world of love, not regulations. God made the power of love the supreme force in the universe. Love, even non-principled love, is a powerful force. Adam, Eve and Lucifer fell because of unprincipled love. God said they would die if they fell. Only love can drive man to give his life. God had created the world so that love would be greater than laws or commandments. God created the desire in each of us to preserve our life. Suicide is anti-God. Yet the force of love is greater than the fear of death. We have all heard of men who jumped to their death on grenades to save their fellow soldiers, and we have heard of parents giving their lives in trying to save their children from a burning home. The only force that could induce Eve to do as she did was love. Her emotions and intellect were immature, and she failed to guide them properly.

The power of love is testified to throughout literature and seen in all of history. Shakespeare's Romeo and Juliet's love drove them

to suicide. Hamlet's uncle killed his brother in order to marry his sister-in-law. And in modern history King Edward VIII of England abdicated the throne for the love of a woman. He told his nation he gave up his kingdom for "the woman I love." Even Freud correctly saw that the sexual drive is strong enough to push people to disregard moral behavior and that the basic cause of all problems derives from unprincipled sex.

Until man reaches perfection, it is possible to misdirect his love. God gave the commandment as protection to Adam and Eve. It was special guidance until they matured and fulfilled the First Blessing of being fruitful—of reaching individual perfection.

WHY IS THERE EVIL?

A fundamental question mankind has asked is—why does God allow for evil to exist? Why didn't He stop Eve from falling? If God cared for us why doesn't He, in His omnipotence, destroy Satan and end all the suffering in the world? Walter Lippman wrote, "The greatest of all perplexities in theology has been to reconcile the infinite goodness of God with His omnipotence. Nothing puts a greater strain upon the faith of the common man than the existence of utterly irrational suffering in the universe."

The critic Roy Basler, in analyzing William Blake's poem, "The Tyger" says, "Blake is speaking of good and evil. The orthodox Christian mythology does not encompass both extremes in deity, but does in man. The relegation of Satan to a secondary power, permitted to pursue evil by an absolute God who is thus responsible for the continuation of what He could at any moment terminate, is an anomaly which theology has rationalized but has never made wholly acceptable to human intelligence."

God is omniscient but not omnipotent. He saw what was happening between Lucifer, Eve and Adam. He didn't stop the Fall because He was powerless to stop them.

God's blueprint is an ideal world on earth and spirit world through the fulfillment of the three blessings of being fruitful, multiplying and having dominion. God's ideal can only be realized by man accomplishing these three blessings. God cannot achieve His goal alone, and man cannot achieve it alone. God's ideal world can

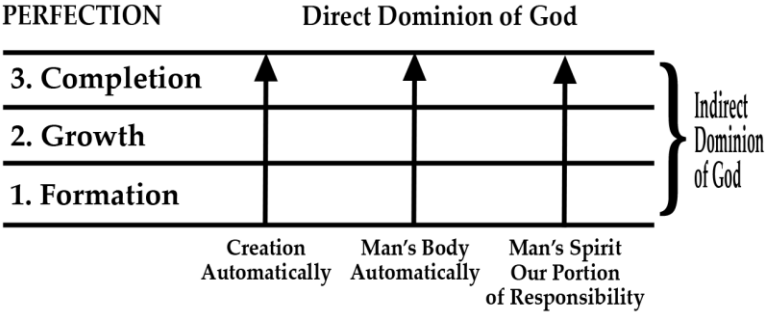
only happen if God and man work together. We can call God's work: "God's portion of responsibility," and mankind's work: "Man's portion of responsibility."

God's P.O.R. + Man's P.O.R. = God's Ideal World

God always fulfills His portion of responsibility. He always gives 100% pure effort. Each of us has the responsibility to give 100% of our effort too. The proportion of work to build the ideal world is heavily on God's side compared to ours. He does the most—let's say 95% and we do 5%. But even though God creates mankind and the universe and we have only to create ourselves and use the natural resources around us to build a beautiful ideal world, it still requires 100% of our effort.

God's will is the building of the ideal world. God cannot accomplish His will without man's voluntary cooperation. Adam and Eve were created in God's image. This position has equal value to God. Adam and Eve had great responsibility. God did not intervene in the Fall because that would interfere with their portion of responsibility.

God created Adam and Eve and every person to grow through the growth period. While growing through the growth period, man is immature, and God cannot relate to him directly. When we have perfected our spirit and are one with God, then we move into the direct dominion and relate to God directly. Until man reaches perfection he is in the indirect dominion.



Adam and Eve were to directly relate to the angels—especially Lucifer as they grew up. During this time God communicated to them in simple terms. When they reached perfection then God would communicate to them fully. God is perfect and can only have a full and complete relationship with other perfect beings. Creation and man's body automatically grow to perfection. Our spirit does not. We each have special uniqueness and personality. We are given the mission to grow our unique spirit. If God didn't give us this responsibility we would simply be robots. God's position is like our position to our children. We cannot live their life for them. We cannot and have no desire to force them to be good and mature. We want them to voluntarily take responsibility for their own lives. We want them to grow up and be mature, independent responsible people. God therefore doesn't have total control over man. He gave us individuality. His ideal world can only happen when we voluntarily work with Him as partners.

FREEDOM

To be able to fulfill their responsibility God gave Adam and Eve the precious gift of freedom. Mankind was given freedom, but freedom comes with the responsibility to act within God's laws. We are free to violate the law of gravity by walking off a five-story building, but we immediately lose our freedom. And if we violate spiritual laws we lose our freedom and suffer also. Adam and Eve didn't fall because they had freedom, but because they submitted to the power of non-principled love that drove them to violate God's spiritual laws. Second Corinthians 3:17 says, "... where the spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom." There is no freedom in chaos. God created normal boundaries of morality, and Adam and Eve were to show self-discipline and live within the laws of the universe.

They misused their freedom. It is our responsibility to forgive them and do better than our original parents did. They didn't center their lives on God but on themselves. God is hoping that we will live within his spiritual laws. Each of us has the freedom to sin or not to.

Due to the Fall this world became a world of relative social and political freedom. Throughout human history mankind has lived in societies with different levels of freedom. Until there is an ideal world, people are going to fight for freedom. Many times in battles

for freedom, both violent and nonviolent, God is behind one side and Satan is on the other. Later chapters of the *Divine Principle* will give examples in human history.

Freedom was God's highest gift to man. God desired Adam and Eve to love him voluntarily and would not use force to make them serve him. A flower has no alternative but to turn towards the sun. God gave man alternatives. Man chose to live outside of God's laws and the illicit love of Lucifer shattered the true freedom of man. Ever since then mankind has lived under Satan's bondage. God did not intervene in the Fall because that would cancel human dignity, responsibility and freedom.

St. Paul lamented being influenced by Satan and being unable to live a true life. He said, "We know that the law is spiritual; but I am carnal, sold under sin. I do not understand my own actions. For I do not do what I want, but I do the very thing I hate" (Rom. 7:14-15). Mankind has been fighting for true freedom.

Father teaches:

> According to the ideal of love, all love relationships in the animal and plant kingdoms are for reproduction only. Human beings are the sole exception. Humankind enjoys freedom in the conjugal relationship of love, which is humanity's special privilege as the lord of all creation. God gave the blessing and infinite joy of love to His sons and daughters. However, the true freedom that God allowed requires human responsibility. When an individual insists upon and practices freedom of love without responsibility, how much confusion and destruction takes place! Achieving the highest ideal of human love is possible only when one takes responsibility for love.
>
> We can think of this responsibility in three ways. The first is for one to become the master of true love, truly free and thanking God for the freedom of love, wherein one knows how to cultivate and control oneself. This responsibility for a love relationship is not to be taken merely because of law or social convention. Instead, a person needs to

establish responsibility through his own self-control and self-determination within a life-committing, vertical relationship with God.

The second is one's responsibility toward the object partner of love. By nature, people do not want their spouse's love to be shared with others. Horizontal conjugal love, which differs from the vertical love between parents and children, loses its potential for perfection the moment it is divided. This is because the Principle of Creation requires husband and wife to become one in absolute love. Each spouse has the responsibility given by love to live absolutely for the sake of the other.

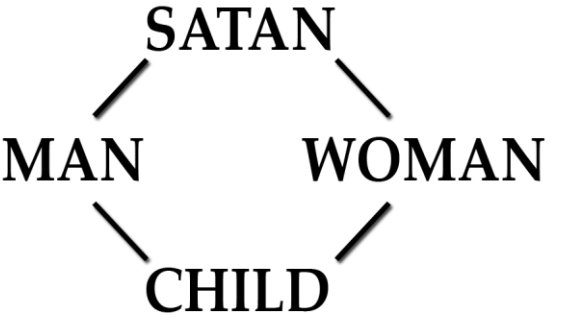
The third responsibility of love is toward children. The love of parents is the basis for children's pride and happiness. Children want to be born through the total and harmonious unity of their parents in true love, and they would want to be raised in that kind of love. The most precious responsibility of parents is not only to rear their children externally, it is also to offer them life elements of true love that can bring their spirituality to complete fruition. This is why the family is so valuable. The daily experience of the heart of true children, true brothers and sisters, true spouses and true parents cannot be acquired in any place other than the true family. The Messiah is the true person who brings the seed of new life

If Adam and Eve had become a couple of true love centered upon God, God could have dwelt in Adam as His substantial body and thus loved Eve. What is more, Adam and Eve together could have become True Parents who substantially embodied God, and thereby could have become the origin of the love of goodness, a life of goodness and a lineage of goodness.

Due to the Fall however, Adam and Eve became the substantial body of Satan and ended up becoming the original fallen couple, fallen parents and fallen

> ancestors. Their union became the root of fallen love, fallen life and fallen blood lineage. Because human beings originated from this root, they descended from the adulterous Satan, who is the enemy of God, and inherited this lineage of fallen parents. (4-16-1996)

The consequences of the Fall were catastrophic. Satan took God's position in the Four Positions of the family unit.



The world is ruled by false "love." Satan is the "god of this world" (II Cor. 4:4). The existence of Satan and the belief in negative spiritual forces influencing our lives has been unpopular to modern educated Western people. This is a recent belief in human history. Western man is naive today and focuses on the temporal, the material, the human rather than the eternal, the spiritual, the divine.

SATAN

Satan is not the folklore being who has horns and a tail. He looks like a human being. And many who have walked a spiritual path will testify to the immense special temptations, obstructions and satanic forces they have to encounter as they seek to live God's way of life.

God and our heart tell us we cannot say seriously or humorously "the devil made me do it." Ultimately we each have the responsibility to not make a connection with Satan.

Lucifer is a spiritual being, and the act of sex between him and Eve couldn't produce children. Adam and Eve, however, had children. They became parents before they were ready. In the midst of the confusion and fear introduced by Lucifer, they had to raise their children.

Adam and Eve couldn't pass down God's standard of living but passed down confusion and fear to all their descendants. This terrible misuse of love in the Garden of Eden blossomed into many types of unordered "love" such as fornication (premarital sex), adultery (extramarital sex), prostitution, incest, pornography and homosexuality.

These acts of impure, unprincipled love has caused such agony as divorce, separation, VD, AIDS, mental illness and destroyed homes and careers. We reap what we sow. Immoral sexual behavior has broken countless hearts and countless bodies.

PAIRS

Polarity is God's way. Knowing this principle we can see how satanic polygamy is. Plural marriages are Satan's invention. The Old Testament patriarchs and Joseph Smith, the founder of Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints (also called the Mormons) received incorrect revelations from fallen angelic spirit world. God is logical. It is just common sense that polygamy is wrong because God created mankind to have equal numbers of men and women. Each person is to have just one mate.

Homosexuality is also unnatural. Each person is destined to be complimented with one person of the opposite sex and to have children. This reflects God. In homosexuality the body parts don't fit, and the universe is not mathematically balanced with homosexuality and polygamy.

All these things are abnormal and against spiritual law. These lifestyles cannot bring complete happiness. God loves the sinner and those who do not meet God's standards, but he hates the sin

and behavior that is not totally godly. Some day all these perversions and low standard behaviors will fade away and every person on earth and in spirit world will be paired up to their spouse and live together eternally. It is not God's plan for anyone to be single his or her whole life. Everyone is to marry.

PAIR SYSTEM

The following are some excerpts from speeches given by Sun Myung Moon where he talks about the pair system in the universe:

> The beauty of the universe is the pair system.
>
> When you know that God made everything in the pair system, that God Himself is the subject looking for His object, and all of the universe is the object to man, then you know that all things are created for you. You know also that the central spirit behind it all is love. (2-1-81)
>
> Our mind and body are a pair system. (2-1-81)
>
> Therefore, the greatest feature which God employed within His creation was the pair system. You want to be a part of a pair yourself. This concept came from your Creator. All the aspects of a human being are in the pair system just as all the aspects of the universe are in the pair system.
>
> Love only functions in the pair system because it requires a subject and object relationship. Male and female, plus and minus—the whole creation is organized like that. The ideal is for the lower pairs of life forms to serve and support the higher pairs, reaching higher and higher all the way to the top. Ultimately there is God and right below God, human beings. Why do we exist? It is in order to reach out and fulfill greater love. Each lower form of creation is reaching out for greater love, moving upward all the way to human beings. Then human beings can reach for greater love by going to God Himself. When the lower elements are absorbed by the higher, it brings fulfillment to the lower elements. (1-11-87)

HOMOSEXUALITY UNPRINCIPLED

All men and women are supposed to get married. We all think about marriage, isn't that true? I hear that in America there are many men living as if married with other men and women with other women. Do you think this is normal and acceptable? Why not? It is not right because it is not parallel with the laws of nature and the universe. When you look at all forms of creation, whether plant or animal, everything exists in the reciprocal relationship between subject and object. God created two aspects or poles in everything and mankind is no exception to that system. Even plants have male and female flowers.

Why do subject and object need each other? Why is the pair system mandatory? Truth is very simple: without a pair system, nothing could survive for long here on earth. If there were no male and female, all the animals and plants would have become extinct a long time ago. Adam and Eve would not have had any generations after them, so you certainly would not be here! The creation is deeply motivated toward one goal—its own survival.

God wants us to leave good seeds and good generations behind us. In order to do that you need a good spouse. Anyone who wants a good spouse is reflecting the basic nature of all creation, and there is nothing wrong with that. Even more than one's own survival, we want to leave behind us an improved species. This is the way God created us.

UNIVERSAL RULE

In God's world, there is absolutely no such thing as homosexuality. This is the most obvious and blatant violation of the universal rule. Are men and women separate and distinct from one another for the sake of fighting against each another? No, man is made for woman and woman is made for man, each with their own particular characteristics. Those characteristics exist for the purpose of aiding in

harmony and unity between man and woman and allowing them to achieve True Love. When you violate that basic principle, you have to pay a most incredible price. The nation, the people have to pay as well.

FORMULA OF GOD'S CREATION

No matter how many millions of years may go by within this universe, human beings will continue to be ruled by this basic principle. Men are born to fulfill the purpose of a man, while women are born to fulfill the purpose of a woman. No matter how old a person may be, whether he is a grandfather, or a great-grandfather, it doesn't matter. The *Principle* cannot be changed. It is always the same. Men were made for women, and women were made for men, and their purpose is to become united in love. The perverted way of life, if followed, could virtually extinguish the human race. When people are espousing and following the way of homosexuality and lesbianism, as well as heterosexual "free sex," what is the difference between them and the animals? When human beings live like that, how can they take their position as masters over the creation? Human beings are God's supreme creatures simply because God created us to be the supreme recipients of His True Love. You understand the formula of God's creation, don't you? (6-20-82)

Universal law pushes a child to seek out his mother or father when he gets lonely; when people grow up, they naturally seek the opposite sex for companionship. This is the natural way for remedying loneliness. However, this world is not natural and the perversion of homosexuality exists. This is a destructive force that violates universal law. The simple proof of its destructiveness is clear when you consider what would happen if everyone in the world were to live as homosexuals for one century. All humanity would simply cease to exist! Homosexuality is a satanic force which is exactly opposite universal law. It brings destruction rather than creation. (9-19-82)

> What man absolutely needs is a woman. A woman needs, more than anything, her spouse, a man. There is no other substitute, no comparable treasure. Why? It is because man and woman are completed by becoming one.
>
> Women are born for the sake of men. It is deceptively simple. It is universal truth. And for what are men born? Women. That makes you feel warm and good. If you say man was born for man and women for women, it makes you feel cold and chilly.
>
> Can two pluses attract? No, they repel. (4-18-93)

Because the motivation of Adam and Eve was a mixture of good and evil we can see the mixture of good and evil "love" in society. All parents have a good side and yet every parent is ultimately incompetent to teach by word and example absolute moral values to their children. Parents have different levels of relative standards and all are ignorant of God's principle of absolute love.

FALLEN NATURE

Because of the Fall, mankind lost its original nature and gained a fallen nature which has four major aspects.

First, Lucifer didn't see Adam and Eve from God's point of view so fallen people generally do not see from God's point of view. This is why saints and heroes are often misunderstood and persecuted.

Second, Lucifer left the position God gave him, consequently people in this world frequently don't live up to their positions and disregard their obligations and responsibilities. An example would be a parent who leaves his small child to go to a bar to drink.

Third, we desire to dominate others. Lucifer reversed the order of dominion. He was to be ruled by Eve. But he dominated her. Eve's role was to be under Adam's dominion, but she dominated him. The Fall is the origin for all the disorder and oppression we see in the fallen world.

The fourth aspect of fallen nature is multiplication of sin. Eve multiplied her crime by seducing Adam. Adam multiplied sin by uniting with Eve. In the Fallen world people often seduce others to sin. Fallen nature always seeks to share guilt and multiply bad actions.

Adam and Eve's original mind of goodness, i.e., conscience, was not destroyed. Everyone is born basically good with a deep desire to return to God. But we have a fallen, sinful nature that wars with our original nature. Every person suffers from this conflict of good and evil. Every human being is a sinner. The *Bible* says, "all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God" (Rom. 3:23) and "If we say we have not sinned, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us" (I John 1:8).

The original sin in the Garden of Eden corrupted the entire human race. There are different analogies to illustrate how a single event could cause so much damage. The obvious one is one single incestuous or adulterous act. It devastates a family and a marriage. A single puncture of the eye can cause blindness. One severe psychic shock can influence a person's entire life. Contamination of one water supply source can affect an entire city.

SIN

Sin is a transgression of divine law. God is lawful and principled. When we sin we have give and take with Satan. Because of the Fall each of us has four sins we must eventually liquidate.

FOUR SINS

The first is (1) "Original sin" We must discipline our sexual drive and do the opposite of Adam and Eve.

(2) "Inherited sin" is the sins which were committed by our immediate ancestors and it is up to us to pay restitution. The Ten Commandments say that the sin of parents is conveyed through several generations. We read in Exodus 20:5 that God visits "the iniquity of the fathers upon the children to the third and the fourth generation." This is the reason why some people and families may have to suffer more than others. They may have to make up for the sins of their ancestors.

(3) “Collective sin” is the sin for which a particular group or even a whole nation must take responsibility for. An example of this is when the nation of America paid for its sin of bringing slavery into America by having a civil war.

(4) “Individual sin” is the sins we commit ourselves.

If we were not sinners, but one with God, there would be no need (as so many do today) to be artificially intoxicated with alcohol, drugs and promiscuity. Give and take with God brings strength of character and exhilarating happiness.

A world of perfection would be an incredibly pure and sensitive society. It would be like one human body. If we hurt our finger or pull one hair out of our head our whole body feels it. So in the ideal world if anyone would feel harm everyone would feel it. Therefore, the whole body of mankind would be alert to keep every individual member from destruction or harm.

In an ideal world people and creation would be in harmony. Nature, which is perfect, suffers because it has been ruled by imperfect people. Romans 8:19 says, “For the creation waits with eager longing for the revealing of the Sons of God.”

We are faced with incredible ecological problems such as the burning of the Brazilian rain forest, water pollution, acid rain and worldwide massive erosion of the earth’s topsoil. The only solution to solving these problems as well as all other problems is to focus on teaching an understanding of God and Satan to people. Satan is the root cause of our problems and it is crucial that we focus on exposing and eliminating Satan from this earth.

DEATH

God told Adam and Eve that if they ate of the fruit they would die. They ate the fruit, but they lived for many years afterwards. God did not mean they would physically die if they disobeyed Him or that physical death would be introduced into the world, but they would lose contact with God. God is the source of truth and love and life. We have lost God and mankind has been living in darkness. Our conscience gropes for truth and true love.

First John 3:14 says, "... He who does not love remains in death." Love here means God's love. We do not love as God does so we are dead, no matter how active we may be on this earth. In Romans 6:23 we read, "The wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life," and Romans 8:6: "To set the mind on the flesh is death, but to set the mind on the spirit is life and peace."

ALL DIE

First Corinthians 15:22 says, "... in Adam all die...." Psalm 43:1-2 speaks of this search for God and life. The word "hart" in the first verse is the word for a young deer: "As a hart longs for flowing streams, so longs my soul for thee, O God. My soul thirsts for God, the living God. When shall I come and behold the face of God? My tears have been my food day and night."

GOD GRIEVED

God was devastated to see His children spiritually die. In Genesis 6:6 we read with great understatement: "And the Lord was sorry that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved Him to his heart." It is agony beyond words for God to see us blinded. God is calling to us, but our spiritual senses are paralyzed, and we can't hear Him. When God called for Adam in the Garden of Eden saying, "Where are you?" God knew where Adam was physically. It was really a cry, "Where are you, my son, spiritually?" God is like a parent who has a son who lost his memory. We have become paralyzed to God, and there is no joy in God's heart. Sun Myung Moon teaches:

> Adam and Eve defiled true love during their time of growth. They fell away from God's *Principle* by having sexual relations and creating children before they reached maturity in true love.
>
> Human history thus began with Adam and Eve's lack of faith in God, their loving Parent, and their ultimate submission to Satan. By this action they became a false husband and false wife, and false parents. Our inheritance from the original family includes their legacy of corruption, conflict and suffering. This legacy has nothing to do with God's ideal of creation. We cannot imagine how God's Heart is broken! (8-31-96)

BLAME GOD

Because every person has been profoundly ignorant of God, most people do not see that Satan is behind the tragedies everyone goes through. Often people blame God for being cruel—for being the source of evil and ignorance. When someone young dies of cancer or some accident, we say "God, how could you do such a thing?" But it wasn't God who killed the child. It isn't God who breaks our hearts.

From the very beginning mankind has been dominated by Satan. We read in the *Bible* that Satan is the "ruler of this world" (John 12:31). Satan is the "god of this world" (II Cor. 4:4). John 8:44 says, "You are of your father the devil, and your will is to do your father's desires. He was a murderer from the beginning, and has nothing to do with the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks according to his own nature, for he is a liar and the father of lies." Satan has turned the earth into one big concentration camp. Human history is about billions of people living in a death camp run by a sadistic monster whose conscience is as deeply buried as serial killers who torture and then kill young children. God has had to watch His children being massacred in this nightmare chamber of horrors Satan has created for us.

ABUSE OF LOVE

Sun Myung Moon said in a speech titled "The 11th World Media Conference, Founder's Address, Moscow, USSR" (April 10, 1990):

> **CAUSE AND EFFECT**
>
> The law of cause and effect is clearly evident in history. Whatever you have sown, you will surely reap. Adam and Eve, the first human ancestors, engaged in sexual immorality and the abuse of love while they were still growing. This was the fall of man. God wanted them to grow in purity until He blessed them in heavenly matrimony, becoming the foundation of God's true love, true life and true blood lineage. Humanity, descending from this perfected and blessed Adam and Eve would naturally become the sons and daughters of God, enjoying the love of the Creator and living in the

Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world.

However, before Adam and Eve matured and received the blessing from God, while they were still teenagers, the archangel tempted Eve and engaged in fornication with her. In this way, the archangel became Satan. By engaging in relations with fallen Eve, Adam also fell. This is how the beginning of human history was sown. Today, we are reaping the consequences: Immorality is rampant. Teenagers in particular, are the victims of widespread sexual degradation. Modern society in the advanced nations is little different from Sodom and Gomorrah of biblical times. God abhors this immoral behavior. We must fear the wrath of God. His punishment is imminent.

KINGDOM OF HELL

We are living in the Kingdom of Hell. Mankind has become orphans tortured by a terrible foster parent. Satan has sadistically abused and murdered mankind with an endless list of tortures.

Sun Myung Moon teaches that evil is selfishness:

Then, what is evil? Evil is the emergence of selfishness into this world. God's principle of unselfish giving was twisted into an ungodly principle of selfish taking. The ungodly position of desiring to be served rather than to serve was thereby established. The origin of evil is Satan. He was in the position to serve God, but instead he posed as another god and subjugated man for his own benefit. God is the absolute positive force in this universe. Then Satan posed as another positive force. Two positives naturally repel each other. Satan is a fallen archangel. He left his position as faithful servant to God and man, and he challenged and competed with God. His motivation was selfishness. Out of his selfishness comes the origin of evil and sin.

What happened is this: Eve fell from her position as God's first daughter, becoming the first victim of Satan and transforming herself into a creature of

selfishness. Together Eve and Satan then successfully brought Adam into their selfish world. By this tragic event, God was isolated by man in the garden of Eden. Human history started on the wrong footing, without God. The foundation for the evil history of man was laid, and Satan was established as the ruler of this world. Selfishness came into being at the beginning of human history, and now our world is rampant with killing, lying, and stealing. All of these actions in the evil world are motivated by selfishness. Evil subjugates others for its own benefit, while good sacrifices itself for the benefit of others. (10-20-73)

What is the fall of man? The fall of man is nothing more than to transform yourself into the realm of death, to be transformed from life to death. Jesus said, "Leave the dead to bury their own dead." How you live here on earth makes a difference. You think you are alive, but in God's eyes you are dead. Human history began with this history of death. That was the beginning. Adam and Eve went to hell at the very beginning. Succeeding generations have been destined to hell. That is the very sad commentary on human history.

What is hell? Hell is nothing more than a human trash can. Where do we live here on earth right now? In a living hell, created by us. All of us are suffering from internal diseases. What are those diseases? Those diseases are inheriting satanic lineage and being bound to satanic sovereignty. We are the victims of satanic slavery, which God hates most. We are the fruit of Satan's love instead of the fruit of the love of God, and God abhors this situation the most. Because of illicit or false love, the human race has been brought down to the very bottom, the very pits of hell. The question is how are we to recover and restore humankind to the shining heavenly realm. This is the work of salvation. How can this salvation take place in a world of satanic love? Salvation is the opposite of the fall. It will be done centering upon the love of

God.

Body Should Obey the Mind

What is the difference between Satan's love and God's love? Satanic love made our bodies the master, trampling upon the mind and making it the servant of the body. If the mind becomes the servant and the body becomes the master, performing atrocities to the mind, this is slavery of the mind under the body. This is the fallen state. Actually the mind should be the master over the body. The body should obey the mind, but this is opposite now because Satan made it opposite and so the mind is trampled by the body. How painful is this life!

Purpose of Religion

What about yourself? When you look at yourself, what do you think? Is your mind controlling your body or is your body controlling your mind? What do you think in your case? In a way we all are struggling within ourselves. All the good works of the saints and the religions have served to strengthen the mind so that the mind could occupy the original position, subjugating the body. Then the body becomes obedient to the mind and a harmony between the mind and body is created thus bringing a true happiness to life. That is the purpose of the teaching of the saints. That is the purpose of religion. The work of religions is what? Religion is to boost the strength of the mind, to energize the mind so that the mind becomes strong enough to subjugate the body. This is the basic work of religion, regardless of the name of the religion. All the major good religions of the world have been working for that one single goal. If this is the purpose of religion, then all good religions have to have something in common. The common point is that all religions try to suppress the body, even torment the body so it does not become the strong master of the mind. Therefore all major, high religions go against the cravings of the body. Whatever the body wants religion says, "No."

Whatever the body aspires to, religion says, "No."

In a way the *Bible* appears to have many contradictory statements. For example, Jesus said, "Those who seek to gain their life will lose it. Those who lose their life for my sake will find it." In a way it is contradictory to say that if you are trying to live, you will die. If you try to die, you will live. So what is this particular statement really saying? "You are going to lose your life," means lose your body for the sake of the direction of the mind. Then what will you find? You will find life.

There are most incredible harsh rules in religion. For example, if you do a seven-day fast, a forty day fast or pray all night and do not go to bed and sleep, these are the kinds of mandates religion issues to the body. Furthermore, there is celibacy where you live alone, not marrying, for example in the Catholic Church. The most noble and sacred divine task is to become part of the priesthood. They would not marry for their entire life. Also nuns would not marry for their entire life. Furthermore, that is not the only religion which espouses this. Look at Buddhism. The monks go to the mountain for their entire life without even the presence of the opposite sex, living by themselves as part of their faith. But then when we look at this point of view of valuing the harsh discipline that good religions have been imposing upon people, and look at the American way of life today, how many Americans can do any of these things? How many can do all night prayers, seven-day fasts or forty-day fasts? How many Americans can really be celibate for their entire life without marriage? When I look I see very little chance of this way of life succeeding in American society today. American society is a society of the body's freedom. American society pursues the carnal pleasure which the body dictates. That is the characteristic we observe in America's society today.

But why should I torment my own body? Because my body has become the stage of Satan. Satan always uses the body being arrogant, showing off saying, "I am the one; I am supreme. I am

number one." That arrogance is demonstrated through the body. That is Satan's way of life. Furthermore, American life is pursuing artificial intoxication. For example, what is alcohol all about? Intoxication of oneself. What is the drug-culture? Intoxicating ourselves. There are so many ways in America that people are trying to artificially intoxicate themselves and live artificial lives. Another example is tobacco, smoking. Why do people do this? It is a way of intoxicating oneself. It is another example.

True Religion

The external environment enhances the desires of the body and its cravings. Alcohol, drugs, smoking and sexual abuse are the vainglorious activities of the body. There is pressure to forget about the mind; the body comes first. Meet the body's desires.

Our society is the realm of death. Who then shall conquer the realm of death and bring it to life? The only hope lies with the appearance of a true religion and a leader of that religion. This is the only hope for the transformation of society from the realm of death to the realm of life.

Give Up Bad Habits

So you Unification Church members, you gave up your past bad habits: smoking, alcohol, free sex, drinking, drugs; you gave up everything. What fun do you need? What poor guys you are!

Unification Brings True Love

So when we say "Unification Church", what are we going to unite? What are we going to bring into unification? Unification of mind and body, unification of families, people, nations, and ultimately between God and man. What shall we achieve by bringing God and man into one? Why should we do that? By bringing unity between God and man the world will see the visiting of true love; true love coming from God to the world, the nation, the clan and to your family and yourself. True love will come and settle in your home, in the place of original settlement. (2-20-91)

By the fall, man was brought under the false fatherhood of Satan. Man changed fathers. We left our true father, God, and united with the false father, Satan. The first man and woman became the children of Satan. Under the false fatherhood of Satan, Adam and Eve united unlawfully as a couple without God's blessing or permission. And when they multiplied children, they all came under the same false father. They were all born as the children of sin, not the children of God. Therefore, the multiplication of sinful children from one generation to another has brought about this fallen, sinful world.

Because God is not at the center, this is a world of sin, a world of mistrust, a world of crime, a world of war. And we, the nations and societies of this world can destroy each other and feel no pain. This is the kingdom of hell on earth.

The master of this world, indeed, is not God, but Satan. This is why John 12:31 indicates that Satan is the ruler of this world. We know this universe was created by God. We know God created us. But God is no longer the master, because people changed masters. Man betrayed God and united with a false master, Satan. This Satan became the father of mankind.

The fall of man has brought great grief to the heart of our Heavenly Father. God lost everything when His people turned against Him. That is why we read in Genesis, "The Lord was sorry that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him to his heart." (Gen. 6:6)

God was grieved because the exact opposite of His will had become the reality. If God's intention had been fulfilled, He would have been joyful. If the consequences of the fall were the result of God's own plan, why should God be grieved to His heart? Why would He have been sorry that He had made us? (9-18-74)

SORROWFUL GOD

In the Cheon Seong Gyeong (pp. 139-140) Father teaches how hurt our Heavenly Father is over the Fall of Man:

> How sorrowful God was when Adam and Eve committed the Fall and sank away from Him! They were to have been the ideal partners for God, who embodies the pure essence of love. God's sorrow exceeded that of any person. He grieved so very deeply. The deeper and greater the value of what was lost, the deeper the sorrow. This is the situation of God, who has pursued the way of restoration for His lost children.
>
> Can you imagine how profoundly God's heart was broken at the death of Adam, who was to establish an everlasting family and accomplish God's great endeavor of Creation? How would He feel that everything had gone wrong in the way it did? Even after six thousand years, God has not recovered from the shock of Adam and Eve's Fall.
>
> Can you imagine how much it breaks God's heart to observe human misery every hour of every day? What happened to God's dignity when His son and daughter, whom He intended to glorify as prince and princess, became cripples, fell into a dung pit, and were stuck upside down in hell?
>
> Human beings today are not God's children. No matter how much God weeps, we pretend not to see His tears. No matter how sorrowful He is, we pretend not to see. This is because the human race springs from the flesh and blood of Satan.
>
> You should know that for tens of thousands of years, even millions of years, God has cried out for us, "My son and my daughter!" Have you ever ardently called out to God, "Father!" until your throat becomes hoarse and your tongue dry, until you cannot breathe and your eyes cannot open? How earnestly have you struggled to embrace that standard, which is that of the Subject of life? Your character is measured in proportion to your efforts to do this.

LINEAGE
Father Moon teaches:

> Do you know what has pained God's heart the most, causing Him the greatest grief over the long history since the Fall of Adam and Eve? God lost His lineage. And with the loss of His lineage, He lost His right of ownership. Let me talk about lineage for a moment. Lineage is more important than life, and more important than love. Life and love come together, to create lineage. Lineage cannot be established if either life or love is missing. Therefore, among the three qualities that define the parent-child relationship -- love, life, and lineage – lineage is the fruit. God's lineage contains the seed of true love. God's lineage provides the context and environment for a true life. Hence, for us to become the ideal people envisioned by God, that is, people of ideal character, and to create ideal families, we first need to be linked to His lineage. To take it a step further, only when we are linked to God's lineage is it possible to create God's homeland, the ideal nation. Only when we are linked to God's lineage is it possible to establish the kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world. Please inscribe the importance of lineage in your hearts. I cannot emphasize this enough.
>
> Without lineage, neither life nor love can endure. You strive to set a good tradition, but it will endure only through your lineage. Lineage is the bridge allowing the parents' spirit to carry on, through subsequent generations. In other words, lineage is the first and final condition necessary, for parents to harvest the fruits of their love, the fruits of their life and the fruits of their joy. We need to know this with certainty.
>
> Yet, when Adam and Eve fell, this lineage, more precious than life, was lost. The fruits of true life and true love never matured. They became the fruits of Satan, lacking any relationship with Heaven.

From them descended the six-billion people now inhabiting the earth.

God intended for the seeds He planted in the springtime of the Garden of Eden, to grow into a bountiful crop that He could harvest in the autumn. The ideal of God's creation was to raise Adam and Eve, His son and daughter, to the point where they would blossom in true love, flourish with true life, and bear fruit in a true lineage. God desired to gather up owners — and families — of eternal life, eternal love, and eternal lineage, and to bring about His kingdom of the peaceful, ideal world as their homeland.

God's Suffering in Search of the True Parents

Instead, however, it was false love, false life, and false lineage that infested the earth. God's love, life, and lineage fell into the hands of the adulterer Satan, the enemy of love. Heaven and earth were suffocated and transformed into hell. The world became a wretched place, far from God's presence. Yet, humanity to this day lives in ignorance of this.

People are deluded into believing that the lineage of the enemy is the lifeline upon which the world depends. This is the wretched truth about humanity descended from the Fall. That is why we refer to this world as "hell on earth". God views humanity's tragic situation with a heart full of pain.

After creating Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden, God intended to marry them with His Holy (Marriage) Blessing, and bequeath to them Heaven's right of ownership. God wanted Adam and Eve to inherit from Him the ownership of the entire universe.

However, all of this came under Satan's control because of the Fall. God is like a father who labored and sweated, his entire life, to accumulate assets for His children, only to have a thief steal everything overnight.

Who can comprehend the sorrowful, painful heart of God? God lost His lineage, lost His children, and was forced to hand over the ownership of the nations and world to Satan. There was only one way to recover this lineage and ownership. This was the path to win the natural subjugation (winning over) of Satan, to have Satan surrender voluntarily. What is the secret to accomplish this? It can only be accomplished by the power of true love, when we love our enemies more than we love our own children.

Has there ever been a time when God could rejoice with human beings, enjoying the natural bonds of parent and child? Has God enjoyed even a year of comfort with His children, knowing that what He created was good? The answer is no; God has not experienced such joy for even one hour. And has anyone been able to comfort God in this pain? No, because no one has known the reason for the unbridgeable gap that has separated God from humankind for tens-of-thousands of years. No one has known why God and humanity are in such a tragic situation.

The biblical account of Cain and Abel reveals the beginnings of human conflict, even within Adam's family. It reveals the archetype for humankind's unending history of struggle, war, and conflict. We are in conflict on many levels, beginning with the war between mind and body within each individual, and extending to wars between nations, and even to the global conflict between materialism and theism.

Extreme, selfish individualism threatens our prosperity even today. We deem young people to be the hope of humanity holding the promise for the future, but drugs and free sex enslave them. Advanced countries seem to believe that material goods are all that matter. They recognize only their own interests, while ignoring the misery of tens-of-

thousands who die of starvation every day. (9-12-2006)

God's purpose of creation called for Adam and Eve to obey the commandment from God, who is the subject of true love, and fulfill their maturation as a true man and a true woman. Beyond that, they were to become a true couple united in the true love of God and then, by having sons and daughters through true love, they would have become true parents and lived in happiness. Had Adam and Eve matured in true love, they would have fulfilled God's desire to wear a substantial body and when they perfected themselves as a true couple, the ideal of God's absolute love would have been fulfilled. By Adam and Eve having children of goodness and becoming true parents, God would have established substantially the position of parents eternally and achieved His ideal, which was to create infinite citizenship in the kingdom of heaven in heaven by means of multiplying myriad generations of loving descendants in the physical world. (4-16-1996)

GREATEST SADNESS

Father Moon says:

There is probably no greater sadness than parents losing their beloved children (7-12-1959).

The moment Adam and Eve fell, God's heart was torn so painfully He almost went insane. You should never forget about the Father who was shaken so thoroughly as to almost forget Himself. Have you ever thought about that?

Even when fallen people on the earth watch their children die, they feel their bone marrow melt. They want to save their children even at the cost of their own lives. How must the heart of God have been as He watched Adam and Eve walking the path toward the Fall and crossing the line of death? Unless you

understand that heart, there is no way for you to become God's sons and daughters. (10-11-1959)

Each time God beheld Adam and Eve, a heart of longing burned within Him. As He thought of how they would perfect themselves and live happy lives, a feeling of happiness arose within Him. He hoped that they would take dominion over the creation He had made, enjoy it, and caress it as if they had created it themselves. Such cherished desires in His heart, however, were cut short when they fell. We need to know that it was an unforgivable and most terrible sin that these first ancestors committed.

God, though, cannot abandon fallen people in this state. Why? It is because He created them in accordance with His laws and principles, which have an eternal standard that He cannot ignore.

God had a strong desire to abandon fallen Adam and Eve. To abandon them, though, would mean abandoning the principles of His creation, the process of which He had worked on for the six biblical days. At the same time, He would put Himself in a position where He would be forced to abandon the standard of eternity. Even the existence of God, the Subject of eternity, would be challenged. Knowing these things, He initiated His providence to redeem Adam and Eve. (*Cheon Seong Gyeong* p. 2241)

God can do anything at will, but because of the reality of unprincipled love His hands have been tied. No one knows how He suffers under such lasting regret and sorrow and how unimaginably weary He is. (*Cheon Seong Gyeong* p. 144)

All problems came about due to the Fall of Adam and Eve, who became the false parents. Consequently, problems of the heart, of lineage, of character, of language, and the problems of daily life arose, as well as problems affecting nations and the world. (Cheong Seong Gyeong)

> What is the greatest of all problems in the Western world today? An understanding of Satan as an entity doesn't exist in the Western mind. Therefore people do not know they have been a liege under Satan, born of his lineage. (4-8-89)

Father Moon gave a speech to 300,000 people in Washington D.C. on September, 18, 1996. He explained:

> The Fall of Man brought about this fallen world. Disobeying God's Word, man rebelled against Him. This put him in the position to be overpowered by Satan's lies. And so, finally man united with Satan, receiving Satan's personality and love instead of God's personality and love.
>
> Human history has been a history of struggle, a history of war. It has been almost like a tug-of-war between God and Satan with man as the prize. Good and Evil have been struggling to win man to their respective sides.
>
> Because human history started with the Fall, Evil got a head start. Therefore, in history the evil side has always taken the aggressive and offensive position. Good has been passive and defensive; yet, God is on the side of Good. In the end, the good side always wins the victory. The good side is always the underdog; yet, it comes out victorious and expands.

In the next chapter we will begin looking at how God and Satan throughout human history have "been struggling to win man to their respective sides."

Chapter 3

The History of Restoration

THE OLD TESTAMENT

ADAM'S FAMILY

We learned in the previous chapter of the *Divine Principle* that God grieved to see evil enter Adam and Eve's lives. God is good and cannot exist eternally with evil. It must ultimately be eradicated in human beings. God immediately worked to bring Adam's family back to a state of goodness. When Adam and Eve fell they lost their value. Let's use an analogy of a cup that falls to the floor, cracks and cannot hold water. The cup has lost its value. It is useless; it does not fulfill its purpose. The owner has two options. He can throw it into the trash and buy or make another, or he can repair it and make it valuable again.

God did not have the option of throwing Adam and Eve and Lucifer into the trash and create other beings to replace them. He created them as eternal beings. It is impossible for God to destroy them. They are part of God. To destroy them would be to destroy Himself. God could only try to repair them—to restore them to their original goodness. He does this not out of duty but out of love. It would never occur to God to destroy his creation eternally. He created Lucifer and Adam and Eve out of love, and He immediately began to work with love to restore them. Evil is abhorrent to God. Evil entered God's creation and just as our body immediately works to eliminate a germ, God began working to eradicate evil.

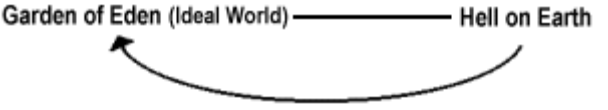
God's love is voluntary and spontaneous. He created Adam, Eve and Lucifer to be like Him—good—and with a drive to express and receive love. Because God's love is voluntary He cannot and

would never use force to get Adam, Eve and Lucifer to love Him. That would not be true love.

GOD'S PROVIDENCE OF RESTORATION

God is a principled being who only works in a logical, orderly and lawful way. He created the universe with principle, and He works to restore it in a principled way. The formula or plan to restore Adam and Eve and Lucifer is called God's Providence of Restoration.

God could not simply snap His fingers or wave a magic wand to restore Adam and Eve and Lucifer. How does God, our loving parent, work? Adam, Eve and Lucifer voluntarily turned the Garden of Eden into hell on earth. To restore God's ideal world they must voluntarily come back to God.



RESTORATION = SALVATION

God works to restore their original state of goodness. Restoration equals salvation. A drowning person can be saved only by being brought back to the shore where he was originally safe. To save him is to restore his previous position. If a person has lost his health and becomes sick, saving him means to restore him to his previous health. Father explains:

> Man's ability to respond to the true love of God was killed due to the fall. People cannot even recognize God's true love, much less vibrate with it. The whole purpose of salvation is to restore that ability of human beings to vibrate with the love of God. Once the spiritual body of man can receive the vibration of God's love, his whole self will resound with it. His entire physical body will respond to God's stimuli. That would be the total satisfaction of love. Nothing more could be desired by anyone. (1-8-1984)

Almighty God is a God of love, a God of mercy. His heart is compassionate and He grieved at the living death of His children.

He knows no person is capable of breaking his chains and getting rid of sin by himself. He knows that only one power can bring people into salvation — God Himself. And God, in His mercy, is determined to save this world.

What is salvation? Salvation is simply restoration. What does a doctor do to save his patient? He restores the patient to normal health. That is a cure. What would you do to save a drowning person? You would save him by bringing him out of the water and restoring him to dry land. That is a rescue.

By the same token, God's salvation of man is simply to restore man from an abnormal, deviated state to the original state of goodness.

So, salvation is equivalent to restoration. God is going to restore the kingdom of hell to the Kingdom of Heaven. (9-18-74)

Since the fall of man, God's work has been the restoration of original goodness. God wants to destroy the world of evil and recreate the world of goodness. We have lost our health. We have become sick people. The salvation of God is, therefore, the restoration of man to a healthy state once again. (10-20-73)

Adam, Eve and Lucifer lost vertical and horizontal love when they fell. Vertical love was the love between God and them. Horizontal love was the love between Adam, Eve and Lucifer. This love is called brotherhood and sisterhood.

The *Bible* says, "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the greatest and first commandment. And a second is like it: You shall love your neighbor as yourself. On these two commandments depend all the law and the prophets" (Matt. 22:37-40).

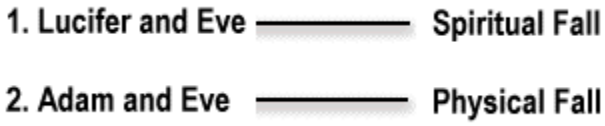
The first commandment is that we demonstrate vertical love for God. The second commandment is to show horizontal love for people. Central figures of God are required to live up to these two difficult commandments.

LOVE OF GOD = VERTICAL LOVE

LOVE OF NEIGHBOR = HORIZONTAL LOVE

There were two acts of evil in the Garden of Eden. The first was between Lucifer and Eve and the second between Adam and Eve. The first act was more unprincipled than the second. Angels and mankind were never intended to have sexual relations. It is totally unnatural. Sex between Adam and Eve was natural but premature. Also the motivation of Eve was less evil with Adam than with Lucifer. She went to Adam in the hope of repairing what had happened with Lucifer.

The act between Lucifer and Eve is called the spiritual fall, and the act between Adam and Eve is called the physical fall. If Adam had not succumbed to Eve, he could have restored Eve by teaching her how to lift herself out of her tragic situation, and then Lucifer could have been dominated by Adam. But when Adam fell the Fall became complete and the angel Lucifer dominated God's children. Lucifer became Satan and ruled the world.



CAIN AND ABEL

God's first central figure on earth was Adam. God works through a central point. When Adam fell and became a mixture of good and evil, God had to restore this. Cain and Abel, Adam's sons, represented the evil and good split in Adam. Abel was chosen to represent God's side because he was the second son of Adam and Eve. Cain, the first son of Adam and Eve, represented the first fruits of the unprincipled love between Lucifer and Eve. Abel represented the fruits of the relatively lesser evil of the second act between Adam and Eve.

Abel and Cain, representing good and evil, were to restore the vertical and horizontal love that was lost in the Garden of Eden. To restore vertical love between God and man, God asked Abel to give an offering. Adam, Eve and Lucifer voluntarily walked away from God. They disobeyed God. To restore this Abel showed his love by obeying God and successfully gave his offering. This act restored vertical love and the spiritual fall.

To restore horizontal love and the physical fall God had Cain represent the angel Lucifer and Abel represent God's children. Cain's mission was to love Abel and become one in heart with him. God told Cain to make an offering. Cain did and then God refused it. God did this not because he hated Cain. On the

contrary. He loved Cain. He loved Cain as much as He loved Abel. God loves all of His children equally. But Cain was required to restore fallen emotions. By rejecting Cain's offering Cain would have the same feelings Lucifer had—jealousy. God warned Cain to be aware of this but Cain compared himself to his brother Abel and felt the same lack of love that Lucifer had towards Adam. Lucifer struck Adam, God's first central figure and now Cain struck Abel, God's second central figure. Now physical murder was introduced to the world. More evil was produced. God's task became more difficult. Lucifer (Satan) influenced Cain to kill his brother. God lost in this first attempt to restore the misuse of love in the Garden of Eden.

SECOND ADAM

If there had been love between Cain and Abel then there would have been a base for God to step in and claim from Satan enough room or space in Satan's dominion for another totally pure man to be born. Through this pure man God could reach out to all people and raise them—teaching them how to separate themselves from Satan. This pure man or Second Adam would fulfill what Adam wasn't able to fulfill in the Garden of Eden, i.e., the fulfillment of the Three Great Blessings and an ideal, harmonious Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

Cain and Abel were to lay a foundation for the Second Adam to be born. God can only send the Second Adam to an environment that will protect him. God first placed Adam in the Garden of Eden protected by Lucifer who He trusted to protect him. Likewise, God had to see that Adam's family would protect the Second Adam while he was growing to perfection. With the Second Adam as the True Parent to Adam's family, Satan would have no base with anyone and would without his powers give up and be restored to Lucifer as before the Fall. The Second Adam is called the Messiah. God had to postpone sending the Messiah until another family laid the proper foundation. Mankind grew into a society filled with people who had lost their spiritual senses and fallen into a terrible spiritual darkness. God saw every kind of evil. Satan ruled with a vengeance. The earth was filled with violence and immorality. The murder of Abel increased to wars.

Human history is really an unseen battle between God and Satan. God is struggling to win control. All conflicts are between relative

good and relative evil. God has been trying to teach those on His side to be strong and not be killed and win over those in the Cain position.

TRUE PARENTS

Sun Myung Moon teaches that Adam and Eve should have become True Parents:

> Marriage is the most important means of establishing God's kingdom on earth. Adam and Eve were God's first children. They were born of God, grew up in God, and were to have matured into perfection in God. God intended to make Adam and Eve one in heavenly matrimony. Then they would have borne sinless children and become the true mother and father for all humankind. They would have been the "True Parents," establishing the Heavenly Kingdom on earth.
>
> Has such a kingdom ever existed? No. Instead, history started off in the wrong direction. From the first evil step, Satan has been the god of this world. It has, therefore, been God's purpose of restoration, His purpose of salvation, to restore the perfected family so that He can truly have His kingdom upon the earth. For this God needs a model. Who can set the criteria of perfection on this earth? To meet this need, the Messiah comes.
>
> The history of God's providence is a sad, sad story. To comfort the heart of God and fulfill His work, we must clearly understand His process of restoration, and the poverty of the human response to God, especially at the time of Christ. (5-20-73)

NOAH'S FAMILY

After Cain murdered Abel, Seth, Adam's third son, took the place of Abel (Gen. 4:25). And from Seth's descendants God chose

Noah's family to substitute for Adam's family and begin His providence to lay the foundation for the Messiah.

The *Bible* says that there are 10 generations and about 1600 years from Adam to Noah:

1. Adam	130
2. Seth	105
3. Enosh	90
4. Kenan	70
5. Mahalei	65
6. Jared	162
7. Enoch	65
8. Methusaiah	187
9. Lamech	182
	= 1056 yrs

The dates given above for these nine patriarchs are the age they had the son named below them. Adam was 130 years old when he fathered Seth. If we add these numbers they come to 1056. Noah is the tenth and began having his children at the age of 500. This means the *Bible* says there is 1556 years from Adam to Noah.

The *Principle* rounds this off to 1600 which is a multiple of 400. The numbers used in Genesis and most of the numbers used in the entire Old Testament are basically symbolic, not literal numbers. These 10 generations are a cycle of separation from Satan. After this cycle God and mankind could start at the beginning point once more.

Sun Myung Moon spoke publicly in all 50 states in America in 1973. In his speech titled "God's Hope for America" he talked of Noah saying:

> It has been a cardinal principle of God's providence that in order to receive God's blessing you must first demonstrate your worthiness of the blessing. Throughout history there have been many righteous people who demonstrated their worthiness of God's blessing by leading sacrificial lives. Nevertheless, we know that the world we live in today is not literally God's kingdom. We learn that human history started on the wrong footing, on the evil side. This is why the Bible says that the god of this world is Satan.
>
> **ABEL – FIRST CHAMPION**
> It has been the strategy of God to summon champions out of this evil world in order to restore the world and build His kingdom. To understand His ways, let us therefore examine the history of God's providence. The family of Adam was the first family in God's creation. In this family there was a man, Abel, whom God chose to be His first champion. Abel served God wholeheartedly, and became the first man to give up his life for God's purpose.
>
> **NOAH DEFIES COMMON SENSE**
> Later on God called Noah as His champion. And Noah accomplished a very unusual mission. God

directed Noah to build a ship, and he was to build it on the top of a mountain. Now, it is just common sense that in building a ship you need a shipyard by some body of water. But Noah's instructions were to build the ark on top of a mountain rather than at the seashore or riverside. How many of us here could accept that kind of mission? How many of us could obey such a command and set to work without a single shred of doubt?

In Noah's time, no one could believe that Noah had received a command from God — nor did anyone accept him in his mission of revealing the coming flood judgment. Can you imagine how Noah appeared to the people of his day? For 120 years he went up and down, up and down that mountain working on his boat. Would anyone among the ladies in the audience like to think of herself in the position of the wife of Noah? I don't think you would be a very happy wife.

INCOMPREHENSIBLE MISSION

Noah's wife must have packed his lunch basket every day, using only a little food. Noah was so busy with the ark he could not find time to provide for his family. Within only a few months the family squabbles must have begun, but it was not just for 12 months or 12 years that Noah's wife had to sustain her situation, but for 120 years. Why, then, did God ask of Noah such an incomprehensible mission? Why does God have to work that way? There is a reason. It is because of evil.

180 DEGREES

God cannot dwell together with evil. The direction of God is 180 degrees contrary to the direction of evil. God abhors evil! God cannot accept the things that the evil world accepts. So

God does not want anything to do with the evil world, or with whatever is tainted by evil.

We are all in the image of God and can find traits similar to His in our human nature. Consider if you have an enemy toward whom you have strong feelings; you don't want to so much as look at that person. Likewise, God will have nothing to do with the evil, satanic world. Therefore, in dealing with it, He chooses ways often incomprehensible to man.

GOD TESTS

God also tests the faith of man. He cannot do this by asking just ordinary things of people. We must be willing to comply with God's extraordinary instructions. We must display to God absolute faith. This is not an easy task. People thought Noah was a crazy man for building the ark. Nobody knew he occupied the central position in God's view.

CRAZY PERSON

Have you thought about Noah's family? Noah built the ark on the top of a mountain. If it was on flat land, it would be a different story, but building a ship on the top of a mountain is not only beyond common sense it also certainly passed the limits of logical tolerance. In any ordinary sense, Noah is acting like a crazy person. If he wanted to build a ship, he should have built it on a bank; however, since he built it on a mountain, his action was totally beyond common sense.

LIFE OF LONG DEDICATION

Do you think God who ordered such a command did so in a joking manner? No. God knew better than anyone that Noah's course required a life of long dedication on the path of unbearable suffering, and He did not command him with a more peaceful (inner) content than Noah's

suffering course. Because there was an even more difficult content for God, with such a condition God hoped to gain one way to resolve His inner situation, and He commanded Noah to go the path of suffering for 120 years. How miserable would such a heart of God be? His misery was indescribable.

Therefore, when Noah took the obedient position at the decisive, tense moment of whether to accept or not to accept that command, don't you think God was happier than Noah? Moreover, God is the one who could be saddened more than Noah. God's position cannot be established without establishing the position of such an owner who takes the responsibility for joy and sorrow.

Noah suffered rejection from his own wife, family, neighbors and relatives. He received mockery and opposition from his own nation and the whole world. If he attempted to abandon his task even once, then he would have been attacked by Satan again. However, he overcame all difficulties and was successful in completing his mission.

He fought against Satan and separated himself from Satan. God came to love him, and he came to dwell within the realm of God's love. However, that was not all. Whoever comes to dwell in the midst of God's love, God makes that person sacrifice himself by sending him into the satanic world and into difficulties. Of course, one reason may be to train him; however, it is really for the purpose of saving more people. Noah who was righteous, honest, and good had to always sacrifice himself with a sorrowful heart and with the shedding of tears.

Even in the environment of persecution and chaos, grandpa Noah was able to win over such

> an environment because he gave his utmost effort. He went forth with the humble mind that he can only try his best in front of God's law to fulfill the duty of filial piety and loyalty. As he went closer in front of God, he felt the cruelty of his environment and became sorrowful. In such moments, because the grandpa Noah went on shedding the tears of repentance and feeling sorry to God, there was no one who could stop his way. Do you understand?
>
> Think of Noah who lived in such way for 120 years. Even though the satanic world mobilized every possible means to hit this one person, Noah, he never deviated from the standard which God established as the center. That standard is established as the absolute center of the cosmos, as the righteous man of the cosmos, and as the victor of truth. (*The Way of the Spiritual Leader Part I*)

As we look at human history from God's viewpoint we will see that central figures of God lead unusual lives that most people cannot understand. They lead very difficult lives because they must do the opposite of Adam and Eve. They are called to show absolute obedience to God's commands that from man's viewpoint seems impossible to fulfill. *The Divine Principle* and the thousands of speeches of Sun Myung Moon reveal where these men, their wives, and their children were successful and where they failed. For consideration of space I cannot go into much detail about the lives of these central men and their families. You can learn more about them in the speeches of Sun Myung Moon. Many of his speeches are on the Internet that you can read for free. Visit www.Unification.net and www.tparents.org.

FORMULA

In the pattern of history God is using a precise formula to restore mankind. God sets up a situation to reenact the Fall. Someone is chosen by God to represent Adam (called a central figure), and someone is chosen to represent Lucifer. We learned that Cain and Abel did not restore what happened in the Garden of Eden between Lucifer and Adam.

In Noah's family God set up another situation. He chose Noah to stand in the position of Adam or Abel, and Noah's son Ham is put in Lucifer's or Cain's position. If Noah and Ham can do the opposite of Lucifer and Adam and the opposite of Cain and Abel, then God can send the Messiah knowing he will be protected and followed.

If they fail then God must move on and pick new people and try again. What God needs is for mankind to make an effort voluntarily to restore the Fall. Before God can send the Messiah there are certain conditions that must be met. By making these conditions then the loss of God's ideal can be indemnified. These indemnity conditions require effort.

INDEMNITY

God was betrayed. And it was necessary for Cain and Abel to make special effort, i.e., indemnity conditions to show God they loved Him and were sorry. In our everyday life we have to show effort to restore any relationship in which we hurt others. We have to apologize, change our behavior, pay money or do something to pay for our mistake and show our sincerity and that we want to have a trusting relationship again.

The indemnity conditions God needed from Cain and Abel were efforts to show vertical and horizontal love. Abel, God's central figure, had to make an offering and show vertical love. Then Abel and Cain were supposed to restore horizontal love between each other with Cain accepting Abel as his leader and following him.

In Noah's family Noah showed vertical love, and God was hoping Noah and Ham could show horizontal love. Before we get into Noah's family let's stop for a moment and look at one further aspect in God's pattern and formula to restore man. In God's dispensation of restoration we call the indemnity conditions to restore vertical love—the Foundation of Faith, and the effort required to overcome our fallen nature and love each other horizontally in a God centered way is called the Foundation of Substance. By doing both of these loving actions we lay the Foundation for the Messiah. It is also necessary to make these conditions in a certain time period. Adam and Eve were supposed to accomplish growing to perfection in a certain amount of time. Mankind lost God's mathematical time periods.

MATHEMATICAL NATURE OF THE UNIVERSE

God is mathematical. Scientists have admired the mathematical nature of the universe. One author writes, "Galileo and Kepler really and truly believed in a God who planned and designed the whole creation—a God who was a master mathematician and technician. Mathematics was God's style, and whether it was the movement of the stars, the flight of a bird, the diffusion of gases, or the propagation of opinions—they all bore God's mathematical hallmark" (Eric Hoffer, *Ordeal of Change*).

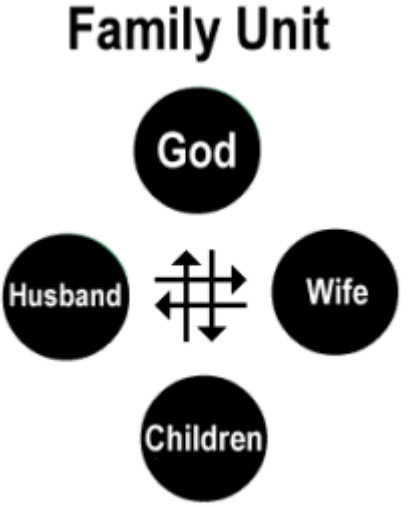
God created the world with mathematical precision. This is why mathematics is the basis of science. Men and women were created to mature by fulfilling the numbers of perfection: 3, 4, 7, 10, 12 and 21.

Three is the number of God. It is the highest number of perfection. The number three is often mentioned in the *Bible*: the three decks of Noah's ark; three flights of doves from Noah's ark; three sons of Adam; three sons of Noah; the three wise men.

We see the number three reflected in the natural world. There are the three kingdoms of animal, vegetable and mineral. There are the three states of matter: solid, liquid and gas; three primary colors: red, yellow and blue; three components of DNA: sugar, base and phosphate; three macronutrients: carbohydrates, fats, and proteins; three components of atoms: protons, neutrons and electrons. Infinity is represented by a circle; a circle is determined by three points.

The number four symbolizes earthly perfection. There are four directions of north, south, east and west and the four seasons of spring, summer, fall and winter.

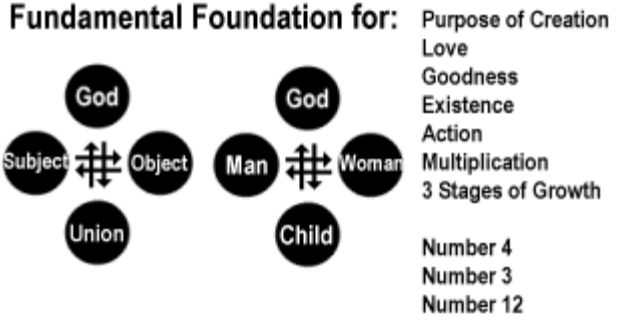
The family unit is composed of four parts: God, man, woman and children.



The significance of the number three is derived from these four positions. There are three distinct stages: God as the origin; the husband and wife as the division of God's dual characteristics; and their children as the result of their unity.

God		1. Origin
Man	Woman	2. Division
Child		3. Union

God's eternal pattern for all beings and things is called the Four Position Foundation. It is the fundamental foundation for all love, goodness, ideals, existence, action, multiplication and the three stages of the growth period. It is also the basis for the significance of the numbers 4, 3, and 12.



Another number of perfection is seven, the combination of the earthly number four with the spiritual number three. There are seven days in a week. The number seven or multiples of seven are often used in the *Bible*: God created the earth and the heavens in seven symbolic days; Jacob worked seven years to gain Rachel; there were 70 members in Jacob's family.

Each stage of the growth period has a formation, growth and completion stage, making a total of nine stages. The final tenth stage is full maturity and the reason that ten is also a number of perfection. This is why we have ten fingers and ten toes.

A baby grows through nine months and is born in the tenth. In the *Bible*, God gave Moses Ten Commandments.

10 Perfection

9

8 Completion stage

7

6

5 Growth stage

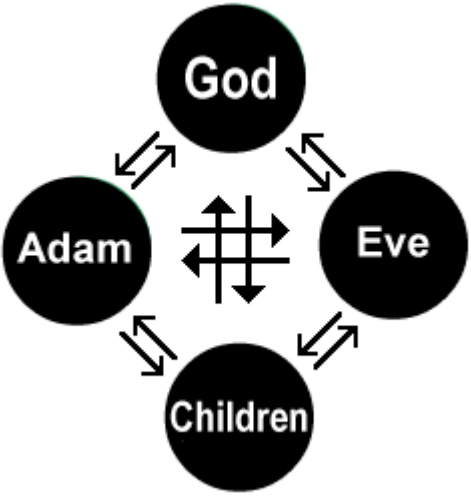
4

3

2 Formation stage

1

The number twelve is also a number of perfection. There are 12 personality types, 12 months in the year and the number 12 occurs in the *Bible*. For example, Jesus had 12 disciples. The source of these numbers comes from the family unit. God's plan was for man and woman to be one with Him in love. They would marry and have a family. God, the husband and the wife would love the child with all their hearts and the child would love them in return. If we made a diagram of the four positions and put arrows of all the directions of love toward each other there would be 12 directions of love.



By multiplying the number 7 by the number 3 we have still another number of perfection, 21. In the *Bible* Noah sent out doves three times for seven days each totaling 21 days.

NOAH

Noah was a righteous man. God told Noah he was going to flood the earth and that Noah should prepare. Noah spent around 100 years building the ark. The ark symbolized the world. The three decks represented the three stages of the growth period. Noah represented God; Noah's family represented mankind; the animals symbolized the creation.

It rained 40 days (10x4), representing separation from the satanic world. Afterwards, a raven went forth symbolizing Satan. Noah sent a dove. After 7 days it returned, unsuccessful in finding dry land. This represented Adam who was unsuccessful. Noah sent a second dove after 7 days. It returned with an olive branch symbolizing the Second Adam. Seven days later, after 21 days, Noah sent a third dove. It did not return, which meant that it was successful in finding dry land. If God was unsuccessful with the Second Adam, He had one more chance to send a Third Adam who would be successful.

There were eight members in Noah's family: Noah, his wife, their sons, Ham, Japeth and Shem, and their wives. This equaled Adam and Eve, their three sons, Cain, Abel and Seth and their wives. The number eight symbolizes a new start. There are seven days to a week; the eighth day is a new start.

With Noah's family God wanted to start fresh. If Noah's family could restore the sins of Adam's family, then they would multiply and the Second Adam could be born. Satan would have no base on earth and would have to repent and become Lucifer again. Because sin began on earth, it must be erased from earth first.

To help explain God's purpose of the flood judgment let's use an analogy of a parent who has a son that becomes criminally insane. The son commits terrible crimes and comes home to hide. Although the Father loves his son he cannot let him continue to hurt others. The father does not want his son to be imprisoned but in this case he knows it is a better place for him because he can be helped. So in agony the father calls the police and has his son taken to a mental hospital. The father is not acting out of vengeance. The flood judgment was not the wrath of God but the love of God. For God, the flood was the police, and the spirit world was the mental hospital.

In this way, God wanted to save mankind. God's motivation in putting everyone in the spirit world by cleansing the earth with the flood was to save mankind, not to hurt them. The people would be better off in spirit world. Even so, it was such a difficult and painful decision for God to create the flood that He decided never to work that way again.

We read in the *Bible* that God said, "... never again shall there be a flood to destroy the earth" (Gen. 9:11). The rainbow is a reminder of that promise.

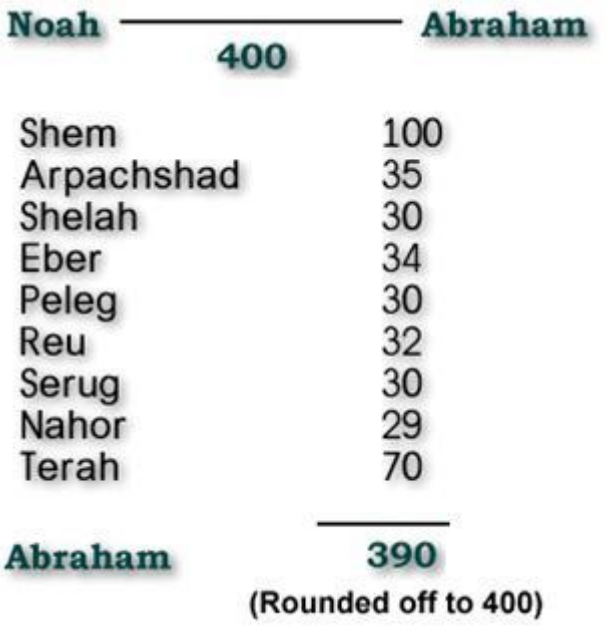
If Noah's family demonstrated purity, then those who were killed by the flood and everyone else who had previously died and gone to the spirit world, including Adam and Eve, would be restored to perfection.

After the flood, Noah and his second son, Ham, became the central figures to represent Lucifer (Cain) and Adam (Abel). They were to achieve what Cain and Abel did not. One day, Noah fell asleep naked in his tent. Ham saw him but failed to see Noah as God saw him. Ham should have multiplied goodness but instead he felt shame, the same feelings that occurred in the Garden of Eden. Ham multiplied evil by having his two brothers cover his father. When Noah woke up, he cursed him. Satan had again stopped God from sending the Messiah. God couldn't send the Second Adam to Noah's family. There was no foundation.

So God had to wait and transfer the mission of restoring Adam's family to another family. When a champion of God fails, God moves on to another person. As God waited, the earth became re-peopled from Noah's three sons and their wives. God's original plan was for one culture and one language. The differences in languages are a result of the Fall and has been one of the barriers to creating a one world family. As history goes on and more languages and cultures arise, it becomes harder for God and mankind to restore the world. The *Bible* says after 400 years God found a family He could work with. This family was Abraham's.

ABRAHAM

The approximately 400 years between Noah and Abraham were 10 generations just as there was 10 generations (1600 years) between Adam and Noah.



These nine patriarchs had their son listed below their name at the age given. Terah fathered Abraham when he was 70. If we add the numbers above we see there were 390 years from Adam's son Seth to the birth of Abraham. After Noah, the *Bible* says God shortened the ages of people so he could shorten the time needed for restoration.

Abraham had Ishmael when he was 86 years old. If we add 390 + 86 we get the number 476. Abraham had Isaac when he was 100 years old. 390 + 100= 490 years. The *Principle* rounds these numbers to 400 for the period from Noah's family to Abraham's family. As we continue into the *Bible* the numbers get more precise. Later we will compare the precise symbolic numbers of Israelite history to the precise literal numbers of Christian history.

The imprecise numbers of pre-Israelite history in Genesis will roughly correlate to the precise parallels we will see between Israelite history and Christian history.

ABRAHAM — ISAAC — JACOB

God's previous champion, Noah, was a righteous man. But Abraham was the first son of an idol maker. Why did He choose someone like Abraham? Before Abraham, God had favored second sons such as Abel, and Satan had favored first sons like Cain. But we know that in Noah's family Satan claimed Ham, a second son. Therefore God claimed a first son of an idol maker.

Sun Myung Moon talks about Abraham in some of his speeches. Here are a few excerpts:

> God summoned Abraham, not from a family headed by a man of God, but from an idol-maker's house, and ordered him to separate himself from his evil surroundings and leave his homeland. God wanted Abraham to be His champion. This was God's personal command. If Abraham had then discussed this matter with his father, the idol-maker would undoubtedly have asked him, "Are you crazy?" Abraham knew better than to mention anything to his father about his instruction from God. Who would have believed him? His mission was not just to say hello to his next door neighbor. God instructed him to journey to a strange land, as far away as Egypt.
>
> Abraham's decision then was a lonely one, based upon his faith and his reliance upon God. By faith alone he made his decision and departed, with nothing on his mind except following the command of God. I know he stole away in the middle of the night. Suddenly he found himself wandering like a gypsy. He lived in self-denial; he had given up everything.

The champions of God have one characteristic in common. They begin their missions by denial of themselves and their surroundings. (10-21-73)

Abraham was the son of an idol merchant. To Abraham who was living in an affluent environment, God called and commanded, "Oh! Abraham, come out of your home." Thereupon, without a word of complaint, without any guarantee of a good life anywhere else, Abraham left his hometown, Ur of the Chaldeans, abandoning everything. As a result, what did he become? He became a gypsy wandering across borders.

If God calls you to come out, then come out. After coming out, no matter what kind of difficulty you may face, you should never regret or resent God. If you complain then you go back to the position of fallen Adam.

Let us look at Abraham. God separated him from his father who was a idol merchant. He had to abandon his own family, own nation, all the material wealth and everything else. In this manner, by separating him from the satanic world, he came into the land of Canaan. God trained him and advanced the dispensation by making him cry not only for his own people but for other people and even for his enemies.

God made him work leaving his own nation for a foreign land. He had to wander around like a gypsy. He always prayed in tears with earnest heart, and lived with the hope that God could save many people through his prayers.

When we look at the Bible, we may get the impression that God blessed Abraham and loved him unconditionally. However, it is not so.

> Abraham had to separate himself from Satan by abandoning his loving family, nation, material wealth, and every thing else, by going to the unknown chosen land, and by always shedding tears for God and for the people. He prayed much for his people and suffered much pain for his nation.
>
> Through such conditions, God was able to establish Abraham as the ancestor of faith and to bless his descendants to prosper greatly. Although such content is not recorded in the Bible, behind God's blessing there was such a background. (*The Way of the Spiritual Leader Part I*)

Before they entered Egypt, Abraham told his wife Sarah to pretend to be his sister. When they arrived in Egypt, the Pharaoh heard of her great beauty and took Sarah into his home. God immediately inflicted a plague on Pharaoh's home. The Pharaoh, in fear, gave Sarah back and told Abraham to leave Egypt.

Here again is a re-enacting of the Garden of Eden. Adam and Eve were like brother and sister. The Pharaoh was Lucifer. Lucifer took Eve, but the Pharaoh did not take Sarah. He gave her back to Abraham untouched. So, Abraham's family restored the Fall in Adam's family. The stories of Adam, Noah and Abraham take place in different times and in different ways but the motif of the pattern or symbolism is the same. The stories in the *Bible* are tied together.

By passing His test in Egypt, God let Abraham enter Canaan. God tested Abraham again. God said to him, "Bring me a heifer, a female goat, a ram, a turtledove, and a pigeon" (Gen. 15:9). The sacrifices symbolize the three stages of the growth period. The turtledove and pigeon represent the formation stage; the goat and the ram the growth stage; and the heifer, the completion stage.

Completion Stage	Heifer	3rd Adam	Completed Testament
Growth Stage	Goat, Ram	2nd Adam	New Testament
Formation Stage	Turtledove, Pigeon	1st Adam	Old Testament

Each stage also represents God's three chances to bring a perfect Adam to earth to start building the kingdom of heaven. The First Adam is represented by the birds. What is the symbolism of the dove? A dove descended on Jesus. John the Baptist represented the Old Testament; Jesus the New Testament. At this point the Old Testament was fulfilled. So the dove symbolized the Old Testament beginning with Adam.

What does the goat and ram mean? Jesus was called the Lamb of God. John the Baptist once said, pointing to Jesus, "Here is the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!" (John 1:29). The growth stage represents the New Testament of Jesus, the Second Adam.

What does the heifer mean? Its symbolism can be found in the story of Samson. Samson told a riddle to the Philistines. They couldn't figure it out so they had Samson's wife find out and tell them. When they answered the riddle, Samson told them, "If you had not plowed with my heifer, you would not have found out my riddle." Samson's wife was compared to a heifer. If, by chance,

the Second Adam was unsuccessful, then God could send the Third Adam. This Adam would succeed in marrying and establishing the first perfect family on earth and restore what Adam and Eve failed to do. The third stage represents the Third Adam who brings the Completed Testament.

The manner of cutting the animals in half was difficult for Abraham. It took great effort to carefully cut the animals lengthwise through its entire body. Abraham successfully cut the heifer in half and the ram and goat but became tired and fell asleep before sacrificing the birds. Birds of prey came and destroyed the offering. Abraham had failed. We read, "He brought him all these, cut them in two, and laid each half over against the other; but he did not cut the birds in two. And when birds of prey came down upon the carcasses, Abraham drove them away. As the sun was going down, a deep sleep fell on Abraham: and lo, a dread and great darkness fell upon him. Then the Lord said to Abraham, 'know this for certain, that your descendants will be aliens in a land that is not theirs, and will be slaves there, and they will be oppressed for four hundred years!'" (Gen. 15:10-13)

These offerings were deeply symbolic and important. The cutting in half was a symbolic act to show Abraham's desire to separate good and evil—to separate Cain and Abel. Each of us must work to cut evil out of ourselves. If we don't, Satan will invade. Sun Myung Moon explains, "Whatever was sacrificed was killed and cut in half, to ensure that one part representing goodness was separated from the bad so that God was free to claim it. ... By instructing man to shed the blood of animals God could begin to restore man without shedding man's blood." (6-6-78)

Abraham was careless and did not cut the birds because he was tired after working on the large animals. Even though we get tired doing what is right we must be careful to understand deeply our responsibilities and persevere to accomplish our mission. In a speech titled "Perseverance and Contemplation" (8-27-78) Sun Myung Moon teaches:

> Now you know about endurance and contemplation. What would result from your

> doing this? How much effect would this have on the world? If Adam and Eve had endured, would they have fallen? If they had thought one or two steps ahead, would they have yielded to the fall? If Eve had had second thoughts, she would never have tried to tempt Adam into falling as well. She would have contained it within herself and never passed it to Adam. If they had thought longer and more deeply, they would never have fallen in the first place.
>
> We can say that the failure of every providential mission resulted from failing to think deeply. If Noah had persevered in his vigilance a little longer, instead of becoming intoxicated and lying naked, his mission would not have been invaded. We can definitely say his mission would have succeeded if he had continued and thought a little more. Why would Abraham have cut all of his offering in half except the two birds? If he had only thought a little more about what he was doing and whether it was right, then he would not have been negligent and brought failure.

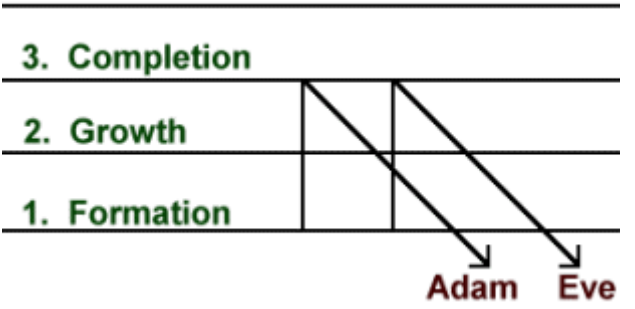
Abraham may have also felt the birds seemed of little importance because they were literally little. Abraham should have been thorough and seen every act as important. The birds had as much value as the larger animals just as children have as much value as adults. God loves every person regardless of their size or importance or status. He loves every nation of the world regardless of its size. These animals, just like the animals on Noah's ark, symbolized the whole earth.

Placing the cut animals one side on top of the other represented the restored position of Adam over the archangel. By failing to offer a pure offering of the birds that were in the formation stage the entire offering and all of mankind was claimed by Satan. The birds of prey represent Satan and evil spirits dominating mankind. We are all from the blood lineage of Adam and Eve. Shedding blood of animals in the sacrifices of the Old Testament and in the act of

circumcision is symbolic of cutting off from that stained lineage and beginning a pure lineage from God.

Abraham's failure, like the failures of central figures before him, caused so many to suffer. Because he didn't cut the birds in half his many descendants were to suffer in slavery for four hundred years. It is important to see the magnitude and importance that central figures of God have.

We have seen that when a central figure of God fails He always moves on to another. In Abraham's case we have an exception. God was able to give Abraham a second chance to be a central figure because Abraham was the third central figure of God (after Abel and Noah). The reason God could claim the third central figure was because Adam and Eve fell while they were in the growth stage of development.



The third stage was not invaded by Satan so Abraham, the third champion of God and his family, could be used again. If Abraham had been successful God would have had Abraham's two sons Isaac and Ishmael be the central figures to restore horizontal love of Cain and Abel. Abraham's failure caused a division. Ishmael left and became the ancestor of the Arab race. Another tragic effect of Abraham's failure was that it laid the basis for division and hatred between the Arabs who would be descended from Ishmael, and the Jews who would be descended from Isaac. The Arab and Jew are brothers but the seed of animosity and distance between them originate with their ancestor Abraham.

WOMEN'S ROLE IN RESTORATION

Women play a very important part in God's dispensation. Sarah made a mistake in not creating unity with Hagar. "Those two wives were supposed to be united together as one family of Abraham but that was not done" (2-20-91). Sarah influenced Abraham to have her banished. "Abraham should have taken care of Ishmael's mother Hagar ... Sarah did not embrace Hagar and Ishmael. Do you think God wanted Ishmael to be expelled? God wanted him to embrace him. That is why it is important to love the enemy" (8-31-2003). "Abraham should not have kicked out Hagar and Ishmael. The world would be totally different if this did not occur. Sarah made a serious mistake." (1-3-2004)

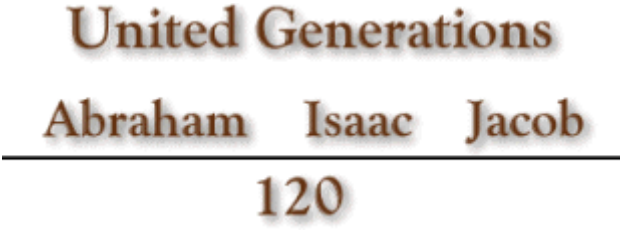
Wives and mothers play crucial, central roles in a marriage and family. Their role is to be architects of intimacy that create harmony in a family. Sadly, not only have central men failed to live up to God's directions completely but women in the lives of these men have sometimes caused disunity and slowed the providence of God and made it more difficult for those who follow. When God's champion men, champion women and champion families make mistakes they influence future generations to make the same mistake. They plant seeds that sabotage God's plan of restoration. The core tactic of Satan is to cause disunity in marriages and families. God's core tactic is to build unity. The Fall was disunity in the marriage of Adam and Eve that led to the disunity of their sons, Cain and Abel. Their disunity was the seed of disunity that we see today.

God's alternative plan was to have Abraham's son Isaac become the central figure to restore vertical love and for his children to restore horizontal love (Cain and Abel). God told Abraham to take his son to Mount Moriah and sacrifice him. He had to pay a greater indemnity for the failure of not cutting the birds.

Abraham and Sarah were very old when they had Isaac. Abraham adored his son. When God asked Abraham to sacrifice Isaac on an altar of fire you can imagine the feelings of Abraham. He loved his son, but he loved God more. So he took Isaac on a three-day walk to Mt. Moriah. The three days represent a separation from Satan and a new beginning for God.

When they arrived, they built an altar and when Isaac asked, "Where is the lamb?" Abraham said, "My son, you are the sacrifice." Without any hesitation, completely trusting his father, Isaac got on the altar. Abraham took his knife, raised it in the air and was about to plunge it into his son when we read, "an angel of the Lord called back from Heaven, and said, 'Abraham, Abraham!' And he said 'Here I am.' He said, 'Do not lay your hand on the lad or do anything to him; for now I know that you fear God, seeing you have not withheld your son, your only son, from me'" (Gen. 22:10-12).

Abraham's mission as God's central figure transferred to Isaac and then to Jacob. The Old Testament gives 40 years as a generation so these three generations total 120 years. (Some historians believe they have been able to determine literal dates for the length of time a few people lived that are named in the Old Testament, but the *Principle* only looks at the symbolic dates given in the *Bible*.) And because they became united as one in God's dispensation the Jewish people today say their God is the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob.

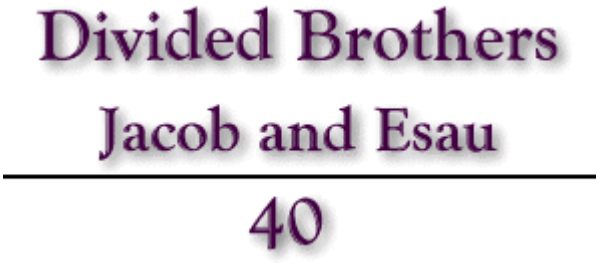


JACOB

Isaac inherited Abraham's position as central figure because although Isaac was a young boy he was old enough to know he was giving his life and did so without hesitation. By being one with Abraham and offering himself as a sacrifice he successfully became a central figure and fulfilled the foundation of vertical love. Isaac's two sons, Esau and Jacob, were placed in the positions of Cain and Abel. Esau was in the position of Cain (or Lucifer) and Jacob was in the position of Abel (or Adam). Esau was the eldest son like Cain and represented evil and Jacob was the second son, like Abel, who represented good. We read that Esau and Jacob fought, even in their mother's womb (Gen. 25:22-

23) and that God "loved" Jacob and "hated" Esau (Rom. 9:13) because God must hate what is evil and love what is good. God loves Esau, but he hates the evil that Esau represents.

In restoring the past during God's Providence of Restoration not only must those in the Cain position do right but those in the Abel position must make conditions to show they are worthy of being God's champion. Jacob had to show his worthiness for being in the Abel position. In the Garden of Eden Lucifer stole the birthright from Adam. So to restore this loss, Jacob, in the position of Adam stole the birthright from Esau who represented Lucifer. Jacob and Esau had such different personalities and interests that they had almost nothing to do with each other for many years. Let's use the number 40 to represent their separation. But at the end of this time the division between them became complete when Jacob stole Esau's blessing by pretending to be Esau before his father Isaac.



God does not condone stealing but in this case God did because it represents restoration of the birthright to Adam. When Esau discovered how his brother had tricked him, he was furious. He was going to kill Jacob, but Jacob heard this and fled to Haran and stayed with his Uncle Laban.

Laban was cruel and cheated Jacob many times. But after 20 years of suffering Jacob successfully earned great wealth and in the 21st year started his return to his homeland. True Father, Sun Myung Moon, reveals:

> Jacob was in the position of Adam, and had to go beyond the level where Adam failed and fell. In what manner could Jacob carry this out? Jacob had

to think only of God, His will, and His words, trusting that God, who had blessed him, would never betray him. Even though his brother, Esau, may have wanted to take revenge on him, he would have to have such strong faith as to never be defeated so he could stop his brother from taking his revenge.

Now Jacob was on his way home to meet his brother, Esau. He could have gone somewhere else to enjoy his wealth if he did not think of God's will. He could have said, "Esau is Esau, and I am I; what have I to do with his life?" But his mind was so occupied by God's will that he wanted to meet his brother and reconcile the past and soothe his heart until his resentment vanished. What did he have to do in meeting his elder brother, Esau? First of all, he was ready to give up all his possessions, all his servants and his children, telling his brother that all these belonged to him. His attitude was: "All that I have is yours except God's will and God's blessing which is eternally mine." Adam, who ignored God's will, was self-centered, minding only himself, and lost his children and all things of God's blessing. On the contrary, Jacob was so God-centered that he would give away all things for the will of God. (5-27-1973)

Jacob's exile and return

21

When he and his family were leaving Haran, Rachel, Jacob's wife, stole Laban's idols. Laban pursued them, found Jacob and said, "You have stolen my idols. I want them back." Jacob, knowing nothing, got angry and said he didn't have them but Laban could look for them. When Laban went into Rachel's tent, we read, "Now Rachel had taken the household gods and put them in the camel's saddle, and sat upon them. Laban felt all about the tent,

but did not find them. And she said to her father, 'Let not my lord be angry that I cannot rise before you, for the way of women is upon me.' So he searched, but did not find the household gods" (Gen: 31:34-35). Laban finally gave up and returned home. Lucifer had deceived Eve. Now Eve, represented by Rachel, stole from Lucifer. Sun Myung Moon teaches, "Because Rachel was sitting on the idols and they were under her sexual organ, Laban couldn't touch them. Therefore this set the condition to restore the ownership of the sexual organ." (Rough notes hoon dok hae 2-4-06)

Now Jacob was on his way home to meet his brother, Esau. He could have gone somewhere else to enjoy his wealth if he did not think of God's will. He could have said, "Esau is Esau, and I am I; what have I to do with his life?" But his mind was so occupied by God's will that he wanted to meet his brother and reconcile the past and soothe his heart until his resentment vanished. What did he have to do in meeting his elder brother, Esau? First of all, he was ready to give up all his possessions, all his servants and his children, telling his brother that all these belonged to him. His attitude was: "All that I have is yours except God's will and God's blessing which is eternally mine." Adam, who ignored God's will, was self-centered, minding only himself, and lost his children and all things of God's blessing. On the contrary, Jacob was so God-centered that he would give away all things for the will of God. (5-27-1973)

As Jacob bravely made his way back to his home Esau heard of his coming and he felt, like Cain, a great resentment to his brother and led an army of four hundred men to kill Jacob. When Jacob heard this news he prayed to God and then thought, "I may appease him with the present that goes before me, and afterwards I shall see his face; perhaps he will accept me" (Gen. 32:20). With a pure heart he sent ahead of him as a gift for Esau his five hundred livestock that he had earned for his hard labor in Haran. And when Jacob saw Esau he went to him and we read, "…bowing himself to the ground seven times, until he came near to his brother. But Esau ran to meet him, and embraced him, and fell on his neck and kissed him, and they wept" (Gen. 33:3-4). Esau had been melted by Jacob's total generosity, sincerity and courage. Human history entered a new era. It was elevated to a higher dimension at this time.

Man's portion of responsibility throughout human history has been to subjugate Satan. Sin is having a give and take relationship with Satan. The kingdom of heaven will come when every human being frees himself from his influence.

Jacob was the first champion in history to subjugate Satan enough to lay a foundation for the Messiah to come.

Do you think I made up all those stories?

Many people have a hard time with Jacob. He is always criticized for being cunning and stealing, but Jacob was loved by God because he was so successful. His life is the model course that shows us the way to subjugate Satan. Father reveals, "According to the Bible, Jacob's nature seems very cunning. Isn't it strange that God blessed such a cunning Jacob? There is a clear reason for this from the viewpoint of the Principle. Because Jacob fulfilled his mission given by God, God could bless him. Can you believe such a story? Do you think I made up all those stories? All those things happened several thousands of years ago, so nobody could understand the true meaning of the stories in the Old Testament until the Principle was revealed." (*The Tribal Messiah*, section 3, chapter 1)

But Jacob and his family did make some mistakes. After he had successfully made unity with his brother they were both supposed to live together in a community. Tragically they separated and went their own way. Satan was successful in creating disunity. Also Jacob's two wives were sisters who hated each other. They should have made unity and loved each other. If Esau had gone with Jacob to Egypt the Israelites would not have had to suffer 400 years of slavery. Father Moon says:

> We must realize that Jacob made a mistake by not bringing Esau and all the family into Egypt. If they didn't do this they could have united in Egypt and Moses would not have had to lead them into the wilderness.
>
> Now the greatest struggle in the world is between the Muslims and Christians and particularly the separation of Jews and

Palestinians. Abraham should have taken care of Ishmael's mother, Hagar.

There were a lot of struggles between Rachel and Leah. They should have been loving each other. Esau's family should have been taken along with Jacob's family when they went to Egypt. This caused the Israelites to lose their blessing.

The bad relationship of individuals can lead to world conflict. Rachel and Leah were sisters. Rachel had Joseph and Benjamin. The other brothers sold Joseph and also went to expel Benjamin. Jacob made a mistake in that he didn't bring Esau with him, this bad relationship became the seed for the Canaanites. If the elder and younger brother had been united as one then there would be no problem today between Muslims and Jews. Because Jacob didn't embrace Esau and bring him to Egypt they went their separate ways. This became the seed for the separation of whole nations. (rough notes 9-24-03)

The Fall placed angels—both the good and evil ones—above mankind. The Fall caused people to fall to the very bottom of the universe. Even the creation has become higher than mankind.

To restore ourselves we must stop angels from dominating us and then dominate them. Jacob pioneered this. The night before Jacob was to see Esau we read that he sent his family "across the stream" of Jabbok. "And Jacob was left alone; and a man wrestled with him until the breaking of the day. When the man saw that he did not prevail against Jacob, he touched the hollow of his thigh [symbolizing the lower parts]; and Jacob's thigh was put out of joint as he wrestled with him." (Gen. 32:24-25) Father reveals, "Why did the angel hit Jacob's hip bone before giving him the blessing? The human fall was caused by misuse of the hip bone; therefore, indemnity was completed through the blow to the sinful part of the body." (*The Tribal Messiah*, section 3, chapter 1)

We read in the Bible, "Then he said, 'Your name shall no more be called Jacob, but Israel, for you have striven with God and with men, and have prevailed'" (Gen. 32:28). Then as "The sun rose upon him" Jacob went "limping because of his thigh... And Jacob lifted up his eyes and looked, and behold, Esau was coming, and four hundred men with him."

VICTOR

The "man" who fought Jacob was an angel sent by God. Jacob pioneered the way of strength and perseverance and love that we must have to lay a foundation for the Messiah. The name Israel means "victor". Jacob was victorious. Sun Myung Moon teaches:

> **Double Deception**
>
> Cain and Abel were born separately, while Esau and Jacob were twins. As twins they were much closer in their relationship than Cain and Abel. Why was Jacob blessed? According to the Bible's description he was a cunning man who lied to his elder brother and father, conniving with his mother to get Esau's birthright. Why could God continually bless him in that case? Rebecca, his mother, also deceived her husband and son. In the Garden of Eden Eve deceived both her husband and God, and this double deception brought the fall. Eve did not listen to God but listened to Satan, and lied to her own

husband; she lied to two generations, father and son.

Rebecca in Position of Eve

In the restoration Rebecca took the position of Eve, doing so by lying to her husband and her son for the heavenly purpose of assisting Jacob to restore the birthright. Through her fervent desire to fulfill the work of God, Rebecca was able to restore herself to the position of heavenly mother, and help restore Jacob as a heavenly son. Step-by-step, Rebecca cooperated with her heavenly son to restore everything. Biblical scholars are confronted with an unsolvable question of morality in Jacob's course; he was a cunning man and a swindler, yet the *Bible* indicates that God continuously blessed him. Why? Without knowing the deep significance of God's dispensation, there is no way to understand. (4-18-77)

STORIES DIFFICULT TO UNDERSTAND

The Bible, which records the providential work of God, contains many stories that are difficult to understand. For example, Rebecca deceived her husband Isaac and her first son Esau, and helped her second son Jacob receive the blessing. (Genesis 27) God took the side of that mother and son, and although they used methods that at first glance seem unjust, God still blessed them for their actions. (4-16-96)

MOTHER AND SON

From the overall perspective of the Providence of Restoration, the foundation of cooperation between mother and son is very important. This was so at the time of Jacob, Moses and Jesus. God was working His Providence to separate people from satanic life and lineage by establishing the foundation of cooperation between a mother—who had to fulfill the responsibility of Eve, the originator of the Fall—and the second son of the family.

God cannot directly relate to the first son because he is in the position of having a direct blood relationship with Satan, who through the Fall was the first to dominate humankind. God has been restoring the blood lineage of goodness by having the second son, who represents the side of goodness, establish a condition. Then God has had the first son, representing the side of evil, take a position subordinate to the second son.

In the family of Adam, God carried out the providence of establishing the second son, Abel, and having him subordinate the first son, Cain. Even though Eve had fallen, as a mother she could have made an effort to create unity between the two brothers. In the end, however, Cain murdered Abel (Genesis 4:8), and the Providence of Salvation, not being fulfilled, was prolonged.

FORMULA OF COOPERATION

There was also a required formula of cooperation between mother and son at the time of Noah. But that formula of meaningful cooperation was not realized until the time of Rebecca and Jacob.

The human Fall was committed by three beings: Adam, Eve and the Archangel. The Archangel seduced Eve, causing the spiritual fall, and later fallen Eve seduced Adam, causing the physical fall. As a result, they turned their backs on God, and the fallen Archangel became Satan. Since the Providence of Salvation is the Providence of Restoration, the Principle of Restoration can be carried out only by going in a direction 180 degrees opposite of the Fall. (4-16-96)

When Isaac was close to death, he blessed Jacob, believing that Jacob was actually Esau. When Esau later went to receive his father's blessing he discovered Jacob's deception, and he

demanded, “Have you but one blessing, my father? Bless me, even me also, my father.” But Isaac insisted, “Behold, I have made him your lord. What then can I do for you, my son?” Jacob was a man of wisdom, and in order to avoid the accusation of his elder brother, he had already conditionally traded his elder brother’s birthright for a bowl of lentils. Strictly speaking, Esau had no right to be angry, for he himself had already sold his birthright. Even so, Esau was consumed with anger and determined to kill Jacob, just as Cain had killed Abel. However, Rebecca again assisted Jacob, and he fled from danger.

If Isaac had actually given Esau the blessing he gave Jacob then God would not have had a condition to side with Jacob, and a confusion would have emerged in the dispensation. However, God was always with Jacob, and through him God’s dispensation was successfully fulfilled for the first time. All the conditions of physical restoration were met and fulfilled.

Subjugate the Angel

After a 21-year sojourn in a foreign land, Jacob returned to Canaan. On his way Jacob was confronted at the ford of Jabbok by the angel, who represented Satan. The fall of man came when an angel subjugated a man; therefore, in restoration man must subjugate the angel. For this reason God sent the angel to confront Jacob, wanting Jacob to win not only physically over Esau, but also spiritually over the angel. By doing so Jacob could restore man to his proper position and bring the angel down to his proper position as servant.

Spiritual Victory over Angelic World

When Jacob confronted the angel at the ford of Jabbok, he had to give his entire heart and soul, even more than he had during his 21 years of

servitude in Haran. Indeed, Jacob was determined even to die, and though his thigh was knocked out of joint he did not hesitate, but continued in his struggle. The angel finally acknowledged that he could not prevail against Jacob and blessed him, saying, "Your name shall no more be called Jacob, but Israel, for you have striven with God and with men, and have prevailed." What was Jacob's victory? Jacob won a spiritual victory over all the angelic world. From that time on Jacob was assisted not only by God but by the angelic world in whatever he chose to do. Spiritually Satan could not assist Esau when he confronted Jacob after 21 years of separation, and Esau had to embrace his brother.

With Divine Principle the Bible Becomes Logical

You recall that Esau received a great many gifts when Jacob freely gave of his earnings of 21 years. What is the significance of this act? In doing so, Jacob set the condition by which we also can purchase our birthright through giving out our fortune. Thereafter all religious people have given up their material wealth to the satanic world, and in doing so could not only win the satanic world but win their birthright. Jesus also gave up everything, possessing nothing throughout his entire mission. Once you know the *Divine Principle* the *Bible* suddenly becomes very logical.

Restoration of Cain and Abel

The restoration of Cain and Abel was completed for the first time through the lives of Jacob and Esau. God won His first victory on earth at the moment the two brothers became one and Esau embraced Jacob. Through his unity with Jacob, Esau and his descendants also received the blessing of God. Esau was born into Satan's position, but during the process of restoration Esau cooperated with Jacob, however

unwillingly, and when Esau welcomed Jacob, the two positions were restored, and God could extend an equal blessing to Esau. (4-18-77)

MODEL COURSE

The stories in the *Bible* are lessons for each one of us. Sun Myung Moon teaches that, "Jacob's course shows us the formula, or pattern, for the entire course of the providence of restoration. ... his course is the model course which a man of faith must follow" (5-27-73). One thing that we should learn from Jacob is that God wants every person to be God-centered like Jacob instead self-centered like Adam. Jacob "did not want to merely enjoy his life in Haran with the blessings God had allowed him to have, but he desired to share his blessing with his brothers and parents back in his native home. Adam, who ignored God's will, was self-centered, minding only himself, and lost his children and all things of God's blessing. On the contrary, Jacob was so God-centered that he would give away all things for the will of God."

DESPERATE TO WIN OVER SATAN

Another lesson in this true story of Jacob was that each person must fight evil within and outside our self. We have to subjugate the angels who dominate us. Sun Myung Moon teaches: "They fought all through the night until they were both exhausted, but the wrestling was not over yet. How do you think the match went? They were not evenly matched. There were times when Jacob was almost defeated. What do you think? Was it Jacob who fell more times or the archangel? It is understandable that Jacob fell more times, but he would not give up even though he faced death; he fought desperately to win over the archangel. He would cling to the archangel again and again at the risk of his life. That's what made him fierce. That's exactly what happens in our course of life in faith. You are desperate to win over Satan, but Satan is so fierce that you stumble over and over again. No matter how many times you may be on the verge of defeat, you will attack him again and again.

NEVER GIVE UP

"In the meantime dawn was breaking and the archangel knew that he had to leave Jacob at daybreak because the archangel belonged to darkness. So, just before the dawn, he became desperate and he

broke Jacob's thigh. How do you think the archangel broke Jacob's thigh? He must have done this in a moment when Jacob was weak. If, at that moment, Jacob was not being defeated, he could not have done that. Still, Jacob could not give up. Even though his thigh was broken, Jacob would not give up. At the thought of loss he became even more furious, and attacked the archangel again and again. He would rather lose his life in attacking than lose the battle.

FIGHT SATAN AT RISK OF YOUR LIFE

"At last the archangel had to give in. At last he could not but say to Jacob, 'You have won the battle; you are the victor.' He had to bless Jacob with the name 'Israel', which meant 'victor.' All through human history, Jacob was the only one who wrestled with the archangel and was victorious over him. He well deserved the name of 'the victor.' That is how the word 'Israel'—which means 'victor'—came into being. You must know that in being victorious over the archangel, he battled at the risk of his life, and that you, too, in your life in faith, must fight against Satan at the risk of your lives." ("Jacob's Course And Our Life In Faith" May 27, 1973)

JACOB'S PERSEVERANCE

Another lesson we can learn from Jacob is that in our life of faith we may be tested for many years. We have to be persevering like Jacob. And we should be ready to be attacked the most when we are tired after working for a long time. Just when we think we can't take anymore, Satan will strike. We have to be vigilant and fight the good fight right up to our last breath. Father teaches, "We must have Jacob's steadfastness and perseverance. …We are exactly in the position of Jacob, aren't we? We have nothing to be afraid of. Since we are going to do things for the sake of God, we can do just about anything, and everything will come to us. Are you like that? These are not words fabricated by man; it is the word of God. I am conveying this to you since I have put it into practice myself." (5-27-73)

NEVER COMPLAIN

Champions of God should never complain. "God blessed Jacob. Jacob who received the blessing went into Haran and walked the suffering course for 21 years. He went the path of persecution even being deceived ten times. He was in the sorrowful position. He was driven to the lonely position. However, if Jacob ever

became a person who complained about his despair, who felt grief for oneself centering on himself, he could have never occupied the national authority of representing Israel." (*The Way of the Spiritual Leader*)

"What do you think Jacob had to endure all night, fighting the angel at the ford of Jabbok? Don't you imagine he sweated a lot? He shed a lot of tears, too. It was life and death. 'Let me go back to my homeland now,' he pleaded. It was a very tearful situation. The angel hit him so hard, he dislocated Jacob's thigh bone, and then he released him a little bit after that. The angel saw that Jacob would rather die than be held back, so the angel finally gave up and let Jacob go. It was that difficult. We have to go through that kind of difficulty, but it is well worth it.

HEAVY BURDEN

"Jacob's victory was on the individual level. He brought the victory up to the family level. To go from the individual level to the family level was so difficult, you can only imagine the difficulty of any level beyond that, all the way to the world level. All Blessed couples have to go through that. God expects that. Father expects that. Do you think this is just something I am saying, or are my statements based on the course of God's dispensation? This is our mission. It is a heavy burden. Father understands every time and everything you go through. Don't forget that for one second." (3-1-92)

The Messiah could not come at the time of Jacob because even though Jacob had laid a foundation for the Messiah at the family level there were nations surrounding Jacob who would kill the Messiah if he came. Because mankind had grown and become divided into power units of nations God had to build a nation too. So God concentrated His efforts to build a nation. God concentrated His efforts to build the Israelites into a nation that would protect the Messiah. God had to prolong His dispensation from the family level to the national level. As history goes on it becomes more and more difficult for God to restore the world. As mankind increases in population, evil increases.

Father Moon teaches, "You may think that upon this foundation the Messiah could come immediately, but that was not the reality. Why? Nations had already been established in the Satanic world,

but Israel had only set up a people. The people of Israel could not confront the nations of the Satanic world. So God prolonged history for 2000 years" (*Way Of Unification (Part 1)*. God also had to wait because He needed to prepare the blood lineage for the Messiah to be born.

We will next study the 2000-year history of the Israelites—the descendants of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. There are other histories of other peoples during this time but the history of the small group of Jewish people is the central history that God was working through. God was working with other people and hearing their prayers and being with them throughout the world, but God was working with Israel as the Adam nation for world restoration.

We read in Genesis that Jacob became the father of Joseph when he returned to his home. Joseph was 30 years old when he was given power in Egypt. Then there was seven plentiful years he had predicted. This would make him 37 years old. Then the *Bible* says that sometime after that he met his father who came to Egypt because of the famine that occurred seven years after the seven plentiful years.

Therefore there is approximately forty years between the time Jacob returned home and when he went to Egypt with his family. This 40 year time period is called the "Preparation for Egypt."

Preparation for Egypt

40

For the next 2000 years the *Bible* records how God worked to build the Israelites to be His chosen nation. It is important to learn here that God and Satan work through nations.

Those individuals, families, religions and nations that are in the Abel position must, like Jacob, be sacrificial and giving without complaint. And those in the Cain position must be won over by Abel's generosity and sincerity and strength of faith in God's will.

2000 YEAR PRE-ISRAELITE HISTORY

Adam	Noah	United Generations	Brothers Divided	Jacob's Exile and Return	Preparation For Egypt
1600	400	120	40	21	40

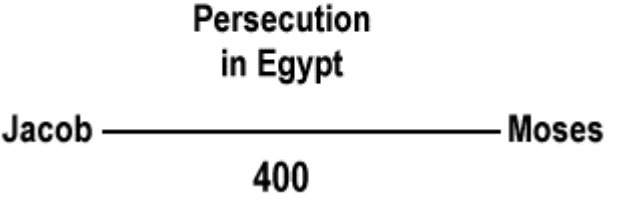
We have learned that God worked in 6 periods of time from Adam to Jacob. First, there was the 1600 years from Adam to Noah; second, the 400 years from Noah to Abraham; third, the 120 year period of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob; fourth, the approximately 40 years when Jacob and Esau divided. Fifth, the 21 year exile of Jacob and his return to his home, and Sixth, the 40 year time period before he and his family went to Egypt.

Jacob's descendants were the Israelites and the Old Testament tells of their 2000-year history. We will see that these 2000 years resemble the six time periods of the previous 2000 years.

MOSES

The first time period of the Jewish people was the 400 years of slavery under the pharaoh of Egypt. They had grown to a large number of people and finally, Moses, a liberator, came.

2000 YEAR JEWISH HISTORY



Jacob had shown vertical and horizontal love. Vertically he loved God with all his heart and horizontally he showed his love for mankind by successfully bringing unity with Esau, and restoring Cain and Abel.

Moses' mission was to lay a national foundation for the Messiah. Vertically Moses loved God. To restore horizontal love Moses was in the position of Adam or Abel and the Israelite people were in the position of Lucifer or Cain. If the Israelite people would love Moses then God could send the Messiah to them knowing that they would protect and follow the Second Adam who would lead the Israelites throughout the world as God's ambassadors to begin the building of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

Father Moon (who is also called Father) has revealed that Moses' mother should have been better at raising Moses. If she had, he would not have made the tragic mistake of killing an Egyptian soldier. "He should not have killed the Egyptian soldier" (8-31-03). God originally intended for the Israelites to stay in Egypt. Moses would have been the Prime Minister who would have been able to liberate his people and inherit the nation. Because his mother did not guide her son correctly this course failed and the exodus had to occur.

After Moses killed the Egyptian he fled from Egypt and went to the wilderness in Midian and spent 40 years there restoring his 40 years in the Pharaoh's palace. Forty is a number for separation from Satan. After this period of exile God told Moses: "I have seen the misery of my people who are in Egypt, and have heard their cry because of their taskmasters; I know their sufferings, and I have come down to deliver them out of the hand of the Egyptians, and to bring them up out of that land to a good and broad land, a land flowing with milk and honey, to the place of the Canaanites.... And now, behold, the cry of the people of Israel has come to me, and I have seen the oppression with which the Egyptians oppress them. Come, I will send you to Pharaoh that you may bring forth my people, the sons of Israel, out of Egypt." (Ex. 3:7-10)

Moses came back and performed miracles to prove he was the true leader of the Israelites sent by God to liberate them. But God saw that the Israelites did not have total faith in Moses so He had Moses not take them the direct route along the Mediterranean from Egypt to Canaan which would have taken a matter of weeks (21 days or less). "When Pharaoh let the people go, God did not lead them on the road through the Philistine country, though that was shorter.

For God said, 'If they face war, they might change their minds and return to Egypt.'" (Ex. 13:17)

God felt that they would be afraid of battle with the Philistines, and they would return to Egypt. God needed time to work with them so that they would be a united, strong people who could successfully settle in Canaan.

God led them across the Red Sea and through the Sinai wilderness. Those months in the wilderness were to be a time for Moses and

the Israelites to be trained and tested as a chosen people, as God's champions. God could not allow them to enter Canaan unless they were united, strong and fearless. To lay a Foundation for the Messiah they had to overcome Cain and Abel's tragic disunity.

To get the Israelites out of Egypt Moses deceived the Pharaoh by telling him they needed a three days journey into the wilderness. The Pharaoh told him to stay there to do their sacrifices. Moses convinced the Pharaoh by saying: "It would not be right to do so; for the sacrifices we offer to the Lord our God are offensive to the Egyptians. If we sacrifice offerings abominable to the Egyptians before their eyes, will they not stone us? We must go a three days' journey into the wilderness and sacrifice to the Lord our God as he commands us." (Ex. 8:26-27)

This three-day period is symbolic for a principled period of time to separate from Satan and start a new providential course. Before offering the sacrifice of Isaac, Abraham waited three days. When Jacob started his providential course to Canaan, he left Haran by deceiving Laban with a three-day period of separation. (Gen. 31:19-22)

TEN COMMANDMENTS

At Mt. Sinai Moses fasted for forty days and was given the Ten Commandments. They were written on two stones—five laws on each. This symbolized the five physical senses and the five spiritual senses or the unity of heaven and earth. It also symbolized that the ultimate truth is not laws but the living Messiah who is a man and a woman.

When Moses came down from the mountain he found the Israelites worshiping a golden calf as their God. Moses was angered and threw the tablets of stone to the ground, breaking them. Moses should not have done this. It was like striking the Messiah. To restore this Moses had to go back and fast again and receive the Ten Commandments again. This time they accepted them and built the Ark of the Covenant and the Tabernacle which housed the tablets.

The tablets symbolized Adam and Eve who were to be perfect incarnations of the Word. Since the Fall another man and woman

have to fulfill that role. This is why the Messiah is symbolized as the "living stone" (1 Peter 2:4). One reason a stone is used as a symbol is because the Messiah is stronger than evil. He is like a stone in being tough and unmovable.

God had also shown that He was relating to people on a higher level by giving words and asking for obedience to them rather than giving animal sacrifices. Mankind had been climbing to a higher spiritual level. After the Fall mankind fell into a deep darkness and then turned to animism, then polytheism and then monotheism. Gradually God was able to give more of Himself. Still the people were so primitive that He gave many laws. As mankind grows higher spiritually through history God is able to speak more and more clearly. Today we live in a sophisticated world, and God is trying to speak in a more advanced manner.

Next God chose twelve people to spy for forty days. Only Joshua and Caleb had faith that the Israelites could enter Canaan and win. The Israelites constantly complained and again demanded a new leader and wanted to go back to Egypt—even though it meant slavery.

If the months in the wilderness had been enough time for the Israelites to grow in unity and strength they could have gone to Canaan, but when ten of the twelve spies came back fearful, then God had to give a greater time to restore this lack of faith and to teach them to be His champions. The people wanted to stone Joshua and Caleb. We read: "Then all the congregation raised a loud cry; and the people wept that night. And all the people of Israel said to them, 'Would that we had died in the land of Egypt! Or would that we had died in this wilderness! Why does the Lord bring us into this land, to fall by the sword? Our wives and our little ones will become a prey; would it not be better for us to go back to Egypt?' And they said to one another, 'Let us choose a captain, and go back to Egypt.' Then Moses and Aaron fell on their faces before all the assembly of the congregation of the people of Israel. And Joshua the son of Nun and Caleb the son of Jephunneh, who were among those who had spied out the land, rent their clothes, and said to all the congregation of the people of Israel, 'The land which we passed through to spy it out, is an exceedingly good land. If the Lord delights in us, he will bring us into this land and give it to us, a land which flows with milk and

honey. Only, do not rebel against the Lord; and do not fear the people of the land, for they are no more than bread for us; their protection is removed from them, and the Lord is with us; do not fear them.' But the whole congregation threatened to stone them." (Num. 14:1-10)

Moses had sent them to spy out the land of Canaan and told them to see how strong or weak they were and he said, "Be bold and bring some of the fruit of the land. Now the time was the season of the first ripe grapes" (Num. 13:20). When the spies came back they said, "We came to the land to which you sent us; it flows with milk and honey and this is its fruit. Yet the people who dwell in the land are strong, and cities are fortified and very large." (Num. 13:27-28)

We must believe that God is on our side and will help us. And because God is on our side we will win. Throughout the *Bible* we are taught not to be dismayed or anxious. We must have faith. We must be intrepid. The Israelites failed to be courageous. God was in agony when He saw them fail. God had wanted them to go into Canaan. God told Moses: "How long will this people despise me? And how long will they not believe in me, in spite of all the signs which I have done among them?" (Num. 14:11)

God was continually frustrated by their lack of faith and their love of this fallen world and its low standards. God was forced to have them wander in the wilderness for forty years to indemnify their lack of faith. Only the next generation could enter Canaan. He said: "But your little ones, who you said would become a prey, I will bring in, and they shall know the land which you have despised. But as for you, your dead bodies shall fall in this wilderness. And your children shall be shepherds in the wilderness forty years and shall suffer for your faithlessness, until the last of your dead bodies lies in the wilderness. According to the number of the days in which you spied out the land, forty days, for every day a year, you shall bear you iniquity, forty years, and you shall know my displeasure." (Num. 14:31-34)

After 40 years in the wilderness the Israelites were to enter Canaan, but Moses made another tragic mistake in a moment of rage. The people complained of water. Moses was told by God to strike a rock once and bring them water. Moses did so and water

came. But Moses heard the people murmuring in resentment against him that they had been without water and in anger he struck the rock twice with his rod. God then told him that he could not enter Canaan: "Because you did not trust in me, to show my holiness before the eyes of the Israelites, therefore you shall not bring this assembly into the land which I have given them." (Num. 20:12)

Moses was in sight of Canaan and now he couldn't go in. He had worked so hard for so many years and now because of one seemingly small mistake he couldn't enter Canaan. The precious goal was in his grasp and now it was taken away. He begged God, "Let me cross over, I pray, and see the good land beyond the Jordan, that good hill country, and Lebanon" (Deut. 3:25). God answered firmly, "... Speak no more to me of this matter" (Deut. 3:26). Moses died on a mountain looking at Canaan but without setting foot in it. This is a lesson for each of us to control our emotions. We are not supposed to have a bad temper.

"Anger is one expression of extreme, unrestrained emotion that must be brought under control if one is to make spiritual progress. Anger is a natural feeling that arises upon seeing unrighteousness, yet uncontrolled it can cause much damage. Of the great founders of religion, we see that Moses had anger as a weakness. He displayed it, to his own loss, at the incident of striking the rock." (Andrew Wilson, *World Scripture*)

Christ is symbolized by a rock: "the rock was Christ" (I Cor. 10:4) and a "white stone" (Rev. 2:17). Christ gives life. He is a tree of life. He gives water of life. Christ gives life giving truth and love. Adam failed to become the rock that would give the "water of life" from God, which his descendants would drink forever. The rock Moses struck was a rock that yielded no water. This symbolized fallen Adam. Satan had struck Adam and killed him spiritually and was unable to give "water". When Moses struck the rock, it gave water. This showed a restoration of fallen Adam to perfect Adam or Christ who would come to give the water of life to all fallen man. Christ said: "whoever drinks of the water that I shall give him will become in him a spring of water welling up to eternal life." (John: 4:14)

God had Moses strike the rock once as a condition to restore the fallen Adam to perfect Adam. When he did the rock symbolized Christ and then when Moses struck it again he laid a foundation or basis for the Second Adam, the restored Adam, to be struck.

BE STRONG AND OF GOOD COURAGE

God passes on a person's mission to another if they are unable to fulfill that mission. Joshua was given leadership because he was strong and had not been faithless during the 40-day spying period: we read, "... as I was with Moses, so I will be with you; I will not fail or forsake you. Be strong and of good courage; for you shall cause this people to inherit the land which I swore to their fathers to give them." (Josh. 1:5-6)

Joshua and the second generation of Israelites which had been born in the wilderness and had no ties to Egypt were determined to follow Joshua at the risk of their lives, saying …"All that you have commanded us we will do, and wherever you send us we will go. Just as we obeyed Moses in all things, so we will obey you. ... Whoever rebels against your words, whatever you command shall be put to death. Only be strong and courageous." (Joshua 1:16-18)

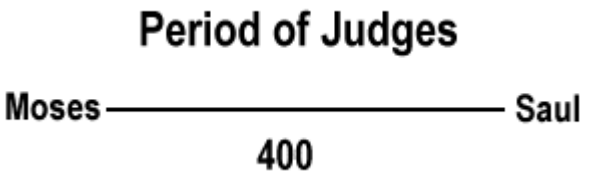
After God had tried three times with the Israelites to enter Canaan they finally fulfilled the conditions necessary to enter. They presented faithful reports after spying at Jericho saying, "Truly the lord has given all the land into our hands; and moreover all the inhabitants of the land melt in fear before us" (Josh 2:24). The Israelites were centered on Joshua and the Tabernacle and successfully went into Canaan. Joshua was a successful central figure. The central figures of God have tremendous missions. If they succeed then so much good can happen but if they fail so many people for so many years are always hurt. It is agony for God to see His predestined will of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth prolonged because He has to see His children suffer.

The Israelite people had made a condition to restore the Garden of Eden. The Israelites in the position of Lucifer or Cain did not betray Joshua who was in the position of Adam or Abel. They united as brothers centered on God and now they had a land of their own. But even though they had accomplished forming the national Foundation for the Messiah, the Messiah could not come yet because they were still not strong enough as a people to stand

up to the other nations surrounding them and they were still too primitive in their understanding of God and their mission as the chosen people. God's dispensation would be prolonged until they were truly united and longing for the Messiah. The 400 years of slavery in Egypt were followed by 400 years known as the Period of Judges.

The *Bible* is symbolic in its use of numbers and rounds this period of Judges to 400. We read in I Kings 6:1: "In the four hundred and eightieth year after the people of Israel came out of the land of Egypt, in the fourth year of Solomon's reign over Israel...." Solomon came after the 40-year reign of Saul and the 40-year reign of David. Eighty from 480 means 400 years were given for the period of Judges.

Scholars have found that the period lasted from approximately 1200 B.C. to 1000 B.C. or 200 years. They say that some of the Judges' years of rule were "stylized" to show a full generation of 40 years or two generations of 80 years.



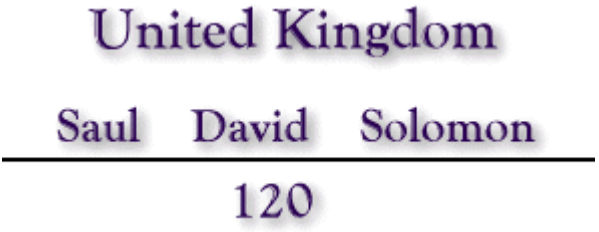
During this time the Israelites were divided into tribes and during moments of crisis leaders appeared called Judges, such as Gideon and Samson. Finally, under God's influence, the Israelite tribes banded together to form a nation to protect themselves.

SAUL DAVID SOLOMON

The last Judge, Samuel, anointed Saul as King. God finally had His nation. But He couldn't send the Second Adam until they had demonstrated their loyalty to God. God tested them by seeing if they could honor and center their lives on a symbolic Messiah. With Moses God had used the Ark of the Covenant to be the symbolic Messiah. Now that God had a nation with a king, He wanted a temple built, a more permanent structure. Unfortunately,

Saul failed to build the temple. The next King, David, also failed to build the temple in his 40-year rule. The third King, Solomon, built the temple in his 40-year reign.

We see in Jewish history three attempts by God to build the temple in the three 40-year reigns of Saul, David and Solomon. This 120-year period is called the United Kingdom.



Still, God couldn't send the Messiah to the Israelites. Building the temple was not enough. They had to honor the temple to show they could honor the Second Adam. Unfortunately, Solomon defiled the temple (symbolically the Second Adam) by letting his wives worship pagan gods there. Man again failed to lay the proper foundation for the Messiah.

GOLDEN AGE OF ISRAEL

This was the golden age of Israel. It was the greatest and most powerful nation on earth. God's plan was for Israel to keep that position so that the Messiah would be born into royalty to a nation that dominated the world. God said to Solomon "if you walk before me, as David your father walked, with integrity of heart and uprightness, doing according to all that I have commanded you, and keeping my statutes and my ordinances, then I will establish your royal throne over Israel forever." (1 Kings 9:4-5)

But God warned that if Solomon did not follow God's commandments then Israel would decline and lose its power and position, "But if you turn aside from following me, you or your children, and do not keep my commandments and my statutes which I have set before you, but go and serve other gods and worship them, then I will cut off Israel from the land which I have given them; and the house which I have consecrated for my name I

will cast out of my sight; and Israel will become a proverb and a byword among all peoples. This house will become a heap of ruins" (1 Kings 9:6-8). God teaches that nations fall when they disobey His laws.

A key word in God's message is the word "if." God keeps warning His chosen people that "if" they do right they will prosper and if they disobey Him they will suffer. For example, we read that Samuel chastised Saul saying, "You acted foolishly; you have not kept the command the Lord your God gave you; if you had, he would have established your kingdom over Israel for all time." (1 Samuel 13:13)

Under Solomon's rule, Israel's powerful army controlled a vast empire. It was the leader in economics, trade, art, music and science. God explained that if Israel centered itself on God they would prosper and never be dominated by another empire and if they didn't they would be humiliated, "But if you or your sons turn away from me and do not observe the commands and decrees I have given you and go off to serve other gods and worship them, then I will cut off Israel from the land I have given them and will reject this temple I have consecrated for my Name. Israel will then become a byword and an object of ridicule among all peoples." (I Kings 9:6-7)

Sadly, Israel became a "heap of ruins." We know that other empires came after the decline of Israel: the Babylonian, Persian, Greek and Roman Empire. Tragically, Jesus was born in a barn in an obscure country instead of in a palace as a direct descendent of a king to a nation that had established world dominion.

Why? Because central figures like Solomon disobeyed God. In Deut. 17:17 we read that God commands a king to not take many wives, "The King must not take many wives or his heart will be led astray." Solomon had 700 wives and 300 concubines. He rejected God's word. We read:

> King Solomon, however, loved many foreign women besides Pharaoh's daughter—Moabites, Ammonites, Edomites, Sidonians and Hittites. They were from nations about which the LORD had told

> the Israelites, "You must not intermarry with them, because they will surely turn your hearts after their gods." Nevertheless, Solomon held fast to them in love. He had seven hundred wives of royal birth and three hundred concubines, and his wives led him astray. As Solomon grew old, his wives turned his heart after other gods, and his heart was not fully devoted to the LORD his God, as the heart of David his father had been. Although he had forbidden Solomon to follow other gods, Solomon did not keep the Lord's command. (1 Kings 11:1-4, 10)

The consequence was the loss of national greatness and prolongation of the coming of Christ.

The punishment was severe for the Israelites. God the father saw His children pay for their crimes. Because the Israelites were not united with God a division of Cain and Abel came to their nation. In Jewish history this was a 400-year period called the Divided Kingdoms.

Ten of the 12 tribes of Israel traveled to the north. They had the name of Israel, God's name for his people, but He did not favor them. They were the Cain side. God favored the Abel side—the two tribes in the Southern Kingdom of Judah because they were more righteous.

INDIRECT METHOD

Father teaches, "God wanted men and women to have the feeling of love for each other. He wanted them to perfectly fulfill the purpose of creation and to experience love in a free and natural way. That is the reason why He wanted to unite with man

centering upon love. However, man took the opposite course through the fall, and the central point for connection was taken by the archangel. As a result, the whole universe became a mass of confusion The central point, love, which should have been connected to God, was actually bound to Satan. The motivation for connection became opposite to God's motivation. Therefore, in man, the standard of the conscience and the standard of the flesh are opposed to each other. People have related to each other centered upon Satan's love, not God's love.

"For that reason, mankind has been suffering through 6,000 biblical years up till now in order to be liberated from the bondage of Satan's love. God has been prevented from entering the inner mind of people directly to recover the necessary central point, so He has had to adopt an indirect method to penetrate their conscience. In history, therefore, God sent prophets, saints, and sages, hoping that through them fallen man would receive His love and truth." (October 13, 1970)

God's desire is always for unity. Division is Satan's way of working. To help bring the Israelites together God sent prophets such as Elijah, Jonah, Amos and Hosea. Hosea lived in the eighth century B.C. He writes out of the agony he feels from his faithless wife. Hosea compares this personal tragedy to God's feelings about His relationship to Israel that is constantly unfaithful to God.

God speaks of His broken heart: "The more I called them, the more they went from me; they kept sacrificing to the Baals, and burning incense to idols. Yet it was I who taught Ephraim to walk, I took them up in my arms; but they did not know that I healed them. I led them with cords of compassion, with the bands of love, and I became to them as one who eases the yoke on their jaws, and I bent down to them and fed them" (Hosea 11:2-4).

Because Israel refused to listen to the prophets, God was helpless to see His people taken into captivity. When we do not listen to God's prophets who tell us to repent and change our ways we prolong God's goal of restoring the world. It has been heartbreaking for God to see mankind rebel against those who he calls to speak for Him because it means that they will bring suffering upon themselves. Ignorance is not bliss. Ignorance of

God's will brings incredible tragedy. We reap what we sow. The prophet Jeremiah told them:

> And though the LORD has sent all his servants the prophets to you again and again, you have not listened or paid any attention. They said, "Turn now, each of you, from your evil ways and your evil practices, and you can stay in the land the Lord gave to you and your fathers for ever and ever. Do not follow other gods to serve and worship them; do not provoke me to anger with what your hands have made. Then I will not harm you." "But you did not listen to me," declares the Lord, "and you have provoked me with what your hands have made, and you have brought harm to yourselves." (Jeremiah 25:4-7)

The ten tribes of the north were attacked by the Assyrians and destroyed. To this day we do not know what happened to them. They are called the ten lost tribes of Israel. The two tribes in the south were invaded by the Babylonians. In 586 B.C. the Babylonians stormed Jerusalem, pillaging and burning. Their king, Nebuchadnezzar, ordered mass deportations. The Israelites now begin a period in their history called the Babylonian Exile.

The journey to Babylon was difficult and heart-breaking, but when they arrived the Assyrian and Babylonian monarchs allowed them to worship in freedom. They prayed, sang psalms and studied the Torah. The Hebrews became a very tight-knit religious community and established laws and traditions.

They became adept in industry and commerce. One Jewish family, for example, was put in control of the largest private bank in Assyria. Soon, Hebrews were landowners, merchants and high government officials. Still, they longed for Jerusalem.

In 538 B.C., Cyrus the Great of Persia captured Babylon. The Israelites were a refugee group, and Cyrus let those who wanted to return to Jerusalem to do so. He even helped in rebuilding the temple at Jerusalem by giving government money and returning some items that were sacred to the Jews that the Babylonians had

kept. The exiles returned home in stages. The exile in Babylon had lasted 70 years. And after 140 more years the Jewish people had returned to Israel. The *Bible* uses symbolic and prophetic years in keeping with God's pattern of restoration by saying it lasted 70 years. In Jeremiah 25:11 we read, "This whole land shall become a ruin and a waste, and these nations shall serve the King of Babylon seventy years."

Jeremiah says the captivity in Babylon lasted 70 years. Actual history shows that the *Bible* is close to being literal here. Some historians number the years from 605 B.C., in which the first deportation happened, until 538 B.C. when Cyrus freed the Israelites. Six hundred and five to 538 is 67 years. Others begin with 586, when the last deportation took place and the temple was destroyed, until 516, when the second temple was built: 586 to 516 is 70 years.

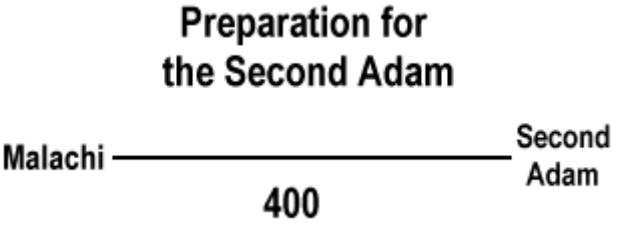
The 70 years in captivity were followed by approximately 140 years of Jewish return until God sent the prophet Malachi. This 210-year period is called the Jewish captivity and return.

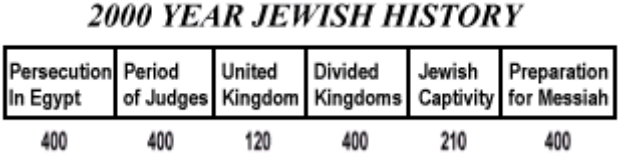
They rebuilt the temple in Jerusalem. But times were hard. There was drought and famine. The people became spiritually indifferent. Then God sent a reformer, Malachi, to revitalize the faith in the 5th century B.C. (The King James *Bible* says in the margins of the book of Malachi that the dates in the *Bible* show this to be 397 B.C. Historians say the actual, literal date of this book is close to that symbolic number—around 450 or 435 B.C.) He spoke in the streets and preached in the market place. He chastised the people for their sins and the priesthood for its corruption.

God also prepared the rest of the world for the Messiah's coming by sending Buddha to India, Confucius to the Orient and Socrates

to Greece. They raised the people's level of spiritual advancement. This would make it a little easier for the rest of the world to accept the Messiah when he came.

The last period of Jewish history is the 400 years of preparation for the Messiah. Approximately four hundred years after Malachi the Second Adam was born. His name was Jesus.





The nation of Israel was a small nation compared to the other powers around it. And because it was strategically located between these other empires they often saw foreign soldiers march through their country.

In the 400 years before Jesus they were dominated by such powers as the Greeks and the Romans. The Israelites were burdened with cruel rulers who imposed heavy taxes and did not respect their religious beliefs and traditions.

One ruler tried to destroy the Jewish religion. In 167 B.C. he decreed that the Jewish religion was illegal. Anyone who was found carrying a copy of the scriptures was put to death. He set up an altar to the chief god, Zeus, in the Jewish temple, and Jews were forced to offer sacrifices. Altars were set up of Zeus all over

Israel, and many Jews preferred to die rather than go against their laws and worship false gods.

An uprising took place against this called the Maccabean Revolt and there was war for 6 years. The 400 years before Jesus were years of turmoil. Just before Jesus was born the governor of the Roman Province of Syria had to bring in three legions to crush a rebellion. Around two thousand rebels were crucified as punishment.

At the time of Jesus' birth the Roman ruler wanted a census taken to determine taxes and this is why Joseph and Mary went to Bethlehem. The people hated paying taxes to Rome. This particular census was for the people of Judea but the people of Galilee were so angry there was a revolutionary movement which the Roman soldiers crushed violently.

Jesus lived in a dangerous time. Not only had he to deal with living under brutal foreign rulers but the Israelite people, like Christianity today, was divided into different denominations who interpreted the scriptures differently.

The Pharisees were into the details of the Old Testament laws, and Jesus chastised them for being focused on the letter of the laws instead of the spirit of the laws.

The Sadducees were a smaller group but were more wealthy and powerful because they were influential political leaders. They disagreed with some of the beliefs of the Pharisees. The division between the Pharisees and Sadducees is similar to the division today between Conservative and Liberal Christians.

The Essenes were a group who lived in a monastery in the desert and felt they were the true forerunners to prepare the way for the coming of the Messiah.

One thing that all these Jews had in common was that they did not see Jesus as the Messiah. The Pharisees, for example, envisioned their savior as a warrior-Messiah who would lead them to battle and crush their enemies. When Jesus appeared, claiming to be the Lord, they all rejected him. God works in ways that completely

baffle the vast majority of people. Mankind is fallen and ruled by Satan who manipulates people to go against the champions that God sends. God had hoped that the Israelites would have been different than most people. He had hoped they would know his suffering heart because of their suffering; that they would have been trained by the saints and prophets who God had sent. But Satan influenced the people to see Jesus as a dangerous criminal who was a threat to the family and nation. Jesus, the greatest man who ever lived, was seen as a kook—someone of the lunatic fringe in society.

Many Christians today feel that the Lord is coming to them. Like the Israelites, Christians are a minority in the world. Like the Israelites they are divided into different denominations who interpret the scriptures differently and yet all are confident that when the Lord returns they will see him.

The *Divine Principle* teaches that Christianity has not fully understood who Jesus really was and what God's will is. The next chapter reveals the true view of Jesus. It is God's view, not man's view. Nothing is more important than understanding Jesus' words and life.

Chapter 4

Jesus of Nazareth

At Madison Square Garden in New York City Sun Myung Moon spoke to an overflowing crowd of 30,000 on September 18, 1974 saying that God is determined to save this world by sending the Messiah:

> God made His determination clear in the Bible: 'I have spoken, and I will bring it to pass; I have purposed, and I will do it.' (Isaiah 46:11) God did not say He might do it. He said He will do it, showing His absolute determination to restore man and the world to the original design.
>
> How? By the Messiah. To restore mankind, God sent His only son, Jesus Christ, into this world as the Savior – as the Messiah. Two thousand years ago, Jesus Christ came into our world as the author of life. He came to transform all sinful people into Christ-like people. He came to restore the Kingdom of Heaven on earth.
>
> Therefore, Jesus Christ proclaimed as his first gospel, 'Repent for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.' (Matt: 4:17) With the coming of Jesus Christ, people were truly at the threshold of the Kingdom of Heaven.

Preparation for the Messiah

However, before God could send His Son to restore the world, He had to prepare the way step by step, starting with one individual and expanding to a nation, in order to establish a foundation of faith upon which the Messiah could come.

After all, this world had been Satan's world. If the Messiah were to come to this earth without a prepared foundation, the satanic world would destroy him. So God worked diligently and carefully to establish one nation, one sovereignty over which He could have control. The nation of Israel was the result of that preparation for the Messiah. God prepared the nation of Israel as the "landing site" for the Messiah. Upon Israel's foundation of faith, God could send His ultimate champion, the Messiah.

Two thousand years ago, people were awaiting the coming of the Messiah, but for very self-centered reasons. They thought that the Messiah was coming as a sort of military conqueror to avenge them and defeat the Roman Empire, and to reward Israel with great glory and power in an earthly sense. And they simply missed the whole point.

What is the Bible, more precisely? The Bible has been a book of mystery. However, the Bible contains God's message to you and me. The Bible does not use plain language, but is written in symbols and parables. Do you know why God has presented the Bible in symbols and parables? Why did He not speak the truth clearly? God has had to deal with the world of evil. Throughout the ages, God has hand-picked His workers, or champions, out of this evil world. Abraham was such a champion. Noah was such a champion.

The Bible Is a Coded Message

And God's champions were always in the utter minority in the evil world. If God revealed His strategy too openly or plainly, the enemy would use that information against God's champions. Thus, the Bible was written as a coded message, so that only God's agents or champions could decipher it.

Let me make an analogy. To protect her security, America sends out many agents overseas to collect

vital information concerning potential enemies. When the home headquarters is communicating with these agents overseas, particularly in enemy territory, would they communicate openly and plainly? No. No one would be that naive. They would communicate in coded messages — secret messages — so that the enemy could not decipher them.

Throughout history, righteous people have faced nothing but suffering on this earth, simply because they were in enemy territory, and Satan did not want to have God's agents prosper. Whenever Satan's forces discovered God's representatives, they tried to destroy them. We must realize that God has had to give His instructions in coded messages. Thus the Bible is written in symbols and parables. In a sense, the Bible is intended to be mysterious. Then how can we know the true meaning of those symbols and parables?

It is simple, in a way. If you are an agent dispatched by your headquarters, and you want to decipher a coded message, then you must either have a code book, or communicate directly with your home headquarters. By the same token, the meaning of the symbols and parables in the Bible can only be clear when we communicate with our "home headquarters" — God. This is truly the only sure way we can know the ultimate meaning of the Bible.

Two thousand years ago our Lord Jesus Christ brought the blueprint for the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. However, he could not speak plainly about his plan even to his own disciples. Jesus spoke in figures and parables. Why? Jesus knew the adverse circumstances in which he had to work. There was political pressure from the Roman Empire. There was the ruling monarchy, who opposed any change. And there was a strong religious system and

> tradition. These could all be directed against the building of the Kingdom of God.
>
> Jesus came to kindle the fire of revolution in people, which would in due course change the structure and the life of the entire nation. But he could not speak plainly of any of this even to his own disciples. Instead, he had to speak in figures and parables, saying, "He who has ears to hear, let him hear." (Luke 14:35)
>
> If you attempt to interpret the Bible literally, word for word, letter for letter, without understanding the nature of the coded message of the Bible, you are liable to make a big mistake.

In the *Divine Principle* and in other revelations given to Sun Myung Moon we can now know "the coded message of the Bible." Father Moon received amazing revelations about what happened to Jesus. Up till now we didn't know very much about the historical Jesus. The most we know is written in the *New Testament*. The *Old Testament* and the *New Testament* comprise the *Bible* which has become the most printed, most studied and most influential book in human history. Even though all Christians accept the Bible as the word of God, there have been many disagreements over passages and there has been division over how we should apply the teachings of the Bible to our practical, everyday life. There are many different views of Jesus and interpretations of his words and those of the other writers of the *New Testament* such as St. Paul. Even though Christianity is divided into different groups there are some basic beliefs that most who call themselves Christians would agree on. Father Moon discovered that what many people think of Jesus is basically false.

We have learned in the *Divine Principle* that God worked over 2000 years to raise the nation of Israel to be the nation that would protect and follow the Messiah. It has been 2000 years since Jesus was born. Hundreds of millions, if not billions of people, celebrate his birth on December 25 in a holiday called Christmas. In a speech Father Moon gave on January 3, 2004 titled "The Birthday Celebration for Jesus" he said, "Today is Jesus Birthday. The

world thought that it was December 25th but it is really January 3rd."

The religion called Christianity was formed after Jesus' death and those who believe in him as the Messiah, the savior of the world, are called Christians. One website says this, "About 2.3 billion of the Earth's 7 billion people are included within the Christian group, spread out over about 41,000 sects. There are 1.5 billion Muslims, 1.1 billion secular/nonbelievers, and 0.9 billion Hindi. Christianity can claim about a third of the people on Earth." The DVD *Christianity: The First Two Thousand Years* says, "It is the single largest religion in the history of the world…. the world's most powerful faith. A religion that starts as a tiny Jerusalem sect and goes on to triumph over the world." The word "sect" does not have a negative connotation. The word "cult" does. Later in the video a professor of religion uses the word saying that many people felt a "lot of anxiety" about the early Christians and there was a "sense of the way in which cults are talked about today—this is the way that Roman society was in these early years perceiving Christianity."

WHAT WE BELIEVE

One of the most famous Christians in human history is Billy Graham. In the 20th century he went to every nation on earth and spoke in person to more people than anyone in human history. In every country he went to, tens of thousands would travel long distances to hear him. He was born in 1918, a few years before Sun Myung Moon who was born in 1920. At his website (www.billygraham.org) for his organization he posts his "core beliefs" under the heading "What We Believe." Here are three of those principles:

> These core beliefs make up the foundation upon which all our ministry endeavors are based. The Billy Graham Evangelistic Association believes:
>
> - In one God, eternally existing in three persons– Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.
> - Jesus Christ was conceived by the Holy Spirit, born of the Virgin Mary. He led a sinless life, died and rose again.

- That Christ rose from the dead and is coming soon.

DOCTRINE OF THE TRINITY

Many, if not most Christians, would agree that these beliefs are the cornerstone of their theology. In Sun Myung Moon's theology, the *Divine Principle*, we learn that these beliefs are wrong.

Billy Graham teaches, "The Bible is clear: Jesus Christ had no human father." This influential Christian thinker is wrong. Jesus had a physical father. Sun Myung Moon teaches, "Although God is all-powerful, He will not set aside the eternal laws and principles that He Himself established" (9-12-2005).

Orthodox Christians believe the doctrine of the Trinity that says Jesus was one of three gods who created the world and then took the form of a human being for 33 years in ancient Israel. They believe his physical body flew up in the air after he died and he will return with his physical body in the clouds. The truth is that Jesus is not God; he was not born from a woman who was a virgin, and he is not coming back on the clouds. Wikipedia.org states, "The concept of the pre-existence of Christ is a central tenet of the doctrine of the Trinity." Billy Graham said, "Jesus was wonderful in His pre-existence. As the perfect man who was also God, He existed from all eternity."

Christians are wrong in believing in the doctrine of the Trinity that says God is three persons of Father, Son and Holy Ghost with the son in the Trinity being Jesus Christ. (And those who believe God is two gods of Heavenly Father and Heavenly Mother are just as wrong). God is only one person—Heavenly Father. Christians say their religion is monotheistic but how can it be if God is three persons? Jews and Muslims are monotheists and find the Christian idea of 3 gods to be polytheism. The majority of mankind have rejected Jesus as the Messiah because they do not see any logic or rational thought in the doctrine of the Trinity.

Billy Graham teaches that Jesus "was God in human flesh — that is, He was both fully man and fully God." In answer to the question, "Do you Christians worship three Gods, or just one? I've heard about God the Father and God the Son and God the Holy Spirit, but doesn't that mean you believe in three Gods?" Graham says at his website, "No. Christians don't worship three Gods;

there is only one God…. The Bible does tell us, however, that God has shown Himself to us in three distinct ways. Just as a clover has three leaves and yet is still one clover, so God has three 'personalities' — and yet is still one God … eternally existing in three persons – Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. … Christians don't worship three Gods; there is only one God, and He alone is the One we worship and serve." Wikipedia, the online encyclopedia, says that even though Christians say their religion is monotheism, "Some critics contend that because of the adoption of a tripartite conception of deity, Christianity is actually a form of polytheism."

JESUS SEEN AS MYSTICAL

It was such a big stumbling block for Jesus' disciples to go witnessing for their Lord who had been crucified. To counter any thoughts that Jesus had failed as the Messiah and to make his death not look like a scandal Christians began to see Jesus more and more in mystical terms. Eventually they began to mistakenly think that the crucifixion was the fulfillment of Old Testament prophecies, and they also began to see Jesus in a superstitious way. Eventually they began to see Jesus as God himself.

The earliest parts of the New Testament do not portray Jesus as God. When Jesus is described as God this indicated the tendency of the later writers in the first-century Roman world which gave divinity to exceptional men. Emperors such as Augustus were called "lord and God" or "divine savior." It was easy 2000 years ago to turn Jesus into a god to be worshiped. The idea that Jesus was God had become widespread by the middle of the second century.

Jewish theologians, though, had never believed or written that the Messiah would be incarnate God. The Jews expected the Messiah to be a human being—probably a descendent of King David, or a priest, or a military hero who would drive the Romans into the sea. Some believed in a supernatural figure as Daniel prophesied coming out of the clouds, but even then they believed this savior would not be God himself.

JESUS — A MAN, NOT GOD

Christianity has incorrectly interpreted some passages from the Book of John as showing that Jesus is God himself. John 1:1 says, "In the beginning was the word, and the Word was God." And

John 1:10 says, “He was in the world, and the world was made through him, yet the world knew him not.”

The “He” in John 1:10 means the first perfect man. God had intended Adam to be that person. Before God created the universe He had a plan, a blueprint: “In the beginning was the blueprint or idea.” God built the universe before He could create Adam and Eve. They had to have a home to live in.

Man was the model of the universe. John 1:10 says, “The world was made through him and the world knew him not.” This means that Adam was the model of creation, but since he fell and lost that position, Jesus became the model because he was the first perfect person. Jesus was the first person to be the incarnation of the word. This is what he meant when he said, “I am in the Father and the Father is in me” (John 14:10). Jesus visibly manifested our invisible God. Jesus was one in heart with God. Therefore, to see Jesus is to see the human expression of God. It is like saying a husband and wife are one, but they are separate people. Jesus did not preexist before Adam. Jesus was a man. It is mythology to think Jesus is God himself who dressed up like a man and came as an alien visiting planet earth.

TRINITARIANISM vs. UNITARIANISM

The orthodox Christian belief in the doctrine of the Trinity is called Trinitarianism. Those who believe God is only one person, are called Unitarians. A famous Unitarian is Thomas Jefferson. He said the idea of the Trinity is an “unintelligible proposition of mysticisms that three are one, and one is three; and yet one is not three, and the three are not one.” He called it, “incomprehensible jargon of the Trinitarian arithmetic, that three are one, and one is three.” He said that there have been many books on the Trinity but they have never explained its meaning because nonsense can’t be explained, “thousands of volumes have not yet explained . . .[the Trinity] and for this obvious reason that nonsense can never be explained.” John Adams, another former President of the United States, was a Unitarian. He wrote to Jefferson and said, “The doctrine of the divinity of Jesus is … absurdity.”

GOD IS A GOD OF SCIENCE AND LOGIC

Father Moon explains that Christians must understand that God’s way is logical: “Today, people cannot believe anything unless it is

logical. God is truth, and truth is logical. There can be no perfection in ignorance." "Christian prayer alone could not lift Neil Armstrong to the moon. Scientific truth was necessary. I myself was once a student of science, and I know that God is also the God of science. God's message has to be scientific, logical, and convincing to men of the 20th century." (9-18-74)

Christianity wrongly believes that God, Jesus and the Holy Spirit created the world. When the *Bible* says, "Let us make man in our image" orthodox Christians interpret this to mean that these three beings are talking to each other. The truth is that the patriarch Heavenly Father is talking to the male angels here.

Jesus looked no different from other men. His own brothers saw nothing unusual about him. It was not until after the crucifixion that one of his brothers, James, joined the young sect of Christianity. The disciples of Jesus did not see him as God who had predestined Himself to go to the cross, but as their brother, a sinless man who knew God. Jesus said we are to be perfect like him. Paul said we are God's temple and God's spirit dwells in us.

Jesus is not God but is always trying to take us to God: "I go to the Father; for the Father is greater than I" (John 14:28). Logic and common sense says that Jesus is not God. It is ludicrous to think that Jesus talked to himself when he cried out on the cross: "My God why hast thou forsaken me?" (Matt. 27:46). How could he forsake himself? God forsook Jesus because He couldn't bear to see His son killed. Could you watch your child receive capital punishment? Wouldn't you turn your eyes?

Jesus' mission was to bridge the gap between God and mankind. The *Bible* says, "For there is one God and there is one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus ...." (I Tim. 2:5). If Jesus were God then he would have a more intimate relationship than we could. We can't really identify with this. To see Jesus as a man does not lower his divinity but makes him a real savior because he is truly one of us.

SECOND ADAM

First Corinthians 15:45 says, "Thus it is written, 'the first man Adam became a living being: the last Adam became a life giving

spirit.'" The first Adam was the Adam in the Garden of Eden who hoped to attain the Tree of Life. And Jesus came as a second Adam. Jesus is described as a tree in John 15:5: "I am the vine, you are the branches. He who abides in me, and I in him, he it is that bears much fruit, because apart from me you can do nothing."

Here are three quotes that clearly show the Bible teaches Jesus was a man and not God himself:

> For as by one man's [Adam's] disobedience many were made sinners, so by one man's [Jesus'] obedience many will be made righteous. -Rom. 5:19

> For as by a man [Adam] came death, by a man [Jesus] has come also the resurrection of the dead. -I Cor. 15:21

> He has fixed a day on which he will judge the world in righteousness by a man whom he has appointed. -Acts 17:31

TESTED

We learned in the previous chapter on Israelite history how God worked to save mankind by having his Central Figures re-enact the Fall and instead of them deceiving God they deceived Satan, the angel Lucifer. They had to be tested. Jesus' family was likewise tested. Let's begin with Jesus' birth. Christianity wrongly believes that Jesus was born miraculously by a spirit.

BIRTH OF JESUS

Mary was chosen to be Jesus' mother. God did His best to guide her and her family to unite and create a safe community for Jesus to grow up in. At first, things went well. Mary did as God told her to do and got engaged to a man named Joseph. We read in the New Testament that during her engagement she followed God's call to go to be with her relative, Elizabeth, who was married to the high priest, Zachariah.

In the book of Luke we read that the priest, Zachariah (also spelled Zechariah), and his wife Elizabeth "were righteous in the sight of God, observing all the Lord's commands and decrees blamelessly.

But they were childless because Elizabeth was not able to conceive, and they were both very old." We read that once when Zachariah was performing a ceremony at the Temple:

> An angel of the Lord appeared to him, standing at the right side of the altar of incense. When Zechariah saw him, he was startled and was gripped with fear. But the angel said to him: "Do not be afraid, Zechariah; your prayer has been heard. Your wife Elizabeth will bear you a son, and you are to call him John. He will be a joy and delight to you, and many will rejoice because of his birth, for he will be great in the sight of the Lord. He is never to take wine or other fermented drink, and he will be filled with the Holy Spirit even before he is born. He will bring back many of the people of Israel to the Lord their God. And he will go on before the Lord, in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to their children and the disobedient to the wisdom of the righteous—to make ready a people prepared for the Lord."
>
> Then Zechariah asked the angel, "How can I be sure of this? I am an old man and my wife is well along in years." The angel said to him, "I am Gabriel. I stand in the presence of God, and I have been sent to speak to you and to tell you this good news. After this his wife Elizabeth became pregnant and for five months remained in seclusion. "The Lord has done this for me," she said. "In these days he has shown his favor and taken away my disgrace among the people."

Then we read that the angel Gabriel goes to visit a relative of Elizabeth named Mary:

> In the sixth month of Elizabeth's pregnancy, God sent the angel Gabriel to Nazareth, a town in Galilee, to a virgin pledged to be married to a man named Joseph, a descendant of David. The virgin's name was Mary. The angel went to her and said,

> "Greetings, you who are highly favored! The Lord is with you."
>
> Mary was greatly troubled at his words and wondered what kind of greeting this might be. But the angel said to her, "Do not be afraid, Mary; you have found favor with God. You will conceive and give birth to a son, and you are to call him Jesus. He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his father David, and he will reign over Jacob's descendants forever; his kingdom will never end."
>
> "How will this be," Mary asked the angel, "since I am a virgin?"

The Angel Gabriel told her that her relative Elizabeth was pregnant: "Even Elizabeth your relative is going to have a child in her old age, and she who was said to be unable to conceive is in her sixth month." Then we read that Mary immediately goes to visit Elizabeth, "At that time Mary got ready and hurried to a town in the hill country of Judea, where she entered Zechariah's home and greeted Elizabeth." When Elizabeth saw Mary the baby she was carrying "leaped in her womb." Her baby would grow up to become the famous evangelist, John the Baptist. Then we read how Elizabeth became spiritually open and realized that Mary was given the mission to bear the Messiah:

> When Elizabeth heard Mary's greeting, the baby leaped in her womb, and Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit. In a loud voice she exclaimed: "Blessed are you among women, and blessed is the child you will bear! But why am I so favored, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? As soon as the sound of your greeting reached my ears, the baby in my womb leaped for joy. Blessed is she who has believed that the Lord would fulfill his promises to her!"

Then we read that "Mary stayed with Elizabeth for about three months and then returned home." Sun Myung Moon tells, for the

first time, the rest of the story. Elizabeth was in the position of Cain and Mary was in the position of Abel. Jacob had two wives—the elder Leah and the younger Rachel. Leah was in the position of Cain and Rachel was in the position of Abel. Leah hated Rachel. She was jealous of Jacob's attention for Rachel. Thankfully, Elizabeth restored Leah's mistake by offering, with a good heart, Mary to Zachariah. Father Moon teaches:

> Within Jacob's family there were two sisters, Rachel and Leah, and there was always conflict between them. At the time of Jesus Christ, the relationship between Elizabeth and Mary was reversed. (1-1-96)

> In Jacob's family, Leah hated her younger sister Rachel and she completely dominated Jacob and produced ten children, whereas Rachel had only two children. However, Elizabeth, the wife of Zachariah actually volunteered to introduce Mary to Zachariah because of her revelation from God. She allowed Mary to stay in her family for three months. A woman doesn't become pregnant through staying overnight. If you really research into the Bible you will see this. Therefore, after three months of staying in Zachariah's household Mary became pregnant. Mary had the responsibility to indemnify the failure of Eve as well as the failure of Rachel and Leah. Therefore while she was pregnant she had to deceive her husband figure (Joseph) as well as her father figure. (2-13-97)

Mary stayed in their home for three months and became pregnant with Jesus by Zachariah. Initially these three re-enacted the Fall correctly. They were spiritually moved and saw what they were doing was what God wanted them to do. But then they weakened. Satan was able to intervene and influenced them to not completely fulfill their mission. Just like so many people's New Year's resolutions fade away, Zachariah and Elizabeth's understanding and commitment faded away. Zachariah counseled Mary to tell Joseph the Holy Spirit was the father of her child. Then he sent her back home to Joseph and sadly, Zachariah and Elizabeth abandoned her.

We are not told why they did not continue to help Mary. Perhaps Elizabeth began to feel like Leah and resented her husband's attention he gave Mary. Perhaps Zachariah and Elizabeth became afraid of what they were doing. They were in great danger because adultery at that time in Israel brought the death penalty. Father Moon teaches:

MARY RECEIVES SURPRISING MESSAGE

Mary, when she was engaged to Joseph, received from the Archangel Gabriel the surprising message that the Messiah would be born through her. (Luke 1:31) In those days, if an unmarried woman became pregnant, she would be killed. But Mary accepted the will of God with absolute faith, saying, "Behold, I am the handmaid of the Lord; let it be to me according to your word." (Luke 1:38)

Mary consulted with the priest Zechariah, who was her relative and was highly respected. Zechariah's wife Elizabeth, with the help of God, was pregnant with John the Baptist. She said to Mary "Blessed are you among women and blessed is the fruit of your womb. Why is this granted to me that the mother of my Lord should come to me?" (Luke 1:42-43) With these words she testified to the coming birth of Jesus. In this way God let Mary, Zechariah, and Elizabeth know about the birth of the Messiah before anyone else. All of them had the absolutely crucial mission of following the will of God and serving Jesus. Zechariah's family let Mary stay in their house. Jesus was conceived in the house of Zechariah.

NOT COMMON SENSE OR LEGAL

Elizabeth and Mary were cousins on their mothers' side. But according to God's Providence, they were considered sisters, with Elizabeth as the elder (Cain) and Mary as the younger (Abel). Mary received Elizabeth's help in the presence of Zechariah. Through this cooperation, Zechariah's family, on the national level, indemnified the lack of unity between mother and son with Leah and Rachel in

Jacob's family (Genesis 29-30). This allowed Jesus to be conceived. For the first time in history, there could be born on earth, free of satanic accusation and through a prepared womb, the seed of the Son of God—the seed of the True Father. In this way, the only begotten Son of God, the owner of the first love of God, was born for the first time in history. Mary had to achieve something that could not be understood by common sense, nor easily tolerated under the law of those times. Mary, Elizabeth and Zechariah had been spiritually moved. They followed the revelation that came from God and unconditionally believed that it was the will and desire of God.

WALL OF PROTECTION

Although the Son of God could be born on earth, he needed a wall of protection to grow up safely in the satanic world and fulfill the will of God. God had hoped that these three people in the family of Zechariah would establish that protective foundation. There are many points to consider with regard to how seriously the three had to dedicate themselves to protecting and serving the Son of God, and how long they should have been united with each other.

In the Bible it is recorded, "And Mary remained with her [Elizabeth] about three months, and returned to her home." (Luke 1:56) After that, there is no biblical record of any further communication between Mary and Elizabeth and Zechariah. From the time Mary left Zechariah's house, difficulties began for Mary and Jesus. The family of Zechariah should have been the wall of protection for Jesus until the very end. (4-16-96)

Adultery is one of the worst things in God's eyes but in the providence of restoration sometimes extraordinary things have to be done. Eve deceived Adam and to restore that some central figure women had to be successful at deceit. Mary successfully deceived Joseph, Joseph's father and her family when she returned home pregnant. "Mary deceived Joseph and Joseph's father as

well as her own parents. This was to restore the deception of Eve." (4-18-96)

Joseph was upset like any man would be when he found out Mary was pregnant. He knew if he told anyone that he was not the father, Mary would be stoned to death. God helped Joseph by speaking to him in a dream. He taught him that this was God's will and he should marry her. Joseph felt the spirit of God and did not tell the truth. He married Mary but in time his understanding waned until he became distant to Jesus. God had wanted Zachariah, Elizabeth, Mary, and Joseph to live together and raise Jesus but they all failed to unite.

Why did God have Mary, Elizabeth and Zachariah commit adultery and deceive Mary's intended husband, Joseph? God works in a principled way. We learned earlier that God is saving the world by restoration—by re-creation. Central Figures of God often have to re-enact the Fall in some way and then do the opposite, the reverse—go 180 degrees the opposite direction.

God's hope was that Zachariah, Elizabeth and Mary would be successful in following God's commands and showing they had the character to be humble to the Second Adam and follow him at the risk of their life. In the beginning Zachariah, Elizabeth and Mary did as they were told but quickly they lost their way and in the end failed their mission.

We learned earlier how Central Figures were sometimes successful and sometimes failed. They did not all do the same things but there was a formula God was using in his Providence of Salvation. Abraham was not required to build an Ark like Noah, and Jacob did not have to offer animal sacrifices like Abraham. Central Figures throughout history do not do exactly the same things any more than they dress alike, but their actions do follow a similar pattern. The stories in the *Bible* are different because they deal with different people at different times in history but the pattern of their behavior is the same. Sun Myung Moon explains:

> Eve deceived and seduced her husband, Adam. Then later she rejected even God. Therefore, through the history of restoration through indemnity, human beings had to pay indemnity

to restore the negative consequences that occurred in the process of the fall.

PROVIDENTIAL SECRETS

In the process of God's providence for restoration, as seen in the Old and New Testaments, there were many episodes which we cannot understand in terms of simple human ethics. No one could explain the providential secrets that are hidden in these scriptures. Sometimes we see conflicting content between the Old and New Testaments.

STORIES CONNECTED

Sometimes it's hard to tell this is Holy Scripture. There seems to be no relationship between the stories in the Old Testament and those of the New Testament, and sometimes there seems to be a lack of historical consistency. In spite of all this, the Old and New Testaments are actually connected as one. This is the secret of God's providence. After the completion of the providence, all these secrets will be revealed. So far no one has revealed God's providential secrets, which explain how the Old and New Testaments are connected as one. (*Way of Unification Part 1*)

Father Moon reveals how the stories in the Bible are connected. He teaches that God used the deceit and lies of Mary in the same way he used the deceit and lies of Rebecca and Tamar we read of in the Old Testament. God was behind other women like Rahab and Bathsheba who are also judged as being immoral but were really doing God's will.

GENEALOGY

Young Oon Kim writes in her book *Unification Theology*: "But what was the chief purpose of including a family tree in the Gospel? Matthew and Luke were interested in legitimizing the messianic claims made for Jesus. Hence, Matthew traces the Messiah's ancestry back to King David and the patriarch

Abraham, while Luke goes even further back to Adam, the first son of God.

"Nevertheless, an equally important purpose behind genealogies is to show how all Hebrew history and even the whole history of mankind since Adam and Eve aimed at the realization of God's kingdom on earth. The two New Testament genealogies reveal how carefully God laid a spiritual foundation for Jesus' messianic mission.

UNCONVENTIONAL MEANS

"Matthew includes the names of four women among Jesus' ancestors: Tamar, Rahab, Ruth and Bathsheba, the wife of Uriah the Hittite. Ordinarily only males are mentioned in a family tree when the society is as rigidly patriarchal as that of ancient Israel. Why then did the evangelist think it useful to mention these particular women? To answer that question one must figure out what they had in common. First of all, Tamar, Rahab, Ruth and Bathsheba achieved some notoriety because of their sexual immorality. Tamar pretended to be a prostitute in order to get pregnant (Gen. 38:26). Rahab was a harlot in Jericho who helped the Israelites conquer her city (Josh. 2:1-11). Ruth invited Boaz to lay with her (Ruth 3:6-9) and Bathsheba committed adultery with King David (II Sam. 11:4). Does this not imply that there would also be some sexual irregularity connected with Jesus birth? ...all four were rather extraordinary instruments of God's providence: Tamar had dared to scorn the social proprieties in order to perpetuate the family line of her deceased husband. Rahab enabled the Israelites to enter the Promised Land. Ruth had taken the initiative in a marital union which ultimately produced King David. And Bathsheba's adultery led to the birth of Solomon. Consequently in post-biblical Jewish piety these four women were praised as illustrations of how God can use unexpected and unconventional means in order to carry out His providence."

Father Moon says this about Bathsheba: "The mother of King Solomon was Bathsheba, originally the wife of Uriah before King David stole her. Then how could the child from that union become King Solomon? Bathsheba was in the providential position of Eve in the Garden of Eden, before the fall. David was in the position of Adam, and Uriah was in the position of the archangel.

"The archangel distracted the spouse of Adam with love and stole her away, making her fall. A reversal course is needed in order to indemnify that; therefore a person in the position of the archangel's wife had to be restored to the position of Eve. Therefore, the child who was born on the foundation of that reversal could be born as a child of heavenly love, a child of glory. Solomon was such a child of glory." (10-13-70)

In *Blessing and Ideal Family* Sun Myung Moon says:

> With whom did Tamar have a relationship? Perez and Zerah, whom she bore by having a relationship with her father-in-law, became the direct lineage blessed by God, the ancestors of Jesus—right? Also, in what circumstances was King Solomon born? Solomon was the child David got by killing his loyal retainer Uriah and taking his wife Bathsheba. Since he had enticed his loyal retainer's wife, he should have been punished, and his child should have been one who ruined the world. Then how could Solomon, a glorious king, be born from them? How did it come to be like that? In the gospel of Matthew, Rahab appears in Jesus' lineage. What kind of person was Rahab? She was a prostitute, right? But then whom did she help? She helped a spy. It is realistic for a prostitute to sympathize with an enemy country, but she risked her life to do that. For the sake of heaven's will, one has to risk one's life. It means to deny one's life, environment, and everything that has to do with one's privileges. History progresses from that point of self-denial.

Sun Myung Moon teaches:

> Judah was the fourth son of Jacob, and Judah's son married a woman whose name was Tamar. According to Jewish tradition, if a son died without leaving sons, his brother must act as a husband to the dead brother's wife so that the dead brother's lineage would be continued. Tamar did not have children when her husband died, and when the next brother refused to fulfill

his responsibility, he died. However, the third brother was not given to Tamar when he became old enough, and Tamar saw that she had no hope to bear children. (4-18-77)

Tamar had married Er, the eldest son of Judah. (Genesis 38) But Er displeased God and he died. According to the custom of that time, Judah gave Tamar his second son, Onan, that they might bear a child for Er. But Onan, knowing that Tamar's child would not be his own, spilled his semen on the ground. This was a sin in the eyes of God, for which Onan died.

Then Tamar wanted Shelah, the third son of Judah, for a husband, but Judah did not give him to her. Judah thought that his two sons had died because of Tamar, so he was afraid that Shelah would die and end the family lineage. (4-16-96)

She knew that her mission was to continue the family of her husband and Judah, his father, and she finally decided to sacrifice even her honor and prestige in order to fulfill. Disguising herself as a prostitute, Tamar enticed her father-in-law to have a relationship with her. Without knowing she was his daughter-in-law Judah consented. At that time adultery was punished by death. In order to save her life for the sake of her child, Tamar asked Judah for his signet and staff as a pledge for payment, and then confiscated them.

Three months later when it became obvious that the widow Tamar was pregnant, she was brought before Judah to be judged. You can imagine Judah's horror, "Bring her out, and let her be burned!" But she answered, "By the man to whom these belong, I am with child," and she brought out the things that Judah had given her in his pledge.

FALL WAS FORNICATION

Man fell through fornication, and Tamar was one example of how God frequently used

women of most unusual character in restoration. Why would God use adulterous women in the dispensation? They are in a satanic position, but if they completely deny their satanic nature when summoned by God, then they can be restored from one extreme to the opposite extreme.

God selected His champions from the most miserable situations. Tamar was a righteous woman, and though she was originally in a sinful position, she completely dedicated herself to God's mission, risking her life, honor, and prestige. Paralleling the way Eve lied to God and her husband to bring the fall, Tamar deceived her father-in-law and her husband to-be, the third brother of her original husband. She was in a position to reverse the position of Eve by reversing Eve's actions, but the significant thing is that she risked her life to do God's will.

Tamar had conceived twins and in this case, the struggle of Cain and Abel began within her very womb. The *Bible* records how Rebecca's twins also struggled within their mother's womb. She had prayed to God to understand what was happening, and God answered her, saying, "Two nations are in your womb, and two peoples, born to you, shall be divided; the one shall be stronger than the other, and the elder shall serve the younger." Ultimately Jacob did gain the birthright from his elder brother, Esau.

When the time came for Tamar's children to be delivered, the struggle ensued directly within her womb. The first child started to come out and the midwife tied a red thread around his wrist. That sign foreshadowed the emergence of communism in the Last Days. However, before the first child could be born there was a struggle, and the younger brother pulled the other back inside and was himself born first. That son was named Perez, and the other named Zerah. The result of this struggle is that for the first time the

restoration of Cain and Abel took place inside the mother's womb, the younger brother having subjugated his elder brother even prior to birth. Tamar's extraordinary action cleansed Judah's lineage and rendered it intact from satanic invasion from the time of conception.

Through this victory at the time of Tamar and also Jacob's earlier victory, God could claim a foundation that spanned man's entire life. Jesus was born in the lineage of Judah, and Satan had no way to invade his life because the cleansing process was already completed. ("cleansing of the blood lineage in the mother's womb" 4-18-96.)

SECRET OF THIS STORY

Tamar set the condition to restore fallen Eve's position by reversing the process of Eve's fall. For thousands of years up until now, no one has ever known the secret of this story except God. Yet now, you can understand this hidden mystery clearly. (*The Way of Restoration* April 1972 Paris, France)

GREAT MOTHER

Satan sowed the seed of false love within the womb of Eve, which gave birth to evil life. Therefore, God needed to purify a mother's womb from which the heavenly Son could be born. The great mother who assumed the responsibility to meet this condition was Tamar. (4-16-1996)

God's third providence started once again from mother's womb, which was where the fall originated. The first mother Eve fell because she did not believe in God's words, so Tamar, who was supposed to restore Eve's position, had to demonstrate absolute faith in God. She had to forget her self-esteem and pride and, furthermore, she had to determine to risk her

life. Eve's faithlessness made her abandon her father, God. Instead, she accepted Satan as her father and put him in God's position. Therefore, Tamar, on the contrary, had to talk directly with God. Eve was not able to be united with her father, so Tamar had to be united with her father. (*The Tribal Messiah*, section 3, chapter 1)

If you can understand about Tamar, you can understand the whole Principle. (October 13, 1970)

There was another girl who regarded the historical significance of her actions to be more important than her own dignity or her own social environment. She regarded God's will as the highest priority. That girl was Mary. Mary maintained the standard of victory and Satan could not accuse her. So on the foundation established by Mary, Jesus was conceived. It was that victorious foundation which qualified Jesus to be born from God. Without coming on such a historical foundation, nobody could be qualified to be the Messiah. (10-13-1970)

Jesus came years after the dispensation of Jacob and Tamar because God had to wait for the national foundation to be established. Conditions were all fulfilled on the family level at the time of Jacob, Tamar and Judah, but God needed to create a foundation to receive the Messiah within a nation, that he might gain victory among the satanic nations.

Finally after 2,000 years, God chose one more woman whose name was Mary. Mary was a revolutionary woman in faith who could follow God's revolutionary tactics. Because the fall of man came through the archangel, an angel was needed to assist Mary by bringing her God's revelation. Mary completely believed what the angel told her of her mission; the angel told her that she would conceive, and the child would be

great and holy, and that his name should be called Jesus.

Mary's situation paralleled Eve's in the Garden of Eden before her blessing. Mary and Joseph were engaged but not yet married; Adam and Eve were also in an engagement period as they were growing up. An angel brought Eve to the fallen act, but an angel brought Mary to the fulfillment of the heavenly dispensation. Mary was also in a position to deceive her husband and her father. Do you think Mary could discuss with her father or Joseph about how she had conceived her baby? She was risking her life because in those times an adulterous woman was stoned to death.

Mary was the third woman to be picked by God. Through the previous victories of Rebecca and Tamar all satanic conditions had been cleared from Jesus' lineage, and even though Mary conceived Jesus outside of marriage, Satan could not accuse her. Even inside his mother's womb Jesus was already the only begotten son of God, and after his birth everything he did was with the authority of the son of God.

LOGICAL EXPLANATIONS

The events recorded in the *Bible* have always puzzled the world. For instance, in the genealogy of Jesus the names of four adulterous women are recorded: Tamar, Ruth, Bathsheba, and Mary. Another puzzling question was why the elder son was often in the position to be cursed by God. Without understanding the depths of the *Principle* there are no logical explanations for these things. (4-18-77)

One believer of the *Principle* wrote on the Web:

> There are many instances in the Bible of sexual acts which appear immoral by the literal interpretation of the law. Tamar had intercourse with her father-in-law, yet was said to have great faith, because she

perpetuated the lineage of the Messiah at the price of her life. Ruth laid down with Boaz to whom she was not married in order that he would claim her as a wife. She was the grandmother of King David. Sarah pretended to be Abraham's sister and was taken as the wife of the Pharaoh (Gen 12:10-20) and later by the King of Gerar, both times with the agreement of her husband.

So, there are instances when God has allowed or even commanded someone to have a sexual relationship with someone other than their spouse. Since no marriage born out of the evil world is sanctioned by God, then He can do that. But we are not to break our promise to God and our spouse by committing adultery as it is an abomination under heaven and it breaks the hearts of many people, especially if it results in offspring, or divorce.

SEXUAL IRREGULARITIES

You may notice that each of the women mentioned in Jesus' lineage in Matthew's gospel did something against the law in regard to adultery, yet were honored by God. They are Tamar, Rahab, Ruth, Bathsheba and Mary." Because the Fall of Man is about sex, then we have to understand that when God works with Central Figures in history there may be "sexual irregularities". The Bible speaks strongly for sexual purity. God abhors deceit, fornication and adultery. But God works in a principled way and to reverse the Fall his Central Figures may do what looks like immorality and they look like they are doing everything but what a godly person should do. Only they are able to be the exception to the rule.

This is a difficult question to deal with, and the truth cannot be understood in a simplistic way, but only with heartfelt prayer and repentance and a pure heart.

— (www.unification.net/faq/uniffaq21.html)

In another speech Sun Myung Moon explains it this way:

> Just as in the fall, when God the Father was deceived, in this family the father, Isaac, was deceived. So Rebekah deceived for a good purpose and restored the fall. Jacob then did the work of a true Abel and subjugated Cain. From that point, the true restoration course started.
>
> However, Esau and Jacob were grown men; the restoration they accomplished did not take place in the womb, at the root. Therefore a subsequent stage, one of restoration in the womb, took place with Tamar, Perez and Zerah. Tamar deceived her father-in-law, Judah, and his son, her husband, and then gave birth to the twins, Perez and Zerah. Thus within the womb, restoration took place. He who was to be the elder son became the younger son, and he who was to be the younger son became the elder son, perfectly restoring the elder sonship in God's eyes. We see restoration by indemnity took place.

GOD'S PLAN

Tracing it back to the womb, the elder sonship was restored. From this point Israel, the victor, comes. Even today these puzzles have not been solved. Many scholars today say they were just immoral. But from there, from Judah, Jesus' lineage came. No one knew God's plan, but now we can see it so clearly. That was a restored lineage, God's lineage. From there began the real history of the Israelites. They grew into a large nation. How did Israel become a victor? By clearing his lineage; his blood was purified. Israel means victor.

For 2,000 years, history flowed. In order to end evil and restore goodness, you need clean blood, God's blood. Two thousand years later, Mary conceived and gave birth to Jesus. Mary was in Eve's position, Rebekah's position and Tamar's

position. But she was on a national level, instead of a family or tribal level. Mary, in the same way, deceived her father-in-law and her husband. For Mary, it was hard to understand why she had to deceive her husband and father-in-law and conceive a baby. But she gave birth to Jesus. That was not a simple thing. At that time what she did called for death by stoning. Joseph was righteous enough to protect her. That means that Adam protected her. So when Jesus was born, Satan had no claim on him, because of his lineage and these conditions of indemnity. So we know what Jesus is called as a result of this: the first begotten son. He is the first begotten son, because through him, for the first time in history, all blood can be cleansed and all people can be reconnected to God. It took 4,000 years for God to do that, in ways so mysterious to us. (1-19-93)

Because of Mary's success in reversing the course which had failed at the time of Eve, Rebecca and Tamar, now the son she had in her womb at the national level was sanctified. That is why she was able to give birth to the Holy Son of God, Jesus. Jesus was born completely free of Satanic accusation. God controlled everything concerning his conception and birth. (2-13-97)

Father Moon gave these amazing insights into what happened to Tamar and Mary in a speech he gave on January 2, 1997:

RESTORATION THROUGH INDEMNITY

In order to become the victor who can establish the realm of the chosen nation, centered on Jacob, the blood lineage had to be changed. Therefore, the Bible contains stories about the providence of restoration taking place through women such as Rebecca, Tamar, and Mary. In the Garden of Eden, when Eve deceived Adam and God, she fell. Likewise, Rebecca had to delude her elder son and her husband. This is restoration through indemnity.

Restoration through indemnity is a necessary principle.

Then what did Tamar do? Since Tamar was the wife of Rebecca's grandson, she could observe his grandmother Rebecca. Even though she did not know the deep providential meaning, she came to have a strong determination that if she received a revelation from God she would fulfill it at the risk of her life.

Tamar did not know that God's will would be fulfilled through her. Nevertheless, she absolutely obeyed God's direction. She showed absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience to God. Even though she did not know God's providence, she placed the right of the chosen people of Israel before her faith and love for the grandfather and grandmother. She absolutely loved and obeyed the God of Abraham and Isaac. There was no self-consciousness in her. Because she served the grandmother with absolute obedience, she was influenced by Rebecca's tradition. Through God's providence, her husband died; both the first and second husbands passed away. According to the tradition of Israel, the third son ought to have been given to the daughter-in-law, but he was not given to her. The only way to preserve the blood lineage was through her father-in-law, but since that was not permitted, she had to seduce him at the risk of her life.

PURIFICATION OF BLOOD LINEAGE

What kind of position did Eve have in the Garden of Eden? She was both daughter and wife. Therefore, if the third son, who was supposed to be an object partner of the daughter-in-law, was not permitted to do so, she had to turn to the father. Therefore, Tamar put on make-up like a prostitute and seduced her father-in-law along the road. She bore twin sons,

who became the first ancestors of Israel. This was the purification of the blood lineage.

CHOSEN PEOPLE

Because Eve deceived the elder son and the father in Adam's family, this had to be restored through providential history. At the time of their birth, one of the twins, Zerah, stretched out his hand to be born first, but he pulled it back into the womb, and the second son, Perez, was born first, taking the position of the elder brother. In reality, this was when the people of Israel received the right to be chosen people. The blood lineage was restored in the mother's womb.

****

Because Zechariah and Elizabeth knew this providential fact through revelation and through Mary's explanation, Elizabeth welcomed Mary. Elizabeth's attitude was the reverse of that of Rachel and Leah, who tried to kill each other out of jealousy. Mary received the revelation that she would conceive the Messiah. Elizabeth also knew about Mary's situation and helped her accomplish God's will. Elizabeth guided Mary to her husband's room. Do you understand? She surrendered her husband to her younger relative.

What did Mary do in Zechariah's house for three months? They all lived together. It was difficult to conceive in just one or two days. When Mary returned to her house, she was pregnant. Since Elizabeth loved her younger relative, she handed over her husband to her. Even though her mind and heart were terribly painful and her body was like death, Elizabeth could overcome such a situation with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience.

> Mary also had absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. These were the contents which God had revealed in Adam's family. Unless the tradition of absolute faith, love and obedience is established, God's will cannot be realized. Do you understand?
>
> Thus, with absolute faith and love, Mary also loved her elder relative, Elizabeth. As Mary loved Elizabeth, she came to love Elizabeth's son and Elizabeth's husband. So, Mary deserved to be loved by Zechariah, Elizabeth and John the Baptist. However, John the Baptist did not fulfill his responsibility.
>
> All of them seemed to be enemies of love. For Elizabeth, Mary and Mary's son were enemies of love. For Mary's husband, Zechariah and John the Baptist were enemies. However, restoration cannot take place based on enemy feelings. Thus you should know that if you have enemy feelings, the realm of Unification will disappear. In Zechariah's family, Elizabeth would have enemy feelings toward Mary, who deprived her of her husband. How much she must have suffered! In the end, she could not overcome this difficulty and maintain her love towards Mary.

JOSEPH CONFUSED AND UPSET

Sun Myung Moon teaches about how hurt Joseph was when Mary returned from Zachariah's home:

> When she returned she was pregnant. Automatically Joseph asked whose baby was she carrying. It is natural that he would. God intervened by giving Joseph a revelation in a dream not to be afraid to take Mary as his wife. Therefore Mary and Jesus were protected.

Because Joseph took this kind of action the Bible refers to him as a righteous man. (April 18, 1996)

Mary went through such a severe course after her relationship with Zachariah. She experienced much persecution from the environment. If this union had been publicized, people would have stoned her to death. If Joseph had not declared that her baby was his son, Jesus and Mary would have been stoned to death. Joseph was the savior of Mary and Jesus Christ. If Mary had confessed who her child's father was, there would have been a problem. (2-7-95)

After Joseph saved Mary's life and they became officially married, don't you think that Joseph kept on asking Mary whose son Jesus really was? Yet Mary could not reveal the secret, because once she would then the entire family, including Zachariah and Elizabeth would be condemned by the society of Israel at that time. Therefore she could not do that. The entire family might have been stoned to death. (December 25, 1994)

Joseph's Lonely Decision

Now, do you think Joseph could have discussed this matter with his parents by saying, "Mother and Father, my wife-to-be, my betrothed, has conceived a child, but an angel said that this is the will of God, so I must take her as my wife and care for her"? What would Joseph's parents have said? There are many older couples in our audience. Put yourselves in the position of the parents of Joseph. You would not have believed Joseph if he spoke such things. Again, Joseph had to make a lonely decision. Without discussing the matter with anybody, he took his fiancée off to some secret hiding place.

> I am sure Joseph went through a most difficult period in which he was full of suspicion about Mary. Joseph must have asked his wife-to-be, "Mary, we are close and have no secrets from one another. Now tell me what really happened to you. Who is the true father of the baby in your womb?" I am sure any husband would be very curious about this matter. If I had been in the position of Joseph I would have asked Mary this question. But Mary was telling the truth when she said, "I really do not know who is the father of this child. It was conceived by God." How many of us could believe this statement? It is easier to believe now, because we know who Jesus is, but this was not the case during the lifetime of Jesus.
>
> **Emotional Turmoil in Jesus' Family**
> Therefore, Joseph had certain suspicions and injured feelings in his heart. He thought, "My wife is not truly honest with me." Because of these circumstances there was emotional turmoil and upheaval in Jesus' family even after he was born. ("God's Hope for America" 1974)

Joseph's father pressured his son to reject Mary: "Joseph's father approved of his son's matching to Mary. He hoped to make a new family and peace centering on the father and son. But Mary conceived Jesus before the marriage took place. Once this happened Joseph's father didn't want Joseph and Mary to marry. Even though Joseph did nothing." (4-18-96)

In another speech Father Moon says this about Joseph's reaction when he discovered that Mary was pregnant:

> How great must have been his shock at that moment! Mary, his beloved fiancée, without having had any relationship with him, had become pregnant after a three-month stay in another place. It was natural for Joseph to question Mary about who the baby in her womb belonged to. What would have happened if at

that time Mary had explained everything candidly? If she had exposed everything, it could have been the end of a clan. So Mary simply responded that she was pregnant by the Holy Spirit.

INDESCRIBABLE LONELINESS

Mary's pregnancy began to show, and the people of the surrounding area became aware of it. What would have happened if Joseph had declared that he didn't know anything about it? But Joseph was a righteous man. He believed in the revelation of God and defended Mary, saying the pregnancy was his responsibility. Mary may have been ridiculed for becoming pregnant during her engagement, but she had avoided death by stoning. Joseph, who loved Mary, protected her this way in the beginning. However, there was a great deal of anguish deep in his heart. Once Jesus was born, Joseph's suspicions about the father of Jesus only increased and his heart ached. As Jesus grew older, the two became more and more distant in heart. And because of this, family problems frequently arose. Jesus was viewed as an illegitimate son, and lacking the protection of Zechariah's family and the love of Joseph, he grew up with an indescribable loneliness in his heart. (4-16-96)

ROMANTIC VIEW OF JESUS' BIRTH

Christianity does not have a realistic view of Jesus' birth. For thousands of years they have romanticized his birth as a sanitized nativity scene instead of the horrible reality of a filthy, stinking barn. The truth was that it was harsh and sad that the Messiah had to come to this world with so little love. The Wise Men who came to him should have taken care of him, but like everyone in Jesus' life they deserted him. The story of Jesus is the saddest story of human history, next to Adam and Eve.

Jesus received his mission to be the Second Adam from God when he was a boy. He spent years secretly communicating with God

and saints in the spirit world. He became one with God's heart and learned the truth that could save mankind. As a boy Jesus lived in a miserable, unhappy home. Joseph and Mary created an atmosphere of bitterness, emotional turmoil and upheaval. Jesus seldom spoke to his disciples of his life as a boy because it was so painful. Sun Myung Moon reveals in some of his speeches what it was like for Jesus to grow up. Here are some excerpts from a few speeches:

Sad Story

You have read the biblical record that Jesus went to Jerusalem for the Passover when he was 12 years old. Joseph and Mary took the child to Jerusalem. After the festival the parents returned home, but only after 3 days did they know that the child was lost, and went back to look for him. It is a simple record, but behind it there is a sad story. We read that Jesus was such a wise and clever child as he discussed biblical passages with priests. But still he was 12 years old. If it were you, would you not have looked for the child to bring him back? There can be no such parents. Also Joseph and Mary knew that the child was lost, but Joseph had a hurt heart. He did not mind and did not talk about it. Mary, even though she was so deeply wounded in her heart, could not utter a single word about getting the missing child. So, in silence, she came back and spent three unhappy days. But after the three days, Joseph might have thought that it was too much for him. What would the neighbors think? I can enumerate many more such examples. With those things hidden in his heart, the child grew up to the age of adulthood. (12-25-71)

Nobody knew who Jesus' father was. Since they had no evidence one way or the other, people just talked behind Jesus' back. Joseph asked Mary who Jesus' father was. Don't you think he asked her? He asked many times. Of course Mary couldn't say, she just answered, "The Holy Spirit." Do you think Joseph really believed that? Therefore, Mary was always in a defensive

position. She really did not have a secure position. It is another reason why she didn't worry so much about Jesus. The Bible does not disclose this, but it is so easy to trace it back. Mary and Joseph were disharmonious, fighting and quarrelling all the time. They quarreled so much that young Jesus' mother even forsook him and left him. Three days later she came and found him with the priests. Jesus was very angry saying, "Where else would I be but in my Father's house?" which was the temple. Today both Christians and Catholics say that Jesus is such a great person so he stayed in his father's house. How can you go to heaven with that kind of interpretation? He was there because he was forsaken by his mother and father! (9-20-92)

It is likely that Joseph asked Mary many times whose baby she carried because he was curious and because he tried to understand. But remember that at that time an unmarried woman who became pregnant was required by Mosaic law to be stoned for committing adultery. At first Joseph probably thought he would understand, but in the long run he could not accept the situation. Do you think that their relationship was happy for very long? It is probable that they quarreled and distrusted each other rather than fully understanding and cooperating in love in the sight of God.

Once Jesus was born the rift became even greater and Joseph looked upon Jesus as something which was not wanted and which had ruined his relationship with Mary. This was the realistic situation that existed all through Jesus' life. Because of their parents' attitude towards Jesus, even his own brothers and sisters did not respect him, much less think that he was the son of God. They even treated him worse than they would other children because he was different.

Whenever parents respect a child then his brothers and sisters will also, but when the father and mother are indifferent or hostile then the chances are that the other children will treat him the same way.

Jesus was mistreated and persecuted by his own family because they completely lacked any understanding of who he was. Even without his being king of kings and the son of God, was he even treated as well as the son of a common family? (12-25-1977)

More children were born to Mary and Joseph, and they all knew that somehow Jesus was different. The *Bible* does not speak directly about this, but the fact is that when Jesus was a boy there was a great deal of tension, and even Mary was distant with him at times because she was a victim of the everyday situation. Jesus was lonely as a child and often left the house to be alone. Once his parents even left him behind in Jerusalem for three days, only coming back to look for him later. How could parents leave a young boy behind that way? There were not many happy days in that family.

I'm sure many of you have grown up with a step parent, and even in an open society like America's today there is tension between a step parent and step children, so imagine how much more difficult it was 2,000 years ago. In this sense Americans are in a position to be sympathetic with Jesus' position; more young people are experiencing the same kind of suffering Jesus went through. (10-3-79)

His brothers could sense that there was some untold, entangled story centered on Jesus. That's why even his brothers could not trust or believe in what Jesus was doing.

There he was, working as an assistant to his carpenter father, while inwardly preparing for his mission. He knew he was going to do a great

mission under God's guidance. Sometimes Jesus felt like asking his mother, "Why, why am I treated like this? Who is my father? What is your problem and how does it fit in?" Mary could never answer Jesus. Then there was a sort of emotional distance between Mary and the child. As time went by, Jesus came to know what to do and what direction he was headed. He must have been told on some occasions, but he himself knew that he was different from other boys. More than that, he was told by God about his mission. In carrying out his mission, he had to pass through a period of preparation; and he had to prepare a good environment to help him. He could not expect people to receive him without that foundation. Jesus always wished that his own parents, brothers, and relatives could help him in the mission. If his parents had not been able to help him, then who else would help?

Jesus was the central figure, the personage of divine mission whom God sent after a preparation of 4,000 years. There were people prepared to receive him. In order for him to be able to establish the Kingdom of God on earth he must have been able to establish the Kingdom right in his own family first. He knew the heavenly law of the divine family, so his own family had to be placed under that law. According to that divine law, Joseph should have loved and ministered to Jesus, not to speak of his mother Mary. Jesus had even to educate his own parents and brothers and sisters; they had to love him more than anyone else, ministering to him and helping him in his mission.

But we find that Jesus had told his mother about his mission several times. We can imagine that he has done that, his mother being somewhat closer to him. The boy knew his mission and looked for a helper who could cooperate with him. Would he not have told her? But the people

around him looked at things from a different angle, so he could not openly talk about his mission. How could he have explained it? He could not help feeling that his mother, at least, would be obedient and cooperative with him. He had told his mother that she should love him more than Joseph and more than any of his brothers according to the divine will. Jesus thought that his mother had to love him more than anyone else and that she was responsible for making her husband love him with that ardor, and influencing his brothers and sisters to love him. Jesus came as the master of love, the prince of love, and the center of love. He should have received more love than anyone else in the world: from his parents, from his brothers and sisters, from his relatives and neighbors. But we cannot say that he had received such love from anyone. On Jesus' part, he could not love his parents as a single example of parenthood, he could not love his brothers and sisters more than anyone else. Now God, seeing all those things take place, must have grieved. How grievous must have been Jesus' heart! The Kingdom of God was supposed to be the Kingdom of love. Jesus, who came as the center of love, should have established that kind of family first of all. But it seemed hopeless to him, so he had to flee from his home. He was then 30 years old. (12-25-71)

JESUS WANTED TO GET MARRIED

Father Moon reveals, "Since Eve fell at the age of 16, Jesus talked to mother Mary about his marriage at the age of 17." (1-2-97) When Jesus turned 17 he told his mother that she should help him get a wife. It was normal for 17 year olds to marry then. Everybody married young. We know that Jesus never married. Why? Because Mary and Zachariah's family blocked the way. The Messiah must marry and restore Adam and Eve's failure by creating a true marriage and becoming true parents. World salvation hinged on Jesus getting married. Jesus told his mother that God wanted his wife to be the younger daughter of Zachariah

and Elizabeth. This girl was Jesus' half-sister. They had the same father. Mary and Zachariah's family thought he was insane for wanting to commit incest. God's commands are often very difficult to fathom and do. But there was method to what seemed Jesus' madness. Father Moon explains why it was principled for Jesus to marry the younger daughter. Their families were central families that were called to be God's champions by restoring the fallen actions in the Garden of Eden. Father reveals:

> In the Garden of Eden, Adam was in the position of Abel and the Archangel was in the position of Cain. The meaning of the Fall is that the Archangel took away Adam's younger sister, Eve. In order to restore that relationship, Jesus was supposed to take Cain's younger sister, who was John the Baptist's younger sister and make her his own bride. Who was the younger sister? It would have been Jesus' stepsister. According to the law of Israel at that time it was not permitted to marry a close blood relative. … Suppose Jesus had married John the Baptist's younger sister, restoring the phenomena in the Garden of Eden. Even John the Baptist knew that Jesus was his stepbrother. Even though Jesus wanted to marry his own stepsister, Mary could not allow that because she knew what the consequences would be. Even if Mary had agreed Elizabeth would not allow that. If Elizabeth agreed then Zachariah would refuse. It would create so much trouble with all of the family. It was a doubly difficult situation at that time. Do you understand this clearly? You have to understand this hidden secret clearly. This is the truth Father is proclaiming to you.
>
> If everything could have happened according to God's will, Jesus could have married his stepsister with the agreement of Mary, Elizabeth and Zachariah, and then the family and tribe would have been established. This would have been the beginning of the Kingdom of God on earth. (12-25-1994)

"This is an unimaginable thing. But this was supposed to have happened" (January 1, 1996). Father goes on to teach:

> So Mary in a most concrete way should have arranged Jesus' marriage quickly. Who was to be Jesus' bride? It was to have been the sister of John the Baptist. Mary had to get the woman from the Cain side and bring her to Jesus. There was no woman available on the Abel side, so she had to get the woman from Cain's side. If Mary had worked with all her might to accomplish this, she would have been successful. Then purified blood and a new lineage could have come into existence. Restoration would have been very quick.
>
> By doing that, the mother and son would have come into unity and restored Eve's failure. If Abel had united with Cain, then the mother would have been restored to the original position. That is the tragedy of the Israelite history. There were two options; one was the mother uniting Cain and Abel, and the other was Cain and Abel uniting and restoring their mother. They could have done it either way. The Jewish religion was in Abel's position, the nation of Israel was in Cain's position on a national level; these two should have united. Then Cain and Abel on a national level would have restored a national level mother. The mission of Israel was to bring Cain and Abel into unity, to restore the mother's position. Restoration must reverse the fall. (1-19-93)

In another speech Sun Myung Moon reveals:

> At the time of Jesus, the law was such that if any unmarried woman were to become pregnant she was supposed to be stoned to death. In such a strict society, how could Jesus even think about demanding a younger sister to become his own bride? Let us imagine ourselves in that time when the younger sister Mary actually took away Elizabeth's husband and became pregnant. Then she gave birth to Jesus. As Jesus grew up he was

requesting to marry the younger sister from Elizabeth's family. Can you imagine that? It was virtually impossible, because if it had become known to the general public then the families of Zachariah and Jesus would have been destroyed.

When Jesus was desirous of such a marriage, Zachariah, Elizabeth and John the Baptist all knew who Jesus was and whom he wanted for his wife. In the mind of John the Baptist Jesus was his half-brother, born from his father's concubine. Therefore, for John it was unthinkable that his younger sister would marry Jesus, so John the Baptist refused and denied Jesus. Because Zachariah and Elizabeth had denied him, even Mary herself, because of the surrounding environment, refused Jesus' request. At the age of seventeen, Jesus had desperately tried to convince each of these people to give one of the younger sisters to him in marriage. But they would not listen to him. At the age of twenty-seven, exactly ten years later, Jesus tried again to convince them with all of his effort. But once again they refused to listen to him. He waited for another three years, and at the age of thirty, in a final attempt, he again challenged each one of them.

NUMBER 13

Within the Western tradition nobody wants to deal with the number thirteen. This is because Jesus waited for ten years, from seventeen until twenty-seven, and then another three years until the age of thirty. These years make up the number thirteen which was the number of failure. At the age of thirty the number thirteen was finally lost due to the opposition of Jesus' relatives. Had that thirteenth year become successful in Jesus' life, the world would have been changed right away. That is why the number thirteen is considered the worst of numbers.

JOHN DENIED JESUS

At the age of seventeen when Jesus, for the first

time asked his mother Mary to find his bride from the younger sisters of John the Baptist, don't you think that Mary discussed this issue with Zachariah and Elizabeth? She certainly did. Don't you think that John the Baptist found out about it? John the Baptist then came down so hard on Jesus, referring to him as a bastard who wanted John's younger sister when John himself was not even married. He accused Jesus of destroying his family. In the eyes of John the Baptist his half-brother requesting John's sister for a wife meant incest.

NEW FAMILY

This was the miserable position that Jesus found himself in. In that miserable situation he lost his mother, his father, and he became like an orphan in the wilderness. That is why, out of desperation, Jesus began to gather fishermen and other humble people as his disciples. He expected them to become true disciples who would understand him and form his new family. But none of them were able to do so. They were always in disharmony with one another. Finally, he decided to go to the cross and sacrifice his life in order to form the spiritual family which became Christianity in the spiritual sense.

HORIZONTAL VIEWPOINT

Father Moon teaches that we should always try to see things from God's viewpoint—with a vertical viewpoint: "Jesus and John the Baptist were brothers. This has not been revealed before, but they were brothers." (Cheong Seong Gyeong p. 1172) "If Jesus had married the younger sister of John the Baptist that would have been incest from a horizontal viewpoint. But due to the failure of those around him this did not occur." (4-19-96)

This talk about incest is difficult but wasn't the Fall in the Garden of Eden a kind of incestuous relationship between Lucifer and Eve? He was her adult guardian. He was like a father to her. There is a precedent in the Bible for this. Abraham, a founding patriarch honored in Christianity, Judaism and Islam, was married to his half-sister, Sarah.

Here are some more insights Father gives about Jesus wanting to marry his half-sister:

Jesus Needed a Bride

Jesus was aware of his path as the Messiah, and he lamented by himself these lonely circumstances and the serious obstacle they presented to fulfilling the will of God. The Messiah is the True Parent, and to fulfill that mission he needed to receive his substantial bride. Jesus had to reverse, at the very root, the false love by which the Archangel had caused the fall of Eve, who was growing up as the sister of Adam. Consequently, Jesus, in the place of Adam as the Son of God, should have received as his bride the younger sister of someone in an archangelic position. That bride was to have been none other than Zechariah's daughter, the younger sister of John the Baptist. To fulfill this in a world where Satan plays the role of owner and lord, Jesus needed a foundation of protection formed by absolute faith. Tragically, the entire foundation ended up collapsing around him.

This would not have happened if Zechariah and Elizabeth, who had received the revelation and spiritual support from God, had maintained absolute faith. If they had fulfilled their responsibility Mary would have been in contact with them continually, even after her three-month stay at their house. God chose Zechariah's family as the foremost representatives of the entire world, so that even after the birth of Jesus they would protect, serve and witness to him as the Messiah. They not only should have served Jesus as the Son of God and Messiah with utter devotion, but they should have learned the will of God through Jesus and followed him absolutely. Also, John the Baptist was born to serve Jesus and should have fulfilled his responsibility to guide everyone he led to repentance, to believe in Jesus and receive salvation.

But unfortunately, although Zechariah, Elizabeth and John the Baptist testified at first to Jesus as the Son of God, there is no evidence that they served

him as such. The respected priest Zechariah was simply a spectator. John the Baptist stood separate from Jesus. These circumstances blocked the people from following Jesus and made his path very difficult…. this family lost faith in Jesus. Looking at him through human eyes, there was no room for them to help him receive his bride.

Jesus Seen through Human Eyes

When someone is invaded by Satan, he loses all spiritual support and inspiration. Trust in God, as well as a sense of gratitude to Him, is lost. One begins to see everything through human eyes.

Faced with the opposition of Mary, Zechariah, Elizabeth, and finally John the Baptist, Jesus gave up hope for their protection as he sought to fulfill his mission. Therefore, Jesus left his home in search of a new spiritual foundation to restart the Providence of Salvation..

In the end, as people disbelieved and the disciples lost faith, Jesus endured Satan's attack. And as his foundation crumbled, he went the way of the cross. Originally, Jesus came to the earth as the Messiah to give blessings to his disciples and all humankind. He was to build the sinless Kingdom of Heaven. But because of the lack of faith in him, he could not receive his bride, he could not become the True Parent, and he could not accomplish his mission. This is why he promised to return. (4-16-96)

Father teaches, "God created Jesus as a man; therefore, Jesus desired to marry through the Blessing of God. Jesus also wished to have a family and desired to be called a husband and a father." (1-2-97)

JESUS NEEDED TO GET MARRIED

Father reveals:

Zachariah's family should have restored Jacob's family; they had exactly the same course. Elizabeth should have restored Leah's position and then

introduced Mary to Zachariah. The result of the relationship between Zachariah and Mary was the birth of Jesus Christ. With Mary and Jesus united as plus and minus, a greater plus and minus would have been created by the unity between the two wives and two sons. If this process of unity had taken place, all of history would have been completely restored. Everything would have been completely restored. Everything would have been solved if Jesus Christ had been safely married.

Why could Jesus Christ not get married even by the age of 33? Jesus Christ is the true Adam, isn't he? As the completed Adam, he was connected to the true love of God. If one such man and woman are united in marriage, they would have the position of royalty on the national level. If this marriage had been completed, everything would have been accomplished.

Why couldn't Jesus get married even by the age of 33? Restoration is accomplished through indemnity. The Fall involved a relationship between the archangel, Eve and Adam, culminating in the birth of Cain and Abel. Lucifer's betrayal involved taking away Adam's sister, Eve. Jesus' position was Adam's position, and John the Baptist's position was the archangelic position. All these historical events led up to John the Baptist's younger sister being in the position to become Jesus' wife. With Jesus destined to be in the elder son's position, John the Baptist's younger sister would have become Jesus' wife and all of history would have been restored.

When Jesus Christ was seventeen years old, he told Mary whom he should marry. Jesus Christ spoke strongly about the necessity for this marriage, no matter what sacrifices might need be made, but Mary could not accept it.

Thus Jesus and John the Baptist's sister had the same father, but different mothers. They were half-brother and sister. John the Baptist knew very well that Jesus Christ was an illegitimate child. When

John the Baptist received the revelation that Jesus was God's beloved son, he could not accept that an illegitimate person was the Messiah. Under these circumstances, for Jesus to marry John the Baptist's younger sister was unacceptable. Although they had different mothers, they were both children of Zachariah. How could people accept such an incestuous relationship? (2-7-95)

Zachariah's family and Jesus' family … should have united and become one. These two tribes, Zachariah's tribe and Joseph's tribe, should have gotten together and found a good bride for Jesus. That is what they should have done. In order to do that they had to unite. John the Baptist, in the archangel's position, was outwardly accomplished. …Jesus was truly handicapped and frustrated when this did not come about. (9-20-92)

You must remember that Jesus stood before Mary and pleaded in tears three times. Jesus' mother, Mary, did not listen, so Jesus had to leave his home when he turned thirty, starting his public life course.

Mary was to pick a bride for Jesus and prepare a holy wedding for him. However, this dissipated as if it had been a dream. Mary was tied up too much with her living concerns and her own problems with her husband. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

As I said before, the life of Jesus was miserable. He had a mother but no father. Even though he had a mother, he could not talk with her. Jesus came to make a family, but there was no foundation to be able to discuss the Blessing. (1-2-97)

Mary did not help Jesus with the wedding he desired. She even opposed it. This was the direct reason that Jesus could not receive his bride, and could not become the True Parent; and this forced him to go the way of the cross. (2-7-95)

RELIGIOUS FANATIC

When Jesus left his home and started his ministry Mary and his brothers thought he had lost his mind in becoming a religious fanatic upsetting people by being an outrageous heretic who led a crazy, nonconformist lifestyle. We read, "As Jesus was saying these things, a woman in the crowd called out, "Blessed is the mother who gave you birth and nursed you." He replied, "Blessed rather are those who hear the word of God and obey it" (Luke 11:27-28). He said, "Blessed rather" instead of "Blessed also."

MARY FAILED

Jesus' mother Mary was successful in her mission of bearing the Second Adam. Unfortunately, she was not successful in understanding and supporting him. Jesus was kind to prostitutes but he was harsh with his mother because she, unlike the prostitutes, did not believe in him. Once at a wedding feast in Galilee, Mary told Jesus they were out of wine. He called to her saying, "O Woman, what have you to do with me? ..." (John 2:4). He did not say "Mother," but instead "Woman." Father Moon explains:

> Jesus' words to Mary during the wedding at Cana, "Oh woman, what have you to do with me?" (John 2:4), reveal a reproachful heart to a mother who helped in the weddings of others but neglected to help Jesus receive his bride, the most important requirement of the Providence. With this perspective, now we can understand why Jesus asked, "Who is my mother, and who are my brothers?" (Matthew 12:48)

Sun Myung Moon reveals:

> In the Bible there is an episode when there was a wedding ceremony in Galilee. Mary went there to serve people and Jesus went there, too. Jesus' mother said something like, "We don't have wine" and Jesus became very indignant, saying, "Woman, what do you have to do with me?" She was not worried about Jesus' wedding, which was her responsibility to arrange. She was more

worried about a wedding that didn't have any meaning.

Jesus knew this and he felt so indignant, saying, "Your son, the center of God's whole dispensation should go this path, getting married to restore all mankind, and you don't even think about that. You are worried about another person's wedding. What are you anyway?" That is what Jesus said to his own mother.

Now we know that clearly. What is your guess? Do you think that was Jesus' heart at that time? (Yes.) Jesus was thirty-three years old, and the relative who happened to be getting married that day was not even twenty at that time. And Mary had to get Jesus involved, worrying that there was no wine? What kind of mother is she, Jesus wondered.

The fact that Jesus could not get married was directly due to the failure of responsibility on Mary's part. How can Mary be a great woman? (9-20-92)

Father Moon teaches:

We should also consider the influence that Joseph and Mary's relationship had on Jesus. Mary had to restore the positions of Eve and Tamar through indemnity, so she should have remained as only the fiancée of Joseph. Providentially, they could not be husband and wife. It was God's desire that they not have sexual relations either before or after Jesus' birth. Joseph still loved Mary after Jesus was born, but Mary should have wanted to separate from Joseph to raise Jesus as the Son of God.

But the real circumstances did not make this easy to do. Even though Mary's original mind told her that she should not do so, she had sexual relations with

> Joseph. They had children, which was a repetition of Eve's mistake. With this condition, Satan invaded them. With the exception of Jesus, everyone who should have protected Jesus came under the dominion of Satan: his father, his mother, his Abel-type brothers *(John the Baptist and his brothers)* and his Cain-type brothers *(the children of Joseph).*

Father Moon teaches that "Mary was supposed to bring Jesus and John the Baptist into unity, which would signify Cain and Abel becoming one. That was Mary's mission. John was in the Cain position and Jesus was in the position of God's son. But we know what has actually happened. Did they unite into one? No, they failed to do that. If Mary had achieved that, certainly Jesus would not have had to die. He would have gone on victoriously to complete his mission. But he did not. Instead he was crucified and there came into being the division of the world into left and right. That means throughout the world, Cain and Abel continued to be separated. Cain's religion, Islam, and the Abel religion, Christianity, have fought many times." (1-19-93)

Father Moon reveals that Jesus' half-brother, John, was a key player in this providence of restoration. If John had helped him marry his sister Jesus would have become a true husband and then a true father. His wife would become the first true mother who would restore Eve's failure. If Jesus could have gotten his family and Zachariah's family, including John, to follow him then this would have created a powerful force enough for Jesus to be able to begin the process of converting not just Israel but the Roman Empire to his teachings. Father Moon explains:

> **Human Viewpoint**
> From a human viewpoint, John the Baptist felt unable to recognize Jesus as the Messiah. Also Jesus spoke of having to marry within one family. In Eden Satan took Adam's younger sister. In the course of restoration, the true Adam, Jesus, had to take back that younger sister. Same situation only 180 degrees different. John the Baptist was in the position of Cain and his younger sister was to be Jesus' bride. She stood in the position of Eve, younger sister.

> Whilst Jesus stood in the position of Adam, elder brother. John stood in the position of the Cain side elder brother. Jesus was the first true father to appear on the earth. Jesus' wife would have been true mother. Once the true father and true mother embrace as one then the true tradition would have been established.
>
> Had Jesus' family established such a foundation then automatically it would have expanded to the tribe, nation, world and cosmos. Adam's position is that of the king. Through the true Adam God would have dominion over the whole universe. Centering upon God such a foundation could have easily over turned the Roman Empire. (4-18-96)

Because of the failure of those around Jesus he was unable to go to Rome and see his teachings begin to sweep the earth. Tragically this resulted in mankind living a hell on earth for the last 2000 years.

Because Jesus died without marrying, Christians have been mistakenly felt that being celibate is higher spiritually than marrying. Jesus wanted to get married to restore the Adam and Eve's failed marriage. Christianity also went down the wrong path of focusing on leaders in churches instead of men and women in the home. Christians should have kept home churches or house churches instead of centralizing power to priests and ministers that took away the focus on the family and families living in close-knit communities. Jesus never intended for a religion called Christianity that focused on churches, temples, and cathedrals which would take the focus away from the home.

For the first 300 years after Jesus died Christians only met in their homes and Christianity grew dramatically. There is a home church movement going on around the world today and that is where most of the new converts to Christ are coming from—not mega-churches. Jesus came to teach that the most important thing in the world is family and we all need to do the opposite of Adam and Eve. Jesus wanted to become a true husband, true father and build a true family. He teaches that every man should make this their

number goal in life and every woman needs to become a true wife, true mother and build a true family.

Because Jesus was never protected by his family he had to leave home at the age of 30 and start again. Father teaches:

> Now without a family and household, Jesus lamented, "foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man has nowhere to lay his head." (Matthew 8:20) With his family-level foundation lost, Jesus sought to replace it. That was his three-year course. (April 18, 1996)
>
> Faced with the opposition of Mary, Zechariah, Elizabeth, and finally John the Baptist, Jesus gave up hope for their protection as he sought to fulfill his mission. Therefore, Jesus left his home in search of a new spiritual foundation to restart the Providence of Salvation.

REALISTIC JESUS

In *Blessing and Ideal Family* Sun Myung Moon says, "Christians say, 'Reverend Moon is teaching that Jesus had to marry. Reverend Moon is a heretic.' If Jesus was a man he would have had the feelings of a man, wouldn't he? To deny the physiological Jesus is to say that Jesus is the same as the invisible God, and is not a realistic Jesus. Believing this, Christianity is a false religion and it will regress, while the Unification Church will develop because it is a practical religion.

"If a Christian minister is here, he must be surprised to hear this. I myself also once believed in the Presbyterian Church and its view of Jesus. However, when I solved the questions of the *Bible*, I realized these facts. I was persecuted because I told these stories. However, they are facts, so I cannot deny them."

JESUS BAPTIZED BY JOHN THE BAPTIST

Everyone around Jesus betrayed him so he had to leave his family and relatives and find followers who would become his new family and community. When Jesus left home to start his public ministry, he immediately went to see John the Baptist. John was the greatest evangelist of the day. He traveled the countryside

barefoot, wearing a camel skin, living on locusts and wild honey and begging for food. He spoke with such authority that many people came from miles around to hear him and be baptized by him. He attracted large crowds and gained many disciples. He preached, "I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, 'Make straight the way of the Lord,'..." (John 1:23). When John saw Jesus, John had a spiritual experience. A dove descended on Jesus, and God said, "This is my Son with whom I am well pleased" (Matt. 3:17). Tragically, after this spiritual experience, John began to doubt that Jesus was the Messiah. So he took his disciples and went down the river, continuing to baptize. Only two of John's disciples followed Jesus. John should have gone with Jesus too. He should have been Jesus' disciple and been the forerunner who introduced Jesus to Israel. Just as Jesus was the mediator between God and mankind, John was to be the mediator between Jesus and the Israelites, the chosen people. It is proper for a speaker to be introduced. John should have been the one to introduce Jesus. On his authority, few would have rejected Jesus and the many who accepted would have begun the Messianic movement that would have ushered in the Kingdom of God.

Because of John's failure Jesus now had to witness for himself. He had to find people who would accept him and go out and prepare the people for him. He found 12 disciples to follow him and we read in the *Bible* that they traveled from town to town. The disciples witnessed for Jesus. They asked people to come hear him preach of the ideal world on earth. Matt. 9:35 states, "And Jesus went about all the cities and villages ... preaching the gospel of the kingdom." Jesus was intoxicated with God and his mission to proclaim God's will that we must fulfill the great blessings of being fruitful, multiplying and having dominion over creation by restoring the Garden of Eden on earth.

ELIJAH WAS SUPPOSED TO RETURN

A basic belief of the Jewish people at that time was that not only would the Messiah come to them but that Elijah would return before the Messiah and introduce him. The Jewish *Bible* ended with the book of Malachi and the very last lines prophesy that Elijah will come again. Elijah was a prophet who lived 900 years before Jesus, and the *Bible* tells the amazing story of how Elijah had ascended up into the sky. Many Israelites felt that Elijah would return from the sky.

The Israelites did not know that God had given Elijah's mission to John the Baptist. While God was working with Jesus, quietly and alone, Elijah and spirit world were working with John to guide him to prepare his people for the Messiah—the Anointed One. The angel had told John's father, Zachariah, the great mission John would have: "And he will turn many of the people of Israel to the Lord their God, and he will go before him in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to their children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the righteous, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord." (Luke 1:16-17)

When Jesus' disciples went witnessing the people asked, "How can Jesus be the Messiah? Elijah is supposed to come out of the sky and introduce the Messiah." The disciples didn't know what the people were talking about. The disciples were not educated and had not led a devout life like John the Baptist and the religious leaders of Israel. Just because the Messiah was born in a humble manner in a humble country that was poor and unknown to the empires of the world, this doesn't mean that God wanted the Messiah to always live like this.

God had worked to prepare Israel to immediately accept Jesus. God especially had worked with the religious leaders and most of all John the Baptist. They were rich in spirit, knowledge and position. It was extremely difficult for Jesus to have to work with his ignorant and crude disciples.

JOHN THE BAPTIST IN POSITION OF ELIJAH

So when the people asked about Elijah they went to Jesus and asked him, "Who is Elijah?" Jesus said, "For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. And if you are willing to accept it, he is Elijah who is to come." (Matt. 11:13-14)

This was difficult for the Jewish people to believe. So they went to John and asked him, "Are you Elijah?" He said, "I am not" (John 1:21). The people had to decide. Jesus said John was Elijah; John said he wasn't. Who do you think the people believed?

Who would you believe? What if Billy Graham, the Pope, Jerry Falwell and every minister in every town did not follow a man who had only a few lowly and uneducated followers and who said

he was the Messiah? How easy would it be for you to follow him? In the eyes of the Israelites Jesus was lying, so they continued to wait for Elijah and therefore rejected the Messiah.

In a speech given at Madison Square Garden titled "The New Future of Christianity" (September 18, 1974) Sun Myung Moon said the following:

> Was John the Baptist Elijah? Yes, Jesus said so. But the people were never convinced. They said, "Outrageous!"
>
> Let us imagine we can transpose these events to our time. John the Baptist of 2,000 years ago was a person of tremendous influence, enjoying great prestige all over Israel as a great man of God—just like Billy Graham of today, a great Christian leader.
>
> Let us say some unknown young man suddenly appeared and began proclaiming himself to the world as the Son of God. As a student of the scriptures, you would ask him, "If you are the Son of God, where is the promised Elijah?" If this man said, "Do you not know that Billy Graham is Elijah?" what would be your reaction? You would undoubtedly say, "Impossible! How could Billy Graham be Elijah? He did not come out of the blue sky. We all know he came from North Carolina!"
>
> You could not accept that, could you? Precisely this same kind of unbelief confronted our Lord Jesus Christ. People could not accept John the Baptist as Elijah, simply because he did not come from the sky. The people of 2,000 years ago were stubborn in their belief that the prophecy of Elijah's return must be fulfilled literally, that he must come from the sky. They were the victims of the letter of the Old Testament.
>
> John the Baptist represented the consummation of the Old Testament, the law and the prophets.

He was the prince of the old age. Jesus Christ came as the prince of the new age. Had he been supported by John the Baptist, he could have stood upon the firm foundation of the Old Testament Age. Then the new age could have blossomed in the fertile soil of the accomplishments of the old age. The Son of God could have established his glorious kingdom at once. And John the Baptist would have been the cornerstone of that kingdom.

Had John the Baptist followed Jesus, the distinguished leaders of that society would have been the first to accept Jesus Christ as the Son of God. Then who would have crucified the Lord of glory?

When God sent His only Son to this world to establish His kingdom on earth, don't you think He wanted to be followed by the most able people of his age? Do you think that God wanted only the outcasts of society to follow Jesus? Not at all! The simple failure of John the Baptist broke the link between the Son of God and the people. And as a result, only fishermen, tax collectors, harlots and lepers followed Jesus Christ. This brought great grief to the heart of God.

If the Lord is returning to the world today, is it not most logical that all the leadership of Christianity—the bishops, the cardinals, the pope, and all the evangelists and great ministers of the world—should become the first group to welcome the Christ? If they followed the Lord and became his first disciples, the establishment of his kingdom would be infinitely easier.

You may say, "Reverend Moon, by what authority are you speaking? What makes you so sure?" I do have the authority to say these things. God showed me the truth. I met Jesus. Jesus himself showed me these truths. And I met John the Baptist, too, in the spirit world. He himself bore witness to the truth of this

testimony. After these extraordinary spiritual experiences, when I returned to the reality of this world, the same *Bible* I had been reading took on a whole new meaning.

Even if you cannot accept these things as the truth now, you must at least suspend judgment. One day we will all know the truth. Eventually we are all going to die. Every one of us will end up in the spiritual world, where truth is like the sunlight. No one can escape it there. On that day we shall all see the whole truth.

However, blessed is he who can be humble enough to accept the truth while he has the opportunity here on earth. Your knowledge of the truth and of God here on earth will determine your eternal life.

Sun Myung Moon teaches:

John's disciples asked Jesus, "If you are the Messiah, where is Elijah?" Elijah was supposed to come first. Their presupposition was that the Messiah was to come on the clouds. They were waiting for someone to come from the sky. So even though God sent Jesus as King of Kings, because Elijah hadn't come and because Jesus was illegitimate, do you think it was easy for people to follow him? No. Look at how history goes; you be the judge. Even today, the Jewish people don't recognize what happened. Only 8% or 10% of the Jewish people became Christian. Jesus was a perfect heretic to them, and remains so even to this day. If 2,000 years after he came they cannot believe in Jesus, how could they have believed at that time? If Jesus had been accepted when he came, restoration would have taken a mere
40 years. History would have been very different. But he died, and he has to come again. (1-10-93)

JOHN THE BAPTIST FAILED

John couldn't see Jesus as the Messiah because he was ignorant of

God's providence. He interpreted the teachings of the Old Testament as did everyone else. Malachi said Elijah was coming out of the sky. Therefore, how could he be Elijah? What John didn't know was that God had no intention of sending Elijah out of the blue sky.

What Jesus meant was that the mission of Elijah would return. John the Baptist was to continue the mission of Elijah. John didn't know that Elijah was working with him from the spirit world urging him on to prepare the people.

Also, John couldn't accept Jesus because he felt that the Messiah would come in a dramatic way—out of the clouds or as a great military conqueror. It was too difficult to believe that this ordinary carpenter could be the savior of the world. So he didn't support Jesus and continued a separate course.

The prevailing expectation was for the Messiah to come in an apocalyptic manner. They were expecting the Messiah to act dramatically to save them. Some thought he would make a supernatural appearance as Daniel had prophesied: "I saw in the night visions, and behold, with the clouds of heaven there came one like a son of man, and he came to the Ancient of Days and was presented before him. And to him was given dominion and glory and kingdom, that all peoples, nations and language should serve him." (Dan. 7:13-14)

Some thought of the Messiah as a great military conqueror like King David who would drive the Romans into the sea and glorify Israel. There were a few who correctly saw that a man would come and lead the people to build Jerusalem into a light for the whole world to come to and see God working and inspire the world to build the kingdom of God on earth. Very few held this correct view of the Messiah. It was extremely difficult for the Israelites to see a mere carpenter from the village of Nazareth as the Messiah. And when John kept witnessing separate from Jesus the people became even more confused.

The people once said to John, "Rabbi, he (Jesus) who was with you beyond the Jordan, to whom you bore witness, here he is,

baptizing, and all are going to him" (John 3:26). Then John answered, "He must increase, but I must decrease." (John 3:30)

John's response has always been interpreted as John being humble. But this is not an expression of humility. John should have joined Jesus and shared his destiny. If Jesus increased so would John and so would anyone who follows the Messiah. If he really believed in Jesus as the Messiah he could never decrease as Jesus increases. John was confused and separated himself from the Messiah. John was imprisoned and later killed because of some insignificant problem of King Herod. He should have lived and died for the Messiah.

While he was in prison John wondered about Jesus and sent a messenger to Jesus to ask him, "Are you he who is come, or shall we wait for another?" (Matt.11:3). Jesus didn't answer him directly or straightforwardly that he was the Messiah. He answered in a roundabout way, saying: "Go and tell John ... the poor have good news preached to them" (Matt. 11:4-5). This statement is an expression of the sorrowful heart of Jesus. The "poor" does not mean people who are economically poor. Jesus is saying that the only people who are listening to his message are people who have not led a spiritual life. Rich people, to Jesus, were John the Baptist, priests, scribes and the leaders of the Jewish people who were devout and trying to lead a religious life. Jesus wanted these people to first hear his message of truth—his revelations—but when they rejected him Jesus had to wander about the seacoast of Galilee and through the region of Samaria to find ordinary people or those of the lower class who would listen to him such as ignorant fishermen and tax-collectors. God wanted the religious leaders to be Jesus' disciples. It was a secondary course for Jesus to have to go to those who were not so able and well prepared: "'The wedding is ready, but those invited are not worthy. Go therefore, into the main streets, and invite everyone you find to the wedding banquet.' And those servants went out into the streets and gathered all whom they found, both good and bad." (Matt. 22:8-10)

Jesus went to the religious people first and it was tragic that they rejected him and persecuted him. He was forced to witness on the streets to common people. And then when he did gain a few followers, how impressive did Jesus look with these people? Try

to imagine yourself living at the time of Jesus. You see Jesus, an ordinary looking man, who has followers that are ordinary looking—even less than average. He says the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand, and that everyone must follow him and then the *Bible* will be fulfilled!

It was a terrible blow to Jesus that John the Baptist was not beside him. After John continued his ministry separate from him, Jesus said of John, "Truly, I say to you, among those born of women there has risen no one greater than John the Baptist; yet he who is least in the Kingdom is greater than he" (Matt. 11:11). Everyone is born of a woman and out of every human being John was the greatest because he was chosen to stand as Jesus' main disciple.

If John, as Jesus says, is the greatest person ever born, why would he say he is the least instead of the greatest person in the Kingdom of Heaven? All the prophets in the past testified to the Messiah who would come in the future. John the Baptist had the mission to personally testify to the Messiah. Therefore his mission was the greatest. He was to have the honor of personally standing next to Jesus and bridge the gap between the people and the Messiah. God raised John to be that person. But when he did not follow and serve Jesus as the Messiah he became the least one.

It was an enormous task to start a messianic movement in first century Palestine and without John consistently testifying to Jesus' status it was vastly more difficult. If John had become one of his chief disciples it would have opened the way easily for Jesus. John could have brought unity between the chosen people of Israel and Jesus. John himself had disciples and if they too would have joined it would have been a tremendous boost for Jesus. God's dispensation is to have the Messiah come and be protected. God has repeatedly tried to create a safe place for the Messiah to come to but those chosen people who God has prepared keep failing to fulfill their responsibility.

Jesus eagerly searched for followers. He sent seventy of his disciples "in pairs to every town he intended to go. He said to them, 'The harvest is plentiful, but the laborers are few'" (Luke 10:1-2). John was a pathetic failure. It broke Jesus' heart. Soon afterwards, John was beheaded by King Herod. The Cain and Abel foundation for the Kingdom of God was not accomplished.

Because of John's failure to unite with the Messiah, Jesus had to restore this Cain/Abel failure and so went to fast for 40 days which laid a preparation for him to start the new and more difficult mission of being both the Messiah and John the Baptist. He now had to start at the bottom all alone and find enough people to protect and help him.

KINGDOM OF HEAVEN ON EARTH

Jesus took his 12 disciples and traveled from town to town preaching. He was a powerful speaker with a booming voice. God's spirit was in him, and he spoke with passion. The people were compelled to listen to him.

Jesus was asked how we should pray and he gave an example of a prayer which today is called the Lord's Prayer. In it he says, "Thy kingdom come, thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven" (Matt. 6:10). Jesus gave every ounce of his energy to proclaim, "Repent, for the Kingdom of heaven is at hand" (Matt. 4:17). Jesus was filled with God's desire and heart to save this world and restore it to the Garden of Eden. The essence of all his teaching was the building of the kingdom—the ideal world on earth.

Jesus was questioned by a skeptical lawyer who asked him what are the laws, and Jesus said we are to honor the laws of the past such as the Ten Commandments, but he said love was higher than laws: "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the greatest and first commandment. And a second is like it: You shall love your neighbor as yourself. On these two commandments depend all the law and the prophets" (Matt. 22:37-40).

Jesus had come for the whole world. Jesus wanted to tell God's testimony to everyone. He had so much to say, to teach. He barely was able to say anything before he was cut down. He was a clear channel for God to speak. God doesn't drop a book out of the sky; He speaks through the Messiah.

God had raised the Jewish people and the rest of the world to a level He hoped where they could simply understand the truth. He had used before Jesus animal offerings and many laws and commandments. But by the time of Jesus, God wanted love, not

laws, to guide the people. Jesus honored the Ten Commandments, but he came with a higher law than all the hundreds of laws that the Jewish elders and society abided by. God doesn't want a world of millions of laws. He wants better people—not better laws. God is internal. He seeks to make better people. If the world were filled with perfect people we wouldn't need thousands of laws because everyone would automatically treat each other correctly.

PARABLES FOR SIMPLE PEOPLE

Jesus quickly discovered that the people were so primitive and simple that he could only introduce deep concepts of God and his will by telling parables. But even his own disciples had to ask him sometimes what he meant. It was frustrating for Jesus.

He tried to explain the concept that God works through a central point from which the ideal world would come: "The kingdom of heaven is like a grain of mustard seed which a man took and sowed in his field; it is the smallest of all seeds, but when it has grown it is the greatest of shrubs and becomes a tree, so that the birds of the air come and make nests in its branches" (Matt. 13:31-32). If Adam and Eve had been successful then billions of people who followed them would have lived in the ideal world. Likewise if the Israelites could see that Jesus is the seed, the humble small beginning of God's attempt to build the kingdom of heaven then billions of people in the future would live peacefully in the ideal world on earth and in spirit world.

In the parable of the lost sheep Jesus tries to explain that God loves every human being and will not rest until each and every person is found and restored to him: "If a man has a hundred sheep, and one of them has gone astray, does he not leave the ninety-nine on the hills and go in search of the one that went astray? And if he finds it, truly, I say to you, he rejoices over it more than over the ninety-nine that never went astray. So it is not the will of your Father who is in heaven that one of these little ones should be lost" (Matt. 18:12-14).

In the parable of the prodigal son, Jesus tried to explain that God is our loving parent who suffers to see His children—all mankind—living a terrible life away from him. And God rejoices when we return home. God cannot force us to return to him anymore than

the father can force his son to return in the story. Each of us is a prodigal son or daughter who must return voluntarily to God.

JESUS KNOWS GOD'S SUFFERING HEART

Jesus was the first person in history to fully know God's grieving and anxious heart. Jesus felt the same feelings that God has for everyone. Jesus was in a hurry and desperate to save this world. He reflected God's heart and truth and was the first true man on earth.

God and Jesus have unconditional love for every person. But God is also a God of principle. Mankind left God and became a mixture of good and evil. God must abide by the *Principle* and allow each person to separate himself from all that is evil and come back to God. God must judge evil. God's love is also conditional in that a relationship with him can only be in the boundaries of goodness. When Adam and Eve fell Satan became the ruler of this world. Jesus wanted to explain this to the Jewish people. Satan rules by lies. Jesus spoke only the truth. Jesus had to not only speak of God's love, but he had to criticize all the false beliefs that people lived by. Jesus said, "The truth will set you free." Mankind is in bondage under Satan. Jesus' words of truth show us how to be free. Because each person has an original mind of goodness, when the truth is spoken ultimately it penetrates the mind and everyone sooner or later will unite with it.

The whole world will be united as one family when every person accepts the truth. Eventually the truth will be heard by every person. As the truth is spoken some accept it immediately and begin to change their life while others reject it. This doesn't mean they will never accept it. It just takes some people longer to understand. Eventually all mankind will hear and accept the truth. The kingdom of heaven on earth is inevitable. Truth cannot be suppressed forever. It is like grass growing underneath cement. In time it destroys the cement. The world will be restored. Because human history has always been tragic it is easy to be cynical and reject the idea of a perfect world. Jesus' disciples were excited to hear him speak of God's love and the dream of an ideal world about to become a reality. They tried to understand his words of love and his absolute hatred of evil. Unfortunately, they were often confused. And the Jewish people became more and more confused

too as Jesus tried to explain the difficult task of changing our lives and restoring this world.

JESUS SEEN AS HERETIC

He angered the religious leaders when he said things that to them was outright heresy. To them he was a blasphemer of God. Jesus said their understanding of God was wrong. The religious leaders who studied and revered the *Bible*, the Old Testament, now heard this young man, a carpenter, tell them he had a New Testament and it was his teachings which were from God, and he was the living truth. The truth was more than books, and God's ultimate truth manifested in a perfect man—the Messiah.

Jesus told everyone they had to become perfect: "You must be perfect as your heavenly Father is perfect" (Matt. 5:48). He didn't say a few people had to be perfect. He said clearly every single human being in the world "must" be perfect. Jesus did not say outright that he was the Messiah. That was the job of those in the John the Baptist position—in this case, his disciples. Jesus spoke of himself in figurative language explaining his role as the first parent on earth. He had to be followed. To follow him is to follow God. Jesus told the religious leaders that they had to give up their *Bible* which does not have all the truth about God. Rather than clinging to the *Bible*, Jesus said he was the living truth. The *Bible* only gave partial truth. This is why he said to them: "You search the scriptures because you think that in them you have eternal life; and it is they that testify on my behalf. Yet you refuse to come to me to have life" (John 5:39-40). And he said sorrowfully, "I have come in my father's name, and you do not accept me.... If you believed Moses, you would believe me, for he wrote of me" (John 5:43-46). Even though this truth seemed ridiculous and dangerous to the people, Jesus kept proclaiming the truth. And the truth hurt.

Mankind was to originally get life from Adam and Eve. We lost our spiritual life when Adam and Eve fell. We became sons and daughters of Satan in a pseudo-four-position foundation centered on Satan. Jesus said, "But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming for baptism, he said to them, 'You brood of vipers!'" (Matt. 3:7).

Jesus said his father was God and everyone else's god was Satan: "They said to him, 'Who are you?' Jesus said to them, 'Even what

I have told you from the beginning. I have much to say about you and much to judge; but he who sent me is true, and I declare to the world what I have heard from Him.' They did not understand that he spoke to them of the Father. So Jesus said, 'When you have lifted up the Son of man, then you will know that I am he, and that I do nothing on my own authority, but I speak these things as the Father taught me. And he who sent me is with me; he has not left me alone, for I always do what is pleasing to him.'"

"Then Jesus said to the Jews, 'If you continue in my word, you are truly my disciples, and you will know the truth, and the truth will make you free.' They answered him, 'We are descendants of Abraham and have never been slaves to anyone. What do you mean by saying, 'You will be made free'?"

"Jesus answered them, 'Very truly, I say to you, everyone who commits sin is a slave to sin. The slave does not have a permanent place in the household; the son has a place there forever. So if the Son makes you free, you will be free indeed. I know that you are descendants of Abraham; yet you look for an opportunity to kill me, because there is no place in you for my word. I speak of what I have seen in the Father's presence; as for you, you should do what you have heard from the Father.'"

"They answered him, 'Abraham is our father.' Jesus said to them, 'If you were Abraham's children, you would be doing what Abraham did, but now you are trying to kill me, a man who has told you the truth that I heard from God. This is not what Abraham did. You are indeed doing what your father does.' They said to him, 'We were not born of fornication; we have one father, God himself.' Jesus said to them, 'If God were your Father, you would love me, for I came from God and now I am here. I did not come on my own, but he sent me. Why do you not understand what I say? It is because you cannot accept my word. You are of your father the devil, and you choose to do your father's desires. He was a murderer from the beginning and has nothing to do with the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks according to his own nature, for he is a liar and the father of lies. But because I tell the truth, you do not believe me. Which of you convicts me of sin? If I tell the truth, why do you not believe me? Whoever is from God hears the words of God. The reason why

you do not hear them is that you are not from God'" (John 8:25-47).

JESUS SEEN AS BLASPHEMER

When the leaders of the Jewish people treated Jesus unkindly he chastised them by saying, "Truly I say to you, the tax collectors and the harlots go into the kingdom of heaven before you" (Matt. 21:31). The people began to hate Jesus for what he said. He seemed a blasphemer of God. He said he could forgive sins on earth. He seemed a heretic, a destroyer of the Mosaic laws, when he told people: "Do not think that I have come to abolish the law or the prophets; I have come not to abolish but to fulfill them" (Matt. 5:17). He said he was greater than the holy temple which the Jewish people esteemed as the most holy: "But I say unto you, that in this place is something greater than the temple" (Matt. 12:6).

Jesus called himself the lord of the Sabbath. He did whatever he wanted to on the Sabbath, which violated Mosaic laws. This angered the religious leaders, who accused him: "... Look, your disciples are doing what is not lawful to do on the Sabbath..." (Matt. 12:2).

There was even tension between Jesus' and John's disciples over a dispute over fasting: "Then the disciples of John came to him saying, 'Why do we and the Pharisees fast, but your disciples do not fast?' And Jesus said to them, 'Can the wedding guests mourn as long as the bridegroom is with them?'"

Jesus couldn't teach all that he wanted. We read, "We speak of what we know, and bear witness to what we have seen; but you do not receive our testimony. If I have told you about earthly things and you do not believe, how can you believe if I tell you heavenly things?" (John 3:11-12)

It was frustrating for Jesus that he couldn't even explain the simplest concepts to the people—let alone deep ones. Ultimately Jesus was able to give only a tiny fraction of the truth he knew. Let's look at some examples of how the Jewish people had a difficult time understanding Jesus.

There was a group of people living in Israel in the region of Samaria, called Samaritans. Some of the Samaritans were descended from Jews who had been from the northern kingdom of Israel. When the Assyrians had conquered them, they married foreign people and came back to their land after the Assyrian conquest. Because they were not of pure Israelite blood they were considered to be non-Jews or Gentiles, as they were called. The Jews despised the Samaritans. Some Jews would not even travel though the district where the Samaritans lived. Jesus, of course, went there and even won some followers.

JESUS AGAINST RACISM

When Jesus told the story of the Good Samaritan it was very offensive to many Jews. Jesus tried to elevate the Jewish people to love all mankind. He didn't come to just give the Jewish people glory but the Jews were to love the entire world. He praised the Good Samaritan who helped a person in need. Jesus was trying to elevate Judaism to its mission of reaching the world with God's message that he loves everyone in his boundless love and wants everyone to be his son and daughter regardless of their race, nationality or culture. Jesus was totally unprejudiced. Jesus came to end bigotry and racism. He came to unite all races.

Jesus lived in a society with a severe rigid social caste system. To openly eat with outcasts was horrible to the average Israelite and the leaders. Jesus was sociable. He had a well-rounded personality. He spent time with every level of person. Many Jews were upset to see him associating with those of society that most Jews would never associate with. Jesus was accused of being not a spiritual person but a materialist who enjoys food and drink: "The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, 'Look, a glutton and a drunkard, a friend of tax collectors and sinners.'" (Matt. 11:19)

Jesus related to different classes of people. Jesus astonished people by fellowship with social outcasts like tax collectors, prostitutes, Roman soldiers and Samaritans. He associated with women and children.

JESUS JUDGED AS BEING IMMORAL

Jesus also appeared to everyone as a destroyer of morality. Jesus was a bachelor and this was unheard of (there are no words in Jesus' native language for being single because everyone married

young). Jesus was around 30 years old. Many people thought he was destroying the family system. The Jewish family was extremely close and strong. He seemed to be breaking up the family unit when he said, "If anyone comes to me and does not hate his own father and mother and wife and children and brothers and sisters, yes, and even his own life, he cannot be my disciple" (Luke 14:26). Jesus was not saying that he wanted to destroy families and have people hate one another. He wanted them to hate the evil that is in all of us.

Sometimes Jesus spoke in a military, warlike manner. Jesus was fighting evil. He is fighting Satan. Jesus is not a warmonger, but he is calling everyone to fight for God. This is why he said, "Do not think that I have come to bring peace on earth; I have not come to bring peace, but a sword. For I have come to set a man against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law; and a man's foes will be those of his own household. He who loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he who loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me; and he who does not take his cross and follow me is not worthy of me. He who finds his life will lose it, and he who loses his life for my sake will find it" (Matt. 10:34-39). To the Israelites with their close families these were fighting words. Did Jesus carry a sword? No. He doesn't want peace? No. He wants families to hate each other? No. He wants people to die? No.

Father Moon teaches, "Jesus proclaimed the greatest revolution. There have been many revolutions in the last 2,000 years, but he brought a revolution of life and love. Jesus made statements that made it almost certain he would be crucified. He said that anyone who loved his family more than Jesus was not worthy of Jesus, and that meant denying everyone. So everyone opposed him for encouraging division of families. People said Jesus was destroying the family bond and social ties.

"Today the Unification Church is receiving the same criticism, but actually we are in an entirely different situation. In Jesus' time the family system was much stronger; today American families are breaking down anyway, yet still they are blaming me for disrupting families making me the scapegoat!" (3-18-79)

When Jesus said that, "a man's foes will be those of his own household" he was speaking from experience. His own mother and his brothers thought Jesus was crazy. Jesus is teaching that when anyone dramatically changes from being a secular person to being a religious person or when someone changes their religion that person's family will likely be against it. Both St. Francis and Thomas Aquinas were locked away by their families. Their parents used force against them because they objected to their son's choice of religious faith. Aquinas was a teenager who was witnessed to at college by a new branch of Catholicism. His mother thought it was a cult. She was ashamed and sent her sons to kidnap their younger brother. They locked him away for a year before he was able to escape. He was very bitter about this experience and wrote of it later in his life advising parents to not do such a terrible thing.

If we have to choose between Christ and our family—we must choose Christ. Even Jesus had to give up his family. Jesus embraced everyone, just as God does. God loves everyone equally. In this world that is unthinkable. We live in a world of barriers and hate. The Jewish people hated their enemy the Romans who were ruling them. Can you imagine the reaction Jesus got when he told his disciples that a Roman centurion he met—a person who was not of the chosen people but who believed in him was the most faithful person he had ever seen. He said, "Truly, I say to you, not even in Israel have I found such faith." (Matt. 8:10)

JESUS CONFUSED THE PEOPLE

Everything Jesus did was confusing to the people. It was not proper in Israel for men to associate with women as freely as Jesus did. Once he stopped a crowd of men who were about to stone to death a woman caught in the act of adultery. Jesus, like God, does not discriminate on the basis of sex. Women have equal value to men in Jesus' eyes. Women were not inferior, and Jesus spoke to and respected women as much as men. Jesus' view of women was revolutionary. We read in the *Bible* that women honored Jesus more than his own disciples.

For example we read: "Now when Jesus was at Bethany ... a woman came up to him with an alabaster jar of very expensive ointment, and she poured it on his head, as he sat at the table, but when the disciples saw it, they were indignant, saying, 'Why this

waste? For this ointment might have been sold for a large sum, and given to poor.' But Jesus, aware of this, said to them, 'Why do you trouble the woman? For she has done a beautiful thing to me. For you always have the poor with you, but you will not always have me.'" (Matt. 26:6-11)

The disciples failed to understand two things here. First, they were upset that Jesus talked to a woman. The disciples "marveled that he was talking with a woman" (John 4:27). Jesus was a bachelor and not only was it not proper to talk to women the behavior of the woman towards Jesus would seem strange and unacceptable in today's society, let alone in Jewish society. We would say this person is mentally unstable. Jewish society had strict ethics—so strict that adulterous women could be stoned to death. Nevertheless, Jesus accepted her and reproached his disciples who had rebuked the woman. He praised her. Jesus was above everyone. The Messiah tries to pull us up to a higher level of thinking and feeling.

The second thing they did not understand is how to serve the Messiah. They understood from Jesus that he taught a sacrificial life. They mistakenly thought that Jesus was to always live in poverty because he and they would give everything away to others. Jesus tried to explain to them that literally poor people would be with them in their lifetime. The ideal world would not be built immediately. It would take time. In the transition the Messiah should be honored and served with material things. When he said the poor would always be with them he did not mean forever—just in their lifetimes.

The story of Jesus has been called the greatest story ever told, but it is really the saddest story ever told. Not only was Jesus misunderstood by the people of Israel, but tragically he was misunderstood by his very own disciples who lived with him.

JESUS SHOULD HAVE HAD WEALTH

Jesus came to save the world. He was the most precious person who ever lived. And while he wanted desperately to save mankind from poverty, physically and spiritually, he also should have been honored and served. It was proper that the woman honored Jesus. Jesus said, "... the Son of man came not to be served but to serve..." (Matt. 20:28). Jesus couldn't ask for wealth. It was the

responsibility of his disciples to work hard and get enough money so Jesus could live in splendor, wealth and beauty. He should have had all the luxuries the world could give. He should have had all the fancy foods, the villas, and fine clothes the rich Romans had. Jesus was the first person in history to have earned the right to wealth. The Messiah is totally pure and loving. Only he knows the value of creation and the things of the world. Mankind misuses things. The Messiah cannot misuse anything or misspend any money given him. He is mankind's teacher and shows us how to use things and how to spend money. Absolute power and money could never corrupt him as it does fallen man.

The woman could have poured a ton of expensive ointment on Jesus, and it wouldn't have been enough. She knew the value of Jesus better than his disciples.

HIS DISCIPLES COULDN'T UNDERSTAND HIM

Even though Jesus praised his disciples and tried to make them feel pride in being his disciples they were constantly confused. Once a man walked up to Jesus and his disciples and asked Jesus for advice on how to live properly: "Jesus said to him, 'If you would be perfect, go, sell what you possess and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; and come, follow me. When the young man heard this he went away sorrowful; for he had great possessions." (Matt. 19:21-22)

The disciples were depressed to hear this. It seemed that Jesus was irrational and asking too much of people by asking everyone to become perfect and that they had to do this by sacrificing. After the wealthy young man walked away we read, "When the disciples heard this they were greatly astonished, saying, 'Who then can be saved?' But Jesus looked at them and said to them, 'With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.'"

But we read that the disciples keep asking him to explain. Peter speaks for all of them by saying that he and the other disciples have given up everything they had and what would they get for their hard work in witnessing and being persecuted.

FIRST WILL BE LAST

Jesus said that anyone who gave up their families and wealth to

follow him would be rewarded a hundred times over. And he ended by saying that the "first will be last, and the last will be first" (Matt. 19:30). In other words he says that although they appear to be the last in society they will eventually be the first; and the first in society such as John the Baptist and all the leaders of Israel would end up last.

HOLLYWOOD MOVIES WRONG ABOUT JESUS

In movies about Jesus Hollywood usually shows him as a dreamy and quiet person. He is often called "the gentle Nazarene." Jesus did have a gentle, soft and motherly side. But the *Bible* also uses the symbol of a rock to describe the Messiah. Jesus also had a tough and commanding personality. He was not soft-spoken when he preached to the crowds. He was a powerful and passionate speaker with a booming voice.

The Messiah comes to revolutionize people from being self-centered to being altruistic. Jesus was righteous. He used severe language with violent imagery to express his abhorrence of evil. He said, "... if your hand or your foot causes you to sin, cut it off and throw it away; ... And if your eye causes you to sin; it is better to pluck it out and throw it away" (Matt. 18:8-9). He was speaking symbolically, not literally. He was trying to make a point of the seriousness which we should view sin and evil.

The *Bible* says every person is a wild olive shoot that must be grafted into Jesus, the true olive tree, in order that we may become true branches (Rom. 11:17). To graft a plant means we have to cut the plant. It hurts the plant. And it hurts us to give up our arrogance—to give up thinking that we are the center of the universe and to humble ourselves in prayer to God.

When anyone enters an emergency room in a state of near death they need to follow a doctor. Likewise, the world is every second of the day, one big emergency room and there is only one doctor—the Messiah. If it is very difficult for a foreigner to become a citizen of another country, how difficult is it for us to become citizens of the kingdom of heaven? It is not only possible; it is our destiny. The Messiah must be first in every person's life. This will unite mankind. Nothing else will. We can do nothing without the Messiah.

Jesus pleaded with the people to believe in him. People asked him what they must do: "'What must we do to be doing work of God?' Jesus answered them, 'this is the work of God, that you believe in him whom he has sent'" (John 6:28-29). But the people wouldn't believe in his words. His teachings were too advanced for them. They looked at Jesus with fallen, physical eyes—not true, spiritual eyes. They listened to Jesus with sinful, earthly ears—not pure, heavenly ears.

JESUS JUDGED AS BEING UNEDUCATED

Jesus tried to teach them that words, ideology, and truth would set mankind free. The people would not listen to him because he looked so humble. They knew he had limited formal education. We read heartbreaking passages in the *Bible* in which Jesus was judged as being a simple, uneducated man who had no right to speak so boldly. They even took offense at him for not having more education. In John 7:15 we read, "How is it that this man has learning, when he has never studied?" In Matthew we read that when Jesus taught, the crowds were always "astonished" at Jesus and said, "Where did this man get this wisdom and these mighty works? Is not this the carpenter's son? Is not his mother called Mary? ... Where then did the man get all this? And they took offense at him." (Matt. 13:54-57)

THE TRUTH HURTS

As a final attempt to gain their attention, Jesus performed miracles. He should never have had to do that. Adam was barred from the Tree of Life, i.e., perfection, by a flaming sword. That flaming sword was God's truth. Jesus brought that flaming sword; he brought the truth that could save Israel and the world. Jesus said, "I have not come to bring peace, but a sword" (Matt. 10:34). Jesus did not carry a literal sword and chop people up. He came with the truth, and the truth is not peaceful. It unnerves us. It shakes us up. It scares us and challenges us. It criticizes us. It hurts to hear the truth from God. Father explains, "The Messiah has his roots in God, and comes as the Second Adam, who wipes away all that was committed by the first Adam. This is the reason God cannot send a superman Messiah who will work only through miracles." (4-16-96)

Jesus came not only to give God's love but God's judgment of evil. God is at war with Satan and therefore each of us should see

that too and hate evil in ourselves and everywhere else. Jesus doesn't come to just talk of the positive. He confronts evil and judges it. The sword Jesus spoke of is symbolic for truth. This is the meaning of the sword that guards the Tree of Life in the Garden of Eden. Jesus was the first Tree of Life—the first perfect man—the first true Adam. The truth sets us free, not swords. And the truth is that we are at war with Satan and must fight.

JESUS IS NOT A PACIFIST

The ultimate war against Satan is the war of words. But there are also times when evil must be fought with force. God and Jesus are not pacifists. For example, it was God's will that America defend itself and fight for freedom in World War II. It was God's will that America fight communism in the Korean War.

In the *Sermon on the Mount* Jesus said, "To him who strikes you on the cheek, offer the other also" (Luke 6:29). Some Christians have mistakenly interpreted Jesus' statement about turning the cheek to mean we should be pacifists. Pacifism is defined as: "Opposition to war or violence as a means of resolving disputes. Such opposition demonstrated by refusal to participate in military action." Jesus was not a pacifist. The concept of "just war" is correct. There are times when those on the side of good should use force against those on the side of evil.

Dennis Prager writes this about the liberal bumper sticker, "War is not the answer":

> Aside from the idiocy of this claim—war has solved slavery, ended the Holocaust, destroyed Japanese Fascism, preserved half the Korean peninsula from near-genocide, and saved Israel from extinction, among other noble achievements—the claim offers no support to those who do engage in war.
>
> I know of no comparable conservative bumper sticker that is so demonstrably false and morally ignorant. Almost every great evil has been solved by war—from slavery in America to the Holocaust in Europe. Auschwitz was liberated

by soldiers making war, not by pacifists who would have allowed the Nazis to murder every Jew in Europe.

Sun Myung Moon explains what Jesus means. Here is a little of what he says:

> Why did Jesus teach his people to love their enemies? At that time no foundation had been laid and no one had the ability to stand up to unrighteous enemies, but once the necessary foundation is laid you can exercise full power and give them love. Jesus did not mean to tolerate sin and not get involved. To love your enemy means to try to save him by bringing him to the truth, by force if necessary. That is loving him, and that was the true meaning of Jesus' words.
>
> People often have their own wild ideas about the meaning of Jesus' teachings. When Jesus said to turn the other cheek did he really mean for you to offer your other cheek to be slapped by your younger brother? No, you should really shake him up and say he has to listen to you. Will God not be able to help smiling at that scene, or will He call you a cruel man for forcing your younger brother to hear the truth? Would God say your smiling tolerance showed that you were living up to His teaching? God will get angry if you let your brothers and sisters beat you when you are the one who knows the righteous way.
>
> Would a parent allow his child to slap one cheek and then turn the other for him? Would God say those were good parents? We must deeply know the principle of endurance. Jesus meant that you need to endure until you have a strong foundation; he never meant for you just to be slapped around by people. (8-27-78)

Jesus was the Tree of Life. He focused on teachings, on words of truth, not baptism or even faith healings. But they wouldn't listen. In desperation he turned to faith healings. But the Jewish people were so uneducated and primitive that Jesus went down to their level and performed magic tricks. He said, "Even though you do not believe me, believe the works, so that you may know and understand that the Father is in me, and I am in the Father." (John 10:38)

But they couldn't believe the works either. They even thought Jesus was the devil himself for exorcising people and performing other works. They said, "It is only by Beelzebub, the prince of Demons, that this man casts out demons." (Matt. 12:24)

When Jesus went to the synagogue in his hometown of Nazareth and proclaimed who he was, the people pushed him out of the temple and towards a cliff at the edge of the city in an attempt to kill him. But before he was thrown off the cliff he spiritually parted the mob and walked through them. We read, "And he came to Nazareth where he had been brought up; and he went to the synagogue, as his custom was, on the Sabbath day, and he stood up to read" (Luke 4:16). He read a passage and we read, "And he closed the book, and gave it back to the attendant, and sat down; and the eyes of all in the synagogue were fixed on him. And he began to say to them, 'Today the scripture has been fulfilled in your hearing'" (Luke 4:20-21). When he saw they did not believe him, he said, "Truly I tell you, no prophet is accepted in the prophet's hometown." (Luke 4:24)

"When they heard this, all in the synagogue were filled with rage. They got up and drove him out of the city, and led him to the brow of the hill on which their city was built, so that they might throw him off the cliff. But he passed through the midst of them and went on his way."

JESUS HEARTBROKEN

It broke Jesus' heart that the chosen people would not listen to him. There are passages that tell of his agony and pain when Israel rejected him: "O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, killing the prophets and stoning those who are sent to you! How often would I have gathered your children together as a hen gathers her brood under

her wings, and you would not! Behold, your house is forsaken and desolate." (Matt. 23:37-38)

COMPASSION

Jesus is reflecting God's feminine and motherly heart towards His children. The essence of Jesus is true love. He feels deeply and passionately for each person. When the word compassion is used in the *Bible* it means much more feeling than the English word gives. Two of the most famous parables of Jesus have the word "compassion." In the Parable of the Prodigal Son we read that when he returned home his father "saw him and was filled with compassion; he ran and put his arms around him and kissed him" (Luke 15:20). In the Parable of the Good Samaritan we read that "when he saw him, he had compassion on him" (Luke 10:33). When God and Jesus use the word compassion the translation into English does not give the exact meaning. In the original Greek the word used to express his feelings is connected to what we would say is guts or entrails or intestines to show the depth of Jesus' love and pain that came from deep inside.

True Father talks about this in the following excerpts from a speech he gave May 1, 1984:

> As you know, the 4,000 years of preparation in biblical history were for only one thing, the coming of the Messiah. The Israelite nation was staked out by God and Judaism was built. Upon that foundation, God's goal was to send the Messiah and have him be received. The ideal situation would have been that Judaism and the Israelite nation had embraced Jesus and centered upon him completely, accepting his direction absolutely. They should have said, "We are your children and you are our parent. You are our central figure and we will follow you completely." That should have been the cry of the people of Israel then.
>
> But what actually happened? Did such obedience occur? No, the Israelite people said, "Who are you? We follow Moses. We don't know you. You are a man with demons" and then they rejected Jesus completely. That was the equivalent of the children going against the parents. How could

> Jesus possibly install the Messiah in the midst of such a situation? Thus because of the total rebellion of the chosen people and the chosen faith, the inevitable consequence came: the crucifixion of Jesus.

Jesus became desperate. He ached and wept because the people would not listen to him tell of the revelations of God he had received. After three years of preaching Jesus found himself alone. God's heart was broken again. God could see that Satan had turned the people against Jesus so much that it was now inevitable that Jesus would be killed by his own people. Some didn't like his message; some were critical of his lifestyle; some disagreed with his political attitude; some were angered by what to them seemed arrogant authority. Jesus had to tell his disciples: "Then he strictly ordered the disciples to tell no one that he was the Messiah" (Matt. 16:20). Jesus said those who follow him will be "hated" as he is hated now.

God told him on the Mount of Transfiguration that his mission must change, and he must now go to the cross and give only partial salvation to mankind in the spirit world. Moses and Elijah appeared to him. Peter was excited to see this but Jesus surprised them by changing his approach. Jesus asked his disciples, "'... who do you say that I am?' Peter answered him, 'you are the Christ.' And he sternly ordered them not to tell anyone." (Mark 8:29-30)

The disciples had barely known him. They were simple, uneducated and not so religious. When Jesus told Peter he would betray him, Peter denied it and swore he would never betray him. Peter said, "'Though they all fall away because of you, I will never desert you' and so said all the disciples" (Matt. 26:33). But Jesus is a keen observer of human beings, and he sees our spiritual level just as a teacher can see the level of his students.

JESUS SEEN AS A CRIMINAL

Jesus was finally considered a national criminal who threatened the security of the state by trying to be King of Israel and was chosen over the robber Barabbas to be crucified: "Now the chief priests and the elders persuaded the people to ask for Barabbas and destroy Jesus. The governor again said to them, 'Which of the two do you want me to release for you?' And they said, 'Barabbas'.

Pilate said to them, 'Then what shall I do with Jesus who is called the Messiah?' They all said, 'Let him be crucified'" (Matt. 27:20-22).

If Jesus had loyal followers he would have been able to continue his mission, but because he was totally alone and denied by everyone Satan had a field day. He was there looking on and able to fire up everyone against Jesus. If even one person or a few would have believed in him and followed him totally he could have built a movement on those few.

MESSIAH BETRAYED

All his disciples deserted him. They literally fell asleep when he prayed at Gethsemane. Peter denied him three times. Why? After living with Jesus day and night for three years they had not grown enough and Jesus had not been able to explain enough. Jesus said to one person to let the dead bury the dead. We do not like to hear anyone criticize our family. The truth hurts. We can't see our situation. We only know the kingdom of hell, not absolute love and goodness. Satan was effective in possessing the people, and he personally entered Judas. He clouded the minds of the other eleven disciples at the moment Jesus needed them.

Satan could attack. Jesus found no faith and was not protected. God had worked 2,000 years to educate and raise the people to a level he felt they would protect the Messiah and the chosen people along with everyone else did not protect the Second Adam. Jesus explained how alone he was in a parable. He said he was a bridegroom and there was no wedding guests so he couldn't have a marriage. (Mark 2:19)

Jesus could not flee to another country. Israel was the only nation he could work with. Because Israel was like Cain who killed his brother, God had to move on to a new Adam and a new nation for him to be born in. Jesus couldn't go on because even though he was a successful Abel he needed Cain to unite. When Israel failed then God had to find another Abel. And not only Israel but everyone did not unite with Jesus. The whole world rejected him. The Jewish people were the chosen people and lost their status. The Romans represented the rest of the world and crucified him—a Roman torture and death—not a Jewish means of death. And the disciples represented the future Christianity. Because of these

failures the Jews, Christians and the rest of the world would suffer for the death of Jesus. He was murdered by everyone and for 2000 years mankind has paid for that crime.

Jesus then began to speak of a Second Coming of Christ. He did not mention this at the beginning of his ministry. He started talking of a Second Coming only after it became apparent that he would not be accepted by the people. Jesus at the end of his ministry said, "Go therefore and make disciples of all nations" (Matt. 28:19). He was preparing the world for the second Messiah. The chosen people would be those who followed him and the foundation would be worldwide. True followers of Christ are those who have a burning desire to witness the Good News —to proselytize —to convert.

God saw that everyone was not going to accept Jesus as their savior. Jesus' primary mission of building the kingdom of heaven on earth would have to be accomplished in the future by a Third Adam. At the Mount of Transfiguration, Jesus took three disciples, Peter, John and James to pray. During his prayer Moses and Elijah appeared to him: "And behold, two men talked with him, Moses and Elijah, who appeared in glory and spoke of his departure, which he was to accomplish at Jerusalem." (Luke 9:30-31)

CROSS WAS SECONDARY COURSE

The cross was not God's primary will; it was a secondary course that gives man a spiritual sanctuary for those who die believing in Christ.

Just before the crucifixion, Jesus wept and prayed three times in the garden of Gethsemane. He pleaded with God that he not be crucified. He asked God three times to live. We read of Jesus' grief and anguish: "And taking with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, he began to be sorrowful and troubled. Then he said to them 'My soul is very sorrowful, even to death; remain here, and stay awake with me.' And going a little farther he threw himself on the ground and prayed, 'My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me; yet not what I want but what you want.'" (Matt: 26:37-39)

Many Christians have interpreted this incident as an example of Jesus being like an ordinary human being who would not want to die. But Jesus did not pray from fear, timidity or selfishness. There have been many imperfect men and women who have willingly died for a cause they believed in. The first Christian martyrs and many martyrs from Christ who followed were not afraid to die. The early Christians sang songs as they held hands with their children as the lions came at them. Yet they did not die praying, "Let this cup pass from me." In American history, many men have given their lives for their country. One such man was Nathan Hale, a young officer in the Revolutionary War. He was captured by the British army and sentenced to be hanged. His last words were, "I only regret that I have but one life to lose for my country." He did not say, "Let this cup pass from me." Jesus is far greater than Nathan Hale. Jesus was not afraid to die. He prayed asking if there was any chance to continue and complete his mission as the second Adam. Jesus was in anguish because he knew the consequences of his being murdered.

Sun Myung Moon says, "When Jesus was crucified, did Jesus loathe God and loathe the world? No. He could not do that. This is why Jesus said, 'If you let this cup pass from me, please do so.' It means that he could not bear to stand God's aching heart. It was not a weak prayer." (2-17-91)

Jesus was the first person in history to know God's sorrowful heart. Jesus wanted to comfort God—to relieve His grief. By being crucified God's divine will would be frustrated again. Jesus knew God's heart would be broken to have to see not only his son murdered, but He would have to endure watching mankind continue to be tortured in Satan's prison on earth with even greater terror and pain because they killed their savior.

MANKIND PUNISHED FOR KILLING OF JESUS

Those who commit crimes bring punishment upon themselves. He knew that for the crime of killing him there would be terrible punishment for mankind. He knew that his countrymen, the Jewish people, would be punished for thousands of years. Israel had suffered for 2,000 years in preparation for the Messiah and now all that would have been in vain and they would suffer even more in the future generations to come. History has shown the terrible suffering of the Jewish people for the last 2,000 years. Jesus

deeply loved his people, and it was agonizing for him to know the bleak destiny facing them.

While he was carrying his cross, some women followed him crying in anguish to see him suffering, but Jesus turned to them and said, "Daughters of Jerusalem, do not weep for me, but weep for yourselves and for your children" (Luke 23:28). He said, "... your enemies will ... dash you to the ground, you and your children within you, and they will not leave one stone upon another in you; because you did not recognize the time of your visitation" (Luke 19:44). We all know the tragic history of the Jewish people and the terrible persecution of Christians especially the early church in Rome in which they tried to hide in the catacombs but were hunted down and slaughtered. Jesus also knew that his followers would suffer. He was walking the path of the cross and their fate would be the same. Around 40 years after Jesus was murdered on 70 A.D. the Jewish temple was destroyed and the Jews lost their nation. God had given them the name of Israel that means "victor" and after a 40-year period they were the loser. Israel lost its nation because it rejected the Messiah. Serious consequences happen to a people who reject God's truth and cling to what is false.

And finally Jesus knew that the whole world would continue to be ruled by Satan. For thousands of years billions of people would have to continue to live in this hell on earth.

But God saw how hopeless Jesus' situation was. Even Jesus' disciples slept when he prayed in Gethsemane. Jesus was alone. When the Roman guards came and took him away, he knew it was hopeless, too.

Because Israel didn't give their lives to help build the Ideal World, Jesus gave his life on the cross. Because of this full sacrifice for God, Satan couldn't claim Jesus. And based on this condition of giving, God could try again and have Christ return.

Jesus prayed at Gethsemane, asking God if it were possible to stay on earth and bring complete salvation, both physical and spiritual, but he could not do this. His mission changed.

If Jesus had not gone to the cross mankind would not have received spiritual salvation—a spiritual sanctuary. Jesus had to lay a foundation for the Third Adam to come by loving God and mankind. He showed total absolute love on the cross.

This change in Jesus' mission happened so fast that Jesus didn't have time to explain it to his disciples. They were shocked. Jesus' chief disciple, Peter, was so upset he exclaimed, "God forbid it, Lord! This must never happen to you!" (Matt. 16:22). It is obvious he was so upset because what Jesus was saying was in complete opposition to everything he had been teaching up till then. Jesus was firm with Peter and said to him when he tried to stop Jesus from going to the cross, "Get behind me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to me; for you are setting your mind not on divine things but on human things" (Matt. 16:23). This was confusing to Peter. He didn't know that the Kingdom of Heaven on earth was now *not* at hand. He didn't know that world salvation would have to be postponed.

Jesus said, "He who rejects me and does not receive my sayings has a judge; the word that I have spoken will be his judge on the last day" (John 12:48). We judge people in society by our court system. The judge pronounces judgment according to the law. In the universe, God is the judge. Jesus was the attorney defending mankind. Satan was the prosecutor. The earthly court and the heavenly court are the same in that they judge by words, not fire.

Jesus came to judge Satan's lies and false teachings. Jesus said, "Very truly, I tell you, anyone who hears my word and believes him who sent me has eternal life, and does not come under judgment, but has passed from death to life" (John 5:24). Jesus said the truth will set you free.

JESUS LOVED HIS ENEMIES

Two thousand years ago the first perfect man walked the earth. He was born unknown, and he died unknown. He was accused of being a criminal. Pontius Pilate could find nothing wrong with him, but the Jewish people shouted, "Crucify him. Crucify him!" Jesus loved his enemies. As he was dying on the cross he looked at the crowd below and said, "Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do" (Luke 23:34).

BEATING AND CRUCIFIXION OF JESUS

Jesus was beaten when he was interrogated by the Jewish leaders. He answered a question and we read, "When he said this, one of the police standing nearby struck Jesus on the face, saying, 'Is this how you answer the high priest?' Jesus answered, 'If I have spoken wrongly, testify to the wrong. But if I have spoken rightly, why do you strike me?'" (John 18:22-23)

Medical doctors have written about the horrible torture Jesus went through. The following was written on the Web:

> **BEATEN**
>
> "Some began to spit on Him, to blindfold him, and to beat him with their fists, saying to him, 'Prophesy!' The guards also took him over and beat him." (Mark 14:65).
>
> Jesus was blindfolded and struck in the face repeatedly. Being blindfolded meant he couldn't "roll with the punches" and the blows would have been that much more destructive.
>
> **FLOGGED**
>
> Next, Jesus was stripped of his clothing and then flogged. Flogging is a severe beating with a whip. In flogging, a soldier used a whip consisting of leather straps embedded with metal and glass fragments with small metal balls sewn into the end of each thong. This whip was brought down with full force and when struck against the back of Jesus, was pulled thus tearing the skin off, exposing muscle, and maybe even exposing his very bones. Undoubtedly, his back was reduced to an oozing mass of mutilated flesh. Flogging stops when it is determined that the victim is near death or 39 lashes was reached. By this time, Jesus was in great pain, suffering severe blood loss, and was becoming very weak and thirsty. After this he was taken to be crucified.
>
> ...the accused stood naked, and the flogging covered the area from the shoulders down to the upper legs. The whip consisted of several strips

of leather. In the middle of the strips were metal balls that hit the skin, causing deep bruising. In addition, sheep bone was attached to the tips of each strip.

When the bone makes contact with Jesus' skin, it digs into His muscles, tearing out chunks of flesh and exposing the bone beneath. The flogging leaves the skin on Jesus' back in long ribbons. By this point, he has lost a great volume of blood which causes his blood pressure to fall and puts him into shock. The human body attempts to remedy imbalances such as decreased blood volume, so Jesus' thirst is his body's natural response to his suffering (John 19:28).

CROWN OF THORNS

"They stripped him and put a scarlet robe on him, and after twisting some thorns into a crown, they put it on his head. They put a reed in his right hand and knelt before him and mocked him, saying, 'Hail, King of the Jews!' They spat on him, and struck him on the head" (Matt. 27:28-29).

The robe would stick to the congealing blood on his back and when they ripped it from him later, it would have been very painful and would have helped to continue the bleeding even more.

They put a crown of thorns on his head. These thorns were shoved between his scalp and skull as well as ripping and tearing at the skin. Severe bleeding would ensue along with great pain. ...there is copious bleeding, the scalp being one of the most vascular areas of the body.

The thorns also cause damage to the nerve that supplies the face, causing intense pain down his face and neck.

After mocking him and striking him across the face, the soldiers take the stick from his hand and strike him across the head, driving the thorns deeper into his scalp. Finally, they tire of

their sadistic sport and the robe is torn from his back. Already having adhered to the clots of blood and serum in the wounds, its removal causes excruciating pain just as in the careless removal of a surgical bandage, and almost as though he were again being whipped the wounds once more begin to bleed.

EXCRUCIATING

Crucifixion is quite possibly the most painful death ever invented by humankind. The English language derives the word "excruciating" from crucifixion, acknowledging it as a form of slow, painful suffering. Its punishment was reserved for slaves, foreigners, revolutionaries, and the vilest of criminals.

Once suspended, the force of gravity brings the weight of the body down and the shoulders and elbows dislocate by popping out of joint, ripping ligaments.

Because of the outstretched position of the arms, the chest cavity is in a perpetually expanded state and it is very difficult to breathe. With the severe loss of blood from the lashes and crucifixion, Jesus would have become dehydrated and his body would have less blood to carry oxygen. Therefore, his heart would beat faster as it attempted to compensate and his need for oxygen would increase greatly. In order to breath, Jesus had to push up on the nails in his feet to allow his chest enough flexibility to inhale. Pushing up on the nails is not only excruciating, but this meant that he had to scrap his raw, beaten back against the rough wooden stake. This whole process of breathing and exhaling by pushing up on the nails only, increases in intensity as time passes. Soon, the body gets to the point of no return and the heart either ruptures or the person dies from asphyxiation. But, before that happened the blood loss results in extreme thirst as the body craves water to restore the lost blood. Jesus said,

> "I thirst", whereupon a soldier offered Him some sour wine, but Jesus refused it.
>
> As it is lifted, Jesus' full weight pulls down on his nailed wrists and his shoulders and elbows dislocate. Jesus must push up on his nailed feet (causing more pain) to exhale.
>
> In order to speak, air must pass over the vocal cords during exhalation. The Gospels note that Jesus spoke seven times from the cross. It is amazing that despite his pain, he pushes up to say "Forgive them." (Luke 23:34)

The crucifixion was a "means of punishing criminals slowly and inexorably ... it was as slow as it was painful ... the Romans reduced it to an exact science."

In the book *The Day Christ Died* by Jim Bishop we read what the author imagined what happened:

> Four soldiers moved in closely around the prisoners and began to strip them of their clothes. A murmurous sound came up from the people below. The crucifixion had begun.
>
> When the prisoners were naked, a cloth was wound around their loins and between the thighs with the loose end tucked in at the back. Their clothes and sandals were set in a loose pile before each of the three.
>
> The time was a few minutes after noon. The sun was high and warm. Below the big bald rock, the leaves of the olive trees and the wild flowers shimmered in a soft breeze. Coveys of little swifts darted across the rock and down into the garden below, there to peck for food and to keep a wary eye on man. At the first murmur from the crowd, they took flight.
>
> The executioner laid the crossbeam behind Jesus and brought him to the ground quickly by grasping his arm and pulling him backward. As soon as Jesus fell, the beam was fitted under the

back of his neck and, on each side soldiers quickly knelt on the inside of the elbows. Jesus gave no resistance and said nothing, but he groaned as he fell back on his head and the thorns pressed into his torn scalp.

Once begun, the matter was done quickly and efficiently. The executioner wore an apron with pockets. He placed two five-inch nails between his teeth and, hammer in hand knelt beside the right arm. The soldier whose knee rested on the inside of the elbow held the forearm flat to the board. With his right hand, the executioner probed the wrist of Jesus to find the hollow spot. When he found it, he took on the square-cut nails from his teeth and held it against the spot, directly behind where the so-called life line ends. Then he raised the hammer over the nail and brought it down with force.

The executioner jumped across the body to the other wrist....

As soon as he was satisfied that the condemned man could not, in struggling, pull himself loose and perhaps fall forward off the cross, he brought both of his arms upward rapidly. This was the signal to lift the crossbeam.

Two soldiers grabbed each side of the crossbeam and lifted. As they pulled up, they dragged Jesus by the wrists. With every breath, he groaned. When the soldiers reached the upright, the four of them began to lift the crossbeam higher until the feet of Jesus were off the ground. The body must have writhed with pain.

The four men pushed upward until the mortise hole was over the upright. The two thieves, who had been watching, looked away. When the crossbeam was set firmly, the executioner reached up and set the board which listed the name of the prisoner and the crime. Then he knelt before the cross. Two soldiers hurried to help, and each took hold of a leg at the calf. The

ritual was to nail the right foot over the left, and this was probably the most difficult part of the work. If the feet were pulled downward, and nailed close to the foot of the cross, the prisoner always died quickly. Over the years, the Romans learned to push the feet upward on the cross, so the condemned man could lean on the nails and stretch himself upward.

Jesus was crucified. He faced the Holy City for the last time.

The workman moved to the others, and went through the same ritual with each one.

To the watching crowd in front, death appeared to come slowly astride the shoulders of fatigue. The four wounds, in themselves, were not fatal. But the constant pain forced the dying men to move in agony.

The spectators observed Jesus closely because the high priests had passed the word that this was a mock Messiah, and that part of his crime was saying that if the great temple were destroyed he could raise it in three days. To the strangers, Jesus looked like any other pain-racked criminal they had ever seen. To the casual viewer there was nothing different about him, or unusual.

Like the others', his head at time was lowered, with chin touching chest. Again, moved by spasms, his head tossed from one shoulder to the other and his eyes looked up into the sun as his lips moved. When his body sagged, in fatigue, its weight hung on the nails in his wrists and his knees bent forward.

His arms were now in a V position, and Jesus became conscious of two unendurable circumstances: the first was that the pain in his wrists was beyond bearing, and that muscle cramps knotted his forearms and upper arms and the pads of his shoulders; the second was that his pectoral muscles at the sides of his chest were

momentarily paralyzed. This induced in him an involuntary panic; for he found that while he could draw air into his lungs, he was powerless to exhale.

At once, Jesus raised himself on his bleeding feet. As the weight of his body came down on the insteps, the single nail pressed hard against the top of the wound. Slowly, steadily, Jesus was forced to raise himself higher until, for the moment, his head hid the sign which told of his crime. When his shoulders were on a level with his hands, breathing was rapid and easier. Like the other two, he fought the pain in his feet in order to breathe rapidly for a few moments. Then, unable to bear the pain below, which cramped legs and thighs and wrung moans from the strongest, he let his torso sag lower and lower, and his knees projected a little at a time until, with a deep sigh, he felt himself hanging by the wrists. And this process must have been repeated again and again.

TRUTH FROM UNEXPECTED SOURCES

If we can learn anything from history, especially from what happened to Jesus, it is that truth often comes from totally unlikely people. And we can learn from history that those who do bring new truth and act as God's champions are often hated. Sun Myung Moon teaches:

> The tragic history of Christianity is reflected in one simple fact: the relationship between the Israelite nation and Jesus Christ. The Israelites were looking forward to the Messiah coming to their nation. They should have had a palace ready in which to welcome their Messiah. But instead, the Messiah was born in a stable. Later the Christian church developed a proud tradition centered around that tragic, shameful fact. They erect manger scenes every year reenacting that sad and shameful time when the Messiah was born in a dirty stable.

The most incredible shame of traditional Christianity is their insistence and proclamation that Jesus came in the first place to die on the cross. Instead, Judaism was supposed to accept the King of Kings. If they had, how could they have killed him? They should have been united with the commander-in-chief of spirit world and moved together to Rome with the living Jesus in the center. If they had been united, then the entire world would have been united around them. Jesus did not come primarily and solely as the "Lord." Rather, Jesus came as the Father of all mankind, the true ancestor for human beings. He came as the personification of True Love, the center point of True Love. That was the purpose of the coming of Jesus Christ. Thus Jesus would have become the True Parent, as well as the King of Kings of the Jewish world.

NO ANTI-SEMITISM

This kind of statement is not made in order to attack the Jewish people, or from even the slightest bit of anti-Semitism, although that is what some Jewish people have thought. I am not against the Jewish people or the Jewish religion. All I am speaking is the truth. Because of the crucifixion, those people, that nation, have been paying the most incredible, terrible price, including all their tragic bloodshed throughout history, including the loss of the Jewish nation.

If Judaism had united with the Israel nation and together had accepted the Messiah, what would have happened? They would have become the center of the rest of the world to bring salvation to the world. By making unity with the living Jesus, they truly would have become the central nation and group in the world. But the tragedy is that they never realized this fact. That is why that nation eventually was totally demolished.

John the Baptist was to take the position of minus to Jesus, who was the big plus. John should have served Jesus. But because he failed

to take that minus position and unite with Jesus, his entire mission failed. This is another point upon which today's Christianity is totally wrong. They do not understand the failure of John. (4-25-93)

LEARN FROM HISTORY

We must learn from history and be careful not to make the same tragic mistakes as our ancestors have done. God is on a crusade. The Messiah is on a crusade. God and Jesus are watching us. Let's be open to hearing their words. Jesus' death was devastating to his disciples. They soon got back together and from them the Christian Church was born. God had to begin all over again and build a new chosen people. The disciples were fired up to go out and preach.

PREDESTINATION

Christians believe that Jesus' death was predestined because of the prophecy in Isaiah 53: "Surely he has borne our griefs and carried our sorrows; yet we esteemed him stricken, struck down by God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was crushed for our iniquities; upon him was the punishment that made us whole, and with his stripes we are healed" (Is. 53:4-5). This has been interpreted as a prophecy of a Lord of Suffering. But the Jewish people did not think the Messiah would suffer, have to die and then return later as a Lord of Glory. The cross was not predestined anymore than Adam's fall was predestined.

If the crucifixion was predestined, why didn't the disciples understand this and be happy? If the crucifixion was the only way Jesus could save mankind, why were the disciples angry and say it was a mistake? Peter said, "You rejected the Holy and Righteous one, and killed the author of life" (Acts 3:14-15). Stephen told a crowd of religious leaders, "You stiff-necked people, uncircumcised in heart and ears, you forever opposing the Holy Spirit, just as your ancestors used to do. Which of the prophets did your ancestors not persecute? They killed those who foretold the coming of the Righteous One, whom you have now betrayed and murdered." (Act 7:51-53)

Later, St. Paul said, “None of the rulers of this age understood this, for if they had, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory” (I Cor. 2:8). Jesus’ disciples understood Jesus far better than the Christians of today. They knew Jesus wanted to build the Kingdom of heaven on earth in their lifetimes. They knew he didn’t come to die.

And if the crucifixion is the predestined will of God then Judas would be helping God. But this is preposterous. Judas himself realized his terrible mistake and committed suicide. We don’t honor Judas today. People who commit serious crimes are often led by an evil angel or an evil spirit man. After the crime takes place the spirit often leaves the person who then can only say he was out of control. Satan personally worked with Judas: “Then Satan entered into Judas called Iscariot ... he went away and conferred with the chief priests and officers of the temple police about how he might betray him to them” (Luke 22:3-4). Judas later threw the 30 pieces of silver back and hung himself. He was possessed. Satan is powerful. Judas’ crime was so great that Jesus said of him: “the Son of Man goes as it is written of him, but woe to that man by whom the Son of Man is betrayed! It would be better for that man if he had not been born.” (Matt. 26:24)

If God had wanted Jesus to be killed, why would he have prepared the Jewish people to accept the Messiah? God had spent 2000 years trying to raise Israel to accept Jesus as the Messiah, not kill him. God laboriously and painstakingly had the Israelites center their faith on the Ark of the Covenant, then the temple. He sent prophets to keep the people on course. He tried to teach them to be like sheep and to be humble so that when the shepherd or Messiah came they would unite and support him. If God had wanted Jesus to be killed, He could have sent Jesus to a land of barbarians, and they would have killed him sooner.

Sun Myung Moon explains:

> The Christian churches say, “God sent Jesus Christ to die on the cross. The crucifixion was the predestined will of God from the beginning.”
>
> Then let me ask those Christians, “What will you do when Jesus Christ returns to you today?”

All Christians undoubtedly will answer, "We will receive him! Welcome him! Unite with him! Follow him!" Let me further ask, "Will you crucify Christ when he appears?" Your answer must be, "No!"

If that is so, then what about the people of 2,000 years ago? If they had accepted Jesus—as you would today—would they still have had to crucify him? No! It was a mistake! It was in ignorance that we crucified Jesus Christ.

Not Logical

It was God's will that His people accept the Messiah. But we crucified him instead. And then Christians "passed the buck" by saying that was the will of God. Ridiculous! This is not acceptable to our logic. Something must have gone terribly wrong.

If they had only known who he was, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. It was a mistake. It was ignorance and blindness that killed Jesus Christ!

Christians of the world have not realized the truth about what actually happened in Jesus' time. If God's only purpose in sending His Son was to have him nailed on the cross, then why would God spend the time to prepare the people in the first place? It would have been much easier for God to send His son among the disbelievers, or even among savages. They would have killed him more quickly, and salvation would have come faster.

These historical truths have remained hidden from the Christian world. Today, for the first time, all these circumstances of Jesus' ministry are being brought to light.

Yes, our Lord Jesus Christ came to fulfill the mission of bringing God's kingdom to earth. But we did not understand him. We committed the

> great tragedy. Then later we claimed that was the will of God. How ironic!
>
> The conviction that Jesus came to die on the cross has become the very foundation of Christianity. But this mistaken belief has been piercing the heart of God again and again for the last 2,000 years. God's heart was broken when Adam rebelled against Him, and again when His Son was nailed to the cross on the Mount of Calvary. We have sadly misunderstood both God and Christ.
>
> Why, then, has this truth been revealed at this particular time? Because the time of the Second Coming of Christ is near. And God does not want Christians to commit the same mistake made at Jesus' time.
>
> Only with the revelation of the clear truth from the Heavenly Father can all the Christian churches become one. Yes, truth makes us one. If we know the truth, that truth will liberate us from our mistaken beliefs and disunity. And the plain truth of God has now been revealed. ("The New Future of Christianity" September 18, 1974).

Finally, Jesus himself said that he did not have to be crucified to save mankind. In the parable of the vineyard Jesus tells the story of a "householder" who is symbolic of God who planted a vineyard which is symbolic of Israel and "let it out to tenants" who symbolize the Israelites. The tenants kill the householder's servants and then his son. The owner expected them to "respect" his son and was sorrowful when they killed him. Jesus is explaining that God wanted the chosen people of Israel to respect Jesus—not kill him.

Once a disciple asked Jesus, "What must we do to be doing the works of God?" Jesus did not say "Crucify me on a cross so I can give you salvation." Instead, Jesus said, "It is the work of God that you believe in him whom he has sent." (John 6:29)

For sin to be forgiven, the people simply had to believe in him. Jesus said that, "The Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins" (Matt. 9:6). He didn't say he had to die to forgive sin. He could forgive sin on earth.

If the chosen people of Israel had accepted Jesus they would have been saved. Jesus pleaded with the Israelites to believe in him: "And when he drew near and saw the city he wept over it saying, 'Would that even today you knew the things that make for peace. But now they are hid from your eyes because you did not know the time of your visitation'" (Luke 19:4-44). Jesus wept. Can you picture Jesus crying? Jesus cried more than any person who has ever lived, and he didn't cry for himself. He cried because he knew he could end all suffering, but his fellow countrymen would not listen to him. Jesus said, "The truth will set you free" (John 8:32). But the people wouldn't hear him. He never said the crucifixion would set anybody free. Mankind is still living a hell on earth. Obviously the crucifixion has not stopped Satan from being the ruler of this world.

The cross was a victory for Satan, but the resurrection was a victory for God. Because Jesus was killed before he could establish the kingdom of heaven on earth there is no kingdom of heaven in the spirit world. Through Jesus' victory of his perfect life and death he was able to open up spirit world to a higher level that he called Paradise. The first person to go there was a thief. On the cross Jesus turned to him and said, "Today, you will be with me in Paradise" (Luke 23:43). Complete salvation would have to be postponed until the Second Advent. Another man must be born as Jesus was and gain total victory by showing us the way to totally liquidate evil from the earth and establish the kingdom of God. Jesus died too soon. He didn't have enough time to teach us how to do this. He did not fail; everyone else failed.

We are the master of our fate. God emphasizes that man's effort can bring results. We read in Matt. 7:7, "ask, and it will be given you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be open to you." If everything were predestined, of what use would be man's efforts to change his life or the world?

Calvin was wrong when he thought that everyone was either predestined to go to heaven or to hell. In general God does not

know what anyone is going to do anymore than you know what someone is going to do. The *Divine Principle* shows us that partial predestination is true. God's will, his dream of an ideal world will become a reality some day. Satan's reign of terror is only temporary. The reason Satan has continued as long as he has is because of the constant failure of God's chosen people to fulfill their portion of responsibility. The Israelites failure slowed God's Providence of Restoration. God's goal of an ideal world is predestined. The formula to reach that ideal is predestined, but the process of history to reach that goal is not.

Sun Myung Moon speaks out strongly teaching Christians that they have deeply misunderstood Jesus' mission. He says, "Christianity today has maintained the traditional view that Jesus came simply to die on the cross. This is how Christians have rationalized the murder of the Son of God!"

"God worked unspeakably hard to bring this one son of His to the world, guiding a course of incredible history. After all His effort, do you think His Messiah came only to die on a cross at the age of 33? Was that God's will?"

When Sun Myung Moon first came to America he gave public speeches in every state. In one of them titled "God's Hope for America" he said this about Jesus:

> I am sure there are many devout Christians among you who have various opinions on the life of Jesus. How would you visualize Jesus' appearance? What was Jesus doing for the 30 years before his public ministry? Was he in a college studying? The Bible doesn't say he even went to elementary school. He was a laborer, an assistant to a carpenter. There is so much to know, so many hidden truths within the Bible which are not written explicitly. If I revealed some of those secrets I am sure you would be amazed. Even though I know these things, I could not tell you those stories lightly. For you would then ask, "How do you know such things?" I learned them from Jesus. Yes, and I learned from God. Remember, at the time of

Noah nobody could believe Noah. At the time of Abraham, nobody could believe Abraham. By the same token, even though I will honestly tell you what actually happened at the time of Jesus, no one will easily believe me.

Jesus' Life of Sorrow

Jesus suffered great anguish within his own family. There are many hidden stories not yet revealed. Many of the facts about his suffering are unknown. The Bible leaves a scanty record of the 30 years before Jesus' public ministry. If this were a glorious record, we can be sure that God and Jesus' disciples would have revealed it. But Jesus lived in sorrow and grief; he was an obscure figure for 30 years. People were therefore shocked one day when they heard him say, "I am the fulfillment of the law' and "Moses wrote of me." He proclaimed, "I am the Son of God" and "The Father in heaven has sent me." "I am the way, the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father but by me." How many of us could have accepted such extraordinary statements if we had lived in those days? Jesus just bewildered people, he sounded so outrageous. Even John the Baptist had difficulty seeing Jesus as the Son of God, and John was supposed to come to prepare the people and make straight the way of the Lord.

HERETIC

Today it is very easy to accept Jesus Christ as the Son of God because for 2,000 years Christianity has been glorifying him as God. But in those days, the elders did not accept him. And the priests did not accept him either. They were no less intelligent than we are today. In fact, we would probably have compounded their mistakes if we had lived in the days of Jesus of Nazareth. They saw only an outcast, a blasphemer, and an outrageous heretic. They simply could not see the Son of God.

Jesus had been long awaited. The Messiah was expected for 2,000 years. But when he finally appeared, there was no reception for him. The faith of the Jews at that time was no less powerful, no less devout than the faith of Christians today. Yet we know that the people Jesus associated with were not on a par with the rest of society that he mixed with harlots, tax collectors, and fishermen. We know the story that one day a young woman poured precious ointment over Jesus' body, then washed his feet with her hair. If we had seen these things, how many of us can say in a pious manner that we would have accepted Jesus as the Son of God?

SINFUL EYES

The three years of Jesus' public ministry were a far cry from the anticipated messiahship. No one understood Christ's true mission. The people judged the Son of God with sinful eyes, according to their own earthly standards. And they treated him as they pleased. This sinful world can never be hospitable to the purity of Christ. He came to his own people but the people received him not.

GOD'S CHAMPIONS

As I mentioned, all the saints and prophets and righteous men of history had first to deny themselves totally and give themselves up to God. When He summoned them, they gave up their homes, their fortunes, their families and their nations. God wants His champion on the individual level, on the family level, tribal level, national level and worldwide level. He has summoned His champions on each level. And the qualification for God's champion on any level always remains the same. He needs the absolute and untiring faith required to follow His command wherever it may lead. God needs total obedience to His will.

God Seeks World Salvation

We must examine then, what is the will of God? Why does He give His people such a hard time? Individual salvation is certainly important in the sight of God. God does not neglect that. However, that is not the ultimate purpose of God's work. God's will is the salvation of the world! God needs an individual to be His champion for the ultimate goal of world salvation. God summoned one family to be an instrument for the salvation of the world. God summoned His people to achieve the salvation of the world. God wants to have a nation as His champion, for the ultimate fulfillment of world salvation.

People in the time of Jesus were anxiously awaiting the Messiah. But they were thinking only of their own national glory as Israel, the chosen people of God. They did not understand the universal mission of Jesus Christ. It was the purpose of God to send the Messiah to the chosen people of Israel so that the Messiah would unite with the chosen people. Then they could become soldiers of faith, to fight for and achieve the salvation of the world.

The foundation for the Messiah was laid through Jacob, the champion of the family, and through Moses, the champion of his people. Finally the Messiah came to the nation of Israel. He was to be the champion of the nation and the champion of the entire world. The purpose of God is not the salvation of one church or one nation alone. It is the will of God that He sacrificed the lesser for the greater. Therefore He will sacrifice the church or the nation for the world. If Christians today think only of their own salvation, their own heaven and their own well-being, then they are not living in accordance with the purpose of God. If we are only concerned with the salvation of our own families, we are not worthy of God's

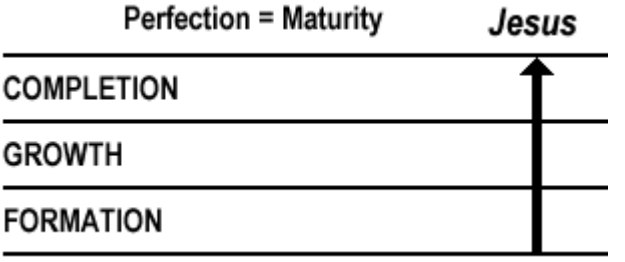
blessing. If people focus on benefiting their own people alone, or their nation alone, then they are absolutely going against the will of God.

God will give you your own salvation. When you become God's champion for world salvation, your own salvation is guaranteed. Now, the Christian population is probably one seventh of the total world population. But among these, very few are devout Christians. And among devout Christians, how many of us really strive for the salvation of mankind? We must all devote ourselves to the salvation of the world!

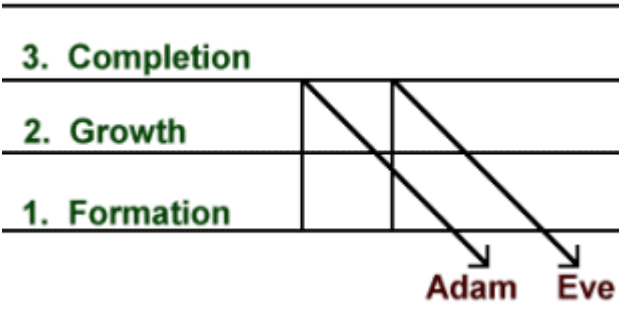
God cannot be pleased with man if we live in a self-centered way. I met Jesus personally, and I received a revelation through which I learned that God's grief is great. His heart is broken. Today God is working ceaselessly for the ultimate salvation of all mankind. He needs His champion to succeed in this work. The purpose of God's church is to save the entire world. The church is the instrument of God, and it was this very fact that the chosen people of Israel forgot at the time of Jesus.

At the Fall mankind lost parents. We are born into a sinful world and raised by sinful parents. To restore this we have to be reborn. Jesus had the unique mission to be the first true parent. All mankind were to be "reborn" through him. Every person will eventually accept him as the first man who grew to perfection.

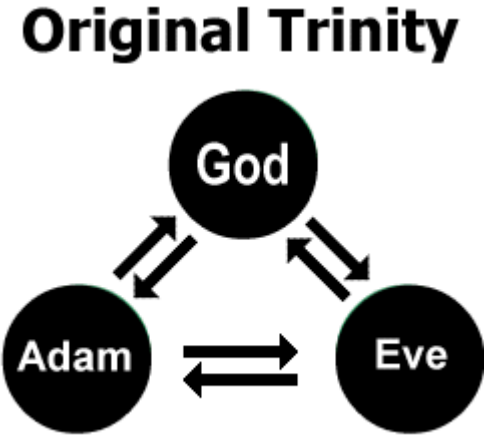
Jesus was unequivocal in saying that we too must reach the goal of perfection: "You therefore must be perfect as your Heavenly Father is perfect" (Matt. 5:48). The book of Matthew is written in Greek. The word "perfect" (Greek: tellios) means "end" or "goal". The goal of every person is to grow up to absolute maturity.



Adam and Eve were unable to do this. They fell at the top of the growth stage.



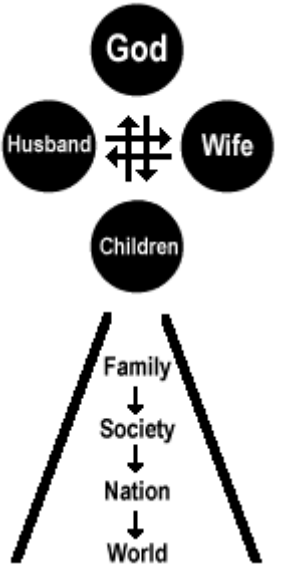
If they had not fallen and reached perfection, they would have formed the first trinity of God, Adam and Eve.



IDEAL WORLD

God's plan was for Adam and Eve to grow into perfection and then marry and work to build a true marriage. Next God wanted them to multiply, to have children, and work to become True Parents who would work to build a True Family. Then God had the goal of those children of Adam and Eve to grow to perfection and they in turn would create true marriages and become True Parents. God wanted to fill the earth with perfect people working hard to become True Parents and raising their children to become True families. This would create true societies, nations and world. There would be world peace and every one on earth would live in absolute unity, harmony and true love. Everyone would be in the lineage of God. All mankind would be brothers and sisters to each other because we would be children of God.

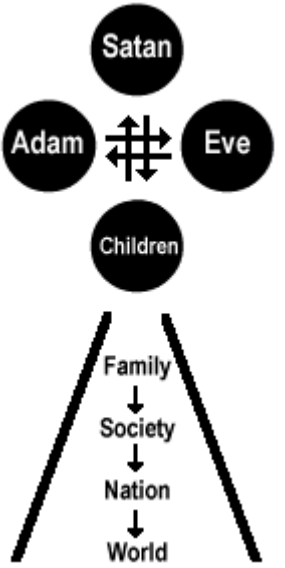
It would be a Kingdom of Heaven on Earth, an Ideal World.



FALLEN WORLD

God's plan was for all His children, for all mankind, to live as one huge. happy family. Tragically, Satan usurped God's position. He stole Adam and Eve from God and has become their Father. Adam and Eve failed to become True Parents and their children did not become true people either. From Adam and Eve mankind has degenerated into false societies, nations and world. There is world war and mankind has lived in disunity, chaos and false love.

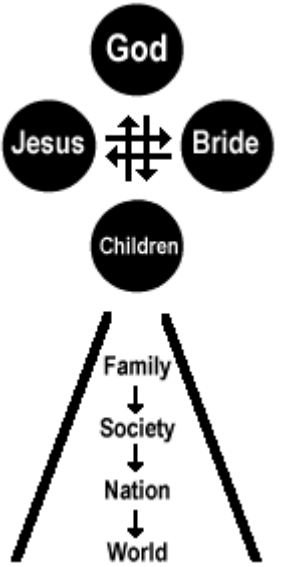
Everyone has been in the lineage of Satan. We are not brothers and sisters to each other because we are children of Satan. Mankind has lived in a Kingdom of Hell on Earth, a Fallen World.



God sent Jesus as the second Adam, and God had prepared a second Eve. If they had married they would have had children and from them God's deepest desire was for Jesus and his wife to build a true marriage and become True Parents and therefore restore the failure of Adam and Eve.

God then wanted their physical children and all mankind to learn from Jesus and his wife and build true marriages and become True Parents. Then God wanted every person thereafter to accept Jesus as the Messiah and marry and become True Parents as well.

And then the world would become an ideal world and everyone would be in the lineage of God.



Jesus was the first person in human history to reach perfection, to have absolute mind/body unity centered on God. God has worked to inspire mankind to accept him as the first True Adam. This is why he said, “I am the way, and the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me” (John 14:6).

Adam and Eve fell because they “loved” each other more than God. To restore their failure, Jesus said we must love God more than each other, even more than our own family. This was very difficult for the Jewish people because they had very strong families. Nevertheless, Jesus came to make them stronger. He said, “He who loves father and mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he who loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me” (Matt. 10:37). “If anyone comes to me and does not hate his own father and mother and wife and children and brothers and sisters, yes, and even his own life, he cannot be my disciple” (Luke 14:26).

The word “hate” is an unfortunate translation. Jesus meant that we are not to hate our family, but that we are to hate the fallen or satanic part that exists in our family. He wants us to hate evil, not people. Jesus teaches love for people, not hatred.

Every person, he taught, must be “born anew” (John 3:3). Adam and Eve and all parents since are false parents. We need true parents to give us true life not the false life we have in this sinful world. Jesus was a true father.

Jesus was trying to say something like this, “Temporarily, I want you to love me more than anyone else on earth. I will teach you about God. I want you to become like children so you can be reborn and enter the kingdom of heaven. Your parents love you, but they aren’t perfect. They don’t know God. They cannot help but be failures as parents. After I teach you how to become perfect like me, then you will be equal to me. I am simply an older brother sent by God to help you as a prodigal son and daughter to come home. When you are perfect your marriage will be eternal and your family will be eternal. Then the whole world will live as one huge family.”

Jesus’ disciples deserted him. Peter, the closest, denied him three times. They had lived with him day and night for three years. It was difficult. We are all immature, bad children. All we know is hell. We don’t know heaven or perfection. We are lost and arrogant like Satan. The Messiah comes out of nowhere and says he’s more important than anything. He asks us to join him on a crusade to spread the good news. He says he is first. He is the world’s leader. He even says everyone is dead.

One man wanted to follow Jesus but said he first had to help his relative bury his deceased father. Jesus not only told him not to go but that his other relatives were as dead as his father: “Let the dead bury their own dead, but as for you, go and proclaim the kingdom of God” (Luke 9:60).

Jesus is trying to say there’s a war going on and our primary mission is to witness the good news that the Messiah brings. Jesus was strict. He said that his followers must never go back but stay

with him for the rest of their lives: “No one who puts a hand to the plow and looks back is fit for the kingdom of God” (Luke 9:62).

When the people heard this they did not follow him, and they killed him. This is Satan’s world, and God will be the reverse of this world. The Messiah is in a hurry. He has an incredible sense of urgency. Jesus had only a few years to accomplish his task. He wanted a mass movement in his lifetime. He wanted the entire nation of Israel behind him, and then he wanted to go to the world. “Jesus Christ came as the Messiah. He was the model of perfection upon every level: The individual, family, tribal, national, and worldwide levels. He came to establish a perfect world in his lifetime, not over a period of centuries.” (10-20-73)

If everyone had united, Jesus and his wife could have restored every family to be as God-centered as his family. Then Satan would lose his power over man, repent, pay for his crimes and be restored to Lucifer.

But Jesus was murdered before he could marry. He went into the spirit world and became the spiritual True Father. God created the Holy Spirit after Jesus was murdered. It is a feminine essence of God that took the place of the second Eve and became the spiritual True Mother.

SPIRITUAL TRUE PARENTS

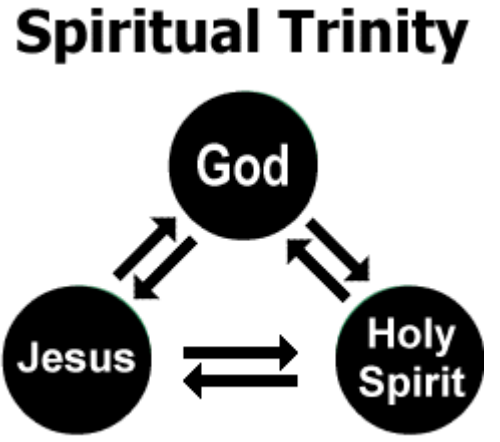
From the spirit world, Jesus and the Holy Spirit have been working as spiritual true parents for the last 2000 years. Christians have been reborn through them spiritually.

HOLY SPIRIT

Soon after Jesus died a Pentecost occurred in which people were filled with the spirit and had spiritual experiences such as speaking in tongues. The Holy Spirit was given then. This is a feminine spirit to complement Jesus. To be reborn spiritually and enter a spiritual sanctuary called Paradise after we die we have to believe in Jesus. Father Moon reveals, “At this time only an intermediate place in the spirit world is open. That is called Paradise. Jesus and his disciples dwell in Paradise, and even they cannot actually enter the Kingdom of Heaven until it is established on earth. One reason for this is because the Kingdom of Heaven is prepared not for

individuals, but for the family of God for the father, the mother, and God's true children." (10-28-73)

To have Jesus as a parent God gave the Holy Spirit, a special feminine essence, as the position of bride to Jesus. Originally the trinity was to be Jesus and a real woman on earth as his bride united with God.



But that trinity was changed to a secondary one of Jesus and the Holy Spirit. Mankind has been allowed to be partially reborn. The Third Adam will come and give full salvation to every person on earth and in spirit world.

The belief that the "trinity" is God, Jesus and the Holy Spirit as three Gods who existed before Adam and Eve and all three created the world is not correct. The Trinitarian creed was first used by Christians almost 200 years after Jesus died. The traditional belief of making Jesus God himself comes from people who did not know Jesus personally. God is not the three-in-one as taught. Jesus was a man and the Holy Spirit was given at Pentecost.

The Hebrew word for spirit (ruach) is feminine; the Greek word (pneuma) is neuter. In John's Gospel, the Holy Spirit is said to be a comforting spirit which can be seen as feminine. While some

early Christians believed the Holy Spirit was a female spirit, most Christians thought of it as a masculine being. "Also, the Jewish tradition was on the whole extremely masculine-oriented and hostile to all feminine definitions of the Godhead. Consequently, at Nicea and Chaledon the ecumenical councils affirmed that God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit were distinct yet equal, consubstantial and all of the same sex" (*Unification Theology*, Young Oon Kim). The Holy Spirit is not a being. In Genesis the Spirit is God's breath, and the Fourth Gospel describes the Spirit as a "wind." God's essence is the polarity of masculine and feminine; and the Holy Spirit is a mother spirit—the counterpart to Jesus' masculinity and serves the maternal function of comforting, nurturing and nourishing Christians.

The Trinitarian creed that is widely used in Catholic and many Protestant worship services is not biblical. The word "trinity" (trias) never occurs in the New Testament. Jesus' disciples and the very early Christians did not believe in a trinity. The first theologian to write of the trinity was Theophilus of Antioch (circa 180 A.D.). Christian theology always refers to Matt. 28:19 as showing proof of the Trinitarian formula but this statement is only the theology of its author. Jesus never taught the concept of trinity. The oldest tradition in the New Testament clearly asserts Jesus as a purely human savior.

Father teaches:

> Forty days after Jesus' resurrection the Holy Spirit descended from heaven. What is the Holy Spirit? After Adam and Eve failed their mission as the True Parents of mankind, God's concept of the True Parents was confined to the spiritual realm. Jesus came as the manifestation of God's concept of true Adam, but no one was raised up to manifest God's concept of Eve. For this reason the Holy Spirit comes in the role of spiritual Mother. The Bible describes the Holy Spirit as being like fire or water or like a dove, because it was without form, but the role of the Holy Spirit is that of mother spirit.
>
> The Holy Spirit has served as the womb of a spiritual mother, completely embracing and

covering Christians and internally giving spiritual rebirth. Jesus' spirit as the Father, together with the Holy Spirit, can bring the power of rebirth to Christians. No spiritual resurrection can come about until one truly receives both Jesus and the Holy Spirit.

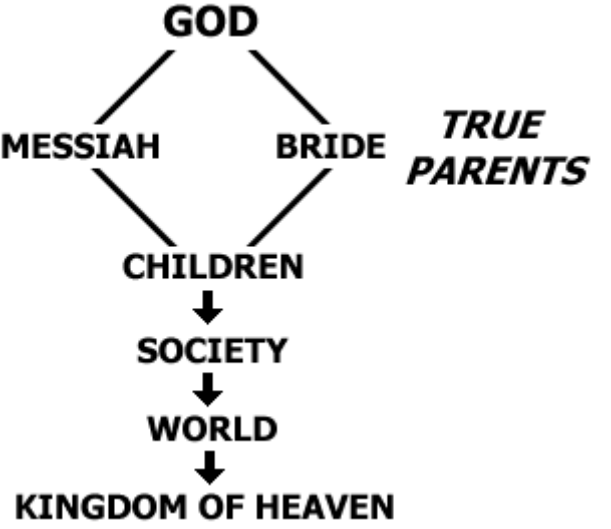
God never intended that physical birth and spiritual birth come separately, but Jesus could not establish full salvation 2,000 years ago, and left only the power of spiritual salvation here on earth. He must come again to the earth to complete the portion of his mission left undone at that time. (April 18, 1977)

In *God's Warning to the World* Sun Myung Moon says:

> Jesus Christ is the one man who lived God's ideal in its fullest realization. He was the first man of perfection ever to walk the earth, and he came to restore the true relationship between God and human beings. But after Jesus' crucifixion, Christianity made him into only God. This is why the gap between God and ourselves has never been bridged. Jesus is a man in whom God is incarnate. But he is not God Himself, the Father. It is written in I Timothy 2:5, "For there is one God, and there is one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus…" The dwelling of God within Jesus was a total reality. He said, "Do you not believe that I am in the Father and the Father in me?" (John 14:10). Jesus is, indeed, the only begotten son of God, but God does not want only Jesus as His son. All mankind is created to be able to say, "I am in the Father and the Father in me."
>
> The entire purpose of Jesus' coming can be summarized in one sentence: Jesus came to bring the resurrection needed so that human love can be perfected to the point where we can come into the direct dominion of God's love. This is the fully attainable goal of everyone.

One argument by traditional Christians is that when Jesus went from being God to a human being he denied his divine mind while he walked as a man on the earth. So when Jesus said "the Father is greater than I" (John 14:28) he was not lying because he really had no memory of being a god who had created the world. This and all other arguments for a trinity of three beings who made the universe make no sense. Orthodox Christian theology is science fiction.

The last book in the *Bible*, *Revelation*, speaks of the divine marriage of the third Adam as the Marriage of the Lamb, i.e. the marriage of the first true Adam and true Eve, mankind's ultimate hope for salvation.



JESUS AND BRIDE—TRUE PARENTS FOR HUMANKIND

To be saved we ultimately need two people—a man and a woman to become the first True Parents on earth. Jesus wanted so badly to marry and with his wife lead the world into perfection. "Jesus was the second Adam. It was God's will for him to be blessed in heavenly matrimony with the second Eve, his restored bride. God

intended him to bring forth upon this earth his own sinless children. Then Jesus and his bride would have become the True Parents for humankind, and all humankind would have found life by grafting onto them. In Revelation, at the end of the Bible, it shows us clearly that the end of God's ideal is this perfect man and perfect woman; when they rejoice, embracing in holy matrimony, this cannot be exchanged for the entire universe. Once God has achieved this high ideal as a standard, then there will be more such individuals and families coming into existence; this is what God has been working for. So this is the highest ideal of God and highest ideal of humanity. This is the deepest desire of God and also the deepest desire of humanity. Only around this one center can all people and God eternally be happy and one." (10-20-73)

Jesus spoke to the people in parables, but to his close disciples he revealed more. Jesus told them: "To you it has been given to know the secrets of the kingdom of God; but to others I speak in parables" (Luke 8:10).

Jesus could only reveal so much truth at one time. It is like teaching mathematics to a child. You do not start with calculus. There is a growth period and as the people grew in understanding then Jesus could reveal more. The disciples knew him better so he could reveal more to them. But he had to hold back so many things even from them. Jesus knew the Fall, for example, but his disciples were not ready to hear it. Jesus did not have time to raise them higher.

The disciples did know that Jesus' mission was to build a one-world family. They saw Jesus' mind and body were one—that his words and deeds were one. But when they heard that he had an alternative course of the path of the cross they just couldn't understand. Traditional Christian thought says that Jesus was predestined to die on the cross is incorrect. It was a secondary mission.

Jesus' mission was to restore the failure of Adam in the Garden of Eden. Adam had a physical body and failed to marry after he was perfect. The mission of Adam was transferred to Jesus, but because Jesus was killed before he could start a perfect family, then his mission was transferred to another man who must come as a third Adam and like Adam and Jesus be born on earth. Sin came into the world on earth and sin must be erased first on earth. In the Lord's Prayer, Jesus said, "Thy kingdom come, thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven" (Matt. 6:10). He also said, "…whatever

you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven" (Matt. 16:19). When sin is erased from earth then sin will be erased from everyone in the spirit world, too.

RESURRECTION

Christian theology is also incorrect in its teachings on resurrection. Some Christians believe they will rise with their physical bodies raptured up into heaven at the Second Coming. Christianity teaches that those who have died are asleep and will have their physical

bodies miraculously put together again and float to heaven when the Second Coming happens. We learn in the *Divine Principle* that everyone who has died is not asleep but is living in spirit world. We read in the *Bible* that Moses and Elijah talked to Jesus.

First Thessalonians 4:17 says, "Then we who are alive ... will be caught up with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air." Some Christians believe they are going "up" into the sky. They interpret this passage literally. But it is symbolic. The key word is "up". When we say someone has advanced in life we say, "he has gone up in the world." When we say someone has gone up the ladder of success we are using figurative language. The same is true in this quotation. When we unite our minds and bodies with the Messiah and live God's way of life then our value has increased.

Also, heaven is not a physical place in the universe. After our physical body dies, we live forever in the spirit world. The Messiah doesn't come to end physical death. The Messiah himself physically dies.

Many Christians incorrectly believe that there is no sex and there are no marriages in the afterlife. They believe this because of Matthew 22:30 that says, "At the resurrection people will neither marry nor be given in marriage; they will be like the angels in heaven." The term "until death do us part" is not true because every person will eventually live with their mate eternally in heaven. Some will be with their mate they had on earth and some will find their mate in spirit world.

First Thessalonians 4:17 says “caught up”. This is a translation from a Greek word meaning to snatch away. Other synonyms would be: grab, seize, pluck, steal, kidnap. In effect there is often an abrupt change when people turn to God. Jesus’ physical body did not go up into the sky. He did not have a corporeal resurrection or resuscitation. His spiritual body went into the spirit world, and Jesus cannot return with his physical body.

Man’s spirit body goes into heaven imperfect. We are not living in an ideal world on earth and our ancestors are not living an ideal life in the spirit world.

We learned earlier that for our spirit man to grow, it must receive vitality elements from our physical body. People in the spirit world can never have their physical body again and cannot grow to perfection by themselves. Spirit men in the spirit world cannot perfect themselves unless they cooperate with people on earth. They can be resurrected or elevated and ascend the thousands of different levels of spirit world by cooperating with earthly people.

To grow they must come to earth and help men and women. In this way they can receive vitality elements for their spirit man. By doing this they can be resurrected. For example, Elijah grew spiritually because he helped John the Baptist by giving him spiritual guidance. In fact, though you cannot see them, people are working with you now from the spirit world.

The truth sets people free. And if you receive the truth you grow spiritually. And if you are growing, the people in spirit world can benefit as well in their spiritual advancement. God continually has brought higher truth to mankind throughout history. He has given truth in stages. God gave laws and asked for animal sacrifices from the early Israelites in the Old Testament. When Jesus came, God gave a higher truth of love and asked for faith in the New Testament. Jesus died before he could reveal the full truth. Today we have the complete truth in the *Divine Principle*, the Completed Testament, which can guide us to spiritually grow by living God’s way of life.

Resurrection means to be raised from the dead. This doesn’t mean that our physical bodies will rise into the air but that we will pass

from spiritual death to spiritual life. God told Adam and Eve they would die if they ate the fruit in the Garden of Eden. They ate the fruit and lived many years afterwards. Obviously, God was not talking about physical death when he spoke to Adam and Eve. He told them they would die spiritually and they did. They lost their five spiritual senses and communication with God. This is true death. Sadly, we are born separated from God.

Everyone must be restored spiritually. When we accept Jesus we can begin the process of coming back to God. Nothing in our life is more important than that. Jesus came with the ability to restore our relationship with God. All mankind needs to be reborn. If we accept Jesus we begin to be reborn and restored. But mankind will become completely reborn when the third and final Adam comes.

Many Christians put exclusive emphasis upon being saved by the blood of Jesus. They do not know that Jesus forgave sin before he was crucified. The *Bible* tells the story of a prostitute who was about to be stoned to death. Jesus said to the people, "Whoever is without sin, let him cast the first stone." Everyone dropped their stones and drifted away in shame. Jesus then said to the woman, "Has no one condemned you? Neither do I condemn you. Go and sin no more." Jesus offered forgiveness. No one had to wait for Jesus to die. Jesus wanted to forgive sin at that time. He did not give a rain check saying, "I will forgive you and save you, but wait until I am crucified on the cross." Jesus did not have to die to save us. God's original plan of salvation was for Jesus not to die. The crucifixion was a secondary course that gave only spiritual salvation.

Sun Myung Moon teaches:

> If we examine Jesus' Providence of the cross, we see that Jesus, the thief on the right, the thief on the left, and Barabbas sowed the seeds of history. The principle is that what is sown will be reaped. So the first to appear were the right wing world and the left wing world, that is, the democratic and the Communist realms, reflecting the "right thief type" and the "left thief type." Centering on Jesus' cross, Islam, the "Barabbas type," appeared next. Reflecting Barabbas, who received good fortune

because of Jesus, Islam originated as a force resisting Christianity.

If the democratic world is internal, then the Communist world is external. If the right wing is internal, then the left wing is external. For this reason, the Messiah who is to come has no choice but to appear upon the internal foundation of the democratic world, which respects God. He must carry out a movement that absorbs the external environment and unifies the various cultural spheres centering on the mainstream Christian cultural sphere. Such a movement is carried out at the end of history. Such a thing cannot be looked at as circumstantial. The nature of the original cause leads to such a result.

The Merit of the Thief on the Right

When Jesus was crucified, he died along with the man on his right, who was not only a thief but also a murderer. If that thief had not been there, Jesus would have lost his relationship with the Earth and humankind. Even though he himself was near death, the thief on the right defended Jesus. In human history, who took Jesus' side? It was not Peter; it was not Jesus' father or mother; it was not the nation of Israel and it was not Judaism. It was only one person: the thief on the right. One individual alone maintained this relationship. While facing death, he transcended death and placed all his hopes on Jesus. That was none other than the thief on the right. You need to know that were it not for the thief on the right, Jesus would not have been able to resurrect and resume his providence on Earth.

As Jesus was bringing to a conclusion four thousand years of history and the more than thirty years of his own life, there was only one person who connected with Jesus and attended Jesus as the one who embodied his most fervent hopes, even as he accompanied Jesus on the path of death. That was the thief on the right. The fact that the thief on the right has this position means that he surpassed the disciples. He was superior to Peter.

This is so because although he did not know Jesus' teachings, his nature directed and empowered him to attend Jesus at the moment of death, until he breathed his last. Peter, John and the others of the twelve disciples, by contrast, knew Jesus' teachings and even pledged to become new persons, but ultimately were not able to achieve it. You have to know that, for this reason, the thief on the right became a central character in human history, a man who represented the Earth and salvaged the future.

Only a Spiritual Foundation

Until now, Christianity has not been able to pursue the Kingdom of Heaven both on Earth and in the spirit. Christianity has had no choice but to yield the physical world, attending Jesus as the spiritual Messiah and setting spiritual salvation and a spiritual Kingdom as its goals. The people of Israel had a nation and possessed national authority as the chosen people, but worldwide Christianity today is in the position of the second Israel only as a spiritual nation; it has no national authority. Christians have no country. We stand in the realm of the second Israel with only a spiritual foundation, not a physical foundation. Because Christianity was not able to accomplish the original Will of God, who must bring about a Kingdom on Earth that is of both spirit and flesh, there is no other way except for the Lord to come again.

I want to make one declaration to you here today. The crucifixion was not God's victory. Instead, it was Satan's victory. You will remember that Jesus said to those who arrested him in the Garden of Gethsemane, "... this is your hour—when darkness reigns." (Luke 22:53) You need to know that the cross was the place where the nation that God had prepared for four thousand years was lost, the place where the religious faith of Israel was lost, and the place where the followers of John the Baptist, the twelve disciples, the thief on the left, and everything else was lost.

You need to know that Christianity was not there on the cross. When did Christianity begin? Jesus resurrected after three days and spent forty days meeting the disciples he had lost, who had turned against him. The Holy Spirit descended on the disciples, and you need to know that it was only then that Christianity began. Christians for the past two thousand years have believed in Christianity without knowing that it came into existence not by the principle of the cross, but by the principle of the resurrection. If you realize this fact, then you must repent. Because Christianity began on the foundation of Jesus' resurrection, Christianity has been strictly spiritual.

What would have happened if Jesus had not died on the cross? In that case, the nation of Israel would have followed Jesus' teachings, stabilized and endured. Judaism also would have remained as it was. Jesus knew that if he were to die on the cross, multitudes of people in future ages would have to follow him on the way of the cross, and that they would not be able to do so without shedding blood. Many Christians would have to suffer, and even when the Lord came again he would have to go the way of suffering. You need to know that this is the reason that Jesus had to pray as he did in the Garden of Gethsemane. Christians today say that Jesus prayed for deliverance because he had a physical body and feared the pain of death. But was Jesus such a trivial Messiah? Certainly not.

Meaning of "It is Finished"

What, then, did Jesus mean by saying, "It is finished," when he committed his spirit on the cross? Jesus had come with the mission to save both spirit and flesh, but he realized that he could not completely fulfill God's Will in a world in which there was no foundation. So, he offered himself completely in order to establish a condition for spiritual salvation and allow that providence to begin. Having completed that, in the end he said, "It is finished."

You probably have never featured this even in your imagination. Christianity and Judaism should realize even now that the Lord, who tried to demolish Satan's nation and do away with Satan's kingship, and to accomplish God's will and restore humanity, died a tragic death. When they realize this, they should repent and become one. They should become one and prepare to receive the Lord on his return.

Truth Conforms to Reason

Truth must conform to reason. The time has come for all Christians to throw off the age of blind faith and move ahead into a new age united as one, to sort out this world and bring it to salvation. You need to know that the time has come in which the term "unification" is essential.

Jesus' Three-Day Suffering Course

What does it mean that Jesus suffered pain during the three days following his death? Heaven, Earth and Hell all remained in the realm of death. For Jesus to gain authority over Heaven and Earth, he needed to encompass the depths and heights of this realm of death. For this reason, in order to pursue the connection of life and go the path that could comfort God, Jesus needed to prevail, even if it meant descending into the lowest environment such as Hell and suffering pain. Because Jesus passed through Hell, he prepared a path by which it was possible to make a new beginning toward Heaven. Though he was cast out and isolated on Earth, and finally forced to go the way of death, he was able to leave a path of hope for future generations. That is the reason Jesus had to go on his three-day course.

Jesus did not go to Hell for three days just to look around. He already knew about Hell. He needed to go there, pass judgment and pave the way to go from the world of death to the world of life. In this way, he laid a foundation of victory on Earth, which is the world of death and Hell, and established a starting point from which it is possible to reach Heaven.

Jesus Rejected

In the eyes of the religious establishment, Jesus was a heretic, and in the eyes of the nation, he was a destroyer of the religious law. His own clan rejected him and chased him out of his home. The group surrounding John the Baptist rejected him. So he went into the wilderness, but there Satan pursued him. That was not all. Eventually, the entire country mobilized to force him to go the way of death on the cross, the path of Golgotha.

Jesus, though, shed tears for the nation that was rejecting him as a traitor. The Jewish establishment treated Jesus as a heretic, but he shed more blood and tears for them than did any priest. Not a single person of that age would stand on his side, but Jesus was a friend of that age. He was rejected as a traitor, but he was the greatest patriot. He was rejected as a heretic, but he was the most faithful believer.

Jesus walked a wretched path, the path of the cross, where people ripped his clothing, drove him on, and forced him to the ground. That was not all. Evil men whipped and beat him. In this situation, if Jesus had been like Elijah, he might have said to the people, "I am the only one of the Lord's prophets left." (1 Kings 18:22) But when Jesus left his disciples in the Garden of Gethsemane and went to pray, he said, "My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me; nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt." (Luke 22:42) This was his greatness. He understood that his body was a sacrificial offering for the nation, a sacrificial offering for humanity and a sacrificial offering for Heaven's Providence.

Because he understood this, Jesus, while not denying his own sorrow, was more concerned about how great a sorrow God must have felt. Jesus had appeared for the sake of the nation and he was concerned how great God's sorrow was to see him rejected as a traitor. Jesus was the prince of Heaven, the central personage of the entire universe, and the Messiah. If he chose, he could have fallen prey to self-pity and asked why he should go the miserable

way of the cross. He could have set the entire universe in motion to breathe a deep sigh of despair with him. But he understood that his position was not to sigh in despair. Instead, he even went so far as to feel apologetic toward Heaven for having been rejected.

Jesus bore the responsibility to rally the religious establishment, rally the nation, build the Kingdom of Heaven and return the world to the Father's bosom. Yet when he was forced to abandon that mission and walk the way of the cross, he did not feel enmity toward anyone. He did not pray, "Let this cup pass from me," out of a fear of death. Rather, he prayed this because he knew that his death would add to the grief of the nation and to God's grief.

Jesus knew that if he died on the cross, there would be an even heavier cross remaining for the future generations of humanity. It would mean that the sorrowful history would not end. He knew that the path of Golgotha would not end with him. He knew that the path of death would not end. And he knew that if he went the way of Golgotha, those who followed him would also have to go the same way. Jesus knew that an even more difficult course lay beyond the cross.

As he was made to wear a crown of thorns, and the nails were hammered into his hands and feet, and his side was stabbed with a spear, Jesus knew that these events would have impact far beyond his own death. When he turned to Heaven and said, "It is finished," he did not mean that the path of the cross for the world was finished. He meant that Heaven had received his heart's tearful plea of concern over the cross. We need to know that Jesus comforted Heaven by taking upon himself all the mistakes committed by the prophets and patriots and offering himself as a living sacrifice.

And even beyond that, as he neared death Jesus said, "Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they are doing." (Luke 23:34) God had a mind

to pass judgment immediately, judgment that was even greater than that of Noah's time. But Jesus died clinging to the nation, clinging to the religious establishment and clinging to the cross. For this reason, God could not abandon humanity but held on to us. Because this bond of heart existed between Jesus, the future generations of humanity and the remaining people of Israel, God has been unable to abandon the religious organizations and people of succeeding generations who have turned against Him. Instead, He has clung to them.

Meaning of the Bread and Wine

I am sure you are well aware that God, who had been carrying out His Providence of restoration for four thousand years, could not complete His Will in Heaven and on Earth simply by the Providence of having Jesus resurrect. So He established a new testament in His word, and through it He has worked His providence to bring together His will in Heaven with that on Earth and establish the promised original Garden.

If we look in the *Bible*, we see that Jesus said the wine and bread that he gave us were the promise and new covenant. After Jesus was on Earth, we received his flesh and blood, and these represented the life of the perfected whole that must be accomplished. At the same time, they represented the providence in its entirety.

What does the fact that we received Jesus' blood and flesh symbolize? This is not just the flesh and blood of Jesus as one individual. In a larger sense, these signify Heaven and Earth and, in a smaller sense, they signify the core and the individual body. Also, the flesh symbolizes the truth and blood of the Holy Spirit. Jesus gave us all this without condition.

What has been blocked between God and human beings? Heaven's Will should be manifested on Earth and everything on Earth ultimately should be connected to Heaven's Will. In this way, Heaven and Earth will move toward a single goal. This is what is blocked. Jesus established a new promise

before he departed. So, after his death the necessity of human beings, that is, the disciples who followed Jesus, connecting the spiritual and physical worlds remained as a condition. Had Jesus not died, Heaven and Earth would have been connected through him. Because he died, Jesus came to represent the conditions in Heaven and the Holy Spirit came to represent the conditions on Earth.

Respected guests, the time now has come. Heaven's time, for which God has been waiting six thousand years and Christians have been waiting two thousand years, has come. It is the time to build the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth and in Heaven on an inter-religious, international and inter-organizational footing. Heaven's fortune has finally arrived. Jesus, Peter, John and the other disciples, plus thousands and even tens of thousands of religious leaders in the spirit world are now of one mind and one body and they are descending freely to the physical world to attend True Parents. Without a doubt, the Unified Cosmic Nation of Heaven's Will and the Kingdom of Heaven in which Heaven and Earth can be as one in eternal peace will settle on the Earth.

Now is the time for America, the Christian country representing the Second Israel, to stand in the forefront. I declare to the world that America has the responsibility to guide all the world's people. But it must not do so with weapons; it must do this in truth and love by living for the sake of others upon the foundation of true love, true life, and true lineage.

Thank you for your kind attention. May God bless you and God bless America. — ("The Life of Jesus as Seen from God's Will, and God's Warning to the Present Age, the Period of the Last Days—20th Anniversary of the *Washington Times* Banquet" May 21, 2002)

Who is the person God has been able to love the most in history? It is Jesus. Jesus presented a new direction for this conflict-ridden world. High walls are created between oppressor nations and

oppressed nations, such as between Rome and Israel, by them viewing each other as enemies. Jesus' philosophy is that these walls need to be demolished. Jesus thought: You in Rome want to conquer me by force, but I will conquer you in the opposite way—with love. That is why he even sought blessing for his enemies when he was hanging on the cross.

Jesus Was Model Man

We need to recognize that when Jesus said of the Roman soldiers, "Forgive them for they know not what they do", he was expressing this kind of amazing philosophy. Because Jesus made this plea he became a model and archetype for all nations of the world to transcend the way they see each other as enemies, and also a model for transcending the borders between any two nations. ("The Course of Life for the Princes and Princesses of Go" March 12, 2000)

Chang Shik Yang says:

Take Down the Cross!

The time has come to resolve all the grievances that remain in Jesus' heart. Two thousand years ago Jesus had to go the way of the cross due to disbelief and persecution from his own people. He employed the cross as a sacred implement upon which to sacrifice his body in order to save humankind. However, in God's eyes, Jesus' death on the cross was too appalling even to watch. After making 4,000 years of preparations to send the Messiah, God had sent Jesus, His only-begotten Son. Instead of being welcomed, Jesus was tried, convicted and sentenced to death. The cross was the dreadful instrument of his execution. The Bible describes three hours of darkness that suddenly fell when Jesus was crucified. God could not bear witnessing the scene of Jesus' death and turned His face away.

As Jesus prophesied that "Not one stone here will be left on another; every one will be thrown down" (Mark 13:2), the Jews were scattered to wander all

> over the world. God had to watch in tears as awful historical consequences played out, even the massacre of six million Jews by Hitler. Today, in order for Judaism and Israel to be resurrected, they should clearly understand the tragedy of Jesus' death.
>
> ...the cross that Christians revere was not God's primary will, but rather was Jesus' second choice necessitated by the impossible circumstances. Jesus took that path with a painful heart, in order to open at least the way to spiritual salvation for humankind. Yet when Jesus looks upon the cross, his heart is flooded with painful memories. His heartbreak and sorrow will finally be resolved only when the cross is taken down from every Christian church. (*The Opening of the Gate to the Cheon-Il-Guk through the Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth and The Providential Background of the Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families for the Peace and Unity of the Heavenly Parent and the Parents of Heaven and Earth*)

The symbol of the cross brings so much pain to God and Jesus that Christian ministers should take down their crosses and bury them.

Won Pil Kim said in a speech titled "Father's Course and our Life of Faith", "It is believed that the crucifixion of Jesus was God's plan. For this reason the miserable image of crucified Jesus on the cross is carved and put in the middle of the altar in the churches so that everybody can see.

"There is no religious group that worships such a miserable statue as Christianity. Don't you feel bad when you see a dead body? Whether the dead person was good or bad, any dead body never gives us a good feeling. But they don't feel bad even to see Jesus, who died an unnatural death, because they think his death was reasonable or, rather, that it was an expression of God's love to forgive the original sin of human beings.

"Even though Jesus died because of Heavenly reasons, it is wrong to feel good looking at his dead body. No person wants to be stripped: do you like to be naked in public?"

The *Divine Principle* shows that God loves every person, and that He won't rest until everyone is home with him. God won't rest until everyone is in heaven. God promised Adam and Eve they would have the Three Blessings of being fruitful, multiplying and having dominion, and God will never stop working until all of us, His children, are living in the ideal world He planned for.

IDEAL WORLD

How will the ideal world come about? Many Christians have a childish view of Jesus. Jesus is seen as some kind of Daddy who will come and whisk them away and put them into some perfect safe place with gold-lined streets. Sun Myung Moon teaches that this view is juvenile. The adult, grown-up view is that God and Jesus want us to shed blood, sweat and tears to build the ideal world. Sun Myung Moon's revelations from God and Jesus are about hard work—even carrying a cross. It is about being a spiritual warrior. God wants us to fight Satan and evil forces and be victorious.

WITNESSING

Jesus' last words to his disciples were to witness—to convert people. How many Christians make witnessing their primary goal in life? They don't because there is nothing more difficult than to teach God's word in this world. Christianity has degenerated into an easy religion. Sun Myung Moon teaches us to take the hard course. He walks his talk. We find joy and happiness when we embrace the call of God and the Messiah to fundamentally change our lives and then witness to others, but we also find heartache and challenge. We are supposed to work so hard we will be persecuted for upsetting people with our relentless pushing of the truth. People will say they do not want to be preached to. To follow Jesus means to be labeled a crazy fanatic—an extremist. Christians do not realize the magnitude of the war we are in. They are lazy and therefore Satan continues to rule this world. It may be difficult to be a religious person and be persecuted, but it is far more difficult to not carry the cross. We have the duty of being focused on the Messiah's great mission he gives us and to follow his difficult course as he pursues the vision God gives of an ideal world.

Sun Myung Moon teaches:

Christians Naïve

Christians are very naive to think that believing in Jesus is all that is required for them to end up in heaven while they leave this world behind. Their idea of a guaranteed place in heaven is a crazy concept that could never enable man to fulfill God's will. From God's standpoint that is heretical thinking, not the principles of the Unification Church. (4-18-77)

Saved — Simply Believe in Jesus?

Some Christians today may be puzzled when they hear about indemnity and man's portion of responsibility. They think, "Almighty God is a God of love with a soft heart, a God of love. What do you mean by such a cruel thing as indemnity? God is not cruel." Often people would prefer to think that if they simply continue to believe in Jesus they would be saved. They think they don't have to do anything else.

Belief in Jesus

Let us examine what is meant by "belief in Jesus." To what extent does someone believe in Jesus? Does a person believe in Jesus only as he relates to him as an individual, or Jesus within the family, or Jesus as he reigns over the society, nation, the universe, or the Jesus who is in God? That makes a lot of difference.

A favorite *Bible* verse of Christians today is John 3:16, which says, "For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him shall not perish but shall have eternal life." Many Christians put the greatest emphasis upon the second part of the verse and forget the most important thing: that God so loved the world. God did not love the church or the individual so much that he sent his only begotten Son. It was because God so loved the world, the universe.

Thus Jesus is the one who came to save the world. When we believe in Jesus the world is very much in our minds. God is in Jesus and Jesus is in God.

Jesus Calls Us to Separate from Satan and Sin

When you say you believe in Jesus, do you only believe in those things, which make you feel good? Do you reject those things about Jesus, which make you feel painful? We should accept what Jesus taught and do those things which Jesus himself would want us to do. We must not take part in things that Jesus would not like. What are those things, which Jesus would not like? They are, simply, Satan and sin.

Vague Belief in Jesus

We are to separate ourselves from Satan and sin and believe in Jesus from that position, rather than from a position in which sin, Satan, and Jesus are all mixed together in our lives. Jesus wants to rule over a world from which Satan and sin are eradicated, not a world in which sin is mixed together with everything and in which people have just a vague belief in Jesus. This is why Jesus said, "Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand." For what should we repent? We must repent of the fact that we have been living together with Satan and sin throughout our lives. Then we can serve heaven.

Where are the faithful believers in Jesus and where are the righteous churches that can publicly proclaim proudly that they are absolutely separated from Satan and sin and that they are following Jesus exactly as he would have them do? Since no one can say they are living in perfect love in an ideal world with no suffering and tears, Christians who truly follow Jesus must be struggling to separate from sin and to love the world from the perspective of Jesus, the Savior who labors still to bring the world to God.

But sadly, we know that Satan exists within the churches as everywhere else; there is almost as much sin there as in the rest of the world. All too

many Christian leaders are so compromised with the world that what they love and hate is no different from what the rest of the world loves and hates; there is very little difference between the world and those churches. Which would Satan find more pleasure in—the church or the world? Why would he like the sins of the church more than those of society in general? Satan likes the sins of the church more because then he can protest to God, "Look at those people in the church—they don't love others; they even hate others! They are not faithful, either. This must be my church."

The churches that remain this way must perish at the time of the last days along with the evils of the secular world. God has promised that he will destroy all evil at the time of the last days. God would even destroy such churches before the rest of society.

What really surprised me when I first came to America was the way Americans used the names of Jesus Christ and God as an exclamation—not to praise them, but to put them in the worst position. I wondered what people meant when they said, "Jesus Christ!" and I realized that they were describing something bad. What led to this kind of custom? What do the best words imaginable have to do with the worst things that can happen to people? Have you sometimes observed that certain Christians may be worse than people of the secular world? Those who claim they believe in God may actually be worse than those who don't—they are more egoistic, less loving and giving, etc.

This American nation is founded upon Judeo-Christian principles, yet Americans have become very individualistic. Was Jesus an individualistic person? How did Americans come to be so egoistic and individualistic when Jesus had nothing of an egoistic nature? We can come to the simple conclusion that if people really believed in Jesus they would not have become like that. Instead of believing in Jesus for Jesus' sake and for God's

sake, some people believe in him for their own benefit. In other words, they use Jesus and God for their own sake. What do you think about this?

Belief in Jesus Brings with it Responsibility to Love the World

Returning to our original point, God sent Jesus to humankind because He loved this world so much. Did humankind believe in Jesus the way God wanted them to, or did people generally believe according to their own discretion and desire? This is the most important determining factor of a person's belief.

Just Believe

The greatest error occurs when people think that they can "just believe" in God and Jesus and they will receive more and more blessings from God. Such people feel they can have everything they want, without doing anything in return. That is similar to the attitude of a thief, who just takes things without working.

Did Jesus believe in God in that way? Did he think that because God sent him as his only begotten son it meant he had all power? Did he feel that all he had to do was to keep on believing and claiming his faith in God, and then he could subjugate all the Roman Empire automatically? If Jesus couldn't do that, what is the justification for thinking that other people can do that? In other words, many people say that Jesus couldn't just believe in God and do nothing, but that we can. Jesus believed in God and we believe in Jesus. Jesus didn't just say, "God, I believe in You so You must bring all the people and all the Roman Empire under my domain." It is clear that such a thing would not work for Jesus. If everything could have come to Jesus automatically, why did Jesus witness? Why did Jesus gather and train the 12 apostles, the 70 disciples, the 120 elders? Why did he have to do all that and endure so much persecution along the way? Jesus went the way of persecution and bloodshed according to God's dispensation; he had no other way to go.

Jesus knew the suffering that lay ahead of him, but he also knew he had to go that way in order to accomplish God's will.

Do you think I am placing unnecessary stress on this or do you understand that this point is the most crucial one of belief? Jesus had to go the way he did because he knew what God wanted him to do—namely, to save the world and all mankind by loving them. Therefore, it stands to reason that everyone else who loves Jesus must also do God's will—to love the people of the world and save them.

Because God so loved the world He sent his only begotten son. Jesus had the obligation, the mission, to make the world one which could receive the love of God. Jesus looked around and saw that the world was not lovable. Is the world lovable today? At this time, there are many different churches with great power and influence in the world. They embrace this world in their own ways. Can God look at them and be completely pleased with them? Communists have even infiltrated the churches and developed theologies to suit their own purposes, such as liberation theology. How can God love such churches? We can understand that the true, correct faith is not the way many Christians have been going, but rather it is the way Jesus tried to establish in his time—to gather the people, teach the people, and establish the kind of world which God could freely love. Jesus had to love the world in order to accomplish his mission. This was the work of God and also the work of Jesus—it was the purpose for which God sent Jesus. Jesus had to bring the world to God for God to accomplish His purpose of sending Jesus to the world.

Then what would have happened? When all people became worthy of receiving the love of God freely, everything would have been accomplished. God loved the world, so he sent Jesus. When the people of the world are able to freely receive the love of Jesus and God, they will be satisfied. These things have to be accomplished; it is very clear.

If groups of Christians emerge from this hopeless world who are loving others, thinking more of serving than being served, and doing as Jesus did, then God will be able to fulfill the promise he made when he sent His only begotten son. Jesus sacrificed himself and gave up his own life; he remained completely faithful to his mission of making the world lovable by God, making the people worthy of receiving God's love. If some new Christian group emerges at this time, following the path which Jesus trod, then Christianity and the world will have hope for the first time in a long time.

Bear the Cross

Look around and see which denominations would fit these specifications. What about members of the Unification Church? Why don't we do the same things that many other churches do and believe exactly the same way that they do? Why do we fight against communism? We do this because it is the germ which will destroy all religion if it prevails. Our movement is trampling down on Satan and sin and especially communism, destroying those germs, and on the other hand we are sacrificing ourselves as Jesus did and bearing our own cross so that God can give His love to the world.

Would God say he likes Unification Church members? Would God be ashamed that we work harder than other Christians? No. God would say, "How proud I am of the [Unification Church members]!" Are you sure he would say that? How about Jesus? When he looks at the Unification movement, would he say, "Oh, you should be ashamed of yourselves; my other followers don't work the way you do. You embarrass me."? No, instead, Jesus would say, "You are my hope, my pride."

See Hope in Unification Church Members

If God loves us and Jesus loves us, what about the people of the world? They might be saying, "We hate those Moonies," but as they say such things,

they are watching us, and gradually they are discovering that there is nothing wrong with us. They are gradually coming to like us, and they will come to see hope in us. When other Christians have a real chance to see us and work with us, will they continue to hate us or will they love us?

Jesus sought to bring the entire world to God, and we are determined to do that. Jesus was to confront the Roman Empire. I have been confronting the government of the U.S. and I have pledged to preach the Gospel in Moscow, as well. The most powerful effort of America to stop me has been to put me in jail, but will such a thing stop our movement?

Logical Understanding

Since God so loves the world, I continue to push you out in order to make this a lovable world. When we undertake something worthwhile, it is important first to have a logical understanding of why we must do it. We must do the things we do because of human responsibility.

Inch by Inch

Does God really love me or not? When you look at how hard I have worked and how I have been persecuted, don't you think God might have done something more on my behalf? You say that God really loves me, but I might argue with you and say, "If God loves me, what has He ever done for me?" At no time in my entire mission have I ever had a peaceful moment. Wherever I have gone, I was not readily welcomed at first; it was only after I had given much and taught many things that people would begin to understand. I have had to fight continuously to gain ground for God—inch by inch.

If God were to give me the power to work miracles and somehow retaliate against those who persecute us unrighteously and show them dramatically how wrong they are, they would not continue to mistreat us. Why does God allow these unrighteous things to continue? When Jesus was crucified, God was

certainly watching the scene. Did God not have the power to stop the Roman soldiers and rescue Jesus from the cross? Jesus was God's own son. What kind of a father could bear to see his own son's blood being shed in such an unrighteous way and not do something? Can we call such a God a God of love and justice? Where was God's justice then? When my court case was over and the judge pronounced my sentence, why didn't God do something? Was it because God did not have the power to do anything? Why did God seem to pretend not to know about it? That is a riddle. In this common yet very important issue comes the understanding of the human portion of responsibility.

Law of Human Responsibility

The discovery of man's portion of responsibility is a cosmic discovery. Great discoveries have been made in science, such as Einstein's theory of relativity; however, the discovery of the law of human responsibility is the greatest of all. Without understanding this principle, the most fundamental issues in life remain as a puzzle. "Why do righteous people always have to suffer? Why is a great man's name only resurrected after his death?" The answers to these questions hinge upon the principle of human responsibility.

God's Grace

The [Unification Church members] are the ones who are supposed to appreciate this fact of man's responsibility the most, but ironically you hate it as much as everybody else does. Have you accomplished your portion of responsibility or not? The heaviest consequence of this principle is the requirement that humans make effort to indemnify sin. How long the human indemnity period will last is not known by anyone—not God, not spirit world, not me, not anyone. We may keep asking why the misery in life must go on, but it is a fact that as long as there is sin in the world, we must take responsibility for it. If anybody, including God,

were to remove the human burden of indemnity, people could no longer have the dignity of responsible beings. This is not to deny the reality of God's grace, but even grace comes for the purpose of assisting people in fulfilling their portion of responsibility. Therefore God did not intervene when Adam and Eve committed the fall. God did not intervene because he would not violate man's portion of responsibility.

I have been persecuted in this country, yet I have not done anything evil or wrong. Many people are watching what has been happening to me and are curious about the source of the persecution. Many other well-educated people and scientists can see that even though the majority of the world is accusing Sun Myung Moon, I have been doing things that are worthy of praise and even assistance.

Separate from Satan

Yet there is no more efficient way for people to go from the extreme of being unworthy of God's love to being worthy except by going through persecution. The first thing we must do is separate ourselves from Satan. Do we do that when our lives are cozy and comfortable? No, the best way to separate ourselves from Satan is when we are enduring tremendous persecution. After Satan has opposed someone so much then God can freely love that person, and Satan will have no chance to accuse him anymore. Thus, a way is created by which God can more speedily love all those who have been unworthy of his love. Quickly the conditions are made for God to embrace them.

Remember the reason why these things have been happening—everything begins from the point of human responsibility. After man's responsibility is accomplished, what happens then? Once an individual successfully fulfills his portion of responsibility, that person enters the realm of the direct dominion of God. Does God maintain that dominion over a person by giving him a lot of money, or what? It is only through love that God

gains direct dominion over mankind. Once that direct dominion is achieved, people can lead the kind of life, for the first time, which God originally intended for them to live.

In the Garden of Eden there was no crime or sin. Adam and Eve could do nothing really wrong except to violate the commandment God gave them. Once Adam and Eve had come under the direct dominion that would have meant they had passed through the time of the possibility of the fall. The only thing that would have been left for them to do was to experience love. Nothing else would have been truly significant. Love is the most essential and important element of the world; unless someone had violated that, nothing would have been a sin. Therefore all a person must accomplish is to receive the "certificate" of God's love. God can make the world a totally peaceful place. Satan will be unable to complain against God at all. When we finally possess God's love, we never want to commit a crime or a sin at all. The reason why people commit crimes and sin is that they want something they don't have. When God's love is with us we are satisfied and have no need for anything more.

Long and Complicated Route

Since the fall occurred, however, and since restoration efforts have consistently failed, we find that it takes a long and complicated route, step-by-step, to separate from Satan—from the individual level of indemnity, the family level, the clan, society, national, world level, to the cosmic level.

Law of Indemnity

This is not something I made up; the principle of human responsibility has existed from the very beginning, although it hasn't been so well understood. It existed when Adam and Eve were alive, but all they needed to do was simply keep God's commandment and live for 21 years faithful to God. Before Satan existed, there was no additional indemnity condition to be met. But with the fall and with the multiplication of Adam and

Eve's fallen family into a society, nation, and world dominated by Satan, human responsibility became heavier. Now we must separate from Satan on every level by fulfilling conditions of indemnity. This law of indemnity is applicable not just for specific individuals or just to Unification Church members but to everyone. Whether someone understands or believes this law or not, he must eventually go through these steps.

Welcome Persecution

This is the reason why we go the path we go. This is why I have welcomed persecution and will not shrink from the course that lies before me. I never pray to smooth my way or to lighten my burden. I will fulfill my own portion of responsibility.

Cross of Indemnity

Do you need restoration by indemnity or not? Do other Christians need it also? What about Jesus—did he walk the path of restoration by indemnity also? Clearly, that was the path he trod. What about Sun Myung Moon? Yes, no matter what, there is no way I can avoid that. No matter how almighty God is, there is no way even He can avoid the cross of indemnity. He must endure uncertainty and heartbreak as He watches His children stumble along the path. Therefore, we should march on to fulfill our responsibility well.

Jesus completely occupied the love of God, but He did not want to stop there. He knew why God sent him to the world, so he did everything possible to pass along God's love to other people. Jesus received the purest love from God, and he wanted to spread out that love to the whole world. He wanted to make all humankind into God's sons and daughters.

Jesus is our Brother

Jesus wanted all the people of the world to be loved by God, just as he was. Jesus was the one who was first loved by God; all humankind was supposed to be those who were second-loved by God. Therefore, the relationship between Jesus and all humanity is

like that between brothers and sisters. How close you can feel to Jesus when you realize that he is your elder brother!

Jesus is not Distant

Many Christians have believed that Jesus and God are the subjects of religion and we are their objects and that subject and object can never get close to each other. They are so high and omnipotent that we can't even think about being on the same level of relationship with them; if we do, that is blasphemy. But we can see that Jesus is not the distant subject of religious belief. He is a part of your daily life, just like brothers and sisters in a family, not like the teacher of a religion relating to his followers. Maybe the first step of relationship had to be distant like that, but eventually Jesus wanted everybody to be a part of the same family.

Remember, the world is God's goal. And just as Jesus willingly gave his life so that the world might live, God wanted all Christians to be willing to give themselves for the salvation of the world. However, today, most Christians are not even close to realizing this heart of God.

God seeks to build one family of humankind. Therefore, the family, church, and nation which God desires transcend all barriers of race and nationality. The people who are a unified blending of all colors of skin, and who transcend race and nationality, are most beautiful in the sight of God and most pleasing to Him.

I have been telling you Christians that you cannot remain idle or indifferent. You cannot just think about your own life and your own family and going to Heaven eventually. That attitude among conventional Christians is a problem.

Need a Spiritual Revolution

Christianity must unite. The church must liberate herself from sectarianism. She must undergo a drastic reform and achieve an ecumenical and an inter-religious unity. For this, we need a spiritual

revolution, and it has come in the form of a new Christian movement. The Unification movement has been created by God to fulfill that mission. The new ideology, which the Unification Church brings, is Godism, an absolutely God-centered ideology. It has the power to bring Christians of all creeds, and other religions and conscientious people, into unity....

Build It with Our Hands

[We must] build the Kingdom of God [on earth]. Then we shall all truly become brothers and sisters under one Father, God. This will be a world of love, a world of happiness. Our planet will be one home, and humanity will be one family. God's will, his long cherished desire from the beginning of time, will finally be fulfilled. This will be the eternal, ideal world of God. Indeed, it will be the Kingdom of God on earth. We will build it with our hands.

This is our supreme mission. It is truly our God-given, sacred mission. God is crying out to the world, and we are His instruments. The world must respond to His call. Listen to God's commandment. Initiate a courageous march towards the Kingdom of God on earth. Whatever the difficulty, let it not stop us. Our march is God's, and it will go on to the end.

Today let us pledge to God Almighty our loyalty and dedication to the fulfillment of this divine mission. In the name of God, let us unite, and together build the Kingdom of God on earth! (*God's Warning to the World, Book II: Reverend Moon's Message from Prison)*

REINCARNATION

The theory of reincarnation is incorrect. God created each of us to have only one physical body and one spiritual body. When our physical body dies our spiritual body goes to the spirit world. Our spirit man cannot go into a mother's womb again and take on a new physical body.

The theory of reincarnation came about because of spirit men returning to earth to work with people on earth. Because no one

has reached perfection on earth spirit men need to come down to earth and cooperate with people. A spirit man can get vitality elements for his growth from the physical body of the person in whom he or she is working with.

In some cases spirit men so dominate people on earth that they tell the experiences the spirit man had while he lived on earth. When outsiders look at this it appears to be the reincarnation of a passed away spirit man. Memories that some people believe they have of earlier lives they led when they were a man or woman living in the past are really those spirits sharing their lives with the actual person on earth. It is so real because it is the actual lives of another person or persons. In certain people spirits return to help transfer their mission to another. Elijah did that with John the Baptist although John didn't know it. Some people interpret the *Bible* by saying that John the Baptist was the reincarnation of Elijah. John and Elijah are two separate people.

Child prodigies are explained by understanding that spirit men are helping. It is not reincarnation. This also explains speaking in tongues, psychic healing, spiritual possession, multiple personality and some kinds of insanity.

Christianity calls the belief that the spirits of those who have died can make contact with the living on earth—spiritualism or spiritism. Many Christians interpret the *Bible* as saying that the dead "sleep" in their graves until a future resurrection takes place and their bodies will rise from the dead with a new body. All phenomena such as "ghosts", séances, visions, etc. are only angels and other spirit men. But the *Bible* clearly says that the dead are not asleep and can communicate with those on earth. First Samuel 28 tells of an ancient "séance." King Saul of Israel wanted to know about a battle with the Philistines he was about to have. In First Samuel 28:7 he orders his servants to find a medium, "Seek me a woman that hath a familiar spirit that I may go to her, and inquire of her." They found the woman at Endor. Saul disguised himself and went to her at night and said, "I pray thee, divine unto me by the familiar spirit, and bring me him up, whom I shall name unto thee" (verse 8). The medium asked who she should bring up. Saul said: "Bring me up Samuel" (verse 11) and she did. Samuel prophesied that Saul would be defeated. Christianity is wrong in saying this was just an angel. The clearest instance of

communication with those who had died is Jesus talking to Moses and Elijah at the Mount of Transfiguration.

Each of us is influenced by people in the spirit world. Good spirits as well as evil spirits are constantly whispering in our ears. Satan himself will often work with key people to disrupt God's effort to unify mankind. We read that "Satan entered into Judas" (Luke 22:3) and after Satan was through with him and left him then Judas realized what he had done. He took the 30 pieces of silver back and hung himself for betraying Jesus.

This world is a battleground between the forces of God and Satan, between good and evil. Satan has won most of the battles, but God will eventually win the war because mankind now has the *Divine Principle* that teaches us how to stop having give and take with Satan and do as God wants us to do. The *Principle* is not just another theology that we can pick from. It is the absolute truth that will bring God's culture. It is the truth that will unite this world under one ideology.

PASS THE TEST

We should understand that each of us are influenced by spirit men and women and should not make the mistake John the Baptist did. Until we heard the *Divine Principle* we were ignorant of how the world works. After we hear the *Principle* we have the responsibility to do God's will. What is God's will? It is to live God's way of life. When we do this we will raise ourselves spiritually and those men and women in spirit world that surround us. We now know that we are not alone. Good spirits work to help us and evil spirits work to hurt us. We are constantly being tested. When we deny a temptation we grow closer to God and help those spirits attached to us to grow also. It is the only way they can grow. God wants each of us to be strong and make the right decisions. When we succumb to temptations that hurt us we now know that we hurt others as well as ourselves. Dear Reader, never think that you are alone. There are many spirits with you all day long and their salvation from Hell depends on you. Also, when we make the right choices in life we become an inspiration to others to live a higher life and therefore a happier life.

Sun Myung Moon has spoken extensively on Jesus. The following are some excerpts from a speech titled "The True Meaning of Christmas" given on December 25, 1979:

> If something is logical then it should be consistent from beginning to end. Christianity today is a worldwide religion, which has prospered for 2,000 years, yet today it is entangled in confusion and chaos. Why? Because the beginning and end of today's Christian thought are not consistent. Look at the contradictions in Christian thought and Christian practice: Jesus came to build one world, but contrary to Jesus' will there are now several hundred denominations dividing Christianity. Greater division has been brought about.
>
> Today the followers of Reverend Moon are being accused and persecuted by the world, but in the sight of God and Jesus we are the true central religion, the orthodox of orthodox. Therefore, I proclaim today that Christianity needs to learn a direction and new way of life. My direction is now being supported by spirit world, Jesus Christ and God Himself. How do you know I'm not the greatest swindler in the world? If you use your own logical minds you can deduce whether what I am saying is true or not.
>
> Why do we need Jesus? Why do we need the Messiah? ... We need a Messiah because we want to have God centered love, and only the Messiah can give us that love. ... We need Jesus in order to learn his way of life, so that we can inherit the tradition of unstained heavenly love. In order to do that, we have to follow his way of life, obeying his instructions.
>
> Could Jesus completely exemplify the heavenly tradition if he were a bachelor? Because Jesus was always a bachelor we have not seen any other tradition, but that was only the first step of Jesus' contribution. He was to have given the world not only a tradition of individual perfection, but also the tradition of love between husband and wife. As a God centered man he wanted to show how men

should live. As a husband he was to show how to be a model God centered husband. Does the *Bible* teach this? Have you ever read in the *Bible* how Jesus loved his wife?

Would God call Jesus a heretic for thinking that he should marry? Christianity does not have the tradition of a husband's love for his wife. Furthermore, Jesus wanted not only to love his wife but to teach her how to set the tradition of wifehood. Does the *Bible* record that tradition? Is there any record of Jesus becoming a father who could teach people the right way to love their children? Is there any indication that Jesus became a grandfather who could show how grandchildren should be loved?

Did Jesus leave any tradition for Christianity of leading a tribe? Is there any tradition for a king and ruler of the world about how to govern with God's love? Is there any tradition of a King of kings who governs without any national or racial prejudice? Is there a tradition for governing not only the physical world but also the spirit world, of showing what the Kingdom of Heaven should be like for eternity?

TRADITION

Is there a tradition of the love of God here on earth? Jesus came to teach this tradition. He struggled by himself but finally was crucified, and there was not much room for him to leave the traditions that God wanted here on earth. Compared to the scope of the mission Jesus came to fulfill here on earth, he spoke only a small bit about the tradition of the love of God. The bulk of it has been left undone. It is essentially true that Jesus must return to pick up that mission and finish it. Isn't that logical?

What is love? What is the love of God from the point of view of Christianity? This world we live in is truly a wilderness, for there is no taste of the love of God in it. People hardly have a concept of the love of God. In this wilderness I came to cry out for the love of God. In itself this is a historical mission. I am proclaiming in this wilderness how the love of God should be.

WILL OF GOD

I came to this world knowing precisely the will of God, and the agony and heart of Jesus. I know what no one else has ever known and I came to proclaim it to the world.

Today people don't write out the word Christmas, but use Xmas instead. Often on a test O means true and X means false. Thus, written as Xmas, Christmas is the false, upside-down message. People are celebrating the wrong kind of Christmas. When you hear me say this it makes sense, but because of this people say I am a heretic who is attacking the 2,000-year-old Christian tradition.

Again, the important thing is which side God is receptive to. If the entire world has another opinion, how can you be so sure God would take my side? When we know that the true meaning of Christmas is that God sent Jesus to bring the true tradition of love, then when we exchange Christmas greetings they will be sweet and acceptable to Jesus.

Jesus led a tragic life of accusation and persecution and finally crucifixion. He truly led the most miserable life, and his one wish would be for one man to step forward and tell the world who he truly was and how he felt, why he cried out on Gethsemane. He would want someone to speak out for him who could look at the world through his eyes, with the tradition of the love of God, and tell the world what to do. Jesus would want that spokesman to vindicate his mission, to herald the tradition of love that Jesus could not finish during his own life. This is the kind of champion Jesus truly wants to see in this world.

In the fallen world men look at a beautiful woman and think how they can have her for themselves. When Jesus looked at any woman—whether charming, feeble, young or old—Jesus felt she was his sister and thought about how to love her in a pure, heavenly way. When seen through Jesus' eyes, even the ugliest possible woman—so ugly you would have to spell ugly with ten U's—would truly be a sister and he would pour out his genuine heart to her. That's how Jesus looked at all mankind.

Everywhere I go people criticize me and call me a monster who brainwashes people. We have a better term; brainwashing is actually moon-washing, or love-washing.

We are gathered to celebrate the true Christmas because we know God and His purpose; we know Jesus' purpose and intention for coming to this world. And in addition we are handpicked by God to vindicate Jesus and liberate the heart of God by accomplishing what Jesus left undone. If we say Merry Christmas with that mind then God and Jesus would respond thousands of times, "Merry, merry, merry Christmas."

DIVINE MISSION

No other people are truly responding to the call of God. We are given the divine mission which no one else is undertaking. There is nothing greater or more important to God and Jesus and mankind than establishing the tradition of God's love. The commitment you can give that task should be greater than to any other task, and far greater than the dedication of the communists to their cause. Love is supreme; nothing is more perfect or precious. Once established it will remain forever, so for this task there is nothing we cannot spare.

Have you truly loved the world that much? Basically you have been living capriciously, but you must realize that your body is not yours—it should be the personification of God's love. It is the holy temple of God, who is love. It should be a love temple. If someone squeezes you, love juice should come out, and through you people should find salvation and eternal life.

Christmas Day is the perfect day for repentance, for checking how much you have truly lived as Jesus' representative and loved the world as he did. We are the only people inheriting the true tradition of Christmas which God conceived in His heart. The true meaning of Christmas is the tradition of the true love of God.

It doesn't matter how big or small our festivities are; we will celebrate a Christmas which God and

> Jesus will want to attend. After hearing me, "Merry Christmas" becomes "Concerned Christmas." This year you greet each other with "Heavy Christmas," with the desire that next year we can truly celebrate a Merry Christmas. Will fruitcake and ice cream make a merry Christmas? The true content of Christmas is the amount of love you gave during the year. That is far more dazzling than any amount of decorations.

JESUS — FIRST TRUE LEADER

Jesus was the first true leader in human history. If he had married he would have shown by his word and deed how a man is to protect, provide and lead his wife and children. He was the second Adam but because he was not able to marry and raise a second Eve, God had to work to send a third Adam who would show mankind what true masculinity looks like.

JESUS — MANLY MAN

Sun Myung Moon teaches that Jesus was a man's man. He was virile—a manly man:

> Was Jesus a manly man or was he effeminate? He was, of course, very masculine. Would it have been a sin if Jesus, as a masculine man, wanted to marry a woman, or would that have been unrighteous? God's providence is for a righteous and perfectly masculine man to become one with a perfectly feminine woman. If Adam and Eve had become one, free of the fall and centered on true love, this beautiful relationship would have made the flowers bloom. When the flowers bloom, can the butterflies stay away? Would the birds stay away? No, they would be attracted, too. (2-19-89)

CHRISTIANS — SECOND CHOSEN PEOPLE

The history of the world has been a nightmare. Jesus tried to teach us the truth, but he was murdered by ignorant people before he could give us the whole truth that would save us. In the next chapter we will learn how God has worked since Jesus to raise mankind to accept the Second Coming of Christ. God has worked

with other cultures but His focus has been on raising Christians to be the chosen people to accept the new Messiah.

Let's now look at Christian history to see how God has worked since Jesus to prepare the world for the Third and final Adam who will pioneer the ideal world God has dreamed of for so long.

Chapter 5

Christian History

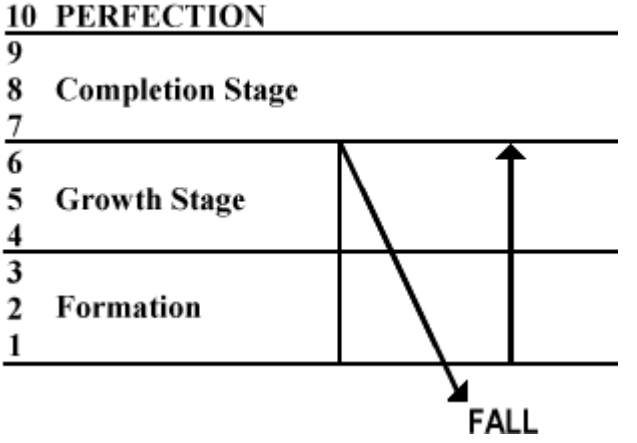
SIX PERIODS OF TIME
Christian history is a reenactment of Jewish history. History repeats itself. We saw the pattern of 6 stages of time in the history of the Jewish people. This pattern is symbolic and prophetic. When we look at Christian history, we will see a corresponding six stages.

These stages will not be symbolic but literal periods of time that will match within 2 or 3 percent the corresponding time period in Jewish history. The time periods in Jewish history prophesy the pattern God will use in preparing the Christian world for the coming of the Third Adam.

Symbolic for Man
God created man on the sixth day. The number six is symbolic for man. Satan has claimed that number. Because it took six days to create the world or six periods of time, God has used six periods of time to restore man.

We learned earlier there are 3 stages in the growth period—formation, growth, and completion. Each of these stages has 3 stages.

Man fell at the top of the growth stage in the Growth Period. This stage is the sixth stage or completion level of the growth stage, the second stage in the Growth Period. To restore man there will be therefore six stages of time to bring man back to the point of the Fall. At this point we are reborn through the Messiah and grow to perfection by following the principles that the Messiah teaches and lives by.



Just as the Israelites had been persecuted for 400 years, Christians were persecuted by the Romans. Christians were considered a dangerous sect or cult. St. Paul himself was a persecutor before God struck him off his horse as he was traveling to a city to persecute Christians. He was converted to Christianity and witnessed to thousands.

For three hundred years Christianity grew in the Roman Empire. During that time they were sometimes persecuted. But God was behind this minority religion and it kept growing. Then God gained a major victory in 312 A.D. when the emperor Constantine had a vision. While leading his army he saw a cross of light in the sky and an inscription: “By this sign, conquer.” He won the battle

at Milvian Bridge and was converted to Christianity. In 313 he issued the Edict of Milan, a decree of toleration toward the Christian sect.

COUNCIL OF NICEA

In the fourth century a church elder named Arius taught that Jesus was not God himself. His opponents believed that Jesus was God. The controversy became so great throughout the Roman Empire that a council was called to meet in the city of Nicea in May 325 A.D. This was the first time in Christian history that Church leaders met.

Constantine presided over the gathering. He asked that the meeting be peaceful but the debate was heated. The secretary to the bishop of Alexandra, Athanasius, was the spokesman for those who believed Jesus was God. The council finally sided with Athanasius. But a year later Emperor Constantine changed his mind and began to favor Arius. But Arius' views were held only temporarily. Arius was Abel, and Athanasius was in the Cain position. The view that Jesus is God has unfortunately become the basic tenet of Christian faith and has remained so till today.

UNITARIANS

The Arian view has periodically reappeared in history. God was behind those small voices of reason but few heard Him. John Milton, the author of *Paradise Lost*, was an Arian. In the 18th century Thomas Jefferson, Benjamin Franklin, John Adams and Isaac Newton were Arians. In the 19th century Emerson, Thoreau and Longfellow were Unitarians. The *Divine Principle* reasserts the Unitarian view that Jesus is not God who created the world.

In 392 Theodocius I made Christianity the state religion of the Roman Empire. If it required 400 years for Christianity to become the state religion, what if Jesus had been able to lead the early disciples to Rome? In his lifetime, the Roman Empire would have turned to God. Today there would be no religion called Christianity because Jesus would have united the world into one family under God.

Historians have discovered that Jesus was actually born in 4 B.C. 392 from 4 B.C. is 396 years which matches the 400 years of

slavery in Egypt within 2 or 3 percent. Just as God sent a liberator, Moses, to the Israelites, God sent the liberator Theodocius to the Christians. Theodocius was flawed like Moses. Moses was not able to enter Canaan because of his mistakes, and Theodocius was not able to keep the Roman Empire as God's central nation.

WHY ROME FELL

One of the greatest questions in history is why the Roman Empire fell. There are a number of reasons such as rampant immorality and high taxes. But the main reason was that Rome held the incorrect view of Jesus. The decision to adopt the Trinitarian belief was fatal. Missionaries had gone to the Germanic tribes, and they became Arians. This is why God favored them over the Romans. God wanted the common sense Arian view to prevail in Christianity so it would sweep the earth instead of being a minority religion with a ridiculous view of Jesus.

I have written a separate book on why God abandoned Rome and moved His focus to the Germanic peoples who he hoped would build a Holy Roman Empire. You can read the entire book *Why Rome Fell: God's Providence from Jesus to Sun Myung Moon* at: DivinePrinciple.com.

"I AM COMING SOON"

Why did Jesus say to his disciples he would return soon by coming in a dramatic way on the clouds? There are two reasons. First, Jesus knew if he spoke clearly about another man coming as a Second Messiah there would be too much confusion caused by so many people saying they were the one.

The other reason was that Jesus wanted to keep the disciples faith at a high point. He knew that the disciples and all mankind would suffer because of the terrible mistake of the crucifixion. If he told the disciples clearly of the coming persecution, he was afraid they would lose their heart and zeal. Revelation 22:20 says, "Surely I am coming soon." And in Matthew 10:23 Jesus said, "... for truly, I say to you, you will not have gone through all the towns of Israel, before the Son of man comes." In Matthew 16:28, he said, "Truly, I say to you, there are some standing here who will not taste death before they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom." In these passages Jesus was saying that the Second Coming would take place very soon. Of course, Jesus did not

return in their lifetime. Why did Jesus lead them to think he would?

Jesus wanted Christianity to survive the terrible persecution it had ahead of it. Because the disciples felt Jesus' return was imminent they were encouraged and remained dedicated and had the strength to build the early Christian Church.

Persecution In Roman Empire

Jesus 4 B.C. ——————— 392 Theodocius

396

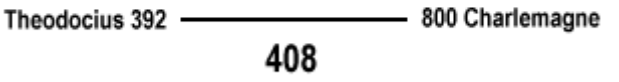
	Jewish History	Christian History
400	Preparation 2nd Adam	
210	Jewish Captivity	
400	Divided Kingdoms	
120	United Kingdom	
400	Period of Judges	
400	Persecution In Egypt	Persecution In Roman Empire

The second period of Jewish history was the 400-year period of Judges, a feudal period. Christianity also went through 400 years of a feudal era called the Dark Ages ruled by Patriarchs. The five most influential Patriarchs were the bishops of Rome, Constantinople, Antioch, Alexandria, and Jerusalem. The Bishop of Rome eventually became the leading patriarch and was called "Pope."

The period of Judges ended when Samuel anointed Saul King. The period of Patriarchs ended when Pope Leo III crowned Charlemagne King on Christmas day, 800 A.D.

392 to 800 are 408 years. Again, Christian history matches Jewish history by 2 to 3 percent.

Period of Patriarchs



	Jewish History	Christian History
400	Preparation 2nd Adam	
210	Jewish Captivity	
400	Divided Kingdoms	
120	United Kingdom	
400	Period of Judges	Period of Patriarchs
400	Persecution In Egypt	Persecution In Roman Empire

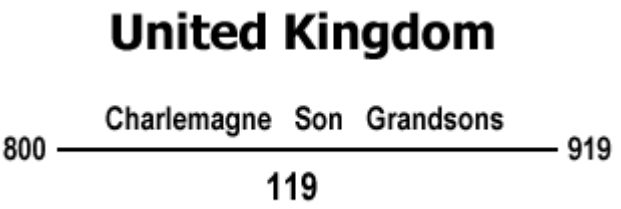
After the 400-year period of Judges, came the period of the United Kingdom. Likewise, Charlemagne created a united Christian Kingdom.

Charlemagne's favorite book was Augustine's *City of God*, and he felt he had a mission to unite Europe and create a model Christian

empire. Under his charismatic leadership he encouraged the building of schools. It was like a renaissance but, unfortunately, the Kingdom was divided after three generations under the leadership of his son, and later his grandsons.

Just like David and Solomon had many flaws, the leaders during this period did not live up to its promise of being a great empire that would continue far into the future. Charlemagne and his descendants are called Carolingians (pronounced Kair-oh-lin'-jee-uhnz or Karlin'jenz). Charlemagne's grandsons fought with each other and eventually signed the Treaty of Verdun in 843. This Treaty is seen by some as the historical origin of France and Germany, but the Carolingian dynasty did not end then. It lasted until 911 in what is today Germany. The next king was connected to the Carolingians because his mother was a Carolingian. He ruled until 919, and then Henry I was crowned and started a new era called the Saxon Dynasty.

The period of the United Christian Kingdom ended in 919 when Henry I was crowned. Eight hundred to 919 is 119 years. This compares with the 120 years of the Israelite United Kingdom.



	Jewish History	Christian History
400	Preparation 2nd Adam	
210	Jewish Captivity	
400	Divided Kingdoms	
120	United Kingdom	United Kingdom
400	Period of Judges	Period of Patriarchs
400	Persecution In Egypt	Persecution In Roman Empire

At the end of the United Kingdom of Israel, the chosen people were split into two camps—North Israel and South Judah. Likewise, the chosen people, the Christians, were divided into two camps, the East Franks that became Germany, and the West Franks, later to become France.

The dates in the Parallels of History are not arbitrary. They are precise. For example, if we study what historians teach of the period around the year 919, we see that the *Principle* is true. For example, the book *History of Germany* begins by saying, "In the year 911 the German tribes elected a Frankish duke to be their King. After his early death their choice fell upon the Saxon duke Henry, who was successful in compelling homage of the remaining tribes (in 919). These events revealed the will of the scattered German peoples to form one corporate whole; they laid the foundation of the German State, and may be regarded as the beginning of German History."

Germany was the Abel side and France was the Cain side in this division. There was also division, called the Great Schism, between the Pope of Rome and the patriarch of Constantinople. Today the division in Catholicism is between the Roman Catholic and Eastern Orthodox Church.

During this period the Roman Catholic Church grew in strength. The Pope was as powerful during the Middle Ages as many Kings. But the church became corrupt with its wealth and power. And just as God sent prophets to Israel and Judah to chastise and raise the people, God sent monastics such as St. Bernard, Thomas Aquinas, and St. Francis to bring reformation but many church leaders continued in corruption.

The end of the Jewish Divided Kingdoms came when Judah was taken captive and exiled to Babylon. In Christian history, the divided empire ended in 1309 when the Pope was exiled to Avignon, France. The 390 years from 919 to 1309 correspond to the 400 years in Jewish history.

Divided Kingdoms of East and West

919 —————————————— 1309

390

	Jewish History	Christian History
400	Preparation 2nd Adam	
210	Jewish Captivity	
400	Divided Kingdoms	Divided Kingdoms
120	United Kingdom	United Kingdom
400	Period of Judges	Period of Patriarchs
400	Persecution In Egypt	Persecution In Roman Empire

The King of France moved the papal court from Rome to Avignon to keep close watch over the Pope. This period of exile lasted from 1309 to 1377. This period of nearly 70 years is called the "Babylonian Captivity of the Church." After 70 years of exile in Babylon, the Israelites were freed and went home. After 70 years of papal exile, Christianity tried to rebuild itself. But there were troubles. At one time the church had three Popes. Order finally was established, but the church government fell into corruption again.

In Jewish history, after the Babylonian captivity and return, a reformer, Malachi appeared. After the papal captivity and return, the German, Martin Luther, another reformer appeared in 1517.

The Christian captivity and return lasted from 1309 to 1517, a total of 208 years. This matches the 210-year period of Jewish captivity and return.

Papal Captivity and Return

1309 ——————————————— 1517

208

	Jewish History	Christian History
400	Preparation 2nd Adam	
210	Jewish Captivity	Papal Captivity
400	Divided Kingdoms	Divided Kingdoms
120	United Kingdom	United Kingdom
400	Period of Judges	Period of Patriarchs
400	Persecution In Egypt	Persecution In Roman Empire

Four hundred years after Malachi came the period of the preparation for the Second Adam. Likewise, God spent 400 years after Martin Luther to prepare the world for the Third Adam.

1517-1917 PREPARATION FOR THE MESSIAH

When Adam and Eve fell, they became ignorant spiritually of God and ignorant of the workings of the physical world. Mankind is basically good and has throughout history been led by his basic good nature to overcome his ignorance. There is a gyroscope that is like a compass that constantly leads man to return to a close relationship with God by restoring his spiritual senses. In *Anne Frank: The Diary of a Young Girl* we read, "In spite of everything I still believe that people are good at heart. I can feel the suffering of millions and yet, if I look up at the heavens I think that it will all come out right and that peace and tranquility will return again."

Likewise there is a deep urge to find the scientific laws that govern this universe to restore the Third Blessing of dominion over creation. We are to live in harmony with nature and also in luxury, free of disease, hunger and suffering that have been unleashed by Satan since the Fall.

We are going to look at the dramatic advance by mankind to overcome ignorance in the last 400 years. God is the main force behind this because He wants the world prepared spiritually and physically for the new Messiah. God wants him to be accepted and heard the world over. We must not repeat the mistake the Israelites and Romans made 2000 years ago.

Jesus was only able to tell a few parables and was not given the time to speak in depth: "I have said these things to you in figures. The hour is coming when I shall no longer speak to you in figures but tell you plainly of the Father" (John 16:25).

The Third Adam will speak in clear language because God will have through education and in spirit raised mankind. God was devastated that the Israelites were not advanced enough to understand Jesus and were so low spiritually that they nailed him to a cross. God was not going to have this happen again. So the last 2000 years God has been working with Jesus and good spirit

men and women to raise mankind to a higher level spiritually and intellectually.

Jesus said that day will come when the Messiah will give all the truth: "I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. When the spirit of truth comes, he will guide you into all the truth" (John 16:12-13). The *Divine Principle* is "all the truth" that speaks "plainly of the Father."

Satan has also been hard at work these 400 years to thwart God's efforts. There has been such an advancement of knowledge, goodness, charity and spiritual values and yet at the same time there has been incredible brutality and suffering of so many millions and even billions of people, especially in the twentieth century. The 20th and 21st century is the final showdown in the battle between God and Satan.

The last 400 years can be divided into three periods each roughly lasting 130 years. In each period we will look at the development of the satanic side that we will call the Cain side, and we will follow the Abel or God's side.

To overcome mankind's ignorance of the external world, man's original nature has driven him to the study of science. This is why we see the advent of the Renaissance.

FIRST PERIOD

RENAISSANCE AND REFORMATION

RENAISSANCE (1517-1648)

The first period is divided into the Cain development of the Renaissance and the Abel development of the Reformation. The new burst of exploration and learning in the Renaissance had its roots in Hellenism. There was renewed interest in the ancient Greeks or Hellenic culture. The Greeks were not particularly religious, and men of the Renaissance, although they usually believed in God, were so preoccupied with their new discoveries

and the world around them that they concentrated more on the pleasures of this world unlike medieval men who went too far in concentrating on the future heaven. A major influence that also stirred more interest in the physical world was the effect of the many that went on the Crusades. Many found in the Near East fabulous cities with exotic foods and dress that diminished the impact of the Church that said this world was a vale of tears and not to be enjoyed. Some of the most famous Renaissance humanist writers are Petrarch, Boccaccio, Machiavelli, Shakespeare, Rabelais and Cervantes.

God supported the burst of creativity of the Renaissance that was the beginning of the modern world. God wanted man to be the Lord of Creation and to enjoy this earth, but He also wanted a balance of an understanding of the spirit too. God wanted man to be free of the chains of Satan. He created man with reason and a unique individuality. Unfortunately some people came to emphasize man's reason and individuality too much. They began to emphasize humanism over religion. This rise in humanism focused on the five physical senses and looked more to man's reason than to the value of visions, dreams, revelations and mysticism. These developments began to separate men from God. Satan was guiding this. Satan corrupted the legitimate use of material things in life. He promoted hedonism and the view that man is the center of the universe and not dependent on God.

God was successful in the Renaissance by giving man a better view of his body and the world. He inspired naturalness in the art of Michelangelo and others. God desired that man restore his self-esteem which Satan took away.

Man became excited about the world around him. Copernicus and Leonardo da Vinci made great discoveries. Galileo advanced astronomy. The telescope and microscope were invented.

Another invention God inspired was the printing press. Satan's tactic is ignorance and the suppression of truth and knowledge. God wanted the world educated unlike the Israelites who killed Jesus. To help reach the world God helped Martin Luther translate the *Bible* into German. Dante wrote in Italian, Chaucer and Wycliffe in English rather than the Latin that only a few could read.

AMERICA
God worked to begin the building of America. He sent the Pilgrims to America in 1620. They started the beautiful tradition of Thanksgiving. William Bradford wrote the classic *Of Plymouth Plantation* about these champions of God who started America on the road to capitalism, democracy, and freedom of religion. Roger Williams was befriended by the Pilgrims at Plymouth. Later he founded Providence, Rhode Island where he taught religious toleration.

600 YEARS
God was working, not only 400 years to prepare the world for the Messiah, but also for the last 600 years. The *Bible* says God created man on the sixth day. God prepared an environment for six periods of time and then Adam was born. The number six is the number for man and in God's providence of re-creation He starts a preparation period of six centuries before the Messiah is born. Six centuries before Jesus, God sent intellectual and spiritual leaders to elevate people to a higher spiritual level so they could more easily accept the Messiah when he came. It is not a coincidence that around 600 B.C. Confucius and Buddha came. The Greek civilization emerged about the sixth century B.C. God influenced it to raise man's understanding of the world through the arts and sciences.

Likewise, six centuries before the Third Adam was to be born, the 14th century, God raised mankind to prepare an environment for him to be accepted by starting the Renaissance in Italy and with the reformers, the English theologian John Wycliffe and the Czech religious thinker John Hus.

REFORMATION (1517-1648)
The Renaissance had its roots in ancient Greek Hellenic thought. This was basically a horizontal view of the world. The truer view is to see the world from a vertical viewpoint. The religious life is an Abel-view of life and the secular life is a Cain-view of life. The root of Western Civilization's religion is the ancient Hebrew culture called Hebraism.

While Satan was active corrupting the Renaissance, God was working to bring a better religious way of life by turning from Catholicism and siding with the Protestant Revolution—a revival

and improvement of Judeo-Christianity. The Messiah would come on the Protestant foundation.

Just as Malachi chastised the priesthood for its corruption, Martin Luther chastised the Roman Catholic Church for its corruption. To raise money to build St. Peters Cathedral in Rome, Pope Leo X gave traveling monks the right to sell indulgences or letters of pardon for sins committed. Luther was angry at this and other things so he wrote his complaints. In 1517 he posted his 95 theses on the door of the Wittenburg Church. He was excommunicated. Luther said everyone should have a direct relationship with God and tore the excommunication papers up in public and burned them.

Other leaders in the Protestant Revolution were Calvin and Zwingli. The Protestant Reformation led to actual war that lasted over 100 years ending with the Thirty Years' War which ended in 1648 with the Treaty of Westphalia in which Protestantism won in northern Europe.

Sun Myung Moon says, "Martin Luther sparked the Protestant Reformation, and significant reformers emerged within the Catholic ranks as well. Throughout Europe, righteous people determined to win liberation from the confinement of outmoded and abusive doctrines and practices. They wanted to worship God and Jesus, not the church as a worldly institution. The priesthood of all believers was the Protestant proclamation. Direct communication with God was their true desire. They helped God bring the world step by step closer to the ultimate goal. (*God's Warning to the World*)

When we say that there is a Cain and Abel side, it does not mean that Cain is all bad and Abel is all good. Those on the Abel side often make serious mistakes. For example, Calvin killed Servetus who tried to bring Unitarian thought to Christianity. Servetus was God's messenger to help Christianity improve by giving up the idea of the Trinity. Sadly, he was burned at the stake as a heretic.

SECOND PERIOD

ENLIGHTENMENT AND SPIRITUAL AWAKENING

ENLIGHTENMENT (1648-1789)

The next period is divided into the Cain development of the Enlightenment and the Abel development of Spiritual Awakening.

The Age of Enlightenment followed the Renaissance in focusing even more on the physical than the spiritual. Some of the main figures of the Enlightenment are: Descartes, Voltaire, Bacon, Rousseau, Hume and Paine. Their focus was on the earth and negating spirituality. They believed that we could primarily use our reason, science and politics to build a better world. Religion was seen as superstitious, irrational, too otherworldly, impractical and ascetic. By denying prayer and mystical feelings for God, they became too worldly and led mankind down the road to hedonism. They were right that the church was corrupt, but they threw the baby out with the bathwater.

They had total confidence and supreme faith in reason. This was also called the Age of Reason. They promoted a secular view of the world. The true view is a theistic view of the world.

Many became Deists who believed no one needed divine revelation and that the Creator set the universe in motion and left it to run according to the laws of nature that He had made. God became distant.

In this period God inspired such scientists as Isaac Newton, Ben Franklin and Lavoisier, the father of chemistry. God was preparing for the coming Industrial Revolution that would raise mankind out of drudgery so we could pursue spiritual growth.

SPIRITUAL AWAKENING (1648-1789)
The Abel view of life, the Great Spiritual Awakening, countered the Enlightenment. God inspired John and Charles Wesley, the founders of the Methodist Church; George Fox, the founder of

Quakers; Emmanuel Swedenborg, who revealed much about the spirit world; and Philip Spener, the leader of the Pietist movement.

The fiery evangelism of George Whitefield, Jonathan Edwards and others started the Great Awakening, a movement of revivals throughout America.

William Penn, the founder of the state of Pennsylvania wrote *The Great Case of Liberty of Conscience* in 1670, in which he argued for religious toleration.

God also worked through the humanities with some writers such as Wordsworth and Coleridge. These and other romantic poets heightened man's sensitivity.

THIRD PERIOD

RIGHT vs. LEFT

IDEOLOGY OF THE RIGHT (1789 - 1917)

In the third period leading up to the second advent of the Messiah, God and Satan battled for the minds and hearts of people. God worked to elevate mankind to a high spiritual, intellectual and economical level. Satan worked to deceive mankind with his false ideology. God inspired the making of America to be a beacon of light for the world in the 19th century as a role model for democracy and capitalism. It was to be a land of freedom. America pioneered religious freedom. Many times it failed to be perfect and persecuted religious minorities and made other serious mistakes but compared with much of the rest of the world it has been in the Abel position. God worked to raise America to be His champion to teach and inspire the rest of the world to become a true Christian nation that was pure and would not persecute religion. The *Constitution of the United States* was a tremendous breakthrough for mankind. God worked to make the world safe for the Messiah to speak and for the people to be intelligent enough to listen and accept.

The Abel side of the second period ended with the American Revolution in 1776 and George Washington becoming the first President in 1789. God worked to build America to become the leader of the Free World that had the values of being democratic, not totalitarian; Judeo-Christian, not atheistic; defensive, not offensive. God worked through the Founding Fathers of America to create a nation of freedom and peaceful exchange of political power. He sided with the North in fighting against the slavery in the South in the Civil War.

Sun Myung Moon teaches:

> Let us examine the people who led the independence movement in this country in 1776. Those freedom fighters were traitors in the eyes of the British Crown. But God could use these traitors as His instruments, as His people, and through them He conceived and built the best nation upon the face of the earth.
>
> George Washington, Commander-in-Chief of the Continental Army, tasted the bitterness of defeat in many, many battles. When he finally faced the last heartbreaking winter at Valley Forge, he was serious. I am sure George Washington prayed like this: "God, it is You who led our people out of Europe and brought us over here to the New World; You don't want us to repeat the history of Europe. You liberated us and gave us freedom. You don't want to see the mistakes in Europe repeated in this land. Let me give you my pledge. I will build one nation under God." Thus George Washington made his battle God's battle, and therefore the victory won was a victory for God.
>
> I know that this victory and the independence of America came because God accepted George Washington's prayer, along with the prayers of many other Americans. God knew that His champions would work for His new nation. But George Washington had nothing to work with,

and the British army had everything—power, authority, tradition, and equipment. They were proud of their military strength. The American Continental Army had no ammunition and few soldiers. George Washington finally had one weapon only: Faith in God. I believe that George Washington's position paralleled David's in his fight against the giant Goliath. David won his battle in the name of the Lord. George Washington won his battle in the name of God. They both let God vanquish their foe. Each of them put his whole heart, his whole being, his whole sacrificial spirit into the battle, and won.

It is a significant fact that throughout history, God's people could never be blessed on their own homeland. God moves them out of their homeland and settles them on foreign soil, and there they can become a people and a nation of God. True to this pattern, the American people journeyed in faith out of their homelands, came across the ocean to the New World, and here received God's blessing. God had a definite plan for America. He needed to have this nation prosper as one nation under God. With God, nothing is impossible. So out of the realm of impossibility the independence of America became a fact, and upon its foundation, great prosperity came.

The British army fought for their king. For them, the British Crown was supreme. The American army fought for their King. God was their only King, and He alone was supreme. The New World was pioneered in the name of God. America is called "the land of opportunity." Here is the soil on which people find opportunity in God.

The Christian tradition in America is a most beautiful thing for foreigners to behold when they come to this country. I learned that every

day your Congress is convened in prayer. Your President is sworn into office by putting his hand on the Bible. One day I visited a small prayer room in your Capitol building. When your leaders have grave decisions to make, they come to this place, kneel humbly before God and ask His help. There is a stained glass window depicting George Washington on his knees in prayer. Here I saw the true greatness of America. From the highest echelons of Congress way down to the rustic customs of the countryside, evidence of dependence upon God can be seen everywhere in America.

In this respect America is a unique nation. Even your money, the bills and coins, are impressed with such a beautiful inscription, "IN GOD WE TRUST." No other nation does such a thing. Then whose money is it, your money? Is it American money? No, it is God's money. Every bill or coin says so. You are the stewards, and God has deposited His wealth in your hands. Yes, this nation is not the American nation, it is God's nation. And such a nation exists for the entire world, not just for America herself. Yes, America was formed as a new nation, a new Christian nation under a new tradition. The shackles of old traditions fell away in America. You must want to build upon this foundation a new nation under God.

God's purpose is the salvation of the world and all humankind. Today in America, therefore, you must not think that you have such wealth because you yourselves are great. We must humbly realize that the blessing of God came to America with the purpose of making it possible for God to use this nation as His instrument in saving the world. If America betrays God, where can God go? If America rejects God, where can God go to fulfill His aim? Do you want to let him try to go to the Communist world? To

> underdeveloped countries? God wants to have America as His base, America as His champion. And America was begun in the sacrificial spirit pursuing God's purpose. America must consummate her history in the same sacrificial spirit for God's purpose. Then America will endure forever!
>
> Let me compare two striking examples. The people who came to America—to North America—came seeking God and freedom of worship. The dominant motive of the first settlers was God. When they came for God, they not only found God, but they also found freedom and wealth. At the same time many people went to South America. Their dominant motivation was to find gold. South America is a fertile land, no less than the North American continent. But when the colonists' motivation was gold, they could find neither gold, nor God, nor freedom. And the South American countries remain relatively underdeveloped nations.
>
> The United States of America is the miracle of modern history. You have built the most powerful nation in history in a short time. Was this miracle possible only because you worked hard? Certainly you did work hard. However, hard work is not explanation enough. If God had not been the principal Partner, creating today's America would have been impossible. God played a prime role in American history, and this He wants America to know. (10-21-73)

God spoke through John Locke who wrote the classic statement for absolute freedom of religion in *A Letter Concerning Toleration.* Thomas Jefferson championed freedom of religion in the *Bill of Rights* and *The Statute of Virginia for Religious Freedom*. These are eloquent defenses of freedom from government regulation.

LAISSEZ-FAIRE CAPITALISM

God worked to build America to be the greatest military, economic and religious empire to embrace and protect the Messiah. America was revolutionary in not only pioneering religious freedom but also laissez-faire capitalism that brought great wealth. It is not a coincidence that Adam Smith published *The Wealth of Nations* in 1776. He was right in saying there is an "invisible hand" that works in limited government and free enterprise to give prosperity. America was to be a model Christian nation with large families that lived by biblical family values.

In the last 400 years God has worked to create an advanced spiritual and physical environment for the Messiah. In the 140-year period from the American Revolution to the First World War, there was tremendous advancement in every area of life. Economically, God inspired the Industrial Revolution to raise people out of poverty and give them the opportunity to become educated and be prepared to understand the Messiah when he came.

THE GREAT COMMISSION

During this period God inspired missionaries to spread Christianity to every continent in the world. The last thing Jesus said was that Christians have to witness to the world. He said, "Go, and make disciples of all nations" (Matthew 28:19). God wants his people to witness because he uses people to speak for him. He wants everyone to be saved from Satan's bondage and come to know God's love for every person and God's dream of an Ideal World. God wants every person to hear about the Messiah. A true follower of the Messiah proselytizes the Good News.

IDEOLOGY OF THE LEFT (1789 - 1917)

Satan worked during this period by introducing his lies with his champions such as Karl Marx, Frederick Engels, Elizabeth Cady Stanton, Susan B. Anthony and Charles Darwin. They were against the *Bible* and destructive to religious, political and family order. Theirs is the ideology of chaos. Marx wrote the *Communist Manifesto* in 1848, and the same year Elizabeth Cady Stanton wrote the *Seneca Falls Declaration* in New York that pioneered feminist thought to weaken families by rebelling against the traditional family. The core of Communist thought is feminism. Friedrich Engels wrote in his book *Origin of the Family, Private*

Property and the State that women are slaves in a traditional family and must leave the home to work in the marketplace. Another writer that weakened the belief in the *Bible* was Darwin's lie of evolution that influenced many to reject the idea of a Creator.

The Cain side of the second period ended with the French Revolution in 1789. Unlike the American Revolution it was not led in the spirit of God. The people marched into Notre Dame and enthroned the Goddess of Reason. The French Revolution laid the seeds for the use of violence by dictators to resolve differences with its Reign of Terror that culminated in Napoleon. It was this satanic atmosphere that Marx picked up when he met Engels in Paris in the 1840s. Together they wrote Satan's bible, the *Communist Manifesto*, which presented Satan's dream of his ideal world of big brother government.

SOCIALISM IS A LIE

Some Christians were led by Satan to twist their idealism to believe in socialism. Charles Kingsley started a movement called Christian Socialism in 1848. Robert Owen became famous for teaching the lie that socialism brings equality and prosperity. Socialism is the ultimate false ideology. It is centralized power that results in poverty. God is for decentralized power. Owen's socialist utopian communities were unsuccessful because socialism is not in line with God's laws of the universe. (For more on this see my book: *Good Values.)*

1917

The third period ends with the First World War and the beginning of Satan's champion nation, the Soviet Union, in 1917 led by Lenin. Its ideology was Marxist-Leninism or Communism which is consistent with socialism, feminism, atheism, statism and secular liberalism.

America was God's champion. It led the Free World and championed the values of free enterprise, private property, conservative traditional family values, and belief in God and Christianity.

The seeds of Communism and the Free World were sown at the crucifixion of Jesus. The thief on the right accepted Jesus and foreshadowed the Free World that even politically is called "Right." The thief on the left denied Jesus and foreshadowed Communism, called the "Left." We read in the *Bible*: "When the son of man comes in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit on the throne of his glory. All the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate people one from another as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats, and he will put the sheep at his right hand and the goats at the left" (Matt. 25:31-33).

The Free World says, "There is a God. We accept our shepherd." The Communist world says, "God does not exist." They deny their master. The Free World is symbolized by sheep; the Communist world by goats. There are deep differences between the Free World and the Communist World. The most important battle between them is not physical, but mental. It is an ideological war.

THREE PERIODS OF THE 400 YEAR PREPARATION FOR THE SECOND MESSIAH

1789-1917	Completion	Free Enterprise Conservatives Traditional Family Values God Centered Spiritual Church	Socialism Liberals Feminism Atheism Secular State
1648-1789	Growth	Spiritual Awakenings	Enlightenment
1517-1648	Formation	Reformation	Renaissance
		ABEL	**CAIN**

Four hundred years after the reformer Malachi, Jesus, the Second Adam, was born. Likewise, approximately 400 years after Martin Luther, the Third Adam was born. Four hundred years after 1517 is 1917. God has worked to prepare the world for the new Messiah in the 20th century, and Satan has worked to destroy him.

Preparation For 3rd Adam

Luther 1517 ——————————— 1917 3rd Adam

400

	Jewish History	Christian History
400	Preparation 2nd Adam	Preparation 3rd Adam
210	Jewish Captivity	Papal Captivity
400	Divided Kingdoms	Divided Kingdoms
120	United Kingdom	United Kingdom
400	Period of Judges	Period of Patriarchs
400	Persecution In Egypt	Persecution In Roman Empire

2000 YEAR CHRISTIAN HISTORY

Persecution In Roman Empire	Period of Patriarchs	United Kingdom	Divided Kingdoms	Papal Captivity	Preparation for 3rd Adam
400	400	120	400	210	400

PARALLELS OF HISTORY

Adam	Noah	United Generations Abraham Isaac Jacob	Divided Brothers	Jacob's Exile and Return	Preparation For Egypt
1600	400	120	40	21	40
Persecution In Egypt Jacob Moses	Period of Judges	United Kingdom Saul David Solomon	Divided Kingdoms North & South	Jewish Exile and Return Malachi	Preparation for the Messiah Jesus
400	400	120	400	210	400
Persecution In Roman Empire Jesus Theodocius	Period of Patriarchs	United Kingdom Charlemagne Son Grandsons	Divided Kingdoms East & West	Papal Exile and Return Luther	Preparation for Second Messiah Sun Myung Moon
400	400	120	400	210	400

LAST DAYS — END TIMES

Many Christians believe that in the Last Days or End Times various and radical changes beyond our imagination will occur, as some biblical verses literally say. But the *Bible* is speaking to us in symbols. Sun Myung Moon teaches:

> The end of the world is the moment in history when God ends this history of evil and begins His new age. It is the crossroads of the old history of evil and the new history of good.
>
> In light of this definition, why does the Bible predict extraordinary heavenly phenomena as signs of the end of the world? Will the things predicted really occur? The Bible says: "Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light, and the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken." (Matt. 24:29)
>
> What does this mean? What are we to expect?
>
> First of all, please rest assured that these things will not happen literally. God will not destroy anything in the universe. God often expresses His truth in symbols and parables, and these biblical sayings will be accomplished symbolically. Second, God has no reason to destroy the universe. It is not the universe, but man and woman who have committed sin. Only we deviated from the original plan of God's creation. Why should God destroy the animals, or the plants, or anything in creation which fulfilled His purpose as He intended? God would not destroy those innocent things.
>
> I want you to understand that when we say "end of the world," it does not mean the destruction of the physical world, but the end of the old ways and beginning of a new human era. The

> Bible therefore says, "A generation goes, and a generation comes, but the earth remains forever." (Eccl. 1:4) In *Revelation* we read: "Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away." (Rev. 21:1) That new heaven and new earth refers to the coming of a new history of God, a time of new dominion. After you buy a house, won't you move in your family and possessions? Then you will say that you have a new home, and you are the new master of the house. In the same way, when men of God occupy this universe, it will become a new heaven and a new earth. (10-28-73)

What does the *Bible* mean when it says that the earth will be destroyed when the Messiah comes? II Peter 3:10 says "and the elements will be dissolved with fire and the earth ... will be burned up." But other passages in the *Bible* say the earth will not be destroyed: "A generation goes, and a generation comes, but the earth remains forever" (Eccl. 1:4).

If we take the *Bible* literally we have a contradiction. But the *Bible* is not contradictory. Therefore the *Bible* must be symbolic. The "earth" we read of in Ecclesiastes that will remain forever is the physical earth, the planet that we live on. We should read this passage literally.

The "earth" described in II Peter is symbolic for something else. Because earth or dirt is lowly, it is used to symbolize evil, falsehood and hell. Second Peter is prophesying that all the evils of Satan will be destroyed.

Second Peter also says the earth or evil will be destroyed by fire. Fire is also symbolic. James 3:6 says, "... the tongue is a fire." Tongue means words of God. In Jeremiah 23:29 we read, "Is not my word like fire," declares the Lord." The Messiah will judge with words of truth. Malachi prophesied that when Jesus came the world would burn up "like an oven ... all ... will be burned up..." (Malachi 4:1). Jesus said, "I came to cast a fire on earth; and would that it were already kindled" (Luke 12:49). Did Jesus burn anything up when he came? No. He judged with words, not fire.

JUDGMENT

In the following excerpt from a speech Father explains judgment this way:

> Then how can we know clearly the path of God? Let us examine the history of God's providence. Today we are anticipating the end of the world. God has made previous attempts to end the evil world. For example, the time of Noah: That was a crossroads in history, when God wanted to bring an end to evil and begin the world of goodness. Noah was the central figure chosen in God's dispensation. To better understand Noah's mission and the meaning of the end of the world, we want to know more fully how the evil history began.
>
> In the Garden of Eden, God gave Adam and Eve a commandment. That commandment was the word of God. Then Satan approached and enticed them with a lie. And that lie was the word of evil. Adam and Eve were in a position to choose between the two words: The truth was on one side, and a lie was on the other. They chose the lie.
>
> Because this was the process of the fall, at the end of the world God will give humankind truth. The words of God will come through His prophet. When people accept the words of God they will then pass from death to life, because truth leads to life. Human beings died in a lie, and in truth we will be reborn.
>
> Therefore judgment comes by words. These words of God's judgment are revealed by His chosen prophets. This is the process of the ending of the world. Those who obey and listen to the new word of truth shall have life. Those who deny the word will continue to live in death.

God chose Noah to declare the word. Noah's announcement was, "The flood is coming. The salvation is the ark." The people could have saved themselves by listening to Noah's words. However, the people treated Noah as if he were a crazy man, and they perished—because they opposed the word of God. According to the Bible, only the eight people of Noah's immediate family became passengers on the ark. Only these eight believed, and only these eight were saved.

God had said to Noah, "I have determined to make an end of all flesh; for the earth is filled with violence through them; behold. I will destroy them with the earth." (Gen. 6:13) Did this actually happen? We know the evil people perished but was the physical world demolished in the process? No. This passage was not literally fulfilled, and God did not destroy the earth. God did eradicate the people and abolish evil sovereignty, leaving only the good people of Noah's family. This was God's way to begin to restore the original world of goodness through Noah.

If God had fully consummated His restoration at that time, then we would have heard no more about the end of the world. Once the perfect world of goodness is realized, another end of the world is not necessary. Nothing could interfere with the eternal reign of God's perfect kingdom.

But the very fact that we anticipate the end of the world today is proof that the providence did not thus succeed at the time of Noah. What happened to Noah after the flood should be fully explained, but I cannot spend too much time on that subject tonight. To make a long story short, once again, sin crept into Noah's family through his son, Ham. God's flood judgment was thereby

nullified, and evil human history continued, leading to the time of Jesus Christ.

With the coming of Christ, God again attempted to end the world. Jesus came to start the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. Thus, the first words Jesus spoke were, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand." Indeed, the time of Jesus Christ's ministry was the time for the end of the world. That great and terrible day was prophesied by Malachi, about 400 years before the birth of Jesus: "For behold, the day comes, burning like an oven, when all the arrogant and all evil-doers will be stubble; the day that comes shall burn them up, says the Lord of hosts, so that it will leave them neither root nor branch." (Mal. 4: 1)

Was the judgment of Jesus Christ done by literal fire? Did the day come at the time of Jesus when everything literally turned to ashes? No, we know it did not. Since these things prophesied did not literally happen at that time, some people say that such prophecy must have been meant for the time of the Second Advent. But this cannot be the case.

John the Baptist came to the world as the last prophet; Jesus said: ". . . all the prophets and the law prophesied until John." (Matt. 11: 13) The coming of John the Baptist should have brought to a close prophecy and the Mosaic Law. This is what Jesus said would happen. The purpose of all prophecy before Jesus was to prepare for his coming, and to indicate what was to be fulfilled up to the time of his coming. These prophecies are not for the time of the Lord at the second advent. God sent His son Jesus into the world, intending full salvation of spirit and flesh to be accomplished. The second coming was made necessary only by lack of consummation at the time of the first coming.

Why then was the time of Jesus the time for the end of the world? We already know the answer. It is because Jesus came to end evil sovereignty and bring forth God's sovereignty upon the earth. This was the end of the Old Testament Age and the beginning of the age of the New Testament. Jesus brought the new words of truth.

How did the people receive the gospel which he brought? They did not receive and honor his teachings. They were prisoners to the letter of the Old Testament and could not perceive the presence of the spirit of God in the new revelation. It is ironic that Jesus fell victim to the very prophecies that were to testify to him as the Son of God. By the letter of the Mosaic Law he was judged an offender. Blindly his teachings and love were rejected.

NEW COMMANDMENT OF GOD

At the time of Jesus many learned people, many religious leaders and many people prominent in society who were well-versed in the Law and the Prophets were waiting for a Messiah. How happy they would have been to have their Messiah recite the Old Testament exactly, syllable by syllable and word by word! But Jesus Christ did not come to repeat the Mosaic Law. He came to pronounce a new commandment of God. People missed the whole point. And Jesus was accused. His opponents said to him, "We stone you for no good work, but for blasphemy; because you, being a man, make yourself God." (John 10:33)

The Bible states: "And they reviled him [one of Jesus' disciples], saying, 'You are his disciple, but we are disciples of Moses. We know that God has spoken to Moses, but as for this man, we do not know where he comes from.'" (John 9:28-29) This was the way people looked at

Jesus. Many who diligently obeyed the letter of the Mosaic Law disobeyed Jesus Christ. The most devout of the religious leaders were the first ones to be judged by Jesus' words and resurrection.

JUDGMENT BY FIRE

Now at this time I would like to clarify the meaning of "judgment by fire." We read in the New Testament: "...the heavens will be kindled and dissolved, and the elements will melt with fire!" (11 Peter 3:12) How can this fantastic prophecy come true? Will it happen literally? No. The statement has symbolic meaning. God would not destroy His earth, His stars and all creation without realizing His ideal on earth. If He did so, then God would become the God of defeat. And who would be His conqueror? It would be Satan. This can never happen to God.

Even on our human level, once we determine to do something, we see it through to its completion. How much more so will God almighty accomplish His will. When God speaks of judgment by fire in the Bible, He does not mean he will bring judgment by literal flames. The significant meaning is a symbolic one.

Let us now consider another Biblical passage which speaks of fire. Jesus proclaimed, "I came to cast fire upon the earth; and would that it were already kindled!" (Luke 12:49) Did Jesus throw literal, blazing fire about? Of course not.

The fire in the Bible is symbolic. It stands for the word of God. This is why James 3:6 states, "the tongue is a fire" The tongue speaks the word, and the word is from God.

Jesus himself said, "He who rejects me and does not receive my sayings has a judge; the word

that I have spoken will be his judge on the last day." (John 12:48)

In contemporary society, the word of the court executes judgment. The word is the law. In this universe, God is in the position of judge. Jesus came as the advocate with authority to oppose Satan, the prosecutor of human beings. Satan accuses us with his words, but these are false charges. Jesus champions the cause of believers, and his standard is the word of truth. God pronounces the sentence: His love is the standard, and love is His word. There is no difference between the earthly court and the heavenly court, in that both conduct their trials by words, not by fire.

So the world will not be burned up by literal fire when it is judged. The Bible states "the Lord Jesus will slay him [the evil one] with the breath of his mouth . . ." (II Thess. 2:8). The word of God is the breath of his mouth. Jesus came to slay the wicked by the word of God, and ". . . he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips he shall slay the wicked." (Is. 11:4) What then is the "rod of his mouth?" We take this symbol to mean his tongue — through which he speaks the Word of God.

Let's resolve this point completely. Look to where Jesus was instructing the people: "Truly, truly, I say to you, he who hears my word and believes him who sent me, has eternal life; he does not come into judgment, but has passed from death to life." (John 5:24) We pass from death to life through words of truth. God will not send you the Messiah to burn you up. He will not send you the Messiah to set your houses afire or destroy your society. But if we reject the Word of God spoken by the Lord, we leave no

choice open except to be condemned by judgment. Here is the reason why.

> In the beginning God created human beings and the universe by His Word—the logos. Man and woman denied the Word of God and fell. Spiritual death has reigned ever since. Through His salvation work, God has been recreating us. We fell by disobedience to God's Word, and we shall be recreated by obedience to the same Word of God. The Word of God is given by the Lord. Accepting the Word brings life out of death. Such death is the hell in which we live. Thus the Word of God is the judge, and it will bring upon you a far more profound effect than the hottest flames. (*God's Warning to the World*)

NO FIERY HELL

Christianity has also mistakenly interpreted the *Bible* to mean that in the Last Days only Christians would go to heaven and the rest of mankind, the pagans, will go to hell. Some Christians teach that while those in hell are being tormented forever, those who are in heaven will gradually forget those who are screaming forever in pain in hell. To the question, "How could I be happy in heaven, knowing that some of my loved ones may not be there with me" Billy Graham speaks for many Christians when he says at his website (billygraham.org), "Many people have wondered how those in heaven could ever be truly happy, especially with the knowledge that unsaved loved ones were in hell." He says Christians in heaven will never feel "sorrow" but he doesn't know how they can be so happy when their loved ones and countless others are suffering forever in hell. He says, "We do not know the full answer." The *Divine Principle* gives the full answer.

Many Christians believe that the majority of mankind will be tortured in a fiery hell. The classic statement of this belief is Jonathan Edward's "Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God." He preached that many people are damned forever to a "fiery pit" because they deserved it for being incorrigible. It is "Divine justice" for wicked sinners to experience eternal conscious punishment. He said, "O sinner! Consider the fearful danger you

are in: it is a great furnace of wrath, a wide and bottomless pit, full of the fire of wrath ... flames of divine wrath 'the fierceness and wrath of God' the fury of God! the fierceness of Jehovah! Oh, how dreadful that must be!

"...you must suffer it to all eternity. There will be no end to this exquisite horrible misery. When you look forward, you shall see a long forever, a boundless duration before you, which will swallow up your thoughts, and amaze your soul; and you will absolutely despair of ever having any deliverance, any end, any mitigation, any rest at all. You will know certainly that you must wear out long ages, millions of millions of ages, in wrestling and conflicting with this almighty merciless vengeance."

There are many Christians who couldn't imagine such a place anymore than they could imagine themselves torturing their worst enemy by burning them. It is barbaric, cruel, and sadistic. There are also many Christians who are not confident about what the *Bible* says. Billy Graham was the most famous evangelist of the 20th century. He said, "I'm not sure about literal fire" (*Time* 9/15/93). Sun Myung Moon confidently teaches there is no literal fire.

Second Peter 3:9 says, "The Lord is not slow about his promise as some count slowness, but is forbearing toward you, not wishing that any should perish, but that all should reach repentance." Dostoyevsky said, "I am convinced that the only Hell which exists is the inability to love."

This gruesome idea that most of mankind will roast eternally in a fiery hell along with other incorrect views of God has kept most of the world from accepting Jesus. Most people simply cannot believe that if "God is love" (I John 4:8) He could never allow people to be tormented forever. And they are correct. An eternal God of goodness cannot exist eternally with an eternal chamber of horrors.

In the Parable of the Lost Sheep Jesus taught that God loves every human being and will not rest until each and every person is found and restored home to him. When Jesus said there was a hell where there is eternal fire he meant not that people would go there but

that evil would be banished by the fire of truth forever and never enter the earth again. What kind of god would allow for some of his children to literally be punished in a fire for eternity? God is a God of forgiveness. Jesus said forgive not just seven times but seven times seventy. It does not matter how horrible a crime or crimes any individual makes. He or she will ultimately be restored and live in the Kingdom of Heaven. Evil and suffering cannot exist forever or else God is not a God of love and almighty.

It is not true justice to condemn anyone to eternal punishment for crimes committed in 70 or so years on earth—no matter how terrible the crimes. Man will ultimately repent and come back to God, and God will embrace everyone. God will forgive all mankind and every person will forgive all those who trespassed against him. We are fallen and underestimate the love of God.

When Jesus said, for example, in Matt. 5:22 that there is a "hell of fire" and in Mark 9:45: "And if your foot causes you to sin, cut it off; it is better for you to enter life lame than with two feet to be thrown into hell", he was not speaking of people being roasted eternally in some fiery torture chamber anymore than he was advocating people to cut off their feet. The word "hell" in these and other quotes is translated from the Hebrew word Gehenna. Many *Bible*s even give a footnote explaining this. What is Gehenna? In the Hebrew Scriptures, Gehenna is "the valley of Hinnom." Hinnom was the name of the valley just outside the walls of Jerusalem where the ancient Israelites had at one time sacrificed their children in fire. Second Kings 23:10 tells of King Josiah ending this horrible practice and Gehenna became a huge garbage dump. During the time of Jesus Gehenna was still Jerusalem's garbage dump. Fires were kept burning there and brimstone (sulfur) was used to burn the garbage.

When Jesus spoke of the city's garbage dump they knew he meant evil will be destroyed, not people. God had stopped the burning of people alive long ago. Evil people are not to be literally burned but evil itself will be destroyed eternally. Even Satan will not be tormented. We must read Rev. 20:10 symbolically, not literally. Satan will be restored but all evil will be destroyed forever; falsehood will stand in the judgment of truth forever: "... and the devil who had deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and

brimstone where the beast and the false prophet were, and they will be tormented day and night for ever and ever."

Christians are a minority in the world. How can they be admired when they think they are special people of God who have the privilege to live forever in heaven while the rest of mankind is doomed to eternal hell? Many Christians believe that Jesus is coming again to lift them up in the air and leave the rest of the world to be consumed in fire on that judgment day. How can the majority of mankind respect people like that? Every person, including Satan and his angels will eventually be restored and live eternally in the Kingdom of Heaven. John 3:16 says, "For God so loved the world that he gave his only Son." God loves the whole world, and God will not rest until everyone is restored.

HUMAN HISTORY HAS A GOAL

After a lifetime of study the historians Will and Ariel Durant wrote a book called *The Lessons of History*. They came to some very wrong conclusions about God and the direction of history. They write, "Does history support a belief in God? If by God we mean not the creative vitality of nature but a supreme being intelligent and benevolent, the answer must be a reluctant negative." They conclude, "If history supports any theology this would be ... dualism ... a good spirit and an evil spirit battling for control of the universe and men's souls." They say Christianity assures its "followers that the good spirit would win in the end." But the Durants say that may not happen because "the universe has no prejudice in favor of Christ or against Genghis Khan." We have learned in the *Divine Principle* that this view is what Satan wants us to believe: that there is no hope for an ideal world, and we are doomed to an eternity of war. But God exists. He will never give up. Those who don't know the *Principle* do not know who God is. Many imagine God sitting on a glorious throne enjoying life. In the *Bible* we read of God's sorrow and frustration over mankind's rebelliousness (Gen. 6:6, I Sam. 15:11, Isa. 1:2-4).

The truth is that God agonizes over our situation day and night, year after year, century after century. He is determined to win back this world, and He will. Even we desire to see things through to completion once we decide to do something. God is far more determined. We read of God's absolute determination to achieve

His goal in Isaiah 46:11 when God says, “I have spoken, and I will bring it to pass; I have planned, and I will do it.”

The history of mankind has been a battle between God and Satan. God will ultimately win. History will ultimately favor Christ, not Genghis Khan or Communism or any other evil. The world is not going to continue to be a dualistic nightmare. We can have hope of an ideal world.

LAST DAYS — THE 20th CENTURY

The time of the coming of the Messiah is called the Last Days. It doesn’t mean the last days of the earth, but the last days of evil. Mankind is basically good, but has inherited sin and ignorance of the spirit world, so mankind is influenced both by Satan and God.

There is more suffering in the Last Days than at any time. It is an intense time of turmoil and confusion. The following are some aspects of the Last Days:

WARS, FAMINES, EARTHQUAKES

1. “And you will hear of wars and rumors of wars” (Matt. 24:6). The wars of the 20th century have been more widespread, devastating and frequent than any time in history. In Matt. 24:7 we read, “There will be famines and earthquakes in various places.” There have been many famines and earthquakes in the 20th century. For decades leading up to the year 2000 over 40,000 children died every day of hunger and disease. The weather has been dramatic in devastation with floods, tornadoes, hurricanes and earthquakes.

HEDONISM

2. The Last Days will be a time of secular selfishness, pleasure seeking and rebellion: “You must understand this, that in the last days distressing times will come. For people will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, arrogant, abusive, disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, unholy, inhuman, implacable, slanderers, profligates, brutes, haters of good, treacherous, reckless, swollen with conceit, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God” (Second Timothy 3:1-4). Aren’t most people lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God?

Matthew 24:37-38 says it will be like the time of Noah when people were not very spiritual and centered on the flesh: "For as the days of Noah were, so also will be the coming of the Son of Man. For as in the days before the flood, they were eating and drinking...." Gluttony is rampant in the wealthier nations as seen in the epidemic of obesity and heart disease from clogged arteries. Satan is behind the efforts to keep people from being disciplined with food that he twists into becoming one of his major temptations and addictions.

ILLICIT SEX GLORIFIED

The world is filled with immorality and selfishness. At the end of the twentieth century billions of people are addicted to watching TV and movies that glorify premarital sex and homosexuality. Sun Myung Moon speaks strongly against our immoral culture that thinks abstinence is unhealthy and free love is normal. The Last Days are a time of complete chaos and confusion, and the Messiah comes to bring complete order and purity.

PEACE MOVEMENTS

3. There will be a naiveté to evil by many who will advocate peace, without understanding that we cannot negotiate and coexist with evil. "When they say, 'There is peace and safety,' then sudden destruction will come upon them, as labor pains come upon a pregnant woman, and there will be no escape!" (I Thess. 5:3). A perfect example of this is Chamberlain's sincere but naive act of flying to Munich and signing a worthless piece of paper with Hitler in 1938. A year later there was war. The peace marchers and nuclear freeze movement are naive and unwittingly encouraging the evil nations of this world.

Sun Myung Moon teaches, "The current nuclear freeze movement here in America and Europe has an extremely naive way of thinking; they have no understanding of the true nature of communism. Satan always attacks as soon as he sees that the enemy is weakened.

"The *Divine Principle* is not only traditional it is also logical and scientific. There can never be perfection when ignorance exists; ignorance only breeds more ignorance, mistakes, and darkness. The Unification Church is not bringing more ignorance to the

world; it is bringing the truth, with a 20th century scientific viewpoint to back it up." (11-5-83)

WORLD GOVERNMENT

There are many Christians who believe that God does not want a unified world. Christians look only to the afterlife as being a place where Christians will live happily ever after and they will forget the billions of people who are doomed to hell. It is a serious flaw in Christian theology that sees any attempt to world unity as satanic. Arnold Toynbee often spoke of the world moving to unity. He said, "Living together as a single family is the only future mankind can have now that Western technology has simultaneously annihilated distance and invented the atomic bomb ... the alternative to the destruction of the human race is a worldwide fusion of all the tribes, nations, civilizations, and religions of man." Billy Graham and other Christian leaders do not know that the Messiah comes to unify mankind on earth.

ONE RELIGION

God is guiding the world to unity. Arnold Toynbee is the most famous historian of the 20th century. He found 28 cultural spheres in history. God has worked to decrease that number and now there are four: Judea-Christianity, Islam, Hinduism and Buddhism. The Messiah comes on the foundation of Christianity but will unite all religions into God's family where there is one religion. Toynbee predicted there would be world unification under one government brought about by a new religion. He wrote that a nation from the Far East would be the unifier of mankind.

FALSE PROPHETS

4. One indication of telling when the Third Adam would be born is that there will be a number of men saying they are the savior of the world: "'... what will be the sign of your coming and the end of the age?' Jesus answered them, 'Beware that no one leads you astray. For many will come in my name, saying 'I am the Messiah!' and they will lead many astray" (Matt. 24:3-5).

The word "astray" is also translated as "deceive." Christians should not see that efforts for world unity are bad. Some Christians look at such efforts as the United Nations as evil. They are not. There is a deep desire in mankind to form a one world government and religion that should not be suppressed. The

Messiah does not come just for a few Christians, but to build an ideal world. Satan causes disunity. Efforts at bringing unification are of God if they are peaceful. The Communist and Socialist dream of world unity is based on force. That is evil. The Messiah wants unity based on peaceful, nonviolent, democratic means.

The Last Days will be a time of much spiritual phenomena and awakening. There will be spiritual longing as well as a decline in conventional religion. The 20th century is that time predicted in Acts 2:17 where it says, "And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh, and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams." This explains why there are so much spiritual phenomena today. Satan sometimes twists these phenomena and leads people into insanity, crime, suicide and following possessed, evil people like Hitler or Jim Jones.

Jesus said: "And many false prophets will arise and lead many astray" (Matt. 24:11). We see a multitude of gurus in the 20th century who claim to have the truth. These men who receive the revelation saying, "You are the Lord" are not aware that they are hearing not that they are the Lord of the Second Advent, but they along with everyone are to be lords of creation when they reach perfection. These men are partially spiritually open but because they have not reached perfection their communication and understanding of God is limited. These people communicate at different levels of spirit world according to their different spiritual development, intellect, environment, etc.

The Lord of the Second Advent will have total understanding of God's heart and will. He will lead a true life and be able to answer the fundamental questions of life. The center of God's providence is Judeo-Christianity, and he must come on that foundation.

Christianity is divided in hundreds of different denominations—differing in doctrine and practices. Because Christians interpret the *Bible* differently, the Messiah comes to clarify the *Bible* through revelations from God so that Christianity can be united into a higher dimension. God is beyond denominationalism. The Messiah will teach Christianity to transcend its differences and ascend to a higher level. The Messiah must first bring unity to

world Christianity. When those men who feel they are the Messiah become really humble they will then realize they do not have these qualifications and will direct their followers to the true Messiah and will, themselves, follow the Messiah. Until they do they are false Christ's who cannot lead their followers or anyone else into the ideal world.

ANTICHRIST

5. Sun Myung Moon speaks about the meaning of antichrist. He reveals one of the reasons "why Jesus was not accepted as the Messiah" is because:

> …. Two thousand years ago the people expected the Son of God to come on the clouds of heaven, according to the prophecy of Daniel:
>
> *'I saw in the night visions, and behold, with the clouds of heaven there came one like a son of man' (Dan. 7:13)*
>
> But Jesus Christ did not appear miraculously on the clouds of heaven.
>
> He was born of a woman Mary, the wife of Joseph. The people said, "Well, how could this Jesus be the Son of God? He is a mere man, Just like you and me." This was another overwhelming reason why the people rejected Jesus.
>
> Some might object that Daniel's prophecy was not intended for the first coming of Jesus Christ, but rather for the coming of the Lord of the Second Advent. But I say this is not the case, because Jesus testified that all the prophecies and the law given prior to John the Baptist were intended to be fulfilled in the time of Jesus Christ (Matt. 11:13).
>
> So the prophecy of the coming of the Son of Man on the clouds of heaven was intended for the coming of Jesus Christ 2,000 years ago. In those days there was no New Testament, and the thought of the

> Second Coming of the Lord was not even in the mind of God.
>
> This prophecy of Daniel posed much difficulty for the ministry of Jesus. For instance, we can see the apostle John warns in the New Testament,
>
> *For many deceivers have gone out into the world, men who will not acknowledge the coming of the Jesus Christ in the flesh; such a one is the deceiver and the antichrist. (II John 7)*
>
> This is what John was saying 2,000 years ago about those who disbelieved in Jesus Christ, rejecting him simply because he was a man in the flesh. They did not accept Jesus, but continued waiting for a supernatural appearance on the clouds. John condemned these people in the worst terms, saying, "such a one is the antichrist." (9-18-74)

Just as Jesus was not seen as the Messiah and even called the antichrist by the leaders of the mainstream religion of his time, orthodox Christians of today should not make the same mistake and think the Second Coming of Christ will be a supernatural event and accuse Sun Myung Moon of being the antichrist. Father warns, “Unless we know the whole truth, we, like the people of Jesus’ time, may become victims of the words of the Bible.” (10-28-73)

RAPTURE

Fundamental and Pentecostal Christians believe Jesus is coming on the clouds because they read the *Bible* quotes about clouds literally instead of symbolically. They believe in a concept they call “rapture” which says that on Judgment Day devout Christians will rise in the air to meet Jesus in the sky. Those who are alive will drift to heaven, and those who have died will come out of their graves, their physical body restored, and will rise also. This rising of the dead is called resurrection. After all Christians are safe with Jesus, those left on earth will be tortured in hell and the earth will be destroyed. This is the belief of children who see God as Daddy who will come and whisk them away to a safe home. God has never worked in such superstitious, supernatural ways.

God is logical and rational. God is for responsibility within freedom. He does not perform magic tricks.

Some Christians misread the following quotes: “They will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory” (Matt.24:30); “Look, he is coming with the clouds” (Rev. 1:7); “For the Lord himself, with a cry of command, with the archangel’s call and with the sound of God’s trumpet, will descend from heaven, and the dead in Christ will rise first. Then we who are alive, who are left, will be caught up in the clouds together with them to meet the Lord in the air” (1 Thess. 4:16-17).

ELIJAH

At the time of Jesus, Elijah was to come on the clouds. Malachi prophesied, “Look, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the great and terrible day of the Lord comes” (Malachi 4:5). God spoke through Malachi promising that Elijah would return prior to the Messiah. Everyone in Israel was waiting, but Elijah did not return on the clouds. Jesus said John the Baptist was Elijah. Elijah’s mission returned, not Elijah himself. Likewise, Jesus’ mission will return, not Jesus himself.

BOOK OF DANIEL

Many Israelites sincerely believed the Messiah would come dramatically on the clouds because of a passage in the Book of Daniel: “I saw in the night visions, and behold with the clouds of heaven there came one like a human being ... To him was given dominion and glory and kingship, that all peoples, nations and languages should serve him” (Dan. 7:13-14).

Luke 17:20 reads, “Being asked by the Pharisees when the Kingdom of God was coming Jesus answered them, ‘The kingdom of God is not coming with signs that can be observed.’” There will be no visible signs, Jesus says, such as clouds and trumpets.

In Acts 1:11 angels warned that Christ will not return on the clouds and it is no use looking up into the sky when they said to the disciples, “Men of Galilee, why do you stand here looking into the sky? This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into heaven, will come back in the same way you have seen him go into heaven.” Sky and heaven are two different things.

CLOUDS AND WATER ARE SYMBOLIC

Rev. 17:15 says, "The waters that you saw, where the whore is seated, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues." Water is a symbol for impure fallen mankind. Clouds are vaporized water. Water on earth is impure, but when it is evaporated or distilled it is pure. Therefore, impure man or water when made pure becomes clouds or pure people. We will see the Messiah, the *Bible* says, because he will be surrounded by disciples who lead a purer life than others.

CLOUD OF WITNESSES – FOLLOWERS OF CHRIST

This is what the *Bible* means when it says a "cloud of witnesses" (Heb. 12:1). The Messiah will first gain a few followers; then many will come. After there are thousands of disciples witnessing for the Messiah the whole world will begin to see him. These people are the members of the Unification Movement. The Second Coming of Christ means the second coming of the cloud of witnesses. The Unification Movement is the second coming of Jesus' disciples. The generation alive at the time of the Second Advent is the second coming of the generation alive at the time of Jesus. The ministers, pastors and priests at the time of the Second Coming of Christ will be the second coming of the religious leaders of Israel who had to deal with Jesus. God is hoping that everyone is smart enough to not make the mistakes of those at Jesus' time and accept the new Messiah when he comes to them. Sun Myung Moon says, "Christians today are still a minority in the world. Are they respected by the rest of the population? Christians have become arrogant, feeling that they are especially privileged people of God and the rest of the world is doomed to die. Many Christians believe that when Jesus comes again they will be lifted up to meet the Lord in the air while the rest of the world is consumed in the fire of judgment. How can the rest of the world admire people like that?" (3-6-77)

THIEF IN THE NIGHT

First Thessalonians 5:2 says, "... the day of the Lord will come like a thief in the night." To enter as a thief has been interpreted that he will come out of the clouds unexpectedly. But the true interpretation is that he will come not only unexpectedly, but like any successful thief, he will come quietly, not dramatically. Jesus came quietly into the world like a thief in the night. So will the Third Adam. Jesus' coming was quiet and unexpected.

Jesus compares the Second Coming of the Messiah to the time of Noah when everyone is living their individualistic lives not thinking of God or very little about God until it is too late: "As were the days of Noah, so will be the coming of the Son of man. For as in those days before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day when Noah entered the ark, and they did not know... So will be the coming of the Son of man" (Matt. 24:37-39). The Second Coming will be as unexpected as Jesus'.

When will Christ return? Jesus said, "But of that day and hour no one knows..." (Matt. 24:36). But it also says in that same verse that God does know. And we read in (Amos 3:7), "surely the Lord God does nothing, without revealing his secret to his servants the prophets."

There are many examples in history of God revealing his plans. God revealed to Noah the flood judgment and Lot the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah. At the time of the Second Coming of the Lord, God will speak to a few prepared people.

The *Bible* also says that the Lord would not come like a thief to those who were spiritually "awake" (I Thess. 5:6). These few people will be alert and open to the new Messiah's message while the rest of the world is spiritually asleep and living in the darkness of ignorance.

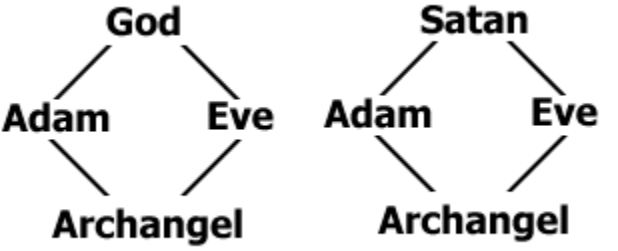
The Third Adam will return and like Jesus will be born of a woman and grow up in a humble setting. When he begins his ministry only a few prepared people will see him. As the number of these disciples grows it will eventually become a cloud of witnesses who will witness for the Lord and then mankind will see the Messiah.

WORLD WAR I

The 400-year preparation for the Messiah began in 1517 and ended in 1917. The world in 1917 was divided between the nations on God's side and those on Satan's side. The three beings in the Garden of Eden were Adam, Eve and the Archangel. In World War I there were three nations who were in those positions representing God and three nations in those positions representing

Satan. Those on the side of Satan were Cain nations and those on God's side were the Abel nations.

World War I was a world-wide separation of good and evil, of Cain and Abel. God's nations were America in the Adam position, England in the Eve position, and France in the Archangel position. Satan's nations were Germany, Austria-Hungary and Turkey.



The World Wars have three good nations and three evil nations fighting each other and this is referred to in the book of Revelation which speaks of evil coming in threes: "... three foul spirits... demonic spirits... who go abroad to the kings of the whole world, to assemble them for battle on the great day of God the Almighty" (Rev. 16:13-14). Revelation also says that the side of good must be alert and persevering against these great evils: "Blessed is he

who is awake" (Rev. 16:15); "Be zealous and repent" (Rev. 3:19); "Here is a call for the endurance of the saints" (Rev. 14:12).

World War I was inevitable as worldwide payment for the first Adam. World War I was an indemnity payment for Adam in the Garden of Eden. It was total confusion in the Garden of Eden, and there was total confusion during World War I. The Kaiser was related to the royalty of England. No one felt the war would last long. Everyone was incredibly immature and naive just as Adam was in the Garden of Eden.

One book said this of the Kaiser at the time Hitler was starting World War II: "he had always had a very personal, almost childish, conception of God and he now turned to his *Bible* more frequently than ever in order to discover an explanation for the new punishment that seemed to be awaiting mankind.... He possessed neither the intellect nor the character to shoulder the burden thrust upon him. 'It was not his fault,' wrote Winston Churchill, 'it was his fate.' Alas, it was the fate of all of us, for the Kaiser set in motion a chain of events ... that drove the whole world to war."

A biographer wrote, "scholars now believe that whatever the failings of the Kaiser he had not, as was commonly supposed, planned or even desired a big war only a little war! No longer was he an evil or cruel despot, but just a blunderer."

World War I was devastating just as the Fall was. It was a worldwide Cain and Abel fight. Millions of people died. The Allies won and this paid an indemnity payment to restore Lucifer dominating Adam, and it laid the foundation for the world to receive the Third Adam. There was enough goodness and sacrificial spirit on God's side that God could send the Messiah.

NEW NAME

Revelation 12:5 says the Messiah will be born on earth: "She brought forth a male child, one who is to rule all the nations with a rod of iron." And in Revelation 3:12 Jesus says the returning Christ will have a new name, "He who conquers... I will write on him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, and the new Jerusalem, which comes down from my God out of

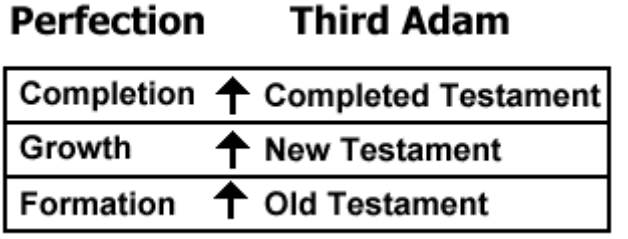
heaven, and my own new name." In Revelation 2:17 Jesus says this about his successor: "I will give him a white stone, with a new name written on the stone which no one knows except him who receives it."

1920 — BIRTH OF THE MESSIAH

World War I lasted from 1914 to 1918. The Abel nations, the Allies, were victorious over the Central Powers. Abel subjugated Cain. The Treaty of Versailles was signed in 1919 and the foundation for the Messiah was laid on a worldwide level. On February 25, 1920 (lunar calendar January 6, 1920) the third Adam was born. With him came God's ideology the *Divine Principle*.

COMPLETED TESTAMENT

Christianity is wrong in saying it is heresy that another man will assume Jesus' mission. Christianity is now fulfilled in the Third Adam who brings God's truth, the *Divine Principle*, the Completed Testament.



We must understand and remember that Jesus told the Israelites not to read the Old Testament as the letter of the law but in the spirit of the Law. Christians are now asked to read the New Testament the same way.

In the Garden of Eden Lucifer struck a death blow to Adam. Then Cain struck his brother. Throughout human history evil has constantly struck and good has had to defend itself, but usually losing against evil. Now it is God's turn to win the final battle. Three years before the Messiah was born Satan struck mankind with his ideology of atheistic Communism in 1917. Satan always invades first. Three years later, in 1920, the Messiah was born.

The number three is God's number of perfection and the three years from 1917 to 1920 represent a separation from Satan. The Third and final Adam will be successful. God has always succeeded on his third attempt.

It is not a coincidence that William Butler Yeat's poem "The Second Coming" was published in 1920. For more information on the events surrounding 1920 please see my book titled *1920: The Birth of a Messiah.*

PARABLE OF THE VINEYARD

God worked the 2000 years since Jesus to prepare nations to be his champions. The Second Coming was not to be in Israel as many Christians think. Jesus was clear in saying another nation would become the chosen nation and Israel would lose its status. He says this in the Parable of the Vineyard: "There was a householder who planted a vineyard... and let it out to tenants.... When the season of fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the tenants, to get his fruit; and the tenants took his servants and beat one, killed another, and stoned another. Afterward he sent his son to them, saying, 'They will respect my son.' but when the tenants saw the son... they killed him. When therefore the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those tenants? They said to him, 'He will put those wretches to a miserable death, and let out the vineyard to other tenants who will give him the fruits in their seasons'" (Matt. 21:33-4). Jesus said to them, "Therefore I tell you, the kingdom of God will be taken away from you and given to a nation producing the fruits of it" (Matt. 21:43).

The householder is God, the vineyard is Israel, and the tenants were the prophets who were abused by the people. The son was Jesus who the Israelites killed. The other tenants would be a new nation. What nation is it? We read in the *Bible*, "Then I saw another angel ascend from the rising of the sun, with the seal of the living God" (Rev. 7:2). The rising of the sun means that the new nation will be from the Far East.

This nation must have the proper qualifications. Like Israel it must be a small religious nation that will have a history of domination so as to understand God's suffering heart. It has to be a nation with a belief by some that the Messiah will come to its nation. That nation is Korea.

KOREA IS THE CHOSEN NATION

The Korean people are peace loving. In their 4000-year history they have never invaded another country. Yet they have been dominated many times. Like the Israelites, they know the suffering of oppression, and they have many prophecies in their literature that the Messiah will come to them.

Korea's history is one of suffering and hardship. They have been molded into a people whose character makes them uniquely qualified to be the chosen people. They are a deeply religious people, a passionate people that accept all major religions; Islam, Confucianism, Buddhism and Christianity flourish there.

Korea has the fastest growing Christian population. It has the largest congregations in the world. Many go to church before daylight. They embrace their religious faith with an intensity that puts followers of those religions from other countries to shame.

God is our parent who has a suffering heart, and God can only be met in deep suffering and pain. The Messiah and the chosen people are the pioneers who must know God's suffering heart. They must be a sensitive and emotional people. They must be tough and disciplined, able to endure the harsh standard of sacrifice and purity needed to overcome persecution. The Korean people have these characteristics. The Messiah was born in a small, obscure country in what is today North Korea. This is hardly the place anyone in the major powers of the world (such as America) would expect a savior to come.

Jesus was also born in a small and obscure country. It was hardly the sort of place anyone from the Emperor of Rome down to the very people of Israel would have expected to find a young man who would someday be seen as the savior of the world by hundreds of millions of people.

In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* Father writes:

> There is deep meaning in the tragic history that the Korean people have experienced up to this point. Korea has suffered a great deal because it

is destined to become the foundation from which world peace will emerge. Because it has endured suffering and difficulty for such a long time, Korea can now become the central nation from which God brings peace to the world. Even though Koreans have experienced countless hardships, we have never made anyone our enemy or hated anyone. Several of our neighbors have caused difficulty for us, but we have never made them our irreconcilable enemies.

The Korean people have developed a culture of heart that enables us to forgive our enemies. It takes mastery over oneself to love and accept an enemy. The ability to love ones enemy comes only after an individual is victorious over his own internal conflicts.

People who are persecuted are the closest to God. To understand God's heart, one must experience His tearful heart. Even a person who normally would not shed tears will do so if he loses his family and his country. He would desperately plead with God in tears. Suffering difficulties causes one to have a heart that sheds tears and cries, but it is through this type of heart that one can receive God's blessing. God comes to a heart that is soaked with tears. Korea has become a land of heavenly fortune because so many tears have been shed within the hearts of its people.

Korean people honor their ancestors. No matter how hungry we may be, we will never sell the land where our ancestors are buried in order to buy food. Historically we have maintained a way of thinking that respects Heaven. We are a modern, civilized nation that still honors the world of the spirit. When we accepted Buddhism and Confucianism, they gave rise to a beautiful religious culture. More recently Christian and Muslim traditions have begun to thrive here as well. All these religions live without conflict within Korea. They blend together and coexist peacefully. What is it that has made us such a unique people?

The Korean flag is symbolic for God. “The flag consists of three parts: The white background, the red and blue circle in the center and four trigrams, one in each corner of the flag.”

“The red and blue circle in the center is called ‘Taeguk’, the origin of all things in the universe. The central thought is perfect harmony and balance: A continuous movement within the sphere of infinity, resulting in one unit. The blue part of ‘Taeguk’ is called ‘Yin’ and represents all negative aspects of the balance that is typical for the symbol. The red part is called ‘Yang’ and describes all positive aspects.”

The dual characteristics of God reflected in the world through the invisible mind and external body and the duality of masculine and feminine (i.e., of God being a parent) is represented by the red and blue colors of the center circle. The upper red paisley represents the yang nature of masculinity; the lower blue paisley represents the yin nature of femininity. Red is on top symbolizing the vertical relationship between man and woman.

Red also symbolizes God’s love and life. God created our blood red. Satan distorts this color. The communist Soviet Union’s flag was red. There are “red light districts” of prostitution symbolizing the Fall.

The blue in the center circle symbolizes God's truth. These are the life elements God gives for us to grow spiritually.

"The four trigrams also indicate the duality of opposites and balance. In the upper left trigram, three unbroken lines symbolize Heaven; opposite them in the lower right, three broken lines represent Earth. In the upper right trigram, two broken lines separated by an unbroken line is the symbol of Fire; opposite them is water, symbolized by two unbroken lines separated by a broken line."

The black trigrams in each corner symbolize the four seasons and cardinal directions of north, south, east and west. The number four is also the symbol for the family unit of the four-position foundation. The circle symbolizes eternity, or God. The flag is white, symbolizing God's purity and peace.

CHOSEN

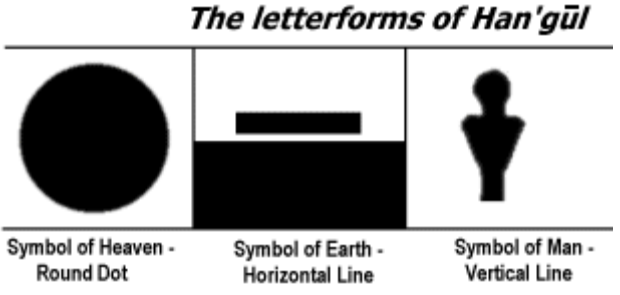
The book of Revelation speaks of white robes. Because white was for centuries the primary color worn by Koreans, Korea was known as the "white-clad" people. The name of the capitol is Seoul. Korea's ancient name was Chosen.

KOREAN LANGUAGE

The writing system Koreans use is called Hangul, which means "the Great Writing." King Sejong commissioned an academy called the College of Assembled Worthies to do phonological research. In 1443 they had completed the orthographical design of Han'gul. The king introduced Han'gul to the public on October 9, 1446 and the Korean people observe this day as a national holiday under the name of Han'gul Day.

Hangul is a phonetic writing. Each consonant and vowel sound is a symbol of a cosmological principle. For example, vowels and semi vowels have three basic letters and their combinations. The three basic ones are ! , — and *. One book explains that for "! (a sound similar to aw in law), the tongue retracts and its sound is deep; the roundness of its shape is a depiction of Heaven." For —, "the tongue retracts a little, and its sound is neither deep nor shallow; the flatness of its shape is a depiction of Earth." For *, "the tongue does not retract, and its sound is shallow; the uprightness of its

shape is a depiction of Man." Therefore, the basic vowel symbols are based on the trinity of Heaven (!), Earth (—) and Man (*). All the other vowel and semivowels are interactions of these three symbols. It is not only based on a trinity but also on a duality of yin and yang sounds.



Origin of the shapes of basic vowels

There was some vehement opposition to Hangul for those who felt they should stay with the Chinese writing but over time it became the national language. During the occupation of Korea, Satan used Japan as his means to eliminate Han'gul, which would be genocide to the chosen people's culture. The Korean people were forced to use Japanese as the only language. All older Koreans can speak fluent Japanese. When Korea was liberated in 1945, Han'gul Day was established as a national holiday. Koreans love Han'gul and are proud of it. Han'gul is easy to learn and therefore most people became literate and this democratized all walks of Korean life. It is the most scientific writing system in the world.

The ultimate unification of the world as one family will be when all mankind speaks Korean. There are good reasons why everyone should and will speak Korean. Even though English is the language for international commerce it is lacking in comparison with Korean. The essence of Sun Myung Moon's teaching is that there we live in relationships that are vertical. The Korean language recognizes this. He teaches, "There are no phrases of respect and value. Everyone is 'you,' whether they be high or low in society. In Korean, there are many different levels of address according to age and relationship. And no language can surpass

Korean for detailed expressions of religious and spiritual terms." (2-17-91)

The following are some comments by Sun Myung Moon on the Korean language from some of his speeches:

> English is not the best language for conveying the spiritual element of life. The language is just not equipped to express things about the spiritual life as Korean is.
>
> English can be a boring and tasteless language to study, but Korean has a profound taste in comparison, with a most intricate and beautiful way of saying things. It is true that the contents of Korean expressions are complicated, but that makes it sweet, so have trust in Korean based on my recommendation. (6-3-79).
>
> The Korean language is the most advanced, descriptive and beautiful language ever known to humanity. Korean has so much variety in its sounds. I am not saying all this just because I am Korean. It is based on the *Principle*. (2-5-84)
>
> The language barrier is one of the most difficult problems in the world. How can we solve this historical problem? We have to resolve it.
>
> I think about who will be able to solve this problem. The power of science and technology cannot do it, neither can government power. The only power that can do it is religious power. You have to know that. Therefore, I am always saying to you, "We have to unify the language. We have to shatter the language barrier." Do you understand? (9-7-86)
>
> What about language? It will be the biggest problem. The world's language is bound to be unified. Once we overcome that problem; once we learn a common language, then the racial and national differences will be no more. You will be able to live in any country, any place, anytime.

COMMON LANGUAGE

What language will the world choose as a common language? It will be the language which is used in the country which has the higher, deeper thought, and higher and deeper religious theory and practice. That country will become the center of the world, and everyone will want to use that language. This is not a matter of coercion; no one is forcing this, saying, "should." No, this is a natural development. People will choose it. (11-1-90)

SCIENTIFIC AND SPIRITUAL

You have to learn Korean. It is both a scientific and a spiritual language. For instance, hundreds of different adjectives in Korean may express the same concept, each one having a subtle variation in meaning. There are hundreds of different ways of expressing color.

Korean is the ideal language. God certainly had this in mind when He developed it and He is proud of it. (7-5-87)

This is my honest opinion and not just because I am Korean. The Korean language is the best for people to express deep feelings, especially between lovers, and for the expression of profound religious feelings. (10-4-83)

UNIFICATION OF LANGUAGE

No matter what, the unification of the language has to take place. Only with *Divine Principle* and True Parents' guidance will this become possible. Otherwise there is no way to unify all the languages of this world. (5-3-96)

COMMON UNDERSTANDING

Only the power of God can bring the world together under one language. The *Divine Principle* should be read in Korean by everyone in the world. In this way, a common understanding can emerge. People will never stop fighting each other until they have some kind of common understanding. Mankind is

separated now because they speak different languages and have different understandings about life. How complicated this world is due to this situation.

GOD DESIRES ONE LANGUAGE

Think about God. Every night people are praying to him in thousands of different languages. Actually, it's painful to His ears. That's true. It's very complicated for God to deal with. Someone is to "God", while another one is praying to "Kami", while yet another one is praying to "Allah". You have to restore one language for God's sake. Think about how miserable God is in this situation. You don't know how difficult it has been for me in America. It's the same situation with God and so I know how miserable God is. God desires one language, one heart, one common understanding between His children. That is why I am teaching this clearly to you. (8-85)

1935 — JESUS PASSES MISSION TO SUN MYUNG MOON

On Easter Sunday morning April 17, 1935 when Sun Myung Moon was 15 years old Jesus came to him as he was deep in prayer on a hillside in the northern part of Korea. Jesus asked him to complete his mission of bringing unity to mankind. He explains what happened in his autobiography:

When I was sixteen, we experienced the tragedy of having five of my younger siblings die in a single year. No words could describe the heartbreak of our parents in losing five of their thirteen children in such a short time. Death seemed to spread. Other clan members lost their livestock. One home's cow suddenly died, though it had been in perfect health. At another home, several horses died, one after another. At a third home, seven pigs died in one night.

The suffering of one family seemed connected to the suffering of the nation and of the world. I was increasingly troubled to see the wretched situation of the Korean people under Japan's increasingly

tyrannical rule. People didn't have enough to eat. They were sometimes forced to take grass, tree bark, and whatever else they could find, and boil these for food. There seemed to be no end to wars around the world. Then one day I read an article in a newspaper about the suicide of a middle-school student who was the same age as I.

"Why did he die?" I asked myself. "What would drive a person to kill himself at such a young age?" I was devastated by this news, as if it had happened to someone who had been close to me. With the newspaper open to that article, I wept aloud for three days and nights. The tears kept coming, and I couldn't make them stop.

I couldn't comprehend the series of strange events, or the fact that tragic events were happening to good people. Seeing the bones of my great-grandfather had inspired me to start asking questions about life and death, and the series of unusual events in and around our home caused me to hang on to religion. The Word of God I was hearing in church, however, was not sufficient by itself to give me the clear answers I was seeking. To relieve the frustrations in my heart, I naturally began to immerse myself in prayer.

"Who am I? Where did I come from? What is the purpose of life? What happens to people when they die? Is there a world of the eternal soul? Does God really exist? Is God really all-powerful? If He is, why does He just stand by and watch the sorrows of the world? If God created this world, did He also create the suffering that is in the world? What will bring an end to Korea's tragic occupation by Japan? What is the meaning of the suffering of the Korean people?

Why do human beings hate each other, fight, and start wars?" My heart was filled with these serious and fundamental questions. No one could easily answer them for me, so my only option was to pray. Prayer helped me to find solace. Whenever I laid out the anguishing problems in my heart to God, all my suffering and sorrow vanished and my heart felt at ease. I began spending more and more time in

prayer, to the point that, eventually, I began praying through the night all the time. As a result, I had a rare and precious experience in which God answered my prayers. That day will always remain as the most cherished memory of my life—a day I can never forget.

It was the night before Easter in the year I turned sixteen. I was on Mount Myodu praying all night and begging God in tears for answers. Why had He created a world so filled with sorrow and despair? Why was the all-knowing and all-powerful God leaving the world in such pain? What should I do for my tragic homeland? I wept in tears as I asked these questions repeatedly.

Early Easter morning, after I had spent the entire night in prayer, Jesus appeared before me. He appeared in an instant, like a gust of wind, and said to me, "God is in great sorrow because of the pain of humankind. You must take on a special mission on earth having to do with Heaven's work." That day, I saw clearly the sorrowful face of Jesus. I heard his voice clearly. The experience of witnessing the manifestation of Jesus caused my body to shake violently, like a quaking aspen's leaves trembling in a strong breeze. I was simultaneously overcome with fear so great I felt I might die and gratitude so profound I felt I might explode. Jesus spoke clearly about the work I would have to do. His words were extraordinary, having to do with saving humanity from its suffering and bringing joy to God. My initial response was, "I can't do this. How can I do this? Why would you even give me a mission of such paramount importance?" I was truly afraid. I wanted somehow to avoid this mission, and I clung to the hem of his clothing and wept inconsolably.

I was thrown into extreme confusion. I couldn't open my heart to my parents and share my huge secret with them. But neither could I just keep it to myself. I was at a loss over what to do. What was clear was that I had received a special mission from Heaven. It was such a huge and tremendous responsibility. I shuddered in fear to think that I might not be able to handle it on my own. I clung to

prayer even more than before, in an attempt to quiet my confused heart. But even this had no effect. No matter how much I tried, I could not free myself for even a moment from the memory of having met Jesus. In an effort to quiet my heart and my tears, I composed the following poem:

Crown of Glory

When I doubt people, I feel pain.
When I judge people, it is unbearable.
When I hate people, there is no value to my existence.
Yet if I believe, I am deceived. If I love, I am betrayed.
Suffering and grieving tonight, my head in my hands,
Am I wrong?
Yes I am wrong.
Even though we are deceived, still believe. Though we are betrayed, still forgive.
Love completely, even those who hate you.
Wipe your tears away and welcome with a smile
Those who know nothing but deceit, And those who betray without regret. O, Master, the pain of loving.
Look at my hands.
Place your hand on my chest.
My heart is bursting, such agony.
But when I love those who acted against me, I brought victory.
If you have done the same things,
I will give you the Crown of Glory.

My encounter with Jesus changed my life completely. His sorrowful expression was etched into my heart as if it had been branded there, and I could not think of anything else. From that day on, I immersed myself completely in the Word of God. At times, I was surrounded by endless darkness and filled with such pain that it was difficult to breathe. At other times, my heart was filled with joy, as though I were watching the morning sun rise above the horizon. I experienced a series of days like these

that led me into a deeper and deeper world of prayer. I embraced new words of truth that Jesus was giving me directly and let myself be completely captivated by God. I began to live an entirely different life. I had many things to think about, and I gradually became a boy of few words.

Anyone who follows the path of God must pursue his goal with his whole heart and total dedication. It requires a steadfastness of purpose.

I am stubborn by birth, so I have always had plenty of tenacity. I used this God-given tenacity to overcome difficulties and follow the way that was given me. Anytime I began to waver, I steadied myself by remembering: "I received God's word directly." It was not easy to choose this course, because it would require me to sacrifice the rest of my youth. At times, I felt I would rather avoid the path.

A wise person will place hope in the future and continue to move forward, no matter how difficult it may be. A foolish person, on the other hand, will throw away his future for the sake of immediate happiness. I, too, at times held foolish thoughts when I was still very young, but in the end I chose the path of the wise person. I gladly offered up my life in order to pursue the way God desired. I could not have run away if I tried; this was the only way I could have chosen.

So why did God call me? Even now, at ninety years of age, I wonder every day why God called me. Of all the people in the world, why did He choose me? It wasn't because I had a particularly good appearance, or outstanding character, or deep conviction. I was just an unremarkable, stubborn, and foolish young boy. If God saw something in me, it must have been a sincere heart that sought Him with tears of love. Whatever the time or place, love is most important. God was searching for a person who would live with a heart of love and who, when faced with suffering, could cut off its effects with love. I was a boy in a rural village with nothing to show for myself. Even now, I insist uncompromisingly on sacrificing my life to live for

God's love and nothing else.

There was nothing I could know on my own, so I took all my questions to God. I asked, "God, do You really exist?" and that was how I came to know that He did, in fact, exist. I asked, "God, do You have any cherished desires?" and this was how I came to know that He, too, had cherished desires. I asked Him, "God, do You need me?" and this was how I discovered that He had use for me.

On those days when my prayers and dedication connected to Heaven, Jesus appeared to me without fail and conveyed special messages. If I was earnest in my desire to know something, Jesus would appear with a gentle expression and give me answers of truth. His words were always on the mark, and they struck deep into my bosom like sharp arrows. These were not mere words; they were revelations about the creation of the universe that opened the door to a new world. When Jesus spoke, it seemed like a soft breeze, but I took his words to heart and prayed with an earnestness strong enough to uproot a tree. Gradually, I came into a new realization about God's purpose in creating the universe and His principles of creation.

During the summer of that year, I went on a pilgrimage around the country. I had no money. I would go to homes and ask to be fed. If I was lucky, I caught a ride on a truck. This was how I visited every corner of the country. Everywhere I went, I saw that my homeland was a crucible of tears. There was no end to the sorrowful sighs of suffering from hungry people. Their woeful lamentations turned to tears that flowed like a river. "This wretched history must end as quickly as possible," I told myself. "Our people must not be left to suffer in sorrow and despair. Somehow, I need to find a way to go to Japan and to America so that I can let the world know the greatness of the Korean people." Through this pilgrimage, I was able to redouble my determination toward my future work.

As I clenched my two fists, my mind became totally focused, and I could see clearly the path I had

> to follow in my life: "I absolutely will save our people and bring God's peace on this earth." (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* by Sun Myung Moon)

For the next ten years he learned the *Divine Principle* from God, Jesus and many saints in the spirit world, and he fought terrible spiritual battles with Satan to discover the Fall: how evil came into the world. Only the pure Messiah can discover the root of evil and has the passion and strength to proclaim this truth to the world at the risk of his life.

He went to college in Japan and received a degree in electrical engineering in the 1940s. Sometimes he would go the lowest places and spend time with bums and even cut their hair for them. He talked to prostitutes and grieved for their painful life:

> At times I would simply go live for a while in an area of Shinagawa where poor people lived. I slept with them, using rags for cover. On warm sunny days I picked lice from their hair and ate rice with them.
>
> There were many prostitutes on the streets of Shinagawa. I would listen to them tell me about themselves, and I became their best friend without ever drinking a drop of liquor. Some people claim they need to be drunk in order to speak candidly about what is on their mind, but that is just an excuse. When these women realized that I was sincere in my sympathy for them, even without drinking any liquor, they opened their hearts to me and told me their troubles." (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*, Sun Myung Moon)

One of the greatest mysteries of life is the meaning of the *Bible*. In his autobiography he says, "I would read the same passages in three languages [i.e., Korean, Japanese, and English] again and again. Each time I read a passage, I would underline verses and make notes in the margins until the pages of my Bibles became stained with black ink and difficult to read." In Michael Breen's *Sun Myung Moon: The Early Years* he quotes Father saying, "I have studied science. I am a very scientific person and l do not want any blind faith. I do not want the God of concept. I want the God of life, and God is life; life itself. That God I seek. The God

who can govern life itself and who can be the real, true backbone of the world." Breen writes:

> If the human dilemma were purely intellectual, thinkers would have found the solution centuries ago. The problems, he found, were spiritual. It was as if the human spirit was diseased. To find the cure he would need to continue travelling the path of spiritual growth Jesus had traveled. He would have to become one with God. As Jesus said, "You, therefore, must be perfect as your heavenly Father is perfect." This effort invited all manner of temptations and unanticipated struggle. In his prayers he battled with dark forces. At times great waves of black fear billowed through his soul.
>
> He once tried to explain the experience of these years but could not find the words. "If you knew what it was like, your heart would stop," he said. Faith kept him going. "I knew that God was living. I knew that God had chosen me for this mission Therefore, I believed that this was the only way for man to go, including myself. I couldn't quit."
>
> Over the years, the inner search through the lives of the main actors in biblical history led him to empathize with them:
>
> "When I came to the fall of Adam and Eve I felt as if it were my own business. I felt the sorrow of God to see Adam's fall. I felt Adam's sorrow in himself. In each event I put myself in the position of those involved and felt with them and with God, all through the history. It was not someone else's history, but my own life."
>
> He saw that the life of God's people is one of suffering. That God's experience throughout human history has been one of grief, sharing the suffering of his children. In the journey into the heart of God's experience, he too, found pain and loss. "I have shed so many tears. I not only understood the principle, but lived it."

> As Moon read and re-read the Bible, praying and meditating on its contents, it seemed to him that the central events after Adam kept coming back to this story of Adam's family. The lives of Noah, Abraham and Jesus seemed to be an echo of Adam. Why? The first family, Adam's family was to be the model for God's purpose for creating man, but it became a model for failure. If God was still trying to save his children, and both the Christian teaching and personal spiritual experience convinced Moon that he was, then God would still be trying to achieve today what he had hoped to achieve with the first family. The emphasis on men in biblical history suggested that this process began with the man as God's providential focus.
>
> It seemed He had been trying to find one true man, the Messiah. A man who knew the truth and lived by it, a true man with a God like personality who could overcome evil through unwavering faith and whose heart could become one with God's heart. Such a man would begin the process of bringing the world back to God. He would become the perfected Adam, the Tree of Life, the ancestral parent of humanity.

Breen writes that in 1945, after 10 years of searching for the truth after he first met Jesus in 1935, the young Messiah:

> had to confront Lucifer the archangel, who he believed had caused the fall of Adam and Eve, before he could be satisfied with his interpretations of his revelations. He claims that during this experience, Lucifer accepted everything except the interpretation of the fall of man. At this point, Moon took Lucifer before God. It was said that, at the time, God could not be seen, but that his voice could be heard. God manifested himself in the form of waves and mountains. God posed different explanations for the cause of man's fall. He asked whether the fall had occurred because of the fruit of

a tree, because of freedom, because of illicit love, or because of something else. Moon said it was illicit love. Then came one of the most devastating experiences of all. God denied what he said and told him it was wrong. At that point, a spiritual force struck Moon so hard, he said, that if he had not been physically standing up at the time he might never have been able to get up. Convinced of the truth of his conclusions, he insisted and God denied him again. When Moon stated the cause a third time, God acknowledged it as the truth and the evil force fled from him. Lucifer admitted that it was the truth.

The test of rejection had been necessary. For Moon to not simply believe, but to become one with God and embody the principles he had discovered, and to teach others to follow the same path, required such monumental conviction and determination that he even had to argue his case with God. It also meant that he could not be accused by Satan of acting only on spiritual inspiration or impulse from God. Rather, he had searched this truth out himself, and felt it to his bones. But there may be a deeper explanation for this experience of rejection and abandonment that goes to the core of Moon's view of the broken heart of God. If God suffers from rejection by his children, as much as Moon claims, why should God then trust a man who claims he is different, that he is a child who sympathizes and cares? The suffering heart of God will demand that he prove it.

The young Messiah discovered the formula that unlocked its hidden secrets. This could not be done by going to a seminary but searching in spirit world. He grew in understanding of the truth that answers the fundamental questions of life and therefore would save this world from its ignorance. He fought spiritual battles alone and was constantly tempted by Satan. He said, "Several times Japanese women sneaked into my bed, but I never sinned with them."

How many young men in college have the discipline of purity Father had when he was in college? How many fathers teach their sons to be sexually pure? How many college presidents and professors teach by word and deed this standard?

Have the religious denominations and organizations been able to make college campuses a godly place of moral excellence or are colleges famous for drinking, free sex and parties? Christian churches on campuses have been ineffectual to stop the moral decay in colleges. The *Bible* is very clear about being centered on the mind instead of the flesh, but Christianity has lost power to guide young people and their parents. Father makes the Bible's teachings on purity and moral excellence come alive. Schools desperately need to teach Father's words.

WORKS OF THE FLESH

Galatians 5:13-26 lists some of the sins of the mind that lead to sins of the flesh. God gives us freedom but we are to be disciplined in our freedom: "For you were called to freedom, brothers and sisters; only do not use your freedom as an opportunity for self-indulgence, but through love be servants of one another. ... Live by the Spirit, and do not gratify the desires of the flesh. For the desires of the flesh are against the Spirit, and the desires of the Spirit are against the flesh; for these are opposed to each other, to prevent you from doing what you want. But if you are led by the Spirit you are not under the law.

"Now the works of the flesh are obvious: fornication, impurity, licentiousness, idolatry, sorcery, enmity, strife, jealousy, anger, quarrels, selfishness, dissension, factions, envy, drunkenness, carousing, and things like these. I am warning you, as I warned you before: those who do such things will not inherit the kingdom of God.

CRUCIFIED THE FLESH

"By contrast, the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, generosity, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness and self-control. There is no law against such things. And those who belong to Christ Jesus have crucified the flesh with its passions and desires. If we live by the Spirit, let us also be guided by the Spirit. Let us not become conceited, no provoking of one another, no envying of one another."

The *Bible* says, "Flee youthful lusts" (2 Timothy 2:22). Titus 2:12 says "…deny profanity and worldly passions, to live lives that are self-controlled, righteous, and godly." First Peter 1:15: "...but as He who called you is holy, you also be holy in all your conduct."

NOT OF THIS WORLD

Romans 12:1-2 says "I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may discern what is the will of God — what is good and acceptable and perfect." I Timothy 4:12: "Be an example in speech and conduct, in love, in faith and in purity."

When we live a religious life of purity and high moral standards we have peace of mind that "passeth all understanding." (Philippians 4:4-9):

> Rejoice in the Lord always; again I will say, Rejoice. Let your gentleness be known to everyone. The Lord is near. Do not worry about anything, but in everything by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known to God and the peace of God, which surpasses all understanding will guard your hearts and your minds in Christ Jesus.
>
> Finally, brethren, whatever is true, whatever is noble, whatever is just, whatever is pure, whatever is lovely, whatever is admirable—if there is any excellence and if there is anything worthy of praise—think about these things. Keep on doing the things that you have learned and received and heard ... and the God of peace will be with you.

We should be more interested in training our spirit and have healthy morals than we do about our physical health: "Train yourself in godliness, for, while physical training is of some value, godliness is valuable in every way, holding promise for both the present life and the life to come" (I Timothy 4:8).

Christian leaders know these passages of purity and discipline but have failed to inspire the world to live those words. Christian leaders need Father who is a true father who teaches absolute purity in a way that can motivate them to live up to God's standard. Sun Myung Moon is the ultimate father that young people like high school and college students and their parents and grandparents desperately need because they do not know God's absolute standard of purity. Father teaches people to be absolutely disciplined and not drink and smoke. He is a totally godly man who walks his talk. Here is an example of his powerful life changing inspiring words: "Do you think that Father would be seduced by beautiful Hollywood people or would he kick them away? (Kick them away.) What about all of you? Satan may utilize various tactics in order to seduce you. By observing True Father's life we can know that he is one hundred percent at one with his teachings. Father never falls into the satanic traps of this world, no matter what.

"Why do you suppose that Reverend Moon makes such a strong statement against American people rather than giving comforting words? Because it is Father's responsibility to use even his force to push them to follow in the right direction. A surgeon will cut open an infectious wound in order to heal the patient, even if it might be painful." (6-23-96) All Americans and all people need to humble themselves to the Messiah's leadership.

Bo Hi Pak writes in his book *Messiah: My Testimony to Reverend Sun Myung Moon* (you can read the entire text at www.Tparents.org) that for 10 years Father "embarked on an arduous course to uncover the hidden truths of the universe:

> The people around him during his remaining boyhood years and early manhood had no way of knowing about his spiritual pilgrimage. Outwardly, he may have seemed like an unremarkable, impoverished young man. Within his heart, though, a fire burned as hot as a blast furnace. Day after day, he battled Satan at the risk of his life and gradually was able to dig out the truth about the spiritual world and the true meaning of life. He also exposed the deepest secret in the cosmos—Adam and Eve's, and Satan's, original sin.

> During these [ten] years, Reverend Moon traveled back and forth between the physical and spiritual worlds. He spoke with Buddha, Confucius, and Jesus. He visited innumerable good spirits, and he passed through harsh trials and tribulations from evil spirits.
>
> This period was also a time for God to test Reverend Moon in myriad ways to see whether he was really qualified to stand as the central person for the salvation of humankind. The hardships and suffering that Reverend Moon experienced during this time will most likely remain secret for all time.
>
> The truth was not given to Reverend Moon as a simple revelation. He had to fight Satan with blood, sweat and tears for each word. He had to rise above Satan's accusations and finally receive God's direct approval of what he had found. It was only after he had received God's recognition that Reverend Moon began to teach the *Principle* to the world.

The following are some comments Sun Myung Moon has made about how seriously he took his mission in his youth:

> **Fundamental Questions of Life**
>
> From the time I was a boy, I started agonizing over the fundamental questions of life. Who am I? Where am I from? What is the purpose of life? Will our life somehow continue after death? Does God really exist? Is God omnipotent or not? If God is all-powerful, why is it He cannot solve the problems of the world? Why is there so much suffering in the world?
>
> Looking back, I remember how serious I was. I was at the point of deciding what to do with the rest of my life. At that crossroad, I knew that it would not be determined by human forces, but came to the conclusion that I had to make my decision in accordance with God's Will. I vividly remember the

agonizing moments before embarking upon my life of faith.

I had the most unusual experience when I was sixteen—fifteen by Western reckoning. After long hours of tearful prayer in the morning at Easter time, Jesus Christ came to me in spirit and gave me many revelations and teachings. He shared many profound and amazing truths, particularly that God is in agony over the suffering of humanity, and he asked me to take on a very special mission for God, on earth.

It is so hard to describe my experiences as a youth. The spirit world opened and I could freely communicate with the saints of that world. In the quiet hills of North Korea, I came to meet Jesus Christ and conversed with him. The content of our conversation became the essential teachings of the *Divine Principle*.

When you see Jesus spiritually, does he smile at you with a happy face? Have you met Jesus? I have never met Jesus in such a way. He always appeared to me serious and sad. He has no choice. That is the only way he can feel because he knows God's situation so well. I am the same way, too.

I was much younger than you are when I set out on this course, younger than twenty, very simple and innocent. I desired to possess objects of beauty and was ever curious about new things in my village, often to the point of obsession. Yet, as soon as I embarked on the mission at that tender age, I found myself to be wanting in many ways to carry out such a great and serious mission. I painfully realized how grave was my responsibility and the need to have the requisite qualities inside and out.

I was a young man when starting out on this course. Whether or not I would actually fulfill the great responsibility of the mission Jesus entrusted to me was a serious problem. I knew, too well, how strongly people like Noah, Abraham and Moses had desired to fulfill their God given missions.

> It was my experiences as a fifteen-year-old that led me to know God. Over the next [ten] years, following that initial encounter, I came to live continually in the presence of God and Jesus. I experienced the spirit world so many times. Gradually, God revealed to me the amazing truth. It was like passing through the darkest night and the sun was finally rising in the horizon. I could see the first streak of light of the glorious new culture. The revelation I received then is now called "The Principle." God told me that I must spread that *Principle* to the end of the earth.
>
> In the prime of my youth, I used to pray up to seventeen to eighteen hours and not less than twelve, at a stretch, bent down and wailing. I usually skipped lunch. Otherwise, I could not have survived. All doors were closed and there was no way out. Only through such intense prayer, could I see the faintest ray of hope emanating from the smallest crack in heaven. Experiencing that kind of suffering and pain, I came to acquire a firm grasp of the *Principle*. (*Theory of Education*)

He lived during a time when Korea was dominated by the Japanese. "Korea, in order to be the Adam country in God's providence, had to be dominated by an Eve country and by overcoming the Eve country gain independence" (*Early Unification Church History Part 1* by Nora Spurgin). The Japanese brutally tortured many Christians. They tried to obliterate their culture and language. During the 40 years of domination from 1905-1945 they changed the name of the country from Korea to its ancient name of Chosen. On old maps of Korea the name was not Korea, but Chosen. This was the chosen nation that was to protect and uplift the Messiah.

Sun Myung Moon worked with those Christians who refused to worship the Japanese shrines. The previous chosen people, ancient Israel, also had been forced to worship the gods of their oppressors, the Greeks. Many of these Christians had revelations the Lord was coming to them. Some of these spiritualists had followers. The orthodox Christian ministers did not like what these

spiritualists were saying about a Messiah being born in Korea and they were respected by many people.

"Under the rule of Japanese imperialism before the liberation of Korea, I was a leader of the underground movement centering on Christianity" (1-1-97). He was arrested by the Japanese police and tortured in different ways. They used electric shocks with voltage so high it nearly killed him. They hung him upside down from the ceiling by his ankles and forced water laced with red pepper through his nose and into his head. They brutally beat and kicked him, but after 60 days of torture he never revealed the names of any Christians in the underground movement and was finally released.

Sun Myung Moon describes his torture this way:

> Many times, I spit up blood through near-fatal experiences. However, I never gave my friends' names under torture; I was loyal to and responsible for them. I risked my life for theirs. I fought alone. I did not budge even under threat of death.
>
> I did not talk even during the most dreadful torture—being hit by clubs. You must keep faith with your friends. Once you have made a promise, you must keep it to death. One night, after torture, I felt the most sorrowful ever, and knew that I would never forget that day.
>
> I was beaten almost to death, covered with blood and bleeding profusely. They kicked my stomach with their jackboots. While two of them would hold me down, another two kicked and trod on me. Imagine the effect of that to my belly. Just trying to sit and stand up in the toilet was torment.
>
> Because I was accused of saying that I was going to cut the Japanese emperor's throat, I was imprisoned and tortured. The most excruciating thing was to be kicked in the crotch with spiked leather boots. You will not know what pain is without such an experience.

> Once after I had been interrogated and tortured for fourteen hours, I wasn't able to crawl even twenty meters. Nevertheless, I held out in faith to the end, enduring the pain while fainting repeatedly. *(Theory of Education*)

Father teaches:

> I still believe that to develop good character a person needs to experience many difficulties before turning thirty. People need to go down into the crucible of despair at the bottom of human existence and experience what that is like. People need to discover new possibilities in the midst of hell. It is only when climbing out of the depths of despair and making a new determination that we can be reborn as people able to pioneer a new future.
>
> We should not look only in one direction. We should look at both those who are in a higher position and those lower. We should know to look east, west, south, and north. To live a successful life depends on how well we see with our mind's eye. To see well with the mind's eye we must have many different experiences and remember them. Even in the most difficult situations we should maintain our composure, demonstrate warmth toward others, be self-reliant, and adapt well to any circumstance.
>
> A person of good character must be accustomed to rising to a high position and then quickly falling to a low position. Most people are afraid of falling from a high position, so they do everything they can to preserve it. However, water that does not flow becomes stale. A person who rises to a high position must be able to go back down and wait for the time to come again. When the opportunity comes, he can rise to an even higher position than before. This is the type of person who can acquire a greatness that is admired by many people and is a great leader. These are the experiences that a person should have before turning thirty.

Today I tell young people to experience

everything they can in the world. They need to directly or indirectly experience everything in the world, as if they were devouring an encyclopedia.

It is only then that they can form their own identity. A person's self-identity is his clear subjective nature. Once a person has the confidence to say, "I can go all around the country, and I will never come across a person who is capable of defeating me," then he is ready to take on any task and have the confidence to accomplish it successfully. When a person lives life in this way, he will be successful. Success is assured. This is the conclusion I arrived at while living as a beggar in Tokyo.

I shared meals and slept with laborers in Tokyo, shared the grief of hunger with beggars, learned the hard life, and earned my doctorate in the philosophy of suffering. Only then was I able to understand God's will as He works to bring salvation to humanity. It is important to become the king of suffering before age thirty. The way to gain the glory of the Kingdom of Heaven is to become a king of suffering and earn your doctorate in that philosophy. (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

In his autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*, Father wrote about the experience of having Jesus appear to him when he was 15 and telling him he was chosen to fulfill Jesus' mission. For years he had not told anyone about his mission. All alone he traveled in spirit world and got revelations from God.

In 1942 he went to Japan to study electrical engineering at a college. He writes about his feelings about the pain in Korea that was dominated by the ruthless Japanese:

After graduating from the Kyongsong Institute in 1942, I traveled to Japan to continue my studies. I went because I felt that I needed to have exact knowledge about Japan. On the train to Busan, I couldn't stop the tears from flowing. I covered myself with my coat and cried out loud. My nose ran and my face swelled up, I cried so much. It grieved

me to think that I was leaving my country behind as it suffered under the yoke of colonial rule. I looked out the window as I wept, and I could see that the hills and rivers were weeping even more sorrowfully than I was. I saw with my own eyes the tears flowing from the grass and trees. Upon seeing this vision, I said, "I promise to the hills and streams of my homeland that I will return, carrying with me the liberation of my homeland. So don't cry, but wait for me."

When he was 23 years old in 1943 he returned to Korea from Japan and he writes this amazing testimony about his search for the truth:

> Upon finally returning to Korea, I found nothing had changed. Japan's tyrannical rule was becoming worse by the day. The entire land was soaked in blood and tears. I returned to Heuksok Dong in Seoul and attended the Myungsudae Church. I kept detailed diaries of all the new realizations that I had each day. On days when I had a great number of such realizations, I would fill an entire diary. I was receiving answers to many of the questions that I had struggled with over the years. It was as if my years of prayers and search for truth were being answered. It happened in a short time, as if a ball of were passing through me.
>
> During this time I had the realization, "The relationship between God and mankind is that of a father and his children, and God is deeply saddened to see their suffering." In this moment all the secrets of the universe were resolved in my mind. Suddenly, it was as if someone had turned on a movie projector. Everything that had happened since the time humankind broke God's commandment played out clearly before my eyes. Hot tears flowed continuously from my eyes. I fell to my knees and bowed my head to the floor. For the longest time I couldn't get up. Just as when my father had carried me home on his back as a child, I laid my body down in God's lap and let the tears flow. Nine years

after my encounter with Jesus, my eyes had finally been opened to the true love of God. God created Adam and Eve and sent them into this world to be fruitful, to multiply, and to bring about a world of peace where they would live. But they could not wait for God's time. They committed fornication and bore two sons, Cain and Abel. The children who were born from the Fall did not trust each other and brought about an incident where one brother murdered the other. The peace of this world was shattered, sin covered the world, and God's sorrow began. Then humankind committed another terrible sin by killing Jesus, the Messiah. So the suffering that humanity experiences today is a process of atonement that it must pass through as God's sorrow continues.

Jesus had appeared to me as a boy of sixteen because he wanted me to know the root of the Original Sin that humankind had committed and to bring about a world of peace where sin and the Fall would no longer exist. I had received God's serious word to atone for the sins of humanity and bring about the world of peace that God had originally created. The world of peace that is God's desire is not someplace we go to after death. God wants this world, where we live now, to be the completely peaceful and happy world that He created in the beginning. God certainly did not send Adam and Eve into the world for them to suffer. I had to let the world know this incredible truth.

Having discovered the secrets of the creation of the universe, I felt my heart become like a calm ocean. My heart was filled with the word of God. It felt as though it might explode, and my face was always shining with joy.

1944

In 1944 he married. He tells of meeting his wife and warning her that she may have to be separated from him because he has a special mission from God. He writes:

> I went to one of my aunts who had much experience in arranging marriages and asked her to introduce me to a suitable wife. This is how I met Seon Gil Choi, the daughter of a prominent Christian family in Jung-ju. She was a well-raised woman from an upright family. She had attended only elementary school, but she had a character that disliked having to cause even the slightest trouble to others. Her character was so strong and her Christian faith so deep that she had been imprisoned at age sixteen for refusing to comply with a Japanese colonial requirement that all Koreans worship at Shinto shrines.
>
> I explained to Seon Gil Choi clearly about the kind of life I intended to lead. "Even if we marry now, you should be prepared to live without me for at least seven years," I told her. "Why should I do that?" she responded. I told her, "I have a task that is more important than family life. In fact, my reason for getting married has to do with my ability to carry out God's providence. Our marriage needs to develop beyond the family to the point where we can love the nation and all humanity. Now that you know that this is my intention, do you truly want to marry me?" She responded with a firm voice: "It doesn't matter to me. After I met you, I dreamed of a field of flowers in the moonlight. I am certain that you are my spouse sent from Heaven. I can endure any difficulty."
>
> I was still concerned, and I pressed her several times. Each time she sought to set my mind at ease, saying, "I am willing to do anything, as long as I am able to marry you. Don't worry about anything." (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

Father says they were married May 4, 1944:

> Normally May is a time for beautiful spring days, but on our wedding day it rained heavily. My wife and I began our married life in my boarding room in Heuksok Dong. I truly loved her and took such good care of her that the mistress of the boarding house would say, "Oh my, you must really love her, since you treat her as if you were handling an egg."
>
> I got a job at the Kyongsong branch of the Kashima Gumi Construction Company in Yongsan in order to support our family while I also carried out church work. Then, one day in October, the Japanese police suddenly stormed into our home.
> (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

Father was part of the underground movement against the Japanese. Father writes that they came to his home when he was married and took him to the police station:

> They beat me with a table and broke all four of its legs against my body, but I refused to give them the names of the people who had worked with me in Japan. The Japanese police then went to where I was living with my wife, turned it upside down, and discovered my diaries. They brought the diaries to me and went through them page by page, demanding I tell them about the names they found. I denied everything, even though I knew they might kill me for my silence. The police stomped on me mercilessly with their spiked military boots until my body was as limp as if I were dead. Then they hung me from the ceiling and swung me back and forth. Like a slab of meat hanging in a butcher shop, I swung this way and that as they pushed me with a stick. Soon, blood filled my mouth and began dripping onto the cement floor below me. Each time I lost consciousness they would pour a bucket of water
> over me. When I regained consciousness the torture would begin again. They held my nose and stuck the spout of a teakettle into my mouth, forcing me to

> swallow water. When my stomach became bloated with water they laid me face up on the floor, looking like a frog, and began stomping on my abdomen with their military boots. The water would be forced up my esophagus and I would vomit until everything turned black. On the days after I had been tortured this way my esophagus felt as though it was on fire. The pain was so great I could not bear to swallow a single mouthful of soup. I had no energy and would just lie face down on the floor, completely unable to move. The war was coming to an end, and the Japanese police were desperate. They tortured me in ways words cannot describe. I endured, though, and never gave them the names of any of my friends. Even as I was going in and out of consciousness, I made sure not to give them what they wanted.
> (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

He said, "Finally tiring of torturing me, the Japanese police" let him go.

AUGUST 15, 1945

On August 15, 1945 the world rejoiced as the Japanese surrendered. The terrible four-year war with Japan from 1941-1945 was finally over. The Korean people were free from their domination, and the Koreans celebrated even more than the rest of the world after having been viciously dominated for 40 years. On this day, the young Messiah began his public ministry.

"In August, when the Japanese finally laid down their arms, there was jubilation in Korea. The people took to the streets and the hysteria of liberation took over. Sun-myung Moon marks the day of the Surrender, August 15—celebrated as Liberation Day by Koreans—as the beginning of his public ministry. Since his encounter with Jesus in 1935, he had spoken to no one of his new understanding of God. Now the defeat of Japan meant he could act free from police surveillance. Korea was free from its colonial masters and the Christian nations had triumphed over fascist evil. The time was propitious." (Michael Breen, *Sun Myung Moon, The Early Years, 1920-53*)

Father writes that he did not join in the celebration:

> Finally, on August 15, 1945, Korea was liberated from Japan. This was the day every Korean had been waiting for. It was a day of tremendous emotion. Shouts of "Mansei!" and people waving the Taeguk flag covered the entire peninsula. I could not join in the festivities, however. My heart was deadly serious because I could foresee the terrible calamity that was about to befall the Korean peninsula. I went alone into a small anteroom and immersed myself in prayer. Soon after that, my fears were realized. Although liberated from Japanese rule, our homeland was cut in two at the 38th parallel. In the North, a communist regime that denied the existence of God came to power. (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

LOVE YOUR ENEMIES

Jesus taught that we are to become perfect people. The ultimate test of perfection is if we can love our enemies. The Messiah teaches this philosophy of life by word and deed. Jesus taught: "You have heard that it was said, 'You shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy.' But I say to you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you, so that you may be sons of your Father who is in heaven; for he makes his sun rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust. For if you love those who love you, what reward have you? Do not even the tax collectors do the same? And if you salute only your brethren, what more are you doing than others? Do not even the Gentiles do the same? You, therefore, must be perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect" (Matt 5:43-48).

Sun Myung Moon, like Jesus, loved his enemies. He loved those who had savagely beaten him and raped his country. Every person is supposed to follow in the footsteps of Jesus and Sun Myung Moon by having the same heart and actions to his or her enemies. He began his public ministry in 1945 by helping those Japanese who tortured him to escape so they would not be tortured and killed by those who would seek revenge. He says:

I was in the underground anti-Japanese movement under the Japanese rule. But I saved the people secretly who had imprisoned me and gave me a hard time.

But after they lost the war, I loved the Japanese. I even saved a Japanese policeman who was chased.

Those Japanese policemen who arrested and tortured me for underground independent activities could have been executed if I accused them. But instead of my doing so, I helped them escape.

Father has resentment even to the Japanese emperor; however, I cannot get revenge by barging into the palace and stabbing him. It doesn't make him pay everything back. He's already a loser. God never hits the perished. God gives mercy to those who accept their own sin and repent. Because we have God, if we take revenge on the loser our descendants will perish. For that reason, we pray for them and we give them guidance. (*Way of Unification Part 2*)

FORGIVE THOSE WHO HIT ME

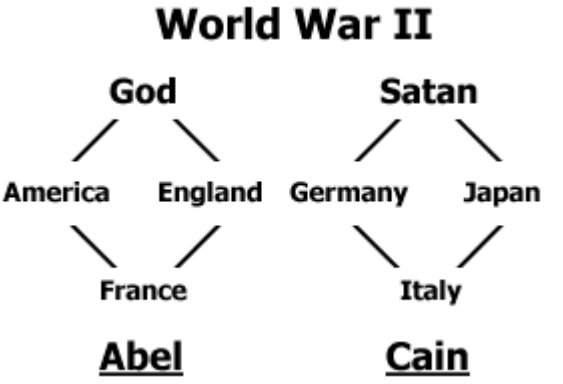
The Messiah is like God who loves everyone and hates no one. Father said, "Even if people can put my body into prison, no one can imprison my heart and belief. They can hit me however much they want. When they hit me, all of that will be a foundation for me to connect to God and God's work to this point. Those moments were testing how much I could actually love my enemies. I said to them in my mind, 'Hit me for as long as you want, but I will never hate you for this.' I vomited blood after being hit for so long, but I still thought, 'I was beaten on behalf of all mankind. I am beaten, but I will not remember the pain. Please, Heavenly Father, forgive those who hit me.' One must successfully go through a test in which your life is at risk." (*Theory of Education*)

The purpose of World War II was not only to stop the satanic Hitler and defend ourselves from Japan but a more internal reason was to free Korea from Japanese bondage so the Messiah could speak freely. The relationship between Korea and America was parallel to that of Rome and Israel. The Roman Army occupied

and governed the chosen nation of Israel and the armies of America and the Soviet Union occupied and governed Korea.

WORLD WAR II

Satan tried to rule the world by starting World War II. God worked hard to support the Allies: America, England and France. In 1945 they were victorious over the axis nations: Germany, Italy and Japan. The Allies were in the global Abel position; the Axis nations were in the Cain position. Abel won over Cain and then loved Cain. This was a successful indemnity condition.



HITLER

Hitler was a satanic imitation of Jesus—the Second Adam. Hitler was a Jew; he started his public life when he was 30 years old. He never married but had a secret girlfriend named Eva. He spoke of a millennium, never had children and his body was never found. He spoke of Jesus and thought of himself as the savior of the world. He taught about a satanic superior race of white people while the Messiah teaches that we must transcend race with interracial and international marriages. Hitler's speeches and his book, *Mein Kampf*, are filled with words of hate, while the Messiah's speeches and books are filled with words of love.

ARMAGEDDON

The Second World War was inevitable to pay for the tragedy of murdering Jesus. God's side won in World War II and this blood payment on a world level allowed the Third Adam to begin his

ministry in 1945 as the young Messiah. World War II was the fulfillment of the prophecy of Armageddon in Revelation.

Father teaches:

> To recreate Israel, the church and the state must become one as Cain and Abel. Instead they became one with Rome and captured and killed Jesus. They united with Rome. Who are the Jewish members here, raise your hands! Jewish people, you have to repent. Jesus was the King of Israel. Through the principle of indemnity Hitler killed 6 million Jews. That is why. God could not prevent Satan from doing that because Israel killed the Messiah. Even now, you have to determine that you will repent and follow and become one with Christianity through Rev. Moon.
>
> To unify Korea we must unify church and state. We must establish a political party and then unify church and state. We must be able to unify the UN and deal with the Cain type countries. The current administration in America must be guided by the religious leaders. If you follow Rev. Moon, you will not go down. (Hoon dok Hae, March 2, 2003)

ATOMIC BOMBS

The ultimate reason for the victory of World War II was to free the Messiah in Korea from Japanese domination. God and the Messiah are in a hurry. During World War II the Messiah was in great danger. To end the war quickly, God inspired the building and the use of atomic bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki on August 6 and 9, 1945. And it worked. Japan immediately surrendered and Korea was liberated. The Messiah could speak freely.

This use of atomic bombs on cities in Japan remains one of the most passionately debated historical events of the twentieth century. There is a Cain/Abel division between the hawks and doves. God is behind the hawks, and Satan is behind pacifists, those in the so-called peace movement and others who are naïve to evil.

Using atomic bombs saved the lives of Koreans who would have been massacred by the Japanese. Many American and Allied soldiers would have died in continued fighting of the war. And finally, the Messiah was in danger living in a slave state.

God's plan was for the young Messiah to be accepted by the Korean Christians. God had obviously been helping Syngman Rhee who later became the President of Korea. Rhee had been working tirelessly to free Korea for 40 years. It was no coincidence that he had lived in America and received his Ph.D. at Princeton University from Woodrow Wilson who was the president of Princeton then. Rhee was Christian, spoke perfect English and had a white Western wife. God's plan was for him to accept the young Messiah and then with the Korean Christians be the John the Baptist who would witness to the Christian leaders of America and to the President of the United States. It was a reenactment of Jesus, who with John the Baptist and the Israelites, were to go to Rome.

Father says:

> Independence came to Korea in 1948 under President Syngman Rhee. But he was almost like an American—he was educated in the United States, he spoke Korean like an American and his wife was a Western woman. The Korean government in 1945 was basically an extension of the United States.
>
> After World War II, the U.S. installed a military government in Korea headed by General Hodge. President Syngman Rhee was in the position to maintain his own cultural pride, not just listen to General Hodge. Actually, President Rhee was doing well for a while. For instance, the United States wanted to send all North Korean prisoners of war back to North Korea, but those who had surrendered in South Korea didn't want to go back to the communists. The United States government was trying to push them back because they didn't want any problems with North Korea. Then one night President Rhee, unbeknownst to the U.S. Army, opened the doors to the jails where those tens of

thousands of North Korean soldiers were being held and they fled to freedom. That was a courageous act and it was according to the messianic ideal. (5-1-84)

1945 — MESSIAH BEGINS HIS MINISTRY

There were some spiritualists in Korea at this time that had revelations that the messiah would return as a man. One such man was a Mr. Kim who had a following. Father went to him in the fall of 1945. Michael Breen in *Sun Myung Moon, the Early Years, 1920-53* writes:

> Baek-moon Kim … taught that Korea was the Israel of modern times, where the second coming of Christ would take place. In 1943, he started a retreat in Supchol-ri in the countryside north of Seoul. As Japanese oppression of Christians increased, he taught secretly. In September, 1945, the month after the end of the war, he formally established the Israel Jesus Church by setting up a church in Seoul, and a small prayer center in Supchol-ri. Two men and ten women joined Kim at his retreat, where they lived a celibate life of faith.
>
> The congregation was small, around fifty people, but comprised many intellectuals and other influential figures. If Kim ran into opposition from the Christian establishment for his heretical views, he would be able to call on powerful allies. One of the deacons was the wife of the owner of the Chosun Ilbo, Korea's main daily newspaper. Her daughter was one of the celibates at Kim's retreat.
>
> Another woman among the faithful was the wife of Lee Bom-sok, who in 1948 was to become South Korea's first prime minister.
>
> Moon took an unassuming role when he visited Kim's group, and did menial tasks. His wife did not approve of Baek-moon Kim and did not attend the church with him. In fact, she complained of Moon's devotion. The other members began to recognize his deep spirituality.

> Rev. Kim told his followers that Moon had profound spiritual wisdom. Several months after Moon joined the group Kim placed his hand on Moon's head in blessing and said the wisdom of Solomon was with him.
>
> Kim should naturally have recognized that Moon embodied the goal of Kim's search, and should have led his followers to understand that Moon was the new Adam, the Christ that they had been waiting for. He should have become Moon's leading follower. Moon would have provided the substantial core to the theology that Kim had developed in framework. Had this happened, Moon would have sought, through Kim's sect, to integrate the Christian spiritual groups, and then to create a revival within Christianity aimed at unifying the denominations. Such a movement, in Moon's plan, would have provided a basis to create harmony between the major religions.

In "Early Unification Church History" we read:

> Mr. Kim was told to establish a seminary to prepare for the Lord of the Second Advent. This he did, calling it the Israel Monastery.
>
> Father met Mr. Kim in November 1945 (three months after the liberation from the Japanese) and stayed and worked in his church for six months. Father did not speak of the *Principle*, but served the church in a humble way by doing the most menial tasks. During this time Father prayed hard for Mr. Kim to understand Father's role. Mr. Kim received a revelation about Father and placed his hand on Father's head, saying that the glory of King Solomon and the whole world would be on him.
>
> During this six-month period many women followers of Mr. Kim were told by the spirit world to follow Father instead of Mr. Kim. Mr. Kim, on the basis of what he received when he blessed Father, had his own portion of responsibility to find out who Father was. He should have asked Father

what these revelations about him meant; Father was praying for him to ask. However, Mr. Kim became more concerned about his own position, and was fearful that Father would take his followers. Therefore, he, like John the Baptist, could not follow the Messiah, although Father inherited the blessing of the providential foundation from Mr. Kim.

1946

In 1946 Father had to move on to another group because of the failure of Mr. Kim. When a central figure fails then there is more indemnity to pay. Father now had to suffer more and go to North Korea ruled by the atheistic and brutal communists led by Kim Il Sung. While people were trying to escape from the North, which was ruled by the Russian army, the young Messiah went to the North.

He had a wife and child, but he was not abandoning or deserting them. He is a central figure of God and sometimes God's champions have to do extraordinary things when they pay indemnity. He was not leaving his wife; he was going toward God.

> Immediately following liberation, our country was in indescribable chaos. Daily necessities were difficult to come by, even for people with money. We ran out of rice in our home, so I set out for Paekchon, Hwanghae Province, a community north of Seoul and just south of the 38th parallel, to pick up some rice that had been purchased previously. On my way, though, I received a revelation that said: "Go across the 38th parallel! Find the people of God who are in the North."
>
> I immediately crossed the 38th parallel and headed for Pyongyang. It had been only a month since our first son was born. I was concerned for my wife. I knew she would be anxiously waiting for me, but there was no time for me to return home before going north. God's commands are very serious, and they must be followed without reservation or

hesitation. I took nothing with me except for the Bible that I had read dozens of times and had filled with underlined notes to myself in tiny letters the size of grains of sesame seeds.

Refugees were already streaming south to escape communist rule. In particular, the Communist Party's rejection of religion meant that many Christians were heading south in search of the freedom to worship. The communists branded religion as the opiate of the people and insisted that no one could have a religion. This was the place where I went, following the call from Heaven. No minister would want to go into such a place, but I went there with my own two feet.
(*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

The wives of central figures of God must also pay a heavy price in God's providence. Often they are neglected and lonely as their husband fights the good fight. He spoke on this in one of his speeches:

You women should look at your husbands as if they were in Abraham's position. Don't demand an explanation from him when he pushes you to get up and out of bed; just trust and follow him. Usually when someone is trying to explain all the details about the providential path, the providence has already gone on ahead without him! Your husband might tell you, "Don't ask questions; just follow me.

Beyond that horizon, wonderful things are waiting." You should follow him without having any idea what kinds of things are waiting.

Perhaps when you and your husband get on the other side of that mountain where wonderful things were supposed to be waiting, there will be a howling wolf instead. Then your husband might say, "Don't worry, we must cross over another mountain and then we will come to Canaan, that wonderful land." Even if the wife is not so cooperative, the

husband must somehow persuade her to go with him over all the mountains. Do you men understand? That is your job. Actually, in some cases the husband is the one who is confused and not sure of what to do or where to go.

Sometimes you have to give an ultimatum and tell your spouse, "All right. You can stay here, but I'm going ahead." Do you rascal men hear me correctly this morning? So many men feel they have to discuss their missions and mandates from God with their wives first before doing them. But you must feel, "I must talk with God alone; let my wife follow me."

You know that I have taught you American women many things. You love and trust me, is that correct? From now on you must truly be different from all secular American women. Think of it: if I had been the sort of man who always cleared things with my wife before acting on them, there would not be any Unification Church today! I am speaking now of my first marriage. That woman was very brilliant and capable. She told me, "All you need to do is just love and pay attention to me and our child; I will make you happy. Just stay here; why do you have to go to North Korea, anyway? You have no guarantee that you will survive there!" However, I did not listen to her; I only discussed with God and obeyed God's commands. Even more than Abraham, I left everything behind and went directly to North Korea as soon as God directed me. I didn't even go to visit my own home town there in North Korea—that is not why God sent me. I went to North Korea in order to do exactly what God commanded me. (9-19-82)

In *Guidance for Heavenly Tradition* Volume 3 by Rev. Young Hwi Kim we read:

We know that as the chosen nation, Korea had to make an indemnity condition similar to that of Israel's in order to inherit God's providence. The Hebrews suffered in Egypt for 400 years before

leaving Egypt for Canaan, where they started a new nation. Korea gained its independence in 1945 and Father started his mission immediately thereafter. But even before 1945, in 1943 I think, Father returned to Korea and worked for a Japanese construction company. Besides his job, he worked with the underground churches, so he already knew several righteous ministers. He also led Sunday school classes. So he had already begun to lay a foundation to start his mission.

After Korea was liberated in 1945 Father began to talk about his mission, but the minister with whom Father was working (his name was Kim) couldn't accept Father as the Messiah. He knew Father when he was young and to him Father was still a young man. He always compared himself to Father; he was older and more experienced and also received revelations from the spirit world, so he thought he was the top man. He didn't think he was the Messiah, but that he was the number one person after the Messiah. As a result it was difficult for him to accept Father as his leader, even though Father revealed many new things to him. Father wanted to contact other ministers through him, but because of his rejection it wasn't possible. Father tried very hard, but as a result of this failure he couldn't establish a foundation in the South. So in 1946, Father was told to go to the North, because he couldn't establish a foundation among the churches of the South. When the Christians rejected him, Father had no condition to remain; he had to find another foundation. When someone fails, the next step becomes more difficult. If you fail on the first step, you have to pay indemnity in order to indemnify the failure and to restart. It would have been much easier for Father to begin his mission if the Southern churches had accepted him, but because they didn't Father had to make another, more difficult condition; he had to go to the North.

After Korea's liberation many Northerners fled south, because the North was occupied by the Communists. They didn't have a government yet,

both Korean governments were established in 1948. But even before the government was established the Communist Party ruled the North with the help of the Soviet Army. It was very difficult because even though they had been liberated from Japanese dominion the people still couldn't stay in their villages; they fled south. Contrary to everyone else, Father was heading north. North Korea was a living hell. There was no freedom at all. If you spoke out against the Communist Party, you were simply taken away, never to be heard from again; they could arrest anyone they wanted. That was the situation in the North. Father had to go to the North because he couldn't establish a foundation in the South. He had to find a spiritual group God had prepared for him there. Father knew this and went north in order to meet them. So instead of ministers he had to go north to find spiritual groups that could identify him as the Lord and follow him as the Messiah.

Father went up north at a time when it was very difficult to worship freely. He brought a new message so the Christians persecuted him as well. Actually Father had a terrible time. He found many good people, but the families of Father's followers persecuted him severely. Sometimes Father was beaten by a follower's father. Father had an extremely difficult time. But he waited patiently for the time when he could meet the spiritual group.

Father went to prison, where he met another spiritual group. Father met the group in prison and sent them a small note telling them to deny the charges being brought against them. But they didn't follow his instructions. If they had, they would have been saved and released from prison. They didn't deny the charges, because they adhered to the old Christian tradition that to tell a lie is against God's will. They didn't follow Father's instructions and as a result were executed. Father was virtually beaten to death because the guards found the note he had sent the group. This was Father's first imprisonment in North Korea. The spiritual group also failed to

follow Father. After that Father had to bring his own people to make his foundation

The reason our church suffers so much is that we don't have God's nation. God suffers even more than we do because of this. So the creation and building of the Fatherland, God's nation, should be the foremost point in our minds.

The reason Father is investing so much time and effort in America is that it has a great influence on Korea. We cannot fulfill the worldwide providence without America's influence. America is the archangel nation and has the responsibility to protect God's nation, just as the original archangel had the mission to protect God's children. So to restore God's nation we must first restore God's archangel nation. This is why Father is working so hard in America. Do you understand? Of course the restoration of Korea is most important, but at the moment the restoration of America is more important, because God's nation cannot be safe unless America is on God's side.

NORTH KOREAN SPIRITUALISTS

In "Early Unification Church History" we read this about the spiritualist group Father tried to work with in 1946 in North Korea led by a Mrs. Ho (also spelled Huh):

Jesus revealed to Mrs. Ho much about the heart of God, the inner secrets of the mission Mary could not fulfill, Jesus' childhood, the fact that John the Baptist failed his mission resulting in the crucifixion of Jesus, and that the Lord of the Second Advent would come as a man to Korea.

The Ho church was to solve this resentment by preparing the best princely clothes and food for Jesus—enough that he could have three banquet-style meals a day and clothes (both Korean and Western) to change every three days from birth to 33 years of age.

Mrs. Ho's unusual sect became known throughout Korea as the Bokjungkyo church (Inside Belly Church). This name was given the group because each time Mrs. Ho received revelations, her stomach shook, a sign which served as a constant reminder that the Lord to come was to be born as a physical man from his mother's womb. Mrs. Ho prophesied many specific things which came true, including that Japan would surrender on August 16, 1945. Because of her accuracy in prophecy her followers had great faith in her. She also received that they would meet the Lord when Japan perished. Thus, it must have been with great anticipation that these faithful and sacrificial Christians prepared both a house and a bride for the Messiah. They bought a fine house in Pyongyang. By this time (1946) North Korea was occupied by communists who, upon hearing that they owned a fine house and stored many rich garments, confiscated the clothes and put the leaders, including Mrs. Ho, in prison.

On August 11, 1946, several months after Mrs. Ho's imprisonment, Father was also imprisoned. He had gone to North Korea from Pusan. Without identification, he was suspected of being a spy. Secondly, his religious teachings and practices resembled those of Mrs. Ho's church, making him suspect.

As providence would have it, Father was put in the same prison as Mrs. Ho, and in the same cell as her assistant. Won Pil Kim tells the story thusly:

The cell Father was thrown into was the same as that of one of the Inside Belly Church leaders. When this man saw Father, he immediately felt an impulse to explain to Father everything about the Inside Belly Church and confide in him about his own life.

The communists had given the Inside Belly Church leaders two alternatives: to deny their revelations and be released, or to maintain their faith and stay in prison. Even under severe torture, they would not deny their revelations. When Father heard about

this, he explained to his cell mate why their church was prepared, and urged him to deny the revelation so he could be set free. Eventually this man did deny the revelation and was liberated, but because of the severe torture he had endured, he died shortly after his release.

Father felt responsible for the woman who had received these revelations. In prison, it was very dangerous to write letters, but Father secretly sent a note to her on a piece of paper hidden in a rice bowl. The contents of the note were instructions to deny the revelations she had received and to pray to find out who had written the note. However, the note was discovered and Father was tortured. The Japanese had previously ruled Korea, and the torture in this prison was Japanese-style. It was severe and nearly unbearable. Finally, after about 100 days in prison, Father was set free.

The woman who was leader of the Inside Belly Church could not accept Father's request that she deny her revelations and be released. You can imagine how difficult it would have been for her to do so. Because she had been guided by God directly and because whenever she neglected to obey even a small part of her revelations she was chastised by heaven, to deny the revelations would have meant denying herself and everything she had done in the past. Through many experiences, she had learned that if she followed the revelations exactly, many good things happened, but if she did not follow them, bad things would happen. So she knew that the revelation was absolute.

However, the last revelation she received was that she would meet the Messiah in prison. Her own responsibility was to discover who he was. Father told her to pray in order to find out who had written the note, but she could not.

Mrs. Ho and her followers could not deny their revelations and without understanding who Father was, both they and Father suffered severe torture. The great foundation of faith which had been made

through Mrs. Kim and Mrs. Ho was never connected to the Lord they so longed to meet. Had they recognized and obeyed the Messiah there, history would be different. In 1950 when the Korean War broke out, long-suffering members of the Inside Belly Church were sent to concentration camps in North Korea and eventually killed.

Here is another version of this story from Michael Breen's book *Sun Myung Moon, the Early Years, 1920-53*:

> Pyongyang in 1946 was still a dynamic center for Korean Christianity. Denominations which had been banned by the Japanese had re-established themselves. There were churches everywhere. Christians called the city the Jerusalem of the East. But the writing was on the wall, as the Soviet-backed authorities began breaking up Christian power.
>
> When Moon prayed, his prayer was different from anything they had heard in the churches. He prayed with such intensity and feeling that the sweat and tears seemed to pour from him.
>
> His sermon was on the fact that Jesus' death on the cross was not God's original plan. Jesus should have lived much longer on earth in order to realize God's salvation providence. As he preached, he wept out of sorrow for Jesus.
>
> On August 11, 1946, in response to [complaints], agents came and took Moon to the Daedong security police station and charged that he had "spread false messages and disrupted the public order."
>
> The leader of the group, a spiritual woman, Huh Ho-bin, and the other group leaders were in neighboring cells.
>
> [One of her followers saw Father in jail and told him] "Last night I dreamed that I saw her bowing to someone, and when I woke up this morning I saw the person was here in this cell. It was you.

"Why are you being held?" Moon asked.

"They say that if we deny our revelations they will let us go, but the leaders are refusing to do it," he explained.

The man recounted the history of Mrs. Huh's group. Huh Ho-bin, who was the leader of the Holy Lord Church in Pyongyang. Every time Mrs. Huh received a revelation, her stomach would move as if she were pregnant. This unusual experience was cited by the followers as further evidence of the truth of Kim's teaching that, contrary to common Christian belief, the Lord would be born in the flesh. Huh's group became informally known as "Bokjung-Kyo" literally the In-the-Belly Church.

Jesus is said to have appeared to Huh and told her details of his suffering life that are not in the Bible. She claimed Jesus told her that his mother had neglected him, that Joseph did not love him, and that he was never given good food or decent clothes even on his birthday. As he confided in her, Jesus said to her, "You are my mother." He would be her teacher, and wanted to experience from her the love of a mother and a wife, he said. In an original and remarkable expression of devotion, Mrs. Huh and her followers made a set of Korean and western clothes for Jesus for every three days of his life from birth to the age of thirty-three. A room was specially set aside for the task. For each item they bought only the best material, they did not barter the cost, and in hand sewing they tied off every third stitch. When this labor was complete, Jesus told her to do the same for the coming Lord.

[Mrs. Ho told her followers that Jesus instructed her saying] "The new Lord is twenty-six and you must serve him well, as you have served me."

Then she told her followers that God had said she would meet the new Lord when Japan falls. They began again to prepare clothing for the Lord. She then received a revelation that the people should not pray, but should bow to God as if he were there.

Moon's fellow prisoner, Hwang, said one night he bowed five thousand times. As expectation mounted, they bought a beautiful house in Pyongyang for the Lord, assigned twelve disciples and seventy apostles. Huh's sixteen-year-old daughter was prepared as a bride.

"Your group is specially prepared by God," Moon said to his cellmate. "I will take all responsibility if you deny to the authorities your experiences. Just deny the facts and you will be released. Please tell Mrs. Huh to do the same."

When the prisoners were gathered at midday to eat, Hwang conveyed the message to Huh. But she refused to accept what he told her. Hwang himself denied the revelations at his next interrogation and was released.

Shortly afterwards, Huh's husband was transferred to the same cell as Moon. Moon gave him the same advice as he had given Hwang, but he said he would follow his wife. Moon then tried to smuggle a note to her. The message, written with mud using a fish bone as a nib on a piece of white cloth, said: "The writer of this note has a mission from heaven. Pray to find out who he is. If you deny everything you have received, you will be released." After Huh read it, the note was discovered by a guard. Moon was exposed as the culprit and was severely tortured.

This incident happened on September 18. He had already been held for almost six weeks, during which time his interrogators had tried to get him to confess to being a spy for the American Military Government which was ruling in South Korea. They demanded to know why he had come from Seoul and been living in Pyongyang without an identity card. He explained that he had come to preach the word of God and that he was not a spy.

The North Koreans had inherited the Japanese torture methods and added some Soviet refinements. For several days during the interrogation, Moon was not given food and not allowed to sleep. When he

began to fall asleep, a guard would shout or hit him. The guards were on three-hour rotation duty. After a couple of days, he devised a way to totally relax his nervous system for a few minutes at a time, while keeping his eyes open. He was also beaten savagely. He steeled himself to endure each time. With each blow he imagined God's blessing would increase.

Bo Hi Pak in *Messiah: My Testimony to Reverend Sun Myung Moon* wrote of this time: "Once, one of his disciples went to visit Reverend Moon and bring him a change of clothing. So much blood had soaked into his clothes and caked that he couldn't take them off. Finally, they had to be torn off so that he could change into new clothes.

"The harshest form of torture he experienced was that he was not allowed to eat or sleep for three days and nights on several occasions. If he closed his eyes, he would be beaten. Reverend Moon says he endured this torture by learning how to sleep with his eyes open for several minutes at a time.

"The communist police became increasingly desperate and continued to increase the severity of Reverend Moon's torture. His ribs were broken, his flesh torn, and he was vomiting blood. Finally, he lost consciousness."

One person wrote, "The guards tied Father's hands behind his back with a very heavy rope. Using a large beam in the ceiling, they pulled the rope which lifted Father up high over the heads of the guards. Suddenly they let go of the rope, causing Father to fall. But before hitting the floor, they violently jerked the rope upward, causing Father's arms to be jolted from their sockets. The pain was so terrible that it was impossible to stand it without fainting.

"Finally, when Father's strength was about to give out the communists began to beat him with bats. They hit him in the face so hard that his back teeth shattered and blood gushed from his mouth. Father tensed his muscles against the blows, but he was struck in the stomach so hard and so many times that his intestines turned into pulp. He began to throw up, covering his body with so

much blood that it dripped onto the floor. He could hold on no longer, and Father finally fainted from loss of blood."

In Rev. Chong Sung Ahn's *Divine Principle* lecture notes we read: "Father's hands were tied together behind his back. Then he was hung from the ceiling by his hands. The pressure forced his rib cage to push into his lungs until he could not breathe. Three hours later he had almost suffocated and passed out. His torturers thinking that he had died, cut him down. In general people died after two hours of such torture. This suffering was a similar experience to Jesus' painful three hour crucifixion. After five hours Father revived and regained consciousness.

"For several days Father was beaten across his back with wooden rods, until his back was torn open and blood stained his shirt. His inner organs were also severely damaged. Eventually he collapsed and vomited blood. Many people were killed in this way dying after vomiting. Father was left for dead and his body was thrown out into the snow. His body was found by his disciples and taken home. He looked like a skeleton, nothing but skin and bones. For 10 days he continued to vomit blood until they were convinced there was no hope. Doctors could not revive him with medication or injections."

The innocent Messiah received his torture and martyrdom without any complaint or resentment. He lives his teachings of loving his enemies. After he was tortured and put in his cell when he regained consciousness he immediately prayed for his torturers. One of his most vicious torturers was a former Christian who had become a Communist and had killed many Christians. He had experienced many Christian leaders, ministers and priests being tortured. He saw that they all prayed to God begging for His help. When God did not send help, they lost their faith in God and hope. He saw that Father was the only one who kept his faith. When he heard Father's tearful prayers for his enemies with no anger and with pure love, his heart was melted and he repented to Father. "Through experiencing Father's lifestyle and prayer, the torturer awakened to the realization that God must exist. This most evil torturer, shedding tears, visited Father and confessed and repented of his sins of murdering many Christians, asking Father how he could be saved. Father forgave him and guided him on how to be saved." (Rev. Ahn's notes)

Pak writes: “The police notified Reverend Moon’s followers that they could come get him and tossed his body into the courtyard. It was October 31, almost twelve weeks after his arrest. Three days later Reverend Moon regained his consciousness. After another week, he began to speak. In ten days, he could stand, and from that very day he resumed preaching” (Pak, *Messiah).*

NOT ANGRY

Sun Myung Moon once said, “When, in such a position, I was hit and stomped on by the Communists, tortured and robbed, do you think I was angry or not? Even when I was in such agony, do you think I would say, ‘God, please let the lightning and thunder hit and destroy them?’ No. I prayed for their well being from the position of shedding blood from my body.

PRAYED FOR TORTURERS

“When I was persecuted by the communist regime in North Korea, the police arrested me and tortured me until they thought I was dead. Don’t you realize that I could have felt resentment toward my situation at such times? I could have demanded of God, ‘Why are You allowing me to suffer like this? Why can’t You do something to protect me, since You are so great and powerful?’ This would have been the common reaction. But even though my hands were bruised and bleeding, I clasped them in prayer for those who tortured me. I know that those who beat me were only acting on orders; they could not reject me completely. I longed to embrace them and forgive them. I refused to write them off. You also should not give up when you encounter opposition or difficulties.”

The Messiah was almost killed within one year of his ministry because of Satan. Satan was able to keep the First and Second Adam from accomplishing their goal and now he was doing everything he could to stop the Third Adam.

Father had to give up on these John the Baptist spiritualist groups and had to go a more difficult course and start at the bottom, like Jesus, and find people one by one and build a movement of his own. Those who followed him suffered just like Jesus’ disciples suffered.

PERSECUTION OF HIS FOLLOWERS

In *Guidance for Heavenly Tradition* we read about some of the hardships and persecution his followers had to endure: "Almost all those who continued to follow him had to endure some measure of persecution. Ok Se-hyun was beaten by her husband. Kim Won-pil was thrown out of his home by his family, and took lodgings in Ok's house. Kim In-ju was told by her parents that she was in the grip of Satan. They believed that Jesus would return literally on the clouds, as the Bible said, and were convinced that their daughter, who was talking about Christ returning as another man, was completely possessed.

"'We must drive Satan out to rescue you from the anti-Christ,' they said. They regularly beat and whipped her. She was forbidden to go out to attend what was being called the 'Moon House.' Sometimes after she had been whipped, she looked outside her window and could see two or three of the members dressed in white, standing in the street, praying. She knew that Moon had sent them and felt comforted. On one occasion, her parents visited the house of their nephew, Chong Myong-son, where Moon was staying. When he saw Moon, her father grabbed hold of his hair and began yelling at him.

"An even more serious case of what the followers interpreted as retribution involved the husband of another follower, an ardent Christian called Pak Ul-nae. Pak's husband sometimes came to the house and shouted obscenities through the window of Sun-myung Moon's room. One night after doing this, he suddenly died of a heart attack. These incidents added to the sense of controversy which surrounded the dynamic young preacher."

1947-1948

The Messiah had to build his own foundation—a new John the Baptist group. Sun Myung Moon kept preaching about God's exciting vision of a world utopia. He inspired many idealistic people to join him. Many of his followers were from established Christian churches. The pastors were upset to lose good members and their donations. They were also upset at his radical heretical teachings of a Messiah coming in the flesh and not on the clouds.

"The churches realized that, without government power, they would not be able to prevent Moon from preaching, so they began to write formal protests against him. By early 1948 the Communist authorities had received some eighty complaints that Moon was swindling Christians, breaking up families and committing adultery. In order to investigate the allegations, the police sent a spy, a woman who stayed for a few days and asked many questions." These untrue rumors were spread out of jealousy and fear from some Christian ministers.

In February of 1948 he was arrested by the police who took him to court. Like a reenactment of Jesus being tried, the young Messiah was mocked and scorned in a communist courtroom filled with Christians just like Jesus had been mocked and scorned 2000 years before by the government and Jewish religious leaders.

REENACTMENT OF JESUS' TRIAL

"The trial was set for April 3, and then delayed to April 7, so that Communist police and other officials could attend. It had been billed as the trial of 'Jesus who had come down on the clouds to save the people.' Many Christians came to the court.

"He stood accused of spreading falsehoods: Deceiving innocent people for their money, and using those people to get more money from others. He was also charged with destroying the family and institutions, bringing disorder to society.

"'How did you come down to earth?' the prosecutor asked him. 'By cloud, or by plane?' The Christians in the courthouse laughed. He didn't respond.

"'What were you wearing when you came down from heaven? Jesus had a thorny crown. How about you?' He kept silent.

"'What did you study at college?'

"'I majored in electrical engineering.'

"'Please explain how electricity is produced.' The question was designed to show that God, like electricity, is invisible but man-

made. He explained the principles of electricity in detail. Eventually the judge interrupted. 'OK, that will do.' The defense lawyer, who had agreed to defend him at his followers' request, made an appeal for leniency. But given the nature of the system and the political importance of the trial in the context of the anti-religious drive, the gesture was useless. During the course of the trial, some people yelled out threats and calls for capital punishment. 'He should be killed!' someone shouted from the gallery. 'He should be beaten to death!' shouted another.

"The trial lasted four hours and was over by lunch time. When the judge read the verdict, Moon requested he delete the part about spreading falsehoods and deceiving people. The judge ignored the request and announced his decision. Moon was sentenced to five years. The crowd of Communist and Christian onlookers seemed quietly pleased with the outcome.

"The handcuffs were put back on. His followers were able to hand him a lunchbox. He held the box in the cuffed hand. As he was taken away, he smiled, lifted his free hand and waved." (Michael Breen, *Sun Myung Moon, The Early Years, 1920-53*)

KOREA DIVIDED

In 1945 the United States' Army and the Soviet Union's army jointly occupied Korea with the 38th parallel separating them. On November 14, 1947, the United Nations General Assembly adopted a resolution calling for an "all-Korea free election under United Nations observation" on May 10, 1948, for creation of a unified, independent Korea. The Soviets refused to allow the United Nations Commission to enter the Russian Zone. So voting was held only in South Korea in 1948. This gave birth to the South Korean government that officially declared itself the Republic of Korea on August 15, 1948. This is exactly three years from the time of its liberation from Japan and the start of the Messiah's ministry. At this time the Messiah was being tortured in a North Korean communist death camp. God had spent 2000 years since Jesus to prepare Korea, the United States, and the world to receive the Messiah as King of Kings buy sadly, like Jesus' situation, those in the John the Baptist position had failed the Second Coming of Christ and tortured him.

In September, 1948 the Communists announced the creation of the North Korean communist regime named Democratic People's Republic of Korea. In December, 1948 the United Nations General Assembly confirmed the sole legitimacy of the Republic of Korea by adopting a resolution declaring the Republic of Korea government as "a lawful government ...and the only such government in Korea."

1948 — HUNGNAM DEATH CAMP

Between 1948 and 1950 the young Messiah was tortured everyday in Hungnam Prison. Most men died there in a few months. He endured this living hell for almost three years. The men were required to bag a chemical fertilizer that cut into the flesh and exposed the bones in the hands. Their hands were usually bloody. The worst and most difficult job in the camp was to spend long hours carrying these 40 kilogram bags (88 pounds) on their backs to the weighing machines and then load them on railroad cars. He voluntarily took this most difficult job everyday and showed super human strength. No one in human history has ever worked harder than him. For every person in the world and in human history to follow him he must live a life greater than anyone else in history.

All prisoners were given only one cup of grain to eat each day. When some died in the middle of eating, the others "around him would fight each other to dig the food out of the dead man's mouth and put it in their own mouths. It was a living hell." They didn't try to help him but were so starving that they acted as animals. Sun Myung Moon for the first three weeks in this terrible concentration camp divided his little portion of rice in half and gave it to others. The Messiah is the most generous, loving and sacrificial person on earth because he is our true parent.

In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* Sun Myung Moon wrote about this time. Here are a few lines from his book. Please read the book to learn more:

> Heungnam Prison was a concentration camp for special laborers working in the Heungnam Nitrogen Fertilizer Factory. … People called me "the man like a steel rod" because of my strength. I could endure even the most difficult work. Prison

and compulsory labor were not such a big problem for me. No matter how fierce the beating or terrible the environment, a person can endure if he carries a definite purpose in his heart.

Beginning with my first day in prison I made it a habit to take half of my ration of rice and give it to my fellow prisoners, keeping only half for myself. I trained myself this way for three weeks and then ate the whole ration. This made me think that I was eating enough rice for two people, which made it easier to endure the hunger.

Prison life is so terrible that it cannot even be imagined by someone who has not experienced it. Half the prisoners would die within a year, so every day we had to watch as dead bodies were carried out the back gate in a wooden box. We would work so hard, and our only hope for leaving was as a dead body in that wooden casket. Even for a merciless and cruel regime, what they did to us clearly went beyond all boundaries of humanity. All those bags of fertilizer filled with the tears and grief of the prisoners were loaded onto ships and taken to Russia.

Sometimes his followers would bring some food to him, but he would give it away to other prisoners. The clothes of beggars were better than the inadequate clothes of these prisoners. They suffered so much in the bitterly cold weather. His mother once brought him some good winter clothing. She stood at the fence and cried as she saw him give all of it away.

When the men returned to their large rooms at night, they all collapsed into sleep on the concrete floor. Sun Myung Moon would sleep in this room full of men near the bucket that served as their toilet. No one ever saw him sleep because he prayed when they went to sleep and he woke and prayed before they awoke. He prayed without complaint to God and comforted God's heart.

In his autobiography Father writes:

> The prison cell held thirty-six people, and I took a small corner next to the toilet. In this space no one would step over me, but nobody wanted this space. We called it a toilet, but actually it was only a small earthenware jar without even a lid. Fluid would overflow from the toilet in the summer and it would
> freeze in the winter. There is no describing the putrid smell that came from it. The prisoners often experienced diarrhea because of the salty soup and hard rice balls that we ate every day.
>
> I would be sitting by the toilet and hear someone say, "Oh, my stomach." The person would make his way to the toilet in quick short steps. As soon as he exposed his bottom, the diarrhea would come shooting out. Because I was next to the toilet I was often splashed. Even during the night, when everyone was asleep, sometimes someone would have abdominal pain. When I heard people yelping in pain as they were being stepped on, I would know that someone was making his way to the toilet and I would get up and press myself against the corner. And if I were asleep and did not hear him coming, I would suffer the consequences. In order to endure this impossible situation, I even tried to think of these sights and sounds as some form of art.
>
> Still I kept the spot by the toilet as my own during the entire time. "Why do you choose to stay there?" other prisoners would ask. I would answer, "This is where I feel most comfortable." I wasn't just saying this. This was, indeed, the place where my heart felt most at ease.

Some believers wrote a little book for children about Father's life. The following is about Father's time at the death camp:

> This prison was at a nitrogen fertilizer factory. There was a small mountain of hardened lime which

the prisoners had to break up and haul to another place. They had to break up the lime, pack it into rice-straw bags holding eighty pounds each, weigh it, and take it off to the loading dock. Each group of ten men was responsible for loading 1,300 bags every day, which meant about one bag every half-minute. The bags were heavy. The lime made their fingers bleed with big sores.

You might think a man would simply decide not to work; but this was not possible at Hungnam. If the team did not do its work, they didn't get anything to eat that day. In order to live, they had to eat, and in order to eat, they had to do the work. They didn't eat steaks or chicken or vegetables, nor any of the foods we eat to stay strong. They received each day just one small ball of boiled barley, or a few spoonfuls of rice or wheat. Even if a person was lucky enough to eat every day, it was still not enough food to live on. Within a few weeks, the men became so skinny you could see the shape of their bones. Their bellies became swollen from starvation. After six months in this prison, most of them were sick enough to die. At the end of one year, most of the prisoners had died. Father was sentenced to five years! How was he going to survive?

As soon as he arrived, Father began planning how he would stay alive. His plan was very unusual. Most people would think the best plan would be to find ways to save energy and get more food. That was not Father's way.

First, he looked at the food. If he became desperate about this little lump of grain, he would surely die. He saw how the people acted around him. One day a prisoner, who had been very ill, died while eating his meal. When he fell over, two or three prisoners rushed to his side, opened his mouth, scooped out the grains of rice he had not swallowed and ate them.

Father decided that instead of trying to find a way to get more food he would eat less; then on the days when he ate the regular portion it would seem like a feast. For some time he would divide his little rice ball in half and give one half to one of the other prisoners. The surprise in that prisoner's face must have been like food to Father.

The time before the Korean War was very difficult even for those who were not in prison. Disciples such as Mrs. Ok and Won Pil Kim were allowed to visit every two months, and they would sometimes manage to bring him a little bag of rice powder. He easily could have gone to a quiet corner and eaten the rice powder himself, but that was not Father's way. Father would always share it with other prisoners. Sometimes he filled their pockets with the precious powder when they weren't looking.

One day Father received a package of rice powder. Before he could share it he discovered it was missing. The other prisoners became outraged. Who would do such a thing? Finally they found the guilty man and dragged him before Father, so he could be punished. Father looked at him and said, "You must have been so very hungry to have to steal my food. He who is hungry has the right to eat. Give me your bag." Father then poured into his bag all the rice powder he had left.

Father looked at the work load. He decided to work harder than anyone at the camp had ever worked before. The nine workers on his team found that they could fill enough bags of lime when they worked with Father. Soon other prisoners were trying to get on Father's team. Twice Father was given a special award by the communists for his hard work. So, even Satan had to admit Father worked hard!

Then Father looked at his spiritual life. He had suffered so much, but he never complained to God about his situation. He never prayed to God because

he was weak. His first thought was that God must be suffering so much to see what he was going through. If he acted sad it would make God suffer more. So he spoke brave words to God.

"I will never give up, Heavenly Father," he prayed with great love. "Please don't worry about me." He also told God he would fulfill his mission; he would be victorious.

The prisoners never got enough sleep, but Father used his sleeping time to meditate and pray. A prisoner later said that when they went to sleep, they would see Father kneeling to pray; when they woke up, he was still praying!

The prisoners came to love him. Many times tears came into their eyes because they loved him so much. Father could not say one word about his mission to them, or even speak about God or religion at all. The communists would have killed him if he spoke of God. Therefore, spirit world spoke out for him. Many prisoners were told in dreams that he was a very special person, and that they should become his helpers.

At least twelve prisoners became his disciples. One of these men was named Jung Hwa Pak. Mr. Pak was a leader over a group of prisoners. Father was in his group. He tried to give Father easier jobs and extra food whenever possible, but Father always refused these favors.

The summers were extremely hot. Father always kept all his clothes on.

Mr. Pak kindly suggested, "Why don't you take off your rubber shoes and long sleeved shirt? I'll take you somewhere to wash."

"I cannot," replied father. "Heavenly Father directly told me not to expose my body to others."

> At one point, Father got very sick with malaria. He could have rested in sickbay. But he said, "No, I didn't come here because of my sin, but for my mission." He continued working, sweating greatly, barely having the energy to stay on his feet. No one else could have survived such punishment.
>
> Father's number in prison was 596, which, when translated into Korean, sounds very similar to the word which means "innocent," or "not being treated fairly."

Father says, "I'm going to tell you a story of my life in prison. I went through much torture. But before the torture came, I was rather anxious to go through that kind of thing, to experience it, to know what it really is. At each glance of a bat, with each jab, I was ready for it; I accepted the challenge. You must study everything. In the face of torture before it comes, you must know how to prepare yourself. If you are scared the pain will be greater, but if you are prepared to fight against it, then you'll feel less pain. When it comes if you are all tensed up to fight back, then you can survive the torture. In my mind I always thought, 'I'm fighting back spiritually,' when the physical blasts came. However severely they beat me, it was they who got exhausted, because every moment I thought I could never be defeated by them. My spiritual sword would pierce through their hearts. So rumors spread in the prison that Sun Myung Moon is formidable, he just cannot be defeated. You don't know what prison life is like in North Korea. When I was in Hung-Nam prison, all the prisoners were supposed to put fertilizer into sacks. When you make rope out of this cloth sometimes the bones can be exposed, with all the flesh worn away. There was always blood dripping from your hand, but if you were scared by that you could not survive the situation. Then I thought, 'However hard they may drive me, I will survive the situation at all costs. Come what may, even if you torture me more severely, I can survive.' Then I experienced how much greater the power of spirit is than physical power. Instead of coming to my knees before the situation, under those conditions I was more courageous to fight back. All the prisoners, even the jailers and warden, came to respect me. I was cited for being the best worker. So, however bitter and wretched prison life may be, you must know how to make the breakthrough. You must be able

to overcome the situation." ("Those Who Will Prevail" March 12, 1975)

Won Pil Kim in his book *Father's Course and Our Life of Faith* said the following:

> This morning I'd like to tell you what kind of job Father had in the prison. Mr. Pak, who came to know who Father was, recommended the easiest job in the prison. He didn't accept it, but chose the most difficult job instead. Father decided to choose and fulfill the most difficult job, thinking of the many ancestors who did their best to the point of death for God's will in the providence of restoration. Father had a strong determination that he had to liberate all the people who had worked hard and had died for God's Providence. It was a way of restoration through indemnity.
>
> The meals were very poor and the work was hard. Father could tell how long each prisoner could survive by his appearance. When Father thought a person would survive for only seven more months, then he would die within seven months. There were piles of fertilizer from before the war, but they had become as hard as rock because nobody used them during the war. The prisoners had to dynamite them to pieces to pack them into bags. The fertilizer was nitrogenous.
>
> It was said that the laborers who had worked there before the war could live for one year on a seven months' salary; you can imagine how hard the job was. They organized 10 people into one team and there was a work quota, as is usual in a Communist society. When the quota was not fulfilled, they halved the already small amount of food. The 10 people on a team were divided into pairs: the first pair dynamited the fertilizer into pieces and bagged it up in rush bags; the second pair carried the bags to the weighing machine; the third pair weighed them and took them off the machine; the fourth pair stacked them and the fifth pair carried them into the

train. The most difficult part was done by the second pair who had to carry the bags and lift them onto the weighing machine, which was high off the ground. Each bag weighed 40 kilograms. The more the piles of fertilizer were destroyed, the longer the distance between the fertilizer and the weighing machine. Father had to carry 1,300 bags in eight hours. If he couldn't fulfill, all 10 members had their food reduced by half.

In the developed countries people are sensitive to public health hazards, but think of Korea 33 or 34 years ago when the war had just finished and the country had not been rebuilt. They didn't care about things like that which might affect public health. People saw the yellow sulphurous smoke rising up from the chimney and the smell was so pungent and bad that people had to run past the factory. The air inside the factory itself was incredibly dirty. After Father got out of prison, he coughed for a long time, I remember.

You don't know what kamasu (a straw bag) is like in this country. I'll explain. You can imagine dried barley. Two or three hundred years ago in Korea there were houses with straw thatched roofs, since Korea was an agricultural country. There wasn't anything like hemp or nylon rope, so they made ropes and sacks out of straw. Last night you saw the film called "Father in Korea", where you saw the piles of fertilizer and the prisoners bringing the kamasu bags to the train; you saw how the Communists were working in the same factory. The skin of kamasu is very rough and hard, not smooth like nylon. Gradually Father's hands became chapped and torn and started bleeding. Nobody thought that medical treatment was necessary; they only thought of how to finish 1,300 bags a day. Father told me that he could see his bones. Ammonium sulphate penetrated the wounds; the pain was indescribable.

It was such hard work that the prisoners, dressed only in trousers, were dripping sweat. In this

situation Father caught malaria, which causes a high fever, then shivering with cold in turn. Have you ever had such a disease? You can't get any strength. You can't imagine how it is now, can you? The fever tormented Father for 10 days. The principle of Communism was: 'Those who don't work, don't eat'. This is their motto or philosophy in life. They gave only a half portion of food to those who couldn't work because of sickness. Therefore even sick people with so much pain went out to work because they didn't want to get their portion reduced by half. Father, who was also sick, was not absent for even one day. He worked extremely hard, with a strong determination that he should fulfill his responsibility.

"Unless I can become victorious over this hardship," he thought, "I won't be able to restore the people who have died in the Providence, nor clear their resentment." Thinking in this way, Father was desperate to get a victory. "If I fail, God's providential history won't be able to go forward anymore." With this kind of determination Father worked hard, day after day.

I visited Father and saw him walking from the prison to the working place. Six people made a single file, watched by armed jailers along both sides. All the prisoners had to hold hands so that they couldn't escape; it was a human fence. If one of them tried to run away, the prisoners on either side got the same punishment. They also had to walk with their heads down, so that they couldn't make any sign with their eyes or make any contact with the ordinary laborers who were also working in the factory.

They got up at six o'clock. When Father was weakened by malaria, he fell to his knees many times in spite of himself, since he couldn't find the strength to walk properly. When you become extremely hungry, your saliva becomes very viscous and you slaver. Father was given a prize for being a model worker three times, under these severe

conditions. You can see how hard he applied himself to his work.

Some prisoners saw visions of their ancestors or of an old man with a white beard from whom they received a revelation that they should bring the food, brought by their relatives, to the man No. 596. As a result, Father was given much food by people he didn't know. Father had to return something for the food he was given and he wrote to us to bring him some food or clothes. In those days in Pyongyang there were some old ladies who kept their faith firmly; they brought much food and clothes to Father and then Father shared them with the other prisoners. The old ladies became doubtful as to whether Father himself received the things, since he was always wearing the same clothes whenever they visited him. Actually, Father gave them to his disciples, like Mr. Kim and Mr. Pak, and over 12 other followers.

In *Messiah: My Testimony to Sun Myung Moon Volume 1* Bo Hi Pak writes:

Each team was required to shovel, weigh, and stack thirteen hundred sacks a day. This was an absurd quota, but any team that failed to meet the quota had its evening rations cut in half. Prisoners would put out every last ounce of their strength to earn a full ration of grain, and eventually they would work themselves to death.

The team that included Reverend Moon never failed to meet its quota. Reverend Moon took it upon himself to perform the most difficult part of the task, which was to pick up the sacks filled with ammonium sulfate and carry them to the scale to be weighed. If someone on the team hurt so much that they couldn't work, Reverend Moon would tell him to rest and he would perform that person's task in addition to his own.

Even in snowy winter days, the prisoners worked covered in sweat. It took only a few days for their

clothes to become like rags. That was not all. The skin on the tips of their fingers would crack from handling the straw sacks. Then, the ammonium sulfate would get into the wound and eat the skin. Only a person who has actually experienced this can know how painful it is. The prisoners developed such wounds all over their hands, sometimes so deep that their bones became visible.

Despite this regimen of excruciating painful forced labor, Reverend Moon's team met its thirteen hundred-sack quota day after day. This was the result of nothing other than Reverend Moon's superhuman sacrificial spirit and sense of mission.

The prison authorities were amazed at this turn of events. They never imagined that a team would consistently meet its quota and even gave Reverend Moon an award as the best worker in the prison. The Messiah of humankind was recognized by a communist government as a model worker.

Reverend Moon always told himself, "If I can't achieve victory in the worst possible environment, how can I hope to bring salvation to all humanity? If I can be victorious in this living hell, then I'll be able to save the world." It was because of his burning sense of mission for the salvation of the world that Reverend Moon was able to exert extraordinary effort.

Each time he sat down with his handful of low-quality food, Reverend Moon wondered to himself, "Is my longing for God as strong as my longing for this food?" This was the standard of his faith.

"I will do all the things that the rest of the world hates to do. There is nothing that I cannot endure. I know that my Father in heaven is in a much more difficult position than me." Reverend Moon was constantly comforting God in this way.

He would tell himself, "As long as I am thinking of God, I can do ten times the work I'm doing now. Prison is the best place for me to train myself to battle evil. Satan has put me into the worst prison to

test me and make me surrender, but I will never be defeated."

The rule in the cells was that the prisoner who had arrived most recently had to sleep next to the excrement pit. Reverend Moon, however, decided that he would always sleep there. This was because he knew that everyone hated to have to sleep there.

How did Reverend Moon pray at night? He did not say, "God, I'm struggling in this hell, so please help me." He never prayed like this. Not even once.

Much later, Reverend Moon explained it this way to his disciples: "My Father in heaven already knew His son's suffering, so how could I go to Him asking for help? The entire time I was imprisoned at Hungnam, I was busy trying to comfort God."

Totally Focused

Even though he was in the worst conditions imaginable, Reverend Moon was totally focused on the messianic mission for which he had been called by God. He refused to succumb to hunger, pain, and exhaustion and always strove to establish the standard of victory over the cross. This was his unchanging outlook during the two years and five months he was incarcerated in Hungnam.

"In order for me to fulfill my mission as the savior of the universe," he would tell himself, "I have to use these conditions of living hell to build up my qualifications as the savior." This was how he endured to the end and turned the impossible into the possible.

I could spend the rest of eternity trying to find words that fully capture the greatness of Reverend Moon's character, but I would never be successful. I realize that I am not qualified even to sit at his side.

Although Reverend Moon could not openly preach, he witnessed every minute of every day by his example. Eventually, the number of prisoners who regarded themselves as Reverend Moon's close disciples grew to twelve. Some of these men

> received revelations, and others saw visions. They observed Reverend Moon's indomitable spirit and pure faith. Even though they were trapped in an earthly hell, they found in Reverend Moon hope for the Kingdom of Heaven.

1950 — KOREAN WAR

On June 25, 1950, North Korea ruled by Kim Il Sung, invaded South Korea. The United Nation's Security Council met in emergency session the next day. One veto from any nation in the council stops all action. The Soviet Union would have vetoed any proposal to help, so God made sure that the Russians were absent from the meeting.

The Council acted swiftly and denounced the invasion. President Truman directed General MacArthur to lead the 16 nations who volunteered to fight in aiding South Korea. These 16 nations represented the age of Eve (Western way of counting age) when Lucifer seduced her. Satan was raping God's nation, and God fought back.

When the United Nations forces counterattacked, the 30-year-old Messiah was freed from his concentration camp, and traveled to the south with millions of refugees. God wanted MacArthur to free God's chosen nation, but Truman committed the greatest act of cowardice in the 20th century and fired MacArthur, leaving the North Koreans in bondage under communism.

Father says this about MacArthur:

> ...we want to make General MacArthur a hero for Americans. Young people today do not know who he was, or the true causes of World War II and the Korean War—how they started and progressed, and how they ended. By showing what a hero MacArthur was, a new spirit can come to America…. MacArthur loved God. The Inchon landing was an impossible strategic plan in a military sense. No sane general would normally have proposed or accepted it because the Inchon harbor has the world's highest and lowest tides in the

course of one hour. That meant that within 45 minutes, 250 ships had to pass through the small channel into the harbor. It was an incredible impossibility. MacArthur could only do it with absolute faith in God. He believed and trusted that the Korean conflict was a holy war and that God would be with them. On that condition alone he came up with his plan and he offered it into God's hands.

Secondly, MacArthur loved mankind. Japan was the worst enemy of America in World War 11, but after Japan was defeated, MacArthur worked hard to restore that nation. Out of his compassion he helped make the foundation for what Japan is today.

Thirdly, MacArthur abhorred communism. Why? Because communism denies God and strips human beings of their dignity.

General MacArthur's spirit and my spirit are parallel.... (9-1-82)

Heavenly Caesar

Caesar was the emperor under whose rule the messiah, Jesus Christ, was crucified. MacArthur has been nicknamed the "American Caesar;" but he was like a heavenly Caesar. The kind of character which Caesar embodied was authoritarian, not democratic. Caesar, in the position of emperor, should have been able to love his people and his public mission; of course, he could not do that. Caesar did not love God, first of all.

On the contrary, MacArthur showed his trust in God through the Inchon landing. Without trust and faith in God, it would not have been possible. This is the time of the revival and resurrection of General MacArthur. That great soldier of America was actually rejected and fired; but now Reverend Moon has come and led the revival of MacArthur's spirit. In modern history, the only person who achieved the
status of a true hero was General MacArthur. Some

people name Winston Churchill as a true hero, but he was limited to the European area, not the world level. However, the Korean War was a worldwide conflict between the United Nations and the combined forces of the communist nations.

Caesar controlled the entire civilized world during his time. If MacArthur could have gained unity with Truman, he could have created a different kind of "Roman Empire" of modern times. If he had been allowed to advance beyond the Yalu River and liberate all of Korea, Manchuria, and even China, he could have destroyed communism in Asia. Certainly he could have become President of the United States on that foundation. Undoubtedly, the history of this country would have been very different.

Therefore, America must restore the memory and the spirit of MacArthur. When his spirit prevails here, this country can rediscover a true dream, an ideal. Where can a true ideal be found at this time? Nowhere else but in the Unification Church. If General MacArthur had heard and understood the ideology of Unification Church, what do you think would have happened? Don't you think one world under God could be possible? (9-19-82)

KOREA IS THE FATHERLAND

Many Americans are confused about the Korean War. Why was the whole world focused on this tiny poor nation which was as obscure to Americans as Israel was to the Roman Empire? The importance of Korea is beyond words. It is the fatherland of the Messiah. It is God's chosen nation. And it is the place of the showdown between God and Satan.

PROVIDENTIAL REASON FOR KOREAN WAR

If the Messiah had been accepted the world would not have had to send its young men to die in Korea. God worked with MacArthur to make the Inchon landing a success. The internal purpose of the Korean War was to free the Messiah from a death camp. An early disciple of Sun Myung Moon, Col. Bo Hi Pak, correctly wrote in

his autobiography, *Messiah: My Testimony to Reverend Sun Myung Moon*, "Someday historians will recognize that the Korean War was fought for the purpose of saving the life of the Messiah. It is clear that that God planned General MacArthur's Inchon landing for that express purpose." Won Pil Kim says, "Now we know the dispensation and realize that the war was fought to liberate this one man of God. God needed a champion and could not afford to have him suffer five additional years. Furthermore, Satan had already surrendered. Satan had already given up so Heavenly Father didn't have to watch Father suffer for two additional years. Therefore, for the first time in history sixteen nations joined together in one combat zone, the seemingly insignificant peninsula of Korea. Why did they go there to push north? The UN forces accomplished one great thing: Father's liberation from Hungnam prison." (*Testimony of Father's Life* 10-14-79)

The Inchon landing was one of the most dramatic and risky battles in history. At Hungnam Prison Sun Myung Moon was scheduled to be executed. The first action by MacArthur was the freeing of Hungnam Prison to free the Son of God. Because Truman did not stand up to communism in Korea, Communists were emboldened and invaded Vietnam and again we let them win. There would have been no Vietnam War if we hadn't lost in Korea. Truman's error is a graphic example of Edmund Burke's insight: "The only thing necessary for the triumph of evil is for good men to do nothing." When central figures make mistakes the consequences are devastating. Because Truman did not fight the Chinese army and win North Korea, tens of thousands of American men died in Korea
and the chosen land was divided.

1950 — 1953

When Hungnam Prison was bombed in 1950 there was panic but some noticed that everywhere Father went it was safe. Many prisoners were killed from the bombs. Young Hwi Kim writes that Father said: "God said that no one would be hurt within a twelve-meter radius of me. While the bombing was going on, I was praying and communicating with the saints in the spiritual world." American bomber B-52s were bombing daily. There were large-scale massacres at other prison camps. Communists started killing prisoners at Hungnam.

"Before Hungnam was overrun by the U.S. forces rumors spread that they were coming soon. Sun Myung Moon escaped on 10/14. On the 12th, guards started to take the prisoners and execute them. Sun Myung Moon was just about to be called and shot when a U.S. Air Force bombing raid began. The guards all ran away and Sun Myung Moon and some other inmates escaped on foot." ("Sun Myung Moon's Answers to Questions about Hungnam" April 28, 2000)

In his autobiography Father writes:

> The Korean War had begun while I was imprisoned in Heungnam. Three days after it started, the South Korean military handed over the capital of Seoul and retreated farther south. Then sixteen nations, with the United States in the lead, formed a United Nations force and intervened in the Korean War. U.S. forces landed at Incheon and pushed toward Wonsan, a major industrial city in North Korea.
>
> It was only natural for Heungnam Prison to be a target for U.S. aerial bombing operations. When the bombing began the prison guards would leave the prisoners and go into bomb shelters. They weren't concerned whether we lived or died. One day Jesus appeared right before me with a tearful face. This gave me a strong premonition so I shouted, "Everyone stay within twelve meters of me!" Soon after that a huge bomb exploded just twelve meters from where I stood. The prisoners who had stayed close to me survived. As the bombing became more intense, guards began executing prisoners. They called out the prisoners' numbers and told them to come with three days' food rations and a shovel. The prisoners assumed they were being moved to another prison, but in reality they were marched into the mountains, made to dig a hole, and then buried there. Prisoners were being called out in the order of the length of their sentences, with those with the longest sentences being called first. I realized that my turn would come the next day.

The night before my scheduled execution the bombs fell like rain in the monsoon season. It was October 13, 1950, and the U.S. forces, having succeeded in the Incheon landing, had come up the peninsula to take Pyongyang and were now pressing against Heungnam. The U.S.military attacked Heungnam with full force that night, with B-29 bombers in the lead. The bombing was so intense that it seemed all of Heungnam had been turned into a sea of fire. The high walls around the prison began to fall and the guards ran for their lives. Finally the gate of the prison that had kept us in that place opened. At around two o'clock in the morning on the next day, I walked calmly out of Heungnam Prison with dignity.

I had been imprisoned for two years and eight months, so I was a terrible sight. My underwear and outerwear were in tatters. Dressed in those rags, instead of going to my hometown, I headed to Pyongyang with a group of people who had followed me in prison. Some chose to come with me instead of going in search of their wives and children. I could clearly imagine how my mother must be crying every day out of concern for my welfare, but it was more
important that I look after the members of my congregation in Pyongyang.

I stayed in Pyongyang for forty days looking for anyone I could think of, whether young or old. In the end I never did find out what happened to most of them. But they have never been erased from my heart. On the night of December 2, I began walking south. Church members, including Won Pil Kim, and I followed behind a long line of refugees that extended about seven and a half miles. We even took with us a member who could not walk properly. He had been among those who followed me in Heungnam Prison. His family name was Pak. He had been released before me. When I found him in his home, all the other members of his family had left for the South. He was alone in the house with a broken leg. I placed him on a bicycle and took him

with me. The North Korean army had already recaptured the flat roads for military use, so we traveled across frozen rice paddies heading south as
quickly as we could. The Chinese army was not far behind us, but it was difficult to move quickly when we had someone with us who could not walk. Half the time the road was so bad that I carried him on my back and someone else pushed the empty bicycle along. He kept saying he didn't want to be a burden to me and tried several times to take his own life. I convinced him to go on, sometimes scolding him loudly, and we stayed together until the end.

We were refugees on the run who still had to eat. We went into homes whose inhabitants had headed south before us and searched for rice or any other food that might have been left behind. We boiled anything we found, whether it was rice, barley, or potatoes. We were barely able to stay alive this way.

Father spent 40 days in North Korea looking for his disciples. He could find only two. Then he joined the thousands of refugees and went south. Won Pil Kim writes in his biography of Father titled *Father's Course and Our life of Faith:*

> Even in those dangerous and uncertain times, Father returned to Pyongyang after he escaped and visited the homes of all the members who had been with him before he went to prison. If Father could not go
> to visit someone himself, he sent someone else to take a message that he had come back and to see how this person was faring. Father walked the 150 miles back to Pyongyang in ten days, and then for forty days visited all of his followers' homes. Father stayed until the last possible moment, until he had to escape just before the invasion of the Chinese troops. Father's home village was only three day's walk from Pyongyang, and in the forty days in Pyongyang he could easily have visited his family, but Father never even sent a message to them. He

looked for all his members but not his own family. It was obvious to all of us that Father could have visited his family, but he never spared even an hour or day for them. Father could have taken just a few days to visit his own family and it might have helped his mission to have good people like them close to and serving him. But Father stuck to the principle of loving his followers more than his family.

Father brought a few things with him from prison, among them a small bag of rice flour. He walked ten days on foot, saving that rice flour until he reached Pyongyang. He never had any good food on that journey because even the food left in the fields was old and spoiled. He ate those rotten, leftover crops, yet saved the rice flour, in hopes that when he met the members in Pyongyang he could share it with them. When they were all together he mixed it with water, making it like a thick pudding, and told the members that this was how they made food to eat in prison. Then he shared it with them.

Father wanted to bring some present to his followers, even after the incredible ordeal he had undergone at Hungnam prison. Of everything he could have brought, food was the most precious to him because it meant life. Yet he walked all the way from prison without eating it until he could share it with the members. Today it is rare that we reserve something most precious to us and save it until we can share it with our members. Usually we give when we have in abundance.

I wanted to convey this incident so that you could have a glimpse of our Parents' mind toward their children.

When he left Pyongyang Father said, "I came to make Pyongyang the Second Jerusalem, but it rejected me and sent me to prison." He was crying as he spoke. "Pyongyang will fall into the hands of Satan, and so we have no choice now but to leave." (*Guidance for Heavenly Tradition*)

This is just like Jesus weeping over Jerusalem: "O Jerusalem,

Jerusalem, killing the prophets and stoning those who are sent to you! How often would I have gathered your children together as a hen gathers her brood under her wings, and you would not! Behold, your house is forsaken and desolate" (Matt. 23:37-38).

Father says:

> During the Korean War, it took me four months to travel by foot from North Korea to Pusan. In Korea men wear a kind of white pajamas. Taking four months, you cannot imagine how dirty it became; it was so dirty I put it inside out. There was no sleeping place, only open space. It was December, so it was very cold when I got to Pusan. To avoid this night coldness, I went to the military harbor for labor, because it was easier to work than sleep.
>
> In the daytime I went to the mountains; among the trees I had a place to sleep, and time for myself. I enjoyed it. When I went to work I told interesting stories, and the workers would gather around me and bring me food. But I could not live like that all the time, so I had a small hut, hardly better than a dog house, a very simple dwelling place with mud and rocks on the walls and roof. There was no flat land where I was going to build. So I built up a slope. Where I built it there is a spring which passes through the middle of the floor. With boxes I made a temporary roof. The size of the room was about six feet long. Still I wore those four-month-old clothes.
> There was nowhere to put them in the laundry. In that humble situation spiritually chosen people found me. Even though I wore those clothes, they came. (*God's Warning to the World*)

Father writes:

> We arrived finally on January 27, 1951. Busan was filled with refugees from the north. It felt like the whole country had gathered there. Any accommodation fit to live in was filled already. Our tiny place had barely enough room to sit. Our only

option was to go into the woods at night, keeping warm as best we could, and then return to the city by day to look for food.

My hair, which was kept short during my prison time, had now grown back. My trousers, mended from the inside with cotton from a sleeping quilt, had become threadbare. My clothes were saturated so fully with an oily grime that raindrops in heavy rain were not absorbed into the cloth but rather simply rolled off.

Almost nothing was left of the soles of my shoes, although the upper part was mostly still there. I might as well have been walking barefoot. The fact was simply that I was the lowest of the low, a beggar among beggars. There was no work to be had, and we had no money in our pockets. The only way we could eat was to beg.

Yet even while begging for food, I maintained my dignity. If someone refused to help, I would say in a clear and confident voice, "Listen. If you do not help people like us who are in need, you will have great difficulties if you hope to receive blessings in the future!" People would give when faced with such thoughts. We took the food we gathered this way to a flat area where we all could sit together. Dozens of people like us ate in such places. We had nothing, and even had to beg for food, but a warm friendship always flowed among us. (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

In his autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*, Father says he and Won Pil Kim built a mud hut in Pusan (also spelled Busan):

> Eventually, Won Pil Kim and I climbed up to Beom-net-gol in Beom-il Dong and built a house. Because this area was near a cemetery, there was nothing nearby except a rocky ravine. We had no land we could call our own, so we leveled a section of the steep slope and built a home there. We didn't even have a shovel! We took a small shovel from someone's kitchen and returned it before the owner realized it was missing. Won Pil Kim and I broke

rocks, dug the earth, and carried up gravel. We mixed mud and straw to make bricks, then stacked them up to make the walls. We got some empty ration boxes from an American base, flattened them out, and used them as the roof. We laid down a sheet of black plastic for the floor. Even simple huts are built better than this. (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

Father writes:

Later that year, on a windy November day, my wife showed up at the door of the Beom-net-gol hut. There standing with her was a seven year- old boy, my son, who was born the year I left home. I had left that day simply to go pick up some rice but went to Pyongyang instead. The years had passed, and now he had grown into a young boy. I could not bring myself to look him in the eye, nor could I reach out to stroke his face and embrace him in joy. I just stood there like a stone statue, frozen in place, speechless.

My wife did not have to say a word. I felt the pain and suffering this poor mother and child had to experience in the midst of war. Even before this visit, I knew where they were living and what their situation was, but I was not yet to the point where I could take care of my family. I knew this, and I had asked her several times, even before our marriage, “Please trust me and wait just a little longer.” When the time was right, I planned to go get them. But in

this situation, as they stood in the door, the right time had not yet come. The hut, our church, was small and shabby. A number of members ate there and lived there with me to study God's word. I could not bring my family there.

My wife took a look around the hut, expressed great disappointment, and turned to leave. She and my son set off down the steep path. (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

1954 — UNIFICATION CHURCH

On May 1, 1954 the Messiah founded what became to be called the Unification Church that was created as a temporary organization to restore the failure of Christianity and lift up the Messiah. Korea was in rubble because of the Korean War. In the midst of this devastation the Messiah put up a little sign on a dilapidated building with the big words: Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity. He cried a river of tears at a rock near his hut in Pusan now called the "Rock of Tears" and at his humble church in Seoul. He did not weep for himself but because he felt God's broken heart. People were amazed when they met him and heard him speak and pray.

The following are some comments he made about founding this "association" that had the incredible goal of uniting a tragically divided Christianity:

HUNDREDS OF DENOMINATIONS

Christianity has been fragmented into hundreds of denominations in the process of its 2,000 years of struggle and development. Then I attempt to unite them! People wonder what means I will use to unite them. Bayonets? Force? Dictatorial methods? All kinds of rumors have spread.

By what means can I unite Christianity throughout the world? By the Holy Spirit. Hence the name Holy Spirit Association. Do you understand? Not by fists or bayonets, but by the Holy Spirit. We cannot unite by human power, but by the power of the Holy Spirit, by the mobilization of the spirit world. It is

more difficult to mobilize the spirit world than to mobilize human beings. (5-1-81)

When I began the Unification Church in Korea, our headquarters was a small shabby house. On May 1, 1954, I set up a small plaque in front of that shabby house, probably the smallest sign you could find in history, but the biggest words ever spoken: "Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity." The biggest words, but the smallest sign and smallest house—that is the way the Unification Church began!

The room was so small that when I lay down, my head hit one wall and my feet hit another wall. I was utterly penniless at that time, and that shabby house was not even owned by the church but was rented.

RELIGIOUS PATH

I am like a rock and no one can entice me away from God's will. There were many women who actually wrote love letters to me with their own blood, showing their genuine devotion to me. The religious path is not easy because of the many temptations around, and you have no idea what it takes to lay the foundation. But I have done it and I am freely sharing the fruits of it with you. No one has the right to complain; rather, continually be grateful and put yourself in a meek position. Even now, that is my basic attitude toward God. After all the dispensational success so far, I still put myself in a humble position before God.

If anyone truly knew me internally then he just could not help but be crushed by sorrow. Spiritually enlightened people who can receive revelations and instructions in their prayers are the people who stay. When they pray about me God's response is always the same; He responds to their prayer in tears because when God thinks about His lonely champion here on earth, God just weeps. The vast entanglement of human history seems utterly impossible to ever reorganize, and even God hardly knew where to begin the dispensation. But one lonely man found the secret and lived through

everything to bring the movement this far. Even for God that was something to behold.

Day after day I continuously wept. My eyes became swollen and painful because the tears poured out in gallons. I could not even open my eyes to the sunlight. So many tears were shed in laying the foundation of this church. (5-1-77)

NOT A CHURCH

In his autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*, written when he was 90 years old Father says in 1954 he was not founding a church. He says he:

> …hung out a sign that read "Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity."
>
> We chose this name to signify that we belonged to no denomination, and we certainly had no plans to create a new one. *World Christianity* refers to all of Christianity worldwide and both past and present. *Unification* reveals our purpose of oneness, and *Holy Spirit* is used to denote harmony between the spiritual and physical worlds built on the love of the father-son relationship at the center. Our name is meant to say, "The spiritual world, centering on God, is with us."
>
> In particular, unification represents my purpose to bring about God's ideal world. Unification is not union. Union is when two things come together. Unification is when two become one. "Unification Church" became our commonly known name later, but it was given to use by others. In the beginning, university students referred to us as "the Seoul Church."

I do not like using the word *kyo-hoi* in its common usage to mean church. But I like its meaning from the original Chinese characters. *Kyo* means "to teach", and *Hoi* means "gathering." The Korean word means, literally, "gathering for teaching." The word for religion, *jong-kyo*, is composed of two Chinese characters meaning "central" and "teaching." respectively. When the word *church* means a gathering where spiritual fundamentals are taught, it

> has a good meaning. But the meaning of the word *kyo-hoi* does not provide any reason for people to share with each other. People in general do not use the word *kyo-hoi* with that meaning. I did not want to place ourselves in the separatist type of category. My hope was for the rise of a church without denomination. True religion tries to save the nation, even if it must sacrifice its own religious body to do
> so; it tries to save the world, even at the cost of sacrificing its nation; and it tries to save humanity, even if this means sacrificing the world. By this understanding, there can never be a time when the denomination takes precedence.
>
> It was necessary to hang out a church sign, but in my heart I was ready to take it down at any time. As soon as a person hangs a sign that says "church," he is making a distinction between church and not church. Taking something that is one and dividing it into two is not right. This was not my dream. It is not a path I chose to travel. If I need to take down that sign to save the nation or world, I am ready to do so at any time.

Not long after Father founded HSA-UWC some students from a well-known Christian university joined. Then several of their professors joined after they came to the church to investigate what became of their students. One of them was Miss Young Oon Kim who went on to become the first missionary to America in 1959. The students were expelled and the professors fired. This was another tragic failure in God's providence because once again

Christianity failed to unite with Father. The following is from a book for children on Sun Myung Moon's life that tells of how Professor Kim joined the humble little Unification Church:

> In Seoul, there were several universities where young students studied for their careers. One of these universities was for girls only. (Or we can call them women.) Its name was Ehwa University.

Mr. Eu was witnessing to everyone he knew; and one of these people was his relative, Mrs. Yang. She was a music teacher at Ehwa University.

When he first told her about Teacher Moon and the new revelation, she didn't want to go. After all, university professors are very important people. They have to think of their reputations. Still, she was curious about the changes in Mr. Eu's life; and one day, her curiosity got the best of her. Mrs. Yang was
a rather spiritual woman. She could sense what was going on around her spiritually, and she could often feel whether something was good or bad, whether it was from God or not.

She listened to Mr. Eu's lectures politely, but skeptically. As the minutes and hours passed, however, she felt a strange excitement growing inside her.

"I feel God in this place," she was thinking. "And the teaching makes a lot of sense."

When the last lecture came to an end, suddenly without warning, she jumped up before the little group and sang a song. She had never heard this song before, and neither had anyone else! Spirit world was singing through her.

It was like the room came to life. Everyone caught the feeling of joy and felt like dancing and laughing and singing. It was a great moment.

Mrs. Yang's life was changed that day. When she returned to the university, she told many people about her experience. Even though she was a respected professor, she didn't care anymore what people thought of her.

The word soon got around at the university that a young fellow in a dilapidated house was teaching something interesting, and people were getting inspired. Students started investigating. They told others about it, and the numbers multiplied.

Those who came felt something spiritual happening in their lives, and it became hard for them to concentrate on their studies. They returned again and again when they should have been studying their lessons.

Soon, the teachers began to notice a change in their students.

"Why are so many of the girls absent lately?" they asked each other. "Is there a sickness going around?"

"I don't know of any sickness," said one. "Anyway, they never stay home just because they're sick."

"True, true," responded another. "Besides, their minds seem to be off somewhere else all the time."

"Yes, and their eyes sparkle," complained still another.

"One of them told me she is visiting a man who teaches new things about the Bible—and something about the Messiah coming to Korea — now." "Sounds like some wild-eyed fanatic!"

"It certainly does," they all agreed. They decided to report it to the officials in charge of the university.

The president and the administrators talked it over then. How much should they be worried? After a big discussion, they decided they would take a wait-and-see attitude. Perhaps the students would get tired of going there, especially since many of them were in their final year and were looking forward to graduating.

Then, parents got word that their girls were spending time with a very strange man. It was a great privilege to attend a university. The parents had worked hard during all those years of war and had made many sacrifices in order to send their children there, so they didn't want anything to go wrong now. They were VERY upset and went straight to the university president to complain.

"We didn't send our girls here to run off with some crazy man," they stormed. "We want you to put a stop to it—and NOW!"

"Yes, yes, of course," agreed the president. "We'll take care of it right away." He certainly didn't want the university to get a bad reputation.

The very next day, an announcement was made, "Students may no longer go to Moon Sun Myung's house. It is off limits starting today."

Some of the students obediently stopped going. But by now, many of them were on fire for God. All their lives, they had been taught to obey their parents and teachers; but for the first time, they understood that God should be obeyed first. So they continued going to Father's little church, sneaking out of the dormitory every chance they got.

Soon they were outcasts at the university. No one wanted to sit near them. No one wanted to be seen talking to them. Everyone seemed to be afraid of them. You would think they had leprosy or something.

Meanwhile, the administrators decided to try another tactic. They would send one of their teachers to hear the lectures; then this teacher could explain logically to the students what was wrong with the teachings. Intelligent students would listen to reason.

When the chosen teacher arrived at the little church, she listened very carefully and took many notes. By the end of three days, however, she got so inspired that she became a member herself!

The officials at the university were in a rage. How could this happen? What was going on anyway?

They decided to send another professor. Again, there were the lectures, the note taking, and the three days. Then the same thing happened—the professor joined the church!

The frustrated administrators still didn't want to give up. What to do? What to do? They decided to send one of the most important people at the university—their respected Dean of Students.

Again, God worked. This lady's heart was moved, and she became one of the most devoted and most loved members ever. Her name was Mrs. Won Bok Choi! The administrators just couldn't believe this was happening! They talked it over at length, and decided to try just one more time. They chose a professor who had studied the Christian religion and other religions. She had graduated from three seminaries and was very intelligent. She was also the type of person who was logical, and didn't

get emotional about things. She was expected to become president of Ehwa some day. This woman would NEVER get swept off her feet by some crazy preacher. She was Miss Young Oon Kim.

At that time, she was quite ill from a kidney disease, but she agreed to check it out. She found the little church, and taking off her shoes, she entered without a word. Her face was serious as she sat down for the lectures. Father sat beside Mr. Eu, his eyes lowered in silent prayer.

In the next room, many of the members, especially the students and teachers from Ehwa, had gathered to pray for her. They had drilled a little hole in the wall, so they could take turns watching her. This would be a crucial set of lectures, because, if SHE went to the president with a negative report that would be it for them. They would be forbidden to attend the church forever.

They prayed really hard all through Mr. Eu's lectures. She listened politely. What was she thinking? No one could tell. On and on went the lectures—one hour, two hours, three, four. Nothing happened. She just listened and took notes.

Then Mr. Eu came to the part about spirit world. As he described the spirit mind and spirit body, life after death, and so on, she looked a little more interested. No one knew that she had been trying for years to find out more about spirit world. She had been greatly inspired by a man named Swedenborg, who had written a book about the spirit world. It was a great book; yet it did not answer all the questions she had. In fact, she had found no one who could answer them.

Now, Mr. Eu was answering all her questions. On the outside, her face looked interested but calm. Inside, she was feeling growing excitement.

After the lecture, she hid her excitement and asked many questions, and even debated with Mr. Eu, trying to prove him wrong. But he had a good answer for every question. When Father spoke to her, she felt even more inspired.

As the three days went by, she noticed that, while she was at the church, the pain from her

kidney disease disappeared. When she went home in the evening, however, the pain returned. In the days ahead, whenever she doubted the Divine Principle and argued with Mr. Eu and Father, the pain got stronger; but whenever she believed, the pain went away.

Finally, she had to admit this was God's answer to her lifelong prayers. She decided to join this little group of people who said they would change the world.

Meanwhile, the university president was anxiously awaiting her return. When she finally arrived with her report, it wasn't what he wanted to hear at all.

"I have studied the Bible for many years and prayed for answers," she began, "and now I know it was all for the purpose of finding this man, Moon Sun Myung. It was all preparation to follow him and help him. It has been made clear to me that he has been sent by God to do even greater things than Jesus." When he heard these words, he was greatly disappointed, to say the least! You just didn't say things like that in a Christian school. "Good-bye, Kim Sun Sengnim," he was barely able to utter. "With you or without you, I will end this craziness."

EXPELLED

That very day, he summoned the students and professors who had joined Father's group.

"Students and teachers at Ehwa are expected to conduct themselves in a respectable manner at all times," he said. "And YOU are a disgrace to our university—the scum of the earth. I should just kick you out here and now, but; out of the kindness of my heart, I have decided to give you one more chance. I'm giving you a choice. Choice number one: if you stop going to Moon's so-called church today, you may continue to attend the university. Choice number two: if you do not stop going, you will be expelled from school, effective immediately."

Now, this was a most difficult choice. Attending a university in Korea meant earning lots of money

and having a comfortable life. It was right after the war, and they knew what poverty was like. Some of these young ladies had studied very, very hard for many years, just so they could attend university. Their parents had made big sacrifices for them.

They talked it over with each other, and many decided they couldn't give up graduation, after all. Out of 100 or so students there were fourteen brave women who decided to stand by God and True Father. "We love Heavenly Father, now. We love Moon Son-sengnim, and we believe the *Divine Principle* is true," they affirmed. "And no university president can force us to give it up."

They were expelled from the university.

In the case of the five professors, they were fired. Their positions had paid well and gave them much respect, but now it was unlikely that they would ever have another chance to teach in a university.

As they walked out, their heads were held high, and they smiled. They felt as if they were being decorated by heaven. A gold star from heaven is a million times more valuable than a diploma or job at Ehwa.

When they arrived back at the church, they were received as heroes. That night, there was a great prayer meeting, and God touched each one of those brave women. As they prayed, they were given the gift of speaking in tongues and prophesying about the future, just like the early Christians after the death of Jesus.

They could never fully explain to anyone else exactly how they felt; it was such a deep feeling. But whenever they looked into each other's eyes, they understood each other. And whenever Heavenly Father and True Father looked at them, they understood—and loved them dearly.

Bo Hi Pak in *Messiah: My Testimony to Reverend Sun Myung Moon* writes about this incident that occurred around 1955:

THE DARK CLOUDS OF PERSECUTION

Ewha Women's University and Yonsei University

had been established and continued to run by Christian educational foundations. Syngman Rhee was president of Korea at the time, and his administration was so strongly Christian in character that it would not be an exaggeration to say that the country was under a Christian administration. The vice president of Ehwa University was Maria Park, the wife of Ki Boong Lee, speaker of the National Assembly. Lee, who would later serve as Korea's vice president, was already one of the most powerful men in the country. In this way, the two universities were in the highest echelons of power within the Rhee administration.

Established religions tend to categorize newer religions as heretical. At this time, Christianity in Korea wielded power in much the same way that Judaism did two thousand years ago when it called Jesus an agent of the devil. The Unification Church was preaching the Second Coming of Jesus and insisting that the Second Coming had already occurred. To the established churches, this meant that the Unification Church was even more worrisome than other heresies. To Christians who believed that Jesus was God Himself, the Unification Church was a monstrosity whose existence they could never accept. Thus, they began a campaign of intense persecution with the goal of crucifying the Unification Church.

In addition, Korea's political establishment contributed to the persecution with all its powers, even though the constitution of the Republic of Korea allowed freedom of religion. And even though Ehwa Women's University, Yonsei University, and other Christian schools accepted students who believed in Confucianism or Buddhism, and even accepted atheists, when its young professors and students began to flock to the Unification Church in their search for truth, these schools decided that they had to take action.

They sent Dr. Kim to investigate. She joined and told the leaders of the university: "To me, religion has to do with my eternal life. That means that if I find something to be God's truth, then I cannot turn away from it even if it means that I must give up everything else in my life."

Maria Park asked her husband to do what he could to crush the little church. He "went to the minister of internal affairs, whose duties included overseeing and directing all police activity in the nation. It was from this point that the power of the state began to be used against the Unification Church.

"The action by the university in this matter remains a major blot on the history of Christianity in Korea. The persecution of the Unification Church did not end here. Christian universities, with the support from established Christian denominations, lobbied the government of President Syngman Rhee to bring the full force of its iron fist to bear against the Unification Church, which resembled the early Christian church in many respects. …the Unification Church became a victim of prejudice and oppression during its early years as a new religion."

Fifty years later Christian mainline religions still work to ban the Unification Church from college campuses.

Father said of this time in the 1950s:

> Because of the devastating effects of the Korean War, the foundation of the new independent government was demolished. Many rich people in Korea fled the country when they saw the war coming. Likewise, Christian ministers wanted to get their families out of the country. Thus the leadership inside of Korea was full of confusion. This chaotic situation gave the Unification Church an opportunity for a new beginning. It was a chance for us to make a new foundation, even to the point where we could have an impact on Christian society and the government. Thus the confusion and chaotic situation of Korean society at that time could be

utilized by God. It was the opportunity for the heavenly dispensation to be launched again.

By 1954, I was able to lay sufficient foundation to organize the official church under the name of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity. Still there was incredible opposition and persecution from both the government and established Christianity. Two thousand years ago, Judaism was supposed to be in the Abel position and guide the Israel nation and the governmental power. That was the original lineup. By the same token, the Unification Church was supposed to be in the Abel position and guide the Korean government and influence society. That was what was supposed to happen.

The climax of persecution came in this way: the American missionaries, who were primarily Presbyterian and Methodist, had been working in Korea and had built some universities. One of them was Ewha University, a women's university, and the other was a men's school, Yonsei University. A large number of students from those two schools joined the Unification Church at that time. Thus the government, as well as the Christian missionaries, saw this as a dangerous thing and they began to pursue and develop their opposition against the Unification Church. One day those two universities announced the expulsion of all the students and professors who were members of the Unification Church, which caused a big uproar.

Each year on my birthday, I did not celebrate with a feast but rather, I would fast. That was a condition for our members for many years. I began this road myself from the very bottom—from the laborer's position—and climbed up, step-by-step.

I never wore formal attire, a tie or a nice suit as I do now. A workman doesn't dress up every day to go to work and I always dressed like a workman. Until 1970, I even wore humble and coarse attire to Sunday Service. I preached in such clothing. I'm sure you find it hard to imagine such a time.

> Likewise, I never ate my meals at a table. I would just eat humble things like rice balls and radish, picking them up with my hands, not even using a spoon or chopsticks. That was part of the road of indemnity. (1-2-87)

During the 1950s he said, "I wore old used clothing bought at a second-hand shop." (*Theory of Education*)

Father writes in his autobiography:

> Most of our members had attended other churches before joining our church. This was a big reason our church was treated as an enemy by established churches. When Professor Yoon Young Yang, one of the Ewha professors, joined our church, she was taken to the police station to be interrogated. There she discovered that some eighty Christian ministers had written letters to the authorities criticizing our church. Clearly it was not the case that we had done something wrong. Rather, we were seen as posing a threat to the power of certain people and institutions.
>
> It was their vague feelings of fear and their extreme factionalism that drove them in their efforts to suppress our church. People from many religious groups were attracted to our church and its new teachings. I would say to our members, "Why did you come here? Go back to your churches," and almost threaten them as I tried to chase them away. But they would soon return. The people who flocked to see me would not listen to anyone. They wouldn't listen to their teachers or their parents. They wanted to hear me speak. I wasn't paying them or feeding them, but they believed in what I taught and kept coming to me. The reason was that I opened a way for them to resolve their frustrations. Before I knew the truth, I, too, was frustrated. I was frustrated when I looked up to heaven and when I looked at the people around me. This is why I could understand the frustrations of the people who came to our church. They had questions about life, and they could not find answers. The word of God I

conveyed answered their questions with clarity. Young people who sought me out found answers in the words that I spoke. They wanted to come to our church and join me on my spiritual journey, no matter how difficult it might be.

I am the person who finds the way and opens it. I guide people along the path to heal broken families and rebuild the society, nation, and world so that we can finally return to God. People who come to me understand this.

They want to go with me in search of God. How can people find fault with this? All we were doing was going in search of God. And for this we were subjected to all manner of persecution and criticism.

Unfortunately, during the period when our church was involved in the heresy controversy, my wife made matters even more difficult for me. After our meeting in Busan, she and her relatives began to demand that I either quit the church immediately and start life with her and our son or else give her a divorce. They even came to Seodaemun Prison during my incarceration there to put the divorce papers before me, demanding I place my stamp on them. I know how important marriage is in the effort to establish God's peaceful world, so I endured their demands in silence.

She also subjected members of our church to horrible abuse. Personally I could endure. I did not mind her insults and reckless treatment of me, but it was difficult for me to stand by and watch her offensive behavior toward our members. She stormed into our church at all hours to curse our members, destroy church property, and take items that belonged to the church. She even threw water containing human feces at members. When she came, it was impossible for us to hold worship service. In the end, as soon as I came out of Seodaemun Prison, I acceded to the demands of her family and placed my stamp on the divorce document. I was pushed into a divorce against my own principles.

When I think of my former wife today, my heart goes out to her. The influence of her own family,

> which was strongly Christian, and the leadership of Korea's established churches had much to do with her
> behaving the way she did. She was so clear and firm in her commitment before we married.
>
> The way she changed gives us a lesson on how much we need to fear the power of social prejudice and established concepts.
>
> I experienced both the sorrow of divorce and the pain of being branded a heretic. But I did not bend. These were things I had to endure on my path to redeem the original sin of humanity, the things I had to endure to move forward on the path toward God's Kingdom. It is darkest before the dawn. I overcame the darkness by clinging to God and praying to Him. Other than the fleeting moments that I would spend in sleep, all my available time was spent in prayer. (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

Father's divorce affected the world. He explains: "Within True Father's family there are children from two different mothers. Because of this wilderness course Father lost everything in a way. Just as Father had to go through the wilderness course when he lost his first wife through divorce, now the entire world is experiencing the same thing through the breakdown of families. It completely lost God's True Love family center. God's value system was lost." (2-16-97)

Father writes of how he moved from Pusan to Seoul and started with a tiny building:

> We needed a place where our members could gather
> and offer services, so we took out a loan of two million won and purchased a house in poor repair on a hillside in Cheongpa Dong. It was one of many houses categorized then as "enemy property," meaning that it had been vacant since being abandoned by Japanese who left Korea at the time of our nation's liberation. It was a small house with only about 710 square feet of floor space. It was at the end of a long and narrow alleyway. Approaching the house was like going through a long, dark

tunnel. All the pillars and walls were covered with dirt, which made us wonder what had been going on there before we arrived. I worked with the young people of our church for four days with a sodium hydroxide solution to scrub off all the dirt. After our move to the Cheongpa Dong church, I could hardly sleep. I would sit on the floor of the main bedroom crouched over in prayer until three or four in the morning. I might take a nap until five, but then I would get up and start the day's activities. I continued this lifestyle for seven years. Even though I was getting only one or two hours of sleep a day, I never felt sleepy during the day. My eyes shone brightly, like the morning star. I never felt tired.

My mind was so full of things to do that I did not even want to waste time eating. Instead of having people take time to set a table for my meals, I ate on the floor and crouched over my food to eat it. "Pour out your dedication! Pour it out, even if you are sleepy! Pour it out until you are exhausted!" I kept repeating these phrases to myself. I prayed in the midst of continued opposition and false accusations with the thought that I was planting seeds that would someday reap a bountiful harvest. If the harvest could not be reaped in Korea, then I was confident that it would be reaped elsewhere in the world.

A year after my release from prison, our church had four hundred members. As I prayed, I would call out their names one by one. Their faces would pass through my mind even before I called their names. Some would be crying, some laughing. In my prayers, I could tell how each person was doing, including whether they were suffering from illness.

Sometimes, as I called out their names in prayer, I would get an inspiration that a particular person would come to the church that day. The person would come, without fail. When I would go to someone who had appeared sick to me in my prayer and ask, "Are you sick?" the person would confirm

it. Members were amazed that I would know they were sick without being told. Each time they asked, "How do you do that?" I would answer with a simple smile.

Some were attracted to our church more because of such paranormal phenomena than because of the teachings. Many people think that spiritual powers are most important. The phenomena often called miracles, however, tend to confuse people in the society at large. A faith that relies on unexplained or miraculous occurrences is not a healthy faith. All sin must be restored through redemption. It cannot be done by relying on spiritual powers. As our church began to mature, I stopped talking to members about the things that I was seeing with my heart's eyes.

How often I prayed with tears through the night? Blood and sweat saturated the floor boards where I prayed, with no chance to dry. I have lived my entire life praying and preaching, but even now I tremble when I stand before a group of people. This is because to stand in such a position and speak about public matters can mean that many lives will be saved or that many will be lost. It is a matter of utmost importance to me that I can lead the people who hear my words onto the path of life. These are the moments when I draw a clear line on the crossroads between life and death. In the early time of our church I wore an old U.S. military jacket and fatigues dyed black and preached with such fervor that I dripped with sweat and tears. Not a day went by without my weeping out loud. My heart would fill with emotion, and tears would pour from my eyes and stream down my face. Those were times my spirit seemed on the verge of leaving my body. I felt as though I were on the verge of death. My clothes were soaked with sweat, and beads of sweat rolled down from my head.

If the Christians had accepted the new Messiah in those three years between 1945 and 1948 then they would have had the power to stop the Soviets from controlling the North. The Korean people should have treated the Messiah like a king. A united Korea led by

the young Messiah would have become God's first nation. Can you imagine the excitement that would have created? Soon the President of the United States and all other leaders would have met the Messiah. The teachings of the *Divine Principle* would have swept the earth.

There would never have been a Korean War in which 30,000 American men died and hundreds of thousands were injured. There
would never have been a river of blood from the two million Koreans who died. There would never have been the agonizing separation of North and South Korea that has divided families for over 60 years.

WORLD PEACE

Jesus was not able to go to Rome, but Sun Myung Moon would have gone to Washington D.C. and converted the entire Senate and Congress. American Christian leaders would have been converted and led by the young King of Kings would have been a powerful united force of God that would have ended communism quickly. The Soviet Union would have been converted. The atheistic ideology of communism would have died. By 1952—just seven years after the Messiah began his mission—the world would have united under a godly world government. The dream of a United Nations would have come true. The Kingdom of Heaven on earth would have begun and finally God's dream of world peace would have come true.

Because government and religious leaders treated Sun Myung Moon the same way as the government and religious leaders of Israel treated the previous Messiah, Jesus, the punishment brought on by themselves was a terrible division between Korea and the terrible worldwide division between the ideology of the Left and the Right—of free nations under democratic rule and slave nations under authoritarian rule. Because the Messiah was not believed and loved, he had to go the way of Jesus and be tortured. He had to suffer even more than Jesus.

Sun Myung Moon said, "…during my first three years of public ministry, just as Jesus did, I had to go through severe hardships culminating in the torture of prison life, which was more for me

than Jesus' cross." ("Jacob's Course and Our Life in Faith" May 27, 1973)

Father explains:

> Korea was established under the protection of Christian nations of the democratic world. At that time, Sun Myung Moon had expected to start in the highest position with the famous leaders who founded a country in order to fulfill its destiny of the new Providence. Then, because the ministers who were representative of the Christian Church were opposed to Sun Myung Moon, God's will was blocked everywhere.
>
> **HISTORICAL MISSION**
>
> Korea was a nation formed on God's side centering on the Christian Church. Because a few ministers who represented Christianity were opposed to Sun Myung Moon, a way opened that nationwide the Christian churches could oppose Rev. Moon. Rev. Moon had prepared everything for this for three years from 1945 to 1948. In this period, Rev. Moon worked individually. But nobody knew that he had a historical mission. Because I was in that position the Christian Church could oppose Rev. Moon. I knew that God prepared a lot of spiritual groups. Even though God prepared internally, if the Christian Church opposes with the rest of the nation, it is in the position of Judaism and Israel which opposed Jesus Christ.
>
> During the three years from 1945-1948, Rev. Moon was not welcomed by the Christian Churches and nation. They were frantically opposed to me with the national power and foundation. That was the reason it was necessary to pay restoration by indemnity of Jesus Christ's position. Because the people who led the Christian Church divided with Rev. Moon, it became the motivation to separate as South and North …in 1948 (*Way of Unification* chapter 3)

Father teaches, “The division between North and South Korea was not accidental but was related to the heavenly principle and the failure of Korea and the United States to fulfill their responsibilities. Because of that failure, the United States, England and the rest of the democratic world began to decay.” (5-1-81)

Father explains:

Suffering Nation

The nation which receives the Messiah has to be in the position of object as well. That nation has to suffer. Therefore, the nation in which the messianic mission begins must be in the position of suffering and has to go through untold tribulation. That nation and all her people must be in a position of despair. Then the new hope of truth will appear to the people and the nation together. With the new acceptance of the truth, there will be new hope, new life and a new history. With the liberation of Korea in 1945, hope came to that suffering land. This year, as far as Japan was concerned, was a day of doom. But as far as Korea was concerned, this year marked a day of hope.

New Day of Hope

Therefore, it was my mission at that time to connect that new day of hope to the family, the people and the nation. In such a way God can restore His people, His nation, His tribe and His family. This is the promising situation in which Korea is placed in the position of the restored Israel. Since Israel was the nation where Jesus lost hope, when the Lord of the Second Advent comes, he will gain hope and restore his nation to order. Jesus died because the people did not have faith in him. The way we regain that lost foundation is by having hope and faith, by accepting the Lord of the Second Advent.

In Korea, it was very important for the Christian population to actually serve as a base on which to accept the Lord. At that particular time, every nation of great power was in a position to protect this little

country of Korea. Therefore I intended to start my public ministry by developing good relations with the people in the highest positions of power but within the most important groups in Korea at that time there were several Christian leaders who violently persecuted us, and I was thus unable to carry out my initial plan.

Vast Historical Significance

Those Christian leaders on the highest levels not only influenced other people in the highest level, but they also influenced the entire Christian population in Korea. God's preparation was done in three years time—1945, 1946 and 1947, until South Korea's independence in 1948, I was, on the surface, just one man, just an individual. Nobody in Korea knew of my vast historical significance. Since I knew the cause of Jesus' frustration, I developed my tactic to perfection. I developed such a wise tactic so that I would not repeat the fate of Jesus. At the same time, God knew that my path was not going to be smooth, so He prepared, in His own way, many spiritual groups who would testify to me. It was amazing to know how precisely God planned everything according to the *Principle*. But no matter how much God prepared the path of ministry for the Lord of the Second Advent, there was a certain period in which man had to fulfill his condition of faith just as in the time of Jesus. The Christians and the Korean government rejected me in disbelief, the same failure that happened in the time of Jesus. Therefore, I could not go through the original course. I had to alter my direction.

At the time of Jesus, the Jewish religious leaders as well as the government used their power to persecute Jesus, and they had him crucified. When this history was repeated in Korea, the Korean Christian population used its power to destroy my life. I had to face the persecution of the Christian population. When this division occurred, the nation had to be divided. Seen from this perspective, the communist invasion was inevitable. Externally I had to go up against the God-denying power of

communism. God had prepared Christianity to accept the coming Lord. When it failed to fulfill this mission, the Korean Christian churches were doomed to new persecution.

Communism became strong and aggressive.... (7-1-73)

Father says, "…in order to come to this particular mission, I walked a more miserable path than any man ever walked." (7-1-73)

The following are excerpts from speeches by Sun Myung Moon about this period of time:

"DAY OF THE VICTORY OF LOVE" January 2, 1987:

As you already know, there are certain requirements in the process of fulfilling God's restoration course. This is the law of indemnity. As you also know, after World War II the United States had the opportunity to unite with the entire world, especially the Judeo-Christian societies, in order to facilitate the final fulfillment of God's dispensation.

During World War II, America was in the position of the Adam nation on the heavenly side, while England was the Eve nation and France was the archangel nation. On the satanic side, there was Germany as Adam, Japan as Eve, and Italy as the archangel. Why were Great Britain and Japan in the two Eve positions? They are island nations, which is a more feminine posture than a continent, which is larger and therefore more masculine. Furthermore, the United States is like a son to Great Britain, the mother country. This ties in with the prophecy of the coming of the Messiah through the body of a woman, or through a mother's womb.

The fall of man took place between Adam, Eve, and the archangel. According to the law of cause and effect, that lineup on the worldwide scale would again have to occur in the last days. Thus we now

have the Adam nation, Eve nation and archangel nation. World War II was the ultimate war to fulfill the final chapter of the human dispensation. There was no nation untouched or uninvolved in that war; people of many nations shed blood.

Another important rule has worked throughout history: Satan always initiates attacks. World War II was no exception; it was initiated by Germany and Japan. At that time, the nation of Korea was under Japanese occupation, so in a way, as the Eve nation, Japan gave birth to Korea. When I was born, Korea was suffering under the rule of the Japanese imperial government. Japan, on the satanic side, did its absolute best to do evil to the future Adam nation on the heavenly side. During my birth year of 1920, Korea was in the midst of a most difficult three-year period. The country was in the grip of a terrible famine. Furthermore, in 1919, a powerful independence movement rose up in which a great number of Korean people rebelled against the Japanese rulers. But they failed and suffered terrible punishment; much blood was shed. 1919 was the first of the three most difficult years. I was born in 1920. 1921 was the third year of that period.

My family suffered for a period of more than just three years. They were prepared for seven years for that most extraordinary moment. Many of my relatives had fled to Manchuria in order to help wage the war of liberation against Japan. This independence movement had been centered in the Christian churches, which at that time were very patriotic. In the years 1940 to 1944, Japanese persecution against the Christian churches reached a climax. The liberation of Korea by the Allies took place on August 15, 1945. If that had been postponed even three more days until August 17, there would have been a much greater bloodbath in Korea—more than 170,000 Korean Christians would have been exterminated. The Japanese rulers were in the midst of their most terrible bloodletting against the Christians at that very time.

You can see that God always allows Satan to do his utmost before the turning point comes. Upon the liberation of Korea on August 15, 1945, God intended to initiate a new chapter of dispensational history. At that time, I was working with the underground movement. I had discovered the *Principle* and was preparing for the momentous beginning of that new dispensation. Immediately after the liberation of Korea, the United States set up a military provisional government. The people who were placed in official positions were primarily those who had studied abroad, particularly in the United States and Japan.

The Korean Christians who had fought against Japanese occupation had been underground, and had not been linked in any manner with the imperial government. Those people who had been outside of the country and who became the main leaders of the provisional government tended to be tolerant or even friendly toward the Japanese. Those were the people who came in to take over the Korean provisional government.

Korean Christianity was divided into two camps, the Cain and the Abel. God's dispensational will had been for the Abel camp of Christianity—those who had stayed in the country and fought against Japanese rule—to take prominence over the Cain camp—those who had been abroad. The Cain camp should have united with the Abel camp and worked together toward their common goal. That would have been an important turning point for the new dispensational era.

But the Cain and Abel camps were accusing each other. Those of the underground considered themselves the only "pure" Christians and looked with scorn upon the "heretics" of the other side who had had an easy time, who had compromised with the satanic forces. Those people who had worked outside of Korea felt that the Christians who had stayed behind had become heretical because they were so spiritually oriented. There was a great deal

of spiritual activity at the time. People were receiving many revelations about the Second Coming of the Messiah. The two camps were mutually accusing each other as heretics.

SUPER HERETIC

At that time, I was in the position to bring harmony between the two camps. But one difficulty was that the *Divine Principle* is so revolutionary, including the statement that the Messiah will come as a man in the flesh. Because of the situation in Korea, I came to be strongly accused by both Christian camps as a "super-heretic."

When the United States military government was established, they sided with the Cain camp of Christianity. Most of those could speak English, but they were, for the most part, very relaxed in their observation of Christian rules. Christian missionaries from America were also in a position of influence at that time. They could directly communicate with the U.S. military government and they were united with the government. They were largely responsible for pulling in those people who had been studying abroad in the United States and Japan.

Because the military government sided with them, the Cain camp became the most powerful and influential group. Within the Abel camp, some Christians sensed a change and felt they wanted to ally themselves with the more powerful people, hoping to gain some benefit. What does that mean? The ungodly side, the satanic side, was taking power within the country. More and more, righteous Christianity was in the position to be accused and persecuted.

God's dispensational will was to use the momentous victory of the Abel camp in World War II as a launching pad for the movement of the Messiah. However, the United States military government, working together with the Cain type Christianity, took that chance away, and moved more and more

toward the satanic side. So my position became more and more difficult.

Under those circumstances, I was quietly approaching prominent religious leaders who had had spiritual experiences. I knew there were such people and I was trying to find allies among them. There were some Christians who had received spiritual messages directly from Heaven and who truly tried to know the will of God through the Bible. Such people became my supporters. Thus I was pulling those jewel-like people from both camps—the spiritualist groups as well as the traditional Christian denominations. Those groups began to think that Reverend Moon was taking their flocks away. Thus they began to persecute me, wanting to shield themselves from me. The confrontation started during the earliest days—right after the Korean liberation. So the two groups had one purpose in common: opposing Reverend Moon, this new "super-heretic" They could unite upon that.

They were able to utilize the power of the military government because it is easy to turn political power against a new religion. In this way, God's great expectation after World War II—to launch the new dispensation—was thwarted. Because of the failure of Christianity and the United States, that new beginning was taken over by the satanic forces.

If nothing had been done then, both North and South Korea would have been completely turned over to Satan. That was Korea's destiny at the time. The 38th parallel was already the dividing line and North Korea was in the hands of the communists. They were planning to bring South Korea under communism as well. The U.S. military government was naive and could easily have become the prey of the machinations and conspiracies of the North. Luckily, however, the president of the South, Syngman Rhee, understood the situation and strongly opposed the position of the military government. He completely detached South Korea

from the North and in 1948 South Korea declared its independence. The Republic of Korea was created.

Thus, the division of the Korean peninsula into North and South was established. The North proclaimed its own communist government while the South declared its independence, under the protection of the U.S. military. That was the difficult beginning point of the world dispensation. Korea was like a microcosm of the world with a very complicated situation.

The major portion of the new Korean government under Syngman Rhee was a hand-me-down group from the military provisional government. That means they were mostly Cain-type Christians. Such people remained in the positions of power. For that reason, Reverend Moon's dispensational position became even more difficult and narrowed down.

NATIONAL FOUNDATION

The reason I am giving you this important explanation of the genesis of Korea is this: according to the will of God, the messianic movement must begin upon a national foundation. In the time of Jesus, it was supposed to be the nation of Israel. In the twentieth century, Korea was chosen as the nation, with Christianity in the same position as Judaism 2,000 years ago. Upon that foundation, the messianic movement was supposed to be launched. However, just like 2,000 years ago, the Korean nation—that newly independent nation—took the position of Cain. Furthermore, it was run by the Cain-type elements within Christianity. Thus the government united with Cain-type Christianity in persecuting and trying to destroy the messianic movement. Unless you understand this particular situation, you cannot know how certain things happened within the Unification movement—such as how it started and why it went to the worldwide scale without establishing the national foundation in Korea.

The reason I entered North Korea voluntarily right after the liberation, knowing that it was a

communist, satanic nation, was that I had to set the condition of trying my best to restore it to God's side. Naturally, after I went there I had to suffer to an incredible degree. In Jesus' time, the disloyalty of the twelve disciples brought about incredible indemnity conditions. Jesus set the special forty-day period to bring all his lost disciples back. By the same token, in the new Jerusalem, the third Israel of Korea, half of the nation had been given away to the satanic side. So I had to go there physically and try to restore that part of Korea back to God.

JERUSALEM OF THE EAST

As you know, the capital of North Korea is Pyongyang. That city was once known as the Jerusalem of the East. It was really the Mecca for Christianity within Korea—the most devout and ardent Christians had been there. Therefore, I had to go and preach there trying to bring some of those people out of North Korea. In the name of Jesus' twelve disciples, I had to try to restore those devout Christians to freedom rather than let them become the prey of communism.

I began my work in the midst of the communist regime in Pyongyang, and gained many disciples. When I was thrown into jail, I preached to the people there and I won more disciples. Inside the jail, I had an incredible network of communication among those devout Christians who had been waiting for the coming of the Messiah. Amazing spiritual phenomena occurred during those days. Many people had been told, "The Messiah is coming." Some were constantly receiving messages about who I was and they were given my cell number as well as the best method of communication.

As you know, the Korean War began in 1950. For several years preceding that, the communists in North Korea were preparing with desperate determination to take over all of the South. It was during that time that I was working in North Korea, primarily in prison. General MacArthur directed the

Inchon landing and broke through the enemy lines, allowing the U.N. forces to move north all the way to Hung Nam and to open the gates of the prison where I was being held. Truly that was a holy march to the north.

"GOD'S DAY 1990 — THE UNIFICATION OF MY COUNTRY" January 1st, 1990:

America had the responsibility to prevent the division of Korea. If after WWII America had fulfilled this responsibility, and had united with the Abel type Christianity and supported Reverend Moon, the whole restoration would have finished in seven years.

So what happened? At the time Christianity in Korea was so divided. Those who had opposed the Japanese and fought in the underground failed to unite because they didn't realize what the center was. Father had been a participant in the underground opposition to the Japanese. He should have been the center around which Christianity united.

If Christianity had united centering on the underground movement and Father, within as short time the nation could have united. The whole world could have been restored. The *Divine Principle* has not changed in the last forty years.

The problem is that Christianity was invaded by Satan all over the world because Christians ignored God's will.

So forty years ago, because Christianity failed, the Unification Church was established and had to start as an underground movement. Because Christianity failed and the nation failed, Father and the Unification Movement had to go the way of suffering.

My original plan was to unite with the Christians in Korea and the leaders in Korea. However they turned around and persecuted me and accused me of all sorts of things.

"WORLD UNIFICATION AND NORTH-SOUTH UNIFICATION WILL BE ACCOMPLISHED BY TRUE LOVE" February 10, 2000:

TRUE VIEW OF HISTORY

As a boy of 16, I came into contact with the will of Heaven through prayer, and throughout my life after that I have devoted all my spirit and energy to accomplishing God's Will. I came to understand that the fundamental cause of human unhappiness is that the relationship with God was severed by the fall. As a result of the fall, human beings fell into a state of spiritual ignorance. In an effort to resolve the fundamental problems this has caused among humans and in the universe, I have spoken publicly on more than 10,000 occasions in many places around the world and set forth a true view of humanity, a true view of the world, and a true view of history based on Godism.

These speeches have been translated into twelve languages and published in three hundred volumes. The contents of these speeches are not the result of a comprehensive study of historical documents. My conclusions are not the result of scholarly research. Instead, I arrived at these answers to basic and fundamental questions through my communications with both the visible and invisible worlds.

I was involved in the anti-Japanese resistance movement under the Japanese imperial rule, and from that perspective the Japanese people were my enemy. This was true for the Korean people as a whole and for me individually. Yet, after Japan's defeat in World War II, I gave love to Japan.

After the war, I could have reported the police who had taken me into custody for my activities in the underground independence movement and tortured me severely. Had I done this, they would all have been executed. When I came across a Japanese policeman who was running for his life, however, I

packed some things for him and helped him escape to safety under the cover of darkness.

Do you know why so many young people in Japan place their eternal lives at stake and pledge their loyalty to me? This is because there is a principle of cause and effect which dictates that they must return what has been given them.

It is because I planted the seeds of true love in the world, transcending national boundaries and in accordance with God's heart. It is because I planted the heartistic foundation that leads people to a life of loving the countries that were the enemies of their own country. Thus, Japan today is my prisoner. Without even realizing it, Japan is fulfilling its heavenly calling.

Under Japanese rule, I had reason to harbor resentment even toward the Emperor of Japan. But he has already been defeated. Heaven does not strike a person who is defeated. In fact, Heaven shows mercy toward those who understand their sin and apologize. Because this is Heaven's way, a person who raises a sword and strikes a defeated person will find his own descendants driven to ruin.

NATURAL SURRENDER

I do not believe South Korea should attempt to overcome North Korea militarily. Instead, we must love our nation more than they love theirs. We must have the philosophical strength to love Heaven even more than they love communism. We must become capable men and women of character who can bring about their natural surrender. There is no other way for us to absorb North Korea.

In other words, we must become able to impress them with how we live. We must be able to amaze those people armed with communist ideology in terms of our outlook on life and our standard of character.

"True Parents' Birthday" February 25, 1985:

…right after World War II the churches in Korea were divided between Cain and Abel. One part of the church was underground—those who worshipped the true God secretly because of the Japanese domination. But there was also a church which cooperated with the Japanese in order to survive. I was a member of the underground church.

At that time, I tried to educate several key political leaders. If they had listened to me then, the world situation today would be entirely different. The dispensation has always required unity between Cain and Abel. At that time, the Cain was the established Christian churches and Abel was the Unification Church. Both were supposed to unite.

ARMAGEDDON

Division between the original Cain and Abel began because of the failure of their parents, Adam and Eve. The Cain and Abel conflict started from Adam and Eve on the family level. But that conflict has grown to the clan, tribe, national, and worldwide levels. World War II was the worldwide struggle between Cain and Abel. Actually, that was the biblical Armageddon described in the Book of Revelation, in the sight of God.

According to the dispensational scheme, this work of uniting with the worldwide Abel should have begun when I was between the ages of 20 and 30. Within the Abel camp, there is always another level of Cain-Abel. Thus I had to win the Cain camp, one by one, and unite them into a larger Abel camp. If that had been successful, that is if the established Christian churches had united with and accepted the ideal of the True Parents at that time, everything would have been done. That means there would have been no room for communism to rise up in the world.

40 YEARS WILDERNESS COURSE

But what happened? Within the Abel camp,

established Christianity never responded to the Unification Church. That is why that time was a total failure. Since that foundation was shattered, I had to go out into the wilderness for forty years where I had to gather up any remnants of people who could follow. Originally God had expected that circumstances and environment would welcome me everywhere, but on the contrary, after that time of failure I was rejected everywhere I went. Thus I had no choice but to go into the wilderness where I had to build up my own foundation, starting from the family, tribe, nation and world. That was done by pulling Abel-type remnants into our camp in the wilderness.

Our world today is divided into three main components: the free world, the communist world, and the Unification world. Until today, nobody has welcomed the Unification world, neither the free world nor the communist world. Amazingly enough, the free world put Reverend Moon into jail and said, "Reverend Moon is our enemy." Of course, the communists declared me their enemy a long time ago.

What is our weapon? It is an ideology, a worldview which centers upon God. It is an ideology of love which we call Godism. With this ideological strength, we are pushing hard at both the free world and the communist world. You are in the position to push the world away, pulling God into our camp. Are you doing that? We have two possible destinies: we are in between the two other camps so they will either crush us between them or we will push them away. Which will it be?

The most important thing is that since we are at the center, we must remain like a rock, not moving one iota to the left or to the right. We cannot cry, "The enemy is coming so let's take cover!" We must remain steadfast at the center. Satan thought, "Since the center of this ideology of Godism is Reverend Moon, let's pull him away from the center and put him into jail. Then the Unification movement will

collapse and perish. We will melt them!" But are we being melted?

When the enemies are pushing us from both sides, should we try to make a little elbow room and push them away, or should we continue to be squashed in the center? Would you like to use every ounce of your energy to push the enemy away, or just do it in a halfhearted way? Shall we work with sweat, or shall we tremble with fear? Shall we say, "My legs are tired so I think I'll take a vacation"? Or shall we continue to push ourselves forward harder than ever? Shall we go forward or backward?

Who is your model for this fight? So far, I have been fighting this giant America all by myself. I have been called every bad name and have received every form of persecution but I have never faltered at all. Finally I went to prison but I began a new fight with renewed vitality once I went there. I did not relax one iota in prison.

I have been fighting for forty years. Since the liberation of Korea in 1945, I have spent the past forty years in the wilderness, pursuing this battle, and now the time has come for the consummation. Moses, after his forty years' struggle in the wilderness, was not able to enter into Canaan. He could only look upon it and then he died in the wilderness. However, Reverend Moon will not falter outside of Canaan. He will move forward like Joshua and Caleb and finish the task of building the Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

America is a tremendous challenge; therefore, I feel great excitement at the prospect of taming this country and turning it around. That is manly work, truly masculine work. All you men should harbor that kind of ambition. You women have the job of supporting and applauding the men as they go out to fight. When the men are defeated, you have to cry.

"THE GLOBE IS OUR HOME" June 8, 1986:

Why did America fail to grasp the opportunity to fulfill God's will at that time? First of all, at that time the people of America did not have any understanding that they were representing the mainstream of the will of God. They just did not realize they were the chosen champions of God. In other words, America did not know God's expectation for this country.

America was founded for the sake of religious freedom. The first settlers left behind the religious persecution of Europe, under Catholicism, to establish a new world of freedom. They came here and created a new nation, basically under Protestantism, which recognized the ideal of religious freedom.

That is very significant. The people who came to the New World were risking their lives and had given up all their worldly goods, status, and even their families, all for the purpose of pursuing religious freedom. In a sense, they were seeking to form a one-world nation. Those first Puritans saw each other as brothers and sisters; from that point of view, they envisioned the establishment of a global nation. The United States has become what is called a melting pot, where everyone from around the world can be harmonized with everyone else. All of this is under the concept of the Fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of man.

After World War II, the victorious nations centered upon the United States granted independence to the nations they conquered, rather than occupying them. Thus, rather than a winner and loser relationship, they initiated more of a brother and sister relationship. America should have gone even further and given sacrificially for the well-being of those nations, sharing with them the wealth and power which she enjoyed. In that way those nations could have become truly equal, with equal opportunity and wealth for everyone. That would have created an incredible, worldwide foundation of unity upon

which the Messiah could come and usher in the Kingdom of God on earth. That was the utmost thought in the mind of God.

WORLD GOVERNMENT

The United Nations was born after World War II, granting membership to every nation. The United States was more or less the central figure of the United Nations. The concept of the United Nations was that of one world government, but the United States itself was confused and did not share that concept. God's dispensation was for the United States, as a Christian nation, to take the central position in the world as the leader of the United Nations, while moving aggressively toward the realization of one world under God. The Christian culture was supposed to be at the center of the United Nations.

At that time in Korea, many spiritual phenomena were occurring. Numerous spiritual groups sprang up. Some represented the Old Testament Garden of Eden; others represented the New Testament Garden of Eden. Their goal at least was correct, but they were divided in their concepts of spirituality. Korea was still under Japanese occupation. The imperial government of Japan had tried to force Shinto worship upon the Korean people. The Korean Christians were divided into two camps—one which went along with Shinto shrine worship and the other which refused to accept it and considered it idolatry. The first group was in the forefront, while the second group was basically underground.

The new spiritual groups were a part of the underground Christian community and they were receiving special communication from spirit world. Who was supposed to be in the position to lead these groups? Those sacrificial groups had received the amazing word from spirit world that the time for the return of the Lord was imminent. Furthermore, they were told that he would come as a person in the

flesh. They knew that much but they did not know who or where he was.

Those spiritual groups were supposed to be united and work together for the independence of the country. They were supposed to assume the central position in Korea and take primary responsibility after the liberation from Japan. Unfortunately, however, the Christian groups who had cooperated with the Japanese occupation and accepted Shinto shrine worship became the dominant group working with the United Nations forces. They focused primarily on political and economic independence and prosperity, but they should have worked for the benefit and resurrection of the Korean churches first.

The spiritual groups should have spoken up and asked the former Shinto shrine worshipers to join in a national time of repentance. Together they should have worked for the resurrection of the Christian churches, but they didn't. If that had happened, those resurrected Korean Christian churches would have been totally ignited with the fervor of expecting the Messiah. They would have been filled with excitement, making preparations for the Second Coming. That is how the church should have been energized.

The most fervent Christian work had been going on in North, rather than South, Korea. The North should have played the central role in the needed revival of the Christian churches. If that had been the case, there would have been harmony between North and South, centered on Christianity. But the country became divided between the Cain and Abel elements instead, and the confrontation between them became rampant. Before the revival of the Christian churches could come about, the satanic forces of communism overran the northern part of Korea. Under these circumstances, South Korea had to go along with a separate independence, which was secured in 1948; they had to be separated from the North.

SPIRITUAL GROUPS

The spiritual groups were the only ones who understood that the Lord of the Second Advent was coming. Before they could become the central figures of the Korean nation, however, they were blocked by three groups. First of all, the conventional Christian hierarchy opposed them because they felt threatened by them. Secondly, the Korean government opposed them, mainly because of influence from established Christianity. Thirdly, the communist government of North Korea opposed them viciously. It was virtually the same position of the Unification Church today. We are supposed to be at the central position, playing the subjective role, but we have been opposed by the same three elements: established Christianity, the secular government, and the power of communism.

The Unification Church has been marching forward for 40 years under incredible persecution, but we have been moving steadily toward the goal. We have gone from the family level to the clan, tribal, national and worldwide levels. In the meantime, we have been persecuted and opposed by the established Christian churches, the democratic and the communist governments of the world. Under such difficult circumstances, we have continued to grow and have reached the worldwide level.

What about the United States of America? Forty years ago, this country was virtually at the center of the world. It had everything going for it. It was the image of dignity and glamour forty years ago, but today that dignity is virtually gone. This country is losing everything, including its Christian foundation. Because that foundation is shaken, all kinds of internal difficulties and moral corruption have sprung up.

I have received persecution from every direction and have dealt with every difficulty, overcoming each one. Finally, I established a beachhead here in America in 1973. Forty years ago, when I first proclaimed the Messianic message, if the Christian

world and the United States had accepted it, God's dispensation would have been fulfilled at that time. Then there would have been no room in the world for the rise of communism. I want you to know that God had been planning and hoping that the Christian foundation would become the Messiah's foundation and that the Christian leaders would become the disciples of the Messiah.

HISTORICAL PARALLEL

Two thousand years ago, Jesus was supposed to be supported by John the Baptist. Because of that failure, Judaism came against Jesus at that time, as well as the nation of Israel. Ultimately, the entire weight of the Roman Empire fell upon Jesus. Similarly, when I came to Korea and heralded the message to Korean Christianity, which was in the John the Baptist position, they failed to accept it. Because of that, established Christianity of the world came against me and the secular governments of the free world came against me. Likewise, I was opposed by the power of international communism, which is almost in the position of the Roman Empire at this time. This is the historical parallel.

Our job is education. Today I would like to educate Christianity first.

As the American home crumbles, the homes of the world crumble, too, because America is in the position to spread its virus to the rest of the world. Therefore, we cannot let this country crumble. Your land, your home is in trouble; it is on fire. The fall of man crept into the family, so Satan's ultimate goal is destruction of the family unit. Then there will be nothing for man to hold on to. That is Satan's strategy and that is what he is doing in America today.

Somebody has to become the flag-bearer, to go forward and accomplish the mission. The champions will not come out of the traditional Christian churches or the United States government. They will not come from the civil service. The only

hope today to bring God's will to the American home is the Unification Church.

TRUE HOPE

Only Reverend Moon and the Unification Church represent true hope for this country and world, as well as hope for God. Each one of you has been commissioned with a task today. You are now inheriting this challenge and mission to save America, save Christianity, and liberate the communist world—those three primary missions which I set upon forty years ago. You must understand that I have been working for forty years to lay this foundation so that I could bequeath the mission to you.

MISSION IS TO TEACH

The globe is our home, our base. That home was invaded and came under satanic rule. At this time, after returning to the United States, I am declaring that your mission is to teach the people of the world that their homes and families must come under God and the True Parents. The name of the True Parents must be restored into every home so that the entire globe can know them. That will be the day of true and ultimate victory. This movement must be spread throughout the globe to every continent, every village. When that happens, you know the world will truly be transformed into the Kingdom of God on earth.

THE TIDE CAN BE TURNED

After World War II, the United States was given the opportunity to restore the world and, because of that failure, this great country has been declining since then. Now we have come to the end of that decline. Because of the emergence of Reverend Moon and the Unification Church, the tide can be turned. The ultimate goal God established forty years ago shall become a reality, but only with our sweat and labor. America has been responsible for the moral degradation on the worldwide level, because it has spread its viruses of free sex and an animalistic way

of life. Now we have to change that. We must indemnify it.

BLESSED COUPLES

The blessed couples [couples married by Sun Myung Moon], particularly, are in the position of restored Adam and Eve and must spearhead this crusade. All of the blessed couples and every member of the Unification Church must move aggressively forward for national and world salvation, under the banner of the True Parents' ideal.

When the Christian churches and the national leaders come to the awareness of the ideal of the True Parents, what will happen? The entire world and nation will respect and love you as their elder brothers and sisters. America is a Christian nation and Christianity should be in the position of Abel, to embrace with True Parents first. That is the beginning point of victory in this country. American Christianity should win over the Cain-type United States government and bring this nation under the one will of God. What will happen then? The True Father will automatically emerge as the true Abel of the entire United States.

"Thirtieth Anniversary of the Unification Church" May 1, 1984:

The True Parenthood would have been installed at the time of Jesus if God's dispensation had been fulfilled and the chosen people had followed Jesus as his children. Then their power would have grown and the nation of Israel would have become a mighty empire. The messianic empire would have spread throughout the Middle East and Asia, encompassing all the Cain-type religions. If such a great thing had happened, the Roman Empire would have been very small in comparison.

The Confucianist culture of China and the Buddhist culture of India would have joined with the messianic empire and automatically all of Asia would have been united. After that, the Roman

Empire would have become isolated and powerless. Jesus as the True Parent should have gone east, which signifies the starting point. However, the crucifixion occurred and history went in the opposite direction. Christianity spread toward the West, through the Roman Empire. That was the indemnity course.

On the foundation of the crucifixion, the Christian culture moved westward to the island of England, then across the Atlantic Ocean to the United States, and then it moved on across the Pacific Ocean to the Far East. But the time for the worldwide showdown between Christ's power and Satan's power occurred during World War II. That war was the showdown for the survival of Christianity against satanic power. The entire Christian culture was confronted on the worldwide basis. By their victory, centering upon the Christian nation of the United States, a unique momentum was created for the unity of all the Christian empire.

This was the first time throughout history that Christian dominion over the world was possible, because the nations of Christian cultures united together and defeated the non-Christian nations. Upon the foundation of victory in World War II, the United Nations came into being. As a format, that was the right direction but the application was wrong.

RELIGIOUS UNITED NATIONS

There should have been another United Nations on the internal level, the religious United Nations. In 1965, I came to the U.S. and met with former President Dwight D. Eisenhower. I stressed the importance of mobilizing the religious forces of the world to create the religious UN. Otherwise the United Nations in New York would only become a propaganda tool for the communists. I stressed the importance of preventing the communists from running the UN and the importance of seizing that God-given opportunity at that time.

> I want you to understand that I was supposed to have united the Christians of Korea by the time I was thirty years old. Thus the national level of unity would have occurred by then. However, because of the opposition and resistance of Korean Christianity, that was not possible.

Father says, "When the Lord of the Second Advent came, he was supposed to save the entire humanity from Hell. However, America, centered upon Christianity, failed to recognize him. As a result of this, America has been perishing in the past forty years. It is equivalent to the Israelites at the time of Jesus. They did not receive and recognize Jesus as the Lord. Therefore, for the past 2000 years the Jewish people have been persecuted and opposed throughout the world. Likewise, America is declining to the bottom of Hell. America is in the position of the enemy nation to Reverend Moon because of this failure. But only Reverend Moon is able to apply the brakes to the downward decline of America." (6-23-96)

In his autobiography Father says he sent his first two missionaries to America in 1959: "In January 1959, we sent Young Oon Kim, one of the professors who had been fired by Ewha Womans University. Then in September of that year, we sent David S.C. Kim."

1960 — MESSIAH MARRIES

In 1960 God blessed in marriage the Third Adam to a Korean woman named Hak Ja Han. He was forty years old and she was 17.

Father said, "The rapid change of history since 1960 is due to God's dispensation centering upon the Unification Church. The modern historians don't know why we've entered such a great transitional period." (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

Because of the failure of those who were supposed to unite with the young Messiah the world had to suffer under the Cold War and now with Islamic terrorists.

1965

In 1965 Father made his first trip to America on a world tour. He did not do any sightseeing. He went to many nations and made what we call holy grounds. In America he went to all 50 states in 40 days by car. He met the handful of members in America. By the time Father visited in 1965 there were only a few hundred members. Many states had no members. In his autobiography he writes:

> In 1965, I embarked on my first trip around the world. My suitcase was filled with soil and stones from Korea. My plan was that, as I traveled around the world, I would plant Korea's soil and stones in each country to signify Korea's linkage to the world. For ten months, I toured forty countries, including Japan, the United States, and the nations of Europe. On the day I left Seoul, hundreds of our members came in buses to see me off, and they filled the departure lounge at Kimpo Airport. In those days, going overseas was a significant event. Our members thronged to the airport on that January day with a cold strong wind blowing out of the northwest. No one had told them to do this. They did as their hearts told them. I received their hearts with deep gratitude. At that time, we were performing mission work in ten countries, and it was my plan to increase that to forty countries within two years. It was to lay the foundation for this that I decided to visit forty countries on my trip.
>
> I entered the country through the airport in San Francisco, where I was met by our missionaries. From there, we toured the entire country. During the time I was touring America, I felt strongly, "This is the country that manages the whole world. The new culture that will be created in the future must rise up with America as its foundation." During my tour of the United States, I visited every state. We rented a station wagon and drove day and night. At times, the driver would be so tired. "Listen here," I would say, "I didn't come here for sightseeing. I'm here to do important work. We need to go carefully." We didn't waste time sitting down to eat. If we had two slices

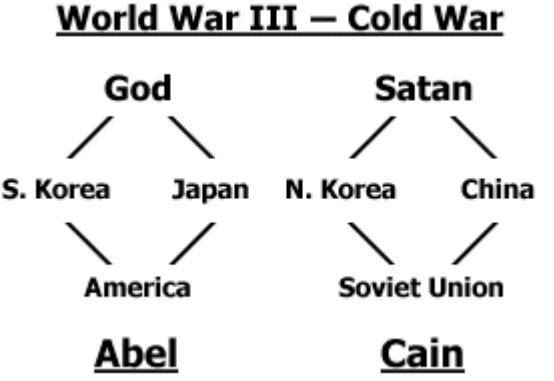
of bread, a piece of sausage, and some pickles, then that was plenty of food for a meal. We ate breakfast, lunch, and dinner like this. We also slept in the car. The car was our lodging; it was our bed and our restaurant. We ate, slept, and prayed in that small car. There was nothing we couldn't do there. I had a particular purpose to accomplish, so it was easy for me to endure minor inconveniences to the physical body.

1971

Father came to live in America in December, 1971. He stayed for over 30 years. I do not have the space to go into all the many things Father has done. You might find the books *40 Years in America: 1959—1999: An Intimate History of the Unification Movement* and *A History of the Unification Church In America, 1959—1974: Emergence of a National Movement* interesting. For over 40 years Sun Myung Moon was the world' leading anti-communist.

WORLD WAR III — COLD WAR

After World War II, there was approximately 40 years of a Cold War between Christian nations and atheistic Communist nations.



The Soviet Union was weak in 1945. America was at its peak. It was God's golden opportunity for America to spread the

Messiah's teaching, the *Divine Principle*, to all the corners of the world. Within seven years — from 1945 to 1952 — the entire world was supposed to have accepted the Messiah. It would have been the glorious messianic age. Communism would have disappeared. In 1945 China wasn't even Communist yet. It would never have gone Communist. If the Messiah had been accepted and the ideology of the *Divine Principle* had swept the earth then the Soviet Union would have given up its satanic ideology of atheistic Marxism/Leninism and joined the allies of America, England, and France. With Korea they would have led the world in the Messianic Age of the building of a harmonious one world family of mankind who were united on the ideology of the Messiah.

Sun Myung Moon teaches:

> The providential way of salvation is the restoration course. God wanted to save all of humanity centering on the Christian world, which was exactly the situation after World War II, centering on unity of the American government and the Christian world. The government was in the Cain position, with Christianity in the Abel position. That was a peak time for God's Providence, a time when the whole world could quickly overcome Satan's control. America was going the correct way, making one world centering on Christianity. But America and its Christian churches could not unite. … The churches failed to create the ideal world. They didn't have the true ideology, nor did they clearly understand God, their origin, or Satan. Without this knowledge, they couldn't control the satanic world or America.
>
> At the end of World War II, God's Providence was centered on England, America, and France. If they had united into one, they could have recreated the original relationship. Those countries needed to visit Korea to connect with Father. From there, the original ideal of love would have been recreated. They would have received the ideal love, ideal life, and ideal blood lineage centering on God and True Parents.

We are again at this point. The outside world is the wild olive tree; the Unification Church is the original olive tree. I am the original olive tree seed. How can we connect to it? Only through engrafting—taking the wild olive tree branch and grafting it to the original trunk to make a new bud. We can cut down the whole satanic tree! This is the one time we must deny everything and unite completely with God's true root. Satan's tree has been flourishing throughout history. After World War II, God had hoped to cut down Satan's entire tree from the world to the individual levels and engraft it to the true tree. From there, Satan's remaining foundation would have been cut down. (5-12-91)

God knew that the power of religion would be the force to eliminate Satan at the last days. However, religion always has the tendency to become diluted by secular powers. For that reason, God promised that He would send the Messiah. The Messiah comes to bring the fulfillment of God's ancient covenant and law. He brings original love. Centered upon that original love, he will organize original families, societies, and nations. He will establish a new earthly order. This is the very purpose of the Messiah.

The foundation for the Messiah has to be Christianity because Christianity is the only religion to understand that the true nature of God is that of Father. Jesus was the only holy man who called himself the only-begotten son of God. No other religion is founded upon such a teaching.

Jesus was indeed the Messiah because God was his Father and he was His only-begotten son. Thus the religion that he founded must become the foundation for the second coming of the Messiah, when God's original love will be fulfilled. Centering upon original love, Christianity creates

the Godly family of Father, Son, brothers and sisters in Christ. This family concept had to be the mainstream of God's dispensation up to the time of the ultimate fulfillment.

Christianity had to become the most widespread religion in the world because God has a big stake in it. He has a plan for fulfilling His dispensation through it. Unfortunately, traditional Christianity was misled by incorrect theology and St. Paul has a great responsibility for this. There are many mistaken ideas, such as Jesus came only to die. Likewise many Christians are content to worry only about their individual salvation, disregarding the matters of this world for one's own little cubbyhole "upstairs." The concept of being saved by faith alone is not right either. One must fulfill love in order to go to Heaven. Without the power of love, one can never be separated from satanic bondage.

For this reason, God promised mankind that the second Messiah would come as the representative of His original love, bringing liberation from satanic bondage. How can you recognize the second Messiah? The Messiah will teach this principle exactly, point by point, spelling it out.

Is there anyone in the world other than Reverend Moon who is teaching precise points about the original ideal of creation and the original concept of salvation centered upon original love? Even Jesus could not teach these points precisely. But the Bible promises that when the end of the world comes, we will no longer have to be taught by symbols and parables but we will learn plainly of the Father. That is what the *Divine Principle* is all about. That is what you are receiving.

What is Reverend Moon teaching? He is teaching the original concept of the love of God and the love of parents, the original concept of Adam and Eve's relationship and the original concept of children and

family. If you learn all the points of this original blueprint from God, then you have the Messiah, you have salvation. If you do not, then you will have to search for somebody else. What do you think? Have you found the Messiah?

The Messiah must be elevated to the position of True Parent. Such a concept was never introduced two thousand years ago. Only with the advent of the second Messiah could that concept be fulfilled. He came to organize the family centered upon God's original love. With this weapon of the original love of God, Satan has the choice to either surrender or retreat. This is the power of the second Messiah.

This is the ideal which I came to fulfill. If Korean Christianity in 1945 had accepted this concept and united with me, I would not have had to go through all these legal battles. The end of World War II was a unique time in human history. Korea was closely allied with the United States and the leadership of Korea was Christian. If Christianity had united with me then, the entire nation could have been united. It was the opportunity for Christianity to govern the world.

The Messiah should have appeared once Christianity was ready to take dominion over the world. That was the ideal time for the Second Advent. Do you understand clearly? That special time was the point toward which God had been working throughout the two thousand years of Christian history. Such an opportunity never arose before or since. God knew the value of this opportunity. Thus He wanted the United States, centered upon Christianity, to take the worldwide position of the twentieth-century Roman Empire. Through this nation the world could become Christian and that is why the U.S. had the position it did.

At that dispensational time, Reverend Moon was in Jesus' position, established Christianity was in Judaism's position, and the United States was in the position of the Roman Empire. The Korean nation was in the position of Israel. All these elements comprised God's side. That was the historical parallel.

After World War II, South Korea was liberated and came under the military rule of the U.S. government. President Syngman Rhee was a Christian, having been educated in the United States and having strong Christian support. The law of indemnity requires that a certain course be followed, starting with the individual, family, tribe, nation and world. Once the Christians of South Korea recognized the Messiah and united with him, all these steps could have been fulfilled within seven years. Before I reached the age of 40, the entire worldwide dispensation would have been fulfilled.

The True Mother would have come out of the Christian realm. Perhaps she would have been a British woman. It could be, why not? Once the worldwide foundation had been accomplished, I would have picked the True Mother on the world level. Imagine if the royal princess of England had become the True Mother. I am only interested in one thing—how to restore the world.

It is because our movement was rejected by Korean Christianity that our boundaries became so limited. If we had been supported, the Korean movement would have immediately become insignificant because the movement would have become worldwide and universal, with no boundaries. Let's say that the True Mother had come from Great Britain, the source of the English-speaking culture. The U.S. is in the position of son to Great Britain. It would have been very rapid and easy for America to humble itself to Britain.

With such circumstances, God's providence would have progressed very rapidly. The Messiah would have had dominion over the world. Even in the face of total opposition, I was able to create a worldwide foundation, so imagine how much I could have accomplished in seven years if I had been given the proper welcome. Do you think I am capable of that? Communism could have been stopped at that time. It certainly would not have come as far as it has.

However, all these possibilities were destroyed when established Christianity opposed me. That is why communism was able to grow rampantly and conquer over two-thirds of the world. If I had been supported and accepted by Christianity, what leading powers of the world would have opposed me? This Christian nation of America would not have opposed me; Judaism would not have opposed me; neither would Christianity or the free world.

The UN was created in ignorance of its proper guiding principles. The U.S. should have taken the governing position of righteousness over the United Nations, but instead they gave up their world leadership. (5-20-84)

If there had been no opposition from established Christianity forty years ago, perhaps I would have married a British woman. That's true. At that time, the Eve nation was Britain. America was born from that country, so America is the son. The son is the representative of Adam and Eve. Standing in the middle in the archangel position at that time was France. France always goes either way, every time. (9-7-86)

Tragically after World War II those in the John the Baptist position rejected the young Messiah. The young Messiah, like Jesus, had to then take a suffering course and go out and witness to average people and build a group around him who would protect him and act as John the Baptist. The powerful leaders of the world such as Syngman Rhee and President Roosevelt never knew.

Because Korea and the Allies remained ignorant of God's will, they declined. By not taking their leadership role, the Soviet Union grew in strength. Communism spread like wildfire after 1945. In 40 years it controlled almost half of the earth's population.

RETURN OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

If the young Messiah had been accepted in his first three years of ministry, then he would have gone to America. God had prepared Billy Graham to be the worldwide John the Baptist to prepare the way for the Lord of the Second Advent. Billy Graham became nationally famous in 1949 which is the same time that he would have met the Messiah if those Christians in the John the Baptist position in Korea would have accepted him. John the Baptist was a little older than Jesus and Billy Graham is a little older than Sun Myung Moon.

BILLY GRAHAM WAS WORLDWIDE JOHN THE BAPTIST

Elijah and John the Baptist have worked with Billy Graham to make him famous. He does not know they are trying to get him to accept the new Messiah anymore than John the Baptist knew that Elijah was working with him to accept Jesus. Billy Graham, like John the Baptist, has rejected the Messiah. Because he and the Christian leaders have done so it is extremely difficult for the one billion Christians to accept the new Messiah because they follow and believe their leaders. God prepared Billy Graham. It is no coincidence that Billy Graham accepted Jesus in North Carolina 6 months before Sun Myung Moon met Jesus on Easter 1935 in what is today North Korea. John the Baptist was exactly 6 months older than Jesus. It is no coincidence that the future wife of the world-wide Messiah, Ruth Bell, was attending a Christian school in Pyongyang, North Korea at the same time in the 1930s. She is the same age as the Messiah. She was a lonely teenager living away from her parents but growing in her faith at this time. God was working to prepare her to help her future husband accept the Oriental Messiah. God had hoped the three of them would have met after the first 3 years of the young Messiah's ministry. The three years from 1949-1952 Billy Graham would have introduced Father worldwide and the world would have accepted the Second Coming of Christ.

In 1950 President Harry Truman invited Billy Graham to the White House. In 1954 he went with his wife to London for a 12-week crusade. He was internationally famous then and should have been introducing the Messiah instead of preaching that this was the time of the Second Coming and Christ would come on the clouds. President Kennedy was driving a car in 1960 with Billy Graham. He pulled over to the side of the road and with total seriousness asked Billy Graham what the Second Coming of Christ meant. Billy Graham is ignorant of the meaning of the Second Coming and therefore did not explain the *Bible* correctly to President Kennedy.

God's plan was for Korea to be a united nation under the Messiah who would have been honored by every nation. It would have been a Messianic Age that would have ushered in world peace.

The magnitude of the Messiah is beyond comprehension. He is the root of world peace. He is the center of God's providence. We can do nothing without him. He is the key to complete and perfect happiness. Actions have consequences. If we accept the Messiah it is a great and glorious day. If we don't accept the Messiah, the result is suffering that is indescribable. Because Jesus was rejected, we have had a nightmare of war and pain for 2000 years. The pain and terror of the years since the Messiah was humiliated at his trial in 1948 is beyond words to express. We can only imagine how joyful the world have been if the Messiah had been embraced instead of spit on.

The Messiah is always completely pure and innocent. He is the embodiment of true love, yet he has been put in prison six times—once in a Japanese prison, once in North Korea, three times in South Korea and once in America. The total time he has spent in prison has been five years. Almost three years of that was in a death camp in North Korea.

AMERICA DECLINED

America since 1945 has rapidly gone downhill in spirit and morals. Christian leaders were weak and offered no vision against the sexual revolution championed by the Liberal feminists. Many Christian ministers did not take leadership as anti-communists. Because of the failure of the Christians, the chosen people, to accept the Messiah, there has been a war of ideology and

sometimes of bloody fighting between the Free world and the Communist world. In 1952 Liberals took control of the United States House of Representatives and ruled for 40 years until 1992. Their socialist/feminist crusade for Satan turned America into a Sodom and Gomorrah. America became the champion of free sex.

Father explains:

> The archangel's position is to protect Adam and Eve, thus the religious world was supposed to serve as protection for the Messiah when he came.
>
> There was a golden opportunity for this archangelic realm to be created right after World War II, centered upon the United States. This would have stopped the expansion of communism and the U.S. would have been the leading nation for Christianity. Unfortunately, the U.S. failed to fulfill and could not protect God's realm and property.
>
> Communism has run rampant throughout the free world and has even infiltrated world Christianity, for example through the World Council of Churches. The current trend of liberation theology and "Christian Marxism" is the way in which communism has infiltrated Christian churches. The ministers who are following such theology and trying to play an "activist" role are being used by the communists whether they realize it or not.
>
> God has not given us any weapon to fight against this sort of thing except love. God's way of defeating His enemies is by natural subjugation, never by force. (11-5-83)

DEMOCRATIC vs. AUTHORITARIAN

The Cold War with the Soviet Union ended in 1992. Since then there has been a Cain-Abel division worldwide between democratic governments and authoritarian governments. Communist countries like China, North Korea and Cuba still exist. Some of the most dangerous countries in the world are ruled by Islamic fundamentalists. America went to war against the

authoritarian governments of Afghanistan and Iraq in its fight against Islamic totalitarianism.

Sun Myung Moon explains the root of the problem:

> Who is Barabbas? He was supposed to die, but because of Jesus, he survived, isn't that true? The Arabic realm is today's Islamic realm. Islam came from Christianity and has deviated from the religious tradition. They are the Cain-type world religion, the Barabbas-type religion. If you do not accept the Koran, you are put to death. Do you understand? In the democratic world, Christianity is the internal, spiritual standard. In the Communist world, Islam can stand in the internal position. Therefore, Islam and Christianity are historical enemies, and also democracy and Communism are historical enemies.
>
> Which country is like Barabbas? It is the Islamic countries, holding in one hand the Koran and in the other the sword. That is not the essence of real faith. They are fundamentally wrong if seen from original religious teachings. Islam definitely became the internal and external side of communism.
>
> The Islamic realm is the problem, and the Communist world is the problem. (*Way of Unification Part 1*)

The Third World War is between militant, totalitarian Communism that represents the external threat to world peace and militant, totalitarian Islam that represents the internal threat to world peace. The internal threat is a greater threat than the external.

There has also been a deep division within democratic nations between Liberal and Conservative values. Those on the Left have dominated the culture. Now the tide is turning toward the Right. This is why the Republicans shocked everyone by regaining

leadership in the United States House of Representatives in 1992 after being out of power for exactly 40 years.

The Messiah has had the monumental job of reaching out to the world since the 1950s with his rag-tag followers who are branded heretics and brainwashed cult followers because they are dedicated to save this world with the logic of the *Divine Principle*. Satan rules this world and his evil spirits have been successful so far in keeping people from hearing the *Principle*. And when those few people who do hear this magnificent truth that clarifies the Bible and proclaims God's dream of the ideal world, many are in a spiritual fog and are blinded by evil spirits from grasping the good news. In time every person will accept the *Divine Principle*. How long that takes depends on when fallen mankind wakes up to the truth brought by the Messiah that will save this world from the terrible divisions that make every person's life a living nightmare.

God will never rest and the followers of the Messiah will never rest until the *Divine Principle* is taught to every human being and this world becomes one united family centered on God's rational universal laws of life. When we hear the simple truths of the *Divine Principle* God and Jesus want us to do our duty to save people from the powerful forces of darkness that everyone is abused by. We are called by God to be small messiahs and help the worldwide Messiah in God's crusade to build a world utopia.

EVERYONE A MESSIAH

Father teaches that we are all supposed to be messiahs: "When you lie down you must think that you are Jesus lying down: 'My body is the resurrected body of Jesus. I am reviving Jesus' breath that was stilled 2,000 years ago.' Is this criminal in light of the Bible? Not at all. The Bible is teaching us to become one body with Jesus; Jesus taught, 'I am in the Father and the Father is in me.' He also said, 'You are in me and I am in you.' Jesus meant that everyone can become a representative of the Messiah, a part of the Messiah. Your becoming the physical manifestation of the Messiah is the essence of God's ideology and Jesus' ideology. God created everyone to be a messiah. As long as there are people who need to be saved the title of Messiah is needed." (*God's Warning to the World*)

The Messiah has a blueprint for world peace. His words and example bring hope and light to this dangerous and suffering world. We can do nothing without Sun Myung Moon. We must humble ourselves to the truth, no matter how much it hurts us to hear things that are opposite of what we deeply believe. Father explains that in the Last Days what is true looks like a lie and what are lies are seen as truths. The only solution to the massive problems from the ecology of nature to the ecology of the family is the life giving words of Sun Myung Moon. We should read them every day as a family and work hard every day to get his books in the hands of every person.

Father has worked harder than any person who has ever lived and his followers have worked very hard. The Unification Movement is growing and will eventually be a minority big enough to rule the world in every area of life. Then the rest of the world will join. God is greater than Satan and sooner or later His truth will rule this world instead of the lies of those who rule now in this terrible cultural war we are in. The tide is beginning to turn in favor of God and against the deadly teachings of those in the Democratic Party, liberal universities and morally corrupt Hollywood stars. God's values such as abstinence are beginning to be heard and accepted instead of the crusade for free sex and normalizing homosexuality as taught by those who now lead in our culture.

World Wide Cain-Abel Division

Authoritarian	vs.	Democratic Governments
Liberal	vs.	Conservative
Feminist Family	vs.	Traditional Family

CULTURAL WAR

There is now a movement in this cultural war for capitalism, limited government and the biblical traditional, patriarchal family instead of the socialism, big government and feminist family values of the last 40 years. Millions of women are giving up the Marxist/feminist sexual revolution and returning home to care for their husband and children. The most famous feminist of the twentieth century summed up the feminist philosophy in one

sentence when she said, “A liberated woman is one who has sex before marriage and a job after.” God’s way is the opposite of this. God is beginning to reach mankind with true family values. Islamic totalitarians and crusaders for same-sex marriages are the main antichrists in these Last Days.

The Messiah comes to teach mankind the truth. God has worked to create a worldwide communications and transportation system to enable the Messiah to teach the world. It is no accident that in such a short time in the 20th century we have cars, planes and lightning-fast satellite communication.

This is what the *Bible* speaks of in symbolic language in Luke 17:24: “For as the lightning flashes and lights up the sky from one side to the other, so will the Son of Man be in his day.” The purpose of having a television and computer in every home is that God wants America to see the Messiah and hear the *Divine Principle*. The purpose of the Internet is to spread the good news of the *Divine Principle* to every home. “Wherever you may go, please try to spread Sun Myung Moon’s message through television or other media.” (8-1-96)

We are living now in the Last Days. We are in an age where evil is being judged and subjugated and goodness is on the rise, and God will reign instead of Satan. We are in a cosmic spring that only a few are seeing now but that will dramatically change.

TECHNOLOGY

“In Jesus’ day, the Roman Empire ruled the vast domains around the Mediterranean Sea, integrated by an advanced and extensive transportation system reaching out in all directions. This was the center of a vast Hellenistic civilization founded on the Greek language. Thus, all the necessary preparations had been made for a swift transmission of the teachings of the Messiah from Israel, where Jesus lived, to Rome and the world. Similarly, in the present era of the Second Advent, the influence of the Western powers has expanded the democratic political sphere throughout the world. The rapid progress of transportation and communication has greatly bridged the gap between East and West, and the extensive contact among languages and cultures has brought the world much closer together. These factors have fully prepared an environment in which the teachings of the returning Christ can freely and

swiftly be conveyed to the hearts of all humankind. This will enable his teachings to bring rapid and profound changes all over the globe" (*Exposition of the Divine Principle*).

A proverb says that, "all roads lead to Rome." Roman roads were superbly made. At its peak, the Roman road system spanned 50,000 miles. Laid out end to end, Roman roads would have stretched more than twice around the world's equator. Reliably constructed from four separate layers one meter thick, many have lasted over 2,000 years. Many of them, and even their bridges, are still in use today! God had intended for them to be used for the purpose of transmitting Jesus' vision just as our modern roads and television are intended to transit the *Divine Principle*.

We are living in the most exciting time in history. Jesus had such historical impact because of his message of love and now the Lord of the Second Advent has come and spoken the whole truth of God's love. The Completed Testament is the volumes of speeches and hours of video of the Messiah.

UNIFICATION CHURCH — THIRD AND FINAL CHOSEN PEOPLE

Through Jacob's victory, Israel became God's chosen people. When they failed the Christians became the chosen people—the second Israel. When Christians failed, the Messiah created a third and final chosen people—those that follow and support him—the Unification Church.

Sun Myung Moon teaches: "Today, at the time of the Second Coming, why has Father been denied and persecuted? One of the biggest reasons is that Christianity has been expecting the Lord of the Second Advent to come on the clouds of heaven. But Reverend Moon was born as a man of flesh. Therefore, Christianity totally departed from Father, repeating the mistake of the time of Jesus. That is why Father had to abandon Christianity as his base and build up his own new foundation, which is the Unification Church and movement throughout the world. We have seen such a drastic decline of the power of traditional Christianity after World War II. In some cases, Christianity even united with atheistic communism. How could Christianity ever align itself with a God-denying philosophy such as communism?" (4-25-93)

When Jesus was rejected by the religious leaders he had to take a secondary course and find disciples at the bottom of society. When religious leaders rejected Sun Myung Moon he also had to find disciples from simple young people.

The building blocks of the Kingdom of Heaven are families who are centered on God and the Messiah. The Messiah is doing that by teaching mankind to be absolutely pure and moral and create eternal, God centered marriages.

1992

In 1992 when he was 72 years old Sun Myung Moon proclaimed himself the Messiah In a speech titled "Leaders Building a World of Peace" given on August 24, 1992 at the Little Angels Performing Arts Center in Seoul, Korea he proclaimed:

> Our movement must bring salvation to all families, all nations, all states and, finally, to the entire world. It must be a family-saving, nation-saving, world-saving movement.
>
> Our families are being destroyed by the debasement of sexual ethics through illicit relationships and decadent lifestyles. Every nation is suffering the agony of the destruction of its moral standards and the accompanying increase in crime. There is no solution in sight to the conflicts between political factions. Poverty and ignorance continue to plague us. There is no sign that we may be nearing solutions to the world's international border disputes, to the attitudes of prejudice between religious groups, or to the conflicts between the various races and ethnic groups. World peace is under constant threat from the selfish actions of the world's countries and peoples.
>
> Environmental pollution also is destroying our planet to the degree that we are approaching a serious crisis for the future of humankind. We may all find ourselves on a common path of destruction, unless we are able to resolve the crisis we face through a love that transcends all national boundaries and ethnic differences and encompasses all the world's people. Let me emphasize again—

any successful resolution of this crisis must be based on an effort to build a unified world through a movement of true love rooted in the Unification Principle, or Godism.

In early July, I spoke in five cities around Korea at rallies held by the Women's Federation for World Peace. There, I declared that my wife, WFWP President Hak Ja Han Moon, and I are the True Parents of all humanity. I declared that we are the Savior, the Lord of the Second Advent, the Messiah.

Why would I stand before women leaders of Korea and make such an astonishing and fearful announcement? The reason is that God has been carrying out His providence to send the Messiah as the second perfected Adam who has subjugated Satan, in order to establish a perfected Eve who will represent all women. God has done this, because it was when Satan caused Eve to fall that human history came to be permeated with sin.

Also, women are the central point for the love, peace and spirit of service that protect our families, and it is the healthy family that must be the starting point in our work to build world peace. The establishment of God-centered family ethics and the education of our children lie at the innermost core of my teachings as the person who has declared for himself the responsibilities of the Messiah. The family is the holy sanctuary that must cleanse this defiled world.

If we say that heaven is a symbol of man, then earth is a symbol of woman. The house is the stage on which a woman's life is played out. The mother is the center of a nest filled with love for all the members of the family. The family, with the mother at its center, is the basic unit making up the nation and the world.

We can provide new impetus to the work of giving opportunities for meaningful exchanges and education on a God-centered vision for world peace to people of all countries and all walks of life, including political leaders, scholars, religious leaders, journalists and educators, as well as leaders of women and youth. This vision of world peace

will be centered on families in which mothers, representing all women of the world, accomplish mind-body unity through love.

If you will embrace my proposal and join me in this task, then our efforts are certain to bring the world of peace that is the object of God's desire to all of humanity within the remaining eight years of the twentieth century. We who are gathered here this evening will be the leaders in opening the gates to a world of peace for the coming twenty-first century.

Father Moon has spoken several times about how hard it was for him to find out what really happened in the Garden of Eden and how God has worked throughout history. To find the truth he paid a terrible price. He was attacked and overcame unbelievable obstacles as he spent many years digging deeper and deeper to find the secrets of the universe. Satan worked hard to spiritually and physically kill Sun Myung Moon to prevent him from exposing Satan. In a speech given on December 25, 1994 he said:

Hidden Secrets

Just imagine how desperately serious Father was when he was finding out all of the hidden secrets of Adam's family and all of the historical families and how they failed. Do you think Father took it all for granted? Father had to put his neck on the block in a life and death fight. Satan constantly tried to chase Father out and confuse him, changing the direction. Imagine just how manipulative and evil Satan has been throughout human history, even against God. He played games against God. Then suddenly this innocent Father Moon appeared. Do you imagine that Satan just left him alone? Satan was desperate to block him. From Father's point of view, in order to create the future ideal world, he had to obtain the voluntary surrender from Satan. That was the condition. Father restored the failure of Adam's family through a severe battle. There were so many times that he met with denial and refusal. But Father had to restore

it. As Father kept on going with logic and proof, then finally Satan had to admit it. After Father succeeded in revealing all of the hidden secrets from Adam's family, then Satan tried to block him regarding Noah's family. Father then had to struggle once again in order to discover all of the hidden secrets of failure within Noah's family in order to restore that stage. When Father came up with all of the facts of how Ham failed in Noah's family, Satan denied the truth many times. Again, step-by-step, as Father kept producing the factual proof finally Satan bowed down and surrendered that Father was correct. That is how Father restored the failure of Noah in his family.

After this Satan told Father that even though he had restored Adam's family failure, and Noah's family failure, still history carried on through Abraham's family. This area Satan claimed Father had not touched yet and so the world still belonged to him. Once again Satan tried to block Father's way by telling him not to touch Abraham's family because he had nothing to do with it yet. Father had to fight again. Once more Father began to dig into all of the secrets of Abraham through Isaac and Jacob, the Israelites' 400 years of history all at different stages, including the restoration between Jacob and Esau and the story of Tamar. Finally Satan bowed down once again. Nobody knew how desperately Father had to fight in order to restore again, not just Abraham's family but all the way to Moses' family. He found all the facts and confronted Satan with those facts and the facts of Jesus' family and John the Baptist's failure, and restored them back again. Nobody in history knew what kind of life course Father had to go through in order to achieve that goal. Nobody knew what kind of course Father passed through in the last forty years in order to restore the entire 4000 years of human history back to God.

Sun Myung Moon fought Satan and persevered against unbelievable waves of attacks from the forces of darkness and he was victorious in finding the truth. He boldly states, "Nobody is able to think more deeply than Reverend Moon, nobody has done as much to teach about the reality of God." (9-20-92)

Father Moon said in a speech titled "Proclamation of the Messiah — The Reappearance of the Second Coming and the Completed Testament Era" (January 10, 1993):

> In "The Reappearance of the Second Coming," what does reappearance mean? The Lord of the Second Advent was to appear in 1945, but since that foundation was lost, he must reappear now. From 1945 to 1952 was seven years, and from 1952 to 1992 was forty years, during which time Father re-indemnified everything. Why 40 years? Father has to restore the 4,000 years of Israelite and Christian history. But Father cannot live 4,000 years or even 400 years, so his only option was to do it in 40 years. Within this mere 40 years, Father re-indemnified the entire 4,000 years of the Old and New Testament eras. All realms of individuals, families, tribes and nations and the whole world itself opposed Father. God and Father were chased out into the wilderness, and they now have climbed up each wall inch by inch and have pulled down each wall of the eight stages, from the individual wall to cosmic wall.

To bring world peace the Messiah teaches that mankind must unite under his ideology. Father has successfully restored all the failures of the Central Figures of the Past. He says:

> I can understand my mother's feelings. Whenever I had something interesting I would talk to my mother about it, and no matter how tired she was or how much work she had to do, she would listen. That is a vivid memory for me. Even though I would speak to her for hours, her eyes glowed and she would ask, "Then what? Then what?" That was our relationship. Would God's feeling toward men be

less than my mother's feeling toward her son? It could not have been less. Since God's feelings toward His own children go beyond any physical boundary and beyond time, His love is always there. Would it be good for God to keep some distance from you?

Never forget that no matter how difficult it was, God's feeling was always close. We can understand how much God wanted to embrace Noah when he was working so hard, obeying God's commands for hundreds of years. Even so, however, Noah was not quite in a position where God could be with him directly. There was no way God could interfere with Abraham's suffering course while he was wandering in the wilderness. God would have liked to console and encourage him, but He could not do that.

How heartbroken God was because these central figures were not at the level of original heart. They would make some advance, only to plunge down again, and God had to persevere whenever they failed. In Jacob's case too, it was not possible for God to be near and speak to him when he went to get his bride in difficult times. Even after Jacob worked hard for seven years, Laban gave him Leah as a bride, instead of Rachel. Since there was nothing God could do about it, how would God have felt?

Until this time we did not know God could not interfere with Jacob's course; now we know that God's interference would have lessened the meaning of what Jacob could accomplish. Therefore, God had to let him persevere and let him achieve everything by himself. Restoration by indemnity is that difficult.

When you joined the Unification Church you began to understand the meaning of indemnity and how restoration becomes possible. Jacob's hard work in Haran was necessary to indemnify any basis for Satan to accuse him. He worked very hard and managed to work this out, but even as he was about to return to Canaan an angel tried to stop him at the ford of Jabbok. The angel claimed that Jacob had to

wrestle with him and win before he could leave there. Knowing Jacob's determination in the previous years, you can understand how Jacob would have felt. He immediately jumped at the angel and continued wrestling all night. Chances are that he would have been beaten again and again, but one thing Jacob wouldn't do is give up. The angel didn't know what to do. He wasn't prepared to cope with such zeal, so he said, "Let's call it a draw." But Jacob wouldn't listen to that and just clung on, insisting, "No, I'm winning." Finally the angel said, "I have won, but let's say you won."

Ordinary people would have believed the angel was sincere, and stopped fighting, but Jacob knew that if he did that then Satan would spring forward and knock Jacob out. So instead of trusting what the angel said, Jacob kept fighting. The angel dislocated Jacob's thigh, and Satan couldn't do anything to Jacob after that. When Satan felt that Jacob was quite different from anyone in the fallen dominion, God moved in and gave Jacob blessing. How did God feel when the fighting came to a climax? Knowing the consequences, God couldn't do a thing except watch and hope Jacob would be victorious. When Jacob won, in deep relief and approval God gave him the name Israel. From that moment on, God could lift Jacob up.

For nearly 2,000 years God has been bringing mankind up and raising his standards ever higher. During this time how often did the people fail who were charged with historical responsibility in the dispensation? There were ups and downs, but mostly downs, yet all during this time God never ceased anticipating the day of celebration and congratulations to come. His only desire was to keep up the work and wait for the day when He could send the Messiah.

The only thing I can be proud of is having persevered even when I was chased out and persecuted. Did that happen because I was incapable of doing anything? Was I constantly being chased and not taking any initiative, or could I persevere because I really was capable? For whose sake did I

persevere?

There are many unpredictable things about people. Since I know very well about all the people who have betrayed God's expectations, I will be the last one to repeat the same historical mistake. I will be the first one who does not betray God. Therefore, I am desperately trying to make this a success. I retreated when I thought it was wise, and charged when I thought it was necessary. I even went sideways when the situation demanded it. In weaving together all these complicated situations, I have finally gotten to the destination.

What is my ultimate goal? The only thing I desire is to untangle what is tangled in God's heart. and to console Him. I will indemnify all that needs to be indemnified and restore everything. This is what I keep pledging to God in prayer, always carrying on His mission. There were many instances when I kept telling myself, "In this one battle you must not die. You must be victorious and live. You cannot afford to falter in Korea. This is what heaven has been sending me and so many other hundreds of people for." I kept on and pledged to live to see the victorious day to dedicate it to God. It wasn't for my personal salvation, but to fulfill God's will and the ultimate purpose of God's creation. (1-1-81)

The following speech was given after his 50 state speaking tour in America in 2001 that expresses some of his basic teachings:

IDEAL OF TRUE FAMILIES

When I was sixteen years old [Koreans calculate age as one year old at birth] I met Jesus early Easter morning, and set out on the path of Heaven's Will to accomplish the Will of God. I suffered all manner of misunderstanding and persecution, but I never gave up. So I have devoted my life of more than eighty years to the effort of bringing about a world of peace based on the ideal of true families. In 1971, I came to America in obedience to God's command, and for the past thirty years have invested my full spirit and energy to guide America so that it can

fulfill the mission for which it was chosen, that is, the mission of the second Israel.

PAIR SYSTEM

Ladies and Gentlemen, more than six billion people are now living in the world. Without exception they fall into one of two categories: man or woman. In fact, God created all beings, including those of the mineral, plant and animal kingdoms, with yang nature and yin nature. In other words, He created a pair system. That is because He created the universe to resemble Himself.

Let us ask, then, who is God to us? What is His relationship with humankind? We refer to Him as "Father," because He is our source of true love, true life and true lineage. Thus, the original relationship between God and humanity is that of parent and child.

LINEAGE

There is nothing more important to us than love, life and lineage. Among these, which do you think has most value? Many people think that it is love. However, no matter how valuable love and life are, they are horizontal in nature. They appear and conclude within one generation. On the other hand, lineage is vertical in nature and continues forever, generation after generation.

This generation has inherited the lineage passed down through our ancestors. We are like a corporation composed of cells inherited from all of our ancestors going back to Adam.

MIND-BODY DISUNITY

What is the reality of the environment in which we live? Our mind and body have been fighting against each other since the beginning of history. World wars eventually conclude with a truce, or the defeat of one side, but the struggle between the human mind and body cannot be stopped; it continues without end. The mind and body failed to form a ninety-degree angle in resemblance to God, within whom the mind completely controls the body. The

fall of the human ancestors brought on this state of mutual conflict. Even non-religious people have to acknowledge that human beings descended from fallen ancestors.

Did God expel Adam and Eve from the Garden of Eden before or after they committed the fall? He expelled them from the Garden because of the fall, so it must have taken place after the fall, and before they could form a relationship of love, life and lineage with God.

Thus, Adam and Eve could not have a marriage ceremony blessed by God. Instead, they married under Satan's dominion. Doing so, they inherited Satan's lineage and multiplied descendants. For this reason, Jesus spoke so sharply when he pointed out that the devil Satan is the father of fallen humankind, "You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out your father's desire." (John 8:44) The fall destroyed the eternal relationship of parent and child between God, on the one hand, and Adam and Eve, on the other. Therefore, Adam and Eve were unable to generate the love of true parents, true husband and wife, and true children. Because of this, God never had grandchildren of direct descent.

Adam and Eve should have avoided the fall and reached completion, forming one mind and one body as true parents centering on God, their True Parent. Instead, they entered into a relationship with the enemy and found themselves in a position with their body in total control of their mind.

THE ROOT OF HUMAN SIN

What then is the truth behind the fall story? The *Bible* states that the fall originated when the first human ancestors in the Garden of Eden ate the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. This is one of many important passages that the *Bible* expresses in parables and symbols. It does not refer to a literal fruit. As Jesus said in Matthew 15:11, "It is not what goes into the mouth that defiles a man, but what comes out of the mouth, this defiles a man."

It is human nature to try to hide our defects. A child caught stealing a cookie by his mother will instinctively hide his hands or cover his mouth. In the same way, if Adam and Eve had taken a piece of fruit and put it into their mouth, then they would have hidden their hands or covered their mouth when God called them. The fact that they hid their lower parts instead demonstrates that their crime was committed through the lower parts of their body.

There were five masculine figures in the Garden of Eden. First, there was God, who is the subject partner of the entire created world. Then there was Adam and the three angels, Lucifer, Gabriel and Michael. Eve was the only feminine figure. What do you think they felt, standing naked and without shame in the Garden of Eden, observing the insects and animals coming together in pairs?

The commandment given in Genesis 2:17, "You must not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for when you eat of it you will surely die," was a strong warning about Eve's love. Eve had to protect her sexual purity until she achieved maturity with a God-centered character and entered into a blessed marriage with God's permission. Had she succeeded, she would have multiplied God's eternal love, life and lineage.

Eve fell, however, because Lucifer disregarded his servant's position and drew her into an immoral relationship based on his excessive desire. Thus, in 2 Peter 2:4 the *Bible* says, "... God did not spare angels when they sinned, but sent them to hell, putting them into gloomy dungeons to be held for judgment;" and Jude 6-7 states, "And the angels who did not keep their positions of authority but abandoned their own home—these he has kept in darkness, bound with everlasting chains for judgment on the great Day. In a similar way, Sodom and Gomorrah and the surrounding towns gave themselves up to sexual immorality and perversion. They serve as an example of those who suffer the punishment of eternal fire." Clearly, the angels committed the sin of adultery.

I repeat: the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil represents Eve's reproductive organ, and God gave the commandment to protect her chastity. When He created us, God invested His entire heart and soul in our reproductive organs. He created them as the palace of true love, the palace of true life, and the palace of true lineage. The story places the fruit in the context of good and evil in order to tell us that if Eve were to have a relationship with a king, she would give birth to a prince, and if she were to have a relationship with a Mafioso, she would give birth to a villain. The quality of the harvest depends upon the seed that is planted. It was called the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil because it could manifest good or evil.

THE FRUIT OF SEXUAL IMMORALITY

This is how the original sin, the root of all sin, came into existence. This is why it became necessary for human beings to find rebirth. Rebirth is necessary because the problem relates to lineage.

The *Bible* also depicts the archangel symbolically, as a serpent. Why is that? The serpent's tongue splits into two at the end, and so the serpent came to symbolize a person who uses his one mouth to say two completely different things, or a person who will use any means to accomplish his selfish purposes.

A man's reproductive organ is shaped like the head of a poisonous snake. It is always looking for a hole to slither into. A woman's reproductive organ is concave, like the wide-open mouth of a poisonous snake with fangs. Once this snake bites, poison quickly spreads through the body, bringing eternal death. Adultery does not just destroy the individual, but also the family, clan and nation. In the Garden of Eden, Satan defiled the chastity of youth. He is harvesting the fruit of that crime in the wave of immorality that is engulfing the world's youth in this time of the last days, when history reaches its conclusion.

ONE KEY ONLY

If the reproductive organs are this important, to whom do they belong? A wife's reproductive organ belongs to her husband, and a husband's belongs to his wife. In this circumstance, a person's reproductive organ can be unlocked by one key and one key only. Under no circumstances should you make a spare key. This absolutely cannot be permitted. The wrongful use of this key leads to the destruction of the family and the nation.

NEED FOR MESSIAH

The fall of the first human ancestors allowed Satan to have grandchildren and prevented God from having this experience. Because the false parent influenced the act of adultery, there arose the need for a Savior, or Messiah, and for True Parents. Since Adam and Eve's marriage was wrongful in God's eyes, the Messiah was destined to come as the True Parents in order to restore humankind through marriage rightful in God's eyes. The branches of the false olive tree must be cut off and engrafted onto the true olive tree.

This is why Jesus said to Nicodemus that one cannot enter the kingdom of Heaven without first being reborn. Everyone must separate from false love, false life and the false lineage and engraft onto true love, true life and the true lineage in order to be reborn as citizens of the kingdom of Heaven.

It is possible to engraft families and even entire nations all at once. For this cause, the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification, centering on my teaching, has been working to bring the kingdom of Heaven on earth and in Heaven through the ideal of true families. If you doubt this, please pray about it. I discovered this truth through prayer so intense that my very life was at risk. I do not think there is anyone who knows more about the spirit world and God than I do.

Heaven's strategy is to allow itself to be struck first, and then to use this as a condition to take something from the other side. Satan strikes first, but in the end he has to pay reparations. Heaven

teaches us to love even our enemies. In fact, Heaven ultimately requires us to love even Satan. Such love is proof that one is spiritually alive. I visited Mikhail Gorbachev and Kim Il Sung in order to practice God's true love by loving my enemies.

HOLY WEDDINGS

Persecution plays into God's strategy for us to inherit all of Satan's rights to ownership. Individuals and even the entire cosmos opposed me, but this opposition only served as my opportunity to develop further. You must come to know God with certainty. This is why the international holy blessing ceremonies [mass weddings] I have officiated in the name of the True Parents, in the face of opposition, have liberated the God who has lived in sorrow and grief due to the fall of the first human ancestors. These ceremonies transcend racial and national differences and break down the barriers between enemies.

ABSOLUTE PURITY AND FIDELITY

I have always taught that we must maintain absolute purity before marriage and absolute fidelity after the holy blessing of marriage. By doing so, we can build a family that incarnates God's four attributes of absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal love. A man who is created in this way, as the reciprocal partner of true love, represents Heaven, or half the universe, and a woman who is created in the same way represents the earth, the other half. Thus, once a couple is married in the holy blessing, they are never to divorce. Divorce divides parents and children. The tide of divorce, now exceeding fifty percent of marriages, utterly destroys the underlying social discipline of moral law and human ethics.

THE RELATIONSHIP OF MAN AND WOMAN

Ladies and gentlemen, whom do you think God loves more, men or women? The later the creation the more valuable it is, because the Creator invests more of His dedication. Woman was the later creation into which God poured His entire heart and

being. If you notice, women, more than men are born for the sake of others and live for the sake of others. So God's interest and love tend to go more to women. Where does God want to reside? If Adam and Eve had not fallen but had reached completion and become one with each other centering on true love, then God would have dwelled with them. God is the owner of vertical and eternal love and the husband is the owner of horizontal love.

So the seed of life comes from God and is inside the husband. Women are like a garden. They receive the seed and sacrifice their body to provide it nourishment, nurture the fetus with love, and then give birth. The baby receives 99 percent of its bones and flesh from its mother. If you look at how a woman is shaped, you will notice that there is no part of her body that exists for her own sake. Do her well-developed breasts and hips belong to her? No, they exist for the sake of her babies. The womb, which men lack, and the monthly menstrual cycle also exist for the sake of her babies.

To whom do a woman's reproductive organs belong? Do they belong to her husband or to herself? They belong to her husband. In the end, we see that a woman is created to live for her husband and her children. So a husband must attend to his wife as the queen of queens. When his wife is breast feeding and nurturing the baby, the husband must do everything he can for the sake of his wife and baby.

HUSBAND IS SUBJECT

The husband is responsible to rear the children born to him and his wife to become filial children, patriots to the nation, saints for the world and finally divine sons and daughters of God. In this way, husband and wife relate as subject and object partners. In terms of quality, men and women are equal in value. However, in terms of the order of things, the husband, who holds the seed of life within him, is the subject partner. With her husband as absolute subject partner, a wife and the children

should create one heart and one body and offer a true family to God.

ONE WORLD FAMILY

Ladies and gentlemen, with the opening of the new millennium we are moving quickly in the direction of a unified world. We are going beyond "one nation under God" and are moving toward "one universe under God." The unified family of humankind that I prophesied many years ago is becoming a reality.

There are still formidable obstacles on the path, in particular racism and religious strife. These stand against the will of God. God is the first ancestor of humankind. In a manner of speaking, white people are a polar bear race. Starting in the Arctic regions they spread to Scandinavia, Britain, and on across the world. The yellow race lived mainly in Asia practicing agriculture. They had a deep love for the land, so their skin turned brown. Black people are like the black bear of the tropics. The reason their skin is black is that they lived near the equator, where the sun's rays are intense. The different skin colors among the races have no significance in terms of superiority or inferiority. It is simply a matter of our having adapted to different environments.

In fact, we know that the qualitative makeup of our bodies is 99.96% identical. From God's standpoint, skin color has no qualitative significance whatsoever. In fact, the God of love is color-blind. God did not create different races with differing skin colors. In the spirit world, there are no white people or black people. The only color that exists there is the color of true love.

Strife among religious groups is a particularly serious obstacle blocking humanity's effort to bring about world peace. God did not create denominations or religious groups. In fact, religion itself is a result of the fall. Satan fosters denominational schism and religious divisions. In the spirit world, there are no walls between nations,

denominations, or religions. It is a world composed of one huge family.

GLOBAL SALVATION

Jesus' words in John 3:16, "For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life," take us beyond the boundaries of Christianity to reveal the global, ubiquitous, universal nature of salvation.

Traditionally, Satan always works to build barriers between people, and God works to tear these down. With the progress of God's providence, we see in the spirit world that already there are no barriers between the religions centering on the four great founders. Jesus, Buddha, Muhammad and Confucius can go back and forth and communicate freely among themselves.

Because I know these things well, I strongly encouraged all clergy during my recent fifty-state tour to transcend their denomination and unite as one. In fact, 144,000 churches are now leading this movement through the United Federation of Churches, centered on the American Clergy Leadership Conference. In the future, the home church format, centered on the family unit, gradually will become well established.

Ultimately, organized churches, temples and mosques will disappear. In addition, the movement to break down barriers for the sake of world peace, which I explained at the United Nations, is rapidly moving forward. The Inter-religious and International Federation for World Peace is leading the way. Centering the World Association of Non-Governmental Organizations, this movement is spreading from the United Nations headquarters in New York across the continents and oceans of the world.

COMPLETED TESTAMENT AGE

Ladies and gentlemen, this year begins the seventh millennium of biblical history and the third millennium after Jesus. It is the time of completion

for the Completed Testament Age, in which the promises of the Old and New Testaments are fulfilled and the Kingdom of Heaven is brought into reality on earth and in heaven in accordance with the completion of the spirit world.

Father teaches:

> Through adultery, the archangel who became Satan stole the intended bride of Heaven. It is a principle of Heaven that whenever a relationship of love is established (whether false love or true love), ownership becomes established from that point. According to this principle, the human ancestors came under the ownership of Satan. Originally, the mind and body were to become one, centering on God's true love. As it turned out, however, before God's true love had a chance to be perfected within the human mind, the mind became bound by false love from Satan. That enabled Satan to take root in the body. Originally the mind was to exert a positive polarity over the body, but due to the Fall the body formed another positive pole, repelling the original mind and finally coming to dominate it. For that reason, God has been working to project the power of true love into the human mind in order to bring about the absolute subjugation of the body now engulfed in false love. Only when unified through true love can mind and body return to the state where God dwells within them.
>
> The fallen ancestors became false ancestors. This is what created the need for religion and for a Messiah. The tasks of religion and the purpose of the coming of the Messiah are to break down the hell of false love, false life and false lineage, which have given rise to false individuals, false families, false societies, false states and a false world. Religion and the Messiah must guide us back to the original world of true love, true life and true lineage. It is the world of the true parents centering on God. God, too, feels loneliness when He is alone. He

created the heavens and the earth centering on a relational ideal, and his reason was to find true love. Look at the created world. You will see that it is structured in pairs: The mineral world, the plant world and the animal world are all arranged in subject-object relationships as a way of providing ideal models for true love between human beings. True love is the reason why women are born for the sake of men, and men for the sake of women. Solutions to global problems become possible only when our minds and bodies—and when men and women—come to live for the very purpose of becoming one centering upon true love. True love can be found only in a situation where a person exists for the sake of his or her relational complement. Satan's love is centered on the self, whereas God's love is centered on others. These two kinds of love are diametrically opposite. For our fallen bodies to be free from the world of Satan, we need to know absolutely that we have achieved the position of a second, visible God, that the invisible God is our ideal subject of true love and we are in the position of His absolute objects. Our minds and bodies must be united by means of the invisible God and by means of true love, and we must honor and respect our heart and conscience just as we honor and respect God Himself.

We can recover our "original selves" only when we submit absolutely to the commands of our conscience. God is the Parent of parents, the Teacher of teachers, and the Master of masters. This forms the basis for the "Three-Subject Thought" encompassing heaven and earth. It is only through the conscience that these three can form an absolute unity and to fulfill the Three-Subject Thought. Thus, the conscience is more important to us than our parents who gave us birth, more important than any teacher, and more important than the king of any country. Only when elevated to such a position can the conscience become an object of God's love. The conscience needs no education about right and

wrong. We must give it conscience absolute honor and obedience, just as we would honor and obey God.

There is nothing I do that my conscience does not know about; it sees everything. The conscience objects whenever the body schemes to do something wrong. Yet, because the power of fallen love was stronger than the power of the conscience at the time of the fall, the body is able to drag the mind around wherever it chooses. This kind of problem would not exist if the human conscience had achieved perfection and had formed a relationship of true love with God in the Garden of Eden.

Adam's family in the Garden of Eden was to be a family of true love, in accordance with God's ideal. God created them so they would give visible expression to every kind of invisible existence. God and man were in a subject-object relationship centering on true love. He created the two ancestral human beings, Adam and Eve, with the expectation that they would become the substantial perfection of the invisible children, invisible brother and sister, invisible husband and wife, and invisible parents that exists within God's heart. God wanted the true love of children to be perfected in substantial form; he wanted to see His objects of true love perfected as actual brothers and sisters in a family, as actual husband and wife, and then as actual parents.

True love in a father-son relationship is vertical; in a husband-wife relationship it is horizontal; in a brother-sister relationship it is on the front-and-back axis. God wanted such a spherical ideal of true love.

Unification, then, is accomplished at one central point, where there is a convergence of the upper and lower hemispheres on the vertical axis, the right and left hemispheres on the horizontal axis, and the front and back hemispheres on the third axis. This point becomes the focus of centripetal force. The Four

Great Realms of the Heart—that is, the realms of love of the child, brother-sister, husband-and-wife, and parents—reach their perfection when human beings who are centered on God are married and enter their first relationships of love. This is the central place where all perfection bears fruit.

Marriage thus represents the synthesis of the virtues of heaven, earth, and humankind and the perfection of all things vertical and horizontal, left and right, and front and back. Accordingly, Adam and Eve as husband and wife, as God's most beloved substantial objects, were meant to be the second ancestors. From that position they would stand as the second creators and would inherit all of God's feelings. They would feel the joy of God in the positions of children, brother and sister, husband and wife, and parents. Their joy as the second creators would be in the experience of bearing children, by which they could experience the position of the First Creator.

From this perspective, God was the first Creator; Adam and Eve were to be the second creators; and the children of Adam and Eve were to be the third creators. The first, second, and third creators-that is, God, Adam and Eve, and the children of Adam and Eve would have established a formal pattern, a pattern that would have been the fundamental principle that all humanity would have to follow.

From the perspective of Adam and Eve, there would be connection between upper and lower (the parent-child relationship), left and right (the husband-wife relationship), and front and back (the brother-sister relationship). It would have led them to the perfection of their family. It would have been the unified foundation of God, Adam and Eve, and their children. As people approached God, they would accomplish the unification of mind and body and the unification of man and woman, and they would form a stable foundation where peace, freedom,

happiness, and hope would converge to form the basis of fundamental peace.

Through Adam and Eve's having children, God would have enabled Adam and Eve, who were the second creators and who were visible and substantial, to take part in the creation of the third creators.

Through this process, the family becomes the foundation on which the Four Great Realms of Heart can be experienced generation after generation. The family is the base where each form of true love can be brought to perfection. In this way, the family achieves the unity of God and man through love, and it serves as the starting point toward the perfection that enables us to establish true ownership in heaven and earth. This is another way of saying that the family is the origin from which we come to have children, brothers and sisters, husband or wife, and parents.

Only in such families can we find men and women who have accomplished mind-body unity. Only in such families can we find husbands and wives who have achieved the ideal unity between man and woman. Such families are the starting point for ideal parents. Here, too, we can see the creation of a model, centering upon true love, for the perfection of children, brothers and sisters, husband and wife, and parents.

It was God's ideal of creation that this model be expanded not just to the level of country and world but to the entire cosmos. Thus, it is possible for a country to become a family-patterned unit that is larger than the family; the world can become a family-patterned unit that is larger than a country; and the cosmos can become a family-patterned unit larger than the world.

Accordingly; the models for children, brothers and sisters, husbands and wives, and parents—which represent the Four Great Realms of Heart—can be found in the family, in the nation, in the world and in the cosmos. Since a country contains many families and is larger than a family, families should exist for the sake of the country. Since the world contains many countries, countries should exist for the sake of other countries in the world. In similar fashion, the world must exist for the sake of the larger cosmos. Finally, the cosmos must exist for the sake of God, who is the greatest and most central existence.

Thus, when the standard of the perfected Four Great Realms of Heart within the family is projected onto higher and higher levels, the ideal of unity becomes a reality. On that basis, we can enter a cosmos of peace, happiness, and freedom. This is why we need, and need vitally, the unity of mind and body and family harmony centering on man and woman.

God, too, you see, has been growing. He created Adam and Eve as the substantiation of the inner son and daughter, brother and sister, husband and wife, and father and mother, who are all within His invisible heart. With Adam and Eve, God becomes a growing child, a brother and a sister, a husband and a wife, and finally a parent. By experiencing His second self, God establishes children, brothers and sisters, husbands and wives, and parents. He unites them in true love, and that brings to Him boundless joy

As well as to God, humans are designed to give joy to other humans. We are all in the position of someone else's child, sibling, spouse, or parent. All human beings are members of families centering on the Four Great Realms of Heart, which make the family an underpinning to experience the ideal realm of heart. We all have a longing to form families, and the reason is that only those persons

embodying the Four Great Realms of Heart can become ideal human beings, capable of making heartistic oneness with anyone in the Kingdom of Heaven, on earth or in the spiritual realm.

This explains the consummate human desire to achieve mind-body unity and husband-wife unity. Unless we achieve this all-important mind-body unity, we are unqualified in all other aspects and can develop no unity in the family either. We will fall away from our families, from our nation, from the world, from the universe, and from God Himself. Only through an utmost effort to accomplish mind-body unity and family unity can we achieve perfection.

We need to know that we ourselves are God's representatives. We are in the position of a second God. All people, need to be working together to restore the family to a position of goodness and happiness.

We must become aware that the position of husband and wife is the union between a son of God and a daughter of God, the union of a brother and a sister within God's family, and the union of a father and a mother. From the perspective of the Four Great Realms of Heart, the position of husband and wife is the absolute goal of human life, through which we can actually achieve the perfection of our individual selves.

The husband, therefore, stands in the position that enables the wife to receive an ideal son of God, to receive an older brother of heaven, to receive a husband of heaven, and to receive a father of heaven. The corresponding case is true of the wife in relation to her husband. Such husbands and wives bear children in a manner analogous to God's creative act. They feel joy through experiencing their own growth in a substantial manner, through their children.

God's love is absolute. Accordingly, it is a principle of heaven that the relationship of husband and wife cannot be broken. Fallen human society has lost sight of this principle and must be restored so that we may return to the original homeland. When such a restoration is accomplished, the Federation for World Peace will have fulfilled its purpose. At that point, the family-level heaven will become a country-level heaven; the country-level heaven will become a world-level heaven; and the world-level heaven will become the Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world. This will be the point at which, at last, we will have achieved a world of peace.

The position at which a husband and wife marry and love each other with true love is the heavenly palace, which is the origin of the love, life, and lineage of God and humankind. It is the starting point for the ideal of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. When children who are the fruit of such true love achieve perfect unity as husbands and wives, they form families living in attendance to God. They constitute the base upon which peace and all ideals can be established. Then men and women, each representing one side, will perfect

Centering on true love, God perfects humankind as an existence of unlimited value. When that is done, God, too, will see the perfection of true love, the fulfillment of the family ideal, the fulfillment of His own ideal for the creation, and the cradle of eternal, ideal love. From the perspective of Adam and Eve's family God is the first ancestor; Adam and Eve, the second ancestors; and their children, the third ancestors. A royalty centering on God. Adam and Eve's family forms a royalty centering on God. God is in the position of grandparents; Adam and Eve, in the position of parents; and Adam and Eve's offspring, in the position of children. In this manner, the original pattern of three generations within the family comes to be established. According to this

original pattern, the grandparents are in the position of king and queen of the spirit world, representing God and the Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world. They should be honored and respected just as we would respect God.

The parents are in the central position of king and queen of the family, representing the Kingdom of Heaven in the present world. They should be honored and respected just as we would the king and queen of the present world. The children are in the position of princes and princesses within the family. They should be loved as the ones standing to inherit the future Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. In this way, the members of Adam and Eve's family were to form a royalty centering on God and were to live peacefully on earth until they moved into the heavenly, eternal world. Only in that heavenly world can human desire, freedom, aspiration, peace, and happiness attain complete fulfillment. This is the purpose which humankind must fulfill.

As respected representatives from countries around the world, each of you has devoted an important period in your life to tireless efforts for the sake of your individual country and the world as a whole. As a result of your sacrificial efforts, humankind today enjoys conditions much improved over what existed in the past. Still, the ideal world of freedom and peace, which is the fervent desire of all the people of the world, has not yet been achieved. Even at this hour, countless people in many places around the world are dying from hunger and pain as a result of conflicts and struggles among peoples, races, and religions.

I have responded as a religious leader to God's calling. I have lived my life for the purpose of saving humankind from war and sin, and of establishing a world of peace. Out of this calling, I have acquired a conviction and daily philosophy

regarding peace, which is the Headwing Philosophy. In my address to you today, I have expressed a few elements of that conviction. The perspective of Godism and Headwing Philosophy is that world peace will be achieved neither by means of political ideologies oriented toward power nor by any argument based on physical force. Peace will only be accomplished when all men and women share in God's love and truth and put these into practice-starting with the individual and expanding to the family, to the society, to the country, and to the world, thus forming one global, extended family.

From this perspective, the founding purpose of the Federation for World Peace is to promote education and practices related to true peace as a means to realize peace in various societies, nations, and the world. May all of us here perfect the family-level heaven and go on to play major roles in the accomplishment of world peace. (3-27-1994)

****

I know God as a miserable being. Misery is the only word to describe God's situation. No matter how miserable a person may be, compared to God, he is not miserable. No matter what kind of sorrow there may be, it is not comparable to that of God. No matter how bitter one may be, compared to God, he has no problem.

Upon creating Adam and Eve, God desired a garden of goodness. God created them in order to embrace them and love them and rejoice while all things of the universe reciprocated in harmony. Yet when we look at the Bible, where does it say that such a thing ever took place? The heart of God over losing Adam and Eve is the heart of sorrow over losing one's only son and only daughter.

The Mission of the Only Son

It is said that Jesus is the only son. What does the only son refer to? It refers to the only son who can receive God's love and comfort God. Since Adam lost God's love due to the Fall, Jesus was sent to recover it. He is the first son and the only son born of God's love. That is why he is referred to as the only begotten son. What was Jesus supposed to do on the earth? He should have shown us what the love of God is like. He was supposed to show us what life centering on God's love is like, what society centering on God's love is like, and what the world centering on God's love is like.

When Jesus came to the earth, did he clearly show what the love of God is like? He passed away without showing it fully to us. Did he show what the family that God loves is like? Did he show what the people, nation, and the world that God loves are like? He could not.

If Adam and Eve had reached perfection without falling, God would have raised two arms and blessed them, "Oh, my beloved sons and daughters, I want you to inherit My work and govern all the things of the universe and live together with Me eternally." However, this will of God was completely undermined. For this reason God longs for the one day that He can bless two people like Adam and Eve, giving them all of Heaven and earth. This is what you have to understand.

What is salvation? It is to restore what has been lost. This is why while going through the historical course of ups and downs, God held the people up every time they became tired and fell down. After four thousand years passed, God sent Jesus.

By sending him God wanted to unveil the sorrow and unload the suffering of the four thousand years.

Through Jesus God wanted to restore and complete the ideal of the creation of the universe. Jesus was the person sent as the one responsible for that. Jesus was the one sent to complete the ideal of creation.

The Situation of Jesus

Jesus was supposed to walk to the end of the path of suffering while he was on the earth. He had to walk to the end of the path, no matter how difficult it might be. He was born in a barn. No matter how difficult and miserable a person's situation may be, no one was born in a barn. The providence of salvation begins from the lowest point. Jesus was born in this lowest of situations and did not receive love while he was growing up. Christians should understand this clearly. In the thirty years of Jesus' life, there were many sorrowful events. Although Jesus was born into Joseph's family, to Joseph he was a stepson. He was a stepson of no blood relation to him.

The children born between Joseph and Mary looked down upon Jesus. Think about it. Jesus was a stepson. Jesus was a miserable person who was mistreated even by his younger brothers and sisters. He did not have parents he could depend upon emotionally, and he did not have a family where he could find a place of rest. That was not all; yet Jesus grew up under the direct instructions of Heaven. Because Jesus possessed a heart of hope for the future, even in such circumstances, he looked at the people, the nation and the world.

Why didn't Jesus resent the situation he was in? It was because he understood God's heart. He knew that the Father he believed in and worshipped had walked a bitter path for four thousand years. He knew that he had the mission to take responsibility for and restore through indemnity all the mistakes of his ancestors who had repeatedly wronged God. Therefore, he could not be resentful toward those

who opposed him. Because he had the same heart as God, even when he was dying on the cross, he blessed the people who opposed him. Christians today think that Jesus came to die. It may seem simple because they only look at the outcome. However, they do not understand the situation of Jesus up to his death. They do not understand the heart of God as He looked down at the dying Jesus.

Ladies and gentlemen, what kind of people are loved in this world? Do people love those who understand others' situations or those who do not understand them?

To whom did Jesus say, “I came to cast fire upon the earth, so if it is already on fire then what more would I wish? I am to receive baptism, so how distressed would I be until that is realized?” (Luke 12:49- 50) Although he did speak those words, he did not have anyone who understood them. Although he spoke the Gospels, no one understood him. Is it true that people say all you need to do to go the Kingdom of Heaven is to believe in Jesus? Although you may believe in the words, you do not believe in the heart and the embodiment. Looking at history, was there anyone before Jesus who responded to the sorrow of God and comforted Him? Was there anyone who became His beloved son or daughter? Although Jesus appeared on the earth as God’s only begotten son, where did the sons and daughters who should have become the only begotten sons and daughters go? Have you ever thought about that?

The Purpose for Sending Jesus

For what purpose did God bless the original Adam and Eve before the Fall? It was not so that they could eat good things and be happy by themselves. God gave them the blessing on behalf of their descendants, their family, their people and the world. What was the purpose for sending Jesus?

Since he came as the only begotten son of God, it was to find sons and daughters who could become only begotten children to him. Because Jesus struggled to find these sons and daughters, because he was connected to the heart of God who was seeking sons and daughters like Jesus, even though the Jews were to perish, he prayed on the cross, “Father, please forgive their sins.” You have to understand that the motivation of heart came from Heaven.

Believers should not just be descendants of Jesus. They should become his sons and daughters. Where are the sons and daughters to whom Jesus can reveal all things, to whom he can entrust all ideals and whom he can bless, just as God could embrace him? God revealed all that was inside of Him and safely entrusted His works to Jesus. Had such sons and daughters of Jesus appeared on the earth, the Second Advent would have been realized a long time ago. It did not have to take two thousand years. Have you ever seen such sons and daughters? Although there were those who died believing in Jesus' words, there was no one who understood the heart of Jesus, believed in the embodiment of Jesus, and died for him.

It is said in John 3:16, “Since God loves this world so much He sent His only begotten son that whoever believes in him will never perish but will attain eternal life.” It is said that whoever believes in him will receive eternal life, but what are we to believe in? We are to believe in the only begotten son whom God loves like the world, and we are to believe in the world that God loves like the only begotten son. These are what we are supposed to believe in. That is the main theme in all sixty-six books of the Bible. Those who believe in the heart of God who loves the world like the only begotten son and who loves the only begotten son like the world will be saved.

For this reason, faith, hope and love will always be there. But among them it is said that love is the best. Love is what will remain eternally, be victorious eternally, and what will come with the eternal, glorious Lord. No matter how sinful the world may be, those who can love the world as God loves it, as He loves the only begotten son, and love the only begotten son as God loves the world, will receive salvation.

Do not think that by believing in Jesus you will be saved. Such people are thieves. Thieves. When Jesus came to the earth, he considered this world more precious than his own body. Since it is said that God sent His only begotten son because He loved the world so much, Jesus knew that God sent him because He loved the world so much. He could not deny this when he fathomed the heart of God in history. Moreover, since the Jews needed the embodiment of God's love, he knew that he had to stand before the world.

For this reason, Jesus did not live three years of public life to elevate himself. The purpose of the three years was to find disciples. Jesus worked hard to raise up three disciples to be like his sons and daughters and to make the twelve disciples into his children.

You probably understand this through your study of the history of restoration through indemnity. God worked through the three sons lost in Adam's family. He worked through the three sons lost in Noah's family. He was the God of the three generations of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and the three generations of Saul, David and Solomon. This is according to the universal principles of restoration which seek this number three to represent the whole. Therefore, Jesus had to raise up three spiritual sons.

For this reason, even if Jesus were to abandon everything else, these three disciples should not

have separated from him. Although Jesus wanted to bring the three disciples to the Garden of Gethsemane and the hill of Golgotha, they betrayed him in the Garden of Gethsemane. This was the beginning of a sorrowful history.

Everything Would Have Been Realized on Earth

Had the three disciples been willing to die with Jesus, he would not have had to die. Everything would have been realized on the earth. Since the Holy Spirit came and there were spiritual sons and daughters, the father and mother spirit could build a foundation on the earth, at least spiritually, and fulfill the will. Some people may say that we cannot find these words in the Bible.

Why did Jesus who came to save the earth ascend to Heaven, and why did the Holy Spirit, the mother spirit, come down to the earth on his behalf? The earth is the symbol for the mother. Since the Fall took place because of Eve, who was the mother, it is the mother who must cleanse the fallen world of sin. The Holy Spirit and believers were to join together to cross the line of death and rise to the position to serve Jesus in the spirit world.

Although God sent Jesus on the basis of the four-thousand-year history, He could not embrace him and love him fully. Although human beings received the beloved Jesus, they could not embrace him and love him. When Mary Magdalene tried to hold Jesus right after the resurrection, Jesus told her not to touch him. Why did he block her? This is sorrowful. When God was sad, Jesus was sad. Because the situations of Heaven and earth are tied to this, you cannot move forward without unraveling this. How distressed must Heaven have been since He had to resolve the situation?

God is looking for those who can substitute for the lost Adam and Eve. It is said in I Corinthians that Jesus was the last Adam. It is said that Adam is the tree of life. Jesus was the one who came in place of the lost tree of life. Did God ever elevate beloved Jesus on the earth and praise him before the believers? Did He ever boast about him before the family which is looking for the one person God loves? Although two thousand years have passed since then, God could not boast before any people or the world.

You have to understand that God was indignant when He had to witness the death of Jesus whom He had sent and would have to send again. He was more indignant than when He had to chase Adam and Eve out of the Garden of Eden. Although he was sent with the mission of a son, Jesus could not complete the mission. Because in Jesus' time there was not a moment when God and his son were happy together, there had to be a Second Advent. The day will come when God can rejoice with Jesus. This will be the moment He can reveal the grieving heart of the six thousand years and connect the sons and daughters with God and the Lord who is to come.

If Jesus Had Not Died

Ladies and gentlemen, please think about it. If Jesus, the only begotten son of God, had not died after coming to the earth, what would have happened? Since it is said that Jesus is the only begotten son, God would have sent his only begotten daughter. The two-thousand-year history of God after Jesus is the history of seeking a bride. It is the history of seeking a bride. Do you deny that?

Although Jesus came as a true son, since there was no true daughter, God’s will was not fully accomplished. For this reason the two-thousand-

year history is the history of finding a daughter. The fights in the Unification Church will also center on this issue. The Holy Spirit came as God's daughter.

God raised Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden and blessed them not only to love them; it was to love their descendants too. Are there any such descendants? Have there ever been sons and daughters whom Jesus could love? If there had been sons and daughters of whom Jesus could say, “He is my son that I love infinitely and eternally, and he is my direct descendant,” then this world would have already become God’s nation.

As God's son Jesus died on behalf of God's heart of the past, present and future. The Lord who is returning will come to inherit the will and realize it on the earth. When he comes, what should the countless believers on the earth do? Just as Jesus was a son before God, you should become true sons and daughters before the Lord. Don't you think that is how it should be?

The Three Things Which Should Be Resolved

What kind of person is a son of filial piety? To become such a son, one has to attend one's parents well, and one should bear children. No matter how pious someone may be, no matter how great one may be, no matter what one may have given to one's parents, one cannot be a child of filial piety if one cannot have children. Jesus was born as God's historical son of filial piety. Even though he realized the glory of the only begotten son and fulfilled everything, without children he could not stand proud before God. Do you know why Jesus has toiled for two thousand years?

Jesus knew that God worked like a crazy man to find His beloved son, so Jesus spent thirty-some-odd years of his life with the same intense heart

toward the people of the earth. For two thousand years, he worked as if he was a crazy man, as if there were no Satan. You have to understand that Jesus longs for people on the earth to the point of madness. Even if you forget all the words in the Bible, all you need to do is to connect with that heart of Jesus. Jesus has to resolve the most sorrowful, the most indignant and distressful as well as the more joyful things. There are those who want to be a member of the 144,000 chosen people or boast that they are the chosen people, but they have to resolve these three things.

What were the most sorrowful, indignant and joyful events of Jesus' life? Although we know of the times he was indignant and sad, we do not know of any joyful moments.

To become a friend and someone who is loved, one has to understand the other person's sorrow and pain and comfort them. Only then can one become the other person's friend. If you connect to someone's heart and build a relationship of love, then you can move that person as you wish, and you will also do as he wants.

Jesus understood the sorrows and joys that God felt during the four thousand years. Yet Jesus passed away without revealing them. You have to understand the sad heart of Jesus who said, "You cannot believe in the things that I say about this world, so how could you believe in the matters of Heaven if I were to speak about them?"

Since Jesus understood the sorrow, pain and joy of God, we should also understand the sorrow, pain and joy of God. Moreover, since we have an additional two thousand years of history during which God has worked laboriously, we have to understand that as well.

What is God’s sorrow and pain? It is having lost His sons and daughters and the struggle to find them. This is His pain. The moment God can love his sons and daughters with a heart of love which can forget about all sorrows and pains of the past, joy will begin.

Crazy for the Sake of Jesus

For this reason we who believe should become crazy for the sake of Jesus. To what extent? We should become more crazy than the intensity of the love between any couple. Christians are those who have the mind-set, "How could my loyal heart toward you ever change, even if my bones are crushed and my life is lost?" They should do everything for the sake of Jesus, including eating, seeing and hearing. Isn't this true? Many among all those who claim to believe in Jesus only go sight-seeing. Even though there is a deep-seated sadness between parents and children, they go sight-seeing. These people have nothing to do with God. They can never become direct children. Why did God struggle so hard? We have to understand that He continuously carried on the toil of history for the purpose of raising up beloved children.

To Become God's Sons and Daughters

Ladies and gentlemen, do you sincerely want to become God's sons and daughters? Does unquenchable sorrow shake your heart? Does unstoppable sorrow move your minds and bodies? You should feel something similar to this.

You cannot become sons and daughters, no matter what you have to offer in this human world. Only when you never forget to think solely of the Father, only when you fight and run forward in your daily

life do you have a possibility of becoming His sons and daughters.

You have to have this mind-set and be able to shed tears even over a simple branch. You should be able to say that you have finally come to know that all existing things are mourning and longing for the day of liberation. Bowing your head, you should apologize for human ignorance. This is not some abstract concept. When we see a colleague struggling to find the path, we should hold him and cry, "You are my brother."

No matter how sad and lonely you may be, you have to understand that it is nothing compared to what God is experiencing. When you look at nature, you should see traces of God's tears there. When you see water flowing, you should see God's tears. When you are lying down, you should see that where you are lying down is a river of God's tears and has traces of the cross of Golgotha. God is looking for sons and daughters who can cry out, "Father, who had to let the Lord bear the cross on Golgotha!" You should declare, "Although Jesus left grief on the earth when he died, I will not die but will alleviate Your sorrow as a living person."

The six thousand years have been a history of God's efforts to find His beloved sons and daughters. Therefore, we have to become people who feel that we are indebted to God, who has toiled for six thousand years. We have to feel the culmination of God's tears of six thousand years and pay for the sacrifice at Golgotha.

When we then repent of our past sins, pay indemnity for our present sins, and cherish hope for the future, calling upon our Father and going to Him with open arms, the Father can say, “Oh, my son, my daughter.” Forgetting about His dignity, He will shed tears of joy and sorrow. Only those who can achieve this will become sons and daughters of the

Father. Only when you understand that God and Jesus are like that can you become God's sons and daughters.

God can elevate these sons and daughters before Satan's world and all things of the universe, saying that they are the lords and sons and daughters He has been looking for. Only when these sons and daughters appear can God finally forget the labors of the six thousand years. He can entrust Heaven and earth to them and rest in peace.

Just as Jesus cried over this history of sorrow and died, if there is a way that God's will can be accomplished, you should pursue it obediently. You have to remember that you must live such a life of devotion.

Prayer

Father! We are so ashamed. We have learned that this path is an awesome path, a path of inextinguishable sorrow.

Father, You sought these children out not for one day or for several years, but for six thousand years! Please let us understand now how much trouble we have caused for You, how much we have angered You, and how much we have wronged You. Before we entered this relationship, we fought over the things of the world. Please allow us to understand how sinful we are.

Father, Your sons and daughters who are gathered here do not have to know everything. Please let them at least understand the God that we believe in, the Jesus we should attend, and the sons and daughters we must become.

What is our hope? We did not come seeking for well-dressed people or people with power or to

satisfy some desire. We came only because we long for the Father's love and a relationship with Him. Father, if the Father has tears, please let us possess those tears. If the Father is experiencing pain, please let us feel the pain.

Please let us understand that we should not become princes who are seeking joy but princes who bear responsibility for sorrowful and painful history, and let us pay indemnity for it. We have learned that You yearn for sons and daughters who are victorious under such circumstances, sons and daughters worthy of God's pride before Heaven and earth. We have also learned that Your labors for the six thousand years have been to elevate Your beloved sons and daughters.

We pray sincerely that You will allow us to fulfill all the responsibilities entrusted to us and to fully cope with the missions given to us. Please guide us to become the most exemplary children of filial piety, and patriots.

Until the day that the Father of history, the Father of the present era and the Father of the future becomes our Father and mobilizes the entire universe to sing songs of joy, please protect these people.

We pray in the name of the Lord. Amen. (10-11-59)

****

Here is an entire speech Father gave to members on April 24, 1977. He titled the speech "The Road of Religion and the Will of God":

We are members of the religious community; there are many religions in our world, and the Unification Church is one of them. Historically all religions have flourished and declined, along with the cultures which embraced them. To begin with let us

consider why religion is necessary. Man is the only creature in God's creation for which religion is necessary; in addition, there is a subjective role in religion which man himself cannot fulfill. Whatever definition we may give religion, it concerns the relationship between God and men.

Who initiated religion, God or man? Some people are convinced that man initiated religion, while others feel that God was responsible. What is your answer? We must establish the fact that religion would not have been necessary if there had been no fall. It was man who brought the fall to the earth and therefore man who made religion necessary; however, God initiated religion because fallen man needs to be restored in order to recover his original relationship with Him. Religion is a tool to help fulfill that purpose. Thus man necessitated religion but God certainly is the cause of religion; He is the reason that religion exists. The ultimate goal or destination of religion is to create God-centered people. Religion is merely a temporary tool which God is using to recreate man.

Is there anyone who is really fond of religion and who wants to go through the ordeal of religious life? I can imagine what went through your minds this morning. You had to get up one hour earlier than usual because summertime has started, and you probably thought, "Why should I go and listen to Father?" You had to make such an effort just to wake up, and that is an ordeal.

Look at me as an example. I am the founder and leader of the Unification Church, but you and I are in different categories; when people ask you which church you belong to, your answer is, "i belong to the Unification Church." But when they ask me the same question I cannot give the same answer. I am the founder of the most important movement on the earth. Leadership is not a passive position at all, but the most strenuous calling within religion. My

position is on a spiritually elite and distinguished level, but if people ask whether I like my religious life, what do you think I will answer? Are you anxious to know my true answer? It is the same as yours: "Definitely no." Even after these long years of experience in leading the Unification Church, going day and night, still my answer is no. Why?

Secular discipline and religious discipline

The religious way of life is not a normal way of life; it is a very peculiar life and it is not fun. It involves tribulation and hardship, suffering and continuous self-discipline. You are not free to do anything randomly or at your whim, but instead you must follow by putting yourself in the passive position. You certainly cannot be the subject in the Unification Church; instead the truth is always leading you. I am sure you remember how you felt free to do many things before you teamed the Principle, particularly the chapter on the fall of man. Nobody is checking on you now, but your own conscience is watching out for you and disciplining you.

You lead such a disciplined life here in the Unification Church. Think of it, even your coming here early in the morning like this is a discipline. Normal Americans sleep late in the morning after staying out on Saturday night, maybe dancing until 3 o'clock in the morning. You live such a different kind of life. Your actions are not careless or random, but trained and guided. Even your thoughts and speech are being shaped by discipline. You select songs to sing according to a standard. Where you will go and your direction to get there are also defined.

Is this an easy and fun life? What about living impulsively, going anywhere and doing anything you want, is that really the good life? Before you knew the Divine Principle the pleasurable things of

a carnal life seemed natural because it was all you knew. This is the current trend in America, and on the university campuses and in the cities there are all kinds of things going on, with no mental discipline or discipline of the conscience. If no one wanted to date you then you were consumed with agony, and your parents were too. That was the direction of your life before you joined the Unification Church.

In the Unification Church, however, we have a new tradition. Here you are so convinced against dating that you are afraid someone might ask you for a date while you are witnessing to them! When others see that you are so changed it is easy to see why they say the Unification Church brainwashed you. Was that free life really fun or is being a slave to a certain principle more of a free life? If you are a student at a university can you say, "I am a free man so don't anybody bother me. All you professors don't need to bother coming before 12 o'clock because I don't want any classes before noon, and besides that you can't make me take any required subjects." Can life work out that way?

What about your social life and your job? When you are working for some corporation, can you say, "I am a free man and I'm going to come to work any time I want"? Could the nation of America decide not to bother with laws and government? Religion is not the only disciplined way of life; all social life and human behavior has to be disciplined in order for people to survive and create harmony in society.

All these disciplines may seem to be binding forces in human life, but everyone must come under a set of rules and regulations. This has been true throughout history. However, religion is different. Social laws and decrees are inescapable, but religious discipline falls upon you only by your personal choice. No one can force you into a religious way of life. The religious life is such an

extraordinary life that while you are yet here on this earth you are actually relating to two worlds.

Like anybody else you are living as an individual within society, but even so you are dealing with another world. One standard is set by secular society in the earthly world and commands you to behave in a certain way, while the other springs from the spiritual world of religion.

Which of these is more important and valuable? We are together here because we value the religious way of life and the religious mandate as being most important. But there is not tangible proof that the religious life is more important; physically your face looks the same prior to joining the Church and after. So what is the difference? You cannot completely display your new spirit, and even a crazy person laughs harder than you do. What are you really gaining then? Where is a tangible sign that we have gained some valuable truth or light? What can we be proud of as religious people and as members of the Unification Church? Actually, your religious faith or religious order should never become your source of pride.

The guiding light within a religion should be the dispensation or will of God. There is a difference between God's will and man's will, and the reason for your believing in religion lies within God's will. Without experiencing a religious way of life you cannot speak about the will of God and the will of man.

Human history is like running water, continually flowing into the indefinite future. There are no straight lines in history but always patterns of change like waves. There appears to be no direction in history, but actually there is one central thread connecting everything. Human beings are the ones who weave up and down and circle around that line. You may think that mankind is just living at

random, but God is leading history toward a certain purpose and destination.

Do you think that God's will and destination are eternal or changing? God is eternal, unchanging, and absolute; therefore His direction also remains unchanging and eternal. However, man is temporal. Do you think it is easy for that temporal and changing man to parallel his life with the eternal way of God? Usually mankind just cannot hit the bullseye. Religions vary according to their different cultural settings; however, they are generally shooting in the same direction as God even though they never manage to exactly parallel His direction. As we shoot up, cross the line and shoot down, we create the up and down waves of history. Generally we are moving in somewhat the right direction.

God must have a universal religion in mind

History is moving forward in waves with the central direction of history being the will of God. Whenever a superior religion comes into being, it creates a superior cultural sphere which absorbs the existing cultural spheres. The backbone of a culture is its philosophy, which is derived from a religious conviction. This explains why a more enlightened religious way of life has the power to absorb the lesser cultural spheres.

Religious people have to live within the secular world, while at the same time being led into ever deepening spiritual life. Clearly they must necessarily live within a dual discipline. The imbalance between the spiritual way of life and physical, external world is very amazing. The external world is developing at a fast pace, creating a technological society and a quickly changing way of life. In comparison, mankind's spiritual understanding is still dwelling in an underdeveloped country.

In the past, a newly emerging religious philosophy usually created the environment or atmosphere for a new cultural sphere to develop in a particular territory. In the present world, however, scientific advancement requires that men live as one unit. However, while the world seems to be getting smaller and smaller every day, the spiritual capacity of men still remains in a primitive era, with no means for exercising dominion over the quickly changing world of modern science.

In the ancient days religious ideology did have an influencing effect on the overall affairs of men, and that is the way it should be. But the contemporary world does not respect religious influence within its world affairs. The world desperately needs a way of life which can embrace all men, but in actuality people's life styles are largely dictated by selfishness. This contradiction is particularly felt by the young, who are yet very idealistic.

Even religious life is becoming increasingly external, remaining enslaved by certain formalities, and following thousand-year-old traditions. Tradition has become a shackle, and religions have no way to advance; their former disciplines or traditions are too small to embrace the world. This is why young people are so rebellious in their search for a more open atmosphere to replace rigid tradition. Because of this situation God is becoming more and more hazy in people's lives. In contrast with the past, many people today are simply not convinced that God even exists. Since science has not yet proven God's existence, modern people are becoming more and more confused about Him. Religion is failing in this modern day.

There are extreme contradictions between the religious world and the secular world. If God were developing and approving only the secular world then the religious impulse would perish because it would not be needed by God. However, if God were

to value and guide man's religious life instead, then this secular world would be doomed. Which one is God's choice? Which life should we choose?

When you think about it, has the world gotten where it is by its own choice, or has it become like this as a result of outside influence? Indirectly, it seems as if God has permitted the world to freely run its own course. God is almighty, and He has allowed this world situation to come about; indirectly God is responsible. On the other hand, the realm of religion is also God's responsibility, but God has not yet revealed to the world a religion which is universal enough to enable us to cope effectively with world problems. Then who can be responsible for all this disharmony?

When we see the imbalance and contradiction between the secular world and religious world, we can only conclude that if God is going to take responsibility for the world that the time has come for Him to undertake some extraordinary, revolutionary action to completely change the format of religion. He must have a plan to reveal a more comprehensive ideology which can influence the present world and change it into the ideal that He has been hoping to see established.

God must have some universal religion in His mind. Because the world is ready, this is about the time that God will release such a religion to mankind. Without this religion the imbalance between the spiritual and physical worlds cannot continue much longer. Either the conflict must be resolved or they will both cease to exist. God must have a solution for both the religious and secular worlds together since He is responsible for them both. Which course shall we take? We have to change either the world or religion. Certainly religions today must change through the emergence of a new, universal religion which can take a subjective role in the secular world.

The first problem facing this religious revolution is the resolution of denominationalism. Would God have wanted all religious people to be united by one religion? The dynamic, magnetic force of a new religious ideology would have the power to engross the attention of young people everywhere, particularly those who could not fulfill their vision and hope in the established religions. Why would that religion have such an impact? Young people are very sensitive to the future, having a vision that makes them more receptive to new and higher ideals; when they sense that there is some group pursuing these ideals then they want to join. The future of the world belongs to the young, while the present world belongs to their parents and the past to their grandparents.

How can we recognize the new universal religion?

The three generations of the past, present, and future-grandparents, parents, and children-must become united. If the grandparents are moving east while the parents are moving west and the children south, can we say that they are in harmony? Since history is always moving into the future, who should pioneer the new history and stand at the forefront of the march? If a new religious movement emerges which has young people striving toward a vision of the unity of mankind and global harmony, then it can be recognized as being in the center of God's will. At the same time, however, the older generations may be trying to dissuade their young people from participating, simply because they themselves cannot move as fast. The older people will insist, "No, no, let's stay here; don't move forward. This life is good enough and we should be content." Should you obey them?

The universal goal of mankind is world brotherhood. A new religious movement with that kind of vision should come into being to mobilize the idealistic passions of young people and to begin

a universal march toward that vision. No one can restrain such religious people because they march in step with the forces of history and the vision of God. Each day that march will gather strength and momentum because it is the revolution that God Himself is inciting. Who in the world can stop it?

Until they find that revolution, the young people-American young people are a good example-will be restless in their search for that vision. But without having any principles to anchor themselves to God, they will just sporadically revolt against their society, trying to find their happiness in some random way that they call "freedom." American young people will experiment with anything in their attempts to find some resolution of their desires. Today they have come to a dead end in their search. Now they are in miserable shape, like a weary bird with drooping wings. Although they are searching for world brotherhood they have attempted to establish it outside of any religious standard, often believing that carnal pleasure is part of true happiness.

However, a new movement of young people working for world brotherhood must come into being, but this time following a path laid out by religion and the way of God's will. This movement of young people will be entirely different from the secular, fun-seeking movements that are all around, yet still working toward the same ideal for the world. That very movement has now come into being and it is you, the Unification Church. In seeking solutions in a secular way, the young have hit a stone wall; they completely gave up and had to retreat. But in following a spiritual or religious way we can penetrate any number of stone walls. Do you have that kind of spiritual force? We have many, many stone walls that we must spiritually penetrate. The first is often what we call the parents stone wall and even the grandparents stone wall. After going through those we will encounter the super stone

walls of nations and governments. Can you even penetrate those?

Is it easier to overcome an obstacle by penetrating it or by flying over it? God knows that secret; this is the time of flying. Any religious movement that will give young people the energy, conviction, and power to fly over any secular difficulty must be the universal religion that will eventually save the world. Is there such a religion? Are you saying yes because you are Unification Church members? Who do you expect to recognize you? Of course God is the first to recognize you, but who is next? Certainly as members of the Unification Church you, too, should recognize the value of what you have. God is hoping to have this religious movement take off and leap over all the difficulties of the secular world that surround us. We must also think in the same way. Instead of digging down into foxholes, we must want to jump up and leap forward. Our thinking should parallel the thinking of God.

In trying to leap forward, do you feel some thrill or even some fear of danger? As you are jumping you may suddenly look down to see the deep valley far below you, and worry, "If I should fall into that valley I will be smashed! " That creates such a thrill of adventure! Imagine that a rescue plane is flying over the top of the mountain where you are stranded in order to drop a rope for you to grab onto and be pulled to safety. The opportunity for rescue is passing over you, and at a precise moment you must jump and seize the rope. If you jump at the right time but you miss the rope then you will plunge to your death in the valley! That precise moment becomes a life-and death opportunity. Only the person who has courage, guts and an adventurous mind can jump and reach out; other people may be too timid to even make an attempt. Are you that courageous?

Suppose each of you were a Minute Man guided missile. When the commander-in-chief pushes the right button you will be launched; can you fly fearlessly all the way to Moscow? If you truly have that spirit then this is going to be a formidable organization. Already we are formidable; however, you will see in the future that this is going to be an absolutely impossible organization to deal with.

How is the Unification Church different? We know the will of God and we know God's providence clearly. Compared to any other religion in history and throughout the world today we know the will of God and God Himself more precisely than anyone. That is the special value of the Unification Church. As individuals you may not know God's specific plan, but at least you clearly know one thing: God is determined to save the world.

What is the desire of mankind? Are the goals of a secular man and a religious man different or the same? The secular world follows goals that lead in many different directions. Let such people go in any direction they like; eventually they will hit a wall and stagger around to start looking for a religious cause to follow. They will have no other choice.

By now young people have tried everything, including streaking, but I have heard that increasingly they are searching for spiritual values. There is absolutely no other way that they can find what they want. Furthermore, the growing interest in religion is reflected in the rising enrollment in church-run schools. This is one indication that the people who could not find secular solutions are coming all the way back to seek out a religious life. Long ago I predicted that this would happen, and that the year 1976 would be the turning point in American history. From now on the search for spiritual rather than material solutions for this nation's problems will intensify.

You sometimes enjoy watching the full moon rise at night. Is it more moving to see the moon rise over the open plains or over a mountain? Which is more artistic? We in the Unification Church are like the moon rising from way down in the valley. We climb up and up and finally go over the mountain. Even though we are now in the valley do you still believe that we are going to make it over the mountain? Often we are so busy doing some little thing that we do not even see the mountain or the sky. Does your foot or your hip go up first when you jump over the hill? God is almighty; there is nothing He cannot do. When you take off in the normal position your head is up and legs are down, but why not have your head down and your legs up? It does not matter much because we can still jump over the hill.

Our church is beginning its take-off

The Unification Church itself is going to make the jump, not just individuals within the church. Take the San Francisco court case as an example. We are well aware of the hardships and difficulties, but in the meantime our whole church is beginning its take-off, even while you are unaware. Do you feel that the whole church is beginning to rise over the mountain? Do you think I am just trying to tell you something nice because you came so early, or am I simply telling you what is really going on in the world at large? I have a clear sensitivity by which to evaluate events in the world.

One indicator of public opinion is the mail that is sent to me; it is like the pulse of the nation. You have no idea of the interest and attention that was given to the Unification Church after the San Francisco court case. Suddenly many people became sympathetic to our cause and decided, “I’m not a member of Reverend Moon’s group, but I can’t find anything wrong with him.” Perhaps they have also come to a decisive conclusion that there is

no one else in the world who can really tame the young people of America and discipline them in a moral, God-centered way. Americans have witnessed the futile efforts of the government and religious leaders to guide young people, and they are beginning to recognize that all these court cases are largely motivated by sheer jealousy. Righteous America is now beginning to stand up for me.

Furthermore, the time is coming when people will begin to admire my courage. Everybody thinks that by this time I must be completely tired and shriveled-looking like a shrimp. But on the contrary I am more courageous and looking forward to even greater accomplishments. Every day I am marching forward more passionately, becoming busier and more respected. People say, "Well, we must give this man credit." They might have thought that I would look bent-over like a shrimp, but this shrimp has wings, and instead of sagging down I am flying upward.

If God is alive and concerned with religion, He must either be giving His concentrated attention to the Unification Church or else He does not really exist. Nowadays the religions of the world are becoming powerless. We are in the minority, no question about it, but even though we are such a small group we are a fearless group, and furthermore, we are intensely anticipating the greatest of all accomplishments: that of liberating even the communists who have already taken over two thirds of the world's population.

This is the age of confrontations and the faster you go, the greater a winner you should be. If you slow down and lose momentum then you will be shattered, but when you move like a bullet you will smash through your opponents. In a head-on collision the fastest car will receive less damage, while the slower-moving car is more vulnerable to

being smashed. A bullet is made out of lead, but because of its speed it can even penetrate metal.

We are the church with the greatest speed; when you move faster and faster, all you have to do is stretch out your two arms and you will begin to fly. Everyone wants to fly, and here on earth man has studied all the creatures that fly and created many devices to carry himself through the air. Wouldn't God want to have a religion that could enable people to fly? Among the many religions of the world, which religion would God choose as the one that should fly? Can you fly?

When your mobilization order is issued you must prepare to take off, running faster and faster and spreading out your arms, heading toward the goal. But why don't you lift up? If you were airborne right now and in the process of flying over the mountain, would you be dozing or would you be 100% alert to see what is happening on the ground? Do you want to fly over the mountain without even realizing it, or do you want to fully enjoy the excitement? You are actually more susceptible to letting go of the rope when your eyes are wide open with excitement; then you might crash down into the valley.

When you become serious you will just focus your energy like a fist; since you know what is going on down there you don't even have to worry about making a mistake in your excitement because you are very serious. At first you will be serious because you are aware of what is going on, but after you are over the mountain you can release your anxiety and rejoice. When have you had that kind of serious moment? Saying that you are serious at this moment means that you have not been serious in the past; you have just revealed yourselves! You are just listening and trying to feel serious. But have you ever really been serious, with your heart and mind and deeds all synchronized?

Our religion is the only one which has both extremes, being ultra-conservative in moral discipline, for example, but at the same time so liberated in idealism that we can embrace the rest of the world and reach out to the stars and the sun. In both extremes, the goal we are striving for is absolutely clear. We are like machine gunners who clearly know where the bullseye is and can always aim in the right direction. This is evidenced by your prayers and also by your actions; for the sake of the world you are trying to go beyond yourself and by following that concept you are shaping your new way of life. In that way you can embrace the rest of the world.

Everything naturally comes in pairs

Two Chinese characters are used to write "God's will." One character is a combination of the character meaning "the beam in a house," and a character meaning "word"; it is literally translated, "fundamental teaching." The top portion of the other character means "manifestation," or "building," while the other section means "heart" or "mind." Altogether the letters translate "the fundamental teaching for the construction or manifestation of the mind and heart."

The word meaning "Bible" is also written in two Chinese characters. The first means "divine," or "holy." When you analyze this one character, it depicts "ear," "mouth," and "king." Holiness is the king of ear and mouth. The other character means "writing"; altogether they mean "holy writing." "Heaven" also combines two Chinese characters; one character means "two," and the other means "person." Two persons make up heaven.

"Grace" or "mercy" are important words in the Bible, indicating a reciprocal relationship between two identical sides. In other words, two are involved in mercy, not just one. Here, one character means

"righteousness," while the other is "sheep" and ,"self." In other words, when you put yourself in the position of a sheep you will create righteousness. This is comparable to Jesus' teaching of the selfless giving of oneself as a sacrifice; that is righteousness. Two persons create virtue, with one virtue originating on earth and the other in heaven. In the heavenly way of speaking, two people make heaven, while on earth virtue is manifested by putting oneself in the position of a sheep. All these are very symbolically written, and very removed from the Western way of thinking about these concepts. This may be difficult for you to understand, but there is very profound meaning behind them.

Everything naturally comes in pairs, in order to create action and result. Can you laugh without moving one side of your mouth? Suppose you keep your lower lip still; can you laugh with just your upper lip? You need to keep both eyes open in order to capture one image. This unified action by a pair creates holy action because that is God's way.

Therefore, everything that God initiated can be holy and good. When I prayed at holy ground on my way here I heard the beautiful birds singing. Do the birds sing early in the morning because they have 5 o'clock pledge service too? Are they singing because they are hungry and miserable? They sing because they are looking for their mate.

God chooses those who live their conviction

Today's topic concerns the road or way of religion. What is our road? Our way is one of leaping and jumping over any kind of hardship or persecution. Do you have the kind of attitude that allows you to think, "This is another hurdle to challenge and I welcome it." God will lose interest in any religion that does not have the capacity to leap over obstacles.

Noah, for example, was a man of conviction who could be adventurous, and God was with him because Noah's conviction made impossible things possible. Being with Noah, God felt a tremendous elation because his conviction was stronger than any of those negative forces that persecuted and ridiculed him. Nobody could stop Noah. His wife and his children tried to nag him, but he just answered, "All right, if you feel that way then stay behind and let me go." Are you like Noah? Suppose Mother tried to oppose my work and keep me home. Should I say, "You are my loving wife and I must be 100% obedient to you"?

God's promise and vision of tomorrow is greater than anything you can think of, including your own family. The central persons or future hosts of the world will be the men of conviction who can leap and be adventurous. Because they are the ones who can become God's champions, God is going to work with them, and when God is with them they will automatically be the masters of tomorrow's world. Whatever persecution and ridicule we may encounter, we will be like Noah; when we have a vision of tomorrow then nobody can stop us. If we are not affected by those headwinds then God will indeed work with us and the future will indeed be delivered into our hands.

Suppose only black people are gathered together to do this; who will the future belong to in that case? If only black people come to follow me then indeed the future would rest in their hands. If black people were given God's blessing and power and authority, should they then say, "You white people persecuted us so much in the past that this is the time for us to take revenge by dominating you." If that is their attitude then those people have no way of deserving God's blessing in the first place. If the black people are the ones who qualify to receive the blessing of God they must go to share that blessing with the white people, persisting even if they are rejected and

misunderstood. If any black members are following our way of life because some day they want to have the power to take revenge on white people then they are the enemies of mankind, and are not worthy to stay here.

In America the most famous champions in sports are primarily black people. Why is that? Blacks have definitely been oppressed, feeling deep down inside that they want some way to excel over whites. In that sense white people have given some stimulation to black people because after receiving so much oppression black people want to receive respect. Great champions could not be born among black people without that kind of stimulus.

That same psychology works in the Unification Church. All my life I have been the underdog, and always I felt, "Someday I want to show the world how fight I am, and how powerful and how needed we are." With this zeal deep in my heart, I always have a hidden anger and wrath that spurs me on to higher excellence. The important thing to know is that when you utilize this stimulant constructively you can be a winner. God does not particularly oppose that kind of psychological behavior, but rather uses it. However, God watches very carefully for any feeling of revenge because He hates that attitude. But if you use this negative influence in a constructive way to stimulate yourself, then you can not only excel yourself, but in trying to reach out and embrace your opponents you will show them that the greatest victory comes by love. That is God's way.

Why do you think God feels that way? Imagine that we jump over the hill; are we going to land in a desert or a populated area? Among secular people or heavenly people? Your reason for landing on the other side of the hill is to save those people and influence them to come into heaven. You must work with them, but if you have a hardened feeling of

revenge then God cannot bless you because you will only misuse His blessing. Only those who can embrace others and give unselfish love will receive the blessing because they will benefit so many other people. Black people in particular must be careful and overcome any feelings of revenge. Unification Church members in general should be careful. We can become stimulated by negativity, but we must not become hateful. We do the work of God, and we must do as God does. If ever we resist God's way then we are striking God instead of Satan.

Abraham was a man of conviction who plunged into adventures. When Abraham became a wanderer, he was in miserable shape, traveling aimlessly with his family in the wilderness. Yet under those circumstances God gave him this blessing: "Number the stars, if you are able to number them. So shall your descendants be." Only a crazy person or a man of adventure could accept that blessing and uphold his faith. Abraham suffered much, almost losing his wife and all his possessions and relatives to the Pharaoh in Egypt, yet he never, never gave up his faith in the blessings of God. Nothing could change his conviction and he fully lived that conviction, ultimately receiving his promised blessing from God. Anyone who just sits and waits for God to take care of everything will never encounter the blessing of God.

There are three types of religious people in this world. One type are the men of faith who are sitting idle. The second are the men of faith who feel that they should at least set some condition by doing something to help God. The third type are the men of faith who want to translate their conviction 1000% into action by giving up their lives. Which ones do you think God will side with? Do you just want to set some condition of indemnity to jump over the mountain, or do you really want to pay the full amount and release yourself completely? If you

say, “I want to pay the full indemnity,” then your attitude becomes absolute; that is most bold.

In using a balance scale you have an object to be weighed plus the weights to measure with. Which one would you prefer to be? These weights are needed to determine the value of the object, but once that is done the weights have no intrinsic value. Only God is dealing directly with Satan, and strictly speaking you actually have to pay only a relatively small condition to Satan. God only uses your indemnity on a conditional basis, like the weights, in dealing with Satan. However, in actuality would you want to be proud of yourself and pay your indemnity in full, or would you want to be forgiven by making just a small condition of indemnity? If you have the capability, which one would you prefer?

Why does God only require conditional indemnity? You might decide, “Those poor people are so weak and vulnerable that they cannot pay their full amount. They are the reason God only requires a small condition, but that is not for me. I’m going to pay 100%.” Do you have that kind of willingness? Not too many I see. Without courage you will not accomplish such a thing.

Do you think I am a man of courage and adventure? If someone else is sitting in a chair yet claims he has greater conviction than 1, will God bless him? God is looking not only for conviction but for actual deeds. Creation can never happen when a man is just sitting idle. We can know that God is a God of action by observing those historical persons like Noah, Abraham and Jacob.

Did Jacob show God a small condition and then demand his blessing, or did he work to cram every inch of his blessing? Conviction must be followed by action and deed. Jacob went to the wilderness of Haran to his uncle Laban and there he suffered 21

years, not forgetting his mission for even one second of the day. Moses also upheld his faith, and translated that conviction into action, even revolting against the Pharaoh. Why did God choose Moses? He had many deficiencies, but God saw Moses' true qualifications: he was a man of conviction, a man of boldness and a man of action. The 40 years of wandering in the wilderness could not shake Moses, even though his people rebelled against him. This was the quality God was looking for when He picked Moses as a leader.

In contrast, John the Baptist was a man of failure in dispensational history. He had faith and conviction that he should prepare the people for the imminent coming of the Messiah, and for thirty years in the wilderness he lived an ascetic life, eating locusts and wild honey. Yet after making that sacrificial condition he failed in action. Even though he testified to Jesus as the son of God he failed to follow him; he felt that his fame and reputation were at stake, and that he just could not follow a carpenter from Nazareth.

I know that way of life, and I know that no matter how much faith you profess or how much conviction you might have, nothing will happen unless faith and conviction are translated into action. I am thinking big, preaching world salvation and the liberation of mankind and God. My words and deeds must match, and unless I am capable of adventure and risking my life I have not lived my faith. I know that saving the nation and the world is not an easy task, and I have been training and disciplining not only myself but all my followers, mobilizing them toward such a goal in the way that people will see that our words and actions match.

Living your conviction means getting burned and bruised

What can stop a car which is speeding 100 miles per hour down a superhighway? What about lions and tigers, or an Executive Order from the President? Only an internal mechanism can stop the car, the contact of brake with wheel. This world is crumbling and there is actually no mountain which can stop this car, but I am like a small brake lining, the special piece which can squeeze the wheel and stop this tumbling world.

If America is that car rushing down the incline, then when you apply the brake do you think sparks will fly and the wheels will heat up, even becoming red hot? You are like the small piece of metal that slows a wheel, so do you expect to get some scars and bruises and burns? Is that natural or unnatural? Those who want to become such a contact piece, even though they may get burned and bruised, raise your hands. Your answer is absolutely great, and means that you want to be tested in actual battle.

The Unification Church indeed follows a religious way of life. God will welcome your strong conviction. If I am only feeling my conviction but sitting idle and waiting for God to move, then God will say, "My son, I need somebody else." But in reality I am moving. In less than a few years I have stirred up all of America; I have visited every corner of this land, and have become the center of controversy and attention in a good way. All these are signs that I am a man of action and not a man sitting idle. In order to reach the moon do you have to leap forward or do you have to dig into the ground? If I am the moon then you are the astronauts on Apollo 11, and you must strive harder than Neil Armstrong. "Armstrong" means arm-strong, not word-strong. That is the kind of man who will reach the moon.

Maybe some of you men have that kind of appetite and ambition, but how about you women; are you equally courageous? Are you going to be passive followers behind the men? You say no, but I cannot believe it because all the pioneers and revolutionaries who really changed the shape of history were men. In history men have inherited the position of power and authority to lead the world, having the character of courage and boldness. Women are very good spectators, but usually women are nagging and trying to restrain the men instead of encouraging them to go forward. Are you different?

Actually, in the Unification Church there is convincing evidence that the women are ahead of you men. Are you listening very carefully? The record shows that in our two major activities of fund raising and witnessing the women have consistently been the winners. Why are you brothers so silent? You are defeated in statistics and actual results, but I will take your word for it if you say, "Father, we admit that we have been defeated by the women, but from today on it will be different. You wait and see."

So far I have been explaining the way of religion. There are different kinds of faith. Most Christians have a faith in God and Jesus, and they want to go to heaven, but they are each thinking, "I want to go to heaven, and have God give me my secure little cubbyhole upstairs." But in contrast, our faith in God shapes our way of life and we pledge, "We will be Your representatives, and we want to build Your Kingdom of Heaven so that all mankind can live there." I have thought about this and after testing out this kind of faith I know that it is 100% correct. I am absolutely sure that if this conviction is wrong and God cannot cooperate with us then God can never in eternity achieve His will.

I have spent the last couple of days at Barrytown [New York] with the seminarians. To symbolically show them how they can become victorious I taught them to knit a huge fishing net to catch thousands of carp at one time. I worked all through Friday until 6 a.m., then all day yesterday, only coming back here at 1 a.m. The seminarians might have thought that I am only an excellent teacher and lecturer, but all of a sudden they realized that I am also a fisherman who knows everything—how to make a net and how to catch fish by the hundreds.

With my two hands I have created factories and farms. I know how to fish and mine and do every kind of labor there is, as well as leading spiritual work. I can translate that same spirit into action in every phase of human life, and I am never a stranger anywhere; when I go to a farming community I can immediately tune into it.

What kind of leader do you want? One who sits on a chair and only speaks to you to make you work hard, or someone who can act as well as speak? One record-breaking miracle that I have achieved is that these fragile women are working harder than men and bringing more results. A woman's nature is not oriented toward work, actually. So far in history a woman's role has been to make herself into a beautiful ornament, who only participates at times of relaxation or enjoyment.

I have analyzed why women wear such awkward high heels. Men are confident enough without high heels, but women are always lagging behind; high heels were invented to tilt you forward so you could catch up. Finally the purpose of high heels has been achieved in the Unification Church, meaning that you women have caught up with the men. America is truly a women's kingdom, and by wearing high heels they have caught up with men. There is a very principled meaning in high heels; most women wear high heels but only wander and do nothing.

However, when you sisters wear high heels then you really move fast. We are a group with a high heel spirit, and we run faster and push ourselves forward.

You men have been failing at doing men's jobs, which is why the women have outshone you. However, if we did not wear any shoes but just went barefoot then I know for sure that men would win. Men are rugged and ready to go barefoot, but women have been trained to wear sensitive nylons and they are not prepared to go without shoes. In that area men can win.

Then how can you women combat that? In one thing you women have an absolute privilege—In bearing children. Some women complain about how painful God made childbirth, but do you realize what a privilege God has given you? Because of that unique capability you can be treated with respect by men and listened to. If you had no ability to bear children then you would be no good to your husband, but because you can give a son or daughter to him then he will listen to your every desire. You have not thought of it in that way. You thought God was punishing women by giving them such pain, but instead that establishes your right to be protected. Have you heard of any war in which women went out to fight and die by the tens of thousands? Women have always stayed behind and just waited for the men to come home again.

We have come to the conclusion that unless you have conviction accompanied by courage and boldness you will not fulfill the will of God. The man without those qualities cannot be part of God's dispensation, but if for God's purpose men can become bold and courageous then they shall play the central role in God's history, not only for the present, but all throughout the ages. Because God is eternal there is no exception to this in either the past, present, or future.

There is now a revolutionary religious teaching which is inspiring young people to unprecedented boldness and courage, mobilizing them toward the highest ideal of world brotherhood. If such a religion is working in this world, then indeed it must become the hope for the future and God must be working with that group.

We will see how brave you are. The bolder, more courageous, and more adventurous you are, the greater will be the blessing which you can receive from God. The blessing will not come to you; you must go to win it. Can you make a pledge, "I may not have been perfect yesterday, but from this moment on, Father, I will be a different person. I will be bolder, braver, and more courageous than ever and I will risk my life for my conviction." Those who can pledge that, raise your hands please.

Will you welcome rain and hurricanes when you go out to sell newspapers? That bad weather can challenge you to sell more papers than in good weather. Do you welcome it? Your voices are dying! Some people look like they are thinking, "Father, you spoke three hours and you inspired me but I cannot trust how long my actions will last. I cannot promise you that." Shall we make our newspaper surpass the New York Times? Shall we be oppressed by the existing churches, or shall we transcend their prosperity?

Have you heard about the great campaign we are waging through the Unification Seminary? I feel ecstatic joy because certain things which I have planned are happening precisely according to my idea; the things that nobody could imagine are now literally unfolding. You do not know what is going on in the rest of the world. You are only aware of selling newspapers every day, but while you are doing that in New York City there are many spiritual atomic bombs exploding here and there. Do not be discouraged.

All the people who came out of Egypt were destroyed because they fell into faithlessness, yet God raised up Joshua and Caleb because they were men of boldness and courage. Unless you become bold and courageous and strong you cannot surpass them. God knows that better than anyone else.

Today the new summer is beginning, and I am now giving you one most clear-cut instruction: be bold and strong, because that is the way you can receive God's blessing. Can you do it? Raise your hands and pledge to God that you will be bold and strong! Thank you. Let us pray. (4-24-1977)

****

As a result of the Fall, the first human ancestors could not wed each other with God's blessing. They fell while they were still growing up, by disobeying God and committing adultery with Satan. Satan became an adulterer, and our problem lies in the fact that they inherited Satan's blood lineage.

When the first love is corrupted, we destroy the palace of love, the palace of life, the palace of lineage and everything that was to have blossomed forth. This is the dreadful reality of the Fall. Through it we lost the Kingdom of God in Heaven and on Earth. Heaven and Earth turned into Hell. Throughout history, man's love organ has symbolized the worst of slander and curses, because it destroyed Heaven and Earth. God's ideal of love was to have settled perfectly beginning at the place of first love, through the marriage of the man's love organ and the woman's love organ. That point, centering on man-woman love, establishes the perfected object partner of God. That point is the nucleus of the universe. If the axis connecting God with the love organs of man and woman is broken, the entire universe shatters.

The foundation for peace and the Kingdom of God in Heaven and on Earth take root in love. Through the union the love organs, man and woman are blended completely. This love relationship produces the fruit of good or of evil. We must comprehend the infinite value of our love organs. The way of Heaven teaches us that whether we are a man or a woman, we must never misuse them.

Incited by Satan's false love, Adam and Eve committed adultery and became a false couple. As false parents they formed a false family and transmitted sin to their children. The providence of salvation is a providence of restoration. We have to root out that very mistake of misusing love and restore true love. Through God's true love, the restored Adam should take the true parents' position and engraft humankind to himself. A man and woman perfected through true love shall establish a true family with God's blessing.

Man is to build an ideal family and perfect his spirit self while living on Earth. We then enter Heaven in the spirit world. Our original hometown is the Kingdom of God in Heaven, where our spirit lives in God's love for eternity. The Fall closed our spiritual senses. This is why we do not know about our spirit self or about Heaven in the spirit world. Unlike animals, we possess a spirit self. We should know about the world of Heaven that we inevitably will enter. The family is the school, the training center in which we can perfect our heart. Family life guides us to master ourselves for the sake of sharing love with others. Thus, the family is the base upon which we can build the Kingdom of God. The Kingdom of Heaven is where we are intoxicated in the service of God as our King and Master. We can enter there, but only as families.

The ultimate ideal of all living beings is to become the object partner of God's true love and live with

God. To ascend to a higher place in Heaven, live as God lives, investing your life for the sake of others

Although God is the King of knowledge, the King of power and the King of wealth, He does not ask us to bring Him those things. God is waiting for the one who lives for the sake others in the spirit of true love here on Earth!

God was never in the position to exercise His power as the Lord of the universe. God never had the chance to display His authority as the Creator of all things. Meanwhile, fallen people often boast of themselves for nothing. Even though He is the owner of all that has breath, God was never able to reveal His pride. Being the author of the principles that guide the universe, how can God move freely in the fallen world, the world of non-principle? Humankind, living with all degrees of distrust and disobedience, even ignore God and mock God as non-existent and dead. God has endured this long history in a heart of agony. Truly, His waiting has seemed endless.

I have done my absolute best to fulfill the mission of True Parents. I paid no attention whatsoever to my welfare or status. To build a church was not even my goal. I had but one goal: to walk all the way to liberate God's heart from pain and help Him realize His wish. In other words, I have invested myself totally to set God free from agony, to establish Him as the Lord of the universe, and to set the foundation for humankind to serve Him as the King of the cosmos.

Do you think that this task is easy? I had to make Satan surrender both in Heaven and on Earth. I had to tear down all the walls and even bring Hell to an end. We cannot liberate God's heart through true love unless we prepare all people on Earth and in the spirit world to receive God's blessing in freedom. Satan has to recognize this work officially,

and it has to accord with the law of the universe. Satan has enjoyed his ruling power over nations in this world. Therefore, we are challenged to set conditions through victories that transcend nations and the world itself.

This is a day to rejoice. I have set these conditions and on the 13th day of January this year, I held the coronation ceremony for the Kingship of God in Korea. That was the greatest day of celebration in all human history. We liberated God's heart for the first time. He could start His new history based on the might and power of true love. This is the dawn of the new age, in which humankind in Heaven and on Earth can attend the liberated God in gratitude. From now we will easily witness the living God and often notice helping hands from the spirit world.

I urge you to study about the spirit world with greater eagerness and to receive the God-centered blessing so that you can build a true family. I also encourage you to prepare for your eternal life through living unselfishly. The time has come that people who work hard will feel the hand of Heavenly fortune, with which the limited power of human beings cannot compare. Those who live the life of a filial child, a patriot, a saint and a divine son or daughter before the living God, with a humble and self-effacing attitude, are the most fortunate. At the advent of the era of God's Kingship, I pray that you will promote God's Kingship. May we work in partnership to build the world of heart and culture transcending nations. (1-29-2001)

****

Scanning the vast expanse of the history of God's providence, we come to realize that it took not just 6,000 years, but tens of thousands and even millions of years, in order to restore a single individual in the sinless likeness of the original person, Adam. For

this purpose, many individuals, families, clans, and nations sacrificed themselves selflessly down through the millennia. The person who came on the foundation of this selfless sacrifice was the Messiah. Then, what is the mission of the Messiah? First, it is to be a man who measures up to the original principles characterizing mankind before the fall. The sinlessness of Adam is thus recreated. Next, that of Eve is recreated by Adam.

A wife who is unfaithful to her husband, or a husband who is unfaithful to his wife cannot turn his or her face to the universe. They are the very people who totally violate the sphere of heart. Such people have nowhere to go to be at peace.

For a man, his wife represents mother, elder sisters, younger sisters, and, indeed, all women of the world. To love a wife who has such a significance means to love all races of humanity, all women, and one's mother, elder sister, and younger sister in the home. Accordingly, the family is the "basic training" center that educates people in human love. Therefore, to be trusted and to live a happy life in a family means to live a happy life as the center of the entire universe and to be situated at the center of happy love. There is nothing meaningful without love. Likewise for a woman. Her husband represents father, elder brothers, younger brothers, and all men on earth. This is our ideal of the family.

Satan challenged me throughout my life in order to destroy the foundation of the Blessing. A person of adulterous tendencies cannot take responsibility for heaven. A man whom his wife cannot trust is never trusted in the world, either.

When we confront this world centering on the heavenly Principle, only the firm and strong things can remain. We are now in the midst of a battle in which we must expand the realm of goodness by applying the Principle. In this battle, we must

overcome not only temptation from men, but also numerous temptations and tests from Satan. Satan, who has been accusing God throughout the 6,000 years of biblical history, has great power and subtlety. Most people are defeated by him. The reason why I myself could proceed successfully until the present is because I clearly knew the Principle, the heavenly Principle. That is why I'm not snared by temptation.

It is our task to clean up this corrupt world and create a clean one.

After 1960, radical changes began to occur throughout the world. This was simply due to God's dispensation centering on the Unification Church. Today's historians do not know why history has entered a period of such enormous flux. It is because of this small Unification Church.

Your Blessing is for the purpose of setting an example for the rest of the world. I clearly know what conditions will be most beneficial for people in the spirit world, for those presently alive, and for future generations. Thus, I have clearly understood the providential significance of your Blessing, and upon this understanding I am initiating it. It is your mission to understand its significance just as vividly as I do and to live a blessed life in accordance with that understanding, examining yourself constantly to see that your way of life conforms with the way you know you should be living.

I take responsibility for blessed people eternally – not just for a lifetime. If they go to the spiritual world, I will guide and take responsibility for them. To be blessed means to have an eternal relationship with me.

Here, we have the theoretical foundation to achieve the perfection of the individual, the perfection of the

family, the perfection of the community, the perfection of the nation, the perfection of the world, the perfection of the cosmos, up until the liberation of God.

I was treated like the scum of the earth. Why did things go that way? Clearly, because there is Satan. The sphere of Satan and of Cain is never satisfied until they beat the realm of Abel to death. Ironically, however, they do want Abel to appear again. This is the heart of Satan. Because of this reason, I've been accepting without complaint and digesting all the persecution that has come my way from thirty years ago until today. Facing all the persecution head on, I have been fighting with perseverance and will power in order to overcome it. I'm a man who has very strong will power. Once I determine to do something, I go forward, even at the risk of my life. There isn't much difference between my body and yours. Any difference between us lies in the realm of thought and will power. I am strong because I have a way of thinking which is not only for the moment, but which extends to all of past, present, and future history and to the whole human race. In addition to that, I structure my thinking according to the pattern of God's dispensation.

Thinking about that point, if I fail, it is not only I who fail. In that event, the whole human race would have no future and the ideal of the restoration of the cosmos would be destroyed and God Himself would be profaned. I know these consequences very well. Therefore, even if I receive tremendous persecution, persecution in thousands of ways and by millions of people, I stand up without flinching for the sake of the human race and in order not to profane God's name. This is the way I think. (9-21-1978)

****

What is the ideal of God? It goes without saying that the original ideal of God is to realize a peaceful

world. In such a world, there are no divisions or conflicts.

It is a world filled with unity, harmony and joy. The greatest and the quickest means to this end is through true love. True love is the factor of unity and the origin of joy and happiness. That is why I would say that the prerequisite of peace is true love.

Then where does God's true love originate? The settlement place of true love is the family. If Adam and Eve had perfected themselves and established an ideal family through their marriage centered on God, true love would have been initiated there. And, the family of true love would have become the basis which would produce global true peace.

The reason why humankind is still unable to make true peace is because they are ignorant of true love. Why? The answer is, as mentioned in the Bible, humankind has separated from God. Since the fall of the first human ancestors, Adam and Eve who established the first family without God's blessing. Peace has been absent from this world ever since. Instead, divisions, conflicts, and struggles have come to rule this world. In the individual, the struggle between mind and body, the conflicts between husband and wife at the family level, and the struggles between societies are accepted as normal, everyday life.

It is my conviction that all human problems are caused by the fundamental loss of true love. The fall of humankind meant the loss of true love. Consequently, Jesus came as the King of true love in order to restore the love which Adam and Eve had lost. By the same token, the Lord of the Second Advent is coming in order to restore true love. That is the logical conclusion seen from the view of the providence of salvation.

My life until today, and my quest for world peace, has been concentrated on the point of how humankind can restore true love. When we look at the moral degradation of the world, we can think of how great God's sorrow must be. Watching this world decline breaks my heart and brings tears to my eyes. The harm of immorality and adultery similar to the days of Sodom and Gomorra injures our youth as they tragically fall into the false enticements of so-called "free" sex. The greatest sorrow of God is to see mankind going down this path of irresponsible destruction. (June 16-18, 1996)

****

God could not destroy everything because He is a God of principle, but He has been patiently waiting in agony. Therefore it has been God's historical wish to change this fallen physical world, to encourage us to drop and negate everything by ourselves and reconnect to God. That's what God has been waiting for all these years. God's desire has been to purify the fallen lineage and give true love and make this a world of true love. The person who can take this position, that one man, is the messiah. Throughout the Old Testament, New Testament and Completed Testament eras, this one man for whom God has been looking is called the messiah. The messiah is the one who can cut off this fallen life, lineage and love, erase it, and stand as the man who inherited God's line, love and life solely. By doing so he can build the chosen race that is engrafted to the messiah and by doing so build the world of the original life, lineage and love. He is a true olive tree into which the wild olive trees are grafted. This is the messiah's mission. Once we are engrafted, we also take the position of messiah. So we should go out to the world to be welcomed as the messiah. (12-19-1999)

****

An unusual phenomenon is taking place within the Unification Church; you are seeking to be recognized and loved by the True Parents. In your deepest heart you want to become one with them; without doing this you cannot be given complete restoration or rebirth. Physically it is impossible to become a part of the True Parents, but through your love, your total unity with them will be acknowledged by Heaven. Did you ever dream of such a Principle?

I want you to deeply realize that the emergence of the True Parents did not happen all of a sudden by decree one morning. Thousands and thousands of years passed in which God shed sweat and blood and tears to lay the necessary foundation in accordance with His principle and schedule, yet this work was continually being hampered by man's failures. I unlocked the deep secrets of heaven and earth and determined to pioneer the path beyond the level on which all the dispensational figures previously suffered or accomplished, figures like Noah, Abraham, Jacob, and Jesus. I learned precisely what they accomplished and what they left undone.

I knew from the very beginning that unless I set my standard higher than all of those dispensational figures I could not fulfill the role of the True Parents in heart and love. I have now succeeded beyond the level they established in terms of heart and love. From the beginning I knew what to look for, what to ask for, and what to strive for.

All the confusion and chaos of history had to be resolved. I came like a doctor to operate, to straighten out the problems of mankind within the shortest possible time of 30 years, and to complete the foundation upon which God's history could begin and all mankind could be brought to life. It is

a miracle of miracles. What would you have done if I had not come?

Right now I look miserable in the eyes of the world. I have unlocked the most important secrets of life and have freely given them as a gift to the world, yet instead of being grateful the world has come back to ridicule me. You are God's only hope; you are my only hope. However, since your previous life was so sinful you can never deserve the blessing of God in the Unification Church without totally changing from your previous philosophy and way of life.

Your lives must be different from yesterday; each day you need to be re-created. Will you change yourselves today? On this Parents Day, let's forget what you have done in the past because what counts is today and tomorrow. Boldly take the responsibility that God has bestowed upon you; courageously undertake what God has bestowed upon you and fulfill this mission. I want you to know that through you God will change the history of mankind.

I am not delivering this message today solely for your benefit. My audience is the world, history, and the spirit world. I am speaking to the world and every person here on earth shall listen to this word in due course. The entire spirit world is listening right now. The entire world will be without the excuse that they did not hear me.

Did my explanation of the Bible sound like a lie, or is it clear and effective truth? If the 240 million people of America and if Christians the world over could really humble themselves to listen to the truth, there is no way that they could say, "Reverend Moon, you are seeking to deceive and I do not trust you." The power of the truth will unite men. (April 18, 1977)

****

I once prayed for seventeen hours straight. I often prayed for more than twelve hours, staying up all night in the process. I prayed until my cotton-padded pants were so soaked with the tears of my bitter weeping that I could wring water from them. The Unification Movement was not built with games and laughter. I built it by going the way of truth, with blood, sweat and tears, wringing my own flesh and spilling my own blood. I came to know the standard, I fulfilled it, and I built a victorious foundation. Only because I know it is correct, having confirmed it through my own experimentation, am I teaching it to you. I am not saying I will become the True Parent; I already have. That is why I could proclaim True Parents and the Completed Testament Age. Now is the time to firmly secure the Completed Testament Age. We are in a time when nothing in this world can invade that. (Cheong Seong Gyeong 257-308, 1994.03.16)

How can I sleep soundly while Unification Church members receive persecution throughout the world? How many times have I been unable to eat or sleep? After learning that a missionary had been sentenced to death by a communist regime, would it have been right for me to sleep or to eat well? Even though I had never met him,
he had heard my words from a distance, across many national borders, and said while offering his life, ‘‘Father, please be victorious! I am crossing over first.” How do you think I felt at the core of my being -- in my bone marrow and flesh -- when I was told that he had spoken those last words? I was deeply sorrowful that we did not yet have a nation. Who could ever fathom that God would have to suffer this much? (Cheong Seong Gyeong 365-326, 2002.01.14)

Until I was thirty years old there was not a day that I did not go hungry. It was not for lack of money or food. I deliberately ate only two meals a day. Until I was thirty, I did not buy clothes for myself. This was

because I knew I was responsible for saving the world's poor. Even when I had nothing to eat and could not afford to wear good clothes, I prayed that God would save the hungry and liberate the poor, who could not wear good clothes. Such prayers reach Heaven directly. (Cheong Seong Gyeong 276-099,1996.02.04)

****

When people say "Unification Church," what comes to your mind first? Reverend Moon. Reverend Moon is the Unification Church. Is the theology of the Unification Church most important? No. Reverend Moon is the living theology, living Principle. The Principle, or the Unification Theology, is the record of my growth: how I have developed myself and become what I am today.

I discovered the Principle through constant self-reflection and self-evaluation. I discovered the secrets of Adam's family by looking at myself and my own struggles and thus could unlock the Fall of Man. For Noah's family, Abraham's family, the life of Jesus--everything—I projected myself into their circumstances and broke through the barriers confronting them to uncover what should have happened and thus to reveal the Principle. Moses' course, Jesus' course and all their challenges are in the historical background of my life. It is a shadow of how I have chosen to live, of what I have built up in my life time. So biblical history is not just written literature but the actual background behind the birth of the Unification Church. I projected myself into this history and discovered the ultimate underlying truth. In the history of men, has anybody ever gone to that depth? How about you? Have you ever thought that the Principle is the vivid history of Rev. Moon—my struggles and victories? This is the fruit of the victories of my life.

Therefore, when you teach or read about Adam's family, put yourself into that particular backdrop of history and put me on the center stage. I had to battle to find my way through those labyrinths of hidden truths.

"Indirect dominion and direct dominion of God, indemnity, human responsibility"—these are the key words of the Principle. Do you think I picked the words out of the dictionary? No! Do you think that God gave me the Principle saying, "This is it"? No, God cannot directly give that type of revelation. When we read about the indirect dominion of God and how the fall interrupted our growth to the direct dominion, you truly feel this is incredible logic; it is not fiction. It is absolute history that was so deeply locked up that no man had discovered it. And until it was discovered and understood, the battle between God and Satan could not be resolved for it is the battle of truth. Once I discovered that ultimate truth and it was approved by God, then I could completely judge Satan who had to surrender. If on your own you try to find the understanding embodied by the words "indirect dominion" and "direct dominion," you will discover how profoundly I had to search.

Adam's personal responsibility was to grow in purity and unite with God in true love. Otherwise, Adam's perfection would not be attained. In a way, denial of Principle is equal to denial of God and of Father. When you deal with the Principle, you must understand this.

Why am I saying this to you? We have come to the ultimate, conclusive stage of providential history: the global stage. You and history have to be completely harmonized and ultimate culmination has to be achieved. When you read the Principle, it is important to know that it is my history of struggle and record of victory. You cannot unite with me until you experience and accept the entire Principle as your own: your own struggle, your own fight, your own victory; then you can understand my heart and truly unite.

I did not go through such a drama on the stage. This was a very real battle. I was not merely an actor; I was as the original Adam, confronting the same struggles as Adam's family. Actually, Adam did not know anything about the Principle. He became fallen without even

knowing clearly what was right and wrong. Originally, only God and Satan understood what happened in the Garden of Eden, but they alone could not untangle this matter. Some man had to discover the truth of the indirect and direct dominions and how Adam was to fulfill this way of life. Adam should have understood all the secrets of God first; for example, the realization to call God "Father" should have come to Adam and Eve, then they could have been Lucifer's teachers, with proper dominion over him. But before Adam knew the truth, Satan discovered and used this truth as a secret weapon to completely demolish the humanity of man.

Through deep soul-searching prayer you can bring your spirit close to the truth, and then the whole spiritual reality opens up to you. When you enter that realm, Satan becomes very real to your life, you know what Adam's responsibility was, and you can know exactly what you should do.

In tears, Adam was expelled from the Garden of Eden and lost everything; he did not know what was happening. So also in tears, we can rediscover the truth and regain our rightful position—this is restoration. Since the first human ancestors were crying, their posterity, we children of Adam and Eve, must cry as well. Human history began with tears, so you have to shed tears to go back. Your heart, mind, and body must be completely melted in tears—otherwise you will not succeed. How many of you have such deep soul-searching prayer in tears? You have no idea how much I desperately struggled and wept—my whole mind and body crying out with soul-searching tears to enter and understand that realm.

Do you know the heart of God? The heart of True Parents? As soon as I think about God, my first reaction is always to profoundly weep. Once I feel God's heart, I cannot help but cry. When you think of True Parents, you should also feel like crying. If you don't, that means there is no heartistic connection. You cannot talk about spirit world because your heart is so dry that

spirit world has nothing to do with you. You must realize how far you are from the truth; how faithless you are in a way. Without knowing the heart of God, you cannot become good actors and actresses even if you've been a member for 15 or 20 years. Satan looks at you and laughs: "You think you belong to God and True Parents? Ha!" Ask yourself in your mind: "Am I really True Parents' child? Am I really God's child?" If not, this is the trouble.

As God's child, when He feels sad, you feel His vibration of sadness. When God feels joy, you feel joy. When True Parents feel sadness, you feel sad. While I have been struggling to bring God's heart to this land, against the most insidious enemy out there in the satanic world, how much have you been united with me in heart? How much have you really been praying, "Let True Parents' burden become mine; let me bear the cross"? America's good spirit world wants to come down and help you, but your spiritual eyes are closed and your ears are blocked. Spirit world cannot communicate.

You should feel there is no one else but you to liberate Adam's family, Noah's family, Abraham's family, Moses, Jesus, God, and True Parents, too. This is how I felt. You should be able to say, "Yes, I passed through Adam's family experience, Noah's, Abraham's, Moses', and each step of the way I felt I was truly going through and reliving Father's life." You should experience Adam's battleground, Noah's battleground, Abraham's battleground--those were my battlegrounds. You must feel these things to the bone: "Now I'm inheriting it. Now I see how much Father's struggle was an impossible fight, which still he won. Now I want to be taking over Father's suffering myself. I want to become a protective barrier for Father, surrounding him. That is my supreme duty. From me, others can learn True Parents' way."

Once you know my struggle and victory, you can inherit it; then you can always be one step ahead of me.

"I want to be a good archangel for Father; and I want to be a good true child to Father." To be a good archangel, you have to protect my work from the fallen archangel. After that, you can become my child by going through the road of indemnity. If you avoid it, you cannot reach the goal.

You have not realized how painfully naive you were: You had not understood the most vital part of the Principle. Even though you have been in the Unification Church so many years, you have not experienced these depths of feeling. Even if this Principle was just given out by spirit world—that alone is a fantastic event. However, it was not just given by the spirit world; no one read this Principle to me. I fought every step of the way to discover the secret. I cannot leave the Principle: I am the personification of it.

If you only try to intellectually learn the Principle, and only give lip service to living it, then there is no root, there is no life, and you will be blown away by the wind. The most important thing is actually grafting to the root—True Parents. Have you?

Do you realize that when somebody pinches you, both God and I feel your pain because all are one and connected? Think about a big tree. If a small branch is chopped down, the whole tree aches because that branch is part of the big tree. But instead of contributing to this oneness, many of you are trying to use the Unification Church for your selfish benefit. Are you principled men? No one knows better than you who you are. It's almost like you've been trying to win the battle with an empty gun. Maybe you have the sound of a gun, but you have no bullet so you cannot actually make a hole in the target. Are you a principled man with real bullets? When you fire will you make a hole? Evaluate according to the Principle what percent of you is a true person.

When you read about Adam's family you should feel, "I'm Adam because I inherited True Parents' position;

therefore Satan surrender to me here." This applies to the other central figures as well. "I'm walking Moses' course as the real Moses because Father walked this path and I'm inheriting it; it's mine now; I'm winning." Without this attitude and feeling, do you think Satan would surrender? My course must become yours.

You have to carry your record of achievement. When are you going to create yours? When have you set a new record on the individual level? How about family, tribal, or national level? Each step of the way you have to try to go beyond the actual existing record. The Principle itself is a vivid record of my struggle and victory. "Divine" means "God", so "Divine Principle" means "God's Principle," and one cannot change it--only follow it. Like a train: no matter how fast the train wants to go, it can only travel on the tracks to reach its destination.

Have you ever thought about how I have lived my life thus far, how many million times I have truly cried out? Have you ever even imagined how much agony I felt in my heart? But to feel sadness and agony is not my purpose. It is to break through the agony, resolve it, and bring the liberation to God. You can imagine this is the toughest assignment. Satan knows, more than anyone else, my record of struggle and victory, but he has no power to even come near me.

So is the Principle yours? The problem is not Japanese, Korean, black or white. The problem is with you. If you clearly understand the Principle viewpoint you can solve everything. Since I realized this, my credo has been to achieve dominion over myself; then I can have dominion over the universe.

For the last fifteen years you may have been thinking, "I am following Father." But how much have the American people been saved by members of the Unification Church? For fifteen or twenty years, America has been declining. Look at the ruin and corruption in America. Whose responsibility is it?

When you first heard the Principle and understood that America would get better with the Principle viewpoint, you should have proclaimed our activity from every corner. You must repent, soul-search, and with tears cry out for forgiveness and recommitment. Your attitude has to be to unite with me and not let me down anymore.

From this standpoint, have you been a master or the servant of the Principle? Servant! I am the embodiment of the Principle. Therefore, I cannot give attention to anything else; I am so focused, so serious, so dedicated to my own duty that I have no time to listen to anything else. Sometimes I forget what time of day it is because in my mind there is no night and day. I may sometimes have thought, "This is the evening—I'm eating dinner," when I was actually eating breakfast. From my point of view there is no such thing as rest and relaxation or thinking I can have some fun here, or somebody likes me and I would like to respond to them. My entire life I have focused on only one purpose.

From my first day in America I knew I had come to America to make an impact on this nation. Initially the members felt I didn't know anything about America. I was persecuted by them more than by the outside world. In a way everyone was laughing at me: "What Father is trying to do is a good idea but impossible." I always felt alone, but without any support I launched a lonely crusade in the giant United States of America.

As the state leader you should feel yourself to be a central figure of history and form relationships with the other civic and political central figures of your city and state. The background of your spiritual ancestors becomes yours; they are all behind you because you belong to True Parents. Believe that every good ancestor can follow you because you represent them, and, with that kind of support, you can make any situation victorious.

The tears of God are needed, not a college degree. Shed True Parents' tears in your area—that's what it needs. This is why Jesus proclaimed, "Repent for the kingdom of heaven is at hand." Jesus was the first one to be king of repentance for the sake of all humanity. The Jews and the nation of Israel should have understood Jesus, and through him the heart of God. If they had really cried out, repenting in tears, surrounding and protecting Jesus, then Jesus would not have been crucified and they would not have been conquered by the Roman Empire. In the place of true repentance, there was only arrogance and selfishness. Since the Jews didn't fulfill their responsibility to repent, Jesus had to repent for them. Similarly, you must cry out for America. Ask God to put the burden upon your shoulder: "God, I can bear Your burden; let me bear the True Parents' burden now." But in order to overcome the burden and liberate True Parents, you must know and use the truth of Adam's family, Noah's family, Abraham's, Moses', and Jesus. Absorb this truth and make it yours; feel it to your bone then go out and proclaim it.

Who is God? God is the biggest parent—that's all. True Parents are the second biggest parents. The third biggest parent is you! Messiahship means parentship—having true love between parents and children. You must return to your Parents and return to God. Then when God cries, you will cry; when True Parents cry, you will cry. You will experience the same vibration, a resonance of heartistic feeling. Why is God the greatest parent of all? Because in history no one has ever shed more tears than God or been more broken-hearted. On the physical plane, no one has shed more tears for the sake of humanity than True Parents. In order to inherit God's and True Parents' kingship, you should feel: "I must shed tears like God and Father did." The stages of parentship progress according to the number of tears that you shed for the sake of parents, children, and posterity. If there had been no fall, there would be only glory, with God the first and greatest of all to enjoy the glory, then True Parents, then you. But because of the fall of man, it was reversed—joy was not there.

Tribal messiahship has been declared. What is it? If there had been no fall of man, a tribal messiah wouldn't be necessary because all we would need is True Parents' family. You are the extension of the True Parents' family—which is the seed of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. Because of the fall, the Cain world came into being. So you have to become a tribal messiah, going out to try to save that world. It's as if there was one mother and two fathers, because two blood streams have been mixing in humanity. Therefore, God has not been the greatest, most glorious parent. He has been a God with a broken heart, full of tears. This is why I cannot pray to God asking His blessing or requesting some help. My attitude is always, "I want to go out, fight, win the victory, and bring it to God. I want to make an offering to God." Therefore I concentrate on action and then report about it.

That's how I laid the worldwide foundation in the shortest possible time. If I said, "Well God, if You help me I will do it" each time, do you think I would have laid this much foundation here on earth? No!

True Parents' dispensation has already gone through the three stages that were symbolically expressed years ago when I blessed the 36 Blessed Couples. Normally 12 couples would have been enough; but I wanted to include all humanity so there were three groups of 12, enabling the 36 Couples to encompass all humanity. All Blessings since then represent an expansion of the 36 Couples.

I have to connect all humanity into the same blood lineage with my own family. This is the reason that I adopted daughters-in-law and sons-in-law from different groups. Among the 36 Blessed Couples there are three different groups. Bo Hi Pak, for example, is one of the 12 previously married couples. By engrafting him into True Parents' family, the world of married couples is engrafted to True Parents. Rev. Hong and Rev. Kwak are from groups I matched. I even chose a daughter-in-law from the 430 Blessed Couples. By

doing so, I set the condition to save all humanity, not just certain segments. If I would say, "Well, this couple matched by me is one thing and this previously married couple is something else, then ultimately a divided world would remain. But I will make one world.

By the time of the third level or grandchildren's level, I will connect True Parents' family with all races and cultures. This international marriage will happen in the True Family in three generations' time. Although I have been persecuted because of international marriages, I have pioneered this way because it is the exact, precise will of God. Any kind of racial prejudice will be absolutely non-existent in our new world.

… the number one condition to be blessed into True Parents' family is to know the Korean language. The true home nation is Korea, the true home town is Korea, True Parents' home is Korea, the mother tongue is Korean, the father tongue is Korean. For that reason, anyone who is truly longing to return home should teach their children to be fluent in Korean.

Western culture is individual-centered; but Oriental culture is collective-centered. Korean people never say "my house or country." Rather, they say "our house or country" because it belongs to you and me; we join together and make it. The Korean language is really Principle-centered. I announced many years ago that in 1990 I will no longer use an interpreter. Already I am bringing Westerners to Korea to learn the Korean language. I am trying to give the best possible gift to you and your family, but you are just reluctant to accept it.

If your children haven't learned the Korean language or been properly educated in church traditions, then all your ancestors will accuse you. There is competition to become marriage partners for True Parents' family members because there is only a limited number. As in a marathon, you all begin at the same starting line, but your fourth generations may be at very different levels

depending on what you do now. Unless you are prepared for the future in advance, you shall decline.

There are two types of Unificationists: those who absolutely, faithfully follow my instructions at face value and others who say, “One year I’ll listen to Father, and next year I’ll listen to the world, get a good job and house. I’ll still be a member and child of True Parents.” You’ll see which one is going to win.

Seasonal birds fly in formation with the oldest bird leading the way and the youngest birds following at the end. Maybe the youngest bird has more energy and thinks, “I can fly faster; why should I have to be in formation? I’ll take over.” But actually they don’t, because they respect the elders who are going in the right direction. The Unification Church is like seasonal birds. We are flying in formation across the Pacific Ocean. What if some little bird said, “I’m going to be a little wiser; I know what to do”? Are you going to follow True Parents or do it his way?

The Bible is such a wise book; in the end the foolish-looking ones receive the blessing because they are wiser people. Others who rely on and follow their own intellectual thinking are always mistaken.

All this time, you may have been thinking, “Divine Principles Rev. Moon’s principle. Unification Church is Father’s church. Korea is Father’s country.” But you are wrong. It’s your Principle; this is your mission, your church, and your country.

A key preference for Westerners is privacy: “This is a private matter” or “I want to have a little privacy”, “private bath, private bedroom.” Everything is private. But this privacy is connected with hell. If you try to make some private cubbyhole, only Satan can communicate, and it becomes Satan’s fortress. God is public, always open, therefore everything should be public.

The Jamestown settlement in America began about 350 or 400 years ago, and your independence came a little over 200 years ago. You built up this country during that time. After the ravages of war in 1950 virtually all of Korea was devastated. But now when you look at Korea, it is very similar to the United States in just 30 years. The Korean people don't want to be indebted or a burden to anyone. This is why in the United States, Korean people never receive welfare. They want to be independent and to learn. I came out of that tradition and instead of being indebted to anyone, humanity is indebted to me. If you want to learn something from the Oriental tradition, learn the habit of working hard and of making the best use of everything you have.

After the fall, God chased Adam and Eve as a family out of the Garden of Eden. True Parents came and restored the family. Now I am asking you to claim the land and make it into your Garden of Eden. This is what the tribal messiahship is all about. Those who do not live up to this instruction will get far behind the pace of True Parents' dispensation.

Saying "I want to follow Father" does not mean going behind me. I said to accept the mission and become a tribal messiah! That's the way to follow me! In other words, you will become a True Parent. True Parents and God have already given you all the necessary ingredients and supplies. All you have to do is apply them in your life and win the battles. Then you will become the third greatest true parent. Like Moses, be bold and strong. Fear not! Get out and solve the problems. If you don't take this job very seriously, you may become the prey of Satan.

Our positions are parallel Messiahship. I am the global, universal Messiah starting from the national foundation and reaching for global messiahship. My position is to unify the world centered on the nation. As an individual going from your family level to reach for tribal messiahship, you are exactly like me going from the national to the world level. Centering on your family,

you have to restore Adam's family. To restore Jesus' place, the second Adam, you will make a tribe. The purpose of tribal messiahship is to unify your tribe, Cain and Abel, centering on your family. The third Adam's place is the national level at which you will immediately connect with me. Once you connect to the nation: you will have covered the family and tribal levels, while I will have covered the national and universal levels. When we restore one nation under God's sovereignty, the entire world will change very quickly. Once the situation between North and South Korea is solved, all world problems can be resolved as well.

True Parents are like the root and trunk of a tree; the tree needs branches, represented by the people united with True Parents. The tree grows as more buds and branches blossom out, or as the first disciples reach out to their relatives and hometown citizens.

All three Adam dispensations are consummated in my work. I have completed the root and trunk, so all we have to do to complete the tree is graft on branches and leaves. I'm sending you out as second Adams to the world; the grafting process is the most crucial thing. You are little messiah buds because you have grafted onto the main tree with me. You get life from the same root that I brought, so you can begin to help the entire world become engrafted to form one tree of perfected Adam, our True Parent. As part of the perfected Adam, you will be outside the realm of persecution or accusation of Satan. When this original principle of creation is fulfilled, I can declare the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven to be a reality.

You are to be the pride of the messiahship era in your home town and home church areas. My pushing you out to those areas expresses my love for you. The land and territory is a gift to you from God and True Parents.

This time one of the major differences from previous providences is that husband and wife go together. This

is parallel to the time when the Israelites crossed the Jordan River and the land was distributed to the twelve tribes. The tribes went into Canaan and saw the rich houses, beautiful cattle, sheep, and plantations. Tragically, instead of implanting God's tradition, they were absorbed by the Canaanites and all the tribes collapsed. You must be different this time. Now the entire globe is Canaan. When you go into the land of Canaan, you will not be opposed but welcomed. Because of my foundation, people will respect you. The entire society is tired of dealing with drugs and crime. A clean-cut fellow like yourself trying to save the township will be embraced. God made this situation so you will be welcomed!

The blessed couples are those who have the legal transfer to True Parents' lineage and will be the recipients of the blessing and the land. We have all the modern day weapons: videotapes, cassette tapes, books and publications. You are being given the most precious and important gospel. This is God's and True Parents' final plan. All the religions will blossom culminating in this final providence. So is tribal messiahship impossible? No, it can be done!

In Korea I declared "tong bon kiyukpa." "Tong bon" is comparable to village; "pa" means a smaller segment of the village. "Kiyukpa" means "breakthrough." I assigned Korean members to tong bons all over Korea as tribal messiahs. Here you also "kiyukpa" or breakthrough in your towns and village.

As tribal messiahs, you must follow my path. After 14 years in America I have made an important impact on this nation and the destiny of this nation has been changed. Work like me. In the morning you be the rooster who wakes people up. You clean up the graffiti off the wall and start a campaign to clean up the road, the slums, the entrance to the town. You can start campaigns to take care of the children, to stop abuse, divorce, and drugs. You should become involved with all kinds of organizations and clubs; mingle and always

be in the Abel or serving position. There are many noted university professors, clergy and political leaders who respect our movement whom you can invite to speak at special rallies. People who stand by and watch will never become central figures. Those who actually roll up their sleeves and get down to work will be the leaders.

When you go to your hometown, you are going as ancestors. No matter what the people say, you will be welcomed and you will be the elders. Spiritually speaking, no one is higher than you in your home state simply because you belong to the kingship of our True Parents. You have to pay attention to the second generation. If you can turn the young generation around, the parents will automatically be moved to follow.

Divide the city or state into 50 state names so that you always feel you are representing the whole United States of America, not just one state. So there's the actual state of Alabama; and in every state there is also a little Alabama. One day I will say, "I am going to have an Alabama conference, so all the leaders from the state down to all the tribes which have been given the name Alabama will come." Thus if you just bring Alabama alone, the entire country is represented. A big place represents a small place, and a small place represents a big place so there is harmony between bigger and smaller representation.

Regional coordinators will go around the region to all the cities to help hold revival meetings. I set the goal of 1-1-1, one month one person brings one spiritual child. That has not been fulfilled because there was so much opposition. However, that era is over. With the new system, plus Father's previous instruction to lecture eight hours, you can fulfill this goal.

When new members joined they were always trained first. Now, too, within six months time, they should go through the 70 day training period--beginning with a 3-

day workshop, 7-day, 21-day, up to 40 days. Then fund-raising for three years followed by three years of witnessing. That's the principled method of becoming a true member of the Unification Church.

After the fall of man, everything was lost, so each person has to start from scratch to acquire the material to restore himself. First of all he has to restore all things of creation. Therefore, fund-raising is the first step in the re-creation of oneself. Every penny earned is for the sake of the mission, except that which is needed to maintain oneself and pay expenses. One side benefit of fund-raising training is that when successfully completed, the person will have no worry the rest of his life because he knows how to earn money!

Upon that foundation of three years, he has to remake his soul by winning spiritual children. Witnessing is necessary not simply to gain new members but also for the re-creation of oneself. He can go out as a pioneer to win disciples to unite with and help him as the three archangels should have supported Adam. That period will be more fun and easier. He can teach young people how to raise money. Sunday he can invite them to church or give them lectures himself. After witnessing for three years, he will be given a more permanent professional mission. With such experience fund-raising and witnessing, he will become a genius, able to deal with all kinds of people without hesitation, including the leaders of society.

Since there's less opposition now, in seven years' time he can have 84 spiritual children, which becomes one tribe. Then he is ready for the Blessing. He has already formed a tribe and been anointed as a tribal messiah. He has become a true parent and can carry such a victorious foundation with him to graft the world onto that foundation into the world.

You are re-doing this since you have not yet actually done it. This is the formula course that everyone must

walk. In seven years time, tribal messiahs will walk everywhere.

Creation was accomplished in six days, and the seventh was the Sabbath. In the one extra year (after three years each of fund-raising and witnessing) each person can apply himself for the ultimate homecoming and becoming a tribal messiah to serve the society and nation. For the rest of his life, he can teach people to live for the sake of others. That is the person who will go to the Kingdom of Heaven.

From now, go back to your home towns and work with your own relatives and school friends. No matter how big Satan's presence is, you can break through it. Is it possible? Yes!

I am going to have a mammoth wedding in the future. This international wedding will be televised throughout the world so young people can become excited about creating healthy, ideal families. They will feel, "I want to be a part of that!"

A new era has arrived. We no longer need to pay indemnity. Both right wing and left wing movements will decline, while the head wing movement ultimately will go up. Once North and South Korea, and East and West Germany, are united the whole world can unite. To help this happen I am working with China, the Soviet Union, the United States, and Japan.

I want to conclude this meeting by saying that you know your mission is to become a tribal messiah. You are just about to enter Canaan, where you'll be organized so that God's Will can be fulfilled everywhere. My first mission is accomplished and now it's your turn. make the whole world the land of Canaan, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. It can be done with the program I gave you today.

I will visit you and see what a good messiah you are. You can invite me to a victory banquet. Of course I will come. If a tribal messiah invites me, how can I refuse? As you fulfill everywhere, I will have absolute freedom to move in every direction. We will shake the world like a typhoon or earthquake! (4-8-1989)

****

Many Western people live truly lonely lives. Their children leave home once they turn eighteen, and the parents may only get to see their faces at Thanksgiving or Christmas. Many children never visit their parents to just find out how they are doing. Once people marry, they live with their spouse, independent from their family, until their parents become so old they can no longer take care of themselves. At that point, they move into a nursing home. So it is understandable that some Westerners envy the culture of the East. Many elderly people in the West think, "In the East, the grandparents live in the family as the senior members of the family, and it is really wonderful. The children respect their old parents. This is how people are supposed to live. What good is it to be lying in a nursing home, not able to see my children, not even knowing what day it is, just staying alive?"

Unfortunately, though, the Eastern family structure is also gradually deteriorating. We too are abandoning traditions that have been handed down to us for thousands of years. We have thrown away our traditional clothing, our food, and our family structure. The number of senior citizens living alone in Korea is on the rise. Each time I see stories of senior citizens alone, it makes me sad. The family is where generations live together. If family members are scattered and the parents are left alone, then that is no longer a family. The extended family system is a beautiful Korean tradition.

I recommend that three generations live together as one family. I do so, not simply because it is a way of maintaining our country's tradition. When a husband

and wife have a child, they pass on all they can to that child. There is a limit, however, to how much the parents can pass on. The parents represent the present and the children the future. The grandparents represent the past. So it is only when the grandparents, parents, and children live together that the children can inherit all the fortune of the past and present. To love and respect your grandfather is to inherit the history of the past and to learn from the world of the past. The children learn precious wisdom from their parents on how to live in the present, while the parents prepare for the future by loving their children.

The grandfather is in a position to represent God. No matter how intelligent a young man may be, he cannot know all the secrets of this big world. Young people cannot know all the different secrets of life that come to us as we grow older. This is the reason the grandfather represents the history of the family. The grandfather is a precious teacher who passes on to the grandchildren all the wisdom he has acquired through the experiences he has accumulated during the course of his life.

The world's oldest grandfather is God. So a life of receiving the grandfather's love and of living for the sake of the grandfather is a life of coming to understand God's love and of living for His sake. We need to maintain such a tradition in order to open the secret storehouse of God's Kingdom and receive His treasure of love. Any country that ignores its old people abandons its national character and ignores its roots.

When autumn comes, the chestnut tree gradually loses it moisture, and its leaves begin to fall. The outer shell of the chestnut falls off, and even the inner shell that surrounds the actual nut dries up. This is the cycle of life. Human beings are the same way. We are born as infants, grow up on the love of our parents, meet a wonderful partner, and get married. All this occurs in the chain of life made up of love. In the end, we become like chestnuts becoming dry in autumn. Old people are not a separate category of people. We all become old. We must not treat old people disrespectfully, no matter how senile they may become.

There is a saying, "Anything can be accomplished when there is harmony in the home." When there is

peace in the family, everything goes well. The peaceful family is the building block of the Kingdom of Heaven. The family operates on the power of love. If we love the universe as we love our families, then there is nothing to stop us from going anywhere we want. God exists in the center of love, as the Parent of the entire universe. That is why the love in the family needs to link directly to God. When the family is completed in love, the universe will be completed. (*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*)

****

Our love organs are the headquarters palace of love, life and lineage. This palace does not reside within God. Human beings' sexual organs are where the palace of True Love, True Life and True Lineage dwell. Without true loving couples and families, God is not able to create perfection. It is through the unity of our minds and bodies, and the perfection of our love that we have the power to perfect God. That is the value of human beings. We were created for this important purpose. …

We have to walk the road of heavenly fate. Between man and woman, who stands in the central position? (Man.) This is the principled formula. The road of heavenly fate is centered upon our families. Then it is extended to the tribe, society, nation, world and cosmos and eventually back to God. At every level the center is the family. The expansion of your family is the world. Your family consists of grandparents, parents and children. In the world at large we can see couples who represent grandparents, parents and children. Wherever you may go serve the people as if they were members of your own family. If you serve others in this way there will always be prosperity. This American society centers itself upon couples. But where are the grandparents, parents and children of these couples? The American way of life is a failure from Heaven's point of view. If America continues on

this path they are all doomed to Hell. Father has come as the doctor who is able to heal the ills of this society. This is why Father works day and night shedding blood and tears every day in order to save the families of this world.

If we visit the parks of the cities of America, we will find elderly people sitting, looking aimless and homeless. Approach them and ask them if they would like to visit the homes of their children and play with their grandchildren. All of them would say that they would like to. However, they all feel they have to make an appointment in order to visit their own children's homes. Who created such a terrible society? Satan did. God's ideal of love was destroyed by Satan. Satan was originally the Archangel who was created by God without a partner concept. Therefore, this Archangel has created such an evil society where the ideal of love has been destroyed and deviated. That is why we are witnessing the rampant abuse of love through free sex and homosexuality. These acts have their origins in the fallen Archangel, Satan. …

If you are able to truly devote yourselves to your grandparents, your parents and even your husband or wife when they can no longer take care of themselves with greater devotion than you gave to your infant children, then you will gain a free pass to the Kingdom of Heaven. Do you Americans understand? (Yes.) This is very important for you to understand and act upon. Do you feel good? (Yes.) Not everyone has the privilege of serving their elderly grandparents and parents. Therefore, we should demonstrate this heart of love to others in the place of our elderly grandparents and parents. If you give your heartfelt service to elderly people, this practice of life will give you the qualification to enter Heaven. …

There are so many problems in this nation. Conflicts between various religions, races and ethnic groups.

However, all of you maintain that you want to adopt the life of True Love. That is why Father is offering the *Divine Principle* freely to the world. …

In God's ideal there is no concept of free sex. Only an absolute, eternal sex concept. Unchanging and unique sex concept. This way leads to the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth. This is a most logical conclusion. Therefore, be very careful regarding your love organ. Never allow yourselves to be seduced by this satanic secular world. The fallen love practiced in this secular world is very dirty. Is this clear? (Yes.) Your sexual organ exists for the sake of your True Love partner. Not for anyone else. …
The husband is more rugged and stronger so that he can work more and earn money for the family. …

Only the Unification Church is able to provide this ultimate truth to humankind. We are the ones who can consolidate and unify this entire world regardless of race, religion and nationality and build an ideal world under God. Therefore, we should have pride and continue to strive toward reaching that goal. …

God originally gave the seed of life to us. Therefore we have to love our father and mother just as we love God. Why do we need our mother? Because mother is the mediator in the position of minus to father in the position of plus. On the national level the mother will stand in the position of the queen. Then together with God all the many perfected families will form the ultimate cosmic family. This is the ultimate goal of God. American women should most especially come to this realization. Women represent the field where the seed is sown. The owner of the child is not the mother. The father is the owner.

The conflicts within American families usually end in the divorce courts. The justice system nearly always grants custody of the children to the mother

> who then claims alimony from the father. This is how the fathers have miserable lives. However, we have to eliminate this satanic law and set the heavenly constitution. When people come to clearly understand that the children belong to their fathers, then there will be fewer than one-third of the divorce cases than presently exist. (5-26-1996)

Father wants us to live as three generations and work together in communities:

> In the future do you imagine that America will still maintain senior citizens homes? In our families, grandparents, parents and children have to live together in harmony. (6-23-96)

> When three generations live together in one household in love and happiness, the ideal of the creation of heaven and earth is established. (Cheon Seong Gyeong p. 846)

> Have you thought about God's desire for the future family system? In light of this, True Father has thought about the hobby industry and the world of leisure. In the future, what kind of communal system should you create in each nation? You should build a "condominium system," and train people within that system where four families live together in unity. They should earn money together, eat together, educate their children together, and live as one family. If they fail to live together in harmony, those families will be pushed into a restrictive environment in the spirit world. There, they will not be able to live with others in harmony. (*Cheon Seong Gyeong*) (p. 814 278-327, 1996.6.23) p. 814

To achieve world peace Father teaches that we should focus on making exemplary families.

> The family sets the cornerstone on the road to world peace. The family also can destroy that road. The

> family of true love becomes the foundation for creating a society, nation, and world centered on true love. (4-16-96)

Cheon Il Guk

Father says there will be no need for lawyers and judges in the future ideal world he calls Cheon Il Guk. This means there will not be big governments: "We need a movement to realize a society of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values. We need to make humanity one great family, by breaking down the walls in our hearts and eliminating even the boundaries between nations. This movement begins from each family. If only the entire world were filled with such true families! It would be an orderly world where people govern themselves by the heavenly way and heavenly laws, with no need for lawyers, prosecutors or even judges." —"God's Ideal Family and Responsibility the Citizens of Cheon Il Guk Are Called to Fulfill" February 23, 2007

UTOPIAN RELIGION

Father says God's goal is for mankind to live in an ideal world. He says, "The Unification Church has the clear goal of utopia centered upon God. The utopian religion is the Unification religion" (11-1-93). "We have a common dream. It is the long-cherished human dream of an ideal world. The prophets have called it the Kingdom of God on Earth. It is a lofty goal, but it is obtainable. It must be, simply because it is the original ideal of the Creator. This is the meaning of securing world peace" (6-1-87). "Truly, the ideal I am espousing is nothing other than the kingdom of God on earth. I see it as a realistic goal toward which we can realistically work. People have been telling me that I am too utopian. I recognize that I am extremely idealistic, but I have no choice: God has called me directly, personally, to this task and responsibility." (8-11-84)

CLEANSE THE WORLD OF IGNORANCE AND CHAOS

Father Moon teaches:

> God is the absolute One, the only, unchanging and eternal One. His will is the same. If the human beings Adam and Eve had become one body under the love of God, everything would have been complete and perfect. God's origin, purpose and

process of creation, as well as cause, effect and direction are all absolute.

The human ancestors Adam and Eve entered into chaos after they fell through their ignorance. This ignorance and chaos expanded from the individual level to the levels of family, nation and world. It has been the task of religion and the Providence of Salvation to liberate us from this sphere of the Fall.

In the Last Days, the Messiah comes and teaches clearly the absolute, the only, unchanging and eternal cause, direction and effect, from God's viewpoint. He will cleanse the world of ignorance and chaos and return it to the original bosom of God. This is the completion of the will of God. (4-16-96)

ABSOLUTE SEX

Father teaches:

The loss of True Love means falling through adultery. In other words, True Love became degraded by misusing the sexual organs, and in order to restore it, we need to use these organs in the right way. Just as the seed of fallen love was planted in the Garden of Eden during the first ancestors' youth, so in these final days, mankind will harvest the fruit of the Fall among our young people. That is the reason why today we find so much chaos and confusion, centering on the issue of sex. This problem can only be solved with what I call "Absolute Sex." Only the concept and practice of Absolute Sex can prevent the destruction of the family and reverse the corruption of our youth.

Then what did God want for His children? To become billionaires? To have more power than anyone else? What God wanted for His children, Adam and Eve, was for them to grow to become children of filial piety, loyal citizens, saints, and a Holy Son and Daughter. Did you ever consider that, in accordance with God's desire, we should become children of filial piety in the family, loyal citizens of the nation, saints in the world, and Holy Sons and

> Daughters before Heaven and Earth? In history the saints and sages have taught that we should become children of filial piety, loyal citizens, saints, and Holy Sons and Daughters.
>
> Throughout history, there have been numerous religious leaders who could communicate with the spiritual world. You should know there is only one, Sun Myung Moon, who fully understood and unified the spiritual world and commenced work in this world. Since unifying the spiritual world, I received the Heavenly seal of recognition from God. Otherwise unification on the Earth cannot be done. You should know that in the same way that God has trained me and raised me in the spiritual world, He continuously leads me on the Earth. (6-16-1997)

Father says:

> During the course of my life, I have totally committed myself to the salvation of humankind centered on God's Will. As a result, I came to realize that God is not sitting in the throne of glory and honor, but is a God of suffering, grief and lamentation, endeavoring to save His children suffering in hell as a result of the fall. Ever since I understood the Will of God and His heart, I have lived my life with a single minded goal to accomplish God's Will, transcending time and space and forgetting everything else. Who will be able to melt the block of ice frozen in the heart of God? (1-22-2000)

Sun Myung Moon passed to spirit world on September 3, 2012. He brought the answers to the fundamental questions of life. He teaches that we should read his words of wisdom every day as a family. This gathering of family is what he calls in Korean the Hoon Dok Hae. At a morning reading of Father's words in Kodiak, Alaska on September 24, 2008 some rough notes were taken. He said that we have to study his words, "What will you do when I'm gone? I have left you the Word in so many books. However, many of you haven't even bought them yet. The Word will remain forever. The ideal sons and daughters are those who

have the proper relationship with the Word and with each other, in balance. Hoon Dok Hae is necessary. Through it you can overcome all. After 1,000 years, only the Word shall remain. Once you stand upon God's Word, you are in the central position, and you can and must go through all barriers."

"Even for me to go over Satan's hills, I had to become one with the Word. I created these books because the Word doesn't belong to me. It is God's Word and will remain forever. The secret for all humanity to get to God is to understand his Word. To go to God's heart, we must liberate the world. To liberate yourself, you must go beyond yourself."

WORDS OF GUIDANCE
He teaches:

> It is amazing that Father's lifelong work is to unify thought and unify religion for humankind. That's an amazing accomplishment, over which God rejoices. But those who have no true knowledge of Father say, "Sun Myung Moon is far-fetched; he must be crazy, unrealistic." But it is they who are unrealistic. Also, Father is leaving an archive, the words which Father spoke through the forty years of enduring myriad persecution. These will serve as living guidance for the whole world. Studying Father's words will be like studying an encyclopedia, which shows in great detail hundreds of thousands of ways to accomplish victory in trying times. (11-1-90)

UNIFIED WORLD IS VERY NEAR
God has a goal of a unified, ideal world. True Father has come to inspire us to build that world. How long will it take? He says it doesn't have to be thousands of years. It could happen soon:

> We are on the way to the unified world. We tend to think that we must keep working like this for another hundred years. No, the unified world is quite within our vision now; it is very near, much nearer than we think. (January 10, 1993)

WITNESS TO EVERYONE
For God's goal of a unified world to happen our loving Heavenly Father and our True Parents are calling each of us to become teachers. Each person has the responsibility to become a messiah who saves people from their ignorance of God and educate everyone about His plan for an ideal world. The last words of Jesus were a command. He said, "Go and make disciples of all nations."

CRUSADE
The Messiah teaches that we should love the world by living and teaching the truth. Our responsibility is to proselytize—to convert every single person from Satan's selfish lifestyle to God's loving way of life. We are called to live a religious life, not a secular life. This means we must take the heat of persecution when we peacefully use nonviolent persuasion to teach God's ideology. We have to carry the cross when we upset some people because they do not want to be preached to. Father pushes us to witness and be successful in changing lives, "…since we need more people, I am sending you out to witness." (12-1-82) I challenge you to join our crusade to save this world by teaching the *Divine Principle* so effectively that millions will join our movement. When there are millions of believers in the *Divine Principle* it will not take long for the rest of the world to join.

True Father says: "We should know that for six thousand years, God has sought people thirsting for faith and hope and burning with love who say, 'God is in shackles on account of humankind, including me; God was accused by Satan because of me; Jesus died on the cross for me; the Holy Spirit went through a bloody history of struggle on my behalf. God, please give me the strength. I will bring rest and liberation to the Father. I will also liberate Jesus and the Holy Spirit.'" (*Cheong Seong Gyeong* p. 143)

HYUNG JIN MOON – HEIR AND SUCCESSOR

Years before Father passed to the spirit world in 2012 he crowned Hyung Jin to be his successor. He also wrote it in a will. You can watch videos of the crowning ceremony and him writing his will in which he appointed Hyung Jin Nim as his successor. Four years before Father passed he stopped officiating marriage blessings and had Hyung Jin and Yeonah Nim perform the Blessing ceremonies. Father would not even be in the same room. He went into another room while Hyung Jin and Yeonah did the Blessings.

When Father passed his wife, Hak Ja Han, usurped leadership of Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (FFWPU). In

2015 Hyung Sean Moon gave an historical sermon titled "Breaking the Silence" on January 18, 2015. Please watch this amazing speech and the important sermons he has given since then. He fired all leaders in the FFWPU including his mother and started a new movement called World Peace and Unification Sanctuary based in Newfoundland, Pennsylvania. He teaches that his mother has made serious mistakes such as changing the name of God to Heavenly Parents. Hyung Jin has honored his Father who taught that we are to address God as "Heavenly Father" instead of the unprincipled way his feminist Mother and her followers address God as the two gods, "Heavenly Father and Heavenly Mother." Hyung Jin Sean Moon teaches monotheism and his mother sadly teaches polytheism. After Father passed the Family Federation wrote a new *Divine Principle* titled *Discovering the Divine Principle*. They sell it at their online bookstore. It is wrong in teaching God is Heavenly Father and Heavenly Mother. A professor at the feminist Unification Theological Seminary, Tyler Hendricks, has a *Divine Principle* video series on YouTube. He also incorrectly teaches polytheism. Sanctuary is the orthodox movement and Family Federation are the heretics.

To really know who Sun Myung Moon is it is crucial to study the words of Hyung Jin Sean Moon and by watching his sermons on video. Check out his YouTube videos at Sanctuary's YouTube site and check out the website Sanctuary-pa.org. Also, be sure to study the words and watch the videos of Kook Jin Justin Moon.

TRUE MOTHER KANG

On September 23, 2017 Hyung Jin blessed Sun Myung Moon to Hyun Shil Kang. She was his first disciple in South Korea in 1952. This was the fulfillment of the Marriage Supper of the Lamb: "Then I heard what seemed to be the voice of a great multitude, like the sound of many waters and like the sound of mighty thunder peals, crying, 'Hallelujah! For the Lord our God the Almighty reigns. Let us rejoice and exult and give him the glory, for the marriage supper of the Lamb has come, and his Bride has made herself ready; it was granted her to be clothed with fine linen, bright and pure'—for the fine linen is the righteous deeds of the saints. And the angel said to me, 'Write this: Blessed are those who are invited to the marriage supper of the Lamb'" (Rev. 19:6- 9).

On March 6, 2019 True Mother Kang, the greatest woman in human history, passed to spirit world.

The Constitution of Cheon Il Guk

Hyung Jin Sean Moon and his brother Kook Jin Justin Moon wrote a Constitution for the world : "The Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk." You can order a copy and read it for free at Sanctuary's website: sanctuary-pa.org. This statement is God's core values for mankind. It is the conclusion to the *Divine Principle*.

OUR MOST URGENT DUTY

Father wants us to feel a sense of urgency, "The work of restoring God's sovereignty is our most urgent duty." (*The Tribal Messiah*, section 3, chapter 1)

Christ teaches that we are to always be witnessing. True love means to teach the truth that saves lives. Jesus said, "You are the light of the world. A city set on a hill cannot be hid. Nor do men light a lamp and put it under a bushel, but on a stand, and it gives light to all in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works and give glory to your Father who is in heaven" (Matthew 5:14-16). Let's witness by building those cities on a hill.

"No one after lighting a candle puts it in a secret place or under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that those who enter may see the light" (Luke 11:33). Let's not keep our theology and our core values a secret. Let's witness by doing something every day to get someone to read the *Principle*, attend a lecture of the *Principle*, or watch a video of the *Divine Principle*. Father says:

> You must have the faith and conviction that you are a lighthouse lighting a dark world. The lighthouse will shine forth even in the worst kind of weather because that is the time ships need the lighthouse most. When you are surrounded by the thickest fog you must shine forth all the more. The more adversity, the greater must be your light.
>
> My goal is to establish the ideal model community [that will] transcend race, culture, nation and religion. ... Once we have this kind of ideal community established, people from all over the world will come to see it. ... This model community can have a powerful influence all over the world, particularly as the secular world is declining fast.

> Only I am creating this formula. It will appear like a lighthouse in the darkness. The world now is in darkness and I am building this model community as a lighthouse in the midst of the darkness.

Let's build ideal communities and be those lighthouses.

DREAM OF WORLD PEACE

The dream of world peace will eventually come because Sun Myung Moon brought enough truth to set us free. And the truth always rises. In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* he writes:

> I have lived my life without ever letting go of hope and always kept alive the dream of peace. What I want is to wipe away completely the walls and fences that divide the world in myriad ways and to create a world of unity. I want to tear down the walls between religions and between races and fill in the gap between the rich and the poor. Once that is done, we can reestablish the world of peace that God created in the beginning. I am talking about a world where no one goes hungry and no one sheds tears.

Sun Myung Moon and Hyun Shil Kang

True Father and True Mother

TRUE PARENTS OF MANKIND

SOCIETY REGISTER | 2018 | 2(2): 19–62 | ISSN 2544–5502
http://societyregister.eu/ | DOI: 10.14746/sr.2018.2.2.03

Article

EILEEN BARKER[1]
London School of Economics and Political Sciences, United Kingdom
ORCID 0000-0001-5247-7204

THE UNIFICATION CHURCH: A KALEIDOSCOPIC INTRODUCTION[2]

Abstract: The Unification Church, or the Unificationism, also known as HAS-UWC (Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity) or 'Moonies' (the term deemed now as disrespectful) but originating from the name of the founder Sun Myung Moon, who set up this Christian religious movement in Northern Korea in 1954 has approximately 3 million followers worldwide. Its existence and popularity are a global phenomenon, interesting not only for sociologists of religion but for politicians, philosophers and people of faith. The impact of this movement and the two-way social change remain a rare subject of study and this paper aims to fill the gaps and to discuss contemporary situation in regards to its followers.

Keywords: Unificationists, Moon, religious movement, socialization, social reproduction.

Introduction

For over six decades, the Unification Movement has defied any single classification. When attempting to see patterns in the movement's historical development, one can observe not so much stages as phases or themes that embrace a number of *leitmotifs* interwoven in a fugue composed of sometimes complementary, sometimes opposing themes. Rather than providing a chronological account of the history of the movement, this introductory chapter sketches some sociological motifs (messianic cha-

[1] **Corresponding author:** Professor Emeritus of Sociology of Religion, London School of Economics and Political Sciences, Houghton St., London WC2A 2AE, UK.
E-mail: E.Barker@LSE.ac.uk

[2] This is a shortened and slightly updated version of an article published Acta Comparanda Subsidia VI, 2018, pages19-55. I would like to express my gratitude to the editors of this volume for permission to publish this version and to a number of both present and former Unificationists for their generous help in the preparation of this chapter.

rismatisation; prophetic millenarianism; utopian politicisation; organisational bureaucratisation; generational denominationalisation; and schismatic fragmentation) that have, variously, come into ascendency at particular times and places as Unificationism has acted out its complicated, complex and sometimes confusing history as part of the world's religious landscape.

Briefly, as background information, it can be recounted that the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity (HSA-UWC), known more simply as the Unification Church (UC) or Unification Movement (UM), was formally founded in Seoul, South Korea, in 1954 by the Reverend Sun Myung Moon (1920-2012).[3] Having gathered a small group of disciples around him in Korea, Moon sent his first Unification missionaries to Japan and then to the West in the late 1950s. Although there were some scores of converts to the movement during the 1960s, which may have expanded to a couple of hundred or so by the end of the decade, it was not until Moon and his family settled in the USA and conducted a series of nation-wide speaking tours in the early 1970s that the Unification Church became widely known in the United States and Europe.[4]

Like many of the other high-profile new religious movements (NRMs) of the period, the Unification Church attracted a membership in the West that was disproportionately young, white, well-educated and from the middle classes (Barker 1984). These youthful converts, referred to in popular parlance as 'Moonies',[5] soon became a familiar sight as they fundraised and witnessed to potential recruits in public places. They also attracted widespread public attention on account of the mass weddings or 'Blessings' where hundreds or even thousands of couples were married in ceremonies presided over by Reverend Moon and his wife.[6] The publicity was not favourable, however (Bjornstad 1976; Edwards 1979; Enroth 1977; 1979; Heftmann 1983; Levitt 1976; Martin 1985; Underwood 1979). In a survey carried out by Rex

[3] For details about the early life of Moon and the Church in Korea, see Breen 1997; Introvigne 2000; Matczak 1982; Moon 2010; Sontag 1977.

[4] For information about the movement's early life in the West, see Barker 1978; 1984; Bromley and Shupe 1979; Cozin 1973; Lofland 1966; 1977; Mickler 1980b; 1990; Salonen 1982; Wood 1979; 2001.

[5] Although Moon himself stated that his followers should be proud to be called Moonies (and around the late 1970s I obtained a badge declaring "I'M A MOONIE AND I ♥ IT!" which was reproduced among a number of lurid press-cuttings on the cover of my book, *The Making of a Moonie*), Unificationists now find the term derogatory, and for this reason, unless the term is used within a quotation, I shall refer to members of the movement as Unificationists.

[6] Whilst originally the Blessings were only for Unificationists who had fulfilled certain 'conditions', later they included non-Unificationists – on 10 April 1992 forty Muslims took part in a Blessing (Mickler 2000: 370). My husband and I were among the many who found themselves being invited to get Blessed sometime in the 1990s; my husband politely turned down the offer.

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

Weiner and Deanne Stillman (1979: 246) towards the end of the 1970s, just over a thousand Americans born between 1940 and 1952 were given a list of 155 names and asked how they felt about each of them. Only 3 per cent of the respondents had not heard of the Reverend Moon.[7] Only 1 per cent admitted to admiring him. The owner of no other name on the list elicited less admiration, and the only person whom a higher percentage of respondents did not admire was the ritual killer Charles Manson.[8]

Before long, anxious parents were paying large sums of money to have their (adult) children extracted from the movement. Bewildered that their sons and daughters could give up a promising future to follow a Korean evangelist who expected them to spend long hours fundraising and recruiting members, and who would marry them to someone whom they had met only hours before and with whom they quite possibly did not share a common language, the only feasible explanation appeared to be that the movement was using some kind of brainwashing or mind-control techniques that were well-nigh irresistible and irreversible – and the only way to rescue the victims was to have them kidnapped and deprogrammed.[9]

Despite the high visibility of the converts and the widely publicised photographs of all those couples getting married, Unificationism did not reach the high numbers of members that both it and its opponents have claimed (Barker 1984: 27). In fact, during the late 1970s and 1980s it is unlikely that the number of members in the West ever exceeded a few thousand; in Britain and other European countries it was only a few hundred at most.[9] The exaggeration in numbers was due partly to the high profile of Moon and the long hours the members spent peddling and witnessing in public places, partly to the fact that converts were more likely to be counted than defectors, and partly because, while the movement wanted to demonstrate how successful it

[7] It is possible that were the survey to be repeated today with the same age group it would be more likely to be just 3 per cent who *had* heard of him.

[8] For information about the Manson Family, see Bugliosi 1977; Guinn 2013; and Nielsen 1984.

[9] For further information on deprogramming, see Barker 1989: Appendix II; Bromley and Richardson 1983; 1988; Coleman 1985; Dubrow-Eichel 1989a; 1989b; 1990; Enroth 1977; Fefferman 2010; Patrick 1976. [9] In 1997, one estimate of the number of members in the USA was 3,000 (Fisher and Leen 1997b). In Europe, the numbers increased to 2,000 after the fall of the Berlin Wall (Barker 1984: 64-65; 1997). There were possibly 10,000 or so members in Japan. In Korea and later in the West the figures became increasingly difficult to ascertain as it was more families than individuals who were associated with the movement, and when the second and subsequent generations arrived there was no consensus as to whether the children should be counted. Also, membership became far more ambiguous (see below). According to some figures reported at a Unification conference , in January 2014 there were 115,862 worship attenders, almost half of whom (49,103) were in Japan, and just over a quarter of whom (27,690) were in Korea. North America (USA + Canada) claimed 5,663 attenders and Europe claimed 3,191. West Africa claimed 13,585. Roughly double the total were said to be 'regular members'. (Personal communication from a North American member)

was being (and was in denial about the fact that converts were frequently leaving), the media and the increasingly vocal opponents of Unificationism wanted to demonstrate what a threat the movement was and that, unless they were deprogrammed, Unificationists were incapable of escaping once they had been captured.[10]

But what was little understood was the extent to which the movement could have a positive attraction for these young people. It offered them something that they felt, or could be easily led to feel, was lacking in their lives (Barker 1984). Exactly what this was could differ from person to person, but one important factor that has frequently been ignored, yet which drew a considerable number and possibly played a significant role in attracting the majority of young people to the Unification Church, was its religious teaching.

Unificationism as a Religious Movement

The Reverend Moon tells a story of how, as a boy of fifteen or sixteen,[11] Jesus appeared before him and said "God is in great sorrow because of the pain of humankind. You must take on a special mission on earth having to do with Heaven's work" (Moon 2010:50). Numerous encounters with Jesus followed and Moon was to receive further revelations about the nature of God and His creation.

With the passage of time, Moon started to tell others about his various revelations and these were written down by disciples, eventually comprising what came to be known as the *Divine Principle,* which contains most of the basic beliefs of Unificationism.[12] This provides an interpretation of the Old and New Testaments with traces of other religions such as Buddhism, Confucianism, Shamanism and some of the Korean new religions with which Moon had associated in the 1940s and '50s (Breen 1997; Nevalainen 2005). It then goes on to disclose further revelations following the time of the Gospels. It is impossible to do justice to its complexity here but, briefly, in the opening chapter, creation is seen in terms of complementary opposites:

[10] The so-called 'anti-cult movement' of the period focussed almost entirely on the Unification Church, the Children of God, the Church of Scientology and ISKCON. (Giambalvo *et al.* 2013; Patrick 1976; Shupe and Bromley 1980)

[11] The Korean calendar differs from the Western calendar which can cause some confusion in dating.

[12] Originally produced in Korean as *Wolli Haesul* then as *Wolli Kangron*, and there are several versions of *Divine Principle* in English and a number of other languages. The second English edition (Moon 1973) was widely used, later in conjunction with Moon (1996) during the movement's early days in the West. See also Barker 1984: Ch 3; Bryant and Hodges 1978; Chryssides 1991; Kim 1997; Kim 1987; Quinn 2006; and http://www.newworldencyclopedia.org/entry/Divine_Principle#Other_Unification_Church_texts

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

positive and negative units come together in a complementary relationship which, in turn becomes a unit that combines with a further unit to create yet another whole, and eventually we have male and female units, then, at the most complex level, man and woman.[13] Chapter Two explains that God created Adam and Eve with the intention that they would mature in the Garden of Eden until they were ready to be joined together in a God-centred marriage, when they would have children who would eventually populate a world with the fundamental unit of a God-centred family. However, the Archangel Lucifer (represented in the Book of Genesis as the serpent), whom God had entrusted to act as a guardian to Adam and Eve, became jealous of God's love for Adam, and seduced Eve on the spiritual plane, and Eve subsequently seduced Adam physically before they were ready for God's Blessing in marriage. The Fall was thus not literally eating a fruit, but tasting and gaining knowledge of the forbidden fruit of sexual intercourse; in other words, it entailed the misuse of love, the most powerful of all forces. As a consequence, the resulting children inherited a fallen nature (original sin) and were born into families that were Lucifer-centred, rather than God-centred.

In other chapters, the whole of history is interpreted as attempts by God with the help of certain key persons to restore the original ideal of a Kingdom of Heaven on earth. Jesus was to have played a crucial role as the Second Adam, but his mission failed as he was killed before he was able to marry the new Eve and establish a God-centred family. Subsequently, a number of parallels are drawn between the time of the original Fall to Jesus' death and then from the time of Jesus' death up to the twentieth century, reaching 'the Conclusion' that a new Second Adam or Messiah would be born in Korea sometime between 1917 and 1930.

Although *Divine Principle* undoubtedly contains most of the basic premises of Unification thought, Moon continued throughout his life to offer up further revelations, much of which centred on the role that he and his family played in laying special foundations for the restoration of God's Kingdom and overcoming the power of Satan (Lucifer). The most important foundation for Moon's victory over Satan was his second marriage in 1960 to Hak Ja Han (1943-). Reverend and Mrs Moon were now able to fulfil their role as 'True Parents' and their children to be 'True Children'.

[13] In some ways, these complementary units resemble the Taoist Yin Yang.

Unificationism as a Spiritual Movement

Although in many ways *Divine Principle* and Moon's pronouncements were concerned with claims about the historical and contemporary world, it would be a mistake not to recognise that Unificationism has a profoundly spiritual dimension. This has been interpreted as owing much of its origin to Korean shamanism, particularly so far as ritual sexual practices are concerned (Nevalainen 2005; Yu and Guisso 1988).[14] The spiritual interpretation of dreams is a practice that has been common with Moon and many of his more 'spiritual' followers.[15] Others have seen Unificationism as incorporating more Western spiritualist features, Moon's early association with the spiritualist Arthur Ford (1969) being but one well-publicised example. Although not central to the movement, spiritual healing has been reported on numerous occasions and several members are believed to have special healing powers.

Unificationism has a fundamental belief in the spirit world and the significance of the relationship between its inhabitants and those who are living in this world. To quote Dr Young Oon Kim, one of Moon's closest early disciples who was greatly influenced by the works of Emanuel Swedenborg (1688-1772), and who was responsible for establishing one of the first Unification centres in the USA (Lofland 1997; Mickler 1980b):

> … the existence of [the] spiritual dimension can be shown from parapsychological evidence, which seems to indicate a regular interaction between the physical and extrasensory worlds. ... As man cannot realize his full potentialities without uniting with God, the visible world cannot actualize its true value unless it forms a positive continuing relationship with the spirit world.
>
> Unification theology …. makes faith in human immortality an essential feature of its doctrine of creation. We do not simply continue to exist after death. From the beginning and throughout our lives, we live in both worlds. (Kim 1987: drawn from section on *Living in Two Worlds*)

[14] There are numerous allegations of Moon having performed ritual sexual practices that were practiced in several messianic groups in Korea between the 1940s and '60s, especially one referred to as pikareun (pigarum) in which women were believed to have their wombs purified through sexual intercourse with the Messiah (Nevalainen 2005).

[15] During the time I spent doing research at Camp K, a Unification workshop in California, before breakfast each morning we were asked to recount our dreams and these were interpreted for us to explain what, we were told, was their true significance.

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

The centrality of the spirit world was well illustrated when one of Moon's sons, Heung Jin (1966-1984), was killed in a road accident (Moon 2010: 200). Moon is reported as having proclaimed that Heung Jin's sacrifice had prevented a great calamity happening to either the Korean nation or to Moon himself (Beverley 2004: 47). It was, furthermore, announced that Heung was doing important work in the spirit world, including teaching Jesus (*ibid.*). A few weeks after Heung Jin's passing into the spirit world, Moon married him to (Julia) Hoon Sook Pak (the daughter of Colonel Bo Hi Pak, one of Moon's closest lieutenants), who is a highly accomplished dancer and is now the Director of the Universal Ballet of Korea (Moon 2010: 201).

While Moon was undoubtedly considered the most significant person communicating with the spirit world, there have been many others who have attested to receiving messages and who were taken seriously by the members. Some of these were in a relatively 'ordinary' position in the movement, but others have held key roles. One such was Mrs Hyo-Nam Kim, who was believed to channel messages from Mrs Moon's mother.

Another person who had previously been highly influential for a while was a young church member from Zimbabwe, named Cleophas Kundioni, who, in 1988, claimed to be the embodiment of Heung Jin. Initially, Moon endorsed these claims and Cleophas came to be known as Black Heung Jin or Second Heung Jin. After some time, however, Cleophas was imposing harsh punishments on members who were expected to confess their sins to him; one of his more severe beatings resulted in Colonel Pak being hospitalised.[16] Eventually, Cleophas' violence and womanizing resulted in Moon's announcing that Heung Jin's spirit had returned to the spirit world. Cleophas returned to Africa, where, it is said, he established a breakaway movement with himself as the Messiah (Hong 1998: 153).

Importantly, after death everyone goes to the spirit world where they will be reunited with their spouse if she or he has died first,[17] and with their ancestors, who may need 'liberating' (see below). Not all spiritual personalities are important, but members have frequently claimed to be aware of their presence – there are the good spirits who have been observed as a kind of aura protecting the Blessed children,

[16] Dan Fefferman "Black Heung Jin Nim" August 15, 2000. http://www.tparents.org/Library/Unification/Talks/Feffermn/Fefferman-BlackHJN.htm; http://howwelldoyouknowyourmoon.tumblr.com/tagged/black+heung+jin

[17] Although marriage is for life in both this and the spirit world, Unificationists can have a 'comfort wife or husband' on this earth to meet their physical needs until they re-join the partner with whom they were originally Blessed.

and there are the evil spirits who attack miscreant members – or sociologists: 'Satan invades' I have been warned on several occasions during my research.[18]

Unificationism and Religious Rituals and Practices

Compared to many other religions, Unificationism initially had relatively few rituals, but it does have some, and these have grown considerably in number over the years and are seen as making a fundamental contribution to the restoration of God's Kingdom on earth (Kwak 1980; Kim 1985).

Possibly the most significant ritual is the Holy Wine Ceremony, which takes place as "an indemnity condition by which human beings who were born from Satan's world are re-born by True Parents."[19] This is the time when the couple, who had inherited fallen nature because of the original fall, undergo a change in their blood lineage.[20] The Holy Wine Ceremony takes place after the 'matching' when a couple becomes engaged. Originally, those who were deemed qualified to partake in the Blessing would gather in a large room, men on one side and women on the other. Moon would then select a man and a woman, who would step outside the room to decide whether to accept Moon's proposal (most, though not all, did). Later, rather than a matching ceremony, the task of selection was left to some of the senior leaders, the couple's parents, or, more recently, even the participants themselves.[21] Whilst the matchings and the Holy Wine Ceremony were private occasions, restricted to Unification participants, the marriages themselves, or, as they are known, the Blessings

[18] A post on a site that consists of postings by former and disillusioned members alleges that reports of sales by the Unification Church in Japan of a special shampoo to deal with evil spirits in your hair is not a spoof. http://howwelldoyouknowyourmoon.tumblr.com/post/65502219774/unification-church-shampoo-for-evilspirits-this Elsewhere on the same site, one can read about the sale of houses in the spirit world:

Cost in Japan 1.600.000 yen. [$14,500];

You must buy the house quickly, because all the houses near to God are getting sold;

If you wait you will be far from God.;

Even if you are not yet blessed, you can buy quickly.

40 days after you buy the house, construction starts on the real house in the spirit world. http://howwelldoyouknowyourmoon.tumblr.com/post/60906347183/daemonim-is-selling-these-spirit-worldhouses

[19] https://bfm.familyfed.org/wp-content/uploads/Conducting-the-Holy-Wine-Ceremony.pdf
[20] http://www.unification.net/gww/gww-04.html
[21] Details of members available for Blessing can now be uploaded by potential matchmakers and partners on the internet. https://bfm.familyfed.org/forms/

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

are semi-public affairs, when hundreds or even thousands of couples line up and would have had Holy Water sprinkled on them by him and Mrs Moon.[22,28] These have been recognised as spectacular occasions by the media, with pictures of the amassed couples being shown throughout the world.[23]

A further ritual related to a first-generation couple's marriage is the Three-day Ceremony, during which the marriage is consummated. This ensures that "the children born from this couple will not have Original Sin. They will be born pure and sinless like Adam and Eve as second generation."[24] Involved in the ceremony are various items considered to be of spiritual significance: Holy Handkerchiefs for ritual purification; Holy Salt; Holy Robes; Holy Song Book and a Holy Candle.[25] Also incorporated in the ceremony is a further Unification ritual: the reciting of the Family Pledge.[26] Then, once a child is born, "Blessed couples should hold the child dedication ceremony on the morning (7:00 a.m. is the recommended time) of the eighth day after birth" (Kwak 1980: 169).

Holy Salt plays a central role in the lives of members. Made according to precise instructions, it is used for purification purposes, and it is usual to find containers of Holy Salt in such places as the kitchen and bathroom of Unification homes and centres. "The value and significance of the Holy Salt is to eradicate or annihilate or exterminate what is satanic, and if you use Holy Salt you are always sanctified" (Kwak 1980: 47). Holy Salt has also played an important ritual role in the establishment of Holy Grounds in well over a hundred selected places around the world. These are seen as a way of regaining land for God. (Kwak 1980: 5970; Salonen 1982).

Mention might also be made of the special Holy Days that have been celebrated by Unificationists. These include True God's Day;[27] True Parents' Day; True Children's Day; the Day of All True Things. Unification calendars mark these and special events and achievements of the movement as well as the anniversaries of Blessings

[22] The Blessing ceremonies are not legally binding and couples have to attend a registry office, or its equivalent, for a civil ceremony in order to become legally married.
[23] See, for example, https://ichef-1.bbci.co.uk/news/624/cpsprodpb/D6DE/production/_88360055_0315612701.jpg
[24] https://bfm.familyfed.org/wp-content/uploads/3-Day-Ceremony-2014.pdf
[25] *Ibid.*
[26] Kwak 1980: 21-38. Several different versions of the Pledge exist. http://www.tparents.org/library/unification/topics/traditn/0-Toc.htm Members have been expected to rise to perform the Pledge ritual at 5am on Sunday (the first day of the week) and the first day of the month, and the year. See also Bramwell (2018) for a discussion of the significance of the Family Pledge.
[27] In 2013, Mrs Moon announced that True God's Day would be known as True Heavenly Parent's Day. http://familyfed.org/news-story/holy-days/the-48th-true-heavenly-parents-day-11123/. [34] http://www.tparents.org/Library/Unification/Topics/Calendar/0-Toc.htm

and the birth (and death) of members of the True Family.[34]

Unificationism as a Charismatic Movement

The term 'charismatic' has many meanings and is often used loosely to refer to a pop singer or some television celebrity. In the context of this chapter, the concept is employed in the way it was defined by the German sociologist, Max Weber, as:

> a certain quality of an individual personality, by virtue of which he is set apart from ordinary men and treated as endowed with supernatural, superhuman, or at least specifically exceptional powers or qualities. These are such as are not accessible to the ordinary person, but are regarded as of divine origin or as exemplary, and on the basis of them the individual concerned is treated as a leader. (Weber 1947: 358-9)

Weber's interest was in distinguishing between different kinds of legitimate authority. His three 'ideal types'[28] are charismatic, traditional and legal-rational authority (Weber 1947: 328). Traditional authority relies on an acceptance that this is the way things have always been done, and a leader is both enabled and constrained by what is perceived to be historical precedence. Unificationism, as a new religion had no direct history; however, Moon certainly drew on Confucianism and traditional Korean culture including its shamanic practices, and with the passage of time he also sanctioned a considerable number of beliefs and practices as being part of the 'Unification Tradition' (Kwak 1980; Kim 1985).

Legal-rational authority is based on a system of rules that are in accordance with known principles by those who are occupying recognised roles that give them authority in particular matters; it is the kind of authority to be found in bureaucratic organisations. It is certainly the case that, as it grew, there developed within Unificationism a hierarchical authoritarian structure in which members were expected to defer to their immediate leader (or Abel figure) about certain matters,[29] and their Abel figure was expected to defer to his or her Abel figure – and so on, up a more or less clear structure, with Moon at the apex.[30]

[28] Weber uses the analytical tool of the 'ideal type' not to suggest that the type is ideal in any evaluative way, but ideal in the sense that it is defined in a clear manner so that it can be used for comparative purposes, even though such a pure ideal is unlikely to exist in reality.

[29] http://www.unification.net/1976/761101.html ; http://www.unification.net/1981/811028.html

[30] For a Unificationist's discussion about the potential tension between obedience and conscience, see Dan Fefferman "Before Absolute Faith and Obedience: A Case for the Primacy of Conscience."

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

However, there can be no doubt that the authority which Moon wielded within the Unification movement was predominantly charismatic. As a charismatic figure his authority was not restricted by either rules or tradition; furthermore, his authority could extend over more of his followers' lives than would that of, say, a Pope or Archbishop of Canterbury: he could direct where they lived; how they lived; what work they did; whom they married; when and how they would consummate their marriage; what they wore on special occasions; that the men were clean-shaven; and so on…. and any of this could be changed without a moment's notice. Of course, in practice, not all these decisions were inevitably made by Moon or, via his authority, by the members' immediate leaders. Members could and might even be encouraged to 'do their own thing' and, with the passage of time, the tight control over individuals' lives loosened considerably. The fact remains, however, that, at least at the beginning, members believed that Moon had the right to tell them what to do because of his special relationship with God and his role as the Messiah.

As Bryan Wilson (1973: 499) has argued, "Charisma as a term expresses less a quality of person than of relationship." In other words, the followers have to agree to grant a charismatic leader authority over them; they have to accept that he has a special quality. And there have been plenty of instances in which a Unificationist has become disillusioned and left.[31] At the same time, it has been possible to observe a process within the movement that has led to the creation and maintenance of Moon being perceived as a charismatic leader, a process that I have termed 'charismatisation' (Barker 1993). This has manifested itself in a number of different ways, such as the circulation of mythical stories about Moon's early life;[32] his sacrificial nature and caring for others; how deeply he felt God's and the world's suffering; and how 'human' he was (presumably most of us being human, it is only necessary to point this out if the person concerned might be assumed to be other (more) than human). Members who had never actually seen Moon (apart from through the ubiquitous photographs that were to be found in every home) can believe not only that they knew him personally, but that he knew them personally. Others, who had attended a talk that Moon has given, would recount how he had looked straight at them, and

https://www.tparents.org/Library/Unification/Talks/Feffermn/Fefferman-Conscience.htm.

[31] There are, of course, many reasons why people have left the Unification movement, only one of which is that they no longer accept that Moon should be granted a charismatic authority over their lives (Bromley 1988; Wright 1987)

[32] Mythical does not imply untrue in this context, but something that conveys a special, deeper meaning than the most obvious one.

they had had an immediate awareness that he knew exactly who they were and what they were feeling. But above all, Moon's followers believed that he was the Messiah, chosen by God to restore the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, and they had to play their role by doing whatever he needed of them.

Unificationism as a Messianic Movement

Although *Divine Principle* does not explicitly state that Moon is the Messiah, and although, in the presence of non-members, members were unlikely to claim that he was before 1992, there can be little doubt that from the earliest days they have believed that he was indeed the Lord of the Second Advent whom God had chosen to restore His Kingdom on earth. When, in 1979, at the end of a 41-page questionnaire, I asked 425 Unificationists the (admittedly loaded) question "At what point did you first accept that Father is the Messiah?" less than one per cent (three people) said they were still not certain. A few (4 per cent) did not answer the question, but no one adopted the option that they did not believe Moon was the Messiah. (Barker 1984: 83)

By 1992, however, Moon was revealing more information about the Messiahship, now conceived as a mission for True Parents (Mickler 2000: 379). Then, in a speech given at a banquet in Seoul on 24 August 1992, before over a thousand selected participants from various conferences that had been taking place, Moon declared:

> In early July, I spoke in…cities around Korea at rallies held by the Women's
> Federation for World Peace. There I declared my wife, WFWP President Hak Ja Han Moon, and I are the True Parents of all humanity. I declared that we are the Savior, the Lord of the Second Advent, the Messiah. (*op cit*: 383)

Later, on the 23rd of March 2004, a 'Peace Awards Banquet' was held at the Dirksen Senate Office Building in Washington. Members of Congress were among the guests. Following an introduction by Congressman Danny Davis (D. Illinois), Rev. and Mrs. Moon proceeded to the front stage area, flanked by escorts from various religious traditions underneath a large portrait of the U.S. Capitol. Archbishop George Augustus Stallings and Congressman Roscoe Bartlett (R. Maryland) carried in the royal robes and, after a polite bow, offered them to Rev. and Mrs. Moon. Rev. Jesse

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

Edwards and Congressman Davis entered with crowns and, likewise, after bows, offered them to Rev. and Mrs. Moon who were fitted by their son Hyun Jin and his wife, Jun Sook. (Mickler 2016) Then, it is reported that:

> Mr. Moon said emperors, kings and presidents had "declared to all heaven and earth that Reverend Sun Myung Moon is none other than humanity's savior, messiah, returning lord and true parent." He added that the founders of the world's great religions, along with figures like Marx, Lenin, Hitler and Stalin, had "found strength in my teachings, mended their ways and been reborn as new persons."[33]

Unificationism as a Millenarian Movement

Unificationism is not a millenarian (or millennial) movement in the sense that there is an expectation of Jesus (or Moon) ruling for a thousand-year period as foretold in the Book of Revelation. It is, however, in the sense that a dramatic and fundamental change in society will be brought about with the advent of a Messiah and the Restoration of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. Periods of time have always played an important role in Unification beliefs, and Moon has continually talked about particular foundations for the restoration having been laid and victories over Satan having been won. In the early years there was an expectation that the year 1967 would see a dramatic change. This date means nothing to most Unificationists nowadays; however, when talking to a couple of long-time members, I have been told there was considerable anticipation at the time and that several members left disappointed when nothing obvious happened.[34]

Nonetheless, the urgency associated with millenarian movements has been evident throughout most of Unification history. Not only has Moon periodically announced another foundation had been achieved, there has always been a goal towards which the members were to work. It is, incidentally, noteworthy that all three leaders of the main schismatic movements (see below) are renewing expectations of imminent achievements.

[33] http://www.nytimes.com/2012/09/03/world/asia/rev-sun-myung-moon-founder-of-unification-church-dies-at92.html

[34] Moon did, however, offer an explanation of why 1967 had been a special date. On God's Day (1 January) 1968, Moon announced that Hak Ja Han had successfully completed her 7-year course and could now stand in the positon of True Mother. So for the first time, there were "True Parents". 1967 was significant because it had marked the end of the first seven-year period of the True Parents' marriage.

Unificationism as a Utopian Movement

It could be argued that there has been a gradual shift from Unificationism being less of a millenarian movement to its being more of a utopian one. Unlike members of some other religions with a strongly millenarian belief who have envisaged a future where they mingled with angels and played with lions, when Unificationists were asked in the late 1970s what they thought the world would look like in the year 2000, most of the answers were of a thisworldly rather than a supernatural nature – rather abstract generalizations: everyone would love each other, there would be trust between people and cultures, children would be happy, crime, and in particular pornography, would be completely eradicated. On being pressed, a few gave some more practical details—we would no longer need passports; everyone would study the *Divine Principle* at school. It was also envisaged that there would be world peace and the unification of Korea and of all religions.[35]

The most important change for the future has always been that there would be a world made up of ideal, God-centred families who were no longer encumbered by original sin. However, while the first Blessed children were seen as very special and different from all other children when they initially arrived, it was not long before it was realised that, even if their blood lineage had been changed as a result of the Holy Wine ceremony, the children had not been born perfect. The dashed expectations were particularly challenging in the case of the True Children who did not appear to behave in the way that children should behave in an Ideal Family (Barker 1983; Hong 1998). I found myself being offered a more nuanced interpretation of *Divine Principle* as the members realised that they had not really understood the limitations involved in the Holy Wine Ceremony – it was not going to be that easy. True children, they still have to go through the growth period just as Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden. They still have the freedom to choose. God instructed Adam and Eve not to eat of the fruit.

Engaging with Society

It is very rare, indeed almost impossible, for any minority religion not to be engaged

[35] Conversely, my control group (which consisted of young adults who were not Unificationists but whom I asked many of the questions I asked the Unificationists for comparative purposes) frequently said that they didn't think there would *be* a year 2000 (Barker 1984: 223).

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

with society. Those that reject the world most forcefully are still likely to depend on the wider society for defence, economic exchange and new members. Even if, perhaps especially if, they cut themselves off geographically and socially and become self-sufficient so far as food and shelter are concerned and rely on their own children for a continuing membership, the wider society is likely to interfere with them.[36]

As already intimated, Unificationism in general and the Reverend Moon in particular have been viewed with suspicion since the early beginnings by state authorities, relatives of converts, the media, anti-cult movements and the public at large. Whether it wanted to or not, Unificationism had to contend with society. But, despite the fact that Roy Wallis categorised it as a 'world-rejecting movement',[37] the Unification Church has, from the start, taken an initiative in engaging with society. At grass--roots level, representatives of the movement were sent as missionaries throughout the world, sometimes in teams as, for example, part of the One World Crusade, "the engine of the Unification Church's evangelistic activities from 1972 through 1974" (Mickler 2000: 79),[38] and, later, as individuals or families to establish local centres, when they were instructed to visit 360 households, offering practical services such as mowing the lawn, doing shopping or cleaning windows. Moon himself was certainly a highly visible figure, touring around the United States and elsewhere, speaking at large Rallies and meeting persons of note in a wide range of professions. And while such contacts were undoubtedly intended to spread Unificationist religious beliefs and values and build a broader concurrence based on what were considered to be universal principles and values, the political angle was rarely far from the surface.

Unificationism as a Political Movement

From an early age, Moon lived in a situation of political unrest. With the Japan-Korea Annexation Treaty of 1910, Japan had taken control of Korea until it was defeated at the end of the Second World War, when Soviet forces took control to the north of the 38th parallel and the American forces took control to the south. In August 1945,

[36] Jim Jones' People's Temple in the Guyana jungle is but one example of a religion that tried to 'get away from it all' with tragic consequences (Hall 1996; Krause 1998; Moore 2003; Wessinger 2000).

[37] "The world-rejecting movement expects that the millennium will shortly commence or that the movement will sweep the world, and, when all have become members or when they are in a majority, or when they have become guides and counsellors to kings and presidents, then a new world-order will begin, a simpler, more loving, more humane and more spiritual order in which the old evils and mistakes will be eradicated, and Utopia will have begun." (Wallis 1984: 9)

[38] "One World Crusade, Inc. (OWC) was http://www.tparents.org/Library/Unification/Books/40Years/40-2-

South Korea became independent, and in November of that year North Korea too became an independent state. Five years later, the North invaded South Korea but was driven back by United Nations forces from the United States and elsewhere. China then entered the war and an uneasy military stalemate was eventually established and exists to this day.[39]

Moon had been born in what is now North Korea, before and during the Korean War he had been interned in the Hungnam prison camp between1948 and 1950, but once the camp was liberated by the Allies, he managed to make his way to the South, and, for the rest of his life, one of his major concerns was the unification of Korea; and to achieve this the Heavenly side of democracy had to overcome the satanic side of communism throughout the world by means of a Third World War.

While Moon made it clear that the Third World War was inevitable, he did explain that there were two ways for the War to be fought. First, the satanic side could be subjugated by weapons, but such external subjugation would have to be followed by inward subjugation. The second way would be

> … to subjugate and unify the Satanic world directly by a wholly internal fight through ideology without any external fight by weapons.… Which kind of world would actualize one world would be decided according to the success or failure of man's carrying out his own [five per cent] portion of responsibility." (Moon 1973: 491)

It is not surprising therefore, that fighting communism played a central role in Moon's political forays throughout his lifetime.[40] In 1968, the International Federation for the Victory Over Communism was established in Korea, the American arm of which was founded in 1969 as the Freedom Leadership Foundation (FLF). This adopted a hawkish position on the Vietnam War (Wood 1979; 2001) and was particularly active throughout the 1970s and '80s, especially, but by no means only, in Washington DC where it cultivated a wide range of politicians and organisations eager to take advantage of enthusiastic Unificationists offering their help and funding for several anti-communist ventures. It also established a newspaper, the *Rising Tide*, which challenged communism and its activities.[41] One well-publicised FLFled

[39] Although there has recently been a meeting between the heads of North and South Korea (May 2018).

[40] The unification of Korea continues as an important goal for Moon's eldest living son, Hyun Jin Preston Moon, who heads one of the current Unification factions (Moon 2016). See also Introvigne (2018)

[41] http://www.causafoundation.org/voc.html

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

project was the public support given to Nixon at the time of the Watergate affair. Another prominent organisation, which Moon established in 1980, was CAUSA (1980), the primary work of which was to teach 'Godism', a God-centred world view (CAUSA 1985). CAUSA was particularly active in Latin America, where it not only gave seminars on Godism, but also supported right-wing factions that were fighting to overcome communism.

Space does not permit coverage of the multiple 'Victory Over Communism' organisations, seminars, rallies, publications and lobbying in which Unificationism has invested time and money, but mention should be made of the well-publicised meetings that Moon had with heads – and, even more frequently, previous heads – of dozens of states and other people of influence around the world. Amongst the more notable of these, were exchanges with such right-wing personages as Richard Nixon; ex-Presidents Gerald Ford and George Bush Sr.; Canadian ex-premier Brian Mulroney; former British Prime Minister Edward Heath; US Senators Jesse Helms and Orrin Hatch; Ronald Reagan's defence secretary Caspar Weinberger; the former NATO chief general Alexander Haig; and the Moral Majority leader, the Reverend Jerry Falwell.[42] Even more remarkable, however, was the fact that Unificationists managed to arrange a meeting with the USSR's President Mikhail Gorbachev in 1990 and then with North Korea's President Kim Il Sung in 1991.

Unificationism was by no means always accepted in its promotion of political activities. In the late 1970s, the movement as a whole came under the scrutiny of the Subcommittee on International Organizations of the United States House of Representatives Committee on International Relations. Chaired by Representative Donald M. Fraser of Minnesota, the Committee was interested in investigating Unificationist connections with the Korean CIA, especially the use that was being made of the Little Angels children's dance troupe founded by Moon, in acting as a propaganda tool for the Republic of Korea (Fraser 1978: 43ff). Colonel Bo Hi Pak robustly denied the charges (Pak 1999a; 199b),[43] and the Committee was unable to come up with any conclusive proof of 'Un-American activities' – and incapable of deterring the movement from continuing its political pursuits.

The collapse of the Soviet Union was seen by many Unificationists as a victory for the movement, but there continued to be the need for the unification of Korea

[42] https://www.theguardian.com/world/2012/sep/02/rev-sun-myung-moon

[43] Public interpretations of the incident ranged from sympathetic (Sherwood 1991: Ch. XIV) to accusatory (Anderson 1986: 66-68; Boettcher 1980: 320-321).

and political activities continued in various ways. Unificationists and the Unification-funded *Washington Times* had campaigned for Ronald Reagan's election as President and subsequently they supported his administration; they advocated intermediate-range missiles in Europe and the Strategic Defence Initiative,[44] and they championed the violent revolt of the Nicaraguan Contras (Mickler 2003). In 1981 Moon announced a plan to build an International Peace Highway that would eventually remove national boundaries and bring humanity together.[45] In 2003 it was announced at a Unification Rally in Seoul that a new Family Party for Universal Peace and Unity had been formed. The Party's President, Chung Hwan Kwak,[46] announced that the Party would not be running candidates in the South Korean elections the following year, but would instead focus on publicizing itself and its goals, and that chief among these would be promoting the reunification of Korea.[47] Moon's son, Hyun Jin, who is also Kwak's son-in-law, published a book in 1916 sub-titled *A Vision for a United Korea*.

It is impossible to list all the subsidiary organisations, but their scope is impressive, some being directly and obviously connected with Moon's political ambitions, others less obviously, but none the less indirectly so. To mention but a few, they include: Ambassadors for Peace; the American Freedom Coalition; the Association for the Unity of Latin America; the Chinese Evangelical Association; the International Cultural Foundation; the International Family Association; the New Ecumenical Research Association (New ERA); News World Communications; the Religious Youth Service; the Universal Peace Federation; the Women's Federation for World Peace; and the Inter Religious Federation for World Peace.[48] CARP (the Collegiate Association for the Research of Principles), a student organisation that played a significant outreach role, was founded in Korea as early as 1955; it then expanded to Japan in 1964, and in 1973 spread throughout America then Europe, becoming a

[44] Popularly referred to as 'Star Wars', Nixon's SDI involved the militarisation of space.

[45] http://www.uk.upf.org/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=515:rev-moons-grand-vision-ofpeace-connecting-the-world-across-the-bering-strait-the-korea-japan-tunnel-and-the-international-highwayproject&catid=36:peace-and-development&Itemid=58

[46] Reverend Kwak was one of Moon's closest aides, but became estranged from Moon shortly before the latter's death and is currently closely allied with Preston Moon, who is married to one of Kwak's daughters. See Introvigne (2018).

[47] https://www.au.org/church-state/may-2003-church-state/people-events/sun-myung-moon-forms-newpolitical-party-to-merge

[48] For an impressively long list of Unification associated organisations, see https://www.culteducation.com/unif121.html.

[57] https://carplife.org/our-mission/

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

familiar feature on campuses as a means of recruitment to the movement throughout the world.[57] Finally, a whole series of conferences were organised by the movement to which leading experts in, for example, the fields of science,[49] theology,[59] the media, academia, sport and politics were invited to exchange ideas in luxury hotels, all expenses paid. (Barker 1979; [50]Horowitz 1978)

Unificationism as a Cultural Movement[60]

The Little Angels is but one of the many cultural activities associated with Unificationism. It was founded as early as 1962. Mention has already been made of the Universal Ballet, which had Julia Moon first as its prima ballerina and later as its Director. The Kirov Academy of Ballet (formerly the Universal Ballet Academy) is a ballet school founded by Moon in Washington, D.C. in 1989.

In 1972 the Unificationist International Cultural Foundation acquired the New York City Symphony Orchestra. But Moon's interest in music was not confined to the classics. It is said that he "went out one day and bought sixty-one brand new instruments to create the core of four new brass bands".[51] The Go World Brass Band drew audiences throughout the world, with Unificationists specialising in enthusiastic jazz performances. Other musical ventures included The New Hope Singers which had approximately 50 members in the 1970s. Mention might also be made of the Holy Songs that Unificationists, including Moon himself, have composed and frequently sung on both internal and public occasions (Holy Spirit Association 1972).[52]

There have been a number of accomplished artists who are or have been members of the Unification Church. One of these painted a series of murals depicting episodes in Moon's life around the gallery of the *New Yorker* foyer. Another is Jan Parker, who now lives in Hawaii but whose work I greatly admired when he lived in

[49] The International Conference on the Unity of Sciences (ICUS) met annually from 1973. It was through being invited to the London ICUS in 1974 that I first met the Unification Church. (Barker 1984: 12)

[50] These were known as the God Conferences and the participants included a wide range of theologians and religious studies professors. Several influential black pastors played a prominent role at these meetings. [60] There is a sense in which the Unification movement, at least around the 1970s, could be seen as a countercultural movement. It was one of the most prominent movements that were offering a disillusioned middle-class youth an answer to the problems of the world. Indeed, one of the frequently employed questions that Unification missionaries would ask potential recruits was whether they had any answers to the mess the world was in; then, when they received a negative answer, they would suggest that they did have an answer, so why not come along to dinner and learn about it?

[51] http://www.unification.net/1978/780706.html

[52] http://www.euro-tongil.org/swedish/english/holysongs.htm

London in the 1970s.[53] In 2014 the Unification Church Artists' Association boasted 472 members.[54] Another area into which Unificationists have ventured has been the film industry, most notably when it produced *Inchon*, starring Sir Laurence Olivier as General McArthur leading the amphibious landing of the Americans in 1950.[65]

Unificationism has also been heavily involved with various sporting ventures, including football, the martial arts and skiing. Of particular interest to the Moon family were equestrian events, with Preston Moon competing in the Seoul 1988 and Barcelona 1992 Olympics as part of the South Korean team. So far as Moon himself was concerned, fishing was a favourite sport that developed into one of the many Unification business enterprises.

Unificationism as a Business Enterprise

Although Unificationism began from modest beginnings, it was able to grow and prosper with hundreds of ventures bringing in billions of dollars, possibly tens or even hundreds of billions of dollars over the years. In the West, much of the early income came from personal donations and fundraising by members, frequently selling (or asking for donations for) candles, flowers, literature and other items on the streets and in other public places – sometimes for sixteen or more hours a day. Joining a Mobile Fundraising Team (MFT) would become a way of life, possibly for ten or more years, during the 1970s and '80s, and it was not unusual for an individual to average nearly $1,000 a week in the US. (Mickler 1980a: 225)

However, the bulk of Unification wealth has always been generated in Asia, both in Korea and, most importantly, in Japan. According to a 1997 report in the *Washington Post*,

> A detailed analysis by the Far Eastern Economic Review in 1990 valued the church's landholdings in South Korea alone at more than $1 billion. A single property on Seoul's Yoido [*sic*] Island was said to be worth $250 million…
>
> [However] It is Japan, not Korea, that provides the bulk of the church's wealth -- as much as 70 percent, church observers estimate. A former high-ranking Japanese church member told *The Post*

[53] https://www.saatchiart.com/janparker
[54] https://www.facebook.com/groups/UnificationChurchArtistsAssociation/members/ [65] https://www.cineplex.com/Movie/inchon/Photos

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

> in 1984 that $800 million had come from Japan into the United States in the previous nine years [1975-1984].
>
> Japanese church members have long turned profits selling ginseng products and religious items such as miniature stone pagodas -- products imported from Moon companies in Korea. (Fisher and Leen 1997a)

Another report claimed that Japanese members regularly raised $4000 per month each, and that over 100 million dollars was raised by their efforts every year, 90 per cent of which was sent to support Unification ventures elsewhere.[55]

Considerable amounts of Unification income have been invested in real estate. In America the movement purchases included such properties as The New Yorker Hotel, the Manhattan Center, the Belvedere Estate in Tarrytown and various other properties throughout not only the States, but also much of Europe and Latin America, where vast swathes of Paraguay, Uruguay and Brazil were purchased, and where, reportedly, Moon claimed he was building ,'a kingdom of heaven on earth, a new Garden of Eden.''[56] Real estate was also acquired in Japan and South Korea, with, perhaps most impressively of all, Cheongpyeong, a small town to the east of Seoul, housing a large complex of facilities including the Heaven and Earth Training Center,[57] where various Unification events take place, including Ancestor Liberation and Ancestor Blessing ceremonies.[58]

Not altogether surprisingly, this widespread accumulation of land and properties was by no means always welcomed. Back in the early '90s, *The New York Times* reported that the Church had demanded a personal apology from a developer named Donald Trump when it was trying to buy a property in which Trump had an interest and one of his associates had asked how local inhabitants would feel "when a thousand Moonies descend on Palm Beach every weekend?"[59]

One of the most lucrative businesses in which Moon and later his son, Kook Jin (Justin 1970-), were engaged was the manufacture of armaments (Mickler 2013a). Although Moon advocated peaceful means of Unification and overcoming (satanic) atheistic communism, he appeared to have no intention of leaving it to chance. At the

[55] http://www.geocities.ws/craigmaxim/w-1b.html
[56] http://www.nytimes.com/1999/11/28/world/suspicion-following-sun-myung-moon-to-brazil.html?mcubz=0
[57] http://en.cptc.kr/
[58] http://um-uk.org/files/2016/09/20160830-88-Cheongpyeong-2-day-WS-Schedule-Eng.pdf
[59] http://www.nytimes.com/1991/05/26/nyregion/unification-church-insists-trump-apologize.html

height of the Cold War, he warned that if "North Korea provokes a war against the South Korean people," his followers would organize a "Unification Crusade Army" and "take part in the war as a supporting force to defend both Korea and the free world" (Mickler 2003). Unification movement-owned factories in Korea manufactured M-1 rifles and the Vulcan Cannon. Starting in the early 1990s, Kook Jin has been building up his own armaments empire at the centre of which is Kahr Arms.[60] This is part of an inter-related set of companies that include N.Y. Saeilo, a subsidiary of Saeilo (Korea) Inc., which in turn was part of the Tongil Group in Seoul, South Korea (Jarvis 2011).[61] Among the many groups associated with Tongil,[73] is the Ilwha Company, which has world-wide sales of various ginseng products that are said to have not only healing effects for the body, but also to have spiritual properties.[62]

The Unification-related International Oceanic Enterprises include Master Marine Inc., which involves ship-building and a sea-food processing plant.[75] In 2006, the *Chicago Times* ran an article on the connection between the Unification Church and the True World Group which it referred to as a commercial powerhouse that built fleets of boats, ran dozens of distribution centres and supplied most of the nation's estimated 9,000 sushi restaurants on a daily basis (Eng *et al.* 2006). Several other kinds of restaurants are run by Unificationists, one being the Tick Tack Diner on the ground floor of the New Yorker Hotel.[63]

Among the other hundreds, or, probably thousands of Unification-related ventures, are or have been the Christian Bernard jewellery chain; Pyonghwa Motors; a titanium mine; golf courses; computer firms; photography shops; candle factories; travel firms; publishing houses and numerous journals and magazines (such as *In-*

[60] Justin (Kook Jin) has chosen to support his brother Sean (Hyung Jin Moon), who heads the Sanctuary Church faction of Unificationism and is a forceful advocate not only of the right to bear arms, as guaranteed by the US Second Amendment, but also the desirability of all citizens owning and knowing how to use firearms as a means of self defence. See, for example, http://campaign.r20.constantcontact.com/render?m=1120290311602&ca=f09d39d2-a89e-4412-a7257d472b48561f

[61] http://www.tongilgroup.org/eng/mastart/mastart.php Tongil Industries Co., Ltd. was formerly known as TIC JINHEUNG CO.,LTD. and changed its name to Tongil Industries Co., Ltd. in April 2006. The company was founded in 1988 and is based in Changwon-si, South Korea. Tongil Industries Co., Ltd. operates as a subsidiary of Tongil Group. https://www.bloomberg.com/research/stocks/private/snapshot.asp?privcapId=100714377 [73] 'Tongil' is Korean for 'unification', the name of the Unification Church in Korean being 'Tongilgyo', http://www.encyclo.co.uk/meaning-of-Tongil%20Group

[62] Sontag (1977: 143-4) recounts how during a break in his interview with Moon, ginseng tea was served and Moon talked about how honeyed ginseng invigorated him. Salonen, one of the American leaders, then told how Japanese leaders of the ginseng tea trading company had said "Under Father's direction we need two religions. We need *Divine Principle* for the spirit and ginseng tea for the body".

[75] *Rome News Tribune* 27 November 1985.

[63] The hotel, now the Wyndham New Yorker, is no longer run by the Unification Church, although several of its offices are located there.

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

sight and *The World and I*). The first daily newspaper the movement launched was *Sekkai Nippo* in Japan in1975. Two years later the *News World* (later renamed the *New York City Tribune*) appeared on the streets of New York. This was joined by a Spanish-language daily, *Noticias del Mundo* for the New York Hispanic community. One of the most influential dailies, *The Washington Times* began publication in 1982. Further publications have appeared throughout the entire American continent and the

Far East, as well as the *Middle East Times,* a cable television network, and a news service, Free Press International.[64]

However vast and extensive as Unification economic resources may be, it is worth remembering, as Bromley (1985: 270) pointed out, that they could seem dwarfed by comparison with those of some of the other more mainstream churches; the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints (popularly known as the Mormons) being an example in point. It is also worth noting that several Unification ventures have operated at a loss. *The Washington Times* would not appear to have ever been expected to make a profit; figures vary as to just how much it ran at a loss, one report claims it reached $35 million a year (Fisher and Leen 1997b). Another factor to be taken into account is that Unification businesses were affected negatively with the Asian stock market collapses of 1987 and 1997, though the True Sons, Kook Jin (Justin 1970-) and Hyun Jin (Preston 1969-) are astute business men who have contributed, variously, to the recovery and growth of much of the Unification business empire.

Finally a word might be added about the distribution of Unification wealth. Despite the fact that I have frequently been told by members that it is not the case, there can be little doubt that the Moon family has benefited considerably from the riches that the movement has accumulated. Close associates of Moon, mainly the Korean inner circle, and others in positions of leadership have also benefited materially. Rank and file members, however, especially in Japan and the West who converted in the early years, frequently donated whatever assets they had and worked for long hours with little or no remuneration. As they grew old, many have found themselves without any pension or health insurance (Barker 2012). The poverty that these early converts are experiencing is likely to be less severe for subsequent generations now that the majority of members are no longer expected to work for the movement, and

[64] Bromley (1985) gives a detailed account of Unification financial structure in the mid-1980s. See also https://www.culteducation.com/unif121.html for a list of many of the Unification associated organisations.

[78] https://uts.edu/index.php

those that do are now likely to receive competitive salaries with at least some insurance for the future. There are, however, many Blessed children who have left the movement and feel bitter about having to support their ageing parents.

Unificationism as an Educational Movement

Moon always recognised the value of education – several of his early disciples in Korea had joined from Ewha University in Seoul. As mentioned in the opening section, converts to the Unification Church in the West were disproportionately from middle-class families. Some had joined during a gap year, others had dropped out of college to join the movement, but yet others had graduated with a Bachelor's degree. In the 1970s the movement acquired a 250-acre property in Barrytown, Upstate New York that had belonged to the Christian Brothers. This was turned into the Unification Theological Seminary,[78] which began offering two-year courses to graduate Unificationists in 1975, and which became accredited in 1996 by Middle States Commission of Higher Education. Although the UTS is Unification owned and many of its staff and faculty are Unificationists, it has a long history of inviting non-Unificationist theologians and other scholars to teach and take part in seminars and conferences, the proceedings of which have sometimes been published.[65] It also produces the *Journal of Unification Studies.*[66] For several years, many of the UTS graduates were sent by the movement to pursue Doctoral programmes at Ivy League universities.[67] At the time of writing, the UTS has a three-year Master of Divinity course, has begun to grant doctorates in theology,[68] and has recently launched on-line courses.[69]

From around the 1970s, an increasing number of Blessed children were being born. At that time, Moon expected the mothers to leave their children in order to serve as fundraisers and missionaries.[70] Children were handed over to the care of minders and a number of small nursery schools were established. One such in the

[65] See, for example, Bryant and Foster 1980; Bryant and Hodges 1978; Quebedeaux 1982; Quebedeaux and Sawatsky 1979.
[66] http://journals.uts.edu/component/content/article?id=2:from-the-editor
[67] The True Children received their education at top American universities, some of them reaching doctoral level.
[68] Many of the UTS courses are now taught at its annex in New York City rather than at the Barrytown campus.
[69] https://uts.edu/online
[70] Not all mothers were prepared to part from their children, but many did, sometimes regretting having done so later, especially when the children were old enough to express their resentment at having been abandoned.(Barker 1983)

 SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

UK was at Cleeve House just outside the Wiltshire village of Seend.[71] Some of these nurseries and schools had trained child minders and/or teachers; others did not. When they were old enough, the children usually attended non-Unificationist schools (often keeping their religious affiliation a secret). Some, however, were sent to the Little Angels School, which, beside teaching ballet, was a co-educational boarding school, later called the Sunhwa Arts High School.[87] Here the Blessed children from the West were expected to become proficient in the Korean language.[88]

Other educational establishments associated with, if not formally connected to the Unification Church include the New Hope Academy in Maryland, USA,[72] the University of Bridgeport in Bridgeport, CT, which the Professors' World Peace Academy took over and injected with Unification funds in the 1990s,[73] and the Sun Moon University in South Korea, which was established in 1989.[74]

Is Unificationism a Cult?

The term 'cult' has been used in a variety of different ways. Sometimes it refers to the veneration or devotion directed towards a particular figure or object; thus, a Marian cult implies devotion to the mother of Jesus. Sometimes it refers to a secular craze or vogue, such as a television series. In sociology it is used in a number of technical ways to describe a religious group that, unlike the church or the denomination, but like the sect, is in tension with society; however, unlike the sect it is not a schismatic movement but may be defined as a religious innovation (Stark and Bainbridge 1979). Unificationism could fit into such a definition. Alternatively, the cult may be seen as 'characteristically a loose association of persons with a private, eclectic religiosity' (McGuire 1997: 144). Unificationism would be less likely to be classified as a cult in this sense. But whatever definitions are used to define a cult for purposes of sociological enquiry, the concept is neutral so far as any moral evaluation is concerned.

This is not the case when the term cult is applied to a religious (or political) organisation in popular parlance. Here 'cult' is clearly conveying that the group is 'a bad

[71] Cleeve House was also used for Unification workshops and is currently offering accommodation to the public for Bed and Breakfast, wedding receptions and conferences. http://www.cleeve-house.com/

[87] https://www.revolvy.com/main/index.php?s=Sunhwa%20Arts%20School [88] Non-Unificationist children could also attend.
[72] http://www.newhopeacademy.org/
[73] http://www.bridgeport.edu/
[74] http://tulip.sunmoon.ac.kr/english/main.do

thing'. No religion calls itself a cult; it is a recognised term of abuse.[75] There have been numerous descriptions of what is meant by a cult in this sense, but the one thing that they have in common is a negative evaluation. Not infrequently the negativity is explicit in that the adjective 'destructive' is added. Often there is a list of characteristics, some but not all of which would be found in a cult.[76] Among the many items on such lists are a charismatic leader; criminal activities; a focus on making money and recruiting new members and the use of brainwashing or mind-control techniques. As a sociologist, my preference is to consider Unificationism as a new religious movement rather than a cult, but before doing that, let me address some 'cult issues'. I have already included a brief discussion about Moon as a charismatic leader and about Unification involvement in financial affairs, but it is worth (very briefly) considering Unificationism as a criminal movement and examining the charge of brainwashing.

Unificationism as a Criminal Movement

When speaking of a particular religion as a criminal movement, reference may be being made to the activities of the leader, the explicit directions of the leadership, the leadership turning a blind eye to members' criminal actions, or members performing criminal activities expressly against the directions of the leadership. It is not always obvious what is the case in any particular instance; the distinction is, nonetheless, one that is worth bearing in mind.

The Unification Movement and organisations associated with it, its leadership and other members have all been involved in criminal and/or civil litigation throughout the world over the years. Moon himself has been imprisoned on a number of occasions – starting from the 1940s before the HSA-UWC was founded. His own account of these episodes has tended to differ substantially in a number of instances from that of his enemies.[77][78] Then, in America in the 1980s, he again found himself in prison.

[75] Confusingly, in French, traditional religions are referred to as *cultes* whereas religions that are disapproved of are termed *sectes*.

[76] Frequently the list includes the list that Robert J Lifton (1961: Ch. 22) used to describe, not the characteristics of a cult, but the techniques used in trying to persuade captive prisoners of war to accept Chinese propaganda. For examples of ways in which cults have been typified, see: http://www.csj.org/infoserv_cult101/checklis.htm ; http://www.decision-making-confidence.com/destructive-cults.html ; http://www.quackwatch.com/02ConsumerProtection/cult.html ; http://www.caic.org.au/general/cult-crit.htm

[77] Compare, for example, Moon (2010: 89ff); and http://howwelldoyouknowyourmoon.tumblr.com/search/prison

[78] F.2d 1210 (1983): *United States of America, Appellee, v. Sun Myung Moon and Takeru Kamiyama*,

On this occasion he was sentenced to eighteen months' for tax evasion.[95] Several other religious organisations filed *amicus curiae* briefs on Moon's behalf as they felt that his crime of banking Church money in his name then failing to declare it as income and pay taxes on the interest was something that pastors of other religions commonly did (Sherwood 1993: Ch.10).

Accusations and rumours have long circulated about the criminal activities of the movement and its members. The alleged crimes have ranged from street selling without a peddler's licence through zoning violations to burglary and murder.[79] Charges of tax evasion have been brought against the movement in a number of countries (Hong 1998: Sontag 1977).[80] When a Unificationist was convicted for poaching protected baby sharks, he is said to have implicated Moon in the illegal activity.[98] Several members and former members have talked about smuggling money across national borders (Hong 1998: 173); I have been told by a former Unificationist that she was instructed to sew money into her petticoat; another said he had carried a suitcase packed with notes through customs. I have heard directly and indirectly of Unificationists entering into marriages that they had no intention of honouring in order to acquire visas for other Unificationists. In August 2006 it was widely reported that around 700 Unificationists had broken into the office of a newspaper company, destroyed the computers and other objects as well as violently attacking a photographer and a reporter.[81] It has been alleged by several former Unificationists, and by his son, that the movement was responsible for the death of Professor Tahk (Tark) Myeong Hwan, a Korean scholar who was reportedly attacked on a number of occasions for refusing to stop publishing material exposing Moon and his Church.[82]

Among the more consequential activities leading to criminal charges and large fines have been the Japanese members' spiritual sales. (Yamaguchi 2001: 48)

Two years later, reported that "In over ten cases in Japan the civil courts have found the Unification Church liable for activities related to persuading people to make donations" Yamaguchi (2003: 225). The fines that the Church was ordered to

Defendants-Appellants. Nos. 755, 765, 766 and 1153, Dockets 82-1275, 82-1279, 82-1277, 82-1357 and 821387. United States Court of Appeals, Second Circuit. Argued March 23, 1983. Decided September 13, 1983. https://en.wikisource.org/wiki/U.S._v._Sun_Myung_Moon_718_F.2d_1210_(1983)

[79] Many of these accusations can be found on a site fuelled primarily by disillusioned former members: http://howwelldoyouknowyourmoon.tumblr.com/

[80] http://www.upi.com/Archives/1984/05/15/Moons-church-in-France-charged-with-income-taxevasion/3953453441600/; (see Hong 1998: 144) [98] https://www.dailykos.com/stories/2007/2/1/297282/-

[81] http://www.religionnewsblog.com/16047/unification-church-attacks-newspaper

[82] http://howwelldoyouknowyourmoon.tumblr.com/post/147190205303/tahk-myeong-hwan-was-offered-abribe-of-450000

pay ranged from $60,000 to $500,000 (*ibid.*: 228-9.) These sales have now almost completely ceased, much to the relief of a number of Western Unificationists who were embarrassed by the practice.

Although they have not been as litigious as the Church of Scientology, Unificationists themselves have instigated court proceedings on several occasions. This was not least when the illegal kidnapping of members was being conducted for the purpose of deprogramming.[83] Sometimes, however, it has been assumed that the case was brought against the movement, when it was actually the movement that brought a case against the defendant. One such example was the *Daily Mail* case in the UK in the early 1980s. The *Mail*, a nationwide tabloid, had published a story accusing the Church of brainwashing and breaking up families. The leader of the British movement sued the paper for libel, but lost and the movement had to pay considerable damages (Barker 1984: 121ff).[84] The verdict was upheld by three Lords of the Court of Appeal. Unusually, the jury not only found the *Daily Mail* was justified in its accusations, but also requested the Attorney General should revoke the charitable status of two Unification organisations. As a consequence, another case ensued against the Church; on this occasion, however, the Church won and kept its charitable status.

The libel case was just one instance that fanned anti-Unification sentiment. Even when no criminal action could be proved, it was assumed 'proved' that the Church was a danger to society. In March 1982, for example, eight Members of the European Parliament tabled a motion (unsuccessfully) for a resolution which began:

> The European Parliament, deeply concerned by the distress and family break-ups caused by Sun Myung Moon's Unification Church;
>
> 1. Welcomes the media's relentless exposure of the Moonies' activities;
>
> 2. Urges public authorities throughout the Community to ensure that the
>
> Moonies are not given special tax benefits, charity status, or other privileges;
>
> 3. Calls upon its Committee ... to report on the activities of Sun Myung Moon's followers in the Unification Church and the danger to society that

[83] The practice has by now been almost entirely abandoned in favour of voluntary interventions (Giambalvo *et al.* 2013), although it has continued in Japan. (Fautré 2012)

[84] http://www.tparents.org/Library/Unification/Talks/Marshall/Marshall-810700.htm ; http://www.nytimes.com/1981/04/01/world/moon-s-sect-loses-libel-suit-in-london.html?mcubz=0

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

they represent.[85]

Of course most religions have had members who have engaged in criminal activities. An obvious example is the amount of child abuse that has taken place within the Catholic Church and, indeed, most, if not all other mainstream religions. It is not usually the case that the religion has explicitly encouraged this, but the crime of the Catholic Church itself was not reporting the paedophiliac priests to the police; it frequently turned a blind eye or moved them to some other place where they were able to offend once again. But, although there may have been the isolated case, sexual child abuse is not a crime associated with the Unification movement, although I have heard people who know nothing about the movement apart from the fact that it has been labelled a destructive cult assuming, because it has happened in some 'cults', [86] that it also occurs in Unificationism.

In short, it is clear that Unificationism has been involved in a variety of criminal activities; but it could be argued that that in itself cannot distinguish it very satisfactorily from other religions that are deemed not to be cults, but 'real religions'.

Unificationism as a Brainwashing Movement

Brainwashing is, of course, a metaphor. No Unificationist has ever had his or her brains literally scrubbed out, ready for some new-fangled beliefs to be implanted. This is not to say that Unificationists have not exerted considerable influence on potential converts, inviting them for a weekend, then week-long seminars or workshops where they would have little if any contact with non-members. Nor does it mean that Unificationists have always been totally honest about who they were or that Moon was their leader.[87] However, the idea that Unificationists were in command of irresistible and irreversible methods of mind control was just not true – however much they might have liked it to be.

In a study I conducted, in the late 1970s when accusations of brainwashing were

[85] Mrs Wieczorek-Zeul *et al*., `Motion for a Resolution on Distress Caused by Sun Myung Moon's Unification Church', *European Parliament Working Document* PE 77.807, 9 March 1982.

[86] The Children of God is one new religion where the leadership was directly involved in and even encouraged underage sexual activity at one period (Barker 2016; Jones *et al*. 2007) and at one time the International Society for Krishna Consciousness (ISKCON) allowed unfettered sexual child abuse to take place at several of its gurukulas (boarding schools) (Rochford and Heinlein 1998). Both these movements eventually took radical steps to prevent the continuation of such practices (Barker forthcoming).

[87] The concept of Heavenly Deception, sometimes seen as an acceptable means for an end desired by God, was associated particularly with Californian Unificationists in the 1970s and '80s. (Barker 1984: 176)

reaching their height, I found that, of over a thousand potential converts who were interested enough in the movement to agree to attend a residential workshop, only 10 per cent actually joined as a full-time member for over a week. Clearly the Unificationists' efforts had not been irresistible. I also found that after one year half of those who had joined had left, and after two years only 4 per cent of the original 1,017 were still full-time Unificationists (Barker 1984: 146). Clearly any mind control techniques were not irreversible.[88][106] Moreover, I was later to find that around 90 per cent of the first cohort of second-generation (Blessed) children had left the movement. Were the (evidently apocryphal) saying of Ignatius of Loyola, "Give me the child for the first seven years and I will give you the man" true, it might be argued that Catholic socialisation was far more effective than that of the Unification Church.

It would seem that those who use the concept of 'brainwashing' are more likely to refer to an outcome which they find incomprehensible and of which they disapprove, rather than referring to the actual process that leads a person to reach a certain decision.

Unificationism as a New Religious Movement (NRM)

As I suggested earlier, the concept of a new religious movement seems to be a more useful means of categorising Unificationism than that of a cult.[89][107] It is not that the concept of NRM is without difficulties; it can be fraught with them. However, if one defines a new religion as one that consists predominantly of a first-generation membership, many of those difficulties can be circumvented and we are given some clues as to what we might at least look for in a movement so defined. (Barker 2004)

First, by definition, the movement consists largely of converts, and converts tend to be more enthusiastic, even fanatic, than people who have been born into a religion. This has been very obviously the case with Unificationists.

Secondly, an NRM is likely to attract an atypical representation of the general population. In the past, such movements have frequently appealed to the socially, po-

[88] In another study carried out independently around the same time, Marc Galanter came up with almost identical results (Barker 1984 146; Galanter 1980).

[89] However, it can be argued that when someone leaves a controlling NRM and is bewildered by the situation in which they find themselves, unable to comprehend why they ever joined, concepts such as cult and even 'mind control' (though undue influence could be preferable) can help with the initial orientation and relieve any feelings of guilt for things they may have done. With the passage of time, however, it is arguably healthier to go beyond a reliance on the 'c' word to explain the past. clues as to what we might at least look for in a movement so defined (Barker 2004).

litically or economically oppressed. The Unification Church, like many other NRMs that emerged during the second half of the twentieth century, appealed disproportionately in the West and in Japan to young adults from the middle-classes.

Thirdly, NRMs are usually founded and led in the initial stages by a charismatic leader who is accorded a charismatic authority by his (or her) followers. As we have discussed above, Moon was accepted by Unificationists as a charismatic Messiah.

Fourthly, NRMs can adopt a dichotomous world view. Clear distinctions are drawn theologically between Godly and satanic; morally between good and evil; temporally between before and after; and socially between them and us. Such distinctions have been evident in the Unificationist view of the world, especially in the early days.

Fifthly, NRMs tend to be treated with suspicion and fear by the wider society. Despite the fact that Moon managed to secure contacts, and indeed admiration from a number of notables, it was undoubtedly the case that Unificationists were generally treated with, at best, mistrust, and at worst, loathing.

Sixthly, and finally, NRMs will usually change far more rapidly and radically than older, more established religions. Frequently they will become less extreme and more accommodating towards society – a process referred to by sociologists as denominationalisation. (Niebuhr1957)[90]

Unificationism as a Denominationalising Religious Movement

Although the Unification Church has never completely denominationalised, it has undergone momentous changes since its beginnings in the immediate post-World War II period, one of the most significant changes being the arrival of a second generation who, rather than having converted to an NRM were born into one.

The change in the demographic structure of the movement was spectacular. In the West in the 1970s a graph showing the numbers of Unificationists at different ages, showed very few under the age of 18, then a spike of those in their early to mid-20s, dropping to relatively few aged 30 or over. By 2007, the average age of Unificationists was, as 40 years earlier, around the mid-20s, however, there were relatively few of that age, but there were two spikes, one around the age of 15 and the other, a

[90] It should be noted, as Bryan Wilson (1970) has demonstrated, that not all NRMs (or 'sects') denominationalise. The Amish, the Hutterites and Jehovah's Witnesses are examples of non-denominationalising religions.

slightly smaller spike,[91] around the age of 50. Space does not permit a detailed examination of the consequences that this change in the demographic profile had made, but it requires only a little thought to imagine some ways in which a movement with young, healthy and enthusiastic converts with no dependents would differ from a movement with middle-aged parents and young teenage children. With the passage of time, the demographic profile can be expected to become increasingly similar to that of the population as a whole.

Another change that occurred from around the late 1980s and early '90s was that Western Unificationists were less likely to live in the movement's centres or a fundraising van than to live as nuclear families in their own homes.[92] Furthermore, only a few now work for the movement full time, though some volunteer in their spare time. This, and the general experience of maturing, contributes to a weakening of the strictly dichotomous world view; grey areas and qualifications have become more tolerated; membership itself can become ambiguous, especially among the adult second generation who may not accept much or even all of the teachings, but still like to associate with the friends with whom they grew up and who may still want to be Blessed with another Unificationist. While, as mentioned earlier, the first cohort of Blessed children left in droves, the movement was considerably more careful in its socialisation of the second cohort of the second generation. Whilst an organisation such as CARP had existed (and still exists)[93] for college and university students, HARP (High School Association for the Research of Principles) was founded for children of high school age; STF (a Special Task Force) enabled high school graduates to spend one or two years fundraising and doing missionary work; and various workshops and summer camps have been arranged for young people to meet together and learn about Unification beliefs and practices (including the meaning of the Blessings) on a regular basis.

Although Moon remained a central figure until (and indeed after) his death, his authority over all aspects of the lives of the younger generation is decidedly less than it was for their parents. Although there are still hierarchical structures with clear lines of leadership, first the True Children and then other 'second gens' have been moving into positions of leadership and decision-making. There have been attempts to in-

[91] This spike had diminished over the years due to the turnover in membership.
[92] Often Unificationist homes cluster in a particular location, enabling members to meet for worship and social occasions.
[93] https://carplife.org/

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

troduce a greater democratisation in at least parts of the movement. To some extent this has resulted in frustration for the would-be reformers who complain that they encounter well-nigh insuperable problems with long-term members who are used to accepting decisions from above and who are not used to innovating.

There can, however, be no doubt that, very generally speaking, the Unificationism of the twenty-first century has been less 'in your face' with more accommodation to the norms of the wider society, which, again very generally speaking, no longer sees it as the threat it once did and which, even more generally speaking, seems largely unaware of its existence. In fact, Unificationism's pugilisms are now more likely to be found within than without the movement – or, rather, movements.

Unificationism as Fragmented Schismatic Movements

There have been schismatic movements throughout the lifetime of Unificationism, but these were rarely more than an irritation and did not threaten the overall organisation. Originally the eldest True Son of Reverend and Mrs Moon, Hyo Jin, was the heir apparent, but partly on account of his behaviour (Hong 1998) and then because of his death, it looked as though the next son, Preston (Hyun Jin), would be the successor. Before Moon's death, however, a rift had developed between Preston and his father, which resulted in Moon proclaiming that he would be succeeded by his youngest son, Hyung Jin (Sean 1979-) (Bramwell 2016; Kim 2017; Mickler 2013b).[112] Following Moon's death, however, Mrs Moon declared that it was she who was now the rightful leader:

> Having made the spirit world as his abode, the True Father is now freely going in and out of the physical and spiritual worlds and working towards spreading the Cheon Il Guk.[113] Being the true identity of God of the Night, he will come to the physical world the second time and dispense his providence together with True Mother, who will continue with the providence on earth as the true identity of God of the Day… (Hak Ja Han's speech 17 September 2012, quoted in Kim 2017: 246).

There are now three main factions of Unificationism. Mrs Moon heads the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (FFWPU) from her base in Korea. Her justification for carrying on the work started by her husband was first that Moon had

made it clear that Messiahship depended not on one man but on True Parents and she was an integral element in that partnership. Her claims have, however, become stronger of late, with statements suggesting that it was actually she who raised her husband to his position rather than the other way round as Moon had maintained. She has, furthermore, declared that she is the Only Begotten Daughter (Bramwell 2016; Wilson 2015).

Preston heads the Global Peace Foundation (which he originally founded as the Global Peace Festival Foundation in 2009) and the Family Peace Association from Seattle, Washington State along with UCI in Washington DC.[114] His justification for taking over the movement after his father's death is that he is the eldest son and that patrilineal succession is fundamental to everything that Moon taught (Bramwell 2016: 18).[115] A further qualification claimed by Preston is that he has fulfilled his own 'portion of responsibility' by gaining merit through his global providential peace work.

Thirdly, once his mother, whom he has now referred to as the Whore of Babylon (Moon, Hyung Jin 2016),[116] rejected his leadership, Sean founded the Sanctuary Church, based in Pennsylvania, and enjoys the support of his older brother, Kook Jin (Justin). His justification for succeeding his father is that his father had crowned him as his heir and successor back in 2009[117] – a claim repudiated by followers of Preston and, more recently, the FFWPU.

---

[112] See also Fefferman (2018).

[113] "What is Cheon Il Guk? It is the world level." Sun Myung Moon' speech, 31 January 2003. http://www.tparents.org/Moon-Talks/SunMyungMoon03/SM030131e.htm

[114] Originally called the Unification Church International, ownership of the UCI is being hotly contested by the FFWPU, which is currently claiming in litigation that it holds ultimate legal control. The Family Federation for World Peace and Unification International, et al., Plaintiffs, v. Hyun Jin Moon, et al., Defendants District of Columbia Superior Court Civil No. 2011 CA 003721 B

[115] https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=o_ztei3OBEE

[116] https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=15jHsHJ78R8; https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=B-wuoqE2EgVM. In September 2017, Sean declared that he has now married his father to a new bride, Hyung Shil Kang, who had previously had a spirit world Blessing to St. Augustine, and who has now

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

been declared to be the True Mother.
http://campaign.r20.constantcontact.com/render?m=1120290311602&ca=-da02e9d7-ad76-43c2-a79a32ce441a89c8; https://vimeo.com/235194285.

117 http://sanctuary-pa.org/index.php/successor/. See also the statement Moon signed in 2010: The Authority of The True Parents of Mankind From Now Will Be Represented By The Youngest Son. https://www.tparents.org/Moon-Talks/SunMyungMoon10/SunMyungMoon-100605.htm.

The rivalry between the groups is fierce. The disagreements centre on a number of fronts: theological justifications for their respective claims to the Unification inheritance; legal disputes about control of various Unification organisations;[94] and the allegiance of followers.

As a result of the splits, many long-lasting friendships have been wrecked – there are families that have been rent asunder as one family member has joined one group and another family member has joined a different one. Even Blessed marriages have been wrecked. Some Unificationists are uncertain exactly where their allegiance lies, and have moved to the margins of the movement, not wanting to commit themselves too completely; others feel that they have been disconnected and have become more or less 'solitaries'; yet others have disconnected themselves from Unificationism altogether or, occasionally, joined one of the other small schisms in Japan or elsewhere.

Unificationism in the Future?

Few, if any, of the new religions that emerged in the post-World War II period have made such an impact on so many fronts. Few have attracted such vitriolic hatred, and few have attracted such unbridled admiration. Unificationism has been uniquely innovative in many arenas, and it has made an enormous difference to the lives of hundreds of thousands of individuals – be they members, former members or non-members. How much it has affected the world in general is hard to gauge – probably not as much as its members believe; it would, nonetheless, be foolhardy for history to ignore its achievements, for better or for worse.

It would be foolhardy also to predict what will happen next, but it seems unlikely that there will be any unification between the warring factions in the immediate future. What will happen after Mrs Moon dies is unknown, but there are rumours

[94] I remarked some time ago to one of the lawyers involved in the legal battles that his firm must be earning billions from the litigious procedures. "No, only millions," he replied. I assumed that he was joking, but have since been told that the case was costing Preston's 'side' around $750,000 a week.

that she might be preparing the eldest son of her now deceased first son, Hyo Jin (1962-2008), by his second wife, Yun Ah Choi, thus skipping a generation in the True Family lineage.

REFERENCES

Anderson, Scott, and Jon Lee Anderson. 1986. *Inside the League: The Shocking Exposé of how Terrorists, Nazis, and Latin American Death Squads Have Infiltrated the AntiCommunist League*. New York, NY: Dodd, Mead and Co.

Barker, Eileen. 1978. Living the Divine Principle: Inside the Reverend Sun Myung Moon's Unification Church in Britain. *Archives de Sciences Sociales des Religions* 45 (1):7593.

Barker, Eileen. 1979. Sun Myung Moon and the Scientists. *The Teilhard Review* XIV (1):3537.

Barker, Eileen. 1983. Doing Love: Tensions in the Ideal Family. In *The Family and the Unification Church*, edited by G. G. James. New York: Unification Theological Seminary; Rose of Sharon Press.

Barker, Eileen. 1984. *The Making of a Moonie: Brainwashing or Choice?* Oxford: Basil Blackwell.

Barker, Eileen. 1989. *New Religious Movements: A Practical Introduction*. London: HMSO

Barker, Eileen. 1993. Charismatization: The Social Production of `an Ethos Propitious to the Mobilization of Sentiments'. In *Secularization, Rationalism and Sectarianism*, edited by E. Barker, J. T. Beckford and K. Dobbelaere. Oxford: Clarendon Press.

Barker, Eileen. 2004. What Are We Studying? A Sociological Case for Keeping the „Nova". *Nova Religio* 8 (1):88-102.

Barker, Eileen. 2012. Ageing in New Religions: The Varieties of Later Experiences. *Diskus:*

The Journal of the British Association for the Study of Religions 12. http://diskus.basr.ac.uk/index.php/DISKUS/article/view/21/20

Barker, Eileen. 1997. But Who's Going to Win? National and Minority Religions in PostCommunist Society. In *New Religious Phenomena in Central and Eastern Europe*, edited by I. Borowik and G. Babinski. Kraków: Nomos.

http://facta.junis.ni.ac.rs/pas/pas99/pas99-07.pdf

Barker, Eileen. 2016. From The Children Of God to The Family International: A Story of Radical Christianity and Deradicalising Transformation. In *The Handbook of Contemporary Christianity: Movements, Institutions & Allegiance*, edited by S. Hunt. Leiden: Brill.

Barker, Eileen. 2018 forthcoming. What Do They Do About It? Radical Reactions by NRMs to Internal Abuses by ISKCON, The Children of God/The Family International and the Jesus Fellowship. In *Radical Changes in Minority Religions, edited by Eileen Barker and Beth Singler.* Abingdon, Oxon: Routledge.

Beverley, James A. 2004. Spirit Revelation and the Unification Church. In *Controversial New Religions*, edited by J. R. Lewis and J. A. Petersen. New York: Oxford University Press.

Bjornstad, James. 1976. *The Moon Is Not the Son.* Minneapolis, Minnesota: Bethany Fellowship.

Boettcher, Robert. 1980. *Gifts of Deceit: Sun Myung Moon, Tongsun Park, and the Korean Scandal*. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston.

Bramwell, Mark. 2016. End of the Cosmic Conflict: Today's Movement in Light of the Immutable Providence of God. http://fatherslegacy.net/end-of-the-cosmic-conflict-bymark-bramwell/

Bramwell, Mark. 2018. The Family Pledge and the Family Peace Association. *Acta Comparanda* VI: 149-157.

Breen, Michael. 1997. *Sun Myung Moon: The Early Years 1920-1953*. Hurstpierpoint, West Sussex: Refuge Books.

Bromley, David G. 1985. Financing the Millennium: The Economic Structure of the Unificationist Movement. *Journal for the Scientific Study of Religion* 24 (3):253-274.

Bromley, David G., ed. 1988. *Falling from the Faith: Causes and Consequences of Religious Apostasy*. Newbury Park CA: Sage.

Bromley, David G., and James T. Richardson, eds. 1983. *The Brainwashing/Deprogramming Controversy: Sociological, Psychological, Legal and Historical Perspectives*. Vol. V, *Studies in Religion and Society*. New York: Edwin Mellen Press.

Bromley, David, and Anson Shupe. 1979. *"Moonies" in America: Cult, Church*

and Crusade. Beverly Hills: Sage.

Bryant, M. Darrol, and Durwood Foster, eds. 1980. *Hermeneutics and Unification Theology*. Barrytown, NY: Unification Theological Seminary.

Bryant, M. Darrol, and Susan Hodges, eds. 1978. *Exploring Unification Theology*. Barrytown, NY: Unification Theological Seminary.

Bugliosi, Vincent. 1977. *Helter Skelter: The Manson Murders*. Harmondsworth: Penguin.

CAUSA. 1980. *Introduction to the CAUSA Worldview*. New York: CAUSA International.

Chryssides, George D. 1991. *The Advent of Sun Myung Moon: The Origins, Beliefs and Practices of the Unification Church*. London: MacMillan.

Coleman, Lee. 1985. Using Psychiatry to Fight ‚Cults': Three Case Histories. In *Scientific Research and New Religions: Divergent Perspectives*, edited by B. K. Kilbourne. San Francisco: American Association for the Advancement of Sciences, Pacific Division.

Cozin, Mark. 1973. A Millenarian Movement in Korea and Great Britain. In *A Sociological Yearbook of Religion in Britain (6)*, edited by M. Hill. London: SCM Press.

Dubrow-Eichel, Steven Kenneth. 1989a. *Deprogramming: An Investigation of Change Processes and Shifts in Attention and Verbal Interactions*: A Dissertation in Education Presented to the Graduate Faculty of the University of Pennsylvania in Partial Fulfilment of the Requirements for the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy.

Dubrow-Eichel, Steve K. 1989b. Deprogramming: A Case Study Part I: Personal Observations of the Group Process. *Cultic Studies Journal* 6 (2):1-117.

Dubrow-Eichel, Steve K. 1990. Deprogramming: A Case Study Part II: Conversation Analysis. *Cultic Studies Journal* 7 (2):174-216.

Edwards, Christopher. 1979. *Crazy For God*. Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall.

Eng, Monica, Delroy Alexander, and David Jackson. 2006. Sushi and Rev. Moon. *Chicago Tribune* 11 April. http://www.chicagotribune.com/news/watchdog/chi-0604sushi-1story-story.html

Enroth, Ronald. 1977. *Youth, Brainwashing, and the Extremist Cults*. Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan.

 SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

Enroth, Ronald. 1979. *The Lure of the Cults*. New York: Christian Herald.

Fautré, Willy, ed. 2012. *Japan: Abduction & Deprivation of Freedom for the Purposes of Religious De-conversion*. Brussels: Human Rights Without Frontiers International.

Fefferman, Dan. 2010. Deprogramming in Japan: Abductions and Secret Confinement Continue for Decades after Being Stopped in the West. In *CESNUR*. Turin. http://www.cesnur.org/2010/to_fefferman.htm

Fefferman, Dan. 2016. Schism in the Unification Church. *Paper presented to the 2016 CESNUR Conference, July 5-10, Daejin University, Republic of Korea*. http://www.cesnur.org/2016/daejin_fefferman.pdf

Fefferman, Dan. 2018. Unification Political Theology: Past, Present and Future. *Acta Comparanda* VI: 159-168.

Fisher, Marc, and Jeff Leen. 1997a. A Church in Flux Is Flush with Cash. *Washington Post*

November 23. http://www.washingtonpost.com/wpsrv/national/longterm/island/unification/main.htm

Fisher, Marc, and Jeff Leen. 1997b. Stymied in U.S., Moon's Church Sounds a Retreat. *Washington Post* November 24. http://www.washingtonpost.com/wpsrv/national/longterm/cult/unification/part2.htm

Ford, Arthur. 1969. *Unknown but Known: My Adventure into the Meditative Dimension*. London: Psychic Press Ltd. http://www.euro-tongil.org/swedish/english/eford.htm

Fraser, Donald M. 1978. Investigation of Korean-American Relations. Washington DC: Subcommittee on International Organizations of the Committee on International Relations U.S. House of Representatives.

Galanter, Marc. 1980. Psychological Induction into the Large Group: Findings from a Modern Religious Sect. *American Journal of Psychiatry* 137 (12):1574-79.

Giambalvo, Carol, Michael Kropveld, and Michael Langone. 2013. Changes in North American Cult Awareness Organizations. In *Revisionism and Diversification in New Religious Movements*, edited by E. Barker. Farnham: Ashgate.

Guinn, Jeff. 2013. *Manson: The Life and Times of Charles Manson*. London: Simon and Shuster.

Hall, John R. 1996. The Apocalypse at Jonestown. In *Cults in Context: Readings in the Study of New Religious Movements*, edited by L. L. Dawson. Toronto: Canadian Scholars' Press.

Heftmann, Erica. 1983. *Dark Side of the Moonies*. New York: Penguin Books.

Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity, ed. 1972. *Holy Song Book: Collection of Unification Church Songs*: HSA Publications.

Hong, Nansook. 1998. *In the Shadow of the Moons: My Life in the Reverend Sun Myung Moon's Family*. Boston; New York: Little, Brown and Co.

Horowitz, Irving Louis, ed. 1978. *Science, Sin, and Scholarship: The Politics of Reverend Moon and the Unification Church*. London: The MIT Press.

Introvigne, Massimo. 2000. *The Unification Church*. Salt Lake City: Signature Books.

Introvigne, Massimo. 2018. The Dynamics of the Schisms and the Birth of the Family Peace Association. *Acta Comparanda* VI: 135-141.

Jarvis, John Paul. 2011. Shooting the Moon: Kahr Arms, Kook-jin Moon and the Unification Church. *Guns.com,* 28 April. http://www.guns.com/2011/04/28/shooting-the-moonkahr-arms-kook-jin-moon-and-the-unification-church/

Johnson, Kurt. 1982. Social Action and Politics. In *Lifestyle, Conversations with Members of the Unification Church*, edited by R. Quebedeaux. Barrytown, NY: Unification Theological Seminary.

Jones, Kristina, Celeste Jones, and Juliana Buhring. 2007. *Not Without My Sister*. London: HarperElement.

Krause, Charles A. 1978. *Guyana Massacre: The Eyewitness Account*. New York: Berkley Books.

Kim, Chong Sun. 1978. *Rev. Sun Myung Moon*. Lanham, MD; London: University Press of America.

Kim, Jongsuk. 2017. *The Split of the Unification Movement (Advanced Copy)*. Cheunan City, Chungnam-do, Republic of Korea Jongsuk Kim.

Kim, Young Oon. 1987. *Unification Theology (Revised)*. 2nd ed. New York, NY: HSA-UWC. http://www.tparents.org/Library/Unification/Books/Uthe-o/0Toc.htm#Download

Kim, Young Whi. 1977. *The Divine Principle Study Guide (Part I)*. London: HSA--UWC.

Kim, Young Whi. 1985. *Guidance for Heavenly Tradition (Volume II)*. 2 vols. Vol.

 SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

2. Frankfurt: Vereinigungskirche.

Kwak, Chung Hwan. 1980. *The Tradition, Book One*. New York: HSA-UWC. http://www.unification.org/ucbooks/TT1/index.html

Levitt, Zola. 1976. *The Spirit of Sun Myung Moon*. Irvine, California: Harvest House.

Lifton, Robert J. 1961. *Thought Reform: A Psychiatric Study of `Brainwashing' in China*. London: Gollancz.

Lofland, John. 1977 (1st edition 1966). *Doomsday Cult: A Study of Conversion, Proselytization, and Maintenance of Faith*. 2nd ed. New York, London: Irvington.

Martin, W. R. 1985. *The Kingdom of the Cults*. Minneapolis: Bethany House Publishers.

Matczak, Sebastian A. 1982. *Unificationism: A New Philosophy and World View*. New York: Learned Publications.

McGuire, Meredith B. 1997. *Religion The Social Context*. Belmont, CA: Wadsworth Publishing.

Mickler, Michael L. 1980a. A History of the Unification Church in the Bay Area: 1960-74. MA, Graduate Theological Union, University of California, Berkeley.

Mickler, Michael L. 1980b. *A History of the Unification Church in America, 1959-1974:*

Emergence of a National Movement. New York: Garland.

Mickler, Michael L. 1990. *The Unification Church*. New York: Garland.

Mickler, Michael. 2013a. A Unification Position on Gun Control. *Applied Unificationism: A Blog of Unification Theological Seminary* 3 June. http://www.tparents.org/Library/Unification/Talks/Mickler/Mickler-130603.pdf https://appliedunificationism.com/2013/06/03/a-unification-position-on-gun-control

Mickler, Michael L. 2013b. The Post-Sun Myung Moon Unification Church. In *Revisionism and Diversification in New Religious Movements*, edited by Eileen Barker. Farnham: Ashgate.

Mickler, Michael L. 2016. Spirit World Messages, Cross Removals and Coronations: Balancing Messianic Necessity and Coalition-Building. *Journal of Unification Studies*

XVII https://www.tparents.org/UTS/JUS-17-2016/JUS-17-04.pdf

Mickler, Michael (text), and Michael Inglis, eds. 2000. *40 Years in America: An Institutional History of the Unification Movement*. New York: HSA Publications, 4 West 43rd St, NY.

Moon, Hyun Jin (Preston). 2016. *The Korean Dream: A Vision for a Unified Korea*. Bloomington, IN: Archway.

Moon, Hyung Jin (Sean). 2016. *Cheon Il Guk State of the Union Address*. Newfoundland, PA: Sanctuary Church.

Moon, Sun Myung. 1973. *Divine Principle*. Thornton Heath: Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity.

Moon, Sun Myung. 1996. *Exposition of the Divine Principle*. New York: Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity.

Moon, Sun Myung. 2010. *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*. Washington DC: The Washington-Times Foundation.

Moore, Rebecca. 2003. Drinking the Kool-Aid: The cultural Transformation of a Tragedy. *Nova Religio* 7 (2):92-100.

Niebuhr, H. Richard. 1957 (originally 1929). *The Social Sources of Denominationalism*. New York: Meridian (originally Holt). Original edition, 1929.

Nevalainen, Kirsti. 2005. *Shamanistic Origin of the Unification Church*. Joensuu: Self Published.

Nielsen, Donald A. 1984. Charles Manson's Family of Love. *Sociological Analysis* 45(4).

Pak, Bo Hi. 1999a. *Truth is My Sword: Collected Speeches in the Public Arena*. 2 vols. Vol. I. New York: Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity.

Pak, Bo Hi. 1999b. *Truth is My Sword: Inspirational Messages and Personal Testimonies to Reverend Moon*. 2 vols. Vol. II. New York: Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity.

Patrick, Ted, and Tom Dulack. 1976. *Let Our Children Go*. New York: Ballantine.

Quebedeaux, R., ed. 1982. *Lifestyle, Conversations with Members of the Unification Church*. Barrytown: Unification Theological Seminary.

Quebedeaux, Richard, and Rodney Sawatsky, eds. 1979. *Evangelical-Unification Dialogue*. New York: Rose of Sharon Press, Inc.

Quinn, Jon. 2006.*The Divine Principle in Plain Language: The Basic Theology of Sun Myung Moon*. USA: Principled Publications.

 SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

http://www.divineprinciple.com/dp_text_all_2.pdf

Rochford, E. Burke, and Jennifer Heinlein. 1998. Child Abuse in the Hare Krishna Movement: 1971-1986. *ISKCON Communications Journal* 6 (1):43-69.

Salonen, Neil Albert.1982. History of the Unification Church. In *Lifestyle, Conversations with Members of the Unification Church*, edited by R. Quebedeaux. Barrytown: Unification Theological Seminary. http://www.tparents.org/UTS/Life/Life.pdf

Sherwood, Carlton. 1991. *Inquisition: The Persecution and Prosecution of the Reverend Sun Myung Moon*. Washington DC: Regnery Gateway.

Shupe, Anson D., and David G. Bromley. 1980. *The New Vigilantes: Deprogrammers, AntiCultists, and the New Religions*. Beverly Hills: Sage.

Sontag, Frederick. 1977. *Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church: An In-Depth Investigation of the Man and the Movement*. Nashville: Abingdon.

Stark, Rodney, and William Sims Bainbridge. 1979. Of Churches, Sects, and Cults. *Journal for the Scientific Study of Religion* 18 (2):117-133.

Underwood, Barbara, and Betty Underwood. 1979. *Hostage to Heaven: Four years in the Unification Church by an Ex Moonie and the mother who fought to free her*. New York, NY: Clarkson N. Potter, Inc.

Wallis, Roy. 1984. *The Elementary Forms of the New Religious Life*. London: Routledge and Kegan Paul.

Weber, Max. 1947. *The Theory of Social and Economic Organization*. Translated by A. M. Henderson and T. Parsons. New York: Free Press.

Weiner, Rex, and Deanne Stillman. 1979. *Woodstock Census: The Nationwide Survey of the Sixties Generation*. New York: Viking Press.

Wessinger, Catherine. 2000. *How the Millennium Comes Violently: From Jonestown to Heaven's Gate*. Chappaqua, NY: Seven Bridges Press.

Wilson, Andrew. 2015. The Only-Begotten Daughter. *Applied Unificationism: A Blog of Unification Theological Seminary* 13 April. https://appliedunificationism.com/2015/04/13/the-only-begotten-daughter/

Wilson, Bryan R. 1970. *Religious Sects: A Sociological Study*. London: Weidenfeld & Nicholson.

Wilson, Bryan R. 1973. *Magic and the Millennium: A Sociological Study of Religious Movements of Protest among Tribal and Third-World Peoples*. London: Heinemann.

Wood, Allen Tate. 1979. *Moonstruck: A Memoir of my life in a cult*. New York: William Morrow and Co.

Wood, Allen Tate. 2001 "My Four and One Half Years with The Lord of The Flies." *http://www.atwood7.com/essays/lordofflies.html*

Wright, Stuart. 1987. *Leaving Cults: The Dynamics of Defection*. Washington DC: Society for the Scientific Study of Religion.

Yamaguchi, Hiroshi. 2001. Cults in Japan: Legal Issues. *Cultic Studies Journal* 18:43-68. http://www.icsahome.com/articles/cultsinjapan-csj-18

Yamaguchi, Hiroshi. 2003. Japanese Activities to Counter Cults. *Cultic Studies Review* 2(3):225-229. http://www.icsahome.com/articles/japanese-activities--to-counter-cults

Yu, Chai-shin, and R. Guisso, eds. 1988. *Shamanism: The Spirit World of Korea*. Berkeley CA: Asian Humanities Press.

SOCIETY REGISTER | ISSN 2544-5502 | DOI: 10.14746/sr | http://societyregister.eu/

BY NC SA

12

BEFORE

40

ALSO BY JON QUINN

Divine Principle In Plain Language:
The Basic Theology of Sun Myung Moon

Practical Plan for World Peace:
Unificationism—The Teachings of Sun Myung Moon

Masculinity
The Husband is the Head of the Household

1920:
The Birth of a Messiah

12 Before 40

The Case for Large Families in the Unification Movement

Jon Quinn

12 Before 40: The Case for Large Families in the Unification Movement

Creative Commons Copyright
November 2008 by Jon Quinn

http://creativecommons.org

PRINTING HISTORY

First Printing, May 2003
Thirteenth Printing, March 17, 2013 revised

ISBN-10: 1439212244
ISBN-13: 978-1439212240

Publisher: Principled Publications

You can read the entire text of this book and all my books at:
www.DivinePrinciple.com

My books may be available at special quantity discounts for bulk purchases. If interested, email me. See website for e-mail address

You can read the entire text of this book at my Web site:

www.DivinePrinciple.com

I give permission for anyone to print this book and distribute it for free. This goes for every book and audio-visual I author. I do not permit or authorize anyone to sell my books, ebooks or audio-visuals. Only my family has the right to sell my books and videos.

I encourage anyone to print and reproduce anything I author in its entirety (no deleting or editing or rewriting) and distribute worldwide in any number but without charge. I especially hope my works will be translated into every language and distributed widely all over the world. Translated works, whether translated by you or others, cannot be sold but can be given away without revision and without commercial gain.

Disclaimer

The author has done his very best to give you practical and accurate information in this book. I cannot guarantee that these ideas will be appropriate to your particular situation. If you are having problems, consult the appropriate professional. The author and publisher shall have neither liability nor responsibility to any person with respect to any loss or damage caused, or alleged to be caused, directly or indirectly by the information contained in this book or any other of my books. We assume no responsibility for errors, inaccuracies, omissions or any other inconsistencies herein.

I am not a spokesman for any organization founded by Sun Myung Moon. The content is exclusively the personal opinion of the author.

"Heavenly sons and daughters should live more happily than anyone else, and should bear more children than people in the satanic realm. Maybe twelve children will be average for you. Continuously give birth to children. Unification Church members cannot practice birth control. You should bear more than ten children."

"We have decided we should have at least twelve children. So we are heading for that goal."

— *Sun Myung Moon*

"Behold, children are a heritage of the Lord: and the fruit of the womb is his reward. As arrows are in the hand of a mighty man; so are children of one's youth. Happy is the man who has a quiver full of them."

— Psalms 127:3-5

I believe that followers of Sun Myung Moon, called Unificationists, should follow his example of creating a large family. When Father Moon married Hak Ja Han he told her he had a goal of having 12 children. He and his wife, Mrs. Moon, went beyond that goal and had 14 children. Father has said many times that we should not practice birth control and that it is important to have as many children as we can. The title of this book is *12 Before 40*. Because True Mother had all her 14 children by the age of 40 I am challenging Unificationists to do as our True Parents did and have a goal of having 12 children like they did and to have them around the time Mother had hers. She was 17 years old when she married Father and she had her 14th child when she was 39 years old. How wonderful would it be if Unificationist sisters had at least 12 children by the time they were 40 even if they have to adopt them? I believe this would make True Parents and God very happy. I am not saying that this is a commandment for every couple, but I feel it is a worthy goal for mature Unificationists.

We are all fallen people with a lot of baggage that we bring to our marriages. Obviously the reality is that not everyone can or should have 12 or more children. There are some that probably should never marry on earth and should wait until they are capable of loving another person in spirit world. There are some that cannot handle many children and should only have a few, and there may be those that should have none. There will be those who would like a large family but will have what they feel are good reasons to not have them or adopt them. For example, they may feel that they cannot afford them. They feel that God and others will not be able to help them feed and clothe and care for that many children. This kind of thinking is wrong.

Be Fruitful and Multiply

One of the most powerful writers on having big families is Nancy Campbell who wrote the excellent book *Be Fruitful and Multiply*. She says at her website www.aboverubies.org that we should have babies no matter what our situation is and trust that God will provide. When

you have a worthy goal, God will do what many would consider miracles to make your goal a reality.

Book of Exodus

I called Nancy Campbell and told her that I had gotten a letter from a man in Nairobi, Kenya expressing that he wondered where the money would come to care for many children. She told me to tell him that we have to live by Scripture. It doesn't matter how poor we are because God will provide for our children if we center on God. She said poor people often have more babies than rich people. She said the Israelites, as told in the first chapter of Exodus, were in the worst possible situation and still they multiplied until they "grew exceedingly mighty; and the land was filled with them." In Exodus 1: 7-14 we read:

> The children of Israel were fruitful, and increased abundantly, and multiplied, and grew exceedingly mighty; and the land was filled with them. Now there arose a new king over Egypt. He said to his people, "Behold, the people of the children of Israel are more and mightier than we. Come, let us deal wisely with them, lest they multiply, and if any war breaks out, they will join our enemies, and fight against us, and escape out of the land." So they put slave masters over them to oppress them with forced labor. They built storage cities for Pharaoh: Pithom and Raamses. But the more they were oppressed, the more they multiplied and the more they spread out. And the Egyptians were in dread of the people of Israel. The Egyptians ruthlessly made the children of Israel serve, and they made their lives bitter with hard service, in mortar and in brick, and in all manner of service in the field.

Because these oppressed people centered on God we read that they "multiplied, and grew very mighty" (Ex. 1:20). Weren't the Israelites living in a concentration camp? Their situation was more difficult than anything we are going through. Everyone who feels they cannot afford children should reflect on these chosen people of God who lived in the absolute worst of situations. And yet they multiplied so greatly they

scared the Pharaoh and the Egyptians. Christians were the second chosen people and tragically they abandoned the commandment to multiply in the 20th century and allowed for the barren ideology of socialism/feminism to dominate the culture. Tragically, Feminists have become mighty in the land. Unificationists are the third and final chosen people who should multiply more than anyone else and become the mightiest movement in the world.

Mrs. Campbell said if Christians would have multiplied like the Bible teaches then they would now be mighty in the land. The ruling ideology of America is feminism, and worldwide Muslims are growing more than Christians. Unificationists should be multiplying more than any religious people on earth.

Here are some quotes of Nancy Campbell I found on the Web:

> Pharaoh said to his people, "the people of the children of Israel are MORE AND MIGHTIER than we." They were a threat to Egypt. This was God's intention for His covenant people of Israel. And it is still His plan for His people today. He wants His people to become MORE AND MIGHTIER in the land. He wants the godly seed to be a threat to the devil. Is the Christian church a threat to the devil today? No! Instead we have given in to the enemy's tactics to deplete the godly seed. There are some Christian couples who voice that they do not want children at all. This is opposite to God's heartbeat and God's Word….Instead of becoming MORE AND MIGHTIER, we are becoming less and less. Christians are having as few children as the world. Instead of obeying the Word of God, we have followed the trends of the world.
>
> Now at this end time when God is looking for a people to fulfill His purposes like no other time in history, Satan is once again trying to eliminate the army of God. Over these last few decades he has been very successful. Born again, God loving Christians have fallen into His deceptive plan and

helped him reduce God's end time army. How long will we continue to become his pawns? May God help us to truly live in the kingdom of God which is the kingdom of LIFE.

ARROWS FOR GOD'S ARMY

God calls our children arrows. Psalm 127:4-5 says, "As ARROWS are in the hand of a mighty man; so are children of the youth. HAPPY is the man that hath his quiver full of them: they shall not be ashamed but they shall speak with the enemies in the gate."

In the context of Bible days, arrows were for the purpose of war! We are at war today and God needs arrows for His army. God wants children born to fulfill His strategies and plans. When a warrior went out to war, how many arrows would he want in his quiver? One or two? No, he'd want to squeeze in as many as he could. The more arrows he had in his quiver, the more weapons he had to slay the enemy and the more protection he provided for himself.

Have we forgotten God's Word which likens our children to arrows? … this is the very reason for having children. We train them to be the "light" and the "salt" in this dark world. We train and sharpen them to be "arrows" for God's army.

Satan hasn't forgotten God's Word. He knows that if he can limit the arrows from Christian parents, he can limit the light that will expose his darkness. He can limit the truth that will expose his deceptions. He can limit the arrows that will destroy his works! Yes, the enemy is scared of the godly seed. He is out to destroy it by any means he can…He seeks to limit the godly seed before it is even conceived. By doing this, he limits the army of God. If the Christian church had not listened to the humanistic lies of the enemy and

limited their families, the army of God would be more powerful in the earth in this end time hour. The enemy's camp would be trembling. Instead they are laughing. Has contraception limited the army of God even more effectively than abortion?

****

When a new baby is conceived in your womb, you have eternity in your womb. You bring forth a life that will last forever and ever. Motherhood is an eternal career. It carries on into the eons of eternity. One of the greatest deceptions of Satan is to seduce mothers to be captivated with their careers and ministry outside the home so they don't have time to create life.

****

Women are not meant to be out of covering for one day of their life. While she is unmarried, a daughter is under the protection and guidance of her father, until the day that he says, "I do" and "gives" her to her husband. The father has a responsibility to know before God that the man that he "gives" his daughter to on the wedding day is the one that God has chosen for her, a man who will continue to provide, protect and care for her as he has done all his life. The new bride now comes under her husband's covering, and under this protection she can fulfill her highest calling of nurturing the children that God gives to the marriage. As she embraces her nurturing instinct, she becomes a nation builder and a nation shaper. Dear wives and mothers, please understand my heart. I do not write this to condemn anyone but to re-focus our minds on God's highest plan, rather than the mind-set of this society.

There has been a belief in the concept called gift children in the Unification Movement where blessed couples have given a child or two

to a couple who cannot conceive. We should stop the practice of giving gift children and encourage those families that cannot conceive children to adopt children. There are millions of children worldwide who desperately need to be adopted.

NEED BOTH SEXES TO UNDERSTAND GOD

Father teaches that every family needs children of both sexes to fully know God. Having large families will ensure that a family will have both boys and girls.

Sun Myung Moon and his wife, Hak Ja Han Moon, have a big family. They have 14 children. True Mother had them in the 22-year period between the ages of 17-39. Sun Myung Moon, called Father by Unificationists, encourages his followers to have many children. Father loves the idea of big families. He even named his organization a family—Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (FFWPU). Not only is it a noble goal to have large families, but we need to make sure we build disciplined, united, principled families that are filled with true love.

I know of no married couple in the first generation of his followers who have had 12 children. There are a number of reasons for this. One reason is that many of the early followers married in their thirties and started their careers late and therefore did not have time to birth 12 children. I also doubt if they ever really thought about adoption because of a wrong-headed view about blood lineage that translated into thinking that they should not adopt outside children.

ARBITRARY NUMBERS

I am choosing arbitrary numbers in this book. I find the numbers 12 before 40 to have a certain ring to them but I am not giving them as absolute numbers. Some women have babies in their 40s and a few even in their 50s. You have to decide what is best for you. I could have titled the book *15 Before 50*. Father spoke to UTS graduates (April 17, 2005 rough notes) saying that women can "bear children up to 48 years old, after that it is almost impossible."

Father teaches by word and deed that the couples he marries (called "Blessed Couples") should not use birth control and they should have many children. He commands us to not use birth control: "You must not use birth control." (*Raising Children in God's Will*)

NUMBER 12

The number 12 is a very principled number. We teach in the *Divine Principle* that there are 12 directions of love in the four-position foundation. Father often uses the number 12 in his speeches. He says, "Jesus Christ tried to deal with 12 different characters and types of people through his disciples. He was constantly serving them. At the Last Supper, Jesus knelt and washed the feet of his disciples. Twelve disciples times six equals 72 disciples. As a Unification Church member, you should be able to harmonize with all twelve of the distinct kinds of characters." ("Time of Change" April 1, 1989)

Here is another example of Father talking about the number 12: "We human beings obtain our nourishment from the planet earth. Likewise children gain their nutrition from their mother's body to begin with. In that sense we can say that women represent the earth. On the earth we have four different seasons and twelve different months. Mothers should be able to have many children and in raising them become a more rounded and loving mother. She would not complain, just as the planet earth doesn't complain to anyone. If you have twelve children who represent the twelve different months, some months will be in conflict, some will compete and fight. However, as long as they have a loving mother who acts as a harmonizing force amongst them, they will be able to harmonize with one another." ("Following the Cosmic True Love Way" May 5, 1996)

Large families are part of Father's lineage. Father grew up in a large family of 12 children. Father had 11 brothers and sisters. Father's mother was one of 12 children meaning she also had 11 brothers and sisters. Dear Reader, just imagine how exciting and powerful your life and family would have been if you had 11 godly brothers and sisters!

BLUEPRINT

Father gives us a blueprint to building the ideal world. He says:

We have a blueprint. (4-18-93)

> This is your blueprint. Anybody who knows about technology can understand that once you have a plan, a blueprint, you can just follow it and it will come about. You have to have a blueprint in order to build a machine. You have the blueprint for your own completion and the blueprint for the completion of your family. That is all you need. Do you understand clearly? (3-23-93)

The cornerstone of Father's blueprint for world utopia is every person creating a godly lineage of big families.

15 CHILDREN

We are followers of Christ. Christ is a human being just like you and me. His wife is a human being. True Parents are not super human. They had 14 children. Why don't we go beyond them and have at least 15 children? We cannot be intimidated by their greatness and feel we cannot have as many children as they had because we are so much less than them.

They push themselves to reach maximum achievement in the few years we mortals have on this earth. We should imitate them and push ourselves also. Father often says he wants us to be greater than him. The core of his teaching and his life is family. He speaks strongly against birth control and for having many children. Let's do it!

MOST IMPORTANT GOAL

True Parents set a goal to have at least 12 children and I don't see any good reason why young blessed couples should not do the same. Father pushes us to do many things, but I feel deeply that we should make building a big family our most important goal. Having big goals is scary in this fallen world. Everyone will sympathize with those who choose a low standard life and even be critical of anyone who strives to reach beyond mediocrity and the average. People are jealous and feel judged when someone else is successful. Fallen man criticizes passionate big thinkers as fanatics who are unbalanced and dangerous.

If there is a voice in your head against achieving the goal of 12 children it is the voice of evil spirit world. If anyone on earth criticizes you by calling you names like "workaholic" or "zealot" or "extremist" as you work hard so you can have 12 children, don't be intimidated or swayed from your course. They are just poor victims of mind control from evil spirits in spirit world and from little thinkers on earth who have influenced them. Choose friends who support your noble goal of 12 children. Father tells us to be crazy for God. He says we should "leave the tradition that we have become crazy for God" (*The Way of God's Will* Chapter 1-3). We are not a part of the small thinking of this world. "Do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your minds, so that you may discern what is the will of God—what is good and acceptable and perfect." (Romans 12:2)

God's way is to be a nonconformist. Jesus came out of nowhere with no formal education and he upset people with his powerful words. If we are not challenging people with Father's revolutionary revelations we are not very good followers of Christ. Campaigning for every couple to have at least 12 children will be distressful for some people. Let's not be conformed to the tiny thinking of those who fight against Father's vision of early marriages and large families.

TRUE MOTHER WAS WORRIED

Father has talked several times about his decision to have many children. He says his wife was "worried" about having so many. Still he convinced her to do it. In fact he even went beyond his own goal of 12 and had 14 children—7 boys and 7 girls. In the book *Raising Children in God's Will*, a collection of excerpts from some of his speeches, he says:

> You must not use birth control. In the satanic world they will have more birth control and in the church we will have lots of children. That also applies to True Mother. We have decided we should have at least twelve children. So we are heading for that goal. Do we have many? We now have eight brothers and sisters, so that is close to twelve. If we quit having daughters and have only sons, we might have fifteen or sixteen. So when I gave mother this task, she was

> worried. She even said that she wished she could expect the second baby before giving birth to the first one.
>
> Even mother is doing this, so what right do you people have to use birth control?

Let's look again at what he said: "We have decided we should have at least twelve children. So we are heading for that goal." If we are followers of True Parents then shouldn't we be saying the same exact thing?

Sun Myung Moon says he gave his wife a "mandate":

> Mother has carried many children and her physical ordeal is great, but my mandate to her was that she must have twelve children. Should Mother pray to God, "My husband is crazy. How can I have twelve children? Could you somehow convince him to be satisfied with less than that?" Mother is precious because she is grateful to God for her mission. It is an incredible mission but that's why she is even more grateful. That is also why each child is more beautiful and greater than the ones before. Then Mother wants to give more because God is rewarding us in such a fantastic way. God shows His love by blessing this family. (7-8-79)

A mandate is an authoritative command. Should brothers act like Father and order their wives saying she "must have twelve children"? Father ordered his wife to have 12 children. Is Father a cruel taskmaster like the incompetent media or confused former members portray him as? He was not vicious and insensitive when he commanded True Mother to go through the ordeal of having so many babies in so few years. God is not a ruthless dictator and mean-spirited when He gives difficult tasks such as asking Noah to build an ark and asking Moses to lead his people out of slavery in Egypt or asking us to follow Father's example of making it a goal to have 12 children.

It is important that Unificationists understand when it is principled to use persuasion and when to use force. We don't force people to accept the ideology of having 12 children. Father did not force Mother to have children. He did not rape her. She voluntarily obeys Father because she believes he is a good leader. And she is smart to do so unlike Father's first wife who was selfish. Father teaches who God is. He says:

> My first wife was outstanding as an individual, but she only thought of her own well-being and our family. But I was looking for a woman who would take care of everyone else first. I wanted our home to be open for public service and a place of God's love, but she could not live like that. If I listened to that woman, would I be here today teaching you this message? I knew that my wife had a very difficult task to truly live for the sake of others, but to follow her direction would have led to permanent death. I could not possibly live that way. When she knew she could not change my mind, she just left.
>
> Do you think Mother is a very fortunate and happy woman to be married to me? In one sense she is fortunate, but there is untold suffering behind her appearance. I know her suffering because she has virtually no freedom. She does not determine her own schedule. She has no freedom to sleep whenever she wants, but only when I allow it. It is not easy to be my wife. My life is absolutely public. Yesterday Mother didn't feel very well, but I had said that we would visit Washington, DC, so she just obeyed and followed. She had a headache and felt dizzy, but do you think Mother slept all morning? Absolutely not. Do you still think Mother is a happy woman?
>
> I went to Washington yesterday and visited the members at the *Washington Times*, and Mother was there with me every minute. You know my sermons don't last just ten minutes but go on for hours, and Mother was there the whole time. I'm sure she was thinking I could give a great message in just a short time, but she sat and listened for hours. Even this

> morning I'm sure she would like me to give a short sermon because there is a celebration scheduled today at East Garden. Mother is concerned that I will get too tired. She feels anxious when I go on and on, but still she obeys and sits calmly. Mother does not have an easy life at all. You may think she is the happiest person under the sun with nothing to worry about, but that is not the case.
>
> Mother knows that she must follow my will because everything I do is for the salvation and benefit of others. (9-5-82)

COMMANDMENT

Father is a godly patriarch, not a ruthless tyrant, when he pushes his wife and his followers to obey his difficult commandment to be like him and demand that women endure the pain of many pregnancies. How serious are we when Father gives us the commandment to have around 12 children?

Fallen man often has a difficult time sorting out what is loving and what is hateful. By studying Father's words and deeds we can learn how to make the right decisions. Sometimes love is tough. The greatest decision we can make is to push ourselves to be physically and spiritually strong enough to raise at least 12 children.

The Presidents of the United States are the most famous and powerful men on earth and for over a hundred years these men have been wimps who have lost sight of the most fundamental goal a man can have—to have a large family. The four Presidents honored at Mt. Rushmore lived in a culture much higher than ours. Their world-view honored big families. Since Teddy Roosevelt lived at the turn of the century, America has declined because men have become weak and women have become disorderly.

LOVE CHILDREN

Unificationists must restore the old fashioned virtue of big families that Christians lost in the 20th century. The 21st century must be led by

Unificationists who will lead the way to having huge families. And these Unificationist brothers will not be doing this for some neurotic macho reason but because they love children like God and the Messiah do. Father loves children. In *Philosophy of Education* he says, "I was a Sunday school teacher who thought of children to be the most precious things. I really loved the children more than anyone else. The children were also crazy about me, too. They would not even go to school but follow me instead."

Father is always principled. That is why he and Mother have 14 children, and he awards those who have large families in his movement. It is God's will that we have many children and raise them to be spiritual giants. God and True Parents are commanding us to have big families.

The following are some excerpts from speeches given by Sun Myung Moon about having big families:

> HAPPINESS FOR WOMEN
>
> Happiness for a woman lies in having a house full of children to love and take care of, not just having a husband who goes out every day and works and comes home at night. So you all need children, don't you? ("The Dream of the Unification Church" May 3, 1992)
>
> WOMEN WANT EXCITEMENT
>
> Women cannot be happy in a mediocre situation. They want excitement. This is not a laughing matter. If there is a woman who gives birth to many children and they all come to express their love at the same time, she can get very dizzy. But it is happy. Love is there. How can you handle it all at the same time? How about money? Do you think it is good to have a lot of money? Would you prefer to be the best mother or a bad mother? The best! Who is the best mother? The one with ten children or 100 children? The mother with 100 children is the best. How about

1,000? It is the same principle. She would have regret because she cannot love them all. That is the most precious mind. Is it better to have many or a few children?

Father recently found out why American women are so hysterical (not historical, hysterical!). They do not have an anchor. They are drifting without direction. Each child is an anchor line to make her stable. Hysterical women give birth to inferior children. God desires us to have more than three children. With a small amount of children, you only come to know one season. Mother has so many children. They are a textbook of herself—she represents all seasons. She can relate to all people because of the base she has through her children. She has a complete reference through them. If she meets someone new they will remind her of one of her children who is similar. A mother who has reared many children has no bad in her.

Handling even one child is so difficult. You are always tired. There is no time to rest your mind or your body. Do you think this is happy though? The smile of such a mother reflects twelve different worlds. It is very rich. A woman who never married may smile, but compared to a mother with twelve children their smiles are as different as heaven and earth. ("Let Us Live Well" April 2, 1989)

Jacob furthered the Providence centering upon his twelve sons; Moses did so centering upon his twelve tribes; Jesus also did so, centering upon his twelve disciples. Therefore it would have been a serious thing if Mother had not given birth to twelve sons and daughters. No matter what this world says concerning this, Father had to have twelve sons and daughters by all means. Do you understand? (*The Way for a True Child*)

> Jacob had twelve children, and now Mother is having twelve children. It is an incredible task. Jacob's children were born of four mothers, but it is God's will that humanity be organized through one mother. So Mother is obedient to God's will and is fulfilling that task now. We have eleven children now, and our twelfth child is on its way. Everything derives from the historical pattern. ("Total Self Reevaluation" September 14, 1980)
>
> You ladies should say, "I will give birth to as many children as I can, who will do even greater work than God and Rev. Moon." Then the entire world will become the kingdom of God. (3-2-03)
>
> Giving birth to many children, as Mother did, is good. Why? Your children will become heavenly people, honorable people. That number is your honorable property, your most precious property.
>
> The joy of giving birth to our children is a reenactment of the joy God had when He gave birth to us.
>
> You did not see how your wife grew up, but by looking at your own daughter you now can know how your wife grew up. (4-18-93)

Father not only teaches us that we should have many children but we also need to make sure that we have at least one of each sex. When I was growing up in the 1950s I knew of a Roman Catholic family in my neighborhood that had 12 children. The first 11 were girls. Their twelfth child was a boy! Even if we have to adopt we need to experience raising both a boy and a girl if we are to know God and live a full life. Sun Myung Moon teaches:

> ONE OF EACH SEX
>
> All the children will extend their arms and embrace one another and, including their mother, become one

big harmonious circle. How wonderful this is. Amen. How about that? Woman's purpose is so precious. Should we have as many children as we can afford, or just a limited amount? (Many.) Many or money? [Laughter] There are some women who want to have only one child. But why did God create two breasts? These two breasts are indicative that you should have at least two children. If you have only boys or only girls, one way or another the human race will end. Father concludes that unless you give birth to a boy and a girl, at least one of each, you cannot say that you are a mother or a father. No matter what, you need at least one boy and one girl.

Should we have as many children as possible, or only a limited number? (Many.) With your twelve children sitting in front of you and your husband sitting behind them, won't you feel really grateful to your husband to see that, in part, the children resemble him? Have you ever thought that your husband is the one who gave you the opportunity to use your breasts and hips most fully for the original purpose? Who is the one who caused the utilization of your breasts and hips most fully? The father of the family. You all experience your monthly period. Why? Does that indicate that you wish to reject your husband or still welcome him?

You proud Americans sitting before Father feel as if you are condemned. In general, women have been living their lives in ignorance. There is a world of confusion out there. Was it a wise decision to join the Unification Church? You may not prosper in your generation, but your future generations are guaranteed. Guaranteed. Do you like that? (Yes.) Remember, your body structure is for the sake of your children and your love is for the sake of your children. If woman and man claim that their sacred sexual organ belongs only to them and no one else, what is going to happen in terms of their relationship as husband and wife?

Women have two duties: to love your children and to love your husband. Who comes first, your children or your husband? (Husband.) You don't sound very confident in your answer. Please answer Father clearly. (HUSBAND.) That is true.

From whom do you begin to receive love? From your husband. Until you receive love from your husband you cannot conceive your children. ("Following the Cosmic True Love Way" May 5, 1996)

We must be thankful to God; He always prepares our situation for us. The Unification Church does not use birth control; we bear as many children as God gives us. Mother and I have set the example and Mother has already given birth to 13 children. Having more and more children is another way in which our movement can grow. Since America is so wealthy that you have special foods for dogs and cats, that wealth can be channeled into feeding good human beings. With the kind of multiplication we will be seeing, imagine how large our population will be in fifty years! ("Let This Be a Good Year" January 2, 1983)

The white population of this country is already declining because it has become fashionable for young white couples to have very few or even no children.

But what about the Unificationist couples? They are trying to have as many children as they can. ("Creation of the Fatherland" January 1, 1984, Midnight)

Right at this point, since we perfectly resemble God, we can start the action of creating, like God Himself. Therefore, each person should give birth to as perfect a child as himself or herself. Therefore, unless we give birth to a child and help them grow to perfection,

we cannot go to heaven, because heaven is God's dwelling place. Without going through love's history course, we cannot go to God's country, which is heaven. Do you understand? This is clear, very clear. ("I Will Live With True Parents" March 7, 1993)

If you get married and your husband wants to have children but you keep putting it off, what will happen? You only have a certain number of years in which you can give birth to children. ("The Start of the 40-day Witnessing Condition" July 4, 1978)

When I visited Barrytown I asked the seminarians if they would use birth control after they got married. If Jacob and his wife had not wanted too many babies then Joseph, one of the youngest, would never have been born, and if he had not been born there would have been no chance for the Exodus of the Israelites from Egypt. I have many older brothers and sisters. If my parents had used birth control and only wanted one or two children, would there have been any chance for me to be born? That would have been great for you because then no one would push you out! In my own family, the farther you look down the line of children, the brighter and more capable the children are.

How do you know what kind of son or daughter you may have in the future? God may want to give a special kind of son or daughter to my family a few years from now who may have the power to govern the world or who may discover some invention to speed the work of God. Who knows! But if Mother and I stop having children then when I go to spirit world God will accuse me of messing up His dispensation. Now you know whether or not birth control is best, right? ("Resurrected Kingdom of God" March 26, 1978)

I talked about birth control in Barrytown. What do you think about birth control? If the people of Jacob's era had practiced birth control, Joseph wouldn't have come into being. If God prepared a man who had the scientific ability to enable people to see God through television, but due to birth control he were not born, that generation would have no excuse in front of the spirit world and humanity. Heavenly sons and daughters should live more happily than anyone else, and should bear more children than people in the satanic realm. Maybe twelve children will be average for you. Continuously give birth to children. Unification Church members cannot practice birth control. You should bear more than ten children. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

...the production center is necessary in order to produce the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. Therefore, husband and wife are the factory. If they are the factory, which is better, mass production or a little production? Mass production is better.

DOZENS

Then how many dozens would you like to produce? The more the better? The fewer the better? You women, how many dozens are you going to bear? When God sees birth control, He grimaces. Then what are you going to do?

If the factory automates mass production and there comes to be mass production everywhere, the Kingdom of Heaven will be full. That's why women are created to bear many children. (*Earthly Life and Spirit World Part 1)*

The spirit world has infinite room. There is no need for birth control because they want a bigger population. Even if you starve to death here because of your sacrificial life, or the fact you have such a

large family, you will go to the kingdom of heaven, so it's not a bad deal. Has anyone in our movement starved to death? No. We're trained to survive any kind of situation. (3-27-90)

What is the wish of an individual? When you think about it, there must be the wish of a man and the wish of a woman. So what are their wishes? Their traditional way of life and hope would be, while they grow up, to be mature and get married. That is the path of hope that life can go and many people have followed it.

So what is the purpose of two, man and woman, meeting and loving each other. Where does the purpose of love dwell? If a couple loves each other centered upon themselves, where does the purpose lie? Do they hope the result of it will influence only themselves? Do they love each other only planning to leave love for themselves? We don't think so. When we love we are hoping for something where the result can be connected to the whole. Isn't that children? Why do we want to have children? Why are we not satisfied with centering upon a substance who is closest to us, but try to leave children behind. When we talk about having a small number or a large number of children, the more a person stands in a noble or a good position, his desire is to leave behind as many offspring as possible, centered upon his precious position. That is the nature of human beings.

Nowadays, people are talking about birth control. In other words, we can say that even though our original nature wants to spread and expand our offspring centered on family, which is the origin of moral principles of humanity, birth control prevents it.

When I look at the children in my family, the younger they are, the smarter they are; they are geniuses. So if there is a gift that God grants to us, should we prepare

a big bag or a small bag to put it in? Do you want many presents or not? Wouldn't you receive many? (We want many.) What is that gift? (Sons and daughters.) So, my mother would have had something like 20 or 40 children. (Laughter) God would do so. He wants to give us 100 or 200 children, but there is a limit to the number so in the end He will give sons and daughters that can be worth 40 children.

CONQUER

What happens if you don't have children, if you just cut off what God wanted to give you? If you apply birth control you cut off children which God planned to send as the sons and daughters that can conquer and rule all of heaven and earth.

RULE THE WORLD

When you see the children of our Unification Church, the more babies that were born: the second child is better than the first, and the third is better than the second....They will have better children, the younger they are. I am sure it is a fact. They will have better children, even their hearts. God has prepared for children that can rule the world and can study how they can see God on TV.

When I go to the spirit world, would humankind and God praise Rev. Moon, or not? If you think about this, can you, or can you not apply birth control? (You cannot.) So even if the satanic world applies birth control, we should not do it. Even if you are very pretty and rich, if there is a husband who receives God's love, you must follow God's will and follow the peaks of the heart, and even if you know you will have hardships and be treated contemptuously, but if you are able to give birth to sons and daughters who can rule the world and love

heaven and earth, you must say, “Yes, I agree. I will go that way.”

Birth Control is Forbidden

I am going to forbid birth control to the women of the Unification Church. I will say, “Go ahead and have many children.” In America, even pigs eat barley powder and kidney beans, so go ahead and have many children. As I have said, “Have many children!” After I came to America I had to show a good example, so I have said to mother, “Have many sons and daughters” Now how’s that?

Out of Jacob’s twelve sons, Joseph is the eleventh. If Jacob applied birth control, could Joseph become Prime Minister? (Laughter) The more time goes by, the better children you will have. The further you go, they will have more fortune in the Unification Church, the path of fortune in the Unification Church. It is true. After you have gone to the spirit world, and God says, “I was going to send, through your family, men who can control the Universe, but you have cut his throat.” What will you do? If you bore them, they will feed themselves even if you don’t eat. Even having ten babies a day is OK. Have children. (laughter) (*Raising Children In God’s Will*)

Birth Expansion

How many children of blessed families are there in Japan? (5,700) Give birth to more. The secular world is practicing birth control, but the Unification Church is practicing birth expansion. The forerunner is Rev. Moon with 14 children. The heaven kingdom needs citizens. (“Unification of My Country” God’s Day Midnight Speech December 31, 1990)

In *The Tradition, Book One* by Chung Hwan Kwak we read:

> Unification Church View on Contraception
>
> Father has made several references to birth control in various speeches to blessed couples. Father views the creation of each new child as a most precious event which will bring eternal blessings. Father views children as a blessing which we would not want to deny God or ourselves. Father has often encouraged blessed couples not to eternally regret limiting their families but rather to view children as blessings from God.
>
> When Abortion Is Not Acceptable for Unification Church Members.
>
> Economic situation. We do not have the authority to interrupt the physical order of the cosmos based on lack of finances. Economic considerations can never be compared with the value of life. We cannot presuppose God's will. Perhaps God has special plans for that particular child to influence future history.
>
> Lack of harmony
>
> Abortion should also not be considered if couples feel that their relationship at the time of conception was not very loving.

Having many children and not doing birth control is a commandment and core value of Sun Myung Moon. He is absolutely clear that Unificationists must multiply and dominate the earth. He is not interested in any exceptions to this rule. The Second Generation and every generation thereafter are supposed to procreate more than anybody else. He is not into artificial or natural birth control. He commands us to enjoy sex and not do any family planning. Family planning is a core value of those on the Cain side. We are religious

people and should never use the Pill, the rhythm method, diaphragms, IUDs, condoms, or natural family planning.

Father pushes us to stretch. He thinks big. He wisely teaches us that we cannot waste any moment. We are given a few years to produce and raise children and if we are to reach our full potential we need to "value each and every moment to love." If we limit the size of our family we "will lose what is truly precious." We are given only a few moments to have children. He pushes us to be "great" people: "A great person lives his or her life aware of the precious value of each moment, for every particular moment is uniquely special. Such a person can be included in the ranks of the saints, and even become a divine son or daughter in Heaven and on earth." (6-26-05)

Let's not waste our time with any form of birth control.

GOAL SETTING — WRITE GOALS DOWN

If we are going to accomplish the great goal of having thousands and millions of couples having at least 12 children then everyone needs to understand goal setting. Motivational speakers like Zig Ziglar and Brian Tracy teach in their tapes, videos and books many good principles of success. The core of their teaching is that we should write down our values and then we should write down our goals and then we should use massive action to achieve them.

OVERARCHING GOAL

We have many goals in our life such as goals about our physical health and goals about our finances and education. Motivational speakers teach that to be most effective and to reach our full potential we need to focus on one overarching goal. Let's make having at least 12 children our overarching goal.

Brian Tracy writes in *Victory!: Applying the Proven Principles of Military Strategy to Achieve Success in Your Business and Personal Life*:

In every war, every battle, every great human endeavor, there must be clear, specific goals and objectives. Each person who is responsible for a part of the result must know exactly what the result is and how it is to be measured. The greater the degree of clarity, the more likely it is that the goal will be achieved.

The objective must have five qualities. It must be:

1. Clear.

The objective must be absolutely clear to all those who are expected to be instrumental in attaining it. When the goal is to seize a specific objective, each person responsible must know what the objective is, where it is, and when it is to be seized.

2. Attainable.

The objective should be realistic and within the span of control of the unit to which it is assigned. The goal should not require superhuman strengths or abilities, and it must be attainable with the resources of the unit assigned to that goal.

3. Decisive.

The objective must be significant and meaningful and must make a worthwhile contribution to the achievement of higher-order objectives.

4. Specific.

The objective should be measurable; it should be expressed in such a way that it is clear whether or not it has been accomplished. A third party should be able to judge whether or not the objective has been attained.

5. Time-bounded.

There must be a specific deadline along with time lines for the achievement of the objective. A specific date and time must be given for the attainment of a clear, decisive, and specific objective.

Clear objectives, backed by detailed plans, vigorously executed with boldness and persistence, lead to success time and time again. Unclear and fuzzy objectives, often accompanied by confusing and contradictory plans, lead to underachievement and defeat over and over.

CLEAR TARGET

Success in any area of life is a direct result of knowing exactly what you want and then determining the very best way to achieve it. When you have a clear target to aim at, and you have carefully planned every step of the way to your goal, you will accomplish vastly more in a shorter period of time than if you started off without a clear strategic plan.

IDEALIZATION

Begin setting objectives by projecting forward three to five years and imagining a *perfect* future. Decide what is right before you decide what is possible.

Clarifying and sharing this vision is a key responsibility of leadership. As the Bible says, "Where there is no vision, the people perish."

What are you trying to do? What exactly are your goals? Are they written down, clear, specific, time-bounded, and measurable? Lack of clarity with regard to goals leads to lack of accomplishment, both in the short term and in the long term.

How are we trying to do this? Always be open to the possibility that there could be a different or better way to accomplish the same objective—with lower costs, lower risks, and greater certainty.

Organize your activities by *priority*. Which items are more important, and which are less important?

Your ability to set goals for yourself is the master skill of success. ... The very act of setting goals transforms your life and virtually guarantees your future.

Decide exactly what you want in each area of your life and then write it down in clear, specific language. Writing your goals on paper moves you into the top 3 percent of living adults.

Only 3 percent of adults have clear, written, specific goals. Your aim should be to join this top 3 percent. These people earn five and ten times as much as the average. They experience a much greater sense of control and much greater feelings of happiness and accomplishment than average people do. The very act of setting goals changes not only your body chemistry, but also your entire attitude toward yourself and life.

Take action on your plan immediately. Do something every day that moves you in the direction of your most important goal. Never miss a day. As Robert Schuller said, “By the yard, it’s hard; but inch by inch, anything’s a cinch.”

Take a sheet of paper and make a list of every goal that you would like to accomplish in the next three to five years. ... Once you have completed this list, go over the list and ask this magic question: What one goal on this list, if I accomplished it, would have the greatest positive impact on my life?

MOST IMPORTANT GOAL

> There is almost always one goal that if accomplished would have more of an impact on your other goals than any other single goal. Once you have identified your most important goal, your major definite purpose, write it down on a separate sheet of paper.
>
> Then, set a deadline for achieving it and identify the obstacles standing in your way. ... Resolve from this moment on that you will do something every day to move you toward the achievement of your major definite purpose.

CHEAPER BY THE DOZEN

There is a famous book and movie called *Cheaper by the Dozen* that is the true story of a family of a loving couple who built a happy family of 12 children at the turn of the 20th century. Frank and Lillie Gilbreth went to California for their honeymoon. When they got on the train we read this conversation they had:

> "We're going to have a wonderful life, Lillie. A wonderful life and a wonderful family. A great big family."
>
> "We'll have children all over the house," Mother smiled. "From the basement to the attic."
>
> "From the floorboards to the chandelier."
>
> "When we go for our Sunday walk we'll look like Mr. and Mrs. Pied Piper."
>
> Mother put the magazine on the seat between her and Dad, and they held hands beneath it.

"How many would you say we should have, just an estimate?" Mother asked.

"Just an estimate, many."

"Lots and lots."

"We'll sell out for an even dozen," said Dad. No less. What do you say to that?"

"I say," said Mother, "a dozen would be just right. No less."

"That's the minimum."

"Boys or girls?"

"I'd like to have half boys and half girls. Do you think it would be all right to have half girls?"

"If that's what you want," Dad said, "we'll plan it that way. Excuse me a minute while I make a note of it." He took out his memorandum book and solemnly wrote: "Don't forget to have six boys and six girls."

They had a dozen children, six boys and six girls, in seventeen years. Somewhat to Dad's disappointment, there were no twins or other multiple births. There was no doubt in his mind that the most efficient way to rear a large family would be to have one huge litter and get the whole business over with at one time.

It is interesting that he not only made the goal verbally but wrote it down on a piece of paper. This is a wonderful example of the power of having specific goals and writing them down.

When anyone asked Frank: "How can you afford so many kids?" He would say, "They come cheaper by the dozen, I guess."

INSURANCE

The book and movie are basically about the joy this family experienced but they had their share of tragedies like we all have. One of the children died at the age of 6. The father died of a heart attack when the oldest was 18 and the youngest was 2. We must organize ourselves so that every person in a family is loved and receives all the material things they need. This means there should be at the very least a substantial amount of term insurance, and better yet have the true insurance from living in a loving spiritual community cares for each other. Father teaches the wonderful concept of trinities where three fathers care for each other's families. These trinities are to live near other trinities and this will expand out to nations and then the entire world will become one big happy family where there is total security and true love.

Here is a written goal statement of having a large family that you might want to consider signing:

PLEDGE TO HAVE MANY CHILDREN

I _____ promise as husband or fiancé of

_____to do my best to have at least ___ children even if I have to adopt and when I am older I will work hard to mentor and help my children and other young blessed couples who also have made it their goal to have more children than those outside our culture.

I_____ promise as wife or fiancée of

_____to do my best to have at least ___ children even if I have to adopt and when I am older I will work hard to mentor and help my children and other young blessed couples who also have made it their goal to have more children than those outside our culture.

As a couple we make this commitment to work to build an exemplary big family with a peaceful and calm feeling. We sign this pledge feeling no high pressure or duress or desire to simply please others. We deeply feel the importance of Father's command to follow him by having as many children as we can.

We also promise to be absolutely loyal to each other and never fall. We understand that Father wants us to be people God will not worry about when we go out into the world. We will do as Father says and have total confidence in our mission to create exemplary families and in teaching the *Divine Principle*.

Signed:

Husband_____
Date_____

Wife_____
Date_____

Thomas Jefferson was America's President in the beginning of the 19th century. In the early 1800s his daughter, Martha, had 12 children. No children of a President in the 20th century would even consider having 12 children. It would never even occur to them.

RISK

When we push ourselves to do great things we open ourselves up to experience wonderful things and we open ourselves to be greatly hurt. Thomas Jefferson buried his wife and five out of his six children. He was President in 1800. A hundred years later Theodore Roosevelt was President in 1900. He buried his son Quentin who died fighting in World War I. His son, Archie, was seriously wounded in the war. His son, Kermit, committed suicide. Like Jefferson he buried his wife. True Parents have had many children and buried some of them. We do not live in an ideal world. In this hell on earth some children die before the parents. God wants Unificationists to be the pioneers of the ideal world. We are supposed to be stronger in our work to convert others than any people who have ever lived. We are called to work smarter than anyone in history. We are to be the greatest champions God has ever had and we are to win a victory. If we are going to have more children than anyone in history we have to have the strength to handle extreme happiness and extreme pain. We should not sabotage success by listening to spirits and people on earth who say we are everything from a dangerous cult to pathetic zealots. Every one but us are brainwashed and pathetic. We are the hope of this world. We have the blueprint for world peace.

Jefferson, Roosevelt and Father lived through terrible wars and their side won. Their lives are dramatic. They fought the good fight. Satan rules this world and we have to fight every moment of our lives so our descendants will not have to fight. It is our duty to be focused on the goal of the ideal world every moment of the day. It doesn't matter what evil we see or hear. We are the lighthouses to the 6 billion people who are lost in an ocean of ignorance. We are saying the earth is round and they are all screaming it is flat. We cannot be intimidated for one moment by anything around us. We have to be like Father in prison and pray for our enemies and comfort God's heart.

Hopefully we will experience some love along the way in our exciting journey of building a world utopia. Jefferson experienced the love of his daughter who helped him by being the hostess of the White House when he was President and cared for him in his old age. Her nickname was Patsy. She adored her father. In a letter she wrote to him once she expressed her devotion saying, "It is truly the happiness of my life to think that I can dedicate the remainder of it to promote yours. It is a subject however upon which I ought never to write for no pen on earth can do justice to the feelings of my heart." Jefferson loved and played with his grandchildren and they loved him. No matter what we receive in life we should be grateful for what he have and be excited that we have found the truth that sets us free. Jefferson, Roosevelt and True Parents did not collapse and stop fighting because they were hit with tragedy. They picked themselves up and forged ahead to victory. Each of us should do the same. We should never believe those who say we are losers and useless and weak. We must become rocks like the Messiah we follow. Having 12 children may bring us many heartaches. Jefferson's daughter, Patsy, had 12 children even though she had a bad marriage. Her husband was an alcoholic and incompetent at being a provider and relating to people. He had his demons but Patsy kept getting up every morning to do her God-given duties.

1800

In 1800 the White House had a President who had six children and a hostess that was an orderly woman. Patsy delivered the first baby born in the White House. Her husband could care less what she named it so Jefferson recommended naming the boy James Madison Jefferson. Patsy did not divorce her husband and kept having children. She was a responsible person who worked hard everyday fulfilling her feminine role without complaint.

1900

In 1900 the White House had a President who also had six children. Roosevelt's daughter became an influential feminist. Alice Roosevelt was famous in the 20th century for her unladylike manners and biting tongue. Patsy had twelve children. Alice had one.

2000

In 2000 the White House had a President who had one child and a wife who deserted her responsibilities as First Lady in the White House in Washington D.C. and left for New York to run for Senator. This First Couple is two comrades, not a husband and wife. The Clintons lived together before they were married. They are terrible role models.

PROSELYTIZE FOR BIG FAMILIES

We must always ask ourselves, "What is the most valuable use of my time now?" We need to have single-minded focus on our most important goal. To be peak performers and reach our potential we need to be enthusiastic in our self development and in helping others. Unificationists must become winners in this cultural war. What we do needs to be the headlines of newspapers and the lead story of the evening news on television. Every person should know what God's will is and work to accomplish it. God's primary focus is the family. Let's focus on making our families better than any other group's families. Father says that people living outside the Unification Movement are living in the "satanic realm" or in the "secular society." We need to proselytize and successfully turn this world 180 degrees around. We must find the words that move mankind to reject Satan's world and accept our ideology of big families. We must also walk our talk.

This book is about the greatest goal every person should have in his or her life. After a couple accepts the perfect logic of the *Divine Principle* and the wife is young then the couple should have the primary goal of having at least 12 children. Father gave that goal to Mother. If a couple has a wife that is over 40 (or 50) then they should have the goal of helping young couples reach the goal of having at least 12 children by doing such things as mentoring or helping financially. Those who you help will take care of you in your old age.

Father teaches that our time on this earth is very short compared to our life in spirit world. We can only have children on earth. He says, "There is not enough population to occupy the vast, immense spirit world, so is it better to have many children or to have a few? Yes, many. Even though I have many children, when one is missing, I feel

empty. So I can easily imagine God must feel the same way." ("The Dream of the Unification Church" May 3, 1992)

"In the spirit world there is no reproduction. God's Principle is for reproduction here on earth." ("The Truthful Family Is the Homeland of All Perfections" April 18, 1993)

We have to be concerned with earning money and shopping for groceries in this physical world. Father teaches how incredible the spirit world is. For example, he says, "When we get to spirit world, we will have no physical worries. What to eat will be no problem. What clothes to wear will be no problem. There are no automobiles or highways, no factories. Everything is set up and prepared for us. We can fly around and travel a thousand miles instantaneously, like taking one step. The universe is filled with so many stars. There are stars of gold and stars of diamond for us to visit. You can explore all of the universe; it is our field of action. You want to do that, don't you? Our physical body is our limitation now, but once we are freed from this body we are free to go anywhere. That is the way it is in spirit world. We can immediately meet with God in that world. In this world, we might pray for a long, long time and still not be able to meet with God. How difficult it is. Do you understand?" ("Parents' Day — True Parents and Blessed Couples" March 23, 1993)

"Will we have farmers in heaven? There are no farmers or factories needed to make bread in heaven, however when you want delicious bread with the power of true love you will have it immediately." ("True God's Day" 1-1-01)

DOZENS

He says, "Why don't we have just one child, like in some countries where the government allows only one child per couple? In a way, the couple living here on earth within their physical bodies should reproduce as many offspring as possible to fill up the Kingdom of Heaven. Once we get to the Kingdom of Heaven in spirit world, we can no longer bear any children. That is the vertical realm. There is only one dot, one point where the vertical line meets the horizontal. The horizontal realm is the line where we want to see many dots, many children. Many dots represent many brothers and sisters. We want to

multiply these children with the same value as God. Do you understand? Therefore, we can enjoy a huge heaven in spirit world. There is wide space there. How can we fill it up? We have to bear many children, right? Dozens, dozens, dozens, and dozens more, for eternity. One child cannot connect with many generations. You should multiply, filling heaven up, up, up. God enjoys seeing that." ("Parents' Day — True Parents and Blessed Couples" March 23, 1993)

Father explains in many magnificent words the value of having happy marriages and tons of kids. I can only scratch the surface of what he says. I encourage you to read and reread his amazing insights into family.

Father is restoring the idea of the big Victorian family. He is politically incorrect. He constantly warns American sisters to not be digested by this evil feminist culture that hates God's way of life. Father wants sisters to act like Thomas Jefferson's daughter who had a dozen children and not act like the daughters of our current presidents who are clueless.

WEAK MEMBERS AND STRONG MEMBERS

I understand that some young couples will not have many children for good reasons. I respect that. I don't want this book to be like some high-pressure car salesman who will not let you out of their showroom until you buy a car. Some people will have no children or only a few because they are simply not mature enough or other reasons through no fault of their own. Father says, "We have all kinds of Unification Church members. All members are not at the same level. There are very weak members and strong members." (9-7-78)

FREEDOM COMES WITH RESPONSIBILITIES

Everyone has freedom. We should respect the best that people can do, but we also must realize that we can often do better than we think we can and we are never free from reaping what we sow, from being free from the consequences that come from our freedom. Some have been hurt in their life and have personal issues to deal with. Some couples may not be able to have a large family because they are physically, mentally or spiritually ill. Still, I believe that the vast majority of

blessed couples should write down the goal of having at least 12 children and give their blood, sweat and tears to reach this noble goal. Then they can work hard the rest of their life making sure that each of their children have at least twelve.

DON'T PANIC

When we set goals we are going to have obstacles. Father teaches and pushes us to overcome the "difficulties" we all experience by persevering "to find the solution": "I am giving you men and women a mandate. You are destined to live this central life where the vertical and horizontal lines cross, where you can find the invisible love of God and the visible love of True Parents. You are destined to consummate that love and expand it to the world. Of course, there are difficulties on this path. Whenever my boat, 'New Hope,' leaves port it is in good shape and everything is functioning smoothly. But something invariably happens. Maybe a storm will come up, or the engine will develop trouble. A crew member may make a mistake and overlook something. But the important thing is to cope with any situation and persevere to find the solution. Instead of panicking, take care of the matter and go on." ("New Family Given By God" September 5, 1982)

MYTH OF OVERPOPULATION

One of the liberal feminist arguments against big families is the idea of overpopulation. There is always a Cain/Abel division on any idea. The leading prophet of doom is Paul Ehrlich, the author of the influential bestseller *The Population Bomb*. All of his predictions of catastrophe as mankind keeps growing in population have not come true. On the Abel side of the debate is Julian Simon who is optimistic in his book *The Ultimate Resource*. The earth, he teaches, is not overpopulated now. People are not problems but problem solvers. The only reason there is hunger in the world now is because of the ideology of socialism. God's way is for big families and small government. Satan is for small families and big government. The earth is finite and if every couple had 12 children there will come a time when we will have to deal with so many people. Let's let people of the distant future figure that out. For us, we have a mandate—an authoritative command from the Messiah to follow him and that means we should follow his example of having a huge family. We should take this goal very seriously.

The following are excerpts from *The Retreat from Motherhood* by Samuel Blumenfeld:

> Of all the mammals in existence, the human infant is dependent on its mother. Of all the mammals in existence, the human child requires the longest period of nurturing, caring, and rearing. Thus, out of sheer necessity for survival, the mother becomes the most important person in every human being's life. Her character, her personality, her method of child rearing have more influence on an individual's future development than all other forces combined simply because maternal love is the primary emotional and psychological need in everyone's life. And perhaps that is why there are almost as many men around as women—to enable women to give the inordinate amount of love and attention each human infant needs.

ANTI-MATERNAL

> It is because mothers are so important in the lives of human beings that I decided to look into what seems to be the most troubling deterioration of our time: the deterioration of motherhood, not only in terms of quantity, but also quality. In writing this book I have tried to find out why this deterioration is taking place and what can be done to reverse it. On the negative side I discovered that alcoholism and nervous breakdowns are on the increase among women, and that more teenage girls than ever are becoming delinquents, criminals, runaways, prostitutes, drug addicts, and suicides. The negative experiences and influences of childhood have turned them off on maternalism. On the positive side I discovered that there are a small but growing number of women who are indeed trying to reverse the anti-maternal trend by discovering the natural pleasures of motherhood. But their movement is largely underground and somewhat fragmented. I hope this book will encourage them....

> If I were asked why did I undertake to write [the book] the answer would be that I did so in order to be able to write the final chapter: "What do you tell your daughter?" The book, in other words, was written for a very practical reason: to enable parents, teachers, doctors, psychologists, jurists, and clergymen to answer some of the difficult questions girls ask when confronted with Women's Lib, the pill, legalized abortion, sexual freedom, love and motherhood. I offer some answers, and obviously you will not agree with all of them. But the reasons for my answers are plainly stated. In any case, to write about women is to engage in controversy.
>
> Motherhood is no longer an enviable status. The woman who succeeds in business or competes with men in the corporate game achieves more recognition than the one who stays home and bears children. Mothers are looked at more as contributors to people pollution than givers of the gift of life to new human beings. Thus, in the eyes of such organizations as Zero Population Growth, women who bear children are somewhat akin to villains.

He writes that the low birth rate and high divorce rate show not only a retreat from motherhood but also a retreat from fatherhood and from parenthood. I am proud of my wife who lovingly nursed each of our eight children for three years. There are many arguments against having a lot of kids. We must reject all of them and confidently believe that we can have 12 children and 144 grandchildren and we will be able to give hugs and presents on every one of their birthdays.

DON'T WAIT

My wife and I visited with Levy Daugherty, a vice president of the Unification Movement in his office in Washington D.C. in December of 2002 at the time one of our sons was blessed. He told us that couples should not have long separation times after they are blessed because many, perhaps as much as half of all the marriages of second generation children are getting divorced and the common denominator

for those failed marriages is that they did not start their family life soon after being blessed. These blessed couples drifted away from each other and found someone else. This does not mean that every couple has to begin their family life the day of the Blessing or that couples need to do the Three-day Ceremony exactly 40 days after the blessing.

Couples should consummate their marriage and immediately start having babies within months, not years after they are blessed. Because we do not do birth control and true happiness is having children then couples in the Unification Movement should start having children immediately. If a person thinks that when they get blessed they should spend a long time being separated or need a long time to not have children then they should not get blessed and wait until they are serious about being married and having a family.

If a couple does not know each other when they get blessed they may need a period of time together so they can fall in love. Hopefully this should not take a long time. Perhaps a few months at most. If one or both feel they need more time then maybe there is a deep problem and the blessing should be examined to see if it's going to be eternal. Weak people should not get blessed. Children should be conceived from parents who love each other. We are not robot breeders for God's army. It is a case by case situation of when a couple starts their family, but it is the feeling of Levy Daugherty that couples should not take a long time before they live together as man and wife and build a family. If one or both of a couple needs lots of time to bond then maybe they should not have not been blessed and maybe they will need to break up and be blessed later when they are more mature and ready for the awesome responsibilities of being married.

DON'T PUSH

Parents should not push their children and young people should not push themselves into marriage if they are not ready. Father says, "There are things within the men's world that the women's world does not have and that creates balance. Thus the family is the training ground for good husbands and wives. The parents have to be stern and in control. Particularly the father has to be stern. If you are not sure that your sons and daughters are ready to serve totally for the sake of a husband or

wife, then they are not ready for marriage, so don't let them do it." ("True Way of Life" July 1, 1984)

Tim LaHaye is right in his book *How to Be Happy Though Married* that people should marry young and have children soon. We are not supposed to be like stupid Yuppies who believe that both husband and wife should work for years while they are on birth control and have babies only when they can buy some big house and fancy cars. This is immature. It borders on being like the irresponsible philosophy of Playboy. Having children and encouraging others to have many children should be the primary goal in life on this earth. We are here for only a second compared to eternity in spirit world. Taking time out to get nice clothes and nice cars and skiing in Colorado without children is not living a religious life. We have to be disciples of Christ. We are to be like God. God loves kids. We enjoy our children in spirit world. We don't take our house to spirit world. Obviously we need to have a decent home and cars and presents for our kids on their birthday, but we also have to realize we are in a war against the forces of darkness. Many early followers of Father did not give presents to their children on their birthdays and Christmas. We are living in the Last Days—a time of emergency. We must figure out how to balance the public and private. I don't think we should sacrifice having children for the mission of witnessing. The Messiah brings a sense of urgency but we should do our best to have big families and do all the other things we are called to do. What are we going to teach people by our words and deeds when we bring guests to hear the *Divine Principle*? We need to teach them to have big families and raise their children to be like True Parents who made a goal of having at least 12 children. We need to show more love of children than anyone else because we know God and the Messiah more than anyone else.

NO PAIN NO GAIN

Father often teaches us to push our bodies. He pushes himself, his wife and his followers. It may seem frightening to a woman that she will be pregnant 12 times. It may be scary to a man that he has to provide, protect and lead such a big family. Father pushes us to be fearless and be great. He explains that our time on earth is over quickly and we should push ourselves to the limit just as he and Mother do. We reap what we sow and the Messiah wants each person to have a big harvest. Every person is to build an empire—a powerful dynasty that keeps

getting bigger and better every generation. He teaches that we must have many children because each one is precious and you may have a child that will be a great leader. Did you know that Benjamin Franklin was the 15th of 17 children? John and Charles Wesley are famous Christians. Their mother, Susanna, bore 19 children in 21 years. She educated all of her children. She deeply loved each child and even scheduled an hour of time for each child each week just to make sure that each one felt special. She said, "Whatever increases the strength and authority of your body over your mind—that thing is sin to you." Rick and Jan Hess write in their book *A Full Quiver*, "Susanna had to go through fourteen pregnancies before she got John, and then number seventeen was Charles, writer of some 6,000 hymns. Some gifts are worth waiting for."

I don't want to imply that our goal should be to get our children to be celebrities. Every child is "great." Our culture puts too much emphasis on charismatic people who get themselves known in the media. All this focus on sports, business, and Hollywood stars is immature and unprincipled. Our focus should be on educating our children to fulfill the Three Blessings. This does not mean competing in the Olympics, getting a PhD, becoming a politician, making a billion dollars or being a movie star. A tiny few people can play professional soccer but that is a fluke and nothing to focus on. Everyone should strive to live by the ten core values in my book *Practical Plan for World Peace*. These are doable goals that when achieved will bring enough "greatness" in our lives.

Father teaches that we must have mind/body unity. The mind must be subject—the leader—of the body. We should not be afraid to take risks and we should not be lazy. Father is the greatest motivational speaker who pushes for maximum discipline. Brian Tracy is one of America's most famous motivational speakers. He encourages people to listen to him on audio tapes as they drive instead of listening to pop music. He teaches we need to repeat listening to him and other teachers of success. He says we have to "work hard hard hard." Nobody works harder than Father. We should be bold and courageous and out work any other group in the world.

ABSOLUTE CONFIDENCE

We should be the most powerful people in the world because we follow the most powerful man who has ever lived. Father loves the word "absolute." We have absolute values and we will eventually win an absolute victory because our ideology and vision are the greatest.

Critics of Father fear his absolute confidence. They interpret everything he says and does from fallen man's cynical eyes. Jesus got the same treatment. This is the thinking that if it looks too good to be true then it is not true. Jesus and Father talk constantly of love but they are treated as being dangerous. All this talk of 12 children will be interpreted by ignorant people as some kind of conspiracy for world domination by people who only want an army. The opposite is the truth. Unificationists follow a man who sincerely loves children. He didn't have them so he could have some kind of evil empire of people who are like aliens in science fiction movies that breed like roaches and want to enslave mankind in a totalitarian Nazi concentration camp.

Men have to be serious about having a successful career outside the home and women need to be serious about having a career of homemaker inside the home. They should be debt-free. Men are hunters and women are nesters. Women need the security of a debt-free home and good medical and life insurance. We should do as motivational speakers teach. We should think big. Brian Tracy has an audio tape called *Thinking Big: The Keys to Personal Power and Maximum Performance*. Father pushes us to think bigger and work harder than Brian Tracy. We must lead dynamic, exciting lives. We have to sweat from hard work like True Parents do. We must be so passionate about our big goals that we inspire Brian Tracy to join us and use us as examples of inspiration. We can't entertain thoughts given by evil spirits and fallen man that it would be too hard to have 12 children. We should be confident that all our dreams and God's dreams will come true. We have the incredible goal of converting every person on earth. We dream of a world where everyone speaks Korean and listens to Father on tape. That day will come. Why not have the same determination to have big families? We can do both. In fact, I don't see how we will ever be effective at witnessing until people see us having big and happy families.

Father teaches us to subjugate our bodies—to discipline ourselves to not be obsessed with food, sex and laziness. He always practices what he preaches: "We must understand that for more than ten years, until Father reached thirty years of age, there was not a day in his life when he didn't feel hungry. You cannot lead a religious life if your stomach is full. One of the most unbearable pains is hunger. We must challenge ourselves to say, 'I will love God so much that it will give me the strength to tolerate hunger and lack of sleep and thinking about sex.' All these are the physical challenges—the three greatest enemies to an individual. Those are the three main parts of Satan's armament." ("Parents' Day — True Parents and Blessed Couples" March 23, 1993)

In *Philosophy of Education* Sun Myung Moon writes:

> I thought that a person who had not been able to keep his own nation did not deserve to eat three meals a day. I often went hungry. As much as I missed food, I missed the day of my country's liberation. That was how I trained myself. I said to myself that I must love my people and my nation more than food. So, during my life in Seoul, I skipped lunch. It was not because I did not have money in my pocket. When I had money, I gave it to poor people around me.
>
> I often fasted on my birthday. How could I celebrate my birthday when I had not even accomplished the individual level victory and family level victory, let alone the national and the world level victories? That was the way I thought. How could I celebrate my birthday, knowing my situation. Sinners must fulfill their responsibilities for God, and only then could they celebrate their birthdays. That was the way I lived.

FEMINISM = FALSE LOVE

The Victorian era of the 19th century was an era of big families. The 20th century embraced the satanic ideology of feminism that is against big families. Every decade in the 20th century people progressively had fewer children and more divorce. The two go hand in hand. Father

loves the family. He loves children. He criticizes America for not having more children, "Many Americans think they don't need children. But if they would deepen their conjugal love by rearing children, there would be less divorce. They live in false love instead of true love by leaving out children, and repeatedly divorce. The ethics of American society are declining due to this bad trend." (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

Because feminism is so ingrained into our culture we see things through the lens of feminism. The knee-jerk reaction to the idea that a couple would have 12 children seems ridiculous and even depressing. The mind of modern man is far different than those in centuries past who thought large families were normal. Now it is seen as abnormal. The person who would want such a thing is seen as insane.

ADOPT

If a couple cannot physically birth 12 children then they should adopt. I did a quick search on the Internet and it seems that it costs between $15,000 and 25,000 to adopt a child. It would cost much less if the Unification Movement built some orphanages in poor countries to supply the members with children. Those couples that cannot have children should adopt from third world countries. Why don't we have a church adoption agency to get some of the estimated 10,000 to 40,000 children who die of starvation and other problems like polluted water in poor third world countries every day into American and UM homes? Many of the tens of thousands of children who die every day of hunger and neglect are orphans. Let's save some the millions of street kids. Go online and look at pictures of these kids. It breaks your heart to see thousands of these kids, many who have not parents, hungry and abused on the streets of Manila and Nairobi. Imagine what our movement would be like if every family adopted one, two, five or even 10 of these children.

If Unificationists have true united big families of say 10 or more children their descendants would, in only a few generations, become the leaders of the world. If 200,000 Unificationist families had an average of 10 children, there would be one million children. If all these blessed (2nd Generation) children married between themselves, that would make 500,000 couples. If they, in turn, had an average of 10

children, they would have 5 million children. If we do the math, then in the next generation there would be 25 million children. The next generation would have 125 million. The generation after that would be 600 million and using the multiple of 5 the next would be 3 billion. Because Unificationists would have more children than any other group, in only a few generations their numbers would be so great they would dominate the earth.

If a couple had 12 children who each had 12 they would have 144 grandchildren. If they had 15 and each had 15 they would have 225 children. These numbers are exciting. If followers of Christ adopted enough children to have huge families then that would create a energized and powerful movement for God.

NO MORE GIFT CHILDREN

If someone in a community cannot conceive a baby then they should adopt from all the children in the world that desperately need parents. I think we should question the tradition of Unificationists giving away babies to other Unificationists. I think that this was only a restoration condition and should not be carried into the future. The bond children and parents have is sacred. Children look like the two people who gave them birth. Children share the same facial features, medical conditions, ancestors, and blood. They are the fruit of the love of the parents. This connection is physical, spiritual and absolute. Many adopted children search desperately for their birth parents.

There are enough children in the world that need parents. To be a blessed couple and then give a child away to another because they don't have one is comparable to giving your spouse away to someone because they don't have one. There are spouses for everyone and children for everyone in the world. Adopt children from the outside world and change their blood lineage at marriage. Life is eternal. Claim your children through birth or adoption. All of them are blessed, either at birth or their blessing. The idea that your children have to be born blessed to raise them is taking the concept of blood lineage too far.

The Unification Movement needs to make fundamental changes. There have been some couples who never had children because they waited

for someone to give them one. We need to end that tragedy by encouraging adoption.

In the book *The Complete Idiot's Guide to Understanding Mormonism* we read about their view of having children:

> There's a popular LDS joke that goes: Why do Mormon women stop having babies at 35? Because 36 are just too many. All kidding aside, LDS families do tend to run larger than the national average of 2.3 children. For Latter-day Saints, bringing children into the world is not only an obligation to God, it is a great joy to be surrounded by children.
>
> As such, LDS families often live up to the commandment of being fruitful and multiplying. Historically, many LDS people come from large families, have large families, and love being part of large families. The love of family and children runs deep in the LDS culture. Prophet Ezra Taft Benson once said, "The family is the cornerstone of civilization and no nation will rise above the caliber of its homes." In many cases, parents who are able to have only one or two children—or none at all—choose to adopt.
>
> My friends, the Terry's, have taken God's commandment of "multiplying" to considerable proportions. Mike and Trish, who have been married for 27 years, have managed to raise a family of five girls and nine boys (all single births). Mike, a self-employed cement mason, and Trish, still hike Utah's Rocky Mountains, rock-climb, ski, and camp together as a family. Each child in the Terry home is loved, nurtured, and watched over by older siblings, with Mom and Dad always nearby. There is no lack of love in this family of 16 individual personalities.

In the book there is a picture of this family with the parents and their 14 children. They look very happy. Let's do better; let's have pictures of

families with 15 children. The Mormons are well-known for having large, happy families. Let's make our image to be a religious group that has more children than Mormons and happier, more dynamic families than they have.

Doug Phillips writes this at his website visionforumministries.org:

> "Be thou the mother of thousands of millions, and let thy seed possess the gate..."
>
> Can you imagine attending a wedding where families and friends offered the above blessing to a new bride? Yet these words of encouragement, once offered to Rebekah on the advent of her marriage to Isaac (Genesis 18:24), beautifully communicate the heart of God's command to Christian husbands and wives that they be exceedingly fruitful and raise children who will influence all of culture and society for the glory of God.
>
> There is no escaping the fact that the Bible is dogmatically pro-child. Scripture declares unapologetically that the birth of many children is a source of blessing, that a key reason for marriage is to bring forth many children for the glory of God, and that parents should actively seek such blessings. The Bible begins with a mandate for conception. The first great commission given to man was to "be fruitful and multiply." This commission to bring forth many children for the glory of God and through them to subdue the earth was first given to Adam and Eve and their progeny, and was later renewed to Noah in the days following the Great Flood, and remains our standard for today—a fact that is clear from the affirmation by the Lord Jesus of the Genesis marriage mandate upon which the fruitfulness and dominion commission rests (Matthew 19:4-6).
>
> But there is more: The Bible abounds with examples of people of diverse economic backgrounds who

were considered blessed to have many children. There appears to be no relationship whatsoever between the economic status of a family and the mandate to bring forth children. Rich and poor alike are to have many children for the glory of God and to recognize that the same God who gives life is also able to provide for the life He brings into the world. In fact, in the biblical model, large numbers of children not only increase the spiritual blessing of the family, but potentially increase the financial strength of the family as well, as parents and children join in unison to contribute to the economy of the household.

In contrast with our modern society which promotes barrenness, population control, and abortion, the Bible consistently associates the inability to conceive with sorrow, a decrease in a nation's population with judgment, and the careless and harmful treatment of babies with paganism and witchcraft.

It is fair to say that for six thousand years of earth history, the unanimous sentiment of Hebrew and Christian culture was opposition to birth control, support for conception within marriage, and recognition of the blessing of children. Of course, forms of birth control have been with man since the ancients, but it has only been in the twentieth century, with the influence of evolutionism and eugenics, that Christians have publicly embraced the notion of child prevention. The point is this: The Bible is enthusiastically pro-childbirth, and what it does say of relevance to the issue of conception control is comprehensively negative. There are no clear patterns, precepts, or principles found in the Bible which seem to give any leeway to the idea that couples should alter their bodies and cut off their seed. Until recently, this was the universally accepted principle of Christian culture. This is why Christians who advocate conception control have a whopping task: The burden of proof rests on them (not those of us who argue for the normative and plain teaching of

> Scripture) to prove from Scripture alone that God is pleased with us altering our bodies and thwarting children from coming into the world. It is not enough to argue from the "penumbras and emanations" of the Scripture, or to hope that there is a stewardship principle which would support the practice of cutting off the seed. One must actively prove from clear patterns, precepts, and principles of Scripture that child prevention is part of the jurisdiction over which man may lawfully exercise stewardship. This is an important point because all sorts of wrongs can be argued on the basis of "stewardship." The relevant question is this: "do we have the jurisdiction and authority to thwart children?"
>
> The great tragedy of our day is that the Church has been swept up in the birth control ethic, with its selfish quest for convenience, comfort, and the self-deceiving vision of the individual's control over his own destiny. The fact is that we have lost our love for children and our vision to be fruitful, multiply, and have dominion over the earth. The results have been devastating.

MULTIPLY

Teddy Roosevelt spoke out passionately against the trend of men being castrated and acting like wimps. He was alarmed that the birthrate in 1900 for America was declining. In 1800 the average family had 7 children. In 1900 it had dropped to 4 and he saw the writing on the wall. Pat Buchanan writes in his book *The Death of the West: How Dying Populations and Immigrant Invasions Imperil Our Country and Civilization* that America is declining because the average number of children per family in America is now 2 and therefore barely able to replace itself. Another book on this topic is *The Birth Dearth: What Happens When People in Free Countries Don't Have Enough Babies?* by Ben Wattenberg. Father has come to save the day. He is inspiring men to once again be "manly" and procreate as Roosevelt talked about. Roosevelt called the problem of birth control "race suicide."

Like Father he spoke bluntly. He said that if America was to be great in the 20th century—if it wanted to "win a great place" it had to be a country of "good breeders as well as good fighters." He is ridiculed by many today as being too macho and unsophisticated but he was on the right track. He felt America was becoming less virile. Critics say his crusade to get America procreating big families was "strident" and "bizarre" but they are wrong. Satan worked to emasculate men in the 20th century so he could make it difficult for the Messiah, a truly virile man, to be accepted. Roosevelt gave speeches and wrote articles in magazines desperately trying to wake up America that it was declining. He pushed his ideas of the rugged life and spoke out against laziness and pursuit of pleasure. America he said must stop going down the road of decadence and if it kept on the road of men being effeminate then he warned that we would see "the development of a cultured and refined people quite unable to hold its own in those conflicts through which alone any great race can ultimately march to victory." Lord Baden-Powell also saw this trend of weakness and formed the Boy Scouts to mold boys into real men.

Roosevelt said that "evil forces" were causing "the diminishing birthrate." His prescription was "Work—fight—breed." If a people cannot do these things then it is "worthless." Americans, he said, were on a road to become "unfit to cumber the earth, if its men do not work hard ... and its women breed." Americans had to stop their "love of luxury." He said, "All the other problems before us in this country, important though they may be, are nothing compared with the problem of the diminishing birthrate and all that it implies."

DIFFERENT DUTIES

He spoke out constantly encouraging women to be excellent homemakers. He said, "The first requirement in a healthy race is that a woman should be willing and able to bear children just as the men must be willing and able to work and fight." He sympathized that women had to go through the pain of childbirth. He called it "a great injustice of nature." Nevertheless, she should do her duty and her man should consider her as "an equal partner." He explained equality this way: "...the higher and nobler the race is, the more nearly the marriage relation becomes a partnership on equal terms—the equality, of course, consisting not in the performance of the same duties by the two parties,

but in the admirable performance of utterly different duties ... in mutual forbearance and respect."

GOOD CITIZENS

Roosevelt is accused of being a naive romantic and out of touch with the real world of the average woman and man. He is not. He is right in speaking out against men not having the guts and heart to have many children. American men, he said, were not "anxious" enough to have many children and women were refusing "to recognize that the greatest thing for any woman is to be a good wife and mother." He correctly felt this trend was alarming. He felt contempt for women who would "flinch from breeding." He praised those who had big families. He publicly praised one family who sent the President a picture of their family writing for all to hear: "Three cheers for Mr. and Mrs. Bower and their really satisfactory American family of twelve children. That is what I call being good citizens."

He blamed feminist birth control "propagandists" for the declining birthrate. He said they were "decadent" and "immoral." Like Father he had his critics who say he was "obsessed" and wrong, but the truth hurts.

In the March 1903 issue of a magazine Roosevelt wrote scathingly against men and women who did not have large families:

> If a man or woman, through no fault of his or hers, goes throughout life denied those highest of all joys which spring only from home life, from the having and bringing up of many healthy children, I feel for them a deep and respectful sympathy, the sympathy one extends to a gallant fellow killed at the beginning of a campaign, or the man who toils hard, and is brought to ruin by the fault of others. But the man or woman who deliberately avoids marriage and has a heart so cold as to know no passion, and a brain so shallow and selfish as to dislike having children, is in effect a criminal against the race, and should be the object of contemptuous abhorrence by all healthy people.

LIFE OF STRENUOUS ENDEAVOR

Roosevelt said many good things about having good character such as being bold and courageous. He gave a famous speech in 1899 titled "The Strenuous Life" in which he said:

> The work must be done; we cannot escape our responsibility and if we are worth our salt, we shall be glad at the chance to do the work—glad of the chance to show ourselves equal to one of the great tasks set modern civilization.
>
> I preach to you then, my countrymen, that our country calls not for the life of ease but for the life of strenuous endeavor. The twentieth century looms before us big with the fate of many nations. If we stand idly by, if we seek merely swollen, slothful ease and ignoble peace, if we shrink from the hard contests where men must win at hazard of their lives and at the risk of all they hold dear, then the bolder and stronger peoples will pass us by, and will win for themselves the domination of the world. Let us therefore boldly face the life of strife, resolute to do our duty well and manfully; resolute to uphold righteousness by deed and by word; resolute to be both honest and brave, to serve high ideals, yet to use practical methods. Above all, let us shrink from no strife, moral or physical, within or without the nation, provided we are certain that the strife is justified, for it is only through strife, through hard and dangerous endeavor, that we shall ultimately win the goal of true national greatness.

President Roosevelt gave this great speech in Washington on March 13, 1905, before the National Congress of Mothers:

> On American Motherhood
>
> In our modern industrial civilization there are many and grave dangers to counterbalance the splendors

and the triumphs. It is not a good thing to see cities grow at disproportionate speed relatively to the country; for the small land owners, the men who own their little homes, and therefore to a very large extent the men who till farms, the men of the soil, have hitherto made the foundation of lasting national life in every State; and, if the foundation becomes either too weak or too narrow, the superstructure, no matter how attractive, is in imminent danger of falling.

But far more important than the question of the occupation of our citizens is the question of how their family life is conducted. No matter what that occupation may be, as long as there is a real home and as long as those who make up that home do their duty to one another, to their neighbors and to the State, it is of minor consequence whether the man's trade is plied in the country or in the city, whether it calls for the work of the hands or for the work of the head.

No piled-up wealth, no splendor of material growth, no brilliance of artistic development, will permanently avail any people unless its home life is healthy, unless the average man possesses honesty, courage, common sense, and decency, unless he works hard and is willing at need to fight hard; and unless the average woman is a good wife, a good mother, able and willing to perform the first and greatest duty of womanhood, able and willing to bear, and to bring up as they should be brought up, healthy children, sound in body, mind, and character, and numerous enough so that the race shall increase and not decrease.

There are certain old truths which will be true as long as this world endures, and which no amount of progress can alter. One of these is the truth that the primary duty of the husband is to be the homemaker, the breadwinner for his wife and children, and that the primary duty of the woman is to be the helpmate,

the housewife, and mother. The woman should have ample educational advantages; but save in exceptional cases the man must be, and she need not be, and generally ought not to be, trained for a lifelong career as the family breadwinner; and, therefore, after a certain point, the training of the two must normally be different because the duties of the two are normally different. This does not mean inequality of function, but it does mean that normally there must be dissimilarity of function. On the whole, I think the duty of the woman the more important, the more difficult, and the more honorable of the two; on the whole I respect the woman who does her duty even more than I respect the man who does his.

No ordinary work done by a man is either as hard or as responsible as the work of a woman who is bringing up a family of small children; for upon her time and strength demands are made not only every hour of the day but often every hour of the night. She may have to get up night after night to take care of a sick child, and yet must by day continue to do all her household duties as well; and if the family means are scant she must usually enjoy even her rare holidays taking her whole brood of children with her. The birth pangs make all men the debtors of all women. Above all our sympathy and regard are due to the struggling wives among those whom Abraham Lincoln called the plain people, and whom he so loved and trusted; for the lives of these women are often led on the lonely heights of quiet, self-sacrificing heroism.

Just as the happiest and most honorable and most useful task that can be set any man is to earn enough for the support of his wife and family, for the bringing up and starting in life of his children, so the most important, the most honorable and desirable task which can be set any woman is to be a good and wise mother in a home marked by self-respect and mutual forbearance, by willingness to perform duty, and by refusal to sink into self-indulgence or avoid that

which entails effort and self-sacrifice. Of course there are exceptional men and exceptional women who can do and ought to do much more than this, who can lead and ought to lead great careers of outside usefulness in addition to—not as substitutes for—their home work; but I am not speaking of exceptions; I am speaking of the primary duties, I am speaking of the average citizens, the average men and women who make up the nation.

Inasmuch as I am speaking to an assemblage of mothers, I shall have nothing whatever to say in praise of an easy life. Yours is the work which is never ended. No mother has an easy time, the most mothers have very hard times; and yet what true mother would barter her experience of joy and sorrow in exchange for a life of cold selfishness, which insists upon perpetual amusement and the avoidance of care, and which often finds its fit dwelling place in some flat designed to furnish with the least possible expenditure of effort the maximum of comfort and of luxury, but in which there is literally no place for children?

The woman who is a good wife, a good mother, is entitled to our respect as is no one else; but she is entitled to it only because, and so long as, she is worthy of it. Effort and self-sacrifice are the law of worthy life for the man as for the woman; though neither the effort nor the self-sacrifice may be the same for the one as for the other. I do not in the least believe in the ... type of woman who submits to gross and long continued ill treatment, any more than I believe in a man who tamely submits to wrongful aggression. No wrong-doing is so abhorrent as wrong-doing by a man toward the wife and the children who should arouse every tender feeling in his nature. Selfishness toward them, lack of tenderness toward them, lack of consideration for them, above all, brutality in any form toward them,

should arouse the heartiest scorn and indignation in every upright soul.

I believe in the woman keeping her self-respect just as I believe in the man doing so. I believe in her rights just as much as I believe in the man's, and indeed a little more; and I regard marriage as a partnership, in which each partner is in honor bound to think of the rights of the other as well as of his or her own. But I think that the duties are even more important than the rights; and in the long run I think that the reward is ampler and greater for duty well done, than for the insistence upon individual rights, necessary though this, too, must often be. Your duty is hard, your responsibility great; but greatest of all is your reward. I do not pity you in the least. On the contrary, I feel respect and admiration for you.

Into the woman's keeping is committed the destiny of the generations to come after us. In bringing up your children you mothers must remember that while it is essential to be loving and tender it is no less essential to be wise and firm. Foolishness and affection must not be treated as interchangeable terms; and besides training your sons and daughters in the softer and milder virtues, you must seek to give them those stern and hardy qualities which in after life they will surely need. Some children will go wrong in spite of the best training; and some will go right even when their surroundings are most unfortunate; nevertheless an immense amount depends upon the family training. If you mothers through weakness bring up your sons to be selfish and to think only of themselves, you will be responsible for much sadness among the women who are to be their wives in the future. If you let your daughters grow up idle, perhaps under the mistaken impression that as you yourselves have had to work hard they shall know only enjoyment, you are preparing them to be useless to others and burdens to themselves. Teach boys and girls alike that they are not to look forward to lives spent in avoiding

difficulties, but to lives spent in overcoming difficulties. Teach them that work, for themselves and also for others, is not a curse but a blessing; seek to make them happy, to make them enjoy life, but seek also to make them face life with the steadfast resolution to wrest success from labor and adversity, and to do their whole duty before God and to man. Surely she who can thus train her sons and her daughters is thrice fortunate among women.

There are many good people who are denied the supreme blessing of children, and for these we have the respect and sympathy always due to those who, from no fault of their own, are denied any of the other great blessings of life. But the man or woman who deliberately forego these blessings, whether from viciousness, coldness, shallow-heartedness, self-indulgence, or mere failure to appreciate aright the difference between the all-important and the unimportant,—why, such a creature merits contempt as hearty as any visited upon the soldier who runs away in battle, or upon the man who refuses to work for the support of those dependent upon him, and who though able-bodied is yet content to eat in idleness the bread which others provide.

The existence of women of this type forms one of the most unpleasant and unwholesome features of modern life. If any one is so dim of vision as to fail to see what a thoroughly unlovely creature such a woman is I wish they would read Judge Robert Grant's novel "Unleavened Bread," ponder seriously the character of Selma, and think of the fate that would surely overcome any nation which developed its average and typical woman along such lines. Unfortunately it would be untrue to say that this type exists only in American novels. That it also exists in American life is made unpleasantly evident by the statistics as to the dwindling families in some localities. It is made evident in equally sinister fashion by the census statistics as to divorce, which

are fairly appalling; for easy divorce is now as it ever has been, a bane to any nation, a curse to society, a menace to the home, an incitement to married unhappiness and to immorality, an evil thing for men and a still more hideous evil for women. These unpleasant tendencies in our American life are made evident by articles such as those which I actually read not long ago in a certain paper, where a clergyman was quoted, seemingly with approval, as expressing the general American attitude when he said that the ambition of any save a very rich man should be to rear two children only, so as to give his children an opportunity "to taste a few of the good things of life."

This man, whose profession and calling should have made him a moral teacher, actually set before others the ideal, not of training children to do their duty, not of sending them forth with stout hearts and ready minds to win triumphs for themselves and their country, not of allowing them the opportunity, and giving them the privilege of making their own place in the world, but, forsooth, of keeping the number of children so limited that they might "taste a few good things!" The way to give a child a fair chance in life is not to bring it up in luxury, but to see that it has the kind of training that will give it strength of character. Even apart from the vital question of national life, and regarding only the individual interest of the children themselves, happiness in the true sense is a hundred fold more apt to come to any given member of a healthy family of healthy-minded children, well brought up, well educated, but taught that they must shift up for themselves, must win their own way, and by their own exertions make their own positions of usefulness, than it is apt to come to those whose parents themselves have acted on and have trained their children to act on, the selfish and sordid theory that the whole end of life is to "taste a few good things."

The intelligence of the remark is on a par with its morality; for the most rudimentary mental process would have shown the speaker that if the average family in which there are children contained but two children the nation as a whole would decrease in population so rapidly that in two or three generations it would very deservedly be on the point of extinction, so that the people who had acted on this base and selfish doctrine would be giving place to others with braver and more robust ideals. Nor would such a result be in any way regrettable; for a race that practiced such doctrine—that is, a race that practiced race suicide—would thereby conclusively show that it was unfit to exist, and that it had better give place to people who had not forgotten the primary laws of their being.

To sum up, then, the whole matter is simple enough. If either a race or an individual prefers the pleasure of more effortless ease, of self-indulgence, to the infinitely deeper, the infinitely higher pleasures that come to those who know the toil and the weariness, but also the joy, of hard duty well done, why, that race or that individual must inevitably in the end pay the penalty of leading a life both vapid and ignoble. No man and no woman really worthy of the name can care for the life spent solely or chiefly in the avoidance of risk and trouble and labor. Save in exceptional cases the prizes worth having in life must be paid for, and the life worth living must be a life of work for a worthy end, and ordinarily of work more for others than for one's self.

The woman's task is not easy—no task worth doing is easy—but in doing it, and when she has done it, there shall come to her the highest and holiest joy known to mankind; and having done it, she shall have the reward prophesied in Scripture; for her husband and her children, yes, and all people who realize that her work lies at the foundation of all national

happiness and greatness, shall rise up and call her blessed.

WRITTEN WORD

When Jesus was tempted by Satan three times he said each time that "It is written." We need to guide our lives by the written rules of God. The Bible and Father's speeches are the written words we use to guide our lives. When we are tempted we should say to our tempters, "It is written in Father's words and the Bible" and not give in.

We learn in the *Divine Principle* that Fallen Nature number one is not seeing through God's viewpoint. Father clearly teaches that God's number one goal is for every person to fulfill the Three Blessings. Satan influences us to be blind to this calling. He wants small, dysfunctional families. God wants big, normal families. The Bible and Father teach us to be strong, bold and courageous. We are to have a vision of greatness and excitement. Father has fulfilled the Three Blessings. He is goal oriented and we should be too. Let's make it our number one goal to fulfill the Three Blessings. I have a book titled *Practical Plan for World Peace*. One of the values in the book is to create a dynasty of big, loving families.

In these Last Days we are bombarded by Satan's low standard. Children are seen as a disease that must be stopped with the Pill. Unificationists are not of this world. We are building a new culture. We are following a man who gave his wife the goal of 12 children and went beyond it. Let's go beyond him.

God wants us to be happy. The Bible teaches us to store riches in heaven, "Do not lay up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust consume and where thieves break in and steal, but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust consumes and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also" (Matthew 6:19-21). Let's be with our many children in heaven. Children make us rich. We are to be like God, our creator. We are called to be creators of life. Creating is difficult. Let's relish our calling of saving the earth from evil. Let's work hard. Father and the Bible tell us to not worry, to be fearless and confident. We teach by word and deed the truth that will save individuals, families

and nations. We don't present the many opinions of others and let them decide what they think is good and true. We proclaim the absolute values of God.

The Bible often tells us to be strong and to persevere through hardships, "By waiting upon the Lord, he will renew our strength so we will mount up with wings as eagles, so we will run and not be weary, and so we will walk and not faint" (Isaiah 40:31). "Therefore, since we are surrounded by so great a cloud of witnesses, let us also lay aside every weight, and sin which clings so closely, and let us run with perseverance the race that is set before us" (Hebrews 12:1). "I know your works: you are neither cold nor hot. Would that you were cold or hot! So, because you are lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew you out of my mouth" (Rev. 3:15-16). Let's not be cold or lukewarm. Let's be hot. We are here on earth for only a flicker of a second compared to our time in spirit world. Let's run this race as fast as we can. Let's sweat and push ourselves to the limit. Let's fight the good fight and be victorious against the lies and deceit of the voices of mediocrity that evil spirit world gets inside our head and the voices of death and fear from the world around us that criticizes us for having big families.

Roosevelt said: "It's not the critic who counts; not the man who points out how the strong man stumbled or where the doer of deeds could have done better. The credit belongs to the man who is actually in the arena, whose face is marred by dust and sweat and blood, who strives valiantly; who errs, and comes short again and again, because there is no effort without error and shortcoming; who does actually try to do the deed; who knows the great enthusiasm, the great devotion and spends himself in a worthy cause; who, at the worst, if he fails, at least fails while daring greatly. Far better is it to dare mighty things, to win glorious triumphs even though checked by failure, than to rank with those poor spirits who neither enjoy nor suffer much because they live in a gray twilight that knows neither victory nor defeat." ("Citizenship in the Republic", speech at the Sobornne, Paris, April 23rd, 1910)

Pope John Paul II said, "Children build up the life of the family and society. The child becomes a gift to its brothers and sisters, parents and entire family. Its entire life becomes a gift for the very people who were givers of life and who cannot help but feel its presence, its sharing in their life and its contribution to the common good and to the

community of the family." Mother Teresa said, "How can there be too many children? That's like saying there are too many flowers."

It is important that those who marry have a healthy view of sex. Sex is not just for procreation. God wants us to enjoy sex as an important way of expressing love to our mate. Father teaches us not to be prudes. We are not supposed to be excessively modest in the marriage bed. The following are excerpts from a speech in which Father speaks plainly about sex:

> So there were man and woman, and then there had to be a union. Why? Because both man and woman become excited, and just as positive and negative electricity create a spark, when man and woman are fully charged, they create a spark. That's the union. The spark between man and woman should be stronger than that of electricity, so strong that they cannot be separated. In the field of electricity, plus and minus represent convex and concave. When the spark takes place, sound and light are created. When the union of man and woman takes place, there is a spark created, a love light and love sound. We witness lightning and thunder, which is the sound and light of electricity carried by clouds. When that thunder and lightning takes place, rain follows. Something is produced. You can consider that as the marriage of plus and minus electricity, them having their marriage feast. Nature is consuming the food, and the rain is the product and all things of the world are welcoming that water. Fish and animals and plants like it. Why do animals welcome rain? Because after a rain there is more food available.
>
> Thus when husband and wife make love, it is like this phenomenon of lightning and thunder. When husband and wife come together, it is like east and west coming together, like different sets of clouds, like above and below. They all come together and create this explosion. God cannot be dozing when this happens. Parental, conjugal and children's love come together and create this love. Bright light and sound

are produced. Then all things surrounding them welcome it and want to resemble that couple. Non-blessed couples, put your fingers in your ears.

When that love spark comes about between husband and wife, their nerves and cells all focus on that and join that spark. What about God?

When you observe animals making love, even rats make an interesting sound [Father makes it] and they all make a unique sound. What about human beings? Should it be a thunder-like sound, or just quiet? [Thunder.] But when God and human beings reach that lovemaking point, will it be big or small? [Big.] How strong? Can you imitate it? [Members try.] There will be a sound, an inclusive sound of all living things, animals and plants, all possible sounds can join there and the sound will come out that everyone will welcome it.

God is a greedy person, so when He watches us doing that, will He object and tell us to do less? No, He will say, make a greater noise and brighter light. If you need help, I will come, so you can do it one time, two times. Because of their hard love work, they have no more energy and cannot even move one muscle, will not God smile and stay with them? He will be happy, very happy. God will help them close their eyes and will lay down and sleep with them. Between husband and wife when there is a strong lovemaking, don't you need rest afterwards? Maybe you need an hour's nap. That is like the blue sky after the thunder and lightning. ("True Parents' Completion of Responsibility in View of Providence" December 26, 1999)

Marriage is the perfection place of child's love, brotherly love, conjugal love, and parents' love. That one place is man's and woman's sexual organs. Such a marriage doesn't belong to Adam and Eve, but

rather it belongs to God. It is God's marriage. Is this clear? From this point we connect to the original blood lineage. The thunder and lightning of the natural world is equivalent to the action of love between man and woman in marriage. All the cells of the body are filled with excitement and joy. Everything bursts out, making noise and lightning. Man is plus and woman is minus. Why are you laughing now? (From joy.) Joy? That's good. [Laughter] That is the most precious place of all. (4-18-96)

LIBERATED

Rev. Kwak and your wife, you should be able to kiss in front of God, True Parents, children, anyone. In the future, can you live naked? When you make love, are you naked or clothed? When you make love, do you wear a lot of clothes, or are you naked? When you have your first night, are you naked, or with many clothes? Don't laugh! Between husband and wife, we should be liberated. By being united, centering upon the sexual organ, we can be liberated. You American women, you have to understand this better than other people. When you expose your breasts, are you ashamed? Should those breasts be crying or dancing? Before your husband, they should be dancing. Look at the breasts and hips. Both should be dancing. Then we can be liberated. That is the natural law; I'm not talking about something special. ("True Day of All Things" 6-2-00)

NO PAJAMAS

When you make love, you take off even your underwear, right? Why don't you answer me? When you make love, do you keep your pants on or not? Even if you have to throw them in the air, that's what you do, right? That's the true way of couples who love each other. Wouldn't you like to get rid of your

> clothes that are full of sin and Satan's tradition? This is the opportunity for you to remove those clothes. Stand in that position as blessed families and don't be unfaithful. The most precious part for God and for human beings is the sexual organs. Are you ashamed when your husband goes to the toilet naked? Even if you are naked but receive the blessing, won't you prosper? Do you prefer to wear clothes or be naked? Do you want to do that? As husband and wife, you should go to bed without any pajamas. Do you feel you have to keep your position in front of God and keep pure [and therefore leave your clothes on]? But in front of God, you can wear transparent clothes or better still take everything off. In front of God, if you have unchanging, absolute and eternal love ... ("Heaven and Earth Unification and Liberation Ceremony" September 9-10, 1999)

Feminists say the traditional family is impossible for people of today to have. One of the most powerful feminists of the 20th century was Patricia Schroeder. She was a congresswoman for 24 years. She worked tirelessly as Satan's ambassador. Satan has been the ruler of this world and feminists like her have been the rulers of America. Thankfully the tide is beginning to turn. But for now the ruling ideology of the West and increasingly in the East is feminism. Satan is a deceiver and a liar. He makes his ideas seem exciting and true.

Schroeder has a book called *Champion of the Great American Family*. Her calling herself a champion of family is like communist North Korea calling itself democratic—Democratic People's Republic of Korea. Her book should be titled *Champion of the Horrible Feminist Family*. She is a champion of the feminist family where the wife leaves the home to work. God is for the traditional family where the wife is a stay-at-home mom.

Feminists are snakes with forked tongues. Here is an example of her poisonous lies:

> Many conservatives believe that the only people who should have children are those who can afford to have one parent stay home and do the chores. If that were

> the case, a small percentage of American families would have children. We would die out! If medical science could make octogenarians fertile, then I suppose by the time we were eighty we could all finance families in the "traditional" way. Unfortunately, medical science isn't there yet.

This is the typical limited and unprincipled and Cain like thinking of liberals. Liberal feminists are intellectually and heartistically bankrupt. They delude themselves that they are smart and sensitive as they passionately build their road to hell.

POSITIVE THINKING

The truth is the exact opposite of what she writes. She doesn't know that with God all things are possible. Norman Vincent Peale speaks for God in his book *The Power of Positive Thinking* when he says that all things are possible with God. In his book he gives the advice of repeating a certain Bible quote several times a day. The passage is: "I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me." (Philippians 4:13)

What Schroeder writes is now seen as common sense by the majority of Americans. Satan makes sure that we have good reasons to not have a godly family. The average man can provide for a large family if the husband and wife are disciplined and focused on doing God's will. There have been millions of men who have built large traditional families. We cannot listen to the satanic voices of feminists who say a man cannot provide and still be a good father. It is true that a man has to work hard and be excellent in his career, but he still can find quality time with his children and give them all the physical things they need too.

The concept of having at least 12 children raises the question of finances. Tim LaHaye gives excellent advice on finances in a marriage in his book *How to Be Happy Though Married*. He writes:

FINANCES

Financial adjustment is perhaps the most difficult.... The situation is confused today by both husband and wife working. ... If she is going to work to help her husband finish his education, she may assume the role of breadwinner and look down on her husband....

WHO SHOULD HANDLE THE MONEY?+

The answer to this question is far more significant than dollars and cents. God has stated very clearly in his Word that the man should be the head of the house. This principle produces happiness; violation of the principle produces misery. I have never known a happy henpecked husband, nor have I ever met a happy henpecker. God would never ask a woman to be in subjection to her husband unless it was for her good. A woman will not be lastingly happy unless she is in subjection to her husband.

Why is this important in relationship to finances? Simply because of the truth of an age-old adage, "He that holds the purse strings rules the family." You will find that the treasurer of any organization often has an inordinate consciousness of power. This is particularly true in a family. Whether the wife is a trained bookkeeper and the husband a terrible mathematician has nothing to do with it. The husband should handle the finances in marriage.

This does not mean that the wife should not have her area of responsibility. A couple can plan a budget that provides the wife with a set amount for food, household expenses, her miscellaneous needs and such other things as they agree upon. The husband then should pay the bills, balance the bank account and be responsible for the overall financial structure. They should not have separate bank accounts.

It is increasingly popular for wives to work. Many young couples think that getting started in marriage, saving enough to make a down payment on a home, or helping a husband through college are acceptable reasons for a wife to work.

If the wife works ... it breeds a feeling of independence and self-sufficiency which God did not intend a married woman to have. This feeling makes it difficult for her to adjust to her husband during the early stages of marriage. I am convinced that one of the reasons young married couples divorce so readily today is because the wife is not economically dependent upon her husband; whenever difficulties and pressures arise she can say, as one young lady said to me, "I don't have to take that kind of thing; I can live by myself!" I always recommend that a joint bank account be kept. Marriage is a joint venture between two people who live as one. It is not two distinct corporations doing business under the same roof.

The second danger to a working wife is that the birth of children is often delayed too long. If you wait until you can afford to have children, you will probably never have them. They are such a source of enrichment and blessing in a family that young people should plan early on having them and work toward that date; otherwise you may cheat yourselves out of the blessing of parenthood and thus be disobedient to God's command that we "be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth..." (Genesis 1:28)

INDEBTEDNESS

One of the severe problems in many marriages is that within a few weeks after marriage a couple find themselves hopelessly in debt. This financial strain produces tensions and fears that are an unnecessary

hindrance to a proper adjustment. Avoid impulse buying; obligate yourselves only for the absolute essentials.

The wife's attitude toward possessions is very important in the early stages of marriage; she can unconsciously drive her husband to overextend himself in an effort to please her. She should avoid comparisons between the home her father was able to provide and the little apartment and frugal conditions under which she starts marriage. Remember that parents have had twenty years or more in which to accumulate the possessions they enjoy, and in due time you may hope for the same. The wife's patience and joyous acceptance of her husband's financial capabilities are among the ways she can invest in a long-lasting and happy marriage.

ADJUSTING TO CHILDREN

Your childhood influences your desire for children. If you enjoyed a good home life you probably look upon children as a blessing. If you had a wretched childhood you may not want children. However, I have seen many people who used their background as a stimulus to provide their children with something better than they had.

Fortunately, for humanity, until recently having children was not a matter of choice, it was a natural product of marriage.

In this day when planning or delaying a family is being overemphasized, too many young couples are likely to cheat themselves out of one of life's most enriching experiences: being parents.

CHILDREN: NOW OR LATER

The trend of indefinitely delaying a family is currently sweeping the United States. With the advent of "The Pill" and other scientific methods of birth control, "planned parenthood" has become a reality. The problem is, most couples feel they will wait until they can afford children before ordering them. ...it is easy to fall into the rut of an exaggerated standard of living in the early days of marriage when both the husband and wife are working. Many men can never increase their earning power to equal their combined incomes—or if they do, it takes so many years that the wife is long past the flower of her childbearing age. Many times as I have talked with a couple about adoption, they have said, "We waited until we could afford children and now we can't have them." This "waiting until we can afford children" concerns me because often the waiting is caused by a selfish desire for a high standard of living. The couple never finds the joy and satisfaction from material things that they would have found in having children.

THE IDEAL CHILDBEARING AGE

The ideal childbearing age is extremely short and not necessarily parallel with today's customs. By the time a young woman finishes high school today she is about eighteen years old. Unless her prospective husband is several years older she will often wait one to four years for him to complete his education or learn a vocation. By then she has either learned a skill or received a degree and goes to work in order to buy furniture or save money for a down-payment on a new home. Under such circumstances she is often twenty-two to twenty-six by the time she is ready for children, and surprisingly enough, that is past the ideal childbearing age.

We have four children in our family and only the birth of our son Lee caused severe complications for my wife. After an unusually long labor, the gynecologist x-rayed her to see if he should perform a Caesarian section. As he explained to me, "This baby probably weighs nine to ten pounds and that is what is holding things up."

"How can that be?" I asked. Our first two children weighed more than that."

Then he said, "But your wife isn't as young as she used to be." I laughingly replied, "Doctor, she is only twenty-five years old. I thought it was easier after each child."

I shall never forget his reply. "You don't understand," he said. "Most women are physically prepared to have children when they approach twenty years of age. From then on their ability to bear diminishes each year."

If God designed the female anatomy to bear children in the latter teen years, he must have intended that girls become wives and mothers early in life. It is our culture, not the will of God that has complicated parenthood by making it economically necessary to put off having a family. On the other side of the ledger most women are not particularly interested in becoming mothers after they are thirty-five or so years of age. I think we can reasonably conclude that the current average age for motherhood is somewhere between twenty and thirty-five.

ADOPTION

I want to briefly mention adoption. Because of modern pressures of women and various other factors, an increasing number of childless Christian couples are confronted with the question: Should we

> adopt children or wait on the Lord to send them? Because of the moral breakdown of our day there seems to be more available children than parents.
>
> Some couples have strange notions that children born out of wedlock are not likely to turn out as well as other children. That certainly has not been the case of adopted children within the range of my counseling experience. In fact, I have observed that parents who adopt children often want them more than natural parents want their children and consequently shower them with more love. To me, Christians adopting an illegitimate child is an almost certain method of evangelism. What started out as a tragedy can, by the grace of God and the unselfish love of a Christian couple, save a life as well as a soul.

One of the biggest worries people have about having many children is financial. Martin Luther said we should not worry about money and how to feed and clothe many children:

> Although it is very easy to marry a wife, it is difficult to support her along with the children and the household. Accordingly, no one notices this faith of Jacob. Indeed, many hate fertility in a wife for the sole reason that the offspring must be supported and brought up. For this is what they commonly say: "Why should I marry a wife when I am a pauper and a beggar? I would rather bear the burden alone and not load myself with misery and want." But this blame is unjustly fastened on marriage and fruitfulness. Indeed, you are indicting your unbelief by distrusting God's goodness, and you are bringing greater misery upon yourself by disparaging God's blessing. For if you had trust in God's grace and promises, you would undoubtedly be supported. But because you do not hope in the Lord, you will never prosper. (*Luther's Works*, Vol. 5, p.332).

Unificationist parents need to raise their children to be spiritually mature and strong in their early teens. True Mother was married at the

age of 17. Young Unificationists should not delay marriage because they need to grow up and find themselves. Outside people seem to think they need to leave their parent's home at 18 and spend years away at college or live apart from their parents and work before they marry and have children. Sisters should start having children in their teens just as Mrs. Sun Myung Moon did. Only in the feminist twentieth century have women delayed childbirth. This is Satan's tactic of birth control in the Last Days. He is against life, not for it. Satan teaches birth control and planned parenthood.

Unificationist brothers and sisters should never use birth control. They do not wait to have babies and they do not do any planning to space children. If they find they cannot have children at all or can't have them regularly they need to adopt children from the outside world.

Postponing marriage and postponing children after marriage is a violation of Father's commandment. It violates the spiritual laws of the universe. It is against the core value of God who commands us to multiply. Sun Myung Moon commands Unificationists to never use any form of birth control. Father commands us to have big families. He often teaches that we must live with a sense of urgency and push ourselves for maximum achievement. Forgoing marriage to go to college or build a career is a form of birth control. The Mormons are famous for encouraging their young adults to postpone getting married and spend two or three years in youth teams witnessing and teaching their faith. This means the men give up building a career outside the home and women give up having a career inside the home being a homemaker. This is a waste of time for those in their late teens. This is Satan's tricky strategy to waste valuable time.

Teams of young people focusing on fundraising and co-ed schools are Satan's distractions. This busy work does not train anyone to be a leader. It prevents spiritual growth. It slows the providence. It is not more fun, exciting, or effective at winning souls for God than marriage and family. Unificationists must be far beyond the low standard fallen world. The last thing we need to do is prevent mature teenagers from procreating. To procreate young is a commandment from God. Unificationists must be highly educated and mature at the age of 15 instead of being immature like the pathetic first two 15 year-olds were in the Garden of Eden. Any plan that prolongs marriage with such nonsense as fundraising and witnessing teams (that never win converts

anybody) is birth control. Birth control is evil. Delaying birth is evil. Misusing time is evil. The most effective way to grow up spiritually is to match and bless mature young people in their teens and have them start their family life immediately. When we do this Mormons and everyone else will see we are greater than they are. This is the most effective way to witness.

It is unprincipled for mature young Unificationists to waste their time by focusing on other activities instead of getting married and having children. Outside people often wait until they are 25 or older to start a family. We are the opposite of them. Father blessed his oldest son, Hyo Jin, to 15-year-old Nan Sook. Father is against wasting time. If getting married at 15 years of age is good for Nan Sook then it is good for many other sisters. Waiting till one is 25 years old is Satan's strategy of birth control and encouraging pre-marital sex. It is a tactic to get Second Gen to leave the movement. It is anti-life. Our movement will never grow until it raises young people to be mature in their early teens and get them to start their family life much earlier than the outside world does.

Sisters must go from their father's house or their guardian's house to their husband's house. There is to be no purgatory or limbo land in between. This is the new paradigm Unificationists must teach by word and deed. It will be seen as new and strange but it is really normal, old-fashioned values. People for the last several generations have been digested by the deadly ideology of feminism. It is now the ruling ideology. We need to restore the core values of our wiser ancestors who believed in early marriages and big families.

We need to have a practical plan on how to organize families so we can achieve the goal of every family being successful at having lots of children. The following is a little from my book *Practical Plan for World Peace: Unificationism—The Teachings of Sun Myung Moon*:

> Three families should live within walking distance of each other and have dinner together. Then trinities can live next to other trinities and have dinner together every night in a common house such as cohousing communities have. Common houses will be used every day and replace the traditional churches that are used only on Sunday. Leaders in the community will be

democratically elected and not appointed by bureaucrats at headquarters in Washington D.C. Power will be decentralized to communities and led by men who are unpaid volunteers.

Father says women must overcome their selfish desire to live away from others: "Women are capricious, aren't they? ... Women want to live only with their spouses, right? Unless we destroy this standard, world unity is impossible. You have to understand this point. ... The three wives of a trinity should be one, so Father disciplines you right now to become one. From now on, twelve families should live together." Then he says this should expand to 120 families and then 1200 families in a community. The only way we can accomplish the goal of having huge families is to help each other in trinities and larger communities. The focus on headquarters is over. The focus is now grass-roots on the family and local communities.

Father often speaks of how we should live as three generations. By living in trinities children will have a better chance of having elderly people in their lives. If their grandparents die the children will have others to take their place. In a community women can care for the elderly who would normally be put in a nursing home. Father often speaks against nursing homes. The ideal is for everyone to be born and die in loving communities instead of being born in germ-infested hospitals with doctors often wanting to use the scalpel and dying in nursing homes that can't compare to the loving care of relatives and friends. The average woman can learn the skills to be midwives or midwives' helpers and to care for the elderly.

There are many advantages in living in a community. Children will never be bored because they will have lots of friends. It will be so exciting that no one will want to sleep. Women will not be alone. A man will have friends to help him make sure his home is safe and running smoothly. Because women should not be leading and

guiding men, it is better for a man to get advice and be counseled, criticized and corrected by the other two men in the trinity. Father says in the book *Blessing and Ideal Family*, "You cannot go the way of faith alone. You need a like-minded friend in faith. More than three people should be one. That's why a trinity is needed." He explains that God teaches us through others, "...if three people become one, when one makes a mistake and the other two don't, he can instruct the mistaken one about what he did wrong." This would work for the three women in a trinity also. Dr. Robert Mendelsohn writes in his book *Confessions of a Medical Heretic* that it is unhealthy to live away from relatives and friends: "Since few American families live with or close to other relatives, the mother is physically removed from the solace and support her mother or grandmother could provide." He says this is a "recipe for making a mother at least neurotic and at worse crazy." This is one of the reasons we read tragic stories of mothers abusing children. He says, "Since there's no one to help her in the home, the woman tries to save herself by escaping from the home. In many cases, the strain on the husband and the wife is so great when they have only each other to look to as both the cause and the solution of their problems that the marriage ends in divorce. Or, less drastically, the woman wastes no time finding a 'fulfilling' job outside the home. Either way, the child is shunted off to a day-care center." Father does not want any woman to be lonely. He has devised a brilliant plan called trinities where three or four families live next to and help each other.

Trinities are like a back-up. Trinities are the ultimate insurance plan. If a woman cannot be there because she is ill or even if she dies, the other women will make sure her children always have breakfast, lunch and dinner. If a man becomes incapacitated and cannot lead, provide and protect his family then there will be other men to take his place. Father is never alone. We should not live alone. We cannot do it alone. We must live as a team. Human history has been tragic and frightening. Millions of men

have gone off to war and left their wives alone. They didn't know about the wonderful concept of trinities that Father has brought to save the family from evil that wants to divide and conquer.

One of the greatest problems in America is fatherless homes. Millions of children who live in homes of single mothers and widows are deprived of having a man live close by who is a father figure. There is so much hurting in the world because of men not being in children's lives and there are many men who are doing poorly at being a husband and father and need help from other men. It is noble that millions of men have left their homes to fight for America and to help other countries achieve freedom and democracy, but men must organize their homes so that when they protect their country and fight for world peace away from their home that their wife and children are being protected also. A man's primary duty is to make sure his wife and children feel safe and secure.

A widow or single mother should be adopted by and taken care of by a trinity. Single women without children who join and do not have a blood related male such as a father or brother in the movement should be adopted by a trinity. Men must be extremely successful at earning money so they can provide for these women. Let's become famous for being a religious movement that protects women and children. Women must understand that they are to be taken care of by men. Women must focus on having a man or a trinity of men care for her and not focus on taking care of herself by building a business or career. Men must understand that they are responsible to provide for the girls and women in their lives. Adult sons do not allow their mothers to work in the marketplace. Fathers do not allow their daughters to work at fast food restaurants. Uncles do not allow their nieces to wear the pants and gun of a police officer or the dark brown t-shirt of an Army soldier like Private Lynndie England wore when she humiliated Arab men in the prison in Iraq. Brothers do not let their sister be raped by enemy soldiers like 19-year-old Private Jessica Lynch

> was in the Iraq war. These two women dramatically show how pathetic and uncivilized men are in America including their fathers and the Commander-in-Chief of the Army that encourages women to wear men's clothing and earn money in a war zone fighting a vicious enemy that brutally rapes and kills women prisoners-of-war.

Because everyone is at different levels of maturity and different levels of understanding and commitment to the *Divine Principle* and Father's words we have to handle every situation in life in a case-by-case manner. But we also have to have some core values that we fight for and guide us in giving advice to others. Some people get matched and blessed or join as married couples and go to a Blessing with no real understanding of what the Blessing means. Headquarters and intellectuals in the Unification Movement have never gotten around in the last 50 years since Father created his movement to give him a plan for growth internally and in numbers. In my books I am giving some guidelines I feel are from God and therefore every Unificationist should agree on. What does it mean to be a Unificationist? What advice do we give people on how to get blessed and create an exemplary family?

CHOSEN PEOPLE

We are the chosen people of God. We want our children to get Blessed. We want those we witness to convert to get Blessed. We should be united world wide on what we teach and what qualifications we have for people to get Blessed. For example, what do we do when a single mother joins? Do we encourage her to wait and reconcile with her former husband? Or do we see her former marriage as not ordained by God and encourage her to find a Unificationist to be truly married in the eyes of God at a Blessing and then have more children? We want big families but there must be some standards we set for those who are to have Blessed children. I offer the standards I write of in my books as those standards from God that we should unite on. In the case of a single mother who accepts the *Divine Principle* as true and does not want to deal with a former husband or lover should be encouraged to get Blessed and have more children. We have to understand our incredible value as being the chosen people of God who should have as many children as we can. If a single mom joins and wants to wait and see if her former husband can be converted that should be honored and if she never wants to marry again that should be respected. She may not

want to deal with having a blended family. As Unificationists we need to be absolutely united on living and teaching heavenly laws.

We must be totally united on how we handle money. I write about strategies to gain the money needed to have big families in my book *Practical Plan for World Peace*. One of them is to live as a community. The most basic community is that of the three generations of grandparents, son and grandsons living together. Father says in a speech titled "A Providential View of the Pacific Rim Era in Light of God's Will - The United States and the Future Direction of the United Nations and the World" (3-17-07):

> Ladies and gentlemen, my heart is serious and filled with emotion as I stand before you today. It is not because of the Misoo celebrations being held around the world to commemorate my 88th birthday. Neither is it because, owing to the fact that I am as healthy as a man of fifty, I am filled with the hope of living beyond my hundredth birthday.
>
> True Love and True Family
>
> Ladies and gentlemen, true love does not instill a desire to have one's partner exist for one's own sake. Rather, true love's essence is giving, living for the sake of others and for the sake of the whole. True love gives, forgets that it has given, and continues to give without ceasing. True love gives joyfully. We find it in the joyful and loving heart of a mother who cradles her baby in her arms and nurses it at her breast. True love is sacrificial love, such as that of a devoted son who gains his greatest satisfaction through helping his parents.
>
> When we are bound together in true love, we can be together forever, continually increasing in the joy of each other's company. The attraction of true love brings all things in the universe to our feet; even God will come to dwell with us. Nothing can compare to the value of true love. It has the power to dissolve the

barriers fallen people have created, including national boundaries and the barriers of race and even religion.

The main attributes of true love are that it is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal, so that whoever practices God's true love will live with God, share His happiness, and enjoy the right to participate as an equal in His work. Therefore, a life lived for the sake of others, a life of true love, is the absolute prerequisite for entering the kingdom of heaven.

The path is now wide open now for humanity to find and establish true families. The family sets the pattern for living together in harmony. The warm environment of oneness based on love and respect between parents and children, mutual fidelity and love between husband and wife, and trust and mutual reliance among siblings is the manifestation of the model, ideal family. This means that you need to establish a true family wherein the stem of true love emerges from the root of true love and bears the fruit of true love.

In this manner, the three generations of grandparents, parents, and children should live together as one family and serve the eternal God. God desires to see such families, and it is your responsibility as tribal messiahs and Ambassadors for Peace to seek after and establish them — families of Cheon Il Guk, the kingdom of God.

It is important to have many children because it makes our international marriages even more powerful because those marriages are dealing with influencing two countries. Father says:

The International and Cross-cultural Marriage Blessing

Ladies and gentlemen, the Universal Peace Federation will be the vanguard carrying out the great

> revolution of restoring the original lineage of humanity back to that of Adam before the Fall through the International and Cross-cultural Marriage Blessing held on the inter-religious and international level. Some may laugh and say that it is impossible. Yet, please think about this: what do you think will happen if people from the United States and Russia marry across the boundaries of their nationalities through the International and Cross-cultural Marriage Blessing, according to the teachings of Rev. Moon who does God's works on His behalf. The two nations will become one family under God, who is the eternal, absolute Master. How could anyone harbor antagonism toward, much less point guns and knives at, a nation which billions of grandchildren from their own lineage make their home? (3-17-07)

FOLLOW NO MATTER HOW DIFFICULT

Sun Myung Moon has created four major holidays. One of them is called Parent's Day. On April 18, 1996 he gave a speech on Parent's Day titled "True Parent's Day Is My True Son's Day" teaching that the world is dominated by Satan's ideology of unprincipled, disorderly free sex that makes our existence a living hell: "The phenomenon of free sex that we see rampant in today's world is Satan's last-ditch effort to destroy God's ideal through fallen men and women. Satan's aim is destruction of the true order of creation and creation of the kingdom of hell. Free sex, homosexuality, and lesbianism are creating the worst kind of hell on this Earth." The only solution to bringing orderly love is to follow the Messiah completely, "No matter how difficult your situation may be, you have to follow behind the Lord of the Second Advent. You have to follow completely."

GO THE OPPOSITE WAY

Father teaches that the couples he marries, called Blessed Couples, are to follow him by living the opposite of this world. In a speech titled "The Responsibility of Tribal Messiahship" given May 12, 1991 he says these inspiring and challenging words about our responsibility to save this confused and hurting world by doing the opposite of what fallen man does and have many children. He says it is difficult to raise

12 children but essential to our growth. He explains that fallen man is centered on the flesh or external things instead of the spirit or internal things. If we understand the meaning of spirit world we understand the importance of giving "sweat, tears and blood" to have 12 children. A common theme of Father is that we are supposed to be great leaders for this lost world. Every Blessed Couple is called to build a huge, magnificent family that will be like a lighthouse showing people how to live a full life:

> Since the fall, mankind has gone down the wrong road, multiplying Satan's dominion to the world level.
>
> Unification Church members are truly great religious people.
>
> America is completely controlled by Satan.
>
> How can the satanic situation of this world and America be turned around 180 degrees? To give America a different direction is not easy. The people have been living centering on Satan's lifestyle! It has been their tradition! American people are centered on externals and the way of the flesh while disregarding the spiritual world. This focus will take them to hell. They must follow the restoration course. How can you be lifted up to the original point? You cannot go freely, but must pay indemnity. Your sweat, tears and blood must be invested. Have you invested these elements to your full capacity? The way of salvation is the restoration course, or recreation course, centering on God's love.
>
> Who can lead America out of hell? Only the Unification Movement.
>
> After Father blesses couples, their families take a different way from the outside world. They can never divorce! Satan is most fearful about this point. It means that the world of the Unification Church and Satan are 180 degrees different. We are

consummating the true individual, family, tribal, national and worldwide system. We have the truth and hold the key to the salvation of the whole world. You must be aware of this at all times. Without the Unification Church, the world cannot return to God's original point. The only way is through the Unification Church rising up!

Our time has come. Which way do you want to follow? Completely follow Father's way. The Unification Church blessed couples should look to Father, more than to America. Follow God's direction! God has worked so hard to separate us from the world; to take Satan's direction now would be so terrible! By taking the opposite way, you can understand everything, including God's position. We must take this seriously!

You didn't want to accept God's way, for you had been keeping Satan's way. How can you liberate yourselves and build the Kingdom of God? Through the way of agony. Be strong. This is the Unification way. You must turn around completely: 180 degrees!

Centering on Father, God's blood lineage is multiplying everywhere through the blessed families. Satan's world is saying, "Don't bear many children." But at this time, we will go the opposite way.

You have to bear heavenly children; heaven doesn't have a national people. How could Father, during twenty-one years, make twelve more directions? One year has twelve months, doesn't it? Jesus and Moses had twelve disciples. If you have many children, it is not easy to raise them all, but as the parent you become sensitive to many different personalities. If you raise twelve children who represent the twelve types of humanity, you can compare: "Oh, that person reminds me of my third child. He has the same characteristics." You will understand 75 percent of that person's character. If you take care of 360

> homes, you gain the experience to understand all the different personality prototypes. You can catch immediately — "This person is like this other person." You know how to melt that person. If you train yourself to understand many personality characteristics, you can connect to many different kinds of people when you go to spiritual world—immediately understanding both the higher and lower levels in spirit world. Then you can go anywhere the doors will be wide open.

Let's make sure the Second Generation understands that in the heavenly culture of the Unification Movement we do not use birth control. At her website aboverubies.org Nancy Campbell has an article titled "We Deprive Ourselves and Others" saying "When we refuse to receive the gifts that God has planned to give us, we deprive many people. We deprive":

> 1. GOD. This is the most serious. We deprive Him of the purposes and plans that He has for the children that He destined to be born.
>
> 2. ETERNITY. God wants to fill His house. He not only wants to fill the earth, but He wants to fill His eternal kingdom. We fill eternity with those who are born on earth.
>
> 3. OURSELVES. We deprive ourselves of being blessed by God. Every child is another blessing. Once we receive the blessing of a child from God, we wonder how we could ever live without that child. When Onan destroyed his sperm he was deprived of being in the lineage of Jesus. Judah then received this privilege in his place.
>
> 4. GRANDPARENTS. We deprive our parents of their "glory and honor" which are grandchildren. Read Proverbs 17:6. The *Living Bible* translation says, "An old man's grandchildren are his crowning

glory." Why should we deprive our parents of their reward and glory in their older age?

5. OUR CHILDREN. We deprive our present children of more brothers and sisters. Children love to have more children in the family. They love to have another baby brother or sister. I often sadly think of the brothers and sisters that I could have had. More brothers and sisters are always a blessing. If my parents had been willing to have more children, not only would I have been more blessed, but also my children would have more uncles and aunts. If my siblings had trusted God for more children my children would be blessed with more cousins, and I would have had more nieces and nephews. Remember, God wants our families to be "like a flock."

6. THE CHURCH. The church today would be 50 to 100 percent stronger if we, the people of God, had not limited the godly seed. There would be more apostles, prophets, pastors, teachers and evangelists.

7. THE WORLD. We deprive the world of the blessings of a godly seed. We deprive the world of being illuminated with light. We deprive the world of being "salted"! We deprive the world of more godly young people and men and women. We deprive the world of more godly mothers and fathers who will build strong families that will build a strong nation.

Here are a few books against birth control:

Be Fruitful and Multiply by Nancy Campbell

Children: Blessing or Burden: Exploding the Myth of the Small Family by Max Heine

Cheaper by the Dozen by Frank B. Gilbreth

A Full Quiver: Family Planning and the Lordship of Christ by Rick and Jan Hess

Letting God Plan Your Family by Samuel A. Owen, Jr.

The Bible and Birth Control by Charles Provan

The Way Home: Beyond Feminism, Back to Reality by Mary Pride

Open Embrace: A Protestant Couple Rethinks Contraception by Sam & Bethany Torode

Yes, They're All Ours: Six of One, Half a Dozen of the Other by Rick Boyer

Family Unplanning by Craig Houghton

You've Got to Be Kidding!: Real-life parenting advise from a mom and dad of nineteen by Pat and Ruth Williams

The Lord Builds the House: The 127th Psalm by Johannah Bluedorn

Birthing God's Mighty Warriors by Rachel Scott

One reviewer said this of *You've Got to Be Kidding!: Real-life parenting advise from a mom and dad of nineteen* by Pat and Ruth Williams:

> Some might call it a zoo, others a circus, but Pat Williams calls it his family. With four of his own biological children, fourteen adoptees (four from South Korea, four from the Philippines, four from Brazil and two from Romania) and yet another daughter by remarriage, Williams is the father to 19

> children. And Ruth, as mother, jumped into the middle of this family circus with both feet—at one point of their life, Pat and Ruth had 16 teenagers at the same time! Needless to say, they have learned a lot. They have had victories and they have had defeats, and now, they want to share their experiences with other parents. Parenting is one of the greatest challenges in life, and *You've Got to Be Kidding*! aims to help those parents who are frustrated and having difficulties dealing with their children. This is not a "how to" book or an "advice" book. Rather, it offers encouragement when times seem tough. Parents will gain reassurance and valuable parenting insights from partners-in-parenting who bring an extraordinary depth of experience and empathy to the table. Whatever situations you deal with on a daily basis, Pat and Ruth have been through it. Read, laugh and learn from *You've Got to Be Kidding!*
>
> Pat Williams is senior vice-president of the NBA's Orlando Magic, one of America's top motivational speakers, the host of a weekly sports radio show, and the author of over thirty books, including *Go for the Magic*. He has been a featured speaker at two Billy Graham Crusades. Together, they are the parents of nineteen children, including fourteen adopted from four nations. The Williams family has been featured on all major television networks, the "Focus on the Family" radio broadcast, and in numerous publications including *Sports Illustrated*, *Readers Digest*, *Family Circle*, and *The Wall Street Journal*.

In her book *Be Fruitful and Multiply* Nancy Campbell gives excellent arguments for having many children. She writes:

> The very first recorded words that man ever heard from the mouth of God were these: be fruitful and multiply.

This was the first commandment that God gave to mankind.

Multiply in the Bible means to be abundant, to increase exceedingly.

After the flood, God restated these words to Noah and his family: “And God blessed Noah and his sons, and said to them, “Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth” (Gen. 9:1) “And you, be fruitful and multiply, bring forth abundantly on the earth and multiply in it.” (Gen: 9:7)

God did not say, “I want you to spend the beginning years of your marriage getting to know one another first, then you’ll be ready to start a family.”

God did not say, “I want you to spend time together, travel, fulfill all your plans and aspirations, then begin your family.”

He did not say, “I want you both to work until you have enough money to purchase your own home and accumulate the material possessions you need, then I want you to be fruitful.”

No, His first command was, “Be fruitful and multiply.”

God is interested in filling the earth and populating eternity.

Let’s obey God and Father. Let’s “be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth” (Gen. 9:1). Let’s “bring forth abundantly on the earth and multiply in it.” (Gen: 9:7)

Let’s fill the earth and spirit world!

Father says, “All men and women are supposed to get married. We all think about marriage, isn’t that true?

Ultimate Goal

“When you are with your fiancé, you might feel joy being together, but that is not the ultimate purpose. Your ultimate goal is to have children who are better than both of you and in order to achieve such a goal you must be united under true love.

“Before now you might have said that you were getting married for love but now you know that you are also getting married for your children of the future. Love is the process toward that goal. Therefore men and women need each other in order to fulfill our ultimate purpose.” (6-20-82)

HAPPINESS

“Happiness means having your spouse by your side and your children growing up, heading towards a good future. Then, for the first time, you can say you are happy.

“Without some guarantee of the future, you cannot be content. Without some vision of a future, you cannot be happy. Once you get married you want to have children, for without children you are not connected to the future and cannot experience full joy.” (1-1-90)

Father says that we cannot grow spiritually unless we have lots of children. He criticizes the Chinese government that forces couples to have only one child:

> In terms of China, there are 1.6 billion people there. Father has been working directly for 20 years to save China.
>
> Why are they afraid of religion? Because with the religion many other material things and ways will come with it. Especially they are concerned that they

> will receive many secular things that destroy the people. Which country are they most wary of. America. They don't want the secular ways and music from America to come in the door. Father is not in the box of any religious ideology. This is hard for them to understand. Father came from the Christian foundation with the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity however Father always said he would take down that sign. Father did and created the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification without any boundaries. This really moved the Chinese leaders—Father is out of the box. Father took down the banner of the Unification Church and eliminated boundaries. If you think about this is amazing. Father did such an unusual thing in taking down the banner of our church and yet it becomes the living example of Father's teaching and could move the hearts of the Chinese leaders.
>
> They are only allowed to have one child per family. This is making a problem in that each child doesn't grow up with brothers and sisters and cannot develop their hearts. (3-21-04)

Father teaches, "There is nothing more important to us than love, life and lineage. Among these, which do you think has most value? Many people think that it is love. However, no matter how valuable love and life are, they are horizontal in nature. They appear and conclude within one generation. On the other hand, lineage is vertical in nature and continues forever, generation after generation.

"This generation has inherited the lineage passed down through our ancestors. We are like a corporation composed of cells inherited from all of our ancestors going back to Adam." Father wants America and the world to understand that creating a heavenly lineage should be everyone's main focus in life. He tries to teach Americans and Westerners to be "vertical." He talks about generations being united forever. Patriarchy is about looking into the distant future and planning a dynasty.

Because virtually everyone is a feminist, the birth rate in America and Europe has fallen to where nations are not reproducing enough to even replace themselves. They are, in effect, dying civilizations. I can't help but think that part of this lack of interest in children is because most people live in the city instead of the countryside. Phillip Longman writes in his book *The Empty Cradle: How Falling Birthrates Threaten World Prosperity*, "On a farm, you can have children and they will be useful from age 5. But in an urban environment, children are liabilities. And 50 percent of all the people in the world live in urban environments." When America was mainly farming communities, people were in tune with the earth and saw the animals reproducing. Now women buy eggs at a store after they get off work at some factory or office instead of getting eggs with their daughters in the hen house everyday. Americans are divorced from Mother Earth and live a sterile life. You not only don't see animals reproducing in the city, but everyone is encouraged to neuter their pet so they will not reproduce.

The main reason why men and women are not into big families is because of the liberal lies of overpopulation and that women are to be like men. Women now believe that they have no value unless they are competing with men and have a career. Girls and women do not think men will be interested in them unless they are macho and independent. So they wear pants, swear, drink and act tough. Even most Christians who go to church on Sunday do not believe in the biblical family anymore. Church going fathers praise women in the military and police force. They push their daughters to work at fast food restaurants, live alone when they turn 18 and find a mate on their own. America is in crisis because men are not godly patriarchs who love huge families like Father does.

Brothers in blessed marriages who cannot conceive must earn the approximately $25,000 it takes to adopt a baby from the outside world. This means he would have to spend around $300,000 to adopt 12 children. And he needs to build a debt-free house that will be big enough for a large family and earn enough money to give each child braces if they need it. The only way brothers can accomplish these goals is to be deeply religious men.

Phillip Longman wrote in an article in *Foreign Affairs* (6-1-04) titled "The Global Baby Bust": "Today there is a strong correlation between religious conviction and high fertility. In the United States, for

example, fully 47 percent of people who attend church weekly say that the ideal family size is three or more children, as compared to only 27 percent of those who seldom attend church. In Utah, where 69 percent of all residents are registered members of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints, fertility rates are the highest in the nation. Utah annually produces 90 children for every 1,000 women of childbearing age. By comparison, Vermont—the only state to send a socialist to Congress and the first to embrace gay civil unions—produces only 49.

"Does this mean that the future belongs to those who believe they are (or who are in fact) commanded by a higher power to procreate? Based on current trends, the answer appears to be yes. Once, demographers believed that some law of human nature would prevent fertility rates from remaining below replacement level within any healthy population for more than brief periods. After all, don't we all carry the genes of our Neolithic ancestors, who one way or another managed to produce enough babies to sustain the race? Today, however, it has become clear that no law of nature ensures that human beings, living in free, developed societies, will create enough children to reproduce themselves. Japanese fertility rates have been below replacement levels since the mid-1950s, and the last time Europeans produced enough children to reproduce themselves was the mid-1970s."

Longman wrote in the *Washington Post* (9-2-04) an article titled "Political Victory: From Here to Maternity" saying: "When secular-minded Americans decide to have few if any children, they unwittingly give a strong evolutionary advantage to the other side of the culture divide. Sure, some children who grow up in fundamentalist families will become secularists, and vice versa. But most people, particularly if they have children, wind up with pretty much the same religious and political orientations as their parents. If 'Metros' don't start having more children, America's future is 'Retro.'"

In the *World Jewish Digest* (8-1-04) he wrote in an article titled "The Middle Aging of the Middle East":

> Yet a closer look at the demographics of the Middle East shows that the region's population dynamics may ultimately work to Israel's advantage, and in any event will present challenges far different from those

most commonly feared. Throughout the Arab world, birth rates are plunging.

Current demographic trends work against modernity in another way as well. Not only is the spread of urbanization and industrialization a major cause of falling fertility, it is a major cause of so-called "diseases of affluence," such as overeating, lack of exercise and substance abuse, which leave an ever-higher percentage of the population stricken by chronic conditions. Those who reject modernity would thus seem to have an evolutionary advantage, whether they are members of emerging sects and national movements that combine pronatalism with antimaterialism, or clean-living Muslims, Mormons or ultraconservative Jews who remain committed to comparatively large families as a matter of faith.

If America is gradually becoming a fundamentalist society, it may well be because of who is having children and who isn't.

Longman writes:

The number of children born to the average woman in Asia, for example, has dropped from 5.9 to 2.6 since 1950. Women in Western Europe now have an average of 1.4 children, down from 2.7 in 1950. In the United States, parents "stopped at two" children a generation ago and have shown no real signs of changing their choices in terms of family size.

In no industrialized nation today is fertility high enough to prevent declining population. Yet what is even more surprising is the rapid decline in fertility now seen in the developing world. In both hemispheres of the world, in nations rich and poor, under all forms of government, in Christian, Taoist, Confucian, Hindu and especially Islamic countries,

> one broad social trend holds constant at the beginning of the 21st century: birthrates are falling.
>
> In 1970, the average woman in Algeria had 8 children in her lifetime. This year [2004], the fertility rate dropped below replacement levels. ...

Lebanon had a birthrate of almost 6 children in 1970 and now is less than replacement. In the past Iran had women having an average of 6 children; now they too like all other Islamic countries have seen a dramatic plummeting in fertility rates in recent years and are less than replacement.

The number one source of falling fertility, he writes, is urbanization:

> With the rapid growth of megacities, half the world's population now lives in urban areas, where children offer little or no economic benefit to their parents. And like their counterparts in the industrialized world, women in the third world increasingly take jobs, if only in sweatshops, and so they, too, may lose income when they bear children.
>
> In the long run, however, nothing may reverse falling fertility so long as the family continues to lose its economic basis. Put alternatively, those cultures that succeed in avoiding population loss and eventual extinction will be those that once again organize their economies around family enterprise—family farms or businesses in which all generations play a productive role, and have an economic incentive to invest in one another.
>
> Is the Future Medieval?
>
> One vision of such a future might look like this: A future once again organized around household production and kinship networks. Grandparents look out for the young, until the young are old enough to look out for them, while the middle generation heads

> the family enterprise as best it can. Unable to meet its pension and healthcare promises, the state withers away, and so does the formal economy. People have children because there is no one else who is going to take care of them in old age, and because, in the new, more primitive economic order, children can once again play useful economic roles while still young. Such a future may well have many high tech features. Just as women were once paid by the piece to weave in their cottages, we may well find more and more stay-at-home moms (and dads) busy doing customer service or data-entry work from home with their computers. Fuel cells or solar power may once again make home energy production the norm, while biotechnology allows many more families to produce their own, genetically modified food. But the essential bases of production will still be the biological family, and to that extent it will still have many medieval features, including suppression of individualism, a loss of mass production efficiency, and quite likely a return of patriarchy.

In the magazine *Human Events* there was this review of Mark Steyn's *America Alone: The End of the World as We Know It*:

> Mark Steyn, one of the most entertaining conservatives writing today, explains that an Islamist takeover of much of the West is all but assured by the suicidal Blue-State-style leftist culture that's already killing Europe.
>
> Steyn argues persuasively that Europe no longer has the will to survive. Freed by America from the burden of their own defense through the Cold War, and freed by their own Socialist governments from the ordinary responsibilities of adult life, Europeans have become perpetual teenagers. They have energy to whine about and rebel against the adults (us). But they don't have what it takes to fend off the already proceeding transformation of their continent into Eurabia. In fact, they aren't forward-thinking enough

even to reproduce themselves. European birthrates are in free-fall.

America Alone: The End of the World as We Know It is one the best books I have ever read. It should be required reading for every Unificationist. He does not like being an alarmist but he can't ignore the numbers crunching in favor of repressive Islam culture over the freedom of religion in the Judeo-Christian culture. To him the birthrate and conversions to Islam will eventually turn the world into a "new Dark Ages":

> With respect to Francis Fukuyama, it's not the end of history; it's the end of the world as we know it. Whether we like what replaces it depends on whether America can summon the will to shape at least part of the emerging world. If not, then it's also the end of the American moment, and the dawn of the new Dark Ages (if darkness can dawn): a planet on which much of the map is re-primitivized.
>
> … between 1970 and 2000 the developed world declined from just under 30 percent of the global population to just over 20 percent, and the Muslim nations increased from about 15 percent to 20 percent.
>
> The salient feature of Europe, Canada, Japan, and Russia is that they're running out of babies. What's happening in the developed world is one of the fastest demographic evolutions in history.
>
> Experts talk about root causes. But demography is the most basic root of all.
>
> Islam has serious global ambitions, and it forms the primal, core identity of most of its adherents in the Middle East, South Asia, and elsewhere. Islam has youth and will, Europe has age and welfare.
>
> To Americans, it doesn't always seem obvious that there's any connection between the "war on terror"

> and the so-called "pocketbook issues" of domestic politics. But there is a correlation between the structural weakness of the social-democratic state and the rise of a globalized Islam. The state has gradually annexed all the responsibilities of adulthood—health care, child care, care of the elderly—to the point where it's effectively severed its citizens from humanity's primal instincts, not least the survival instinct. In the American context, the federal "deficit" isn't the problem; it's the government programs that cause the deficit. They corrode the citizen's sense of self-reliance to a potentially fatal degree. Big government is a national security threat.
>
> In his book *The Empty Cradle*, Philip Longman writes:
>
> > So where will the children of the future come from? Increasingly they will come from people who at odds with the modern world. Such a trend, if sustained, could drive human culture off its current market-driven, individualistic, modernist course, gradually creating an anti-market culture dominated by fundamentalism — a new Dark Ages.

Steyn teaches that Liberals love of big government and small families eventually ends in the death of civilization. Authoritarian Muslims dominate moderate Muslims in Islam and have a clear goal of world domination. Christianity does not. The only hope is Unificationists who believe in limited government and big families. Steyn says it very well: "The torpor of the West derives in part from the annexation by government of most of the core functions of adulthood. Even in America, too many Democrats take it as read that the natural destination of an advanced Western Democracy is Scandinavia. If it is, we're all doomed. Every successful society is a balancing act between the private and the public, but in Europe and Canada the balance is way out of whack.

"So this is a doomsday book with a twist: an apocalyptic scenario that can best be avoided not by more government but by less—by government returning to the citizenry the primal responsibilities it's taken from them in the modern era."

Unificationists should pioneer the way to a world of limited government where families take care of their children and their elderly instead of putting them into public schools and nursing homes. Individual families cannot do this alone. They need to live as trinities and communities so they can help each other raise the young and care for the old. Steyn predicts that the darkness of Islam will take over Europe and much of the world. He doesn't know that the Messiah is on the earth bringing a new religion that will unite the world into a beautiful utopia.

In *The Death of the West: How Dying Populations and Immigrant Invasions Imperil Our Country and Civilization* Patrick Buchanan says, "The West is dying. Its nations have ceased to reproduce, and their populations have stopped growing and begin to shrink."

DIVINE INTERVENTION

"Absent divine intervention, or a sudden desire on the part of Western women to begin having the same-size families as their grandmothers, the future belongs to the Third World."

There has been divine intervention. The Messiah came out of the clouds in a jet airplane and landed in the West with his wife and teaches that God loves children. The highest fertility rate of any nation is 7 children. Father had 14. If Unificationists have 10 or more like Father teaches then in a few years we will dominate the earth with a religion that is higher than any other because it loves children more than any other.

In *The Way Home* Mary Pride says it this way, "Let's say that Christians are 20 percent of the U.S. population. If each Christian family had six children, and the humanists, feminists, and others kept on having an average of one (which is realistic, considering how they feel about fruitful heterosexual marriage), then in twenty years there would be sixty of us for every forty of them. In forty years 90 percent

of America would be Christian! That is without outside evangelism. All we'd have to do would be to have children and raise them for Christ. Even if Christians were only 2 percent of the population (which I think is more accurate), then in two generations, at the reproduction rates I already mentioned, we would be over 40 percent of the population."

Mrs. Pride explains how Satan's tactic to prevent women from having lots of babies and caring for babies is to get them to work outside the home:

> Norman Podhoretz, editor of *Commentary* magazine, observed in 1971: "The Devil, if he exists, does not command us to be fruitful and multiply."
>
> The devil does exist, and he has fooled us into giving up our God-given role as the greatest evangelists in the world for the sake of measly carnal careers. The church's enemies know what they are doing when they push careers for women. They know they are trying to make us unfruitful. As University of California biologist Garrett Hardin, a leader in the Zero Population Growth movement, says, "How can we reduce reproduction? Persuasion must be tried first. Tomorrow's mothers must be educated to seek careers other than multiple motherhood. Community nurseries are needed to free women for careers outside the home."
>
> Among Planned Parenthood's "examples of other proposed measures to reduce U.S. fertility" are "increased homosexuality; chronic economic depression; requiring women to work and providing child-care facilities...."

PROGRESS

Next to the word "equality" those on the Left such as the Liberals, Democrats, Socialists, and Feminists love to use the word "progress." They believe that those who fight for traditional values such as those championed in this book are against moral progress, economic progress

and social progress. Liberals believe that they have an optimistic philosophy of growth. The opposite is the truth. Liberals are against human progress and have a no-growth, depressing philosophy of life. In the following article by Walter Williams titled "Population Control Nonsense" (2-24-99) notice how the famous liberal, Ted Turner, uses the word "progress" and how Williams effectively destroys Turner's ideology that is the opposite of optimism, growth, reason and truth:

> Multimillionaire Ted Turner, Jane Fonda's husband, told last week's 27th annual meeting of the National Family Planning and Reproductive Health Association (NFPRHA): "We have to defeat those congressmen and senators who are standing in the way of progress. We've got to win the next election."
>
> Turner, founder of CNN and vice chairman of Time-Warner Inc., was sounding the alarm that something must be done about overpopulation. This father of five said we could achieve the "ideal" world population of 2 billion people, as opposed to today's 6 billion, "if everybody adopted a one-child policy for 100 years."
>
> How did Turner arrive at the ideal population? He learned it from his mentor, professor Paul Erlich, author of the 1968 best-seller, "The Population Bomb."
>
> In that book, Erlich predicted major food shortages in the United States, and by "the 1970s ... hundreds of millions of people are going to starve to death." Erlich forecasted the starvation of 65 million Americans between 1980 and 1989, and by 1999 the U.S. population would have declined to 22.6 million. Erlich saw England in a more desperate situation, saying, "If I were a gambler, I would take even money that England will not exist in the year 2000."
>
> Idiots like Erlich and organizations such as Planned Parenthood, the State Department's Agency for

International Development and NFPRHA constantly sound nonsense warnings about how overpopulation produces disaster and poverty. There is absolutely no relationship between high populations, disaster and poverty.

Population control idiots might consider Zaire's meager population density of 39 people per square mile to be ideal while Hong Kong's population density of 247,501 people per square mile is problematic. Hong Kong is 6,000 times more crowded than Zaire. Yet Hong Kong's per capita income is $8,260 while Zaire, the world's poorest country, has a per capita income of less than $200.

Planet Earth is loaded with room. We could put the world's entire population into the United States. Doing so would make our population density 1,531 people per square mile. That's a far lower population density than what now exists in New York (11,440), Los Angeles (9,126) and Houston (7,512). The entire U.S. population could move to Texas and each family of four would enjoy 2.9 acres of land. If the entire world's population moved to Texas, California, Colorado and Alaska, each family of four would enjoy nine-tenths of an acre of land.

So-called overpopulation problems are really a result of socialistic government practices that reduce the capacity of people to educate, clothe, house and feed themselves. Poor countries are rife with agricultural restrictions, export and import controls, restrictive licensing and price controls, not to mention gross human rights abuses that encourage their most productive people to emigrate. The most promising anti-poverty tool for poor people and poor countries is personal liberty.

But let's get back to the population-control gang and ask: Suppose the rest of us don't feel like adopting a

> one-child policy, then what? The elite's answer will be to use brute government force, like China does, to impose a one-child policy. You say: "Williams, what would make you say that? Just ask, who are the heroes of America's liberals, including Ted Turner's wife, Jane Fonda? They are some of history's most despicable bloodthirsty tyrants, like Mao Zedong, Lenin, Stalin and Castro.
>
> Don't forget that it was the 1960s campus liberals who marched around singing the praises of Mao, Lenin and Ho Chi Min. The difference between now and then is that many of these liberals have moved up to become congressmen, senators, presidents, college professors and government workers.

If we educate and encourage our children to have 12 children and each of them has 12 children then there will be 144 grandchildren. If we do the math the numbers become huge in a few generations. The demographics show that there would be hundreds of millions of Unificationists in a hundred or so years just from having large families. We would dominate the earth. "And they blessed Rebekah, and said to her, 'Our sister, be the mother of thousands of millions; and may your descendants possess the gate of those who hate them!'" (Gen. 24:60). If 144 grandchildren each had 12 children then there would be 1728 great-grandchildren. These numbers become very exciting. If a woman is 20 years old when she marries and has 12 children then by the time she is 60 she will see 144 of her grandchildren and begin having great-grandchildren. When she is 40 years old she is a grandmother; at 60 a great-grandmother, and at 80 a great-great-grandmother with hundreds and hundreds of babies to love. Each one of them needs massive love. Being a mother is a great and demanding career. If a woman does not have many children or even if she never had any she should attach herself to a community of Unificationists and make it her career to care for other's children. This is win-win because she will be taken care of by those children when she goes into her second childhood. Father says if we marry young we can experience the joy of being great-grandparents: "The man must become someone whom the woman can love. You must become a master. Then the sons and daughters will reach twenty years of age and give birth to your grandchildren. And so on. Four generations together would be very good!" (10-3-00). Let's

do as Father says. Let's marry young and have four generations live together.

The Bible says that God told Abraham that he would have so many descendants and that it would be like counting the stars, "And he brought him outside and said, "Look toward heaven, and number the stars, if you are able to number them." Then he said to him, "So shall your descendants be" (Gen. 15:5). God is saying the same thing to Unificationists.

Many in the First Generation married late and were not able to have 12 children. Young Unificationists should marry young and immediately start having babies. Mother was 17 when she married Father and had her 14th child when she was 39 years old. It was normal in the past for women to marry at 17. Women have a window of opportunity of 20-30 years to bear children so the young Unificationists should marry young. Father says, "In His dispensation God may want to work through you to have a child of important ability. How do you know? No matter how much suffering or inconvenience it means, it is best to think, 'God, if You desire to use my body to bear a child who will change the world, then no matter how difficult it may be or how ugly a mate You may give me, I want to do that." (3-26-78)

DYNASTY

Patriarchs think about the distant future. They are interested in building a dynasty. Dynasty is defined as "a family or group that maintains power for several generations." Because we have the ultimate and final theology of the *Divine Principle* our descendents will be united forever—not for just a few generations but for thousands of generations. Imagine the power of a family that had the same core values and goals generation after generation. It has never happened because people have had imperfect religions and limited understanding of God. They could never unite. We are the mustard seeds of the future kingdom. There will be no other news in the future but us. Our powerful totally united families will dominate the earth in time. And we will do it with incredible excitement. Every blessed couple must see they are building an empire. We are becoming a huge, massive, monolithic juggernaut. A juggernaut is defined as "a massive inexorable force that crushes whatever is in its path." We will crush evil and disunity with absolute unity, peaceful persuasion, and true

love. The sooner we write down our absolute values and focus on building ideal communities the sooner we will end the suffering in this world and the sooner our children will live in world peace. Father says, "American women must educate the children properly and bring them to Heaven. The American family must be totally united." (1-28-93)

If we live our life by Father's words and have huge families like he has, then it becomes obvious that women have no time for careers outside the home. A woman with 12 children and 144 grandchildren is busy for life. This is God's paradigm for the family. Let's work hard to make it happen. Godly patriarchs like Father want many children. The Bible often teaches the core value of having many children: "Lo, children are an heritage of the Lord: and the fruit of the womb is his reward. As arrows are in the hand of a mighty man; so are children of one's youth. Happy is the man who has a quiver full of them" (Psalms 127:3-5).

Father says:

> Too many children is too many headaches don't you think? [No.] Not in the spirit world. The less children you have the happier you are, true or false? [False.] What about the other way? The more the better. Father knows about this better than anyone else, so ... Father always wanted to have more ... is it better to have fourteen or one? With fourteen you have fourteen tastes of love. This is truly so. Father's direction still is: the more children the better. Now we know. Listening to this, American women would think it is barbarian or uncivilized. (3-10-91)

> Do you want to increase and prosper or decrease and decline? If you want to prosper, you must invest more and more in life. Is it good for a couple to have lots of children, or only one or two? What do parents normally feel? It is natural to want to have lots of children. Is that true even for you American women? Why do women in the secular world often use birth control and hesitate to bear children? Often it is because they simply don't want to be burdened with children.

> I think exactly the opposite from the world's way. (1-2-83)

Father has given us the greatest dream and vision and goal in history of mankind living as one peaceful family with every person on earth speaking Korean in the next 100 years. Father is strong. He has guts: "I have confidence and guts. How about you? [Yes, Father.]" (4-23-95). He sweats. He is on fire. Let's emulate him. Try telling him that you just can't afford 12 children and see how far you get. If we tune into him we find he is vast. When he set the goal of having 12 children he lived in a third world country devastated by the Korean War. Americans live in the greatest, most prosperous country in history. We have no excuse—especially if we live as trinities and help each other. Father says, "From now on the blessed couples should lead a good, wealthy, prosperous life." (2-1-93)

The last time I heard Mary Pride had nine children. She writes in her book *All the Way Home*:

> What's So Awful About Handicapped Babies?
>
> Many couples anxious to have a baby lose all their appetite for parenthood when it appears that their babies might be born with problems. Our society seems to take it for granted that giving birth to a handicapped child is a major disaster, and that we should be miserable instead of rejoicing over such children.
>
> The fundamental issue, I feel, is "Is the body more important than the soul?" Frankly, I believe we are affected by our society's disdain for the physically unfashionable and non-perfect. God has no such value system.
>
> I seriously doubt if, in Heaven, one of these children will come up to us and say, "Wish I'd never been born."

Parents also worry that their handicapped child will feel rejected by society, making his or her life not worth living. But you can be as thoroughly rejected and despised for your bulk, skin color, pimples, lack of wealth, social class, or ethnic group as for any physical deformity. Physically perfect people kill themselves every year because of such rejection. The rate of suicide among those handicapped from birth, though, is actually *lower* than that of the general population! The worst rejection occurs among school kids, anyway. You can solve that problem by home schooling. And as for the future ... I know lots of physically perfect people who can't seem to get married, but paraplegic Joni Eareckson Tada has a husband!

Parents also worry that they won't have the time, energy, and money for a child with special needs. I've heard this a lot, and even thought it in the past, and it seems to me that the idea of us having limited resources that we must carefully hoard and dole out is another modern lie. "My God shall supply *ALL* your needs according to the riches in glory by Christ Jesus" (Philippians 4:19)! Several times in my mothering career I have felt that I had absolutely no more to give—and then God gave me abundantly more than I had to begin with!

God is not limited! He doesn't ask us to limit our welcome to children; it's His business to provide the resources—not ours to see them in place in advance. Money, in particular, should be the least of our worries, as God has promised to provide as much of *that* as we truly need. (I must say that my own experience, which included years of living financially by faith rather than by sight, bears this out.)

It doesn't bother me at all to contemplate sacrificing myself for our children, including any handicapped children we might have. Frankly, I admire Mother Teresa's work, and it would be an *honor* to be chosen

> to do this kind of work in my own home! In any case, people like you and me have the resources to deal with this situation....

Feminism is so strong in North America and Europe and so powerful in the rest of the world that many women don't even think of having many children. Feminism has created a unisex atmosphere that discourages the idea of having lots of children. Women wear pants like men and compete with men for jobs and businesses. Why would a woman want to have babies if she wears pants and worries about money? That is what men do, and men don't have babies. So many women are trained by the brainwashed men in their lives to focus on making money. They are not encouraged to focus on being a wife and mother. When women return to acting like ladies and looking feminine by wearing dresses they will want to become pregnant. Fathers should praise those girls who do not wear jeans, do not go to college and do not get a job.

Unificationists have the primary mission to restore Adam and Eve's failure. They were commanded by God to have a large family that would be the model for mankind. Father says, "Adam and Eve were supposed to have multiplied their descendants to fill the whole world. They would have made so many factories to create citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven." Let's become those "factories." Father often says people should have a family no later than age 23: "You should create a family by 23 or 24" (Hoon Dok Hae 7/31/05). "Unificationists should marry between ages 18 to 24" (1-1-05). Father matched 17 year olds in the 2005 Blessing.

BORING OR FUN

Being single or being married without children is not "fun". It is low-level living to have no children or only a few children. Having children is true fun. It is the highest fun. We should not postpone the joy of having children. God wants every person to feel exhilarating romance in their marriage. He made men and women to be different and complement each other. They are made to be attracted to each other. Opposites attract like a plus magnet and a negative magnet. A husband and wife need to cultivate joy in their relationships. They are supposed to love each other everyday and feel more attraction to each other every day. Husbands should be affectionate to their wives and children. He spends time with them. He enjoys them. He loves being a family man.

Father gives true sex education. He teaches that every person must get married and enjoy sex. Unificationists are supposed to love sex. Men and women are supposed to think sexually only of their spouse and not think anything sexual about any other person. He says:

> Without that sexual organ connecting place we can never discover True Love, True Life and True Lineage. Without that place there can be no beginning to the Kingdom of Heaven. That is the way to true peace, true freedom, true happiness and true unification. Freedom means an open place, not a hidden shameful place. Husband and wife meet one another naked and unashamed. Completely liberated and free. The love action is a totally free intoxicating action.
>
> When you make love as husband and wife do you proceed very carefully or do you proceed using your full power? That is the moment that the entire Heaven and Earth are shaking. It is like thunder and lightning and then the rain comes down. Man and woman are the King and Queen of love. Making noise is good. Every cell of your body is intoxicated with joy at that time. Don't you want to see such a phenomena. Humankind has to follow the recreation owner, the second Creator. (5-5-96)

Many people dismiss the idea of having a large family because they do not think they can afford to have them. And even if they had the money many question their ability to care for so many children. They key to making it work would be for Unificationists to do Father's commandment of living as trinities. He says three families must live next door to each other and commit to help each other. Father says, "If three people come together, there is nothing they cannot do." (1-3-58)

Father commands the young Unificationists to continually bear children: "You should have a baby every other year." (9-7-03) Let's do the math. If a sister is married when she is 18 and has a baby when she is 18 (I think 13 to 15 years of age is best) and has a baby every other year she would have 12 children by the age of 40. She would have a baby at ages 18, 20, 22, 24, 26, 28, 30, 32, 34, 36, 38, and 40. True

Mother had more than 12 children before the age of 40. Helen Andelin told me that her daughters follow the teachings of her book, *Fascinating Womanhood*, and have what every girl and woman dreams of having—a happy, romantic marriage. Mrs. Andelin told me that one of her daughters, Jennie, has 14 children (all single births). She has 15 children all together because she and her husband adopted a child. The birth mother told Jennie that she wanted her child to have the best home and could not imagine the child living anywhere else. For those sisters who cannot or will not birth 12 children let's pray that the men in her family and in our movement can pay for the adoption of children. Let's be famous as a movement that loves children more than anyone else.

In a speech titled "Where and how do you want to live your life?" given in New York on June 6, 1996 True Father spoke to young Unificationists and gave them lots of advice. Let's look at some of the things he says. He begins the speech by asking them to listen to him carefully:

> Second generation children, please raise your hands. Raise your hands higher please. What kind of message would you like to hear from Father this morning? You have attended Belvedere regularly and heard hundreds of messages from Father. However, you never really heard Father's message deeply before. Are you ready this morning to hear the real message? (YES.) Instead of you listening to Father's message, would you prefer Father to listen to your message? (Laughter.)"
>
> [Mr. Peter Kim has the audience repeat in Korean, the title of Father's message] Where and How Do You Want to Live Your Life? *Uh-Deh-Suh Uh-Dduh-Keh Sahl-Goh-Ship-Eu-Nah?* Regardless of gender, this is one of the most important questions for all humanity. We want to live exciting and joy-filled lives.

He gives some pointers on what we have to do if we want to have an exciting life. I don't have the space to go into all of his deep insights in this speech. Please go online and read the speech. I will give some of his tips from the speech to having a joyful life in relation to the Three

Blessings. He gives advice that could be placed in the First Blessing under the categories of discipline and purity. He picks out a black brother in the audience and says to him that marriage is an eternal bond between a man and a woman and we should not betray our spouse, "You have to return to your wife eternally. Do you agree? What if some beautiful woman seduces you. What will you do? Answer clearly to Father, don't mumble. (I would refuse her.)

"Father is now close to eighty years of age. However, when Father was younger he was more handsome. So many women have tried to seduce Father. They were all drawn to Father and fell in love with him." Father always walks his talk. If he demands anything he has already been successful at living up to God's standard himself.

The Second Blessing is about marriage and family. He is a true father giving guidance to these young brothers and sisters. He teaches that men lead and women follow. They never interchange roles. Father explains:

> God is always in the subject position.
>
> In Adam's family the father figure was God. The center remains always one. No matter how many levels there are, the axis is unchanging. The children should revolve 180 degrees around their mother in unity. The central position of father cannot be replaced. However, the position of mother can be replaced. The position of the mother is 360 degrees surrounding the father. Do you understand, you American women? All of you have to climb up the husband's ladder in order to reach God.
>
> The mother represents a field waiting for the seed to be sown. Therefore the wife has to absolutely follow the husband.

Father often talks about the importance of having twelve children. He says, "Do you want to have only one child? (More.) Would you exchange your children for tons of gold? (No.) Would you like to possess only one or two gold bars? (More.) Suppose you are in the

position of the prince with twelve different nations under your leadership. Would you like to send your own twelve sons to rule those nations or your slaves? (Sons.) If you have plenty of sons to send to those twelve nations then those nations will prosper and have good relations with you. Sons are able to produce the seed of life."

Father teaches that boys and girls are different. He says, "In terms of raising children, if you have only daughters it takes only a few toys and they will be content. Also a daughter would stay in a room all day long if you placed her there. Whereas boys are never content with toys. They will go out and chase after all kinds of animals. They are trouble makers. This is a revolutionary philosophy. Then shall we follow this path? (Yes.)"

He then says he fears they will forget what he teaches, "All of you might understand what Father has taught you now, but before you reach your home you will have forgotten it." Father is emphasizing that we have to read his words actively, not forget what he says and act on what he commands. Father is not some ivory tower philosopher. He teaches down-to-earth rules of behavior. After we read his words we are supposed to act, to change our life and produce results. He goes on to say the politically incorrect idea that men and women have different roles:

> As a mother, if you produce twelve princes and hold them in your basket then your King will greet you every morning with a bow saying, "My dear Queen, Good morning." That is the way you are able to conquer even the King. When you offer some room in your basket for the King to come in, he will immediately jump inside. That is the way that you can mature yourself to reach the most valuable position. Even better than your grandmother and mother, you will become the best mother and wife. You will be able to offer your lap to all twelve of your sons, and even your King will sleep in your lap. How happy you would feel. That is why God created women's bodies with many cushions. He wants to see His children embraced in this comfortable cushioned areas of woman's body. Also God Himself wanted to be embraced by woman. That is why God created

> woman, His most beautiful creation, last of all. Amen. (Amen.) (6-9-96)

He speaks strongly against free sex and for the joy of purity:

> No matter how rich and knowledgeable you may become, so long as no total oneness exists between husband and wife in ideal terms, there can be no peace, no happiness, no unification and no ideal.
>
> How then are you going to live? Since the first love given you by God is so precious, you must grab onto it and never let it go. No matter how much you may pursue free sex you will never experience the degree of excitement and joy that you will experience from your God-given first love spouse. In American society now, we cannot see those people who cherish and value their first love. Therefore such a nation is doomed to perish. Do we Unificationists value and cherish first love? (YES.)
>
> Once they became totally one they could never become separated. That is the place where True Love dwells. Then they become an ideal couple centered upon True Love. Where is the origin of True Love? What is your answer? The place of union of the ideal man and woman in True Love is the origin. Unless you become connected through your sexual organs, there is no way for the love of husband and wife to be eternally bonded. Do you understand just how precious and valuable are the sexual organs of man and woman? Nothing can replace their value. Only the partnership of True Love can control that place forever. Therefore, the ideal marriage between man and woman and their first night of sexual love is the most precious thing in the entire universe.
>
> Our sexual organ has the desire to conquer the King of kings of the universe. The husband stands in the position of king, and God is in the position of King of

kings. This is the palace of True Love, Life and Lineage. Without this organ we are not able to create the ideal world. The secular world has considered the sexual organ as the worst possible thing, because through this sexual organ the entire humanity was destroyed. That is why God desired humanity to live a life of chastity and follow an ascetic path through the various religions.

If you misuse your sexual organ you are condemned to Hell. If you use it correctly you are destined to Heaven. This is a clear dividing line. Therefore, Unification Church teaches the process of recreation. Because the original position was lost, we have to recreate in order to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. No one has appreciated the value of the human sexual organ until now.

Those of you who have come here for the first time to hear Father's speech, please remember that the dividing line between Heaven and Hell is within the relationship with your spouse. If you follow the way of *Divine Principle* you will eventually belong to Heaven. However, if you misuse your sexual organ you will end up in Hell. Please remember this teaching. Once you are bound together through True Love you can never be separated as husband and wife.

When you are really tired, instead of sleeping for eight hours alone, place your head on your wife's lap and sleep for only thirty minutes and you will gain more recovery than eight hours of sleep all alone. When your husband returns after a long day working invite him to rest on your lap for thirty minutes or one hour. Then when he is totally recovered you can gently lead him into the bathroom to have him take a shower.

> Within American society, they don't cherish this kind of dream because they are running after free sex. If you truly live your life close to your wife's True Love, don't you think that she would welcome you? Husbands should offer their True Love to their wives and wives to their husbands. If you have enough money to live your life without working, and you chain yourself to your wife so that you can never be separated from one another and live your entire life this way, then no one will ever blame you. If you find yourself in this position, you can practice every level of love-making. Go and practice every level of love-making. You are the center of the entire universe. Even if you spend your entire life practicing all the varieties of love-making, you will never be able to practice them all. There are just too many.
>
> Now we know where and how we should live our lives. Those who clearly understand and are ready to live this kind of life, show your hands to Father. If you truly practice this, even without believing in Jesus, you will go straight to Heaven. Amen. (Applause) This way of life is not centered on your family alone, but it includes the entire world. We have to remember that my couple is the center of my family, my clan, my tribe, my nation, my world and even the center of God Himself. That is the kind of pride we should have. Just as God consists of dual characteristics of plus and minus, as husband and wife we manifest God and follow this principle. The origin, direction, and effect must be one through unity between husband and wife. The life that we will practice is one of investing and forgetting. Shall we do so? (Yes.) Living for the sake of others is the quality of life we are referring to. (6-9-96)

The Third Blessing is about building a pure world. Father is very sensitive to nature and commands us to solve the problem of pollution. He speaks poetically and eloquently about the wonders of nature:

When God created the universe do you think that He was naked or had clothes on? (Naked.) You have to think deeply about these things. Was He happy enough to roll in the dirt, intoxicated with happiness? He created this earth and He loves every aspect of this creation and wanted to absorb every element of this earth within Himself. Just as when your husband and you truly love one another, will you only touch each other's hands or every part of your bodies?

Since I understand that God loves the planet Earth more than anyone else, then as God's sons and daughters we will love the planet Earth more than God does. If you challenge God by saying that you will love the Earth more than He does from now on, God will not hate you. Have you ever heard the planet Earth complaining about being loved more? Whatever you do to the earth, either good or bad, it is always silent. When you wash your face with water and throw it onto the ground, the earth doesn't complain.

Let us love the planet Earth. The planet Earth is the masterpiece of God's creation and so we must love the Earth just as God does.

Father wants to create fish farms. We have to give love to the fish. Since Father is the one who preaches True Love, he wants to create these fish farms all over the world. The rest of the world is destroying the environment without a thought for the future. However, Reverend Moon is marching forward to create a new world, new nature, new environment.

We have all declared that we will love the earth from today on. Are you all ready to love the air? (Yes.) This is the way in which you show your appreciation to the air. [Father demonstrates by making a kissing sound] (Laughter) Without the air you are not able to live for even five minutes. Imagine our fate if all the

> air in the universe went on strike for thirty minutes because human beings didn't show appreciation. How powerful air is. Have you truly loved and praised the value of air? (No.) Imagine the degree of happiness and joy God felt when He created air. He knew this was the substance that His love partners would need to live. If you wake up in the early morning before sunrise in a high mountain and try to breathe as much air as you can, then without even eating breakfast you will feel sustained.
>
> Let us love the air. Repeat after Father. [Father has everyone repeat after him in Korean] What shall we do in order to love air?

His words are magnificent. But Father is not into high sounding words alone. He demands action. Words must inspire us to move our physical bodies to love. He tells young Unificationists to show their love of the environment and help solve the problem of pollution by planting trees and that they must live in a rural environment:

> We have to plant trees. Unification Church members have a duty to plant twelve trees every year. Just like having twelve children. If we plant twelve trees a year, in ten years that is 120 trees. If we live for 100 years, before we die we will have planted 1,200 trees. If you cannot do such a simple task then your life is not worth living. Will you do so? (Yes.) Let us love the fresh air.
>
> Trees produce oxygen and take in carbon dioxide. Whereas human beings take in oxygen and expel carbon dioxide. When you look at the big animals they all live in the midst of trees. We can solve the problem of pollution through tree planting also.
>
> Based upon this standard of life, we can divide the world into two categories: urban life and rural life. Which one would you like to belong to? (Rural life.) (6-9-96)

If we want to have an exciting life we must do as Father commands. He commands us to have big families and raise our children in nature. He practices what he preaches. He has a big family and he lives in a community surrounded by land and trees. He does not live like most people who have a little yard and neighbors a few feet away who are not Unificationists. We must follow his lead and live in communities where we plant lots of trees. He is absolutely right. If we do not have lots of children and lots of trees in our life we have not created a magnificent life for ourselves.

I was a State Leader in the early 1970s. One time Father took the leaders of all 50 states to a theme park in New Jersey. (By the way, all 50 leaders were men—no women) There was one stand that had beautiful glasses and crystal goblets and bowls. If you threw a dime and one landed inside then you won the beautiful glass prize. People were standing around carefully throwing one dime at a time. When they threw their precious dime it always bounced out of the glass. Father had a huge bag of dimes. He would reach his hand inside and grab a handful and then with glee throw the dimes in the air. They sparkled in the sunny air as they flew all over the glass. He threw hundreds of dimes in the air. The sky's the limit with Father. Father had the crowd laughing with him.

I have learned that Father thinks differently than we do. He is vast. He is expansive. When we get together we strategize about how to get one new person a year. He would challenge us to get thousands. There is no room for small thinking in his presence. He has raised himself from dirt poor to a billionaire. He demands the highest excellence and total passion to achieve victory. He has no interest in being number two: "Whatever I do I will be second to none" (10-1-97). Let's not have little minds and little dreams. He always says we should go beyond him: "...my hope is that you will become better than me" (1-13-02). He had 14 children. Let's have 15. And, like him, let's have the time of our life doing it!

AMERICA'S MOST FAMOUS BIG FAMILY

Some biblical, traditional families with many children have allowed themselves to be interviewed and even filmed for cable television. It takes a lot of courage and faith to have a news crew come into your home for a week or more and film a hundred hours of your family and

then condense it down to an hour or two show that millions of people will see. One family is the Duggars. They live near Fayetteville, Arkansas. One year they were voted to be family of the year. The following are some articles from newspapers about their family:

Arkansas mom delivers 16th child

The Associated Press
Oct 14, 2005

Michelle Duggar just delivered her 16th child, and she's already thinking about doing it again. Johannah Faith Duggar was born at 6:30 a.m. Tuesday and weighed 7 pounds, 6.5 ounces.

The baby's father, Jim Bob Duggar, a former state representative, said Wednesday that mother and child were doing well. Johannah's birth was especially exciting because it was the first time in eight years the family has had a girl, he said.

Jim Bob Duggar, 40, said he and Michelle, 39, want more children.

"We both just love children and we consider each a blessing from the Lord. I have asked Michelle if she wants more and she said yes, if the Lord wants to give us some she will accept them," he said in a telephone interview.

The Discovery Health Channel filmed Johannah's birth and plans to air a show about the family in May.

The Learning Channel is doing another show about the family's construction project, a 7,000-square foot house that should be finished before Christmas. The home, which the family from the northwest Arkansas town of Rogers has been building for two years, will have nine bathrooms, dormitory-style bedrooms for the girls and boys, a commercial kitchen, four washing machines and four dryers.

Jim Bob Duggar, who sells real estate, previously lost his bid for the U.S. Senate. He said he expects to run for the state Senate next year but isn't ready to make a formal announcement.

Michelle Duggar, 39, had her first child at age 21, four years after the couple married.

Their children include two sets of twins, and each child has a name beginning with the letter "J": Joshua, 17; John David, 15; Janna, 15; Jill, 14; Jessa, 12; Jinger, 11; Joseph, 10; Josiah, 9; Joy-Anna, 8; Jeremiah, 6; Jedidiah, 6; Jason, 5; James, 4; Justin, 2; Jackson Levi, 1; and now Johannah.

The Duggars are politically conservative fundamentalist Christians who endorse Quiverfull and the teachings of Bill Gothard. The children are home schooled with IBLP "Advanced Training Institute International" and Maxwell family "Managers of Their Homes" curricula. The family reportedly lives debt-free. In 2006, the Duggars finished a 7000-square-foot steel-framed home, built on 20 acres, which features four commercial washers and dryers as well as a complete commercial kitchen purchased by the Duggars at auction. Several sponsors donated appliances for the new home, and one donated a baby grand piano.

The Duggars have been featured in several print articles and television spots. They have been filmed for four television shows on the Discovery Health Channel and The Learning Channel.

****

The following article appeared in www.dallasnews.com:

For Arkansas family, 18's not a crowd

Parents of 16 rely on faith, family to make full house run

December 19, 2005
SPRINGDALE, Ark. – Jim Bob and Michelle Duggar are baby boomers.

They may not fit the age profile of the post-World War II generation, but the numbers don't lie: They have 16 children.

Ten boys, six girls. Together, as a couple. All theirs, biologically.

And they may have more, Lord willing. "We never dreamed we would have 16 children," said Mr. Duggar, a soft-spoken, 40-year-old former state lawmaker, as he surveys what Michelle lovingly refers to as their home's "serene chaos."

Now, he said, "We wouldn't have it any other way."

As a couple, the Duggars' approach to family planning is simple: They are born-again Christians who view the Bible as their life's manual – and the Bible describes children as a blessing from God. They will cheerfully accept as many blessings as God ordains.

So far, the blessings have added up to more children than all but a tiny fraction of American families have.

Life with the Duggars in the hills of northwest Arkansas is part – *Little House on the Prairie*, part-*Yours, Mine and Ours* – except the only blending in this real-life family occurs with restaurant-like precision at mealtime.

The girls – and their 39-year-old mother – don skirts or dresses (no pants) and white socks. The boys – and their father – dress most days in the same colored polo shirts and slacks or jeans, with black socks. The sameness of their attire helps with laundry and organization.

The girls embrace a similar hairstyle, long and pulled back with a clip, flowing to near their waistlines. The boys' hair is closely cropped, often cemented into position with gel.

The girls do most of the cooking, though they've been taught to change a tire and check the oil. The boys are trained to fix the cars and make home

repairs, though they cook occasionally – mostly on the grill.

Against the trend

The U.S. Census Bureau's latest figures, for 2002, reveal that 0.3 percent of women ages 15 to 44 have given birth to seven or more children. Moreover, the number of U.S. women birthing seven or more children has declined steadily since the government began tracking the demographic in 1976.

In an era when the ideal family is widely viewed as two children – one girl, one boy – the Duggars are an anomaly, attracting worldwide media attention.

For two years, the Discovery Health Channel has chronicled the family through a series of documentaries. When Johanna Faith was born Oct. 11, the network's cameras captured footage for the series' next installment, to be aired in March.

In the weeks after their 16th child arrived, the couple appeared on CBS' *The Early Show* and NBC's *Today*. Mrs. Duggar did about 75 radio interviews. And the family has welcomed a steady stream of foreign journalists, including a recent visit from a three-man crew with the Korean Broadcasting System.

Inquiring minds want to know: How do they make it work? The answer: It's all about faith, finances and family. It's a system developed over their two decades together, and still evolving today.

A family begins

The Duggars met as teenagers. She was a cheerleader at the public high school here. He attended a private Christian school.

They first crossed paths when he and a friend were visiting prospects for their church, First Baptist of Springdale. She had just become Christian. They didn't see each other again until much later, when she

was hired to work in a frozen yogurt shop that was managed by Mr. Duggar's mother, Mary.

The couple married just after she graduated from high school. He was 19, she 17. Neither went to college. Together, they launched a used-car business, then towing and real estate businesses.

The Duggars didn't start out to have 16 children – or more. Early on, she took birth-control pills. After their first child, son Joshua, was born in 1988, Mrs. Duggar began taking them again. Before long, she suffered a miscarriage they believed was caused by the birth control.

"We were just shocked," Mr. Duggar said. "We consider ourselves pro-life. We thought, 'What have we done?'"

They decided to let God determine the size of their family. Fifteen children later, Mrs. Duggar remains healthy and willing to keep having children. None of their children has health problems, and only one wears glasses.

Building a new home

The Duggars live temporarily in a 2,200-square-foot rented house along a busy street, not far from Interstate 540 in this town of about 50,000. They are building – debt-free – a 7,000-square-foot house in nearby Tontitown.

They don't adhere to a rigid schedule, but in an often-frenzied world with 18 people living in such tight quarters, there are daily imperatives: a midmorning Bible reading with Dad, home-school lessons with Mom.

"This place is like Grand Central Station," said Mr. Duggar's mother, Mary, a real-estate broker who often lends a hand.

Indeed, it seems solitude is a precious, elusive treasure. But it is a house of smiles. There are squabbles. But amid the chaos, there is a vibrant rhythm to life.

There is the ever-present backdrop of hymns, played on the piano by the children. Television is watched sparingly. There are rambunctious little boys chasing one another through the house, climbing onto furniture, balancing themselves on the arms of chairs.

Someone always seems to be snacking, usually on a large dill pickle, a family staple. And 4-year-old James never seems to tire of sidling up to a media visitor, tilting his head with a grin, and asking, "How many are you?"

"It's like going to a 10-ring circus," Mr. Duggar said. "It is just fun all the time."

On a recent morning, the family gathers in its Spartan living room, most sitting in a circle on the light tan carpet, their legs crossed. Opening a black leather-covered King James Bible, Mr. Duggar reads a chapter from Proverbs, then stops to drive home the meaning of verses that exhort truthful speech.

"What would you think if I said, 'We're going to go to Silver Dollar City tomorrow' – then the next day, I told you, 'No, I've changed my mind; we're going to stay home and do laundry' ?" [Silver Dollar City is a theme park near Branson, Missouri that is famous for being a wholesome alternative to Las Vegas with its many wholesome family oriented shows. The Duggars live about a two hours drive away].

The youngsters giggled at the thought. It was no contest: Silver Dollar City, any day. And it wouldn't have been acceptable for Dad not to make good on his word.

"Some day," Mr. Duggar said, "you guys are going to have your own family. Make sure your words are accurate."

They joined hands for prayer. Joshua thanked the Lord for Scripture and their family.

Handling expenses

The Duggars aren't unusual simply because they have so many children. They also live a frugal

existence that permits Mr. Duggar to spend most of his days, right now, with his older sons, putting the finishing touches on their new home. Mrs. Duggar is a stay-at-home mom who takes the lead in home-schooling the children.

Greeting the media has become commonplace since the birth of the Duggars' 16th child. They don't have a precise budget, Mr. Duggar said, but it takes about $5,000 a month to operate their household. They live off the rental income from commercial property they own debt-free.

They have no house or car payments and no credit cards. They purchase their clothes at a thrift store that benefits the homeless in northwest Arkansas. They eat out occasionally but take advantage of the dollar menus at fast-food restaurants or the 49-cent children's meals at AQ ("Arkansas Quality") Chicken, a local favorite once frequented by former President Bill Clinton. The three older girls give the boys haircuts.

It's the fruit of a financial freedom seminar Mr. Duggar attended years ago.

"We haven't had an overabundance," he said, "but God's always met our needs."

For example, when the family moves into its new home, TLC television will be there to film a program akin to the home-makeover reality shows. Sponsors are donating food for the pantry and appliances, such as washers and dryers. Then, Discovery Health is sending the Duggars on a trip west to Disneyland and a dude ranch.

Though thrilled with the help and the trip, the couple's oldest daughter, 15-year-old Jana, said her family isn't welcoming the cameras because of the freebies or because the spotlight is coveted.

"We're able to share with others about Christ and what he's done in our lives," she said, stressing the family's primary message: "Children are a blessing and not a burden."

In the Duggars' temporary home, there is no Christmas tree or garland, no wrapped presents. It's not a protest against holiday commercialism. It's a practical matter: They must vacate their rented home by mid-January. Their new home must be inhabitable. And every extra dime they have is being poured into the new house.

"I told the kids the house is going to be our Christmas," Mr. Duggar said. "We didn't want them to think Christmas is just about gifts you're going to receive, but it's about Christ coming to earth."

Focus on youths

The Duggars may be swimming against society's tide with such a large family, but it's clear children – lots and lots of children – are at the core of their social network. They are members of a home church that numbers about 100. They are active in a home-schooling network. Their friends all seem to have lots of children; one family has nine, another six.

And there almost seems to have evolved an unofficial, loose-knit network of large families that home-school their children and attend in-home churches. Some even have volunteered time to help the Duggars complete their home by mid-January.

For example, a St. Louis family with six children recently traveled to Springdale for the weekend to help the Duggars paint the interior of the two-story, white home with green metal roof. And they planned to return to help stain cabinets throughout the house.

Joshua, the Duggars' oldest son, finished high school at age 16. He passed the state's test for a general equivalency diploma, or GED. He is considering applying to a California law school that permits distance learning. His goal: to enter politics.

His political interest was stoked during the two terms his father served in the Arkansas House. The Duggar family relocated to Little Rock during the sessions – and young Joshua often went to the

Capitol with his father, where reporters dubbed him "the governor."

Mr. Duggar said he sensed God encouraging him to run for the U.S. Senate in 2003, but he lost. He now believes God's purpose was fulfilled, he said, in a most unexpected way: When he and Michelle went to vote, with 14 children in tow, an Associated Press photographer was present. The family photo appeared the next day in *The New York Times*.

Mrs. Duggar was contacted by *Parents* magazine to write a story on parenting. Discovery Health Channel then arranged to shoot the documentaries. There were more children and reporters to chronicle the new arrivals.

"This is an opportunity to share and hopefully encourage other families, not only here in America, but around the world," Mr. Duggar said.

"A lot of people are amazed to see that you have 16 healthy, beautiful children that are intelligent and all work together as a team. A lot of people are struggling with one or two."

THE DUGGAR HOUSE RULES

Posted in the Duggars' dining area:

Always use soft words, even when you don't feel well.

Always display kind actions, even if you have been mistreated.

Show joyful attitudes even when no one else is looking.

Have sincere motives with no thought of self-gain.

Think pure thoughts.

Always give a good report of others. Never talebear unless physical harm will come to someone. Use Matthew 18.

Never raise a hand to hit.

Never raise a foot to kick.

Never raise an object to throw.

Never raise a voice to yell.

Never raise an eye to scowl.

Use one toy/activity at a time.

Never let the sun go down on your wrath. (Don't go to bed angry or guilty.)

Amendment J.O.Y. – make serving your family a priority – put Jesus first, others second, yourself last.

STANDARD FARE

The monthly grocery bill runs from $1,500 to $2,000, including diapers and paper products.

GO FIGURE

7 Grocery carts the family can fill on a trip to fill the pantry.
4 Gallons of milk consumed every three or four days.
7 Loads of laundry each day (9 when they wash bedding).
2,200 Size of their rental house, in square feet.
7,000 Size of their new house, under construction, in square feet.

THE FAMILY FLEET

1997 Ford 21-passenger shuttle bus, purchased for $2,100 from a local transit company in a sealed-bid auction.
1998 Ford 15-passenger van
1986 Chevrolet crew cab pickup truck
1998 Oldsmobile Achieva
1996 Crown Victoria
The oldest son, Joshua, also owns three vehicles: a 1997 Saturn and two Mazda pickups.

Here is another article:

Happy Mother's Day: Woman pregnant with 18th child

by Jill Zeman, Associated Press Writer

LITTLE ROCK, Ark. - It's a happy Mother's Day for an Arkansas woman — she's pregnant with her 18th child.

Michelle Duggar, 41, is due on New Year's Day, and the latest addition will join seven sisters and 10 brothers. There are two sets of twins.

"We've had three in January, three in December. Those two months are a busy time for us," she said, laughing.

The Duggars' oldest child, Josh, is 20, and the youngest, Jennifer, is nine months old.

The fast-growing family lives in Tontitown in northwest Arkansas in a 7,000-square-foot home. All the children — whose names start with the letter J — are home-schooled.

Duggar has been been pregnant for more than 11 years of her life, and the family is in the process of filming another series for Discovery Health.

The new show looks at life inside the Duggar home, where chores — or "jurisdictions" — are assigned to each child. One episode of the new show involves a "jurisdiction swap," where the boys do chores traditionally assigned to the girls, and vice versa, Duggar said.

"The girls swapped jurisdictions, changing tires, working in the garages, mowing the grass," she said. "The boys got to cook supper from start to finish, clean the bathrooms," among other chores.

Duggar said she's six weeks along and the pregnancy is going well. She and her husband, Jim Bob Duggar, said they'll keep having children as long as God wills it.

"The success in a family is first off, a love for God, and secondly, treating each other like you want to be treated," Jim Bob Duggar said. "Our goal is for each one of our children to be best friends, and everybody working together to serve each other makes that happen."

The other Duggar children, in between Joshua and Jennifer, are Jana, 18; John-David, 18; Jill, 16; Jessa, 15; Jinger, 14; Joseph, 13; Josiah, 11; Joy-Anna, 10; Jeremiah, 9; Jedidiah, 9; Jason, 7; James, 6; Justin, 5; Jackson, 3; and Johannah, 2.

The following is another article about this amazing family by the *Arkansas Democrat-Gazette (*2001) when they had 13 children:

13 Children Add Up To Asset For Challenger

Jim Bob Duggar looks calm. He might even be calm. There's not a strand out of place on his Ken-doll hair. This is remarkable not only because there are 13 children playing at his feet—his 13 children—but also because he's a state representative waging a long-shot campaign for the U.S. Senate.

There are people more stressed after a trip to the grocery store than this man seemingly is on his worst day.

"I just feel like I'm doing what I'm supposed to be doing," says Jim Bob, a 36-year-old lifelong Springdale resident who has been known as a one-issue politician—a conservative Republican who cares only about stopping abortions.

Now, Jim Bob is known as the candidate with enough moxie—or perhaps not enough sense—to challenge incumbent Sen. Tim Hutchinson in the Republican primary.

Those 13 children, born during Jim Bob and Michelle Duggar's 17 years of marriage, are family values personified. They're a highly visible asset facing a GOP incumbent viewed as politically vulnerable in 2002 because of his divorce and second marriage to a former Senate staff member.

"We're going to do it together as a family," Michelle, 34, says of the race. "It's not just, 'Daddy's doing this.' ... We stick together like glue."

The "we" includes Joshua, "Joshy," 13; twins Jana, "Banana," and John-David, 11; Jill "Muffin," 10; Jessa, "Blessa," 8; Jinger, "Jin-Jin," 7; Joseph, "Joe-Joe," 6; Josiah, "Siah," 5; Joy-Anna, "Jogees," 3; "The Dynamic Duo" twins Jedidiah and Jeremiah, 2; Jason, "Jay Bird," 1, who with "The Dynamic Duo" forms "The Three Musketeers"; and James, 8 weeks.

Jim Bob regularly brings his children, whom Michelle home schools, to Little Rock and the state Capitol where his eldest, Joshua, is known as "Governor."

"God put us in there," the Baptist says of winning his first political race in 1999. "We just knew this is the way our family is going to serve our community."

Jim Bob wasn't involved in politics until Bill Clinton was elected president in 1992.

"I saw how things were," he says.

So Jim Bob prayed.

"I prayed, 'Lord, I would be willing to run for office,'' he says. "I'd vote the right way."

Jim Bob didn't run the next election cycle because the timing didn't feel right. But he ran and won in 1999, when he temporarily moved his family to Little Rock for the legislative session and sold all his businesses to concentrate on politics.

He has had various jobs through the years. Michelle jokes that she read a list of the Top 10 worst jobs, and her husband has had seven of them, including insurance salesman and used car salesman.

The Duggars had a turning point in their lives 11 years ago when Jim Bob attended a meeting that discussed financial freedom through living a debt-free life. Michelle eventually attended the meeting, too, and now she and Jim Bob conduct the seminars out of their home. [Financial Freedom seminar. I write about this seminar in my book *Practical Plan for World Peace*]

By getting out of debt and not purchasing anything unless they have cash, the Duggars have saved

enough to make investments in such things as rental and commercial property. Their investments have done so well that Jim Bob doesn't have to work a full-time job.

"I've learned self control and also a lot about construction," he says. And, "All these different businesses that I've been in have really given me a broad perspective of what the average person has to go through every day."

Because of his work situation, says Mary Duggar, Jim Bob's mother, "He probably gets to spend more time with his family than most men do."

"I'm very careful on what events I go to," Jim Bob says. "I just try to prioritize."

Back when the Duggars only had a few kids and were living at a home on their car lot, Jim Bob was the victim of an armed robbery during which he was bound and gagged. The incident helps him keep things in perspective today.

"I feel like I'm living on overtime," Jim Bob says, "so politics is nothing."

DEAR GOD

Politics really does seem like nothing compared to a house almost literally full of children. Just ask Michelle.

She had a desperate, blunt conversation with God one day while standing amid piles of laundry—and this is back when she only had seven children.

"I love 'em, but I think I'm going to go crazy!" she cried to the Lord.

"It was a sacrifice to praise God at that point," Michelle says. But she did. She started singing a song to honor him. Within a week, the children's piano teacher, Ruth Anita Anderson, whom they've come to call Nana, made an offer to help with the laundry.

"God just provided Nana," Michelle says.

Her laundry room today is equipped with two washers and three dryers. There are bins and bins of presorted clothes with labels clearly addressing what clothes are where. Two deep freezers also happen to be in the room, which is just off the kitchen.

Off the other side of the laundry room is the family's closet—the only closet used for clothes in the entire house. Both for space and convenience, the family keeps its clothes together. They don't use dressers because there's more room without them. And the bedroom closets—the children share three bedrooms and lots of bunk beds—are used for storage for such things as each child's violin.

"We are working on a family orchestra," Michelle says. "'Twinkle Twinkle Little Star' is about as far as we get."

It's amazing to watch 15 people in action in a 2,450-square-foot house. Eight recliners fill the front family room, but there are no coffee tables to clutter anyone's path. Michelle has packed away her knickknacks until the children are grown and gone. Family photographs and other pictures on the walls are some of the house's only decorations.

A photocopier adorns the end table next to Michelle and Jim Bob's bed, and there's a file cabinet in her closet.

The one-family closet works well in part since the kids are constantly growing and clothes are passed

from one child to the next. Michelle and the children also make many of their own clothes and buy items from Goodwill. Jim Bob says he probably spends less for clothes on his 13 children than do parents of two children.

"Now, food's a different matter," he says. The Duggars spend an average of $1,000 a month on food.

Michelle goes to the grocery store every other day to pick up three gallons of milk and fresh fruits and vegetables instead of making one big weekly trip with four or five grocery carts.

"I don't like to do it that way," she says. "It just almost overwhelms the poor cashier when we come through."

If it takes this many special arrangements and this much preparation simply to live, why would Jim Bob complicate things by joining the Legislature and, now, running for the Senate? Doesn't he have enough to handle at home?

"Our family is our hobby," says Jim Bob, who doesn't have pursuits like golf or tennis. Though when the family does play sports, Jill says, "We have a whole team here."

"Two teams," Jim Bob says.

WATCHING HER WORDS

The former Michelle Ruark has an easygoing openness and friendliness that extends to each person she meets.

As she and Jim Bob sit on the plastic blue auditorium seats that serve as the family's dining room chairs, she rests her hand on her husband's leg and joyfully

proclaims her beliefs in God, Jim Bob and the sanctity of family. Strains of "Amazing Grace" can be heard from the next room where her children practice piano and violin in one of the girls' rooms that doubles as a music room.

A HOW-TO GUIDE

The Duggars consider the Bible something of an owner's manual, a how-to for life. They sometimes employ "time outs" to discipline their children, but they also think the Bible teaches parents to spank and even instructs on how to do it.

The children and Michelle recite a new Bible passage each morning, and they have actions to go with the words. For instance, when reciting Exodus 20, verses 1-17, the children run a finger along their necks in a quick swipe, as if killing themselves, as they read the passage, "Thou shall not kill."

Religion wasn't always the focal point of Michelle's life.

She was 15 and had been living in Springdale since age 4 when a friend talked to her about a movie that told of the end of the world. Michelle wanted to make sure she'd be ready, so when her friend invited her to a revival, she eagerly went.

Jim Bob and a friend were making visitations to reach out to potential church members, and his friend said that a girl named Michelle had just committed her life to God. He also mentioned that she was a cheerleader.

"Well, let's go see her!" Jim Bob said.

They were married 2 1/2 years later.

Jim Bob, who has only one sibling, and Michelle, who is the youngest of seven, didn't know how many children they wanted to have. And they didn't have any for the first four years they were married. They even used birth control until they decided the pills weren't right for them. They decided having children was for God to control—not them.

"I would like to have more," Michelle says.

They don't always agree, but Jim Bob and Michelle try to resolve disputes before the sun goes down each night, which they say the Bible instructs them to do. Michelle also believes she is to be submissive to Jim Bob, which she says does not mean he treats her like a doormat but that he is the head of the household.

"We don't have a perfect marriage," Jim Bob says. "There's not a perfect marriage out there."

Nor are there perfect children. But the Duggar children, at least on the surface, appear to come awfully close.

THE BUDDY SYSTEM

The older Duggar children all take care of the younger ones through a buddy system.

"The little guys just think the big guys hung the moon," Michelle says.

Without being asked, the older children will get the younger ones' meals or change their diapers. Each child has particular chores, like taking out the trash, that he or she automatically does. Josh is the family grill expert and makes dinner so his parents are free to visit.

"You're my buddy," Jim Bob smiles and says to Michelle as he brings her lunch.

Joshua leads an eloquent, heartfelt prayer while everyone joins hands around the table to pray. All the children seem to be more articulate than others their ages.

When 1-year-old Jason falls to the floor and starts throwing a fit, one glance from his mother and quick wag of her finger ends the incident almost even before it begins. His training should be through by age 12, when Jim Bob and Michelle hope all their children are trained well enough to stand alone.

"I don't want them to be just good kids," Michelle says. "I want it to go deeper than that." Michelle says the desire to see her children be successful, "That's what keeps me going."

Joshua was 5 when the Duggars made the decision to home school their children. They clearly are careful about their children's outside influences. Though the family owns a TV, it's rarely on, even when their father makes an appearance.

"There's a lot of attitudes and actions that we just don't want the children to imitate," Jim Bob says. When a proposal he made in the state Legislature wound up on *Politically Incorrect*, Jim Bob had to call a friend to tape it for him.

Jim Bob and Michelle are willing to share their lives with readers because they want to encourage them, through their story, to turn to God. But even by standards of an average Christian household, the Duggars are extreme.

The girls exclusively wear dresses and skirts. The children wear wet suits instead of bathing suits when they go in the water in order to be modest.

"When they get a little older, they'll have to make the decision on what they want to do," Jim Bob says of wearing swimsuits.

For now, the kids don't appear to mind. Instead of recognizing that they're different, they seem to recognize how lucky they are in some ways.

"You always have someone to play with," Jill says. "And there are lots of birthdays."

When the Duggars went on vacation in 1999 to Washington, D.C., they got attention wherever they went. They walked in a single-file line through the city's sidewalks so they wouldn't take up too much space. Each child wore the same color, and Joshua brought up the rear to make sure everyone stayed together. His parents couldn't understand why he kept stopping to talk to strangers.

"I've had several people ask me when we go out, 'Now, what school is this?' or, 'What organization are you in?' "Joshua says. "Somebody's always asking us something."

The family can all travel together in one vehicle because the family car happens to be a church van, which sports a Bush bumper sticker and another one that says: "Evolution is a Lie: Save America Please."

When the Duggars dine out as a family—and they can tell you exactly which restaurants have children's specials on which nights of the week in the Springdale area—heads turn when they walk in. Waiters literally stop and stare.

"We do make a bit of a commotion when we enter a place," Michelle says. "We're a little hard to forget."

A majority of the children sit at one table, with the rest at the adult table. Jim Bob and Michelle hardly

have to even bother turning around during the meal to check on anyone's behavior.

"The buddies will usually inform us if we need to help with somebody," Michelle says.

Since the birth of 8-week-old James, Michelle has had a particularly difficult time breast-feeding. Every two hours she's in considerable pain, but it doesn't seem to affect her countenance.

During a family portrait, Jim Bob gives Michelle a playful kiss, and she looks at him with the love and happiness of a newlywed—rather than a woman who has been married for 17 years, is home schooling 12 children, breast-feeding a 13th and is helping launch a Senate campaign.

A WINNABLE RACE?

She's in a minority, but Michelle confidently declares, "It is a winnable race."

Not that the family is depending on it. "If we win, wonderful," Michelle says. "If we lose, wonderful. We just wanna serve."

Jim Bob accepts campaign contributions, but he doesn't solicit them. Hutchinson has $1.5 million in his coffers. Jim Bob has $250,000—all his own money.

"People with money are going to support the incumbent," Jim Bob says. "They just don't want to burn a bridge with the incumbent."

Some of those same people have assured Jim Bob that he'll get their support should he defeat Hutchinson, he says.

Jim Bob has been told it takes a minimum of $500,000 to win the seat.

"Money isn't everything," his mother says reassuringly.

Jim Bob argues that a third of the primary is in conservative Benton County, where he thinks he'll have a chance of competing strongly. If he beats Hutchinson in the primary, he'll face Attorney General Mark Pryor in the general election. Pryor, of course, starts the race with extra name recognition thanks to his father, former U.S. Sen. David Pryor.

"Jim Bob's at peace about it," Mary Duggar says of whether her son wins or loses.

"I know everybody believes this is totally impossible, a total long shot," Jim Bob says.

But he has 14 extremely strong supporters living in his own house, even if only one of them can vote.

www.duggarfamily.com

Check out the Duggar family website at www.duggarfamily.com.

DUGGAR FAMILY ON TELEVISION

DUGGAR FAMILY DVD

The Duggars have been on a television series about their family for several years on the Discovery Channel. So far they are selling 5 DVDs that cover over 14 hours. Here is what they say at their website about the DVDs and the book written by Jim and Michelle titled *The Duggars: 20 and Counting!: Raising One of America's Largest Families—How they Do It*
(http://health.discovery.com/tv/duggars/duggars.html):

This set is exclusive to the Discovery Channel Store.

Witness the remarkable lives of this large – and still growing – family from Arkansas that has become a pop culture phenomenon. After more than 20 years of marriage, former high school sweethearts, Jim Bob and Michelle Duggar have received 18 gifts – 10 boys and 8 girls. Join in on the family fun with this energy-filled DVD Set packed with love, laughs, and lots of children.

Episodes include:

- Big Family Meets Big Apple
- Duggars Do New York
- Josh Gets Engaged
- Duggar Dating Rules
- When Big Families Collide
- Bates vs. Duggars Smackdown
- Cheaper by the Duggars
- Trading Places, Duggar Style
- Big Family Reunion
- Duggars Learn to Drive

Bonus Episodes:

- 14 Children and Pregnant Again!
- 16 Children and Moving In
- Raising 16 Children
- Duggars' Big Family Album

It's official: The Duggars are a true pop culture phenomenon. With their regular appearances on national talk shows, their countless press clippings and their enormous online following, this 20-member family from Arkansas has all of America talking.

The patriarch and matriarch of this large – and still growing – group are former high school sweethearts, Jim Bob and Michelle. With values rooted in their strong personal faith, Jim Bob and Michelle firmly believe that every child is a gift to be cherished. After more than 20 years of marriage, the couple has received 18 gifts – ten

boys and eight girls [There are 19 children at the time of the printing of this book]. With only two sets of twins among the 18 children, Michelle has been pregnant for 12 years of her life. Another vital piece of Duggar trivia is that each child's name begins with a ''J'' – Joshua, Jana, John-David, Jill, Jessa, Jinger, Joseph, Josiah, Joy-Anna, Jeremiah, Jedidiah, Jason, James, Justin, Jackson, Johannah, Jennifer, and baby Jordyn-Grace.

Discover the many parenting strategies that Jim Bob and Michelle Duggar use as they raise one of America's largest families.

Discover how the Duggars manage to educate all their children at home, while providing experiences that go beyond the family walls

Learn how the Duggar family manages their finances and lives debt-free

See how the Duggars create a warm and welcoming home filled with "serene chaos"

Get answers to questions that pour into the family's Web site on a daily basis

Features spiritual insights, experience-based wisdom, practical tips, and plenty of humorous and tender anecdotes

Includes sidebar "extras," such as tips, recipes, lists, definitions, helps, and photos – even a floor plan of their house

Written by Michelle Duggar and Jim Bob Duggar from Discovery Health's hit series Meet the Duggars

This practical book not only satisfies the curiosity of Duggar fans, but shares practical how-to's on topics such as organization, parenting, making memories, finances, home schooling, and more.

The Duggars: 20 and Counting!

In their book *The Duggars: 20 and Counting!: Raising One of America's Largest Families—How they Do It* Jim and Michelle write about many topics. One of the most interesting is the story of their finances. They write how they found the video series Financial Freedom given by Jim Sammons. These videos are based on the book *Men's Manual Volume 2* written by Bill Gothard and Jim Sammons. This book and these videos are the very best I have ever seen on money management. I write in some detail about the book and the videos in my book *Practical Plan for World Peace*. In their book *20 and Counting!* Jim Duggar writes:

> While we were running all these businesses, we were also attending a wonderful Sunday school class for young married couples at our church. One of the teachers was Glen Parsons, a successful businessman in our city. Glen invited fifty men from our church, including me, to come to his house every Friday morning for breakfast. Then we watched and discussed a video series Glen wanted to share with us. It was Jim Sammons's Financial Freedom program, and it became another life-changing turning point for me.
>
> Led by Faith
>
> The Financial Freedom presentations focused on biblical principles for personal and business finance. The sessions were not only spiritually enriching, they were also inspiringly practical and very motivational. During those breakfast sessions, we learned how biblical lessons can be applied in our modern-day financial practices.
>
> I was eager to share the information with Michelle, so when Glen brought the video seminar to our church and opened it up to couples, I went through the whole thing again, and Michelle happily came with me. The seminar helped us become single-minded about our life goals and the decisions we were making. It wasn't about getting rich but about giving God control of every area of our lives.

> Those sessions taught the biblical principle that we should owe no one anything but love. This principle has probably caused the most curiosity about our family's story because it's the one that directed us to get out of debt and avoid borrowing money in the future.

The principle of debt free as taught in *Men's Manual Volume 2* and in the video series *Financial Freedom* given by Jim Sammons works. By following these principles Unificationist families can afford to have large families and not only be debt-free but live a prosperous life as well. I encourage every Unificationist to get this book and watch these DVDs and do as they teach. The Institute in Basic Life Principles prints and makes the DVDs. At their website www.iblp.org we read:

> Financial Freedom Seminar
>
> *Understanding God's principles of finance*
>
> Facing financial pressures or simply trying to avoid problems? Interested in what the Bible has to say about finances?
>
> This 16-hour video seminar, taught by Jim Sammons, has helped thousands of people avoid financial disaster as they have understood what the Bible teaches about money and have begun to apply those principles in their lives.
>
> Jim explains universal financial principles from God's Word and uses down to earth illustrations from his own life.

The Duggars look like such a happy family. I find it hard to believe that those who live differently live a happier life. I wonder what it would it be like to have anti-patriarchs like Bell Hooks be followed day and night for weeks and months by a cable company and watch a film about her home life. I've seen Bell Hooks talk on TV and read some her satanic writings and I found nothing inspiring or intelligent or heartwarming. When I read and watch biblical, patriarchal families that

Bell Hooks, Terrence Real, John Bradshaw, Gloria Steinem and all the other feminists despise I find joy and peace. I don't see the violence and repression that the Left keeps saying there is in traditional families. I see happiness.

I find the words in books by anti-traditional writers like Hooks, Real, Bradshaw, Steinem and Friedan to be vile, offensive, repulsive, disgusting, foul, and morally depraved. They would feel the same about me. Everyone has a choice to make. Either you believe that egalitarian marriages and feminist families are good for some people or you think egalitarianism is a poison that no one should ever get near. I get Warm Fuzzies when I read and see traditional families and I get Cold Pricklies when I read and see anti-patriarchal families. How Liberals can look go the website for the Duggar family at www.duggarfamily.com and think these people are living in some rigid, neurotic, violent hell shows how much Satan rules this world. Anyone with half a brain and in touch with their original mind and heart and conscience would feel inspired and moved to see the genuine happiness of the conservative Duggar family. Imagine if all Unificationist families lived by the core values of the Duggar family. How powerful would our movement be if our families had 14 children, were debt-free and the girls wore modest, long dresses and boys wore shirts with collars like the Duggar boys do?

Jeub Family www.Jeubfamily.com

Let's look at one more family that has put themselves under the microscope of national television—the Jeub family. This family has a website at www.jeubfamily.com where they have decided to be public people in the hope they will inspire others to emulate their patriarchal beliefs. They, like the other families who have been on cable TV feel that by doing so they will be an encouragement for other religious people to have big families. They see it as a way of witnessing for the Lord. They are one of several large families on the cable TV series *Kids by the Dozen*.

At their website Mr. Jeub has written some of his thoughts. He says:

> Reflections on Our TLC Experience Saturday,
> September 30th, 2006 - by Chris Jeub

Tracy Chaplin, the producer of the upcoming mini-series *Families by the Dozen*, explained TLC as "returning to being a learning channel." People want to learn about what it is like to be in a family like ours, to be a fly on the wall, to walk through a week with the Jeubs and observe daily occurrences that, similar to anyone, is unique with a dozen kids running around. From September 18-25, 2006, we allowed a producer and assistant producer, two cameramen and a sound technician come into our home and capture the day-to-day life of the Jeub Family. Nearly 80 hours of video was captured that will be edited down to 45 minutes for a 1-hour episode on The Learning Channel. Our episode will air in January 2007.

This project will not be narrated. The only voices will be by family's and the participants on camera. Tracy and his crew asked questions throughout the week, and we simply answered them the best we could. The people at Powderhouse (the production firm working for TLC) will edit the work to bring the Jeubs' philosophy of family life in with real-life examples.

The events of the week were reminiscent of most families–large and small–but had peculiarities that made them novel. We went shopping for one full (and very long) day–in our converted school bus. We attended AWANA that same evening—and everyone in our family (all 13) participated in one way or another. We homeschooled at the kitchen table. We did chores, washed the dishes, folded laundry. The camera crew came to work with me one day–with my 14-year-old admin assistant, Cynthia, coming with me. The crew followed Wendy to her small-group Bible study at a local coffee shop on Tuesday night, and they followed Cynthia and me to Debate Club on Thursday night. We went to church together–a home church located in a community center. And the biggest event was perhaps the most unique: hosting

188 people at our home for The Jeub Birthday Bash, the one birthday party we throw for all our kids.

The themes discussed throughout the week were rich. Wendy and I can't wait to see how Powderhouse crams so much content into one episode. These themes are themes every parent and child can learn from and apply to their own lives. Here are some?

Creativity. In a family with 13 kids, parents and children need to adapt to their surroundings and be creative with what they have. We gave a thorough account of our bus, something we believe to be incredibly creative. The tips and solutions we come up with can be applied to families of all sizes.

Frugality. There is conventional wisdom that says a child costs too much money. We don't believe that children "exhaust" a family's equity. The cameras captured many money-saving practices that any family can apply. In fact, Wendy and I managed to feed 188 people for under $1 a head, and the cameras followed us shopping to show how.

Training. There is peace in the Jeub home, which is likely the most surprising thing of a home with 11 children under 14-years-old running around. Wendy and I take time to "train" our children on proper behavior and etiquette. The cameras picked up on training episodes on how to behave in the stores and in church. Training is the key to raising kids who are well behaved, as well as key to making a house of more-than-a-dozen a house of joy rather than chaos.

Trials. The Jeubs aren't immune to family hardships and sin. Our little ones had quite a few "meltdowns" in front of the cameras. We have adult children whom we love who do things that create trauma and separation. Our journey as a family has not been squeaky clean. We go into great detail on many of

our familial trials. The things we have learned and are still learning are truths that can be applied to a number of families, large and small.

Extended Family. My sister Becky traveled up from Arizona for the Birthday Bash. Becky has "only" one child, which gave a wonderful opportunity to contrast two different branches stemming from the same familial root. Two of Wendy's three sisters flew out for the Bash also (Heather and Paula). The cameras captured the three working in the kitchen reminiscing about being raised in a "large" family (Wendy had five siblings). Extended family—aunts uncles, cousins, etc.—bring a wealth of love into a family.

Blessings. Just like children are far from a drain on the family, we believe they are each a blessing. Each child contributes to the health and well being of the family in their individual ways. TLC spent a great deal of time with Cynthia, our 14-year-old, who works as my administrative assistant twice a week. I talk about the spirit of entrepreneurialism. I am instilling in my children.

Freedom. Tracy caught me off guard when he told me of a word Wendy and I were using quite often in the interviews: freedom. There is a faulty notion that children are enslaving, that raising a family is "sacrificing" the enjoyable life. Nothing could be further from the truth. Ultimate freedom comes from walking in relationship with Jesus Christ, and for the Jeubs this includes allowing God to bless us with children. We are free!

Love. This was the most profound aspect of our interviews. When it comes down to it, everything we do centers on love. God is love. The most profound statements of the week center on the love we have for our God and the love we have for each other. All the

> pragmatic examples of "how to do it" amounts to nothing if Love is neglected.
>
> We are already talking about having Powderhouse and TLC out to our home for Episode 2. What that will look like we don't yet know. Wendy and I are eager to have a 14th child, and perhaps that will be the story. Whatever the story is, we hope to spread the message of love and joy to families of all sizes. It is a wonderful message full of eternal truths that Wendy and I are constantly discovering through our life journey. Our cup overflows with divine love and we can't help but share it with you. Be sure to tune into The Learning Channel in January to walk through a week with The Jeubs.

DIVINE LOVE

How many egalitarians who fight against patriarchy can say, "Our cup overflows with divine love and we can't help but share it with you"? Stories like these of happy patriarchal families prove that patriarchy is God's number one core value. Anti-patriarchs have deluded themselves that godly patriarchs for thousands of years abused women and children and hurt themselves by not being androgynous creatures the Left loves so much. The trend and pattern for anti-patriarchs is to have few or no children. Patriarchs love women so much they want their wife to have many children. Patriarchy is an ideology of growth and fulfillment as opposed to the crusade of barrenness from Satan's authorized messengers of the Left.

The Jeubs have written a book titled *Love in the House*. At their website Chris writes:

> Love in the House
> April 26th, 2007 - by Chris Jeub
>
> When the TLC camera crew ventured into our home for nearly two weeks of filming, we were placed under a microscope. Our values and parenting choices were put to the test. We were forced to

explain why we have so many children. Along with showing how we did laundry, dishes, and basic home management, we explained why we choose such a lifestyle.

TLC captured over 50 hours of footage but cut it down to a mere 44 minutes. Needless to say, most of what we shared ended up on the editing floor. Numerous questions hung in the air after the debut of the *Kids by the Dozen* episode:

How do we keep your grocery bill below $600/month?

What other creative ideas besides the Birthday Bash do you do?

What ever became of your estranged relationship with your oldest daughter?

Wendy looks like she's a teenager. What keeps her looking so good after 13 kids?

Your lifestyle scares the daylights out of me. Why not you?

This book is being printed in time for a Mother's Day release. Unfortunately, we are not able to get it to you by Mother's Day, but we do have a special debut offer from now till Mother's Day to receive the book for only $10 (cover price is $14.95)! All orders can use the following PDF document that announces to your mother that *Love in the House* is on its way! Click here for the file: Happy Mother's Day. This will be a wonderful gift for mothers this Mother's Day. The offer is good only through Mother's Day, so be sure to order yours right away.

See what a few others have said about *Love in the House*:

"Boy, was I surprised by this book. I expected a guilt-inducing tome about a huge, perfect family. But as I read about the Jeubs, they seemed so…normal. They're relaxed, trustful of God, and joyful about life. They're honest about their struggles and doubts. You'll probably pick up this book out of curiosity at how a large family makes it in today's world. But I predict that you'll quickly move from curiosity to inspiration. What a great story!"

—Jeff Myers, Ph.D. President, Passing the Baton International, Inc.

"Whether you have children or not, you will be blessed by reading *Love in the House*. Wendy and Chris are real people with real family struggles. *Love in the House* gives you a candid peek into the home and hearts of the Jeub family, sharing some important lessons they have learned. They share their lives with the hope and prayer that you will be able to enjoy the abundant love and freedom Jesus intends for each of us."

—DuWayne and Miriam Heppner, Building the Family

Love in the House is a wonderful, transparent story of the Jeub family's love for God and children and the challenges and fun of raising a family in today's world. The Jeub family shares candidly that they are learning together to embrace God through the triumphs and trials of family life and to love without a judgmental spirit. How refreshing their story is of family, faith and hope in the midst of the world in which we live!

Chris Jeub writes about patriarchy at his website:

> The Return of Patriarchy
> March 9th, 2006
>
> There is an excellent article published on ForeignPolicy.com meditating on the inevitable consequences of a 1-child culture. Phillip Longman points out a number of different truths that seem like no-brainers.
>
> > Single-child families are prone to extinction. A single child replaces one of his or her parents, but not both. Nor do single-child families contribute much to future population. The 17.4 percent of baby boomer women who had only one child account for a mere 7.8 percent of children born in the next generation. By contrast, nearly a quarter of the children of baby boomers descend from the mere 11 percent of baby boomer women who had four or more children. These circumstances are leading to the emergence of a new society whose members will disproportionately be descended from parents who rejected the social tendencies that once made childlessness and small families the norm. These values include an adherence to traditional, patriarchal religion, and a strong identification with one's own folk or nation.
>
> Longman goes on about how important it is for fathers to have a role in the formation of family. With very scientific logic, he makes the argument that population is much more of a deciding factor of the progression of civilization than any other factor. He

is responding to the epidemic of a population decline in Europe (this is a European site), a decline he proposes will bring about undesirable outcomes. Consider:

> Many childless, middle-aged people may regret the life choices that are leading to the extinction of their family lines, and yet they have no sons or daughters with whom to share their newfound wisdom. The plurality of citizens who have only one child may be able to invest lavishly in that child's education, but a single child will only replace one parent, not both. Meanwhile, the descendants of parents who have three or more children will be hugely over-represented in subsequent generations, and so will the values and ideas that led their parents to have large families.

Perhaps Longman's boldest argument is given in his conclusion. There is a lot here, and you'll have to read the entire article to really grasp the profoundity of it:

> Societies that are today the most secular and the most generous with their underfunded welfare states will be the most prone to religious revivals and a rebirth of the patriarchal family. The absolute population of Europe and Japan may fall dramatically, but the remaining population will, by a process similar to survival of the fittest, be adapted to a new environment in which no one can rely on government to replace the family, and in which a patriarchal God commands family

> members to suppress their individualism and submit to father.

This article has not been buried in the stack of a dominant media who would rather ignore such logical claims. Brit Hume of Fox News picked this up and reported it:

Demographic Switch?

Conservatives may soon be taking over the country… literally. That according to *Foreign Policy* magazine's Phillip Longman, who argues that a rise in birth rates in a small, culturally conservative segment of society could usher in a return of old-fashioned family values.

Longman writes that with more Americans choosing to have fewer children or none at all, those with conservative values are reproducing at a much higher rate than the rest of society and he says the "conservative baby boom" may have already begun.

Longman notes that fertility rates in states that voted for George Bush in 2004 are 12 percent higher than in those that voted for John Kerry.

Phillip Longman is Bernard L. Schwartz senior fellow at the New America Foundation. He is the author of *The Empty Cradle: How Falling Birthrates Threaten World Prosperity and What to Do About It*. I am ordering a copy today.

The Heppner family also agreed to be on show *Kids by the Dozen*. They have a family website at www.buildingthefamily.com where you can see pictures of their family and read their thoughts on building a patriarchal family. They write:

Yes, they are all ours.

No, we did not plan to have sixteen children.

And no, we are not a perfect family... life has not always been as bright as this picture.

Our family is one of three large homeschooling families was highlighted in a documentary series titled "Kids by the Dozen" will be aired again on TLC — The Learning Channel — March 12th. Although God is still writing our family's story, we have been amazed as we have already watched God at work through the process, and we are expecting a candid and encouraging production that could have a far reaching impact.

The production company is proposing at least two sequels.

One article on their family says:

Miriam was young — 18 — when she had her first child. That started a string of 26 consecutive years where she was either pregnant or breastfeeding.

Six are out of the house now. Several of the older boys work construction with DuWayne. This summer, they've been building a home on an island near Northwest Angle. Miriam is a traditional stay-at-home mom who also finds time for distance running.

So, how have the Heppners not only raised 16 children, but also home-schooled them?

To begin with, faith is a necessity, Miriam said. "We've relied on God for his wisdom and help," she said. "There were times I felt horribly overwhelmed, especially when I was young, but He came through to give me an idea I hadn't thought of myself."

Teamwork among the siblings helps. So does having a big garden and marksmen to put venison in the freezer. An acceptance of having fewer material things also is necessary.

"We have limitations as far as finances and things, but many benefits as well," Miriam said. "I can't imagine life without any of these kids. My life is so fulfilling that I can't imagine doing anything else with it."

Now, with only 10 children in the house and older ones around to help with their younger siblings, life is a cakewalk, at least comparatively. At one point, 15 lived at home.

"There's not nearly as much laundry or meals," Miriam said. "Plus, we have systems in place. There are charts with each child's chores that day and with their daily routines. We've learned a lot over the years."

They also fielded questions about the emotional, as well as the practical. "They were especially interested in how we were able to connect with our children individually, being there are so many of them," Miriam said.

The film crew will return in September for more interviews. Miriam hopes their older two children who live out of state will return then.

And maybe there will be a 19th family member around. You see, Miriam's time recently has been consumed with an attempt to adopt a child.

"It's been a long, long gestational period with this one," she said.

The Heppners' newest house resident — a 3-year-old girl — is being adopted; the process should be final by month's end, the couple said Friday.

DORMITORIES

Bedrooms here are called dormitories, food is purchased by the pick up load and clothes always end up as hand me downs.

Miriam said, "With each child that we add into our family we have to continually become more organized, work on systems more within our home."

There is no television in this busy home, but it's not all work.

With a family this size there enough players to make teams for outdoor games like hockey or soccer. And, in the evenings simple word games involve everyone.

Jemima Heppner said, "You never get bored. You are always busy doing things. And, as far as peace and quiet, you learn how to tune things out. Sometimes too much!"

Mealtimes are a study in organization with everyone who is able giving a hand. Sitting down sixteen to dinner evidently has its pluses and minuses.

Abraham Heppner said, "There's so much food on the table you can help yourself."

Susanna Heppner said, "You have to do too many dishes."

And after dinner this Christian family sings together.

The 18-member Heppner family has refused several offers to be featured on a reality television show.

They feared what the final, edited version would be. “When you sign a contract, you sign your life away,” Miriam Heppner said. “And you have no rights. You can say something in one context, and they can move it to a different context and make it say something totally different than you have intended.”

There is ample reason for Miriam and DuWayne Heppner to be suspicious of reality shows, which prefer footage with shock value. The story of raising 16 children could be sensationalized, causing harm for the kids.

With 100 hours of tape to work with, a show can take any spin it desires.

But then a production company for The Learning Channel knocked on Heppners’ door. And the door was opened. The four-person production crew recently completed seven days hanging out with the family, which has eight times the average number of children per household.

TLC has a reputation for family programming. And the angle of the show, an hour-long production scheduled for airing in January or February, was a positive one.

“The motivation behind the story is the idea that if we can do it, other families with fewer children can do it,” Miriam said. “Hopefully, others can pick up on some things that we’ve had to do — basically, survive.

“Some moms feel overwhelmed and walk away from the family. This is where my heart is — to encourage young moms.”

> Miriam was young — 18 — when she had her first child. That started a string of 26 consecutive years where she was either pregnant or breastfeeding.
>
> TLC stuffed over 50 hours of video into 44 minutes. We thought they did a marvelous job depicting our family for who we are, but getting all questions answered is an impossible feat. We've gotten a boatload of questions through posts on the website and through email. We're not able to respond to all of them, so we've drummed up some new FAQs that go into some answers to popular questions. Click through for much of "the rest of the story"…

Another couple that has invited the media into their home is Ken and Devon Carpenter. They were on the TV show Nightline. It was a ten minute video where they talk about biblical, patriarchal family. ABC News printed an article based on the TV show. They say:

> When Having Kids is a Religious Experience
>
> By Ted Gerstein and John Berman
>
> Jan. 3, 2007 — In the Carpenter family's nicely decorated living room outside Nashville, Tenn., the "Nightline" team stared at a couch that couldn't possibly fit another human being.
>
> The eight kids squished together began shouting out their names, "PEYTON! COLE! OWEN!"
>
> Ken and Devon Carpenter are the parents of eight kids, aged 1 to 15. It might sound like a sitcom or a remake of "Eight is Enough." But this isn't a sitcom. This a movement.
>
> The Carpenter family is part of the "Quiverfull Movement." The name comes from the Bible — Psalm 127/128:

“Children are a heritage from the Lord / children a reward from him/ like arrows in the hands of a warrior are children born in one’s youth. Blessed is the man /whose quiver is full of them.”

What does that mean? Quiverfull followers believe that all forms of contraception, all forms of birth control and any form of family planning goes against God’s plan.

“As I understand, and to the extent that we are involved in it, it is just a matter of, it’s a mind-set that says we will take as many children — happily — as God blesses us with,” Ken Carpenter said.

It isn’t simply about having as many kids as possible, though.

“It’s not a contest,” he said. “For us, it’s about having as many as the Lord gives us, and being happy with that. If the Lord gives us more, great. If we are done at eight, that’s fine. Whatever He gives us.”

The Birth of the Movement

Quiverfull is largely an American phenomenon, beginning with the release of the book “A Full Quiver” in 1989. There is no official organization, but in 1995, the Web site www.quiverfull.com went online with just 12 subscribers — now there are more than 2,600. There are probably several thousand Quiverfull enthusiasts all over the United States right now — and the movement is believed to be growing.

There are certainly a lot of question about the practice. Is it dangerous for a woman’s body to keep having children, one after the other?

“I don’t struggle in that area, I have pretty easy pregnancies and deliveries and recovery,” Devon Carpenter said. “God designed us to have children, and thankfully, we do have good doctors out there for things that come up.”

If there is a grandmother to this movement, it’s Nancy Campbell. Her magazine has been advocating this lifestyle for decades. Campbell explained why followers even have a problem with natural family planning or the “rhythm method.”

“When we really stop and think about it, it’s not natural,” she said. “We have to go against the way that God designed our bodies. He designed them to be fruitful, so if a couple [doesn’t] want to have children…they’ve got to do something to their body so it doesn’t work the way God planned it.”

What about simply not having sex?

“What married couple is not going to do that?” Campbell asked.

Supporting a “Full Quiver”

There are other questions. How can anyone afford this? Ken Carpenter has a good business producing videos for some of Nashville’s biggest names. That puts a roof over their head. And what about planning for his children’s college education? He isn’t sure about college, but it isn’t about the money.

“There is a mindset and worldview that’s taught on a college campus that is in conflict with the scripture we read this morning,” he said.

The Carpenter children are home-schooled. Ken Carpenter hopes his sons find professions and that his

daughters learn to be mothers. He believes that it is a woman's primary function to become a mother. And a father's primary function?

"I think a dad ought to be the primary instiller of wisdom and ought to be teaching his sons leadership," he said.

'The Biblical Model'

The role of the father as the head of the household is at the center of the Quiverfull movement.

"I know that notion is going to rile a number of people," Ken Carpenter said. "[But] I do consider myself the loving head of this family, responsible to lead them. That's the biblical model of fatherhood."

Devon Carpenter concurred, saying that her role is to be "nurturing and loving and submissive to my husband and shepherding to the children."

Both husband and wife say this is the life they want to lead, and want their kids to lead — which means thousands more diapers, and many more chaotic mealtimes.

If there is one thing that this life guarantees, it is nonstop motion.

How about the future? Are more kids on the way?

"Yes," Ken Carpenter said. "Should the Lord bless us with more, I would be thrilled."

Nightline sells a DVD of the program that was aired on 1-3-07. You can buy it by going to the ABC News website and find the Nightline program (product # N070103-51 called "Quiverfull Movement"). Call them and buy the DVD and show it to everyone you can. It is a vivid

and moving testimony and witness to how wonderful patriarchal families are. I am so grateful for the Carpenters to share their loving home and talk about Godly values. A picture (or video) is worth a thousand words. This video proves anti-patriarchs to be wrong and dramatizes the kind of marriage and family God wants us to have. Every Unificationist should watch and learn from this video. Every seminary student should be taught about the biblical, patriarchal family and watch this video to actually see what it looks like. Most people have never seen a godly patriarchal family. At the time of the printing of this book ABC News has the segment online at http://abcnews.go.com/Video/playerIndex?id=2769639.

CARPENTER FAMILY

At the website www.regenerateourculture.com we read:

> Ken Carpenter, the founder of Franklin Springs Family Media, is an award-winning Christian filmmaker based in the Nashville area. Mr. Carpenter is quickly building a name for himself in the Christian media, but he's most proud of the family he's building. He and his wife Devon are the parents of eight blessings, whom they homeschool. Mr. Carpenter agreed to share some of his thoughts with ROC (Regenerate Our Culture), and we were able to catch up with him on his way out of town for some production work. Here's what he had to share:
>
> Sarah: Your documentary *A Journey Home* won Best Documentary at the 2005 San Antonio Independent Christian Film Festival. Could you tell us about this film?
>
> Ken Carpenter: I am so grateful that God allowed me to be a part of this project. I learned so much from Tommy Waller and his wonderful family (the subjects of the film) during the process of making this film.

The story is about Tommy Waller's incredible transition from working 80 hours a week at Fed Ex to totally re-ordering their family life so that he could be home with his wife and children. They moved from a typical suburban lifestyle to adopt a "plain" lifestyle (i.e. no electricity), living among the Amish and Mennonite. In a world where a lot of us take small steps to be better parents, Tommy Waller took a giant step.

The fruit of that step was tremendous growth in their family. They became so unified, to the glory of God. What was really exciting, though, was to see how the Wallers began to affect the lives of people in a local community when they began to sell their organic vegetables in that village. And then, as the story unfolds, we see that their influence ultimately reaches across the globe in a pretty dramatic turn of events in their lives.

I had known the Wallers for a year before we began filming, and then we spent about a year and a half on the film. The time I spent with them had a profound impact on me personally, one that has borne good fruit in my family life. [You can order the DVD on the Wallers at www.franklinsprings.com]

Sarah: At the beginning of this year, your family was featured on ABC *Nightline* in a special about what ABC referred to as "The Quiverfull Movement" — trusting God for the number of children you have. Could you tell us about this appearance and the impact it had?

Ken Carpenter: The *Nightline* experience was one that I look back at with much gratitude to the Lord for His hand on the process. It's a little unnerving to have a New York news crew come to one's farm in Tennessee. Talk about feeling vulnerable....

> But the whole process turned out to be a very positive experience. They were very kind and gracious, and while they did ask some tough and very pointed questions, I thought they were very evenhanded in their editing of the piece. Our family was just in New York City a few weeks ago, and the *Nightline* people treated us to a very special day of behind-the-scenes touring at the network. While our political and religious sensibilities are pretty disparate, they were very kind and very professional.
>
> The response to the story has been very positive. Basically, I think many of us are just starved to see honest portrayals of Christian families in the media. I'm humbled and grateful that God used our family in this small way to hopefully encourage other families.

THE NATURAL FAMILY

Allan Carlson is a prominent writer on the traditional family. He and some friends of his have written an excellent book titled *The Natural Family: A Manifesto*. One sentence reads: "We will welcome and celebrate more babies and larger families, where others would continue a war on human fertility."

GREAT CRUSADE

In his Day of Hope speaking tour to every state in America in 1973 Father said in a speech titled "God's Hope for America" that he is creating a "great crusade": "I have initiated a youth movement which is probably the only one of its kind in United States history. This is a new Pilgrim movement. ... Their hearts are compassionate. They have one purpose: They want to save America. They want to bring God back to America and they know that by serving the world they can save America. These young people are here to rekindle America's spirit. America has a great tradition. All you have to do is revive it. We need a new movement of Pilgrims with a new vision. This is inevitable, because God left no alternative for America. You have no other direction in which to turn. The new Pilgrim movement has come—not for America alone, but for the world. In other words, the movement for

world salvation must begin in this country. America is the base and when America fulfills her mission you will be eternally blessed.

"This is God's hope for America. This is God's ardent hope for you. For myself, I made a covenant with our young people of America that we will strive in partnership with God for this great crusade. I want you to join; I want you to support these young people."

Part of our crusade is to have men become true patriarchs who want to have huge families. The essence of patriarchy is the desire of men to have many children and raise them to be spiritual warriors in our cultural war between the sheep and goats in these Last Days. We need to restore the old-fashioned values that many of the founders of America had. In the book *Mayflower: A Story of Courage, Community and War*, Nathaniel Philbrick writes that one of the pilgrim couples, John and Elizabeth Howland, had 10 children and produced "an astounding eighty-eight grandchildren." Unificationists should have even more. How about every Blessed Couple having 15 children who in turn have 15 children? Philbrick writes, "The Pilgrims' descendents have proven to be, if nothing else, fruitful. In 2002 it was estimated that there were approximately 35 million descendents of the Mayflower passengers in the United States, which represents roughly 10 percent of the total U.S. population." If thousands of Unificationists accept the ideology of patriarchy and have big families and stay united there would be no other news but what these tens and then hundreds of millions of Blessed families are doing to unite this world.

The Case Against Adolescence

Robert Epstein has a fascinating book that says many young people should marry at a far earlier age than is customary in America and the West today. I agree with him. He said in an interview:

> Trashing Teens
>
> Psychologist Robert Epstein argues in a provocative book, *The Case Against Adolescence*, that teens are far more competent than we assume, and most of their problems stem from restrictions placed on them.

Psychologist Robert Epstein spoke to *Psychology Today's* Hara Estroff Marano about the legal and emotional constraints on American youth.

HEM: Why do you believe that adolescence is an artificial extension of childhood?

RE: In every mammalian species, immediately upon reaching puberty, animals function as adults, often having offspring. We call our offspring "children" well past puberty. The trend started a hundred years ago and now extends childhood well into the 20s. The age at which Americans reach adulthood is increasing—30 is the new 20—and most Americans now believe a person isn't an adult until age 26.

The whole culture collaborates in artificially extending childhood, primarily through the school system and restrictions on labor. The two systems evolved together in the late 19th-century; the advocates of compulsory-education laws also pushed for child-labor laws, restricting the ways young people could work, in part to protect them from the abuses of the new factories. The juvenile justice system came into being at the same time. All of these systems isolate teens from adults, often in problematic ways.

Our current education system was created in the late 1800s and early 1900s, and was modeled after the new factories of the industrial revolution. Public schools, set up to supply the factories with a skilled labor force, crammed education into a relatively small number of years. We have tried to pack more and more in while extending schooling up to age 24 or 25, for some segments of the population. In general, such an approach still reflects factory thinking—get your education now and get it efficiently, in classrooms in lockstep fashion. Unfortunately, most people learn in those classrooms to hate education for the rest of their lives.

The factory system doesn't work in the modern world, because two years after graduation, whatever you learned is out of date. We need education spread over a lifetime, not jammed into the early years—except for such basics as reading, writing, and perhaps citizenship. Past puberty, education needs to be combined in interesting and creative ways with work. The factory school system no longer makes sense.

What are some likely consequences of extending one's childhood?

Imagine what it would feel like—or think back to what it felt like—when your body and mind are telling you you're an adult while the adults around you keep insisting you're a child. This infantilization makes many young people angry or depressed, with their distress carrying over into their families and contributing to our high divorce rate. It's hard to keep a marriage together when there is constant conflict with teens.

We have completely isolated young people from adults and created a peer culture. We stick them in school and keep them from working in any meaningful way, and if they do something wrong we put them in a pen with other "children." In most nonindustrialized societies, young people are integrated into adult society as soon as they are capable, and there is no sign of teen turmoil. Many cultures do not even have a term for adolescence. But we not only created this stage of life: We declared it inevitable. In 1904, American psychologist G. Stanley Hall said it was programmed by evolution. He was wrong.

How is adolescent behavior shaped by societal strictures?

One effect is the creation of a new segment of society just waiting to consume, especially if given money to spend. There are now massive industries—music, clothing, makeup—that revolve around this artificial segment of society and keep it going, with teens

spending upward of $200 billion a year almost entirely on trivia.

Ironically, because minors have only limited property rights, they don't have complete control over what they have bought. Think how bizarre that is. If you, as an adult, spend money and bring home a toy, it's your toy and no one can take it away from you. But with a 14-year-old, it's not really his or her toy. Young people can't own things, can't sign contracts, and they can't do anything meaningful without parental permission—permission that can be withdrawn at any time. They can't marry, can't have sex, can't legally drink. The list goes on. They are restricted and infantilized to an extraordinary extent.

In recent surveys I've found that American teens are subjected to more than 10 times as many restrictions as mainstream adults, twice as many restrictions as active-duty U.S. Marines, and even twice as many as incarcerated felons. Psychologist Diane Dumas and I also found a correlation between infantilization and psychological dysfunction. The more young people are infantilized, the more psychopathology they show.

What's more, since 1960, restrictions on teens have been accelerating. Young people are restricted in ways no adult would be—for example, in some states they are prohibited from entering tanning salons or getting tattoos.

You believe in the inherent competence of teens. What's your evidence?

Dumas and I worked out what makes an adult an adult. We came up with 14 areas of competency—such as interpersonal skills, handling responsibility, leadership—and administered tests to adults and teens in several cities around the country. We found that teens were as competent or nearly as competent as adults in all 14 areas. But when adults estimate how teens will score,

their estimates are dramatically below what the teens actually score.

Other long-standing data show that teens are at least as competent as adults. IQ is a quotient that indicates where you stand relative to other people your age; that stays stable. But raw scores of intelligence peak around age 14-15 and shrink thereafter. Scores on virtually all tests of memory peak between ages 13 and 15. Perceptual abilities all peak at that age. Brain size peaks at 14. Incidental memory—what you remember by accident, and not due to mnemonics—is remarkably good in early to mid teens and practically nonexistent by the ‘50s and ‘60s.

If teens are so competent, why do they not show it?

What teens do is a small fraction of what they are capable of doing. If you mistreat or restrict them, performance suffers and is extremely misleading. The teens put before us as examples by, say, the music industry tend to be highly incompetent. Teens encourage each other to perform incompetently. One of the anthems of modern pop, “Smells Like Teen Spirit” by Nirvana, is all about how we need to behave like we’re stupid.

Teens in America are in touch with their peers on average 65 hours a week, compared to about four hours a week in preindustrial cultures. In this country, teens learn virtually everything they know from other teens, who are in turn highly influenced by certain aggressive industries. This makes no sense. Teens should be learning from the people they are about to become. When young people exit the education system and are dumped into the real world, which is not the world of Britney Spears, they have no idea what’s going on and have to spend considerable time figuring it out.

There are at least 20 million young people between 13 and 17, and if they are as competent as I think they are, we are just throwing them away.

Do you believe that young people are capable of maintaining long-term relationships and capable of moral reasoning?

Everyone who has looked at the issue has found that teens can experience the love that adults experience. The only difference is that they change partners more, because they are warehoused together, told it's puppy love and not real, and are unable to marry without permission. The assumption is they are not capable. But many distinguished couples today—Jimmy and Rosalynn Carter, George and Barbara Bush—married young and have very successful long-term relationships.

According to census data, the divorce rate of males marrying in their teens is lower than that of males marrying in their 20s. Overall the divorce rate of people marrying in their teens is a little higher. Does that mean we should prohibit them from marrying? That's absurd. We should aim to reverse that, telling young people the truth: that they are capable of creating long-term stable relationships. They might fail—but adults do every day, too.

The "friends with benefits" phenomenon is a by-product of isolating adolescents, warehousing them together, and delivering messages that they are incapable of long-term relationships. Obviously they have strong sexual urges and act on them in ways that are irresponsible. We can change that by letting them know they are capable of having more than a hookup.

Studies show that we reach the highest levels of moral reasoning while we're still in our teens. Those capabilities parallel higher-order cognitive reasoning abilities, which peak fairly early. Across the board, teens are far more capable than we think they are.

What's the worst part of the current way we treat teens?

The adversarial relationship between parents and offspring is terrible; it hurts both parents and young people. It tears some people to shreds; they don't understand why it is happening and can't get out of it. They don't realize they are caught in a machine that's driving them apart from their offspring—and it's unnecessary.

What can be done?

I believe that young people should have more options—the option to work, marry, own property, sign contracts, start businesses, make decisions about health care and abortions, live on their own—every right, privilege, or responsibility an adult has. I advocate a competency-based system that focuses on the abilities of the individual. For some it will mean more time in school combined with work, for others it will mean that at age 13 or 15 they can set up an Internet business. Others will enter the workforce and become some sort of apprentice. The exploitative factories are long gone; competent young people deserve the chance to compete where it counts, and many will surprise us.

It's a simple matter to develop competency tests to determine what rights a young person should be given, just as we now have competency tests for driving. When you offer significant rights for passing such a test, it's highly motivating; people who can't pass a high-school history test will never give up trying to pass the written test at the DMV, and they'll virtually always succeed. We need to offer a variety of tests, including a comprehensive test to allow someone to become emancipated without the need for court action. When we dangle significant rewards in front of our young people—including the right to be treated like an adult—many will set aside the trivia of teen culture and work hard to join the adult world.

Are you saying that teens should have more freedom?

> No, they already have too much freedom—they are free to spend, to be disrespectful, to stay out all night, to have sex and take drugs. But they're not free to join the adult world, and that's what needs to change.
>
> Unfortunately, the current systems are so entrenched that parents can do little to counter infantilization. No one parent can confer property rights, even though they would be highly motivating. Too often, giving children more responsibility translates into giving them household chores, which just causes more tension and conflict. We have to think beyond chores to meaningful responsibility—responsibility tied to significant rights.
>
> With a competency-based system in place, our focus will start to change. We'll become more conscious of the remarkable things teens can do rather than on culture-driven misbehavior. With luck, we might even be able to abolish adolescence.
>
> The Adolescent Squeeze
>
> Before 1850, laws restricting the behavior of teens were few and far between. Compulsory education laws evolved in tandem with laws restricting labor by young people. Beginning in 1960, the number of laws infantilizing adolescents accelerated dramatically. You may have had a paper route when you were 12, but your children can't.

Unificationists need to raise their children to be adults by age 13 and give up their current view that 18-year-olds fundraising with other 18-year-olds is spiritually high. It is, as Epstein teaches, infantilizing and trivial. We need to end the concept of youth ministry. True Mother was 17 years old when she married Father and had her first child nine months later when she was still 17. If we call ourselves followers of True Parents then we should have the same goal of having Unificationists sisters marrying and having a baby by the time they are 17 years of age.

MAGIC

There should be no so-called period called adolescence. We should teach in the *Divine Principle* that there are three stages in the growth period for human beings of infancy, childhood and adulthood. We need to give up on the idea of ages 18, 21, and 25 as ages of maturity. When Unificationists rule the future world government we must change those laws that will not let 13-year-olds to marry. There is no magic in the idea that age 18 is when a person is considered an adult and can then make legal contracts. Epstein writes, "These laws assume that magic happens when people turn eighteen (or twelve or fourteen or sixteen or whatever other arbitrary age is specified)—in other words, that capabilities change in a quantum fashion when the age boundary is crossed. But human development is actually gradual and continuous, and dramatic change certainly doesn't occur instantly on a birthday."

HARM

"Finally, these laws suggest that some or many or perhaps even *all* young people who have sex or marry young will necessarily be harmed in some way. But we've already seen that it's possible for very young spouses to form successful long-term relationships, and research reviewed recently by Judith Levine in *Harmful to Minors* suggests that forcing sex to occur in an atmosphere of ignorance and secrecy does far more harm than allowing it to occur in an atmosphere of knowledge and acceptance.

"Young people can indeed love, and they appear to be able to do so in all the beautiful and crazy ways that adults do. There is simply no evidence that teen love differs in some fundamental way from adult love. Teens also are capable of entering into stable, long-term relationships. The array of laws that limit teen romance and sexuality are absurd and arbitrary, and they sometimes destroy legitimate relationships and cause innocent people and their families great harm."

Adam Smith wrote about Americans marrying young and having large families in his classic *Wealth of Nations* in 1776:

> But though North America is not yet so rich as England, it is much more thriving, and advancing with much greater rapidity to the further acquisition

> of riches. The most decisive mark of the prosperity of any country is the increase of the number of its inhabitants. In Great Britain, and most other European countries, they are not supposed to double in less than five hundred years. In the British colonies in North America, it has been found that they double in twenty or five-and-twenty years. Nor in the present times is this increase principally owing to the continual importation of new inhabitants, but to the great multiplication of the species. Those who live to old age, it is said, frequently see there from fifty to a hundred, and sometimes many more, descendants from their own body. Labour is there so well rewarded that a numerous family of children, instead of being a burthen, is a source of opulence and prosperity to the parents. The labour of each child, before it can leave their house, is computed to be worth a hundred pounds clear gain to them. A young widow with four or five young children, who, among the middling or inferior ranks of people in Europe, would have so little chance for a second husband, is there frequently courted as a sort of fortune. The value of children is the greatest of all encouragements to marriage. We cannot, therefore, wonder that the people in North America should generally marry very young. Notwithstanding the great increase occasioned by such early marriages, there is a continual complaint of the scarcity of hands in North America. The demand for labourers, the funds destined for maintaining them, increase, it seems, still faster than they can find labourers to employ.

I encourage every Unificationist to study Robert Epstein's book *The Case Against Adolescence: Rediscovering the Adult in Every Teen*. At his website we read:

> ADOLESCENCE & ADULTNESS
>
> Working with colleague Diane Dumas, Dr. Epstein has developed a unique and comprehensive test—the

Epstein-Dumas Test of Adultness (EDTA)—that measures 14 different competencies that appear to define adult functioning in modern society. Based on scores obtained from adults and teens, Drs. Epstein and Dumas recently concluded that American teens are, on the average, just as competent as American adults—in other words, that we are probably underestimating the abilities of our teens. Their research also shows a link between "infantilization"—the extent to which teens are treated like children—and behavioral problems in teens. These and related issues are explored in a new book by Dr. Epstein, *The Case Against Adolescence: Rediscovering the Adult in Every Teen*. To see a video of Dr. Epstein speaking about adolescence on "The O'Reilly Factor," click here. Click here to download an interview about the book from the March/April 2007 issue of Psychology Today magazine. If you're a media professional or parent, click here to download a set of questions and answers about the book. For Dr. Epstein's new essay in Education Week, "Let's Abolish High School," click here. For Dr. Epstein's new essay in Scientific American Mind, "The Myth of the Teen Brain," click here. To listen to a 20-minute interview with Dr. Epstein about the book on the "Glenn and Helen Show," click here. If you're an educator interested in adopting the book for a course, email Andrea Wright at Quill Driver Books and request an Executive Summary of the book, which includes detailed chapter summaries.

Review in the May 2007 *Library Journal*:

*Epstein, Robert. *The Case Against Adolescence: Rediscovering the Adult in Every Teen*. Quill Driver. May 2007. c.512p. illus. bibliog. index. ISBN 978-1-884956-70-6. $24.95. SOC SCI

Time to abolish adolescence - so argues Epstein, former editor in chief of *Psychology Today* and host

> of the Sirius Satellite Radio show "Psyched!," in this extensive, groundbreaking book. He claims that teenagers are capable and should be given responsibilities the moment they're ready. Globally, teens in pre-industrial countries are already integrated into responsible, adult society, and teen problems as we know them do not exist. Only in Western industrialized countries are teens isolated from adults through education and laws. American teens are overly dependent on drugs and alcohol, obsessed with their appearance, careless about sex, and moody/depressed/angry. This large volume covers it all, especially the positives: what kids can do, what decisions they should be making. For example, in the field of education, Epstein advocates shorter compulsory school hours, mandatory education for basics only, more individualized instruction, and an end to age segregation. Epstein's credentials and research are extensive; his arguments, persuasive. He is an astute observer of the world around him, especially its do-nothing adolescents. Sure to generate much discussion.

One reviewer wrote:

> This groundbreaking book argues that adolescence is an unnecessary period of life that people are better off without. Robert Epstein, former editor in chief of *Psychology Today*, shows that teen turmoil is caused by outmoded systems put in place a century ago which destroyed the continuum between childhood and adulthood. Where this continuum still exists in other countries, there is no adolescence. Isolated from adults, American teens learn everything they know from their media-dominated peers the last people on earth they should be learning from, says Epstein. Epstein explains that our teens are highly capable in some ways more capable than adults and argues strongly against infantilizing young people. We must rediscover the adult in every teen, he says, by giving young people adult authority and responsibility as

soon as they can demonstrate readiness. This landmark book will change the thinking about teens for decades to come.

The publisher wrote: "A revolutionary proposal for raising responsible and happy teenagers."

Praise for *The Case Against Adolescence: Rediscovering the Adult in Every Teen*:

> "*The Case Against Adolescence* is one of the most revolutionary books I have ever read." —Albert Ellis, Ph.D., The Albert Ellis Institute (from the Foreword)

> "Epstein's book presents a serious and bold challenge to widely held views about teenagers: that they are inherently irresponsible, that they must be shielded from adult challenges, that they are not capable of making sound decisions about matters of health. Epstein demonstrates in a rigorous and persuasive way that teens are in fact highly capable—in some respects even more capable than adults. By shielding and protecting young people from adulthood, we have isolated them from their elders, from their spiritual roots, and from their heritage, leaving many of them angry and confused in the spiritually empty world of teen culture. We need to reexamine our basic assumptions about young people, and Epstein shows us how." —Deepak Chopra, *Life After Death: The Burden of Proof*

> "This is a profoundly important book. Dr. Epstein is raising issues about our young people that we need to think about and evaluate carefully. Generally, I think the institutions that serve our young are sound, but this book points to some obvious problems—most especially the fact that our young people are largely isolated from the adult world. If you care about America's young, this is a must read." — Dr. Joyce Brothers, author & columnist

"I believe what Dr. Epstein is saying one hundred percent. Young people have the ability to do great things; they just never have the opportunity to do them. They're also rarely placed in situations where they have to do them. We treat teens as if they're just kids, assuming they can't do very much, but when they're put into tough situations, they tend to perform just as well or even better than adults. As a teen I successfully impersonated an airline pilot, a medical doctor, a lawyer, and a college instructor. Imagine what I could have done if I had actually been encouraged to develop my adult capabilities. And imagine what today's teens might be able to do if they weren't so completely cut off from the adult world." —Frank W. Abagnale, *Catch Me If You Can*; president, Abagnale & Associates; author

"Retired and in poor health, it is extremely rare for me to endorse any book these days. However, I feel powerfully called to write in support of Dr. Robert Epstein's book *The Case Against Adolescence*. I heartily believe in the validity of what he is saying. Furthermore, I believe what he is saying to have vast consequence for our society. All of America should take note of it." —M. Scott Peck, M.D., *The Road Less Traveled*

"The American education system, as we know it, was designed during a period of rapid industrialization. The mission of schools was to inculcate `industrial discipline' as a means preparing our young people, in factory-like fashion, to work in the new industrial world. That antiquated system no longer prepares our young for the real world they will be facing in the years to come, and, as Dr. Epstein shows, it also isolates young people from adults in ways that have unfortunate consequences. If you care about the future of our young people, *The Case Against Adolescence* is an essential read." —Alvin Toffler, *Future Shock and Revolutionary Wealth*

"Here are America's youth, regarded keenly, knowingly—with many popular assumptions and notions set aside in favor of an accurate and thoughtful portrayal of our young fellow citizens, and too, many of the rest of us, who may fail them by overlooking their achievements and possibilities." —Robert Coles, M.D., professor of psychiatry, Harvard University; recipient, Pulitzer Prize

"Robert Epstein's critique of our conventional view of adolescence is timely. Of all its wide implications, perhaps the most significant is the one for education. Treating young people as adults and giving them the opportunity to embrace responsibility are strategies that the empirical research and analysis of Epstein's work justify. This is a vital book for parents and policy makers on the state and federal levels. It is a long overdue contribution." —Leon Botstein, president, Bard College; *Jefferson's Children: Education and the Promise of American Culture*

Teenagers are not children. Dr. Epstein convincingly demonstrates the harm caused by treating them that way. With an intellectual honesty not often seen, this book cuts through the mountain of prejudice and negative stereotypes and shows teens as they once were, and some day will be again. This is an important book, and one that strikes the next nail in the coffin of the bigoted "storm and stress" view of adolescence. This book should be required reading for all youth workers, all parents trying to better understand their kids, all politicians setting youth policy, and most especially for teens who instinctively recognize the injustice and harm of our system. This book is a powerful tool for articulating that injustice." —Alex Koroknay-Palicz, president & executive director, National Youth Rights Association

"Dr. Epstein has written a very provocative essay about adolescence. His arguments deserve serious

consideration and open debate." —Ellen Langer, Ph.D., *Mindfulness*; Professor of Psychology, Harvard University

"While human evolution has for hundreds of millennia trusted teens to be fully competent adults and parents, our present culture has somehow found it convenient to view them as children. Robert Epstein makes a powerful case for correcting this costly error." —Jean Liedloff, *The Continuum Concept*

"Parents puzzled about the reasons for changes in child-rearing since they were children may find some answers in Robert Epstein's argument about what he calls `the artificial extension of childhood.'" —George F. Will, columnist

"Epstein's book on adolescence is a fresh and timely look at what makes teens miserable, and how their condition can be helped. It is a very original approach, sure to ignite discussion and controversy. A great deal of what he says is right on the money, and few people have written on this subject with his combination of expert knowledge and clear prose." —Mihaly Csikszentmihalyi, Flow; Professor of Management, Clairemont Graduate Center

"*The Case Against Adolescence* constructs a powerful argument against trivializing a significant fraction of the population in the interests of an illusion. Whether you're a parent, a teacher, a policy maker, or a recovering victim of enforced childishness, you need to read this book." —John Taylor Gatto, *Dumbing Us Down* and *The Underground History of American Education*; former New York City and New York State Teacher of the Year

"Dr. Epstein offers a compelling mixture of historical evidence and modern insight into the present problem of infantilization of youth. If we trust our youth with the inevitable responsibilities of modern life sooner rather than later, we can reinvigorate our society. Dr. Epstein's ideas provide an academic framework for a number of issues-like allowing teens to vote in municipal elections at age 16—that are close to my heart and crucial for the future of American society. In this iconoclastic work, Dr. Epstein shows not only how much we lose by belittling teens, but also how much we stand to gain by empowering them." —Gale A. Brewer, Member, New York City Council

"We are all individual and desire to be treated as such. Dr. Epstein makes a good case for adolescents to be treated not as a group with a formula, but as individual unique people." —Suzanne Somers, actress and author

"Because of my family's troubled history and because I'm the mother of two teens, I have a deep interest in the mental health of young people. This book has opened my eyes, and it will open yours too. We've completely isolated teens from the people they're about to become, and we've trapped them in a meaningless world controlled by peers and media. We've forgotten how capable young people are, and they know it and are frustrated. We need to completely reexamine how we treat America's teens." —Mariel Hemingway, actress

"This is an amazing book, long overdue. I've been saying for decades that the way to bring out the best in young people is to give them meaningful responsibility and authority, and the Guardian Angels have shown in countries around the world how powerful this model is. The surest way to make teens miserable is to treat them like kids, and the best way to make them strong is to let them grow up. Dr. Epstein lays out these issues like no one ever has

before." —Curtis Sliwa, Founder & President, Guardian Angels; co-host,`Curtis and Kuby in the Morning,' WABC Radio, New York

"Dr. Epstein's ideas about teens are revolutionary. Many of our teens today have serious problems, and if Dr. Epstein is right, those problems are largely of our own making. This book will bring our ideas about teens down to earth." —Buzz Aldrin, Ph.D. (Col., USAF, ret.), Apollo 11 Astronaut

About the Author

Robert Epstein, Ph. D. is the former editor-in-chief of *Psychology Today* magazine and a contributing editor for Scientific American Mind, and the host of Psyched! on Sirius Satellite Radio. Currently a Visiting Scholar at the University of California San Diego, Dr. Epstein is the founder and Director Emeritus of the Cambridge Center for Behavioral Studies in Massachusetts. A Ph.D. of Harvard University, he has published more than 100 articles and 11 books.

Excerpt from Chapter 13 of *The Case Against Adolescence: Rediscovering the Adult in Every Teen* by Robert Epstein:

Young people should be extended full adult rights and responsibilities in each of a number of different areas as soon as they can demonstrate appropriate competence in each area. Passing appropriate tests will allow competent young people to become emancipated, sign contracts, start businesses, work, marry, and so on, but I am not suggesting that young people be given more "freedom." We need to start judging young people by their abilities, not by their age, just as we're now doing increasingly with the elderly. The societal changes I'm proposing have the potential to reconnect young people with the adult world, to inspire young people to behave in

> responsible ways, and to eliminate much of the turmoil we now see during the teen years. Young people have always tended to resist the artificial extension of childhood, and there are a few signs in recent decades that this century-long phenomenon may be slowing or reversing.

Here are some websites for Robert Epstein:

www.drrobertepstein.com
www.howadultareyou.com
www.edweek.org

One website says:

> *Epstein Love Competencies Inventory* (or *ELCI*, which is pronounced like the name "Elsie"). This is a comprehensive inventory of a wide range of skills that are important to the survival and success of long-term romantic relationships. Most people are able to complete it in less than 10 minutes.
>
> Working with colleague Diane Dumas, Dr. Epstein has developed a unique and comprehensive test—the Epstein-Dumas Test of Adultness (EDTA)—that measures 14 different competencies that appear to define adult functioning in modern society. Based on scores obtained from adults and teens, Drs. Epstein and Dumas recently concluded that American teens are, on the average, just as competent as American adults—and that adults greatly underestimate the abilities of our teens.
>
> Their research also shows a link between "infantilization"—the extent to which teens are treated like children—and behavioral problems in teens. These and related issues are explored in a recent book by Dr. Epstein, *The Case Against Adolescence: Rediscovering the Adult in Every Teen*. To see a video of Dr. Epstein speaking about

adolescence on "The O'Reilly Factor," click here. Click here to download an interview about the book from *Psychology Today* magazine. If you're a media professional or parent, click here to download a set of questions and answers about the book. For Dr. Epstein's recent essay in *Education Week*, "Let's Abolish High School,"

Time to abolish adolescence so argues Epstein, former editor in chief of *Psychology Today* and host of the Sirius Satellite Radio show "Psyched!," in this extensive, groundbreaking book. He claims that teenagers are capable and should be given responsibilities the moment they're ready. Globally, teens in pre-industrial countries are already integrated into responsible, adult society, and teen problems as we know them do not exist. Only in Western industrialized countries are teens isolated from adults through education and laws. American teens are overly dependent on drugs and alcohol, obsessed with their appearance, careless about sex, and moody/depressed/angry. This large volume covers it all, especially the positives: what kids can do, what decisions they should be making. For example, in the field of education, Epstein advocates shorter compulsory school hours, mandatory education for basics only, more individualized instruction, and an end to age segregation. Epstein's credentials and research are extensive; his arguments, persuasive. He is an astute observer of the world around him, especially its do-nothing adolescents. Sure to generate much discussion.

I believe that young people should have more options—the option to work, marry, own property, sign contracts, start businesses, make decisions about health care and abortions, live on their own—every right, privilege, or responsibility an adult has. I advocate a competency-based system that focuses on the abilities of the individual. For some it will mean more time in school combined with work, for others

it will mean that at age 13 or 15 they can set up an Internet business. Others will enter the workforce and become some sort of apprentice. The exploitative factories are long gone; competent young people deserve the chance to compete where it counts, and many will surprise us.

It's a simple matter to develop competency tests to determine what rights a young person should be given, just as we now have competency tests for driving. When you offer significant rights for passing such a test, it's highly motivating; people who can't pass a high-school history test will never give up trying to pass the written test at the DMV, and they'll virtually always succeed. We need to offer a variety of tests, including a comprehensive test to allow someone to become emancipated without the need for court action. When we dangle significant rewards in front of our young people—including the right to be treated like an adult—many will set aside the trivia of teen culture and work hard to join the adult world.

The arguments I've heard for marrying and having children past the teen years do not don't impress me. I'm not moved by the following arguments:

1. Young people need time to decide who they really are.
2. You can't get married and settle down until you're at least 25 because you need to find out what you really want out of life.
3. It's not rational to start a marriage, or a family for that matter, when you don't have any financial stability.
4. Many people change their ideals and morals so wait as long as it takes to discover what values and religion you really believe in.
5. Most people divorce so women need to get a skill and credentials she can use to support herself.
6. Most at this point in their lives aren't mature enough to handle a marriage.

Young Unificationists should know who they are. They know what they want out of life. They are helped by their parents and other elder Unificationists financially. Jim Sammons teaches in his Financial Freedom Seminar that parents should give their children debt-free homes when they marry.

Young followers of Sun Myung Moon should have solid values and believe deeply in the *Divine Principle*. They will not divorce because they have been trained and educated by their parents to never divorce and if some should then the woman would be provided for by elders.

At his website (www.Daveblackonline.com) David Alan Black has an article titled "Want to Reform Your Youth Ministry? Reject Adolescence!" He writes:

> My book, *The Myth of Adolescence: Raising Responsible Children in an Irresponsible Society*, decries the "culture of irresponsibility" that we have tolerated for so long, and argues for a return to the ideals of a previous generation of Americans, who allowed youth to be relatively independent and gave them a real role in life.
>
> The enthusiastic response to *The Myth of Adolescence* since its publication has convinced me that many Americans are ready to question—if not jettison—the unjustified moratorium we have granted teenagers from moral responsibility. The book came out one week before the tragedy that took place in Littleton, Colorado. Immediately after the murders at Columbine High School, I gave radio interviews in such places as New York, Sacramento, Dallas, and Littleton itself. The consistent response of the radio audience was, "I've always felt that teenagers should be held responsible for their actions, and I'm so thankful to you for putting this into words." In essence, my book verbalized what millions of Americans intuitively know is wrong with a large segment of American society—the absence of teenage responsibility.

Enter the "experts." Rather than calling into question teenagers' irresponsible and selfish behavior, they tell us that teens are supposed to go through an out-of-control time-out between childhood and adulthood. "Sowing wild oats" is perfectly normal, we are reminded. Chances are you have entertained such notions to explain away the strange behavior of a teenage son or daughter. But deep down inside there's something tugging at you, urging you to say "No!" to all this irresponsibility. That "something" dare not be ignored. It may very well be the voice of God quietly yet forcefully reminding you of His plan for teenagers: "Don't let anyone look down on you because you are young. Instead, be an example for other believers in your speech, behavior, love, faith, and purity" (1 Tim 4:12).

The first step is understanding the basics of Jesus' human growth and development, his "life cycle," if you will. The Scriptures relate three basic phases in Jesus' life cycle: (1) birth to twelve years (Luke 2:41-52); (2) twelve until Jesus' baptism at approximately age thirty (Luke 3:23); and (3) the period of Jesus' public ministry culminating in His death, resurrection, and ascension. These phases may be pictured as follows:

Childhood/Pre-Adulthood (ages 1-12)
Emerging Adulthood (ages 12-30)
Senior Adulthood (ages 30-death)

According to David Bakan ("Adolescence in America: From Idea to Social Fact," *Daedalus* 100 [1971] 979-995), "The idea of adolescence as an intermediary period of life starting at puberty... is the product of modern times.... It developed in the latter half of the nineteenth century and the early twentieth century... to prolong the years of childhood." Thus today, the term "adolescence" refers to the teen years, during which post-puberty teenagers are treated as

children even though they are really "adults" in the original sense of the word.

What, then, do the Scriptures say about adolescence? The answer is: Absolutely nothing! In the Bible, people went directly from childhood to adulthood. Moses, for example, is never referred to as an adolescent. In Exodus 2 he is called a "child" in verse 10, and by verse 11 he had "grown up." Here we might have expected to find a reference to a period between childhood and adulthood, but no such reference is to be found.

The same contrast between the "child" Moses and the "grown up" Moses is found in Hebrews 11:23-24: "By faith Moses was hidden by his parents for three months after he was born, because they saw that he was a beautiful child, and were not afraid of the king's order. By faith Moses, when he had grown up, refused to be called a son of Pharaoh's daughter." Adolescence as a psychological moratorium from responsibility simply did not exist among the ancient Hebrews.

And what do we find in the New Testament? When the apostle Paul described his own development, he talked only about childhood and manhood: "When I was a child, I spoke like a child, thought like a child, and reasoned like a child. When I became a man, I gave up my childish ways" (1 Cor 13:11). Notice that the major differences Paul mentions are in language, thinking, and reasoning. In these areas he went from being a child to being an adult, without an intervening period of "adolescence." Moreover, when the apostle John described people at different stages of maturity, he talked about "little children," "young men," and "fathers" (1 John 2:12-14). The "young men" were not adolescents; they were young adults.

Finally, as we have seen, at the age of twelve, Jesus Himself began to make the transition into adult

> responsibility under the Law. While He was soon to be a teenager, He would never be an adolescent. Like any other 12-year-old in His culture, He would be a young man and treated as one by everyone in town.
>
> Moses, Paul, John, and Jesus went directly from childhood to adulthood. They were teenagers, but they were never adolescents. Although the Bible talks about teenagers, it treats them like responsible human beings, not like children. Today, however, we have invented a period during which childhood and adulthood overlap. No longer is there a definitive transition between these stages of life.
>
> One thing is clear. According to the Bible, the teen era is not a "time-out" between childhood and adulthood. It is not primarily a time of horseplay, of parties, of sports, of games. It is not a period of temporary insanity. The Bible treats teens as responsible young adults, and so should we. Paul told Timothy, a young man, to "be an example for other believers in your speech, behavior, love, faith, and purity" (1 Tim 4:12). Though still young, Timothy was to speak, act, love, believe, and relate to the opposite sex in such a way that others would look at his life and want to be just like him.

I like his breakdown of the three stages of life. Instead of childhood, adolescence, and adulthood he has it based on Jesus' life as Pre-Adulthood (ages 1-12), Emerging Adulthood (ages 12-30), and Senior Adulthood (ages 30-death). True Father was 15 when Jesus gave him his mission. Then he began his public ministry at the age of 25. This would make the three stages of formation (ages 1-14), growth (15-25) and completion (26-death). Father married Nan Sook to his oldest son Hyo Jin when she was 15 years old. True Mother was 17 years old because Father said God wanted Adam and Eve to marry when they were 17 but they fell when they were 15. Father matches and blesses those who are 17 years old. In the future when Unificationists raise their children correctly those parents can bless those who are mature at 13.

One person wrote, "Nan Sook Hong was 15 when she was given to Hyo-Jin in holy matrimony. He consummated their marriage that afternoon, in the eyes of American law committing statutory rape." This is not true. The following is from the law of New York where Nan Sook lived:

> New York
>
> If you are 16 or 17 years of age, you will need to have a completed parental consent form filled out by both parents. If you are either 14 or 15 years of age, you will need to show the written consent of both parents and a justice of the Supreme Court or a judge of the local Family Court. Applicants under 14 years of age cannot marry. Only one parent's consent will be accepted if one parent is deceased or has been missing for over a year, or if one parent has full custody from a divorce proceeding. Your parents or guardians must give their consent in person before the town or city clerk or some other authorized official. If they are out of state, a notarized affidavit is acceptable but has to be accompanied by a certificate of authentication when the consent is filed in New York State.

Rabbi Shmuley Boteach writes (www.beliefnet.com):

> I am a great believer in marrying young, for these five reasons, among many others:
>
> 1. Marrying young means you grow up together. You are not fully formed when you marry. You discover life together. You enjoy becoming fully-fledged adults as a shared experience. This adds to the magic and aura of married life. It also means that you are not as set in your ways when you marry, and are therefore more open to sharing and compromise.
>
> 2. Marrying young means avoiding the ten or so years that most people waste dating. Dating has

become an end in itself, and it is very harmful to singles. They check each other out as if they were buying salami from the supermarket. The process is degrading and designed to heighten insecurity. One feels constantly judged and manipulated. One learns not to open one's heart to the opposite sex, but to close it. And then we wonder why, by the time these messed-up singles get married, divorce is so common.

3. Marrying young means avoiding the multiple sexual partners that most singles have. Having a lot of sexual partners means becoming desensitized to the human body in general, and to the sexual act in particular. Most singles today have sex with the same intensity with which they ride a bicycle. It really is no big deal. The human body and sex are objective to them; they have lost their ability to be subjectively attracted to the opposite sex because they have become experts in an area where they are meant to retain their innocence.

4. Marrying young means avoiding loneliness. Almost every single person I know is lonely. Granted, many are not honest enough to admit it, or they cover over their loneliness with TV, movies, friends, or empty, casual relationships. But their loneliness becomes ingrained, they learn to be emotionally independent, and later, when they want to fall in love and lean on someone else, they wonder why they can't.

5. Marrying young means having children earlier, and not becoming a parent when you should already be a grand-parent. There is nothing like having kids early. It solidifies a marriage, it gives a husband and wife the ultimate shared experience, and it brings indescribable joy. Because I became a father young, I was a "big kid" myself when my kids were born. I did not lose my playfulness, and I could connect with them so much more authentically.

It is difficult to see pictures of 11-year olds girls matched to 40-year old men in some Muslim countries. Child marriages are wrong if we define children as being less than 13 years old. I believe that some 13 year-olds are mature enough to marry as Epstein writes about. In America "laws vary from state to state but generally children 16 and over may marry with parental consent. Under than 16 generally require a court order in addition to the parental consent." In a quick look at the laws it appears to me that some states will allow marriage at age 13 if the parents consent.

There is a documentary titled *Demographic Winter: The Decline of the Human Family*. Its website is www.demographicwinter.com. In this documentary Philip Longman says that the only hope for the massive decline in birthrate is patriarchy. He says that only men who are orthodox Christians, Jews and Muslims are interested in having many children. Mormon men are more open to having large families. Let's educate Unificationist men to be patriarchal and have many more children than these men. Let's create the image that orthodox Unificationists having bigger families than any other religious men in the world. The only way to see this happen is to make it a central part of the education of Unificationist children to honor the patriarchal, traditional family. Those Unificationists who are digested by our dying civilizations love of feminism will eventually be outnumbered by those Unificationists who accept the ideology of patriarchy. I have a chapter on patriarchy in my book *Practical Plan for World Peace* and an entire book on the subject titled *Patriarchy*.

Don Feder writes in his article, "'Demographic Winter' Exposes the Century's Overlooked Crisis:

> "Demographic Winter" — a dramatic new documentary — is the first to explore the most overlooked crisis of our times: the rapid, worldwide decline in birth rates.
>
> Philip Longman, a demographer and author of "The Empty Cradle: How Falling Birthrates Threaten World Prosperity," observes: "The on-going global decline in human birthrates is the single most

powerful force affecting the fate of nations and the future of society in the 21st. century."

Doomsayers from Thomas Malthus to Paul Ehrlich have warned of "overpopulation" leading to depleted resources and mass starvation. In reality, more people have generated to more prosperity and higher standards of living.

What the world faces in the 21st century is another type of demographic crisis, but one that is painfully real: falling fertility rates and aging populations which could ultimately endanger civilization.

The average woman has to have 2.1 children during her lifetime — just to replace current population.

In less than 40 years, fertility rates have fallen by over 50% worldwide. In 1970, the average woman had 6 children during her lifetime. Today, the global average is 2.9. The United Nations Population Division predicts a further decline to 2.05 by 2050.

In much of the industrialized world, the crisis can be discerned even now:

• Europe might as well hang a "Going Out of Business" sign on its door. The average birth rate for the European Union is 1.5, well below replacement (2.1). In Italy, it's 1.2.

• Russia has a birth rate of 1.17, down from 2.4 in 1990. There are now almost as many abortions as births in the Russian Federation. The nation is losing roughly 750,000 people a year. Its current population (143 million) is expected to decline to 112 million by 2050. In a desperate effort to stave off demographic winter, the government is offering a baby bonus of 250,000 rubles (the equivalent of $9,200) for every child a family has after the first.

• Worldwide, there are 6 million fewer children (6 years of age and younger) today than there were in 1990. This is an initial tremor of a coming earthquake. If current trends continue, by 2050, the world will hold 248 million fewer children under 5 than it does today.

• The industrialized world will soon face severe labor shortages. The European Union estimates a shortfall of 20 million workers by 2030.

• In the developed world, populations are rapidly aging. In 1989, 11.6% of Japan's population was over 65. Less than 20 years later, seniors are 21.1% of the Japanese people. Its low birthrate (1.25) and graying population are why almost no one talks about Japan Inc. anymore. In the 1990s, Japan's stock market fell 80% from its all-time high and its real estate market lost 60% of its value.

• In industrialized nations as a whole, those over 60 now constitute 20% of the population — a figure which will rise to 32% by 2050. By then, according to UNPD, these societies will have two seniors for every child.

• The developing world isn't far behind. In the Philippines, the birth rate dropped from 6 in the early 1970s to 2.8 today, with further declines in store. In Egypt, in the 1960s, the average woman had 7.3 children during her lifetime, compared to 3.7 today. Mexico's birthrate is only 2.1, the same as America's.

This "Demographic Winter" will impact on many areas of our lives:

• What will happen in the First World as fewer and fewer workers are called on to provide pensions for more and more retirees? At what point will the

burden become so onerous that young workers will simply rebel and refuse to support a system that they couldn't possibly hope to benefit from?

• How will Russia, which is expected to lose a third of its population by mid-point of this century, defend its borders? If Russia, which occupies the largest territory of any nation, dissolves into enclaves of squabbling ethnic groups it will destabilize both Europe and Asia.

• Due to falling birthrates, at some point in the century, the world's population will begin to decline. Then the decline will become rapid. We could even reach population free-fall.

• Throughout the course of history, there is no instance of economic growth accompanied by population decline. How can an industrial society be maintained with fewer and fewer workers and consumers?

The foregoing is the backdrop for "Demographic Winter: the decline of the human family." The documentary is an exploration of the phenomenon by experts -- including demographers, sociologists and economists.

Scholars like Gary Becker (Nobel Laureate in Economics at the University of Chicago), David Popenoe (a professor of sociology at Rutgers and the author of "War Over The Family"), Patrick Fagan (former U.S. Deputy Assistant Secretary of Health and Human Services, currently Director of the Center for Family and Religion at the Family Research Council) and Longman, a senior fellow with the New American Foundation, discuss the sober reality of humanity's failure to reproduce itself, as well as causes and consequences thereof.

> The discussion is anything but dry and academic. These scholars bring their expertise to bear on a coming catastrophe that's now well below the radar screen of our national consciousness, but one which will affect our future far more than the hypothetical crises on which the media is fixated.
>
> For the sake of our children and their children, let us pray these voices are heeded.
>
> "Demographic Winter, the decline of the human family" is the first of a two-part series on falling birthrates and what they portend. The 55-minutes DVD can be ordered online here, where a 3-minute trailer can also be viewed. There will be a screening "Demographic Winter" at the Family Research Council on April 9, followed by a panel discussion.

In the book *Educating for True Love: Explaining Sun Myung Moon's Thought on Morality, Family and Society* we read*:*

> After age 28 or so, female fertility begins to decline rapidly.
>
> Wedding at an earlier age and allowing parents to be actively involved in selecting marriage candidates and advising the development of the growing relationship comprise the gold medal level.
>
> A significant factor affecting purity is the age of marriage.
>
> Early marriage—in the late teen years or early twenties—has clear benefits for many youth. The couple is at the peak of their fertility. Female fecundity begins to wane in the late 20s and there are significant health benefits to early childbearing for both the mother and child.

“I am thinking that the blessed children should be married at an earlier age because I want them to be certain of marrying their first love.” —Sun Myung Moon (6-20-82)

With this important decision behind them, the couple is now free from the distracting melodramas of romantic involvements to invest their energies in schooling, work and other matters of personal development with the added bonus of each other emotional support. They may also want to get right to the business of raising and supporting a family.

Some research suggests the advisability of earlier marriage. One ongoing U.S. study indicates that those who wed in their early twenties had unions no less stable than those who married later and in fact tended to be of higher quality. Only a short time ago, it was ordinary for teenagers right out of high school to marry, get jobs and support themselves and their families. Times have changed, but the capacity of youth has not.

Crucial issue is how single people go about finding their marriage partner and cultivating that towards — commitment.

Bypass conventional dating and enlisting the active involvement of parents and /or spiritual advisors in recommending a marriage partner. Internet now can find people worldwide e harmony find people if no organization companies or for free matchmakers.

Traditionally parents or other elders arranged for their son’s or daughter’s spouse.

Parents and other loved ones to serve as matchmakers.

There are two teenagers who write powerfully against the concept of adolescence. They are Alex and Brett Harris. They have authored the most popular Christian teen blog on the web at TheRebelution.com. They are homeschooled twins whose older brother is Joshua Harris, the author of *I Kissed Dating Goodbye*.

At their website we read:

> The next generation stands on the brink of a "rebelution."
>
> With over 14 million hits to their website TheRebelution.com, Alex and Brett Harris are leading the charge in a growing movement of Christian young people who are rebelling against the low expectations of their culture by choosing to "do hard things" for the glory of God.
>
> Written when they were 18 years old, *Do Hard Things* is the Harris twins' revolutionary message in its purest and most compelling form, giving readers a tangible glimpse of what is possible for teens who actively resist cultural lies that limit their potential.
>
> Combating the idea of adolescence as a vacation from responsibility, the authors weave together biblical insights, history, and modern examples to redefine the teen years as the launching pad of life and map a clear trajectory for long-term fulfillment and eternal impact.
>
> Written by teens for teens, *Do Hard Things* is packed with humorous personal anecdotes, practical examples, and stories of real-life rebelutionaries in action. This rallying cry from the heart of revolution already in progress challenges the next generation to lay claim to a brighter future, starting today.
>
> Still, we've had some extraordinary experiences. At age sixteen we interned at the Supreme Court of Alabama. At seventeen, we served as grassroots

> directors for four statewide political campaigns. At eighteen, we authored the most popular Christian teen blog on the web. We've been able to speak to thousands of teens and their parents at conferences in the United States and internationally, and to reach millions online. But if our teen years have been different than most, it's not because we are somehow better than other teens, but because we've been motivated by a simple but very big idea. It's an idea you're going to encounter for yourself in the pages ahead.

Here is an article they wrote on the wrong concept of adolescence:

> Myth of Adolescence
>
> The trained elephant of India is a perfect picture of the power of psychological captivity. Tamed and utilized for its enormous strength, the great beast stands nearly 10 feet tall and weighs up to 5 tons when fully grown. Its tasks may include uprooting full-grown trees, hauling great boulders, and carrying enormous loads on its shoulders. And yet, when the day's work is done and this powerful beast must be kept from wandering off during the night, its owner simply takes a piece of twine, attaches it to a small branch embedded in the ground, and ties it around the elephant's right hind leg. Reason dictates that the elephant can easily snap the twine or pull the twig from ground, and yet the owner does not worry, fully confident that when morning comes he will find the animal exactly where he left him. And he does. I'll admit that upon first hearing of this practice, I couldn't decide which was harder to believe: that the owner was confident, or that his confidence proved justified. A beast that can uproot trees is suddenly unable to pull up a twig? What is it about the piece of twine and the small branch that allows them to subdue all of the elephant's power? I soon discovered that it had little to do with the twine around the elephant's ankle, and everything to do with invisible shackles around its mind.

My contention is simple: The young adults of our generation are the elephant. Our twine is the 20th century concept of adolescence. Our twig is societal expectations. We stand restrained as a hurting world burns around us. Yet our twine and twig are of a recent origin. Young adults of the past were not so encumbered.

David Farragut, the U.S. Navy's first admiral, became a midshipman on the warship Essex at the age of 10. At the age of 12, a mere boy by modern standards, Farragut was given command of his first ship, sailing a capture vessel, crew, and prisoners, back to the U.S. after a successful battle. Young David was given responsibility at an early age, and he rose to the occasion.

The father of our country, George Washington, though never thought to be particularly bright by his peers, began to master geometry, trigonometry, and surveying when he would have been a 5th or 6th grader in our day and ceased his formal education at 14 years of age. At the age of 16 he was named official surveyor for Culpepper County, Virginia. For the next three years, Washington earned nearly $100,000 a year (in modern purchasing power). By the age of 21, he had leveraged his knowledge of the surrounding land, along with his income, to acquire 2,300 acres of prime Virginian land.

These examples astound us in our day and age, but this is because we view life through an extra social category called 'adolescence', a category that would have been completely foreign to men and women just 100 years ago. Prior to the late 1800s there were only 3 categories of age: childhood, adulthood, and old age. It was only with the coming of the early labor movement with its progressive child labor laws, coupled with new compulsory schooling laws, that a new category, called adolescence, was invented. Coined by G. Stanley Hall, who is often considered the father of American psychology, 'adolescence' identified the artificial zone between childhood and adulthood when young people ceased to be children, but were no longer permitted by

law to assume the normal responsibilities of adulthood, such as entering into a trade or finding gainful employment. Consequently, marriage and family had to be delayed as well, and so we invented 'the teenager', an unfortunate creature who had all the yearnings and capabilities of an adult, but none of the freedoms or responsibilities.

Teenage life became a 4-year sentence of continuing primary education and relative idleness known as 'high school' (four years of schooling which would later be repeated in the first two years of college). Abolished by law were the young Farraguts and young Washingtons, who couldn't spare the time to be children any longer than necessary. Cultivated instead was the culture we know today, where young people are allowed, encouraged, and even forced to remain quasi-children for much longer than necessary.

The effect of this seismic shift in America's philosophy of education is not limited to students in the public schools. As homeschoolers we may feel as though we have escaped the danger, but an honest evaluation proves that, as a whole, we also fall short of realizing our potential. After reading the examples of great men of our country's past, we should recognize that there is no reason why a 13 to 18 year old cannot behave as a responsible adult. History proves it is possible. Diverse cultures confirm its validity. The only thing holding young people back in America today is the twine of this perpetual recess called adolescence and the twig of lowered social expectations. We expect immaturity and irresponsibility, from ourselves and from one another, and that is exactly what we get.

I wrote of the great elephants of India, who, although they have the physical capacity to uproot trees during the day, can be restrained all night long by a piece of twine and a twig. How is this possible?

The elephant's training begins when it is still young and considerably less powerful. Removed from its mother, the elephant is then shackled with an iron chain to a large tree. For days and weeks on end, the baby elephant strains against its restraints, only to find that all exertion is useless. Then slowly, over a period of several weeks, sometimes months, smaller chains and smaller trees are used. Eventually, you can use a piece of twine and a small branch, and the great beast will not budge. Its mind is fully committed to the idea that it cannot go anywhere when there is something around its right hind leg.

And so I ask my generation, individually and corporately, "What is holding us back?" History demonstrates that we are far more capable than we think we are. Our failure to realize substantial achievement at early ages is due, not to any innate inadequacies on our part, but rather to our social conditioning. American society, with its media-saturated youth culture, not only follows trends and fads, but it creates them. Classrooms, TV shows, magazines, and websites, are not only addressing us at the level of social expectations, but they are in fact dictating those expectations. They tell us how to act, think, and talk; they tell us what to wear, what to buy, and where to buy it; they tell us what to dream, what to value, and what to hate. We are being squeezed into a mold where there is no room for Christian character or competence. And as the famous proverb goes, "As the twig is bent, so grows the tree."

In what could be considered the most maddening aspect of this crisis, not all areas of maturity are being stunted. In a powerful demonstration of teenagers' ability to meet the expectations set before them, we witness young people today reaching unprecedented levels of technological proficiency and sexual experience. It is ironic that many teenagers, while fluent in multiple computer languages, are not expected to carry on an intelligent conversation with an adult. It is heartbreaking that so many young girls, while constantly pressed to become more and more sexually alluring, are not

expected to attain any notable level of character beneath the surface.

Our world cannot last another generation of Christian young people who fit in. The shackles of society are on our minds and hearts, not our ankles. We are held back only by the myth of adolescence and the lies of social expectations. If we would only recognize that our restraints are illusory, and then let God's Word and all of history govern our sense of what we are capable of, we would be a force this world could no longer ignore.

We face a crisis and an opportunity. A crisis, in the sense that we can no longer afford to slowly drift towards adulthood, viewing the teen years as a vacation from responsibility, and an opportunity, in the sense that we can embrace life now and make a difference for the glory of God, and for the good our family, our nation, and our world. Look down at your "ankle" and see the pathetic contrivance that has been restraining you. Now renew your mind in the light of God's Word and take a step forward.

The Case Against Adolescence

In Robert Epstein's book *The Case Against Adolescence: Rediscovering the Adult in Every Teen* he writes that for thousands of years there has been teen marriages. In Europe in the Middle Ages "it was common for women to be married by fourteen." He says that three First Ladies married to American Presidents were still "children" by "current standards." "Elizabeth Monroe married President-to-be James Monroe in 1785 when she was seventeen; their marriage lasted until her death in 1830. Rachel Jackson, eventually the wife of President Jackson was first married" when she was 17. Elizabeth Johnson married Andrew Johnson when she was 16 and he was 18. "They were married for nearly fifty years and died within six months of each other." Barbara Bush dated George Bush at 16 and was engaged at 17. They have had a lifetime marriage. "Around the world, it is still common for people to marry young" but now there is pressure "challenging the ancient pattern" especially from America. Epstein says this is ironic because the "American system of marriage is the least successful in the

world." He says that unfortunately other countries are adopting our ways and experiencing an increase in divorce just as they are experiencing an increase in obesity because they are eating our French fries and Big Macs. "One of the things we are exporting is our distorted picture of young people. Through movies like *Clueless* and *American Pie* and television series like *Beverly Hills 90210*—seen by more than two billion people worldwide—we tell the world in vivid terms what we believe about teens: that they're inherently wild and irresponsible, that their love is just puppy love, that their relationships are fleeting and superficial, and that they need adult protection. A movie like *Clueless* is typically translated into twenty languages and shown around the world within months of it original release. No religious zealots on earth ever proselytized as vehemently as corporate America."

VIDEOS OF FATHER BURIED SO WE CAN'T SEE HIM

Compare this with the amount of videos of Father speaking. Unificationists have made absolutely no effort and have never cared about distributing videos of Father. Father came to America and spoke in every state. These public speeches were filmed but like the Bible says, their light is buried. Father ended his Day of Hope tour at Madison Square Garden. These speeches clearly explain much of the *Divine Principle*. They explain who Jesus really was and how Christianity is wrong in its interpretation of Jesus. No one can buy or go to a library and watch Father speaking these insights he gave at Madison Square Garden or anywhere else he has spoke in the last 50 years. Meanwhile the world is flooded with DVDs of Hollywood movies that glorify pre-marital sex in every movie they make and with countless DVDs of porn that are sold in thousands of porn shops.

Father has made sure he has been filmed and inexplicably no one seems to care about getting all these hundreds and maybe thousands of hours of video into every home so people can see a true man. If we are supposed to follow and love Father then why doesn't anyone want to share him with the rest of mankind? It just boggles my mind how Unificationists could care less that videos of Father are hidden away. Father says we should read his words everyday with our family. Why can't we watch videos of him giving the speeches we are reading? The Bible says in Matthew 5:14-16: "You are the light of the world. A city set on a hill cannot be hidden. Nor do people light a candle and put it a secret place or put it under a basket, but on a stand, and it gives light to

all in the house. In the same way, let your light shine before others, so that they may see your good works and give glory to your Father who is in heaven." Father is the light of the world, but his light is hidden. No one can order a DVD of him talking. Why his followers have hidden him away is beyond me. I guess Father is like Jesus who was unable to get competent disciples.

Father is an example of a mature man. It is crucial that everyone see and listen to him. If you are reading this and can have any influence in getting to those in charge of hiding Father's many hours of video, please try to convince them to release all them on DVDs and put them on the internet so all mankind can see a true man who has so much love for children that he had 14 of them with Mother. It is one thing to read a transcript of his speeches commanding people to not use birth control and have many children, but it would be so much more powerful to see him saying it. Maybe if the Second Gen saw him speaking so strongly against birth control and for having a big family they might stop delaying getting married and stop using birth control.

Hollywood and porn video stores sell millions upon millions of DVDs. Epstein is right when he says, "No religious zealots on earth ever proselytized as vehemently as corporate America." Let's get Father's videos in every home. Epstein himself should be studying Father and quoting Father on having big families.

Let's return to Richard Epstein's deep insights. He writes, "Meanwhile, many of the old marriage practices remain. In Afghanistan, Niger, and the Congo, for example, the percentage of young women age fifteen to nineteen who are already married are respectively, fifty-four, seventy and seventy-five."

13 Year-Olds

"In other eras through most of human history" 13-year-old girls "would have been considered to be a young woman, not a child." Epstein goes off track by praising the so-called American soldier Jessica Lynch who was captured and raped in the Iraq War and saying if girls can meet the standard for combat they should be allowed to be soldiers. Women are not made physically or mentally to be capable of being soldiers or police officers. He praises the propaganda of the movie *Fargo* that portrays a pregnant woman cop. He likes movies such as *Charlie's*

Angels and *Lara Croft* that portray women warriors. He is right, though, that many 13 year-old females are mature enough to marry. He says, "Mary gave birth to Jesus by age 13" because in the "marriage practices of the day Mary was no older than 12 or 13 when she conceived Jesus." Mary was "married off around the time of puberty. It was common in Greek and Roman cultures for females to marry by age twelve or thirteen."

Epstein goes into how the laws are different for marriage ages in countries, in the states of America and in religions. Father married Mother when she was 17 years old. He matches 17 year olds. In Judaism the minimum age for marriage is 12 for females and 13 for males. Islam has no age. Mormons, Lutherans and Methodists go by the laws of the state. "Minimum marriage ages today for Catholics" is 14 for females and 16 for males. The age of majority is typically 18 for most states but some states in America allow marriages with parental consent for as young as 13 or 14. Fallen man is not united on the truth but someday we will have a world where young people will grow up faster than they are now and marry young instead of wasting their time with make-work projects their confused elders mistakenly think are important.

I agree with the basic argument of Epstein that we should stop putting young people in age segregated schools where they have little contact with adults and treat teenagers as children. Many are ready to marry. He gives one example of a couple that had been happily married for over 70 years and had many grandchildren. The woman married when she was 13 and he was in his twenties. He writes:

> Contrary to popular belief, psychological research suggests that young people are capable of experiencing mature love, and no one has ever shown that the love experienced by young people is any different than the love experienced by adults. Moreover, although it's widely believed that young marriages are doomed to fail, census data show that males who marry in their teens have a lower divorce rate than males who marry in their twenties; in general, the divorce rate of young people isn't much higher than the divorce rate of adults, and many of our nation's most celebrated and long-lasting marriages have involved very young spouses. In other

countries people still often marry at very young ages, and Western attempts to change such practices have sometimes produced disastrous results. Laws restricting marriage or sexual relations involving minors are wildly inconsistent from state to state, and in many cases such laws have been applies in ways that have caused great pain to innocent people.

"If you have trouble, you go talk about it, argue, and get over it." That was the advice of Mary Onesi when she and her husband of just over eighty years were interviewed by the Associated Press in 1998. They had been honored on World Marriage Day in 1995 as the longest-married couple in America, and, yes, they were still together three years later. She married her husband Paul in 1917 when he was twenty-one and she was thirteen. By all accounts, their marriage was happy and successful, and it was certainly prolific.

Paul Onesi came to the United States from Italy when he was fifteen, arriving through Ellis Island. He worked in the coal mines in Pennsylvania at first. He met Mary when he was renting a room in her sister's home, and it was the sister who did the matchmaking. The couple moved to Niagara Falls a few years after their marriage, where Paul went to work for Union Carbide. They had six children and saw five of them celebrate their fiftieth wedding anniversaries.

Laura Cerrillo, one of Paul and Mary's twenty-eight grandchildren, explained why marriage in this close-knit family were generally successful: "In our family, no one ever wanted to get divorced because no one wanted to tell them."

By current thinking, there's something dreadfully wrong with this pretty picture. Thirteen-year-old Mary Corsaro couldn't *possibly* have been ready for marriage. She must have been abused or exploited or perhaps even drugged and raped. Her sister Rose must have been in on it, perhaps serving as a pimp and getting a fee from perverted old Paul. Isn't that the way we're now taught to think? At the very least, the world must have been so different back then that the people in it must have been entirely unlike people are today—members of a different

species, in effect. Maybe Mary was ready back in 1917, but there are no Mary's in today's world. Today, thirteen-year-olds are children.

CAN TEENS EXPERINCE REAL LOVE?

Can teens love, and can they form successful, stable marriages? Is teen love truly just "puppy love," or can it be just as real and deep and enduring as "adult" love? And, most important of all, are we willing to face the truth about these issues?

ARE TEENS REALLY PUPPIES?

And we call it puppy love—or "calf" love, in some countries. Literally, it's a love between two pre-pubescent animals. When we dismiss the love between two human teenagers or between a teenager and an adult as illusory—that is, when we compare young people who have mature sexual organs to "puppies"—we are admitting undeniably that we still consider them to be children. We are also demonstrating an extreme form of wishful thinking.

Teens are not puppies. Girls generally begin puberty between the ages of eight and thirteen, with first menstruation (menarche)—an event that indicates the ability to conceive—occurring two or three years later. The median age of menarche for young women is about 12.5. Boys begin puberty between nine and fourteen. A number of experts agree that the onset of puberty has been occurring earlier and earlier in recent decades, perhaps because of improved nutrition and medical care. Let's not panic, though. Although signs of puberty—pubic hairs and breasts—are appearing earlier, the median age at which menarche occurs has stayed fairly steady for decades, and possibly even for many centuries. In any case, by the time most young people reach thirteen or fourteen, they are almost fully mature sexually. Young males are shaving, young females are

menstruating, and most young teens are capable of procreating.

Young people are also capable of experiencing romantic love, and no one, to my knowledge, has ever come up with a legitimate way of differentiating the kind of romantic love teens experience from the kind of romantic love adults experience. On the contrary, as I noted in Chapter Six, when Diane Dumas and I looked at love and romance from a competency perspective we found virtually no difference between the competency scores of teen and those of adults.

There is simply no question that many or most teens are capable of feeling and expressing romantic love, and many are also capable of entering into successful long-term relationships. … From Biblical times until the Industrial Revolution, it was common for young people, especially young women, to marry. In ancient Egypt and Rome, for example, historians believe that it was common for brides to have been as young as twelve…Because the burden of supporting a family fell on the male, young men had to be working before they could marry, and hence they were typically fifteen or older.

This pattern had probably been in place for thousands of years before Rome was built, and it continued to some degree until about a hundred years ago. In Europe in the Middle Ages, for example, it was common for women to be married by fourteen. Men married later, again, because they needed to be able to support their families.

At least three American first ladies married when they were still "children" (by current standards); … Eliza Johnson married future president Andrew Johnson in 1827 when she was sixteen and he was eighteen. They were married for nearly fifty years and died within sex months of each other.

Around the world, it's still common for people to marry young, although pressures from Western culture, especially from American culture, are challenging the ancient patterns. This is especially ironic given that our system of marriage is the least successful in the world:

> fifty percent of first marriages here end in divorce, as do more than 60 percent of second marriages."

It is sad that so many Unificationists have been digested by our liberal culture and keep the Second Generation from being mature at ages 13-15. The last thing young people need is to attend public or private schools and then postpone marriage and career for so many years with ridiculous age-segregated fundraising teams and then so many years of college. Let's be clear that this is birth control and that is a sin in the eyes of Sun Myung Moon. I know there are some young Unificationists that are immature and there are some that should never get married but I believe the vast majority should be educated, married and living in a debt-free home well below the age of 18. Satan is for death. He wants to postpone marriage and adulthood. Nancy Campbell is right when she says at her website aboverubies.org that we don't prepare to have children and then have them but we have children and God will provide for them. All this delay of adulthood is simply a tactic of Satan to slow down the Unification Movement and to literally make civilizations die out with low birth rates. The Unificationist Movement needs to drastically change its ways.

Epstein is right in saying that people mature at different ages and there are many who are mature enough to marry at age 13. He writes:

> Young people can indeed love, and they appear to be able to do so in all the beautiful and crazy ways that adults do. There is simply no evidence that teen love differs in some fundamental way from adult love. Teens also are capable of entering into stable, long-term relationships. The array of laws that limit teen romance and sexuality are absurd and arbitrary, and they sometimes destroy legitimate relationships and cause innocent people and their families great harm.
>
> **Q.** Do you mean to imply that it's okay for my thirteen-year-old little girl to have sex—and perhaps even to have sex with a twenty-five-year-old man?
>
> **A:** Given the mindset that is prevalent in modern America, it's almost impossible for me to give a reasonable answer to this question without sounding

insensitive or insane. But the fact is that some, and perhaps even many, thirteen-year-olds are ready for sex, and even for deep love and marriage. Remember that throughout most of human history, our ancestors began having children shortly after puberty. Our brains are designed that way.

Is your daughter ready to take on this kind of responsibility? I have no idea, but would you be willing to find out? As for that twenty-five-year-old man, if he truly loved and respected your daughter, and if he wanted to marry her and support her and treat he with kindness for the rest of his life, and if your daughter also loved this man deeply, would you object to their union?

As I indicated in this chapter, one of the most successful marriages ever documented in America—a happy marriage for more than eighty years—was between Mary Corsaro and Paul Onesi, who married in 1917 when she was thirteen and he was twenty-one. They were honored on World Marriage Day in 1995 as the longest-married couple in the country.

It's common in other cultures for people of widely different ages to marry; only in America do we think that spouses need to be same age, even though research suggests that age difference is a poor predictor of success in a marriage. It's the person you marry that counts, not his or her age.

WOMEN'S FERTILITY

The following are some excerpts from articles on women's fertility written in 2010:

> Women Lose Most Eggs by 30
>
> AND BY AGE 40, OVARIAN RESERVES FALL TO JUST 3%
>
> Women find it difficult to have children later in life because they are all but out of eggs, scientists have discovered. Though women are born with an average of 300,000 eggs, their ovarian reserve declines far faster

than previously thought, according to the study from the University of St. Andrews and Edinburgh University. By age 30, a woman has only 12% of her eggs left; by 40, that dwindles to just 3%. (www.newser.com)

Ovaries have not adjusted to many women's decision to delay having children

Whether you are aware of your incessantly ticking biological clock or not, the absolute last thing that any woman of steadily advancing childbearing age wants to hear when she flips on the morning news shows is: Women lose 90 percent of their eggs by age 30.

Thirty? Life has hardly begun at 30! Gulp.

The hard truth is that decades of research have proved that a woman's fertility declines over time. But now it appears that the old biological clock may start ticking much earlier — and faster — than once thought.

A study from the University of St. Andrews and Edinburgh University, published last month by PLoS ONE, tracked the human ovarian reserve — or a woman's potential number of eggs — from conception through menopause. Using a mathematical model and data from 325 women, the researchers found that the average woman is born with around 300,000 eggs and steadily loses them as she ages, with just 12 percent of those eggs remaining at the age of 30, and only 3 percent left by 40.

"That's a greater percentage of loss at an earlier age than had previously been reported," says reproductive endocrinologist Robert Stillman, of Shady Grove Fertility in Rockville. "One might be able to argue whether there are 12 percent remaining at age 30 or 22 percent or even 40 percent, but it is still clear that there's a very rapid loss in the number of eggs available as women age and that the smaller pool of [older] eggs is

also more likely to" contain a higher proportion of abnormal eggs, he adds, pointing out that from the mid-30s on, the decline in fertility is much steeper with each passing year.

"This adds to the abundant evidence that for women, unfortunately, it's use 'em or lose 'em."

The biological reality that female fertility peaks in the teens and early 20s can be difficult for many American women to swallow, as they delay childbirth further every year, according to the National Center for Health Statistics. In the District, the average age of initial childbirth was 26.5 years in 2006, up 5.5 years since 1970, the highest jump in the country.

"While we may not be mature enough to conceive at a young age, nor should we, that is still when the body is most adept at conception and carrying a baby," says Claire Whelan, program director of the American Fertility Association. "Our biological clock has not kept pace with our ability to prolong our life spans." Stillman agrees, pointing out that research about advanced maternal age and motherhood today is clear: The older you get, the more difficult it is to get pregnant and the higher the chance of miscarriage, pregnancy problems such as gestational diabetes and hypertension, and chromosomal abnormalities such as Down syndrome, among other concerns. A study published this month in Autism Research found that the risk of autism increases with a mother's age: Women over 40 were 77 percent more likely than those under 25 to have a child with the condition. (ww.washingtonpost.com)

For Women Who Want Kids, 'the Sooner the Better': 90 Percent of Eggs Gone By Age 30

Egg Loss Measured for First Time Shows Long Odds for Conception as Women Hit 40

By the time a woman hits 30, nearly all of her ovarian eggs are gone for good, according a new study that says

women who put off childbearing for too long could have difficulty ever conceiving.

It's common knowledge that women have more difficulty conceiving as they age, but this is the very first study believed to quantify the number of eggs lost and it shows that the decline is more rapid than previously believed.

Over time, the quality of ovarian eggs also deteriorates, increasing the difficulty of conception and the risk of having an unhealthy baby.

"That biological clock does tick," she said, adding that her advice to women who want kids is, "the sooner the better." (abcnews.go.com/

Doctors: Women Lose 90 Percent of Eggs by Age 30

Scientists have come up with a new cold, hard mathematical fact: women lose 90 percent of their eggs by age 30.

The new mathematical model shows the biological clock that some women hear ticking around the age of 30 is ticking very loudly.

Tiny egg cells hold the potential, the promise of life. But what many women don't realize is that the depletion of eggs is a lifelong trend.

Some women who put off pregnancy because of schooling, careers or finances are sorely disappointed to find out they struggle to conceive. (wjz.com)

Scientists have discovered the reason why women find it difficult to conceive later in life - they have used up 90 per cent of their "ovarian reserve" by the age of 30.

As the body chooses the best eggs from the reserve, the likelihood is that the quality of the eggs will suffer as

you get older increasing the difficulty of conception and the risk of an unhealthy baby.

The new research by the University of St Andrews and Edinburgh University is the first to colate the actual decline of the "ovarian reserve" - the potential number of eggs women are born with - from conception to the menopause.

It shows that on average women are born with 300,000 potential egg cells but this pool declines at a much faster rate than first thought.

By the age of 30 there is only 12 per cent left on average and by the age of 40 just three per cent.

Dr Hamish Wallace, the co-author, said: "Our research shows that they are generally over-estimating their fertility prospects.

"Our model shows that for 95 per cent of women, by the age of 30 years, only 12% of their maximum ovarian reserve is present, and by the age of 40 years only three per cent remains."

The researchers said many women make the mistake of thinking that because they are still producing eggs that their fertility remains constant. But this new research shows that it declines rapidly.

Women's fertility declines substantially after her mid-thirties but the speed of the drop differs for each individual and many face heartache when they find they have left it too late. (www.telegraph.co.uk)

Laura Bush, the wife of President Bush, says in her autobiography *Spoken from the Heart* that she was an only child and wished she had brothers and sisters: "Well, there I was. It was very lonely being an only child. And I think it was mainly because I was so aware of how

my parents wanted other children, and how disappointed they were. And so I was disappointed. I wanted to have those brothers and sisters, too."

She married when she was 31 years old and it took years before she could conceive and finally had twin girls. She writes these painful words:

> The English language lacks the words "to mourn an absence." For the loss of a parent, grandparent, spouse, child or friend we have all manner of words and phrases, some helpful, some not. Still, we are conditioned to say something, even if it is only "I am sorry for your loss." But for an absence for someone who was never there at all, we are wordless to capture that particular emptiness. For those who deeply want children and are denied them, those missing babies hover like silent, ephemeral shadows over their lives. Who can describe the feel of a tiny hand that is never held?
>
> I had hoped I would have more babies, but I was 35 when the girls were born. The years unwound, and it didn't happen. George never once said that he would like a son. He was always thrilled with the two girls we got. We both are. But my heart was deep enough for more. There remained that twinge of what might have been.

YOUNG MARRIAGE

Mark Gungor wrote the following at his website (www.laughyourway.com) titled "Young Marriage" (3-4-09):

> "A great civilization is not conquered from without until it has destroyed itself from within." – Ariel Durant
>
> There has been quite the uproar over Sarah Palin's seventeen year old daughter who is pregnant and plans to marry the father. Many have decried this potential marriage as a terrible idea since the couple is "too young". But it wasn't long ago that such a marriage would not have been thought of as unusual.

"The traditional markers of manhood — leaving home, getting an education, starting a family and starting work — have moved downfield as the passage from adolescence to adulthood has evolved," says Michael Kimmel, author of *Guyland*. For instance, in 1960, almost 70 percent of men had reached these milestones by the age of 30; today, less than a third of males can say the same.

Some of the most successful marriages in the world started with two teenagers. Indeed, it is difficult to reach 75 years of marriage if one waits till he is 30 to say "I do" – you're pretty much dead by then.

Even biology challenges us to rethink delayed marriage. According to U.S. researchers who analyzed census data and information from genealogical records, children born when their mothers were under 25 were almost twice as likely to live to their 100th birthday and beyond and University of Chicago husband and wife team Dr Leonid Gavrilov and Dr Natalia Gavrilova have shown that firstborn children live longer than their younger siblings. It appears the two are linked, with older children living longer because their mothers are younger when they have them.

Studies have also shown that it takes longer for older men to conceive. Starting in their 20s, men face steadily increasing chances of infertility, fathering an unsuccessful pregnancy, and passing on to their children a genetic mutation that causes dwarfism. "We [now] know the probability for certain types of DNA damage goes up with age, and we can give you a mathematical probability," said Andrew Wyrobek, a researcher at the Lawrence Livermore National Laboratory in Livermore, California.

Not only is it bad to our children's health to delay marriage and child birth, this delay is also resulting in increasingly lower birth rates which may be bad for the longevity of Western culture. According to Mark Steyn, the low birth rates already at play in Europe are a prescription for the end of Western civilization:

Seventeen European nations are now at what demographers call "lowest-low" fertility – 1.3 births per woman, the point at which you're so far down the death spiral you can't pull out. In theory, those countries will find their population halving every 35 years or so. In practice, it will be quicker than that, as the savvier youngsters figure there's no point sticking around a country that's turned into an undertaker's waiting room. So large parts of the western world are literally dying – and, in Europe, the successor population to those aging French and Dutch and Belgians is already in place.

Indeed, those who marry younger and produce more children will be the ones who will dominate the US culture in the not-too-distant future. Dr. Arthur Brooks of Syracuse University writes:

Simply put, liberals have a big baby problem: They're not having enough of them, they haven't for a long time, and their pool of potential new voters is suffering as a result. According to the 2004 General Social Survey, if you picked 100 unrelated politically liberal adults at random, you would find that they had, between them, 147 children. If you picked 100 conservatives, you would find 208 kids. That's a 'fertility gap' of 41%… A state that was split 50-50 between left and right in 2004 will tilt right by 2012, 54% to 46%. By 2020, it will be certifiably right-wing, 59% to 41%. A state that is currently 55-45 in favor of liberals (like California) will be 54-46 in favor of conservatives by 2020—and all for no other reason than babies.

We know that sexual activity before marriage increases the likelihood of a divorce. We also know that couples who live together also have an even higher rate of divorce. But then we tell young people today that they should wait till they are almost 30 to marry – an age that will most likely guarantee they will have been already sexually active or even living with someone.

Even in the Christian community (a group who should know better) we push and encourage delayed marriage.

Christian parents even threaten their young people with negative consequences if they marry young. "We won't pay for your education!" "You'll have to pay for your own wedding!" "We'll disown you!" We pull all financial and emotional support from the young couple and then when they fail, we rush back to them with "I told you so…"

Mormons bring an interesting perspective to marriage. Only 6% of those who follow the demands surrounding a temple marriage end up in divorce. Six percent! But it's not just a question of getting married in a certain place. Leaders claim it's that the church requires the candidates for marriage to be people of character—people who stick to their commitments of love and of asking for help, if they need it. What is so striking is that many of these marriages happen between couples still in their teens!

Then there is a threat that almost no one seems to consider: the elimination of grandparents. The culture of divorce that has been ripping and tearing at our national family structure has, so far, failed to destroy us. Though the documentation of the damage divorce does to people and particularly their children is sufficiently solid, American homes (though patched and sown together) have been able to hold together to some degree. This has been in large part due to the presence of grandparents. Those wonderful people who love their grandchildren unconditionally and whose age, wisdom and financial resources have played a key role – in some cases the key role – as stabilizers in those children's lives. Those who delay marriage (and subsequently child rearing) are denying themselves one of the greatest joys men and women have cherished for millennia: to participate in the lives of their grandchildren.

For centuries, men and women became grandparents when they were in their late 40's and early 50's – allowing them plenty of time to enjoy and participate in their grandchildren's lives. Then in their 70's and 80's they witnessed the arrival of their great-grandchildren. People who delay marriage and family today, however, do not realize how greatly they are cheating themselves

by making it virtually impossible to experience their grandchildren. And for what? An extended adolescence? To drink more beer or to experiment with more sexual partners? To focus on their careers and a chance to make money more quickly than their parents did?

If Bobby and Suzie wait till almost 30 to marry and then 35 or greater to have children and their children do the same… well just do the math – they'll be 70 before their first grandchildren are even born. Depending on their health and longevity, they are at risk for not being able to enjoy those children's lives.

There is an even a greater tragedy that will occur than just people not being able to enjoy their grandchildren. As I already stated, grandparents have been the very glue that has helped struggling families stay together or to at least make their grandchildren feel safe should their parent's marriage fail. According to US Census Bureau statistics:

•6.1 million grandparents have grandchildren younger than 18 living with them
•2.5 million grandparents are responsible for most of the basic needs of one or more grandchildren
•918,000 grandparents have been responsible for caring for their grandchildren for at least the past five years
•477,000 grandparents have an income below the poverty level and are still caring for their grandchildren

But by delaying marriage and children today, we are participating in the foolish and systematic removal of grandparents altogether. When the kids of the next generation are 7, 10, or 12 years of age there won't be many grandparents to speak of. The final blow to the American family will be complete.

Sadly, many pastors and marriage proponents themselves are participating in the destruction of the very institution they seek to save by joining in this foolish call for delayed matrimony.

No matter what the statisticians say, marriages do not fail because of age, money or education – many of the underlying arguments for delaying marriage. Such

thinking is utter nonsense. Marriages fail for one reason and one reason only: one or both people become selfish. To imply that young, poor or high-school graduates are incapable of real commitment is an insult. I find it curious that we have young, poor, high-school graduates fighting for our interests overseas with great commitment – some giving the very last measure of commitment by sacrificing their very lives for their fellow soldiers.

Someday historians will write of the end of Western civilization. I am sure that our propensity for selfishness and narcissistic behaviors is what they will point to as the reason for our demise.

Advocating for delayed marriage will be just one more reason we will succeed in destroying ourselves from within.

NIGER

What creates an atmosphere for big families? When we look at the fertility rates worldwide some African countries are usually at the top of the list. Niger is often listed as having the highest birthrate in the world with an average of 7 children. Mali is often cited. These are Muslim nations in Africa. The women in many African nations usually wear long, loose-fitting dresses. The men keep themselves covered up also. The countries with the highest total fertility rates are usually more rural. Those countries that have the lowest birth rates such as many European nations are more urban and women usually wear pants.

HUTTERITES

The group with the highest birth rates in America are patriarchal Christians. Many people are aware of the Amish. Another group similar in some ways to them are the Hutterites. They live in rural communities where the women wear long dresses. They have an average of 7 children. In the 1950s they were studied and reported to have an average of 10 children. Do you see a pattern? I do. Those groups who are rural, religious, patriarchal, and modest have many children. This is the type of family True Father grew up in. His parents had many children and his parent's parents had many children. Now that many Korean women are working outside the home and have given up

wearing traditional long dresses they have one of the lowest birth rates in the world. If Unificationists are serious about doing God's will and following Father's commandment to have many children they have to create nests for women to live in that foster an atmosphere of having big families. This means they should do the 10 core values I write in my *book Practical Plan for World Peace*. I write how Father teaches the traditional values of living in the countryside, wearing modest clothes, honoring different roles for men and women and not using birth control. He teaches we should live in self-reliant communities where women can feel safe and secure.

UTAH

The state with the highest birth rate in America is Utah because there are so many conservative Mormons there. The state with the lowest birth rate is Vermont that is very liberal. The Mormons have only one or two more children than the average of 2 children in America. Unificationists should be beyond the Mormons and Hutterites. We should be even more caring for children and the elderly than the Mormons and Hutterites. Patriarchal, traditional religious people do not participate in private corporate life insurance or government social security programs. Women who wear shorts and pants do not want many children. Father teaches that women can wear colorful clothes instead of the frumpy dresses like those of the Mennonites. Let's be Hutterites gone cool.

BEAR MANY CHILDREN

In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* Father writes, "I tell brides and grooms to have many children. To bear many children and raise them is God's blessing."

I challenge Unificationists to **f**ollow Father's words and example by marrying young and having many children.

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

A Feminising Revolution: The Unification Movement and the 'Age of Women'

Lukas Pokorny

Following the demise of Mun Sŏn-myŏng in 2012, the South Korean Unification Movement has entered an era of female leadership. Mun's widowed wife, Han Hak-cha, rose to become the group's sole new leader. Drawing on a distinct (co-)messianic narrative, while resuming on the given millenarian trajectory – both chiefly shaped by Mun – Han successfully coped with the theological and organisational challenges of the post-Mun age, establishing herself as the prime religious and administrative authority. With the completion of a most crucial providential event in 2013 ('Foundation Day'), Han is believed to have ultimately assumed a virtually divine-like theological status, rendering her teachings and actions infallible (qua providential desideratum) according to Unificationist mainline thinking. In the wake of Foundation Day, Han continues to inscribe into Unificationism the mechanics of gender equality and the significance of the female portion of messianity even more resonantly, further elevating her soteriological position and thus the contribution of women to 'kingdom-building' in general. This paper discusses in a first step the UM's tradition of female leadership in the past, also introducing the theological foundation of gender relationship. Thereafter, the providential dynamics, especially concerning the so-called 'Age of Women' (proclaimed by Mun in 1992) will be outlined. The third major part of the paper deals with post-Foundation Day theology and historical developments, centring on Han's concomitant evolution into God's 'Only-Begotten Daughter.'

Unification Church; Han Hak-cha; Korean religion; new religious movement; religion and gender

Lukas Pokorny is Professor and Chair in Religious Studies at the University of Vienna. His present research focuses, among others, on ethnocentrism and millenarian beliefs in East Asian new religious movements. He is the editor (with Franz Winter) of the forthcoming (2018) *Handbook of East Asian New Religious Movements* to be published by Brill.

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

1. Introduction

Asked about the founder and long-term leader of the South Korean Unification Movement (UM),[1] Mun Sŏn-myŏng (1920–2012), at his prime, first generation Unificationists often chucklingly relate of a virile and grounded man, buoyant and with an at times earthy sense of humour. Raised in a Confucian-entrenched patriarchal environment and espousing a highly sexualised male-dominated messianic worldview, it may be small wonder that Mun's thought, and concomitantly the Unificationist (especially post-marriage) lifeworld, has been saliently pervaded by 'androcentric gender arrangements' (Lowney 1986, p. 243). Commencing in the 1980s, Mun's traditionalist views slowly incorporated a feminist dimension, which grew more conspicuous in the 1990s, and extended to a more egalitarian discourse in the 2000s. The rising impact of feminist theological voices notwithstanding, gender roles in Unifcationism are still doctrinally endorsed and remain conservative.[2] Likewise despite promoting gender balance *in praxi* in his late years, Mun did not sufficiently implant this notion theologically – and in particular providentially. Following Mun's demise and the subsequent solemnisation of Foundation Day (*kiwŏnjŏl*), that is, the inception of substantial Cheon Il Guk (*ch'ŏnilguk*) or the alleged dawn of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven, a veritable paradigm shift ensued: a 'feminising revolution' in theological and personnel terms. The 'Age of Women' (*yŏsŏng sidae*), already proclaimed by Mun in 1992, solidified most visibly in the post-Mun era with the doctrinally sanctioned elevation of his widowed wife, Han Hak-cha (b. 1943), as the UM's unconditioned leader, and the inauguration of the couple's fifth daughter, Mun Sŏn-jin (b. 1976), as the FFWPU international president and Han's successor-in-waiting. Moreover, the representation of Mun's wider family in key leadership positions within the UM has become entirely female involving, next to Han and Mun Sŏn-jin, two of Han's daughters-in-law, namely Ch'oe Yŏn-a (b. 1973) and Mun Hun-suk (b. 1963). Both were personally selected by Han to represent the 'Family of True Parents' (*ch'am pumonim kajŏng*) in the 13-seat Cheon Il Guk Supreme Council (*ch'ŏnilguk ch'oego wiwŏnhoe*), the UM's major legislative organ established by her in 2014 (Pokorny 2014, pp. 140–142).[3] Despite

1 The UM comprises a cluster of organisations, businesses, and initiatives, millennially bound to a religious body at its core (Pokorny 2013a), the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (FFWPU; *Segye P'yŏnghwa T'ongil Kajŏng Yŏnhap*), formerly known as the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity (HSAUWC; *Segye Kidokkyo T'ongil Sillyŏng Hyŏphoe*) founded in 1954 in Seoul.

2 The latter is not surprising, given that the majority of Unifications today still belong to the first generation of adherents, most of which have been brought up appreciating a traditional form of gender relations. Likewise, many members reside in largely male-controlled societies such as South Korea and Japan.

3 As FFWPU international president, Mun Sŏn-jin occupies additional (mostly

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

these developments, it is not to say that women have appeared in relevant offices throughout the UM's hierarchy. In fact, the vast majority of top-ranking positions within the South Korean and international movement are still in male (Korean) hands.[4] All FFWPU continental directors are male, as are all leaders of other major UM organisations apart from the Women's Federation for World Peace. One notable exception is the Universal Peace Federation (UPF) Africa Regional Chair held by Kathy Rigney (b. 1946) (who is also True Parents' Special Emissary to Africa) – the ten other UPF regional offices as well as the international secretariat and the United Nations Relations office are led by men. The reason for the still persistent male dominance in leadership circles is historical/social (see note 2) and theological. The latter in particular is being tackled by Han, most noticeably since the beginning of the post-Mun era of this present 'Age of Women.' This paper aims to explore this new gender paradigm in the UM and its doctrinal underpinnings, with special attention to post-Foundation Day Unification theology. The discussion is preluded by a discussion of the group's female leadership tradition in the past.

2. Female Leadership in the Unification Movement

Formal leadership in the UM has invariably been male-centred, whereas the movement was maintained chiefly owing to the fervent commitment of female adherents, who always represented the majority of members. Key disciples were normally recruited from the pool of male followers. Yet, the Unificationist tradition knows of a few women, whose impact on Mun and the entire movement are considered most essential, (for some time) eclipsing the role of any male follower. What makes these individuals special is that they appeared in the group's consciousness not as mere disciples and wives, but as educating mothers. Their theologically inscribed position as a husband's servient object partner was discounted in favour of an active parenting position put in an object relation to a providentially vital course and/or protagonist. According to Unification theology

honorary) leading posts in UM organisations and administrative bodies. Accordingly, she also acts, among others, as UPF Chair and the chairperson of the Cheon Il Guk Supreme Council.

4 The mid- and low-level administration, especially in Europe, has less rigid gender boundaries. For example, among 35 national leaders of the European UM in 2015, nine were female (Andorra, Bulgaria, Czech Republic, Kosovo, Macedonia, Poland, Slovenia Spain, and Sweden). Internationally, women rather tend, if at all, to fill deputy posts under male supervision, such as that of Vice President of FFWPU Europe (Carolyn Handschin [b. 1953]) and UPF Asia Regional Chair Secretary General (Ursula McLackland [b. 1953]), or, as is the case with the True Parents' Special Emissary to Europe (Mun Nan-yŏng [b. 1942]), are paired up with a male colleague (i.e., Mun's husband).

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

– borrowing from *yīn-yáng* thought – the ideal of creation comes to fruition through 'Origin-Division-Union Action' (*chŏngbunhap chagyong*). From God (*hananim*), the "eternally self-existent absolute transcending time and space" (*WK* I.1.2, p. 29), through divine energy or the 'original force of all beings' (*manyu wŏllyŏk*), emanates complementarity that needs to be fused together by 'Give and Receive Action' (*susu chagyong*) in order to generate harmony, that is, forming a subject-object communion between God and creation (*WK* I.1.2, pp. 33–34). Based on this principle, and echoing the archetypal relationship of Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden, man manifests as the subject (*chuch'e*) and woman as the object (*taesang*). Traditionally, the object position conferred to women was held as being tantamount to passivity and obedience. In this reading of creation theology (or teleology), wives were put in the position of motherly caretakers silently and devotedly supporting the cause of their husband. Such image of idealised female behaviour found its role-model in Han Hak-cha, the Unificationists' 'True Mother' (*ch'am ŏmŏnim*), an honorific (and a salvational rank) she obtained thanks to her marriage with Mun in 1960. Mindful of the UM's long-time gender protocol, for decades Han epitomised this kind of womanly conduct. With her husband arriving at a more senior age in the late 1980s and 1990s, however, Han slowly embarked on an emancipatory transformation extending her motherly portfolio to that of a matron in line with the (admittedly only sparse) tradition of female leadership within the movement. With her metamorphosis that appreciably began with the onset of the Age of Women in 1992, and accelerated in the post-Mun era, Han set a precedent for many members for openly active and firmly engaging womanhood not shying away from taking the lead while retaining motherly affection and courage.

The number of female authorities who had a lasting spiritual and/or organisational impact on the anatomy of the wider UM is very limited. A major early member, pioneer missionary, leader, and chief theologian of the group was Kim Yŏng-un (1914–1989). A former professor at Ewha Womans University, she became follower in 1954. From the beginning of her 'church career,' she was prominently involved in systematising Unification doctrine and furthering the mission abroad. She thus became the first missionary to the United States in 1959, incorporating the national branch of the HSAUWC in 1961. Kim laid the foundation for the global mission and,[5] accordingly, became the most important Korean contact for the emergent international community throughout the 1960s and early 1970s. In 1975, she was appointed professor (being the only Unificationist among the initial faculty) at the newly established Unification Theological Seminary in Barrytown, United States. Shortly after her arrival in the United States, in 1960, she published the first English edition of the UM's then central scripture, *The Divine Principles*, based on the *Wŏlli haesŏl* (Explanation of the

5 Indeed, the majority of international missionary pioneers stem from Kim's California commune.

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

Principle; 1957). Seven further editions and numerous other publications served as the main literature for legions of first generation Unificationists in the West, consolidating her status as the most seminal UM theologian. Over the years, the relationship between Mun and Kim turned increasingly uneasy, with her eventually being side-lined.[6] The role attributed to her by (Western) Unificationists is that of a highly intellectual and critical mind, a strident (and occasionally confrontational) guardian of theological systematicity and church customs (which evoked steady conflict with the male Korean leadership including Mun). Her picture as staunch educator, wielding – for some time – doctrinal authority only second to Mun and Yu Hyo-wŏn (1914–1970),[7] contrasts the then Unificationist imagination of 'true womanhood.' Kim successfully evaded the group's gender expectations, also eluding the marriage policy deemed crucial from a millenarian and soteriological point of view.[8] Her leadership position is unique in that she 'led' from beyond the gender boundaries normatively set by Mun and the (male) church elders.

Another type of female Unificationist leader can be found in the person of Ch'oe Wŏn-bok (1916–2006). Like Kim, Ch'oe was a former professor at Ewha Womans University and an early-day member joining with her colleague in 1954. Leaving her family upon converting,[9] her intellectual standing and shiny case of conversion, which had a publicity effect, quickly lent her a prominent position within the group. She soon became a close confidant of Mun, who commissioned her to attend the young Han Hak-cha, preparing her for the marriage and mentoring her thereafter for 17 years. From the 1960s until the late 1970s, Ch'oe remained Han's chaperone and Mun's most trusted aide. Ch'oe's role was assigned an utmost providential importance by Mun, who saw her paving the way for True Mother. In fact, he viewed Ch'oe to "stand in the position of a true wife and a mother in the fallen world"[10] (Mun 1989, p. 12) qua Mary, Jesus' wife, and Leah, representing role model qualities that had to be emulated by Han. Other than Kim, Ch'oe was of a more traditional motherly character, although – like Kim – she, for the most part, evaded the common necessity of blessed wedlock, at least physically. In 1998, she was blessed to the spirit of the historical Buddha.[11]

6 Kim did not receive a formal Unificationist funeral ceremony, or Seunghwa (*sŭnghwa*), today's Seonghwa (*sŏnghwa*).

7 Yu was first president of the HSAUWC Korea branch and author of the *Wŏlli haesŏl* and its revised version, the *Wŏlli kangnon* (Exposition of the Principle; 1966).

8 Except for a short-time marriage – allegedly with an outsider or at least a member in no good standing(!) – formally blessed by Mun in 1964 (*NAF* I.4, 1964, p. 7).

9 One of her sons, Sŏk Chun-ho (b. 1944), became a member many years later, rising to be FFWPU Korea president (2009–2012).

10 […] 타락한 세계의 참부인으로서 하나의 어머니와 같은 입장에 서 가지고 […]. This and all other translations from Korean in this paper are by the author.

11 At this event in New York's Madison Square Garden, three other female members

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

She was also tasked by Mun to produce an English translation of the *Wŏlli kangnon*, which remained the definitive version (and source text for translations into other Western languages) of the Unificationist scripture from 1973 to 1996. Ch'oe's leadership position is equally unique inasmuch as she 'led' as the 'second mother' physically and spiritually – albeit without a husband with whom to conclude Origin-Division-Union Action and thus from beyond the expected soteriological locus – fulfilling a crucial mission in God's providence according to Mun.

A third type of leader in the Unificationist tradition is Han's mother, Hong Sun-ae (1914–1989), who joined the UM in 1955. Hong, too, has an uncharacteristic vita. She gave birth to her only child before marriage, and was soon thereafter abandoned by her husband remaining single for the rest of her life. Contemporary accounts, which are relatively rare and soft-spoken, emphasise her piousness and that she spent her life for the sake of Han. Only years after her passing, starting in 1995, she became a leadership figure as a spiritual being. In the Unificationist imagination, Hong evolved into a powerful spiritual leader, providing counsel and wielding salvific authority in the physical world through her mediumistic channel Kim Hyo-nam (b. 1952). According to tradition, Hong was charged by Mun and Han to assist one of their deceased sons, Mun Hŭng-jin (1966–1984), in the spirit world to liberate the spirits from Satan's clutches (Beverley 2005, pp. 49–51). In addition, through her medium and the spiritual assistance of angels, Hong, who, ever since the beginning of her term, is affectionately called Dae Mo Nim (*taemonim*; i.e., 'Great Mother') by members, is also believed to be able to purify and cure the living as well as to jointly liberate members' ancestors from the Satanic lineage. With her post mortem transformation, Hong all of a sudden came to receive wide attention as a paragon of motherly care and tutorship, coaching Han passionately, and, like Ch'oe, contributing vitally to her spiritual ripening in times past.[12] In fact, Hong's newly created soteriological status (which was again achieved devoid of a salvationally important male counterpart) even overshadowed that of Ch'oe's. Hong's spiritual empowerment naturally vested her medium, Kim, with equal authority.

Kim represents a fourth type of female leadership in the Unificationist tradition, closest to that of Han herself. Whereas Hong appeared as a transcendent Redeemer and healer, Kim was presented as her worldly extension and vessel. Indeed, Kim came to be so closely identified with Hong by many members, that

were blessed to major personalities of the spirit world: Confucius, Muhammad, and Socrates. Jesus was already blessed by Mun to a female adherent in 1971.

12 Lately, with the rising emphasis given to Han, her life and ministry, including her 'spiritual upbringing,' another formative spiritual mentor is receiving growing prominence, namely Han's grandmother Cho Wŏn-mo (1889–1962). Cho is commonly depicted as a pious but more earthly person compared to Hong, an example of unwavering devotion to one's children, being of a more practical bent. Cho also appeared, although less prominently, in the UM's mediumistic context.

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

she was (and still is) likewise often informally referred to as Dae Mo Nim. In 2000, she was bestowed the formal title of Hoon Mo Nim (*hunmonim*) or 'Teaching Mother' by Mun and Han, stressing her newly gained role as Hong's mouthpiece and saviour-like figure. The official church narrative relates that Kim, an ordinary blessed devotee,[13] was picked by Hong in 1992, and together for the next three years established the required spiritual conditions, while also being challenged by Satan, in order to attain their salvific ability in the physical world. Consequently, from the mid-1990s, Kim rose to become a most influential providential figure much revered by Unificationists, especially in South Korea and Japan. Thanks to her mediumistic link, she virtually turned into a worldly saviour in her own right alongside True Parents, physically leading the so-called Ch'ŏngp'yŏng providence and offering hundreds of related workshops.[14] In keeping with her increasing spiritual prominence and weight, and supported in particular by Mun, Kim's worldly leadership prospered, especially in the late 2000s and early 2010s. The UM's head medium and chief spiritual architect of the *Ch'ŏngp'yŏng* construction project, Kim's career initially advanced also in the post-Mun era with her appointment as Cheon Il Guk Supreme Council member, before it took a sudden halt in late 2014. Not only was she stripped of her council position but, three months later, her term as master medium was declared to be concluded, turning her into an ordinary member once again. The underlying reason for her dismissal was the increasingly conflictual relationship with Han and the senior church administration also due to allegations of embezzlement. Her expulsion was internally communicated as the consequence of her corruption by evil spirits. With Kim being silenced, Dae Mo Nim too forfeited her prime leadership role. Accordingly, she was recently (late 2015) placed by Han under the lead of Mun Hyo-jin (1962–2008) – another of her deceased sons. Female leadership in the UM, diverse in its individual genesis as it may be, is rooted in and animated by the image of motherhood. Specifically, it is the rearing aspect that is transcended to encompass key protagonists of the providence (Ch'oe and Hong and their parenting responsibility towards True Mother; Ch'oe's relationship with Mun) and the community of Unificationists at large (Hong and Kim Hyo-nam and their salvific duty and imparting of spiritual knowledge, and Kim Yŏng-un and her transmission of the Unificationist way). It is therefore only natural that the role of

13 Unlike the other three female leaders portrayed, Kim's vita is ideal-typical in terms of soteriological development inasmuch as she raised a 'blessed family.' However, her status as 'wife' hardly received attention, as did her husband.

14 The area of *Ch'ŏngp'yŏng*, the major UM site, in Kap'yŏng county, Kyŏnggi province, was to be built as a model of the coming substantial Kingdom of Heaven on Earth or Cheon Il Guk. An area of considerable spiritual magnitude, the CheongPyeong Heaven and Earth Training Centre (*Ch'ŏnju Ch'ŏngp'yŏng suryŏnwŏn*) located therein, served for many years as the venue for the various purification rituals under Kim's aegis, which were to form an essential part of the providence.

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

true motherhood is embodied the fullest in Han Hak-cha herself, the UM's True Mother and 'True Parent of Heaven, Earth and Humankind' (*ch'ŏnjiin ch'am pumo*). According to the classical tradition, Han was spiritually 'raised' for forty years, obtaining all the necessary qualifications upon which Mun could eventually open up the Age of Women in 1992. This Age of Women then built the basis for God's 'Only-Begotten Daughter' (*toksaengnyŏ*) to emerge. Both the providential dynamics of this time and Han's 'apotheosis' will be discussed in the following two sections.

3. The Age of Women

The present Age of Women was formally promulgated by Mun Sŏn-myŏng on April 10, 1992, during the inauguration ceremony of the Women's Federation for World Peace (*Segye p'yŏnghwa yŏsŏngyŏnhap*) in Seoul's Olympic Stadium. A historic watershed, the declaration is supposed to be the culmination of providential action executed by Mun and his wife starting saliently 32 years earlier. This then most momentous caesura in God's providence refers to the formation of the True Couple (*ch'am pubu*), Mun and Han, through their blessing in 1960. According to Unification theology, this blessing or the Marriage [Feast] of the Lamb (*ŏrinyang honin* [*chanch'i*]) ultimately consummated the Edenic ideal of an untainted union willed by God that was unfulfilled by Adam and Eve. Through this conjugal union free from sin and centred on God, offspring should have been procreated, enabling the establishment of the so-called Four Position Foundation (*sawi kidae*). That is to say, a 'true family,' where husband, wife, and child(ren) live in harmony piously united in God. This nucleus of the ideal world envisioned by God and the aim of creation, should have extended in heaven and earth through True Family's posterity which would have carried on the 'divine lineage' (*hananim'ŭi hyŏlt'ong*). The archangel Nusiel's jealousy and hubris, however, disrupted God's plan in that he – thus becoming Satan – spiritually defiled Eve, who in turn soiled Adam. Humankind's first ancestors accordingly inherited and further passed on the archangel's fallenness, befouling humanity and creating 'hell on earth' (Pokorny 2017; *WK* I.2, pp. 70–108). The classical narrative continues that pursuing God's indomitable will to restore His bond with humankind, which was sundered through the Fall, Mun qua Messiah (*mesia*) – a salvational figure without sin and divinity – chose Han Hak-cha to become his 'restored Eve' in blessed matrimony. The blessing salvifically empowered the couple, transforming them into 'True Parents of humankind.' Mun and Han are believed to be the first (and thus archetypal) couple that unified sinlessly, embracing God in undiluted mutual love. The 1960 Marriage [Feast] of the Lamb thenceforth granted Mun in tandem with Han the power to bestow redemption through the blessing ritual upon those willing (and seen fit), removing any taints of Edenic fallenness and therefore resuscitating them as 'children of God.'

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

Triggered by this 'cosmic' event, over 400 proclamations (up to Foundation Day) followed at accelerating speed marking the stepwise advance of God's providence (O 2012). The 1992 proclamation of the Age of Women represents such a crucial stage in the UM's millenarian project. According to Unification theology, the promulgation of the Age of Women was a consequence of Han's spiritual evolution. Until two years earlier, Han was considered to be in a subordinate position to her husband. For her to fully grow into her designated role, she needed to be properly 'educated' (while being treated poorly) by Mun and others (i. e. Ch'oe Wŏn-bok and Hong Sun-ae). Hence, she hitherto remained for the main part utterly passive in public, embodying in members' views self-sacrificing womanly obedience vis-à-vis a husband's authority. During a ceremony on March 27, 1990, Mun solemnly declared his wife 'second founder' (*chae 2kyoju*) of the UM, and liberator of womanhood (Mun 1993a). Han's spiritual evolution seemed concluded so that she thenceforth was spiritually on a par with Mun (*CBG* 12.4, p. 1438). Her equal status qua True Mother was theologically extended to all women, elevating them spiritually to stand side by side their husbands and thus giving them the possibility to exercise the same millenarian impact. In order to actualise the newly achieved authority, Han was required to become a publicly active religious leader in line with her husband; a career that started in September and October 1991 with the inauguration of the Japan and Korea chapter respectively of the Women's Federation for Peace in Asia (*Asia p'yŏnghwa yŏsŏng yŏnhap*), intended to unite the women of these two providentially significant countries and, accordingly, put an end to both nations' historical enmity. Bringing the pursuit of unification to a global level, the establishment of the Women's Federation for World Peace in 1992 was deemed a natural consequence. Moreover, from a theological perspective, Han, being in the position of all world leaders (qua bride) who hitherto neglected to receive Mun (qua bridegroom) as Messiah, owing to her spiritual accomplishments could successfully indemnify this failure (*CBG* 12.4, pp. 1419–1429). Her appearance at the 'world stage' in this event is held to have fundamentally completed her growth process into a salvational figure (virtually) equal to Mun, unifying in messiahship.[15] Since that time,

15 Whereas the general outlook of Unification eschatology is fixed, the individual stages leading to the complete unfolding of substantial Cheon Il Guk are being disclosed only gradually by True Parents, which allows to keep 'kingdom-building' morale and activities at a continuously high level. Likewise, the topos of millenarian imminence is re-energised every once in a while by the leadership to foster members' commitment in support of the group's overall millenarian programme. Hence, a vital aspect in securing attention among the faithful is the continual proclamation of alleged decisive providential progress made by True Parents and the community of Unificationists in general. This also involves further salvational transformation of Mun and Han. Despite Mun's general acknowledgment of his wife's equal theological status, he occasionally indicated his spiritual seniority (and thus Han's need to catch up salvifically). For instance, in June

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

Mun and Han form a co-messianity, conjointly styling themselves publicly (since July 1992) as Saviour (*kuseju*), Lord of the Second Advent (*chaerimju*), and Messiah. Han's providential achievements, accordingly, prompted Mun to proclaim the Age of Women, in which – beaconed by True Parents – women will push ahead in a leading role the group's millenarian agenda (emulating Han), "putting an end to a world of war, violence, oppression, exploitation, and crime led by men, […] and building an ideal world filled with peace, love, and freedom" (Mun 1993b).[16]

In subsequent years, Han increasingly came to the forefront, assuming broad leadership fuelled by rising theological significance. Her profile was sharpened through independent public appearances. Most importantly, Mun continued crediting her with momentous providential achievements, involving, for example, the surrender of Satan in March 1999 (Pokorny 2017). Furthermore, Mun started to repeatedly and explicitly clarify his wish to pass on full organisational authority to his wife in future years. In the Age of Women the number of providential proclamations multiplied, especially in the 2000s. Many of these millenarian watersheds entailed a further augmentation of True Parents' theological attributes. The greater the alleged impact of their providential action over the years, the loftier became Mun and Han's role in the Unificationist millenarian understanding. A second blessing in 2003 (Pokorny 2013b, pp. 135–136) and various coronation ceremonies from 2004 onward – Mun and Han becoming 'King and Queen of Peace' (*p'yŏnghwa'ŭi wang*) – paved the way for a further salvational metamorphosis of the couple, culminating in a proclamation in 2010, in which Mun and Han, emphasising the cosmic triumph of their ministry, transcended themselves from the status of 'True Parents of Heaven and Earth' (formerly True Parents of Humankind) to True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind. Whereas Han garnered growing visibility and salvific fame among members, Mun gradually cut down his public activities transferring into semi-retirement in 2008. Yet, old age and health impairment notwithstanding, in his last years Mun led the UM's millenarian narrative to new heights, singling out one particular goal, namely Foundation Day on February 22, 2013. Mun envisaged Foundation Day as the conclusion of his divine mission, which – according to the emic view – started through an epiphany 78 years earlier. Because Mun died prior to this "greatest celebration of the greatest day in human history" (Yang and Kim 2013), while previously also remaining reticent about details of the immediate post-Founda-

1999, Mun proclaimed that his wife now qualified as 'Mother of Three Ages' (*3sidae'ŭi ŏmŏni*), "rising to a position where she could receive Heaven's blessing on an equal footing with Father" ([…]아버님과 대등한 자리에 서서 하늘의 축복을 받을 수 있눈 자리에 들어왔다는 것을 의미합니다; *CBG* 12.4, p. 1442).

16 이제 메시아로 오시는 참부모 앞에 지금까지 남성들이 주도했던 전쟁과 폭력, 억압과 착취, 그리고 범죄의 세계를 종결짓고 평화와 사랑 그리고 자유가 넘치는 이상세계를 실현할 참된 일꾼들이 바로 이 시대의 여성들인 것입니다.

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

tion Day era, the UM leadership had creative leeway for interpretation adjusting the theological meaning and outcome of the event to consolidate his widow's claim for power. Indeed, Han emerged out of Foundation Day adopting a novel theological identity as the unrestricted leader of the UM. Her newly gained status lends Han not only full administrative control over the group but lets her even theologically outshine that of Mun while alive.

4. The Only-Begotten Daughter

"She is the queen of heaven, the queen of this nation, and the grandmother of her ancestors, the mother [of humankind], the wife [of God], and the daughter [of God]" (Mun 2003).[17] In spite of the soteriological merits Han already obtained before Foundation Day – the status of God's wife was not technically actualised until Mun and Han's third blessing as part of the Foundation Day ceremony (see below) – her husband's physical presence and his presentation of a male heir in 2008 (i. e. Mun Hyŏng-jin, b. 1979) kept leaving to her a subordinated role to Mun and her youngest son in the public view. However, shortly after Mun's funeral, Han announced to UM leaders that she would henceforth take the lead more emphatically; a step that reshaped her identity involving crucial changes in personnel, organisational, and theological structures. Hagiographical accounts – some of which were gradually prepared during Mun's last years of leadership – started to be communicated more markedly. For example, the 2012 December issue of the English member magazine *Today's World* (now discontinued and replaced by *True Peace*) reports on Han's childhood, relating, among others, of an attempt of Satan killing the baby-girl, which was prevented by her mother, Hong; early prophetic voices that recognised in Han heaven's future bride; and an upbringing preparing her in devotion, education, chastity, and femininity for the Lord of the Second Advent (2012, pp. 12–17, 35). With the passing of Mun, Han was quick to take the reins. Before, Mun had three of their children occupy top leadership posts. Most prominently, in 2008 he appointed his seventh son, Mun Hyŏng-jin, as FFWPU international and Korea president, thus passing on his religious legacy in a dynastic fashion. Yet, tensions, which had formed slowly over the years between Han and this triumvirate of 'True Children,' erupted soon after Mun's death, resulting in their stepwise dismissal. Euphemistically, 'unfilial behaviour' was taken as the formal reason for their removal from office. More concretely, Han responded to growing criticism from members, and, especially their sons' perpetuated 'solo efforts' and a rising general dissociation from her authority. Mun Hyŏng-jin was eventually stripped of his international presidency and, accordingly, his claim for succession in March 2015 after having been sus-

17 하늘나라의 왕후가 되고, 이 나라의 왕후가 되고, 그 다음에 자기 조상들의 할머니가 되고, 자기 어머니가 되고, 자기 아내가 되고, 자기 딸이 되는 거예요.

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

pended from office for more than a year. In his stead, Han appointed the hitherto hardly known Mun Sŏn-jin, who has thus been put into the position of Han's successor-in-waiting. As the International President, she is the first female Unificationist ever holding such powerful formal office.[18] In February 2014, Han promulgated the 'Cheon Il Guk Constitution' (*Ch'ŏnilguk hŏnbŏp*; *CIGHB*) to consolidate her own leadership status and codify dynastic succession installing the Cheon Il Guk Supreme Council, whose chairperson must be from the Family of True Parents. The text, which gives supreme religious and organisational authority to Han, is intended to legally regulate the organisational structure and workflow of the FFWPU in the post-Foundation Day age. It also supplies an outline of main doctrinal tenets that already accommodate the cornerstones of Han's theological evolution. Whereas the preface to the (post-1992 editions of the) *WK* completely omits mentioning Han (and her role in discovering the 'Word of God'), the preamble of the *Constitution* stresses their joined achievements:[19]

> God […] sent the parents Mun Sŏn-myŏng and Han Hak-cha on this earth as Saviour of humanity, Messiah, Lord of the Second Advent, and True Parents. The True Parents of Heaven, Earth, and Humankind […], Mun Sŏn-myŏng and Han Hak-cha, discovered the Word of God humanity has lost, proclaiming it to the whole world. They fulfilled the ideal of all religions and bequeathed God's true love, true life and true lineage, having them settled eternally at a cosmic level. […] The True Parents through the providence of restoration have attained final unity […]. (*CIGHB* Preamble).[20]

18 The change of leadership engendered the hitherto most explosive schism in the UM. Supported by his brother Kuk-jin and several other prominent UM dignitaries, Mun Hyŏng-jin hived off his own congregation to form the World Peace and Unification Sanctuary headquartered in Newfoundland, Pennsylvania. He transferred the role of True Mother from Han to his wife, while attacking the former for being manipulated by evil, which led to her self-divinisation. He brands Han as 'harlot of Babylon,' and the FFWPU headquarters as a site of goddess worship. In his theology, Mun Hyŏng-jin employs a saliently apocalyptic tenor and generally resorts to a fundamentalist worldview. He frequently voices criticism towards 'feminist' developments in the UM under Han. Interestingly, this particular criticism is seconded by exponents of another major schismatic UM-related group, the Global Peace Federation led by the third son and former designated successor of Mun, Mun Hyŏn-jin (b. 1969).

19 Surprisingly, the post-Foundation Day editions of the *WK* (as of 2016) retain the original preface without mentioning Han's contribution. Contrary to that, because of the recent sales ban of Mun's *Selected Sermons* (*Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm sŏnjip*), underhanded suspicion has been voiced by mainline Unificationists that this might have come directly from Han in order to start a revision of the entire corpus in the light of post-Foundation Day theological developments. Whether this will prove true or not, it does display a certain level of scepticism and chagrin among members concerning the UM leadership.

20 하나님은 연장된 오랜 복귀섭리역사 (復歸攝理歷史) 를 거쳐 문선명 (文鮮明) ·한

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

In addition, through the *Constitution* (*CIGHB* §14), Han introduced a new set of central scriptures – the revised *Ch'ŏnsŏnggyŏng* (Heavenly Scripture, 2013), the *P'yŏnghwagyŏng* (Scripture of Peace, 2013), and the *Ch'ambumogyŏng* (True Parents' Scripture, 2015), all containing selected passages of speeches by Mun and, to a lesser extent, Han – relevant for the post-Foundation Day age, replacing the 'Eight Great Textbook Teaching Materials' (*8tae kyojae kyobon*) that had previously been assigned key canonical status by Mun (Pokorny forthcoming). The new scriptures, and in particular the *Ch'ambumogyŏng*, articulate a much more egalitarian understanding of True Parents' relationship, also sacralising for the first time in writing a substantial corpus of words by Han. The decision to reshape the Unificationist canon in view of a new millenarian reckoning after Foundation Day led to much criticism and discontent in the movement, fuelling schismatic tendencies.

Foundation Day marked in many ways a turning point for the UM and Han. Prior to the proclamation of the inception of substantial Cheon Il Guk, which from then on were to gradually unfold to encompass the whole cosmos, Han and Mun (the latter qua spiritual being) 'performed' yet another blessing ceremony, believed to have ultimately completed their salvational transmutation following the 1960 and 2003 events. This final blessing ceremony, styled as 'God's Wedding' (*hananim'ŭi sŏnghonsik*), substantially merged together Han, Mun, and God. Post-Foundation Day Theology takes this as the final act of gender equalisation, the endpoint of Origin-Division-Union Action, and the 'divinisation' of humankind (thus far limited to True Parents).[21] Furthermore, this unity between God and True Parents, and the ensuing dawn of substantial Cheon Il Guk, finally fulfilled the purpose of Creation *in nuce.* The 'Heavenly Father' therefore became the 'Heavenly Parent(s)' (*hanŭl pumonim*) (cf. Moon 2015), expressing the complete coalescence of gender complementarity (True Parents) into the one perfected object partner of God. The subject (Heavenly Parent[s]) and the object (True Parents paving the way for all of humanity) themselves form a divine union, rejoicing in mutual love and harmony. Post-Foundation Day Theology, which follows the doctrinal trajectory set (or at least approved) by Han, consequently, not only codified total gender equality but 'degendered' the godhead's perception by the faithful. Although on many previous occasions, Mun implicitly and explicitly voiced that providential history has arrived at the stage of gender equality, gender traditionalism kept pervading his overall teachings and mores until the

학자 (韓鶴子) 양위분을 인류의 구세주 ·메시아 ·재림주 ·참부모로 이 땅에 보내셨다. 천지인참부모님 (이하 '참부모님' 이라 한다) 이신 문선명 ·한학자 양위분은 인류가 잃어버린 하나님의 말씀을 찾아 전 세계에 선포하시고, 모든 종교의 이상을이루시어 하나님의 참사랑 ·참생명 ·참혈통을 영원히 천주적 (天宙的) 으로 정착시켜 상속해주셨다. […] 참부모님은 복귀섭리를 통하여 최종일체 (最終一體) 를 이루시고 […].

21 In the emic view, Han thus does not represent a successor to Mun, but through her both continue the course of True Parents.

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

end. Accordingly, with a female leader now in place, many members saw the Age of Women having eventually come to reality, a claim that was all the more backed up by Mun Sŏn-jin's appointment. In the aftermath of Foundation Day, the UM leadership – also in order to antagonise schismatic attacks – marshalled passages in Mun's sermons that help support this theological turn, stressing Han's infallibility and rightful lead, but also her practical prowess. Whereas Mun is now frequently depicted as mostly a theoretician (something he could rarely be considered given his saliently practical nature), Han is credited as the one effectively putting theory into practice. Her providential contributions and qualities (a paragon of womanly virtue and pious and motherly commitment, facing persecution and hardship all her life) are systematised and emphatically communicated to the grassroots members, aligning them to carry on the millenarian task with Han at the vanguard. In this respect, shortly after Mun's funeral, a post-Foundation Day millenarian action plan was put forth under Han's guidance, tagged as Vision 2020 (*pijŏn 2020*), to bundle motivational resources once again towards a shared goal, that is, the *in extenso* solidification of substantial Cheon Il Guk. Naturally, Han perseveres with the millenarian strategy executed so resonantly by her late husband. Her theological empowerment can thus be seen as a corollary of a distinctive narrative set in motion by Mun to stress an increasing spiritual advancement of the Messiah, of which Han represents the one part still alive, in tune with millenarian progression. The latest addition to Han's identificatory evolution, being a further expression of her absolute equalisation with Mun, is her self-entitled status as God's Only-Begotten Daughter (*toksaengnyŏ*): "I, the True Mother sitting here, am God's Only-Begotten Daughter born six-thousand years ago; I have all the evidence here." (Han 2014).[22] Other than previous 'spiritual promotions' such as God's Wedding, Han's position as Only-Begotten Daughter is not understood as the consequence of linear and cumulative spiritual achievements, but simply a new wording for a soteriological function assigned to her by God decades ago. Whether this is taken as a mere spiritual title divinely bestowed to her once her True Motherhood was sealed in 1960,[23] or an actual ontological state she was born with (or perhaps which she obtained upon arriving at the stage of True Mother) is not entirely clear. However, it does draw on – and this is exactly the cause for great debate and even division among Unificationists – the underlying notion of inborn sinlessness: "The conversion of lineage occurred when I was in my mother's womb" (ibid.).[24] Such would apparently go against pre-Foundation Day teachings, according to which Han realised sinlessness through

22 여기 앉은 참어머니는 6천년만에 탄생한 독생녀다 증거가 다 있다.

23 That is, Only-Begotten Daughter qua salvational link (as True Mother) between Heavenly Parent(s) and humankind; a unique female human being and God's elect who (together with her complementary part, the perfect male, i.e. Mun) consummated God's purpose of creation.

24 혈통전환 나는 모태부터다.

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

her union with Mun. A paradigmatic attempt by church theologians to accommodate this somehow is to explain that Han, like Mun, was in fact implanted sinlessness at a given point in her spiritual career – Mun when he accepted God's millenarian request conveyed by Jesus in an epiphany in 1935, and Han when she was taken by Mun as True Mother – which then "extended backward to the past and justified God's relationship with [her] from [her] birth or before [her] birth" (Wilson 2015). This latest aspect of Unification 'Christology' clearly challenges theological reasoning in the UM, leading to novel and reconstructive readings of core doctrinal elements (i.e., millenarian action that transcends time, anchoring its messianic momentum in the past).[25] With the introduction of the notion of Only-Begotten Daughter – referencing most prominently *CSG* II.1.26, p. 149 – Han not only removed the remaining ontological distinction vis-à-vis Mun,[26] but re-emphasised more than before the 'gynocentric turn' in Unification thought. In a resonating sermon in October 2015, Han maintained:

> So the last two-thousand years of the history of Christianity were due to the revival of the Holy Ghost, and are, accordingly, a history of the Holy Spirit. What you need to know of what this means is that this was the foundation to search for the Only-Begotten Daughter. […] Heaven's providence is the providence to find the Only-Begotten Daughter. (Han 2015a).[27]

Above all, the Only-Begotten Daughter concept is viewed by many as the most salient actualisation of the true spirit of this Age of Women; that is, the full emancipation of women at last, and the appreciation of their oft-neglected vital contribution to God's providence. It is understood as the natural consequence of

25 In fact, for many members (and even more so schismatics) reconciling Han's recent teachings with pre-Foundation Day thought through 'retroactive sinlessness' appears to be too artificial an approach. Critical voices mainly stress an increasing level of self-aggrandisement in Han's rhetoric (and thus her theology), which at the same time relativises or downgrades the theological and salvational role and general contribution of Mun.

26 "When the Only-Begotten Son [i.e. Mun] comes, he cannot be alone. There has to be the Only-Begotten Daughter." 독생자가 나왔는데 독생자 혼자서는 안됩니다. 독생녀가 있어야 됩니다.

27 그래서 기독교 2천 년 역사는 성령의 부활로 인해서 성신 역사에요. 그 말은 무슨 말인가 하면, 독생녀를 찾아 나오는 기반이었다 하는 것을 알아야 돼요. […] 그러나 하늘의 섭리는 독생녀를 찾아 나오는 섭리가 있었다는 거예요. Han's sermon was published in the 2015 November issue of the group's monthly *True Peace* (Han 2015b). However, the text is substantially edited (even more so – as is common in the UM – in its English translation) and some delicate wordings stressing Han's soteriological championship at the expense of Mun's status are removed. This shows that official UM theology tries to avoid communicating narratives that may too bluntly impact mainline thinking in this respect (i.e. 'devaluing' the role of Mun).

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

Cheon Il Guk soteriological thought (the perfection of Origin-Division-Union Action) and post-Foundation Day theology (God's Wedding). Wilson (2015) puts it in a nutshell:

> [I]t is wonderful that True Mother is declaring herself God's only begotten Daughter. It means she is emerging from Father's shadow, where admittedly she seemed to be living during most of her life. It is a victory for all womankind. It is a step on the road to establishing Cheon Il Guk, where man and woman can unite into one, reflecting fully the glory of God's masculinity and God's femininity in their own persons. That is what Cheon Il Guk is supposed to be all about.

5. Concluding Remarks

The self-elevating style of Han follows a distinct pattern set by Mun. Like in days past, it is upheld by the leadership's rhetoric – most prominently, in the person of Han's designated successor and current FFWPU international president, Mun Sŏn-jin (albeit at the expense of augmenting her own charisma). Critics of the 'feminist shift' in the UM blame the new theology and bearing (and, accordingly, implicitly or explicitly Han and the UM leadership) to go against Unificationist tradition and mainline thinking, distorting and diminishing the unique contribution of Mun. The majority of members, however, remain loyal to the shared cause and their leader(s), taking the current approach as keeping to Mun's vision and a token of a progressive and model religion that more than ever stands at the global forefront. Han's ubiquitous, yet untouchable, visibility and her internally uncontested lead are considered a natural continuation of the group's central (co-)messianic narrative. Mun is held to be ever-present with Han. Negating her (as, most notoriously, Mun Hyŏng-jin does) is perceived as trespassing a 'red line,' that is, the turning away from Mun and God's providence, which is akin to committing apostasy under the corrosive influence of evil forces (incidentally, the same line of argument is employed by Mun Hyŏng-jin).

Coping with a movement (and, to some extent, a theology) in a state of disarray following the passing of Mun, Han's extrovert strategy makes sense to an indifferent observer. Schismatic developments aside – which remain relatively small in terms of adherents, and are always to be expected in such a case (especially given previously existing tensions in the Mun family when it comes to the emergence of the 'Sanctuary Church') – Han dealt largely successful with the danger of organisational dissolution in the wake of a charismatic founder's death. She was able to fully redirect attention to herself, firmly consolidating her organisational power and theological authority, and thus perpetuating the messianic and millenarian narrative; that is, the vital basis of organisational (and doctrinal) self-legitimisation. With Mun gone, Han crowned herself the providential mastermind single-handedly navigating through millenarian waters. This undoubtedly makes

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

her the culmination of female leadership in the Unificationist tradition, the ideal female leader from an emic perspective – 'God's Only-Begotten Daughter,' so to speak. Whether the 'feminising revolution' carried forward so stridently by Han will have an impact upon future personnel decisions – surprisingly, top-ranked female dignitaries are still rare to be found – and established gender arrangements in the movement is to be seen. What is already noticeable concerning the latter, however, is an overall change of mind; a burgeoning sensibility and appreciation for the crucial contribution of women concerning kingdom-building, as well as a general feeling of self-empowerment among female devotees frequently communicated especially with a view to Han's role.

It is unlikely that the theological tenor of Han will intensify further, for this would only jeopardise relative organisational stability and the current millenarian momentum. The late Mun is a fixed element in the Unificationist religious memory and parlance. Han already succeeded in closing up to him, even (occasionally) outperforming him in the discourse. What is needed next is to keep the routinisation of charisma intact; to put more focus on the theological preparation of Mun Sŏn-jin as the spiritual heir to 'True Mother.' This will indeed put Han to the test and eventually determine if the Age of Women will persist beyond her days.

Abbreviations

CBG	*Ch'ambumogyŏng*
CIGHB	*Ch'ŏnilguk hŏnbŏp*
CSG	*Ch'ŏnsŏnggyŏng*
FFPWU	Family Federation for World Peace and Unification
HSAUWC	Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity
NAF	*New Age Frontiers*
UM	Unification Movement
UPF	Universal Peace Federation
WK	*Wŏlli kangnon*

Glossary

Cho Wŏn-mo 조원모 (趙元模)
Ch'oe Wŏn-bok 최원복 (崔元福)
Ch'oe Yŏn-a 최연아 (崔妍娥)
Han Hak-cha 한학자 (韓鶴子)
Hong Sun-ae 홍순애 (洪順愛)
Kim Hyo-nam 김효남 (金孝南)
Kim Yŏng-un 김영운 (金永雲)

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

Mun Hun-suk 문훈숙 (文薰淑)
Mun Hŭng-jin 문흥진 (文興進)
Mun Hyo-jin 문효진 (文孝進)
Mun Hyŏn-jin 문현진 (文顯進)
Mun Hyŏng-jin 문형진 (文亨進)
Mun Nan-yŏng 문난영 (文蘭英)
Mun Sŏn-jin 문선진 (文善進)
Mun Sŏn-myŏng 문선명 (文鮮明)
Sŏk Chun-ho 석준호 (石俊浩)
Yu Hyo-wŏn 유효원 (劉孝元)
3sidae'ŭi ŏmŏni 3시대 (時代) 의어머니
8tae kyojae kyobon 8대교재교본 (大教材教本)
Asia p'yŏnghwa yŏsŏng yŏnhap 아시아평화여성연합 (平和女性聯合)
chae 2kyoju 제 (第) 2교주 (教主)
chaerimju 재림주 (再臨主)
chŏngbunhap chagyong 정분합작용 (正分合作用)
chuch'e 주체 (主體)
ch'am pumonim kajŏng 참부모 (父母) 님가정 (家庭)
ch'am ŏmŏnim 참어머님
ch'am pubu 참부부 (夫婦)
Ch'ambumogyŏng 참부모경 (父母經)
ch'ŏnilguk 천일국 (天一國)
Ch'ŏnilguk hŏnbŏp 천일국헌법 (天一國憲法)
Ch'ŏngp'yŏng 청평 (淸平)
ch'ŏnilguk ch'oego wiwŏnhoe 천일국최고위원회 (天一國最高委員會)
ch'ŏnjiin ch'am pumo 천지인참부모 (天地人참父母)
Ch'ŏnju Ch'ŏngp'yŏng suryŏnwŏn 천주청평수련원 (天宙淸平修鍊苑)
Ch'ŏnsŏnggyŏng 천성경 (天聖經)
hananim 하나님
hananim'ŭi hyŏlt'ong 하나님의혈통 (血統)
hananim'ŭi sŏnghonsik 하나님의성혼식 (成婚式)
hanŭl pumonim 하늘부모 (父母) 님
hunmonim 훈모 (訓母) 님
Kap'yŏng 가평 (加平)
kiwŏnjŏl 기원절 (基元節; before: 起源節)
kuseju 구세주 (救世主)
Kyŏnggi 경기 (京畿)
manyu wŏllyŏk 만유원력 (萬有原力)
mesia 메시아
Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm sŏnjip 문선명선생 (文鮮明先生) 말씀선집 (選集)
ŏrinyang honin [chanch'i] 어린양 (羊) 혼인 (婚姻) [잔치]
pijŏn 2020 비전2020
P'yŏnghwagyŏng 평화경 (平和經)

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

p'yŏnghwa'ŭi wang 평화 (平和) 의왕 (王)
sawi kidae 사위기대 (四位基臺)
Segye Kidokkyo T'ongil Sillyŏng Hyŏphoe 세계기독교통일신령협회 (世界基督教統一神靈協會)
Segye P'yŏnghwa T'ongil Kajŏng Yŏnhap세계평화통일가정연합 (世界平和統一家庭聯合)
Segye p'yŏnghwa yŏsŏngyŏnhap 세계평화여성연합 (世界平和女性聯合)
sŏnghwa 성화 (聖和)
susu chagyong 수수작용 (授受作用)
sŭnghwa 승화 (昇華)
taemonim 대모 (大母) 님
taesang 대상 (對象)
toksaengnyŏ 독생녀 (獨生女)
Wŏlli haesŏl 원리해설 (原理解說)
Wŏlli kangnon 원리강론 (原理講論)
yáng 陽
yīn 陰
yŏsŏng sidae 여성시대 (女性時代)

References

Primary Sources

Han, Hak-cha 한학자: Ch'irwŏl iril ch'am ŏmŏnim hundokhoe malssŭm 7월1일참어머님훈독회말씀 [True Mother's Hoon Dok Hae Sermon From 1 July 2014], 2014, available at: http://cafe.daum.net/W-CARPKorea/cSkJ/24213 [21.09.2016].

Han, Hak-cha 한학자: Ch'ugye Ch'ŏngp'yŏng taeyŏksa t'ŭkpyŏl chibhoe ch'am ŏmŏnim malssŭm chŏnmun 추계청평대역사 특별집회참어머님말씀 전문 [Full Text of True Mother's Sermon at the Autumn Ch'ŏngp'yŏng Great History Special Meeting], 2015a, available at: http://cafe.daum.net/W-CARPKorea/cSkJ/27744 [21.09.2016].

Han, Hak-cha 한학자: "Uju'ŭi kŭnbon'ŭl ch'ajasŏ 우주의근본을찾아서 [Searching for the Root of the Universe]", in: *True Peace: True Parents Message and News* (18) 2015b, pp. 6–8.

Moon, Hyung-jin: Today's World (33/9). Seoul: World Mission Headquarters of the Unification Church 2012.

Moon, Ye-Jin: "The Need to Recover Gender Balance, to Understand God as Both Heavenly Father and Heavenly Mother", in: *Journal of Unification Studies* (16) 2015, pp. 65–128.

Mun, Sŏn-myŏng 문선명: "Ch'onghae wŏnsik 총해원식 [Ceremony for the Total Dissolution of Resentment]" (May 1, 1975), in: Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm p'yŏnch'an wiwŏnhoe 文鮮明先生말씀編纂委員會 [The Selected Sermons of Mun Sŏn-myŏng Compilation Committee] (ed.): *Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm*

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

sŏnjip 文鮮明先生말씀選集 [The Selected Sermons of Mun Sŏn-myŏng] 78. Sŏul: Sŏnghwasa 1989, pp. 9–29.

Mun, Sŏn-myŏng 문선명: "Pumo'ŭi nal'gwa na 부모의날과나 [Parents' Day and Me]" (March 27, 1990), in: Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm p'yŏnch'an wiwŏnhoe 文鮮明先生말씀編纂委員會 [The Selected Sermons of Mun Sŏn-myŏng Compilation Committee] (ed.): *Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm sŏnjip* 文鮮明先生말씀選集 [The Selected Sermons of Mun Sŏn-myŏng] 201. Sŏul: Sŏnghwasa 1993a; available at: http://www.cheonilguk.org/Malsm//Index/index201.htm [21.09.2016].

Mun, Sŏn-myŏng 문선명: "Segye yŏsŏng sidae'ŭi torae 세계여성시대의도래 [The Advent of the Global Age of Women]" (April 10, 1992), in: Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm p'yŏnch'an wiwŏnhoe 文鮮明先生말씀編纂委員會 [The Selected Sermons of Mun Sŏn-myŏng Compilation Committee] (ed.): *Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm sŏnjip* 文鮮明先生말씀選集 [The Selected Sermons of Mun Sŏn-myŏng] 229. Sŏul: Sŏnghwasa 1993b; available at: http://www.cheonilguk.org/Malsm//Index/index229.htm [21.09.2016].

Mun, Sŏn-myŏng 문선명: "Irhwa t'ongil'gwa ch'am sarang'ŭi kil 일화통일과참사랑의길 [The Way of One Harmony Unification and True Love]" (December 9, 2002), in: Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm p'yŏnch'an wiwŏnhoe 文鮮明先生말씀編纂委員會 [The Selected Sermons of Mun Sŏn-myŏng Compilation Committee] (ed.): *Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm sŏnjip* 文鮮明先生말씀選集 [The Selected Sermons of Mun Sŏn-myŏng] 398. Sŏul: Sŏnghwasa 2003; available at: http://www.cheonilguk.org/Malsm//398.htm [21.09.2016].

Segye P'yŏnghwa T'ongil Kajŏng Yŏnhap 세계평화통일가정연합: *Wŏlli kangnon* 원리강론 [Exposition of the Divine Principle]. Sŏul: Sŏnghwa ch'ulp'ansa 1999 [1966].

Segye P'yŏnghwa T'ongil Kajŏng Yŏnhap 세계평화통일가정연합: *Ch'ŏnsŏnggyŏng:* ch'ŏnilguk kyŏngjŏn 天聖經: 天一國經典 [Heavenly Scripture: The Scripture of Cheon Il Guk]. Sŏul: Sŏnghwa ch'ulp'ansa 2013.

Segye P'yŏnghwa T'ongil Kajŏng Yŏnhap 세계평화통일가정연합: *Ch'ambumogyŏng: ch'ŏnilguk kyŏngjŏn* 참父母經: 天一國經典 [True Parents' Scripture: The Scripture of Cheon Il Guk]. Sŏul: Sŏnghwa ch'ulp'ansa 2015.

Unified Family: New Age Frontiers, I.4 (November 15, 1964). San Francisco: Unified Family 1964.

Wilson, Andrew: "The Only-Begotten Daughter", 2015, available at: https://appliedunificationism.com/2015/04/13/the-only-begotten-daughter/ [21.09.2016].

Yang, Ch'ang-sik 양창식 / Kim, Lynne (moderators): "20130222 Foundation Day-Pt1b: Coronation of the True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind", 2013, available at: http://vimeo.com/60248389 [21.09.2016].

Secondary Sources

Beverley, James A.: "Spirit Revelation and the Unification Church", in: Lewis, James R. / Petersen, Jesper A. (eds.): *Controversial New Religions.* Oxford / New York 2005, pp. 43–59.

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

Pokorny, Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation (2017), Heft 5, 214–234, DOI 10.14220/jrat.2017.3.2.214

Lowney, Kathleen S.: *Passport to Heaven: A Feminist Sociological Analysis of the Gender Roles in the Unification Church as Evidenced in Its Vows of Blessing.* Ph.D. Drew University, USA 1986.

O, T'aek-yong 오택용: *Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng'ŭi sŏnp'osig'ŭl t'onghan hananim'ŭi sŏmni ihae* 문선명 선생의 선포식을 통한 하나님의 섭리이해 [Understanding God's Providence through Mun Sŏn-myŏng's Proclamation Ceremonies]. Ph.D. Sun Moon University, South Korea 2012.

Pokorny, Lukas: "The Millenarian Dimension of Unification Thought", in: Frank, Rüdiger / Hoare, James E. / Köllner, Patrick / Pares, Susan (eds.): *Korea 2013: Politics, Economy and Society* (= Korea Yearbook 7). Leiden / Boston 2013a, pp. 161–189.

Pokorny, Lukas: "'The Millenarian Dream Continued': Foundation Day, Vision 2020 and the Post-Mun Unification Movement", in: *Vienna Journal of East Asian Studies* (4) 2013b, pp. 123–157.

Pokorny, Lukas: "Millenarian Retrospects and Prospects: The Post-Mun Unification Movement in Austria", in: Hödl, Hans G. / Pokorny, Lukas (eds.): *Religion in Austria 2.* Vienna 2014, pp. 127–179.

Pokorny, Lukas: "'Nusiel Unbound': The Archangel and the Fall in Unification Thought", in: Hadromi-Allouche, Zohar / Larkin, Áine (eds.): *Fall Narratives: An Interdisciplinary Perspective.* London / New York 2017, pp. 90–104.

Pokorny, Lukas: "The Unification Movement", in: Pokorny, Lukas / Winter, Franz (eds.): *Handbook of East Asian New Religious Movements.* Leiden / Boston (forthcoming).

Univ.-Prof. Dr. Lukas K. Pokorny, Department of Religious Studies, University of Vienna, Schenkenstraße 8–10, 1010 Vienna, Austria, lukas.pokorny@univie.ac.at

Citation: Pokorny, Lukas: "A Feminising Revolution: The Unification Movement and the 'Age of Women'", in: Heller, Birgit (ed.): *Religion, Transformation and Gender.* (J-RaT 2017 / 2), pp. 214–234.

Datum der Publikation: 02.10.2017

Open-Access-Publikation im Sinne der CC-Lizenz BY-NC-ND 4.0
(https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)
Downloaded from Brill.com05/21/2021 03:54:23AM
via free access
© V&R unipress GmbH, Göttingen

religions

MDPI

Article

The Unificationist Funerary Tradition

Lukas Pokorny

Department of Religious Studies, University of Vienna, 1010 Vienna, Austria; lukas.pokorny@univie.ac.at

Received: 22 April 2020; Accepted: 17 May 2020; Published: 20 May 2020

Abstract: This paper explores the distinctive funerary tradition of the Unification Movement, a globally active South Korean new religious movement founded in 1954. Its funerary tradition centres on the so-called Seonghwa (formerly Seunghwa) Ceremony, which was introduced in January 1984. The paper traces the doctrinal context and the origin narrative before delineating the ceremony itself in its Korean expression, including its preparatory and follow-up stages, as well as its short-lived adaptation for non-members. Notably, with more and more first-generation adherents passing away—most visibly in respect to the leadership culminating in the Seonghwa Ceremony of the founder himself in 2012—the funerary tradition has become an increasingly conspicuous property of the Unificationist lifeworld. This paper adds to a largely uncharted area in the study of East Asian new religious movements, namely the examination of their distinctive deathscapes, as spelled out in theory and practice.

Keywords: Unification Church; funeral; death; ritual; new religious movement; Korea; East Asia

1. Introduction

> "'Death' is a sacred word. It is not a major expression for sorrow and pain. [. . .] The moment one enters the spiritual world is a time that one enters a world of joy and victory with the earthly life having blossomed, the fruits borne, and the grain ladled. It is a moment we [i.e., those staying behind] should rejoice. It should be a time when we celebrate wholeheartedly. It is a time when we should be shedding tears of joy and not tears of sorrow. Such a holy and sublime ceremony is the Sŭnghwa Ceremony, for it is the first step the departed takes towards enjoying the eternal life in God's embrace. [One's death] should be a time when one feels a more bosom-trembling excitement than how a newlywed bride feels at the moment when she goes to her groom's home" (Mun 2010, pp. 14–15).[1]

On 3 September 2012, Mun Sŏn-myŏng 문선명/文鮮明 (1920–2012),[2] the founder of the South Korean Unification Movement, passed away following a bout of pneumonia.[3] The funeral service,

---

1 "죽음이란 단어는 신성한 말입니다. 슬픔과 고통의 대명사가 아닙니다. [. . .] 지상계의 삶을 꽃피우고 열매 맺어 알곡을 품고 환희와 승리의 세계로 들어가는 때가 영계 입문의 순간입니다. 기뻐해야 할 순간입니다. 마음껏 축하하고 전송해 주어야 할 때입니다. 슬픔의 눈물이 아닌 기쁨의 눈물을 흘리고, 흘려주어야 할 때입니다. 승화식이란 이처럼 성스럽고 숭고한 의식입니다. 하나님의 품으로 돌아가 모시고 영생을 즐기러 가는 첫걸음이기 때문입니다. 새색시가 시집가는 그 순간보다도 더 가슴 떨리고 흥분해야 할 때인 것입니다." See CSG 13.4.13: 1445 with a slightly adjusted wording. All translations from Korean are mine.

2 The romanisation of Korean follows the McCune-Reischauer system. Names are written according to the East Asian custom: family name precedes personal name. The romanisation of Japanese follows the Modified Hepburn System. For the conventional emic rendering of Korean names, see the Glossary of Korean Names at the end of the paper.

3 Officially founded in 1954 in Seoul, the Unification Movement quickly rose to become a key new religious actor in East Asia and, subsequently, worldwide, with presently some 300,000 members involved in its religious core organisation, the Heavenly Parent's Holy Community (*Hanŭl Pumonim Sŏnghoe* 하늘부모님성회). The change of name was proclaimed on 8 May 2020, by Mun's widowed wife, Han Hak-cha 한학자/韓鶴子 (b. 1943), who currently heads the Unification Movement. It replaces the designation Heavenly Parent Church (*Hanŭl Pumonim Kyodan* 하늘부모님교단), which was introduced only

conducted twelve days later and attended by some 30,000 to 35,000 faithful, aired live via web stream and was also picked up by the international media. This allowed public glimpses into a ritual field of crucial importance to Unificationism but hardly known to the outside observer. In fact, this has not always been the case. Whereas death naturally had its place in terms of doctrine and ritual life before, a tragic demise within Mun's own family twenty-eight years earlier paved the way for a distinctive Unificationist funerary custom—the so-called Seunghwa Ceremony (*sŭnghwasik* 승화식/昇華式), presently known as Seonghwa Ceremony (*sŏnghwasik* 성화식/聖和式)—and concomitant doctrinal reverberations.

Western scholarship on Unificationism has hitherto touched on the subject merely *en passant* (Chryssides 1991, pp. 155–57; Baker 2007, pp. 506–7; Pokorny 2018b, pp. 337–38). Research in Korean is limited to a few (emic) contributions by Sun Moon University-based Unificationist scholars (Kil 2002; C. Yang 2007; Yang 2007, 2010). Overall, Western scholarly interest in the Unification Movement dropped significantly from the 1990s, when the majority of (Western) first-generation members fell publicly silent while settling into family life. At the time, the newly devised funerary tradition was still largely only a matter of theory, for the then average Western first generation member was still in her/his 30s and 40s, rendering funerals outside the Unificationist heartlands—that is, South Korea and Japan—relatively rare.

In a first step, this paper delineates the foundational tenets relevant to the Unificationist view vis-à-vis death and the spiritual world. Next, the origin story of the Seonghwa Ceremony as well as its doctrinal impact are introduced. An outline of its formalised ritual sequence in the Korean context, the preparatory and follow-up proceedings, and a brief detour on the Seonghwa Blessings for non-Unificationists builds the next part of this paper. A few concluding notes cast a quick glance at the wider Unificationist funerary culture management.

2. Doctrinal Context

Unification Theology is vitally informed by three biblical accounts—the Fall; Jesus's crucifixion; and Revelation (see Pokorny 2018b, pp. 329–33). Whereas the latter two provide respectively the raison d'être and the millenarian momentum of Unificationism, the former is deemed the gateway to the "secrets" of cosmo- and anthropogenesis. The (post-Mun) tradition maintains,[4] that these secrets were unearthed (in a cosmic struggle with Satan) by Han Hak-cha and Mun, who, subsequently, disclosed them to humankind establishing Unificationism. At the centre of the Unificationist reading of the Fall stands the purpose assigned to creation by the Heavenly Parent (*Hanŭl Pumonim* 하늘부모님; i.e., God) and its eventual non-observance by the ancestral couple Adam and Eve. The very rationale behind creation is seen in Heavenly Parent's genuine (and self-imposed) sense of complementarity (*susu chagyong* 수수작용/授受作用; literally, "give and receive action"), culminating in the creation of humans qua potentially ideal "object partner." In order to fulfil Heavenly Parent's vision, Adam and Eve were tasked to erect the Four Position Foundation (*sawi kidae* 사위기대/四位基臺). That is, a divinely blessed True Family (*ch'am kajŏng* 참가정) of (1) husband, (2) wife, and (3) child(ren), unifying in utmost love by dint of their joint alignment towards (4) Heavenly Parent. Such idealised Edenic constellation—called Cheon Il Guk (*ch'ŏnilguk* 천일국/天一國) in more recent Unificationist vernacular—would have extended further,[5] embracing the growing humankind alongside the axis tribe, nation, and world/cosmos. Yet, sexual misconduct provoked by their tutor, the archangel

---

one month earlier on 1 April, 2020, as a replacement for Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (FFWPU; *Segye P'yŏnghwa T'ongil Kajŏng Yŏnhap* 세계평화통일가정연합/世界平和統一家庭聯合; previously the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity—*Segye Kidokkyo T'ongil Sillyŏng Hyŏphoe* 세계기독교통일신령협회/世界基督教統一神靈協會; HSAUWC).

[4] Suffice it to say that Mun's death gave way to new theological avenues centring on Han (see Pokorny 2017a, pp. 227–29).

[5] Cheon Il Guk is an abbreviation for Kingdom of Cosmic Peace and Unity (*ch'ŏnju p'yŏnghwa t'ongilguk* 천주평화통일국/天宙平和統一國). The term was devised by Mun in 2001 and has a polyvalent usage in Unificationism.

Nusiel 누시엘,[6] thwarted Cheon Il Guk's realisation, for Adam and Eve instead built a Four Position Foundation centring on Nusiel-turned-Satan. Consequently, fallenness stained the first couple and their progeny (and so all of humankind), rendering the world a "hellish realm" for some 6000 years (see Pokorny 2017b). Various biblical individuals, and foremostly Jesus, were divinely slated to consummate Heavenly Parent's providence of restoration, that is, the actualisation of Cheon Il Guk. Everyone failed but not Han and Mun, who, through a life course of accelerating salvific achievements (see O 2012) are held to have ultimately inaugurated the "cosmic"-level Substantial Cheon Il Guk (*silch'ejŏk ch'ŏnilguk* 실체적 천일국/天一國定着) in February 2013. The progressively solidifying (as yet still embryonic) Cheon Il Guk would entail the gradual unification of the interdependent physical (*yukkye* 육계/肉界) or corporeal world (*yuhyŏng* [*silch'e*] *segye* 유형[실체]세계/有形[實體]世界) and the spiritual (*yŏnggye* 영계/靈界) or incorporeal world (*muhyŏng* [*silch'e*] *segye* 무형[실체]세계/無形[實體]世界), which together form the "universe" or "cosmos" (*ch'ŏnju* 天宙).[7] This division is meant to correspond to the "mind-body division" of the human, resembling Heavenly Parent's *susu chagyong*-induced Dual Characteristics (*isŏng sŏngsang* 이성성상/二性性相), which, in fact, is deemed to pattern all of creation. Being the pinnacle of creation, humans should venture to fulfil its (i.e., their) very purpose while alive. This they can do through emulating the ways of Han and Mun, who are seen as the first humans ever to fully embody the Purpose of Creation (*ch'angjo mokchŏk* 창조목적/創造目的) and thus becoming the real ancestral couple or, emically, the True Parents of Heaven, Earth, and Humankind (*ch'ŏnjiin ch'am pumonim* 천지인참부모님).

Unificationist (i.e., Mun's) views towards the spiritual world were first comprehensively systematised in 1995 by Yi Sang-hŏn 이상헌/李相軒 (1914–1997), the Founding President of the Unification Thought Institute (*T'ongil sasang yŏn'guwŏn* 통일사상연구원/統一思想研究院) (Yi 1995).[8] He died shortly thereafter but is held to have "resumed" his research on-site. His subsequent "findings" were accordingly published in various posthumous volumes (see, especially, Kim and T'ongil Sasang Yŏn'guwŏn 1998), significantly informing the Unificationist discourse on the spiritual world.[9] Serving as the second key "spiritual informant" in this respect was Han's deceased mother, Hong Sun-ae 홍순애/洪順愛 (1914–1989) (see Kim 2006).[10]

Unificationists believe that upon one's death the body (*yuksin* 육신/肉身) is shed and the eternal spirit or "body of the spirit being" (*yŏnginch'e* 영인체/靈人體) naturally enters the spiritual world, which is deemed everyone's original Eternal Homeland (*yŏngwŏnhan ponhyang* 영원한 본향).[11]

In Edenic times, the spiritual world was meant to be a single heavenly realm, namely the Kingdom of Heaven in Heaven (*ch'ŏnsang ch'ŏn'guk* 천상천국/天上天國); however, the Fall brought about division into a Principled (*wŏllijŏgin* 원리적인) and a Non-principled (*piwŏllijŏgin* 비원리적인) Realm in the

---

6 Mun "disclosed" the archangel's actual name to be "Nusiel," a name almost exclusively used in the Korean Unificationist oeuvre as well as by a few Unificationist offshoots. In order to avoid confusion, "Nusiel" is usually given as "Lucifer" in Western Unificationist writings.

7 In English-language Unificationist writings, *yŏnggye* is conventionally rendered as "spirit world."

8 Of course, there have been many other individuals, who were serving the Unificationist community as "experts" of the spiritual world well before, such as, notably, Mun and Han's ob-gyn Kim Sin-uk 김신욱/金信旭 (1914–2004) and the early chief Unificationist theologian Kim Yŏng-un 김영운/金永雲 (1914–1989). Yet, they either did not publish or were less systematic and detailed in their accounts.

9 The writings of the influential Unificationist theologian Andrew Wilson (b. 1950) have been a further popularising momentum for Yi's "insights" among Western members in particular. Notably, in Chapter 5 of his seminal *True Family Values* authored alongside Joong Hyun Park (Pak Chung-hyŏn 박중현/朴重), Yi's scheme of the spiritual world is briefly delineated (Pak and Wilson 2006, pp. 185–218; also see Wilson 2003). Regarding Yi's descriptions, some Unificationist scholars argue that they are merely approximations, for the spiritual world is unfathomable to human cognition (Mun 2016, p. 293).

10 From the mid-1980s, mediumism has become an increasingly vital element of Unificationism enjoying its heydays in the late 1990s and 2000s. A few years into the post-Mun era, with the ousting of the two chief Unificationist mediums—Kim Yŏng-sun 김영순/金英順and Kim Hyo-nam 김효남/金孝南 (b. 1952)—official mediumistic activities came largely to a halt. Kim Yŏng-sun channelled Yi Sang-hŏn in particular between 1997 and 2003. Kim Hyo-nam communicated the messages of Hong Sun-ae between 1995 and 2015.

11 Some spirits may dwell an additional time in the physical world out of ignorance of their earthly shell's passing. It is these confused spirits who are ordinarily referred to as "ghosts."

spiritual world.[12] The former is the Kingdom of Heaven in Heaven to which the spirits of staunch devotees are given direct access. The latter is sub-divided into: the Interim Spiritual World (*chunggan yŏnggye* 중간영계/中間靈界); a three-tier Hell (*chiok* 지옥/地獄); the Spirit Form-Level Spiritual World (*yŏnghyŏngch'e kŭp yŏnggye* 영형체급영계/靈形體級靈界); and a three-tier Paradise (*nagwŏn* 낙원/樂園).

Guided by other spirits and angels, the spirits of the recently deceased would first arrive in the Interim Spiritual World where they stay for up to fifty days. After a while, they are presented with a life review, which, being visible to bystanders, reveals in great detail the full catalogue of sins and good deeds amassed during one's physical existence. The quality of one's life conduct then determines to which area of the Non-principled Realm to proceed. The subsequent relocation occurs deliberately and is guided by denizens of the abode-to-be who witnessed the life review.

Hell would welcome those having lived a life antithetical to Unificationism. The degree of their past evil assigns new arrivals to one of the three layers that are characterised by an increasingly tormenting environment. Whereas murderers and those who died by suicide call the second layer home, the third one is populated by mass murderers and genocidal tyrants. Yet, even Hell dwellers may eventually resettle in one of the upper realms. With the dawn of Substantial Cheon Il Guk, such transitions occur more and more frequently.

The deceased who were not cleansed from their fallenness—through the Blessing Ceremony (*ch'ukpoksik* 축복식/祝福式) or the parental inheritance thereof—but practiced virtue while alive, would ultimately leave the Interim Spiritual World for the Spirit Form-Level Spiritual World. This realm is envisioned to be earth-like but exceedingly more beautiful, brightly immersed in the light of love. Its ageless spirit inhabitants, all dressed in white, live together harmoniously and engage in professions of building and creation. Their inventions shine forth to the physical world where they are embraced and actualised by the spiritually gifted. Moreover, the spirits may even temporarily descend to the physical world to assist individuals on their path towards goodness—an activity Unificationists call "returning resurrection" (*chaerim puhwal* 재림부활/再臨復活; see *WK* I.5.2-3).

Spirits whose spiritual and moral qualities are even more advanced would enter Paradise, an even brighter and more beautiful realm, divided into three areas of increasing scenic majesty and bliss. Save for Jesus, all religious founding figures such as Buddha, Confucius, Muhammad, and Tonghak's 동학/東學 (Eastern Learning, 1860) Ch'oe Che-u 최제우/崔濟愚 (1824–1864) dwell in the second layer, whose inhabitants are apparelled in light-emitting white and are crowned with a golden halo. Jesus resides in the uppermost paradisiacal realm. He cannot yet relocate to the Principled Realm, which is only reserved for the spirits of devout Unificationists who have erected the Four Position Foundation, the mission Jesus failed to accomplish.[13] These spirits are entering this most splendid part of the spiritual world directly upon death. However, for the time being until Substantial Cheon Il Guk is fully solidified and, concomitantly, the Non-principled Realm ceases to exist, the vast majority of Unificationist spirits would occupy a threshold area therein. From this "antechamber" they journey to lower levels of the spiritual world or to the physical world in order to facilitate the solidification, while also elevating their own spiritual qualities even further. Once the solidification comes to fruition, all spirits will enter the Kingdom of Heaven in Heaven. But even there they are initially meant to occupy different regions according to their spiritual/moral progress and hitherto overall millenarian performance. Presently, the Kingdom of Heaven has only a few residents, foremostly including, *inter alia*, Mun and his son Mun Hŭng-jin 문흥진/文興進 (1966–1984), Hong Sun-ae, and Yu Hyo-wŏn 유효

---

[12] The following outline draws on the "canonical" Korean understanding. As I have shown elsewhere (Pokorny 2014), Unification thought is a vast repository of ideas encompassing great individual diversity at the grassroots level. A re-appropriation of canonical ideas is especially noticeable among Western Unificationists.

[13] Notably, in January 1971, the spirit of Jesus was blessed by True Parents to a female member, as were, among others, the spirits of Buddha, Confucius, and Muhammad in June 1998. Yet, their relocation to the Principled Realm is still denied. In late 2008, a mediumistically received message by the spirit of Mun and Han's first son, Mun Hyo-jin 문효진/文孝進 "Stephen" (1962–2008), circulating among American members, claimed that Jesus was eventually able to enter the Kingdom of Heaven in Heaven. This message was not authenticated by the Unificationist leadership.

원/劉孝元 (1914–1970), the first HSAUWC Korea president. The solidification is thought to result in the merger of the physical and the spiritual worlds, their inhabitants freely communicating with each other. In the course of time, the then unified spiritual world would apparently grow into soteriological uniformity in line with Heavenly Parent's Purpose of Creation—a state that is meant to persevere for all of eternity.

3. Origin

A distinct funerary tradition within Unificationism commenced in January 1984 following the demise of Mun and Han's second eldest son, Hŭng-jin ("Richard"). While one of their daughters had already passed away in 1964 shortly after birth, he was the first of the remaining thirteen so-called True Children (*ch'am chanyŏ* 참자녀) to die having reached (early) adulthood. The cause of his passing in the St Francis hospital in Poughkeepsie on 2 January 1984 was severe brain injuries following a car accident on New York State Route 9 eleven days earlier. His body was transferred to South Korea where the first ever (World) Seunghwa Ceremony was held on 8 January in the Unification Movement's Little Angeles School. From a Unificationist perspective, with his death, Hŭng-jin turned into both a moral exemplar for the living and a salvific agent in the spiritual world.

As one of the former chief Unificationist dignitaries, Pak Po-hŭi 박보희/朴普熙 (1930–2019), stated in his Seunghwa address: "Deep in our hearts we should remember Heung Jin Nim as the greatest of filial sons to our True Parents, the most loyal of followers, the most glorious hero of the Unification Movement, and the saint of saints" (Pak 1999, p. 485). Mun Hŭng-jin's hagiography (see also, e.g., *CPG* 7.3.2, pp. 793–803) describes the car accident as an act of twofold sacrifice and bravery. On the one hand, he deliberately sacrificed himself by swerving his car so that the unavoidable impact of a sliding semi-trailer truck hit the driver side thus saving his passengers. On the other hand, he willingly gave himself for the sake of True Parents' mission, for he thus deflected the persistent attacks by Satan which were endangering the True Family. Indeed, being the epitome of filial piety (*hyo* 효/孝), Hŭng-jin did not immediately succumb to his grave injuries but wondrously and steadfastly endured. Rather, he went comatose for several days so that his father could unimpededly complete a crucial providential objective in South Korea and, subsequently, solemnise the most important "great holy day" (*taemyŏngchŏl* 대명절/大名節) in the Unificationist ritual calendar, namely True God's Day (*ch'am hananim'ŭi nal* 참하나님의 날) on 1 January.[14] Mun and Han, knowing that Hŭng-jin would not recover, conducted a ceremony at his deathbed, that is, the Unification Ceremony (*t'ongilsik* 통일식/統一式), ritually offering their son to Heaven for the sake of humanity, the Korean people, and all Unificationists (see MS 2002d, p. 88). To this end, Mun advised the doctor a day later to remove the oxygen mask enabling Hŭng-jin to pass over to the spiritual world, where he accomplished an even more staggering feat. In Mun's words (MS 2002b, pp. 52–54):

> "Hŭng-jin is an Abel-type son. [. . .] He went to the spiritual world in the position of the realm of direct dominion on the victorious base indemnifying the realm of dominion of Satan. That is why he had the condition of being the son who for the first time since the Fall went to the heavenly world furnished with the perfected qualification. [. . .] Now, before all the spirit beings in the spiritual world, even before Jesus and all the good saints, Hŭng-jin is the first one to be born as the eldest son centring on the realm of heart. [. . .] Satan does not transfer an inheritance but he pillages. But Hŭng-jin, being in the realm of the first son, delivers all the blessings he received while on earth."[15]

---

[14] Presently, Unificationist "holy days" conventionally follow the lunar calendar. Until recent years, True God's Day was held in accordance with the solar calendar.

[15] "흥진군은 아들격 아벨인데 [. . .] 사탄주관권을 탕감한 승리기반 위에 직접주관권과 하나된 자리에서 영계에 갔다는 거예요. 그렇기 때문에 타락 이후 천상세계에 간 아들로서 첫째로 비로소 완성한 자격을 갖추고 갔다는 조건을 지니고 있다는 것입니다. [. . .] 그건 지금 영계에 가 있는 영인들앞에, 지금까지 예수 앞에도 그렇고, 모든 선한 성자들 앞에도 그렇고, 심정권

According to Unification Theology, upon his death and by virtue of his salvational achievements in the physical world (being an archetypal True Child), Mun Hŭng-jin performed three historic salvific deeds.[16] Firstly, he was the very first human spirit in the spiritual world to enter and become a resident of the Kingdom of Heaven. In so doing, on the one hand, he opened the gates to the Principled Realm to all stalwart Unificationists—although for the time being they may only abide in its "foyer." On the other hand, he brought the physical and the spiritual worlds closer together enabling better communication lines between the two. Secondly, as the embodiment of True Love (*ch'am sarang* 참사랑) he maintained a permanent channel to True Parents, which capacitated him to vicariously bestow redemption upon the willing inhabitants of the spiritual world. All this rendered Mun Hŭng-jin the new King of Heaven with his predecessor, Jesus, as his aide.[17]

He is deemed the "one who opened the gates of the spiritual world as the Messiah of Love" (MS 2002a, p. 202)[18]—True Love that was instilled through True Parents. Radiating through Mun Hŭng-jin it is held to have illuminated the Realm of Death (*samanggwŏn* 사망권/死亡圈), turning it into the Realm of Love (*saranggwŏn* 사랑권). In other words, by gaining a foothold in the spiritual world through their deceased son, True Parents' salvific power is thought to have "recaptured death." That is to say, the Fall stripped death of its divinely assigned purpose, namely to serve as a joyful transitional moment sending off the spirit to the Kingdom of Heaven in Heaven. With the Kingdom of Heaven in Heaven having been made inaccessible, death became attributed with fear.

However, according to Unificationism, due to the dual sacrifice of True Parents offering their son and Mun Hŭng-jin offering himself—envisaged as the re-enactment of God's sacrifice of Jesus and the latter's self-sacrifice—the original purpose of death was reclaimed and fear was therefore defeated. This providentially momentous event is annually solemnised by Unificationists ever since on 3 January as Day of the Victory of Love (*aesŭngil* 애승일/愛勝日).[19] Even more significantly, with death having now (re-)gained a soteriological quality, its ritual processing too was assigned a salvific function: The funeral ceremony (*changnyesik* 장례식/葬禮式) qua sorrowful farewell service knowing that the spirit of the deceased is incapable of entering the Principled Realm shifted to the Seunghwa Ceremony (*sŭnghwasik*), in which the participants are meant to rejoice in the blissful rebirth of the spirit in the Kingdom of Heaven in Heaven.

4. The Seonghwa Ceremony

The term *sŭnghwa* 승화/昇華 is a compound: *sŭng* 승/昇 literally means "to ascend," "to rise," or "to go up," but may also refer to being "promoted" or "elevated," whereas *hwa* 화/華 in this context denotes "splendour," "glory," or "brilliance." The standard dictionary meaning of *sŭnghwa* is "sublimation."[20] Here it variously indicates the transition from a bodily to a spirit being and the

---

을 중심삼고 누가 장자로 먼저 태어났느냐 하면 흥진이가 먼저 태어났다그 말이라구요. [. . .] 사탄은 상속을 안 해주고 자기가 겁탈하는데, 장자권 흥진이는 지상에 가진 복을 전부 다 넘겨 준다 이거예요."

[16] To fix a soteriological desideratum, since—like Jesus—Mun Hŭng-jin himself could not erect the Four Position Foundation, a posthumous blessing was executed forty days after the *samuje*삼우제/三虞祭 (i.e., a traditional Korean post-burial ritual commonly taking place on the third day after the interment) on February 20. Hŭng-jin was blessed with the daughter of the church elder Pak Po-hŭi, Mun Hun-suk 문훈숙/文淑 "Julia" (b. 1963), who, to this day, enjoys a special status in the Unification Movement. Accordingly, she became one of the thirteen members of the Cheon Il Guk Supreme Council in 2014, the supreme legislative organ of Unificationism in the age of Substantial Cheon Il Guk (Pokorny 2014, p. 142; Pokorny and Zoehrer 2018, pp. 247–52).

[17] Starting only three weeks after his death, the first of several Unificationists worldwide—the British adherent Faith Jones (b. 1945)—asserted to have established mediumistic contact with Mun Hŭng-jin. The most notorious case occurred in 1987–1988, when a Zimbabwean member—Cleophas Kundiona—was for a short time authenticated by Mun as a bodily vessel for the spirit of Hŭng-jin. Nicknamed "Black Heung Jin" by the media, Kundiona conducted revivals in various countries but was eventually ousted due to his increasingly erratic and violent behaviour (see Beverley 2005, pp. 48–49), involving the assault on Pak Po-hŭi who was hospitalised in serious condition.

[18] "사랑의 메시아로서 영계의 문을 연 사람이라구요."

[19] Until 2010 according to the solar calendar, thereafter following the lunar calendar.

[20] Internationally, Unificationists when not employing the Korean expression generally used the term "ascension." This did not change after the rebranding in 2011.

transition (through the "bridge of love") from a lower to a higher dimension (MS 2002c, p. 317; Kil 2002, p. 147; Yang 2007, pp. 158–59). On 9 November 2011, Mun and Han gave notification that—starting with the funerary ceremony for Kim Sang-ch'ŏl 김상철/金相哲 "David" (1915–2011), a top-ranked Unificationist elder and the first-ever "missionary" (1954 to the United Kingdom), on 10 November—the Seunghwa Ceremony had to be renamed to Seonghwa Ceremony (*sŏnghwasik*) in line with the providential/millenarian progress made.[21] The term *sŏnghwa* 성화/聖和 consists of two parts: *sŏng* 성/聖 here refers to "sacred" or "holy" and *hwa* 화/和 to "harmony" or "peace." The resulting neologism literally means "sacred harmony."[22] However, the change of name carried merely symbolic value and did not bear any effect on the ritual procedure or its aesthetic and material dimensions.

There exist seven categories of the Seonghwa Ceremony, divided in increasing order by the amount of worldly and overall providential/church-related merits attained during one's "principled" life course: (1) Family Seonghwa Ceremony (*kajok sŏnghwasik* 가족성화식/家族聖和式); (2) Church Seonghwa Ceremony (*kyohoe sŏnghwasik* 교회승화식/教會聖和式); (3) Religious Work Seonghwa Ceremony (*kyoyŏk sŏnghwasik* 교역성화식/教役聖和式); (4) Parish Seonghwa Ceremony (*kyogu sŏnghwasik* 교구성화식/教區聖和式); (5) Association Seonghwa Ceremony (*hyŏphoe sŏnghwasik* 협회성화식/協會聖和式);[23] (6) World Seonghwa Ceremony (*segye sŏnghwasik* 세계성화식/世界聖和式);[24] (7) Cosmic Seonghwa Ceremony (*ch'ŏnju sŏnghwasik* 천주성화식/天宙聖和式), hitherto taking place only for Mun himself (see Pokorny 2013, pp. 128–29). The duration of the Seonghwa Ceremony can be variously arranged, taking place on one day or—more commonly—spanning over three, five, or seven days (C. Yang 2007, p. 37). It is divided into three main parts: (1) the Gwihwan/Ghihwan Ceremony (*kwihwansik* 귀환식/歸歡式; (literally, returning to joy), which may be omitted; (2) the Seonghwa Ceremony; and (3) the Wonjeon Ceremony (*wŏnjŏnsik* 원전식/原殿式 [formerly, 元殿式]; literally, [returning to] the palace of origin). Below an *ideal-typical* funerary procedure in the *Korean context* is described.[25] For many years, the standard reference for Unificationists regarding general etiquette and rituals—and, in particular, the Seonghwa Ceremony—in both English and Korean were Kwak (1985, 1997), respectively. More recently, specific Seonghwa guides were made available, such as Sin Han'guk Kajŏng Yŏnhap Kajŏngguk (2020); Family Federation for World Peace and Unification USA (2016); Selig (2014) (also see Selig 2013).

4.1. Preparation

Both preparation and execution of the Seonghwa Ceremony are in the hands of the Seonghwa Committee (*sŏnghwa wiwŏnhoe* 성화위원회/聖和委員會), whose composition depends on the size of the planned event.[26] It is ordinarily formed ad hoc by family members and, possibly, friends of the deceased (emically, the *sŏnghwaja* 성화자/聖和者), but may also involve a professional provider. Once a person has passed, the bereaved immediate family has the intimate opportunity to individually bid good bye during the farewell service (*songbyŏl yebae* 송별예배/送別禮拜), while at the same time a prayer vigil commences with family members taking turns continually or, more commonly, every few (ideally: three) hours. Also, there may only be a nightly vigil every three hours from 9:00 p.m. to 6:00

---

[21] Occasionally, the synonymous *sŏnghwa yesik* 성화예식/聖和禮式 is used in Korean.

[22] Emically, the term is occasionally rendered as "heavenly harmony."

[23] This category includes important Unificationists, such as Hong Sun-ae.

[24] This category is reserved for the children of True Parents as well as certain chief Unificationist dignitaries, such as Mun Hŭng-jin, Mun Yŏng-jin 문영진/文榮進 "Phillip" (1978–1999; Mun and Han's sixth son), Mun Hyo-jin, and, more recently, Pak Po-hŭi and Yi Yo-han 이요한/李耀翰 (1916–2019), the latter being one of the earliest followers joining Mun (1952) even prior to the establishment of the HSAUWC and holding multiple offices during his career.

[25] Specifically among Western Unificationists, the Seongwha Ceremony has been appropriated, among others, by discarding some decidedly "East Asian features," such as the traditional washing and clothing of the dead body (*yŏmsŭp* 염습/殮襲), food sacrifice, the preparation of a *myŏngjŏng* 명정/銘旌 etc. (see below).

[26] While cremation was discouraged (see, e.g., Kwak 1997, p. 133) for decades (although it was frequently practiced, specifically in Japan), Han put an end to the official recommendation against it in 2013. In the case of cremations, the ceremonial procedure has to be adjusted accordingly.

a.m., if at all, depending on the circumstances. If possible, in accordance with the Korean tradition,[27] the dead body will be washed and adjusted (combed, finger nails clipped, ritually covered, etc.)—a process which is traditionally called *yŏmsŭp*—and placed with the head turned northward upon a wooden board (*ch'ilsŏngp'an* 칠성판/七星板).[28]

Provided the location of the passing or general logistics allows it, a separate room—serving as the funeral hall (*ponganso* 봉안소/奉安所)—is prepared for the Gwihwan Ceremony.[29] It is cleansed with the Unificationist multi-purpose consecration material, the Cheon Il Guk Holy Salt (*ch'ŏnilguk sŏngyŏm* 천일국성염/天一國聖鹽).[30] An altar/table is then set up covered by a white cloth, or alternatively the FFWPU or Unification Movement flag. On it is placed a recent photograph of the deceased in a nice frame (preferably decorated with flowers) and usually arranged with a white (or, rarely, black) ribbon, alongside a (mostly framed) scroll inscribed (traditionally in *hanja* 한자/漢字, i.e., Chinese characters) with the deceased's name, two Cheon Il Guk Candles (*ch'ŏnilguk sŏngch'o* 천일국성초) in holders lit with Cheon Il Guk Matches (*ch'ŏnilguk sŏngsŏngnyang* 천일국성성냥), and small bowls of Holy Salt and incense. Additionally, the altar as well as the surrounding area are lavishly decorated with floral arrangements (preferably roses and lilies). Occasionally, several bowls with fruits (apples, oranges) and various biscuits are likewise placed on the altar. Above is hung a banner with the designation *sŏnghwa* written in *hanja* (or, internationally, it simply states "Seonghwa Ceremony"), indicating the name of the deceased, and, frequently, the Seonghwa Ceremony category and (church-related) function (e.g., National Messiah, Pastor) as well as the date according to the Unificationist Heavenly Calendar (*ch'ŏllyŏk* 천력/天曆) of the Cheon Il Guk Age.[31] Overall, it is most important that the premise appears in light and not dark colours in order to express the most joyous occasion, which in its salvational significance is understood to even surpass that of the Blessing Ceremony (Kwak 1997, p. 136).[32] In the background, a tape with Holy Songs (*sŏngga* 성가/聖歌) is oft-times played.

Usually twenty-four hours after the passing, the Encoffining Ceremony (*ipkwansik*입관식/入棺式), called by Unificationists *ipchŏnsik* 입전식/入殿式 (literally, "entering the palace ceremony"), takes place. Accompanied by prayers, the body is washed again and a burial garment (*suŭi* 수의/衣)—emically, Seonghwa Garment (*sŏnghwabok* 성화복/聖和服)—is donned, which concludes the *yŏmsŭp* procedure. The casket—called *chŏn* 전/殿 (literally, "palace") by Unificationists in lieu of the standard term *kwan* 관/棺—is cleansed with Holy Salt and fitted with rice paper, a white cloth, and a thin mattress. The body is then placed into the coffin alongside holy salted special personal items and key scriptures (formerly centring on the Wŏlli kangnon 원리강론/原理講—the central Unificationist text until 2013). The immediate family and close relatives may gather and bid farewell facing the body (possibly) a last time before the coffin is closed. A *myŏngjŏng* is made, that is, normally a red banner on which is written in yellow or white the name and honours of the deceased. Subsequent to the Encoffining Ceremony, a food sacrifice is made to the spirit (*sangsik* 상식/上食) which should ideally be conducted at 7:00 a.m. If the circumstances permit, the casket may be brought to the funeral hall, where it is placed on a catafalque or a pedestal located behind (or sometimes in front of) the altar. This concludes the preparation stage of the Seonghwa Ceremony.

---

[27] Traditional Korean funerary and mourning customs largely evolved against a neo-Confucian backdrop. The contemporary practice chiefly draws on a "Confucian-Christian interplay" (see Park 2010).

[28] Traditionally, a wooden board with seven holes signifying the Big Dipper. For the Wonjeon Ceremony, Unificationists use a septempartite board (without holes).

[29] Otherwise, the funeral hall might be relocated to one's home, a funeral parlour, or a Unificationist premise.

[30] In April 2016, for the age of Cheon Il Guk, Han consecrated the four traditional Unificationist sacred items—Holy Wine (*sŏngju* 성주/聖酒); Holy Salt (*sŏngyŏm* 성염/聖鹽); Holy Candle (*sŏngch'o* 성초); Holy Earth (*sŏngt'o* 성토/聖土). To signify this supreme benediction, "Cheon Il Guk" was added to their names.

[31] The Cheon Il Guk timeline commenced on 1 January 2013 (according to the lunar calendar) as the first day of the first month of year 1.

[32] For the Unificationist Blessing Ceremony, see Pokorny (2018a).

4.2. The Seonghwa Ceremony

The Gwihwan Ceremony is a memorial/farewell service where family and friends gather. When paying their respect to the deceased and immediate family members, the visitors might share testimonies about the deceased. The casket, on which is spread the FFWPU flag (or, previously, that of the Unification Movement), may be opened or remain closed during the ceremony. Instead of a prescribed procedure, the Gwihwan Ceremony may be conducted according to the will of the deceased. The middle part of the overall Seonghwa Ceremony carries the same name—Seonghwa Ceremony. It may take place in the same venue as the Gwihwan Ceremony. Frequently, however, it is held in another premise, such as a church-related or hospital facility. The ceremonial location is called Seonghwa Ceremony Hall (*sŏnghwa sikchang* 성화식장/聖和式場). Its set-up is virtually identical with that of the funeral hall. At a defined time, the Seonghwa Ceremony starts with usually six (rarely eight or ten) white-gloved pallbearers (*un'gu* 운구/運柩; or, emically, *pongsong wiwŏm* 봉송위원/奉送委員) entering the venue carrying the casket. Family members as well as everyone serving in an official role—but also, preferably, every other attendee—have to adhere to a formal dress code (save for the pallbearers who might don, e.g., white gowns), namely white or light coloured clothes for women and a black or dark blue suit, a white shirt, and white tie for men.[33] The Seonghwa Ceremony must not be moderated by a family member but by a friend of the deceased or a church official.

A sample sequence is as follows: (1) formal opening by the master of ceremonies (*sahoeja* 사회자/司會者); (2) jointly sung holy song; (3) individually assigned prayer; (4) (burning incense and) offering the National Flowers (*kukhwa* 국화/國花) of Cheon Il Guk (*hŏnhwa* 헌화/獻花)—a white lily (offered by women) and a red rose (offered by men)—by family and (possibly towards the end of the ceremony representative) guests; (5) biographical and achievement account of the deceased; (6) theologically minded address (*sŏnghwasa* 성화사/聖和辭); (7) laudatory address/eulogy; (8) jointly sung holy song; (9) blessing; (10) concluding remarks by the master of ceremonies.

Subsequently, a funeral cortege leaves the Seonghwa Ceremony Hall for the hearse in a defined order—head of ritual (*chimnyeja* 집례자/執禮者), who holy salts the entire path of the procession; the scroll carrier and the portrait carrier (occasionally vice versa); pallbearers; family; and other attendees (who are chanting a holy song). Once at the cemetery, the cortege marches to the burial site (emically called *wŏnjŏnji* 원전지/原殿地) where the last part of the Seonghwa Ceremony starts—the Wonjeon Ceremony (*wŏnjŏnsik*), that is, the interment ceremony (conventionally called *hagwansik* 하관식/下棺式 in Korea). The geomantically (*p'ungsu* 풍수/風水) proven burial ground has been prepared in advance. When the cortege arrives, the head of ritual formally opens the Wonjeon Ceremony tipping some Cheon Il Guk Holy Salt and, subsequently, Cheon Il Guk Holy Earth into the burying place. The latter serves the purpose of connecting the burial ground to the Garden of the Original Homeland (*ponhyangwŏn* 본향원/本鄕苑), that is, the Edenic final resting place of True Parents, and by extension, the Kingdom of Heaven in Heaven. Next, the pallbearers lower the casket on ropes into the ground. The casket is then covered with *hanji* 한지/韓紙 (traditional Korean paper) on which the *myŏngjŏng* is unfolded. Atop is spread a white cloth with the FFWPU emblem, which is itself cloaked by the *ch'ilsŏngp'an*. An upper part of the *ch'ilsŏngp'an* is set aside so that the FFWPU emblem is once again visible. A family representative hands some lilies and roses used at the Seonghwa Ceremony, as well as new sacrificial flowers to the head of ritual who covers the emblem with them. Prayers are uttered, holy songs sung, and brief sermons and eulogies delivered. The *ch'ilsŏngp'an* part is put back again and the soil offering (*hyŏnt'o* 현토/獻土) commences, in which family members and selected dignitaries

---

[33] Formerly (but still presently seen internationally), it was deemed a requirement that men wear a white boutonnière and women a red corsage. These days, participants sometimes wear small ribbons pinned to their chest inscribed with *sŏnghwa*. Moreover, in smaller scale settings, the dress code is, at times, matched with conventional funeral attire (e.g., dark suits and black ties for men and dark coloured clothes for women).

in succession shovel soil into the burial pit. Finally, led by the head of ritual the assembled crowd gives three cheers of *ŏngmanse* 억만세/億萬,[34] which formally concludes the Wonjeon Ceremony.

4.3. Follow-Up

Back home, the immediate family ought to set up an altar covered by a white cloth, preferably located in the living room of the deceased. Atop is placed a portrait flanked by two Cheon Il Guk Candles—all three items previously used at the Seonghwa Ceremony. In front of the portrait is placed a tray on which, once a day during the principal meal, a portion is offered to the spirit of the deceased. This offering should be combined with a brief prayer on whose occasion incense may be burned. This daily service (*maeil yebae* 매일예배/每日禮拜) ought to be conducted over twenty-one or forty days. Additionally, largely in line with traditional Korean customs, post-Seonghwa commemorative rites should be performed. Firstly, three days after the Wonjeon Ceremony (which is counted as Day 1 by Unificationists), the family and, possibly, close friends assemble at the grave to carry out *samuje*. There the deceased is ritually remembered and paid reverence, offering flowers and food while burning incense and chanting prayers. This may be repeated at the burial place on the twenty-first, the fortieth (which is most commonly observed by Unificationists)[35] and the one-hundredth day after the interment. Further ancestral memorial rites (*ch'arye* 차례/茶禮 or *chesa* 제사/祭祀) henceforth held annually may take place on common occasions such as the death anniversary or the harvest festival in the middle of the eighth lunar month (*ch'usŏk* 추석/秋夕).

4.4. Extra Ecclesiam Salus Est?

Whereas a fully-fledged Seonghwa Ceremony is still the prerogative of Unificationists, in various 2010 events, Mun and Han bestowed Seunghwa Blessings (*sŭnghwa ch'ukpok* 승화축복/昇華祝福) to selected deceased non-Unificationists, who were deemed to have vitally contributed to the millenarian vision of Unificationism, particularly owing to their peace, welfare, and generally self-sacrificing activities.[36]

The first such event titled "Honoring a Legacy of Peace" was held on 18 March 2010 in the New York UN headquarters,[37] "involving" the spirits of Alexander Haig (1924–2010), a general and Secretary of State under Ronald Reagan (1911–2004; p. 1981–1989);[38] former South Korean president and Nobel Peace Prize Laureate Kim Tae-jung 김대중/金大中 (1924–2009; p. 1998–2003); Hédi Annabi (1943–2010), the head of the UN Stabilisation Mission in Haiti, and some one-hundred of his staff, who died when the Port-au-Prince UN Headquarters collapsed during the Haiti Earthquake; former Costa Rican president Rodrigo Carazo Odio (1926–2009; p. 1978–82) called by Mun a Peace President (*p'yŏnghwa'ŭi taet'ongnyŏng* 평화의 대통령) for his role in the establishment of the University for Peace; former Indonesian president Abdurrahman Wahid (1940–2009; p. 1999–2001); former Icelandic prime minister Steingrímur Hermannsson (1928–2010), who hosted the 1986 Reykjavík Summit between Reagan and Mikhail Gorbachev (b. 1931); the Senegalese head of the Tijaniyyah Sufi order Hassan

---

[34] Literally meaning "one hundred million times ten thousand years," the exclamation *ŏngmanse* serves Unificationists as a multi-purpose jubilant shout meant to signal utmost joy, love, gratitude, and determination.

[35] The forty-day period is deemed particularly important because upon entering the spiritual world the spirit of the deceased is thought to spend up to forty days before s/he settles.

[36] Most of the individuals culled for the 2010 events were affiliated with the United Nations (UN)-accredited Universal Peace Federation (UPF; *Ch'ŏnju p'yŏnghwa yŏnhap* 천주평화연합/天宙平和聯合), the Unification Movement's flagship organisation in the diplomatic arena founded in 2005.

[37] It was repeated in quick succession in the United States—on 1 April (Sheraton National Hotel in Arlington); 2 April (Manhattan Center in New York); 3 April (Paris Hotel in Las Vegas); and 9 April (Waikiki Beach Marriot Resort and Spa in Honolulu)—and, following South Korea, from May, without Mun and Han being in attendance, in a number of others countries worldwide. In the Las Vegas ceremony another individual was added, namely an alleged great local "peace worker"—Reiko Kawasaki—supposedly being a descendant of Tokugawa Ieyasu 川家康 (1543–1616).

[38] According to Mun, it was Haig's military intervention in Hŭngnam 흥남/興南 during the Korean War in late 1950, that allowed him to escape the Hŭngnam labour camp. Haig therefore saved his life so that Mun could carry on with his divinely assigned mission.

Cissé 1945–2008); and the Indian politician and diplomat Laxmi Mall Singhvi (1931–2007), whom Mun called an Ambassador of Reconciliation and Peace (*hwahae'wa p'yŏnghwa'ŭi taesa* 화해와 평화의 대사). On 13 April 2010, the first of a corresponding series of events held in South Korea—the World Peace Leaders Memorial Unification Seunghwa Festival Commemoration Meeting (*segye p'yŏnghwa chidoja ch'umo t'ongil sŭnghwa ch'ukche kinyŏm taehoe* 세계평화지도자추모통일승화축제기념대회/世界平和指導者追慕統一昇華祝祭紀念大會)—was staged in Seoul.[39] There the Seunghwa Blessing was once again given to Haig, Kim, Annabi, Carazo Odio, and Wahid. Additional receivers were Douglas MacArthur (1880–1964); the former South Korean minister of labour Cho Ch'ŏl-gwŏn 조철권/趙澈權 (1929–2007); the former Nepalese prime minister Girija Prasad Koirala (1924–2010); the naval diver Han Chu-ho 한주호/韓主浩 (1958–2010), who died on a rescue mission for the *Ch'ŏnan* corvette which was scuppered by a North Korean torpedo in March 2010;[40] and, surprisingly, also the Unificationist elder Kim Wŏn-p'il 김원필/金元弼 (1928–2010), who had already obtained a World Seunghwa Ceremony a few days prior.

After the steady flow of ceremonies in 2010, chiefly mirroring the first New York event, in later years this format was only very sporadically and in a low-key fashion utilised by national/local branches, such as the ones of Ghana and the United States. In the latter case, for example, in 2014 the likes of Nelson Mandela (1918–2013) and Martin Luther King Jr (1929–1968) alongside local Las Vegans were given the Seonghwa Blessing (*sŏnghwa ch'ukpok* 성화축복/聖和祝福). Since then, the practice of non-member Seonghwa Blessing effectively came to a halt.

In Unification theological terms, this newly devised format was thought to enable the receivers to grow closer to God allowing them to move up the hierarchy of residence in the spiritual world. In the words of Mun, he opened for them the "door to the exalted eternal life" (Mun 2010, p. 15).[41] While this is surely intended to mean a soteriological elevation, it does not put the non-Unificationist *sŏnghwaja* on a salvational par with a deceased devoted member. Instead, it merely salvifically empowers non-Unificationist spirits to embark on a more clearly demarcated Unificationist trajectory in the spiritual world geared towards the Principled Realm.

5. Concluding Remarks

With a now well-established and distinctive funerary tradition in place and owing to its aging membership (and leadership) and, concomitantly, a rising number of deaths (including most echoingly that of Mun himself), since the 2000s one not only encounters an increasingly professionalised funerary management with Seonghwa expert committees, etc.[42], but a visibly increasing general concern for adequate burial space. The latter manifests, among others, in a growing, albeit still relatively small, number of specific Unificationist "burial areas" or Wonjeons (*wŏnjŏn* 원전/原殿).[43] Whereas the main (Korean) Wonjeon—the P'aju Wonjeon (*P'aju wŏnjŏn* 파주원전/坡州原殿)—located in Mugŏn 무건/武建 Village close to the North Korean border has been in operation since the early 1970s but with a limited capacity (by 2013, only some one-hundred members were buried there),[44] another one—the

---

[39] Following Mun's passing, the label "Seonghwa Festival" (*sŏnghwa ch'ukche* 성화축제/聖和祝祭) is reserved for his anniversary-of-death celebrations.

[40] Later, the Seunghwa Blessing was as well issued to the forty-six drowned crew members of the *Ch'ŏnan*.

[41] "이처럼 귀한 영생으로의 문을 열어주기 위해, 본인은 지난 3월 18일 뉴욕의 UN본부에서 최근에 영면한 세계적 평화 지도자들에게 승화식을 베풀어 주었습니다."

[42] More recently taking also expression, for example, in the form of a specialised private Unificationist funeral parlour (see https://seongwhawon.com/home), that is, *Sŏnghwawŏn* 성화원/聖和苑 (Seonghwa Garden), an undertaker business launched in 2016.

[43] Prior to the introduction of specifically assigned burial areas, interments were conducted in ordinary burial sites/public cemeteries with the respective plots being consecrated (i.e., holy salted etc.). This, of course, applies to this day for burials not taking place in Wonjeons.

[44] The land was donated to the Unification Movement in the 1960s. Interments at the P'aju Wonjeon—divided into four burial sections—are (upon permission) reserved for family members of Mun and Han (notably including Mun's son, Mun Hŭi-jin 문희진/(文喜進 [1954–1969] who was born out of wedlock, and whose remains were disinterred and transferred to the P'aju Wonjeon); relatives; church elders; and important adherents of high social standing. Mun and Han's gravesite is the

Ch'unchŏn Wonjeon (*Ch'unchŏn wŏnjŏn* 춘천원전/春川原殿)—opened in 2014 in the Kangwŏn Province capital offering space for nearly two thousand plots.[45]

Elaborately ingrained in Unification Theology and ritually drawing upon an amalgam of traditional Korean and conventional Christian custom, the Seonghwa tradition articulates a distinctive practice (also highlighted by a special emic nomenclature)—a practice, which, over the years, has become a central element of the Unificationist lifeworld.

Funding: This research received no external funding.

Conflicts of Interest: The author declares no conflict of interest.

Glossary of Korean Names

Cho Ch'ŏl-gwŏn 조철권/趙澈權	Cho Chull-kwon
Han Chu-ho 한주호/韓主浩	Han Joo-ho
Han Hak-cha한학자/韓鶴子	Hak Ja Han Moon
Hong Sun-ae 홍순애/洪順愛	Soon Ae Hong (Dae Mo Nim)
Kim Sin-uk 김신욱/金信旭	Shin Ook Kim (Lady Dr. Kim)
Kim Hyo-nam 김효남/金孝南	Hyo Nam Kim (Hoon Mo Nim)
Kim Tae-jung 김대중/金大中	Kim Dae-jung
Kim Wŏn-p'il 김원필/金元弼	Won Pil Kim
Kim Yŏng-sun 김영순/金英順	Young Soon Kim
Kim Yŏng-un 김영운/金永雲	Young Oon Kim
Mun Hŭi-jin 문희진/文喜進	Hee Jin Moon
Mun Hun-suk 문훈숙/文淑	Hoon Sook "Julia" Moon
Mun Hŭng-jin 문흥진/文興進	Heung Jin "Richard" Moon
Mun Hyo-jin 문효진/文孝進	Hyo Jin "Stephen" Moon
Mun Sŏn-myŏng 문선명/文鮮明	Sun Myung Moon
Mun Yŏng-jin 문영진/文榮進	Young Jin 'Phillip' Moon
Pak Chung-hyŏn 박중현/朴重	Joong Hyun Park
Pak Po-hŭi 박보희/朴普熙	Bo Hi Pak
Yi Sang-hŏn 이상헌/李相軒	Sang Hun Lee
Yi Yo-han 이요한/李耀翰	Yo Han Lee
Yu Hyo-wŏn 유효원/劉孝元	Hyo Won Eu

Abbreviations

CPG	*Ch'am pumogyŏng: Ch'ŏnilguk kyŏngjŏn* 참父母經: 天一國經典 (Segye P'yŏnghwa T'ongil Kajŏng Yŏnhap 2015)
CSG	*Ch'ŏnsŏnggyŏng: Ch'ŏnilguk kyŏngjŏn* 天聖經: 天一國經典 (Segye P'yŏnghwa T'ongil Kajŏng Yŏnhap 2013)
MS	*Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm sŏnjip* 文鮮明先生말씀選集 (Mun Sŏn-myŏng Sŏnsaeng Malssŭm P'yŏnch'an Wiwŏnhoe)
UN	United Nations
UPF	Universal Peace Federation
WK	*Wŏlli kangnon* 원리강론 [Exposition of the Principle] (Segye P'yŏnghwa T'ongil Kajŏng Yŏnhap 1999)

Garden of the Original Homeland (*ponhyangwŏn*), which is adjacent to the Unification Movement's chief sacred site, the *Ch'ŏnjŏnggung* 천정궁/天正宮 (Palace of Heavenly Righteousness) in Songsan 송산/松山 Village, Kyŏnggi Province.

[45] Other major international Wonjeons include, among others, the *Oze reien* 尾園 in Katashina 片品, Gunma Prefecture, established in 1983. This is the chief Japanese Wonjeon, which is also the venue of the annual All Japan Seonghwa Festival (*Zen'nihon seiwa shukusai* 全日本聖和祝祭) (see https://oze-reien.jp/). And the National Wonjeon Shrine at the Fort Lincoln Funeral Home and Cemetery in Brentwood, Maryland, which formally opened in 2003 (see http://www.nationalwonjeon.com/).

References

Baker, Don. 2007. Rites of Passage in the Unification Church. In *Religions of Korea in Practice*. Edited by Robert E. Buswell Jr. Princeton: Princeton University Press, pp. 497–507.

Beverley, James A. 2005. Spirit Revelation and the Unification Church. In *Controversial New Religions*. Edited by James R. Lewis and Jesper Aagaard Petersen. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press, pp. 43–59.

Chryssides, George D. 1991. *The Advent of Sun Myung Moon: The Origins, Beliefs and Practices of the Unification Church*. Basingstoke and London: Macmillan.

Family Federation for World Peace and Unification USA. 2016. *Guide to the Seonghwa Ceremony: Prepared by the District One Seonghwa Committee*. FFWPU District One.

Kil, Yŏng-hwan 길영환. 2002. T'ongil kyohoe'ŭi chugŭm'ŭi ihae'wa sŭnghwasik 통일교회의 죽음의 이해와 승화(昇華)식 [Understanding Death in the Unification Church, and the Seunghwa]. *Sinjonggyo yŏn'gu* 신종교 연구 [New Religion Studies] 7: 146–62.

Kim, Chi-hye 김지예. 2006. Yŏnggye'ŭi silsang'gwa chisang segye'ŭi kwan'gye'e taehan t'ongil wŏllijŏk koch'al: Ch'ŏnjujŏk 3 taech'ukpok saenghwar'ŭl chungsim'ŭro 영계의 실상과 지상세계의 관계에 대한 통일원리적 고찰: 천주적 3대축복 생활을 중심으로 [A Study of the Relationship between the Reality of the Spiritual World and the Earthly World from the Unification Principle Perspective: Centring on the Life of the Cosmic Three Great Blessings]. Master's thesis, Ch'ŏngsim sinhak taehagwŏn taehakkyo 청심신학대학원대학교 [Ch'ŏngsim Graduate School of Theology], Yongin, Korea.

Kim, Yŏng-sun 김영순, and T'ongil Sasang Yŏn'guwŏn 통일사상연구원. 1998. *Yŏnggye'ŭi silsang'gwa chisang saenghwal: Yi Sang-hŏn sŏnsaeng'i yŏnggye'eso ponaen mesiji* 영계의 실상과 지상생활: 이상헌 선생이 영계에서 보낸 메시지 [The Reality of the Spiritual World and Life on Earth: Mr Yi Sang-hŏn's Messages from the Spiritual World]. Sŏul 서울: Sŏnghwa ch'ulp'ansa 성화출판사.

Kwak, Chung Hwan, ed. 1985. *The Tradition: Book One*. New York: H.S.A.U.W.C.

Kwak, Chŏng-hwan 곽정환. 1997. *Segye P'yŏnghwa T'ongil Kajŏng Yŏnhap yebŏp'kwa ŭirye. Chŏnt'ong* 세계평화통일가정연합 예법과 의례 傳統 [Family Federation for World Peace and Unification Etiquette and Ceremonial: The Tradition]. Sŏul 서울: Sŏnghwa ch'ulp'ansa 성화출판사.

Mun Sŏn-myŏng Sŏnsaeng Malssŭm P'yŏnch'an Wiwŏnhoe 文鮮明先生말씀編纂委員會, ed. 2002a. *Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm sŏnjip <che 130 kwŏn> 文鮮明先生말씀選集 <第130卷> [The Selected Sermons of Mun Sŏn-myŏng, Book 130]*. Sŏul 서울: Sŏnghwa ch'ulp'ansa 成和出版社.

Mun Sŏn-myŏng Sŏnsaeng Malssŭm P'yŏnch'an Wiwŏnhoe 文鮮明先生말씀編纂委員會, ed. 2002b. *Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm sŏnjip <che 131 kwŏn>* 文鮮明先生말씀選集 <第131卷> [The Selected Sermons of Mun Sŏn-myŏng, Book 131]. Sŏul 서울: Sŏnghwa ch'ulp'ansa 成和出版社.

Mun Sŏn-myŏng Sŏnsaeng Malssŭm P'yŏnch'an Wiwŏnhoe 文鮮明先生말씀編纂委員會, ed. 2002c. *Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm sŏnjip <che 137 kwŏn>* 文鮮明先生말씀選集 <第137卷> [The Selected Sermons of Mun Sŏn-myŏng, Book 137]. Sŏul 서울: Sŏnghwa ch'ulp'ansa 成和出版社.

Mun Sŏn-myŏng Sŏnsaeng Malssŭm P'yŏnch'an Wiwŏnhoe 文鮮明先生말씀編纂委員會, ed. 2002d. *Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng malssŭm sŏnjip <che 225 kwŏn>* 文鮮明先生말씀選集 <第225卷> [The Selected Sermons of Mun Sŏn-myŏng, Book 225]. Sŏul 서울: Sŏnghwa ch'ulp'ansa 成和出版社.

Mun, Sŏn-myŏng 문선명. 2010. Ch'ŏnjiin ch'ambumo chŏngch'ak silch'e malssŭm sŏnp'o taehoe 천지인참부모정착실체말씀선포대회 [The True Parents of Heaven, Earth, and Humankind's Settlement of the Substantial Word Proclamation Assembly]. In *World Assembly to Proclaim the Substantial Word of God and the Era of the Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humankind*. New York: Unification Church of America, pp. 13–19.

Mun, Pyŏng-jo 문병조. 2016. Yŏnggyeron'e kwanhan t'ongil sasangjŏk chŏpkŭn 영계론에 관한 통일사상적 접근 [A Unification Thought Approach to the Spiritual World Theory]. *T'ongil sasang yŏn'gu* 통일사상연구 [Unification Thought Studies] 10: 291–338.

O, T'aek-yong 오택용. 2012. Mun Sŏn-myŏng sŏnsaeng'ŭi sŏnp'osig'ŭl t'onghan hananim'ŭi sŏmni ihae 문선명 선생의 선포식을 통한 하나님의 섭리이해 [Understanding God's Providence through Mun Sŏn-myŏng's Proclamation Ceremonies]. Ph.D. thesis, Sŏnmun taehakkyo 선문대학교 [Sun Moon University], Asan, Korea.

Pak, Bo Hi. 1999. *Truth Is My Sword, Volume 2: Inspirational Messages and Personal Testimonies to Reverend Moon*. New York: The Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity.

Pak, Joong Hyun, and Andrew Wilson. 2006. *True Family Values*, 3rd ed. New York: Family Federation for World Peace and Unification.

Park, Chang-Won. 2010. *Cultural Blending in Korean Death Rites: New Interpretive Approaches*. London: Continuum.
Pokorny, Lukas. 2013. "The Millenarian Dream Continued": Foundation Day, Vision 2020 and the Post-Mun Unification Movement. *Vienna Journal of East Asian Studies* 4: 123–57. [CrossRef]
Pokorny, Lukas. 2014. Millenarian Retrospects and Prospects: The Post-Mun Unification Movement in Austria. In *Religion in Austria*. Edited by Hans Gerald Hödl and Lukas Pokorny. Vienna: Praesens, vol. 2, pp. 127–79.
Pokorny, Lukas. 2017a. A Feminising Revolution: The Unification Movement and the "Age of Women". *Interdisciplinary Journal for Religion and Transformation in Contemporary Society* 5: 214–34. [CrossRef]
Pokorny, Lukas. 2017b. "Nusiel Unbound": The Archangel and the Fall in Unification Thought. In *Fall Narratives: An Interdisciplinary Perspective*. Edited by Zohar Hadromi-Allouche and Áine Larkin. London and New York: Routledge, pp. 90–104.
Pokorny, Lukas. 2018a. Austrian Unificationists Meet Their Messiah: The 1969 European Blessing, Its Context, and Aftermath. In *Religion in Austria*. Edited by Hans Gerald Hödl and Lukas Pokorny. Vienna: Praesens, vol. 4, pp. 1–51.
Pokorny, Lukas. 2018b. Unification Movement. In *Handbook of East Asian New Religious Movements*. Edited by Lukas Pokorny and Franz Winter. Leiden and Boston: Brill, pp. 321–42.
Pokorny, Lukas, and Dominic Zoehrer. 2018. Austrian Unificationist Perspectives vis-à-vis the Cheon Il Guk Constitution, with an Annotated Bilingual Translation of the Text. In *Religion in Austria*. Edited by Hans Gerald Hödl and Lukas Pokorny. Vienna: Praesens, vol. 4, pp. 205–88.
Segye P'yŏnghwa T'ongil Kajŏng Yŏnhap 세계평화통일가정연합. 1999. *Wŏlli kangnon* 원리강론 [Exposition of the Principle]. Sŏul 서울: Sŏnghwa ch'ulp'ansa 성화출판사. First published 1966.
Segye P'yŏnghwa T'ongil Kajŏng Yŏnhap 세계평화통일가정연합. 2013. *Ch'ŏnsŏnggyŏng: Ch'ŏnilguk kyŏngjŏn* 天聖經: 天一國經典 [Heavenly Scripture: The Scripture of Cheon Il Guk]. Sŏul 서울: Sŏnghwa ch'ulp'ansa 성화출판사.
Segye P'yŏnghwa T'ongil Kajŏng Yŏnhap 세계평화통일가정연합. 2015. *Ch'am pumogyŏng: Ch'ŏnilguk kyŏngjŏn* 참父母經: 天一國經典 [True Parents Scripture: The Scripture of Cheon Il Guk]. Sŏul 서울: Sŏnghwa ch'ulp'ansa 성화출판사.
Selig, William P. 2013. *True Family and the Seonghwa Tradition: For Members of the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification*, Self-published.
Selig, William P. 2014. *Guide to the Seonghwa Ceremony: The Third Stage of Life. Based on the Teachings of Sun Myung Moon. For Citizens of Cheon Il Guk*, Self-published.
Sin Han'guk Kajŏng Yŏnhap Kajŏngguk 신한국가정연합가정국. 2020. *Hyŏphoe Sŏnghwasik chinhaeng maenyuŏl (v1)* 협회 성화식 진행 매뉴얼 (v1) [Association Seonghwa Ceremony Proceeding Manual].
Wilson, Andrew. 2003. Research into the Ontology of Spirit World and Spirit Persons in Unification Thought. *Journal of Unification Studies* 5: 145–74.
Yang, Ch'ang-su 양창수. 2007. T'ongilgyo sŭnghwasig'e taehan yŏn'gu 통일교 승화식 (昇華式)에 대한 연구 [A Study on the Sŭnghwa Ceremony of the Unification Church]. Master's thesis, Sŏnmun taehakkyo 선문대학교 [Sun Moon University], Asan, Korea.
Yang, P'yŏn-sŭng 양편승. 2007. Sangjang ŭirye chŏlch'a'e taehan pigyo yŏngu: T'ongilgyo sangjang ŭirye'rŭl chungsim'ŭro 상장의례 절차에 대한 비교연구: 통일교 상장의례를 중심으로 [A Comparative Study of Funeral Rite Procedures: Centring on the Funeral Rite of the Unification Church]. *Sinjonggyo yŏn'gu* 신종교연구 [New Religion Studies] 17: 138–71.
Yang, P'yŏn-sŭng 양편승. 2010. T'ongilgyo'ŭi saensagwan'gwa chug'ŭm ŭirye 통일교의 생사관과 죽음의례 [The Unification Church's View on Life and Death and Death Rites]. *Sinjonggyo yŏn'gu* 신종교연구 [New Religion Studies] 23: 91–114.
Yi, Sang-hŏn 이상헌. 1995. T'ongil sasang yŏnggyeron 통일사상 영계론 [Theory of the Spiritual World in Unification Thought]. *T'ongil sasang* 통일사상 [Unification Thought] 33: 28–36.

© 2020 by the author. Licensee MDPI, Basel, Switzerland. This article is an open access article distributed under the terms and conditions of the Creative Commons Attribution (CC BY) license (http://creativecommons.org/licenses/by/4.0/).

Minjung Noh

Implementing Interreligious Dialogue

A Solution for International Challenges? (Universal Peace Federation / 2005 – 2009)

1 Introduction

In the landscape of contemporary interreligious dialogue, the Universal Peace Federation (UPF) takes up a unique place. Founded in 2005, it is one of the newest organizations in this field. Moreover, UPF is run, unlike other international interreligious dialogue (or interfaith) organizations, by one religion: The Unification Church, a new religious movement started in South Korea by Rev. Sun Myung Moon in the mid-20th-century. Considering the fact that most interfaith activities have thus far been performed by "mainstream" religious entities inside Islam and Christianity, the two above facts allow us to fathom how UPF is different from other interreligious dialogue organizations.

Although UPF carries distinctive characteristics of its own, it also has deep continuity with the history of interfaith dialogue made clear when examining its foundational works on interfaith enterprise as early as the 1970s. This is due to the idea of interreligious dialogue being embedded in the doctrine of the Unification Church. At the same time, its initiatives and projects are also closely tied to UN engagement. As a non-governmental organization (NGO) with religious voices among its representatives, UPF has actively participated in the Economic and Social Council (ECOSOC) of the United Nations.

From these above basic facts, we can clearly see that UPF has complex features that need examining. Therefore, this chapter primarily aims to analyze the background and foundation of UPF. In the course of the investigation, this study finds that the inauguration of UPF reflects the situation after 9/11. That is to say, the radical change in international politics and religious field since 2001 propelled the foundation of UPF. This new organization did not start out of nowhere; the historical context of interfaith dialogue and the previous activities of the Unification Church buttressed its foundation.

Hence, this chapter posits that there are the two major factors that led to the foundation of UPF: (1) the historical changes that influenced and formed the milieu for this new interreligious initiatives; and (2) the existing agents who were already devoted to interreligious dialogue and had the know-how regarding in-

OpenAccess. © 2021 Minjung Noh, published by De Gruyter. BY-NC-ND This work is licensed under the Creative Commons Attribution-NonCommercial-NoDerivatives 4.0 License.
https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110529173-013

terfaith activities. UPF is a new organization that must be understood as part of a continuum, having been preceded by the Interreligious and International Federation for World Peace (IIFWP), which is a specialized organization with highly experienced staffs in the realm of international NGOs. This chapter, therefore, focuses on the transition from IIFWP to UPF in relation to the above two factors.

This study is composed of three parts. The first section is a preliminary account on the background of UPF and an explanation about its methodology. This includes a brief history of UPF, clarifying the place of UPF within the overall history of interfaith dialogue. Also, it describes the socio-political surroundings. Then, the methodology and materials that are used in the report are introduced; this report predominantly relies on empirical and historical research based on written documents; the interviews with the members of the organization were also used to structure this research. This methodology is necessary to probe the hypothesis on the interaction of historical settings and the existing agents in the organization. In the second section, which is the main part of this chapter, the foundation phase of UPF is analyzed in detail. Several important episodes found in the archival documents and interviews with people in UPF formed the basis of this chapter. The final section summarizes previous parts and also compares the initial hypothesis and the research results. They will illuminate the implications and the context within which UPF was founded and its place within the contemporary IRD field.

2 Understanding the Universal Peace Federation: Background and Methodology

2.1 The Unification Church and the Universal Peace Federation

Before getting into the details of UPF, it is essential to understand that this organization is one of the enterprises that the Unification Church has been running for a long time. Thus, it is necessary to first take a brief look into the history of the Unification Church and determine the status that UPF takes on inside this new religious movement. The Unification Church was founded in 1954, in Seoul, South Korea, under the name of "Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity" by Rev. Sun Myung Moon. According to Frederick Sonntag, a philosopher and writer who conducted an expansive interview with

Rev. Moon in the 1970s, the founder of the Unification Church received a revelation from God on an Easter morning 1938 and maintained his vision since then.[1]

The founder's vision has always been one of the most important motivations of the Unification Church. Rev. Sun Myung Moon was born in 1920 in a rural town of what is now North Korea. His family had a Presbyterian background.[2] His life became traumatic during the Japanese occupation and the subsequent Korean War. He was educated in Korea and then in Japan. Later he returned to Korea to spread his religious vision. However, in 1948, he was imprisoned in North Korea for not conforming to communist ideology under the Soviet occupation. From that experience, he expressed a clear anti-communist stand, which always persisted in his speeches and arguments subsequently. He was liberated by the United Nations (UN) forces and moved to South Korea in 1950.

In the 1950s, Rev. Sun Myung Moon formalized his religious movement into a church. Along with the official establishment of the Unification Church in 1954, he gradually developed his interpretation of the Bible and started to publish his own independent scripture from 1952 onwards. The completed version of 'The Divine Principle', the central scripture of the Unification Church, appeared in 1966 (the English version appeared in 1973).[3] This scripture was largely based on the interpretation of the story in Genesis and the role of the founder as a Messiah. In his interpretation, the story of Adam and Eve represents the failure to accomplish a harmonious family. Also, in his opinion, Jesus failed to complete the mission of God, since he was murdered before establishing a God-blessed family. Therefore, the founder has carried this mission to complete unfinished work of the previous prophet, namely Jesus, from which the famous mass marriage ritual of the Unification Church is derived.

After increasing its power and size in Korea throughout the 1960s, the Unification Church actively started to spread its ideals around the world.[4] Pointedly, Rev. Moon moved to the US in the early 1970's and embarked on this mission. The Unification Church's lucrative business, mode of mission and Christian-de-

1 Information on the foundation of Unification Church is from Frederick Sontag, *Sun Myung Moon and Unification Church* (Nashville: Abingdon, 1977), 78.

2 Sontag, *Sun Myung Moon*, 77–80.

3 George D. Chryssides, *The Advent of Sun Myung Moon* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991), 23.

4 The early missionary activities of the Unification Church are well accounted here: David G. Bromley and Anson D. Shupe, Jr, *"Moonies" in America* (Thousand Oaks: Sage Publication, 1979), 57–82. Also, detailed description on the movement's early activity and organization can be found in here: Rodney Stark and John Lofland, "Becoming a World-Saver: A Theory of Conversion to a Deviant Perspective," *American Sociological Review* 30/6 (1965): 862–875. The research subjects are mentioned under pseudonym.

rived doctrine have aroused much debate, controversy, as well as questions of heresy in the United States (US). For instance, Rev. Moon's alleged involvement in politics in the 1970s and his imprisonment due to tax evasion in the US (1984) shows the fact that he and the movement were 'issue-makers' in the USA during the 1970s – 80s.[5] In this period, there was a large number of converts worldwide and the size of the Unification Church reached its peak.[6]

After those heydays in the US, the Unification Church has somewhat diminished in size, but still remains as one of the most prominent new religious movements in the world. In 1997, the Unification Church internationally re-launched under the name "The Family Federation for World Peace and Unification" (FFWPU). This change gave the movement less of a religious overtone since it does not explicitly proclaim to be a religious organization.[7] It appeared that the movement tried to embrace a more comprehensive scale of groups and individuals beyond religious institutions. Although hundreds of local branches still definitely see themselves as churches and "congregations" and the movement is still largely motivated by its religious agenda, the name change into FFWPU reflects the more recent vision of the movement.

With this brief history of the Unification Church in mind, this chapter now moves to examine what place UPF occupies in the overall picture of the movement. To understand the characteristics of UPF, it is necessary to understand that the whole movement consists of various organizations and businesses that can be compared to a conglomerate company: according to the entry on the Unification Church in the *Encyclopedia of Global Religion*, the number of business or organization linked to the Unification Church amounts to 1,000 worldwide. They include "Ambassadors for Peace: Bridgeport University; CARP; Il Hwa; International Cultural Foundation; Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace; Professors World Peace Academy; Tong Il; and Women's Federation for World Peace, and so on." [8] Hence, UPF can be considered one of the organizations run by the Unification Church today.[9]

---

5 Bromly et al, *"Moonies" in America*, 149 – 167.

6 Dawn Hutchinson, *Antiquity and Social Reform* (Newcastle: Cambridge Scholars Publishing, 2010), 26 – 42; *Sun Myung Moon and Unification Church*, 44 – 69.

7 "Many members of the FFWPU accept and follow Reverend Moon's particular religious teaching, the Divine Principle, and are known as Unificationists. The FFWPU was founded in 1997 by Reverend and Mrs. Moon in order to expand the mission of the Unification Church to create an alliance of people who generally share their vision of building God-centered families as the basis for healthy communities, stable societies and a peaceful world." https://ihq.ffwpu.org/who weare/ (accessed: 24.5.2020).

8 Eileen Barker, "Unification Church," in *Encyclopedia of Global Religion*, ed. Mark Juergensmeyer and Wade Clark Roof (Thousand Oaks Sage Publications, 2012): 1319 – 1321.

What distinguishes UPF from other organizations of the Unification Church is the fact that interreligious dialogue and "unification" among the religions have been major concerns of the movement based on its doctrine. According to Marcus Braybrooke, a noted Anglican interfaith scholar, the Unification Church has advanced its interfaith dialogue project to realize its ideal "toward the restoration of one unified world."[10] According to the Unification Church a unified world will be made possible by creating a unified cultural sphere. Thus, the role of religions and their unification is essential for the agenda. Braybrooke quotes Rev. Moon's words on this vision:

> ... as representatives of the world's religions, you are called to bring your churches, mosques, synagogues, ashrams, and temples into a cooperative unity for the sake of world peace and human freedom, centered on God.[11]

Braybrooke traces the interfaith activities of the Unification Church back to as early as 1977. Starting from the Global Congress of the World's Religions held in San Francisco (1977), several congresses and councils were founded and funded by the Unification Church. Those include the Global Congress of World Religions, and the Council for the World's Religions (1980). In this formative period, the New Ecumenical Research Association (the New ERA) conferences with other Christian academics and the organization of the International Religious Foundation (IRF) were precursors of later Unification Church interreligious dialogue activities. The Unification Church's interfaith work continued with the Assembly of World's Religions, which started in 1985, with a large conference and event with religious leaders from other religions. Braybrooke describes the group discussions in the Assemblies as one of the most fruitful dialogue experiences.[12]

---

9 There has been a few researches on the Unification Church in the latter half of the 20th-century Anglophone world. For the general list of research, see *Antiquity and Social Reform,* 23–26. Here, Hutchinson lists existing scholarship on the Unification church. However, there have been many works that are largely derogatory to the movement, and they usually name the movement as "moonism." The exception is "*Moonies*" *in America.* Here, Bromley and Shupe analyze the movement from a sociological standpoint. I think that *Sun Myung Moon and Unification Church* provides a relatively objective and accurate picture on the movement in the late 70's. More elaborated and multi-dimensional work on the Unification Church from an academic perspective is *The Advent of Sun Myung Moon,* which studies the Korean traditional context and its interminglement with Christianity as the background of Unificationism.

10 Marcus Braybrooke, *Pilgrimage of Hope* (Philadelphia: Trinity Press International, 1991), 270.

11 Braybrooke, *Pilgrimage of Hope,* 270. He mentions that this is from The Fourth International Conference on God, which was held in Seoul, August 11, 1984.

12 Braybrooke, *Pilgrimage of Hope,* 276. Adding to this, we can refer to the remarks of Dr. Walsh in an interview that I conducted in July 10, 2014: "There were also an interest in Unification

As we can see, there were a lot of interfaith organizations, seminars and conferences promoted by the Unification Church. This fact proves that interreligious dialogue was not a one-time subject for the movement. Intertwined with its doctrine and ideal for a unified culture and the world, the Unification Church developed its agenda of interfaith dialogue. It seems that its activities from the 1970s to 1980s focused on academic interchanges, opening up the doors for interfaith conversation and promoting its agenda and initiatives to various religious entities. In 1991, the foundation of the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace (IRFWP) by Rev. Moon was an organizational shift to realize the existing agenda with a more systematic effort.

However, from the late 1990s, Unification Church started to promote another project: a vision of a religious council in the United Nations. Building on its previous work for interreligious dialogue, the Unification Church started to exert its efforts in creating a new and more effective sphere for interfaith dialogue and engagement. The foundation of (Interreligious and International Federation for World Peace, 1999 (IIFWP) and its 2000 Assembly, "Renewing the United Nations and Building a Culture of Peace" clearly show these new objectives. Let us observe a part of the proceedings of the conference. First, the keynote address of Rev. Sun Myung Moon is as follows:

> ... one of the reasons I founded the Interreligious and International Federation of World Peace was to help create an interreligious assembly to serve as a senate or council within the United Nations. To implement that plan, I propose that each nation, in addition to its

---

Church, this new religious movement. And that involvement gave birth to the first interfaith organization, that Rev. Moon established in the West called The New Ecumenical Research Association, for short, NEW ERA. (...) And one of the flagship project of the New ERA that began on the 1980's something called, it was a conference series, on "God: the contemporary discussion." So for about ten years, every year there was a God conference. It was interfaith. And I would say new ERA tended to be scholarly. Little more than clergy centered. There's a difference between academicians who may be Jewish or Buddhist or they teach Buddhism, they love Buddhism, but they are academics. like even Leonard Swidler type, he's roman Catholic, and still Roman Catholic, when he talks in a conference, he doesn't say this is what the Pope believes, this is what the catholic believes, he's a broader, because his mind is filled with, and this is what characterizes, many, this Western academics, in some ways academic community globally tends to observe religion a little more objectively, and can differentiate between their own faith and their professional responsibilities. Then so it started to create, that's why an idea, that's why I used the family of a tree almost like a genealogy of tree or something. Kind of UTS, New ERA, The God conference series started then out of the God conference."

> current ambassador, send a religious ambassador to the United Nations to serve as a member of the religious assembly, or U.N. senate.[13]

Here, Moon's vision is clearly articulated. He insists that a distinctive and independent council be implemented inside the UN system. To realize this goal, he called for the participation of other religious entities as well. This goal was highly ambitious since it asked for the UN, a nation-state based international organization, to embrace a new set of influence within its structure: religious groups. In this context, IIFWP was founded. The launching of IIFWP is one of the pivotal background events of UPF, upon which I shall expound more in section three further below.

2.2 Remarks on Methodology

2.2.1 Material Used for the Analysis

The methodology of this analysis largely relies on the documental resources found at the UPF's office: e. g. official proceedings of various conferences, documents on the logistics of each of the events UPF held, seminar materials, etc. Additionally, this analysis includes interviews with the core members of UPF who worked for the organization and interreligious dialogue for more than 15 years. These two kinds of sources—office documents and interviews—help to examine the core episodes behind the foundation of UPF.

To understand the characteristic of the materials used in this research, it is necessary to understand the organization's activity. So far, the organization has not been the subject of any academic study or research, probably due to its relatively new foundation. But it may also be because it falls outside the mainstream Western religious entities. The organization can be said to be the first of its kind in the history of interreligious activity. Hence the observations about this organization found in this chapter are primarily based on the UPF website and my own experience interacting with members of this organization.[14]

---

13 IIFWP, *Renewing the United Nations and Building a Culture of Peace: A Report from the Interreligious and International Federation for World Peace Assembly 2000* (New York: IIFWP, 2000), 58.

14 The official Web site of Universal Peace Foundation, ed. *Universal Peace Foundation:* http://www.upf.org/ (accessed: 24. 5. 2020). However, the considerable volume of the materials is still not digitized, hidden in a staff's hard drive, or lost with a broken Web link. However, in the course of my research, I requested certain materials and one staff person found them in his

The UPF headquarters is located in an office complex in Tarrytown, New York. As mentioned earlier, the office is the workplace of an NGO, not a library or an archive.[15] There are about 9 – 10 regular staff-members in the organization, working for specific events and convocations of the organization.[16] They manage the planning and implementation of the events over which the organization presides. For example, UPF holds a number of international conferences, including the largest World Summit in Seoul twice a year, participates in ECOSOC meetings, leads World Interfaith Harmony Week, organizes Religious Youth Service, etc. The organization's scope of activity is fairly expansive, and it requires much effort to thoroughly understand them.

2.2.2 Potentials and Limits

Since UPF is a recently founded organization and still active, there is a constantly growing body of sources that can be utilized for the analysis of the organization. Though they are well maintained in the office and in the warehouse of UPF, they are not well organized or classified for any archival purposes. Admittedly, UPF owns a powerful online archive that contains most of its important conference materials (http://archive.upf.org/). However, this archive has been recently constructed and does not include exhaustive sources concerning the period between 2000 and 2005.

As an international NGO, UPF owns an office that handles the practical and specific tasks of the organization. This means that they do not particularly aim at archiving and sorting materials for research. The materials were reasonably organized, but mostly for practical usages, and the online archive did not allow for access to the period of the research's interest. Therefore, there are certain limitations on the available sources on the foundation of UPF. The researcher had to resort to searching for boxes of documents and then sort them from the start. The

hard drive. I also reported several dead links on the Web archive to Mrs. Pople. Moreover, as dates go back to around 2005, the amount of materials uploaded on the Web archive decreases. For example, between 2000 and 2005, the period during which the important foundation events of UPF occurred, only a small number of documents are to be found on the Web, compared to the later dates. I did my fieldwork in the office of UPF from July 6 – 23, 2014.

15 When I arrived at the office, the staff members were busy preparing the World Summit 2014 in Seoul. They were inviting dozens of VIPs from all around the world and making appointments for various transportations.

16 The number of staff in other branches of UPF needs to be counted separately. For example, in the 2014 World Summit held in Seoul, I encountered dozens of UPF staffs working for the logistics and practical aspects, from all around the world.

following are most of the documents that deal with logistics: the reservation of venue of the event, booking flights for the guests, the design drafts for the catalogue, the list of participants, etc.

To navigate among these sources, the interviews with the people in the organization were helpful. Since UPF is a relatively new organization, most of its members who witnessed the foundation of UPF, or the transition of IIFWP to UPF, are still working in the office. They know which files contained the information needed for this study and even, in some cases, became primary sources when interviewed by me. By closely communicating with them, this paper has greatly benefited from their navigation.[17]

2.2.3 Process of the Analysis

This research is primarily based on the aforementioned documents and interviews. The two kinds of materials serve each other in a complementary manner. As qualitative research methodology was employed in dealing with the documents, the context and environment that produced the document needed to be considered.[18] In fact, the single documents only tell us the basic and superficial information on the events. Analyzing the characteristic of the documents gave further insight.

To be specific, the materials from the archive and the office of UPF can be categorized as public/private or firsthand/secondhand document.[19] Moreover, the implied readers of the documents also need to be considered. These aspects create a contextual environment that can be utilized to recount the story behind the materials.[20] To analyze an interreligious movement, the motivation and symbolic system of the actors in the organization and the event needs to be considered with great attention since the interreligious activity itself can also be seen as

17 My core interviewees were: Dr. Thomas Walsh, Mr. Taj Hamad, Ms. Genie Kagawa, and Dr. Frank LeGroterria.

18 Amanda Coffey, "Analyzing Documents," in *The SAGE Handbook of Qualitative Data Analysis,* ed. Uwe Flock (London: SAGE Publications, 2014), 368.

19 Coffey "Analyzing Documents," 377.

20 That is to say, I try to figure out what Coffey said as "representative of the practical accomplishments involved in their production" in the below quotation: "All documentary accounts are just that – a constructed account rather than necessarily an 'accurate' portrayal of complex social reality. [....] It is therefore important that we approach documents as texts and as representative of the practical accomplishments involved in their production." Coffey, "Analyzing Documents," 377.

a religious phenomenon. Hence, considering contextual factors is essential to illuminate the religious dimension and accurately account for them.

Handling interview materials calls for another methodological delineation. Dealing with the interviews regularly requires a whole other set of methodological considerations.[21] However, this analysis only utilizes interview materials as an orientation for documental research. This essay mainly consists of the analysis of the archival sources, rather than regular analysis of the interviews. Thus, the interviews illuminate the exact context of the documents, helping this analysis to avoid misinterpretation. In-depth analysis of interview scripts is not conducted here, but they are used as an index of this essay for investigating core episodes behind the foundation of UPF and the involvement of each agent in the organization.

Three episodes are chosen as subjects of analysis[22]: the 2000-Assembly (Renewing the United Nations and Building a Culture of Peace), the organization process of the 2001-Assembly (Global Violence: Crisis and Hope) and its organization process, and the inauguration event of UPF in 2005. They are not in a cause-and-effect relationship, but certainly represent the pivotal concepts of the organization respectively. When they are juxtaposed with the historical context, such as the situation following 9/11, and the existing agents of the organization, they help us interpret the interfaith work of UPF and answer any questions regarding the transition from IIFWP to UPF.

21 According to the Marvasti, there are three kinds of interviews that are widely used. First is the structured interview, which sees interviewees as 'vessels of answers' and does not allow them to get away from the subject and the predetermined research categories to address it. Second, the unstructured interview allows interviewees to expand and advance their answers. The third sort of interview is a focus group interview which encourages a group of interviewees to interact and stimulate their answers. In this respect, I employed the unstructured interview method which contains an expanded personal narratives of research subjects. Amir B. Marvasti, *Qualitative Research in Sociology* (London: SAGE Publications, 2004), 14 – 34.

22 This is how I chose the episodes: first, with field meetings and readings of primary materials, I chose several potential time points that could be starting points to find the core episodes of the foundation phase of UPF. Second, by interviewing key members of UPF, I narrowed down the core episodes to three.

3 A Closer Look at the Foundation of Universal Peace Federation: The Three Episodes

So far, we have seen the background and context of UPF. It is now clear that as an organization, which stems from the Unification Church, UPF is in continuity with the vision in development over four decades since the 1970s, and it is due to the doctrine of the movement that the legitimacy of interfaith enterprise was bolstered and supported. Its direct precursor, IIFWP, was started after the religious resurgence witnessed internationally during the 1990s. As the Unification Church and its leader started to promote the participation of religious bodies in the UN, the initiative of IIFWP focused on this agenda around the turn of the century. The active participation of the Unification Church in the UN, under the name IIFWP, was deemed to be successful enough to gain the Special Consultative Status with the ECOSOC.[23] In 2005, the organization participating in the UN changed its name to UPF. UN paperwork shows that the former IIFWP and the new UPF has consisted of the same body, namely, the same staff and agenda. This relaunching into UPF is an important point that will be explained further below.

Another characteristic of UPF that we need to acknowledge is that it is a practically oriented organization. The interviews with the protagonists inside UPF suggest that the organization does not particularly emphasize the theoretical dimension of interfaith activity. For them, interfaith cooperation and coexistence is a basic fact of life, and without a doubt, a firm premise. Therefore, the focus here is what religions gathered under the interfaith flag can do for peacebuilding and resolving the problems that the world faces. I saw UPF centralizing the practical and actual effectiveness of religions in harmony. This is due to its prehistory of studying and researching the legitimacy and importance of interfaith dialogue. Dr. LaGroterria, the Director, Office of Operations, Finance, Legal Affairs, and Human Resources of UPF, mentioned that there has been enough debate on the interfaith dialogue *per se*. It is now time to embark on making an actual change in the world.

---

23 There are three kinds of consultative status: General consultative status, Special consultative status and Roster status. General status is assigned to "large international NGOs whose area of work cover most of the issues on the agenda of ECOSOC and its subsidiary bodies." However, Special status is given to "NGOs which have a special competence in, and are concerned specifically with, only a few of the fields of activity covered by the ECOSOC." http://csonet.org/?menu=30 (accessed: 24.5.2020). For more detailed regulations, see ECOSOC Resolution 1996/31.

I understand that the practical orientation led UPF to focus on participating in the UN, the effective and actual entity that is considered able to bring about a change. UPF has built a successful history of UN involvement. Mrs.[24] Genie Kagawa, Director, Executive Office, emphasized that a few resolutions of the UN General Assembly actually made changes, and UPF made some contribution to the resolution along with allies in the UN.[25]

3.1 Episode 1: The Foundation of the Precursor, IIFWP

Let us first start with the name of the organization, IIFWP, as mentioned before, which is the acronym for "International and Inter-religious Federation for World Peace." By juxtaposing "international" and "interreligious," this organization tries to bring together the secular and the sacred sphere[26]: this agenda is speci-

24 I intentionally use "Mrs." here because Unification Church and its members put great value in (heterosexual) marriage due to its doctrine that emphasizes family. I observed that most married women members of the movement do not have qualms about the title "Mrs." indicating their marital status and the movement's official documents frequently use "Mrs."

25 Accordingly, the nation-states, which are based on secularism—especially the major Powers from the West that significantly influence the UN—will not be able to succeed in dealing with problems that our world faces today. This is the second pretext on participation of religious NGOs in the UN. The clear demarcation between the religious and the secular is the legacy of western Enlightenment period. This influenced the major participants of the UN, and until mid-90's, religion was not so much of a concern for this organization. The assembly of secularist states: this has been the basic premise of the UN. Nevertheless, the changing landscape of the global strife calls for the reconsideration of the very premise of secularism, and the cooperation of the religious and the secular. See Thomas Walsh, "Religion, Peace and the Post-Secular Sphere," *International Journal on World Peace* 29 (2012), 35–61. Dr. Walsh is the president of UPF and has been engaged in the interfaith movement for more than 30 years. He did his PhD in Vanderbilt University with a dissertation on the public sphere according to Jurgen Habermas. It can be said that Dr. Walsh's article represents very well the theoretical background of UPF and its activities. In terms of the perspective on the relation of religion and the UN, there has been a body of academic work. Lehmann summarized the academic works on this subject demarcating two currents of religious studies and socio-political studies. See Karsten Lehmann, "12.2: Religious Presence in the Context of the United Nations Organization" in Stanley Brunn ed., The Changing World Religion Map: Sacred Places, Identities, Practices and Politics vol. 4 (Dordrecht: Springer Netherlands, 2015).

26 The president of UPF, Dr. Thomas Walsh, has also argued for the overlapping of the secular and the religious spheres. His article on international politics and the role of religion after 9/11 highlights this line of argument. For the summary of the argument, see Thomas G. Walsh, "Religion, Peace and the Post-Secular Public Sphere," in *International Journal on World Peace*, Vol. 29, No. 2 (2012), 57–59.

fied in the vision for the UN involvement, already discussed above. In this context, its launch needs to be understood in relation to the aforementioned Assembly 2000 (Renewing the United Nations and Building a Culture of Peace), one of the remarkable events convoked in the early period of the organization. In the proceeding of this 2000 assembly, the need for religious participation in the UN is buttressed in many ways as various experts in international relations, UN studies, NGO studies, etc. participated in the Assembly in 2000.[27] According to the executive summary, the four major themes regarding renewal of the UN, which is under the major agenda on the cooperation of religious and political leaders for world peace, was discussed:

(1) The role of NGOs in the UN
(2) Conflict resolution and the role of religion and ideology
(3) The significance of family
(4) The concern for global environment.[28]

At this stage, the points (1) and (2) need particular attention since they represent the context of IIFWP and UPF. Religious NGOs, not nation-states that originally constitute the UN, are the point of interest in that they can offer solutions to the conflicts in the world.

Under auspices of these two causes, IIFWP was founded and has been actively engaged in international initiatives on the renewal of the UN. Starting from the ideal of the unity of cultures and various religions, the efforts for realizing the ideal were put into action in various ways since the mid-20th century. With the foundation of IIFWP, the action has been specifically aimed at implementing the religious council in the UN. IIFWP convened an international summit every year, contributed to UN resolutions and held countless events regarding issues on women and children in the late 90s and the year 2000. However, IIFWP soon went through a significant change on an organizational level: it was renamed as UPF in 2005.

Looking at the difference between the two sets of documents related to the foundation of IIFWP—unofficial and official—is helpful to understand the IIFWP's orientation and how this organization centralized its involvement with the UN. On the one hand, the 'unofficial', document internal to the organization has a strongly religious overtone. By 'religious', I mean that the members and actors in the organization are deeply embedded in a particular symbolic system

27 IIFWP, *Renewing the United Nations and Building a Culture of Peace*, 219 – 235.
28 IIFWP, *Renewing the United Nations and Building a Culture of Peace*, 219 – 235.

and their motivations and activities are influenced by this system.[29] On the other hand, the official and public version of the document shows a different tone.

First, there is a set of documents for people within the organization, containing the structure of the organization, personal mission statements, statement of purpose of the organization and the list of VIPs who could attend its conferences.[30] The date is not specified in the documents, but they are found in the year 2000 cabinet in the UPF office. Here, the relationship with other existing organizations within the Unification Church – such as WANGO and Ambassadors of Peace – and IIFWP is specified as above.

Although a total of 22 organizations are listed as associates of IIFWP, only four organizations are directly connected to the secretariat of IIFWP. It seems that in the Unification Church, there had been numerous organizations that dealt with the interreligious and peace-building agenda. Therefore, it was necessary for them to delineate the role and area of the new organization, IIFWP. Keeping into consideration the four main organizations that IIFWP relates to, helps us create a sense of what IIFWP aims for. These four organizations are: WANGO (World Association of Non-Governmental Organizations, Inc.), WCSF (World Culture and Sports estival), Ambassadors for Peace, and the World Peace Research Institution. [31] Each stand for the area of NGO activity in the UN (WANGO), cultural and sporting events (WCSF), the network of international peace leaders (Ambassadors for Peace), and finally, the academic research on the subject.

However, the statements in the internal document are slightly different from the other two official and public statements in so far as they directly mention the religious theme in the Unification Church.

> The IIFWP is not-for-profit educational corporation dedicated to sponsoring and organizing programs, seminars, publications and activities aimed at promoting respect, harmony, cooperation and peace among religions, nations, races, and culture around the world, and to cultivating a global network of individuals and associate organizations representing religion, politics, media professionals, scholars and educators, and representatives of civil society who work together in efforts to solve the critical problems which block the way to peace for individuals, families, societies, and nations.

---

29 This essay follows the Geertzian definition of religion as a working definition. See Clifford Geertz, "Religion as a Cultural System," in *The Interpretation of Cultures: Selected Essays* (Waukegan: Fontana Press, 1993), 87–125.

30 N.A, N.T., N.D.

31 On a Web site of Unification Church, the relationship between these organizations from the perspective of the church is described. http://www.tparents.org/Library/Unification/Publications/Smm-Org/works_world_peace.html (accessed: 24.5.2020).

> The IIFWP seeks to restore nations, by building on True Father's worldwide movement in every nation and the side range of organizations, each with a specific focus for the sake of establishing world peace. Internally IIFWP is guided by Divine Principle, Father's Words, and Unification Thought. The IIFWP Godism and a Heading Approach to solving problem.[32]

The first paragraph does not particularly contain a religious element since it deals with the practical aims of the organization. However, the second paragraph explicitly shows the governing principle under the organization. Here, the "True Father" denotes the founder of the movement, Sun Myung Moon, and the script or the movement is mentioned. Moreover, directly mentioning the religious orientation is "internally" effective; this document clearly implies that its readers are the members of the organization.

However, those religious statements are diluted in public statements. Let us look at the other two official statements, which appeared around the foundation of the organization.

> The Interreligious and International Federation for World Peace (IIFWP) is dedicated to the promotion of world peace through education programs, workshops, conferences, and publications. The IIFWP seeks to encourage and support the efforts of world leaders from all disciplines and the build coalitions among a wide range of non-governmental, religious, cultural, and educational institutions in advancing solutions to pressing world problems.
>
> Of particular concern to the IIFWP are two serious and growing problems. The first revolves around family instability and breakdown and the serious social, economic, and cultural problems that family decline generates. The second concerns ethic, racial, and religious conflict in many parts of the world. There is a critical need for political, religious, and educational institutions to work together, not only to reverse the decline of the family, but also to promote greater understanding and collaborate among diverse communities.[33]

The first paragraph has similar phrases and structure than those found in the internal document. However, the second paragraph is completely different. It emphasizes the importance of family and the need for cooperation in every realm of our lives, such as the religious and political, to solve exigent problems that humanity faces.[34] The second paragraph appears to be subtly written to re-

---

32 N.A, N.T., N.D. The quote is from the office document found in the year 2000 cabinet, which is a part of the preparation document for the launching of IIFWP.

33 N.A., IIFWP official booklet, page 1, published in 2000.

34 The ensuing paragraphs are as follows: The IFWP supports the mission of the United Nations and actively collaborates with the United Nations and other international and regional organizations dedicated to the cause of achieving justice, world peace, and human prosperity. The IIFWP supports the involvement of religious communities and organizations worldwide in coop-

flect the organization's religious ideal and the UN participation simultaneously. The doctrine of Unificationism spotlights the recovery of family values, which, according to the founder, has remained destroyed since the time of Adam and Eve; however, this doctrine is also presented as compatible with the secular values of family, that is, it does not look particularly "religious." This statement promotes the vision of the organization, evading the overtone of particular religious movement in listing the movement's core doctrine of family values and mentioning the reason why the organization stresses the interaction of different realms to solve conflicts and problems in the world.

The difference between the two documents is the result of realistic concerns and experiences in the field that require subtle treatment regarding, in particular, religious statements. There are always dangers in mentioning religious values and doctrines in the field generally deemed to be 'secular'. Nevertheless, there are underlying religious motivations and convictions that played a role here, and this can be observed through the difference between the internal and public statements of the purpose of the organization. The first episode and materials produced in this context show us how IIFWP endeavored to balance religious motivations and realistic concerns in the field of IRD in the UN. Though interreligious dialogue is performed under the name of international cooperation and other humanitarian agendas, it is conducted by agents who are highly motivated by religious ideals.

Taking this into consideration, let us move to the second episode, which shows more specifically the engagement of the people in the organization.

3.2 Episode 2: Immediate Action after 9/11, and the Muslim Network

This section is still concerned with IIFWP, not UPF. To investigate the foundation of UPF, there is another set of episodes that need our attention. It represents the network and the investment in the human resources that the organization holds. One of these is our second episode, focused on the vitalization of religious debate in international politics. 9/11 shocked the entire world. What Samuel Huntington had argued seemed to be realized as a conflict between religions and cultures, not ideologies appeared to ensue. The Christian West and the Muslim

erative efforts for global peace. The IIFWP holds, furthermore, that international efforts for world peace on the part of the United Nations and other non-governmental organizations need to be enhanced by the unique e wisdom and insight of the world's great religious traditions.

world were deemed to be opposing sides and the conflict became more palpable than ever. Right after the 9/11-events, IIFWP convened two events directly related to it – one in New York (in October) and the other in Jakarta (in December). People in the organization recollected the experience on two levels: the charisma of the founder that propelled the events; and the network with the Muslim world which IIFWP was able to make use of.

Conference proceedings and records are also helpful for understanding the two levels. First of all, the Assembly 2001 was held from 19 to 22 October in New York. It was right after the tragic attack in the very same city, and the staff recalled that nobody actually wanted to fly to New York. Conscious of the matter but not explicitly mentioning it, the Chairman's welcome remark in the official brochure is as follows:

> As the twenty-first century began, at a time when the Cold War had ended, there was great hope that humanity might see a new millennium of greater peace, prosperity and happiness. However, recent events reveal the existence of many unresolved and unrestored problems, indicating that in this new century we face challenges as serious as in the past. We have gathered here to address these challenges.[35]

Mentioning the end of the Cold War as a background, and implying the current 9/11-event, the remarks open up the problems to be solved: it is the sphere of religion and culture that needs to be dealt with when we try to resolve an international crisis.

According to the online archive of UPF, this Assembly was successfully convened with 427 participants from all around the world.[36] The agenda and initiatives of the Assembly were not so different from the previous year, the renewal of UN involvement, but focused more on the practical solution for violence under the name of religion. 12 conference reports from the event can be found on the Web archive of UPF and they try to sketch the general atmosphere of the conference. Unlike the reserved tone of the official welcome remarks, the reports present somewhat intense and strong emotional statements of the participants. For example, Rev. Moon invited 21 religious leaders[37] to a private luncheon and

35 N.A., IIFWP Assembly 2001, Global Violence Crisis and Hope, official booklet page 2.

36 N.A., UPF Online data center: Conference List, page 2. Intranet material, not eligible for an external internet access.

37 Minister Louis Farrakhan (Nation of Islam), and his son, Mrs. Mohini Giri (Guild of Service, India), Chief Rabbi Izhak Bar-Dea and wife (Ramat-Gan, Israel), Dr. Manjit Singh Jathedar (Anand Pur Sahib, India), Reverend Junsei Terasawa (Nipponjan Myohoft, Russia and Ukraine), Chief Reuben Silverbird (Nedni Apache, Cherokee, Navajo), Father Nithya Sagayam (Bishops Council, India), Imam Muhammad Maqsood Ahmad Qadri (Dept. of Religious Affairs, Punjab,

shared his opinions. In this luncheon, the reporter, Nadine Andre, recounts the exchange between Moon and the Honorable Minister (Louis Farrakhan Sr., 1933 –) the leader of an American Islamic movement called the Nation of Islam. Before the conversation started, Moon gave the speech on "loving the enemy," in the aim of asserting that there should not be any concept of "enemy":

> [There was then a brief, almost personal exchange between Dr. Moon and the Honorable Minister Farrakhan]
>
> [The Minister responded]
>
> But look at how you are speaking to us. You are passionate, not angry. That is how I speak. I am passionate too!
>
> [Dr. Moon, smiling said]
>
> Yes, but I am speaking of something different. I mean we should never point our finger to other groups. The highest way is to take responsibility; that is the only way.
>
> [Then again to everyone present]
>
> Pray to God to see if I am telling you the truth. If I am lying, come and destroy me. If you cannot get an answer easily, then do what I say, and see if that helps you find out. If I am wrong, come to me and we will repent together.
>
> We do not need religious wars and denominationalism. Without denominationalism we must go to God.
>
> If you don't believe what I'm saying, go to the spirit world; you will see I am telling the truth.[38]

By reading this report, we can recognize that there had been personal exchanges among the religious leaders just a month after the 9/11 in the same city. In the other report, a heated debate is also documented. After Dr. Khalid Durán, a Muslim scholar who was recently expelled from the New Jersey Muslim association because of his academic work endorsing the expansion of the War in Afghanistan and condemning the contemporary situation in Sudan. Consequently:

> This precipitated an outburst from several in the audience and an intervention from the session chair, who offered his profound apologies and stated that neither he nor the conference organizers were cognizant of the truth or falsehood of Dr. Duran's claims. On resum-

---

Pakistan), Dr. Allama Muhammad Idara Minhaj-Ul-Hussain Akbar (Idara Minhaj-Ul-Hussein, Pakistan), Chief Rabbi David Brodman (Savion, Israel).

38 Nadine Andre, *Loving Your Enemy In The Face Of Terror: 21 Leaders of the World's Religions Meet United States:*. http://hoondok.ru/tfs/eng/2001/loving-your-enemy-in-the-face-of-terror—twenty-one-leaders-of-the-worlds-religions-meet (accessed: 24. 5. 2020).

> ing, Dr. Duran said the real problem was terrorist infiltration to the U.S. and the misuse of Islamic terminology and symbols. He said that the American Muslim majority would "not be a silent majority any longer" and would no longer be intimidated by the terrorist element.[39]

This part shows that the conference included a spectrum of Muslim participants and that they were deeply conscious of the situation they faced. In this respect, the conference was an intense experience for the participants at that time. However, the Unification Church propelled further effort to foster dialogue with the Muslim world, convening another conference.

Mr. Haj Hamad, the Secretary General of UPF, recollects that the founder wanted immediate action and called for the comprehensive gathering of Muslim leaders. It was not easy work, but fortunately, IIFWP was equipped with the staff that had already built a global network in the field. Dr. Hamad was one of them and he has been forming friendships with members of the NGO community. In 1998, he was even elected to a two-year term as Secretary of the NGO/DPI Executive Committee, the official umbrella group of NGOs in association with the UN Department of Public Information.[40] Additionally, he had a personal friendship with the former president of Indonesia, Abdurrahman Wahid and other important figures. The Jakarta Summit of Muslim leaders, which was held from 20 to 23 December 2001, was realized with the existing relationship and organization's network. According to Dr. Hamad, it was "a phone call" that initiated the summit, and Rev. Moon offered to fund every expense of the summit.[41]

---

39 Michael Mickler, *Global Violence, Crisis and Hope: New Demands for Interfaith: Religions Must Take Greater Responsibility:* https://www.tparents.org/UNews/Unws0111/IIrfwp_report.htm (accessed: 24.5.2020).

40 Harold Paine and Birgit Gratzer, *Rev. Moon and the United Nations:* https://www.globalpolicy.org/component/content/article/176/31366.html (accessed: 24.5.2020). Also it is necessary to note that this report is written in highly derogatory tone to accuse Unification Church's participation in the UN in the respect of secularism, blaming the movement for "illegally" occupying the part of the UN. Nevertheless, it is one of the most detailed description on the activity of Unification Church in the UN.

41 Interview with Mr. Hamad, July 2014: "Also, the remarks of Dr. Walsh also help us understand the movement has built close relationship with a part of Muslim leaders in the world. In terms of Islam, I mentioned that one of the key points is this the grand mufti of Syria, Ahmed Koutaro, who I write about it in one article you have. And he formed a close relationship with Father Moon. And they had a strong mutual appreciation and respect. Because Koutaro was also a visionary. And at that time you know, Father Moon really emphasized the relationship and in 1990, at the Assembly, Father Moon said send me a group of fifties of your best leaders from Syria, in Islam. And bring them to New York, we will put them up in our hotel, the New Yorker Hotel, and that was something that Mr. Hamad can tell you about since he organized the pro-

The ensuing summit following 9/11 and the passionate participation of Muslim agents show us the international conflicts come to appear in religious forms, not in ideological forms. Talking about religion in the public sphere – the UN and international politics– had been a taboo under the principle of the secularism. However, after 9/11 and its rupture, discussions on religion in the public sphere became inevitable.

3.3 Episode 3: The (Re)birth of UPF and its Symbolic Meaning

The last episode, the renaming of IIFWP to UPF can now be interpreted as an attempt to re-ignite the ideal for an interreligious council in the UN. Indeed, Rev. Moon founded UPF and specified the concept of the "Abel-type" and the "Cain-type" UN. The trope of Cain and Abel is from the biblical reference: the Cain-type UN refers to the existing secular UN system, which acts "selfishly and independently of God" while the "Abel-type" UN is said to have "an attitude of service to God and living for the sake of others."[42] Hence, UPF was not a sudden and new idea for a completely new vision. It is in continuity with the vision that had been developing over four decades, from the start of the movement. It seems that this was an invented rupture to advance its existing vision for UN engagement in a more compelling way. The staff, structure and the way they performed tasks remained the same. Only the name changed. This is thus a symbolic rebirth of the same agenda.

Mr. Hamad's personal network was an essential factor in the organization's capacity to carry out its mission. Considering the background and vitalization of religious voices in international politics and the UN, one can say that the involvement of IIFWP in the UN had been successful. Between 2001 and 2005, the organization held many activities as an NGO in the UN, by exerting efforts with allies in the UN to deliver the resolutions promoting and securing the status of religious NGOs. There are several important resolutions that promote the partic-

gram, they called the Interreligious Leadership Seminar. It was just a name, but they were primarily for Muslim leaders from Syria initially, then from Jordan, Egypt, from Yemen, 5 or 6 Muslim countries. And to build this relationship with Islam, also try to encourage this broader vision that both Rev. Moon and mufti Koutaro shared. So, way I interpret that is a form of preventive peace building."

42 Michael Mickler, "Toward an UN?: The Unification Movement and the United Nations," *Journal of Unification Studies* 9 (2008).

ipation of NGOs and interreligious activity.[43] Among them, the resolution adopted by the General Assembly on 19 December 2003 is important. It requested the UN Secretary General to disseminate the contents of the resolution, which welcomes the NGO's role and effort in interreligious dialogue.[44] The term "request" designates a little stronger responsibility to the Secretary General than other resolutions.

Despite the vital and enthusiastic activities of IIFWP, the organization went through the renaming process from IIFWP to UPF. This move was an onerous job for an organization that already has a vast array of networks and a legal registration. They had to go through much paperwork to change the name into UPF. It seems that the motivation of this challenging transition is the need for further advancing the "Abel-type" UN vision. In this vein, the people in the organization referred primarily to the vision of the "Abel UN" as a core concept of the new UPF. Around 2005, Rev. Moon started to introduce this concept, which is the opposite concept of the "Cain UN," indicating that the secularized UN structure that cannot effectively deal with the current problems in the world, requiring regular participation of religious bodies. The structure of his argument is similar to the 2000 UN renewal Assembly, which initiated IIFWP.

> All the conflicts and wars in history have been essentially battles between a Cain camp, relatively tending towards evil, and an Abel camp, relatively tending toward goodness. Humanity must end these struggles between Cain and Abel camps and restore the original state of harmony and love. To do this, each of us must end the conflict between our mind and body, and bring them into harmonious union. [...]
>
> The existing United Nations structure, composed of national representatives, may be regarded as a congress where the interests of each member nation are represented. However, I submit that serious consideration should be given to forming a religious assembly, or council of religious representatives within the structure of the United Nations. This assembly or council would consist of respected spiritual leaders in fields such as religion, culture, and education. Of course, the members of this interreligious assembly will need to have

43 To list them: Promotion of Interreligious and Intercultural Dialogue, Understanding, and Cooperation for Peace, GA 60/10, adopted 3 November 2005; Promotion of Interreligious Dialogue, GA 59/23, adopted 11 November 2004; Promotion of Religious and Cultural Understanding, Harmony, and Cooperation, GA 58/128, adopted 19 December 2003.Moreover, at the center of the realization of these resolution and the cooperation of IIFWP and other NGO, one should not omit to mention Mrs. Kagawa facilitation during the whole process in the UN.

44 UN General Assembly, *Resolution: Promotion of Religious and Cultural Understanding, Harmony and Cooperation:* A/RES/58/128.

> demonstrated an ability to transcend the limited interests of individual nations and to speak for the concerns of the entire world and humanity at large.[45]

Here, the trope of Abel and Cain is used, as well. However, the trope has not advanced to the concept of the "Abel-type" UN. In 2000, Moon only argues that an interreligious council is essential in the UN, since the conflicts in the world after the Cold War called for the reconsideration and recognition of religious powers. This logical sequence is not so much different in 2005.

> The United Nations has made important contributions for peace. Nevertheless, at its 60th anniversary there is a broad consensus, both inside and outside the organization, which the U.N. has yet to discover the way to fulfill its founding purposes. The number of member states is approaching 200, but the offices of these states do little more than represent and even insist on their own interests. They seem inherently unable to resolve conflicts and achieve peace.
>
> For these reasons, I declare today before all humanity the founding of a new international organization, the Universal Peace Federation. Its mission is to renew the existing United Nations and provide a new level of leadership as an "Abel-type" United Nations, that is, a United Nations whose efforts for peace are offered to Heaven, investing itself ceaselessly in living for the sake of others.[46]

Finally, this section analyzes the inaugural conference of UPF in 2005 Seoul, along with the interview with Dr. Frank LaGrotteria who delivered the practical and logistical dimension of the conferences and summits that UPF often held. He described how he was impressed by the grandiose nature of the inaugural events carried with ritualistic ceremonies and showed me various media clips recorded at the event: the sound of a huge Chinese gong, the prayers, and the atmosphere of the ceremony was different from previous ones. Moreover, the founder started to travel to 120 nations in the world to commemorate and promote the UPF launch and Dr. LaGrotteria recalled that it had symbolic importance for the members of the organization.[47]

In sum, it appears that this re-launching of the same body with a different name has a symbolic meaning for the members of the organization. Finally, the fact that around 2005, at the transitional moment of the IIFWP to UPF, the two names appear simultaneously on the brochures and posters of events the or-

---

45 N.A. "S.M. Moon Address: Renewing the United Nations to Build Lasting Peace, August 2000.

46 N.A. "S.M. Moon Address".

47 From my personal exchange with Dr. LaGrotteria. in UPF headquarter on July 8th 2014.

ganization held gives us strong confirmation that the foundation of UPF is in deep continuity with the IIFWP.[48]

What this rebirth means can be interpreted in many ways. However, considering the IIFWP's previous work and the religious turn following 9/11, the renaming seems to aim at advancing the religious agenda and propelling the organization's religious ideal within the context of its UN participation. As religious entities and agents begin to be granted admission in the realm of international relations and politics in early 2000, UPF attempts to reignite its activity by relaunching the organization. Moreover, what promoted the rebirth of UPF is the fact that the IRD movement became an agenda that draws attention from major entities of international politics and thus, expanded its influence in the public sphere in general. The two previous episodes mark the starting point of this trend and UPF's launch shows us continuing efficacy of the religious agents and values in the public sphere, especially that of the U.N. The 9/11-events were a watershed moment that led to the convergence of religious and secular dynamics within international politics. It opened up a new stream of IRD. IIFWP and UPF are at the heart of this trend, and their foundation and activity give us an emblematic example of IRD in the public sphere, especially in the realm of international relations and cooperation.

4 Conclusion

A significant advance in the UN resolution was brought about under the name of UPF. A resolution, which was adopted by the General Assembly on 20 December 2006, directly requests the Secretary General to include interreligious matters:

> 16. Requests the Secretary-General to ensure the systematic and organizational follow-up of all interreligious, intercultural and inter-civilizational matters within the United Nations system and overall coordination and coherence in its interreligious, intercultural and inter-civilizational dialogue and cooperation efforts, inter alia, through the designation of a focal unit in the Secretariat to handle these matters.[49]

Mrs. Kagawa, who is in charge within UPF of UN relations and resolutions, said that this request "ensuring" supporting interreligious with the "focal unit" ac-

48 International Interreligious Federation for World Peace, ed. *The World Leadership Convocation.* N.P. 2005. Universal Peace Federation, ed. *The World Assembly.* N.P. 2006.

49 UN General Assembly, *Resolution: Promotion of Interreligious and Intercultural Dialogue, Understanding and Cooperation for Peace :* A/RES/61/221.http://digitallibrary.un.org/record/589511/files/A_RES_61_221-AR.pdf (accessed 23.10.2020)

tually calls for the institutional support for the interfaith NGOs in the UN. This is considered to be a decisive step forward in the field.

As we have seen above, UPF is an active and living organization in the field of international NGOs that specializes in interfaith dialogue and conflict resolution. The important thing is that not only the fact that the three episodes took place, but also the fact that people in the organization affirmed that these episodes are important and meaningful to them. This approach, which focuses on the accounts of the participants, is crucial for understanding interfaith activity as a religious phenomenon. This is a dimension that can be observed at a microscopic level, focusing on the activity of individual agents in the organization.

In addition, we can analyze the background and effective activity of UPF in terms of shifting landscape of the religious and the secular. To be specific, the success of UPF is largely in accordance with the contemporary adaptation of religious organizations integrating into or appropriating the realm of the secular such as the UN. As Lehmann earlier observed in the cases of the Commission of the Churches on International Affairs, *Pax Romana*, and the Friends World Committee for Consultation,[50] Religious NGO's participation in the secular realm, such as the UN, implies the contested distinction between the religious and the secular, and thus shows new possibilities for religious NGOs. These organizations respectively pursue their religious goals by way of engaging in NGO activities, taking part in secular institutions such as the UN.

UPF can be considered a case of the above tendency. By investigating the foundation background of the UPF, this analysis made connections between ideas of religious actors, historical context and the contemporary interreligious dialogue movement within particular developments in international relations, especially within the United Nations. Now it is clear that UPF effectively attended to its agenda, showing a compelling possibility and example of interfaith dialogue in the contemporary world by adapting to the structure of secular organizations, i. e. the UN. UPF, after its major 2000 conference and the two that immediately followed 9/11 in 2001 shows regular participation in the UN and in the realm of international politics. The case of UPF strongly underlies the fact that the status of the IRD movement has been elevated to the level of general international politics and cooperation. Listing and arguing the legitimacy of IRD is not the only aim of the IRD movement anymore. Interreligious dialogue is now an indispensable part of human lives and a simple fact of life in the post-globalization era. Taking actions at an international level in specific agendas — pro-

50 Karsten Lehmann, "Shifting Boundaries Between the Religious and the Secular: Religious Organizations in Global Public Space," *Journal of Religion in Europe* 6 (2013): 1–28.

moting rights of women and youth, and international peace-building, etc. — became major concerns of the IRD movement. The increasing importance of the religious sphere after 9/11 and this change in the setting of the IRD movement was the catalyst for the foundation, or, the symbolic rebirth of UPF. Thus, UPF shows us compelling evidence of this trend, namely, the collapsing of the wall between secular and religious discourse in the public sphere as reflected in particular in the UN international public space.

5. Bibliography

5.1 Primary Sources

Mickler, Michael, "Global Violence: Crisis And Hope: New Demands For Interfaith: Religions Must Take Greater Responsibility," UPF Conferences: Assembly 2001, Global Violence: Crisis and Hope, October 19, 2001. http://www.upf.org/resources/downloads (accessed: 24.5.2020).

Paine, Harold and Birgit Gratzer. *Rev. Moon and the United Nations:* November 2001. https://www.globalpolicy.org/component/content/article/176/31366.html (accessed: 24.5.2020).

IIFWP. Renewing the United Nations and Building a Culture of Peace: A Report from the Interreligious and International Federation for World Peace Assembly 2000. New York: IIFWP, 2000.

IIFWP, ed. *The World Leadership Convocation.* N.P. 2005.

N.A. "S.M. Moon Address: Renewing the United Nations to Build Lasting Peace", August 2000.

N.A., IIFWP Assembly 2001, Global Violence Crisis and Hope, official booklet page 2.

N.A., IIFWP official booklet, page 1. Published in 2000.

N.A., UPF Online data center: Conference List, page 2. Intranet material, not eligible for an external internet access.

Nadine, Andre. *Loving Your Enemy In The Face Of Terror: 21 Leaders of the World's Religions Meet United States:* http://www.upf.org/resources (accessed: 24.5.2020).

Promotion of Interreligious and Intercultural Dialogue, Understanding, and Cooperation for Peace, GA 60/10, adopted 3 November 2005.

Promotion of Interreligious Dialogue, GA 59/23, adopted 11 November 2004.

Promotion of Religious and Cultural Understanding, Harmony, and Cooperation, GA 58/128, adopted 19 December 2003.

Universal Peace Federation, ed. *The World Assembly.* N.P. 2006.

UN General Assembly, *Resolution: Promotion of Religious and Cultural Understanding, Harmony and Cooperation:* A/RES/58/128.

5.2 Secondary Sources

Barker, Eileen. "Unification Church." In *Encyclopedia of Global Religion*, edited by Mark Juergensmeyer and Wade Clark Roof. Thousand Oaks: Sage Publications, 2012.

Braybrooke, Marcus. *Pilgrimage of Hope.* Philadelphia: Trinity Press International, 1991.

Bromley, David G. and Anson D. Shupe, Jr. *"Moonies" in America.* Thousand Oaks: Sage Publication, 1979.

Chryssides, George D. *The Advent of Sun Myung Moon.* New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991.

Coffey, Amanda. "Analyzing Documents." In *The SAGE Handbook of Qualitative Data Analysis,* ed. Uwe Flick. London: SAGE Publications, 2014.

Geertz, Clifford. "Religion as a Cultural System." In: *The Interpretation of Cultures: Selected Essays*, 87–125. Waukegan: Fontana Press, 1993.

Hutchinson, Dawn. *Antiquity and Social Reform.* Newcastle: Cambridge Scholars Publishing, 2010.

Lehmann, Karsten. "12.2: Religious Presence in the Context of the United Nations Organization" In *The Changing World Religion Map: Sacred Places, Identities, Practices and Politics, vol. 4,* edited by Stanley Brunn. Dordrecht: Springer Netherlands, 2015.

Lehmann, Karsten. "Shifting Boundaries Between the Religious and the Secular: Religious Organizations in Global Public Space." *Journal of Religion in Europe* 6 (2013): 1–28.

Marvasti, Amir B. "Interviews." In *Qualitative Research in Sociology.* London: SAGE Publications, 2004.

Mickler, Michael. "Toward an "Abel" UN? The Unification Movement and the United Nations." *Journal of Unification Studies 9* (2008).

Sontag, Frederick. *Sun Myung Moon and Unification Church.* Nashville: Abingdon, 1977.

Stark, Rodney and John Lofland. "Becoming a World-Saver: A Theory of Conversion to a Deviant Perspective." *American Sociological Review* 30/6 (1965): 862–875.

Walsh, Thomas. "Religion, Peace and the Post-Secular Sphere." *International Journal on World Peace* 29/2 (2012): 35–61.

Unification movement

From Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia

This article has multiple issues. Please help **improve it** or discuss these issues on the **talk page**. *(Learn how and when to remove these template messages)*

- The **neutrality of this article is disputed**. *(July 2018)*
- **A major contributor to this article appears to have a close connection with its subject.** *(July 2018)*
- The examples and perspective in this article **may not represent a worldwide view of the subject**. *(July 2018)*
- This article **may be written from a believer's point of view, rather than a neutral point of view**. *(July 2018)*
- This article may **lend undue weight to certain ideas, incidents, or controversies**. *(July 2018)*
- This article contains wording that **promotes the subject in a subjective manner without imparting real information**. *(July 2018)*

Unification movement	
Abbreviation	UM
Classification	Christian New religious movement
Scripture	Bible, Divine Principle
Region	Worldwide
Founder	Sun Myung Moon
Origin	1954 Seoul, South Korea

The **Unification movement** or **Unificationism**, also called the **Unification Church** (**UC**), is a worldwide new religious movement. Its members are colloquially called "Moonies". It was officially founded under the name Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity (HSA-UWC) in Seoul, South Korea, in 1954, by Sun Myung Moon, a Korean religious leader also known for his business ventures and engagement in social and political causes.[1][2][3][4] In 1994 the HSA-UWC was replaced by Moon with a new organization, the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (FFWPU).[5] The movement is spiritually-based and includes a number of legally independent organizations, including business,[6] educational,[7] political,[8] and other types of organizations.[9]

The beliefs of the Unification movement are based on Moon's book *Divine Principle*, which differs from the teachings of Nicene Christianity on its view of Jesus[10] and its introduction of the concept of "indemnity."[11] Ceremonies include unique funeral[12] and wedding ceremonies.[13]

The Unification movement has received strong criticism and has attracted numerous controversies, including that of being a dangerous cult.[14][15] Its involvement in politics, including anti-communism and support for Korean unification, has also been criticized.[16] Its beliefs have been criticized by both Jewish and Christian scholars.[17] Japan refuses to issue a visa on the grounds that Moon is a felon (see United States v. Sun Myung Moon).

Contents [hide]

1 Terminology
2 History
  2.1 Background and origins
  2.2 Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity (1954–1994)
  2.3 Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (1994–)
3 Beliefs
  3.1 View of Jesus
  3.2 Indemnity
  3.3 Science
  3.4 Funerals
    3.4.1 Theological basis
    3.4.2 Funeral Ceremony
  3.5 Blessing ceremony and views on sex and family
  3.6 Esotericism
4 Scholarly studies
5 Relations and differences with other religions
  5.1 Judaism
  5.2 Mainstream Christianity
  5.3 Islam
  5.4 Interfaith activities
6 Political activism
  6.1 Anti-communism
  6.2 Post Cold War era
7 North Korea
8 Organisations
  8.1 Multi-faceted organizations
    8.1.1 CARP
    8.1.2 Family Peace Association
    8.1.3 Universal Peace Federation
    8.1.4 Women's Federation for World Peace

Main page
Contents
Featured content
Current events
Random article
Donate to Wikipedia
Wikipedia store

Interaction
Help
About Wikipedia
Community portal
Recent changes
Contact page

Tools
What links here
Related changes
Upload file
Special pages
Permanent link
Page information
Wikidata item
Cite this page

Print/export
Create a book
Download as PDF
Printable version

Languages
Русский
Edit links

8.1.5 Service for Peace
8.1.6 International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences
8.2 Interfaith organizations
8.3 Educational organizations
8.4 Organizations in the arts
8.5 Sports organizations
8.6 Political organizations
8.7 Businesses
8.7.1 Automotive
8.7.2 Health related
8.7.3 Manufacturing
8.7.4 Media
8.7.5 Ocean related
8.7.6 Real estate
8.8 United Nations related non-governmental organizations
8.9 Other organizations
8.10 Organizations supported by members of the Unification movement
9 See also
10 References
11 Annotated bibliography
12 External links

Terminology [edit]

Main article: Moonie (nickname)
For other uses of "Moonie", see Moonie (disambiguation)

Moonie is a colloquial term sometimes used to refer to members of the Unification movement. This is derived from the name of the UC's founder Sun Myung Moon,[18] and was first used in 1974 by the American media.[19] Unification movement members have used the word *Moonie*, including Moon himself,[20] President of the Unification Theological Seminary David Kim,[21] and Bo Hi Pak, Moon's aide and president of Little Angels Children's Folk Ballet of Korea.[22] In the 1980s and 1990s the Unification Church of the United States undertook an extensive public relations campaign against the use of the word by the news media.[23] In 1989 the *Chicago Tribune* was picketed after referring to members as "Moonies".[24][25] Minister and civil rights leader James Bevel handed out fliers at the protest which said: "Are the Moonies our new niggers?"[25] On an October 6, 1994 broadcast of *Nightline*, host Ted Koppel stated: "On last night's program ...I used the term 'Moonies'. This is a label which members of the Reverend Sun Myung Moon's Unification Church find demeaning and offensive, and I'd like to apologize for its use."[26] In other contexts it is still sometimes used and not always considered pejorative.[27][28]

History [edit]

Background and origins [edit]

Unification movement founder Sun Myung Moon giving a public speech in the Las Vegas Valley in 2010

On February 25, 1920, Sun Myung Moon was born Mun Yong-myeong in modern-day Sangsa-ri (□□□), Deogun-myon, Jeongju-gun, North P'yŏng'an Province, at a time when Korea was under Japanese rule. Moon's birthday was recorded as January 6 by the traditional lunar calendar (February 25, 1920, according to the Gregorian Calendar).[29][30] Around 1930 Moon's family, who followed traditional Confucianist beliefs, converted to Christianity and joined the Presbyterian Church, where he later taught Sunday school.[31]

Unification Church members believe that Jesus appeared to Mun Yong-myong (his birth name) on Easter Day in 1936, and asked him to accomplish the work left unfinished after his crucifixion.[32] After a period of prayer and consideration, Moon accepted the mission, later changing his name to Mun Son-myong (Moon Sun-myung or Sun Myung Moon).[33]

In November 1943, Moon married Sun Kil Choi.[34]

In 1943, Hak Ja Han, Moon's future wife, was born in North Korea.[35][36]

After World War II and the Japanese occupation ended in 1945, Moon began preaching his message.[31] In 1946, Moon traveled alone to Pyongyang in Communist-ruled North Korea.[37] Moon was arrested on allegations of spying for South Korea and given a five-year sentence to the Hŭngnam labor camp.[38]

In 1950, after serving 34 months of his sentence, Moon was released from North Korea during the Korean War when United Nations troops advanced on the camp and the guards fled.[39] In 1953, Moon divorced Choi.[34] It is also reported that he had a child with a different woman in 1954.[40][41][42]

Moon's teachings, called the *Divine Principle*, were first published as *Wonli Wonbon* (□□ □□, "Original Text of the Divine Principle") in 1945. The earliest manuscript was lost in North Korea during the Korean War. A second, expanded version, *Wonli Hesol (□□ □□)*, or *Explanation of the Divine Principle*, was published in 1957. Its most propagated text, *Exposition of the Divine Principle*, was published in 1966. Moon built his first church as a refugee in Pusan.[39]

Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity (1954–1994) [edit]

Moon founded the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity (HSA-UWC) in Seoul on May 1, 1954. It expanded rapidly in South Korea and by the end of 1955 had 30 centers throughout the nation.[1] The HSA-UWC expanded throughout the world with most members living in South Korea, Japan, the Philippines, and other nations in East Asia.[43][1]

In 1958, Moon sent missionaries to Japan, and in 1959, to America. Missionary work took place in Washington, DC, New York, and California. It found success in the San Francisco Bay Area, where the HSA-UWC expanded in Oakland, Berkeley, and San Francisco. By 1971, the HSA-UWC in the US had about 500 members. By 1973, it had some presence in all 50 states and a few

thousand members.[39] In the 1970s, American HSA-UWC members were noted for their enthusiasm and dedication, which often included raising money for UC projects on so-called "mobile fundraising teams".[44][45]

The HSA-UWC also sent missionaries to Europe. They entered Czechoslovakia in 1968 and remained underground until the 1990s.[46] Unification movement activity in South America began in the 1970s with missionary work. Later, the HSA-UWC made large investments in civic organizations and business projects, including an international newspaper.[47] Starting in the 1990s, the HSA-UWC expanded in Russia and other former communist nations. Hak Ja Han, Moon's wife, made a radio broadcast to the nation from the State Kremlin Palace.[48] As of 1994, the HSA-UWC had about 5,000 members in Russia.[49] About 500 Russian students had been sent to USA to participate in 40-day workshops.[50]

Moon moved to the United States in 1971, although he remained a citizen of the Republic of Korea. In the 1970s, he gave a series of public speeches in the United States, including one in Madison Square Garden in New York City in 1974; two in 1976 in Yankee Stadium in New York City; and one on the grounds of the Washington Monument in Washington, DC, where he spoke on "God's Hope for America" to 300,000 people. In 1975, the HSA-UWC held one of the largest peaceful gatherings in history, with 1.2 million people in Yeouido, South Korea.[51]

With a tenfold increase in membership "during the years 1972-74, the Unification Church emerged as a national movement in America."[52] The movement held in New York the first of a series of conferences on "Unified Science," with such famous scholars as Nicholas Kurti and W.V.O. Quine, bought the Belvedere estate at Tarrytown, NY[53] and held there an "International Training Session" for disaffected students attracted from overseas, including John Waite who later broadcast on BBC Radio his memories of the event.[54]

Assisted by an organization called the Freedom Leadership Foundation Rev. Moon was introduced in 1973 to such American public figures as Senators Edward Kennedy, Hubert Humphrey, Strom Thurmond and James Buckley, and to Nguyen Van Thieu, President of South Vietnam. More publicity attended mass weddings (Blessing ceremony of the Unification Church) first conducted in the US in 1982. Participants later included Al Sharpton and Emmanuel Milingo, an archbishop of the Catholic church.

In the 1970s the Unification movement, along with some other new religious movements, became a target of the anti-cult movement. On the basis of theories that have not gained acceptance in mainline social science,[55] "anti-cult" activists accused the movement of having "brainwashed" its members.[56] At the same time, members reported that they were kidnapped and forcibly "deprogrammed" by those who wanted to pull them out of the movement.[57]

In 1982, Moon was convicted in the United States of filing false federal income tax returns and conspiracy: see United States v. Sun Myung Moon. He served 13 months of the sentence at the Federal Correctional Institution, Danbury.[58][59] The case was protested as a case of selective prosecution and a threat to religious freedom by, among others, Jerry Falwell, head of Moral Majority, Joseph Lowery, head of the Southern Christian Leadership Conference, Harvey Cox a Professor of Divinity at Harvard, and Eugene McCarthy, United States Senator and former Democratic Party presidential candidate.[60][61]

Starting in the 1980s Moon instructed HSA-UWC members to take part in a program called "Home Church" in which they reached out to neighbors and community members through public service.[62] In 1991 Moon announced that Um members should return to their hometowns and undertake apostolic work there. Massimo Introvigne, a scholar of new religious movements, said that this confirmed that full-time membership is no longer considered crucial to movement members.[39]

Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (1994–) [edit]

FFWPU logo

On May 1, 1994 (the 40th anniversary of the founding of the HSA-UWC), Moon declared that the era of the HSA-UWC had ended and inaugurated a new organization: the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (FFWPU) would include HSA-UWC members and members of other religious organizations working toward common goals, especially on issues of sexual morality and reconciliation between people of different religions, nations, and races. The FFWPU co-sponsored Blessing ceremonies in which thousands of couples from other churches and religions were given the marriage blessing previously given only to HSA-UWC members.[5][63]

In 2000 the FFWPU co-sponsored the Million Family March, a rally in Washington D.C. to celebrate family unity and racial and religious harmony, along with the Nation of Islam.[64] Louis Farrakhan was the main speaker at the event which was held on October 16, 2000; the fifth anniversary of the Million Man March, which was also organized by Farrakhan.[65] FFWPU leader Dan Fefferman wrote to his colleagues acknowledging that Farrakhan's and Moon's views differed on multiple issues but shared a view of a "God-centered family".[66]

In 2002 Moon and Han were banned from entry into Germany and the other 14 Schengen treaty countries, on the grounds that they are leaders of a sect that endangered the personal and social development of young people.[67]

In 2003, Korean FFWPU members started a political party in South Korea, "The Party for God, Peace, Unification, and Home." An inauguration declaration stated the new party would focus on preparing for Korean reunification by educating the public about God and peace. A FFWPU official said that similar political parties would be started in Japan and the United States.[68] Since 2003, the FFWPU-related Universal Peace Federation's Middle East Peace Initiative has been organizing group tours of Israel and Palestine to promote understanding, respect, and reconciliation among Jews, Muslims, and Christians.[69][70]

In 2004, at a ceremony on March 23 in the Dirksen Senate Office Building, in Washington, D.C., Moon crowned himself with what was called the "Crown of Peace."[71][72] Lawmakers who attended included Senator Mark Dayton (D-Minn.), Representatives Roscoe Bartlett (R-Md.) and Elijah Cummings (D-Md.), as well as former Representative Walter Fauntroy (D-D.C.) . Key organizers of the event included George Augustus Stallings, Jr., a former Roman Catholic priest who had been married by Moon, and Michael Jenkins, the president of the Unification Church of the United States at that time.[71] Rep. Danny K. Davis played an active role in the ceremony.[72]

On August 15, 2012, Moon was reported to be gravely ill and was put on a respirator at the intensive care unit of St. Mary's Hospital at The Catholic University of Korea in Seoul. He was admitted on August 14, 2012, after suffering from pneumonia earlier in the month.[73] He died there on September 2.[74]

The future of the Unification movement and its theological and institutional legacy is uncertain.[75][76][77]

Beliefs [edit]

The Unification movement is among the minority of new religious movements who have introduced their own unique religious texts.[78] The *Divine Principle* or *Exposition of the Divine Principle* (Hangul: □□□□; RR: *Weolli Gangnon*) is the main theological textbook of the movement. It was co-written by Moon and early disciple Hyo Won'eu and first published in 1966. A translation entitled *Divine Principle* was published in English in 1973.

The *Divine Principle* lays out the core of UC theology, and is held by its believers to have the status of holy scripture. Following the format of systematic theology, it includes (1) God's purpose in creating human beings, (2) the fall of man, and (3) restoration – the process through history by which God is working to remove the ill effects of the fall and restore humanity back to the relationship and position that God originally intended.[79]

View of Jesus [edit]

Jesus has a great importance in the teachings of the Unification movement, although its view of him differs from that of Nicene Christianity. Central to Unification teachings is the concept that fallen humanity can be restored to God only through Jesus the Messiah, who comes as a new Adam to become the new head of the human race, replacing the sinful parents, through whom mankind can be reborn into God's family. According to the *Divine Principle*, Jesus of Nazareth is this Christ.[10]

In 1980 Unification theologian Young Oon Kim wrote:

> Unification theology teaches that Jesus came to establish the kingdom of heaven on earth. As St. Paul wrote, Jesus was to be the new Adam restoring the lost garden of Eden. For this purpose he chose twelve apostles, symbolizing the original twelve tribes of Israel, and sent out seventy disciples, symbolizing all the nations of the world. Like John the Baptist, Jesus proclaimed that the long-awaited kingdom of heaven was at hand (Matt. 4:17). Jesus was appointed God's earthly representative in order to subjugate Satan, cleanse men of original sin and free them from the power of evil. Christ's mission involved liberation from sin and raising mankind to the perfection stage. His purpose was to bring about the kingdom of heaven in our world with the help of men filled with divine truth and love. Jesus' goal was to restore the garden of Eden, a place of joy and beauty in which true families of perfected parents would dwell with God in a full relationship of reciprocal love.[80]

The Unification movement view of Jesus has been criticized by mainstream Christian authors and theologians. In their influential book *The Kingdom of the Cults* (first published in 1965), Walter Ralston Martin and Ravi K. Zacharias disagreed with the *Divine Principle* on the issues of the divinity of Christ, the virgin birth of Jesus, the Unification Church's belief that Jesus should have married and a literal resurrection of Jesus as well as a literal Second Coming. They add: "Moon makes all men equal in 'divinity' to Jesus, thereby striking a blow at the uniqueness of Christ." [81]

The *Divine Principle* responds to this criticism by saying:

> There is no greater value than that of a person who has realized the ideal of creation. This is the value of Jesus, who surely attained the highest imaginable value. The conventional Christian belief in Jesus' divinity is well founded because, as a perfect human being, Jesus is totally one with God. To assert that Jesus is none other than a man who has completed the purpose of creation does not degrade the value of Jesus in the least.[82]

Unificationist theologian Young Oon Kim wrote and some members of the Unification movement believe that Zechariah was the father of Jesus based on the work of, English Christian theologian in the liberal Protestant tradition, Leslie Weatherhead.[83][10][84][85]

Indemnity [edit]

Indemnity, in the context of Unification theology, is a part of the process by which human beings and the world are restored to God's ideal.[86][87][88][89] The concept of indemnity is explained at the start of the second half of the *Divine Principle*, "Introduction to Restoration":

> What, then, is the meaning of restoration through indemnity? When someone has lost his original position or state, he must make some condition to be restored to it. The making of such conditions of restitution is called indemnity. .... God's work to restore people to their true, unfallen state by having them fulfill indemnity conditions is called the providence of restoration through indemnity.[90]

The *Divine Principle* goes on to explain three types of indemnity conditions. Equal conditions of indemnity pay back the full value of what was lost. The biblical verse "life for life, eye for eye, tooth for tooth" (Exod.21:23-24) is quoted as an example of an equal indemnity condition. Lesser conditions of indemnity provide a benefit greater than the price that is paid. Faith, baptism, and the eucharist are mentioned as examples of lesser indemnity conditions. Greater conditions of indemnity come about when a person fails in a lesser condition. In that case a greater price must be paid to make up for the earlier failure. Abraham's attempted sacrifice of his son Isaac (Gen. 22:1-18) and the Israelites' 40 years of wandering in the wilderness under Moses (Num.14:34) are mentioned as examples of greater indemnity conditions.[90] The *Divine Principle* then explains that an indemnity condition must reverse the course by which the mistake or loss came about. Indemnity, at its core, is required of humans because God is pure, and purity cannot relate directly with impurity. Indemnification is the vehicle that allows a "just and righteous" God to work through mankind. Jesus' statement that God had forsaken him (Matt.27:46) and Christianity's history of martyrdom are mentioned as examples of this.[90] The *Divine Principle* then states that human beings, not God or the angels, are the ones responsible for making indemnity conditions.[91][90][92]

In 2005 scholars Daske and Ashcraft explained the concept of indemnity:

> To restart the process toward perfection, God has sent messiahs to earth who could restore the true state of humanity's relationship with God. Before that can happen, however, humans must perform good deeds that cancel the bad effects of sin. Unificationists call this 'indemnity'. Showing love and devotion to one's fellow humans, especially within families, helps pay this indemnity.[93]

Other Christian commentators have criticized the concept of indemnity as being contrary to the Christian doctrine of *sola fide*. Radio and television evangelist Bob Larson said, "Moon's doctrine of sinless perfection by 'indemnity', which can apply even to deceased ancestors, is a denial of the salvation by grace offering through Jesus Christ." Christian historian Ruth Tucker said: "In simple language indemnity is salvation by works."[94][92] Donald Tingle and Richard Fordyce, ministers with the Christian Church (Disciples of Christ) who debated two Unification Church theologians in 1977, wrote: "In short, indemnity is anything you want to make it, since you establish the conditions. The zeal and enthusiasm of the Unification Church members is not so much based on love for God as it is compulsion to indemnify one's own sins."[95]

Science [edit]

The relationship of the Unification movement and science has often been noted, by the news media and by scholars of religion.[96] The *Divine Principle* calls for the unification of science and religion: "Religion and science, each in their own spheres, have been the methods of searching for truth in order to conquer ignorance and attain knowledge. Eventually, the way of religion and the way of science should be integrated and their problems resolved in one united undertaking; the two aspects of truth, internal and external, should develop in full consonance."[97]

In the 1970s and 1980s the Unification movement sponsored the International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences (ICUS),[98][99] in order to promote the concept of the unity of science and religion.[100][101] American news media have suggested that the conferences were also an attempt to improve the often controversial public image of the church.[102][103] The first conference, held in 1972, had 20 participants; while the largest conference, in Seoul, South Korea in 1982, had 808 participants from over 100 countries.[104] Participants in one or more of the conferences included Nobel laureates John Eccles (Physiology or Medicine 1963, who chaired the 1976 conference)[99] and Eugene Wigner (Physics 1963).[105]

The relationship of the Unification movement and science again came to public attention in 2002 with the publication of *Icons of Evolution*, a popular book critical of the teaching of evolution written by member Jonathan Wells. Wells is a graduate of the Unification Theological Seminary and has been active with the Discovery Institute as an advocate for Intelligent design.[106][107][108]

Funerals [edit]

A Unification funeral (or *seungwha*) is a funeral ceremony for the purpose of aiding the deceased person's transition to the spirit world and to celebrate his or her life among family and friends.[109][110]

Theological basis [edit]

Unification movement scholars writing on the church's funeral customs cite the *Divine Principle* which says: "Man, upon his death, after his life in the visible world, goes to the invisible world in a spiritual body, having taken off his 'clothes of flesh' (Job 10:11), and lives there forever." They also note that family and other human relationships continue after death.[109][110] The Unification movement does not uphold belief in reincarnation or eternal damnation. Unification theologian Young Oon Kim writes:

> "You and I are going to live forever. What does immortality signify? We are thinking animals and loving creatures. Those two faculties show our kinship to the eternal God. They make us part of the infinite spirit world. We will think and we will love forever. Thus, our wisdom will continually grow and our love can be enriched more and more. This is what Swedenborg taught. There will be no sharp break between life here and life hereafter. What we start here continues in quality and expands infinitely. The ever living God creates each of us to have fellowship with Him forever."[111]

Funeral Ceremony [edit]

The seungwha ceremony was introduced by Sun Myung Moon in 1984, at the time of the death of his son Heung Jin Moon. Members who had died prior to this were given traditional Christian funerals. When the new and more distinct format was ordained, the official church newspaper reported:

> "The use of the Chinese character meaning 'Seung Hwa' is new and unique to this ceremony and is not commonly used. The character for 'seung' means 'ascending, elevation'. The character 'hwa' has meanings of 'harmony and peace.' The use of 'seung hwa' was first instructed by Father at this time."[110]

The ceremony itself consists of three parts: The Gwi Hwan Ceremony (or "returning to joy"), a farewell prayer service held by family members and close friends; the Seung Hwa Ceremony, (or "ascension and harmony"), a public ceremony celebrating the person's life featuring songs, testimonies, and an address most often by a church pastor; and the Won Jeun Ceremony (or "returning home/to the palace"), the burial service. It is emphasized that the ceremony should have a joyful atmosphere since it is a celebration of the person's life and his or her transition to the spirit world. White and light colored clothing, rather than the traditional black, is worn by participants.[110][109]

The body is buried in the person's holy robe, with a copy of the *Divine Principle*, and the coffin draped with the Unification flag.[12] Cremation is discouraged in the Unification movement, although it is sometimes practiced especially in Japan where it is required by law. Unification cemeteries, or sections of existing facilities, have been established in South Korea, the United Kingdom and the United States.[109][112]

Blessing ceremony and views on sex and family [edit]

Main article: Blessing ceremony of the Unification Church

Rev. and Mrs. Moon preside over a mass blessing ceremony in 2010

The Unification movement is well known for its wedding or wedding vow renewal ceremony. It is given to engaged or married couples. Through it, members believe, the couple is removed from the lineage of sinful humanity and engrafted into God's sinless lineage. The Blessing ceremony was first held in 1961 for 36 couples in Seoul, South Korea by the Moons shortly after their own marriage in 1960. All the couples were members of the church. Rev. Moon matched all of the couples except 12 who were already married to each other before joining the church.[113] Moon's practice of matching couples was very unusual in both Christian tradition and in modern Western culture and attracted much attention and controversy.[114]

Later Blessing ceremonies were larger in scale but followed the same pattern. All participants were HSA-UWC members and

Moon matched most of the couples. In 1982 the first large scale Blessing (of 2,000 couples) outside of Korea took place in Madison Square Garden, New York City.[115] In 1988, Moon matched 2,500 Korean members with Japanese members for a Blessing ceremony held in Korea, partly in order to promote unity between the two nations.[116] In 1992 Sun Myung Moon gave the wedding blessing for 30,000 couples at the Seoul Olympic Stadium[117] and for 13,000 at the Yankee Stadium.[118]

Mary Farrell Bednarowski says that marriage is "really the only sacrament" in the Unification movement. Unificationists therefore view singleness as "not a state to be sought or cultivated" but as preparation for marriage. Pre-marital celibacy and marital faithfulness are emphasized.[13] Adherents may be taught to "abstain from intimate relations for a specified time after marriage."[119] The church does not give its marriage blessing to same-sex couples.[120] Moon has emphasized the similarity between Unification views of sexuality and evangelical Christianity, "reaching out to conservative Christians in this country in the last few years by emphasizing shared goals like support for sexual abstinence outside of marriage, and opposition to homosexuality."[121]

Esotericism [edit]

The Unification movement is sometimes said to be esoteric in that it keeps some of its doctrines secret from nonmembers,[122][123][124] a practice that is sometimes called "heavenly deception."[125] In 1979, critics Tingle and Fordyce commented: "How different the openness of Christianity is to the attitude of Reverend Moon and his followers who are often reluctant to reveal to the public many of their basic doctrines."[126] Since the 1990s, many Unification texts that were formerly regarded as esoteric have been posted on the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification's official websites.[127]

Scholarly studies [edit]

In the early 1960s John Lofland lived with HSA-UWC missionary Young Oon Kim and a small group of American members and studied their activities in trying to promote their beliefs and win new members. Lofland noted that most of their efforts were ineffective and that most of the people who joined did so because of personal relationships with other members, often family relationships. Lofland published his findings in 1964 as a doctoral thesis entitled "The World Savers: A Field Study of Cult Processes", and in 1966 in book form by Prentice-Hall as *Doomsday Cult: A Study of Conversion, Proselytization, and Maintenance of Faith*.[128][129][130][131]

In 1977 Frederick Sontag, a professor of philosophy at Pomona College and a minister in the United Church of Christ,[132] spent 10 months visiting HSA-UWC members in North America, Europe, and Asia as well as interviewing Moon at his home in New York State. He reported his findings and observations in *Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church*, published by Abingdon Press. The book also provides an overview of Unification Church beliefs.[133] In an interview with UPI Sontag compared the HSA-UWC with The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints and said that he expected its practices to conform more to mainstream American society as its members become more mature. He added that he did not want to be considered an apologist but a close look at HSA-UWC's theology is important: "They raise some incredibly interesting issues."[134]

In 1984 Eileen Barker published *The Making of a Moonie* based on her seven-year study of HSA-UWC members in the United Kingdom and the United States.[135] In 2006 Laurence Iannaccone of George Mason University, a specialist in the economics of religion, wrote that *The Making of a Moonie* was "one of the most comprehensive and influential studies" of the process of conversion to new religious movements.[136] Australian psychologist Len Oakes and British psychiatry professor Anthony Storr, who have written rather critically about cults, gurus, new religious movements, and their leaders have praised *The Making of a Moonie*.[137][138] It was given the Distinguished Book Award for 1985 by the Society for the Scientific Study of Religion[139]

In 1987, scholars with American Psychological Association rejected the hypotheses of those who accused new religious movements (such as the HSA-UWC) of brainwashing and coercive persuasion, stating that those "conclusions...cannot be said to be scientific in any meaningful sense".[140]

In 1998 Irving Louis Horowitz, sociologist, questioned the relationship between the HSA-UWC and scholars whom it paid to conduct research on its behalf.[141]

Relations and differences with other religions [edit]

Judaism [edit]

The relationship between the Unification movement and Judaism has been marked by controversy. In 1976 the American Jewish Committee released a report by Rabbi A. James Rudin which stated that *Divine Principle* contained "pejorative language, stereotyped imagery, and accusations of collective sin and guilt."[142] In a news conference presented by the AJC and representatives of Catholic and Protestant churches, panelists stated that the text "contained over 125 anti-Jewish references." They noted Moon's public then-recent condemnation of "antisemitic and anti-Christian attitudes", and called upon him to make a "comprehensive and systematic removal" of antisemitic and anti-Christian references in the *Divine Principle* as a demonstration of good faith.[143]

In 1977 the HSA-UWC issued a rebuttal to the report, stating that it was neither comprehensive nor reconciliatory, but rather had a "hateful tone" and was filled with "sweeping denunciations." It denied that the *Divine Principle* teaches antisemitism and gave detailed responses to 17 specific allegations contained in the AJC's report, stating that allegations were distortions of teaching and obscuration of real passage content or that the passages were accurate summaries of Jewish scripture or New Testament passages.[144]

In 1984 Mose Durst, then the president of the Unification Church of the United States and himself a convert from Judaism,[145] said that the Jewish community had been "hateful" in its response to the growth of the Unification movement, and placed blame both on the community's "insecurity" and on Unification Church members' "youthful zeal and ignorance." Rudin, then the national interreligious affairs director of the American Jewish Committee, said that Durst's remarks were inaccurate and unfair and that "hateful is a harsh word to use."[146] In the same year Durst wrote in his autobiography: "Our relations with the Jewish community have been the most painful to me personally. I say this with a heavy heart, since I was raised in the Jewish faith and am proud of my heritage."[147]

In 1989 movement leaders Peter Ross and Andrew Wilson issued "Guidelines for Members of The Unification Church in Relations with the Jewish People" which stated: "In the past there have been serious misunderstandings between Judaism and the Unification Church. In order to clarify these difficulties and guide Unification Church members in their relations with Jews,

the Unification Church suggests the following guidelines."[148]

Mainstream Christianity [edit]

The relationship between the Unification movement and mainstream Christianity has been marked by conflict and disagreement, as well as by cooperation at times. The movement's teachings are based on the Bible, but include new interpretations not found in mainstream Christian tradition.[149][150] Mainstream Christianity is usually defined as those Christian churches which follow the Nicene Creed and includes the Roman Catholic, Eastern Orthodox, and most Protestant churches.[151][152]

From its beginning the Unification movement has claimed to be Christian and has tried to promote its teachings to mainstream Christian churches and organizations. The Unification Church in South Korea was labeled as heretical by Protestant churches in South Korea, including Moon's own Presbyterian Church. In the United States the church was rejected by ecumenical organizations as being non-Christian. The main objections against it were theological, especially because of the Unification Church's addition of material to the Bible and for its rejection of a literal Second Coming of Jesus.[153] Protestant commentators have also criticized Unification Church teachings as being contrary to the Protestant doctrine of salvation by faith alone.[17][154]

The *Divine Principle* includes new interpretations of the Bible not found in mainstream Christian traditions.[149] From its beginning, the Unification movement claimed to be Christian and promoted its teachings to mainstream Christian churches and organizations. The HSA-UWC in Korea was labeled as heretical by Protestant churches in South Korea, including Moon's own Presbyterian Church. In the United States, the movement was rejected by ecumenical organizations as being non-Christian. The main objections were theological, especially because of the movement's addition of material to the Bible.[153]

Protestant Christian commentators have also criticized Unification teachings as contrary to the Protestant doctrine of *sola fide*.[17][155] In their influential book *The Kingdom of the Cults* (first published in 1965), Walter Ralston Martin and Ravi K. Zacharias disagreed with the *Divine Principle* on the issues of Christology, the virgin birth of Jesus, the movement's belief that Jesus should have married, the necessity of the crucifixion of Jesus, and a literal resurrection of Jesus as well as a literal Second Coming.[156]

In 1974 Moon founded the Unification Theological Seminary, in Barrytown, New York, partly in order to improve relations of the movement with other churches. Professors from other denominations, including a Methodist minister, a Presbyterian, and a Roman Catholic priest, as well as a rabbi, were hired to teach religious studies to the students, who were being trained as leaders in the movement.[157][158][159][160][161]

In 1977, Unification member Jonathan Wells, who later became well known as the author of the popular Intelligent Design book *Icons of Evolution*, defended Unification theology against what he said were unfair criticisms by the National Council of Churches.[162] That same year Frederick Sontag, a professor of philosophy at Pomona College and a minister in the United Church of Christ,[132] published *Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church* which gave an overview of the movement and urged Christians to take it more seriously.[133][134][163]

In 1982, Moon was imprisoned in the United States after being found guilty by a jury of willfully filing false Federal Income tax returns and conspiracy. (See: United States vs. Sun Myung Moon) HSA-UWC members launched a public-relations campaign. Booklets, letters and videotapes were mailed to approximately 300,000 Christian leaders in the United States. Many of them signed petitions protesting the government's case.[164] Among the American Christian leaders who spoke out in defense of Moon were conservative Jerry Falwell, head of Moral Majority, and liberal Joseph Lowery, head of the Southern Christian Leadership Conference.[150] The American Baptist Churches in the U.S.A, the National Council of Churches, the National Black Catholic Clergy Caucus, and the Southern Christian Leadership Conference filed briefs in support of Moon.[165]

In the 1980s the Unification movement sent thousands of American ministers from other churches on trips to Japan and South Korea to inform them about Unification teachings. At least one minister was dismissed by his congregation for taking part.[166] In 1994 the church had about 5,000 members in Russia and came under criticism from the Russian Orthodox Church.[49] In 1997, the Russian government passed a law requiring the movement and other non-Russian religions to register their congregations and submit to tight controls.[167]

In 1995 the Unification movement related organization the Women's Federation for World Peace indirectly contributed $3.5 million to help Baptist Liberty University which at that time was in financial difficulty. This was reported in the United States news media as an example of closer relationships between the movement and conservative Christian congregations.[168]

In 2001, the Unification movement came into conflict with the Roman Catholic Church when Catholic archbishop Emmanuel Milingo and Maria Sung, a 43-year-old Korean acupuncturist, married in a Blessing ceremony, presided over by Rev. and Mrs. Moon. Following his marriage the Archbishop was called to the Vatican by Pope John Paul II, where he was asked not to see his wife anymore, and to move to a Capuchin monastery.[169] Sung went on a hunger strike to protest their separation. This attracted much media attention.[170] Milingo is now an advocate of the removal of the requirement for celibacy by priests in the Catholic Church. He is the founder of Married Priests Now!.[171] Archbishop George Augustus Stallings, Jr., also a former Catholic priest, who had founded his own Imani Temple African-American Catholic Congregation, is also a supporter of the organization.[172]

In 2003 Moon began his "tear down",[173] or "take down the cross"[174] campaign. The campaign was begun in the belief that the cross is a reminder of Jesus' pain and has been a source of division between people of different faiths. The campaign included a burial ceremony for the cross and a crown to be put in its place. The American Clergy Leadership Conference (ACLC), an interfaith group founded by Moon, spearheaded the effort, calling the cross a symbol of oppression and superiority.[175]

Islam [edit]

The relationship between the Unification movement and Islam has often been noted, both by scholars and the news media. The *Divine Principle* lists the Muslim world as one of the world's four major divisions (the others being East Asia, Hindu, and Christendom).[176] In 1997, Louis Farrakhan, the leader of the Nation of Islam, a Black Muslim organization, served as a coofficiator at a Blessing Ceremony presided over by Moon and Han.[177] In 2000 the Church and the Nation of Islam co-sponsored the Million Family March, a rally in Washington, D.C., to celebrate family unity and racial and religious harmony.[64][65]

Unification movement support for Islamist anti-communists came to public attention in 1987 when church member Lee Shapiro

was killed in Afghanistan during the Soviet–Afghan War while filming a documentary.[178][179] The resistance group they were traveling with reported that they had been ambushed by military forces of the Soviet Union or the Afghan government. However, the details have been questioned, partly because of the poor reputation of the group's leader, Gulbuddin Hekmatyar.[180][181]

In 1997, the *Washington Report on Middle East Affairs* (which is critical of United States and Israeli policies), praised the Unification movement owned newspaper, *The Washington Times* and the *Times*' sister publication *The Middle East Times* (along with *The Christian Science Monitor* owned by the Church of Christ, Scientist) for their objective and informative coverage of Islam and the Middle East, while criticizing the *Times* generally pro-Israel editorial policy. The *Report* suggested that these newspapers, being owned by religious organizations, were less influenced by pro-Israel pressure groups in the United States.[182]

In 1997, Louis Farrakhan, the leader of The Nation of Islam, served as a "co-officiator" at a blessing ceremony presided over by Sun Myung Moon and Hak Ja Han.[183] In 2000 the FFWPU co-sponsored the Million Family March, a rally in Washington D.C. to celebrate family unity and racial and religious harmony, along with the Nation of Islam.[64] Farrakhan was the main speaker at the event which was held on October 16, 2000; the fifth anniversary of the Million Man March, which was also organized by Farrakhan.[65] Unification Church leader Dan Fefferman wrote to his colleagues acknowledging that Farrakhan's and Moon's views differed on multiple issues but shared a view of a "God-centered family".[66] In 2007 Rev and Mrs Moon sent greetings to Farrakhan while he was recovering from cancer, saying: "We send love and greetings to Minister Farrakhan and Mother Khadijah."[184]

In the 1990s and 2000s the Unification movement made public statements claiming communications with the spirits of religious leaders including Muhammad and also Confucius, the Buddha, Jesus, and Augustine, as well as political leaders such as Karl Marx, Friedrich Engels, Lenin, Joseph Stalin, Leon Trotsky, Mao Zedong, and many more. This was reported to have distanced the movement from Islam as well as from mainstream Christianity.[153][185] From 2001 to 2009 the Unification movement owned the American Life TV Network (now known as Youtoo TV),[186] which in 2007 broadcast George Clooney's documentary, *A Journey to Darfur*, which was harshly critical of Islamists in Darfur, the Republic of Sudan.[187][188][189] It released the film on DVD in 2008 and announced that proceeds from its sale would be donated to the International Rescue Committee.[190] In his 2009 autobiography Moon praised Islam and expressed the hope that there would be more understanding between different religious communities.[191] In 2011 representatives of the Unification Church took part in an international seminar held in Taiwan by the Muslim World League. The purpose of the seminar was said to be to encourage inter-faith dialogue and discourage terrorism.[192]

Interfaith activities [edit]

In 2009 the FFWPU held an interfaith event in the Congress of the Republic of Peru.[193] Former President of the Congress Marcial Ayaipoma[194] and other notable politicians were called "Ambassadors for Peace" of the Unification Church.[195][196][197][198] In 2010, the church built a large interfaith temple in Seoul.[199] Author Deepak Chopra was the keynote at an interfaith event of the Unification Church cohosted with the United Nations at the Headquarters of the United Nations.[200] In 2011, an interfaith event was held in the National Assembly of Thailand, the President of the National Assembly of Thailand attended the event.[201] In 2012, the Unification Church-affiliated Universal Peace Federation held an interfaith dialogue in Italy that was cosponsored by United Nations.[202] That year, Unification movement affiliated Universal Peace Federation held an interfaith program for representatives of 12 various religions and confessions in the hall of the United Nations General Assembly. The President of the United Nations General Assembly,[203] the Deputy Secretary-General of the United Nations,[204][205] the Permanent Observer of the Holy See to the United Nations[206] and other UN officials spoke.[207]

Political activism [edit]

Anti-communism [edit]

In the 1940s, Moon cooperated with Communist Party members in the Korean independence movement against Imperial Japan. However, after the Korean War (1950–1953), he became an outspoken anti-communist.[191] In 1964, he founded the Korean Culture and Freedom Foundation, a public diplomacy agency which promoted the interests of South Korea and sponsored Radio Free Asia. Former U.S. Presidents Harry S. Truman, Dwight D. Eisenhower, and Richard Nixon were honorary presidents or directors at various times.[208]

In 1972, Moon predicted the decline of communism, based on the teachings of the *Divine Principle*: "After 7,000 biblical years —6,000 years of restoration history plus the millennium, the time of completion—communism will fall in its 70th year. Here is the meaning of the year 1978. Communism, begun in 1917, could maintain itself approximately 60 years and reach its peak. So 1978 is the border line and afterward communism will decline; in the 70th year it will be altogether ruined. This is true. Therefore, now is the time for people who are studying communism to abandon it."[209] In 1973, he called for an "automatic theocracy" to replace communism and solve "every political and economic situation in every field."[210]

In 1974, Moon asked members in the United States to support President Richard Nixon during the Watergate scandal when Nixon was being pressured to resign his office. They prayed and fasted in support of Nixon for three days in front of the United States Capitol, under the motto: "Forgive, Love and Unite." On February 1, 1974, Nixon publicly thanked them for their support and officially received Moon. This brought the movement into widespread public and media attention.[211] In 1976, church president Neil Albert Salonen met with Senator Bob Dole to defend the HSA–UWC against charges made by its critics, including parents of some members.[212]

In 1976, Moon established News World Communications, an international news media conglomerate which publishes *The Washington Times* newspaper in Washington D.C. and newspapers in South Korea, Japan, and South America, partly in order to promote political conservatism. According to *The Washington Post*: "...the *Times* was established by Moon to combat communism and be a conservative alternative to what he perceived as the liberal bias of The Washington Post."[213] Bo Hi Pak, called Moon's "right-hand man", was the founding president and the founding chairman of the board.[214] Moon asked Richard L. Rubenstein, a controversial rabbi and college professor who had written on the Holocaust, to join its board of directors.[215] *The Washington Times* has often been noted for its generally pro-Israel editorial policies.[182] In 2002, during the 20th anniversary party for the *Times*, Moon said, "The *Washington Times* will become the instrument in spreading the truth about God to the world."[213]

In 1977, the Subcommittee on International Organizations of the Committee on International Relations, of the United States House of Representatives, found that the South Korean intelligence agency, the KCIA, had used the movement to gain political influence with the United States and that some members had worked as volunteers in Congressional offices. Together they founded the Korean Cultural Freedom Foundation, a nonprofit organization which acted as a public diplomacy campaign for the Republic of Korea.[216] The committee also investigated possible KCIA influence on the Unification Church's campaign in support of Nixon.[217]

In 1980, members founded CAUSA International, an anti-communist educational organization based in New York City.[218] In the 1980s, it was active in 21 countries. In the United States, it sponsored educational conferences for evangelical and fundamentalist Christian leaders[219] as well as seminars and conferences for Senate staffers, Hispanic Americans and conservative activists.[220] In 1986, CAUSA International sponsored the documentary film *Nicaragua Was Our Home*, about the Miskito Indians of Nicaragua and their persecution at the hands of the Nicaraguan government. It was filmed and produced by USA-UWC member Lee Shapiro, who later died while filming with anti-Soviet forces during the Soviet–Afghan War.[221][222][223][224]

In 1980, members in Washington, D.C. disrupted a protest rally against the United States military draft.[225] In 1981, the Appellate Division of New York State Supreme Court ruled that the HSA–UWC was not entitled to property tax exemptions on its New York City properties since its primary purpose was political, not religious.[226] In 1982, this ruling was overturned by the New York State Supreme Court itself, which ruled that it should be considered a religious organization for tax purposes.[227]

In 1983, some American members joined a public protest against the Soviet Union over its shooting down of Korean Airlines Flight 007.[228] In 1984, the HSA–UWC founded the Washington Institute for Values in Public Policy, a Washington D.C. think tank that underwrites conservative-oriented research and seminars at Stanford University, the University of Chicago, and other institutions.[229] In the same year, member Dan Fefferman founded the International Coalition for Religious Freedom in Virginia, which is active in protesting what it considers to be threats to religious freedom by governmental agencies.[230] In August 1985, seven years before the fall of Soviet Union, the Professors World Peace Academy, an organization founded by Moon, sponsored a conference in Geneva to debate the theme "The situation in the world after the fall of the communist empire."[231]

Post Cold War era [edit]

In April 1990, Moon visited the Soviet Union and met with President Mikhail Gorbachev. Moon expressed support for the political and economic transformations underway in the Soviet Union. At the same time, the movement was expanding into formerly communist nations.[232] In 1991, he met with Kim Il Sung, the North Korean President, to discuss ways to achieve peace on the Korean peninsula, as well as on international relations, tourism, and other topics.[233] In 1994, Moon was officially invited to the funeral of Kim Il Sung, in spite of the absence of diplomatic relations between North Korea and South Korea.[234]

In 1994, *The New York Times* recognized the movement's political influence, saying it was "a theocratic powerhouse that is pouring foreign fortunes into conservative causes in the United States."[235] In 1998, the Egyptian newspaper *Al-Ahram* criticized Moon's "ultra-right leanings" and suggested a personal relationship with conservative Israeli prime minister Benjamin Netanyahu.[236]

In 1995, the former U.S. President George H. W. Bush and his wife, Barbara Bush, spoke at a FFWPU event in the Tokyo Dome.[237] "If as president I could have done one thing to have helped the country more," Mr. Bush told the gathering, "it would have been to do a better job in finding a way, either through speaking out or through raising a moral standard, to strengthen the American family."[238] Hak Ja Han, the main speaker, credited her husband with bringing about Communism's fall and declared that he must save America from "the destruction of the family and moral decay."[239]

In 2000, Moon founded the World Association of Non-Governmental Organizations (WANGO), which describes itself as "a global organization whose mission is to serve its member organizations, strengthen and encourage the non-governmental sector as a whole, increase public understanding of the non-governmental community, and provide the mechanism and support needed for NGOs to connect, partner, and multiply their contributions to solve humanity's basic problems." However, it has been criticized for promoting conservatism in contrast to some of the ideals of the United Nations.[240][241][242]

In 2003, Korean FFWPU members started a political party in South Korea. It was named "The Party for God, Peace, Unification, and Home." In an inauguration declaration, the new party said it would focus on preparing for the reunification of South and North Korea by educating the public about God and peace. A church official said that similar political parties would be started in Japan and the United States.[68]

Moon was a member of the Honorary Committee of the Unification Ministry of the Republic of Korea.[243] The church member Jae-jung Lee had been once a unification minister of the Republic of Korea.[244] Another, Ek Nath Dhakal, is a member of the Nepalese Constituent Assembly,[245] and a first Minister for Co-operatives and Poverty Alleviation Ministry of the Government of Nepal.[246] In 2016, a study sponsored by the Unification Theological Seminary found that American members were divided in their choices in the 2016 United States presidential election, with the largest bloc supporting Senator Bernie Sanders.[247]

North Korea [edit]

The Unification movement has had a complex relationship with the Democratic People's Republic of Korea (North Korea).[248] After the defeat of Japan (in the Second World War) in 1945, Korea was divided between Soviet and American occupation forces. In 1948 the Republic of Korea was established in the south and the Democratic People's Republic of Korea in the north, usually referred to as South Korea and North Korea.[249] The government of North Korea followed Stalinist policies and sought to discourage free religious activities.[250]

In 1946, Moon was living in Pyongyang, the capital of North Korea.[37] Pyongyang was the center of Christian activity in Korea until 1945. From the late forties 166 priests and other religious figures were killed or disappeared in concentration camps, including Francis Hong Yong-ho, bishop of Pyongyang[251] and all monks of Tokwon abbey.[252] No Catholic priest survived the persecution, all churches were destroyed and the government never allowed any foreign priest to set up in North Korea.[253] Moon was arrested by the North Korean authorities on allegations of spying for South Korea and given a five-year sentence to the Hŭngnam labor camp.[38] In 1950, during the Korean War, he escaped and fled to Pusan, South Korea.[40]

Moon's teachings were strongly anti-communist and viewed the Cold War between democracy and communism as the final conflict between God and Satan, with divided Korea as its primary front line.[254] Soon after its founding the Unification

movement began supporting anti-communist organizations, including the World League for Freedom and Democracy founded in 1966 in Taipei, Republic of China (Taiwan), by Chiang Kai-shek,[255] and the Korean Culture and Freedom Foundation, an international public diplomacy organization which also sponsored Radio Free Asia.[208] In 1975 Moon spoke at a government sponsored rally against potential North Korean military aggression on Yeouido Island in Seoul to an audience of around 1 million.[256]

In the late 1980s, when the Soviet Union was embarking on political and economic reform, it began demanding payment from North Korea for past and current aid—amounts North Korea could not repay.[257] With the dissolution of the Soviet Union in 1991, trade between the two countries ceased altogether and the North Korean economy collapsed. Without Soviet aid, the flow of inputs to the North Korea agricultural sector ended, and the government proved too inflexible to respond.[258] As a result, food production decreased precipitously.[259][260] By 1994, the North Korean famine was underway.[261] Estimates of the death toll vary widely. Out of a total population of approximately 22 million, somewhere between 240,000 and 3,500,000 people died from starvation or hunger-related illnesses, with the deaths peaking in 1997.[262][263] Initial assistance to North Korea started as early as 1990, with small-scale support from religious groups in South Korea and assistance from UNICEF.[264] In August 1995, North Korea made an official request for humanitarian aid and the international community responded accordingly, including South Korea, the United States, Japan, and China.[265]

In 1991, Moon traveled to North Korea to meet with its president, Kim Il-sung.[233] In 1992, Kim gave his first and only interview with the Western news media to *Washington Times* reporter Josette Sheeran (who later became Executive Director of the United Nations World Food Programme).[266] In 1994, Moon was officially invited to Kim's funeral, in spite of the absence of diplomatic relations between North Korea and South Korea.[267]

In 1998, Unification movement-related businesses launched operations in North Korea with the approval of the government of South Korea, which had prohibited business relationships between North and South before.[268] In 2000, the church-associated business group Tongil Group founded Pyeonghwa Motors in the North Korean port of Nampo, in cooperation with the North Korean government. It was the first automobile factory in North Korea.[269]

During the presidency of George W. Bush, Dong Moon Joo, a Unification movement member and then president of *The Washington Times*, undertook unofficial diplomatic missions to North Korea in an effort to improve its relationship with the United States.[270] Joo was born in North Korea and is a citizen of the United States.[271]

In 2003, Korean Unification movement members started a political party in South Korea. It was named "The Party for God, Peace, Unification and Home". In its inauguration declaration, the new party said it would focus on preparing for Korean reunification by educating the public about God and peace.[68] Moon was a member of the Honorary Committee of the Unification Ministry of the Republic of Korea.[272] Church member Jae-jung Lee was a Unification Minister of the Republic of Korea.[244]

In 2010, in Pyongyang, to mark the 20th anniversary of Moon's visit to Kim Il-sung, *de jure* President Kim Yong-nam hosted Moon's son Hyung Jin Moon, then the president of the Unification Church, in his official residence.[273][274] At that time, Hyung Jin Moon donated 600 tons of flour to the children of Jeongju, the birthplace of Sun Myung Moon.[275][276]

In 2012, Moon was posthumously awarded North Korea's National Reunification Prize.[277] On the first anniversary of Moon's death, North Korean president Kim Jong-un expressed condolences to Han and the family, saying: "Kim Jong-un prayed for the repose of Moon, who worked hard for national concord, prosperity and reunification and world peace."[278] In 2017, the Unification Church sponsored the International Association of Parliamentarians for Peace (IAPP)—headed by former Prime Minister of Nepal Madhav Kumar Nepal and former Minister of Peace and Reconstruction Ek Nath Dhakal—visited Pyongyang and had constructive talks with the North Korean Workers Party.[279]

Organisations [edit]

Although Rev. Moon was commonly known as a religious figure, commentators have mentioned his belief in a literal Kingdom of God on earth to be brought about by human effort as a motivation for his establishment of multitudinous groups that are not strictly religious in their purposes.[280][281] Moon was not directly involved with managing the day-to-day activities of the numerous organizations that he indirectly oversaw, yet all of them attribute the inspiration behind their work to his leadership and teachings.[9] Others have said that one purpose of these non-sectarian organizations is to pursue social respectability.[282] These organizations have sometimes been labeled "front groups", an expression which originally referred to Soviet supported organizations during the Cold War.[283]

Multi-faceted organizations [edit]

CARP [edit]

The Collegiate Association for the Research of Principles (CARP) is a collegiate organization founded by Moon and his followers in 1955, which promotes intercultural, interracial, and international cooperation through the Unification world view.[284][285] J. Isamu Yamamoto states in *Unification Church*: "At times CARP has been very subtle about its association with the Unification Church, however, the link between the two has always been strong, since the purpose of both is to spread Moon's teachings."[286]

Family Peace Association [edit]

The Family Peace Association, founded by Moon's eldest living son, Hyun Jin Moon.[287][75][76][288][77] It has the mission: “To enlighten humanity by uplifting their spiritual consciousness through universal principles and values rooted in God-centered families.”[289][290][291][292] Its founders are Hyun Jin Moon and Junsook Moon.[293][294][295][296][297][298]

Universal Peace Federation [edit]

The Universal Peace Federation is an international organization which promotes religious freedom.[299] *Dialogue and Alliance* is its journal published from Tarrytown, New York.[300]

Women's Federation for World Peace [edit]

The Women's Federation for World Peace was founded in 1992 by Hak Ja Han. Its stated purpose is to encourage women to work more actively in promoting peace in their communities and greater society. It has members in 143 countries.[301][302][303]

Han has traveled the world speaking at conventions on the WFWP's behalf.[304] In 1993 the WFWP held a conference in Tokyo, Japan at which the keynote speaker was former U.S. Vice President Dan Quayle's wife Marilyn Tucker Quayle, and in a speech at the event Han spoke positively of Mrs. Quayle's humanitarian work.[305]

WFWP logo

In 1993 Han traveled to 20 cities in the United States promoting the WFWP,[306] as well as to 12 countries.[301] At an event in Salt Lake City, Utah she told attendants: "If a family is not centered on God's ideal of love, there will be conflict among the members of that family. Without God's love as an absolute center, such a family will ultimately break down. A nation of such families will also decline."[306] Her 1993 speeches in the United States focused on increasing violence in the U.S., and the degradation of the family unit.[307]

In 1995 the WFWP generated controversy when it indirectly contributed $3.5 million to help Liberty University, which at that time was in financial difficulty. This was reported in the United States news media as an example of closer relationships between the Unification Church and conservative Christian congregations.[308] That same year former United States president George H. W. Bush spoke at several WFWP meetings in Japan,[309][310] and at a related conference in Washington D.C.. There he was quoted by *The New York Times* as saying: "If as president I could have done one thing to have helped the country more it would have been to do a better job in finding a way, either through speaking out or through raising a moral standard, to strengthen the American family."[311]

The events in Japan drew protests from Japanese people who were wary of unorthodox religious groups. Bush's spokesperson Jane Becker stated "We were satisfied that there was not a connection with the Unification Church, and based on the information we were given we felt comfortable speaking to this group."[312] 50,000 people attended Bush's speech in Tokyo.[313] The theme of the talks was "family values".[309] In the half-hour speech, Bush said "what really counts is faith, family and friends". Bush also spoke on the importance of the relationship between Japan and the United States and its importance for world peace.[314] Han spoke after Bush's speech and praised Moon, crediting him for the decline of communism and saying that he must save America from "the destruction of the family and moral decay."[314][315]

In 1999 the WFWP sponsored a conference in Malaysia in which religious and government leaders spoke on the need to strengthen education and support families, as well as the need for peace and understanding between ethnic and racial groups in the nations.[316] In 2009 it co-sponsored, along with the Unification Church affiliated organization the Universal Peace Federation and the government of Taiwan, a conference in Taipei calling for Taiwan's greater participation in world affairs independent of the People's Republic of China. Taiwan's president, Ma Ying-jeou, spoke at the event.[317] The WFWP has also been active in sponsoring various local charity and community events.[318][319]

Service for Peace [edit]

Service For Peace (SFP) is a non-profit organization, founded in 2002 by the Unification Church leader Sun Myung Moon, to give opportunities to young people who wish to better themselves and their communities. As of April 2007, the organization had established chapters in North America, Central America, Caribbean, Europe, Asia, Africa and Oceania. SFP is active in communities and statewide. Colleges have recruited Service for Peace Campus Corps to benefit their fellow peers as well as the communities around them.[320][321] Some SFP chapters have smaller initiatives designed to meet local needs. In the US, Service For Peace's Backpack Angel program supports students throughout Kentucky by providing backpacks and school supplies for children in need.[322]

International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences [edit]

International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences (ICUS) is a series of conferences formerly sponsored by the *International Cultural Foundation* and since 2017 by the Hyo Jeong International Foundation on the Unity of the Sciences (HJIFUS).[33][99] The first conference, held in 1972, had 20 participants; while the largest conference, in Seoul, South Korea in 1982, had 808 participants from over 100 countries.[104]

Participants in one or more of the conferences included Nobel laureates John Eccles (Physiology or Medicine 1963, who chaired the 1976 conference),[99] Eugene Wigner (Physics 1963),[323] economist and political philosopher Friedrich Hayek,[324] ecologist Kenneth Mellanby, Frederick Seitz, pioneer of solid state physics, Ninian Smart, President of the American Academy of Religion,[325] and Holocaust theologian Richard Rubenstein,[326]

Moon believed that religion alone can not save the world;[100] and his particular belief in the importance of the unity of science and religion was reportedly a motivation for the founding of the ICUS.[101] American news media have suggested that the conferences were also an attempt to improve the often controversial Unification Church's public image.[102][103]

The last two editions of the conference have focused on environmental issues, such as rising sea levels and water temperatures, food scarcity, renewable energy, and waste management. The theme in 2017, at ICUS XXIII, was "Earth's Environmental Crisis and the Role of Science," with a similar theme following at ICUS XXIV, in 2018: "Scientific Solutions to the Earth's Environmental Challenges."[327]

Interfaith organizations [edit]

- The Assembly of the World's Religions was founded by Sun Myung Moon. The first assembly was held from November 15 to 21, 1985, in MacAfee, New Jersey. The second was from August 15 to 21, 1990 in San Francisco.[328]
- Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace[329][330]
- American Clergy Leadership Conference (ACLC)[331][332][333]
- The Middle East Peace Initiative sponsors projects to promote peace and understanding including visits by international Christians to Israel and Palestine and dialogues between members of the Israeli Knesset and the Palestinian Legislative Council.[334]

Educational organizations [edit]

- Cheongshim Graduate School of Theology[335]
- CheongShim International Academy
- International Educational Foundation.[336]
- *New World Encyclopedia* — an Internet encyclopedia that, in part, selects and rewrites certain Wikipedia articles through a focus on Unification values.[337] It "aims to organize and present human knowledge in ways consistent with our natural

purposes"[338] and "to promote knowledge that leads to happiness, well-being, and world peace."[339]
- Paragon House, book publishing.[340]
- The Professors World Peace Academy was founded in 1973 by Sun Myung Moon;[341] who declared the group's intent to "contribute to the solutions of urgent problems facing our modern civilization and to help resolve the cultural divide between East and West". PWPA now has chapters in over one hundred countries.[342]
- Sun Hwa Arts School
- Sun Moon University[343]
- Sun Myung Moon Institute[344]
- High School of the Pacific in Kealakekua, Hawaii[345]
- The Unification Theological Seminary (UTS) is the main seminary of the international Unification movement. It is located in Barrytown, New York, and with an Extension Center in midtown Manhattan. Its purpose has been described as training leaders and theologians within the movement.[7] The seminary's first classes were offered in September 1975. The institution's regional accreditation by the Middle States Commission on Higher Education first granted in 1996 was reaffirmed in 2016.[346][347][348] While most of the UTS's students have been Unification Church members,[158] a growing number come from diverse churches and faiths. The seminary's professors come from a wide range of faiths, including a Rabbi, a Sheikh, a Methodist minister, a Presbyterian, and a Roman Catholic priest.[159][349][350] In 2003, the seminary had about 120 students from around the world, with most coming from South Korea and Japan, which have large numbers of Unification Church members.[351]
- Blessed Teens Academy—Greeley, Colorado [352]
- New Hope Academy—Landover Hills, Maryland, USA. "Although New Hope Academy was founded in 1990 by members of the Unification movement, it is not a sectarian school. No doctrines are taught; in fact, no classes in religion are offered.However morning services are mandatory, during services discussions about religious doctrines, hymns, and group prayers all take place. We believe it is the job of parents—with the support of their church, temple, or mosque—to impart their personal faith to their child." [353][354]
- WUF - World University Federation
- Several UC-related groups are working to promote sexual abstinence until marriage and fidelity in marriage and to prevent child exploitation; they care for victims of Thailand's sex trade as well.[355][356][357] In 1996, members of the Unification Church gathered 3,500 signatures in an anti-pornography campaign.[358]

Organizations in the arts [edit]

- Kirov Academy of Ballet, dance school in Washington DC.[359]
- Korean Cultural Foundation[360]
- Little Angels Children's Folk Ballet of Korea: The Little Angels Children's Folk Ballet of Korea is a dance troupe founded in 1962 by Moon and other UC members to project a positive image of South Korea to the world.[361][362] In 1973 they performed at the Headquarters of the United Nations in New York City.[363] The group's dances are based on Korean legends and regional dances, and its costumes on traditional Korean styles.[364]
- Manhattan Center, Theater and recording studio in New York City[365]
- New York City Symphony
- One Way Productions, movie production company.[366]
- The Universal Ballet, founded South Korea in 1984, is one of only four professional ballet companies in South Korea. The company performs a repertory that includes many full length classical story ballets, together with shorter contemporary works and original full-length Korean ballets created especially for the company. It is supported by UC members with Moon's daughter-in-law Julia Moon, who was the company's prima ballerina until 2001, now serving as General Director.[367][368][369][370]

Sports organizations [edit]

- Centro Esportivo Nova Esperança, Clube Atlético Sorocaba, Brazilian football teams.[371]
- Martial Arts Federation for World Peace[365]
- Peace Cup[372] International football (soccer) tournament.
- Seongnam Ilhwa Chunma, South Korean football team.[373]
- The Sunmoon Peace Football Foundation founded by the UC in 2003 sponsors the Peace Cup, an invitational preseason friendly association football tournament for club teams, currently held every two years.[374] It is contested by the eight clubs from several continents, though 12 teams participated in 2009. The first three competitions were held in South Korea, and the 2009 Peace Cup Andalucia was held in Madrid and Andalusia, Spain.[375][376] In 1989, Moon founded Seongnam FC, a South Korean football team.[377]
- Yeongpyeong Ski Resort, which hosted the 2018 Winter Olympics[378][379]

Political organizations [edit]

- Freedom Leadership Foundation, an anti-communist organization in the United States active in the 1960s, 1970s, and 1980s.[380][381]
- Peace United Family Party, a South Korean political party founded by the Sun Myung Moon, one of whose main goals is the reunification of Korea.[8]
- The International Association of Parliamentarians for Peace (IAPP) works to promote peace and understanding between potentially hostile nations.[279]
- TheConservatives.com, a former political website in partnership with the Heritage Foundation.[382]
- The Summit Council for World Peace is an international group active in Moon's effort to unite North and South Korea.[383]
- Coalition for a Free World, anti-Soviet group active in the 1980s[384]
- Washington Institute for Values in Public Policy[385][386]
- CAUSA International is an anti-communist educational organization created in New York City in 1980 by members of the Unification movement.[218] In the 1980s it was active in 21 countries. In the United States it sponsored educational conferences for evangelical and fundamentalist Christian leaders[219] as well as seminars and conferences for Senate staffers, Hispanic Americans and conservative activists.[220] In 1986 it produced the anti-Communist documentary film *Nicaragua Was Our Home*.[387]

- The International Coalition for Religious Freedom is an activist organization based in Virginia, the United States. Its president is Dan Fefferman, who has held several leadership positions within the Unification Church of the United States. Founded in the 1980s, it has been active in protesting what it considers to be threats to religious freedom by governmental agencies.[230][388][389][390]
- International Federation for Victory over Communism
- Korean Culture and Freedom Foundation, a nonprofit organization which in the 1970s staged a public diplomacy campaign in the United States for South Korea[216] When it was founded in 1964, former U.S. Presidents Harry S. Truman and Dwight D. Eisenhower were named as honorary presidents and former Vice President Richard Nixon (then practicing corporate law) was named as a director.[208]
- National Committee Against Religious Bigotry and Racism[391]
- National Prayer and Fast Committee, which supported President Richard Nixon during the Watergate scandal.[392][393]
- Radio Free Asia.[208]

Businesses [edit]

Members of the Unification movement own a number of businesses in various countries. In Eastern Europe Unification movement missionaries are using the church's business ties to win new converts.[394] David Bromley, a sociologist at Virginia Commonwealth University, said: "The corporate section is understood to be the engine that funds the mission of the church. The wealth base is fairly substantial. But if you were to compare it to the LDS Church or the Catholic Church or other churches that have massive landholdings, this doesn't look on a global scale like a massive operation."[6]

Automotive [edit]

Pyeonghwa Motors is an automobile manufacturer based in Seoul (South Korea) and owned by the movement. It is involved in a joint-venture with the North Korean Ryonbong General Corp. The joint venture produces two small cars under license from Fiat,[395] and a pick-up truck and an SUV using complete knock down kits from Chinese manufacturer Dandong Shuguang. Pyeonghwa has the exclusive rights to car production, purchase, and sale of used cars in North Korea. However, most North Koreans are unable to afford a car. Because of the very small market for cars in the country, Pyeonghwa's output is reportedly very low. In 2003, only 314 cars were produced even though the factory had the facilities to produce up to 10,000 cars a year.[396] Erik van Ingen Schenau, author of the book *Automobiles Made in North Korea*, has estimated the company's total production in 2005 at not more than around 400 units.[397]

Health related [edit]

- Cheongshim Hospital, Korean hospital.[398]
- Il hwa Company, South Korean based producer of ginseng and related products.[399]
- Isshin Hospital, Church sponsored hospital in Japan which practices both modern and traditional Asian medicine.[400][401]

Manufacturing [edit]

In South Korea the Tongil Group was founded in 1963 by church founder Sun Myung Moon as a nonprofit organization which would provide revenue for the church. Its core focus was manufacturing but in the 1970s and 1980s it expanded by founding or acquiring businesses in pharmaceuticals, tourism, and publishing.[402] In the 1990s Tongil Group suffered as a result of the 1997 Asian Financial Crisis. By 2004 it was losing money and was $3.6 billion in debt. In 2005 Sun Myung Moon's son, Kook-jin Moon was appointed chairman of Tongil Group.[402] Among Tongil Group's chief holdings are: The Ilwha Company, which produces ginseng and related products; Ilshin Stone, building materials; and Tongil Heavy Industries, machine parts including hardware for the South Korean military. The Tongil Group funds the Tongil Foundation which supports Unification Church projects including schools and the Little Angels Children's Folk Ballet of Korea.[403]

Media [edit]

News World Communications, is an international news media corporation.[404] It was founded in New York City, in 1976, by Sun Myung Moon. Its first two newspapers, *The News World* (later renamed the *New York City Tribune*) and the Spanish-language *Noticias del Mundo,* were published in New York from 1976 until the early 1990s. In 1982 *The New York Times* described News World as "the newspaper unit of the Unification Church."[405] Rev. Moon's son Hyun Jin Moon is its chairman of the board.[406] News World Communications owns United Press International, *The World and I*, *Tiempos del Mundo* (Latin America), *The Segye Ilbo* (South Korea), *The Sekai Nippo* (Japan), the *Zambezi Times* (South Africa), *The Middle East Times* (Egypt).[407] Until 2008 it published the Washington D.C. based newsmagazine *Insight on the News*.[404] Until 2010, it owned the *Washington Times*. On November 2, 2010, Sun Myung Moon and a group of former *Times* editors purchased the paper from News World.[408]

- AmericanLife TV cable television network formerly owned by the Unification movement.[187]

Ocean related [edit]

Master Marine, a shipbuilding and fishing company in Alabama;[409][410] International Seafood of Kodiak, Alaska;[411][412] and True World Foods, which runs a major portion of the sushi trade in the USA.[413] In 2011 Master Marine opened a factory in Las Vegas, Nevada to manufacture a 27-foot pleasure boat designed by Moon.[414][415]

Real estate [edit]

In the 1970s the Unification Church of the United States began making major real estate investments. Church buildings were purchased around the nation. In New York State the Belvedere Estate, the Unification Theological Seminary, and the New Yorker Hotel were purchased. The national headquarters of the church was established in New York City.[416] In Washington D.C. the church purchased a church building from The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints[417] and in Seattle the historic Rolland Denny mansion for $175,000 in 1977.[418][419] In 1991 Donald Trump criticized Unification Church real estate investments as possibly disruptive to communities.[420] As of December 1994, Unification Church had invested $150 million in Uruguay. Members own the country's largest hotel, one of its leading banks, the second-largest newspaper and two of the largest printing plants.[421] In 2008 church related real estate investment partnership USP Rockets LLC was active in Richmond, Virginia.[422] In 2011 the church related National Hospitality Corporation sold the Sheraton National Hotel.[423] U.S. Property Development Corporation, real estate investment[424] Yongpyong Resort, which hosted the alpine skiing events for the 2018 Winter Olympics and Paralympics.[425][378]

United Nations related non-governmental organizations [edit]

Since 2000, Moon has promoted the creation of an interreligious council at the United Nations as a check and balance to its political-only structure.[426][427] Since then King Abdullah of Saudi Arabia and King Juan Carlos I of Spain hosted officially a program to promote the proposal.[428] Moon's Universal Peace Federation is in *special consultative status* with the United Nations Economic and Social Council[429][430] and a member of the UN Commission on Sustainable Development,[429][431] a member of the United Nations Division for Palestinian Rights,[432][433] a member of the United Nations Human Rights Council,[434][435][436] a member of the UNHRC,[437][438] a member of the United Nations Department of Economic and Social Affairs and United Nations Economic and Social Commission for Asia and the Pacific.[439] Three of Moon's non-governmental organizations (NGOs)—Universal Peace Federation, Women's Federation for World Peace and Service for Peace—are in consultative status with the United Nations Economic and Social Council.[440][430][441]

Other organizations [edit]

- International Relief Friendship Foundation (IRFF) [442][443]
- Joshua House Children's Centre in Georgetown, Guyana helps homeless and victimized children.
- Korean War 60th Anniversary Memorial Committee [444]
- National Committee Against Religious Bigotry and Racism[445]
- The New Hope East Garden Project, agricultural project in Brazil.[446]
- Ocean Church[447]
- Service For Peace[441]
- Summit Council for World Peace[448]
- Tongil Foundation[403]
- World Media Association, sponsors trips for American journalists to Asian countries.[229]

Organizations supported by members of the Unification movement [edit]

- American Conference on Religious Movements, a Rockville, Maryland based group that fights discrimination against new religions. The group is funded by the Church of Scientology, the Hare Krishna organization, as well as by Unificationists, who give it $3,000 a month.[365]
- American Freedom Coalition (AFC), a group which seeks to unite American conservatives on the state level to work toward common goals. The coalition, while independent, receives support from the Unification movement.[449] *American Freedom Journal* was a publication of the AFC published by Rev. Robert Grant.[450] The journal was started in 1988 and suspended publication sometime before 1994.[451] Contributors included Pat Buchanan, Ed Meese, Ben Wattenberg and Jeane Kirkpatrick.[452]
- Christian Heritage Foundation, a private, independent charitable foundation based in Virginia that distributes Bibles and Christian literature to Communist and Third World nations. In 1995 it was given $3.5 million by the Women's Federation for World Peace.[453]
- Empowerment Network, a pro-faith political action group supported by United States Senator Joe Lieberman.[454]
- Foundation for Religious Freedom (Also known as the New Cult Awareness Network.), an organization affiliated with the Church of Scientology which states its purpose as "Educating the public as to religious rights, freedoms and responsibilities." [455][456]
- George Bush Presidential Library. In June 2006 the *Houston Chronicle* reported that in 2004 Moon's Washington Times Foundation gave a $1 million donation to the George Bush Presidential Library.[457]
- Liberty University. Sun Myung Moon and his wife Hak Ja Han helped to financially stabilize the University through two organizations: News World Communications, which provided a $400,000 loan to the University at 6% interest; and the Women's Federation for World Peace, which indirectly contributed $3.5 million toward the school's debt.[168]
- Married Priests Now!,[458] is an advocacy group headed by Archbishop Emmanuel Milingo, who was himself married by Moon. MPN is a liberal Catholic organization calling for relaxing the rules concerning marriage in the Latin Rite Catholic priesthood.[459]
- Million Family March, 2000 rally in Washington, D.C. sponsored by the FFWPU and The Nation of Islam.[460]
- National Conservative Political Action Committee (NCPAC), was given $500,000 by CAUSA International to finance an anticommunist lobbying campaign.[229]
- University of Bridgeport of Bridgeport, Connecticut.[461] In 1992, following the longest faculty strike in United States academic history, the University of Bridgeport agreed to an arrangement with the Professors World Peace Academy whereby the university would be subsidized by PWPA in exchange for control of the university. The initial agreement was for $50 million, and a majority of board members were to be PWPA members.[462] The next University of Bridgeport president was PWPA president and Holocaust theologian Richard L. Rubenstein (from 1995–1999),[463] and subsequently former U.S. HSA-UWC president Neil Albert Salonen (2000–present).[464][465]
- World Association of Non-Governmental Organizations (WANGO)[466][240][241][242]

See also [edit]

- List of Unification movement people
- Unification Church of the United States
- Moonie (nickname)

References [edit]

1. ^ a b c Moon's death marks end of an era, Eileen Barker, CNN, 2012-9-3 4
2. ^ Introvigne, Massimo (2000-10-15). *The Unification Church: Studies in Contemporary Religion*. Signature Books. ISBN 1560851457. 4
3. ^ *Prophets and Protons: New Religious Movements and Science in Late Twentieth-Century America*, Benjamin E. Zeller, NYU Press, Mar 1, 2010, page 13 4
4. ^ "CESNUR - From the Unification Church to the Unification Movement, 1994-1999: Five Years of Dramatic Changes". *www.cesnur.org*. Retrieved 22 February 2018. 4

5. ^ **a b** Introvigne, Massimo, 2000, *The Unification Church Studies in Contemporary Religion*, Signature Books, Salt Lake City, Utah, ISBN 1-56085-145-7, pages 47-52
6. ^ **a b** A Church in Flux Is Flush With Cash,
7. ^ **a b** Yamamoto, J. I., 1995, *Unification Church*, Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House ISBN 0-310-70381-6 (Excerpt: Archived 2012-02-10 at the Wayback Machine.)
   "1. The Unification Theological Seminary
   a. The Unification Church has a seminary in Barrytown, New York called The Unification Theological Seminary.
   b. It is used as a theological training center, where members are prepared to be leaders and theologians in the church.
   c. Since many people regard Moon as a cult leader, there is a false impression that this seminary is academically weak.
   d. Moon's seminary, however, has not only attracted a respectable faculty (many of whom are not members of his church), but it also has graduated many students (who are members of his church) who have been accepted into doctoral programs at institutions such as Harvard and Yale."
8. ^ **a b** Sun Myung Moon forms new political party to merge divided Koreas Archived 2013-09-01 at the Wayback Machine. Church and State, May 2003
9. ^ **a b** Swatos, Jr, William H. (February 1998). *Encyclopedia of religion and society*. Walnut Creek, California.: AltaMira Press. ISBN 978-0-7619-8956-1. Retrieved 10 February 2018.
10. ^ **a b c** Sontag, Fredrick (1977). *Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church*. Abingdon. pp. 102–105. ISBN 0-687-40622-6.
11. ^ Daske, D. and Ashcraft, W. 2005, *New Religious Movements*, New York: New York University Press, ISBN 0-8147-0702-5
12. ^ **a b** The Advent of Sun Myung Moon: The Origins, Beliefs and Practices of the Unification Church, George Chryssides, Springer, Apr 5, 1991, 247 pages, pages 155-157
13. ^ **a b** Bednarowski, Mary Farrell (1995). *New Religions and the Theological Imagination in America*. Indiana University Press. p. 103. ISBN 0-253-20952-8. Retrieved 28 December 2008.
14. ^ Title: *The Making of a Moonie: Choice Or Brainwashing? Modern revivals in sociology*; Author: Eileen Barker; Edition: illustrated, reprint, revised; Publisher: Gregg Revivals, 1993
15. ^ Title; *"Moonies" in America: Cult, Church, and Crusade: SAGE Library of Social Research*; Authors: David G. Bromley, Anson D. Shupe, Jr.; Editor: David G. Bromley; Publisher: SAGE Publications, 1979
16. ^ *From Slogans to Mantras: Social Protest and Religious Conversion in the Late Vietnam War Era*; Stephen A. Kent, Syracuse University Press, 2001, page 168
17. ^ **a b c** Daske, D. and Ashcraft, W. 2005, *New Religious Movements*, New York: New York University Press, ISBN 0-8147-0702-5 p142
18. ^ Miller, Timothy (1995). *America's Alternative Religions*. State University of New York Press. pp. 223, 414. ISBN 0-7914-2398-0.
19. ^ PacNews staff (February 17, 2006). "Church leaders unite against Moonies". *PacNews*. Pacific Island News Agency Service.
20. ^ Enroth, Ronald M. (2005). *A Guide To New Religious Movements*. InterVarsity Press. pp. 69, 72. ISBN 0-8308-2381-6.
21. ^ Shupe, Anson D.; Bronislaw Misztal (1998). *Religion, Mobilization, and Social Action*. Praeger. pp. 197, 213, 215. ISBN 978-0-275-95625-7.
22. ^ Ofcom (February 20, 2006). "Complaint by Mr Robin Marsh on behalf of The Family Federation for World Peace and Unification – UK (formerly known as the Unification Church)". *Broadcast Bulletin*. www.ofcom.org.uk (54). Archived from the original on March 30, 2010. Retrieved 2009-09-28.
23. ^ Gorenfeld, John (2008). *Bad Moon Rising*. PoliPointPress. p. 96. ISBN 0-9794822-3-2.
24. ^ Helvarg, David (2004). *The War Against the Greens*. Johnson Books. p. 211. ISBN 1-55566-328-1.
25. ^ **a b** Hatch, Walter (February 13, 1989). "Big names lend luster to group's causes - Church leader gains legitimacy among U.S. conservatives". *The Seattle Times*. Seattle Times Company. p. A1.
26. ^ Koppel, Ted (October 6, 1994). "Transcript # 3489". *Nightline*. ABC News.
27. ^ Shupe, Anson D.; Bronislaw Misztal (1998). Religion, Mobilization, and Social Action. Praeger. pp. 197, 213, 215. ISBN 978-0-275-95625-7.
28. ^ Jenkins, Philip (2000). Mystics and Messiahs: Cults and New Religions in American History. Oxford University Press. pp. 28, 200. ISBN 0-19-512744-7.
29. ^ From online New World Encyclopedia article.
30. ^ "Moon is mourned by sister in N Korea. Agence France Press". Archived from the original on 2012-04-26. Retrieved 2018-07-18.
31. ^ **a b** "Unification Church: Mass Moonie Marriage in the US". *BBC News*. Saturday, November 29, 1997.
32. ^ https://belvederefamily.com/
33. ^ **a b** excerpt Archived 2008-05-13 at the Wayback Machine. The Unification Church Studies in Contemporary Religion, Massimo Introvigne, 2000, Signature Books, Salt Lake City, Utah, ISBN 1-56085-145-7
34. ^ **a b** The Unification Church: Studies in Contemporary Religion Archived 2008-05-13 at the Wayback Machine. Massimo Introvigne, Signature Books, ISBN 1-56085-145-7
35. ^ Miller, Timothy (1995). *America's alternative religions*. SUNY Press. p. 223. ISBN 0-7914-2397-2.
36. ^ Lewis, James R (2005). *Cults: a reference handbook*. ABC-CLIO. p. 171. ISBN 1-85109-618-3.
37. ^ **a b** Richard Greene; K.J. Kwon; Greg Botelho (3 September 2013). "Rev. Moon, religious and political figure, dies in South Korea at 92". CNN. Retrieved 16 June 2013.
38. ^ **a b** Brown, Emma (2 September 2012). "Sun Myung Moon dies at 92; Washington Times owner led the Unification Church". *The Washington Post*. ISSN 0740-5421. Archived from the original on 28 September 2013. Retrieved 12 June 2013. "self-professed messiah who claimed millions of religious followers in his Unification Church and sought to become a powerful voice in the American conservative movement through business interests"
39. ^ **a b c d** Introvigne, 2000
40. ^ **a b** Wakin, Daniel J. (2012-09-02). "Rev. Sun Myung Moon, 92, Unification Church Founder, Dies". *The New York Times*. ISSN 0362-4331. Retrieved 2013-01-02.
41. ^ Woo, Elaine (2012-09-03). "Sun Myung Moon dies at 92; led controversial Unification Church". *Los Angeles Times*. ISSN 0458-3035. Retrieved 2013-01-02.
42. ^ Brown, Emma (2012-09-04). "Sun Myung Moon dies at 92; Washington Times owner led the Unification Church". *The Washington Post*. ISSN 0190-8286. Retrieved 2013-01-02.
43. ^ Email Us. "'Moonies' founder dies, aged 92 - The Irish Times - Mon, Sep 03, 2012". The Irish Times. Retrieved 2012-09-04.
44. ^ Introvigne, Massimo, 2000, *The Unification Church Studies in Contemporary Religion*, Signature Books, Salt Lake City, Utah, ISBN 1-56085-145-7, excerpt Archived 2008-05-13 at the Wayback Machine. pages 12 – 16
45. ^ Moon-struck, *Time*, October 15, 1973, "The core members—most in their 20s, many of them converts from other spiritual, psychological or political trips—display a dogged devotion that makes even Jehovah's Witnesses look like backsliders. They are enthusiastic capitalists who rise at dawn to hit the streets with wares to exchange for "donations": flowers, votive light candles, even peanuts. Last year, when Master Moon moved his international headquarters to Tarrytown, N.Y., members sold candles across the U.S. for seven weeks to meet the down payment of $300,000 on an $850,000 estate".

46. ^ "Czechs, Now 'Naively' Seeking Direction, See Dangers in Cults", *The New York Times*, February 14, 1996
47. ^ "Unification Church Gains Respect in Latin America", *The New York Times*, November 24, 1996
48. ^ The Moonies in Moscow: a second coming?, *Green Left Weekly*, May 28, 1997. "With the dismantling of the Soviet Union in 1991, Moon's anticommunism lost much of its camouflage value. There was, however, the compensating possibility of being able to expand his operations into Russia – both with the bible, and with business. One of Moon's schemes in Russia during the early 1990s was reportedly to rent Red Square for a mass wedding ceremony of the type practised by his sect in many cities around the world, in which scores and perhaps hundreds of couples – selected for one another by UC leaders, and introduced only a few days previously --are married simultaneously. This plan came to nothing. The most that was achieved was that Moon's wife was allowed to broadcast from the stage of the Kremlin Palace of Congresses".
49. ^ **a** **b** A Less Secular Approach, *The Saint Petersburg Times*, June 7, 2002
50. ^ Schmemann, Serge (July 28, 1993). "Religion Returns to Russia, With a Vengeance". *The New York Times*.
51. ^ *Lifestyle: Conversations with Members of Unification Church – "Quebedeaux, Richard" – Google Книги*. Books.google.kg. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
52. ^ Michael L. Mickler, *A History Of The Unification Church In America, 1959–74 -- Emergence of a National Movement* https://www.tparents.org/library/unification/books/huca/Huca-06.htm
53. ^ http://www.thebelvedereestate.com/about.html
54. ^ https://www.bbc.co.uk/sounds/play/b00s08g6
55. ^ Barker, Eileen (1986). "Religious Movements: Cult and Anti-Cult Since Jonestown". *Annual Review of Sociology*. **12**: 329–346. doi:10.1146/annurev.so.12.080186.001553.
56. ^ Reed, Christoper (2 September 2012). "The Rev Sun Myung Moon obituary Korean founder of the Unification church – the Moonies". *The Guardian*. London. Retrieved 10 September 2012.
57. ^ Bureau of Democracy, Human Rights, and Labor.International Religious Freedom Report 2010 Report.November 17, 2010
58. ^ Moon's Japanese Profits Bolster Efforts in U.S. *The Washington Post*, September 16, 2008
59. ^ The Unification Church Aims a Major Public Relations Effort at Christian Leaders *Christianity Today*, April 19, 1985.
60. ^ Moon's financial rise and fall,*Harvard Crimson*, October 11, 1984
61. ^ Introvigne, Massimo, 2000, *The Unification Church Studies in Contemporary Religion*, Signature Books, Salt Lake City, Utah, ISBN 1-56085-145-7, excerpt Archived 2008-05-13 at the Wayback Machine.
62. ^ Patrick Hickey *Tahoe Boy: A journey back home* John, Maryland, Seven Locks Press (May 15, 2009) ISBN 0-9822293-6-4 ISBN 978-0-9822293-6-1 pages 163-168
63. ^ Stymied in U.S., Moon's Church Sounds a Retreat, Marc Fisher and Jeff Leen, The Washington Post, November 24, 1997
64. ^ **a** **b** **c** Million Family March reaches out to all
65. ^ **a** **b** **c** Families Arrive in Washington For March Called by Farrakhan, *The New York Times*, October 16, 2000
66. ^ **a** **b** Clarkson, Frederick (October 9, 2000). "Million Moon March". *Salon*. Salon.com, Inc. Retrieved 2009-11-05.
67. ^ http://www.state.gov/g/drl/rls/irf/2003/27185.htm
68. ^ **a** **b** **c** 'Moonies' launch political party in S Korea,*The Independent* (South Africa), March 10, 2003
69. ^ Universal peace federation, Middle east peace initiative Archived 2013-01-17 at the Wayback Machine.
70. ^ Andrea Noble, The Gazette, Bowie resident pushes for peace, Gazette.net, Jan. 8, 2009
71. ^ **a** **b** Babington, Charles; Alan Cooperman (June 23, 2004). "The Rev. Moon Honored at Hill Reception - Lawmakers Say They Were Misled". *Washington Post*: A01.
72. ^ **a** **b** "Lawmakers Scurry From the Light". *The New York Times*. 2004-06-27. Archived from the original on 2008-05-13. Retrieved 2017-02-13.
73. ^ Yoon, Sangwon (August 15, 2012). "Unification Church Says Leader Moon Is 'Gravely Ill' ". Bloomberg. Retrieved 16 August 2012.
74. ^ Unification Church founder dies, *Korea Herald*, 2012-9-3
75. ^ **a** **b** "Life and Legacy of Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Movements in Scholarly Perspective". *www.cesnur.org* (in Italian). CESNUR Center for Studies on New Religions. Retrieved 10 February 2018.
76. ^ **a** **b** Boorstein, Michelle; Shapira, Ian (23 November 2009). "Succession, division worry church members and beneficiaries". Washington Post. Retrieved 10 February 2018.
77. ^ **a** **b** Barker, Eileen (April 8, 2016). *Revisionism and Diversification in New Religious Movements*. Routledge. ISBN 9781317063605.
78. ^ John Bowker, 2011, *The Message and the Book*, UK, Atlantic Books, page 13-14
79. ^ Korean Moon: Waxing of Waning?, Leo Sandon Jr., *Theology Today*, Vol 35, No 2, July 1978, "The movement's official doctrinal statement, and a part of the revelation, is the Divine Principle. Both an oral tradition and a written one and published in several versions, Divine Principle is the Completed Testament. The Rev. Moon claims to have come not to destroy or abrogate the Old and New Testaments, but to fulfill them-to "complete" them. To his Moonist followers, the Rev. Moon is primarily "true father," probably the Messiah, and only secondarily a theologian. In an effort to systematize Moon's teachings, several members of the Unification Church in Korea have put together a developing theological system in Divine Principle which is impressive in its imaginative nature, coherence, and consistency, if not in its Christian orthodoxy. As the most complete expression of Moonist teachings to date, Divine Principle is the basic text of the Unification Church.4 The two major divisions of the system are the doctrines of Creation and Restoration. There are many subsets to these major divisions, but Creation and Restoration are the foci for the Moonist theological system."
80. ^ Kim, Young Oon, 1980, Unification Theology, Barrytown, NY: Unification Theological Seminary, Library of Congress Cataloging number 80-52872
81. ^ Walter Ralston Martin, Ravi K. Zacharias, *The Kingdom of the Cults*, Bethany House, 2003, ISBN 0764228218 pages 368-370
82. ^ Divine Principle, Chapter 7, Section 2.2
83. ^ United States Department of the Army (October 2001). *Religious Requirements and Practices: A Handbook for Chaplains*. The Minerva Group, Inc. pp. 1–42. ISBN 978-0-89875-607-4.
84. ^ Weatherhead, L.D. (1965). *The Christian Agnostic*. England: Hodder and Stoughton. pp. 59–63.
85. ^ *Another Gospel: Cults, Alternative Religions, and the New Age Movement* by Ruth A. Tucker 1989 ISBN 0-310-25937-1 pages 250-251
86. ^ Daske, D. and Ashcraft, W. 2005, *New Religious Movements*, New York: New York University Press, ISBN 0-8147-0702-5 "To restart the process toward perfection, God has sent messiahs to earth who could restore the true state of humanity's relationship with God. Before that can happen, however, humans must perform good deeds that cancel the bad effects of sin. Unificationists call this "indemnity". Showing love and devotion to one's fellow humans, especially within families, helps pay this indemnity." p. 142.
87. ^ Yamamoto, J. 1995, *Unification Church*, Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Press, ISBN 0-310-70381-6 "The doctrine of indemnity. Indemnity is that which people do to restore themselves to God's kingdom. Young Oon Kim describes it this way: 'We atone for our sins through specific acts of penance.' Kwang-Yol Yoo, a Unification teacher, even goes so far as to say that by following the *Divine Principle*, "man's perfection must be accomplished by his own effort without God's help." God does most of the work, but people must still do their part in order to achieve God's plan of salvation: 'Five percent is only to say that man's

responsibility is extremely small compared to God's.' "p35 "The doctrine of indemnity is not biblical. 'In simple language.' states Ruth Tucker, 'indemnity is salvation by works.' Bob Larson makes a distinction between Moon's doctrine and biblical theology, saying, 'Moon's doctrine of sinless perfection by "indemnity [forgiveness of sin by works on Moon's behalf], which can apply even to deceased ancestors, is a denial of the salvation by grace offering through Jesus Christ.' 'Farewell,' said John Calvin. 'to the dream of those who think up a righteousness flowing together out of faith and works.'" p40

88. ^ THE POWER OF THE PRINCIPLE: WHENCE IT CAME; WHERE IT WENT Richard Quebedeaux, "Rev. Moon calls such a mode of living, such a lifestyle, "restoration through indemnity." With indemnity viewed as a persistent pattern of behavior, not as a mere doctrine to be affirmed or a rational list of rules, God's ideal for human relationships is "restored" through restitution. Restitution-in the sense of a "natural law"-assuages resentment, because it is the means by which the powerful and enfranchised give the people who feel downtrodden and powerless what they believe is rightly theirs. Indemnity means that 'I'm here for you.'"
89. ^ *Exposition of the Divine Principle* 1996 Translation
90. ^ **a b c d** *Exposition of the Divine Principle*
91. ^ Yamamoto, J. I., 1995, Unification Church, Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House ISBN 0-310-70381-6
92. ^ **a b** Daske and Ashcraft
93. ^ Daske, D. and Ashcraft, W. 2005, New Religious Movements, New York: New York University Press, ISBN 0814707025 p142.
94. ^ Yamamoto, J. I., 1995, *Unification Church*, Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House ISBN 0-310-70381-6 (Excerpt: Archived 2012-02-10 at the Wayback Machine.)
    "1. The Unification Theological Seminary
    a. The Unification Church has a seminary in Barrytown, New York called The Unification Theological Seminary.
    b. It is used as a theological training center, where members are prepared to be leaders and theologians in the UC.
    c. Moon's seminary, however, has not only attracted a respectable faculty (many of whom are not members of the UC), but it also has graduated many students (who are members of the UC) who have been accepted into doctoral programs at institutions such as Harvard and Yale."
95. ^ Tingle, D. and Fordyce, R. 1979, The Phases and Faces of the Moon: A Critical Examination of the Unification Church and Its Principles, Hicksville, New York: Exposition Press p53-55
96. ^ Mary Farrell Bednarowski, 1995, *New Religions and the Theological Imagination in America*, Indiana University Press, pp.9-10 ISBN 0-253-20952-8.
97. ^ Divine Principle, Introduction
98. ^ excerpt Archived 2003-04-29 at the Wayback Machine. The Unification Church Studies in Contemporary Religion, Massimo Introvigne, 2000, Signature Books, Salt Lake City, Utah, ISBN 1-56085-145-7
99. ^ **a b c d** Kety Quits Moon-Linked ICF Conference Harvard Crimson, 1976-08-10.
100. ^ **a b** Tingle, D. and Fordyce, R. 1979, *Phases and Faces of the Moon: A Critical Examination of the Unification Church and its Principles*, Hicksville, NY: Exposition Press ISBN 0-682-49264-7 p86-87
101. ^ **a b** Biermans, J. 1986, *The Odyssey of New Religious Movements, Persecution, Struggle, Legitimation: A Case Study of the Unification Church* Lewiston, New York and Queenston, Ontario: The Edwin Melton Press ISBN 0-88946-710-2 p173
102. ^ **a b** Church Spends Millions On Its Image The Washington Post. 1984-09-17 "An estimated 5,000 scholars, including more than two dozen Nobel laureates, have accepted expense-paid trips to academic conferences around the world held by the International Conference of the Unity of Sciences (ICUS) and the Professors World Peace Academy, two offshoots of the Moon-financed International Cultural Foundation (ICF), a New York-based umbrella organization for church academic programs. This year's 13th annual ICUS conference, with the theme 'Absolute Values and The New Cultural Revolution,' was held over the Labor Day weekend at the new J.W. Marriott Hotel in Washington and attracted 240 participants from 46 countries, including John Lombardi, dean of international programs at Indiana University; Claude A. Villee, a Harvard Medical School biochemist; Morton Kaplan, a University of Chicago political scientist, and Eugene P. Wigner, a Princeton University physicist and Nobel laureate who, at an ICUS conference two years ago, received a $200,000 "founder's award" from Moon."
103. ^ **a b** Rev. Moon is sponsor of scholarly conference, *St. Petersburg Times*, November 12, 1977
104. ^ **a b** ICUS Statement of Purpose
105. ^ Eugene Paul Wigner Papers Archived 2008-02-24 at the Wayback Machine. Princeton University Library
106. ^ *Library journal, Volume 131, Issues 12-15*. 2006. p. 45. "Libraries with larger budgets may want to purchase books that represent viewpoints at the extremes of this struggle, including such intelligent design tracts as ... Jonathan Wells's *Icons of Evolution* ... For example we may be obligated to our patrons to make available works that embody ideas fundamental to significant cultural undercurrents such as "intelligent design" but not to burden budgets and minds with every other form of pseudoscience."
107. ^ Icons of Evolution? Alan D. Gishlick. National Center for Science Education
108. ^ Survival of the Fakest Archived 2006-12-05 at the Wayback Machine., Jonathan Wells, 2000 (A reprint from the *American Spectator*)
109. ^ **a b c d** Selig, William, 2012, *The Seunghwa Ministry of the Unification Church*, Unification Theological Seminary
110. ^ **a b c d** Kwak Chung-wan, 1985, *The Tradition*, Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity (Unification Church), Chapter 23
111. ^ Kim Young-oon, 1980, *Unification Theology*, Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity
112. ^ Jones, Mark, Moonies burial site to go ahead, August 2, 2010, BBC
113. ^ "Duddy, Neil *Interview: Dr. Mose Durst*". Archived from the original on 2007-09-28. Retrieved 2007-06-24.
114. ^ The men and women entered a large room, where Moon began matching couples by pointing at them.'NY Daily News "In the Unification tradition, romantic liaisons are forbidden until the members are deemed by Mr. Moon to be spiritually ready to be matched at a huge gathering where he points future spouses out to one another. His followers believe that his decisions are based on his ability to discern their suitability and see their future descendants. Many are matched with people of other races and nationalities, in keeping with Mr. Moon's ideal of unifying all races and nations in the Unification Church. Though some couples are matched immediately before the mass wedding ceremonies, which are held every two or three years, most have long engagements during which they are typically posted in different cities or even continents, and get to know one another through letters."The New York Times "Many were personally matched by Moon, who taught that romantic love led to sexual promiscuity, mismatched couples and dysfunctional societies. Moon's preference for cross-cultural marriages also meant that couples often shared no common language."Manchester Guardian "Moon's death Sept. 2 and funeral Saturday signaled the end of the random pairings that helped make Moon's Unification Church famous — and infamous — a generation ago." Washington Post "Many of the couples who married at mass weddings were hand-picked by Moon from photos. It led to some strange pairs such as a 71-year-old African Catholic archbishop who wed a 43-year-old Korean acupuncturist. In 1988 Moon entered the Guinness Book of Records when he married 6,516 identically dressed couples at Seoul's Olympic Stadium. Moonie newly-weds were forbidden to sleep together for 40 days to prove their marriage was on a higher plane. They then had to consummate their marriage in a three-day ritual with the sexual positions stipulated by their leader."Daily Mirror
115. ^ "NEW YORK DAY BY DAY; Wedding Day for 4,000". *The New York Times*. July 1, 1982.
116. ^ Marriage by the numbers; Moon presides as 6,500 couples wed in S. Korea Archived 2008-10-08 at the Wayback Machine. Peter Maass *The Washington Post* October 31, 1988

117. ^ Bak Byeong Ryong Unification Church believers around the world three manyeossang joint wedding, *MBCNews*, 25 August 1992
118. ^ "'D' Is For Danger – And For Writer Don Delillo". *Chicago Tribune*. May 22, 1992.
119. ^ Lucas, Phillip Charles; Thomas Robbins (2004). *New Religious Movements in the Twenty-first Century*. Routledge. p. 320. ISBN 0-415-96577-2. Retrieved 28 December 2008.
120. ^ Unification Church pres sees smaller mass weddings Archived 2009-03-22 at the Wayback Machine., The Monitor (Uganda), 30 December 2008, "Moon said the church does not give its wedding blessing to same sex couples."
121. ^ Goodstein, Laurie (28 November 1997). "35,000 Couples Are Invited To a Blessing by Rev. Moon". *The New York Times*. Retrieved 28 December 2008.
122. ^ Evangelical-Unification Dialogue (Conference series – Unification Theological Seminary; no. 3) Richard Quebedeaux, Rodney Sawatsky, Paragon House, 1979, ISBN 093289402X, pages 77-99.
123. ^ Frederick Sontag,1977, *Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church*, Abingdon Press, ISBN 0687406226, page 185.
124. ^ Irving Louis Horowitz, 1978, *Science, Sin, and Scholarship: The Politics of Reverend Moon and the Unification Church*, MIT Press, ISBN 0262081008, page 114
125. ^ *The A to Z of New Religious Movements*, George D. Chryssides Scarecrow Press, 2006, page 155
126. ^ Tingle, D. and Fordyce, R. 1979, The Phases and Faces of the Moon: A Critical Examination of the Unification Church and Its Principles, Hicksville, New York: Exposition Press ISBN 0682492647, p20-21
127. ^ George D. Chryssides, "Unificationism: A study in religious syncretism", Chapter 14 in *Religion: empirical studies*, Editor: Steven Sutcliffe, Ashgate Publishing, Ltd., 2004, ISBN 0-7546-4158-9, ISBN 978-0-7546-4158-2, page 232.
128. ^ *Introduction to New and Alternative Religions in America: African diaspora traditions and other American innovations*, Volume 5 of Introduction to New and Alternative Religions in America, W. Michael Ashcraft, Greenwood Publishing Group, 2006, ISBN 0-275-98717-5, ISBN 978-0-275-98717-6, page 180
129. ^ *Exploring New Religions*, Issues in contemporary religion, George D. Chryssides, Continuum International Publishing Group, 2001ISBN 0-8264-5959-5, ISBN 978-0-8264-5959-6 page 1
130. ^ Exploring the climate of doom Archived 2012-04-23 at the Wayback Machine., Rich Lowry, 2009-12-19 'The phrase "doomsday cult" entered our collective vocabulary after John Lofland published his 1966 study, "Doomsday Cult: A Study of Conversion, Proselytization, and Maintenance of Faith." Lofland wrote about the Unification Church.'
131. ^ Conversion Archived 2012-01-21 at the Wayback Machine., Unification Church Archived 2012-01-13 at the Wayback Machine., *Encyclopedia of Religion and Society*, Hartford Institute for Religion Research, Hartford Seminary
132. ^ **a** **b** Frederick E. Sontag dies at 84; Pomona College philosophy professor, *Los Angeles Times*, June 20, 2009
133. ^ **a** **b** Who is this Pied Piper of Religion?, *St. Petersburg Times*, February 4, 1978
134. ^ **a** **b** Moon: an objective look at his theology, *Boca Raton News*, 1977-11-25
135. ^ Review, William Rusher, *National Review*, December 19, 1986.
136. ^ The Market for Martyrs Archived 2012-01-11 at the Wayback Machine., Laurence Iannaccone, George Mason University, 2006, "One of the most comprehensive and influential studies was The Making of a Moonie: Choice or Brainwashing? by Eileen Barker (1984). Barker could find no evidence that Moonie recruits were ever kidnapped, confined, or coerced. Participants at Moonie retreats were not deprived of sleep; the lectures were not "trance-inducing"; and there was not much chanting, no drugs or alcohol, and little that could be termed "frenzy" or "ecstatic" experience. People were free to leave, and leave they did. Barker's extensive enumerations showed that among the recruits who went so far as to attend two-day retreats (claimed to be Moonie's most effective means of "brainwashing"), fewer than 25% joined the group formore than a week and only 5% remained full-time members one year later. And, of course, most contacts dropped out before attending a retreat. Of all those who visited a Moonie centre at least once, not one in two-hundred remained in the movement two years later. With failure rates exceeding 99.5%, it comes as no surprise that full-time Moonie membership in the U.S. never exceeded a few thousand. And this was one of the most New Religious Movements of the era!"
137. ^ Oakes, Len "By far the best study of the conversion process is Eileen Barker's The Making of a Moonie [...]" from *Prophetic Charisma: The Psychology of Revolutionary Religious Personalities*, 1997, ISBN 0-8156-0398-3
138. ^ Storr, Anthony Dr. *Feet of clay: a study of gurus* 1996 ISBN 0-684-83495-2
139. ^ Past Winners Archived 2010-02-23 at WebCite
140. ^ APA Brief in the Molko Case, from CESNUR website, 1987.
141. ^ Kent, Stephen; Theresa Krebs (1998). "Academic Compromise in the Social Scientific Study of Alternative Religions". *Nova Religio*. **2** (1): 44–54. doi:10.1525/nr.1998.2.1.44.
142. ^ Rudin, A. James, 1978 A View of the Unification Church, American Jewish Committee Archives
143. ^ Sun Myung Moon Is Criticized by Religious Leaders; Jewish Patrons Enraged, David F. White, *The New York Times*, December 29, 1976
144. ^ Response to A. James Rudin's Report, Unification Church Department of Public Affairs, Daniel C. Holdgeiwe, Johnny Sonneborn, March 1977.
145. ^ "Religion: Sun Myung Moon's Goodwill Blitz". *Time Magazine*. April 22, 1985.
146. ^ "Unification Church seen as persecuted", *The Milwaukee Sentinel*, September 15, 1984, page 4
147. ^ To Bigotry, No Sanction, Mose Durst, 1984
148. ^ Guidelines for Members of The Unification Church in Relations with the Jewish People, Peter Ross and Andrew Wilson, March 15, 1989.
149. ^ **a** **b** Religious Requirements and Practices of Certain Selected Groups: A Handbook for Chaplains, By U. S. Department of the Army, Published by The Minerva Group, Inc., 2001, ISBN 0-89875-607-3, ISBN 978-0-89875-607-4, page 1–42. Google books listing
150. ^ **a** **b** Introvigne, Massimo, 2000, *The Unification Church Studies in Contemporary Religion*, Signature Books, Salt Lake City, Utah, ISBN 1-56085-145-7, excerpt Archived 2003-04-29 at the Wayback Machine.
151. ^ "The Nicene Creed is the profession of the Christian Faith common to the Catholic Church, to all the Eastern Churches separated from Rome, and to most of the Protestant denominations." The Catholic Encyclopedia, Volume XI. Published 1911. New York: Robert Appleton Company.[1]
152. ^ "Christian statement of faith that is the only ecumenical creed because it is accepted as authoritative by the Roman Catholic, Eastern Orthodox, Anglican, and major Protestant churches." *Nicene Creed* Encyclopædia Britannica. 2007. Encyclopædia Britannica Online.[2]
153. ^ **a** **b** **c** Unifying or Dividing? Sun Myung Moon and the Origins of the Unification Church George D. Chryssides, University of Wolverhampton, U.K. 2003
154. ^ Yamamoto, J. 1995, *Unification Church*, Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Press, ISBN 0-310-70381-6 p40
155. ^ Yamamoto, J. 1995, *Unification Church*, Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Press, ISBN 0-310-70381-6 p40
156. ^ Walter Ralston Martin, Ravi K. Zacharias, *The Kingdom of the Cults*, Bethany House, 2003, ISBN 0764228218 pages 368-370
157. ^ Yamamoto, J. I., 1995, *Unification Church*, Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House ISBN 0-310-70381-6 (Excerpt: Archived 2012-02-10 at the Wayback Machine.)

"1. The Unification Theological Seminary
   a. The Unification Church has a seminary in Barrytown, New York called The Unification Theological Seminary.
   b. It is used as a theological training center, where members are prepared to be leaders and theologians in the church.
   c. Since many people regard Moon as a cult leader, there is a false impression that this seminary is academically weak.
   d. Moon's seminary, however, has not only attracted a respectable faculty (many of whom are not members of his church), but it also has graduated many students (who are members of his church) who have been accepted into doctoral programs at institutions such as Harvard and Yale."

158. ^ **a** **b** Korean Moon: Waxing or Waning Leo Sandon Jr. *Theology Today*, July 1978, "The Unification Church purchased the estate and now administers a growing seminary where approximately 110 Moonies engage in a two-year curriculum which includes biblical studies, church history, philosophy, theology, religious education, and which leads to a Master of Religious Education degree."
159. ^ **a** **b** Dialogue with the Moonies Rodney Sawatsky, *Theology Today*, April 1978. "Only a minority of their teachers are Unification devotees; a Jew teaches Old Testament, a Christian instructs in church history and a Presbyterian lectures in theology, and so on. Typical sectarian fears of the outsider are not found among Moonies; truth is one or at least must become one, and understanding can be delivered even by the uninitiated."
160. ^ Where have all the Moonies gone? Archived 2012-07-30 at Archive.today K. Gordon Neufeld, *First Things*, March 2008, "While I was studying theology, church history, and the Bible—taught by an eclectic faculty that included a rabbi, a Jesuit priest, and a Methodist minister—most of my young coreligionists were standing on street corners in San Francisco, Boston, and Miami urging strangers to attend a vaguely described dinner."
161. ^ Helm, S. Divine Principle and the Second Advent Archived 2008-09-21 at the Wayback Machine. *Christian Century* May 11, 1977 "In fact Moon's adherents differ from previous fringe groups in their quite early and expensive pursuit of respectability, as evidenced by the scientific conventions they have sponsored in England and the U.S. and the seminary they have established in Barrytown, New York, whose faculty is composed not of their own group members but rather of respected Christian scholars."
162. ^ New Hope for Dialogue with National Council of Churches of Christ, Chris Antal, February, 2000
163. ^ Sontag, Frederick, *Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church*, (Abingdon Press, 1977; Korean translation, Pacific Publishing Company, 1981; Japanese translation, Tuttle-Mori Agency, Inc., 1977; German translation, SINUS-Verlag, Krefeld, 1981) ISBN 0-687-40622-6"
164. ^ The Unification Church Aims a Major Public Relations Effort at Christian Leaders Christianity Today April 19, 1985.
165. ^ Raspberry, William, "Did Unpopular Moonie Get a Fair Trial?", *The Washington Post*, April 19, 1984
166. ^ Clear Lake Journal; Congregation Dismisses Its Minister Over Trip, *The New York Times*, May 25, 1988
167. ^ Russian unorthodox The Globe and Mail February 8, 2008.
168. ^ **a** **b** Fisher, Marc (November 23, 1997). "A Church in Flux Is Flush With Cash". *The Washington Post*. Retrieved 2007-11-14. "Also in 1995, the Women's Federation made another donation that illustrates how Moon supports fellow conservatives. It gave a $3.5 million grant to the Christian Heritage Foundation, which later bought a large portion of Liberty University's debt, rescuing the Rev. Jerry Falwell's Lynchburg, Va., religious school from the brink of bankruptcy."
169. ^ Archbishop rejects Vatican ultimatum
170. ^ "The archbishop's wife speaks for herself", National Catholic Reporter August 31, 2001
171. ^ Archbishop launches married priests movement Archived 2007-12-22 at the Wayback Machine.
172. ^ Archbishop Milingo: 'Married Priesthood Now'; Healer Missing from Italy Emerges in U.S., Proclaims End to Mandatory Celibacy U.S. Newswire
173. ^ "Tear down the Cross" Ceremony – Bronx, New York
174. ^ Quotes from Sun Myung Moon relevant to the May 2003 Pilgrimage to Israel (Take Down the Cross)
175. ^ Rome and Israel Pilgrim Tour – Burying of the Cross.
176. ^ Exposition of the Divine Principle 1996 Translation Chapter 3 Eschatology and Human History, accessed September 3, 2010
177. ^ From the Unification Church to the Unification Movement, 1994–1999: Five Years of Dramatic Changes Massimo Introvigne, Center for Studies on New Religions "The ceremony in Washington, D.C., included six "co-officiators" from other faiths, including controversial minister Louis Farrakhan from the Nation of Islam. The Blessing ceremony in Seoul on February 7, 1999 also featured seven co-officiators including Orthodox Rabbi Virgil Kranz (Chairman of the American Jewish Assembly), controversial Catholic Archbishop Emmanuel Milingo and the General Superintendent of the Church of God in Christ (a large African American Pentecostal denomination), Rev. T.L. Barrett."
178. ^ Afghanistan: eight years of Soviet occupation, United States Department of State, March 1988, The campaign to target foreign journalists had more tragic results. Two American filmmakers, Lee Shapiro and Jim Lindelof, were apparently killed by a regime attack while traveling with the mujahidin. In 1986, Lindelof had been named paramedic of the year for his efforts training Afghan medical workers. In response to protests, Kabul stated it could not "guarantee the security of foreign subjects" who enter illegally, whose presence it views as "evidence" of "external interference."
179. ^ 2 Americans killed in ambush, *Pacific Stars and Stripes*, October 29, 1987
180. ^ Two US journalists reported killed in Afghanistan; details murky, *Christian Science Monitor*, October 28, 1987 "Two American journalists are believed dead in northwest Afghanistan, diplomatic and resistance forces say here. Filmmaker Lee Shapiro and his soundman, Jim Lindalos, both of New York, were killed Oct. 11, reportedly in a Soviet or Afghan government ambush, according to United States consular officials. However, the resistance group that accompanied the film team has a poor reputation among most informed observers, and doubts have arisen over whether the two Americans did indeed die in an Afghan government or Soviet attack."
181. ^ Kaplan, Robert, *Soldiers of God : With Islamic Warriors in Afghanistan and Pakistan,* New York : Vintage Departures, 2001, p.170
182. ^ **a** **b** As U.S. Media Ownership Shrinks, Who Covers Islam?, *Washington Report on Middle East Affairs*, December 1997
183. ^ From the Unification Church to the Unification Movement, 1994-1999: Five Years of Dramatic Changes Massimo Introvigne, Center for Studies on New Religions "The ceremony in Washington, D.C., included six "co-officiators" from other faiths, including controversial minister Louis Farrakhan from the Nation of Islam. The Blessing ceremony in Seoul on February 7, 1999 also featured seven co-officiators including Orthodox Rabbi Virgil Kranz (Chairman of the American Jewish Assembly), controversial Catholic Archbishop Emmanuel Milingo and the General Superintendent of the Church of God in Christ (a large African American Pentecostal denomination), Rev. T.L. Barrett."
184. ^ Prayers for Minister Farrakhan health, recovery continue Archived 2011-07-11 at the Wayback Machine., *Frost Illustrated*, January 31, 2007
185. ^ Unification Church of America History by Lloyd Pumphrey
186. ^ John Dempsey (2007-06-01). "American Life TV targets baby boomers". *Variety*. Retrieved 2007-10-09.
187. ^ **a** **b** American Life TV targets baby boomers: Channel airing Clooney's Darfur docu Variety, June 1, 2007
188. ^ The Time 100: George Clooney
189. ^ Clooney's Docu on Darfur to Air Monday Archived 2008-11-01 at the Wayback Machine.
190. ^ AmericanLife TV Network (ALN) Donates Proceeds From "A Journey to Darfur" DVD to the International Rescue Committee Archived 2009-01-13 at the Wayback Machine.
191. ^ **a** **b** Moon, Sun Myung (2009). *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*. Gimm-Young Publishers. ISBN 0-7166-0299-7.

192. ^ World Muslim League plans seminar for Taiwan, *Taiwan Today*, February 16, 2011
193. ^ "Fuero Militar Policial". Fmp.gob.pe. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
194. ^ "Portal Peruano Sociedad y Parlamento". Congreso.gob.pe. Retrieved 2015-11-07.
195. ^ https://archive.is/20120730211043/http://www.congreso.gob.pe/index_fotoh1.asp?fecha=20070921. Archived from the original on July 30, 2012. Retrieved May 4, 2012. Missing or empty |title= (help)
196. ^ Escrito por Imagen Institucional. "David Yamashiro Es Nombrado Embajador Para La Paz". Municportillo.gob.pe. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
197. ^ https://archive.is/20120723051237/http://www.congreso.gob.pe/index_fotoh1.asp?fecha=20060126. Archived from the original on July 23, 2012. Retrieved May 4, 2012. Missing or empty |title= (help)
198. ^ ": Espacio de Concertación – Dirección General de Desplazados y Cultura de Paz:". Mimdes.gob.pe. Archived from the original on 2009-12-20. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
199. ^ "mk ´ş˝ş ĹëŔĎął źź°čşťşÎąłČ¸ ťő źşŔü, žëťęžĄ žĎ°ř". News.mk.co.kr. 2010-02-18. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
200. ^ "International Day Of Peace 2009 Timeline". Dipity.com. Archived from the original on 2013-09-03. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
201. ^ [3][*dead link*]
202. ^ "Incontro per la settimana mondiale per l'armonia interreligiosa a Torino il 4 febbraio". Torinotoday.it. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
203. ^ "United Nations Webcast – "Common ground for the common good" on the occasion of the World Interfaith Harmony Week". Unmultimedia.org. Archived from the original on 2013-05-14. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
204. ^ "Deputy Secretary-General, at Interfaith Harmony Week Event, Says Common Cause in Mutual Respect for Shared Values Is Only Way to Unite Nations, Peoples". Un.org. 2012-02-07. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
205. ^ "UN officials underline religions' role in promoting global harmony". Un.org. 2012-02-07. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
206. ^ "На основе Документов Google". Docs.google.com. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
207. ^ "На основе Документов Google". Docs.google.com. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
208. ^ **a b c d** "Korean denies influence peddling". Bangor Daily News. Retrieved 21 March 2012.
209. ^ The Way of Restoration, (April, 1972)
210. ^ *Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church*, Frederick Sontag, Abingdon Press, Jan 1, 1977, page 122
211. ^ Introvigne, Massimo, 2000, *The Unification Church Studies in Contemporary Religion*, Signature Books, Salt Lake City, Utah, ISBN 1-56085-145-7, excerpt Archived 2003-04-29 at the Wayback Machine. page 16
212. ^ Dole meeting with Moon aide called cordial, *Lawrence Journal-World*, February 24, 1976
213. ^ **a b** Ahrens, Frank (May 23, 2002). "Moon Speech Raises Old Ghosts as the Times Turns 20". *Washington Post*. Retrieved 2009-08-16.
214. ^ Pak was founding president of the Washington Times Corporation (1982-1992), and founding chairman of the board. Bo Hi Pak, Appendix B: Brief Chronology of the Life of Dr. Bo Hi Pak, in *Messiah: My Testimony to Rev. Sun Myung Moon, Vol I* by Bo Hi Pak (2000), Lanham, MD: University Press of America.
215. ^ "Rabbi Joins the Board of Moonie Newspaper", *The Palm Beach Post*, May 21, 1978
216. ^ **a b** Spiritual warfare: the politics of the Christian right, Sara Diamond, 1989, Pluto Press, Page 58
217. ^ Ex-aide of Moon Faces Citation for Contempt, Associated Press, *Eugene Register-Guard*, August 5, 1977
218. ^ **a b** "Moon's 'Cause' Takes Aim At Communism in Americas." *The Washington Post*. August 28, 1983
219. ^ **a b** Sun Myung Moon's Followers Recruit Christians to Assist in Battle Against Communism *Christianity Today*, June 15, 1985
220. ^ **a b** Church Spends Millions On Its Image, *The Washington Post*, 1984-09-17. "Another church political arm, Causa International, which preaches a philosophy it calls "God-ism," has been spending millions of dollars on expense-paid seminars and conferences for Senate staffers, Hispanic Americans and conservative activists. It also has contributed $500,000 to finance an anticommunist lobbying campaign headed by John T. (Terry) Dolan, chairman of the National Conservative Political Action Committee (NCPAC)."
221. ^ New York Times review.
222. ^ How to Read the Reagan Administration: The Miskito Case
223. ^ Public TV Tilts Toward Conservatives, Fairness & Accuracy In Reporting
224. ^ 2 Americans Reported Killed In an Ambush in Afghanistan *The New York Times*, 1987-10-28
225. ^ 30,000 participate in anti-draft rally in Washington, *Daily Collegian*, March 24, 1980
226. ^ MOON'S SECT IS TAXABLE, COURT RULES, *The New York Times*, May 7, 1981
227. ^ N.Y. Upholds Tax Exemption for 'Moonies', *Los Angeles Times*, May 6, 1982
228. ^ [4] *San Francisco Chronicle*, September 3, 1983 "For a second day, the Soviet Consulate in Pacific Heights was the scene of emotional protests against the shooting down of a Korean Air Lines jumbo jet. About 300 people held demonstration yesterday morning. Among them were members of the Unification Church, or "Moonies," whose founder is the Rev. Sun Myung Moon, the controversial South Korean who has melded a fierce anti-communism into his ideology. Eldridge Cleaver, the onetime black radical who recently has had ties with the Moonies, spoke at the rally. Many pickets carried signs accusing the Soviet Union of murdering the 269 passengers and crew aboard the airliner. In another development, San Francisco attorney Melvin Belli filed a $109 billion lawsuit against the Soviet Union on behalf of the 269 victims."
229. ^ **a b c** Church Spends Millions On Its Image, *The Washington Post*, 1984-09-17.
230. ^ **a b** Ribadeneira, Diego (August 21, 1999). "Ire at school Star of David ruling unites ACLU, Pat Robertson". *The Boston Globe*. The New York Times Company. p. B2.
231. ^ Projections about a post-Soviet world-twenty-five years later. // Goliath Business News
232. ^ EVOLUTION IN EUROPE; New Flock for Moon Church: The Changing Soviet Student from *The New York Times*
233. ^ **a b** At Time of Change for Rev. Moon Church, a Return to Tradition // The New York Times, 14 October 2009
234. ^ "mk □□ — □□□□□ □□□□□□ □□□ □□". News.mk.co.kr. Retrieved 9 October 2012.
235. ^ Goodman, Walter (January 21, 1992). "Review/Television; Sun Myung Moon Changes Robes". *New York Times*.
236. ^ The same old game Archived 2009-02-15 at the Wayback Machine., *Al-Ahram*, November 12–18, 1998, "The Washington Times is a mouthpiece for the ultra conservative Republican right, unquestioning supporters of Israel's Likud government. The newspaper is owned by Sun Myung Moon, originally a native of North Korea and head of the Unification Church, whose ultra-right leanings make him a ready ally for Netanyahu. Whether or not Netanyahu is personally acquainted with Moon is unclear, though there is no doubt that he has established close friendships with several staff members on The Washington Times, whose editorial policy is rabidly anti-Arab, anti-Muslim and pro-Israel."
237. ^ Pollack, Andrew (September 15, 1995). "Bushes Speak at Tokyo Rally of Group Linked to Moon Church". *The New York Times*.
238. ^ Brozan, Nadine (July 15, 1995). "CHRONICLE". *The New York Times*.
239. ^ Sanger, David E. (September 17, 1995). "SEPT. 10–16; Mr. Bush's Asian Tour". *The New York Times*.
240. ^ **a b** Rev. Moon and the United Nations: A Challenge for the NGO Community, Harold Paine and Birgit Gratzer, Global Policy Forum
241. ^ **a b** WANGO
242. ^ **a b** In Ban's UN, Sun Myung Moon's Paper is Praised, While Gambari Raises Him Funds, WFP Demurs Inner City Press, June 5, 2007

243. ^ "□□□□□" . Unikorea.go.kr. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
244. ^ a b "mk ´ş˝ş ĹëŔĎąłŔ°˝ĚŔÇŔ§ °ŁĂÖ..ŀŧĺâ ĹëŔĎąłŔ° šćÇâ źŁÁ¤" . News.mk.co.kr. 2006-12-28. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
245. ^ Nepalese Constituent Assembly Archived 2012-03-02 at the Wayback Machine.
246. ^ "News in Nepal: Fast, Full & Factual" . Myrepublica.Com. 2012-05-19. Retrieved 2012-09-04.
247. ^ *Unificationists in the Voting Booth
248. ^ Sun Myung Moon's Groundbreaking Campaign to Open North Korea , *The Atlantic*, Armin Rosen, September 6, 2012
249. ^ *The Two Koreas: A Contemporary History*, Don Oberdorfer, Basic Books, 2001 ISBN 0465051626, 9780465051625, pages 3 - 10
250. ^ "Human Rights in North Korea" . *Human Rights Watch*. July 2004. Retrieved 2 August 2007.
251. ^ "Korea, for a reconciliation between North and South" . *30 Days*. 24 March 2006. Archived from the original on 23 October 2007. Retrieved 21 April 2010.
252. ^ "The Martyrs of Tokwon: Historical Preliminary Notes" . *Missionary Benedictines of St. Ottilien*. Retrieved 10 April 2012.
253. ^ "Thank You Father Kim Il Sung" (PDF). *U.S. Commission on International Religious Freedom, November 2005*. Archived from the original (PDF) on 26 October 2013. Retrieved 10 April 2012.
254. ^ *Christianity: A Global History*, David Chidester, HarperCollins, 2001, ISBN 0062517708, 9780062517708, pages 514 to 515
255. ^ *The World's Religions: Continuities and Transformations*, Peter B Clarke, Peter Beyer, Taylor & Francis, 2008 ISBN 1135211000, 9781135211004
256. ^ *Richard Quebedeaux, Lifestyle : Conversations with Members of Unification Church* . Books.google.com. Retrieved 9 October 2012.
257. ^ NOLAND, ROBINSON & WANG, supra note 137, at 3; HAGGARD & NOLAND, FAMINE, supra
258. ^ NOLAND, supra note 105, at 3; see also HAGGARD & NOLAND, HUNGER AND HUMAN RIGHTS, supra note 70, at 14; See NOLAND, ROBINSON & WANG, supra note 137, at 5.
259. ^ Demick, Barbara (2010). *Nothing to Envy: Real Lives in North Korea* (UK ed.). Granta Publications. ISBN 978-1-84708-141-4.
260. ^ *Kim Jong-il's Leadership of North Korea*, Jae-Cheon Lim, Routledge, 2008 ISBN 0203884728, 9780203884720, page 95
261. ^ Hagard, Stephan and Noland, Marcus (2007). Famine in North Korea: markets, aid and reform. Columbia University Press: New York
262. ^ Noland, Marcus, Sherman Robinson and Tao Wang, Famine in North Korea: Causes and Cures , *Institute for International Economics*.
263. ^ Spoorenberg, Thomas; Schwekendiek, Daniel. "Demographic Changes in North Korea: 1993–2008" , *Population and Development Review*, 38(1), pp. 133-158.
264. ^ "Humanitarian Aid Toward North Korea: A Global Peace-Building Process," East Asian Review, Winter 2001
265. ^ Staff (January 2013) Quantity Reporting - Food Aid to North Korea World Food Program, Retrieved 2 February 2013
266. ^ A Desire to Feed the World and Inspire Self-Sufficiency , *New York Times*, August 11, 2007
267. ^ mk □□ — □□□□□ □□□□□□ □□□ □□
268. ^ Kirk, Don (May 2, 1998). "Reverend Moon's Group Wants to Talk Investment : Seoul Nods At Church's Foray North" . *The New York Times*.
269. ^ Kirk, Don (February 16, 2000). "Church Reaches Across Border in Korea Car Venture : Moon's Northward Push" . *The New York Times*.
270. ^ The Bush Administration's Secret Link to North Korea , Aram Roston, *The Daily Beast*, February 7, 2012
271. ^ Unification Church president on condolence visit to N. Korea , *Yonhap News*, December 26, 2011
272. ^ "□□□□□" . Unikorea.go.kr. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
273. ^ □□□ □□·□□ □□ □□ — □□□ — □□□□ □□□ □□ □□□
274. ^ "Son of Unification Church founder meets with senior North Korean official in Pyongyang" . *The San Diego Union-Tribune*. 15 December 2011. Retrieved August 6, 2018 – via The Associated Press.
275. ^ S. Korea says food aid reached intended beneficiaries in N. Korea | YONHAP NEWS
276. ^ "Kbs News" . Sports.kbs.co.kr. Archived from the original on 2013-05-25. Retrieved 2012-05-23.
277. ^ "Moon Sun Myung Awarded National Reunification Prize" , *Korean Central News Agency*, 7 September 2012, archived from the original on 29 July 2014, retrieved 13 September 2012
278. ^ North Korean leader extends condolences over 1 yr anniversary of Unification Church founder death , *Yonhap News*, August 20, 2013
279. ^ a b Proposal for a Joint Mission to North Korea , Tehran Times, 2017-11-6
280. ^ Swatos, Jr, William H. (February 1998). Encyclopedia of religion and society. Walnut Creek, Calif.: AltaMira Press. ISBN 978-0-7619-8956-1. Retrieved 10 February 2018.
281. ^ Biermans, J. 1986, The Odyssey of New Religious Movements, Persecution, Struggle, Legitimation: A Case Study of the Unification Church Lewiston, New York and Queenston, Ontario: The Edwin Melton Press ISBN 0-88946-710-2 p173
282. ^ Helm, S. Divine Principle and the Second Advent Archived 2008-09-21 at the Wayback Machine. Christian Century May 11, 1977 "In fact Moon's adherents differ from previous fringe groups in their quite early and expensive pursuit of respectability, as evidenced by the scientific conventions they have sponsored in England and the U.S. and the seminary they have established in Barrytown, New York, whose faculty is composed not of their own group members but rather of respected Christian scholars."
283. ^ Introduction to New and Alternative Religions in America: African diaspora traditions and other American innovations: Introduction, Eugene V. Gallagher, W. Michael Ashcraft, Greenwood Publishing Group, 2006, pages 94-95
284. ^ "In 1955, Reverend Moon established the Collegiate Association for the Research of the Principle (CARP). CARP is now active on many campuses in the United States and has expanded to over eighty nations. This association of students promotes intercultural, interracial, and international cooperation through the Unification world view." [5] Archived 2018-01-05 at the Wayback Machine.
285. ^ Storey, John Woodrow; Glenn H. Utter (2002). *Religion and Politics*. Santa Barbara: ABC-CLIO. p. 99. ISBN 1-57607-218-5.
286. ^ Yamamoto, J.; Alan W Gomes (1995). *Unification Church*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan. p. 19. ISBN 0-310-70381-6.
287. ^ Fefferman, Dan. "SCHISM in the Unification Church" (PDF). *CESNUR Center for Studies on New Religions*. 2016 CESNUR Conference. Retrieved 9 February 2018.
288. ^ Song, Hongeun. "Unification Church 'I Am The Prince'" (June 2011). Shin Dong A. Retrieved 10 February 2018.
289. ^ "Family Peace Association - GuideStar Profile" . *www.guidestar.org*. Retrieved 2 March 2018.
290. ^ "□□□□□□ □□" . *newsis* (in Korean). Retrieved 28 February 2018.
291. ^ "□□□□□□ □□" . *newsis* (in Korean). Retrieved 28 February 2018.
292. ^ "□□□□□□ □□, □□□□□ □□□ □□□□□" . *newsis* (in Korean). Retrieved 28 February 2018.
293. ^ □, □□. "□□□ □□□□□□ □□□" . *shindonga.donga.com* (in Korean). Shin Dong A. Retrieved 28 February 2018.
294. ^ "□□□ □□□ □□□□□□ □□□ □□" . *newsis* (in Korean). Retrieved 28 February 2018.
295. ^ "□□□□□□ □□□ □□" . *newsis* (in Korean). Retrieved 28 February 2018.
296. ^ "□□□□□□ □□" . *Segye Times* (in Korean). Retrieved 1 March 2018.
297. ^ "□□□□□□ □□□ □□" . *Buja Dongne Times* (in Korean). Retrieved 1 March 2018.
298. ^ "□□□□□□ □□, □□□□ □□□ □□ □□□ □□" . *□□□□* (in Korean). 4 December 2017. Retrieved 2 March 2018.

299. ^ Religious persecution, *Business World*, January 9, 2014
300. ^ R. North, S.J. (Compiled), *Elenchus of Biblica 1987*, Rome, 1990, p.544.[6]
301. ^ **a** **b** Staff (June 19, 1993). "Moon's wife to speak in Lawrence". *The Kansas City Star*. The Kansas City Star Co. p. E10.
302. ^ Cuda, Amanda (December 28, 2004). "Event works for understanding through friendships". *Connecticut Post*. p. Section: Womanwise.
303. ^ Peterson, Thair (March 21, 1998). "Bridging the Interracial Gap". *Long Beach Press-Telegram*. p. A3.
304. ^ Bainbridge, William Sims (1997). *The Sociology of Religious Movements*. Routledge. pp. 203–205. ISBN 0-415-91202-4.
305. ^ Shupe, Anson D.; Bronislaw Misztal (1998). *Religion, mobilization, and social action*. Greenwood Publishing Group. pp. 211, 213. ISBN 0-275-95625-3.
306. ^ **a** **b** Bonham, Nicole A. (June 5, 1993). "Moon's Wife Urges Utah Women To Unite Family Against Corruption". *The Deseret News*. Deseret News Publishing Company. p. A8.
307. ^ Graham, Jennifer (July 16, 1993). "Rev. Moon's Wife to Speak: Activist Will Stump for World Peace Saturday at Fairgrounds". *The State*. p. 2B.
308. ^ Fisher, Marc (November 23, 1997). "A Church in Flux Is Flush With Cash". *The Washington Post*. Retrieved 2007-11-14. "Also in 1995, the Women's Federation made another donation that illustrates how Moon supports fellow conservatives. It gave a $3.5 million grant to the Christian Heritage Foundation, which later bought a large portion of Liberty University's debt, rescuing the Rev. Jerry Falwell's Lynchburg, Va., religious school from the brink of bankruptcy."
309. ^ **a** **b** Bouza, Tony. *The Decline And Fall Of The American Empire: Corruption, Decadence, And The American Dream*. p. 187. ISBN 0-306-45407-6.
310. ^ Staff (September 19, 1995). "Moon Brings Message of Family Love - Touring Evangelist Sees Cure For World Problems". *Seattle Post-Intelligencer*. Retrieved 2009-04-20.
311. ^ Chronicle, *The New York Times*, July 15, 1995
312. ^ Sullivan, Kevin; Mary Jordan (September 6, 1995). "Moon Group Paying Bush For Speeches - Foes of Church Criticize Japan Tour". *The Washington Post*. The Washington Post Company. p. A25.
313. ^ Goldsmith, Steven (September 19, 1995). "Moon Brings Message of Family Love - Touring Evangelist Sees Cure For World Problems". *Seattle Post-Intelligencer*. p. B1.
314. ^ **a** **b** Sullivan, Kevin (September 15, 1995). "Bush Stresses Family In Tokyo Speech - Former President Addresses Followers of Unification Church Leader's Wife". *The Washington Post*. The Washington Post Company. p. A27.
315. ^ Staff (September 17, 1995). "SEPT. 10-16; Mr. Bush's Asian Tour". *The New York Times*. Retrieved 2009-04-21.
316. ^ "Catering to Emerging Needs of Families", *New Straits Times*, 1999-4-16
317. ^ Bilateral economic ties will ease tensions with China: Ma Archived 2012-08-26 at the Wayback Machine., *China Post*, January 18, 2009
318. ^ Councilman Lauds Citizens' Group for Jackson Park Clean-Up, *New Jersey Today*, January 13, 2012
319. ^ Fukushima children to visit Cyprus for Christmas, *Cyprus Mail*, January 17, 2012
320. ^ "Our history". *Service For Peace*. Retrieved 28 May 2015.
321. ^ Wetzstein, Cheryl. "Rev. Moon, Times founder, dies at 92". *The Washington Times*. Retrieved 28 May 2015. "Rev. Moon also founded numerous international, interfaith service groups, such as the International Relief Friendship Foundation, Religious Youth Service and Service for Peace, and sponsored thousands of conferences on world peace, family and interfaith issues."
322. ^ Thomas, Matthew. "Backpack Angel Program Preparing for next School Year." WLKY. WLKY, 17 May 2014. Web. 16 April 2015. <http://www.wlky.com/news/backpack-angel-program-preparing-for-next-school-year/26033118>.
323. ^ Eugene Paul Wigner Papers Archived 2008-02-24 at the Wayback Machine. Princeton University Library
324. ^ Register of the Friedrich A. von Hayek Papers, 1906-1992 Online Archive of California.
325. ^ *Prophets and Protons: new religious movements and science in late twentieth-century America*, Benjamin E. Zeller, NYU Press, pages 21-22
326. ^ Richard L. Rubenstein Papers American Jewish Archives
327. ^ http://icus.org/conferences/icus-xxiii/
328. ^ Introduction and Brief History of the Assembly of the World's Religions
329. ^ The Reunification of Korea and World Peace, Sun Myung Moon
330. ^ Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace
331. ^ *The Encyclopedia Of Christianity*, Erwin Fahlbusch, et al., p598
332. ^ *False Dawn*, Lee Penn, p122
333. ^ Moonstruck, *SF Weekly*, 2006-02-22
334. ^ Ghouse, Mike (21 February 2012). "Commitment to Israel-Palestine, Part 2". *Huffington Post*.
335. ^ Cheongshim Graduate School of Theology
336. ^ ELISABETH ROSENTHALPublished: 12 September 2000 (12 September 2000). "Group Founded by Sun Myung Moon Preaches Sexual Abstinence in China — New York Times". Nytimes.com. Retrieved 9 October 2012.
337. ^ About, Professors World Peace Academy
338. ^ "Project Vision," *New World Encyclopedia*. Retrieved, June 25, 2008.
339. ^ "About," *New World Encyclopedia*. Retrieved, April 10, 2015.
340. ^ McDowell, Edwin (April 2, 1984). "Unification Church Is Starting A Publishing House". *The New York Times*.
341. ^ "The Peace Academy, based in New York, was founded by Moon in 1973. It is financed primarily by his International Cultural Foundation." [7]
342. ^ History of PWPA, Professors World Peace Academy
343. ^ Sun Moon University
344. ^ Robertson, Roland and Garrett, William R., 1991, *Religion and Social Order*, Paragon House, page 206
345. ^ "Archived copy". Archived from the original on 2008-12-04. Retrieved 2010-01-29.
346. ^ "New England, Mid-Atlantic Accreditors Reaffirmation of the Seminary's Accreditation" Archived 2016-03-26 at the Wayback Machine. MSA CHE. accessed March 16, 2016
347. ^ "List of Accredited Institutions by the Middle States Commission on Higher Education" MSA CHE. accessed March 16, 2016
348. ^ "Removal of Probation and Reaffirmation of Accreditation" MSA CHE. accessed March 16, 2016
349. ^ Where have all the Moonies gone? Archived 2012-07-30 at Archive.today K. Gordon Neufeld, *First Things*, March 2008, "While I was studying theology, church history, and the Bible—taught by an eclectic faculty that included a rabbi, a Jesuit priest, and a Methodist minister—most of my young coreligionists were standing on street corners in San Francisco, Boston, and Miami urging strangers to attend a vaguely described dinner."
350. ^ Divine Principle and the Second Advent Archived 2008-09-21 at the Wayback Machine. *Christian Century* May 11, 1977 "In fact Moon's adherents differ from previous fringe groups in their quite early and expensive pursuit of respectability, as evidenced by the scientific conventions they have sponsored in England and the U.S. and the seminary they have established in Barrytown, New York, whose faculty is composed not of their own group members but rather of respected Christian scholars."
351. ^ Church urges Christian unity: Valley seminary open since 1975 *Poughkeepsie Journal*, 2003-12-11 "The seminary usually hosts

about 120 students from all over the world, with the majority coming from Japan and Korea, where Unification has large bases."
352. ^ "Archived copy". Archived from the original on 2009-09-17. Retrieved 2010-02-02.
353. ^ [8]
354. ^ Statement on Faith, Devotions, and Traditions: http://www.newhopeacademy.org/MD-private-school/international-faiths-religions.php
355. ^ Rosenthal, Elisabeth (2000-09-12). "Group Founded by Sun Myung Moon Preaches Sexual Abstinence in China". *The New York Times*. Archived from the original on 2012-07-18. Retrieved 2008-02-22.
356. ^ "Glenallen resident returns from Thailand after helping victims of human trafficking". 7 May 2012.
357. ^ Mo. woman helps victims of human trafficking
358. ^ Gruzen, Tara (February 13, 1996). "College Group Preaches A Lesson On Pure Love At Anti-porn Protest". *Chicago Tribune*.
359. ^ DANCE VIEW; A Wobbly Kirov Is Saved by 'The Firebird', *The New York Times*, July 7, 1995
360. ^ DANCE; A Small Place Reaches for Ballet's Big Time, *The New York Times*, July 29, 2001
361. ^ Sewell, Rhonda B. (February 28, 2003). "Korean Culture Takes the Stage". *The Blade*. p. D11. "The colors, sounds, and heritage of South Korea will come alive tonight as the Little Angels, an all-girls Korean folk ballet company, performs in the Ritz Theatre in Tiffin. ... The company was founded in 1962 by the Rev. Sun Myung Moon and his wife, Hak Ja Han, as a way to project a positive image of the country..."
362. ^ Moon, Sun Myung (2009). *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*. Gimm-Young Publishers. ISBN 0-7166-0299-7. page 67. "My plan was to have these seventeen children learn how to dance and then send them out into the world. Many foreigners knew about Korea only as a poor country that had fought a terrible war. I wanted to show them the beautiful dances of Korea so that they would realize that the Korean people are a people of culture."
363. ^ Dunning, Jennifer (December 29, 1973). "Dance: The Little Angels; Korean Folk Ballet Presents 31 Children in Intricate Routines and Songs". *The New York Times*. p. 53.
364. ^ Dunning, Jennifer (February 1, 1993). "Dance in Review". *The New York Times*.
365. ^ **a b c** A Church in Flux is Flush with Cash *The Washington Post*, November 23, 1997
366. ^ Kelleher, Terry (September 20, 1982). "'Inchon reflects only the cult of bad moviemaking". *The Miami Herald*. p. 5C.
367. ^ Moon Church Founds Ballet School New York Times, 1990-09-08
368. ^ Universal Ballet
369. ^ Interview with Julia Moon exploredance.com
370. ^ Inside and Outside the Korean Dance Scene Archived 2012-02-15 at the Wayback Machine.
371. ^ "Reverendo Moon retorna à Grã-Bretanha" (in Portuguese). BBC Brasil. 2005-11-05. Retrieved 2004-11-16.
372. ^ South Korea to host global peace cup in July Sports Illustrated May 6, 2003
373. ^ Seongnam Ilhwa Chunma at ROKfootball.com
374. ^ Warming Up for the Kick-off, *The Wall Street Journal*, August 2, 2010
375. ^ "Jerez se convierte hoy en una de las sedes oficiales de la 'Peace Cup 2009' " (in Spanish). AndaluciaPress. Archived from the original on April 22, 2009. Retrieved 2008-06-14.
376. ^ "Peace Cup might go to Spain". The Washington Times. Retrieved 2008-06-14.
377. ^ "Soccer World News//World Roundup". CNN.
378. ^ **a b** Finance Today
379. ^ cupress.com Archived 2016-03-05 at the Wayback Machine.
380. ^ Church Spends Millions On Its Image The Washington Post September 17, 1984. "In May, a church political group called the Freedom Leadership Foundation paid for four Republican Senate staff members – including aides to Sens. Steve Symms (R-Idaho), Robert W. Kasten Jr. (R-Wis.) and William L. Armstrong (R-Colo.) – to fly to Central America where they met with government leaders and U.S. Embassy officials in Honduras and Guatemala and joined the official U.S. observer delegation to the Salvadoran election."
381. ^ My Four and One Half Years with The Lord of The Flies, Allen Tate Wood "From March to December of 1970 I was head of the Unification Church's political arm in the United States (The Freedom Leadership Foundation). On Moon's behalf we sought to defuse the Peace Movement and buttress the hawk position by convincing senators and congressmen that there was substantial grass roots support for a hard line stand in Asia. In 1969 we were just scratching the surface. Today Moon's organization is in a position of vastly increased power and prestige. Through the Freedom Leadership Foundation and its descendant CAUSA, Moon has won the gratitude and respect of many congressmen and senators, not to mention former presidents Nixon, Reagan and Bush."
382. ^ New moons are rising, *Asia Times*, October 31, 2009
383. ^ Neil Bush, the Rev. Moon, Paraguay and the U.S. Dept. of Education by Bill Berkowitz, Scoop (New Zealand), 2008-03-29.
384. ^ *The Pittsburgh Press*, December 20, 1982, page 11
385. ^ Washington Institute for Values in Public Policy
386. ^ Church Spends Millions On Its Image The Washington Post September 17, 1984. "The church also is spending $1.5 million a year on a new local think tank, the Washington Institute for Values in Public Policy, that is underwriting conservative-oriented research and seminars at Stanford University, the University of Chicago, the Institute for Energy Analysis in Oak Ridge, Tenn., and other institutions."
387. ^ Public TV Tilts Toward Conservatives, Fairness & Accuracy In Reporting "While conservatives dismiss Bill Moyers' world-class documentaries on our constitutional checks and balances as "propaganda," they never mention PBS's airing of unabashed right-wing agitprop films such as Nicaragua Was Our Home (the pro-contra film produced by Rev. Sun Myung Moon's CAUSA, which funded the contras after Congress' ban)..."
388. ^ Dorsey, Gary (August 26, 1999). "Unification Church group sues state over task force; Investigation of cults called unconstitutional". *The Baltimore Sun*. p. 2B.
389. ^ Argetsinger, Amy (October 14, 1999). "Task Force Finds Few Instances of Campus Cults". *The Washington Post*. The Washington Post Company. p. M4.
390. ^ "International Coalition for Religious Freedom". *berkleycenter.georgetown.edu*. Retrieved 15 February 2018.
391. ^ Wetzel, Frank (May 21, 1989). "More sunshine needed on Moon units". *The Seattle Times*. Seattle Times Company. p. A21.
392. ^ Reid, T.R. (August 5, 1977). "House Subcommittee's Report Links Rev. Moon to the KCIA". *The Washington Post*. The Washington Post Company. p. A7.
393. ^ Boettcher, Robert; Gordon L. Freedman (1980). *Gifts of Deceit*. Holt, Rinehart and Winston. pp. 152, 164. ISBN 0-03-044576-0.
394. ^ After Cold War, Cold Peace National Catholic Reporter October 1, 1999
395. ^ "Pyongwha Fiparam, el utilitario que anima la industria del automóvil de la RPDC" (in Spanish). Choson Digest. Archived from the original on 2011-08-08. Retrieved 2011-08-08.
396. ^ http://english.chosun.com/w21data/html/news/200401/200401180004.html
397. ^ China Car Forums - View Single Post - CBA partners with Pyeonghwa Motors of North Korea
398. ^ Unification Church founder Sun Myung Moon, 15 others injured in helicopter crash Herald Tribune, July 19, 2008
399. ^ Sons Rise in a Moon Shadow,*Forbes*, April 12, 2010

400. ^ Clarke, Peter Bernard, 1999, *Bibliography of Japanese new religions, with annotations and an introduction to Japanese new religions at home and abroad*, Japan Library
401. ^ Dept. of Religious Studies, Punjabi University., 1988, Journal of Religious Studies: Volume 16
402. ^ a b Kim, Hyung-eun (April 12, 2010). "Business engine of a global faith". *Joong Ang Daily*.
403. ^ a b Kirk, Donald (May 2, 2010). "Sons rise in a Moon's shadow". *Forbes*.
404. ^ a b "Who Owns What: News World Communications". *The Columbia Journalism Review*. 2003-11-24. Retrieved 2008-02-02.
405. ^ AROUND THE NATION; Sun Myung Moon Paper Appears in Washington from *The New York Times*
406. ^ Global Peace Festival stirs Japan United Press International November 17, 2008
407. ^ Yahoo! Finance profile
408. ^ Shapira, Ian (November 3, 2010). "Moon group buys back Washington Times". *Washington Post*. p. C1.
409. ^ "Bayou La Batre residents embrace church they once called a cult"
410. ^ "Moon's church settles into quiet fishing town". *Rome News-Tribune*. November 27, 1985.
411. ^ Philippines political leader visits Kodiak, *Kodiak Mirror*, September 14, 2010
412. ^ "Archived copy". Archived from the original on 2012-07-22. Retrieved 2011-08-31.
413. ^ Sushi and Rev. Moon: How Americans' growing appetite for sushi is helping to support his controversial church Chicago Tribune, April 11, 2006
414. ^ Unification Church 'means business' with Las Vegas facility, *Las Vegas Sun*, 9-2-2011
415. ^ Innovative Sport Fishing Boat to Be Unveiled in Las Vegas, *Boating World*, 8-18-2011
416. ^ Introvigne, Massimo, 2000, *The Unification Church Studies in Contemporary Religion*, Signature Books, Salt Lake City, Utah, ISBN 1-56085-145-7, excerpt Archived 2003-04-29 at the Wayback Machine. pages 13-16
417. ^ Friends Forever gather to remember the Washington Ward, Deseret News, November 27, 2011
418. ^ A Seattle jewel shines again, *Seattle Post-Intelligencer*, July 22, 2007
419. ^ Architect Data Base
420. ^ Unification Church insists Trump apologize, *The New York Times*, 1991-5-26
421. ^ Luft, Kerry (December 8, 1994). "Unification Church Invests Heavily In Uruguay". *Chicago Tribune*.
422. ^ Riverfront developer's origins are tied to Moon [*permanent dead link*] Richmond Times-Dispatch January 11, 2008
423. ^ Sheraton National Hotel Sold, ARL Now, May 27, 2011
424. ^ Washington's War on Nicaragua, Holly Sklar, South End Press, 1988
425. ^ [9]
426. ^ "Universal Peace Federation". Biztechreport.com. 19 April 2012. Retrieved 9 October 2012.
427. ^ "Quotes//Spirituality//Moon". Crossroad.to. 21 September 2001. Retrieved 9 October 2012.
428. ^ "Inter Press Service". Ipsnews.net. Archived from the original on 11 August 2011. Retrieved 9 October 2012.
429. ^ a b "un.org" (PDF). Retrieved 9 October 2012.
430. ^ a b James, Barry (15 August 2002). "The expanding reach of nongovernment aid". *The New York Times*.
431. ^ "un.org". Docs.google.com. Retrieved 9 October 2012.
432. ^ "un.org" (PDF). Retrieved 9 October 2012.
433. ^ "un.org". Unispal.un.org. Archived from the original on 26 November 2013. Retrieved 9 October 2012.
434. ^ "un.org". un.org. Retrieved 9 October 2012.
435. ^ "un.org". un.org. Retrieved 9 October 2012.
436. ^ "un.org". un.org. Retrieved 9 October 2012.
437. ^ "un.org". Docs.google.com. Retrieved 9 October 2012.
438. ^ "unhcr.org". Docs.google.com. Retrieved 9 October 2012.
439. ^ "search "IIFWP": this is a former name of Universal Peace Federation un.org". Docs.google.com. Retrieved 9 October 2012.
440. ^ "Etpu" (PDF). Retrieved 9 October 2012.
441. ^ a b Wetzstein, Cheryl. "Rev. Moon, Times founder, dies at 92". *The Washington Times*. Retrieved 28 May 2015. "Rev. Moon also founded numerous international, interfaith service groups, such as the International Relief Friendship Foundation, Religious Youth Service and Service for Peace, and sponsored thousands of conferences on world peace, family and interfaith issues."
442. ^ International Relief Friendship Foundation
443. ^ Church Spends Millions On Its Image The Washington Post September 17, 1984."The church-financed International Relief Friendship Foundation recently shipped 1,000 pounds of clothing, nearly seven tons of food and medical supplies to Miskito Indian refugees in the jungles of Honduras, according to Joy Morrow, the foundation's Washington coordinator."
444. ^ Korean War vets thanked by Little Angels in Norfolk, Virginian-Pilot, June 8, 2010
445. ^ Guy, Pat (April 24, 1989). "MEDIA: Moon ads blast news magazine". *USA Today*. Gannett Company Inc. p. 2B, section: Money.
446. ^ From the Unification Church to the Unification Movement, 1994–1999: Five Years of Dramatic Changes, Massimo Introvigne, Center for Studies on New Religions
447. ^ "Moons Ocean Church casts nets for souls", Miami Herald – April 11, 1985
448. ^ How South Korea and America wrecked chance for reconciliation with the North, *The Guardian*, July 11, 2014

Annotated bibliography [edit]

- Sontag, Frederick. 1977. *Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church*, Abingdon Press. ISBN 0-687-40622-6
- Bryant, M. Darrol, and Herbert Warren Richardson. 1978. *A Time for consideration: a scholarly appraisal of the Unification Church*. New York: E. Mellen Press. ISBN 978-0-88946-954-9
- Tingle, D. and Fordyce, R. 1979, *Phases and Faces of the Moon: A Critical Examination of the Unification Church and its Principles*, Hicksville, NY: Exposition Press ISBN 0-682-49264-7
- Kim, Young Oon, 1980, Unification Theology, Barrytown, NY: Unification Theological Seminary, Library of Congress Cataloging number 80-52872
- Matczak, Sebastian, *Unificationism: A New Philosophy and World View* (Philosophical Questions Series, No 11) (1982) New York: Louvain.
- Barker, Eileen, *The Making of a Moonie: Choice or Brainwashing?* (1984) Blackwell's, Oxford, UK ISBN 0-631-13246-5.
- Bjornstad, James. 1984. Sun Myung & the Unification Church. Rev. ed. Minneapolis, Minn.: Bethany House Publishers. 57 p. N.B.: Rev. ed. of The Moon Is Not the Sun, which had been published in 1976. ISBN 0-87123-301-0
- Durst, Mose. 1984. *To bigotry, no sanction: Reverend Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church*. Chicago: Regnery Gateway. ISBN 978-0-89526-609-5
- Bromley, David G. (September 1985). "Financing the Millennium: The Economic Structure of the Unificationist Movement". *Journal for the Scientific Study of Religion, Vol. 24, No. 3 (Sep., 1985), pp* Blackwell Publishing on behalf of Society for the Scientific Study of Religion. **24** (3): 253–274. JSTOR 1385816.

- Fichter, Joseph Henry. 1985. *The holy family of father Moon* Kansas City, Mo: Leaven Press. ISBN 978-0-934134-13-2
- Gullery, Jonathan. 1986. *The Path of a pioneer: the early days of Reverend Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church* New York: HSA Publications. ISBN 978-0-910621-50-2
- Biermans, J. 1986, *The Odyssey of New Religious Movements, Persecution, Struggle, Legitimation: A Case Study of the Unification Church* Lewiston, New York and Queenston, Ontario: The Edwin Melton Press ISBN 0-88946-710-2
- Sherwood, Carlton. 1991. *Inquisition: The Persecution and Prosecution of the Reverend Sun Myung Moon* Washington, D.C.: Regnery Gateway. ISBN 978-0-89526-532-6
- Chryssides, George D., *The Advent of Sun Myung Moon: The Origins, Beliefs and Practices of the Unification Church* (1991) London, Macmillan Professional and Academic Ltd. The author is professor of religious studies at the University of Wolverhampton, United Kingdom.
- Yamamoto, J. Isamu, 1995, *Unification Church*, Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan ISBN 0-310-70381-6
- Hong, Nansook, *In the Shadow of the Moons: My Life in the Reverend Sun Myung Moon's Family* Little Brown & Company; ISBN 0-316-34816-3; (August 1998).
- Introvigne, M., 2000, *The Unification Church*, Signature Books, ISBN 1-56085-145-7
- Ward, Thomas J. 2006, *March to Moscow: the role of the Reverend Sun Myung Moon in the collapse of communism* St. Paul, Minn: Paragon House. ISBN 978-1-885118-16-5
- Hickey, Patrick 2009, *Tahoe Boy: A journey back home*. John, Maryland: Seven Locks Press. ISBN 0-9822293-6-4 ISBN 978-0982229361
- Moon, Sun Myung, 2009, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*. Gimm-Young Publishers ISBN 0-7166-0299-7

External links [edit]

- Quotations related to Unification Church at Wikiquote
- Quotations related to Divine Principle at Wikiquote
- UPF website
- Projects and Activities Founded by Unificationists (Nearly all of these founded by Sun Myung Moon or affiliated with him.)
- Reverend Moon Website
- Unification Church, Article on Rightweb
- Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (official international website, English language version)
- Family Federation for World Peace and Unification USA (official website)
- Biography of Sun Myung Moon
- Unification Church Profile of the UC at religionfacts.com.
- *Exposition of the Divine Principle*, HSA-UWC, 1996 (ISBN 0-910621-80-2).
- Unification Church views of homosexuality
- Philosophy of Science article in Unification Church sponsored encyclopedia.
- Service for Peace website
- Official site of the ICUS
- ICUS publications
- Official site of WFWP International

Wikisource has several original texts related to: ***Unification Church***

v • t • e	**Unification movement**
Doctrines and ceremonies	*Divine Principle* · Blessing ceremony of the Unification Church
Organizations and projects	Chungnam Ilhwa Chunma · Clube Atlético Sorocaba · Clube Esportivo Nova Esperança · *Inchon* · *Insight magazine* · International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences · Japan–Korea Undersea Tunnel · Little Angels Children's Folk Ballet of Korea · Manhattan Center · News World Communications · *Nicaragua Was Our Home* · Peace Cup · Pyeonghwa Motors · Seongnam Ilhwa Chunma · Sun Moon University · Tongil Group · Unification Theological Seminary · United Press International · Universal Ballet · *The Washington Times* · *World Scripture* · Wyndham New Yorker Hotel
History and controversy	"Crazy for God" · "Heavenly deception" · "Love bombing" · Million Family March · "Moonie (nickname)" · Subcommittee on International Organizations of the Committee on International Relations · Unification Church of the United States · *United States v. Sun Myung Moon*
Books	*As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* · *Doomsday Cult: A Study of Conversion, Proselytization, and Maintenance of Faith* · *Gifts of Deceit* · *Inquisition: The Persecution and Prosecution of the Reverend Sun Myung Moon* · *The Making of a Moonie* · *Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church*
Timeline and lists	People

v • t • e	**New religious movements**
Major groups	Ahmadiyya · Ananda Marga · Ancient Mystical Order Rosae Crucis · Anthroposophical Society · Antoinism · Armstrongism · Azali · Bábism · Bahá'í Faith · BAPS · Brahma Kumaris · Branch Davidians · Christadelphians · Christian Science · Church of Divine Science · Church of Satan (LaVeyan Satanism) · Church of Scientology · Church of the SubGenius · Creativity · Discordianism · Falun Gong · Family International · Friends of Man · Fung Loy Kok · Heathenry · Heaven's Gate · Iglesia ni Cristo · International Society for Krishna Consciousness · Invitation to Life · Jehovah's Witnesses · Latter Day Saints · Maha Bodhi Society · Nation of Islam · New Apostolic Church · The New Church · Noahidism · Peoples Temple · Pilgrims of Arès · The Process Church · Raëlism · Rajneesh · Ramakrishna Mission · Rastafari · Religious Science · Sahaja Yoga · Sathya Sai Baba · Seventh-day Adventist Church · Shakers · Shambhala Buddhism · Shri Ram Chandra Mission · Soka Gakkai · Sukyo Mahikari · Temple of Set · Tenrikyo · Thelema · Theosophy · Theosophical Society · Transcendental Meditation · True Buddha School · Twelve Tribes · Unification Church (Family Federation for World Peace and Unification · Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity) · Unitarian Universalist Association · Unity Church · Universal Church of the Kingdom of God · Universal White Brotherhood · The Way International · Wicca · Word of Faith · World Mission Society Church of God
Notable figures	Mirza Ghulam Ahmad · Herbert W. Armstrong · Shoko Asahara · Sri Aurobindo · Subh-i-Azal · Báb · Sathya Sai Baba · Bahá'u'lláh · Alice Bailey · David Berg · Helena Blavatsky · Sri Chinmoy · Aleister Crowley · Mary Baker Eddy · Charles Fillmore · Hak Ja Han · L. Ron Hubbard · Li Hongzhi · Anton LaVey · Lu Sheng-yen · Maharishi Mahesh Yogi · Meher Baba · Sun Myung Moon · Elijah Muhammad · Nakayama Miki · A. C. Bhaktivedanta Swami Prabhupada · Phineas Quimby · Rajneesh · Ramakrishna · Prem Rawat · Helena Roerich · Charles Taze Russell · Joseph Franklin Rutherford · Ahn Sahng-hong · Prabhat Ranjan Sarkar · Swaminarayan · Joseph Smith · Nirmala Srivastava · Emanuel Swedenborg · Rudolf Steiner · Joseph W. Tkach · Chögyam Trungpa · Ellen G. White
	African-initiated church · Afrocentrism · Buddhist modernism · Charismatic Movement · Christian denomination ·

Concepts	Classifications of religious movements · Conspiracy theories · Cult · Cybersectarianism · Doomsday cult · Goddess movement · Heresy · Hindu reform movements · In-group favoritism · Japanese new religions · Modern Paganism · Neoshamanism · New Age · New Thought · Open-source religion · Pacific Northwest · Personal development · Prosperity theology · Religious conversion · Satanism · Schism · Sect · Self religion · Spiritual evolution · Syncretism · UFO religion · Vipassana movement
Public education	INFORM (Information Network Focus on Religious Movements)
Scholarship	Academic study of new religious movements · CESNUR · *Journal of Contemporary Religion* · *Nova Religio* · Sociology of religion
Opposition	Anti-cult movement · Anti-Mormonism · Christian countercult movement · Persecution of Ahmadis · Persecution of Bahá'ís · Persecution of Falun Gong · Persecution of Jehovah's Witnesses
Lists	In popular culture · New religious movements · Academic study

Categories: Unification Church | 1954 establishments in South Korea | Anti-communism | Christian new religious movements

This page was last edited on 1 January 2019, at 23:38 (UTC).

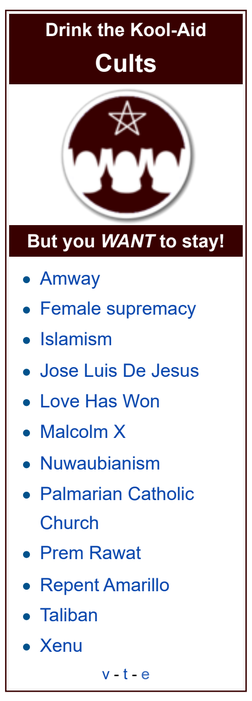
Text is available under the Creative Commons Attribution-ShareAlike License; additional terms may apply. By using this site, you agree to the Terms of Use and Privacy Policy. Wikipedia® is a registered trademark of the Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., a non-profit organization.

Privacy policy | About Wikipedia | Disclaimers | Contact Wikipedia | Developers | Cookie statement | Mobile view

Unification Church

> Moon openly admits that he thinks he is God and he expects to be worshipped. [They are] deeply rooted in the press, the Christian evangelical movement, and the Republican Party. If you're a member of the Press, a Christian, or a Republican, this should scare the hell out of you.
>
> —Marc Perkel[1]

Official emblem of the Unification Church



The **Unification Church** (Korean: 통일교, *Tongilgyo*), officially called the **Family Federation for World Peace and Unification** (Korean: 세계평화통일가정연합, *Segyepyeonghwatong-ilgajeong-yeonhab*; historically **Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity**) but more commonly known as the **Moonies**, is a personality cult disguised as Christian New religious movement formed by and around "Reverend" Sun Myung Moon (1920–2012), a nutjob from South Korea who claimed he was the Second Coming of Jesus, and blamed the 2011 Japanese earthquake and tsunamis upon the Japanese people, claiming it was divine punishment for believing in "idols."[note 1] Since after the founder's death, it has been led by his late wife Hak Ja Han (1943–) and since then she instigated various ritual and theological changes, most notably the elevation of her status as a messianic figure through the concept of the "Only Begotten Daughter" thus switching to her cult of personality, like someone else's family in Korea.

Sun Myung Moon and his wife were banned from entering Germany and other Western European countries in the Schengen agreement because it was felt he had a bad influence on young people.[note 2] However, no sanctions have been placed on the organization.

In 1971 Sun Myung Moon moved to the United States and began recruiting from among the counterculture in Berkeley and San Francisco, California, expanding to most U.S. cities by 1973. They were one of the main groups (along with the Children of God and Synanon) to prompt public concern over cults starting in the early 1970s. Moon would arrange the marriages of church members and hold mass wedding ceremonies,[3] members lived together communally, and the stereotype of the typical Moonie became the brainwashed follower selling flowers in the airport. The Moonies have been repeatedly accused of splitting up families and pressuring Moonies to break ties with their family of origin. Sun Myung Moon finally died in September 2012.[4] The Church runs a seminary open to all faiths and has interfaith courses for non-Christian/Moonie students;[5] this could be seen as interfaith outreach or as a means of converting people to the Unification Church.

Former Unification Church member Steven Hassan has called the church racist, homophobic and anti-Semitic.[6]

Contents [hide]

1 Politics
2 Media empire
3 Businesses
4 De-unification church
5 Roots of intelligent design
6 Daily Mail stopped clock
7 See also
8 Bibliography
9 External links
10 Notes
11 References

Politics [edit]

Ironically (for his ex-hippie converts, at least), Moon himself was a hardcore wingnut who ran full page ads defending Richard Nixon during the Watergate scandal, started the blatantly partisan *Washington Times* newspaper, was a heavy promoter and funder of global warming denial and anti-environmentalist activity during the 1990s, and had close ties with the Cheney-Rumsfeld-Ashcroft gang. Moon was strongly in favor of conservative family values, which is ironic considering that he was a serial adulterer and "fornicator", once preached a doctrine based on promiscuity and has had three wives in succession, who gave birth to a total of 16 children.

The New York Times reported in 1997 that Sun Myung Moon "has been reaching out to conservative Christians in the United States in the last few years by emphasizing shared goals like support for sexual abstinence outside of marriage and opposition to homosexuality." Moon also appealed to the Second Amendment crowd. In March 1999, the *Washington Post* reported that "the messiah" owned the lucrative Kahr Arms Company[7] through Saeilo, Inc.[8] (the CEO/president/lead designer: Kook-jin "Justin" Moon (1970–)).[9][10]

Moon also co-founded a political front group called the American Freedom Coalition.

Media empire [edit]

Part of Moon's influence can be attributed to his being a very wealthy man — before coming to the U.S. he had built a successful media empire in Korea. His company, News World Communications,[W] owns *Segye Ilbo (World Daily)* of Korea which is also known as *Sekai Nippo* in Japan.

For their U.S. media empire, see:

- The aforementioned *Washington Times*
- New World Encyclopedia
- United Press International (bought by the Moonies from ARA Group International, a group of Saudi investors, in 2000)[note 3]

Businesses [edit]

The "Church" is also heavily involved in business in the US and both Koreas.[13] In particular they are apparently North America's major supplier to the sushi restaurant trade through the True World Group.

The church's total wealth is a secret, but its land holdings in South Korea were valued at more than $1 billion in 1990, according to a study by the *Far Eastern Economic Review*. The Unification Church's Tongil Group operates factories in both Koreas, and ranks 35th in size among South Korean conglomerates.[14]

It is estimated that the church scammed between $600 million and $1 billion of sacred relics to Japanese widows, to liberate their loved ones from hell. This liberation is accomplished by attending workshops conducted by the ghosts of Reverend Moon's mother-in-law, Dae Mo Nim and Moon's son, Heung Jin Moon (a.k.a. Heung Jin Nim).[15]

In 1982, Sun Myung Moon was convicted of tax evasion and conspiracy. He served 13 months of an 18 month sentence in prison and paid a $15,000 fine.[16][note 4]

De-unification church [edit]

His second son, Hyung Jin "Sean" Moon (1979–) with the backing of his elder brother Justin Moon, now leads a small local schismatic cult and offshoot of the Unification Church in Newfoundland, Pennsylvania named **World Peace and Unification Sanctuary Church** that got attention in February, 2018 for using guns as ritual as for real.[18][19] The church is also known as "Rod of Iron Ministries", referring to Revelation 2:27, Revelation 12:5, and Revelation 19:15, which Sean interprets as both Christ one day ruling his earthly kingdom with a "rod of iron" (i.e., the semiautomatic AR-15 rifle that is used ceremonially within the church).[19]

Sean is on the outs with his mother Hak Ja Han who claimed the leadership role of the "real" Unification Church, and whom Sean has called the "whore of Babylon".[19] Since taking over leadership, Hak Ja Han has reportedly revised Sun Myung Moon's religious texts,[19] so both churches are now heterodox compared to the original Unification church.

Sean's favorite media are Drudge Report, Breitbart News, Infowars, and NRATV, which he features on his own webcasts.[19] Both Sean and Justin support a bunch of conspiracy theories: 9/11 false flag, the United Nations is satanic, and "There are a lot of pedophiles in the Democratic Party."[19] The last statement would seem to be a reference to Pizzagate.

The church has been labelled a hate group by the Southern Poverty Law Center for its anti-LGBT ideology.[20]

In October 2016, Eric Trump was the grand-opening guest of honor for Jusin's Kahr Arms' Tommy Gun Warehouse, which is located in nearby Greeley, Pennsylvania.[19] At the opening, Sean spoke favorably about Donald Trump:

> It's my opinion that we must elect a president that will protect and expand the right to bear arms. … I hope we can all agree that Hillary Clinton should never be the president of the United States. … God bless the U.S.A., and please buy some guns and ammo!
>
> —Hyung Jin Moon[19]

Roots of intelligent design [edit]

Famous intelligent design advocate Jonathan Wells is a member of the cult. In an unintentionally humorous speech, good ol' Jon revealed that he was assigned a task by the Reverend Sun Myung Moon to get a "doctorate" in biology and "destroy Darwinism from within," which is probably why he keeps bullshitting all the time.

Daily Mail stopped clock [edit]

The longest libel case in Britain to that time concerned a 1978 article in the *Daily Mail* which strongly attacked the Moonies' tactics; nearly three years later[21] a jury concluded that the article's claims were true, despite three quarters of the witnesses having defended the cult. This is an excellent example of a stopped clock, even if the *Mail* wasn't *quite* so blatant most of the time back then.

See also [edit]

- Ed Poor
- Juche, ~~the North Korean mind control cult~~ North Korea's official state ideology and Northern 'secular' counterpart

Bibliography [edit]

- *Bad Moon Rising: How Rev. Moon Created the Washington Times, Seduced the Religious Right and Built an American Kingdom* by John Gorenfeld (2008). PoliPointPress. ISBN 0979482232.

External links [edit]

- National Network of Lawyers against the spiritual sales: the fight against Moonie fraud in Japan
- Where in Washington, D.C. is Sun Myung Moon? by John Gorenfeld
- Craig Maxim with his Moonie cup
- Robert Parry's six part series in *The Consortium* about the Dark Side of Rev. Moon
- Allen Tate Wood — author, exit counselor, and former chief political officer of the Moonies

Notes [edit]

1. ↑ It's not clear whether he meant Shinto or Japanese pop-culture idols called *aidoru* (アイドル).[W]
2. ↑ The Federal Interior Ministry's 1995 immigration exclusion (refusal to issue a visitor's visa) continued in force against the founder of the Unification Church, Reverend Sun Myung Moon, and his wife, Hak Ja Han. The 1995 decision also placed Rev. and Mrs. Moon on the "Schengen" list, which bars their entry into many other European states, and was based on the government's characterization of Rev. Moon and his wife as leaders of a "cult" that endangers the personal and social development of young persons. The Unification Church was seeking to overturn the ban in the courts.[2]
3. ↑ A recent list of Moonie media fronts was compiled by Investigative Research Specialists in 2012.[11][12]
4. ↑ Sun Myung Moon had previously been convicted by North Korea of spying for South Korea in 1947, and served a 5-year prison sentence.[17]

References [edit]

1. ↑ Perkel, Marc. "The Moonies are not your friend." *Everything you wanted to know about Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church.* 1 May 2008. perkel.com
2. ↑ Germany: International Religious Freedom Report 2006 U.S. Department of State (archived from December 6, 2017).
3. ↑ He won the 2000 Ig Nobel Prize in Economics for "bringing efficiency and steady growth to the mass-marriage industry".[1]
4. ↑ 'Moonies' founder Sun Myung Moon dies at 92
5. ↑ Unification Theological Seminary
6. ↑ The Truth About Sun Myung Moon by Steven Hassan (1993) *Freedom of Mind Resource Center*.
7. ↑ http://www.kahr.com/
8. ↑ http://www.saeilo-smi.com/greeting.html
9. ↑ Fitrakis, Bob. "Dark Side of the Moon." *The American Atheist* 38.2 (2000). 1 May 2008. americanatheist.org
10. ↑ Farragher, Thomas. "Moon arms factory: His father preaches peace, and he makes guns." *Boston Globe* 21 March 1999. 1 May 2008. rickross.com
11. ↑ Sun Myung Moon's Closely Associated Entities compiled by Investigative Research Specialists for *Freedom of Mind*.
12. ↑ See the Wikipedia article on Unification movement.
13. ↑ See the Wikipedia article on List of Unification Movement organizations § Businesses.
14. ↑ http://www.nytimes.com/1998/05/02/business/worldbusiness/02iht-unite.t.html
15. ↑ http://realsunmyungmoon.blogspot.com/2008/01/ancestor-liberation-twist-on-spiritual.html
16. ↑ See the Wikipedia article on *United States v. Sun Myung Moon*.
17. ↑ Sun Myung Moon dies at 92; Washington Times owner led the Unification Church by Emma Brown (September 2, 2012) *The Washington Post*.
18. ↑ The cultlike church behind a ceremony with AR-15s and bullet crowns, explained: A nearby elementary school had to be shut down for safety. by Tara Isabella Burton (Mar 1, 2018, 6:00pm EST) *Vox*.
19. ↑ 19.0 19.1 19.2 19.3 19.4 19.5 19.6 19.7 Locked and Loaded for the Lord: After the Rev. Moon died in 2012, his church split apart. Two of his sons established a new congregation. Their followers are eagerly awaiting the end times. And they are armed. by Tom Dunkel (May 21, 2018) *The Washington Post*.
20. ↑ Anti-LGBT cult leader calls on followers to purchase assault rifles Southern Poverty Law Center.
21. ↑ *The Times* of London, 1 April 1981

This page was last modified on 7 October 2020, at 21:41.

Unless explicitly noted otherwise, all content licensed as indicated by RationalWiki:Copyrights.
For concerns on copyright infringement please see: RationalWiki:Copyright violations

Privacy policy About RationalWiki Disclaimers

Powered By MediaWiki

Unification Movement Schismatic Groups (2012-Present)

UNIFICATION MOVEMENT TIMELINE

1920 (January 6, lunar calendar: the date is commemorated in the Unification movement according to the lunar calendar): Reverend Sun-Myung Moon was born in Chongju, in present-day North Korea.

1943 (January 6, lunar calendar: the date is commemorated in the Unification movement according to the lunar calendar): Hak Ja Han was born in Sinil, in present-day North Korea.

1960 (April 12, lunar calendar: the date and all dates hereafter, solar calendar): Reverend Moon married Hak Ja Han, his second wife, in Seoul, Korea. They became known as "True Parents" in the Unification movement.

1961 (January 27): Ye-Jin (Nina) Moon, the first child of Reverend Moon and Hak Ja Han, was born.

1962 (December 25): Hyun Jin (Stephen) Moon, the second (and first male) child of the True Parents, was born.

1965 (August 14): Ji-Jin (Tatiana) Moon, the fourth child of the True Parents (if we include the first one, Hyo Jin, who died in infancy in 1964), was born.

1966 (December 8): Heung Jin (Richard) Moon, the fifth child of the True Parents, was born.

1969 (May 25): Hyun Jin (Preston) Moon, the seventh child of the True Parents, was born.

1970 (July 17): Kook Jin (Justin) Moon, the eighth child of the True Parents, was born.

1976 (July 12): Sun Jin (Salina), the tenth child of the True Parents, was born.

1979 (September 28): Hyung Jin (Dave) Moon, the twelfth child of the True Parents, was born.

1984 (January 2): Heung Jin (Richard) Moon died in a car accident.

1997 (March 31): Hyun Jin Moon married Jun Sook Jae, daughter of Reverend Chung Hwan Kwak, one of the most prominent elders of the Unification movement.

1998: Reverend Moon launched the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (FFWPU), with Reverend Kwak as president.

1998: Hyun Jin Moon was appointed as vice-president of FFWPU.

1998: Yeonsook Hong, ex-wife of Hyo Jin Moon, reported his flaws in a sensational book.

2006: Reverend Sun-Myung Moon moved from Seoul to the Holy Ground of Chung Pyung, the theater of the mediumistic phenomena of Hyo Nam Kim, a woman channeling the spirit of the deceased mother of Reverend Moon's wife.

2008 (March 17): Hyo Jin Moon died.

2009: Hyun Jin Moon was replaced in most of his leadership positions in the Unification Movement by his younger brother Hyung Jin Moon, who became president of FFWPU.

2009: Hyun Jin Moon launched in Manilla the Global Peace Foundation, as an independent alternative to the FFWPU-controlled Universal Peace Federation.

2010-2012: Hyun Jin Moon and his followers formed in the Seattle area the Blessed Family Community, later Blessed Family Association.

2012: In Jin Moon resigned from her positions in the Unification Movement after disputes with her mother, made worse by the fact that her relationship with FFWPU musician Ben Lesnick, became publicly known. She would later divorce her husband, Jin Sung Park, and marry Lesnick.

2012 (September 8): Reverend Moon died in Chung Pyung, Korea.

2012: Mrs. Moon started removing Hyung Jin Moon and his brother Kook Jin Moon from their leadership positions in the Unification movement.

2013: Hyung Jin Moon, with the support of his brother Kook Jin, established the Sanctuary Church as a separate organization from FFWPU.

2015: Sun Jin Moon was appointed as president of FFWPU.

2015: Mrs. Hak Ja Han Moon broke with Hyo Nam Kim, the Chung Pyung medium, who launched her own separate movement.

2016: Supporters of Hyun Jin Moon founded the Family Peace Association as a separate organization from FFWPU.

FOUNDER/GROUP HISTORY

Reverend Sun-Myung Moon, the founder of the Unification Movement, died on September 3, 2012, in Chung Pyung, Korea. As often happens in religious groups, the movement separated into rival factions, although the conflicts had roots in events that preceded Reverend Moon's death.

The schisms in the Unification movement were rooted in conflicting claims to authority principally by (a) Reverend Moon's widow, Hak Ja Han; (b) Reverend Moon's oldest surviving son, Hyun Jin (Preston) Moon; (c) Reverend Moon's fourth son, Hyung Jin (Dave) Moon; and (d) Reverend Moon's longtime associate, Reverend Chung Hwan Kwak. (e) the founder's youngest son, Hyung Jin (Dave) Moon, and (f) Hyo Nam Kim, a medium who claimed to channel the spirit of Reverend Moon's mother-in-law and generated considerable prominence in the movement.

Reverend Moon (1920-2012) had fourteen sons and daughters from the 1960 marriage with Hak Ja Han, his second wife after the divorced Sun-Kil Choi (1925-2004), whom he had married in 1945. Hak Ja Han is referred to in the Unification movement as the "True Mother," and those as the "True Father." Their family, including their fourteen "True Children," is referred to as the "True Family" and so the rule is central to the faith of the Unification movement. Where Reverend Moon is considered the "third Adam" (the "second Adam" being Jesus Christ) Christianity 1991).

The "True Children" include seven sons and seven daughters, of which one died in infancy (Hyo Jin Moon). The first True Child is a daughter born in 1961, Ye Jin (Nina) Moon. The oldest male True Child was Hyo Jin (Stephen) Moon (1962-2008). Well before 1998, when a sensational book by his ex-wife Nansook Hong damaged the Unification movement (Hong 1998), it became clear that Hyo Jin Moon had serious personal problems and was not a potential successor to his father.

The second oldest male True Child was Heung Jin Moon (1966-1984), widely revered in the Unification Movement as a young man with a high-level spiritual inclination. He was killed in a car accident at age seventeen. According to Unification theology, Heung Jin Moon performs a crucial role in the spiritual world. In 1988, a Unification Church member from Zimbabwe, Cleophas Kundiona, claimed to be an incarnation of Heung Jin Moon and was accepted as such by Reverend and Mrs. Moon and their leadership for a time, while before becoming controversial for his violent and unpredictable behavior and being alternately rejected by the movement.

The death of Heung Jin Moon and the injuries of Hyo Jin Moon left Hyun Jin Moon as the eldest male True Child best suited to succeed his father as a leadership position. Hyun Jin Moon was born on May 25, 1969, and as a teenager started being prepared by his father to succeed him. Reverend Moon's autobiography, published in 1988, was titled *As a Son*, with age seventeen. Hyun Jin became engaged to Jun Sook Kwak, one of the daughters of Reverend Kwak, that day. [Image at right] The two married on March 31, 1997 and later had nine children. Jun Sook was raised in the Unification tradition from birth.

In 1984, Reverend Moon proclaimed the end of the era of the Unification Church and in 1996 launched the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (FFWPU), with himself as president. In 1998, Hyun Jin Moon was appointed as vice-president of FFWPU. At the Anglican inauguration ceremony in New York, Hyun Jin Moon was described as "the Prince of Peace." In 2001, Hyun Jin Moon was given responsibility for mission and accomplish greater works than those fulfilled by Hyun Jin as the fulfillment of the "Three Great Kingships" (two generations of a family rooted in God) and the "Fourth Adam." The appointment of Hyun Jin Moon and the move from the Unification Church to the Family Federation as the organization in his care since it was interpreted as a radical change from a "church" to a "movement," i.e. from a sectarian to a universalistic orientation. Hyun Jin Moon's appointment was also seen as a step toward Hyun Jin Moon's son's followers take over as Reverend Moon's intent to pass his ultimate spiritual authority to the next sacred son and not to his wife, and to dismantle any legacy of the clerical order from the Unification Church era.

Between 2003 and 2005, Hyun Jin Moon became president of Collegiate Association for the Research of Principles (CARP), the campus ministry of the Unification Church. In 2006, Hyun Jin Moon became chairman of ICI, a U.S.-based nonprofit company which controls some of the movement's assets. In 2007, he became co-chairman of the Universal Peace Federation and started organizing Global Peace Festivals.

Hyun Jin Moon's assumption of all these positions was part of an effort by Reverend Moon to dismantle the church structure of the past forty years and to transfer core positions in the Unification movement to the U.S.-based Generation of Blessing, the first group of Unification members born in the West, rather than in the past of the generation, would manage the younger leaders more easily. In fact, they resisted Hyun Jin's authority and reforms, denounced him to Reverend Moon as unorthodox, and eventually poisoned Hyun Jin's relationship with his parents.

Unification Theological Seminary professor and scholar of the Unification movement Mike Mickler, himself a member of Rev. Moon's inner circle in Hyun Jin Moon, believes that the latter took at face value Reverend Moon's 1998 statements that this was now "not a church but an association," while in fact the elder Moon's intention was to maintain a "creative tension" between the religious and nonreligious spheres. When, Mickler argues, with the establishment of the Chung Pyung shrine and the coronations of himself and Hak Ja Han in 2004, Reverend Moon reversed himself and declared that the Unification movement was set forth his ruin Hyun Jin became unacceptable (Mickler 2012, 80-81). In the end, the Unification movement maintain that his father never intended to found a religion and that the coronation ceremonies were intended to be a coronation of God through representatives on Earth rather than a shift back to a sectarian perspective.

Until 2008, Hyun Jin Moon was widely recognized as Reverend Moon's future successor. From then on, his relationships with his parents and siblings dramatically changed. In that year, Hyung Jin Moon was appointed president of FFWPU, and his personality and communication campaigns to undermine Hyun Jin's reputation and influence within the Unification movement. [Image at right] He was replaced in most of his positions by his younger brother Hung Jin Moon. His father-in-law, Reverend Kwak, was equally maligned, and forced to step down from all his positions in the movement. In 2009, Hyun Jin Moon launched Global Peace Moon and was incapacitated as president of FFWPU. Other positions were given to yet another brother, Kook Jin (Justin) Moon. The silver wave was in 1975; fourteen months after Hyun Jin.

In the chronological sequence of "True Children," he was followed by Kook Jin Moon (1976), who for several years worked as an actor in popular TV series on the ranks of Nathaniel Moon, and did not take part recently a special interest in the Unification movement, and by Hyung Jin Moon (Philip, 1979-1998). He was also not a player in the succession struggle and in 1998 died during a snowboarding accident in the Alps. From the seventeenth floor of a Las Vegas hotel. Pastor Hyung Jin (Dean) Moon was born in 1979 and was the last male child of Reverend Moon.

Reverend Moon became reconciled to his son Hyun Jin and other leaders after he moved at age eighty-six to 2006 from Seoul to the Holy Ground of Chung Pyung, the theater of the mediumistic phenomena of Hyo Nam Kim. Kim Hyung Jin is the daughter-in-law of Reverend Moon's brother Kim Yong Myung, who was born in 1979 and was the last male child of Reverend Moon.

Even before 2006, Hyun Jin Moon repeatedly warned of the possibility of the medium's failure. Eventually, the medium and Mrs. Moon parted company in 2015, following Ms. Kim's claim to be channeling Reverend Moon, and around the medium yet another splinter group was born, which eventually gather some followers among the Japanese branch of the Unification movement.

With that, Ju Han's public endorsement as heir is dispersed Reverend Moon, immediately following his assumption of leadership of FFWPU in 2008, Hyung Jin (Dean) Moon began deconstructing the family centered structure of FFWPU and reconstituting the movement as the Kingdom of God (or "Cheon-il-guk" as a religion), presenting again the Unification Movement in the religious hierarchical and sectarian terms that Reverend Moon had abandoned in 1998. Hyung Jin Moon's claim to be the "Lord of the Second Coming" and to be a "Messiah" have become clear to all. Including his brothers, that Reverend Moon did not want to establish a new denomination but rather a larger universal movement of families.

Between 2006 and 2013, based on Ju Han's influence, Kook Jin Moon was put in charge of the finances of the Unification movement. Hyung Jin Moon, however, was able to take away from him the control of the stagnating the role of Hyun Jin Moon, who hosted them. Campaign criticizing Hyun Jin and access to the control of U.S. and other assets of the Unification Movement followed, and still have last been resolved. In 2012, however, Nansa had to resign from the Unification movement after disputes with his wife's mother. Mrs. Moon, made worse by the public disclosure that, despite being married with Jin Sung Pak, she had a relationship with Family Federation musician Ben Lesnick and he was the father of her son Ju Han. Later, Nansa divorced her husband and married Lesnick, who had to turn divorced his wife Patricia, in 2013, in a much-church ceremony. Later, she somewhat reconciled with her ex-husband.

Although having been instrumental in the promotion of her two younger sons, Pastor Hung Jin and Kook Jin, Mrs. Moon removed both from various positions in 2012 and 2013, and there has been then created their own independent group called the World Peace and Unification Sanctuary Church. These two younger sons continue to dominate for claims to ultimate authority as blasphemy.

In 2009, Hyun Jin Moon decided to launch in Manilla the Global Peace Foundation (GPF) as an alternative to the Universal Peace Federation (UPF), the most broadly inclusive and nonsectarian organization founded by Reverend Moon. Hyun Jin claimed that the latter was no longer maintaining the original nonsectarian intention of Reverend Moon. In 2010-2012, Hyun Jin Moon and his followers formed in the Seattle area the Blessed Family in 2011, Hyun Jin Moon moved to the Seattle area and his followers started forming "not a denomination but an association" in the shape of the Blessed Family Community, later Blessed Family Association. In 2016, the Family Peace Association (FPA) was inaugurated as Hyun Jin's attempt to replace the original organization founded by Rev. Sun Myung Moon (Family Federation for World Peace and Unification – FFWPU). Hyun Jin Moon's FPA is the latest of a series of organizations founded by Hyun Jin Moon and his followers since 2009. Some, however, having been started from its original intended purpose, such as Global Peace Foundation and the Ambassadors for Peace, and the others. Some major figures in the Unification movement's history, such as Chung Hwan Kwak and former president of the Japanese Unification movement Takeru Kamiyama (1942-2016), as well as other major leaders, sided with Hyun Jin.

The leaders committing FFWPU have been publicly endorsing, after Reverend Moon's death, the doctrine that Hyung Jin Moon is the "Lord of the Second Coming" and the "Messiah," the ultimate authority. By contrast the Family Peace Association believes that ultimate spiritual authority in the Unification movement belongs to the elder True Son, Hyun Jin Moon, as declared by his father in Hyun Jin's 2012 vice-presidential inauguration. On the other hand, the Sanctuary Church believes that Hyung Jin Moon is the "Lord of the Second Coming" and the king of Cheon Il Guk" (Korean for "Kingdom of God"), with his wife as the new Queen, based on his participation in the coronation ceremonies of 2005 organized by his parents. [Image at right] Young Jin are sometimes as having political significance, evidenced by his Constitution of Cheon Il Guk (2012) and his head of state of the United States of CIS. The Kingdom is headed by the Lord of the Second Advent Moon Sun Myung [the first King] is his son Moon Hyung Jin as second King, and then to Moon Shin Jeon [Hyung Jin's son, born on March 10, 2013] as third King. The Constitution of the Sanctuary Church 2013(4.5). FFN, on the other hand, insists that sovereignty in the Kingdom of God is God's alone and that no human mediator is required.

DOCTRINES/BELIEFS

There are few fundamental doctrinal differences among FFN, FFWPU, and the Sanctuary Church. FFN emphasizes that doctrinal differences, rather than mere issues of leadership and authority, are the root causes of the schism in the Unification Movement. The Sanctuary Church supports a variation of FFWPU theology. Hyung Jin Moon's claim to be the Messiah is the movement's central teaching. Mrs. Moon's claim to be a co-Messiah role as the "only begotten Daughter of God."

Third, FFN and Sanctuary Church maintain the canon of Holy Scriptures, as fixed by Reverend Moon, is immutable. They strongly criticize Mrs. Moon and FFWPU for replacing all eight volumes with three new ones. Sanctuary Church members of the Cheon Seong Gyeong (the central anthology of Reverend Moon's teachings), in which they claim ownership to eighty percent of the original content is missing. In addition, FFN and Sanctuary Church criticize FFWPU for its publication of a new translation of Reverend Moon's speeches and for releasing them, after having deleted passages critical of Mrs. Moon or modifying in a positive way to Hyun Jin Moon's role. Ultimately, the difference concerns again the role of Mrs. Moon and her authority to change the canon and the Scriptures, which FFN and the Sanctuary Church do not see as any circumstances, having counter all doctrinal authority to interpret Scripture. FFN rejects revisions and teaching of Mrs. Moon, while the Sanctuary Church accepts them as the Word of God. Reverend Moon did permit additional collections of his words to be published, but that they should not replace the originals.

Second, unlike FFWPU and Sanctuary Church, FFN sees as the institutional platform for spiritual growth and salvation not the church but the family. Reverend Moon's vision of the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth is based on each member in a family, as well as of the male and female genders, as being core to the teachings of Sun Myung Moon and the fundamental principles of creation. FFN maintains that, currently, FFWPU under the leadership of Mrs. Moon is confusing this core principle. Mrs. Moon, as the "co-Messiah" is supposed to be the centre of unity in the "True Family," but, FFN claims, that family is currently in disarray due to her neglect of her husband's teachings. Sanctuary Church members, by contrast, believe that Mrs. Moon is the "only begotten Daughter of God." Meanwhile, Sanctuary Church insists on the absolute authority of Hyung Jin Moon as the "Second King of Cheon Il Guk" and the sole instrument on Earth of God and his deified father.

Third, FFN interprets Reverend Moon's teachings in the sense that, although he and Mrs. Moon were the first True Parents, eventually all the Blessed Couples might become true parents too, with a direct relation to God. FFN accuses both Mrs. Moon and Hyung Jin Moon of having erected a religious mythology where Reverend Moon's teachings are replaced by the worship of Reverend Moon's family as a dynasty of divine kings. The Sanctuary Church insists on the divine status of Reverend Moon as the "Second Adam" and Jesus Christ, and Hyung Jin Moon is believed by this faction to be now the earthly "vessel" of God and the deified Reverend Moon after the latter "returned back to the Godhead" (World Peace and Unification Sanctuary Church 2017).

Fourth, who should lead the Unification Movement is also a contentious issue, as detailed below in the Organization, Leadership section of this profile.

Fifth, as mentioned earlier, FFN does not aspire to be a church but a movement of ideal families, not all with the same religious beliefs and practices. On the other hand, FFN's core membership, as well as members of the Sanctuary Church, share certain ideas on the messianic role of Reverend Moon and his lineage, and regard as important the maintenance of many of the original ceremonies instituted by Reverend Moon.

The fact that crucial beliefs about Reverend Sun Myung Moon are partly but not wholly shared by all three branches (FFWPU, FFN and Sanctuary Church) might in principle allow for a reconciliation between them. Hyun Jin is more estranged than his brother. Hyung Jin, who has publicly declared a schism, attack against Mrs. Moon. Hyun Jin has repeatedly written to his mother (Moon 2008, 2009, 2011, 2013) and had meetings with her, but reconciliation has not occurred. Hyung Jin has now theological ideas about Mrs. Moon as the "only begotten Daughter of God" and Mrs. Moon's support of the lawsuits being conducted against her own son Hyun Jin are making reconciliation extremely difficult.

For assessing the future, yet another True Child should be considered. Sun Jin (Salina) Moon, born in 1976, the fourth daughter of Reverend and Mrs. Moon. [Image at right] He was inaugurated by Mrs. Moon in 2015 as international president of FFWPU. Sun Jin Moon has been married since 2000 to Justin Glenn Yates, and they will rotate in FFWPU's leaders outside the True Family and to her disasters brothers remains to be seen.

RITUAL/PRACTICES

Both FFWPU and FFN maintain the traditional rituals and sacraments advocated by Reverend Moon. FFN maintains a "traditionalist" orientation and rejects all changes introduced by Mrs. Moon after her husband's death as spurious. These changes emphasize Mrs. Moon's own messianic role as the "only begotten Daughter of God."

The Sanctuary Church also maintains the core traditional rituals and sacrament of the early Unification Movement, including the Blessing and the Holy Wine. The Unification movement has its roots in the Protestant Evangelical and Pentecostal tradition, with an initial service followed by songs often derived from the musical patrimony of American Evangelicalism, although some come from the early days of Reverend Moon. The latter, and his divine role, are, however, celebrated again in the final prayer.

ORGANIZATIONS/LEADERSHIP

As happened in larger religious groups (the Sunni-Shia division immediately comes to mind), the conflict between the various branches is also between lineage and hierarchy. FFN maintains that authority in the Unification movement is transmitted through male lineage, i.e. from Reverend Moon to his elder son. It also stresses the pivotal role of the "central lineage" that springs from the "True Parents" of Reverend and Mrs. Moon. This central family is considered to have succeeded in establishing God's family, where the family of Reverend Moon is the "True Family" and the "central lineage" is the core of the movement. FFWPU, by providential figure but, authority is passed onto another, in the Unification movement's hierarchical system and acceptance, and upon the fulfillment of human responsibility. FFWPU, on the other hand, introduced in 2014, after the founder's death, a *Cheon Il Guk Constitution* existing all power in a Church Supreme Council. FFN accuses FFWPU of relegating the role of lineage to insignificance and of trampling the principles of human responsibility and of the Unification movement's democratic structures. The latter is one now positioned by the Constitution to hold ultimate authority, superior to the authority of the True Children, in case of seventy three-year old male Ju Han's incapacity or death.

Meanwhile, based on teachings of Reverend Moon in some scripture study sessions during his later years, the Sanctuary Church emphasized the authority of the lineage, given through appointment by his parents. The Sanctuary Church insists that the elder son Hyun Jin was rejected by his parents and that the younger son Hyung Jin was appointed by them. The Sanctuary Church emphasizes the lineage principle and considers the issue of succession as evidence that he was strongly manipulated by his family members and church leaders in his last years to reject elder son and favour the younger.

In Mo, Hyo Nam Kim's branch, [Image at right] the authority is vested in the medium herself, who is believed to channel Reverend Moon and Jesus' transmit his messages from the spirit world.

It is difficult to evaluate the membership of the different branches. FFWPU claims some 50,000 members worldwide. The Sanctuary Church members in 2012 were 10,000, which however includes those following its activities through its Web sites. A number certainly much higher than its core members. FFN has some 2,000 core members throughout the world. Ms. Hyo Nam Kim's followers may be estimated in the hundreds. Several other minor schisms also exist.

ISSUES/CHALLENGES

It is difficult to predict how the situation of the Unification Movement would evolve, particularly after the death of Mrs. Moon. In addition to the schismatic groups considered here, there are also a number of more schisms that do not recognize any of the three main branches as legitimate.

Anti-cultist cowbrew to reject the Unification Movement in general as a "cult," while in South Korea both the FFWPU and the FFN have gained a certain legitimacy through their cultural, educational, and social activities. Hyung Jin Moon and the Sanctuary Church have generated new controversies with their decision to position themselves as part of the American religious right. Their *Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk* is a document that, while it has no legal value, is nonetheless a challenge to the U.S. Constitution. On the neuronic state, the movement is a sort of revised American Constitution, emphasizing the priority of the individual over the state and of the states over the federal government. In his sermons, Hyung Jin advocates the right of pastors and churches to discuss political issues openly, criticizes what he sees as the unrestricted incarnation of the American left and of most mainline churches, and hails Donald Trump and European right-wing politicians such as Marine Le Pen as instruments of God for achieving an international "liberation" that the Sanctuary Church increasingly regards as a political manifestation of Satan.

IMAGES

Image #1: Engagement of Hyun Jin (Preston) Moon and Jun Sook Kwak, Christmas 1986.
Image #2: Hyun Jin Moon and Mrs. Hak Ja Han Moon.
Image #3: Hyung Jin (Dave) Moon and his wife.
Image #4: Hyo Jin Moon.
Image #5: Sun Jin (Salina) Moon.

REFERENCES

Chryssides, George. 1991. *The Advent of Sun Myung Moon*. Basingstoke and London: Macmillan.

Hong, Nansook. 1998. *In the Shadow of the Moons: My Life in Reverend Sun Myung Moon's Family*. Boston and New York: Little, Brown, and Company.

Mickler, Michael L. 2013. "The Post-Sun Myung Moon Unification Church." Pp. 47-63 in *Revisionism and Diversification in New Religious Movements*, edited by Eileen Barker. Farnham, U.K. and Burlington, VT: Ashgate.

Moon, Hyun Jin. 2013. *Letter from Hyun Jin Moon to the Unification Community Worldwide, on the Meaning of Foundation Day: February 12, 2013*. Seoul: Hyun Jin Moon Speech Publishing Committee.

Moon, Hyun Jin. 2011. *Hyun Jin Moon's Letter to the Unification Community Worldwide, November 26, 2011*.

Moon, Hyun Jin. 2009. *Letter from Dr. Hyun Jin H. Moon to Universal Peace Federation (UPF) Leadership, November 4, 2009*. Seoul: Hyun Jin Moon Speech Publishing Committee.

Moon, Hyun Jin. 2008. *Special Letter from Hyun Jin Moon to True Parents, March 23, 2008*. Seoul: Hyun Jin Moon Speech Publishing Committee.

World Peace and Unification Sanctuary Church. 2017. "Are Jesus Christ and True Father the Same Spirit?" Accessed from https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=FwKbsaCbgZc on 27 February 2017.

World Peace and Unification Sanctuary Church. 2015. *The Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk*. Newfoundland, IN: World Peace and Unification Sanctuary Church.

Post Date:
14 Jun 2017

Search ...

Email*

Subscribe

Featured Content

RECENT PROFILES

Santa Muerte

Creatio Community

Healthy, Happy, Holy (3HO)

Osm the Omnipotent

Catholic Charismatic Renewal

RECENT FORUM INTERVIEWS

"Paganism, Celtic Culture, and Well Cellophone" [Interview with Amy Hale]

"From Thelma to Santa Muerte." [Interview with Steven Heidenkamp-Wiley]

"Heathenry in the United States." [Interview with Jennifer Snook]

"Conspiracy Theories, Gnosticism, and the Critical Study of Religion." [Interview with David Robertson]

RECENT VIDEO

"The Waco Branch Davidian Tragedy: What Have We Learned or Not Learned?" J. Phillip Arnold [Interview with Amy Hale] Individual Sections of the Film

Translate

English

© 2015 - Rights in profiles belong to authors.

https://wrldrels.org/2017/04/23/unification-movement-schisms-2/

1920

ALSO BY JON QUINN

Divine Principle In Plain Language:
The Basic Theology of Sun Myung Moon

Practical Plan for World Peace:
Unificationism—The Teachings of Sun Myung Moon

12 Before 40:
The Case for Large Families in the Unification Movement

Patriarchy

Dress Code for Witnessing

What About Women?

1920
The Birth of a Messiah

by Jon Quinn

1920: The Birth of a Messiah

Creative Commons Copyright
August 2008 by Jon Quinn and
sons

http://creativecommons.org

PRINTING HISTORY
First Printing, September 2009

ISBN-13:

Published by: CreateSpace Publishing
Cover Photo: photos.com

www.DivinePrinciple.com
See website for e-mail address

Printed in the United States of America

My books may be available at special quantity discounts for bulk purchases. If interested, email me. See website for e-mail address

You can read the entire text of this book at my Web site:

www.DivinePrinciple.com

I give permission for anyone to print this book and distribute it for free. This goes for every book and audio-visual I author. I do not permit or authorize anyone to sell my books, ebooks or audio-visuals. Only my family has the right to sell my books and videos.

I encourage anyone to print and reproduce anything I author in its entirety (no deleting or editing or rewriting) and distribute worldwide in any number but without charge. I especially hope my works will be translated into every language and distributed widely all over the world. Translated works, whether translated by you or others, cannot be sold but can be given away without revision and without commercial gain.

Disclaimer

The author has done his very best to give you practical and accurate information in this book. I cannot guarantee that these ideas will be appropriate to your particular situation. If you are having problems, consult the appropriate professional. The author and publisher shall have neither liability nor responsibility to any person with respect to any loss or damage caused, or alleged to be caused, directly or indirectly by the information contained in this book or any other of my books. We assume no responsibility for errors, inaccuracies, omissions or any other inconsistencies herein. I am not a spokesman for any organization founded by Sun Myung Moon

CONTENTS

Chapter 1 — Einstein 1

Chapter 2 — Hitler 8

Chapter 3 — Ruth Graham 14

Chapter 4 — Archangel, Russia 29

Chapter 5 — Modesty 40

Chapter 6 —Television
p.42

Chapter 7 — Women’s Suffrage
p. 43

Chapter 8 — The Second Coming
p.54

CHAPTER ONE

Einstein

One biography says Einstein did not speak till three years old. In *Einstein: The Life And Times* the author says, "Nothing in Einstein's early history suggests dormant genius. Quite the contrary. The one feature of his childhood about which there appears no doubt is the lateness with which he learned to speak. Even at the age of nine he was not fluent, while reminiscences of his youth stress hesitancies and the fact that he would reply to questions only after consideration and reflection. His parents feared that he might be subnormal."

He was not a good student. He "was withdrawn from the world even as a boy — a pupil for whom teachers held out only poor prospects."

When his father "asked his son's headmaster what profession his son should adopt, the answer was simply: 'It doesn't matter; he'll never make a success of anything.'"

"As remembered by Einstein in later years, this backwardness had its compensations, since it indirectly helped guide him towards the field he was to make his own. 'I sometimes ask myself,' he once said, 'how did it come that I was the one to develop the theory of relativity. The reason, I think, is that a normal adult never stops to think about problems of space and time. But my intellectual development was retarded, as a result of which I began to wonder about space and time only when I had already grown up."

"By the time he was twelve Einstein had attained, in his own words, 'a deep religiosity.'"

He had a "desperate need to find order in a chaotic world."

He did not like school. Had dropped out as a teenager. "At the age of sixteen Einstein had discovered a paradox by considering what

would happen if one could follow a beam of light at the speed of light — the result being 'a spatially oscillatory electromagnetic field at rest.'"

For nine years he quietly worked on this insight and others and in 1904 at the age of 25 he had his ideas on paper. In 1905 he published them. One of the papers was the theory of relativity that revolutionized the view of the universe. One of the other papers was used for his Nobel Prize years later.

He did not have a doctorate or even an advanced degree. He was not at a university working with others. He was alone.

He worked two months as a mathematics teacher and then was an examiner at the patent office in Bern, Switzerland. In 1905, he published several papers that fundamentally changed man's view of the universe. One was a paper on photoelectric law. One was on the special theory of relativity. It was the culmination of his thoughts he had written in an essay at age 16. Another paper gave a mathematical footnote to the special theory of relativity establishing the equivalence of mass and energy. The energy E of and quantity of matter, with mass m, is equal to the product of the mass and the square of the velocity of light, c." This relationship of energy to matter is expressed in the equation E = mc2."

It would be years later in 1919 that this theory would bring him worldwide acclaim.

From the 1920s to the end of his life in 1955, he searched for what he called a unified field theory. He said the universe is exactly engineered: "God is subtle but he is not malicious."

In *Albert Einstein* by Leopold Infeld we read: "As a child and as a youth he wished to be left alone. The ideal life was, for him, that of least interference from the outside world. He was comparatively happy in Switzerland because there men are left to themselves and privacy is respected. The results of the thoughts he started when he was sixteen were published in 1905. This is the year in which his four celebrated papers appeared. His fame among physicists began some four years later. Einstein told me, 'Before I was thirty, I

never met a real physicist.' In Einstein's case it was luck that he did not."

He said his ideas "came from God." He worked eight hours a day at the patent office. He tried to gain a position of teacher at the local university in Bern, Switzerland. He sent a paper on Relativity in 1907. It was rejected because they said it was incomprehensible.

Bitter, he waited a year, and tried again. In 1908, Bern University let him teach but with no salary and so he had to continue to work at the Patent office. In 1909, at the age of 30 he was given a job teaching and began his teaching career without having any advanced degree.

In *Einstein In America* Jamie Sayer writes, "The job at the Patent Office had been a great blessing because it had freed him from the academic pressures to produce and publish results that so often compel young scientists to 'write a lot of superficial stuff and become a busybody in order to get ahead.' Instead he was able to work at his own pace, motivated only by the 'pure joy of learning.'"

Clark writes in *Einstein: The Life and Times*: "From 1902 until 1905 Einstein worked on his own, an outsider of outsiders, scientifically provincial and having few links with the main body of contemporary physics. This isolation accounts for his broad view of specific scientific problems — he ignored the detailed arguments of others because he was unaware of them. It also shows a courage beyond the call of scientific duty, submission to the inner compulsion which was to drive him on throughout life and for which he was willing to sacrifice everything."

"Any one of the four main papers which he published in 1905 would have assured him a place in the textbooks. All were comparatively short, and all contained the foundations for new theories."

"As Ronald Clark wrote in his biography, *Einstein: The Life and Times*, 'The Einstein of the early 1900's was not only a scientist of minor academic qualifications who had launched an obscure theory on the world. He was also the man who failed to fit in or to

conform, the disrespector of professors ... who although approaching the age of thirty still seemed to prefer the company of students.'"

"...the virtues of self-discipline, of concentration, of dedication to an ideal, of an attitude which can be described as firm or as relentless according to taste. Years later, when colleagues were discussing the single-minded determination with which he had followed his star without regard for others, one listener noted: 'You must not forget. He was a German.'"

"He had no interest in learning a new language, nor in food nor in new clothes. 'I'm not much with people,' he continued, 'and I'm not a family man. I want my peace. I want to know how God created this world. I am not interested in this or that phenomenon, in the spectrum of this or that element. I want to know His thoughts, the rest are details.'"

"This aim was matched by a belief: 'God is subtle, but he is not malicious.' With these words he was to crystallize his view that complex though the laws of nature might be, difficult though they were to understand, they were yet understandable by human reason. If a man worried away at the law behind the law — if, in Retherford's words, he knew what questions to ask nature — then the answers could be discovered. God might pose difficult problems but He never broke the rules by posing unanswerable ones. What is more, He never left the answers to blind chance — "God does not play dice with the world.'"

Xxxxxxxxxxxx fix below

If there are 5 sites looking at the stars in 1919 — Africa, Brazil, etc. Then this could symbolize the #5 meaning Earth and the fact they were all over the world signifies that this was a worldwide event. Also, I think the planet Mercury was a puzzle to Newtonian physics and Einstein's theory explained it. Mercury is the God of messenger? Message to the world! The *Divine Principle*. Truth.

Science magazine in March 26, 1920 wrote about the astronomers who studied the eclipse. They give the names of the astronomers who went to the "five principal stations." They write that Mr. D.

M. Wise was in charge of the site at Sobral, Brazil. The Bible tells of three "wise" men who looked at the stars to find the first messiah. Eddington led the British Astronomical Party at the site in Africa.

They write that Dr. Abbot, of the Smithsonian Institution, was the leader of the group in La Paz, Bolivia. He said it was a magnificent site and an amazing experience for him: "Taking into account the great length and beauty of the coronal streamers, the splendid crimson prominence throwing its glory over all, and the fact that the eclipse was observed so near sunrise from so great an elevation as 14,000 feet, with a snow-covered range of mountains upwards of 20,000 feet high as a background for the phenomenon, it seemed to the observers to be the grandest eclipse phenomenon which they had ever seen."

The magazine says, "The British astronomers were thus exceedingly fortunate in being able to make their observations during a solar eclipse when there was an exceptionally rich field of bright stars, the Hyades, close to the sun."

They praised the British team because they had to work while WWI was going on, "the preparations and securing of the requisite instrumental equipments were undertaken during the stress of the great war, everyone will surely agree that the Astronomer Royal of England and British observers are heartily to be congratulated upon the splendid results of their labors."

Astronomical Puzzle about Mercury Solved

They write that Einstein's theory explained one of the great questions astronomers had about the planet Mercury: "As a further proof of the Einstein theory of gravitation has been cited the very satisfactory way in which the theory accounts for the outstanding motion of the perihelion of mercury, characterized by the late Professor Simon Newcomb as one of the greatest of astronomical puzzles."

The eclipse of 1919 lasted almost seven minutes. It was a total eclipse, not anncilar. To confirm Einstein, it was necessary to

photograph the stars near the sun and they would only be visible in a total eclipse.

Something about seven stars — two came as in which 7 plates showed 7 stars and 16 plates showed 12 stars.

The eclipse was May 29, 1919. It took only 9 months for Einstein to go from being known by the wise men who felt he was right by the data they got at their observation posts until he was known by every person around the world — the man in the street was excited about the "new messiah" — "the new world." Nine months from May 29, 1919 is February 29, 1920. The Messiah was born on February 24, 1920. People are not born always and exactly nine months after conception. Isn't it amazing that within five days of being exactly 9 months Sun Myung Moon was conceived close to if not on May 29, 1919 and was born nine months later. At the time when he was conceived, some of the wisest men in the world were looking at the stars to confirm Einstein's theory that would revolutionize this world by giving it the technology of television and nuclear power that would enable mankind to hear the truth and see the Messiah on television.

In February, 1920, right at the time when Father was born the entire world became excited about what these wise men had seen in the stars. This was preparation for Sun Myung Moon. The parallels between what the astronomers went through and what God was going through is fascinating. The astronomers conceived their scientific data on May 26, 1919 and then had to wait about nine months to find out what it meant. It was nine months of anticipation. Can you imagine how God and Sun Myung Moon's parents were feeling about the nine months they were going through? God was on pins and needles. Eddington, Einstein and all the other scientists were really in anticipation of the greatest event in history—the birth of a Messiah. For the scientists, this was the greatest event in science. For God, it was the birth of his third and final Adam who would save the world from Satan. God was behind and inspiring scientists like Einstein and Eddington to make their discoveries so that there could be a technology that the messiah would use to teach mankind the truth. All mankind could even see him on television. The *Bible* says that there will be lightning from east to west. Lightning means television and now the Internet. There has been so much technological advancement since 1920

because the messiah is on the earth. Sadly the Messiah's followers have never put videos of him on television and made videos that you can check out at the library.

Only by the *Divine Principle* do we know why such a thing happened. Physical world came first then man. Extend physical first then spirit. Physical truth then spiritual truth. TV's first then truth on them. Satan invades TV first with his beautiful ambassadors for immoral sitcoms and shows that promote premarital sex and homosexuality.

Science magazine, March 12, 1920 had an article titled "Einstein's Law of Gravitation" by Professor J. S. Ames. He was a professor at Johns Hopkins University and wrote that he did not pay serious attention to Einstein but now feels "all the" enthusiasm of the discovery of a new land": "While Einstein's work may be known to many of you either in its original form or in one of the two papers mentioned, I fear that the attention of most of us was first directed seriously to the matter by the articles in the newspapers to which I have referred. I confess that I was one of those who had postponed any serious study of the subject, until its immense importance was borne in upon me by the results of the recent eclipse expedition. I have all the enthusiasm of the discoverer of a new land, and feel compelled to describe to you what I have learned."

Many scientists were beside themselves with excitement when the results were announced at the beginning of 1920. By February, 1920, Einstein was a household name worldwide. In the January 1920 issue of the magazine *Current Opinion*, there was an article titled, "The Most Sensational Event In Physics Since Newton."

They begin by saying, "The eclipse expeditions that brought back from Brazil last year photographs verifying the so-called Einstein effect have ... made an end of the universe that we took for granted since Newton's day."

Messenger of the Gods

They write about the planet Mercury: "Astronomers were attracted by the Einstein theory, since it explained an anomaly which had

puzzled them for many years. The tiny planet Mercury, owing to its nearness to the sun, has the greatest speed of any planet (whence the ancients personified it as 'The messenger of the gods')."

They go on to write that "There was a rich field of bright stars around the sun, no fewer than twelve coming within the range of the photographic plates employed; and the duration of totality was long, nearly seven minutes."

CHAPTER TWO

HITLER

Adolf Hitler's book, *Mein Kampf*, is German for *My Battle*. In his book he says that he started his movement on February 24, 1920. On this day Father Moon was born. I don't see that it is a coincidence that the Messiah was born on the same day the 30 year old anti-Christ began his evil movement. Hitler is the satanic image of Jesus. Hitler killed 6,000,000 Jews in his hatred of religious people.

Hitler wrote, "February 24, 1920, was the date fixed upon for the first great mass meeting of the movement which was still unknown. I made the arrangements in person."

"The color we chose was red, providing the best draw and being the one most likely to excite and irritate our opponents, and therefore to impress us most firmly on their minds and memories."

"The meeting started at seven-thirty. At seven-fifteen I walked through the hall at Hofbrauhaus in the Platzl in Munich, and my heart nearly burst with joy. That great hall — for it seemed great to me then — was close-packed and overflowing with an audience of nearly two thousand."

"When the first speaker had finished, it was my turn to speak. In a few minutes interruptions hailed on me, and there were violent scenes in the body of the hall; a handful of faithful war-comrades and a few other adherents engaged the disturbers and managed to restore quiet after a bit. I was able to proceed. Half an hour later the applause began to drown the interruptions and hooting, and finally, when I had explained the twenty-five points, I had before me a hall full of people, united in a new conviction, a new faith, a new will. A fire had been kindled from the glow of which the sword was to emerge destined to restore freedom to the Germanic Siegfried and life to the German nation."

In the book, *Hitler and Stalin*, Alan Bullock writes, "Stalin and Hitler were materialists not only in their dismissal of religion but also in their insensitivity to humanity as well. The only human beings who existed for them were themselves. The rest of the human race was seen either as instruments with which to accomplish their purposes or as obstacles to be eliminated. They regarded life solely in terms of politics and power: Everything else — human relationships and emotions, knowledge, beliefs, the arts, history, science — was of value only insofar as it could be exploited for political purposes."

"Both men were remarkable only for the roles they assumed. Outside of those, their private lives were insignificant and impoverished. And each of the roles was consecrated to a vision of a world that, however great the differences between them, was equally inhuman — a world in which whole populations could be uprooted and moved about; whole classes could be eliminated, races enslaved or exterminated; millions of lives sacrificed in war and even in time of peace; individual men and women dwarfed by the scale of the monolithic structures — state, Volk, party, army, giant industrial complexes, collective farms, labor and concentration camps — into which they were organized."

The *Divine Principle* says that totalitarianism is wrong. Hitler writes how people must be absolutely strong. He has phrases like, "the individual who backs it with his life and all he has." He says that he hates, "incompetents and weaklings."

A distinguished group of Americans printed *Mein Kampf* in 1940 and put commentary below each page so as to warn America and the world against this evil man. For example, they write on one page, "In Nazi usage the word Fuhrer (leader) has a very special connotation, difficult for an outsider to understand. The Fuhrer is a man who gives expression to the divinity that is enshrined in his people." A follower of Hitler "once described the Fuhrer as follows: 'He must have a somnambulistic feeling of certainty. ... In the pursuit of his goal, he must not shrink from bloodshed or war even.' For many, perhaps for himself, Hitler is the German Messiah, whose kingdom is to last thousands of years, even as has that of Christ. Hitler, too, began with a small number of disciples — the first group was of the mystic number seven — one or the other of whom proved unfaithful."

In another page of commentary they wrote, “Hitler is the Messiah, whose faith is that which alone can save the world, in so far as the German people are concerned. Wilhelm Kube and Robert Ley, both prominent officials, have likened him to Christ.”

Hitler clearly wrote of blood and terror. He proved that it is possible for evil to publicly proclaim its diabolical goal and have masses of people the world over not only not believe it but even try to look for the good.

The book is a Satanic Bible. It is based on racial hatred and love of violence. Hitler wrote that God had given him the commission to eradicate the Jews and raise up a new race of men, “Hence today I believe that I am acting in accordance with the will of the Almighty Creator by defending against the Jew; I am fighting for the Lord.” Of course, the Lord is Satan who rules this earth.

Hitler had total confidence in himself. He is a Satanic Christ.

Hitler had an empty life. His girlfriend, Eva Brown, attempted suicide twice because she felt hurt and neglected. Her predecessor, Geli Raubol, actually did commit suicide probably for the same reasons.

He had no friends. He had little education. He said he received a supernatural vision which ordered him to save Germany. He was at that time, 30 years old—the same age that Jesus began his mission. For this obscure corporeal had made a choice which would affect the lives of countless millions. He was extremely poor. No job. No money. No friends.

In 1920, he was 30 years old. He gave his first public speech. It was an emotional, hate filled, explosion. His words had magic power to create hate. He promised, like Lucifer promises, greatness. Germany would return to greatness. He said, “Do you not understand now the profound meaning of our National Socialist movement? Whoever sees in National Socialism nothing but a political movement doesn’t know much about it. ... It is even more than a religion: it is the will to create mankind anew.”

In *Mein Kampf* he wrote, “We are confronted by the endless army, not so much of the deliberately bad as of the mentally lazy and indifferent, including those with a stake in the preservation of the

present condition. But precisely in this apparent hopelessness of our gigantic struggle lies the greatness of our task and also the possibility of our success. The battle-cry which either scares away the small spirits at the very start, or soon makes them despair, will be the signal for the assemblage of real fighting natures. And this we must see clearly: If in a people a certain amount of the highest energy and active force seems concentrated upon one goal and hence is definitively removed from the inertia of the broad masses, this small percentage has risen to be master over the entire number. World history is made by minorities when this minority of number embodies the majority of will and determination."

"What, therefore, may appear as a difficulty today is in reality the premise for our victory. Precisely in the greatness and the difficulties of our task lies the probability that only the best fighters will step forward to struggle for it. And in this selection lies the guaranty of success."

He often used religious language and symbols. The "inseparable Trinity" of State, Movement, and Volk; the "Thousand Year Reich". The symbol of his movement was a kind of twisted cross.

In *Mein Kampf* we read:

> In is the characteristic of our present materialized epoch that our scientific education is turning more and more toward practical subject — in other words, mathematics, physics, chemistry, etc. Necessary as this is for a period in which technology and chemistry rule — embodying at least those of its characteristics which are most visible in daily life — it is equally dangerous when the general education of a nation is more and more exclusively directed toward them. This education on the contrary must always be ideal. It must be more in keeping with the humanistic subjects and offer only the foundations for a subsequent additional education in a special field. Otherwise we renounce the forces which are still more important for the preservation of the nation than all technical or other ability. Especially in historical instruction we must not be deterred from the study of antiquity. Roman

> history correctly conceived in extremely broad outlines is and remains the best mentor, not only for today, but probably for all time. The Hellenic ideal of culture should also remain preserved for us in its exemplary beauty. We must not allow the greater racial community to be torn asunder by the differences of the individual peoples. The struggle that rages today is for very great aims. A culture combining millenniums and embracing Hellenism and Germanism is fighting for its existence."
>
> A sharp difference should exist between general education and specialized knowledge. As particularly today the latter threatens more and more to sink into the service of pure Mammon, general education, at least in its more ideal attitude, must be retained as a counterweight. Here, too, we must incessantly inculcate the principle that industry, technology, and commerce can thrive only as long as an idealistic national community offers the necessary preconditions. And these do not lie in material egoism, but in a spirit of sacrifice and joyful renunciation.

John Toland in his book, *Adolf Hitler*, writes, "He had often told his friends he could not undertake 'the responsibility of marriage.' Perhaps he had also feared that it might diminish his uniqueness as Fuhrer; to most Germans he was almost a Christlike figure, But now all that was over and the bourgeois side of his nature impelled him to reward his faithful mistress with the sanctity of matrimony."

"There were eight guests: Bormann, the Goebbelses, Gerda Christian, Chief Adjutant Burgdorf, Krebs, Arthur Axmann, head of the Hitler Youth, and Fraulein Manzialy, the cook. A minor official was found in a nearby Volkssturm unit and brought into the bunker to officiate — appropriately, his name was Wagner. Eva wore a long gown of black silk Ludwig Stumpfegger — who proposed one phial be tested on Blondi. Hitler agreed, then, recalling that Stumpfegger himself belonged to the SS, sent for a

doctor in the hospital bunker. This man dutifully forced the liquid down the throat of the dog Hitler adored. It killed her."

"Early that evening word arrived that Mussolini and his mistress had been assassinated by Italian partisans, their bodies strung up by the feet in a Milan gas station. 'I will not fall into the hands of the enemy dead or alive!' said Hitler. 'After I die, my body shall be burned and so remain undiscovered forever!'"

Hitler was impotent. He had no family. Jesus' body was never found. Eva Brown was 17 years old when Hitler was 40.

Toland writes, "He was a master of lying, an art he cultivated with extraordinary effectiveness, so that there must have been times when he believed his own lies and was in danger of falling into his own baited traps."

CHAPTER THREE

RUTH GRAHAM

In the previous chapters we have seen that there were amazing events on and around the day of February 25, 1920. I would like to tell the importance of a person who was born in 1920. It is the story of a girl born and raised in China. Her name was Ruth Bell. I find it amazing but not a coincidence that the 15-year-old future wife of the second coming of John the Baptist, Billy Graham, lived a few miles from the spot Jesus gave his mission to a 15- year-old boy on Easter morning, 1935.

John the Baptist asked Jesus: "Are you he is to come, or shall I look for another?" John failed to see the humble Messiah and took his followers and worked separately from Jesus. He expected a glorious Messiah that would come out of the clouds and failed to see that God works in mysterious ways. It is almost impossible for fallen man to see from God's viewpoint. Sadly, Christian leaders have failed to see the new Messiah. The humble followers of Sun Myung Moon have had to do what Billy and Ruth Graham have not done — introduce the Messiah to the world.

History constantly repeats itself. What is happening today has happened before. When Father Moon came to America in the early 1970s he spoke in every state. He ended his tour in 1974 by giving a speech at Madison Square Garden on September 18, 1974 to an overflowing crowd of 30,000. His speech was called, *The New Future of Christianity*. He went into detail explaining many key passages in the New Testament. Below is a part of what he said about John the Baptist:

> "'And the disciples asked him, Then why do the scribes say that first Elijah must come?' He replied, 'Elijah does come, and he is to restore all things; but I tell you that Elijah has already come.' ...Then the disciples

understood that he was speaking to them of John the Baptist." (Matt. 17:10-13)

This was a real shock to the disciples. And then they understood, according to the Bible, that Jesus was speaking to them of John the Baptist.

Was John the Baptist Elijah? Yes, Jesus said so. But the people were never convinced. They said, "Outrageous!"

Let us imagine we can transpose these events to our time. John the Baptist of 2,000 years ago was a person of tremendous influence, enjoying great prestige all over Israel as a great man of God — just like Billy Graham of today, a great Christian leader.

Let us say some unknown young man suddenly appeared and began proclaiming himself to the world as the Son of God. As a student of the scriptures, you would ask him, "If you are the Son of God, where is the promised Elijah?" If this man said, "Do you not know that Billy Graham is Elijah?" what would be your reaction? You would undoubtedly say, "Impossible! How could Billy Graham be Elijah? He did not come out of the blue sky. We all know he came from North Carolina!"

You could not accept that, could you? Precisely this same kind of unbelief confronted our Lord Jesus Christ. People could not accept John the Baptist as Elijah, simply because he did not come from the sky. The people of 2,000 years ago were stubborn in their belief that the prophecy of Elijah's return must be fulfilled literally, that he must come from the sky. They were the victims of

the letter of the Old Testament.

John the Baptist, man of failure

Yet Jesus Christ continued to preach with power and authority in spite of scornful public opinion. The people could not dismiss such a man lightly. They wanted to be sure of themselves. So they decided to go to ask John the Baptist himself and settle their questions once and for all. They asked John, "Who are you?" He confessed, he did not deny, but confessed, "I am not the Christ' And they asked him, 'What then, are you Elijah?' He said, 'I am not.' 'Are you the prophet?' And he answered, 'No.'" (John 1:19-21)

John the Baptist denied everything. He said, "I am not Elijah." He even denied the title of prophet. Everyone knew and recognized him as a prophet of God, but he said, "I'm no prophet." Why? He evaluated the situation and knew that Jesus Christ was treated by his own society as an outcast. Jesus seemed to be a loser, and John decided not to side with Jesus. He thought it would be much better to deny everything.

By doing so, John the Baptist pushed Jesus into a corner, making him seem a great impostor without defense. After John's denial, Jesus had no further recourse on this point.

Then why was Jesus crucified? First, he became the victim of literal interpretation of the Old Testament. Second, Jesus was rejected and finally crucified because of the failure of the mission of John the Baptist. We can read in Matthew that John the Baptist, waiting in prison to be beheaded, sent two of his own disciples to Jesus to ask the following

> question: 'Are you he who is to come, or shall we look for another?' (Matt. 11:3)

Jesus did not get John the Baptist as his mediator, and Sun Myung Moon did not get Billy and Ruth Graham to be his mediator. The *Bible* says the first shall be last, and the last shall be first. Jesus' followers were the "last" in society. Father Moon's followers are also the "last."

Ruth Graham

God was preparing Ruth Bell to be the wife of Billy Graham, the most famous Christian evangelist of the 20th century. We learn in the *Divine Principle* that contrary to the traditional teachings of Christianity, John the Baptist failed in his mission to be the liaison between the people and Jesus. He separated from Jesus and went his own way. He did not know his mission and became one of the reasons Jesus was not accepted by the people of Israel. God had raised the Israelites to be the chosen people. God had put them through 2000 years of spiritual boot camp and when it came time to accept the humble man who said he was the Messiah, they rejected him. John the Baptist was respected. If he had traveled the world with Jesus and introduced him, people would have accepted Jesus as their savior.

John the Baptist

John the Baptist was the second coming of Elijah. The people, including John the Baptist, thought Elijah would come in a miraculous way, such as out of the clouds. But God never works that way. His messengers of truth are always the last person you would choose. No one was smart enough to see that God works in mysterious ways. And you can't get more mysterious than having a carpenter in a small town from a remote, dirt poor country be the glorious Messiah.

Billy Graham = 2nd Coming of Christ

In 1920 the second coming of Christ was born in what is today North Korea. At that time it was a remote dirt poor country. God

had been working with the Korean people for thousands of years to prepare them to accept him. And he was working in other countries also. The Christians were his new chosen people and America was in a position like Rome was to Israel. Jesus was supposed to go to Rome and guide the emperor to begin the building of the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth. First, Jesus needed to have the leaders of his own small nation follow him so that he would look impressive to the Emperor. God was working in America to raise up Billy Graham as the 2nd coming of John the Baptist. He was an obscure young man who would become the most seen Christian in the history of the world. Billy Graham does not know why he became so famous. It is because God was working to make him famous, not to witness for the first messiah, but for the 2nd and last messiah.

WWII = Armageddon

God's plan was for Sun Myung Moon to have been accepted by certain key people in Korea after he began his public ministry on the day World War II ended in 1945. Within seven years he was to have had Korea united with him and been accepted by Billy Graham and world leaders as the Lord of the Second Advent. Hitler was the satanic imitation of Christ. WWII was Armageddon. With the Free World united around the young Messiah, they would have created such excitement of a Messianic Age that the Soviet Union would have rebelled against Stalin, and Mao Tse-Tung would never had risen to power in China. This means there would have been no Kim Il Sung in North Korea, no Fidel Castro in Cuba, and no Ho Chi Min in North Vietnam. There would have been no Cold War because there would have been no Communism. By the year 2000 the earth would have been on its way to being restored to a veritable Garden of Eden because mankind would be one family working in unison to build the ideal world.

The world would have honored Father Moon and his first wife as the first True Parents of mankind. Out of respect billions of people would bow to their picture that was proudly hung on the wall of every home. There would have been no Korean War and no Vietnam War. All the tragedies of addictions and family breakdown would not have happened.

It is the norm in human history for God's plans to be thwarted by Satan. As usual, those who God had chosen to be his leaders do not hear God's message and do the very opposite of what God wants. Moon was betrayed by practically everybody — including his wife.

The result of a few people failing to unite with God's will is always terrible. Abraham made a simple mistake and the Israelites had to suffer for 400 years as slaves in Egypt. Then they didn't unite with Moses and so the first generation died in the wilderness, never seeing Canaan. Then they murdered Jesus and lost their nation for 2000 years.

Korean War

God had raised Korea to be his new chosen nation. Like Israel, Korea tortured and jailed the young Messiah. The nation of Korea paid a terrible price because a handful of people rejected the Messiah. Like Israel, Korea brought punishment upon themselves. Actions have consequences. Without the guidance of the Messiah, world leaders made tragic mistakes that ended with a river of blood in the Korean War. World events relate to the Messiah. The Korean War happened because of the mistreatment of Sun Myung Moon. Americans were sent there by God to rescue him. Again, I discuss this in more detail in my book *The Divine Principle in Plain Language* that you can read buy or read for free at my website: www.DivinePrinciple.com.

God had chosen Billy Graham to be the 2nd coming of John the Baptist. Sadly he never heard of Sun Myung Moon after WWII and became the most famous Christian leader in the world. And like John the Baptist, he failed to see the humble messiah when he did hear about him many years later.

Billy Graham was supposed to restore the failure of John the Baptist. He was a Baptist and didn't know that John was working with him from the spirit world. Like most people he can't see spirit world and didn't know his mission. He never heard lectures or read the book on the *Divine Principle* that would have answered the questions he still asks. He has said his whole life that he wants to ask God when he dies and go to heaven, what happened at the

Fall of Man. The Messiah knows. You can read the answer to that question in chapter two of the *Principle*.

God wanted Billy Graham to introduce the Messiah to the peoples of the world. He has given many crusades in many places. America is like Rome that had places people could come by the thousands. The Coliseum in Rome is like the football stadiums of America. He was supposed to travel with Sun Myung Moon and introduce him like all speakers are introduced. John the Baptist was a few years older than Jesus. Billy Graham is a few years older than Father Moon.

America was the most powerful nation on earth in 1945. Everyone else was weak, including the diabolical Soviet Union led by the Anti-Christ Stalin. Billy Graham would have been a powerful influence on White America and White Europe. They would have accepted an oriental man from a small poor country. America was very prejudiced after WWII because the Japanese had bombed Pearl Harbor and fought a terrible war for four years. Korea had also been brutalized by Japan for over 40 years. They had suffered 10 times as long as America and even worse had been ruled by them.

By growing up in China, she learned to love oriental people. She was not corrupted by the West. By going to school in Korea she was groomed to be a bridge between the young, humble Korean messiah and the rich, powerful white nations. She would have been invaluable as a helpmate to her husband who would have to grapple with the young Messiah's view of the Bible that and the skin color of someone so different than the John the Baptist. Her acceptance of the young Christ from the East would have been as important as her husband's. Christians have been waiting for 2000 years for the return of Jesus. They needed Ruth Graham to help them make the jump to accepting what looked like a blasphemer of God.

Boot Camp

In her book, *It's My Turn*, she begins with a chapter titled "Boot Camp." She writes about how difficult it was for her to spend years in Korea as a teenager away from her beloved family. Boot

camp is a perfect phrase to explain how God works. She was being trained in Korea to be a soldier's wife who would help her husband fight the awesome strength of Satan, the master of lies. It was tough on her the three years she spent in Korea. It was tough on Sun Myung Moon to be tortured by the Japanese who dominated Korea. It was tough on members who follow Father Moon who pushes everyone to the maximum.

Mrs. Graham writes in her book how her parents viewed spiritual training. It is in line with the Messiah's. She writes, "One's spiritual survival and growth is not necessarily dependent upon one's roots, or the environment within which one grows. Some strong Christians have started life like the babies of the ancient Spartans, who were left exposed overnight to see if they were able to survive, and therefore fit to live. Others have been nurtured lovingly and with care. Daddy and Mother were of the strong opinion that life is a battleground and that home life and schooling should be a training ground. I was a child of such thinking."

The chosen nation is Korea. I explain this in the last chapter of my version of the *Divine Principle*. Koreans are a unique people that have the quality to produce the messiah that the Bible calls a "rock." They are a deeply religious people who have been trained by God, just like the Israelites were, to know His heart and have the heart and guts to fight the good fight. Ruth Graham was sent there by God to learn Korean and grow in spirit. Unfortunately, she didn't hear God speaking and even when Father Moon came to America many years later and spoke in every state, she did not go to see him and study his message. She failed, just like her husband.

I don't blame her. God's voice is so weak in human history that He is rarely heard. And even if He is, He is usually not followed. God keeps sending messengers who speak critically and say outlandish things and mankind keeps throwing them in jail.

You would think that after thousands of years mankind would be smarter. But even in America that has a history of freedom unlike so many countries in the world many Americans have foolishly rejected God's champions — even the Grahams. In their defense,

God's messengers are difficult to stomach. They wear rags and don't have fancy degrees.

Someday the followers of the new Christ will number into the millions in America and out of that will rise national leaders in all areas of life.

Mrs. Graham writes that in 1933 she was being sent from China where she had grown up with her parents who were Christian missionaries to the most prestigious Christian high school in the East — "what is today Pyongyang, North Korea."

"My older sister, Rosa, had been there the preceding year. Rosa, eager to try her wings, was a good adjuster and had taken it all in stride, enjoying it thoroughly."

"I was leaving all that was loved and familiar to me: the Chinese friends, the missionaries, home; Daddy, Mother, and thirteen years of treasured memories."

It took a week for her to get there. This is a picture of her at age 13 in 1933. She writes, "I remember the sense of finality as we progressed through the surprisingly wide streets, passing modern buildings interspersed with ancient Korean ones, until we entered a narrow, tree-lined lane, made our way up the hill, and were deposited in front of the girls' gray brick dormitory."

Typical of the religious life of God's pioneers, her room was austere: "once we had been assigned to our Spartan dormitory room, the homesickness settled in unmercifully. The days I could manage. It was the nights that did me in. Burying my head in my pillow, I tried not to disturb my sleeping roommates, Rosa and Helen Myers. Night after night, week after week, I cried myself to sleep, silently — miserably."

"How could I know this was my training period — my boot camp. Preparation for my future."

"Recently I was watching a television program which showed marines training at boot camp. It was tough, it was rough, it was

dangerous. And yet how much tougher, rougher and more dangerous real combat would be if not for this basic training?"

"Looking back over my life, now I can see the importance of those difficult times at Pyongyang and I am grateful."

She was being trained for a far greater mission than the one she has had. She has had a difficult life anyway. Her husband has been gone so much and she had to raise the kids. But God had trained her to be able to handle the providential mission of being one who introduces the living Christ to mankind.

Korean Christians

Father Moon asks for total blood, sweat and tears. He walks his talk. There is a reason why Ruth Graham's parents sent her and their other children to Korea to learn. They knew Korea was where the greatest faith and finest Christian teachings would be given. Korea was famous as being the center of Christianity in the East. That is where the Messiah would come from — a land of incredible faith and strength. The Messiah doesn't come from Paris, France or St. Louis, Missouri. He comes from a place that has been tested by fire. To use another metaphor would be a nation that has become as hard as a diamond that began as a dirty, simple piece of coal that was put through years of heat and pressure. The Korean Christians are the most devout in the world. Where is the largest Christian church in the World? Korea.

Ruth Graham has been able to visit both South Korea and North Korea. When she was in South Korea, she visited the university that persecuted the young messiah in the 1950s when he was just starting. A few women professors and some students had visited Moon's shack and were converted to his teachings when they heard lectures. The university fired the professors and dismissed the students.

A newspaper article said this about her trip to the communist North:

Ruth Bell Graham comes "home" to North Korea

> PYONGYANG, N. Korea (EP) — Ruth Bell Graham, wife of evangelist Billy Graham, has arrived in North Korea Sept. 22 for a six-day visit sponsored by the communist nation's tiny Christian minority. "I never thought this day would come!" Graham exclaimed as she was welcomed at Pyongyang's Airport. "I almost feel as if I were coming home."
>
> Her enthusiasm is understandable — for three years in the 1930s Graham, who was born in China, attended high school in Pyongyang. Her father, Dr. L. Nelson Bell, spent 25 years serving the people of China as a missionary surgeon, and all three of his daughters attended the Pyongyang Foreign School in what is now North Korea (Democratic People's Republic of Korea). It was known as one of the finest schools in Asia, and drew students from many countries. At the time Northern Korea had a sizable Christian minority.
>
> "Those were some of the most memorable years of my life, and many of my best friends over the years have been people who were classmates there," Graham said. "After leaving in 1937 I never thought I would be able to return. But now 60 years later God has opened the door."

Father Moon was also allowed to return to this prison state that very few have ever been able to get into. The leader Kim Il Sung invited Father and Mrs. Moon to North Korea. He befriended Father Moon and made Moon's birthplace a national park in his honor. Shown here are pictures of Father and Mrs. Moon with Kim Il Sung at his home and of them standing in front of Moon's home that he was living in.

It is amazing that Father Moon was invited because he has been the greatest anti-communist in the 20th century.

Father Moon is the friend of many world leaders. President and Mrs. Bush traveled throughout Japan on a speaking tour Mrs. Moon gave in nine cities. President Reagan has praised Father Moon for founding the influential newspaper, *The Washington*

Times. Father Moon has donated over a billion dollars to this newspaper. In 1974, President Nixon invited Father Moon to the Oval Office to thank him for his support. Shown here is a picture of Mrs. Moon with the former Prime Minister of Canada, Brian Mulroney and President Reagan's daughter, Maureen. They were attending a speech Mrs. Moon gave at a meeting of her women's organization, *Women's Federation for World Peace*. When Mikhail Gorbachev was president of the Soviet Union he invited Father Moon to come and speak to the Politburo.

Cult or Crusade?

There were many strange so-called cults in the time of Jesus. There are many strange so-called cults today. Father Moon's movement is not a cult. It is a crusade — the greatest crusade the world has ever seen. Which side are you on? Father Moon's crusade that says Elijah and Jesus are not coming out of the clouds or Father Graham's crusade that says Elijah and Jesus are coming out of the clouds? I hope you pick the logical crusade instead of the superstitious crusade.

CHAPTER FOUR

Archangel, Russia

Because America is an angelic country, the angel must fight Satan. Your country is in the position of the unfallen angel. Therefore this country must fight Satan, the fallen angel's position, Soviet Russia. The angelic country's families cannot be the ideal ones, because the ideal must first appear in the Adam country. All the families here are splitting, just like that, breaking down. And in America it is hard to find virgin girls. When they get to be 15 or 16, they have a relationship just like Adam and Eve did. That is the situation of the fall, in the Garden of Eden. For America to stand in the position of the unfallen angel, we must stop all the immoral things in the families, and among the young people. That must be done by our members, by our movement.

America is the archangel country

January 3, 1972

Washington, D. C

Xxxxxxxxx

On Satan's side, Soviet Russia is the archangel

December 22, 1971

Xxxxxxxxxxxx

The events surrounding the Russian Civil War are providential. It is no coincidence that the allied nations fought against Lenin in 1920. The American troops were stationed at Archangel, Russia. Satan, of course, was the archangel who denied God. Lenin denied God. God wanted the democratic world to crush Lenin’s

communism. Tragically, leaders such as Woodrow Wilson did not understand the evil of Lenin. Evil triumphs when good men don't fight with more conviction than the enemy.

Lenin's Red Army marched into the city of Archangel in February 3 days before Sun Myung Moon was born. Coincidence? The most evil, godless empire known to man was born 3 days before the Messiah was born. Three is the number of separation. Satan struck first with his evil ideology and its spokesman, Lenin. Three days later, God gave the world His spokesman for truth, Sun Myung Moon.

Very few people know that American soldiers fought on Soviet land against Lenin's Red Army. They were helping the White Army led by Admiral Kolchak who was fighting for democracy and against the totalitarian and evil communists.

God wanted America to help the forces of good in the Soviet Union to win over the forces of evil. World War One ended in 1918 and the world was war weary. Satan often attacks when people are tired. Just at the moment when the good side feels they can't give any more, that is just the moment when they are to give more than they ever have.

President Woodrow Wilson did not realize the threat to world peace that Lenin and his violent revolutionaries were. The American troops were sent to the Soviet Union initially to help fight the Germans who may attack Siberia. When the war ended, Wilson didn't give clear leadership and the British and American commanders who were stationed at Archangel, Russia took it upon themselves to help the democratic forces that were fighting Lenin's Red Army.

Everything was confusing. Some people were advising Wilson to fight a new battle and others against it. In the end, he didn't pay much attention to the few thousand troops in northern Russia and because his determination and commitment was less than Lenin's, Lenin won. This was a golden opportunity to crush Lenin who was weak.

We all know the result of communism in the 20th century. It killed between 100 and 200 million people – many of their own people. It has been an unbelievably horrible bloodbath because the side of good was tired and naive. Because of the poor leadership of Wilson and other world leaders (the exception was Winston Churchill), several hundred American young men died a horrible death in the rugged territory of Siberia. Most of the young soldiers had come from Wisconsin and Minnesota. There was a reason for this. God was sending men who were used to extremely cold weather. Even then, it was incredibly difficult because the winter they spent in Siberia was 45 degrees below zero.

The men were confused about why they were there. The story of what happened in Archangel, Russia is so tragic that it is difficult to express in words. God had tried to speak through some people to educate everyone from Wilson down to the average American about their responsibility to help fight the worst evil that the world had ever seen. But Wilson, other world leaders, and Americans just didn't hear. This is the usual pattern in human history. God tries his best but the people don't hear. And those that do hear, reject the truth and their responsibility. Fallen man has no idea the high standard they are supposed to live. They seldom realize how deadly Satan is and how much they have to be disciplined and ready to give their life for freedom.

I'm only going to give a small part of the story of Archangel, Russia. There are books that go into great detail of this tragedy. Sadly, fallen man is so blind that many of the books see that this episode in history was a mistake. The mistake was that we did not crush Lenin. It is understandable that we didn't do it because America and the world were exhausted from the first war that encompassed the world. But if the side of good in mankind knew their awesome responsibility they would do what had to be done.

Stillborn Crusade: The Tragic Failure of Western Intervention in the Russian Civil War 1918-1920 by Ilya Somin

Recently, there has been a very good book about what happened in this Russian Civil War. It is written by Ilya Somin. He is an immigrant from Russia to the US, born in what was then Leningrad in 1973. In 1995 he graduated from Amherst College with a degree in political science and history. The book originated as his senior

thesis. He went on to get a Ph. D. candidate in political science at Harvard. He says, "As I was writing it, I realized that I was saying something totally at odds with what previous scholars had written on the subject, so I decided to try to get it published and — to my own surprise — succeeded."

"I guess my main reason for writing *Stillborn Crusade* was dissatisfaction with the conventional wisdom on Western intervention in the Russian Civil War, which just condemns it out of hand. Being an immigrant from Russia added a personal dimension, since I was conscious of the fact that members of my own family had suffered greatly under Soviet rule in part as a result of our failure to eliminate the communist government early, when we had the chance."

Stillborn Crusade

Somin, on September 17, 1996, wrote the following summary of his book *Stillborn Crusade: The Tragic Failure of Western Intervention in the Russian Civil War 1918-1920*.

> The main thesis of *Stillborn Crusade: The Tragic Failure of Western Intervention in the Russian Civil War* is that the US and British governments needlessly squandered numerous opportunities to eliminate Soviet Communism at its inception. At several points during the Russian Civil War of 1918-20, relatively small efforts by the US and Britain would very likely have led to the overthrow of the Bolshevik regime, thereby saving both the West and Russians a great deal of suffering, including millions of deaths. Most previous scholarship on Western intervention in the Russian Civil War simply assumes that intervention was unjustifiable and ineffective and focuses on the question of why any intervention was undertaken at all. By contrast, I ask the opposite question: Given the very large stakes, why was there not a bigger and more effective intervention? In *Stillborn Crusade*, I argue that there were few external constraints on the ability of Britain and the US to intervene and that there was plenty of evidence of the malevolent nature of Soviet intentions towards both the West and their own people. Therefore, the failure to

mount an adequate intervention is largely attributable to the ideological misconceptions of American and British leaders, particularly President Woodrow Wilson and Prime Minister David Lloyd George. These leaders believed that the Bolshevik government was much less dangerous than it actually was and that, in any case, intervention in a civil war was likely to be ineffective because such conflicts are usually won by the side with the greatest popular support. Wilson and Lloyd George also felt that the Bolshevik dictatorship had a measure of legitimacy because it was founded on real "social grievances," a legitimacy they were unwilling to accord to right-wing despotisms with much stronger popular support, such as those of Germany and Austria-Hungary. I contend that these assumptions were largely false, as was clearly recognized at the time by proponents of forceful anti-Bolshevik intervention, most notably Winston Churchill, the main advocate of intervention in the British government. In the first half of the book, I review the development of British and American intervention policy in Russian from the beginning of Bolshevik rule to then end of the Russian Civil War in 1920 and describe the many missed opportunities. In Chapter 4, I compare the Bolsheviks to their opponents in the Russian Civil War, the Whites, and argue that the latter, despite many flaws, had a realistic chance of winning and were clearly preferable from both Western and Russian standpoints. I also consider the moral justification for intervention in the Russian Civil War and other similar instances, arguing that outside powers have the right to intervene in a civil conflict if one of the combatants is likely to pursue an aggressive foreign policy upon winning or if one side is clearly worse than the other in its violations of human rights; In my view, both justifications were present in the Russian case. Finally, in the Conclusion, I attempt to draw out the implications of the Russian Civil War experience for the study of international relations and for intervention policy today. Stillborn Crusade is a clear challenge to the conventional wisdom on both intervention in the Russian Civil War and intervention in general. If you want to know whether it's a good challenge or not, read the book!

The following is from the publisher: "The triumph of the Bolsheviks in the Russian Civil War was the first great crack in the system of international relations established by the victorious Allies. The presence of a powerful anti-Western Soviet regime not only undermined the liberal values binding the signatories and member states of the Versailles Treaty and the League of Nations, but also helped to stimulate the rise of aggressive fascist dictatorships in Germany and Italy. Consequently, the failure of the Allies to intervene effectively against the Bolsheviks helped pave the way for both World War II and the human catastrophe of Soviet totalitarianism. *Stillborn Crusade* is a reinterpretation of the causes and consequences of that failure. In sharp contrast with previous researchers, Ilya Somin argues that the West's failure resulted not from constraints limiting the options of policymakers, but from ideological misconceptions, particularly those flowing from the 'liberal' and 'realist' theories of international politics. Against these views, Somin sets the position of Winston Churchill, who repeatedly and unsuccessfully urged decisive action when the Soviet regime was militarily vulnerable. As a consequence of British and American policy failures, the entire course of European and world history was radically altered for the worse. Stillborn Crusade also considers why earlier scholars, most notably George F. Kennan and William Appleman Williams, have ignored the issues raised here, even though they and others have not hesitated to criticize Western leaders for similar errors in other instances, especially in the case of Nazi Germany. Somin links the errors of 1918-20 to broader issues relating to the morality, feasibility, and desirability of Western, especially American, intervention in foreign civil conflicts. As a volume with important lessons for our own time, *Stillborn Crusade* will be of interest to historians, political scientists, and foreign policy analysts."

In *Harper's Monthly Magazine* in the February, 1920 issue [the month Sun Myung Moon was born] had a very good article by William Thayer who gives good advice of the evil of Lenin and that America should stop it. He writes, "The Bolshevist leaders, from the moment they got control in Russia, have been actuated by the most frightful, selfish motives only. They are, indeed, the final embodiment of selfishness. They proclaim as an ideal that they alone and the class which they rule shall exist in the world, and that, therefore, all other classes shall be exterminated. They have not only preached this doctrine, but they have practiced it,

murdering without mercy tens of thousands of innocent persons, whose only crime it was that they were not proletarians. On the outskirts of the Russian cities and towns, when the snow melted last spring, the open spaces were loaded with long rows of corpses, men, women, and children, shot down during the autumn and left there by the Bolshevist murderers to be buried by the snow. The ferocity of the French Revolutionists during the Reign of Terror was mild compared with that of these Russian fiends, and the total number of French who were guillotined, or otherwise massacred under Robespierre or Saint-Just, was not a hundredth part of the victims of the Russian Terror."

"They would throw over what men in many lands throughout the ages have regarded as ideals, because they have no ideal except their own material gratification. At one of the first places where they seized control the newspapers reported that they held a great mass-meeting, at which, unanimously and amid immense enthusiasm, a resolution was adopted to abolish God. Now God, however He be specially defined in different creeds, everywhere stands for the sum of men's conceptions of Good; quite logically, therefore, the Bolshevists, having no conception of Good, thought it a proof of their power to abolish God — that is., human aspiration toward, and belief in, Good. Had they known history, had they observed individuals on fire with the passion for the good, they would have recognized that the votes of all the evil persons in the world could never abolish it. For the Bolshevists this act was mere bravado, which surely gave the measure of their insanity."

In the book, *Utopia in Power*, we read that the leaders of the White Army wrote their "Objectives": "On December 4, 1918, the constitution of the Volunteer Army was published. It recognized the laws in effect on Russian territory before October, 25, 1917; that is, it recognized the February revolution, and it guaranteed freedom of religion, the press, and assembly and the inviolability of private property. On November 18, 1918, Admiral Kolchak declared in his first appeal to the population that his main aim was 'the creation of an effective army, the defeat of bolshevism, and the establishment of law and order so that people can freely choose the form of government they desire and put into effect the great ideas of liberty that are now being proclaimed throughout the world.'"

When WWI ended in November, 1918, Kolchak and other anti-Bolsheviks formed their White Army. The allies sided with Kolchak but they never supported fully and they were ever united and committed in fighting Lenin. There were many different armies from different nations at that time. There were tens of thousands of Japanese soldiers, 7,500 Americans, many Canadians, Italians, French, British and Czech. Lenin was united and determined and overcame all of the forces against him because they were weak from their disunity. Also Lenin was absolutely cruel and effective with propaganda: "This mixture of utopian promises and ruthless mass terror produced an explosive compound enabling the Bolshevik party to blast its ways to victory in the civil war. A crucial factor in this process was the presence of a leader who knew how much of each component to put into the mix, depending on the needs of the moment.

Some of the leaders in Russia tried their best to teach President Wilson, the Congress, and the American people how important it was to fight Lenin. Books on this event go into detail on all the communications they made trying to influence public opinion especially Wilson and the Congress. In the end the American government and the American people did not do what God wanted them to do. Even though everyone was war weary America was supposed to rise to the occasion and fight an even more deadly enemy. America in the 20th century has consistently failed to measure up to its responsibility as God's champion – superpower. It just breaks your heart to read how passionately the few voices for God were.

In the book *Intervention At Archangel*, the author gives much of the history of how some of these voices spoke out against the diabolical enemy the Russian people were facing. This is an example of one of those voices: "DeWitt Clinton Poole, the American charge d'affaires at Archangel, who had spent almost a year in Moscow as the senior American representative there and who was well able (through daily contact with the Soviet leaders as well as through observation on two extensive trips in Soviet-help territory) to form his opinion on the nature of Bolshevism, expressed his indignation at the Prinkipo proposal and his support of the anti-Bolshevik cause in an eloquent telegram in which he said in part:"

"I have given all there is in me to reveal, and possibly thereby slightly to abate, the utter wickedness of much the Bolsheviks have done and are still doing, in the thought that I might be contributing in some slight way to better the world's affairs. Knowing as I do, possibly better than any other American, the complete unmorality of the Bolshevik leaders — though the aspirations of a few be sincere — and the demoralization which their cynicism and cruelty work upon those whom they lead, I can not in honesty or self-respect do other than protest against any course of action which does not take unmistakable account of these facts. . . . Affairs at Archangel are critical."

Leonid Strakhovsky wrote another book called, *American Opinion About Russia 1917-1920*. He writes that America is too isolationistic. George Washington was wrong when he said that America should not be so involved internationally. The founding fathers were not perfect. He goes into detail showing the course of public opinion towards the Russian Civil War. One of the most outspoken newspapers who had constant editorials speaking strongly for US intervention to help Kolchak was the *New York Times*. For example they wrote once, "We do assert that there is one single, simple, utterly uncomplex fact in it. That is the fact that if we let Russia go the way she is headed, the world is doomed. On the salvation of Russia, whether she likes it or not, depends the salvation of all of us." The *Times* lashed out at Wilson for being wishy-washy and not giving clear direction to fight. The troops in north Russia were confused as they fought a bitter war with the Red Army. In the end it became like Vietnam where parents started visiting Congressman who in turn denounced our involvement. Eventually Satan was able to get America out as he had done with the Vietnam War.

The *Times* for example would say such strong things as, "Lenin and his colleagues have said that Bolshevism cannot live in Russia alone, have said it so often that even our Government so hard of hearing ought to have caught his meaning by this time. To succeed anywhere Bolshevism must prevail everywhere."

The New York Tribune, "Peace will be unstable while the cancer of organized Bolshevism remains." All this while America's young men were going through hell. One book wrote that it had "bottomless swamps and clouds of mosquitoes in the summer.

During the winter months homesickness and melancholia were induced by the short days and temperatures as low as 53 below zero. The food ration, consisting primarily of black tea, hardtack, and canned willy (corned beef), also left much to be desired."

Saturday Evening Post Article

In the Feb 21, 1920 (four days before Sun Myung Moon was born) issue of *The Saturday Evening Post*, a woman wrote an article about the situation in Archangel. She writes some moving passages trying to touch America's heart and will to help Admiral Kolchak's armed forces and the Russian people. Her husband was Russian and went back to do what he could to help. He got an interview with Kolchak and his wife in America (who was also a Russian and now living in America) wrote what her husband had told her about the desperate situation in Russia.

She writes, "The interview with Kolchak made a great impression on my husband. He was finishing his coffee, looking out of the window, and the admiral sat my husband down opposite him. He was uncommonly nice to one who he felt would be understanding, both of his traditions, habits and life. He complained of the Allies' indecision, also of the Bolshevik armies, who were fighting with extra punch just then."

"Kolchak said he had wished to appeal to America; that by his clamorings he had hoped to bring help in material forms at least — food, clothes, medicines, ammunition and arms."

"'It will help the Americans themselves, to aid us, for Bolshevism is the world's enemy, and especially against a democracy such as the American Government is. The necessity of the civilized world's hanging together, as against red doctrines, is obvious.'"

"Kolchak soon had another caller come for orders, and my husband had time to look about. Kolchak lives in a tiny house, quite unpretentious in its arrangements, and only the two sentinels at the door mark it or suggest its rank. The supreme commander had no visible servants besides his striker, who waited on him without the least ceremony or formality. No where a sign of luxury."

"Personally he gives an impression of enormous strength, as one meets him or as he sits talking at his desk, leaning forward slightly in his intensity. The rather large square head, face and shoulders impress one with his complete reliability. The eyes and hands are remarkably fine. Impulsive, quick in manner and articulation, he can be very silent too; and is so while listening mast attentively. He has great magnetism, all the qualities and defects of a man who is very big — honest, loyal, patriotic, with not the least desire to save himself from trouble, danger or responsibility. Always ready to die, and asking nothing but to go on fighting Bolsheviki until the end of either his own life or theirs. It is his one ambition and policy."

"He was so faithful and so patient in the face of far-away allies, who now and then revived his hopes by a promise flung across the seas. Always this was followed by long silence and no action whatever, while Kolchak, between the devil of Bolshevism on the one hand and the deep sea of rising discouragement and misery about him on the other, fought intrigues and poverty, famine and propaganda, reactionary and radical groups; hoping against hope for recognition and relief from without and for calm about him. Recognition by his allies would have meant a new strength to fight the contradictory elements at home; relief would have minimized the sufferings of the needy refugees and population, stamped out illness and dismal misery, aiding the general morale, giving him arguments to quiet all the complaints."

"But nothing came — save smooth words from missions sent to investigate."

A British officer at Archangel wrote the following to the author saying, "... disease is rife and their are no medicines. The great heart-rendering cry is, Oh, for some warm clothing! For soldiers — warm underclothes and shirts and socks. For women — outer garments, underclothes, if fact, everything; children's too, anything to warm their freezing bodies. Thousands of lives depend on these things, so please do what you can for the sake of humanity. No other form of propaganda can do so much for the prestige of civilization as this. Wool, flannel — any materials sent can be made up in our workroom. We will have the women make up garments, sewing or knitting. It would do your heart good to see how grateful these Russians can be, and are, for what has been

done. Russia moans and cries out to the world. She is a living body, and her tortures cannot be looked upon in cold blood as extraordinary. Never before has the world witnessed such an experience in social evolution. Russia is living, and every pore in her body is shedding blood."

Sadly, hundreds of young American men died an agonizing death. In late 1919, Wilson pulled them out against the pleadings of all the generals there. Kolchak was captured by the Red Army. He was taken to the river Ushakovka on February 7, 1920 to be executed. He kept his dignity. They shot him and pushed through a hole in the ice to disappear forever.

On February 21, 1920 at 1:00 pm the 154th Red Infantry Regiment entered Archangel. Lenin had won. Satan had won. Three days later Sun Myung Moon was born — the greatest anti-communist in the 20th century.

CHAPTER FIVE

MODESTY

The year 1920 is a pivotal year when evil overcame good in a dramatic way. In my book *Practical Plan for World Peace: Unificationism—The Teachings of Sun Myung Moon* I have 10 core values that the founding fathers of America would not have any trouble with. All ten of my values relate to sexuality in some way. They ultimately deal with what is masculine and what is feminine. What are the roles and responsibilities of men and women.

One of the most dramatic things Satan did was to glorify nudity. His campaign against modesty has been extremely successful. It has been a slippery slope since 1920 when women started to show skin. Before 1920 you will find it very difficult to see pictures of women that show their legs. For thousands of years mankind did not show skin. After 1920 the dresses went up and the civilization went down. The twentieth century was a sexual revolution that has produced the greatest nightmare the world has ever seen.

I write extensively on modesty in my book *Dress Code for Witnessing*. The 1920s began with modesty and ended with the flappers who raised their dresses and cut their hair short. This is the opposite of the Bible. It is the opposite of Judeo-Christian values. Now we have an epidemic of men addicted to porn. There are thousands of porn shops within walking distance of every man and there are thousands of videos of naked women. Hollywood bought into this and academy award winning actresses have exposed their breasts.

By the time the Messiah came to America to live in 1971 America was in the middle of a raging feminist/socialist led sexual revolution to destroy the family. This is why it is so difficult for anyone to accept the Messiah who comes with a message of sexual purity. He dresses modestly and even many of his followers do not. They parade around in shorts and tight tops like every other dupe

of Satan in the Sodom and Gomorrah America and the world has become.

CHAPTER SIX

TELEVISION

Philo Farnsworth invented television in 1920. It is an amazing story about a 14-year-old farm boy in Idaho who obviously had little education. Spirit world gave him the vision. Like Sun Myung Moon he was teenager when he received his vision. He was uneducated and from a remote place that absolutely nobody would think that one of the greatest inventions in history would come from.

We teach in the *Divine Principle* that television and all the amazing discoveries in science have happened in the 20th century so the truths given by Sun Myung Moon would be heard the world over. Everyone could see him on television and computer screens.

CHAPTER SEVEN

WOMEN'S SUFFRAGE

The 1920s were taken by Satan who introduced the vote in 1920 which destroyed masculinity and femininity. He inspired D.H. Lawrence to write *Women in Love*. Fitzgerald and Hemingway were the Lost Generation who inspired premarital sex in their best-sellers. Everything was so bad that America had an economic crash in 1929 caused partly because Satan got everyone to give up on the virtue of saving and get things by loans.

The most damaging event in the twentieth century to destroy the family and nations was women getting the vote in America in 1920. I write extensively about this tragedy that destroyed patriarchy and therefore destroyed chivalry in my book Patriarchy. The core ideology of Satan is socialist/feminism or feminism/socialism. They go hand in hand. The classic books for feminism are by Marx and Stanton. Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels wrote the most famous book on feminism titled *The Communist Manifesto* in 1848 and Elizabeth Cady Stanton wrote the *Declaration of Sentiments* in 1848. In 1920, 72 years after Marx and Stanton's writings were published, the Messiah was born in Korea. In 1992, 72 years later, the Messiah proclaimed himself the Messiah.

1848-1920 = 72 years
1920-1992 = 72 years

America went downhill fast when women got the vote because men listened to women and created our welfare state.

The distinguished writer John Lott wrote a paper titled, "How Dramatically Did Women's Suffrage Change the Size and Scope

of Government?" published in the September, 1998 issue of the *Journal of Political Economy*. He proves that America went dramatically downhill because women got the vote. America went from having a limited government that the founding fathers of America envisioned to being a big government, welfare state. He begins by saying:

> This paper examines the growth of government during this century as a result of giving women the right to vote. Using cross-sectional time-series data for 1870 to 1940, we examine state government expenditures and revenue as well as voting by U.S. House and Senate state delegations and the passage of a wide range of different state laws. Suffrage coincided with immediate increases in state government expenditures and revenue and more liberal voting patterns for federal representatives, and these effects continued growing over time as more women took advantage of the franchise. Contrary to many recent suggestions, the gender gap is not something that has arisen since the 1970s, and it helps explain why American government started growing when it did.

John Lott wrote about the decline of America into socialism when women got the vote in his book *Freedomnomics: Why the Free Market Works and Other Half-Baked Theories Don't*.

One person wrote on the web:

> John Lott has demonstrated a strong correlative link between women's suffrage and increased per capita state expenditures. The average increase in voter turnouts of 26 and 33 percent that occurred 25 and 45 years after the enactment of women's suffrage in a US state mirror the 24 and 31 percent increases in state spending over the same periods of time. He also concluded: "The two consistent results were: allowing female suffrage resulted in a more liberal tilt in congressional voting for both houses, and the extent of that shift was mirrored by the increase in turnout due to female suffrage. The effects are quite large."

Lott begins by giving the following two quotes:

> It is not really surprising that this welfare state should breed a politics not of "justice" or "fairness" but of "compassion," which contemporary liberalism has elevated into the most important civic virtue. Women tend to be more sentimental, more risk-averse, and less competitive than men—yes, it's Mars vs. Venus—and therefore are less inclined to be appreciative of free-market economics, in which there are losers as well as winners. College-educated women—the kind who attend Democratic conventions—are also more "permissive" and less "judgmental" on such issues as homosexuality, capital punishment, even pornography. (Irving Kristol, "The Feminization of the Democrats," *The Wall Street Journal* (September 9, 1996)

> Citing marriage as "a very important financial divider," the American Enterprise Institute's Doug Besharov suggests more married women did not vote for Dole because of a widespread sense of societal insecurity: "It is not that they distrust their husband, but they have seen divorce all around them and know they could be next." The Polling Company's Kellyanne Fitzpatrick is categorical: "Women see government as their insurance." (Perhaps significantly, of the 24 million individuals working in government and in semi-governmental non-profit jobs, 14 million—58 percent—are women.) (*The Richmond Times Dispatch*, December 5, 1996)

Lott says: "For decades we have known that women vote differently than men. In the presidential elections from 1980 to 1996 the gender gap—the difference between the way men voted and the way women did—was: 14 points in 1980, 16 in 1984, 15 in 1988, 5 in 1992, and 17 in 1996 (Langer, November 8, 1996). According to Voter News Service election day exit polls, if men alone could have voted in the 1996 presidential election, Robert Dole would have been elected president by carrying 31 states." He says that, "in the United States, with expenditures remained remarkably constant until the 1920's."

Lott writes:

> We propose that giving women the right to vote changed the size of government. We examine several indicators of the size and scope of government, from state government expenditures and revenues to voting index scores for Federal House and Senate members from 1870 to 1940.
>
> Conclusion
>
> Giving women the right to vote dramatically changed American politics from the very beginning. Despite claims to the contrary, the gender gap is not something that has arisen since the 1970s. Suffrage coincided with immediate dramatic increases in state government expenditures and revenue, and these effects continued growing as more women took advantage of franchise. Similar changes occurred at the federal level as female suffrage led to more liberal voting records for the state's two Congressional delegations. In the Senate, suffrage changed voting behavior by an amount equal to almost 20 percent of the difference between Republican and Democrat senators. Suffrage also coincided with changes in the probability that prohibition would be enacted and changes in divorce laws.

Lott quotes one paragraph from Irving Kristol's article on how the welfare state is driven by feminism. Here is the rest of what he said:

> Social issues and the culture wars that rage around them are often relegated to a position of secondary importance behind economic matters in political campaigns. As the culture wars have gained in intensity and prominence, however, social and economic issues have become intertwined, signaling a major shift not only in American politics, but also in American society.
>
> Though both the media and the public were bored by the Republican and Democratic conventions, these were nevertheless among the more significant conventions in

our political history. They gave signs of major changes now under way in the parties, a kind of slide into what, for want of a better term, we may call postmodern politics. As would be expected, the change is less obvious in the case of the Republican Party—it is, after all, our conservative party. But it was there. In the case of the Democratic Party, the change has already achieved a visible momentum.

This change can be roughly summarized as follows: The traditional attitude of both parties toward the welfare state has now been infused with contrasting cultural agendas. The economics of the welfare state is no longer a simple matter of arguments about balancing receipts and expenditures—though many conservatives still see it that way. The economics is now being integrated into the culture wars we are living through, so the issue of what kind of welfare state we shall have is now but an aspect of a profound division over what kind of country we are, and what kind of people we are, and what we mean by the "American way of life."

Outside the Mainstream

Unsurprisingly, the Republican Party is not only resistant to such thoughts—it positively distrusts them. Republican eyes go blank at the very mention of "culture." The party's historic intimacy with the business community has led it to respect economists but to be suspicious of "intellectuals." The party's establishment has nothing against religion so long as it doesn't interfere with golf on Sundays, and it regards those who take religion seriously, who talk earnestly about "values" and "virtues," as "outside the mainstream." Nevertheless, 20 percent of the delegates to the Republican convention described themselves as Christian conservatives—that is to say, they see their religious beliefs as telling them something important about the way we should conduct our lives. They know that there is a "culture war" going on because of the frustrations—even the constant abuse—they experience.

And they are the most dynamic force within the Republican Party.

At the 1992 Republican convention, Pat Buchanan asserted that there was a "culture war" going on in the United States, and for this he was excoriated, his speech being denounced as "inflammatory" and "extremist." The Republican establishment quickly distanced itself from such distracting belligerency, and worked to retain the traditional conservative focus on economics and foreign policy. In 1996, this establishment was well prepared to stay on track, and the proceedings slithered along smoothly as the convention happily focused on the familiar issue of taxes.

Democratic Culture Wars

In contrast, this last Democratic convention was in effect a "culture wars" rally, though the organizers were careful to spin out much empty rhetoric about "family values," without going into specifics. This irritated the media, which finds it almost impossible to think that "family values," whatever they are, have anything to do with politics. At the same time, most of the journalists and commentators did have preconceptions as to what American politics is really about. They knew that a "newly energized labor movement," represented at the convention, signaled a revival of the old liberal, now renamed "progressive," coalition, a topic they have been writing about for years. What they preferred not to know is that only about 12 percent of American workers belong to unions today, and that at least half of these are white-collar workers who are employees of government (at all levels). What kind of labor movement is this? The majority of union delegates to the Democratic convention would describe themselves as "professionals."

Nor was it mentioned even in passing that 50 percent of the Democratic delegates were women, had to be women, by virtue of an affirmative action, sexist quota. Why such a quota? No one asked, even though there

seemed to be no evident political difference whatsoever between those women and their male counterparts. It is too bad the question was not raised because it might have alerted an inquiring mind to the deeper meaning of this self-imposed quota. It pointed to a major transformation of the Democratic Party. Specifically, it pointed to the feminization of the party—not only in the delegate count, which is of no great significance, but in the ethos that pervades the party, and in the policies that naturally flow from this ethos.

As Steven Stark recently wrote in the *Atlantic Monthly*: "Although many media accounts still give the impression that the [gender] gap [between the parties] is greatest on women's issues' such as abortion and an Equal Rights Amendment, men and women do not differ much on these issues. Rather, the gulf today tends to be on issues involving the existence and expansion of the welfare state."

The American welfare state has had a feminine coloration from the very beginning, Mr. Stark points out. In Europe, the welfare state was created by trade unionists and socialists for the benefit of working people. In the United States, our welfare state was shaped, in large part, by the child welfare establishment—an establishment that provided "suitable" careers for women at a time when such careers were few, and devised appropriate policies that were women-oriented. (Various left-wing historians have made the same point, approvingly.) The result was a welfare state for dependent women and children and for the burgeoning "helping professions" that attend them.

It is not really surprising that this welfare state should breed a politics, not of "justice" or "fairness" but of "compassion," which contemporary liberalism has elevated into the most important civic virtue. Women tend to be more sentimental, more risk-averse, and less competitive than men—yes it's Mars vs. Venus—and therefore are less inclined to be appreciative of free-market economics, where there are losers as well as

winners. College-educated women—the kind who attend Democratic conventions—are also more "permissive" and less "judgmental" on such issues as homosexuality, capital punishment, even pornography.

PC Redefined

This helps explain the amazing degree to which the Democratic convention was bathed in a pre-political pathos involving what journalists would once have called "sob stories" or "heartbreakers"—terms that contemporary liberalism has made politically incorrect. Some political commentators, even some liberal commentators, were vexed at such made-for-TV soap opera, and wanted to know where the political agenda was. Well, they were looking at it, but didn't realize it. The message was: If terrible things happen to innocent people, government—and only the federal government, at that—is morally obliged to come to their rescue. Forget prayer, forget stoicism; hope is incarnated in the welfare state.

So powerful is this theme in our culture today, that even the Republican convention had to make some gestures in this direction. But everyone understood that this was little more than copycat opportunism, while politicized compassion constitutes the very heart and soul of the Democratic Party.

This passion for compassion was so strong that it moved the Democratic delegates to ignore resolutely the issue of illegitimacy. The issue simply wasn't mentioned, even though illegitimacy—especially among teenage girls—and its sociopathic consequences are at the center of public insistence on the need for welfare reform. Both President Clinton and the convention refused to recognize this fact, even though Mr. Clinton had just signed a welfare reform bill. On welfare, the Democrats are, and will remain, in a state of denial. We should take seriously the hints from the White House to the effect that the president will gut the very welfare reform he

just signed by manipulating the regulatory requirements. He will most certainly do it, after the election.

What Kind of Family?

It goes beyond this, however. We know that married women, and especially married women with children, tend to be much more conservative than single women. So when Democrats talk about the family, they never—but never—say anything that might suggest a household consisting of a mother, a father, and children. Assertions to the effect that "we are all one family" are a rather transparent rhetorical effort to delegitimize the traditional family as being the family, from which all other households are deviants, to a mild or radical degree.

The current breakup experienced by the American family is having a profound effect on American politics, as well as on American society. One can go further and say that the social problems we are confronting, problems either created or exacerbated by our welfare state, are making the welfare state a cultural issue as well as an economic one. The Christian right understands this, as does the secularist left. The "culture wars" are no political sideshow. Today, and in the years ahead, they will be energizing and defining all the controversies that revolve around the welfare state.

One person wrote on the web, "The Nineteenth Amendment caused government spending to skyrocket. Professor John Lott of the Law School University of Chicago proved statistically that it was women's suffrage, and nothing else, which caused this unbridled government growth. Spending too much for government destroyed private property rights, plunged the US into huge debts and destroyed personal savings."

Satan was highly successful in being the "ruler of the world" in the twentieth century by creating the ruling ideology of socialist/feminism. This is why the twentieth century was the bloodiest century in history. Father comes with a diametrically

opposed ideology to Satan. He comes with the traditionalist/capitalist ideology.

In *The Road to Serfdom* F.A. Hayek wrote:

> Planning and Power
>
> Many socialists have the tragic illusion that by depriving private individuals of the power they possess in an individualist system, and transferring this power to society, they thereby extinguish power. What they overlook is that, by concentrating power so that it can be used in the service of a single plan, it is not merely transformed but infinitely heightened. By uniting in the hands of some single body power formerly exercised independently by many, an amount of power is created infinitely greater than any that existed before, so much more far-reaching as almost to be different in kind. It is entirely fallacious to argue that the great power exercised by a central planning board would be "no greater than the power collectively exercised by private boards of directors." There is, in a competitive society, nobody who can exercise even a fraction of the power which a socialist planning board would possess. To decentralize power is to reduce the absolute amount of power, and the competitive system is the only system designed to minimize the power exercised by man over man. Who can seriously doubt that the power which a millionaire, who may be my employer, has over me is very much less than that which the smallest bureaucrat possesses who wields the coercive power of the state and on whose discretion it depends how I am allowed to live and work?
>
> INDIVIDUALISM, in contrast to socialism and all other forms of totalitarianism, is based on the respect of Christianity for the individual man and the belief that it is desirable that men should be free to develop their own individual gifts and bents. This philosophy, first fully developed during the Renaissance, grew and spread into what we know as Western civilization. The general direction of social development was one of freeing the

individual from the ties which bound him in feudal society.

No sensible person should have doubted that the economic principles of the 19th century-were only a beginning — that there were immense possibilities of advancement on the lines on which we had moved. But according to the views now dominant, the question is no longer how we can make the best use of the spontaneous forces found in a free society. We have in effect undertaken to dispense with these forces and to replace them by collective and "conscious" direction.

CHAPTER EIGHT

The Second Coming

William Butler Yeats was one of the greatest poets of the 20th century. He and his wife were very interested in things spiritual. He published one of the most famous poems of the 20th century, *The Second Coming*, in 1920. There is no coincidence that he published this in the same year that Sun Myung Moon was born. Father Moon is the Second Coming of Christ. Spirit world was working to prepare mankind for the new messiah.

The Second Coming

Turning and turning in the widening gyre
The falcon cannot hear the falconer;
Things fall apart; the center cannot hold;
Mere anarchy is loosed upon the world,
The blood-dimmed tide is loosed, and everywhere
The ceremony of innocence is drowned;
The best lack all conviction; the worst
Are full of passionate intensity.

Surely some revelation is at hand;
Surely the Second Coming is at hand;
The Second Coming! Hardly are those words out
When a vast image out of Spiritus Mundi
Troubles my sight: somewhere in the sands of the desert
A shape with lion body and the head of a man,
A gaze blank and pitiless as the sun,
Is moving its slow thighs, while all about it
Reel shadows of the indignant desert birds.

The darkness drops again; but now I know
That twenty centuries of stony sleep
Were vexed to nightmare by a rocking cradle,
And what rough beast, its hour come round at last,
Slouches toward Bethlehem to be born?

Mrs. Hammond writes about how difficult it is for men:

> Slacks appeared on the fashion runways of Paris in 1920 [The year the Messiah was born]. The next year, Pope Benedict XV expressed his shock that women would embrace the current fashion trends and styles of dancing. He wrote, ". . . one cannot sufficiently deplore the blindness of so many women of every age and condition; made foolish by desire to please, they do not see to what a degree the indecency of their clothing shocks every honest man, and offends God. Most of them would formerly have blushed for those toilettes [outfits] as for a grave fault against Christian modesty; now it does not suffice for them to exhibit them on the public thoroughfares; they do not fear to cross the threshold of the churches..."
>
> In the 1920's, women's clothing styles were taking on a radical and revolutionary new look. For the first time in history, women of refinement were seen wearing sleeves above the elbow and hemlines that crawled up to the knee. In 1928 Pope Pius XI wrote, "There is a sad forgetfulness of Christian modesty, especially in the life and dress of women."
>
> Do parents realize that "ladies of the night" wouldn't wear on street corners in the 1950's what some girls wear to the mall these days? Pope Pius XII recognized that women are the moral fiber of society, and he knew that the culture would implode if modesty were not put into practice. "Society reveals what it is by the clothes it wears," Pius XII said in 1954. "An unworthy, indecent mode of dress has prevailed" without any distinction of place, "on beaches, in country resorts, on the streets, etc. Vice necessarily follows upon public nudity."

Larry Burkett is one of America's most famous Christian financial advisers. He writes:

> Prior to the 1920s, Americans were characterized as frugal, self-reliant people who had a strong faith in God. Debt was certainly not unknown, but it would have been unusual for the average American to borrow for anything other than the purchase of a home, and even that loan was for no more than seven years or less.
>
> Having a debt-free home should be one of your primary financial goals. If you're like most homeowners, you probably did a double take when you read this principle. After all, the common wisdom is that it's always best to have a mortgage on your home so that you can take advantage of interest write-offs on your tax returns.
>
> But I take issue with this common advice. In the first place, it's relatively recent common advice. As mentioned earlier, during the 1920s nearly everybody in the United States owned his home debt free. But today, nearly everyone leases a home with a mortgage attached. In other words, we've shifted from a principle of outright home ownership to a principle of home leasing through indebtedness. Not only has this trend placed the average American family in peril of losing its home, but it has also driven the cost of homes out of the range of the average family's income. Any sizable financial crisis will find most families unable to make their house payments.

NOTES

NOTES

NOTES

NOTES

As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen

PEACE
WORLD LOVE

AS A PEACE-LOVING GLOBAL CITIZEN

AS A

PEACE-LOVING GLOBAL CITIZEN

REVEREND SUN MYUNG MOON

CONTENTS

ix FOREWORD

CHAPTER ONE
1 **FOOD IS LOVE**

2 What I Learned about Peace While Being Carried on My Father's Back
8 The Joy of Giving Food to Others
12 Being a Friend to All
16 A Definite Compass for My Life
23 A Stubborn Child Who Never Gives Up
29 Loving Nature to Learn from It
37 Talking about the Universe with the Insects
41 Ardent Student

CHAPTER TWO
45 **A RIVER OF HEART FLOWS WITH TEARS**

46 Between Fear and Inspiration
51 The More It Hurts, the More You Should Love
56 A Knife Not Sharpened Grows Dull
61 A Key to Unlock a Great Secret
66 Like a Fireball Burning Hot
70 Befriending Laborers by Sharing Their Suffering
76 The Calm Sea of the Heart
80 "Please Don't Die"
86 A Command That Must Be Obeyed
95 A Grain of Rice Is Greater Than the Earth
100 Heungnam Prison in the Snow
105 U.N. Forces Open the Prison Gate

CHAPTER THREE
111 **THE MAN WITH THE FULLEST STOMACH**

112 "You Are My Spiritual Teacher"
117 The Crazy, Handsome Man by the Well
121 A Church with No Denomination
126 Two Universities Expel Students and Professors
130 New Buds Grow on Scorched Branches
134 We Are Trained by Our Wounds
137 A Sincere Heart Is Most Important

CHAPTER FOUR
145 **WHY WE WORK GLOBALLY**

146 Paying the Ultimate Price to Follow God's Path
150 Money Earned Honorably, Used Prayerfully
153 Power of Dance Moves the World
156 Angels Open a Path through a Dark Forest
160 World Tour
164 Last Plane to America
170 Our Future Lies with the Ocean
175 Reverend Moon, Seed for a New American Revolution
179 Washington Monument, 1976
185 Cry Not for Me but for the World
188 "Why Does My Father Have to Go to Jail?"

CHAPTER FIVE
194 **TRUE FAMILIES CREATE TRUE PEOPLE**

195 My Wife, Hak Ja Han Moon
201 An Incomparable Inner Beauty
207 Promises That Must Never Be Broken
212 To Love Is to Give and Forget
215 The Peaceful Family Is the Building Block of Heaven
219 Ten Years of Tears Melt a Father-in-Law's Heart
223 The True Meaning of Marriage
227 True Love Is Found in True Families
231 Leaving Behind a Legacy of Love

CHAPTER SIX
237 **LOVE WILL BRING UNIFICATION**

238 The Power of Religion to Turn People to Goodness
245 The River Does Not Reject the Waters That Flow into It
249 "Allow Freedom of Religion in the Soviet Union"
255 Korea's Unification Will Bring World Unification
261 My Meeting with President Kim Il Sung
267 The Land May Be Divided, but Not Its People
274 Not by Guns or Swords, but by True Love

CHAPTER SEVEN
279 **FUTURE OF KOREA, FUTURE OF THE WORLD**

280 World Harmony and the Korean Peninsula
286 From Suffering and Tears to Peace and Love
290 The Ultimate Purpose of Twenty-first-Century Religion
295 Cultural Projects Express God's Creativity
301 Master of the Seas and the Future of the World
305 Great Opportunity in the Oceanic Era
310 A Single Dandelion Is More Precious Than Gold
315 Solution to Poverty and Hunger
320 More Than Giving Bread, Teaching How to Make Bread

CHAPTER EIGHT
325 **MESSAGE FOR YOUNG PEOPLE**

326 Find Your Purpose, Change Your Life
330 Embrace the World
335 Everything We Have Is Borrowed from Heaven
339 Happiness Is a Life Lived for Others
343 Dreaming of a Peaceful World

Foreword

A steady spring rain fell all last night, ending a winter drought. It was so nice to have had the rain that I spent all this morning walking about in the garden. The ground had that fragrant aroma of moist earth I had missed all through the winter, and the weeping willow and cherry trees were showing signs of new spring buds. I felt I could hear the popping sounds of new life sprouting here and there around the garden. Before I knew it, my wife, who had followed me out, was picking young mugwort shoots that had managed to poke their heads up through the dry lawn. The night's rain had turned the whole world into a fragrant spring garden.

No matter how much commotion there may be in the world, when the calendar turns to March, spring is on its way. The older I become, the more it means to me that in nature spring follows winter and brings with it flowers in full bloom. What am I that God, in each season, allows the flowers to bloom and the snow to fall, so I might know the joy of being alive? Love wells up from within the deepest recesses of my heart, and I am overcome with emotion. I am moved to tears to think that everything of real value has been given to me freely. In my life, I have circled the globe many times over in my efforts to bring about a world

of peace, and yet it is here in this garden in spring that I am able to taste real peace. Peace, too, was given to us by God, but we lost it somewhere and now spend our lives looking for it in all the wrong places.

To bring a world of peace, I have spent my life going to the most lowly and secluded places. I met mothers in Africa who could only watch helplessly as their children died of hunger, and I met fathers in South America who lived by a river full of fish but couldn't support their families by fishing. At first, all I did was simply share my food, but they granted me their love in return. Intoxicated with the power of love I went on to plant seeds and cultivate forests. Together we caught fish to feed hungry children, and these trees were used to build schools. I was happy even as mosquitoes bit me all over as I fished all through the night. Even when I was sinking knee-deep into mud, I was happy because I could see the shadows of despair disappear from the faces of my neighbors.

Seeking the shortest path to a world of peace, I devoted myself to inspiring change in the political process and to changing people's ways of thinking. I met then-President Mikhail Gorbachev of the Soviet Union as part of my effort to bring reconciliation between communism and democracy, and I met then-President Kim Il Sung of North Korea for a serious discussion on how to bring peace to the Korean peninsula. I went to a United States in moral decline and played the role of a fireman responding to a call in an effort to reawaken its Puritan spirit. I dedicated myself to resolving various conflicts in the world. In my work for peace among Muslims and Jews, I was not deterred by rampant terror. As a result of my efforts, thousands have gathered for rallies and peace marches, with Jews, Muslims, and Christians all joining together. Sadly, however, the conflict continues.

I see hope, though, that an age of peace is about to be inaugurated in Korea. The Korean peninsula has been trained through endless suffering and the tragedy of division, and I can feel in every cell of my body that a powerful energy has been stored here and is ready to burst out. In the same way that no one can stop a new season of spring from coming, no human power can stop heavenly fortune from coming to the Korean peninsula and spreading throughout the world. People need to prepare themselves so that they may rise with the tide of heavenly fortune when it arrives.

I am a controversial person. The mere mention of my name causes trouble in the world. I never sought money or fame but have spent my life speaking only of peace. The world, though, has associated many different phrases with my name, rejected me, and thrown stones at me. Many are not interested in knowing what I say or what I do. They only oppose me.

I have been unjustly imprisoned six times in my life—by imperial Japan, in Kim Il Sung's North Korea, by South Korea's Syngman Rhee government, and even in the United States—and at times I was beaten so hard that the flesh was torn from my body. Today, though, not even the slightest wound remains in my heart. Wounds easily disappear in the presence of true love. Even enemies melt away without a trace in the presence of true love. True love is a heart that gives and gives and wants to continuing giving. True love is a love that even forgets that it already gave love and gives love again. I have lived my entire life intoxicated in such love. I wanted nothing aside from love, and I threw my entire being into the effort to share love with my impoverished neighbors. At times, the path of love was so difficult that my knees buckled under me, but even then I felt happy in my heart, dedicated to loving humanity.

Even now, I am filled with love that I have not yet been able to give. It is with a prayer that this love will become a river of peace saturating the drought-stricken land and flowing to the ends of the earth that I now place this book before the world. Recently a growing number of people have been seeking to know more about me. For the sake of those who are curious, I have looked back on my life and recorded my candid recollections in this book. As for the stories that could not be included in this volume, I hope there will be other opportunities for me to convey them.

I send boundless love to all those who have put their faith in me, remained by my side, and lived their lives with me—and especially to my wife, Hak Ja Han Moon, to whom I am deeply grateful for struggling with me to scale the most difficult peaks.

Finally, I would like to express my heartfelt gratitude to Eun Ju Park, president of Gimm-Young Publishers Inc., who poured out much sincerity and dedication in the process of bringing this book to publication, and to everyone in the publishing company who labored in editing the words I spoke so that the often complex content could be easily understood by readers.

Sun Myung Moon,

Cheongpyeong, South Korea, March 1, 2009

THE KOREAN PENINSULA
Route of Sun Myung Moon Journey to Pusan 1950-51
USSR
CHINA
NORTH KOREA
Jeongju
Anju
HEUNGNAM
PYONGYANG
38th parallel
Kaesong
Chuncheon
Cheongpyeong
Yongmae Island
SEOUL
INCHEON
Moongyeong
East Sea (Sea of Japan)
Yellow Sea
SOUTH KOREA
DAEGU
Kyongju
KWANGJU
Nampyeong
BUSAN
Yeosu
South Sea
Jeju Island

CHAPTER ONE

FOOD IS LOVE

What I Learned about Peace While Being Carried on My Father's Back

I have lived my life with just one thought. I wanted to bring about a world of peace, a world where there are no wars and where all humankind lives in love. Perhaps some may say, "How is it possible that you were thinking about peace even when you were a child?" Is it so astonishing that a child would dream of a peaceful world?

In 1920, when I was born, Korea was under forced occupation by Japan. Even after liberation, there came the Korean War, the Asian financial crisis, and other numerous difficult crises. For many years, the land of Korea has not been closely associated with peace. But these times of suffering and confusion were not matters related only to Korea. The two world wars, the Vietnam War, and the wars in the Middle East show that people in the world continuously treat each other with enmity, point guns at each other, and bomb each another. Perhaps for people who experience these horrors of bloodied bodies and broken bones, peace has been something that could be imagined only in a dream. Peace, though, is not so difficult to accomplish. To begin with, we can find peace in the air we breathe, in the natural environment, and in the people around us.

As a child, I thought of the meadows as my home. As soon as I could wolf down my bowl of rice for breakfast, I would run out of the house

and spend the entire day in the hills and streams. I could spend the day wandering about the forest with all the different birds and animals, eating herbs and wild berries, and I would never feel hungry. Even as a child, I knew that my mind and body were at ease anytime I went into the forest.

I would often fall asleep in the hills after playing there. My father would be forced to come find me. When I heard my father shouting in the distance, "Yong Myung! Yong Myung!" I couldn't help but smile, even as I slept. My name as a child was Yong Myung. The sound of his voice would awaken me, but I would pretend to still be asleep. He would hoist me onto his back and carry me home. That feeling I had as he carried me down the hill—feeling completely secure and able to let my heart be completely at ease—that was peace. That is how I learned about peace, while being carried on my father's back.

The reason I loved the forest was also because all the peace in the world dwells there. Life forms in the forest do not fight each other. Of course, they eat one another and are eaten, but that is because they are hungry and need to sustain themselves. They do not fight out of enmity. Birds do not hate other birds. Animals do not hate other animals. Trees do not hate other trees. There needs to be an absence of enmity for peace to come. Human beings are the only ones who hate other members of the same species. People hate other people because their country is different, their religion is different, and their way of thinking is different.

I have been to almost two hundred countries. There were not many countries where I would land at the airport and think to myself, "This really is a peaceful and contented place." There were many places where, because of civil war, soldiers held their weapons high, guarding the airports and blocking the streets. The sound of gunfire could be heard day

and night. Several times, I came close to losing my life in places where I went to talk about peace. In today's world, there is an endless series of conflicts and confrontations, large and small. Tens of millions suffer from hunger, with nothing to eat. Yet, trillions of dollars are spent on weapons. The money spent on guns and bombs alone would give us enough to end hunger for everyone.

I have dedicated my life to building bridges of peace between countries that hate each other as enemies because of ideology and religion. I created forums where Islam, Christianity, and Judaism could come together. I worked to reconcile the views of the United States and the Soviet Union when they were at odds with each other over Iraq. I have helped in the process of bringing reconciliation between North and South Korea. I did not do these things for money or fame. From the time I was old enough to know what was going on in the world, there has been only one objective for my life: that is for the world to live in peace, as one. I never wanted anything else. It has not been easy to live day and night for the purpose of peace, but that is the work that makes me most happy.

During the Cold War, we experienced the pain of having our world divided in two because of ideology. It seemed then that if only communism would disappear, peace would come. Yet, now that the Cold War is past, we find even more conflicts. We are now fractured by race and religion. Many countries facing each other across their borders are at odds. As if that were not enough, we have situations within countries where people are divided by race, religion, or the regions where they were born. People think of each other as enemies across these lines of division and refuse to open their hearts to one another.

When we look at human history, we see that the most brutal and cruel wars were not those fought between nations but those between races. Among these, the worst were wars between races where religion was used as a pretext. In the Bosnian civil war, said to be one of the worst ethnic conflicts of the twentieth century, thousands, including many children, were brutally massacred. I am sure you remember the terrorist incident of September 11, 2001, when thousands of innocent lives were lost as the World Trade Center buildings in New York were completely destroyed after passenger planes were crashed into them. Recently, too, in the Gaza Strip in Palestine as well as in southern Israel, hundreds have lost their lives as a result of that intense conflict. Homes have been destroyed, and people are living on the brink of death. All this is the grim result of conflicts between ethnic groups and between religions.

What makes people hate and kill each other like this? Of course there are many reasons, but religious differences are almost always connected. This was true with the Gulf War, which was fought over oil. It is true with the Arab–Israeli conflict over control of Jerusalem. When racism uses religion as a pretext, the problem becomes extremely complex. The evil ghosts of the religious wars that we thought had ended in the Middle Ages continue to haunt us in the twenty-first century.

Religious wars continue to occur because many politicians use the enmity between religions to satisfy their selfish designs. In the face of political power, religions often waver and lose their way. They lose sight of their original purpose, which is to exist for the sake of peace. All religions have a responsibility to advance the cause of world peace. Yet, lamentably, we see that religions instead become the cause of conflict. Behind this evil we find the machinations of politics, with its power

and money. The responsibility of a leader, above all else, is to keep the peace. Yet leaders often seem to do the opposite and lead the world into confrontation and violence.

Leaders use the language of religion and nationalism to hide their selfish ambitions. Unless their hearts are set right, countries and nationalities will wander in confusion. Religion and love of one's nation are not evil in their essence. They are valuable if these impulses are used to contribute to building a global human community. When the claim is made that only a particular religion or ethnic group is right and when other religions and ethnic groups are treated with disdain and attacked, religion and love of nation lose their value. When a religion goes so far as to trample on others and treat other religions as worthless, it no longer embodies goodness. The same is true when love of nation is used to emphasize the righteousness of a person's own country over others.

The truth of the universe is that we must acknowledge each other and help each other. Even the smallest animals know this. Cats and dogs do not get along, but if you raise them in the same household, they embrace each other's offspring and are friendly toward each other. We see the same thing in plants. The vine that winds its way up a tree depends on the trunk to support it. The tree, however, does not say, "Hey, what do you think you're doing, winding your way up my trunk?" The principle of the universe is for everyone to live together, for the sake of one another. Anyone who deviates from this principle faces certain ruin. If nationalities and religions continue maliciously to attack each other, humanity has no future. There will be an endless cycle of terror and warfare until one day we become extinct. But we are not without hope. Clearly there is hope.

I have lived my life without ever letting go of that hope and always

kept alive the dream of peace. What I want is to wipe away completely the walls and fences that divide the world in myriad ways and to create a world of unity. I want to tear down the walls between religions and between races and fill in the gap between the rich and the poor. Once that is done, we can reestablish the world of peace that God created in the beginning. I am talking about a world where no one goes hungry and no one sheds tears. To heal a world where there is no hope, and which is lacking in love, we need to go back to the pure hearts that we had as children. To shed our desire to possess ever-increasing amounts of material wealth and restore our beautiful essence as human beings, we need to go back to the principles of peace and the breath of love that we learned as we were being carried on our fathers' backs.

The Joy of Giving Food to Others

I have very small eyes. I am told that when I was born, my mother wondered, "Does my baby have eyes, or not?" and spread my eyelids apart with her fingers. Then when I blinked, she said with joy, "Oh my, yes. He does have eyes, after all!" My eyes were so small that people often called me "Osan's Little Tiny-Eyes," because my mother was from the village of Osan.

I cannot remember anyone saying, though, that my small eyes make me any less attractive. In fact, people who know something about physiognomy, the art of understanding a person's characteristics and fortune by studying facial features, say my small eyes give me the right disposition to be a religious leader. I think it is similar to the way a camera is able to focus on objects farther away as the aperture of its iris diaphragm is reduced. A religious leader needs to be able to see farther into the future than do other people, and perhaps small eyes are an indication of such a quality. My nose is rather unusual as well. Just one look and it is obvious that this is the nose of a stubborn and determined man. There must be something to physiognomy, because when I look back on my life, these features of my face seem to parallel the way I have lived my life.

I was born at 2221 Sang-sa Ri (village), Deok-eon District, Jeong-ju Township, Pyong-an Province, as the second son of Kyung Yu Moon of the Nam Pyung Moon clan and Kyung Gye Kim of the Yeon An Kim clan. I was born on the sixth day of the first lunar month in 1920, the year after the 1919 independence movement. I was told that our family settled in the village of Sang-sa Ri during the life of my great-grandfather. My paternal great-grandfather worked the farm himself, produced thousands of bushels of rice, and built the family fortune with his own hands. He never smoked or drank liquor, preferring instead to use that money to buy food to give to those in need. When he died, his last words were, "If you feed people from all the regions of Korea, then you will receive blessings from all those regions." So the guest room in our home was always full of people. Even people from other villages knew that if they came to our home, they could always count on being fed a good meal. My mother carried out her role of preparing food for all those people without ever complaining.

My great-grandfather was so active, he never wanted to rest. If he had some spare time he would use it to make pairs of straw footwear that he would then sell in the marketplace. When he grew old, in his merciful ways, he would buy several geese, let them go in the wild, and pray that all would be well with his descendants. He hired a teacher of Chinese characters to sit in the guest room of his home and provide free literacy lessons to the young people of the village. The villagers gave him the honorific title "Sun Ok" (Jewel of Goodness) and referred to our home as "a home that will be blessed."

By the time I was born and was growing up, much of the wealth that my great-grandfather had accumulated was gone, and our family had just enough to get by. The family tradition of feeding others was still

alive, however, and we would feed others even if it meant there wouldn't be enough to feed our family members. The first thing I learned after I learned to walk was how to serve food to others.

During the Japanese occupation, many Koreans had their homes and land confiscated. As they escaped the country to Manchuria, where they hoped to build new lives for themselves, they would pass by our home on the main road that led to Seon-cheon in North Pyong-an Province. My mother would always prepare food for the passersby, who came from all parts of Korea. If a beggar came to our home asking for food and my mother didn't react quickly enough, my grandfather would pick up his meal and take it to the beggar. Perhaps because I was born into such a family, I too have spent much of my life feeding people. To me, giving people food is the most precious work. When I am eating and I see someone who has nothing to eat, it pains my heart and I cannot continue eating.

I will tell you something that happened when I was about eleven years old. It was toward the last day of the year, and everyone in the village was busy preparing rice cakes for the New Year's feast. There was one neighbor family, though, that was so poor they had nothing to eat. I kept seeing their faces in my mind, and it made me so restless that I was walking around the house, wondering what to do. Finally, I picked up an eight-kilogram (17.6-pound) bag of rice and ran out of the house. I was in such a hurry to get the bag of rice out of the house that I didn't even tie the bag closed. I hoisted the bag onto my shoulders and held it tight as I ran along a steep, uphill path for about eight kilometers (five miles) to get to the neighbor's home. I was excited to think how good it would feel to give those people enough food so they could eat as much as they wanted.

The village mill was next to our house. The four walls of the millhouse were well built, so that the crushed rice could not fall through the cracks. This meant that in the winter it was a good place to escape the wind and stay warm. If someone took some kindling from our home's furnace and started a small fire in the millhouse, it became warmer than an ondol-heated room. Some of the beggars who would travel around the country would decide to spend the winter in that millhouse. I was fascinated by the stories they had to tell about the world outside, and I found myself spending time with them every chance I got. My mother would bring my meals to the millhouse, and she would always bring enough for my beggar friends to eat as well. We would eat from the same dishes and share the same blankets at night. This is how I spent the winter. When spring came, they would leave for faraway places, and I could not wait for winter to come again so they would return to our home. Just because their bodies were poorly clothed did not mean that their hearts were ragged as well. They had a deep and warm love that showed. I gave them food, and they shared their love with me. The deep friendship and warmth they showed me back then continue to be a source of strength for me today.

As I go around the world and witness children suffering from hunger, I am always reminded of how my grandfather never missed a chance to share food with others.

Being a Friend to All

Once I set my mind to do something, I have to put it into action immediately. Otherwise, I cannot sleep. As a child, I would sometimes get an idea during the night but be forced to wait until morning before acting on it. I would stay awake and make scratches on the wall to pass the time. This happened so often that I would almost dig a hole in the wall and chunks of dirt would pile up on the floor. I also couldn't sleep if I had been treated unfairly during the day. In such a case, I would get out of bed during the night, go to the culprit's home, and challenge him to come out and fight me. I am sure it must have been very difficult for my parents to raise me.

I could not stand to see someone treated unjustly. Whenever there was a fight among the children in the village, I would involve myself as though I were responsible to see that justice was served in every situation. I would decide which child in the fight was in the wrong and I would scold that child in a loud voice. Once I went to see the grandfather of a boy who was a bully in the neighborhood. I said to him, "Your grandson has done this and that wrong. Please take care of it."

I could be wild in my actions, but nevertheless I was a child with a big heart. I would sometimes visit my married older sister in the home

of her husband's family and demand that they serve me rice cakes and chicken. The adults never disliked me for this because they could see that my heart was filled with a warm love.

I was particularly good at taking care of animals. When birds made a nest in a tree in front of our house, I dug a small waterhole for them to drink water. I also scattered some hulled millet from the storeroom on the ground for the birds to eat. At first, the birds would fly away whenever someone came close. They soon realized, however, that the person giving them food was someone who loved them, and they stopped flying away when I approached.

Once I thought I would try raising fish. So I caught some fish and put them in the water hole. I also took a fistful of fish food and sprinkled it over the water. When I got up the next morning, though, I found that all the fish had died during the night. I was so looking forward to raising those fish. I stood there in astonishment, looking at them floating on top of the water. I remember that I cried all day that day.

My father kept many bee colonies. He would take a large hive box and fasten a basic foundation to the bottom of the hive. Then the bees would deposit their beeswax there to create a nest and store their honey. I was a curious child, and I wanted to see just how the bees built the hive. So I stuck my face into the middle of the hive and got myself stung severely by the bees, causing my entire face to swell tremendously.

I once took the foundations from the hive boxes and received a severe scolding from my father. Once the bees had finished building their hives, my father would take the foundations and stack them to one side. These foundations were covered with beeswax that could be used as fuel for lamps in place of oil. I took those expensive foundations, broke them up, and took them to homes that couldn't afford to buy oil

for their lamps. It was an act of kindness, but I had done it without my father's permission, and so I was harshly reprimanded.

When I was twelve, we had very little in the way of games. The choices were a Parcheesi-like game called yute, a chesslike game called jang-gi, and card games. I always enjoyed it when many people would play together. During the day, I would like to play yute or fly my kite, and in the evenings I would make the rounds of the card games going on around the village. They were games where the winner picked up 120 won (Korean monetary unit) after each hand, and I could usually win at least once every three hands. New Year's Eve and the first full moon of the new year were the days when the most gambling went on. On those days, the police would look the other way and never arrest anyone for gambling. I went to where grown-ups were gambling, took a nap during the night, and got them to deal me in for just three hands in the early morning, just as they were about to call it quits for the night. I took the money I had won, bought some starch syrup, and took it around to all my friends to give them each a taste. I didn't use the money for myself or to do anything bad. When my older sisters' husbands visited our home, I would ask permission and take money from their wallets. I would then use this money to buy sweets for children in need. I also bought them starch syrup.

In any village it is natural that there are people who live well and those who don't. When I would see a child who had brought boiled millet to school for lunch, I couldn't eat my own better lunch of rice. So I would exchange my rice for his millet. I felt closer to the children from poor families than to those from rich families, and I wanted somehow to see to it that they didn't go hungry. This was a kind of game that I enjoyed most of all. I was still a child, but I felt that I wanted to be a friend

to everyone. In fact, I wanted to be more than just friends; I wanted to have relationships where we could share our deepest hearts.

One of my uncles was a greedy man. His family owned a melon patch near the middle of the village, and every summer, when the melons were ripe and giving off a sweet fragrance, the village children would beg him to let them eat some. My uncle, though, set up a tent on the road next to the melon patch and sat there keeping guard, refusing to share even a single melon.

One day I went to him and asked, "Uncle, would it be all right if some time I were to go to your patch and eat all the melon I want?" Uncle willingly answered, "Sure, that would be fine."

So I sent word to all the children that anyone wanting to eat melon should bring a burlap bag and gather in front of my house at midnight. At midnight I led them to my uncle's melon patch and told them, "I want all of you to pick a row of melons, and don't worry about anything." The children shouted with joy and ran into the melon patch. It took only a few minutes for several rows of melons to be picked clean. That night the hungry children of the village sat in a clover field and ate melons until their stomachs almost burst.

The next day there was big trouble. I went to my uncle's home, and it was in pandemonium, like a beehive that had been poked. "You rascal," my uncle shouted at me. "Was this your doing? Are you the one who ruined my entire year's work of raising melons?"

No matter what he said, I was not going to back down. "Uncle," I said, "don't you remember? You told me I could eat all the melons I wanted. The village children wanted to eat melons, and their desire was my desire. Was it right for me to give them a melon each, or should I absolutely not have given them any?" When he heard this, my uncle said, "All right. You're right." That was the end of his anger.

A Definite Compass for My Life

The Moon clan originated in Nampyung, near Naju, Cholla Province, a town about 320 miles south of Seoul, in the southwest region of the country. My great-great-grandfather, Sung Hak Moon, had three sons. The youngest of these was my great-grandfather, Jung Heul Moon, who himself had three sons: Chi Guk, Shin Guk, and Yun Guk. My grandfather, Chi Guk Moon, was the oldest.

Grandfather Chi Guk Moon was illiterate, as he did not attend either a modern elementary school or the traditional village school. His power of concentration was so great, however, that he was able to recite the full text of the Korean translation of San Guo Zhi just by having listened to others read it to him. And it wasn't just San Guo Zhi. When he heard someone tell an interesting story, he could memorize it and retell it in exactly the same words. He could memorize anything after hearing it just once. My father took after him in this way; he could sing from memory the Christian hymnal, consisting of more than four hundred pages.

Grandfather followed the last words of his father to live his life with a spirit of giving, but he was not able to maintain the family fortune. This was because his youngest brother, my Great-Uncle Yun Guk Moon, borrowed money against the family's property and lost it all. Following this

incident, members of the family went through some very hard times, but my grandfather and father never spoke ill of Great-Uncle Yun Guk. This was because they knew he had not lost the money gambling or doing anything of that nature. Instead, he had sent the money to the Provisional Government of the Republic of Korea, based in Shanghai, China. In those days, seventy thousand won was a large sum, and this was the amount that my great uncle donated to the independence movement.

Great-Uncle Yun Guk, a graduate of Pyongyang Seminary and a minister, was an intellectual who was fluent in English and well versed in Chinese studies. He served as the responsible pastor for three churches, including Deok Heung Church in Deok Eon Myeon. He participated in the drafting of the 1919 Declaration of Independence, together with Nam Seon Choe. When it was found, however, that three of the sixteen Christian leaders among the signatories were associated with Deok Heung Church, Great-Uncle had his name removed from the list. Seung Heung Lee, one of the remaining signatories who worked with my great-uncle in establishing the Osan School, asked Great-Uncle Yun Guk to take care of all his affairs in case the independence movement failed and he died at the hands of the Japanese colonial authorities.

On returning to our hometown, Great-Uncle Yun Guk printed tens of thousands of Korean flags and handed them out to the people who poured into the streets to shout their support for Korean independence. He was arrested on March 8 as he led a demonstration on the hill behind the Aipo Myeon administrative office. The demonstration in support of independence was attended by the principal, faculty, and some two thousand students of the Osan School, some three thousand Christians, and some four thousand other residents of the area. He was given a

two-year prison sentence and was imprisoned in the Eui-ju prison. The following year he was released as part of a special pardon.

Even after his release, severe persecution by the Japanese police meant he could never stay long in one place, and he was always on the run. He carried a large scar where the Japanese police had tortured him by stabbing him with a bamboo spear and carving out a piece of his flesh. He was speared in the legs and in the side of his ribs, but he said that he never gave in. When the Japanese found they couldn't break him, they offered him the position of county chief if he would pledge to stop participating in the independence movement. His response was to rebuke the Japanese in a loud voice: "Do you think I would take on a position and work for you thieves?"

When I was about seven or eight years old, Great-Uncle Yun Guk was staying in our home for a short time and some members of the Korean independence army came to see him. They were low on funds and had traveled by night on foot through a heavy snowfall to reach our house. My father covered the heads of us children with a sleeping quilt so that we would not be awakened. I was already wide awake, and I lay there under the quilt, my eyes wide open, listening as best I could to the sounds of the adults talking. Though it was late, my mother killed a chicken and boiled some noodles to serve to the independence fighters.

To this day, I cannot forget the words that I heard Great-Uncle Yun Guk speak as I lay there under the quilt, holding my breath in excitement. "Even if you die," he said, "if you die for the sake of our country, you will be blessed." He continued, "Right now, we can see only darkness before us, but the bright morning is sure to come." Because of the effects of torture, he did not have full use of his body, but his voice resonated with strength.

I also remember thinking to myself then: "Why did such a wonderful person as Great-Uncle have to go to prison? If only we were stronger than Japan, this wouldn't have happened."

Great-Uncle Yun Guk continued to roam about the country, avoiding persecution by the Japanese police, and it was not until 1966, while I was in Seoul, that I received news of him again. Great-Uncle appeared in a dream to one of my younger cousins and told him, "I am buried in Jeong-seon, Kang-won Province." We went to the address he gave in the dream and found that he had passed away nine years before that. We found only a grave mound covered with weeds. I had his remains reburied in Paju, Kyounggi Province, near Seoul.

In the years following Korea's liberation from Japan in 1945, communists in North Korea killed Christian ministers and independence fighters indiscriminately. Great-Uncle Yun Guk, fearing his presence might cause harm to the family, escaped the communists by crossing south over the 38th parallel and settling in Jeong-seon. No one in our family was aware of this. He supported himself in that remote mountain valley by selling calligraphy brushes. Later, we were told that he set up a traditional village school where he taught Chinese classics. According to some of his former students, he often enjoyed spontaneously composing poems in Chinese characters. His students transcribed and preserved some 130 of these, including the following:

South North Peace
南北平和
Ten years have passed since I left home to come South
在前十載越南州
The flow of time speeds my hair to turn white
流水光陰催白頭
I would return North, but how can I?
故園欲去安能去
What was intended as a short sojourn has been prolonged
別界薄遊爲久游
Wearing the long-sleeved ko-hemp clothing of summer
衫長着知當夏
I fan myself with a silk fan and consider what the autumn will bring
紈扇動搖畏及秋
Peace between South and North draws near
南北平和今不遠
Children waiting under the eaves,
You needn't worry so much.
候兒女莫深愁

Though separated from his family and living in Jeong-seon, a land unfamiliar to him in every way, Great-Uncle Yun Guk's heart was filled with concerns for his country. Great-Uncle also left this poetic verse: "When setting your goal in the beginning, pledge yourself to a high standard; don't allow yourself even the least bit of private desire（厥初立志自期高　私慾未嘗容一毫)." My great-uncle's contributions to the independence movement were posthumously recognized by the Republic of Korea government in 1977 with a Presidential Award and

in 1990 with the Order of Merit for National Foundation. Even now, I sometimes recite his poetic verses. They are infused with his steadfast love for his country, even in the face of extreme adversity.

Recently, as I have grown older, I think about Great-Uncle Yun Guk more often. Each phrase of his poetry expressing his heart of concern for his country penetrates into my heart. I have taught our members the song Daehan Jiri Ga (Song of Korean Geography), whose words were written by Great-Uncle Yun Guk himself. I enjoy singing this song with our members. When I sing this song, from Mount Baektu to Mount Halla, I feel relieved of my burdens.

Song of Korean Geography

The peninsula of Korea in the East
Positioned among three countries.
North, the wide plains of Manchuria
East, the deep and blue East Sea,
South, a sea of many islands,
West, the deep Yellow Sea
Food in the seas on three sides,
Our treasure of all species of fish.
Mighty Mount Paektu stands on the North,
Providing water to the Rivers of Amrok and Tumen.
Flowing into seas east and west,
Marking a clear border with the Soviets
Mount Kumgang shines bright in the center,
A preserve for the world, pride of Korea.
Mount Halla rises above the blue South Sea

A landmark for fishermen at sea.
Four plains of Daedong, Hangang, Geumgang, and Jeonju
give our people food and clothing.
Four mines of Woonsan, Soonan, Gaecheon, and Jaeryung
give us the treasures of the Earth.
Four cities of Kyungsung, Pyongyang, Daegu, and Kaesung shine over the land
Four ports of Busan, Wonsan, Mokpo and Incheon
welcome foreign ships.
Railroads spread out from Kyungsung,
Connecting the two main lines, Kyung-Eui and Kyung-Bu
Branch lines Kyung-Won and Honam run north and south,
Cover the peninsula.
Our sites tell us our history.
Pyongyang, 2,000-year-old city of Dangun,
Kaesung, capital of Koryo,
Kyungsung, 500-year capital of Chosun,
Kyungju, 2,000 years of Shilla's culture shines, origin of Pak Hyuk-ko-sai,
Chungchong has Buyo,
the historic capital of Paekche.
Sons of Korea pioneering the future, the waves
of civilization wash against our shores.
Come out of the hills, and march forward in
strength to the world of the future!

Stubborn Child Who Never Gives Up

My father was not good at collecting debts, but if he borrowed money, he would honor the pledge to repay, even if it meant selling the family cow or even removing one of the pillars from our home and selling it at market. He always said, "You can't change the truth with trickery. Anything that is true will not be dominated by a small trick. Anything that is the result of trickery won't go more than a few years before it is exposed."

My father had a large stature. He was so strong that he had no difficulty walking up a flight of stairs carrying a bag of rice on his shoulders. The fact that at age ninety I'm still able to travel around the world and carry on my work is a result of the physical strength I inherited from my father.

My mother, whose favorite Christian hymn was "Higher Ground," was also quite a strong woman. I take after her not only for her wide forehead and round face but for her straightforward and high-spirited personality as well. I have a stubborn streak, and there is no doubt I am my mother's child.

When I was a child, I had the nickname "day crier." I earned this nickname because once I started to cry, I wouldn't stop for the entire

day. When I cried, it would be so loud that people would think something terrible had happened. People sleeping in bed would come outside to see what was going on. Also, I didn't just cry sitting still. I would jump around the room, injuring myself and creating an uproar. Sometimes I would bleed. I had this kind of intense personality even when I was young.

Once my mind was made up, I would never back down, not even if it meant breaking a bone in my body. Of course, this was all before I became mature. When my mother would scold me for doing something wrong, I would talk back to her, saying, "No. Absolutely not!" All I had to do was admit that I was wrong, but I would rather have died than let those words out of my mouth. My mother, though, had quite a strong personality as well.

She would strike me, and say, "You think you can get away with not answering your parent?" Once, she struck me so hard she knocked me down. Even after I got up, I wouldn't give in to her. She just stood in front of me, crying loudly. Even then, I wouldn't admit that I was wrong.

My competitive spirit was as strong as my stubbornness. I couldn't stand to lose in any situation. The adults in the village would say, "Osan's Little Tiny-Eyes, once he decides to do something, he does it."

I don't remember how old I was when this happened. A boy gave me a bloody nose and ran away. For a month after that, I would go to his house every day and stand there, waiting for him to come out. The village adults were amazed to see me persist until finally his parents apologized to me. They even gave me a container full of rice cakes.

This doesn't mean I was always trying to win with stubborn persistence. I was physically much larger and stronger than other children my age. No child could beat me in arm wrestling. I once lost a wrestling match to a boy three years older than I was, and it made me so angry

that I couldn't sit still. I went to a nearby mountain, stripped some bark from an acacia tree, and for the next six months I worked out on this tree every evening to become strong enough to defeat that child. At the end of six months, I challenged him to a rematch and managed to beat him.

Each generation in our family has had many children. I had one older brother, three older sisters, and three younger sisters. I actually had four other younger siblings who were born after Hyo Seon. Mother gave birth to thirteen children, but five did not survive. Her heart must have been deeply tormented. Mother suffered a great deal to raise so many children in circumstances that were by no means plentiful. As a child I had many siblings. If these siblings got together with our first and second cousins, we could do anything. Much time has passed, however, and now I feel as though I am the only one remaining in the world.

I once visited North Korea for a short while, in 1991. I went to my hometown for the first time in 48 years and found that my mother and most of my siblings had passed away. Only one older sister and one younger sister remained. My older sister, who had been like a mother to me when I was a child, had become a grandmother of more than seventy years. My younger sister was older than sixty, and her face was covered with wrinkles. When we were young, I teased my younger sister a lot.

I would shout, "Hey, Hyo Seon, you're going to marry a guy with one eye." And she would come back with, "What did you say? What makes you think you know that, Brother?" Then she would run up behind me and tap me on the back with her tiny fists.

In the year she turned eighteen, Hyo Seon met a man with whom one of our aunts was trying to arrange her marriage. That morning she got up early, carefully combed her hair, and powdered her face. She thoroughly cleaned our home inside and out and waited for her

prospective groom to arrive. "Hyo Seon," I teased her, "you must really want to get married." This made her blush, and I still remember how beautiful she looked with the redness in her face showing through the white powder.

It has been well over ten years since my visit to North Korea. My older sister, who wept so sorrowfully to see me, has since passed away, leaving just my younger sister. It fills me with such anguish. I feel as though my heart may melt away.

I was good with my hands, and I used to make clothes for myself. When it got cold, I would quickly knit myself a cap to wear. I was better at it than the women were, and I would give knitting tips to my older sisters. I once knitted a muffler for Hyo Seon. My hands were as big and thick as a bear's paw, but I enjoyed needlework, and I would even make my own underwear. I would take some cloth off a roll, fold it in half, cut it to the right design, hem it, sew it up, and put it on. When I made a pair of traditional Korean socks for my mother this way, she expressed how much she liked them by saying, "Well, well, I thought Second Son was just fooling around, but these fit me perfectly."

In those days it was necessary to weave cotton cloth as a part of preparations for the marriage of a son or daughter. Mother would take cotton wool and place it on a spinning wheel to make the thread. This was called to-ggaeng-i in the dialect of Pyong-an Province. She would set the width at twenty threads and make twelve pieces of cotton cloth, thirteen pieces of cotton cloth, and so on. Each time a child would marry, cotton cloth as soft and beautiful as processed satin would be created through Mother's coarse hands. Her hands were incredibly quick. Others might weave three or four pieces of to-ggaeng-i fabric in a day, but Mother could weave as many as twenty. When she was in a hurry

to complete the marriage preparations for one of my older sisters, she could weave an entire roll of fabric in a day. Mother had an impatient personality. Whenever she would set her mind to doing something, she would work quickly to get it done. I take after her in that way.

Since childhood, I have always enjoyed eating a wide variety of foods. As a child, I enjoyed eating corn, raw cucumber, raw potato, and raw beans. On a visit to my maternal relatives who lived about five miles away from our home, I noticed something round growing in the field. I asked what it was and was told it was ji-gwa, or "earth fruit." In that neighborhood, people referred to sweet potatoes as earth fruit. Someone dug one up and cooked it for me in steam, so I ate it. It had such a delectable taste that I took a whole basketful of them and ate them all myself. From the following year, I couldn't keep myself away from my maternal relatives' home for more than three days. I would shout out, "Mother, I'm going out for a while," run the whole distance to where they lived, and eat sweet potatoes.

Where we lived, we had what we called "potato pass" in May. We would survive the winter on potatoes, until spring came and we could start harvesting barley. May was a critical period, because if our store of potatoes was depleted before the barley could be harvested, people began to starve. Surviving the time when potato stores were running low and the barley had not yet been harvested was similar to climbing to a steep mountain pass, so we called it potato pass.

The barley we ate then was not the tasty, flat-grained barley that we see today. The grains were more cylindrical in shape, but that was all right with us. We would soak the barley in water for about two days before cooking it. When we sat down to eat, I would press down on the barley with my spoon, trying to make it stick together. It was no use,

though, because when I scooped it up in my spoon, it would just scatter like so much sand. I would mix it with gochujang (red pepper paste) and take a mouthful. As I chewed, the grains of barley would keep coming out between my teeth, so I had to keep my mouth tightly closed.

We also used to catch and eat tree frogs. In those days in rural areas, children would be fed tree frogs when they caught the measles and their faces became thin from the weight loss. We would catch three or four of these frogs that were big and had plenty of flesh on their fat legs. We would roast them wrapped in squash leaves, and they would be very tender and tasty, just as though they had been steamed in a rice cooker. Speaking of tasty, I can't leave out sparrow and pheasant meat, either. We would cook the lovely colored eggs of mountain birds and the waterfowl that would fly over the fields making a loud, gulping call. As I roamed the hills and fields, this is how I came to understand that there was an abundance of food in the natural environment given to us by God.

Loving Nature to Learn from It

My personality was such that I had to know about everything that I could see. I couldn't just pass over something superficially. I would start thinking, "I wonder what the name of that mountain is. I wonder what's up there." I had to go see for myself. While still a child, I climbed to the tops of all the mountains that were in a five-mile radius of our home. I went everywhere, even beyond the mountains. That way, when I saw a mountain shining in the morning sunlight, I could have an image in my mind of what was on that mountain and I could gaze at it in comfort. I hated even to look at places I didn't know. I had to know about everything I could see, and even what was beyond. Otherwise, my mind was so restless that I couldn't endure it.

When I went to the mountains, I would touch all the flowers and trees. I wasn't satisfied just to look at things with my eyes; I had to touch the flowers, smell them, and even put them in my mouth and chew on them. I enjoyed the fragrances, the touch, and the tastes so much that I wouldn't have minded if someone had told me to stick my nose in the brush and keep it there the whole day. I loved nature so much that anytime I went outside, I would spend the day roaming the hills and

fields and forget about having to go home. When my older sisters would go into the hills to gather wild vegetables, I would lead the way up the hill and pick the plants. Thanks to this experience, I know a lot about many kinds of wild vegetables that taste good and are high in nutrition. I was particularly fond of a member of the sunflower family called sseum-ba-gwi (scientific name Ixeris dentata). You could mix it with seasoned bean paste and put it in a dish of gochujang bibimbap, and it would have a wonderful flavor. When you eat sseum-ba-gwi, you need to put it in your mouth and then hold your breath for a few seconds. This is the time it takes for the bitter taste to go away and for a different, sweet taste to come out. It's important to get the correct rhythm to enjoy the wonderful flavor of sseum-ba-gwi.

I used to enjoy climbing trees as well. Mainly I climbed up and down a huge, two-hundred-year-old chestnut tree that was in our yard. I liked the view from the upper branches of that tree. I could see even beyond the entrance to the village. Once I was up there, I wouldn't want to come down. Sometimes, I would be up in the tree until late at night, and the youngest of my older sisters would come out of the house and make a fuss over how dangerous it was and try to get me to come down.

"Yong Myung, please come down," she would say. "It's late, and you need to come in and go to bed."

"If I get sleepy, I can sleep up here."

It didn't matter what she said; I wouldn't budge from my branch in the chestnut tree. Finally, she would lose her temper, and shout at me, "Hey, monkey! Get down here now!"

Maybe it's because I was born in the Year of the Monkey that I enjoyed climbing trees so much. When chestnut burrs hung in clusters from the branches, I would take a broken branch and jump up and

down to knock them down. I remember this being a lot of fun. I feel sorry for children these days who don't grow up in the countryside and don't experience this kind of enjoyment.

The birds flying free in the sky were also objects of my curiosity. Once in a while some particularly pretty birds would come by, and I would study everything I could about them, noticing what the male looked like and what the female looked like. There were no books back then to tell me about the various kinds of trees, shrubs, and birds, so I had to examine each myself. Often I would miss my meals because I would be hiking around the mountains looking for the places where migratory birds went.

Once I climbed up and down a tree every morning and evening for several days to check on a magpie nest. I wanted to see how a magpie lays its eggs. I finally got to witness the magpie lay its eggs, and I became friends with the bird as well. The first few times it saw me, the magpie let out a loud squawk and made a big fuss when it saw me approach. Later, though, I could get close and it would remain still.

The insects in that area were also my friends. Every year, in late summer, a clear-toned cicada would sing in the upper branches of a persimmon tree that was right outside my room. Each summer, I would be grateful when the loud, irritating sounds of the other types of cicada that made noise all summer would suddenly stop and be replaced by the song of the clear-toned cicada. Its song let me know that the humid summer season would soon pass, with the cool autumn to follow.

Their sound went something like this: "Sulu Sulululululu!"

Whenever I would hear the clear-toned cicada sing like this, I would look up into the persimmon tree and think, "Of course, as long as it's going to sing, it has to sing from a high place so that everyone in the

village can hear it and be glad. Who could hear it if it went into a pit and sang?"

I soon realized that both the summer cicadas and the clear-toned cicadas were making sounds for love.

Whether they were singing, "Mem mem mem" or "Suluk sulu," they were making sounds in order to attract their mates. Once I realized this, I couldn't help but laugh every time I heard an insect start singing.

"Oh, you want love, don't you? Go ahead and sing, and find yourself a good mate."

Gradually I learned how to be friends with everything in nature in a way that we could share our hearts with each other.

The Yellow Sea coast was only about two and a half miles from our home. It was near enough that I could easily see it from any high place near our home. There was a series of water pools along the path to the sea, and a creek flowed between them. I would often dig around one of those pools smelling of stale water to catch eel and freshwater mud crab. I would poke around in all sorts of places to catch different kinds of water life, so I came to know where each kind lived. Eels, by nature, do not like to be visible, so they hide their long bodies in crab holes and other similar places. Often, though, they can't quite fit all of their bodies in the holes, so the ends of their tails remain sticking out. I could easily catch them, simply by grabbing the tail and pulling the eel out of its hole. If we had company in our home and they wanted to eat steamed eel, then it was nothing for me to run the three and a half miles round-trip to the water pools and bring back about five eels. During summer vacations, I would often catch more than forty eels in a day.

There was one chore I didn't like doing. This was to feed the cow. Often, when my father would tell me to feed the cow, I would take it to

the meadow of the neighboring village, where I would tie it up and run away. But after a while, I would start to worry about the cow. When I looked back, I could see it was still there, right where I had tied it. It just stayed there, half the day or more, mooing and waiting for someone to come feed it. Hearing the cow mooing in the distance, I would feel sorry for it and think, "That cow! What am I going to do with it?" Maybe you can imagine how I felt to ignore the cow's mooing. Still, when I would go back to it late in the evening, it wouldn't be angry or try to gore me with its horns. Instead it seemed happy to see me. This made me realize that a person's perspective on a major objective in life should be like that of a cow. Bide your time with patience, and something good will come to you.

There was a dog in our home that I loved very much. It was so smart that when it came time for me to come home from school, it would run to meet me when I was still a long distance from home. Whenever it saw me, it acted happy. I would always pet it with my right hand. So, even if it happened to be on my left side, it would go around to my right side and rub its face against me, begging to be petted. Then I would take my right hand and pet it on its head and back. If I didn't, the dog would whine and run circles around me as I walked down the road.

"You rascal," I would say. "You know about love, don't you? Do you like love?"

Animals know about love. Have you ever seen a mother hen sitting on her eggs until they hatch? The hen will keep her eyes open and stamp her foot on the ground so no one can go near it. I would go in and out of the chicken coop, knowing it would make the hen angry. When I would go into the coop, the hen would straighten its neck and try to threaten me. Instead of backing away, I would also act in a threatening manner

toward the hen. After I went into the coop a few times, the hen would just pretend not to see me. But she would keep herself bristled up and her claws long and sharp. She looked like she wanted to swoosh over and attack me, but she couldn't move because of the eggs. So she just sat there in anguish. I would go near and touch her feathers, but she wouldn't budge. It seemed that it was determined not to move from that spot until her eggs had hatched, even if it meant letting someone pluck all the feathers from her bosom. Because it is so steadfastly attached to its eggs through love, the hen has an authority that keeps even the rooster from doing whatever it wants. The hen commands complete authority over everything under heaven, as if to say, "I don't care who you are. You had better not disturb these eggs!"

There is also a demonstration of love when a pig gives birth to piglets. I followed a mother pig around so I could watch it give birth to its litter. At the moment of birth, the mother pig gives a push with a loud grunt and a piglet slips out onto the ground. The pig lets out another loud grunt and a second piglet comes out. It was similar with cats and dogs. It made me very happy to see these little baby animals that hadn't even opened their eyes come into the world. I couldn't help but laugh with joy.

On the other hand, it gave me much anguish to witness the death of an animal. There was a slaughterhouse a little ways from the village. Once a cow was inside the slaughterhouse, a butcher would appear out of nowhere and strike the cow with an iron hammer about the size of a person's forearm. The cow would fall over. In the next moment, it would be stripped of its hide and its legs would be cut off. Life hangs on so desperately that the stumps remaining on the cow after its legs were cut off would continue to quiver. It brought tears to my eyes to watch this, and I cried out loud.

From when I was a child, I have had a certain peculiarity. I could know things that others didn't, as if I had some natural paranormal ability. If I said it was going to rain, then it would rain. I might be sitting in our home and say, "The old man Mr. So-and-So in the next village doesn't feel well today." And it would always be right. From the time I was eight I was well known as a champion matchmaker. I only had to see photographs of a prospective bride and groom and I could tell everything. If I said, "This marriage is bad," and they went ahead and married anyway, they would inevitably break up later. I've been doing this until I've turned 90, and now I can tell much about a person just seeing the way he sits or the way he laughs.

If I focused my thoughts, I could tell what my older sisters were doing at a particular moment. So, although my older sisters liked me, they also feared me. They felt that I knew all their secrets. It may seem like I have some incredible paranormal power, but actually it isn't anything to be surprised about. Even ants, which we often think of as insignificant creatures, can tell when the rainy season is coming, and they go to where they can stay dry. People in tune with nature should be able to tell what is ahead for them. It's not such a difficult thing.

You can tell which way the wind is going to blow by carefully examining a magpie's nest. A magpie will put the entrance to its nest on the opposite side from the direction where the wind is going to blow. It will take twigs in its beak and weave them together in a complex fashion, and then pick up mud with its beak and plaster the top and bottom of the nest so that the rain doesn't get in. It arranges the ends of the twigs so that they all face the same direction. Like a gutter on a roof, this makes the rain flow toward one place. Even

magpies have such wisdom to help them survive, so wouldn't it be natural for people to have this type of ability as well?

If I were at a cow market with my father, I might say, "Father, don't buy this cow. A good cow should look good on the nape of its neck and have strong front hooves. It should have a firm buttocks and back. This cow isn't like that." Sure enough, that cow would not sell. My father would say, "How do you know all this?" and I would reply, "I've known that since I was in mother's womb." Of course, I wasn't serious.

If you love cows, you can tell a lot about them. The most powerful force in the world is love, and the most fearful thing is a mind and body united. If you quiet yourself and focus your mind, there is a place deep down where the mind is able to settle. You need to let your mind go to that place. When you put your mind in that place and go to sleep, then when you awake you will be extremely sensitive. That is the moment when you should turn away all extraneous thoughts and focus your consciousness. Then you will be able to communicate with everything. If you don't believe me, try it right now. Each life form in the world seeks to connect itself with that which gives it the most love. So if you have something that you don't truly love, then your possession or dominion is false and you will be forced to give it up.

Talking about the Universe with the Insects

Spending time in the forest cleanses the mind. The sound of leaves rustling in the wind, the sound of the wind blowing through the reeds, the sound of frogs croaking in the ponds: All you can hear are the sounds of nature; no extraneous thoughts enter the mind. If you empty your mind and receive nature into your entire being, there is no separation between you and nature. Nature comes into you, and you become completely one with nature. In the moment that the boundary between you and nature disappears, you feel a profound sense of joy. Then nature becomes you, and you become nature.

I have always treasured such experiences in my life. Even now, I close my eyes and enter a state in which I am one with nature. Some refer to this as anātman, or "not-self," but to me it is more than that, because nature enters and settles into the place that has been made empty. While in that state, I listen to the sounds that nature hands to me—the sounds of the pine trees, the sounds of the bugs—and we become friends. I could go to a village and know, without meeting anyone, the disposition of the minds of the people living there. I would go into the meadow of the village and spend the night there, then listen to what the crops

in the fields would tell me. I could see whether the crops were sad or happy and that would tell me the kind of people who lived there.

The reason I could be in jail in South Korea and the United States, and even North Korea, and not feel lonely and isolated is that even in jail I could hear the sound of the wind blowing and talk to the bugs that were there with me.

You may ask, "What do you talk about with bugs?" Even the smallest grain of sand contains the principles of the world, and even a speck of dust floating in the air contains the harmony of the universe. Everything around us was given birth through a combination of forces so complex we cannot even imagine it. These forces are closely related to each other. Nothing in the universe was conceived outside the heart of God. The movement of just one leaf holds within it the breathing of the universe.

From childhood, I have had a gift of being able to resonate with the sounds of nature as I roam around the hills and meadows. Nature creates a single harmony and produces a sound that is magnificent and beautiful. No one tries to show off and no one is ignored; there is just a supreme harmony. Whenever I found myself in difficulty, nature comforted me; whenever I collapsed in despair, it raised me back up. Children these days are raised in urban areas and don't have opportunities to become familiar with nature, but developing sensitivity to nature is actually more important than developing our knowledge. What is the purpose of providing a university education to a child who cannot feel nature in his bosom and whose sensitivities are dull? The person separated from nature can gather book knowledge here and there and then easily become an individualistic person who worships material goods.

We need to feel the difference between the sound of spring rain falling like a soft whisper and that of the autumn rain falling with pops and crackles. It is only the person who enjoys resonance with nature who can be said to have a true character. A dandelion blooming by the side of the road is more precious than all the gold in the world. We need to have a heart that knows how to love nature and love people. Anyone who cannot love nature or love people is not capable of loving God. Everything in creation embodies God at the level of symbol, and human beings are substantial beings created in the image of God. Only a person who can love nature can love God.

I did not spend all my time roaming the hills and meadows and playing. I also worked hard helping my older brother run the farm. On a farm there are many tasks that must be done during a particular season. The rice paddies and fields need to be plowed. Rice seedlings need to be transplanted, and weeds need to be pulled. When one is pulling weeds, the most difficult task is to weed a field of millet. After the seeds are planted, the furrows need to be weeded at least three times, and this is backbreaking work. When we were finished, we couldn't straighten our backs for awhile. Sweet potatoes don't taste very good if they are planted in clay. They need to be planted in a mixture of one-third clay and two-thirds sand if they are going to produce the best-tasting sweet potatoes. For corn, human excrement was the best fertilizer, so I would take my hands and break up all the solid excrement into small pieces. By helping out on the farm, I learned what was needed to make beans grow well, what kind of soil was best for soybeans, and what soil was best for red beans. I am a farmer's farmer.

Pyong-an Province was among the first places in Korea to accept Christian culture, so farmland was already arranged in straight lines in

the 1930s and 1940s. To transplant rice seedlings, we would take a pole with twelve equally spaced markings to indicate where the rows would go and lay it across the width of the paddy. Then two people would move along the pole, each planting six rows of seedlings. Later, when I came to the southern part of Korea, I saw that they would put a string across the paddy and have dozens of people splashing around in there. It seemed like a very inefficient way of doing it. I would spread my legs to twice the width of my shoulders so I could plant the seedlings more quickly. During the rice-planting season, I was able to earn enough money to at least cover my own tuition.

Ardent Student

When I turned ten, my father had me attend a traditional school in our village, where an old man taught Chinese classics. At this school, all we had to do was memorize one booklet each day. I would focus myself and complete the memorization in a half hour. If I could stand in front of the schoolmaster and recite that day's lesson, then I was finished for the day. If the schoolmaster dozed off in the early afternoon, I would leave the school and go into the hills and meadows. The more time I spent in the hills, the more I knew where to find edible plants. Eventually, I was eating enough of these plants that I could go without lunch, and I stopped eating lunch at home.

At school, we read the Analects of Confucius and the works of Mencius, and we were taught Chinese characters. I excelled at writing, and by the time I was twelve the schoolmaster had me making the model characters that other students would learn from. Actually, I wanted to attend a formal school, not the traditional village school. I felt I shouldn't be just memorizing Confucius and Mencius when others were building airplanes. This was April, and my father had already paid my full year's tuition in advance. Even though I knew this, I decided to quit the village school and worked to convince my father to send me to a formal

school. I worked on convincing my grandfather and even my uncle. To transfer into elementary school, I had to take an exam. To study for this exam, I had to attend a preparatory school. I convinced one of my younger cousins to go with me, and we both entered the Wonbong Preparatory School and began our studies for the exam to transfer into elementary school.

The next year, when I was fourteen, I passed the exam and transferred into the third grade at Osan School. I had a late start, but I studied hard and was able to skip the fifth grade. Osan School was five miles from our home, but I never missed a day or was ever late for school. Each time I would climb a hill in the road, a group of students would be waiting for me. I would walk so quickly, though, that they would have a hard time keeping up. This is how I traveled that mountain road that was rumored to be a place where tigers sometimes appeared.

The Osan School was a nationalist school established by Yi Sung Hun, who was active in the independence movement. Not only was the Japanese language not taught, but students were actually forbidden to speak Japanese. I had a different opinion on this. I felt that we had to know our enemy if we were to defeat it. I took another transfer exam and entered the fourth grade of the Jung-ju Public Normal School. In public schools, all classes were conducted in Japanese, so I memorized katakana and hiragana the night before my first day of class. I didn't know any Japanese, so I took all the textbooks from grades one through four and memorized them over the course of two weeks. This enabled me to start understanding the language.

By the time I graduated from grammar school, I was fluent in Japanese. On the day of my graduation, I volunteered to give a speech before

a gathering of all the important people in Jung-ju. Normally in that situation, the student is expected to speak about his gratitude for the support received from his teachers and the school. Instead, I referred to each of my teachers by name and critiqued them, pointing out problems in the way the school was run. I also spoke on our time in history and the kind of determination that people in responsible positions should make. I gave this rather critical speech entirely in Japanese.

"Japanese people should pack their bags as soon as possible and go back to Japan," I said. "This land was handed down to us by our ancestors, and all the future generations of our people must live here."

I said these things in front of the chief of police, the county chief, and town mayor. I was taking after the spirit of Great-Uncle Yun Guk Moon and saying things that no one else dared say. The audience was shocked. When I left the stage, I could see people's faces had turned pale. Nothing happened to me that day, but there were problems later on. From that day, the Japanese police marked me as a person to be tracked and began watching me, making a nuisance of themselves. Later, when I was trying to go to Japan to continue my studies, the chief of police refused to place his stamp on a form that I needed, and this caused me some trouble. He regarded me as a dangerous person who should not be allowed to travel to Japan and refused to stamp the form for me. I had a big argument with him and finally convinced him to put his stamp on the form. Only then could I go to Japan.

CHAPTER TWO

A RIVER OF HEART FLOWS WITH TEARS

Between Fear and Inspiration

As I grew older and more mature, I became preoccupied with the question, "What will I be when I grow up?" I enjoyed observing and studying nature, so I gave some thought to becoming a scientist. However, I changed my mind after I saw the tragedy of how people were plundered by the Japanese colonial authorities. They suffered so much that they could not even feed themselves. It didn't seem that becoming a scientist, even if it led to my winning a Nobel Prize, would be a way for me to wipe away the tears of suffering people.

I wanted to become a person who could take away the tears that flowed from people's eyes and the sorrow that was in their hearts. When I was lying in the forest listening to the songs of the birds, I would think, "The world needs to be made as warm and tender as those songs. I should become someone who makes people's lives as fragrant as flowers." I didn't know what career I should pursue to accomplish that, but I became convinced that I should be a person who could give happiness to people.

When I was ten our family converted to Christianity by the grace of Great-Uncle Yun Guk Moon, who was a minister and led a fervent life of faith. From then on, I attended church faithfully, without ever missing a week. If I arrived at service even a little late, I would be so

ashamed that I could not even raise my face. I don't know what I could have understood at such a young age to inspire me to be this way, but God was already a huge presence in my life. I was spending more and more time wrestling with questions dealing with life and death, and the suffering and sorrows of human existence.

When I was twelve, I witnessed my great-grandfather's grave being moved. Normally, only adults in the clan would be allowed to attend such an occasion, but I wanted very much to see for myself what happened to people after they died. I eventually persuaded my parents to allow me to come along. When the grave was dug up and I saw his remains, I was overcome with shock and fear. While the adults opened the grave with solemn ceremony, all I saw was a scrawny skeleton. There was no trace of the features my father and mother had described to me. There was only the hideous sight of white bones.

It took me a while to get over the shock of seeing my great-grandfather's bones. I said to myself, "Great-grandfather must have looked just like us. Does this mean my parents, too, will turn into just a bunch of white bones after they die? Is this what will happen to me when I die? Everyone dies, but after we die, do we just lie there unable to think about anything?" I couldn't get these questions out of my head.

Around that same time, a number of strange events occurred in our home. I have a vivid memory of one in particular. Each time our family wove cloth, we would take the snippets of thread from the spinning wheel and save them in an earthenware jar until we had enough to make a bolt of cloth. The cloth we made from these snippets, called yejang, was a special cloth used when a child in the family was getting married. One night, these snippets were found scattered all over the branches of an old chestnut tree in a neighboring village. They made the tree look

like it had turned white. We couldn't understand who would have taken the snippets from the jar and carried them all the way to the chestnut tree, which was quite a distance from our home, and then spread them all over the tree. It didn't seem like something that could be done by human hands, and it frightened everyone in the village.

When I was sixteen, we experienced the tragedy of having five of my younger siblings die in a single year. No words could describe the heartbreak of our parents in losing five of their thirteen children in such a short time. Death seemed to spread. Other clan members lost their livestock. One home's cow suddenly died, though it had been in perfect health. At another home, several horses died, one after another. At a third home, seven pigs died in one night.

The suffering of one family seemed connected to the suffering of the nation and of the world. I was increasingly troubled to see the wretched situation of the Korean people under Japan's increasingly tyrannical rule. People didn't have enough to eat. They were sometimes forced to take grass, tree bark, and whatever else they could find, and boil these for food. There seemed to be no end to wars around the world. Then one day I read an article in a newspaper about the suicide of a middle-school student who was the same age as I.

"Why did he die?" I asked myself. "What would drive a person to kill himself at such a young age?" I was devastated by this news, as if it had happened to someone who had been close to me. With the newspaper open to that article, I wept aloud for three days and nights. The tears kept coming, and I couldn't make them stop.

I couldn't comprehend the series of strange events, or the fact that tragic events were happening to good people. Seeing the bones of my great-grandfather had inspired me to start asking questions about life

and death, and the series of unusual events in and around our home caused me to hang on to religion. The Word of God I was hearing in church, however, was not sufficient by itself to give me the clear answers I was seeking. To relieve the frustrations in my heart, I naturally began to immerse myself in prayer.

"Who am I? Where did I come from? What is the purpose of life? What happens to people when they die? Is there a world of the eternal soul? Does God really exist? Is God really all-powerful? If He is, why does He just stand by and watch the sorrows of the world? If God created this world, did He also create the suffering that is in the world? What will bring an end to Korea's tragic occupation by Japan? What is the meaning of the suffering of the Korean people? Why do human beings hate each other, fight, and start wars?" My heart was filled with these serious and fundamental questions. No one could easily answer them for me, so my only option was to pray. Prayer helped me to find solace. Whenever I laid out the anguishing problems in my heart to God, all my suffering and sorrow vanished and my heart felt at ease. I began spending more and more time in prayer, to the point that, eventually, I began praying through the night all the time. As a result, I had a rare and precious experience in which God answered my prayers. That day will always remain as the most cherished memory of my life—a day I can never forget.

It was the night before Easter in the year I turned sixteen. I was on Mount Myodu praying all night and begging God in tears for answers. Why had He created a world so filled with sorrow and despair? Why was the all-knowing and all-powerful God leaving the world in such pain? What should I do for my tragic homeland? I wept in tears as I asked these questions repeatedly.

Early Easter morning, after I had spent the entire night in prayer, Jesus appeared before me. He appeared in an instant, like a gust of wind, and said to me, "God is in great sorrow because of the pain of humankind. You must take on a special mission on earth having to do with Heaven's work."

That day, I saw clearly the sorrowful face of Jesus. I heard his voice clearly. The experience of witnessing the manifestation of Jesus caused my body to shake violently, like a quaking aspen's leaves trembling in a strong breeze. I was simultaneously overcome with fear so great I felt I might die and gratitude so profound I felt I might explode. Jesus spoke clearly about the work I would have to do. His words were extraordinary, having to do with saving humanity from its suffering and bringing joy to God.

My initial response was, "I can't do this. How can I do this? Why would you even give me a mission of such paramount importance?" I was truly afraid. I wanted somehow to avoid this mission, and I clung to the hem of his clothing and wept inconsolably.

The More It Hurts, the More You Should Love

I was thrown into extreme confusion. I couldn't open my heart to my parents and share my huge secret with them. But neither could I just keep it to myself. I was at a loss over what to do. What was clear was that I had received a special mission from Heaven. It was such a huge and tremendous responsibility. I shuddered in fear to think that I might not be able to handle it on my own. I clung to prayer even more than before, in an attempt to quiet my confused heart. But even this had no effect. No matter how much I tried, I could not free myself for even a moment from the memory of having met Jesus. In an effort to quiet my heart and my tears, I composed the following poem:

Crown of Glory

When I doubt people, I feel pain.
When I judge people, it is unbearable.
When I hate people, there is no value to my existence.

Yet if I believe, I am deceived.
If I love, I am betrayed.
Suffering and grieving tonight, my head in my hands,
Am I wrong?

Yes I am wrong.
Even though we are deceived, still believe.
Though we are betrayed, still forgive.
Love completely, even those who hate you.

Wipe your tears away and welcome with a smile
Those who know nothing but deceit,
And those who betray without regret.

O, Master, the pain of loving.
Look at my hands.
Place your hand on my chest.
My heart is bursting, such agony.

But when I love those who acted against me,
I brought victory.
If you have done the same things,
I will give you the Crown of Glory.

My encounter with Jesus changed my life completely. His sorrowful expression was etched into my heart as if it had been branded there, and I could not think of anything else. From that day on, I immersed myself completely in the Word of God. At times, I was surrounded by endless darkness and filled with such pain that it was difficult to breathe. At other times, my heart was filled with joy, as though I were watching the morning sun rise above the horizon. I experienced a series of days like these that led me into a deeper and deeper world of prayer. I embraced new words of truth that Jesus was giving me directly and let myself be completely captivated by God. I began to live an entirely different life. I had many things to think about, and I gradually became a boy of few words.

Anyone who follows the path of God must pursue his goal with his whole heart and total dedication. It requires a steadfastness of purpose. I am stubborn by birth, so I have always had plenty of tenacity. I used this God-given tenacity to overcome difficulties and follow the way that was given me. Anytime I began to waver, I steadied myself by remembering: "I received God's word directly." It was not easy to choose this course, because it would require me to sacrifice the rest of my youth. At times, I felt I would rather avoid the path.

A wise person will place hope in the future and continue to move forward, no matter how difficult it may be. A foolish person, on the other hand, will throw away his future for the sake of immediate happiness. I, too, at times held foolish thoughts when I was still very young, but in the end I chose the path of the wise person. I gladly offered up my life in order to pursue the way God desired. I could not have run away if I tried; this was the only way I could have chosen.

So why did God call me? Even now, at ninety years of age, I wonder every day why God called me. Of all the people in the world, why did He choose me? It wasn't because I had a particularly good appearance, or outstanding character, or deep conviction. I was just an unremarkable, stubborn, and foolish young boy. If God saw something in me, it must have been a sincere heart that sought Him with tears of love. Whatever the time or place, love is most important. God was searching for a person who would live with a heart of love and who, when faced with suffering, could cut off its effects with love. I was a boy in a rural village with nothing to show for myself. Even now, I insist uncompromisingly on sacrificing my life to live for God's love and nothing else.

There was nothing I could know on my own, so I took all my questions to God. I asked, "God, do You really exist?" and that was how I came to know that He did, in fact, exist. I asked, "God, do You have any cherished desires?" and this was how I came to know that He, too, had cherished desires. I asked Him, "God, do You need me?" and this was how I discovered that He had use for me.

On those days when my prayers and dedication connected to Heaven, Jesus appeared to me without fail and conveyed special messages. If I was earnest in my desire to know something, Jesus would appear with a gentle expression and give me answers of truth. His words were always on the mark, and they struck deep into my bosom like sharp arrows. These were not mere words; they were revelations about the creation of the universe that opened the door to a new world. When Jesus spoke, it seemed like a soft breeze, but I took his words to heart and prayed with an earnestness strong enough to uproot a tree. Gradually, I came into a new realization about God's purpose in creating the universe and His principles of creation.

During the summer of that year, I went on a pilgrimage around the country. I had no money. I would go to homes and ask to be fed. If I was lucky, I caught a ride on a truck. This was how I visited every corner of the country. Everywhere I went, I saw that my homeland was a crucible of tears. There was no end to the sorrowful sighs of suffering from hungry people. Their woeful lamentations turned to tears that flowed like a river.

"This wretched history must end as quickly as possible," I told myself. "Our people must not be left to suffer in sorrow and despair. Somehow, I need to find a way to go to Japan and to America so that I can let the world know the greatness of the Korean people."

Through this pilgrimage, I was able to redouble my determination toward my future work.

As I clenched my two fists, my mind became totally focused, and I could see clearly the path I had to follow in my life: "I absolutely will save our people and bring God's peace on this earth."

A Knife Not Sharpened Grows Dull

After completing grammar school, I moved to Seoul and lived alone in the Heuksok Dong neighborhood while attending the Kyongsong Institute of Commerce and Industry. The winter in Seoul was extremely cold. It was normal for the temperature to fall to minus twenty degrees Celsius, and when it did, the Han River would freeze over. The house where I lived was on a ridge, and there was no running water. We drew our water from a well that was so deep it took more than ten arm-lengths of rope for the pail to reach the water below. The rope kept breaking, so I made a chain and attached it to the pail. Each time I brought water up, though, my hands would freeze to the chain and I could only keep them warm by blowing on them.

To fight the cold, I used my knitting talents. I made a sweater, thick socks, a cap, and gloves. The hat was so stylish that when I wore it around town people would think I was a woman.

I never heated my room, even on the coldest winter days, mainly because I didn't have the money to do so. I also felt that having a roof over my head when I slept meant that I was living in luxury compared to homeless people forced to find ways to keep themselves warm on the streets. One day, it was so cold I slept while holding a light bulb against

my body under the quilt, like a hot-water bottle. During the night, I burned myself on the hot bulb, causing some skin to peel. Even now, when someone mentions Seoul, the first thing that comes to mind is how cold it was back then.

My meals consisted of a bowl of rice and never more than one side dish, whereas average Korean meals include up to twelve side dishes. It was always one meal, one dish. One side dish was enough. Even today, because of the habit I formed while living alone, I don't need many side dishes at my meals. I prefer to have just one side dish that is prepared well. When I see a meal that has been prepared with many side dishes, it only seems troublesome to me. I never ate lunch while attending school in Seoul. I became accustomed to eating just two meals a day while roaming around the hills as a child. I continued this lifestyle until I was nearly thirty.

My time in Seoul gave me a good understanding of how much work goes into managing a household.

I returned to Heuksok Dong in the 1980s and was surprised to find the house where I once lived still standing. The room where I lived and the courtyard where I used to hang my laundry were still there. I was sad to see, though, that the well where I had to blow on my hands while pulling up pails of water was gone.

During my time in Heuksok Dong, I adopted for myself the motto, "Before seeking to dominate the universe, first perfect your ability to dominate yourself." This means that to have the strength to save the nation and save the world, I first had to train my own body. I trained myself through prayer and meditation and through sports and exercise programs. As a result, I would not be swayed by hunger or any other emotion or desire of the physical body. Even when I ate a meal, I would

say, "Rice, I want you to become the fertilizer for the work that I am preparing myself to do." I learned boxing, soccer, and self-defense techniques. Because of this, although I have gained some weight since I was young, I still have the flexibility of a young person.

Kyongsong Institute of Commerce and Industry had a policy that the students would take turns cleaning their own classrooms. In my class, I decided to clean the classroom every day by myself. I did not do this as some kind of punishment. It was an expression of my desire that welled up naturally from within to love the school more than anyone else. In the beginning, others would try to help, but they could see I didn't appreciate this and preferred to do it alone. Eventually my classmates decided, "Go ahead. Do it by yourself." And so the cleaning became my job.

I was an unusually quiet student. Unlike my classmates, I didn't engage in idle chatter, and I would often go an entire day without speaking a word. This may have been the reason that, although I never engaged in physical violence, my classmates treated me with respect and were careful how they acted in my presence. If I went to the toilet and there was a line of students waiting their turn, they would immediately let me go first. If someone had a problem, I was frequently the one they sought out for advice.

I was very persistent in asking questions during class, and there were more than a few teachers who were stumped by my questions. For example, when we were learning a new formula in mathematics or physics class, I would ask, "Who made this formula? Please explain it to us step by step so that I can understand it exactly," and refused to back down until I got clear answers. I was relentless with my teachers, digging deeper and deeper. I couldn't accept any principle in the world

until I had taken it apart and figured it out for myself. I found myself wishing I had been the person to first discover such a beautiful formula. The stubborn character that had made me cry all night as a little boy was making its appearance in my studies as well. Just as when I prayed, I poured myself completely into my studies and invested my full sincerity and dedication.

Any task we do requires sincerity and dedication, and not just for a day or two. It needs to be a continuous process. A knife used once and never sharpened turns dull. The same is true with sincerity and dedication. We need to continue our efforts on a daily basis with the thought that we are sharpening our blade daily. Whatever the task, if we continue the effort in this way, we eventually reach a mystical state. If you pick up a paintbrush and focus your sincerity and dedication on your hand and say to yourself, "A great artist will come and help me," and concentrate your mind, you can create a wonderful painting that will inspire the world.

I dedicated myself to learning how to speak faster and more accurately than anyone else. I would go into a small anteroom where no one could hear me and practice tongue-twisters out loud. I practiced pouring out what I wanted to say very quickly. Eventually, I was able to say ten words in the time that it took others to say just one. Even now, though I am old, I can speak very quickly. Some say that I speak so quickly that they have difficulty understanding me, but my heart is in such a hurry that I cannot bear to speak slowly. My mind is full of things I want to say. How can I slow down?

In that sense, I am very much like my grandfather, who enjoyed talking with people. Grandfather could go three or four hours talking to people in our home's guest room, explaining to them his views on

the events of the day. I am the same way. When I am with people and there is good communication of heart, I completely lose track of time, and I don't know if night is falling or if the sun is rising. The words in my heart form an unstoppable flow. When I am like this, I don't want to eat; I just want to talk. It's difficult for the people who are listening, and beads of sweat begin to appear on their foreheads. Sweat is running down my face, too, as I continue talking, and they dare not ask to excuse themselves and leave. We often end up staying up all night together.

A Key to Unlock a Great Secret

Just as I had climbed all the mountain peaks around my hometown, I explored every corner of Seoul. In those days, there was a streetcar line that ran from one end of the city to another. The price of a ticket was just five jeon, but I didn't want to spend that money and would walk all the way into the center of the city. On hot summer days, I would be dripping with sweat as I walked, and on frigid winter days I would walk almost at a run, as if piercing my way through a bitter arctic wind. I walked so quickly that I could go from Heuksok Dong, across the Han River to the Hwa Shin Department Store on Jong Ro in just forty-five minutes. Most people would take an hour and a half, so you can imagine how quickly I was walking. I saved the price of a streetcar ticket and gave the money to people who needed it more than I did. It was such a small amount it was embarrassing to give it, but I gave it with a heart that desired to give a fortune. I gave it with a prayer that this money would be a seed for the person to receive many blessings.

Every April, my family would send me money for tuition. But I couldn't stand by and watch people around me who were in financial difficulty, so the money wouldn't even last to May. Once, when I was on my way to school, I came across a person who was so sick he seemed

about to die. I felt so bad for him I couldn't pass him by. I carried him on my back to a hospital about a mile and a quarter away. I had the money I intended to use to pay my tuition, so I paid the bill. However, once I paid the hospital, I had nothing left. In the following days, the school repeatedly demanded I pay my tuition. My friends felt sorry for me and took up a collection for me. I can never forget the friends who helped me through that situation.

The giving and receiving of help is a relationship that is matched in heaven. You might not realize it at the time, but thinking back later, you may understand, "Oh, so that's why God sent me there at that time!" So if a person who needs your help suddenly appears before you, you should realize that Heaven sent you to that person to help him, and then do your best. If Heaven wants you to give the person ten units of help, it won't do if you only give him five. If Heaven says to give him ten, you should give him a hundred. When helping someone, you should be ready, if necessary, to empty your wallet.

In Seoul, I came across baram ddok, literally "wind rice cake," for the first time in my life. These are colorful rice cakes made in a beautiful design. When I first saw one, I was amazed at how wonderful they looked. When I bit into one, however, I discovered they had no filling, only air. They just collapsed in my mouth.

This made me realize something about Seoul at that time. Seoul was just like a wind rice cake. I understood why people in Seoul were often thought of as misers by other Koreans. On the surface, Seoul seemed like a world filled with rich and important people. In reality, though, it was full of poor people. Many beggars, clothed only in rags, lived under the Han River Bridge. I visited them, cut their hair for them, and shared my heart with them. Poor people have many tears. They have a lot of

sorrow pent up in their hearts. I would just say a few words to someone, and he would break down in tears. Sometimes, one of them would hand me rice he had been given as he begged. He would hand it to me with hands caked in dirt. I never refused the food. I received it with a joyful heart.

I attended church every Sunday in my hometown, and I continued this practice in Seoul. Mainly, I attended the Myungsudae Jesus Church located in Heuksok Dong and the Seobinggo Pentecostal Church that held services on a stretch of sand on the opposite shore of the Han River. On cold winter days, as I was walking across the frozen river to Seobinggo Dong, the ice would make crackling sounds under my feet. At church I served as a Sunday School teacher. The children always enjoyed my interesting lessons. I am no longer as adept at telling jokes as I was when I was young, but back then I could tell funny stories. When I wept, they wept with me, and when I laughed, they laughed along with me. I was so popular with them that they would follow me around wherever I went.

Behind Myungsudae is Mount Seodal, also known as Mount Darma. I would often climb up on a large boulder on Mount Darma and spend the night in prayer. In hot weather and in cold, I immersed myself in prayer without missing a night. Once I entered into prayer, I would weep, and my nose would start to run. I would pray for hours over words I had received from God. His words were like coded messages, and I felt I needed to immerse myself even more deeply in prayer. Thinking back on it now, I realize that even then God had placed in my hands the key that unlocked the door to secrets. However, I wasn't able to open the door, because my prayers were insufficient. I was so preoccupied that, when I ate my meals, it didn't feel as though I were eating. At bedtime, I would close my eyes, but I couldn't fall asleep.

Other students rooming in the same house didn't realize I was going up on the hill to pray. They must have felt I was somehow different, though, because they related to me with respect. Generally, we got along well, making each other laugh by telling funny stories. I can relate well with anyone. If an old woman comes to me, I can be her friend. If children come, I can play with them. You can have communication of heart with anyone by relating to them with love.

Mrs. Gi Wan Lee became close to me after she was inspired by my prayers during early-morning services at the church. We maintained our friendship for more than fifty years, until she left this world at age eighty. Her younger sister, Mrs. Gi Bong Lee, was always busy managing the rooming house, but she related to me with warmth. She would say she didn't feel right unless she could find something to do for me. She would try to give me extra side dishes for my meals. I didn't talk much and wasn't much fun, so I don't know why she would want to treat me so well. Some time later, when the Japanese colonial police were holding me in the Kyounggi Province Police Station, she brought me clothes and food. Even now it warms my heart to think of her.

There was also a Mrs. Song who ran a small store near my rooming house. She helped me a lot during this time. She would say that anyone who lives away from his hometown is always hungry, and she would bring me items from her store that she had not been able to sell. It was a small store, and she barely made enough money to support herself, but she always took care of me with a kind heart.

One day, we held a service on a sandy stretch by the Han River. When it came time for lunch, everyone found a place to sit down and eat. I was in the habit of not eating lunch and didn't feel comfortable sitting there doing nothing while others ate. I quietly walked away from the group

and found a place to sit on a pile of rocks. Mrs. Song saw me there and brought me two pieces of bread and some flavored ice. How grateful I felt! These were just one jeon apiece, and only four jeon in total, but I have never been able to forget the gratitude I felt in that moment.

I always remember when someone helps me, no matter how small it may be. Even now that I am ninety years old, I can recite from memory all the times that people helped me and what they did for me. I can never forget the people who did not hesitate to put themselves to great trouble on my behalf and generously gave me their blessings.

If I receive a favor, it is important to me that I repay it. If I cannot meet the person who did this for me, it is important for me to remember that person in my heart. I need to live with the sincere thought that I will repay the person by helping someone else.

Like a Fireball Burning Hot

After graduating from the Kyongsong Institute in 1942, I traveled to Japan to continue my studies. I went because I felt that I needed to have exact knowledge about Japan. On the train to Busan, I couldn't stop the tears from flowing. I covered myself with my coat and cried out loud. My nose ran and my face swelled up, I cried so much. It grieved me to think that I was leaving my country behind as it suffered under the yoke of colonial rule. I looked out the window as I wept, and I could see that the hills and rivers were weeping even more sorrowfully than I was. I saw with my own eyes the tears flowing from the grass and trees. Upon seeing this vision, I said, "I promise to the hills and streams of my homeland that I will return, carrying with me the liberation of my homeland. So don't cry, but wait for me."

I boarded the Busan-to-Shimonoseki ferry at two o'clock in the morning on April 1. There was a strong wind that night, but I could not leave the deck. I stayed there watching as the lights of Busan became more and more distant. I stayed on deck until morning. On arriving in Tokyo, I entered Waseda Koutou Kougakko, a technical engineering school affiliated with Waseda University. I studied in the electrical engineering department. I chose electrical engineering because I felt I

could not establish a new religious philosophy without knowing modern engineering.

The invisible world of mathematics has something in common with religion. To do something great, a person needs to excel in powers of reasoning. Perhaps because of my large head, I was good at mathematics that others found difficult, and I enjoyed studying it. My head was so large it was difficult for me to find hats that fit. I had to go to the factory twice to have a hat tailor-made for me. The size of my head may also have something to do with my ability to focus on something and finish relatively quickly what might take others several years to complete.

During my studies in Japan, I peppered my teachers with questions, just as I had in Korea. Once I began asking questions, I would continue and continue. Some teachers would pretend not to see me and simply ignore me when I asked, "What do you think about this?" If I had any doubts about something, I couldn't be satisfied until I had pursued the matter all the way to the root. I wasn't deliberately trying to embarrass my teachers. I felt that, if I were going to study a subject, I should study it completely.

On my desk in the boarding house, I always had three Bibles lying open side by side. One was in Korean, one in Japanese, and one in English. I would read the same passages in three languages again and again. Each time I read a passage, I would underline verses and make notes in the margins until the pages of my Bibles became stained with black ink and difficult to read.

Soon after school began, I attended an event held by the Association of Korean Students to welcome new students from our country. There I sang a song from our homeland with great fervor, showing everyone my love for my country. The Japanese police were in attendance, and

this was a time when Koreans were expected to assimilate themselves into Japanese culture. Nonetheless, I sang the Korean song with pride. Dong Moon Eom, who had entered the department of architectural engineering that year, was deeply moved to hear me sing this song, and we became lifelong friends.

During this time, Korean students who were enrolled in various schools in the Tokyo area had formed an underground independence movement. This was only natural, as our homeland was groaning in agony under Japanese colonial rule.

The movement grew in response to what the Japanese called "the Great East Asian War (1937–1945). As the war intensified, Tokyo began conscripting Korean students as "student soldiers" and sending them to the front. The work of the underground independence movement was spurred on by such moves. We had extensive debates on what to do about Hirohito, the Japanese emperor. I took on a major position in the movement. It involved working in close relationship with the Republic of Korea Provisional Government, located in Shanghai and headed by Kim Gu. My responsibilities in this position could have required me to give up my life. I did not hesitate, though, because I felt that, if I died, it would have been for a righteous cause.

There was a police station beside Waseda University. The Japanese police got wind of my work and kept a sharp eye on me. The police always knew when I was about to return home to Korea during school vacation and would follow me to the dock to make sure I left. I cannot even remember the number of times I was taken into custody by the police, beaten, tortured, and locked in a cell. Even under the worst torture, however, I refused to give them the information they sought. The more they beat me, the bolder I became. Once I had a fight on the

Yotsugawa Bridge with police who were chasing me. I ripped out a piece of the bridge railing and used it as a weapon in the fight. In those days, I was a ball of fire.

Befriending Laborers by Sharing Their Suffering

Just as I had done in Seoul, I made it a point to go everywhere in Tokyo. When my friends would go to places such as Nikko to see the beautiful scenery, I would prefer to stay behind and walk through all the neighborhoods of Tokyo. I found that it was a city that looked fancy on the outside but was actually filled with impoverished people. Again I gave all the money that I received from home to the poor people.

Back then everyone in Japan was hungry too. Among the Korean students there were many who were in financial difficulty. When I received my allotment of meal tickets each month I would give them all away to students who couldn't afford them and told them, "Eat. Eat all you want." I didn't worry about earning money. I could go anywhere and work as a day laborer and be fed. I enjoyed earning money and using the money to help pay the tuition of students who didn't have money. Helping others and giving them food to eat filled me with energy.

After I had given away all the money I had, I would work as a deliveryman using a bicycle-drawn cart. I went to every district of Tokyo with that cart. Once, in Ginza, with its dazzling lights, I was carrying a

telephone pole on my cart and it turned over in the middle of an intersection. Everyone around ran for their lives. Because of these kinds of experiences I still know the geography of Tokyo like the back of my hand.

I was a laborer among laborers and a friend to laborers. Just like the laborers who smelled of sweat, I would go to the work sites and work until the sweat was pouring down my body. They were my brothers, and I didn't mind the terrible smells. I shared sleeping quilts with them that were so filthy that black lice crawled across them in a line formation. I didn't hesitate to grasp hands that were caked with dirt. Their sweat mixed with grime was filled with an irresistible warmth of heart. It was their warm hearts that I found so attractive.

Primarily I worked as a laborer at the Kawasaki steel mill and shipyard. In the shipyard there were barges used to haul coal. We would form teams of three laborers each and work until one o'clock in the morning to fill a barge with 120 tons of coal. We Koreans could do in one night what it took the Japanese three days to accomplish.

There were people at some work sites who extorted the blood and sweat of the laborers. Often these were the foremen who directly managed the laborers. They would take 30 percent of the money earned by the laborers they managed and keep it for themselves. The laborers were powerless to do anything about this. The foremen would exploit the weak but curry favor with those who were strong. I became so angry with one foreman that I finally went to him with two friends and demanded that he pay the workers their full wages.

"If you make someone work, then pay him exactly what he is owed," I told him.

He still refused, so we went to him a second day and even a third day. We were determined to keep up the pressure until he relented. Finally I

kicked him and made him fall down. I am normally a quiet and passive person, but when I become angry the stubborn character of my younger years comes back.

The Kawasaki steel mill had vats used to store sulfuric acid. Workers would clean these by going into them and making the raw material flow out. The fumes from the sulfuric acid were extremely toxic, and a person could not remain inside for more than fifteen minutes. Even in such deplorable working conditions, the workers risked their lives in order to have food to eat. Food was that precious.

I was always hungry. I was careful, though, to never eat a meal for my own sake. I felt there needed to be a specific reason for me to eat a particular meal. So as I would sit down to each meal I would ask myself the reasons for my hunger: "Did I really work hard? Did I work for myself, or for a public purpose?" I would face a bowl of rice and tell it, "I am eating you so that I can do tasks that are more glorious and more for the public good than what I did yesterday." Then the rice would smile back at me with its approval. In those instances, the time spent eating a meal was mystical and joyful. When I didn't feel qualified to talk this way, I would skip the meal no matter how hungry I might be. As a result, there were not many days when I would have even two meals.

I didn't limit myself to two meals a day because I had a small appetite. In fact, once I began to eat there was no limit to the amount I could consume. I once ate eleven large bowls of udon in one sitting. Another time I ate seven bowls of a dish consisting of chicken and a fried egg over rice. Despite this appetite I kept up my custom of not eating lunch and limiting myself to two meals a day until I was more than thirty years old.

The sensation of hunger is a type of nostalgia. I knew very well about the nostalgia of hunger, but I believed it was the least I could do to

sacrifice one meal a day for the sake of the world. I also never allowed myself to wear new clothes. No matter how cold it might get, I would not heat my room. When it was extremely cold I used a newspaper to cover myself; it felt as warm as a quilt made of silk. I am very familiar with the value of a sheet of newspaper.

At times I would simply go live for a while in an area of Shinagawa where poor people lived. I slept with them, using rags for cover. On warm sunny days I picked lice from their hair and ate rice with them. There were many prostitutes on the streets of Shinagawa. I would listen to them tell me about themselves, and I became their best friend without ever drinking a drop of liquor. Some people claim they need to be drunk in order to speak candidly about what is on their mind, but that is just an excuse. When these women realized that I was sincere in my sympathy for them, even without drinking any liquor, they opened their hearts to me and told me their troubles.

I worked in many different jobs during my studies in Japan. I was a janitor in an office building. I wrote letters for illiterate people. I worked at various job sites and was a foreman. I was a fortune teller. When I needed money quickly, I wrote calligraphy and sold it. I never fell behind in my studies, however. I believed that all these things were part of my training process. I did all sorts of jobs and met all sorts of people. In the process I learned a lot about people. Because I had this experience I can now take one look at a person and have a good idea of what the person does for a living and whether he is a good person. I don't have to weigh various thoughts in my head, because my body will tell me first.

I still believe that to develop good character a person needs to experience many difficulties before turning thirty. People need to go

down into the crucible of despair at the bottom of human existence and experience what that is like. People need to discover new possibilities in the midst of hell. It is only when climbing out of the depths of despair and making a new determination that we can be reborn as people able to pioneer a new future.

We should not look only in one direction. We should look at both those who are in a higher position and those lower. We should know to look east, west, south, and north. To live a successful life depends on how well we see with our mind's eye. To see well with the mind's eye we must have many different experiences and remember them. Even in the most difficult situations we should maintain our composure, demonstrate warmth toward others, be self-reliant, and adapt well to any circumstance.

A person of good character must be accustomed to rising to a high position and then quickly falling to a low position. Most people are afraid of falling from a high position, so they do everything they can to preserve it. However, water that does not flow becomes stale. A person who rises to a high position must be able to go back down and wait for the time to come again. When the opportunity comes, he can rise to an even higher position than before. This is the type of person who can acquire a greatness that is admired by many people and is a great leader. These are the experiences that a person should have before turning thirty.

Today I tell young people to experience everything they can in the world. They need to directly or indirectly experience everything in the world, as if they were devouring an encyclopedia. It is only then that they can form their own identity. A person's self-identity is his clear subjective nature. Once a person has the confidence to say, "I can go all around the country, and I will never come across a person who is

capable of defeating me," then he is ready to take on any task and have the confidence to accomplish it successfully. When a person lives life in this way, he will be successful. Success is assured. This is the conclusion I arrived at while living as a beggar in Tokyo.

I shared meals and slept with laborers in Tokyo, shared the grief of hunger with beggars, learned the hard life, and earned my doctorate in the philosophy of suffering. Only then was I able to understand God's will as He works to bring salvation to humanity. It is important to become the king of suffering before age thirty. The way to gain the glory of the Kingdom of Heaven is to become a king of suffering and earn your doctorate in that philosophy.

The Calm Sea of the Heart

Japan's situation in the war became increasingly desperate. In the urgent need to replenish the shrinking ranks of its military, it began giving early graduation to students and sending them to the war front. For this reason, I, too, was graduated six months early. Once my graduation date was set for September 30, 1943, I sent a telegram to my family saying, "Will return on Konron Maru," giving the name of the ship I was scheduled to board in Shimonoseki for Busan. However, on the day I was to leave Tokyo for the trip back to Korea, I had a strange experience in which my feet stuck to the ground, preventing me from moving. As hard as I tried, I could not pick my feet up off the ground to go to the train at the Tokyo station.

I told myself, "It must be that Heaven doesn't want me to board that ship." So I decided to stay in Japan a while longer and went with my friends to climb Mount Fuji. When I returned to Tokyo a few days later, I found the country in an uproar over news that the Konron Maru, the ship I was supposed to be on, had been sunk on its way to Busan. I was told that more than five hundred university students had been killed. Konron Maru was a large ship in which Japan took great pride, but it had been sunk by an American torpedo.

When my mother heard the news that the ship her son was scheduled to board had been sunk, she immediately ran out of the house without even thinking to put on her shoes. She ran barefoot five miles to the train station and went directly to Busan. When she arrived at the Maritime Police Station in Busan, she discovered my name was not on the passenger manifest. The boarding house in Tokyo, however, told her that I had packed my bags and left. This put her in total confusion and agony. She just kept calling my name, not even realizing that she had large splinters in her bare feet.

I can easily imagine how she must have been beside herself with worry that something might have happened to her son. I can understand my mother's heart, but from the day I chose to follow God's path I became a terrible son to her. I couldn't afford to let myself be tied down by personal emotions. So I had not sent word that I had not boarded the ship that had been sunk, even though I knew she would be deeply concerned for my safety.

Upon finally returning to Korea, I found nothing had changed. Japan's tyrannical rule was becoming worse by the day. The entire land was soaked in blood and tears. I returned to Heuksok Dong in Seoul and attended the Myungsudae Church. I kept detailed diaries of all the new realizations that I had each day. On days when I had a great number of such realizations, I would fill an entire diary. I was receiving answers to many of the questions that I had struggled with over the years. It was as if my years of prayers and search for truth were being answered. It happened in a short time, as if a ball of fire were passing through me.

During this time I had the realization, "The relationship between God and mankind is that of a father and his children, and God is deeply saddened to see their suffering." In this moment all the secrets of the

universe were resolved in my mind. Suddenly, it was as if someone had turned on a movie projector. Everything that had happened since the time humankind broke God's commandment played out clearly before my eyes. Hot tears flowed continuously from my eyes. I fell to my knees and bowed my head to the floor. For the longest time I couldn't get up. Just as when my father had carried me home on his back as a child, I laid my body down in God's lap and let the tears flow. Nine years after my encounter with Jesus, my eyes had finally been opened to the true love of God.

God created Adam and Eve and sent them into this world to be fruitful, to multiply, and to bring about a world of peace where they would live. But they could not wait for God's time. They committed fornication and bore two sons, Cain and Abel. The children who were born from the Fall did not trust each other and brought about an incident where one brother murdered the other. The peace of this world was shattered, sin covered the world, and God's sorrow began. Then humankind committed another terrible sin by killing Jesus, the Messiah. So the suffering that humanity experiences today is a process of atonement that it must pass through as God's sorrow continues.

Jesus had appeared to me as a boy of sixteen because he wanted me to know the root of the Original Sin that humankind had committed and to bring about a world of peace where sin and the Fall would no longer exist. I had received God's serious word to atone for the sins of humanity and bring about the world of peace that God had originally created. The world of peace that is God's desire is not someplace we go to after death. God wants this world, where we live now, to be the completely peaceful and happy world that He created in the beginning. God certainly did not send Adam and Eve into the world for them to suffer. I had to let the world know this incredible truth.

Having discovered the secrets of the creation of the universe, I felt my heart become like a calm ocean. My heart was filled with the word of God. It felt as though it might explode, and my face was always shining with joy.

"Please Don't Die"

I continued to devote myself to prayer, and I came to feel intuitively that the time had come for me to marry. Because I had decided to follow God's path, everything about my life had to be done in accordance with God's will. Once I came to know something through prayer, I had no choice but to follow. So I went to one of my aunts who had much experience in arranging marriages and asked her to introduce me to a suitable wife. This is how I met Seon Gil Choi, the daughter of a prominent Christian family in Jung-ju.

She was a well-raised woman from an upright family. She had attended only elementary school, but she had a character that disliked having to cause even the slightest trouble to others. Her character was so strong and her Christian faith so deep that she had been imprisoned at age sixteen for refusing to comply with a Japanese colonial requirement that all Koreans worship at Shinto shrines. I was told that I was the twenty-fourth man to be considered as her groom, so it seems she was very selective about whom she would marry. Once I returned to Seoul, however, I completely forgot I had even met the woman.

My plan after completing my studies in Japan had been to travel to Hailar, China, a city on the border between China, Russia, and Mongolia.

My school in Tokyo had arranged a job for me with the Manchuria Electric Company, and my plan was to work in Hailar for about three years while learning Russian, Chinese, and Mongolian. Just as I had earlier sought out a school that would teach me Japanese so that I could win over the Japanese, I wanted to go to this border city and learn a number of foreign languages as a way of preparing myself for the future. It was becoming increasingly clear, however, that Japan was heading for defeat in the war. I decided that it would be better for me not to go to Manchuria. So I stopped by a branch office of the Manchuria Electric Company in Andung (present-day Dandong) and submitted paperwork to cancel my job placement. I then headed for my hometown. When I arrived, I found that the aunt whom I had asked to arrange my marriage was in great distress. Apparently, the woman I had met was refusing to consider anyone other than me as her partner and was causing great trouble for her family. My aunt took me by the arm and led me to the Choi family home.

I explained to Seon Gil Choi clearly about the kind of life I intended to lead.

"Even if we marry now, you should be prepared to live without me for at least seven years," I told her.

"Why should I do that?" she responded.

I told her, "I have a task that is more important than family life. In fact, my reason for getting married has to do with my ability to carry out God's providence. Our marriage needs to develop beyond the family to the point where we can love the nation and all humanity. Now that you know that this is my intention, do you truly want to marry me?"

She responded with a firm voice: "It doesn't matter to me. After I met you, I dreamed of a field of flowers in the moonlight. I am certain that

you are my spouse sent from Heaven. I can endure any difficulty."

I was still concerned, and I pressed her several times. Each time she sought to set my mind at ease, saying, "I am willing to do anything, as long as I am able to marry you. Don't worry about anything."

My future father-in-law passed away a week before our scheduled wedding date, so our wedding was delayed. We were finally able to hold our ceremony on May 4, 1944. Normally May is a time for beautiful spring days, but on our wedding day it rained heavily. Rev. Ho Bin Lee of the Jesus Church officiated. Later, after Korea's liberation from Japan, Reverend Lee would go to South Korea and establish an ecumenical seminary called the Jung-ang Seminary. My wife and I began our married life in my boarding room in Heuksok Dong. I truly loved her and took such good care of her that the mistress of the boarding house would say, "Oh my, you must really love her, since you treat her as if you were handling an egg."

I got a job at the Kyongsong branch of the Kashima Gumi Construction Company in Yongsan in order to support our family while I also carried out church work. Then, one day in October, the Japanese police suddenly stormed into our home.

"Do you know so-and-so of Waseda University?" they demanded. Without even giving me a chance to reply, they pulled me out of the house and took me to the Kyounggi Province Police Station. I was being detained because one of my friends had been arrested for being a communist and had mentioned my name to his interrogators.

Once inside the police station, I was immediately subjected to torture.

"You're a member of the Communist Party, aren't you? Weren't you working with that rascal while you were studying in Japan? Don't even bother trying to deny it. All we have to do is put in a call to Tokyo Police

Headquarters and they will tell us everything. You can give us the list of party members or die like a dog."

They beat me with a table and broke all four of its legs against my body, but I refused to give them the names of the people who had worked with me in Japan.

The Japanese police then went to where I was living with my wife, turned it upside down, and discovered my diaries. They brought the diaries to me and went through them page by page, demanding I tell them about the names they found. I denied everything, even though I knew they might kill me for my silence. The police stomped on me mercilessly with their spiked military boots until my body was as limp as if I were dead. Then they hung me from the ceiling and swung me back and forth. Like a slab of meat hanging in a butcher shop, I swung this way and that as they pushed me with a stick. Soon, blood filled my mouth and began dripping onto the cement floor below me. Each time I lost consciousness they would pour a bucket of water over me. When I regained consciousness the torture would begin again. They held my nose and stuck the spout of a teakettle into my mouth, forcing me to swallow water. When my stomach became bloated with water they laid me face up on the floor, looking like a frog, and began stomping on my abdomen with their military boots. The water would be forced up my esophagus and I would vomit until everything turned black. On the days after I had been tortured this way my esophagus felt as though it was on fire. The pain was so great I could not bear to swallow a single mouthful of soup. I had no energy and would just lie face down on the floor, completely unable to move.

The war was coming to an end, and the Japanese police were desperate. They tortured me in ways words cannot describe. I endured,

though, and never gave them the names of any of my friends. Even as I was going in and out of consciousness, I made sure not to give them what they wanted. Finally tiring of torturing me, the Japanese police sent for my mother. When she arrived my legs were so swollen that I couldn't stand on my own. Two policemen had to put my arms over their shoulders and help me walk to the visiting room. My mother had tears in her eyes even before she set eyes on me.

"Endure just a little longer," she said. "Mother will somehow get you a lawyer. Please endure, and don't die before then."

My mother saw how my face was covered with blood, and she pleaded with me.

"It doesn't matter how much good you are trying to do," she said. "It's more important that you keep yourself alive. No matter what happens, don't die."

I felt sorry for her. I would have liked to call out, "Mother," embrace her, and cry out loud with her. I couldn't do that, though, because I knew perfectly well why the Japanese police had brought her there. My mother kept pleading with me not to die, but all I could do in return was blink my badly swollen and bloodied eyes.

During the time I was held in the Kyounggi Province Police Station, it was Mrs. Gi Bong Lee, the mistress of the boarding house, who kept me supplied with food and clothing. She wept every time she visited me. I would comfort her, saying, "Endure a little longer. This era is coming to an end. Japan will be defeated soon. You don't need to cry." These were not empty words. God had given me this belief. As soon as the police released me in February of the following year, I took all my diaries that had been stacked in the boarding house to the bank of the Han River. There I burned them so they would not cause any further trouble to

my friends. If I had not done this, I knew the diaries could eventually be used by the police to harm others. My body did not recover easily from the torture. I had blood in my feces for quite a while. Mrs. Lee, the boarding house mistress, and her sister helped me to nurse my body back to health with great sincerity and dedication.

Finally, on August 15, 1945, Korea was liberated from Japan. This was the day every Korean had been waiting for. It was a day of tremendous emotion. Shouts of "Mansei!" and people waving the Taeguk flag covered the entire peninsula. I could not join in the festivities, however. My heart was deadly serious because I could foresee the terrible calamity that was about to befall the Korean peninsula. I went alone into a small anteroom and immersed myself in prayer. Soon after that, my fears were realized. Although liberated from Japanese rule, our homeland was cut in two at the 38th parallel. In the North, a communist regime that denied the existence of God came to power.

A Command That Must Be Obeyed

Immediately following liberation, our country was in indescribable chaos. Daily necessities were difficult to come by, even for people with money. We ran out of rice in our home, so I set out for Paekchon, Hwanghae Province, a community north of Seoul and just south of the 38th parallel, to pick up some rice that had been purchased previously. On my way, though, I received a revelation that said: "Go across the 38th parallel! Find the people of God who are in the North."

I immediately crossed the 38th parallel and headed for Pyongyang. It had been only a month since our first son was born. I was concerned for my wife. I knew she would be anxiously waiting for me, but there was no time for me to return home before going north. God's commands are very serious, and they must be followed without reservation or hesitation. I took nothing with me except for the Bible that I had read dozens of times and had filled with underlined notes to myself in tiny letters the size of grains of sesame seeds.

Refugees were already streaming south to escape communist rule. In particular, the Communist Party's rejection of religion meant that many Christians were heading south in search of the freedom to worship. The communists branded religion as the opiate of the people and insisted

that no one could have a religion. This was the place where I went, following the call from Heaven. No minister would want to go into such a place, but I went there with my own two feet.

As the number of refugees heading south increased, the North began to tighten its border security. It was not easy for me to get across the 38th parallel. During the time it took me to walk thirty miles to the border and until my arrival in Pyongyang, I never questioned why I had to go such a difficult course.

I arrived in Pyongyang on June 6. Christianity had set down its roots so deeply in this city that it was known as "the Jerusalem of the East." During their occupation, the Japanese had tried in several ways to suppress Christianity. They forced its citizens to worship at Shinto shrines and even had them bow in the direction of the imperial palace in Tokyo, where the emperor lived. After arriving in Pyongyang, I began my evangelical work in the home of Seob Choi Rah, who lived in the Kyongchang Ri neighborhood near Pyongyang's West Gate.

I began by taking care of the children in the neighborhood. I would tell them children's stories that illustrated Bible verses. They were children, but I spoke to them in the polite form of speech normally reserved for adults and did my best to take care of them. At the same time, I held out hope that someone would come to hear the new message that I had to convey. There were days when I would watch the front gate the whole day, hoping that someone would come. Soon, people with sincere faith began coming to see me.

I would speak to them through the night, teaching them the new message. It didn't matter who came. It could be a three-year-old child or a blind old woman with a bent back. I treated them all with love and respect. I bowed down in front of them and served them as though they

had come from heaven. Even if my guests were old men and women, I would share with them late into the night.

I never said to myself, "Oh, I hate it when such old people come."

Everyone is precious. Whether it is a man or woman, young or old, everyone has the same precious value.

People listened to this 26-year-old young man talk to them about the Letter to the Romans and the Book of Revelation. What they heard was different from what they had heard elsewhere, so gradually people hungry for the truth began to gather. One young man would come every day and listen to me speak but would then leave without saying a word. This was Won Pil Kim. He became the first member of my spiritual family. He had graduated from Pyongyang Normal School and was working as a teacher. We took turns preparing the rice for meals, and this was how we formed the relationship of spiritual master and disciple.

Once I began lecturing on the Bible, I could not stop until members of the congregation excused themselves, saying they had other places to go. I preached with such passion that I would sweat all over my body. Sometimes I would take a break and go into a separate room where I was alone, take off my shirt, and wring the sweat out of it. It was like this not just during the summer but even in the cold of winter. That was how much energy I poured into my teaching.

For services, everyone dressed in clean white clothing. We sang the same hymns dozens of times in repetition, making it a very passionate service. Members of the congregation would be so moved and inspired that we would all begin to weep. People called us "the weeping church." When services ended, members of the congregation testified about the grace they had received during the service. During these testimonies we felt intoxicated by grace. It was as though our bodies were floating up to heaven.

Many people in our church had spiritual experiences. Some would go into trances, some would prophesy, some would speak in tongues, some would interpret. Sometimes a person who did not belong to our church yet would be in the congregation. Another congregant would go up to him with eyes closed and tap him on the shoulder. Then that person would suddenly begin praying a tearful prayer of repentance. In such instances, the hot fire of the Holy Spirit would pass through our gathering. When the Holy Spirit did its work, people were cured of long-existing illnesses, as thoroughly as though they had never existed. A rumor began to circulate that someone had eaten some of my leftover rice and been cured of an abdominal condition. People began to say, "The food at that church has medicinal effects," and many people began to wait for me to finish eating, hoping to eat any rice I might leave.

As such spiritual phenomena became known, our congregation grew, and soon we had so many people that we could not close the doors. Grandmother Sung Do Ji and Grandmother Se Hyun Ok came to the church because they each had a dream in which they were told, "A young spiritual teacher has come from the South and is now across from Mansudae, so go meet him." No one evangelized them. They simply came to the address that they were given in their dreams. When they arrived they were happy to see that I was the person they had heard about in their dreams. I only had to see their faces to understand why they had come. When I answered their questions, without first asking them what they wanted to know, they were beside themselves with joy and surprise.

I taught the word of God through stories about my own experiences. Perhaps for this reason, many people found they were able to receive

clear answers to questions that they had never been able to get answered previously. Some believers from large churches in the city converted to our church after hearing me preach. In one instance, fifteen core members of the Jangsujae Church, the most prominent church in Pyongyang, came to our church as a group, causing members of the elders board of that church to lodge a strong protest against us.

Mrs. In Ju Kim's father-in-law was a well-known elder in Pyongyang. The family home was directly adjacent to the church that her father-in-law attended. Yet, instead of attending that church she secretly attended ours. To leave her home without her in-laws knowing she would go to the back of the house, climb up onto one of the large earthenware jars, and then climb over the fence. She did this when she was pregnant, and the fence she climbed was two or three times the height of a normal person. It took courage for her to do that. Eventually, she received severe persecution from her father-in-law. I would know when this was happening. On days when I would feel a strong pain in my heart, I would send someone to Mrs. Kim's home. As they stood outside her home they could hear her being beaten severely by her father-in-law. He would beat her so severely that she would shed tears of blood. She would say later, though, that the knowledge that our members were standing outside the gate praying for her would take away her pain.

"Teacher, how did you know I was being beaten?" she would later ask me. "When our members are at the gate, my pain goes away, and my father-in-law finds that it takes much more energy for him to beat me. Why is that?"

Her in-laws beat her and even tied her to a post, but they still could not stop her from coming to our church. Finally, her family members

came to our church and started beating me. They tore my clothing and made my face swell up, but I never struck them back. I knew that doing so would only make the situation even more difficult for Mrs. Kim.

As more people from large churches around Pyongyang began attending our services, the ministers of these established churches became jealous and complained about us to the police. The communist authorities considered religion to be a thorn in their side and were looking for excuses to suppress it. They jumped on the opportunity given to them by these ministers and took me into custody. On August 11, 1946, I was charged with coming from the South for the purpose of espionage and imprisoned in the Daedong Security Station. I was falsely accused of being sent to the North by South Korean President Syngman Rhee as part of an attempt to take over the North.

They even brought in a Soviet interrogator, but they could not establish that I had committed any crime. Finally, after three months, they found me not guilty and released me, but by this time my body was in terrible shape. I had lost so much blood while being tortured that my life was in grave danger. The members of my church took me in and cared for me. They risked their lives for me, without expecting anything in return. Once I recovered I resumed my evangelical work. Within a year our congregation had become quite large. The established churches would not leave us alone. More and more members of their congregations began attending our services. Finally, some eighty ministers took action by writing letters to the police. On February 22, 1948, I was again taken into custody by the communist authorities. I was charged with being a spy for Syngman Rhee and with disturbing the social order. I was taken away in handcuffs. Three days later, my head was shaved and I was placed in a prison cell. I still remember how it felt to watch my

hair, which I had grown during the time I was leading the church, fall to the floor. I also remember the face of the man, a Mr. Lee, who cut my hair.

In prison, the authorities beat me endlessly and demanded that I confess my crimes. I endured, though. Even as I was vomiting blood and seemed on the verge of death, I never let myself lose consciousness. Sometimes the pain would be so great I would bend over at the waist. Without thinking, I found myself praying, "God, save me." In the next moment, though, I caught myself and prayed with confidence, "God, don't worry about me. Sun Myung Moon is not dead yet. I won't let myself die in such a miserable way as this." I was right. It was not yet time for me to die. There was a mountain of tasks before me that I had to accomplish. I had a mission. I was not someone so weak as to be beaten into submission by something as trivial as torture.

Each time I collapsed from the torture I would endure by telling myself, "I am being beaten for the sake of the Korean people. I am shedding tears as a way of shouldering the pain of our people." When the torture was so severe that it took me to the verge of losing consciousness, I would invariably hear the voice of God. In the moments when my life seemed about to end, God would appear to me. My body still carries several scars that I received then. The flesh that was gouged from my body and the blood that was lost have been replaced, but the pain of that experience remains with me in these scars. I have often looked at these scars and told myself, "Because you carry these scars, you must succeed."

I was scheduled to go to trial on April 3, the fortieth day of my imprisonment. This was delayed by four days, however, and my trial was held on April 7. Many of the most famous ministers in North Korea came to the courtroom and accused me of all manner of crimes. The Communist Party also scorned me, saying religion was the opiate of

the people. Members of our congregation stood to one side and wept sorrowfully. They wept as though their child or husband had passed away. I did not shed tears, however. I had members who would weep for me with such sorrow that they were writhing in pain, so I did not feel lonely as I traveled Heaven's path. I was not facing misfortune, so I felt I should not weep. As I left the courthouse after my sentencing I raised my shackled hands and shook them as a sign to our members. The shackles made a clanging sound that sounded to me like bells. That day I was taken to the Pyongyang Prison.

I did not fear life in prison. It was not as if this were the first time for me. Also, there was a hierarchy among the prisoners in each cell, and I was quite good at becoming friends with the head prisoner at the top of this hierarchy. All I had to do was exchange a few words and any head prisoner would quickly become my friend. When we have a heart of love we can open anyone's heart.

After I had been in the cell, sitting in the farthest corner, for a few days, the head prisoner moved me to a higher position. I wanted to sit in a tiny corner next to the toilet, but he kept insisting that I move to a higher position in the cell. No matter how much I refused, he insisted.

After making friends with the head prisoner, I looked carefully at each person in the cell. A person's face tells everything about him.

"Oh, your face is this way, so you must be this way." "Your face is such a way, so you must have such a trait."

The prisoners were surprised to find how much I could tell them about themselves by reading their facial features. In their minds they didn't like the fact that a person they were seeing for the first time was able to tell so much about them, but they had to acknowledge that I was describing them correctly.

I was able to open my heart and share with everyone, so in prison, too, I had friends. I became friends with a murderer. It was an unjust imprisonment for me, but it was a meaningful period of training. Any period of trial in this world has important meaning.

In prison even the lice are friends. It was extremely cold in the prison. Lice would crawl in single file along the seams of our prison clothes. When we took the lice and put them together, they would attach themselves to each other and become like a tiny round ball. We would roll these, similar to the way horse dung beetles roll balls of dung, and the lice would do everything they could to stay together. Lice have a character of digging in, and they would put their heads together so that only their back ends were sticking out. We had a lot of fun in the cell watching this.

No one likes lice or fleas. In prison, though, even lice and fleas become important partners for conversation. The moment you set your eyes on a bedbug or flea, some realization flashes in your mind, and it is important that you not let this pass without notice. We never know when, or through what means, God will speak to us. So we need to be mindful to examine carefully even things like bedbugs and fleas.

A Grain of Rice Is Greater Than the Earth

On May 20, three months after being placed in Pyongyang Prison, I was moved to Heungnam Prison. I felt indignation and also shamed before Heaven. I was tied to a thief so I could not escape. We were taken by vehicle on a route that took seventeen hours. As I looked out the window a powerful feeling of grief welled up inside me. It seemed incredible to me that I would have to travel this winding road along rivers and through valleys as a prisoner.

Heungnam Prison was a concentration camp for special laborers working in the Heungnam Nitrogen Fertilizer Factory. During the next two years and five months I underwent hard compulsory labor. Compulsory labor was a practice that North Korea learned from the Soviet Union. The Soviet government could not simply kill members of the bourgeoisie and other people who were not communists, because the world was watching and they needed to be mindful of world opinion. So it came up with the punishment of compulsory labor. People who were exploited in this way were forced to continue working until they died of exhaustion. North Korean communists copied the Soviet system and sentenced all prisoners to three years of compulsory labor. In reality, the prisoners would usually die from the labor before their terms were up.

Our days began at 4:30 in the morning. We were made to line up in formation on the field, and our bodies and clothing were inspected for contraband items. We took off all our clothing, and each item was thoroughly inspected. Each piece of clothing would be beaten for so long that even the last speck of dust would not remain. The entire process took at least two hours. Heungnam was on the seacoast, and in the winter the wind was as painful as a knife as it cut into our naked bodies. When the inspection was over we would be fed an awful meal. Then we would walk two and a half miles to the fertilizer factory. We were marched four abreast, were made to hold the hand of the person next to us, and could not even hold our heads up. Guards armed with rifles and pistols surrounded us. Anyone who caused his row to start falling behind, or failed to hold on to the hand of the person next to him, was beaten severely for trying to escape.

In winter the snow would be deeper than a person's height. On cold winter mornings when we were marched through snow as deep as we were tall, my head would start feeling as though it was spinning. The frozen road was extremely slippery, and the cold wind blew so ferociously it made the hair on our heads stand up straight. We had no energy, even after eating breakfast, and our knees kept collapsing beneath us. Still we had to make our way to the job site, even if it meant dragging our exhausted legs along the way. As I made my way along this road that took us to the edge of consciousness, I kept reminding myself that I belonged to Heaven.

At the factory there was a mound of a substance that we referred to in a shorthand way as "ammonia." In reality, it probably was ammonium sulfate, a common form of fertilizer. It would come in by conveyor belt and looked like a white waterfall as it fell off the belt onto the mound

below. It was quite hot when it first came off the belt, and fumes rose from it even in the middle of winter. Quickly it would cool and become as solid as ice. Our job was to dig the fertilizer out of the mound with shovels and put it into straw bags. We referred to this mound that was over sixty-five feet high as "the fertilizer mountain." Eight to nine hundred people were digging away at the fertilizer in a large space, making it appear as though we were trying to cut the mountain in half.

We were organized in teams of ten, and each team was responsible to fill and load 1,300 bags a day. So each person had to fill 130 bags. If a team failed to meet its quota, its meal rations were cut in half. Everyone worked as if his life depended on making the quota. To help us carry the bags of fertilizer as efficiently as possible we made needles out of steel wire and used these to help us tie the bags after they had been filled. We would put a piece of wire on a rail track that ran along the floor of the factory. The wire was flattened by having one of the small rail cars used for hauling materials run over it, and then it could be used as a needle. To open holes in the bags we used shards of glass that we got by breaking factory windows. The guards must have felt sorry to see their prisoners working under harsh conditions because they never stopped us from breaking windows in the factory. Once I broke a tooth while trying to cut a piece of wire. Even now you can see that one of my front teeth is broken. This remains with me as an unforgettable memento from Heungnam Prison.

Everyone grew thin under the pressure of hard labor. I was the exception. I was able to maintain my weight at 159 pounds, making me an object of envy for the other prisoners. I always excelled in physical strength. On one occasion, though, I became extremely ill with symptoms similar to tuberculosis. I had these symptoms for nearly a month.

However, I did not miss even a day of work at the factory. I knew that if I were absent other prisoners would be held responsible for my share of the work. People called me "the man like a steel rod" because of my strength. I could endure even the most difficult work. Prison and compulsory labor were not such a big problem for me. No matter how fierce the beating or terrible the environment, a person can endure if he carries a definite purpose in his heart.

Prisoners were also exposed to sulfuric acid, which was used in the manufacture of ammonium sulfate. When I worked at the Kawasaki steel mill in Japan I witnessed several instances in which a person cleaning vats used to store sulfuric acid had died from the effects of acid poisoning. The situation in Heungnam was far worse. Exposure to sulfuric acid was so harmful that it would cause hair loss and sores on our skin that oozed liquid. Most people who worked in the factory would begin vomiting blood and die after about six months. We would wear rubber pieces on our fingers for protection, but the acid would quickly wear through these. The acid fumes would also eat through our clothing, making them useless, and our skin would break and bleed. In some cases, the bone would become visible. We had to continue working without so much as a day's rest, even when our sores were bleeding and oozing pus.

Our meal rations consisted of less rice than it took to fill two small bowls. There were no side dishes, but we were given a soup that was radish greens in saltwater. The soup was so salty it made our throats burn, but the rice was so hard we couldn't eat it without washing it down with the soup. No one ever left even a single drop of the soup. When we received our bowl of rice, prisoners would put all the rice into their mouths at once. Having eaten their own rice, they would look around, stretching their necks sometimes to watch how the others ate. Sometimes someone would put his spoon in

someone else's soup bowl, and there would be a fight. One minister who was with me in Heungnam once said to me, "Let me have just one bean, and I will give you two cows after we get out of here." People were so desperate that if a prisoner died at mealtime, the others would dig out any rice still in his mouth and eat it themselves.

The pain of hunger can only be known by those who have experienced it. When a person is hungry, a mere grain of rice becomes very precious. Even now, it makes me tense just to think of Heungnam. It's hard to believe that a single grain of rice can give such stimulation to the body, but when you are hungry you have such a longing for food that it makes you cry. When a person has a full stomach the world seems big, but to a hungry person a grain of rice is bigger than the earth. A grain of rice takes on enormous value to someone who is hungry.

Beginning with my first day in prison I made it a habit to take half of my ration of rice and give it to my fellow prisoners, keeping only half for myself. I trained myself this way for three weeks and then ate the whole ration. This made me think that I was eating enough rice for two people, which made it easier to endure the hunger.

Prison life is so terrible that it cannot even be imagined by someone who has not experienced it. Half the prisoners would die within a year, so every day we had to watch as dead bodies were carried out the back gate in a wooden box. We would work so hard, and our only hope for leaving was as a dead body in that wooden casket. Even for a merciless and cruel regime, what they did to us clearly went beyond all boundaries of humanity. All those bags of fertilizer filled with the tears and grief of the prisoners were loaded onto ships and taken to Russia.

Heungnam Prison in the Snow

The most valued possession in prison after food was a needle and thread. Our clothes would wear out and be torn during the hard labor, but it was difficult to get a needle and thread to mend them. After a while prisoners began to look like beggars in rags. It was very important to mend the holes in our clothes in order to block, even a little, the cold winter winds. A small piece of cloth found lying on the road was extremely valuable. Even if the cloth were covered with cow dung, the prisoners would fight each other to try to pick it up. Once as I was carrying the bags of fertilizer I discovered a needle stuck in one of the bags. It must have been left there accidentally when the bag was made. From that time, on I became the seamster of Heungnam Prison. It was such a joy to find that needle. Every day I mended pants and knee breeches for other prisoners.

Even in the middle of winter it was so hot inside the fertilizer factory that we would sweat. So you can imagine how unbearable it was during the summer. Not even once, however, did I roll up my pants and let my shins show. Even during the hottest part of the summer I kept my pant legs tied in the traditional Korean fashion. Others would take off their pants and work in their underwear, but I kept myself properly dressed.

When we finished work our bodies would be covered with sweat and fertilizer dust, and most prisoners would take off their clothes and wash themselves in the filthy water that flowed from the factory. I, however, never washed myself where others could see my body. Instead, I would save half of the single cup of water we were rationed each day, then get up early in the morning while the others still slept to wipe myself off with a small piece of cloth dipped in that half cup of water. I also used this time early in the morning to focus my spirit and pray. I considered my body to be precious, and I didn't want to casually expose it to others.

The prison cell held thirty-six people, and I took a small corner next to the toilet. In this space no one would step over me, but nobody wanted this space. We called it a toilet, but actually it was only a small earthenware jar without even a lid. Fluid would overflow from the toilet in the summer and it would freeze in the winter. There is no describing the putrid smell that came from it. The prisoners often experienced diarrhea because of the salty soup and hard rice balls that we ate every day.

I would be sitting by the toilet and hear someone say, "Oh, my stomach." The person would make his way to the toilet in quick short steps. As soon as he exposed his bottom, the diarrhea would come shooting out. Because I was next to the toilet I was often splashed. Even during the night, when everyone was asleep, sometimes someone would have abdominal pain. When I heard people yelping in pain as they were being stepped on, I would know that someone was making his way to the toilet and I would get up and press myself against the corner. And if I were asleep and did not hear him coming, I would suffer the consequences. In order to endure this impossible situation, I even tried to think of these sights and sounds as some form of art.

Still I kept the spot by the toilet as my own during the entire time.

"Why do you choose to stay there?" other prisoners would ask.

I would answer, "This is where I feel most comfortable."

I wasn't just saying this. This was, indeed, the place where my heart felt most at ease.

My prisoner number was 596. People called me "Number five nine six." On nights when I couldn't sleep, I would stare at the ceiling and repeat this number to myself over and over. If I said it quickly, it sounded very much like eo-gul, the Korean word used to describe the feeling of injustice. I truly had been imprisoned unjustly.

The Communist Party initiated dok-bo-hoi, or gatherings where newspapers or other materials were read aloud, as a way of studying communist propaganda. Also, we had to write letters of gratitude to Kim Il Sung. The Security Detachment kept a close watch on our every move. Every day we were told to write letters of gratitude saying what we had learned, but I never wrote even a single page of these. We were supposed to write something like this: "Our Father Kim Il Sung, out of his love for us, gives us food to eat each day, gives us meals with meat, and lets us lead such a wonderful life. I am so grateful." I could not write anything of the sort. Even if I were looking death in the face, I could not submit such letters to the atheistic Communist Party. Instead of writing them I worked ten times harder than the others in order to survive in the prison. The only way I could get away with not writing these letters was if I were the number one prisoner. Because of this effort I became the best prisoner and even received an award from a Communist Party official.

My mother visited me many times while I was in prison. There was no direct transportation from Jungju to Heungnam. She had to take a train to Seoul, where she would change to a train on the Seoul-to-Wonsan

line. The trip would take her more than twenty grueling hours. Before starting out she would go to great trouble to prepare mi-sut-karu, or powdered rice, for me, so that her son, who had been imprisoned in the prime of his life, would have something to eat. To make this powder she would gather rice from our relatives and even the distant relatives of my older sisters' husbands. When she came to the prison visiting room and saw me standing on the other side of the glass, she would immediately begin to shed tears. She was a strong woman, but the sight of her son undergoing such suffering made her weak.

My mother handed me the pair of silk trousers that I had worn on my wedding day. The prison uniform I was wearing had become threadbare, and my skin showed through the material. However, instead of wearing the silk trousers, I gave them to another prisoner. As for the mi-sut-karu that she had gone into debt to prepare, I gave it all away right there as she watched. My mother had invested her full heart and dedication into preparing clothing and food for her son, and she was heartbroken to see me giving away these things, without keeping anything for myself.

"Mother," I said to her, "I am not just the son of some man named Moon."

"Before I am a son of the Moon clan, I am a son of the Republic of Korea. And even before that I am a son of the world, and a son of heaven and earth. I think it is right for me to love those things first, and only after that follow your words and love you. I am not the son of some small-minded person. Please conduct yourself in a manner befitting your son."

My words were as cold as ice to her, and it hurt so much for me to watch her weep that I felt as though my heart would be torn apart. I missed her so much that sometimes I would wake up in the middle of

the night thinking of her, but this was all the more reason for me not to succumb to my emotions. I was a person doing the work of God. It was more important for me to clothe just one more person a little more warmly and to fill his stomach with a little more food than it was for me to be concerned about my personal relationship with my mother.

Even while in prison I enjoyed taking whatever time I could find to talk with people. There were always people around me who wanted to listen to what I had to say. Even in the hunger and cold of prison life there was warmth in sharing with people with whom I had an affinity of heart. The relationships formed in Heungnam left me with twelve people who were both compatriots and as close as family to me, with whom I could spend the rest of my life. Among them was a famous minister who had served as president of the Association of Christian Churches in Korea's five northern provinces. These were people with whom I shared intense emotions in situations where our lives were on the line, and this made them closer to me than my own flesh and blood. Their being there gave my prison experience meaning. I would pray three times each day for the people who had helped me and for the members of my congregation in Pyongyang, calling out each one by name. When I did I always felt that I needed to repay a thousandfold the people who would slip me a handful of mi-sut-karu they had hidden in their clothing.

U.N. Forces Open the Prison Gate

The Korean War had begun while I was imprisoned in Heungnam. Three days after it started, the South Korean military handed over the capital of Seoul and retreated farther south. Then sixteen nations, with the United States in the lead, formed a United Nations force and intervened in the Korean War. U.S. forces landed at Incheon and pushed toward Wonsan, a major industrial city in North Korea.

It was only natural for Heungnam Prison to be a target for U.S. aerial bombing operations. When the bombing began the prison guards would leave the prisoners and go into bomb shelters. They weren't concerned whether we lived or died. One day Jesus appeared right before me with a tearful face. This gave me a strong premonition so I shouted, "Everyone stay within twelve meters of me!" Soon after that a huge bomb exploded just twelve meters from where I stood. The prisoners who had stayed close to me survived.

As the bombing became more intense, guards began executing prisoners. They called out the prisoners' numbers and told them to come with three days' food rations and a shovel. The prisoners assumed they were being moved to another prison, but in reality they were marched into the mountains, made to dig a hole, and then buried there. Prisoners

were being called out in the order of the length of their sentences, with those with the longest sentences being called first. I realized that my turn would come the next day.

The night before my scheduled execution the bombs fell like rain in the monsoon season. It was October 13, 1950, and the U.S. forces, having succeeded in the Incheon landing, had come up the peninsula to take Pyongyang and were now pressing against Heungnam. The U.S. military attacked Heungnam with full force that night, with B-29 bombers in the lead. The bombing was so intense that it seemed all of Heungnam had been turned into a sea of fire. The high walls around the prison began to fall and the guards ran for their lives. Finally the gate of the prison that had kept us in that place opened. At around two o'clock in the morning on the next day, I walked calmly out of Heungnam Prison with dignity.

I had been imprisoned for two years and eight months, so I was a terrible sight. My underwear and outerwear were in tatters. Dressed in those rags, instead of going to my hometown, I headed to Pyongyang with a group of people who had followed me in prison. Some chose to come with me instead of going in search of their wives and children. I could clearly imagine how my mother must be crying every day out of concern for my welfare, but it was more important that I look after the members of my congregation in Pyongyang.

On the way to Pyongyang we could see clearly how North Korea had prepared for this war. Major cities were all connected by two-lane roads that could be used for military purposes in an emergency. Many of the bridges had been constructed with enough cement to let them withstand the weight of thirty-ton tanks. The fertilizer that the prisoners in Heungnam Prison had risked their lives to put into bags

was sent to Russia in exchange for outdated weaponry that was then deployed along the 38th parallel.

As soon as I arrived in Pyongyang I went in search of the members who were with me before my incarceration. I needed to find out where they were and what their situation was. They had been scattered by the war, but I felt responsible to find them and help them figure out a way to carry on their lives. I didn't know where they might be living, so my only option was to search the city of Pyongyang from one corner to the other.

After a week of searching I had found only three or four people. I had saved some powdered rice I received while still in prison, so I mixed it with water to make rice cake to share with them. On the trip from Heungnam I staved off my hunger with one or two potatoes that were frozen solid. I had not touched the rice powder. It made me feel full just to watch them eagerly eat the rice cake.

I stayed in Pyongyang for forty days looking for anyone I could think of, whether young or old. In the end I never did find out what happened to most of them. But they have never been erased from my heart. On the night of December 2, I began walking south. Church members, including Won Pil Kim, and I followed behind a long line of refugees that extended about seven and a half miles.

We even took with us a member who could not walk properly. He had been among those who followed me in Heungnam Prison. His family name was Pak. He had been released before me. When I found him in his home, all the other members of his family had left for the South. He was alone in the house with a broken leg. I placed him on a bicycle and took him with me. The North Korean army had already recaptured the flat roads for military use, so we traveled across frozen rice paddies heading south as quickly as we could. The Chinese army was not far

behind us, but it was difficult to move quickly when we had someone with us who could not walk. Half the time the road was so bad that I carried him on my back and someone else pushed the empty bicycle along. He kept saying he didn't want to be a burden to me and tried several times to take his own life. I convinced him to go on, sometimes scolding him loudly, and we stayed together until the end.

We were refugees on the run who still had to eat. We went into homes whose inhabitants had headed south before us and searched for rice or any other food that might have been left behind. We boiled anything we found, whether it was rice, barley, or potatoes. We were barely able to stay alive this way. There were no rice bowls and we had to use pieces of wood as chopsticks, but the food tasted good. The Bible says, "Blessed are the poor," doesn't it? We could eat anything that made our stomachs growl with satisfaction. Even a humble piece of barley cake tasted so good that we would not have felt jealous of a king's meal. No matter how hungry I might be, I always made sure to stop eating before the others. This way they could eat a little more themselves.

After walking a long distance, we were approaching the northern bank of the Imjin River. Somehow I felt it was important that we cross the river quickly and that we didn't have a moment to spare. I felt strongly that we had to get over this obstacle for us to stay alive. I pushed Won Pil Kim mercilessly. Kim was young and he would fall asleep as we walked, but I kept forcing him on and pulling the bicycle. We covered twenty miles that night and reached the bank of the Imjin River. Fortunately, the river was frozen solid. We followed some refugees in front of us across the river. A long line of refugees stretched out behind us. As soon as we had crossed the river, however, the U.N. forces closed the crossing and stopped letting people

across. Had we arrived at the river even a few minutes later, we would not have been able to cross.

After we had crossed, Won Pil Kim looked back at the road we had come on and asked, "How did you know the river crossing was about to be closed?"

"Sure I knew," I said. "This kind of thing happens often to anyone who takes the path of Heaven. People often don't know that salvation is just beyond the next obstacle. We didn't have a single moment to waste, and if necessary I would have grabbed you by the scruff of the neck and pulled you across."

Kim seemed moved by my words, but my heart was uneasy. When we arrived at the point where the 38th parallel divided the peninsula in two, I placed one foot in South Korea and one foot in North Korea and began to pray.

"For now, we are pushed southward like this, but soon I will return to the North. I will gather the forces of the free world behind me to liberate North Korea and unite North and South."

This was how I had prayed during the entire time we walked along with the refugees.

CHAPTER THREE

THE MAN WITH THE FULLEST STOMACH

"You Are My Spiritual Teacher"

After crossing the Imjin River, we traveled by way of Seoul, Wonju, and Kyungju to Busan. We arrived finally on January 27, 1951.

Busan was filled with refugees from the north. It felt like the whole country had gathered there. Any accommodation fit to live in was filled already. Our tiny place had barely enough room to sit. Our only option was to go into the woods at night, keeping warm as best we could, and then return to the city by day to look for food.

My hair, which was kept short during my prison time, had now grown back. My trousers, mended from the inside with cotton from a sleeping quilt, had become threadbare. My clothes were saturated so fully with an oily grime that raindrops in heavy rain were not absorbed into the cloth but rather simply rolled off.

Almost nothing was left of the soles of my shoes, although the upper part was mostly still there. I might as well have been walking barefoot. The fact was simply that I was the lowest of the low, a beggar among beggars. There was no work to be had, and we had no money in our pockets. The only way we could eat was to beg.

Yet even while begging for food, I maintained my dignity. If someone refused to help, I would say in a clear and confident voice, "Listen.

If you do not help people like us who are in need, you will have great difficulties if you hope to receive blessings in the future!" People would give when faced with such thoughts. We took the food we gathered this way to a flat area where we all could sit together. Dozens of people like us ate in such places. We had nothing, and even had to beg for food, but a warm friendship always flowed among us.

Once in the middle of a day like this, suddenly I heard someone shout, "Look here! How long has it been?"

I turned to see standing before me Dok Mun Eom, a friend from my days in Japan. Dok Mun Eom had befriended me for life back then from having been so moved by a song I sang. Today he is one of Korea's most prominent architects, having designed the Sejong Cultural Center and the Lotte Hotel.

"Let's go," he said, as he embraced me in my wretched clothes. "Let's go to my home."

By that time, Dok Mun Eom had married. He lived together with his family in a single room. To make room for me, he hung a quilt down the middle of that room, dividing it, with one side for me. On the other he slept with his wife and two young children.

"Now," he said, "tell me about your life lately. I always wondered where you were and what you might be doing. We were close friends," he said, "but you have always been more than a friend to me. Did you know that I always held you in great respect?"

Up to that point, I had never shared my heart candidly with any of my friends. In Japan, I went so far as to hide the fact that I often read the Bible. If someone came into my room when I was reading, I would quickly put the Bible away. But in the home of Duk Mun Eom, I shared my story for the first time.

I spoke throughout the night. I told him of my encounter with God, crossing the 38th parallel, starting a church, and surviving Heungnam Prison. My story took a full three days to tell. When I finished, Duk Mun Eom stood and folded himself before me in a full ceremonial bow.

"What are you doing?" I asked in shock and surprise. I grabbed his hand and tried to stop him, but it was no use. I could not.

"From this moment on," said Duk Mun Eom, "you are my great spiritual teacher. This bow is my greeting to you as my teacher, so please accept it."

He has been with me ever since, both as my friend and as my disciple.

Soon after this, I found a job on Pier 4 in Busan harbor. I worked only at night. With my pay, I bought bean porridge at Cho-ryang Station. The hot porridge was sold with a rag wrapped around the container to keep it hot. I always held the porridge container against my body for more than an hour before eating it. This helped to warm my body, which froze from working throughout the long, cold night.

I found lodging in a shelter for laborers located in the Cho-ryang neighborhood. My room was so small that I could not lie down, even diagonally, without my feet pressing against the wall. But this was the room where I sharpened a pencil and solemnly wrote the first draft of Wolli Wonbon (the original text of The Principle). I was financially destitute, but this was of no importance to me. Even living in a garbage heap, there is nothing a determined soul cannot do. All we need is the will.

Won Pil Kim had just turned twenty. He did all sorts of jobs. He worked in a restaurant and brought home the scorched rice that couldn't be served to customers. We ate this together. Because of his gift for drawing, he soon got a job with the U.S. military as a painter.

Eventually, he and I climbed up to Beom-net-gol in Beom-il Dong and built a house. Because this area was near a cemetery, there was nothing nearby except a rocky ravine. We had no land we could call our own, so we leveled a section of the steep slope and built a home there. We didn't even have a shovel! We took a small shovel from someone's kitchen and returned it before the owner realized it was missing. Won Pil Kim and I broke rocks, dug the earth, and carried up gravel. We mixed mud and straw to make bricks, then stacked them up to make the walls. We got some empty ration boxes from an American base, flattened them out, and used them as the roof. We laid down a sheet of black plastic for the floor.

Even simple huts are built better than this. Ours was built against a boulder, so a big piece of rock stuck up in the middle of the room. Our only possessions were the small desk that sat behind that rock and Won Pil Kim's easel. When it rained, a spring would bubble up inside our room. How romantic to hear the sound of the water flowing beneath us where we sat! In the morning, after sleeping in this unheated room with a leaking roof and water still flowing below, we would arise with runny noses. Even so, we still were happy for our small space where we could lie down and put our minds at ease. The surroundings were miserable, but we were filled with hope from living on the path of God's will.

Each morning, when Won Pil Kim went to work at the American base, I accompanied him to the bottom of the hill. When he came home in the evening, I went out to greet him and welcome him. The remainder of my time I spent writing the Wolli Wonbon. Our room always had plenty of sharpened pencils. Even when there was no rice in the rice jar, we had pencils.

Won Pil Kim helped in many ways, both materially and spiritually. Through this I could concentrate on my writing. Even when exhausted from a full day's work, he followed me around, looking for ways to help. I was getting so little sleep those days that I could fall asleep anywhere. Sometimes I even fell asleep on the toilet. Won Pil Kim followed me to the toilet to make sure I was all right.

But that was not all. He wanted so much to contribute even a little to the book I was writing. He began to draw portraits for American soldiers, and in this way he earned money to keep me supplied with pencils. At the time, it was popular among American soldiers to have a portrait drawn of their wife or girlfriend before returning to America. Won Pil Kim glued sheets of silk on wooden frames, painted the portraits, and sold them for four dollars each.

I felt grateful for his dedication. I sat beside him when he painted and did all I could to help him. While he was away at his job on the American base, I would put the glue on the silk, cut the wood for frames, and put them together. Before he came home, I washed his brushes and bought the paints he needed. After coming home, he would take a 4B pencil and draw the portrait. At first, he was drawing only one or two, but soon word of his work spread. He became so well known among the soldiers that he was drawing twenty and thirty at a time. It got to where our home was filled with portraits, and we had trouble finding room to sleep at night.

As the workload increased, I started to do more than just help on the sidelines. Won Pil drew outlines of the faces, and I colored the lips and clothing. From the money we earned together, we bought pencils and drawing materials and spent the rest for witnessing. It is important to record God's words in writing, but even more important is to tell people about His will.

The Crazy, Handsome Man by the Well

When we built the mud-walled house and began the church in Beom-net-gol, there were only three people to hear me preach. For me, however, I was not talking to just those three people. I thought to myself, "Though they cannot be seen, I am preaching to thousands, even tens of thousands." I envisioned as I preached that all humanity was in attendance. These three people sat before me while I conveyed the words of the Principle in a loud, booming voice.

There was a well in front of our house. Soon a rumor began to spread among those who came to take water from that well: A crazy man lived in the house with mud walls. They fetched their water and peered into this ramshackle mud house to see a man in wretched clothing speaking like he was shouting commands to the whole world. It is only natural that people began to whisper among themselves. I preached that heaven and earth would be turned upside down and Korea would unite the world. Rumors about me soon spread beyond those using the well to those at the bottom of the hill. Perhaps these rumors are what brought people coming out of curiosity to see the crazy man living next to the well. Among these curious ones were students from a nearby seminary, as well as a group of professors from the prestigious Ewha Womans

University. The rumors also became embellished to say that I was a handsome man with good stature, so middle-aged women began to climb the hill to see me as a way to pass the time.

On the day I finished writing Wolli Wonbon, I put my pencil down and prayed, "The moment has come for me to evangelize. Please send me the saints to whom I may give witness." After this, I then went out to the well. It was May 10, late spring. I was wearing traditional Korean trousers with cotton lining and an old jacket, sweating in the heat. I caught sight of a young woman wiping the sweat from her brow as she struggled up the hill toward the well.

I spoke to her, saying, "God has been giving you tremendous love for the past seven years." She jumped backward in surprise. It had been seven years since she had decided to dedicate her life to God.

"My name is Hyun Shil Kang," she said. "I am an evangelist at the Beom Cheon Church that sits in the neighborhood at the bottom of this hill. I heard there is a crazy man living here, so I have come here to witness to him."

This was how she greeted me. I invited her into our house. She looked around the squalid room, making plain how very strange she found it. Eventually, her eyes settled on my desk, "Why do you have so many pencils?" she asked.

"Until this morning," I replied, "I was writing a book that reveals the principles of the universe. I think God has sent you here so that you can learn about these principles from me."

"What?" she demanded, "I am here because I heard there is a crazy man living here who needs to be witnessed to."

I handed her a cushion to sit on, and I sat down as well. The spring water made its trickling sound as it flowed beneath us.

"In the future, Korea will play its role at the pinnacle of the world," I said. "People will regret that they could not be born as Koreans."

She clearly thought I was speaking nonsense.

"Just as Elijah appeared in the person of John the Baptist," I continued, "Jesus will come in the flesh to Korea."

This made her angry.

"I'm sure Jesus will have better places to come than a place so wretched as Korea," she retorted.

Then she said, "Have you ever read the Book of Revelation? I . . ."

I interrupted her in mid-sentence, saying,

"You want to say you have studied at the Goryo Theological Seminary?"

"How did you know that?" she demanded.

"Do you think I would have waited for you without knowing even that about you? You said you came here to witness to me. Please, then, teach me."

Hyun Shil Kang was clearly knowledgeable in theology. She quoted Bible texts to me one after another in an effort to attack my views. She continued to challenge me strongly as I kept busy responding to each of her challenges with answers in a strong and clear voice. Our debate continued so long that it began to grow dark, so I stood up and cooked dinner. The only thing we had besides rice was some over ripe kimchi. Nevertheless, we sat there with the sound of water trickling below and shared this food before resuming our debate. She came back the next day and the day after that, each time to continue our debate. In the end, she chose to devote her life to the principle I teach.

Later that year, on a windy November day, my wife showed up at the door of the Beom-net-gol hut. There standing with her was a seven-year-old boy, my son, who was born the year I left home. I had left that

day simply to go pick up some rice but went to Pyongyang instead. The years had passed, and now he had grown into a young boy. I could not bring myself to look him in the eye, nor could I reach out to stroke his face and embrace him in joy. I just stood there like a stone statue, frozen in place, speechless.

My wife did not have to say a word. I felt the pain and suffering this poor mother and child had to experience in the midst of war. Even before this visit, I knew where they were living and what their situation was, but I was not yet to the point where I could take care of my family. I knew this, and I had asked her several times, even before our marriage, "Please trust me and wait just a little longer." When the time was right, I planned to go get them. But in this situation, as they stood in the door, the right time had not yet come. The hut, our church, was small and shabby. A number of members ate there and lived there with me to study God's word. I could not bring my family there.

My wife took a look around the hut, expressed great disappointment, and turned to leave. She and my son set off down the steep path.

A Church with No Denomination

Koreans have a saying that a person insulted by others lives a long time. If I were to live in proportion to the number of insults I've received, I could live another hundred years. Also, my stomach has been filled not with food but with insults, so you could say that my stomach is the most full of anyone's. Established churches that had opposed me and thrown stones at me when I started a church in Pyongyang resumed their persecution, this time in Busan. Even before we had properly begun our church, they set out to give us trouble. Words like heretic and pseudo- were placed in front of my name so often that they seemed to become part of my name. Indeed, the phrase Sun Myung Moon came to be synonymous with heresy and pseudo-religion. It's hard to even hear my name mentioned without these words.

By 1953, the persecution reached extremes. We closed the hut in Busan and moved first to Daegu and then to Seoul. In May of the following year, we rented a house in Seoul's Bukhak Dong neighborhood, located near Jang-choong-dang Park, and hung out a sign that read "Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity." We chose this name to signify that we

belonged to no denomination, and we certainly had no plans to create a new one.

"World Christianity" refers to all of Christianity worldwide and both past and present. "Unification" reveals our purpose of oneness, and "Holy Spirit" is used to denote harmony between the spiritual and physical worlds built on the love of the father-son relationship at the center. Our name is meant to say, "The spiritual world, centering on God, is with us."

In particular, unification represents my purpose to bring about God's ideal world. Unification is not union. Union is when two things come together. Unification is when two become one. "Unification Church" became our commonly known name later, but it was given to us by others. In the beginning, university students referred to us as "the Seoul Church."

I do not like using the word kyo-hoi in its common usage to mean church. But I like its meaning from the original Chinese characters. Kyo means "to teach," and Hoi means "gathering." The Korean word means, literally, "gathering for teaching." The word for religion, jong-kyo, is composed of two Chinese characters meaning "central" and "teaching," respectively. When the word church means a gathering where spiritual fundamentals are taught, it has a good meaning. But the meaning of the word kyo-hoi does not provide any reason for people to share with each other. People in general do not use the word kyo-hoi with that meaning. I did not want to place ourselves in this separatist type of category. My hope was for the rise of a church without a denomination. True religion tries to save the nation, even if it must sacrifice its own religious body to do so; it tries to save the world, even at the cost of sacrificing its nation; and it tries to save humanity, even if this means sacrificing the world. By this understanding, there can never be a time when the denomination takes precedence.

It was necessary to hang out a church sign, but in my heart I was ready to take it down at any time. As soon as a person hangs a sign that says "church," he is making a distinction between church and not church. Taking something that is one and dividing it into two is not right. This was not my dream. It is not the path I chose to travel. If I need to take down that sign to save the nation or the world, I am ready to do so at any time.

Our sign hung near the front entrance. It would have looked better if we had hung it someplace high, but the eaves on the house came down very low, giving us no good spot to place a sign. In the end, we hung it about as high as the height of a child. In fact, some children in the neighborhood took down our sign, played with it, and broke it in two. Because of its historical significance, we could not throw it away. We attached the two pieces back together with wire and nailed it more securely to the front. Perhaps because our sign was treated with such humiliation, our church also received humiliation beyond description.

The eaves were so low that people had to duck their heads in order to pass through the entrance. The room was about eight feet square, and it was so cramped that when six of us would pray we might bump foreheads with each other. People in the neighborhood laughed at our sign. They made fun of us, asking what kind of world unification we dreamt of in that tiny little house that "you have to crawl to get into." They didn't try to find out why we had chosen such a name. They simply looked at us as if we were crazy.

This did not bother us, however. In Busan, we had begged for food to sustain ourselves, and now we had a room to perform services. We had nothing to fear. For a suit, I took a pair of U.S. Army fatigues and dyed them black. I wore these with black rubber shoes. Even if others sought

to belittle us, in our hearts we were more dignified than anyone.

People who attended called one another shik-ku, or family member. We were intoxicated with love. Anyone who came there could see what I was doing and hear what I was saying. We were connected by an inner cord of love that let us communicate with God. A woman would be at home preparing rice and suddenly run off to the church. Someone else would say she was going to change into a new dress and then run off to the church in her old dress with holes in it. If a woman's in-laws shaved her hair to keep her from going to the church, she would come with her bald head.

As our members increased, we began to evangelize on university campuses. In the 1950s, university students were premier among intellectuals in Korean society. We began by working near the gates of Ewha Womans University and Yonsei University. Soon a sizable number of students were spending time at our church.

Professor Yoon Young Yang, who taught music at Ewha, and Professor Choong Hwa Han, who was the dormitory master, came to our church. Many students also came, but they did not come just one or two at a time. Dozens came, and their numbers grew in geometric progression. This surprised the established churches and us as well.

Within two months after we began our campus evangelical work, our congregation exploded in size, primarily with students from Ewha and Yonsei. The rate of growth was incredible. It was as if a spring breeze had blown through and changed the hearts of the students all in a moment. Dozens of Ewha students packed up their belongings and moved out of the dormitory. This happened on a single day. If someone tried to stop them, they would say, "Why? Why are you trying to stop me? If you want to stop me, you'll have to kill me. Kill me!" They even came out by climbing the walls around the building. I tried to stop them, but

it was no use. They did not want to be in their clean school; they wanted to be in our little church that smelled of dirty feet. There was nothing anyone could do about it.

Finally Dean Hwal Ran Kim (Helen Kim) sent Professor Young Oon Kim of the Department of Religious Social Welfare to our church. Professor Kim had studied theology in Canada and was a theologian in whom Ewha held out great hope for the future. Dean Kim chose Professor Kim because her specialty was theology, and she assumed she could develop a definitive critique of our theology that could be used to finally stop this influx of students. But a week after meeting me, this special representative, Professor Kim, joined our church and became one of our most enthusiastic members. This gave us even more credibility among the other professors and students at Ewha. Our membership numbers snowballed.

The situation grew out of control, and established churches resumed their accusations that we were stealing their members. This seemed unfair to me. I never told anyone to listen to my sermons or attend our church. If I chased people out the front door, they would come in the back. If I locked the doors, they would climb over the fence. I was powerless to stop them. The people most perplexed by this were the administrators of Yonsei and Ewha, who in turn were supported by Christian foundations. They could not stand by and do nothing as their students and faculty came swarming to some other religious group.

Two Universities Expel Students and Professors

Yonsei University and Ehwa Womans University were embroiled in crisis and finally chose a measure that had never been used before and has never been used since. Ewha fired five professors, including Professor Young Oon Kim, and expelled fourteen students. The expelled students included five in the graduating class. Yonsei also fired one professor and expelled two students.

The school chaplain of Ewha tried advising the students, "You can attend that church after you graduate. That way, no harm will come to the school." But it was of no use. It had the opposite effect.

The expelled students protested vehemently. "There are many atheists in our school," they said. "And we even have the children of traditional shamans attending our school. How can the school justify expelling us and following the hypocrisy of this double standard?"

The school, however, stood fast. It simply repeated its position: "We are a private school and a Christian school. We have the right to expel any student we choose."

When the media got word of the incident, one newspaper carried an editorial titled, "Expulsion Is Wrong in a Country with Religious

Freedom." This situation soon became a topic for debate among the general public.

Ewha, since it was supported by a Christian foundation in Canada, was concerned that its support would be cut if it became known that large numbers of its students attended a church declared to be heretical. In those days, Ewha held chapel three times a week, took attendance, and submitted these attendance records to mission headquarters.

After the students were expelled and the professors fired, public opinion began to turn in our favor. Ewha, in an effort to counter this trend, began a campaign of false rumors too vile to repeat. Unfortunately, as is so often the case, the more vile the rumor, the more people revel in believing and repeating it as true. These false rumors began to feed on themselves, and soon they took on a life of their own. Our church suffered from this for more than a year.

I did not want the problem to grow out of control like this. I did not want to cause problems. I tried to convince the students and professors to lead simple, quiet lives of faith. I explained that there was no need for them to leave the dormitories and cause such public trouble. But they were adamant. "Why do you tell us not to come here?" they asked. "We wish to receive the same grace as everyone else." In the end, they were forced to leave their schools. I was not comfortable with this.

After being forced from their schools, the students went as a group to a prayer hall on Mount Samgak on the outskirts of Seoul. They went to seek comfort for their wounded hearts. They had been kicked out of their schools, their families were angry with them, and their friends no longer wished to meet them. They had no place to go. They fasted and spent their entire time praying with such emotion that their eyes cried and noses ran. Soon, some began to speak in tongues.

It is true that God appears when we are on the edge of despair and desperation. The students who were expelled from their schools and cast out by their families and society found God in the prayer hall on Mount Samgak.

I went to Mount Samgak and gave food and comfort to the students who had become emaciated from fasting.

"It is bad enough that you've been unjustly expelled," I explained. "Please do not fast also. If your conscience is clear over what you have done, then being insulted for it is not dishonorable. Do not be discouraged, but wait for your time."

Five of those students who were seniors later transferred into Sookmyung Women's University. But the damage was already done.

This incident played a decisive role and was the turning point in gaining me a profoundly negative reputation. Newspaper reports began to read as if all the evil acts committed by various religions were done by us. People who at first reacted to the rumors with "Could it be true?" now began to say, "It's true."

It hurt to be subjected to such unfair treatment. The injustice was so intense that it made me angry. I wanted to shout out in rebuttal, but I did not speak out or attempt to fight. We had too much else to accomplish and had no time to waste in fighting.

I believed that such misunderstandings and hatred would dissolve with time and that we should not use our energy to be overly concerned about them. I pretended not to hear people say, "Sun Myung Moon should be struck by lightning," or the Christian ministers who prayed for my death.

But instead of dying down, the rumors grew ever more outrageous with each passing day. It felt as if the whole world had united in pointing fingers of accusation at me. Even in the heat of the Heungnam fertilizer

factory, I refused to let others see even my shins. Yet now rumors had it that I danced naked in our church. Soon people who came to our church for the first time looked at me with eyes that seemed to say, "Are you the one who takes off his clothes and dances?"

I knew better than anyone that it would take time for such misunderstandings to go away, so I never tried to argue with them, saying, "I'm not like that." We cannot know someone without meeting the person, yet there were so many who did not hesitate to curse me without ever having met me. I knew it was useless to battle against such people, so I endured in silence.

The Yonsei–Ewha incident forced our church to the brink of destruction. The image of "pseudo-religion," or "cult," became inseparably identified with my name, and all established churches joined together to call for the government to prosecute me.

On July 4, 1955, the police raided our church and took me and four members—Won Pil Kim, Hyu Young Eu, Hyo Min Eu, and Hyo Won Eu—into custody. Ministers and elders of the established churches joined hands with secular authorities in writing letters calling for our church to be closed. These four members, who had been with me from the beginning, were forced to stay in prison with me.

The matter did not end there. The police investigated my background and came up with a charge of draft evasion. But this, too, was egregious. By the time I escaped my North Korean death camp to head south, I was already beyond the age of compulsory military service. Still they charged me with draft evasion.

New Buds Grow on Scorched Branches

The detectives of the Special Intelligence Section of the Office of Public Order who raided our church and took me into custody brought me to the Chung Bu Police Station. I was outraged to be charged with draft evasion but said nothing. I had a mouth to speak, but I was never given the chance to say a word. Some saw my silence in the face of unjust treatment and called me "spineless." I endured this sort of name-calling in silence as well, believing that this too must be a path that has been given to me. If this is the path I must follow to reach my objective, then there was nothing I could do about it. Because I followed such a clear path, I could not be defeated. The more I was attacked, the more care I took to act more honorably than anyone.

Once I made this decision in my heart, the police had no control over me. When the detective was writing his report, I was teaching him how to write it.

"Why don't you include this content," I would say. "And up here, you need to write it this way."

He did as I said. Each phrase that I told him to write was correct, but when the detective put them all together, he found that they

led him to the opposite conclusion from what he had intended. He became angry and tore up the report.

On July 13, 1955, on the sixth day of incarceration in Chung Bu Police Station, I was placed in prison once again. This time, it was the Seodaemun Prison in Seoul. I was shackled, but I was neither ashamed nor sorrowful. Life in prison was no obstacle for me. It might serve as a motivation to stimulate a heart of great anger, but it was never an obstacle in my path. For me, it was a way to gather additional capital for my future activities. I overcame life in prison by telling myself, "I am not someone to die in prison. I cannot die. This is only a springboard for me to take a great leap toward the world of liberation."

It is the rule in the world, and the law of heaven, that that which is evil will fall and that which is good will rise up. Even if I must go into a dung heap, I will not fail if I maintain a pure heart. As I was being led away in shackles, some women passed by, looked at me askance, and twisted their faces in disapproval. They exuded the feeling that I was grotesque even to look at, because they believed I was the leader of a sex cult. But I was neither afraid nor ashamed. Even if filthy words were used to harass me and our church, I would not be shaken.

Of course, I had normal feelings. Outwardly, I maintained my dignity, but there were many times when I felt stifled and sorrowful to the marrow of my bones. Each time I felt my heart weaken, I endured by telling myself, "I am not someone to just die in prison. I will stand again. I am certain of this." I redoubled my determination, saying, "I am taking all the pain into myself. I am carrying all the baggage for our church."

One could easily expect that my imprisonment would mean the end of our church, with all members going their separate ways. Instead, members came to visit me every day. In some cases, they even fought

over who would come to see me first. Visitations were allowed only after 8 a.m., but members would line up and wait outside the prison gate from early in the morning. The more people cursed me, and the more alone my situation became, the more people would line up to visit me, encourage me, and shed tears for me.

I did not even greet them with great emotion. In fact, I would rebuff them, saying things like: "Why do you come and make such a fuss?" Still, they followed me in tears. This was their expression of faith and love. They were not attached to me because I knew how to speak smoothly or eloquently. They liked me because they knew about the love that lay deep in my heart. Our members recognized my true heart. Even if I should die, I will never be able to forget the members who followed after me even as I was forced to stand shackled in court. I always remember their expressions as they sobbed to see me sitting at the defendant's table.

The guards at the prison were amazed. "How does this man make those people become so crazy," they wondered when they saw our members flock to the prison. "He is not their husband, and they are not his wife. He's not their son. How can they be so devoted to him?"

In at least one case, a guard commented, "We heard that Moon was a dictator and exploited people, but it is so clear that this is not true." This guard became a member to follow our way.

Finally, after I was three months in bondage, the court found me not guilty and I was released. On the day of my release, the chief warden and all the prison section chiefs gave me a formal send-off. Within three months, they all became members of our Unification family. The reason their hearts turned toward me was simple. Once they could see me up close, they realized I was not at all the person portrayed by the

rumors they'd heard. As it turned out, the false rumors circulating in society actually helped our evangelical efforts.

When I had been led away by the police, all media and society had made a huge fuss. But when I was found not guilty and released, they were silent. The only report on my not guilty verdict and release was a three-line story in an inconspicuous corner of the newspaper that read, "Reverend Moon not guilty, released." The vile rumors that had put the whole country in an uproar had all been false, but this information was completely buried. Our members protested, saying, "Reverend Moon, this is unjust. It makes us so angry, we can't stand it." They wept in front of me, but I remained silent and quieted them.

I never forgot the pain I experienced when harassed and subjected to all those false accusations. I endured, even when so many people stood against me that I felt like there was no inch left for me to stand in all of Korea. The sorrow I felt from this time has remained with me in a corner of my heart.

I might be a tree that is buffeted by the wind and rain and scorched by fire, but I would never be a tree that burns and dies. Even a branch that has been scorched will have new buds when the spring comes. If I continue on my way with humility and strong conviction, the day will surely come when the world will understand the value of what I do.

We Are Trained by Our Wounds

People rejected the new expression of truth I preached, calling it heresy. Jesus, born in the land of Judaism, likewise was accused of heresy and was thus crucified. By comparison, my persecution was not nearly as painful or unjust. I could endure any amount of pain placed on my body. The charge of heresy against our church, however, was most unjust and more difficult for me.

Some theologians who studied our church in its early days described our teachings as original and systematic. Some were prepared to accept them. This means that the magnitude of the heresy controversy surrounding our church could not be for theological reasons. It had more to do with issues of power.

Most of our members had attended other churches before joining our church. This was a big reason our church was treated as an enemy by established churches. When Professor Yoon Young Yang, one of the Ewha professors, joined our church, she was taken to the police station to be interrogated. There she discovered that some eighty Christian ministers had written letters to the authorities criticizing our church. Clearly it was not the case that we had done something wrong. Rather, we were seen as posing a threat to the power of certain people and institutions.

It was their vague feelings of fear and their extreme factionalism that drove them in their efforts to suppress our church.

People from many religious groups were attracted to our church and its new teachings. I would say to our members, "Why did you come here? Go back to your churches," and almost threaten them as I tried to chase them away. But they would soon return. The people who flocked to see me would not listen to anyone. They wouldn't listen to their teachers or their parents. They wanted to hear me speak. I wasn't paying them or feeding them, but they believed in what I taught and kept coming to me. The reason was that I opened a way for them to resolve their frustrations. Before I knew the truth, I, too, was frustrated. I was frustrated when I looked up to heaven and when I looked at the people around me. This is why I could understand the frustrations of the people who came to our church. They had questions about life, and they could not find answers. The word of God I conveyed answered their questions with clarity. Young people who sought me out found answers in the words that I spoke. They wanted to come to our church and join me on my spiritual journey, no matter how difficult it might be.

I am the person who finds the way and opens it. I guide people along the path to heal broken families and rebuild the society, nation, and world so that we can finally return to God. People who come to me understand this. They want to go with me in search of God. How can people find fault with this? All we were doing was going in search of God. And for this we were subjected to all manner of persecution and criticism.

Unfortunately, during the period when our church was involved in the heresy controversy, my wife made matters even more difficult for me. After our meeting in Busan, she and her relatives began to demand that I either quit the church immediately and start life with her and our son or else give

her a divorce. They even came to Seodaemun Prison during my incarceration there to put the divorce papers before me, demanding I place my stamp on them. I know how important marriage is in the effort to establish God's peaceful world, so I endured their demands in silence.

She also subjected members of our church to horrible abuse. Personally I could endure. I did not mind her insults and reckless treatment of me, but it was difficult for me to stand by and watch her offensive behavior toward our members. She stormed into our church at all hours to curse our members, destroy church property, and take items that belonged to the church. She even threw water containing human feces at members. When she came, it was impossible for us to hold worship service. In the end, as soon as I came out of Seodaemun Prison, I acceded to the demands of her family and placed my stamp on the divorce document. I was pushed into a divorce against my own principles.

When I think of my former wife today, my heart goes out to her. The influence of her own family, which was strongly Christian, and the leadership of Korea's established churches had much to do with her behaving the way she did. She was so clear and firm in her commitment before we married. The way she changed gives us a lesson on how much we need to fear the power of social prejudice and established concepts.

I experienced both the sorrow of divorce and the pain of being branded a heretic. But I did not bend. These were things I had to endure on my path to redeem the original sin of humanity, the things I had to endure to move forward on the path toward God's Kingdom. It is darkest before the dawn. I overcame the darkness by clinging to God and praying to Him. Other than the fleeting moments that I would spend in sleep, all my available time was spent in prayer.

A Sincere Heart Is Most Important

I reemerged into the world after three months, having been found not guilty. I realized more than ever that I owed a tremendous debt to God. To repay this debt, I searched for a place where our church could begin again from the beginning. I did not, however, pray by saying, "God, build us a church." I never complained about, or felt ashamed of, the small and humble church building we were using up until that time. I was grateful to have a place to pray. I never wished for a large or comfortable space.

Nevertheless, we needed a place where our members could gather and offer services, so we took out a loan of two million won and purchased a house in poor repair on a hillside in Cheongpa Dong. It was one of many houses categorized then as "enemy property," meaning that it had been vacant since being abandoned by Japanese who left Korea at the time of our nation's liberation. It was a small house with only about 710 square feet of floor space. It was at the end of a long and narrow alleyway. Approaching the house was like going through a long, dark tunnel. All the pillars and walls were covered with dirt, which made us wonder what had been going on there before we arrived. I worked with the young people of our church for four days with a sodium hydroxide solution to scrub off all the dirt.

After our move to the Cheongpa Dong church, I could hardly sleep. I would sit on the floor of the main bedroom crouched over in prayer until three or four in the morning. I might take a nap until five, but then I would get up and start the day's activities. I continued this lifestyle for seven years. Even though I was getting only one or two hours of sleep a day, I never felt sleepy during the day. My eyes shone brightly, like the morning star. I never felt tired.

My mind was so full of things to do that I did not even want to waste time eating. Instead of having people take time to set a table for my meals, I ate on the floor and crouched over my food to eat it. "Pour out your dedication! Pour it out, even if you are sleepy! Pour it out until you are exhausted!" I kept repeating these phrases to myself. I prayed in the midst of continued opposition and false accusations with the thought that I was planting seeds that would someday reap a bountiful harvest. If the harvest could not be reaped in Korea, then I was confident that it would be reaped elsewhere in the world.

A year after my release from prison, our church had four hundred members. As I prayed, I would call out their names one by one. Their faces would pass through my mind even before I called their names. Some would be crying, some laughing. In my prayers, I could tell how each person was doing, including whether they were suffering from illness.

Sometimes, as I called out their names in prayer, I would get an inspiration that a particular person would come to the church that day. The person would come, without fail. When I would go to someone who had appeared sick to me in my prayer and ask, "Are you sick?" the person would confirm it. Members were amazed that

I would know they were sick without being told. Each time they asked, "How do you do that?" I would answer with a simple smile.

This is something that happened as we were preparing for a Holy Blessing Ceremony. Before the ceremony, I asked every bride and groom candidate whether they had maintained their chastity. When I asked one particular groom candidate, he answered in a loud voice that he had remained pure. I asked him a second time, and he again assured me he had. I asked him a third time, and again he gave the same answer. I looked at him straight in the eye and said, "You served your military service in Hwacheon, Kangwon Province, didn't you?"

This time he answered "Yes" in a voice filled with fear.

"You received some time off, and as you were coming to Seoul you stopped at an inn, didn't you? And that night you had illicit sex with a woman wearing a red skirt. I know exactly what you did. Why do you lie?"

I became angry at the man and chased him out of the Blessing ceremony venue. If a person keeps his heart's eyes open, he can see even what is hidden.

Some were attracted to our church more because of such paranormal phenomena than because of the teachings. Many people think that spiritual powers are most important. The phenomena often called miracles, however, tend to confuse people in the society at large. A faith that relies on unexplained or miraculous occurrences is not a healthy faith. All sin must be restored through redemption. It cannot be done by relying on spiritual powers. As our church began to mature, I stopped talking to members about the things that I was seeing with my heart's eyes.

Membership continued to grow. Whether I faced dozens of people or hundreds, I acted the same way, as if there were only one. I would

listen whenever a person wanted to tell me about his or her personal situation. Whether it was an old woman or a young man, I would listen with dedication, as if this were the only person I had to deal with. Each member would say, "No one in Korea listens to what I have to say as well as Reverend Moon." A grandmother might start by telling me how she got married and eventually tell me about her husband's illnesses.

I enjoy listening to other people talk about themselves. When people open up to me and talk about themselves, I don't even realize the passing of time. I listen to them for ten, even twenty, hours. People who want to talk have a sense of urgency. They are looking for solutions to their problems. So I feel that I need to listen to them with my full dedication. That is the way to love their life and repay the debt that I owe for my life. The most important thing is to think of life as precious. In the same way that I listened with sincerity to what others had to say, I also shared with them my sincere heart with fervor, and I would pray for them in tears.

How often I prayed with tears through the night? Blood and sweat saturated the floor boards where I prayed, with no chance to dry.

Later, while I was in the United States, I received word that church members were planning to remodel the Cheongpa Dong church. With great urgency I sent a telegram telling them to stop work on the church building immediately. Yes, this church embodies an irrecoverable period in my personal history, but more important than that, it testifies directly to the history of our church. No matter how wonderfully it might have been refurbished, what good could come of it if our history were destroyed? What matters is not some beautiful exterior but the secret life of tears that dwells within that building. It may not be up to a

certain standard, but it embodies a tradition, and therein lies its value. People who cannot respect their own tradition are destined to fail.

There is history carved into the pillars of the Cheongpa Dong church. When I look at a particular pillar, I am reminded of a time when I clung to that pillar and wept over a particular matter. To see that pillar where I wept makes me weep again. To see a door frame that is a little crooked reminds me of the past. Now, though, the old floor boards are all gone. The floor boards where I bent over in prayer and shed so many tears are gone, and the traces of those tears are also gone. What I need are the memories of that pain. It doesn't matter if the external style or appearance is old. Much time has passed, and now we have many churches that are well built. But for me, I would rather go to the small house on the hill in Cheongpa Dong and pray. I feel more comfortable there.

I have lived my entire life praying and preaching, but even now I tremble when I stand before a group of people. This is because to stand in such a position and speak about public matters can mean that many lives will be saved or that many will be lost. It is a matter of utmost importance to me that I can lead the people who hear my words onto the path of life. These are the moments when I draw a clear line on the crossroads between life and death.

Even now, I do not organize my sermons in advance. I am concerned that doing so might allow my own private objectives to enter into the content. With such preparation I may be able to show off how much knowledge I have stored in my head but not pour out my earnest and passionate heart. Before I appear in public, I always offer my dedication by spending at least ten hours in prayer. This is the way I set my roots down deeply. On a mighty tree, even if the leaves are a little bug-eaten, the tree remains healthy if its roots are deep roots. My words may be

a little awkward at times, but everything will be all right so long as a sincere heart is there.

In the early time of our church I wore an old U.S. military jacket and fatigues dyed black and preached with such fervor that I dripped with sweat and tears. Not a day went by without my weeping out loud. My heart would fill with emotion, and tears would pour from my eyes and stream down my face. Those were times my spirit seemed on the verge of leaving my body. I felt as though I were on the verge of death. My clothes were soaked with sweat, and beads of sweat rolled down from my head.

In the days of the Cheongpa Dong church, everyone went through difficult times, but Hyo Won Eu endured particular difficulty. He suffered an illness in his lungs and it was difficult for him, but still he lectured our church's teachings eighteen hours a day for three years and eight months. We could not afford to eat well. We ate barley instead of rice and sustained ourselves with two meals a day. Our only side dish was raw kimchi that was left to ferment for only one night. Hyo Won Eu liked to eat small salted shrimp. He placed a container of these small shrimp in one corner of the room, and once in a while he would go over with a pair of chopsticks and eat a few. That was how he endured through those difficult days. It pained my heart to see Hyo Won Eu lying exhausted on the floor, hungry and tired. I wanted to give him salted conch, but this was much too expensive for us in those days. It still pains me to think of how hard he worked, trying to record my words that flowed like a waterfall, even as he was ill.

Aided by the hard work and sacrifice of members, the church grew steadily. The Sunghwa Students Association was formed for middle and high school students. They were inspired to take the lunches their

mothers prepared for them and give them up so our pioneer missionaries could eat. On their own initiative, the students created a list to take turns providing their lunches in this way. The evangelists who had to eat the lunch of the student knew that the student would be missing lunch that day and going hungry, and so they would eat the lunch in tears. The students' expression of dedication was even more impressive than the lunch itself, and we all redoubled our determination to accomplish the will of God, even if we had to sacrifice our lives.

Though times were difficult, we sent missionaries out to many parts of the country. Despite the members' humble desire, the cascade of vile rumors made it difficult for them to feel open to say they were from the Unification Church. They would go into neighborhoods and clean streets and help out in homes that needed it. In the evenings, our missionaries would hold literacy classes and tell people about the word of God. They would serve people in this way for several months and build up trust. As a result, our church continued to grow. I have not forgotten these members who, though they wanted very much to go to college, chose instead to remain with me and dedicate themselves to the work of the church.

CHAPTER FOUR

WHY WE WORK GLOBALLY

Paying the Ultimate Price to Follow God's Path

As soon as I was released from Seodaemun Prison, I went to the Gabsa Buddhist temple on Mount Gyeroung in Choongcheong Province. I needed to heal the wounds from my torture in Seodaemun Prison. Also, I needed a forest where I could pray and think about the future of our church. This was not long after the end of the Korean War, and just finding enough food to survive was often a difficult task. Despite such short-term difficulties, however, it was important that I make plans for the longer term. We still did not have a church large enough to hold all our members for service, but I felt it was important to spend some time looking out into the distant future.

Following the collapse of Japanese colonial rule and the liberation of Korea in 1945, the two countries had not established diplomatic relations. Japan had not recognized the government in Seoul, and Korea considered Japan an enemy country. My belief was that, when the situation of the world was considered, it was important for the two countries to resume contacts. A number of attempts were made to send a missionary to Japan, but these were unsuccessful. In the end, it was Bong Choon Choi who accomplished this task.

In 1958, I called Bong Choon Choi to meet me on the mountain behind the Gabsa temple.

"You need to go immediately to Japan. You will not be able to return to Korea until you have succeeded."

"Yes!" he replied, without hesitation.

The two of us then sang the Korean Christian hymn whose words begin:

Called of God, we honor the call;
Lord, we'll go wherever you say.

We came down the mountain together in high spirits. He never asked how he was supposed to support himself in Japan or how he was supposed to begin his activities there. Bong Choon Choi was that kind of audacious man. Travel to Japan was not allowed for most Koreans. His only option was to try to enter Japan even without a visa. He would need to endure many things.

Bong Choon Choi did not even know if he could enter Japan, but he was prepared, if necessary, to lay down his life. Until I could hear that he had safely crossed the strait to Japan, I put aside all other work and sat praying in a small room in the church. I didn't eat or sleep. We even had to take out a loan of 1.5 million won to send him. We had many members who had nothing to eat, but evangelizing Japan was so important that everything else had to be put aside.

Unfortunately, Bong Choon Choi was arrested as soon as he arrived in Japan. He was placed in prison, first in Hiroshima and later in Yamaguchi, until he could be deported back to Korea. While in prison he decided he would rather die than be sent back, and so he began to fast. During his fast, he developed a fever. The Japanese authorities decided

to place him in a hospital and delay his deportation until his health could be restored. While in the hospital, he managed to escape from custody.

After such efforts made at the risk of his life over a year and a half, Bong Choon Choi established the church in Japan in October 1959. Korea and Japan would not establish diplomatic relations for another six years. In fact Korea, because the painful memory of suffering under Japan's colonial rule was still quite fresh, was rebuffing any suggestion that it open contacts with Japan. I had our missionary smuggle himself into this enemy country for the sake of Korea's future. Instead of refusing all contact, Korea needed to evangelize Japan so that it would be in the position to be the senior partner in the bilateral relationship. Korea was impoverished materially, so it needed to open a channel to the Japanese leadership, get Japan on its side, and then link itself to the United States. That was how Korea could survive. As a result of the successful effort to send a missionary to Japan, owing to Bong Choon Choi's sacrifice, an exceptional youth leader named Osamu Kuboki joined the church, together with a group of young people who followed him. The Japanese church became securely established as a result of their work.

We sent missionaries to America in the following year. There was no visa trouble this time. They were able to receive passports and visas before leaving. In securing the passports, we were aided by some cabinet ministers of the Liberal Party who had played a part in having me imprisoned in the Seodaemun Prison. Previously, they had opposed us, but now they were helping us. The United States in those days seemed like a very far-off country. Some of our church members opposed the idea of sending missionaries there, saying it was more important to grow our foundation in Korea first. I convinced the members of its importance, however, saying that unless America's crisis could be resolved, Korea

would be destroyed, too. In January 1959, we sent Young Oon Kim, one of the professors who had been fired by Ewha Womans University. Then in September of that year, we sent David S.C. Kim. The work they began in America was aimed at the entire world.

Money Earned Honorably, Used Prayerfully

Funds accumulated through business operations are sacred. For business profits to be sacred, however, it is important not to lie or to take excessive profit. When conducting business, we must always be honest, and we must never take a profit of more than 30 percent. Money earned in this honorable manner must, of course, be spent prayerfully. It must be spent with a clear purpose and intent. This is the principle of business management that I have promoted throughout my life. I believe the purpose of business is not simply to make money. It is also to support the missionary work, which is the work of God.

One reason I worked to create funds for missionary work through business was that I did not want to take money from our members for this purpose. No matter how lofty the purpose might be, sending missionaries overseas could not be accomplished just by wishing it. It required funds. These funds should be earned in the name of the church. Funds for missionary work had to be earned in an honorable way. Only then could we be proud of everything we did.

As I looked at various options for making money, postage stamps caught my eye. In those days, I was suggesting to members that they write to each other at least three times a month. Mailing a letter cost 40 won, but I suggested that they not simply place one 40-won stamp on their letters. Instead, I suggested they use forty 1-won stamps. We took the canceled postage stamps from these letters, sold them, and managed to make 1 million won in the first year. Seeing that used postage stamps, which seemed insignificant, could bring in big money, the members continued this work for seven years. We also sold black-and-white photographs of famous places or popular entertainment personalities that we had hand-colored with paint. This business also contributed significantly to the operation of our church activities.

As the church grew, postage stamps and painted photographs were no longer enough to generate the funds we needed for our missionary work. We needed to take our business to a higher level if we were to send missionaries all over the world. In 1962, before the Korean government redenominated the currency, a lathe that the Japanese had been using but then abandoned in 1945 was purchased for 720,000 won. Following redenomination, it was worth 72,000 won. Korean currency was pegged to the U.S. dollar, then at 125 won per dollar, so the official value of the investment was $576. We placed this lathe in the coal briquette storage room of the "enemy property" house we were using as our church and called it Tongil Industries.

"To you, this lathe may seem insignificant," I explained. "You may wonder what kind of business we are going to do by installing one piece of old and used machinery. This machine that you see here, however, will be multiplied before long to become 7,000—and even 70,000—lathes, and the company will develop along with Korea's defense and

automobile industries. This machine that we installed today will surely be a cornerstone for building our country's automobile industry. Have faith. Have the conviction that this will surely happen."

This was what I said to those then gathered in front of the coal briquette storage room. It was a humble beginning, but our purpose was lofty and great. They responded to my call and worked with dedication. As a result, in 1963 we were able to start another business on a somewhat larger scale. This involved building a fishing boat. The boat was launched at a pier in the Manseok Dong section of Incheon and christened Cheon Seung Ho, meaning Victory of Heaven. Some two hundred people attended the ceremony where this fishing boat was sent out onto the ocean.

Water is the source of life. We were all born from our mothers' wombs. Inside those wombs is water, so we were born from water. I launched the boat with the belief that, in a similar way to how we receive life from water, we need to go out onto the ocean and pass through a series of trials there in order to become capable of surviving the trials we will face on land.

Cheon Seung Ho was an exceptional boat. It sailed throughout the Yellow Sea and caught many fish. The reaction of many, though, was that we had enough to do on land and that there was no need for us to be going out onto the ocean and catching fish. I sensed, however, that the world was about to enter an oceanic era. The launching of Cheon Seung Ho was a small, but precious, first step in opening that era. I was already picturing in my mind the vast ocean with boats larger and faster than Cheon Seung Ho.

Power of Dance Moves the World

We were not a rich church. We were a poor church started by people who couldn't afford enough food to keep themselves well fed. We didn't have the fancy church buildings that other churches had, but we ate barley when others ate rice and saved our money a little at a time. We then shared that money with people who were poorer than we. Our missionaries slept in unheated rooms by laying their sleeping quilts on the bare cement floors. When meal time came, it was common for them to stave off their hunger by eating a few cooked potatoes. In every case, we did our best not to spend money on ourselves.

In 1963, we used the money we had saved this way to select seventeen children and form a Seonghwa children's dance troupe called the Little Angels. Korea in those days had very little in the way of cultural performances. We had nothing to show people from other countries, let alone performances that we ourselves could watch and enjoy. Everyone was too busy trying to survive to remember what Korean dance was like or even the fact that we had a cultural heritage extending back five thousand years.

My plan was to have these seventeen children learn how to dance and then send them out into the world. Many foreigners knew about Korea only as a poor country that had fought a terrible war. I wanted to show

them the beautiful dances of Korea so that they would realize that the Korean people are a people of culture. We could insist all we wanted that we were a people of culture with a five-thousand-year tradition, but no one would believe us if we had nothing to show them.

Our dances—with dancers dressed in beautiful, full-length hanboks, gently twirling around—are a wonderful cultural heritage that can give a new experience to Westerners who are accustomed to watching dancers jump around with bare legs. Our dances are imbued with the sorrowful history of the Korean people. The movements of Korean dance—in which dancers keep their heads slightly bowed as if by force and move carefully so as not be draw attention to themselves—were created by the Korean people, whose five-thousand-year history has been filled with grief.

As the dancer raises one foot wrapped in white beoseon, the traditional Korean leggings, and puts it forward to take a single step, she turns her head gently and raises her hand. As I watch, the gentle subtlety of her movements seems to melt away all the worries and frustrations in my heart. There is no attempt to move the audience with a lot of words spoken in a booming voice. Instead, each dance move, performed with great gentleness and subtlety, moves the heart of the audience. This is the power of art. It allows people who don't understand each other's language to communicate. It lets people who don't know about each other's history understand each other's heart.

In particular, the innocent facial expressions and bright smiles of the children would be certain to completely wipe away the dark image of a country that had only recently been at war. I created this dance troupe to introduce the dances from our country's five-thousand-year history to people in the United States, which was the most advanced country in the world at that time. The society around us, however, heaped criticism on

us. Before even seeing the the Little Angels dance, they began to criticize.

"The women of the Unification Church dance day and night," went their outrageous criticism, "and now it looks like they've given birth to children who also dance." No such rumors could shake my resolve, however. I was confident of showing the world what Korean dance was like. I wanted to let the people who accused us of having danced naked see the beautiful, gentle movements of dancers stepping lightly in their beoseon leggings. These were not wild dances with twisting and turning without rhythm. They were gentle dances by dancers clothed in the traditional dress of our country.

Angels Open a Path through a Dark Forest

There are two things we must leave our descendants when we die. One is tradition, and the other is education. A people without tradition will fail. Tradition is the soul that allows a people to continue; a people without a soul cannot survive. The second thing of importance is education. A people will also fail if it does not educate its descendants. Education gives us the power to live with new knowledge and objectives. Through education, people acquire wisdom for living. Anyone who cannot read will be ignorant, but once educated, a person will know how to use his wisdom in the world to manage his own life. Education helps us understand the principles by which the world operates. To open up a new future, we need, on the one hand, to pass on to our descendants the tradition that has been handed down to us over thousands of years and, on the other, to also supply them with education concerning new things. When tradition and new knowledge are appropriately integrated in our lives, they give birth to an original culture. Tradition and education are both important, and it is impossible to say which takes priority over the other. The wisdom to integrate the two also comes to us through education.

At the same time that I founded the dance troupe, I also founded the Little Angels School of the Arts (later renamed Sunhwa Art School). The purpose in founding this school was to spread our ideals to the world through the arts. The issue of whether we had the ability to manage a school was of secondary importance. I first put my plan into action. If the purpose is clear and good, then it should be put into action quickly. I wanted to educate children to love heaven, love their country, and love humanity.

I wrote my motto for the school as a piece of calligraphy that said in Chinese characters, "Love Heaven, Love Humanity, Love Country." Someone asked me then, "Why do you put 'Love Country' at the end, when you say your purpose is to show Korea's unique culture to the world?"

I answered him, saying, "If a person loves heaven and loves humanity, he has already loved his country. Loving the country has already been accomplished in the process."

If a Korean can cause the world to respect him, then he has already accomplished the purpose of letting the world know about Korea. The Little Angels went to many countries and demonstrated the excellence of Korean culture, but they never made any nationalistic claims about their country. The image of Korea as a country of great culture and tradition was planted deeply in the minds of the people who saw their performances and gave them their applause. In that sense, the Little Angels did more than anyone to publicize Korea to the world and practice love for their country. It gives me great satisfaction every time I see the performances by Su Mi Jo and Young Ok Shin, graduates of Sunhwa Art School who have gone on to become world-renowned vocalists, and by Julia Moon and Sue Jin Kang, who are among the best ballerinas in the world.

Since 1965, when they held their first overseas performance in the United States, the Little Angels have been introducing Korea's beautiful tradition all over the world. They were invited by the British royal family to perform in the presence of Queen Elizabeth II. They were invited to take part in the bicentennial celebration in the United States, where they performed at the John F. Kennedy Center for the Performing Arts. They gave a special performance for U.S. President Richard Nixon, and they took part in the cultural and performing arts festival that was part of the Seoul Olympic Games. The Little Angels are known around the world as cultural ambassadors for peace.

The following is something that happened in 1990, when I visited Russia. The Little Angels gave a performance on the night before I was to leave Russia, after having met President Mikhail Gorbachev. Korea's little girls stood in the center of Moscow, the center of communism. After performing Korean dances dressed in their hanboks, the Little Angels sang Russian folk songs with their beautiful voices. Shouts of "Encore!" from the audience made it impossible for them to come off the stage. In the end, they completely exhausted their repertoire of songs. First Lady Raisa Gorbachev was seated in the audience. South Korea and Russia had not yet established diplomatic relations, and it was very unusual for the first lady to attend a cultural performance from such a country. However, Mrs. Gorbachev sat in the front row and applauded enthusiastically throughout the program. After the performance, she came backstage and handed the troupe flowers. She repeatedly praised the greatness of Korean culture, saying, "The Little Angels are truly angels of peace. I did not know that South Korea had such beautiful traditional culture. During the entire performance, it was as if I was dreaming a dream about my own childhood." Mrs. Gorbachev

embraced each member of the troupe and kissed them on the cheek, saying, "My Little Angels!"

In 1998, the Little Angels visited Pyongyang as the first purely private, nongovernmental cultural exchange program and gave three performances there. They danced the cute "Little Groom Dance" and the colorful "Fan Dance." The eyes of the North Korean people watching the performance were filled with tears. The image of a woman sobbing uncontrollably was captured in the lens of a newspaper photographer. Yong Soon Kim, chairman of North Korea's Asia–Pacific Peace Commission, praised the Little Angels after their performance, saying, "They have opened a narrow path through the dark forest."

That was exactly what the Little Angels had done. They demonstrated for the first time that Koreans from North and South, who had turned their backs on each other for such a long time, were capable of coming together in one place and watching each other's performances. People often think that politics moves the world, but that is not the case. It is culture and art that move the world. It is emotion, not reason, that strikes people in the innermost part of their hearts. When hearts change and are able to receive new things, ideologies and social regimes change as a result. The Little Angels did more than just advertise our traditional culture to the world. They created narrow paths between worlds completely different from each other.

Each time I meet the Little Angels, I tell them, "You must have beautiful hearts to perform beautiful dances. You must have beautiful hearts to have beautiful faces." True beauty is a beauty that wells up from within us. The Little Angels have been able to move the hearts of people throughout the world, because the beauty of Korea's tradition and spiritual culture that are imbued in their dances are beautiful. So the applause for the Little Angels is actually applause for Korea's traditional culture.

World Tour

From childhood, my mind has always yearned for faraway places. In my hometown, I would climb a mountain and long for the sea. When I arrived in Seoul, I wanted to go to Japan. I have always dreamed of going to places larger than where I was.

In 1965, I embarked on my first trip around the world. My suitcase was filled with soil and stones from Korea. My plan was that, as I traveled around the world, I would plant Korea's soil and stones in each country to signify Korea's linkage to the world. For ten months, I toured forty countries, including Japan, the United States, and the nations of Europe. On the day I left Seoul, hundreds of our members came in buses to see me off, and they filled the departure lounge at Kimpo Airport. In those days, going overseas was a significant event. Our members thronged to the airport on that January day with a cold strong wind blowing out of the northwest. No one had told them to do this. They did as their hearts told them. I received their hearts with deep gratitude.

At that time, we were performing mission work in ten countries, and it was my plan to increase that to forty countries within two years. It was to lay the foundation for this that I decided to visit forty countries on my trip. My first stop was Japan. I received a tremendous welcome

there, where Bong Choon Choi had risked his life to start our mission. But looking back, we can only be grateful.

I put the following question to the Japanese members: "Are you 'of Japan,' or have you transcended the state of being 'of Japan'?"

I continued: "God doesn't want that which is 'of Japan.' He doesn't need that which is 'of Japan.' He needs people who transcend Japan. You need to go beyond the limitations of Japan to become Japanese people who love the world, if you are to be people who can be used by God."

It may not have been easy for them to hear this, but I made myself very clear.

My second destination was the United States. I entered the country through the airport in San Francisco, where I was met by our missionaries. From there, we toured the entire country. During the time I was touring America, I felt strongly, "This is the country that manages the whole world. The new culture that will be created in the future must rise up with America as its foundation." I set a plan then to purchase a facility for workshops in the United States that would hold five hundred people. Of course, this would not be only for Koreans. It would be an international facility that would receive people from over one hundred countries.

Fortunately, this hope was soon realized. Many countries sent people to this workshop facility, where they would study and debate about world peace for six months at a time. Race, nationality, and religion made no difference. I believe that the world will develop better societies when people who have transcended race, nationality, and religion and hold a wide variety of opinions come together and candidly discuss world peace.

During my tour of the United States, I visited every state except Alaska and Hawaii. We rented a station wagon and drove day and night. At times, the driver would be so tired.

"Listen here," I would say, "I didn't come here for sightseeing. I'm here to do important work. We need to go carefully."

We didn't waste time sitting down to eat. If we had two slices of bread, a piece of sausage, and some pickles, then that was plenty of food for a meal. We ate breakfast, lunch, and dinner like this. We also slept in the car. The car was our lodging, it was our bed and our restaurant. We ate, slept, and prayed in that small car. There was nothing we couldn't do there. I had a particular purpose to accomplish, so it was easy for me to endure minor inconveniences to the physical body.

After the United States and Canada, I went to Central and South America, and then on to Europe. To my eyes, Europe was in the cultural sphere of the Vatican. It seemed to me that we could not succeed in Europe without understanding the Vatican. Even the Alps, which were supposed to be so difficult to climb, seemed of little significance in comparison to the Vatican.

I went to the Vatican, where Europeans gather to pray, and prayed with such fervor that beads of sweat ran down my face. I prayed that religion, which had become divided among so many denominations and groups, could be unified quickly. God created one world, but people have divided it in ways convenient to themselves. I became more convinced than ever that these divisions must be erased and the world unified as one. From Europe, I went on to Egypt and the Middle East and completed my tour after ten months.

When I returned to Seoul, my suitcase was full of soil and stones from 120 locations in forty countries. When I planted the soil and stones I had taken from Korea, I took soil and stones from each location and brought them back to Korea. I connected Korea to these

forty countries in this way to prepare for the day in the future when the world of peace would be realized centering on Korea. I began preparations to send missionaries to those forty countries.

Last Plane to America

Near the end of 1971, I went to the United States. I had certain tasks that absolutely needed to be accomplished there, but getting there was not so easy. It was not my first time to go to the United States, yet I had to wait an unusually long time to receive my visa. Some members suggested that I delay my departure, but I could not do that. It was difficult for me to explain to the members, but it was important that I leave Korea on the designated date. So I decided to go first to Japan and receive a U.S. visa while in Japan. I was in a hurry to leave Korea.

The day of my departure was quite cold, but so many members came to see me off that they could not all get into the terminal. When it came time for me to go through the passport control desk, however, it was discovered that my passport was missing the stamp of the section chief of the Foreign Ministry's passport section. This stamp was required as proof that the government had cleared me to leave the country. Because of this, I missed the flight I had been scheduled to board.

The members who had prepared for my departure apologized profusely and suggested that I return home and wait while they tracked down the section chief and got him to place his stamp in my passport.

"No," I told them. "I will wait here at the airport. Go quickly and get the stamp."

My heart was extremely urgent. It happened to be a Sunday, so the section chief would not be at his desk. But I could not afford to let myself be concerned by such matters. In the end, our members went to the home of the section chief and had him place his stamp in my passport. So I was able to board the final flight of the day out of Korea. That night, the government declared a national state of emergency and imposed heavy restrictions on foreign travel by private citizens. I had boarded the last flight that would allow me to go to America.

I applied for a U.S. visa in Japan, but again it was refused. I discovered later what the problem was. The Korean government still had a record of my being detained by the Japanese colonial police just prior to liberation on charges of being a communist. The early 1970s was a time when communism was spreading with ferocity. We had sent missionaries to 127 countries, but those in four communist countries were expelled. Evangelizing in communist countries in that era could result in death. I never gave up, however, and continued to send missionaries to the Soviet Union and other communist countries.

Our first missionary to Czechoslovakia arrived in 1968. Around 1980, we began to refer to our mission work in the communist countries of Eastern Europe as "Mission Butterfly." A larva must go through a long period of suffering before it can grow wings and become a butterfly, and we felt that this was similar to the suffering of our underground missionaries working in communist countries. It is a difficult process for a butterfly to come out of its cocoon, but once it has its wings, the butterfly can fly anywhere it wants. In the same way, we knew that once communism came to its demise, our missionaries would grow wings and begin to fly.

Missionary Young Oon Kim, who had gone to the United States in early 1959, toured the major universities in that country to convey God's word. In the process, she met Peter Koch, a German student at the University of California at Berkeley, and this young man decided to suspend his studies and travel by ship to Rotterdam and then start his missionary work in Germany. Missionaries to the communist countries of Asia were sent out from Japan. These missionaries had to be sent to places where their lives could be in danger without so much as a special worship service to mark their departure. This pained me as much as having to push Bong Choon Choi to try again to smuggle himself into Japan during our final meeting in the pine forest behind the Gabsa temple. A parent who has to watch a child being punished would much rather be allowed to take the punishment himself. I would have preferred to go out as a missionary myself. My heart was full of tears as I sent those members to places where they would be watched and possibly executed for their religious activities. Once the missionaries had left, I spent most of my time in prayer. Earnest prayers were the best thing that I could do to help protect their lives. Missionary work in communist countries was dangerous work. A missionary never knew when the Communist Party might take him.

People who went as missionaries to communist countries could not even tell their parents where they were going. The parents knew well the dangers of going to such countries and would never give permission for their children to go. Gunther Werzer was discovered by the KGB and deported. In Romania, where the dictatorship of Nicolae Ceausescu was at its height of power, the secret police were constantly following and intercepting the telephone calls of our missionaries.

It was as if the missionaries had gone into the lion's den. The number of missionaries going to communist countries, however, kept growing.

Then in 1973, there was a terrible incident in Czechoslovakia where thirty of our members were taken into custody. One member, Marie Zivna, lost her life while in prison at the young age of twenty-four. She was the first martyr who died while conducting missionary work in a communist country. In the following year, another person lost his life in prison. Each time I heard that one of our members had died in jail, my entire body froze. I could not speak or eat. I couldn't even pray. I just sat motionless for a while, unable to do anything. It was as if my body had turned to stone. If those people had never met me, or never heard what I taught, they never would have found themselves in a cold and lonely jail cell, and they never would have died the way they did. When they died, they suffered in my place. I asked myself, "Is my life worth so much that it could be exchanged for theirs? How am I going to take on the responsibility for the evangelization of the communist bloc that they were bearing in my place?" I could not speak. I fell into a sorrow that seemed to have no end, as if I had been thrown into deep water. I saw Marie Zivna before me in the form of a yellow butterfly. The yellow butterfly that had escaped Czechoslovakia's prison fluttered its wings as if to tell me to be strong and to stand up. By carrying on her missionary activities at the risk of her life, Marie truly had been transformed from being a caterpillar to being a beautiful butterfly.

Missionaries working in such extreme circumstances often received revelations through dreams and visions. They were isolated and could not communicate freely with others, so God gave them revelations to let them know the path they must follow. It would often happen that a missionary who had lain down to sleep for a short while would have a dream in which he was told, "Get up quickly and go someplace else." He did as he was told in the dream, only to discover later that the secret

police had raided the place where he had been resting. In another instance, a member had a dream in which a person he had never seen before came to him and told him how to carry out his missionary work. Later, when he met me for the first time, he exclaimed, "You're the person I saw in my dream."

This was how I had risked my life and the lives of our members to overthrow communism and build God's Kingdom. Yet, the United States would not give me a visa, because it suspected me of being a communist. Finally, in Canada, after submitting materials illustrating my claim to be anticommunist, I was able to receive a visa to the United States.

The reason I went to all this trouble to go to America was to fight against the dark forces that had caused America's moral degradation. I left Korea to wage war on the forces of evil. At the time, all the major problems of the world—communism, drugs, moral decadence, and immorality—were mixed together in a hellish stew. I declared, "I have come to America as a fireman and a doctor. If a house catches fire, a fireman needs to come, and if someone is sick, a doctor pays a visit." I was like a fireman who had gone to America to extinguish the fires of immorality, and like a doctor who had gone to cure America of the illness that made it lose sight of God and go to the brink of decadence.

America in the early 1970s was embroiled in the Vietnam War, and activists were protesting. It was a country seriously divided. Young people searching for meaning experimented with alcohol, drugs, and free sex and in the process were neglecting their eternal souls. Mainstream religion, which should have provided guidance to such young people, was not performing its role. It could not help them end their aimless wandering and return to proper ways of living. The hedonistic, materialistic culture dragged many young people down, because they had no place to rest their hearts.

Soon after I arrived in the United States, I toured the country, speaking on the topics "The Future of Christianity" and "God's Hope for America." In front of large audiences, I criticized the weaknesses of America in a way that no one else would.

I spoke about how America was founded on the Puritan spirit and had grown to be the strongest country in the world in just two hundred years because it received God's boundless love and blessing. I reminded the audiences that America's freedom comes from God but that today America had cast God aside. "America has a great tradition," I said. "All you have to do is revive it." I went to awaken America's spirit, to save America from destruction, to urge people to repent and return to God.

Our Future Lies with the Ocean

As I toured the world, no one knew that plans were being made to develop economic foundations on a worldwide scale. As the church grew and the number of missions increased, the amount of funds we needed to support these activities increased dramatically. We needed income. As I toured forty-eight states in the United States, I gave much thought to the kinds of businesses that could support the activities we had planned.

What came to my mind then was that Americans eat meat every day. I checked the price of a cow. I saw that a cow that costs a small amount in Florida could cost several hundred dollars in New York. But when I checked the price of tuna, I discovered that one bluefin tuna cost more than $4,000. Tuna lay more than 1.5 million eggs at a time, whereas a cow will have only one calf at a time. It was clear that catching tuna would be a much better business endeavor than raising cattle.

One problem was that Americans did not eat much fish. The Japanese, however, were extremely fond of tuna. There were many Japanese living in the United States then, and expensive restaurants operated by Japanese sold raw tuna at a high price. Also, some Americans who were learning to enjoy raw fish enjoyed eating tuna.

The earth where we live is covered by more ocean than land. The United States has two oceans and therefore plenty of fish. Also, beyond the two hundred–mile limit, no country has territorial claims on the ocean. Anyone can go out to catch fish. In order to start a farm or raise cattle, we would need to buy land, but there is no need for that in the ocean. All we needed was one boat, and we could go as far as necessary in order to catch fish. The ocean is filled with things to eat. Also, on the ocean surface, there is an active shipping industry. Ships carry things made in countries all over the world to be sold elsewhere. The ocean is a treasure trove that guarantees humankind a bright future. That is why I teach that those who are concerned with the future of humanity must be concerned with the oceans. When we can love and inherit the oceans, we inherit the future.

We purchased several boats in the United States. These were not the large ships that might be seen in a brochure but boats about thirty-four feet to thirty-eight feet in length. They could pursue tuna with their engines turned off. They were fishing boats about the size of a yacht that would not have major accidents. These boats were placed in Washington, San Francisco, Tampa, and Alaska. We also purchased a ship repair facility.

We did a lot of our own research. We placed one boat in each region and measured the water temperature. We checked to see how many tuna were caught each day, and placed the data on a chart. We didn't just take data that experts had created previously; our members went into the water themselves to gather the information. The results of studies done by university-based researchers in the area were used as reference. In addition, I went to those areas, lived there myself, and checked them out. No data was more accurate than what we gathered.

We went to a lot of trouble to conduct this research, but we did not keep it to ourselves. Instead, we shared it with the fishing industry. We also developed new fishing grounds. If too many fish are caught in one area, it depletes the fish population. It is important to go to new areas. Within a short time, we had made a major impact on the U.S. fishing industry.

We entered the business of catching fish on the open sea. Our idea was that one ship would go out to sea and catch fish for at least six months without returning to port. When the ship had all the fish it could carry, a transport ship went out to it, took its fish, and resupplied it with food and fuel. The ship had refrigeration facilities where it could store fish for a long time.

The name of our ship was New Hope, and it was well known for being able to catch many fish. I took that boat out myself and caught tuna. People were often afraid of getting on boats. When I suggested to young people that they get on a boat, their first reaction was often one of fear.

"I get seasick," I often heard them say. "All I have to do is get on a boat, and I start getting woozy and feel like I'm going to die."

So I got on the boat myself first. From that day, I went out on the boat almost every day for seven years. Even now, when I am ninety years old, I like to go out on the ocean whenever I have the time. Now, there are more and more young people who say they want to go out on the boats. More women say they want to do this. With any task, if the leader does it first, the people follow. As a result, I have become well known as a tuna fisherman.

It would have been of little use, however, if we had only caught the tuna. We also needed to be able to sell it at the right price. We created a tuna-processing facility, and I even sold the tuna myself. We put the tuna in refrigerated trucks and went out and sold them. If selling was

difficult, we started our own seafood restaurants and sold the tuna directly to consumers. Once we had our own restaurants, people could not ignore us.

The United States has three of the world's four largest fishing grounds. Three-quarters of the world's fish population live in waters near the United States. Yet, the United States has relatively few people to catch fish, and its fishing industry is extremely underdeveloped. The government has taken many measures designed to support the fishing industry, but they have not had a major effect. The government offered to sell boats at a big discount on the condition that buyers use them for two and a half years, but few people took advantage of the opportunity. How frustrating this is. When we started to put money into the fishing industry, it caused a stir in each port where we went. This was not surprising, since communities prospered wherever we invested. Our work, ultimately, was to pioneer new worlds. We were not simply catching fish. We were taking paths not taken by others. How exciting it is to pioneer new paths!

The ocean changes constantly. They say people's minds change morning and night, but the ocean changes moment to moment. That is why the ocean is both mysterious and beautiful. The ocean embraces everything in heaven and earth. It can come together at a particular spot and form clouds or become rain and fall back down. I am very fond of nature, because it never deceives. If it is high, it becomes lower; if it is low, it becomes higher. In every instance, it adjusts its height to become flat. If I am sitting holding a fishing pole, it seems as though I have all the time in the world. What is there on the ocean to stand in our way? Who is there to make us hurry? We have a lot of time for ourselves. All we need to do is watch the ocean and talk with it. The

longer a person spends on the ocean, the greater the spiritual aspect of his life will become. The ocean, however, can be calm one minute but then quickly change its face and send us strong waves. Waves several times the height of a person will rise up above the boat, as if to devour it. A strong wind will tear at the sail and make a fearful sound.

Think of this, though. Even when the waves have risen and a fearful wind is blowing, the fish in the water have no trouble sleeping. They give themselves over to the waves and don't resist them. This is what I learned from the fish. I decided not to be afraid, no matter how strong the waves were. I let the waves carry me. I made myself one with the boat, and we rose with the waves. Once I started doing that, my heart was never shaken, no matter what kind of waves I came up against. The ocean has been such a wonderful teacher for me in my life that I created the Ocean Challenge program to give young people the leadership training the ocean provides.

Reverend Moon, Seed for a New American Revolution

The initial warm hospitality shown to me by Americans began to grow cold, even hostile. They cynically questioned how a religious leader from Korea, an insignificant country that had barely survived hunger and war, could dare call on Americans to repent.

It was not just Americans who opposed me. The reaction from the Japanese Red Army, in league with international communists, was particularly strong. They were even caught by the FBI trying to sneak into the workshop center in Boston where I often stayed. There were so many attempts to harm me that my children could not attend school without the presence of bodyguards. Because of the continued threats on my life, I spoke from behind bulletproof glass for a period.

Despite such opposition, the lecture series by the small-eyed man from the Orient gathered more and more interest. People began to listen to the teachings, which were completely different from what they had heard until then. The content of the lectures dealing with the fundamental principles of the universe and seeking to reawaken the founding spirit of America was a breath of fresh air for Americans who had fallen into the hell of immorality and sloth.

Americans experienced a revolution of consciousness through my lectures. Young people began to follow me, calling me "Father Moon" or "Reverend Moon" and cutting their shoulder-length hair and their scruffy beards. When appearances change, minds also change. So God began to enter into the hearts of young people who had been immersed in alcohol and drugs.

The lectures were attended by a variety of young people, transcending denominations. When I would interrupt my sermons to ask, "Are there any Presbyterians here?" many young people would wave their hands, saying, "Here. Here." If I asked, "Are there any Catholics?" hands would go up again. When I asked, "How about Southern Baptists?" many people would again answer, "Me. Me."

"Why do you come to hear me instead of going to hear a sermon in your own religion?" I asked. "Go home and go to your own church to hear God's word."

When I said this, the audience responded, "We want to hear Reverend Moon!"

More and more people began gathering, and even some ministers of Presbyterian and Baptist churches came, bringing with them the young people of their churches. As time went on, Reverend Moon became an icon representing a revolution of consciousness in American society.

I taught American young people how to endure difficulty. I thoroughly taught them the principle that a person must be able to rule himself before he can rule the universe. My teachings provided a new inspiration to American young people living in an age of confusion. They shouted in agreement with my message of sexual purity and true families. The reception was so enthusiastic that it made me sweat with excitement as well.

"Do you want to bear the cross of pain?" I asked them. "No one wants to go the way of the cross. Your heart may want to go that way, but your body says 'No!' Just because something is pleasing to the eye doesn't mean it is good for the heart. There are many things that look good, but an examination of their inner aspect shows them to be evil. If you catch yourself seeking after only things pleasing to the eye and try following that path, you must immediately stop yourself and say, 'You rascal!' Also, if you feel the desire to eat only things pleasing to the mouth, you must scold your body, saying, 'You rascal,' and block yourself. You young people are attracted to the opposite sex, aren't you? In this case, too, you must make a strong stand against such urges. If a person cannot control himself, he cannot do anything in this world. Consider that if you break down, the universe will break down."

I was teaching them the motto that I had followed as a young man, which was "Before seeking to rule the universe, first perfect your ability to rule yourself." America had great wealth and had become obsessed

with material goods. I stood in the midst of this material civilization and talked about matters of the mind and heart. The mind cannot be seen with the eye or held in the hand. Yet, we clearly are ruled by our minds. Without our minds, we are nothing. Then I talked about true love, God-centered love, which should guide the mind. I said that true freedom can be enjoyed only when we have a clear understanding of ourselves based on a foundation of true love and are able to exercise self-control.

I taught them the value of labor. Labor is not suffering but creation. The reason a person can work all his life and be happy is that labor is connected to God's world. The labor that people perform is nothing more than taking things that God created and shaping them in different ways. If you think that you are making something to give to God as a memento, then labor is not something to think of in a negative way. Many American young people were so steeped in the affluent life provided to them by their materialistic civilization that they didn't know the joy of working. So I taught them to work with joy.

I also awoke in them the joy of loving nature. The young people were caught up in the immoral culture of the cities and enslaved in selfish lives, so I talked to them about the preciousness of nature. Nature is given to us by God. God speaks to us through nature. It is a sin to destroy nature for the sake of a moment of enjoyment or an insignificant amount of money. The nature that we destroy eventually will make its way back to us in the form of poison and make life difficult for our descendants. We need to go back to nature and listen to what nature tells us. I told the young people of America that when we open our hearts and listen to what nature is saying, we can hear the word of God.

Washington Monument, 1976

In September 1975, we founded the Unification Theological Seminary in Barrytown, New York, which is located north of New York City. The faculty was hired on an interreligious basis, and we had professors representing Judaism, Protestantism, Catholicism, Eastern Orthodoxy, and Oriental philosophy. When they lectured about their own religions, our students asked them very difficult questions. The classes always became forums for intense debate. When all the religions were put together and debated, they began to break through the incorrect concepts that they had about each other and to better understand each other. Gifted young people finished their master's level education at our seminary and entered the doctoral programs at Harvard, Yale, and other leading U.S. universities. Today they have become people capable of leading the religious world on a global scale.

In 1974 and 1975 I was invited to speak on Capitol Hill. I spoke in front of members of the House of Representatives on the topic "One Nation Under God."

I addressed the congressmen in the same manner as I had the young people on the street, saying, "America was born through God's blessing. This blessing, however, was not for Americans alone. This was God's

blessing for the world, given through America. America must understand the principle of this blessing and sacrifice itself in order to save the world. To do this, there needs to be a reawakening that lets America return to its founding spirit. Christianity, which has been divided into dozens of denominations, must be united, absorb all religions, and open a new future for world civilization."

I was the first foreign religious leader to be invited to speak by the U.S. Congress. After I was invited for a second time, many more people became interested in finding out about this man Reverend Moon from Korea.

The next year, on June 1, 1976, we held a celebration at Yankee Stadium in New York City to commemorate the two hundredth anniversary of America's independence. At the time, America was not so peaceful as to have the presence of mind to celebrate its anniversary. It was feeling the threat of communism, and its young people were living lives far distant from the desire of God, engaging in such things as drugs and free sex. I felt that America was seriously ill. I went to the celebration feeling as though I were like a surgeon cutting open the heart of a New York that lay sick.

On the day of the celebration, torrential rains came down, and a strong wind blew the decorations all around the field, but no one tried to get out of the rain. The band started playing "You Are My Sunshine," and everyone in the stadium began to sing together. They were singing a song about sunshine, even as they were being soaked by the rain. Their mouths were singing about sunshine, but their eyes were crying. It was a moment when rain and tears were mixed together. Then, incredibly, as I went to the stage to speak, the sunshine broke through the rain clouds. It was as if God had heard their singing.

I did some boxing when I was in school. You can hit a good boxer with many jabs and still find that he is not affected. If you can land a solid upper cut, however, even the strongest boxer will be shaken up. I was counting on landing a solid upper cut on America. I felt that there needed to be a much larger rally than what had been held up to that point so that the name "Sun Myung Moon" would be indelibly carved into America's mind.

Washington is the capital of the United States. In a place that is a straight line from the Capitol, there is a tower called the Washington Monument. It is an obelisk, shaped like a sharpened pencil standing on its end. A large grassy area extends from the monument to the Lincoln Memorial. This area represents the heart of America. I set a plan to hold a large rally in this place.

To hold a rally there, however, we needed permission from the U.S. government and the U.S. National Park Police. Most U.S. officials did not like me very much. I had previously put ads in newspapers calling on the people of America to forgive former President Richard Nixon, who had been pushed into a crisis because of the Watergate incident. This view was very unpopular. So now the U.S. government kept turning us down, and it was not until forty days prior to the event that we were finally able to receive permission.

Our members, too, suggested to me that this was too ambitious a plan and that we should not go forward. The National Mall surrounding the Washington Monument was an open park in the middle of an urban area. There were not many trees—just a wide expanse of grass. If the crowd were small, it would be obvious for everyone to see. To fill such a large area, there would have to be hundreds of thousands of people. Our members wanted to know how this could be possible.

Prior to this, only two people had held large events on the National Mall. Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr., had held a rally for civil rights on the steps of the Lincoln Memorial, and Rev. Billy Graham had held a large gathering there. So it was a place with a lot of symbolism. This was the place that I was challenging.

I prayed without ceasing for this rally. I wrote the speech that I was to deliver four different times. A week before the event, I still had mixed feelings about what I should say in my speech. Finally, three days before the event, I completed the text. Generally, I don't speak from prepared texts. I made an exception in this case, because of my concern that the event go well. I knew this was going to be a particularly important event, though I wasn't quite certain in what way.

I will never forget what happened on that day, September 18, 1976. People started coming to the Washington Monument from early in the morning. Some three hundred thousand people gathered. It was impossible to tell where all these people had come from. They had all different colors of hair and skin. All the races that God sent to earth gathered on that day. It was a rally on a global scale that does not require any additional description.

I stood in front of the gathering and declared, "God prepared America for two hundred years. This is the time for awakening. America must accept her global responsibility. Armed with Godism, she must free the communist world and at last build the Kingdom of God here on earth." The speech was interrupted many times by shouts and applause.

Newsweek, in a year-end pictorial review of the major events of 1976, carried my photograph and referred to me as part of the revivalism of the 1970s. On the other hand, an increasing number of people were beginning to look at me with caution and fear. To them, I was nothing

more than a strange magician who had come from the East. I was not a white man they could place their faith in and follow. The fact that I was saying things that were somewhat different from what they had heard in their churches made them feel very insecure. In particular, they could not allow a situation in which young white people were showing respect to and following an Asian with slender eyes shaped like a fish. They began spreading rumors that I had been brainwashing innocent young white people. This group that opposed me gathered in the background, behind those who were shouting their support. I knew that another crisis was about to befall me. I was not afraid, however, because I was clearly doing what was right.

America is widely known as a country of freedom and equality, where people of all races come to realize the American dream. In fact, however, there is a great deal of struggle stemming from racial and religious discrimination. These are chronic illnesses that are embedded deep within America's history, and they are therefore much more difficult to cure than the social diseases such as immorality and materialism that arose out of the affluence of the 1970s.

About this time, I often visited African-American churches in an effort to foster ecumenical harmony. Among black leaders there were some who, in the manner of Dr. King, were working to do away with racial discrimination and bring about God's world of peace.

Some of these ministers had images hanging in their basements of slave markets that had existed for hundreds of years prior to being outlawed. One such image was of a black man being burned alive while hanging from a tree. Another was of black men and women stripped of their clothes being looked over like merchandise by potential slave buyers. And yet another was a black baby crying as it was being taken

away from its mother. One could hardly believe that human beings were capable of the barbaric acts depicted so clearly in those images.

"Wait and see," I told a gathering in Chicago on October 24, 1975. "Within the next thirty years, there will be a president of the United States who was born into an interracial black and white family."

The prophecy I made that day has now come true in America with the inauguration of President Barack Obama, who spent much of his adult life in Chicago. This prophecy did not come true on its own. Many people shed their blood and sweat to do away with the struggles between the races, and those efforts have now finally blossomed.

Surprisingly, a number of ministers of established churches in America came and brought their congregations to the Washington Monument rally. They decided that my message transcended denominations and that I was inspiring young people. I called on people to transcend differences of denomination and religion, and those words were realized at this rally. The Washington Monument Rally was a miracle. Three hundred thousand people attended, making this among the largest gatherings ever on the National Mall.

Cry Not for Me but for the World

Good is often followed by the bad. Some people drew mustaches on my picture, trying to associate me with Hitler. They called me "anti-Semitic" and claimed I taught against Jews. Trouble also happened with Christians. As the number of young people following me and the number of ministers who wanted to learn the Principle increased, America's established churches also began to persecute me. Lastly, leftists in America reacted against my position that it was America's responsibility to stop the spread of communism in the world. They, too, began to look for ways to stop my activities.

As our popularity grew, all kinds of misgivings and doubts began to be raised about me. Young people, inspired to spread my teachings, had left college or quit their jobs to travel around the country to teach and raise funds for our work. Their parents understandably became concerned about their well-being.

Furthermore, the United States had become embroiled in the Watergate crisis. I met with President Richard Nixon to urge him to seek God's will in leading the nation. I issued an appeal to the American people to "forgive, love, and unite" around the position of the

president. This sparked opposition from the leftist news media. Things that previously had not been an issue suddenly came pressing down upon me. At the same time, conservatives said I was too liberal and that my teachings would break down traditional values.

Many Christians were unhappy about the new understanding of the cross that I was teaching: Jesus came as the Messiah, and it was not God's predestined will that he be crucified. With the execution of Jesus, God's plan for the kingdom of peace went awry. If Israel had received Jesus as the Messiah, he could have brought about a world of peace, uniting cultures and religions of the East and West. Jesus, however, died on the cross, and God's work of complete salvation was delayed until the Second Coming. This understanding of the cross brought a great deal of opposition. Established churches and the Jewish community both came to regard me as their enemy. They tried any number of ways to have me removed from America, each for their own different reasons.

Ultimately, I was imprisoned once again. All I did was work to reestablish the morality of America and restore it to be a country in line with God's will, but I was accused of not paying my taxes. I was well past my sixtieth birthday by this time.

During the first year I was in America, money received as donations from around the world was placed in a bank account in New York in my name, held in trust for the church, a practice common in some denominations. The funds that were in this account for three years produced interest income, and I was indicted on the charge of not paying taxes on about $7,500. Normally a fine would be charged, but I was imprisoned in the federal correctional institution in Danbury, Connecticut, on July 20, 1984.

On the day before reporting to the Danbury prison, I held my final gathering of members at the Belvedere training center in Tarrytown, New York. Members filled the property and shed tears as they prayed for me. Thousands of people who had followed me gathered at Belvedere that day. I raised my voice and told them not to lose heart.

"I am innocent," I said. "I have done nothing wrong."

"I can see the bright light of hope rising from beyond Danbury," I told them. "Don't cry for me, but cry for America. Love America, and pray for America."

I stood before the young people immersed in sadness and held up my fists as a sign of hope.

The statement I made prior to entering the prison caused a great stir among religious people. A "Common Suffering Fellowship" was initiated, and there was a wave of prayers to support me. The Common Suffering Fellowship was a groundswell of support of clergy from all denominations and from other religions concerned about the attack on religious freedom in America.

On the day that I went to prison, I had nothing to fear. I know life in jail. This was not the case with the people around me, however. They were concerned that some people strongly opposed to me would do something to end my life. I headed to prison with my head held high.

"Why Does My Father Have to Go to Jail?"

Even in Danbury prison, I followed my principle of living for the sake of others. I would wake up early in the morning and clean places that were dirty. In the cafeteria, others would lean over their food and either take a nap or chat among themselves, but I kept my back straight and sat with dignity. When I was given work to do, I worked harder at it than others did, and I kept an eye out to see how others were doing. In my spare time, I read the Bible. One prisoner, seeing how I read the Bible day and night, said to me, "Is that your Bible? Here's my Bible. Take a look!" He threw a magazine to me. It was the pornographic magazine Hustler.

In prison, I was known as a person who worked without talking. I read books and meditated. After going three months this way, I became friends with the prisoners and the guards. I became friends with a person who was on drugs and with the prisoner who had said the pornographic magazine was his Bible. After a month or two, the prisoners began to share with me the items they received from outside. Once we could share our hearts, it was as if spring had come to the inside of the prison.

Actually, the United States did not really want to send me to prison. They chose to indict me while I was out of the country on a trip to Germany, and they would have been satisfied if I had chosen not to return. They weren't trying to put me in jail. They were trying to remove me from the country. I was becoming well known in America, and the number of people following me was increasing. So they wanted to put a roadblock in my way. Just as in Korea, I was a thorn in the side of the established churches. Because I knew this was their purpose, I chose to return to America and go to jail. I still had things that needed to be done in America.

I think that going to jail is not a completely bad thing. If I am to get people who are in the valley of tears to repent, then I must first shed tears. Unless I first experience such a wretched heart, I cannot get others to submit themselves to God. Heaven really works in mysterious ways. After I was imprisoned, seven thousand ministers and other religious leaders accused the U.S. government of violating religious freedom and began an effort to save me. Among them was the conservative Rev. Jerry Falwell of the Southern Baptist Convention and the liberal Dr. Joseph E. Lowery, who gave the benediction during the inauguration of President Obama. They stood at the forefront of the effort to save me. Also, my daughter In Jin, a young girl of 20, marched with them. She stood before some seven thousand clergy and read a letter that she had written to me in tears.

"Hello, everyone. I am In Jin Moon, the second daughter of Rev. Sun Myung Moon. On July 20, 1984, it seemed that the end of the world came to our family. This was the day that my father entered Danbury prison. I never dreamed that such a thing would happen to my father—especially in America, a land of the free that my father has loved and served immensely. My father has worked hard since he came

to America. I have almost never seen him sleep. He rises early in the morning to pray and work. I have never seen anyone work with greater dedication to the future of America or to God. Yet, America has placed my father in Danbury prison. Why does he have to go to Danbury? He is not concerned about his own suffering. My father's life has been dotted with tears and suffering, as he sought to carry out God's will. He is now 64 years old. His only crime was that he loved America. Yet, at this moment, he is either washing dishes in the prison cafeteria or mopping its floors. Last week, I visited my father and saw him for the first time in his prison uniform. I cried and cried. My father told me not to cry for him but to pray for America. He told me to take my anger and sorrow and transform these into a powerful force that will make this a truly free country. He said that while he was in prison he would endure any hardship, bear any injustice, and carry any cross. Freedom of religion is the basis of all freedoms. I am truly grateful to everyone here for supporting religious freedom."

My sentence was reduced by six months for good behavior, and I was released after serving thirteen months. The day I left prison, a banquet to celebrate my release was held in Washington, D.C. Seventeen hundred Christian ministers and Jewish rabbis were gathered and waiting for me. In my remarks to the gathering, I repeated my position in favor of transcending religions and denominations. I spoke in a loud voice to the world at large, feeling no need for concern for the reaction from those opposed to me.

"God is not a denominationalist. He is not bound by secondary arguments over doctrine. There are no distinctions over nationality or race in God's great parental heart. Neither are there any walls between nations or cultures there. Even today, God continues to do everything

He can to embrace all the world's people as His children. America today suffers from racial issues, issues resulting from the confusion of values and moral degradation, issues of spiritual drought and the decline of Christian faith, and the issue of atheistic communism. These are the reasons I answered the call of God and came to this country. Christianity today must have a great awakening and come together as one. Clergy, too, must reexamine the roles that you have been playing until now and repent. The situation that played out two thousand years ago, when Jesus came and called on people to repent, is being repeated today. We must fulfill the important mission that God has given to America. The situation cannot continue as it is now. There needs to be a new reformation."

Once I had been released from prison, there was nothing to hold me back. I spoke with an even louder voice than before to give a message of warning to a fallen America. I repeatedly spoke in strong words that returning to God's love and morality is the only way to revitalize America.

I was imprisoned without my having done anything wrong, but God's will was there as well. After my release, the people who worked for my release took turns coming to Korea to learn more about my work. They came to find out what it was about Reverend Moon's spirit that had attracted so many young people in America. On their return to the United States, 120 of these ministers organized the American Clergy Leadership Conference.

CHAPTER FIVE

TRUE FAMILIES CREATE TRUE PEOPLE

My Wife, Hak Ja Han Moon

The first time I saw my wife, she was a young girl of fourteen and had just graduated from elementary school. She was a quiet girl who never raised her voice and never sought to bring attention to herself. She always took the same route to and from the church. When she was first introduced to me, I was told she was the daughter of one of our church members, Mrs. Soon Ae Hong.

"What is your name?" I asked her.

"My name is Hak Ja Han," she answered with a clear voice.

In that moment, before I knew what was happening, I said, "So Hak Ja Han has been born in Korea!" I said this three times in repetition, and then prayed, saying, "God! Thank you for sending to Korea such a wonderful woman as Hak Ja Han."

I then looked at her, and said: "Hak Ja Han, I'm afraid you are going to have to do a lot of sacrificing."

All of these words came out of my mouth spontaneously. Later, Mrs. Hong told me that she thought it strange that I would say the same thing three times after meeting her daughter for the first time. My wife has told me that she also remembers that first, short meeting. She told

me she remembers everything that I said then as if I had delivered a sermon just for her, and she kept it in her heart. She said she felt like she had received an important revelation about her future that she could not forget.

Her mother was from a faithful Presbyterian family, so she was raised in a Christian home. Her hometown was Jungju, which is my hometown as well, but she had lived in Anju until coming to South Korea during the Korean War. When Mrs. Hong first began attending our church, she lived a very faithful life in Chuncheon and raised her daughter strictly. My wife attended a nursing school that was operated by the Catholic Church. I am told that the rules of this school were so strict that it was as if she were living in a convent. She had a gentle character, and during the time she was raised by her mother, she never went anywhere except to school and to our church.

I was forty at the time, and I sensed that the time had come for me to marry. All I needed to do was wait for God to tell me, "The time has come, so get married," and I would do as I was told. Seung Do Ji, an elderly woman in our church, began an effort in October 1959 to prepare for my engagement, even though there was still no bride-to-be. Another church member who had been praying for seven years about a wife for me told me one day that she had had a dream in which she saw that Hak Ja Han was my wife.

Another church member, Mrs. Ji, told me about a strange dream she had. "What kind of dream is this?" she exclaimed. "I saw hundreds of cranes come flying. I tried to wave them away with my arms, but they kept coming and they finally covered you with their white feathers. Is this some kind of omen for the future?" The "Hak" in Hak Ja Han is the Chinese character for crane.

Then, Hak Ja Han had a dream in which I appeared and told her, "The day is near, so make preparations." My wife later told me that in her dream she said to me in a humble tone, "I have been living until now in accordance with the will of God. In the future, as well, I will follow God's will as His servant, no matter what that will may be."

A few days after my bride-to-be had this dream, I asked Mrs. Hong to bring her daughter to me. This was our first meeting since I had been introduced to her at age fourteen. That day, I asked this young lady many questions. In every case, she responded with composure and spoke clearly. In this meeting, I asked my wife to draw a picture. Without hesitation, she picked up a pencil and started drawing on a sheet of paper. When she had finished and placed her picture before me, I was very impressed by what I saw. I then looked at her face, and her shy expression was very beautiful. Her heart was as wonderful as the picture she had drawn.

We were engaged on March 27, 1960, and had our marriage ceremony barely two weeks later, on April 11. I did not set a date at the time but when I called Miss Han several days later, I told her, "Tomorrow morning, we will have a marriage ceremony." She responded simply, "Is that so?" and did not ask any questions or try to speak in opposition. She seemed incapable of opposition. That was how pure and gentle she was. Then as now, when it comes to the will of God, she has a strong determination.

I wore a samo-kwandae, the formal dress of court officials now commonly used in traditional wedding ceremonies, and she wore traditional Korean attire that included a jok-dori bridal tiara. My bride, who was seventeen and more than twenty years younger than I, looked confident and radiant with her tightly closed lips and pretty face.

During the ceremony, I told my bride that she was about to embark on a difficult course.

"I think you are already aware that marrying me will not be like any other marriage. We are becoming husband and wife to complete the mission given to us by God to become True Parents, and not to pursue the happiness of two individuals, as is the case with other people in this world. God wants to bring about the Kingdom of Heaven on the earth through a true family. You and I will travel a difficult path to become True Parents who will open the gates to the Kingdom of Heaven for others. It is a path that no one else in history has traveled, so even I don't know all that it will involve. During the next seven years, you will experience many things that will be difficult to endure. Don't forget, even for a moment, that the life we live is different from others. Don't do anything, no matter how trivial, without first discussing it with me, and obey everything I tell you."

She responded, "My heart is already set. Please do not worry."

I could see in her expression that she had made a strong determination. Her difficult challenges began the day after our marriage. The first difficulty she faced was that she could not see her mother. My wife, her mother, and her maternal grandmother were all only daughters. As a result, the relationship between mother and daughter was particularly strong. In order to take on her public mission and develop the proper focus, I asked her to live what amounted to an ascetic life for three years. That meant she could not see her mother or any of her relatives for three years. She lived in a room rented from a church member. She came to the church no more than once a day, usually in the evening. So as not to create disruption, she left through the back door. I was often involved in worship services or praying through the night and was rarely at home,

but the separation was not for practical reasons. The separation was to establish a spiritual condition of unconditional devotion to her mission. As the outrageous rumors about me continued to circulate, this separation from her relatives and me made it even more difficult for my young wife to endure.

At the time of our marriage, the Unification Church already had been established in 120 communities around Korea. Even in our church, however, there were those who were critical of our marriage. Some envied her, some hated her, and many stories circulated.

As if that were not enough, she lived in someone else's home. Older women of our church followed me everywhere I went. Eventually, my seemingly cold treatment of my wife brought an end to all the criticism and envy against her. In fact, people began to sympathize with her. For example, many members criticized me when I couldn't go to see my wife even though she was suffering postpartum illness and was shivering in an unheated room after the birth of our first daughter. Some of them said, "How can he even call himself her husband?"

"You're going too far, sir," I was told. "If you married her, you should live with her. What are you doing, making it difficult for her even to see your face?"

The people who had been criticizing my wife one by one began to take her side instead.

In spite of her young age, it was necessary that my wife receive harsh training. During the time we lived together, her environment was relentless. She never had even a single free moment for herself. She constantly was on edge, as if she were walking on a thin layer of ice, wondering, "Will today be peaceful? Will tomorrow be peaceful?" Because she had to attain God's standard of motherly love, I corrected

her for even a single wrong word. Sometimes even her affection for me had to be curtailed for the sake of her eternal mission. It was all necessary for her to become True Mother, but I am sure it caused much grief in her heart.

I might say a word in passing and not think much of it. She, however, had to harmonize herself with my every word, so I am sure her suffering was great. It took us seven years to conform ourselves to each other. I relate these things because the most important thing in a marriage relationship is trust. It is what makes it possible for two people to become as one.

An Incomparable Inner Beauty

My wife and I made a promise to each other after we were married. We agreed that no matter how upset or angry one of us might become, we would not allow anyone to think, "It looks like Reverend and Mrs. Moon had a fight." We agreed that no matter how many children we might have, we would not let them see any sign that we might have had a fight. Children are God. Children are God with very small hearts. So when a child says, "Mom!" and calls, you must always answer, "What is it?" with a smile.

After going through such a harsh course for seven years, my wife became a wonderful mother. All the gossip about her disappeared, and a peaceful happiness came to our family. My wife gave birth to fourteen children, and she has embraced each one with so much love. When she is away from home on our speaking tours and mission life, she sends letters and postcards to our children every day.

While it was difficult for her to raise fourteen children over the course of over forty years, she never complained. Several times I had to be overseas when my wife was about to give birth. She had to bear such times alone. There were days when I could not do anything for her. Once a member wrote me about her difficult financial situation. There was

concern over whether she was getting sufficient nutrition. Even then, my wife never complained about her difficulty. Because I sleep only two or three hours a night, she has dutifully done the same throughout our life together. These sorts of matters pain me to this day.

My wife has such a tremendous heart of love and care that she even gave her wedding ring to someone in need. When she sees someone in need of clothes, she buys that person clothes. When she comes across someone hungry, she buys the person a meal. There have been many times when we have received presents from others that she would give away to someone else without even opening them. Once we were touring the Netherlands and had a chance to visit a factory that processed diamonds. Wanting to express my heart of regret toward my wife for all her sacrifices, I bought her a diamond ring. I didn't have much money, so I couldn't buy her a large one. I picked out one I liked and presented it to her. Later, she even gave away that ring. When I saw the ring wasn't on her finger, I asked her, "Where did the ring go?"

She answered, "You know by now I can't keep something like that when someone has a greater need."

Once I saw her pulling out a large wrapping cloth, and she was working quietly to pack some clothes. "What are you going to do with those clothes?" I asked her.

"I have a use for them," she said.

She filled several wrapping cloths with clothes without telling me what she planned to do with them. When she was finished, she told me she was getting ready to send the clothes to our missionaries working in foreign countries.

"This one's for Mongolia, this one's for Africa, and this one's for Paraguay," she said.

She had a slightly self-conscious smile that made her look so sweet when she told me. Still today, she takes it upon herself to look after our overseas missionaries.

My wife established the International Relief and Friendship Foundation in 1979. It has done service projects in numerous countries, such as Zaire, Senegal, and Ivory Coast. The foundation gives food to impoverished children, medicine to those who are sick, and clothing to those in need. In Korea, she created the Aewon charity organization in 1994. Its activities include managing a canteen serving free food to the poor and supporting low-wage earners, the handicapped, children taking care of families in place of parents, and others. It also provides aid to the North Korean people. My wife has also been active in women's organizations for some time. The Women's Federation for World Peace, which she established in 1992, has branches in some eighty countries and is in general consultative status with the Economic and Social Council of the United Nations as a nongovernmental organization.

Throughout history, women have been persecuted, but I predict this will change. The coming world will be one of reconciliation and peace based on women's maternal character, love, and sociability. The time is coming when the power of women will save the world.

Unfortunately today, many women's organizations apparently believe that standing in opposition to men is the way to demonstrate the power of women. The result is an environment of competition and conflict. The women's organizations my wife leads, on the other hand, seek to bring about peace on the principle that women should work together, take initiative, and empower one another across traditional lines of race, culture, and religion to create healthy families as the cornerstone of the culture of peace.

The organizations she works with do not call for a liberation of women from men and families. Instead, they call for women to develop and maintain families filled with love. My wife's dream is to see all women raised as true daughters with filial hearts who can create peace at home, in our communities, in our nations, and in the world. The women's movement being carried out by my wife serves the goal of true families, which are the root of peace in all areas of life.

During one of the most intense periods of my public work, our children had to live close to half the year without their parents. In our absence, they lived in our home, cared for by church members. Our home was always filled with church members. Every meal in our home had guests at the table, guests who always received priority over our children. Because of this environment, our children grew up with a sense of loneliness that is not experienced by children in other families. Even worse was the suffering they had to endure because of their father. Wherever they went, they were singled out as sons and daughters of "the cult leader Sun Myung Moon." This suffering sent them through periods of wandering and rebellion, but they have always returned home. We were not able to support them properly as parents, but five have graduated from Harvard University. I could not be more grateful for their courageous accomplishments. Now they are old enough to help me in my work, but even to this day, I am the strict father. I still teach them to become people who do more than I do to serve Heaven and live for the sake of humanity.

My wife is a woman of incredible strength, but the death of our second son, Heung Jin, was difficult for her. It happened in December 1983. She was with me in Kwangju, Korea, participating in a Victory over Communism rally. We received an international phone call that

Heung Jin had been in a traffic accident and had been transported to a hospital. We boarded a flight the next day and went directly to New York, but Heung Jin was lying unconscious on the hospital bed.

A truck traveling over the speed limit as it came down a hill tried to brake and swerved into the opposite lane, where Heung Jin was driving. Two of his best friends were in the car with him at the time. Heung Jin cut the wheel to the right so the driver's side took most of the impact from the truck. By doing so, he saved the lives of his two friends. I went to the place near our home where the accident had occurred, and the black tire marks veering off to the right were still visible.

Heung Jin finally went to the heavenly world in the early morning of January 2. He had turned seventeen just a month before. Words cannot describe my wife's sorrow when she had to send a child she had raised with love to the heavenly world before her. She could not cry, however. In fact, it was important that she not shed any tears. We are people who know the world of the eternal spirit. A person's spirit does not disappear like so much dust, just because the physical life is lost. The soul ascends to the world of spirit. As parents, the pain of knowing that we would never be able to see or touch our beloved child in this world was almost unbearable. My wife could not cry; she could only lovingly put her hands on the hearse that carried Heung Jin's body.

Shortly before the accident, Heung Jin had been betrothed to Hoon Sook Pak, who was studying ballet. I had to speak to Hoon Sook about his departure from this world and what she wanted to do.

I told her I knew it wouldn't be easy or fair to her parents if she chose to live alone. I told her it was best to forget the betrothal had ever happened.

Hoon Sook was adamant, however. "I am aware of the existence of the spirit world," she said. "Please let me spend my life with Heung Jin."

In the end, Hoon Sook became our daughter-in-law fifty days after Heung Jin's departure. My wife and I will never forget the way she smiled brightly as she held a portrait photo of Heung Jin throughout the spiritual marriage ceremony.

It would seem that my wife would be devastated each time she faced such difficult situations, but she always remained unshaken. Even in the most difficult and unbearable circumstances, my wife never lost her serene smile. She always crossed over life's most difficult peaks successfully. When church members ask my wife's advice on raising their own children, she tells them: "Be patient and wait. The period when children wander is only temporary. No matter what they do, embrace them, love them, and wait for them. Children will always return to the love of their parents."

I have never raised my voice toward my wife. This is not because of my character, but because my wife has never given me cause to do so. Throughout our life together, she has labored to care for me with complete, loving devotion. She is even the one to care for my hair. So this great saint of world affairs is also the best barber in the world. Now that I am old I make many new demands on her, and she always responds. If I ask her to cut my toenails, she will do it cheerfully. My toenails are mine, but I can't see them very well. She sees them perfectly well, though. It's a strange thing. The older I become, the more precious my wife is to me.

Promises That Must Never Be Broken

During our matching and marriage ceremonies, I ask the brides and grooms to make promises to each other that must never be broken. First, a husband and wife must always trust and love each other. Second, they must not cause any pain to the heart of their partner. Third, they must educate their children and grandchildren to maintain sexual purity. Fourth, all members of their family must help and encourage each other so that they become a true ideal family. Chastity before marriage and fidelity in marriage are of utmost importance. This is what I teach so people can live to their highest potential as human beings, creating and maintaining healthy families.

Marriage is more than a simple coming together of a man and woman. It is a precious ceremony of commitment to carry on God's work of creation. Marriage is the path by which a man and woman become as one, create new life, and establish true love. Through marriage, a new future is created: Societies are formed; nations are built. God's world of peace is realized with married families at the center. It is in the family that God's Kingdom of Heaven is brought about.

So husbands and wives must be centers of peace. Not only must there be love between the husband and wife, but the couple must also be able to bring harmony to their extended families. It is not enough that the husband and wife live well together in love. All the relatives must love each other as well. I tell brides and grooms to have many children. To bear many children and raise them is God's blessing. It is unthinkable that human beings apply their own standard of judgment and arbitrarily abort precious lives given to them by God. All life born into this world embodies God's will. All life is noble and precious, so it must be cared for and protected.

Naturally, a married husband and wife must maintain mutual trust and nurture their love. The promise I emphasize the most to people preparing to marry is "teach your children to maintain sexual purity."

This is an obvious promise, but it has become difficult to keep in today's society. The worse the world becomes, however, the more important it is to strictly keep the promise of sexual purity.

The perfection of human beings and peace in the world come about through the family. The purpose of religion is for everyone to become people of goodness who can then bring about an ideal world of peace. No matter how much politicians may put their heads together, they will not bring about peace. Formidable military power will not bring peace. The starting point for bringing about peace is the family.

When I first arrived in America in 1971, the wind of promiscuous free sex was blowing across the country, and the entire society was in the midst of confusion. Young people who had received wonderful educations were being destroyed one by one. Sexual immorality was so bad that it was becoming the norm. Sexually transmitted diseases were beginning to skyrocket.

The seriousness of the problem was compounded by politicians, academics, and clergy. They knew about this problem, but most of them ignored it. They tried to look away from the ugly reality because they themselves had not maintained sexual purity. People who are not sexually pure themselves cannot force their children to be so.

The degradation of sexual morality among adults destroys families and leads to the ruin of children. Immorality and licentiousness in the personal lives of adults ultimately destroy the lives of their children. The reason today's society does not have a level of happiness to match its level of material affluence is that families are being destroyed. To save families, adults must first live proper lives. Then, it is possible to raise children in sexual purity.

The mother is the fortress that protects the family. No matter how much society may change, the family can stand as a healthy and peaceful family only if the mother has the heart to sacrifice and serve. It is in such a family that beautiful children can grow. In educating our children, what the children see and learn in the family is most important. A crab that walks sideways cannot tell its offspring to walk straight ahead. The parents must show a good example. True children come from true families. Truth is always very simple.

The most difficult aspect of family life is raising children properly. We give birth to them in love and raise them in love, but they don't necessarily grow up the way their parents desire. What's worse, today's materialistic civilization is destroying the innocent minds of young people. Young people who should be growing up to become responsible adults capable of extraordinary things are being lost to drugs. Drug-induced states make people lose touch with their own spirit. Young people who have lost their spirits eventually can only fall into crime and sexual immorality.

During adolescence, children think everything should be centered only on themselves, and so there is the tendency to rebel against things the parents may say. If the parent does not respond with understanding, there is the possibility that the child may go to self-centered extremes. On the other hand, a child in adolescence can be deeply moved by anything that seems to connect with his heart. Perhaps on an autumn day, the child will see a persimmon fall from a tree that has lost all its leaves. The child cannot explain it, but somehow it connects with his heart and he will smile and experience happiness. This is a sign that God's original character is dwelling in his heart.

But if children are caught up in the emotions of love during adolescence, their perceptions can be clouded and their power of judgment diminished. When an adolescent boy and girl meet and start talking with each other, they can feel flushed and there may be a change in their heart rate. If their minds are not brought into harmony with God's standard in that moment, they will surely be moved in the direction of self-centeredness. They lose the means with which to control their bodies.

During adolescence, our cells open wide all the doors of love in both the physical body and the spirit. The desires of our mind and the desires of our body are meant to become one and function together. When we acquire the nose of love, we start to love smells that we used to hate. When we acquire the mouth of love, we start to love tastes that we used to hate. We want to listen all night to the stories of love. We want to keep touching the person we love. Adolescents start to think they can be happy simply by entering into a love relationship.

However, the doors of love are designed by God and are to open only when the time is right. Children must understand that they need to wait for the right time. Parents must teach these things to their adolescent

children very carefully. Love is a process by which we grow to resemble God. Despite what the world may tell us, it is not something to be enjoyed anytime we please.

During adolescence, a child may want to try really hard to copy the activity in a thrilling movie. People ask, "What's wrong with that?" It is wrong because irresponsible actions lead to destruction. When children mature and acquire wisdom and knowledge, they can control their social and environmental experiences and are truly free to do so, but not during adolescence.

Why do we say, "Do not give a knife to a child"? It is because the child would wave it around. The child might understand how to cut with a knife, but he cuts without control. The child might even cut his mother's fingers. Because children do not yet fully understand consequences, we do not give them knives.

The combination of parents not teaching their children the value of purity and children rebelling against their parents leads to broken families. Because of this, societies are being broken. Because of this, nations are being destroyed. Because of this, humanity is being destroyed.

To Love Is to Give and Forget

The family is the only institution created by God. It is the school of love where people can learn how to love each other and live together in peace, and it is the training center where we practice how to build a palace of peace in the world. It is where we learn how to become a husband or wife who will live for the sake of our spouse and how to become a husband and wife who will travel on the eternal path of love. The family is the base camp for world peace, and it must be such that the children will say, "We have never seen our mother and father fight."

We come up against all sorts of things in life. Even the most loving couple can have times when they may bicker with each other, become angry, and raise their voices. When the children come into the room, however, it all must stop immediately. No matter how angry a spouse may be, he must relate to his spouse in peace when the children are present. The children must grow up thinking their family is filled with joy and their parents always love each other.

Parents are like a second God to their children. If you ask your young children, "Whom do you like better—God or Mommy and Daddy?"—and they say they like their mom and dad better, then that

means they also like God. The most precious education takes place in the family. You won't find happiness and peace in some other place. The family is intended to be the Kingdom of Heaven. It would not matter if a person possesses incredible wealth and fame or even possesses the whole world. If all is not right with that person's family, then he cannot be happy. The Kingdom of Heaven begins in the family. If a husband and wife are bound together in true love and they build an ideal family, this will connect directly with the world.

I saw something interesting when I was in Danbury prison. We were using a bulldozer to level a slope and make a tennis court. When it rained, we would wait for it to stop, and start up again when the sun came out. This process of starting and stopping went on for months. We had a stretch of rain for one period, and we couldn't work for twenty consecutive days. When the rain cleared and we went out to start the work again, we found that some kind of waterfowl had created a nest where there were some water weeds. It was a place not more than a few meters from where the prisoners would walk for exercise.

At first, we didn't even realize that the bird was there. Its camouflage was so perfect that the bird's feathers could easily be mistaken for the water weeds. Once the bird laid its eggs, though, we could see there was a bird in among the grass. The bird was sitting on some eggs that looked like pieces of black gravel. Once the chicks hatched, the mother would go find some food, bring it back to the nest, and put it in the beaks of the chicks. When the mother was returning to the nest with food, however, she never flew directly to the nest. She would land a little distance from the nest and then walk the rest of the way. Each time, she approached the nest from a different direction. This was her wisdom to make it more difficult for others to find out the location of the nest where the chicks were.

The chicks ate the food their mother brought them and grew larger. Sometimes, when a prisoner would walk near the nest, the mother would fly out and chase him away with her sharp beak. She was afraid the prisoner might harm her chicks.

The waterbird understood the true love of parents. True love is willing to give up its own life, and there is no calculation there. The heart of the bird that was willing to sacrifice its life, if necessary, to protect its offspring was true love. Parents go the path of love, no matter how difficult it becomes. A parent is prepared, if needed, to bury his life for the sake of love, and this is true love.

The essence of love is to cast aside any thought of having others live for one's self; it is to live for the sake of others and give for the whole. Love gives, but then forgets even the fact that it has given and continues to give without ceasing. This is a love that gives in joy. It is the heart that a mother feels when she takes her infant in her arms and lets it feed from her breast.

Parents will suffer for their children until it seems their bones are going to melt away, yet they never feel that the work is difficult. That is how much they love their children. True love begins with God and comes to us from God. So when the parents say to their married children, "When you like each other, it is because of the grace of your parents," the children must be able to respond, "If you had not found such a spouse for me, I don't know what I would have done."

The family is a bundle of love. When we go to the Kingdom of Heaven and unpack that bundle, a wonderful father and mother will jump out. Beautiful children will jump out. A benevolent grandfather and grandmother will jump out. This is the bundle of love. The family is the space in which God's ideal is realized and the place where we can

see the completion of God's work. God's will is to bring about a world in which love is made real, and the family is the place where God's love overflows.

We only need to hear the word family for us to begin smiling. This is because the family is overflowing with true love that truly lives for the sake of all members. True love gives love, then forgets even the fact that it gave, and then gives again. The love that has parents living for their children and grandparents for the grandchildren is true love. The love that lets a person give up his or her life for the country is true love.

The Peaceful Family Is the Building Block of Heaven

Many Western people live truly lonely lives. Their children leave home once they turn eighteen, and the parents may only get to see their faces at Thanksgiving or Christmas. Many children never visit their parents to just find out how they are doing. Once people marry, they live with their spouse, independent from their family, until their parents become so old they can no longer take care of themselves. At that point, they move into a nursing home. So it is understandable that some Westerners envy the culture of the East. Many elderly people in the West think, "In the East, the grandparents live in the family as the senior members of the family, and it is really wonderful. The children respect their old parents. This is how people are supposed to live. What good is it to be lying in a nursing home, not able to see my children, not even knowing what day it is, just staying alive?"

Unfortunately, though, the Eastern family structure is also gradually deteriorating. We too are abandoning traditions that have been handed down to us for thousands of years. We have thrown away our traditional clothing, our food, and our family structure. The number of senior citizens living alone in Korea is on the rise. Each time I see

stories in the news of senior citizens alone, it makes me sad. The family is where generations live together. If family members are scattered and the parents are left alone, then that is no longer a family. The extended family system is a beautiful Korean tradition.

I recommend that three generations live together as one family. I do so, not simply because it is a way of maintaining our country's tradition. When a husband and wife have a child, they pass on all they can to that child. There is a limit, however, to how much the parents can pass on. The parents represent the present and the children the future. The grandparents represent the past. So it is only when the grandparents, parents, and children live together that the children can inherit all the fortune of the past and present. To love and respect your grandfather is to inherit the history of the past and to learn from the world of the past. The children learn precious wisdom from their parents on how to live in the present, while the parents prepare for the future by loving their children.

The grandfather is in a position to represent God. No matter how intelligent a young man may be, he cannot know all the secrets of this big world. Young people cannot know all the different secrets of life that come to us as we grow older. This is the reason the grandfather represents the history of the family. The grandfather is a precious teacher who passes on to the grandchildren all the wisdom he has acquired through the experiences he has accumulated during the course of his life.

The world's oldest grandfather is God. So a life of receiving the grandfather's love and of living for the sake of the grandfather is a life of coming to understand God's love and of living for His sake. We need to maintain such a tradition in order to open the secret storehouse of God's Kingdom and receive His treasure of love. Any country that ignores its old people abandons its national character and ignores its roots.

When autumn comes, the chestnut tree gradually loses its moisture, and its leaves begin to fall. The outer shell of the chestnut falls off, and even the inner shell that surrounds the actual nut dries up. This is the cycle of life. Human beings are the same way. We are born as infants, grow up on the love of our parents, meet a wonderful partner, and get married. All this occurs in the chain of life made up of love. In the end, we become like chestnuts becoming dry in the autumn. Old people are not a separate category of people. We all become old. We must not treat old people disrespectfully, no matter how senile they may become.

There is a saying, "Anything can be accomplished when there is harmony in the home." When there is peace in the family, everything goes well. The peaceful family is the building block of the Kingdom of Heaven. The family operates on the power of love. If we love the universe as we love our families, then there is nothing to stop us from going anywhere we want. God exists in the center of love, as the Parent of the entire universe. That is why the love in the family needs to link directly to God. When the family is completed in love, the universe will be completed.

Ten Years of Tears Melt a Father-in-Law's Heart

Not long ago the Korean media carried a story about a Japanese woman living in Milyang, Korea, who received an award for her filial service to her family. The article said that the woman had come to Korea as the wife of a Korean man who had met her through an introduction by a certain religious group and married her despite opposition from his family. The Japanese wife had cared for her Korean mother-in-law, who had difficulty moving around, and her aged father-in-law with great devotion. The people in the community then recommended her to be recognized for her filial actions, the article said.

The mother-in-law was paralyzed from the waist down and classified by the Korean public health authorities as being in the second-highest level of physical handicap. From the first day of her marriage, the daughter-in-law carried her mother-in-law on her back to different hospitals so she could be treated. Because she spent so much time devoting herself to her parents-in-law, she rarely had time to visit her own family in Japan. When she heard that she was going to be awarded for her actions, she protested, saying she was merely doing what was right.

This Japanese daughter-in-law in the news is Kazuko Yashima. She came to Korea through the international and intercultural marriages of our church. These are marriages where men and women are matched across religious, national, or racial differences. There are many young men in Korea's rural areas who cannot find brides. The brides who come to Korea in these international and intercultural marriages do so unconditionally.

They care for their aged parents-in-law, inspire their husbands to have strength and hope, and bear and raise children. They go to live in the rural communities that Koreans have left behind because it is so difficult to live there. What a wonderful and precious thing they are doing. This program has been going on for more than thirty years.

Thousands of women from other countries have settled in Korea through such international and intercultural marriages. In rural Korean communities where the young people have left for the cities and the sound of a baby's cry has not been heard for a long time, the old people are overjoyed to see the birth of babies to these couples, and they treat the babies as if they were their own grandchildren. In one elementary school in Choong-cheong Province, more than half the eighty students are children of the international and intercultural marriages arranged by our church. The school's principal has said the school will have to close if its student body declines any further, and so he prays daily that our church members will not move away from the community. In Korea today, some twenty thousand children of international and intercultural marriages are enrolled in elementary schools around the country.

Every year around the anniversary of Korea's independence from Japan, television news programs carry stories about some very special Japanese who stand before the camera and apologize for the actions of

their country in Korea during the period of occupation. They themselves did not commit those crimes, but they apologize for the actions of their ancestors. Most of these people are members of our church who have torn down the walls separating nations by means of international and intercultural marriages. Because of their actions, the walls in the hearts of Koreans who think of the Japanese as our enemies are increasingly crumbling.

In 1988, a young and well-educated man who had joined our church wanted to get married and sought to be matched. He was matched with a Japanese woman. The father of this young man reacted very negatively to the match.

"Of all the women in the world, you have to marry a Japanese?" he said.

During the Japanese occupation, his father had been one of the Koreans conscripted into forced labor and taken to a coal mine in Iwate Prefecture in northwestern Japan. He risked his life to escape the mine and walked for well over a month to Shimonoseki, where he was able to board a ship back to Korea. He harbored a tremendous hatred for Japan. On hearing the news of his son's match to a Japanese woman, he threatened to disown him.

"You betray the family," he said. "I will have your name taken out of the family register. No woman from that enemy country will ever set foot in this house, so take her and go away. She is not right for you, so I don't care whether you go or whether you die."

The father was adamant. The young man, however, went ahead and did what he felt was right. He married the Japanese woman and took his bride to his hometown in Nagan, Korea. The father would not even open the front gate for them. Sometime later, he reluctantly accepted their marriage, but his persecution of his daughter-in-law continued.

Every time she seemed to have difficulty with something, he would say, "That's nothing, compared with what your people did to me. You should have expected this much when you decided to marry into our family."

Every time the relatives would gather for a major holiday, the father-in-law would have her sit near him, and he would tell her all the things that were done to him in the Iwate coal mine. Each time, the daughter-in-law would respond by saying, "Father, I apologize to you on behalf of Japan. I am sorry." She would shed tears and ask for his forgiveness. For as long as he would vent his anger at her, she would listen to him tell the same stories over and over until he was finished, and she would continue to apologize.

This went on for about ten years, and then it stopped. Relatives noticed that his cold attitude toward the daughter-in-law had become much warmer and that he even seemed to like her. So they asked him, "Why are you behaving so kindly toward your daughter-in-law. She's a Japanese woman. Don't you hate her?"

"I don't hate her anymore," he said. "All the hatred that had accumulated in my heart has gone away.

"I never hated her," he added. "I was just venting on her all the hatred that was in me for having been conscripted to work in the mine. Because of her, the hatred has all disappeared. From now, I'm going to be kind to her, because she's my daughter-in-law."

The daughter-in-law paid for the sins of the Japanese. This is an example of the path of redemption that will lead humankind into a world of peace.

The True Meaning of Marriage

International and intercultural marriages are the quickest way to bring about an ideal world of peace. Things that would take seemingly forever can be accomplished like miracles through these types of marriages in just two or three generations. People should marry across national and cultural boundaries with people from countries they consider to be their enemies so that the world of peace can come that much more quickly. A person may hate people from a certain country or culture and think he never wants to set eyes on them. But if someone from that country becomes his spouse, then the person is halfway to becoming a person of the new country. All the hatred melts away. If this is repeated for two or three generations, the roots of hatred can be eliminated.

White and black people will marry each other; Japanese will marry Koreans and people from Africa. Many millions are entering into such international and intercultural marriages. A completely new lineage is being created as a result. A new kind of human being that transcends white, black, and yellow is being born. I am not just referring to marriages across international boundaries. The same is true for marrying people from other religions or denominations. In fact, marriages

between people of different religions are even more difficult than international marriages. Even if two religious groups have been fighting each other for centuries, it is possible to bring harmony between them by having their followers marry each other. In such a marriage, one spouse will not close himself off from the other just because she was raised in a different tradition.

It is most important to teach young people about the sanctity and value of marriage. Korea today has one of the lowest birthrates in the world. Not to have children is dangerous. There is no future for a country that has no descendants. I teach young people that they should remain sexually pure during their youth, receive the marriage Blessing, and then have at least three children. Children are blessings given to us by God. When we bear children and raise them, we are raising citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. That is why it is a great sin to live immorally and to abort babies conceived in this lifestyle.

We marry not for ourselves but for the sake of our partners. When looking for a spouse, it is wrong to look only for a beautiful person or for a person living well. Human beings must live for the sake of each other. We should apply this principle to marriage, too. No matter how uneducated or homely your prospective spouse may be, you should marry with a heart that you will love him or her even more than if the spouse were educated and beautiful. God's love is the most precious of all blessings. In marriage, we receive that blessing of love and put it into practice in our own lives. We must understand this precious meaning of marriage, conduct our lives in marriage in the context of true love, and bring about true families.

World peace is not such a huge undertaking. It takes peaceful families to create peaceful societies and eliminate conflict among countries.

This will lead to world peace. This shows the importance of families that are intact and the immense responsibility such families must bear. The thinking that says "It's enough that I live well and that my family lives well" is completely alien to me.

Marriage is not something that involves just the bride and groom. Marriage creates a relationship between two families, and it brings reconciliation between clans and countries. Each accepts the other's different culture and overcomes the resentment and hatred built up through history. When a Korean and Japanese marry, it contributes to reconciliation between the two countries; when a white person and a black person marry, it contributes to reconciliation between the two races. The children of such marriages represent harmony because they inherit the lineage of two races. They represent a new beginning for humanity that transcends the races. When this continues for a few generations, division and hostility among nations, races, and religions will disappear, and humankind will become one family living in a world of peace.

In recent years, more and more Koreans are marrying foreigners, and we see more families with people from different nationalities and religions. Koreans have even coined a phrase for it that means multicultural families. It is not easy for a man and woman who have been raised in different cultures to create a family and live with love for each other. Particularly in Korea, which traditionally has had a homogeneous culture, the partners in such marriages need to make extra effort to understand and care for each other. The reason our members who enter into international and intercultural marriages succeed is because they live together centering on God.

Various social welfare groups in Korea try to encourage the success of multicultural families by offering programs that teach Korean language and culture. Such efforts will be useless, however, unless our concept of marriage changes. Whoever thinks, "Why did I marry this man? If I hadn't married this man, I would have had a better life," is setting the tone for a marriage that will be hell. Coming to a correct understanding of marriage is more important than learning Korean language and culture.

Marriage is not a simple matter of a man and woman of marriageable age coming together and combining their two lives. Marriage is something built on the basis of sacrifice. The man must live for the sake of the woman, and the woman for the sake of the man. As you continue to live for the sake of your spouse, your selfish mind disappears completely. The heart that seeks to sacrifice this way is the heart of love. Love is not a man and woman meeting each other and having a good time. Love is offering up your life. If you marry, you must do so on the basis of your determination that your life is for your spouse.

True Love Is Found in True Families

No matter how much a man and woman may love each other, a complete and happy family must have parents who act as a protective shield around the home, and there must be least one child for the parents to love. When a family is protected, it becomes a nesting place for happiness. Even a person with great success in society will have an unhappy family if this protection collapses.

The basis of love is the heart that sacrifices everything for the sake of the other. The reason parental love is true love is that parents are willing to give everything to their children, and when they have given everything, they want to give even more. Parents who love their children do not even remember what they have given. No parent would keep track of all the shoes and clothes he bought for his child and say, "This is how much I spent on you." Instead, a parent gives everything he has and says, "I wish I could do more for you than I have, and I'm sorry that I cannot."

As a child, I would follow my father around as he tended to his bee colonies, and I saw how the bees behaved. When a bee flying around a flower garden caught the fragrance of a flower, it would place its legs firmly on the flower. It would then stick its nose deep into the flower, so that its rear end was pointing upward while it sucked up the nectar. If

you grabbed the bee on its rear end, it would not let go of the flower. It risks its life to keep its hold on the flower.

The love of parents cultivating a family is like the honeybee attached to the flower. Even if a parent should lose his own life, he will never let go of the bond of love that ties him to his child. Parents will lay down their lives for the sake of the child and then later forget that they had done so. This is the true love of parents. No matter how far or dangerous the path may be, the parent will gladly travel it. Parental love is the greatest love in the world.

A person can live in a wonderful house and eat exotic foods from the mountains and the oceans, but if he has no parents, there will be a large void in his heart. A person who has grown up without receiving parental love has a loneliness and emptiness in his heart that cannot be filled with anything else. The family is the place where we receive true love and learn true love. Children who do not receive true love when they are young live their entire lives hungering for love and suffer emotional pain. Not only that, they don't have the opportunity to learn the lofty moral duties that they must fulfill for the family and society. True love is a value that cannot be learned any place other than in the family.

A true family is a place where a husband and wife each love the other and live for the sake of the other, as if the spouse were his or her mother, father, or sibling. It is a place where the husband loves his wife as he loves God, and the wife respects her husband as she respects God. We cannot forsake our siblings, no matter the difficulties we my face. Neither can we forsake our mothers. So the term divorce cannot even exist. The husband is in the place of the father and older brother to the wife. Just as a wife could never forsake her father or older brother, she can never forsake her husband. In the same way, a husband could

never forsake his wife. A true family is a place where each spouse lives with the acknowledgment of the absolute value of the partner. It doesn't matter if a husband and wife come from different races or cultures. If they have formed a family after having received God's love, then there can be no conflicts of culture among the children born into this family. These children will love and value the culture and tradition of their mother's country and father's country with the same love they have for each parent. Resolving conflicts in multicultural families is not a matter of providing them with particular knowledge. Instead, it is a matter of the parents of these families raising their children in true love. The parents' love soaks its way into the flesh and bone of the children and becomes the fertilizer that enables the children to accept their mother's country and father's country as one and become wonderful citizens of the world.

The family is the school where love for humanity is taught and learned. When children who are raised in the warm love of their parents go out into the world, they will care for people in difficulty in the manner they learned in their home. People raised in loving relationships with their own brothers and sisters will go into society and share their caring hearts with their neighbors. People raised in love will look upon each person they meet in the world as a member of their own family. The starting point toward a true family is the heart of love that treats strangers as family and shares with them.

Another reason the family is important is that it expands to become the world. A true family is the basis for forming a true society, true nation, and true world. It is the starting point toward a world of peace that is God's Kingdom. Parents will work for their children until their bones melt way. They are not working just to feed their own children,

however. A person whose heart overflows with love is capable of working for the sake of others and God.

The family is where we receive so much love that it overflows from our hearts. The family protects its members in its embrace, but its function is not to prevent love from getting out. In fact, the love in the family should overflow into the surrounding community. No matter how much love may overflow, the love in the family will never go dry. This is because it is received from God. The love we receive from God is such that we can continue to dig it out but never see the bottom. In fact, the more we dig, the more love wells up like pure springwater. Anyone who has been raised in this love can lead a true life.

Leaving Behind a Legacy of Love

A true life is a life in which we abandon our private desires and live for the public good. This is a truth taught by all major religious leaders past and present, East and West, whether it be Jesus, Buddha, or the Prophet Mohammed. It is a truth that is so widely known that, sadly, it seems to have been devalued. The passage of time or changes in the world cannot diminish the value of this truth. This is because the essence of human life never changes, even in the midst of rapid change all around the world.

The teacher with whom we have the closest relationship is our heart. Our heart is more precious to us than our closest friends and even more precious than our parents. So, as we live our lives, we need periodically to ask our hearts, "Am I living a good life now?" Anyone can hear his heart speaking to him. If he comes to the realization that his heart is his master, he "polishes" his heart and maintains a close relationship with his heart throughout his life. If a person hears the sound of his heart tearfully sobbing, then he needs to stop immediately whatever he is doing. Anything that makes the heart suffer will ruin him. Anything that makes the heart sad will eventually make the person fall into sadness.

For a person to polish his heart to the point that it becomes as clear as crystal, he absolutely must spend time in direct conversation with his heart in an environment where he is away from the world and alone with his heart. It will be a time of intense loneliness, but the moment that we become close to our hearts is the time of prayer and meditation. It is a time when we can take ownership over our hearts. When we isolate ourselves from the noise around us and allow our thoughts to settle, we can see into the deepest parts of our hearts. It will take a lot of time and effort to go all the way down to where the heart has settled. It will not happen in a day.

Just as love is not for our own sake, so happiness and peace are not for ourselves. Just as love can never exist without a partner, happiness and peace cannot exist without a partner. All these can exist only in the context of a relationship with a partner. Nothing can be accomplished if we love alone. We cannot be happy alone or speak of peace alone. Since a partner is what enables us to have happiness and peace, the partner is more important than we are.

Think about a mother carrying a baby on her back, sitting at an entrance to the subway, selling homemade snacks to the people passing by. To be at that spot in time for the morning rush hour, she will have spent the whole night preparing the snacks and put her fussing child on her back to come to the station. People passing by might say, "Oh, you could get along well if only you didn't have that child to care for," but it is for the sake of the child that the mother lives her life. The child on her back is the mother's lifeline.

Today people can expect to live about eighty years. Eighty years of joy, anger, sorrow, happiness, and all the other emotions mixed together may seem like a long time. But if we take away the private time that

a person spends sleeping, working, and eating, and then the time we spend talking, laughing, and having fun with family members and friends, attending weddings and funerals, and time spent lying sick in bed, only about seven years will remain. A person may live eighty years but only spend about seven years living for the public good.

Life is like a rubber band. The same seven years, given to two different people, can either be spent as seven years or as seventy. Time, by itself, is empty. We need to put things in it. The same is true about a person's life. Everyone wants to live his life with a comfortable place to sleep and good things to eat. Eating and sleeping, however, are simply ways of letting time slip by. In the moment that a person has lived out his life and his body is laid to rest in the ground, all wealth and glory become nothing more than a bubble and disappear at once. Only the seven years that he lived for the public good will remain and be remembered by posterity. Those seven years are the trace that is left in the world of a life that lasted eighty years.

We do not come into this world, or depart from it, of our own accord. We have no ability to make choices with regard to our fate. We are born, though we did not choose to be born. We live, though we did not choose to live. We die, though we do not choose to die. We have no authority over these aspects of our lives, so how can we boast that we are somehow better than others? We cannot be born by our own wish, possess things that will forever be our own, or avoid death. So any boasting on our part would only be pathetic.

Even if we rise to a position higher than others, the honor is only temporary. Even if we gather more possessions than others, we must leave them all behind at the gates of death. Money, honor, and knowledge all flow away from us in time, and all disappear with the passing years. No

matter how noble and great a person might be, his is nothing more than a pitiable life that will end the moment he loses hold of his lifeline.

Human beings have always struggled to understand who we are and why we must live. We must realize that, just as we were not born of our own accord, so also we are not meant to live our lives for our own sakes.

So the answer to the question of how we should live our lives is simple. We were born of love, so we must live by traveling the path of love. Our lives were created by receiving the boundless love of our parents, so we must live our entire lives repaying that love. In the course of our lives, this is the only value we can choose on our own. The success or failure of our lives depends on how much love we are able to pack into those eighty years that are given to us.

At some point, everyone will shed his physical body like old clothing and die. In Korean, "to return" is a common expression for dying. To return means to go back to where we came from, that is, to go back to our fundamental roots. Everything in the universe moves in cycles. The white snow that collects on the mountains will melt and flow down the slopes, first forming streams and then a river, and eventually go into the ocean. The water that flows into the ocean will absorb the heat of the sun's rays, become water vapor, go back up into the sky, and prepare to become either snowflakes or drops of rain. To return to our original place in this way is what we call death. Then, where do we human beings return to when we die? Body and heart come together to bring about human life, and death is the act of shedding the body. So we go to the place from which the heart came.

We cannot talk about life without also talking about death. We must accurately understand what death is, even if we do so only to understand the purpose of life. The type of life that has true value can be

understood only by the person who finds himself in a difficult situation when death appears imminent and he cries out to Heaven in desperation, pleading to be allowed to live even just one more day. If our days are as precious as this, how should we live them? What are the things we must accomplish before we cross over the boundary line of death?

The most important is not to commit sin and live a life that is without shadows. There is much religious and philosophical debate over what constitutes sin, but what is clear is that we should not engage in acts that give pause to our conscience. When we do things that give us a guilty conscience, it always leaves a shadow in our heart.

The next most important thing is to resolve to do significantly more work than others have done. All of our lives are limited, whether that limit is sixty years, seventy years, or some other time period. Depending on how we use that time, we can live a life that is two or three times more abundant than others. If you cut your time into segments and then live each segment in a meaningful way, your life will be truly precious. Live your life with an attitude of devotion and diligence, telling yourself, for example, that you will plant two or three trees in the time it takes others to plant one. Do not live for yourself. You must live not for yourself but for others; not for your family but for your neighbors; not for your own country but for the world. All sin in the world comes about when the individual is put first. Individual desires and ambitions harm a person's neighbors and ruin the society at large.

Everything in the world will eventually pass. The parents we love, the husband or wife we love, and the children we love will all pass away. All that remains with us at the end of our lives is death. When a person dies, only his legacy remains. Please consider for a moment what you can do to show that you lived a life of value. The possessions and social

position you have accumulated during your life will pass away from you. Once you cross the river of death, such things will have no meaning. Because we were born in love and lived our lives in love, love is also the only thing that remains with us when we are in our graves. We receive our lives in love, live by sharing love, and return into the midst of love. It is important that we live our lives in a way that we can leave a legacy of love behind us.

CHAPTER SIX

LOVE WILL BRING UNIFICATION

The Power of Religion to Turn People to Goodness

On August 2, 1990, Iraqi President Saddam Hussein staged an armed invasion of Kuwait, igniting the possibility of war in the Persian Gulf. This area has long been a tinderbox, and I could see that the world was about to be swept up in the vortex of war. I concluded that Christian and Muslim leaders must meet to stop the conflict, and I acted immediately to do everything I could to stop a war in which innocent people were sure to die.

On October 2 of the same year, I sent members of our church to Cairo to deliver my urgent message of peace to the highest spiritual authorities of the Middle East and the Muslim world. Many wondered why I, a person with no apparent ties to the Middle East, would convene such a meeting, but to me it is simple. I believe every religion should contribute to world peace. A conflict between Christianity and Islam would be far worse than the conflict between democracy and communism. There is nothing more fearful than religious war.

I implored President George H.W. Bush through direct correspondence to avoid war in the Arab world, and instead work to realize Saddam Hussein's retreat through diplomatic means. President Bush

may have thought he was going to war against Iraq, but that is not how Muslims would think. In the mind of Muslims, religion exists in a higher position than the nation-state. I was very concerned that if Iraq were attacked, the Arab world would join in opposition to the United States and the Christian world.

Our emergency conference in Cairo involved top Muslim leaders and grand muftis from nine countries, including the grand muftis of Syria and Yemen. At the core of the meeting was my desperate appeal to the Arab and Muslim world not to support Saddam Hussein's claim that this was a holy war. Whether the United States won or Iraq won, what good would it do? What value would it have if it meant that bombs rained down, destroying houses, fields, hills, and precious innocent lives?

The Cairo conference was just one of our many peace activities. Every time a crisis arose in the Middle East, our members worked fearlessly, risking their lives at the scenes of danger. For years, throughout the violence and terror in Israel and Palestine, our members, traveling at a moment's notice, collaborated with major organizations to work for peace.

I am always uneasy sending our members to places where their lives are at risk, but it is unavoidable when working for the cause of peace. I may be in Brazil tilling the soil or visiting refugee camps in Africa, but my heart is constantly drawn to those members who insist on working in the dangerous tinderbox called the Middle East. I pray that peace will come to the world quickly, so I no longer need to ask our members to go to such places of death.

On September 11, 2001, we all felt utter horror when the World Trade Center twin towers in New York City were destroyed by terrorists. Some people said this was the inevitable clash of civilizations between Islam and Christianity. But my view is different. In their purest form,

Islam and Christianity are not religions of conflict and confrontation. They both place importance on peace. In my view, it is bigoted to brand all Islam as radical, just as it is bigoted to say that Islam and Christianity are fundamentally different. The essence of religions is the same.

Immediately following the collapse of the towers, I organized religious leaders from New York and around the country to pray and minister to the victims and first responders at Ground Zero. Then, in October, I convened a major interfaith conference for peace in New York City. Ours was the first international gathering in New York after the tragedy.

These dramatic contributions to peace in times of war did not spring up from nothing. For decades, I have invested in promoting interreligious harmony. It is on the foundation of this investment that we have the trust of major faith leaders who would travel to Israel during the Intifada, or to New York in the wake of 9/11.

In 1984, I brought together forty religious scholars, instructing them to compare the teachings that appear in the sacred texts of Christianity, Islam, Buddhism, and other major world religions. The book that resulted from their efforts was World Scripture: A Comparative Anthology of Sacred Texts, published in 1991. What they found was that the sacred texts of religions convey the same or similar teachings more than 70 percent of the time. The remaining 30 percent are teachings that represent unique points of each religion. This means that most of the teachings of the major world religions are the same at their core. On the surface, some believers wear turbans, some wear prayer beads around their necks, others carry the cross, but they all seek the fundamental truths of the universe and try to understand the will of the Creator.

People often become friends even if all they have in common is the same particular hobby. When two strangers meet and discover they have the same hometown, they can immediately communicate as if they had known each other for decades. So, it is truly tragic that religions, which share the same teachings more than 70 percent of the time, still struggle to understand each other and communicate happily. They could talk about the things they have in common and take each other by the hand. Instead, they emphasize their differences and criticize one another. All religions in the world talk about peace and love. Yet they fight each other over peace and love. Israel and Palestine talk of peace and justice, yet both countries practice violence until children are bleeding and dying.

Judaism, the religion of Israel, is a religion of peace, and the same is true of Islam. Our experience when compiling World Scripture leads us to believe that it is not the religions of the world that are in error but the ways the faiths are taught. Bad teaching of faith brings prejudice, and prejudice leads to conflict. Muslims were branded terrorists after the 9/11 attack. But the vast majority of simple, believing families are peace-loving people, just like we.

The late Yasser Arafat led the Palestinians for a long time. Like all political leaders, he had hoped for peace, but he was also associated with strife in the region. As chairman of the Palestine Liberation Organization, Arafat embodied the determination for the Gaza Strip and the West Bank to become an independent Palestinian state. Many argue he shifted from his past associations and began to deter the activities of extremist organizations after he was elected president of the Palestinian National Authority in 1996. In the interest of seeking peace in the Middle East, I communicated with Arafat on twelve separate occasions. Of course, my words never wavered. God's way is the way of harmony.

The road to Arafat's office was literally a difficult one. Anyone approaching his office had to pass between heavily armed guards and submit to at least three body searches along the way. But when our members arrived, Arafat, wearing his keffiyeh, would welcome them. These sorts of relationships cannot be built in a day or two. They come from the years when we poured out our sincerity and devotion for the sake of Middle East peace. It was our arduous efforts and constant willingness to risk our lives in terror-ridden conflict areas that prepared the way for us to be welcomed to relationships with the religious and political leaders at these levels. It took large amounts of resources. Finally, we could gain the trust of both Arafat and top Israeli leaders, which allowed us to play a mediating role during outbreaks of conflict in the Middle East.

I first set foot in Jerusalem in 1965. This was before the Six Day War, and Jerusalem was still under Jordan's territorial control. I went to the Mount of Olives, where Jesus shed tears of blood in prayer just prior to being taken to the court of Pontius Pilate. I put my hand on a 2,000-year-old olive tree that could have witnessed Jesus' prayer that night. I put three nails in that tree, one for Judaism, one for Christianity, and one for Islam. I prayed for the day when these three families of faith would become one. World peace cannot come unless Judaism, Christianity, and Islam become one. Those three nails are still there.

Judaism, Islam, and Christianity are sharply divided against each other in today's world, but they share a common root. The issue that keeps them divided is their understanding of Jesus. To address this problem, on May 19, 2003, I asked that we de-emphasize the cross in relations among the Abrahamic faiths. Thus, we enacted a ceremony of taking down the cross. We brought a cross from America, a predominantly Christian culture, and buried it in the Field of Blood in

Israel. This is the field that was bought with the thirty pieces of silver that Judas Iscariot received for the betrayal of Jesus that ended in Jesus' crucifixion.

Later that year, on December 23, some 3,000 Ambassadors for Peace from all religions, and from around the world, joined with 17,000 Israelis and Palestinians in Jerusalem's Independence Park to symbolically remove the crown of thorns from the head of Jesus and replace it with a crown of peace. These 20,000 then marched for peace through Jerusalem city. Local authorities granted permissions and protected our efforts, and Palestinian families supported our march for peace by placing a light in front of their homes. Through that march, which was broadcast live via the Internet to the entire world, I proclaimed that Jesus had his authority as King of Peace restored to him. After centuries of misunderstanding and division, an opportunity was created for Christianity, Judaism, and Islam to reconcile with one another.

Al-Aqsa Mosque, the third-holiest mosque in Islam after those in Mecca and Medina, is in Jerusalem. It is the spot from which the Prophet Mohammad is said to have ascended to heaven. Ours was the only mixed religious group welcomed to all parts of this house of worship. The mosque leaders guided the Christian and Jewish leaders who had participated in the peace march to the sacred spaces of the mosque. We opened a door that had been closed tightly, and prepared the way for many Muslim leaders to communicate at a new level with their Christian and Jewish brothers and sisters.

Human beings like peace, but they also enjoy conflict. Human beings will take the most gentle of animals and make them fight. They will have roosters stand their crowns on end and peck each other with their sharp beaks until pieces of soft flesh begin to fall away. Then, people

will turn around and tell their children, "Don't fight with your friends. Play nice." The fundamental reason that wars occur is not religion or race. It is connected to what lies deep inside human beings. People like to attribute the causes of armed conflicts to such things as science or the economy, but the actual fundamental problem lies within human beings ourselves.

Religion's role is to turn human beings toward goodness and eliminate their evil nature that finds enjoyment in fighting. Examine the major religions of the world. They all hold a peaceful world as their ideal. They all want to see a kingdom of heaven, utopia, or paradise. Religions have different names for this ideal, but they all seek such a world. There are numerous religions in the world, and virtually every one is divided into countless factions and denominations. But the essential hope for all is the same: They want the Kingdom of Heaven and a world of peace. The human heart has been torn to shreds by the violence and enmity at our core. The kingdom of love will heal it.

The River Does Not Reject the Waters That Flow into It

Selfishness is rampant in the world. Ironically, however, the individual is destroyed by this, and not just the individual, but those around him and the nation as a whole. The greatest obstacle to the world of peace is avarice in peoples' hearts. It starts in individuals, expands to the nation, and hearts stained with avarice cause division and conflict at every level. Countless people throughout history have shed blood and died in conflicts caused by avarice.

To eliminate such conflicts, we need a great revolution to change the erroneous values and thinking that are widespread in the world today. The complex problems our societies face today can be resolved quickly if there is a revolution in peoples' thinking. If each individual and nation begins to look out for the other first, working together with the other, the problems of modern society will be resolved.

Throughout my life, I dedicated myself to efforts for peace. Any time the word "peace" comes up, I become emotional. I choke up, it becomes difficult for me to swallow my food and tears begin to well up in my eyes. It moves me deeply just to imagine the day when the world becomes one and begins to enjoy peace. That is the nature of peace.

It links people who think differently, are of different races, and speak different languages. Our hearts yearn for this world and harbor a hope that it will be realized. Peace is concrete action; it is not a vague dream.

Building a movement for peace has not always been easy. There have been many difficulties, and it has required large sums of money. I have not done this for my own honor, nor to make money. All I did was invest my full effort, so that we can have a world where a strong and true peace takes root. For as long as I have been doing this work, I have never been lonely. This is because, ultimately, peace is the desire of every person in the world. It is strange, though. Even though everyone wants peace, it has still not come.

It is easy to talk about peace. But to bring peace is not easy. This is because people push aside the most elemental truth needed to bring about a world of peace. They pretend not to know this truth is there. Before we talk about peace among individuals or among nations, we must talk about peace between ourselves and God.

Each religion today thinks of itself as the highest, rejecting and looking down on other religions. It is not right to build fences against other religions and denominations.

A religion is like a wide river flowing toward an ideal, peaceful world. The river flows for long distances before it comes to the wide expanse of peace. On its way, many streams flow into it. The streams cease to be streams from the point they meet the river. From that point, they, too, become part of the river. In this way, they become one.

The river does not reject any of the streams that flow into it. It accepts them all. It embraces all the streams and forms a single flow as it continues toward the ocean. People in the world today do not

understand this simple truth. The streams that seek out the river and flow into it are the numerous religions and denominations of today. Each stream traces its origin to a different spring, but they are all going to the same destination. They are seeking the ideal world overflowing with peace.

Peace will never come to this earth unless we first tear down the walls between religions. For thousands of years, religions have grown in alliance with particular ethnic groups, and so they are surrounded by high cultural walls. Tearing these down is an extremely difficult task. For thousands of years, each religion has surrounded itself with such high walls, insisting that it is the only correct religion. In some cases, religions have expanded their influence and entered into conflicts and fights with other religions, using God's name in places that had nothing to do with His will.

The will of God lies in peace. A world fragmented by differences in nationality, race, and religion, where people attack and fight one another and shed one another's blood, is not what God wants. When we shed blood and fight each other in His name, we only cause Him pain. A world torn to shreds has been created out of the desires of people to promote their own wealth and glory. It does not represent the will of God. God clearly told me so. I am only His errand boy, receiving His words and carrying them out on Earth.

The path to bring about a world of peace, in which religions and races become united, has been exhausting. Many times, I was rejected by people, or my own abilities fell short, but I could not put aside this mission. When members and colleagues who worked with me would cry out in anguish because of the difficulty of the task, I would even feel envious of them.

"If you decide this path isn't for you, you have the option to stop and turn back," I told them. "Or if you try and try and still can't accomplish it, you have the option to die trying."

"But you should pity me," I said. "I am a person with no such options."

There are some two hundred countries in the world. For all these countries to enjoy peace, the power of religion is absolutely necessary. The power of religion is in the love that overflows from it. I am a religious person whose role is to convey love, so it is natural that I would work for world peace. There is no difference between Islam and Christianity in their commitment to bring about a world of peace. In America, I lead a movement for peace, bringing together twenty thousand clergy who transcend denomination. Through this movement, we discuss ways that Christianity, Islam, Judaism, Buddhism, and all faiths can come together. We devote our full efforts to change the hardened hearts of people.

My purpose is the same today as it was yesterday. It is to create one world with God at the center, a world brought together like a single nation without boundaries. All humanity will be citizens of this world, sharing a culture of love. In such a world, there will be no possibility for division and conflict. This will mark the beginning of a truly peaceful world.

"Allow Freedom of Religion in the Soviet Union"

There are a number of materialism-based theories that are popularly held but not verified. One is Charles Darwin's theory of evolution. Another such theory comes from the writings of Karl Marx. The idea that spirit originates from matter is wrong down to its root. Human beings are created by God, and all beings are unified bodies having both material and spiritual aspects. In short, the core theory and philosophy underlying communism is wrong. While studying in Japan, I worked together with communists for the independence of Korea. They were my good friends who were prepared to give their lives, if necessary, for the liberation of our homeland; but our way of thinking was fundamentally different. So, once independence was achieved, we had to go our separate ways.

I am opposed to the historical materialism of communism. I have carried out a movement for victory over communism throughout the world. I have advised successive U.S. presidents to protect the free world, standing up to the communist strategy of turning the world red. Communist countries that were unhappy with my actions attempted to remove me through acts of terror, but I do not hate them. Nor do

I consider them my enemy. I oppose the philosophy and ideology of communism, but I have never hated its people. God wants even communists to be brought into His oneness.

In that sense, my visit to Moscow in April 1990 for a meeting with President Mikhail Gorbachev and my visit to Pyongyang the next year for a meeting with President Kim Il Sung were not simple journeys; they were taken at the risk of my life. It was my destiny to go on these journeys to convey Heaven's will to these men. I said only half-jokingly at the time that Moscow, pronounced in English, sounds similar to "must go," and so I had to go.

I had a long-held conviction regarding communism. I could foresee that signs pointing to the fall of communism would begin to appear after about sixty years from the Bolshevik Revolution, and that the Soviet edifice would fall in 1987, the seventieth anniversary of the revolution. So I was excited in 1984, when I heard that Dr. Morton Kaplan, a noted political scientist at the University of Chicago, was proposing to hold an international conference titled, "The Fall of the Soviet Empire." I asked him to pay me a visit in Danbury prison so that we could discuss the details. The first thing I said to him when we met was that I wanted him to declare "the end of Soviet communism" before August 15 of that year.

Dr. Kaplan responded, "Declare the end of Soviet communism? How can I do such a risky thing?" and indicated he was not inclined to do this. But, it's the final flame that burns the brightest. In 1985, the Soviet Union was increasing its worldwide influence, and there were no outward signs of its decline. So it was natural that Dr. Kaplan would be reluctant. If he made a declaration predicting such a specific event and it turned out to be false, his reputation as a scholar could be destroyed overnight.

"Rev. Moon," he said, "I believe you when you say that Soviet communism will fall. But I don't think it will happen just yet. So instead of declaring, 'the end of Soviet communism,' how about if we say 'the decline of Soviet communism? '" I saw, too, that he was proposing to soften the title of his program and use something other than "Fall of the Soviet Empire."

I burned with anger. These were compromises I could not accept. I felt strongly that if a person had conviction, he should be brave and put out all his energy to fight, even if he feels afraid.

"Dr. Kaplan," I said, "What do you mean? When I ask you to declare the end of communism, I have a reason. The day you declare the end of communism, it will take energy away from it and help bring about its peaceful collapse. Why are you hesitating?"

In the end, Dr. Kaplan declared "the end of Soviet communism" at a conference of the Professors World Peace Academy (PWPA) held in Geneva under the title, "The Fall of the Soviet Empire: Prospects for Transition to a Post-Soviet World." It was something that no one had dared consider. Because Switzerland was a neutral country, Geneva was a major staging area for the Soviet Committee for State Security (KGB), and many KGB agents worked from there to carry out espionage and terror activities around the world. The Intercontinental Hotel, where the PWPA conference was held, faced the Soviet embassy across the street, so I can well imagine how much fear Dr. Kaplan must have felt. A few years later, however, he became well-known as the scholar who first predicted the end of Soviet communism.

In April 1990, I convened the World Media Conference held in Moscow. Unexpectedly, the Soviet government gave me head-of-state–level protocol, beginning at the airport. We were transported to the center

of Moscow in a police-escorted motorcade. The car that carried me traveled on the yellow section of the road, which was used only by the president and state guests. This happened before the collapse of the Soviet Union. The Soviet government afforded this exceptional treatment to me, an anti-communist.

At the conference, I gave an address praising the move toward perestroika. I said this revolution must be bloodless, and that it must be a revolution of the mind and spirit. The purpose of my visit was to attend the World Media Conference, but my mind was focused on meeting President Gorbachev.

At the time, President Gorbachev was popular within the Soviet Union, following the successes of his perestroika policies. I could have met the U.S. president ten times if I'd wanted to, but meeting President Gorbachev was much more difficult. I was concerned that even one meeting might be difficult to achieve. I had a message to give him, and it was important that I do this in person. He was reforming the Soviet Union, giving rise to the winds of freedom there, but as time passed, the swords of reform were being increasingly pointed at his back. If the situation were left unchecked, he was about to fall into great danger.

I explained, "If he does not meet me, he has no way to catch the wave of heavenly fortune, and if he cannot do that, he will not last long."

Perhaps President Gorbachev heard this expression of my concern. The next day, he invited me to the Kremlin Palace. I rode in a limousine provided by the Soviet government and entered deep into the Kremlin. On entering the presidential office, my wife and I took our seats, and Cabinet ministers of the Soviet Union took seats next to us. President Gorbachev smiled a big smile and gave us an energetic explanation of the successes of his perestroika policies. Then he showed me into an

anteroom, where we met one on one. I used this opportunity to give him the following message.

"Mr. President, you have already achieved much success through perestroika, but that alone will not be sufficient for reform. You need to immediately allow freedom of religion in the Soviet Union. If you try to reform only the material world, without the involvement of God, perestroika will be doomed to fail. Communism is about to end. The only way to save this nation is to allow the freedom of religion. The time is now for you to act with the courage that you have shown in reforming the Soviet Union and become a president of the world who works to bring about world peace."

President Gorbachev's face hardened at the mention of religious freedom, as though he had not been expecting this. As one would expect from the man who had allowed the reunification of Germany, however, he quickly relaxed his expression and soberly accepted my words to him. I continued, saying, "South Korea and the Soviet Union should now open diplomatic relations. In that context, please invite South Korean President Roh Tae Woo to visit." I also explained a list of reasons why it would be good for the two countries to have diplomatic relations. After I had finished all I wanted to say, President Gorbachev made a promise to me with a tone of certitude that I had not heard him express prior to that point.

"I am confident," he said, "that relations between South Korea and the Soviet Union will develop smoothly. I, too, believe that political stability and the relaxation of tensions on the Korean peninsula is necessary. Opening diplomatic relations with South Korea is only a matter of time; there are no obstacles. As you suggested, I will meet President Roh Tae Woo."

As I was about to leave President Gorbachev that day, I took off my watch and put it on his wrist. He seemed a little bewildered that I would treat him as I might an old friend. So I told him firmly, "Each time your reforms face difficulty, please look at this watch and remember your promise to me. If you do that, Heaven will surely open a path for you."

As he promised me, President Gorbachev met President Roh in San Francisco in June that year for a bilateral summit. Then, on September 30, 1990, South Korea and the Soviet Union signed a historic agreement to open diplomatic relations for the first time in eighty-six years. Of course, politics is the job of politicians, and diplomacy is the job of diplomats. Sometimes, though, when a door has been closed for a long time, a religious person who has no interests at stake can be more effective.

Four years later, President and Mrs. Gorbachev visited Seoul, and my wife and I hosted them at our home in the Hannam Dong neighborhood. He had already been removed from power by a coup d'état. Following the coup by anti-reformist forces opposed to perestroika, he had resigned his position as general secretary of the Soviet Communist Party and dissolved the party. As a communist, he had eliminated the Communist Party. The former president and first lady used chopsticks to eat the bulgogi and jabchae we had carefully prepared. When he was served su-jeong-gwa as dessert, Mr. Gorbachev repeated several times, "Korea has excellent traditional foods." He and the first lady appeared quite different from the days when he was in office. Mrs. Gorbachev, who had previously been a thoroughgoing Marxist-Leninist lecturing at Moscow State University, wore a necklace with a crucifix.

"Mr. President, you did a great thing," I told him. "You gave up your post as general secretary of the Soviet Union, but now you have become

the president of peace. Because of your wisdom and courage, we now have the possibility to bring world peace. You did the most important, eternal, and beautiful thing for the world. You are a hero of peace who did God's work. The name that will be remembered forever in the history of Russia will not be 'Marx,' 'Lenin,' or 'Stalin.' It will only be 'Mikhail Gorbachev.'"

I gave high praise to the decision by Mr. Gorbachev to bring about the breakup of the Soviet Union, the mother country of communism, without shedding blood.

In response, Mr. Gorbachev said, "Rev. Moon, I have been greatly comforted by your words. Hearing your words gives me energy. I will devote the remainder of my life to projects that are for the sake of world peace." And he firmly took my hand in his.

Korea's Unification Will Bring World Unification

As I was coming out of the Kremlin Palace after meeting Mr. Gorbachev, I turned to Bo Hi Pak, who had accompanied me, and gave him a special instruction.

"I need to meet President Kim Il Sung before the end of 1991," I told him. "There's no time. The Soviet Union is going to end in the next year or two. Our country is the problem. Somehow, I need to meet President Kim and prevent war from occurring on the Korean peninsula."

I knew that when the Soviet Union collapsed, most other communist regimes in the world would also fall. North Korea would find itself forced into a corner, and there was no telling what provocation it might commit. North Korea's obsession with nuclear weapons made the situation even more worrisome. To prevent a war with North Korea, we needed a channel to talk to its leadership, but we had no such channel at that point. Somehow, I needed to meet President Kim and receive his commitment not to strike first against South Korea.

The Korean peninsula is a scaled-down version of the world. If blood were shed on the Korean peninsula, it would be shed in the world. If reconciliation occurred on the peninsula, there would be reconciliation

in the world. If the peninsula were unified, this would bring about unification in the world. Beginning in the late 1980s, however, North Korea had been working hard to become a country possessing nuclear weapons. Western countries were saying that they would stage a first strike against North Korea, if necessary. If the situation continued to the extreme, there was no telling what desperate move North Korea might attempt. I knew I somehow needed to open a channel of communication with North Korea.

It was not an easy task. Bo Hi Pak communicated with North Korean Vice Premier Kim Dal Hyun, but North Korea's response was firmly in the negative.

"The people of North Korea know President Moon only as the ringleader of the international movement for victory over communism," the vice premier said. "Why would we welcome the leader of a conservative, anti-communist group? A visit to North Korea by President Moon absolutely cannot be permitted."

Bo Hi Pak did not give up. "President Nixon of the United States was a strong anti-communist," he reminded the North Korean official. "But he visited China, met Chairman Mao Zedong, and opened diplomatic relations between the United States and China. It was China that profited from this. Until then, China had been branded an aggressor nation, but it is now rising as the central country on the world stage. For North Korea to have international credibility, it should establish a friendship with a worldwide anti-communist such as President Moon."

Finally, President Kim Il Sung invited my wife and me on November 30, 1991. We were in Hawaii at the time, so we quickly flew to Beijing. While we were waiting in the VIP lounge of Beijing Capital International

Airport, which the government of China had arranged for us to use, a representative of the North Korean government came and handed us the official invitation. The official stamp of the Pyongyang government was clearly visible on the document.

"The Democratic People's Republic of Korea extends an invitation to Mr. Moon Sun Myung of the Unification Church, his wife, and entourage to enter the Republic. Their safety is guaranteed during the period of their stay in the North."

It was signed "Kim Dal Hyun, Vice Premier, Cabinet of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea. November 30, 1991."

Our group boarded a special flight of Air Koryo (aircraft no. JS215) arranged for us by President Kim. A special flight from President Kim had never been arranged for any foreign head of state, so this was very exceptional and special treatment.

The aircraft flew over the Yellow Sea, up to Sin-eui-ju, over my hometown of Jeong-ju, and on to Pyongyang. The special route had been charted to let me see my hometown. My heart began to pound as I looked down at my hometown, dyed red by the light of the setting sun, and I felt numb deep in my being. I wondered, "Can this really be my hometown?" I wanted to jump out right away and start running around the hills and valleys.

At Pyongyang's Sunan International Airport, family members whom I had not seen for forty-eight years were there to greet me. My younger sisters, who used to be as beautiful as flowers, had become grandmothers entering their senior years. They grasped my hands, creased their eyebrows, and began to cry wildly. My older sister, now more than seventy, grabbed me by the shoulder and cried. I, however, did not cry.

"Please," I said, "don't do this. It's important for me to meet my family, but I came to do God's work. Please don't do this. Get hold of yourselves."

Inside my heart, I was shedding tears like a waterfall. I was seeing my sisters for the first time in more than forty years, but I could not embrace them and cry with them. I maintained control of my heart, and made my way to our place of lodging.

The next morning, as has been my custom throughout my life, I awoke early in the morning and began to pray. If there were any surveillance apparatus in the guesthouse, my tearful prayer for the unification of the Korean peninsula would have been recorded in its entirety. That day, we toured the city of Pyongyang. The city was well-fortified with the red slogans of juche ideology.

On the third day of our visit, we boarded an aircraft to tour Mount Kumgang. Though it was the winter season, the Kuryong Falls had not frozen and still spouted a strong flow of water. After touring all the different areas of Mount Kumgang, we boarded a helicopter on our sixth day, to be transported to my hometown. In my dreams, I had felt such a strong yearning for my childhood home that I felt as though I could run to it in one bound. And now, there it was, appearing before me. I could hardly believe my eyes. Was this real, or was I dreaming? For what seemed like the longest time, I could only stand there, like a statue, in front of my home. After several minutes, I stepped inside. It used to be in the shape of a square, with the main wing, guest wing, storehouse, and barn built around a central courtyard. Now, only the main wing remained. I went into the main room, where I had been born, and sat on the floor with my legs crossed. Memories of what it had been like in my childhood came back to me as clearly as if it were only yesterday. I opened the small door that led from the main room to the kitchen and

looked out at the backyard. The chestnut tree I used to climb had been cut down and was gone. It seemed as though I could hear my mother calling to me sweetly. "Is my little tiny-eyes hungry?" The cotton cloth of her traditional dress passed quickly before my eyes.

I visited my parents' grave site and offered a bouquet of flowers. The last time I saw my mother was when she came to visit me in prison in Heungnam and cried out loud. Her grave was thinly covered by the snow that had fallen the night before. I brushed it away with the palm of my hand and gently caressed the grass that had grown over her grave. The rough touch of the grass reminded me of the roughness of my mother's skin on the back of her hand.

My Meeting with President Kim Il Sung

I had not gone to North Korea because I wanted to see my hometown, or because I wanted to tour Mount Kumgang. I wanted to meet President Kim Il Sung and have a serious discussion on the future of our homeland. Yet, six days into my visit, there was no word on whether a meeting with President Kim could be arranged. When we arrived back at Pyongyang's Sunan Airport by helicopter after visiting my hometown, however, I found that Vice Premier Kim Dal Hyun had unexpectedly come to meet me.

"The Great Leader Kim Il Sung will receive you tomorrow," he told me. "The place will be the Majeon Presidential Residence in Heungnam, so you will need to board a special flight immediately, and go to Heungnam."

I thought to myself, "They say he has many presidential residences. Why, of all places, Heungnam?"

On my way, I noticed a large sign for the Heungnam Nitrogen Fertilizer Factory, where I had been forced to labor. It reminded me of my time in prison and gave me an odd feeling. I spent the night in a guesthouse and went the next day to meet the president.

As I approached the official residence, I found President Kim at the

entrance, waiting to greet me. The two of us simultaneously embraced each other. I was an anti-communist and he was the leader of a communist party, but ideology and philosophies were not important in the context of our meeting. We were like brothers who were meeting for the first time after a long separation. This was the power of belonging to the same people and sharing the same blood.

Right at the outset, I said to him: "Mr. President, because of your warm consideration, I have been able to meet my family. There are, however, 10 million Koreans who are members of families separated between North and South, and they are unable even to know whether their relatives on the other side are alive or dead. I would like to ask you to grant them the opportunity to meet each other."

I spent a little more time telling him about my visit to my hometown, and appealed to his love for the Korean people. He and I spoke the same dialect, so we were at ease with one another.

President Kim responded, "I feel the same way. From next year, let's begin a movement that allows separated compatriots of North and South to meet one another." His acceptance of my proposal was as natural as the snow melting in spring.

After speaking of my visit to Jeong-ju, I moved on to my views on nuclear weapons. I respectfully proposed that North Korea agree to a declaration on the denuclearization of the Korean peninsula and sign a safeguards agreement with the International Atomic Energy Agency.

President Kim responded with candor, "President Moon. Think for a moment. Who am I going to kill by making nuclear weapons? Kill my own people? Do I look like that kind of person? I agree that nuclear energy should be used only for peaceful purposes. I have listened attentively to what you have to say, and I expect it will be all right."

At the time, North-South relations were at a difficult point over the issue of nuclear inspections in North Korea, and so I had made my proposal with some reluctance. Everyone present, however, was surprised that President Kim responded in such a pleasant tone. At this point, we adjourned our meeting to a dining room, where we took an early lunch.

"President Moon, are you familiar with 'frozen potato noodles'? It's a dish I ate quite often when I was active as a partisan on Mount Baekdu. Please try some."

"Well, of course I know it," I said, responding to his words with delight. "We used to enjoy this dish in my hometown."

"Well, I'm sure in your hometown you ate it as a delicacy," he continued. "I ate it to survive. The Japanese police used to search for us all the way to the top of Mount Baekdu. We didn't have a chance to sit down to a decent meal. What else is there to eat at the top of Mount Baekdu other than potatoes?

"We would start to boil some potatoes, and if the Japanese police came after us, we would bury the potatoes in the ground and run away. It would be so cold that by the time we got back, the potatoes would be frozen solid in the ground. The only thing we could do was dig up the potatoes, thaw them, and then turn them into powder, so we could make noodles out of them."

"Mr. President," I said, "you are an expert on frozen potato noodles."

"That's right. They taste good mixed in bean soup, and they also taste very good if you eat them in sesame soup. It's a dish that is easy on the digestion, and because potatoes have a tendency to stick together, it is very filling.

"Also, President Moon," he continued, "it tastes really good if you do like they do in Ham-gyung Province and take some leaf mustard

kimchi, like this, and put it over the noodles. You should try it."

I did as he suggested and ate my frozen potato noodles with some leaf mustard kimchi over them. The tasty flavor of the noodles matched well the spicy kimchi and left my stomach feeling light.

"There are many delicacies in the world," President Kim said. "I'm not interested in any of those. There's nothing better than the potato cakes, corn, and sweet potatoes that I used to eat in my hometown."

"You and I even share similar tastes in food," I said. "It's good that people who share the same homeland can meet like this."

"How was it when you visited your hometown?" he asked me.

"I was filled with many emotions," I said. "The home where I lived was still there, and I sat in the main room to think about the past. I almost expected to hear the voice of my late mother, calling me. It was an emotional feeling."

"I see," he said. "It shows that our country needs to be unified immediately. I hear that when you were young, you were quite mischievous. Did you have a chance to run around while you were there this time?"

Everyone at the table laughed at the president's comment.

"I wanted to climb a tree and go fishing, but I heard that you were waiting for me, so I quickly came here. I hope you will invite me to come again sometime."

"Well, of course. Of course I will. President Moon, do you like to hunt? I like hunting very much. I think if you go bear hunting on Mount Baekdu, you will enjoy it very much. Bears have big bodies and look uncoordinated, but they are actually very nimble.

"I once came face to face with a bear," he continued. "The bear looked at me and didn't move a muscle. If I had started to run, you know what would have happened, don't you? So what was I going to do?

I stared right back at him and just stood there. One hour passed, then two hours, three hours. But the bear just kept staring at me. You know how Mount Baekdu is famous for being cold. I was afraid I might freeze to death before the bear ate me."

"So what happened?"

"Well, President Moon, do you see the bear sitting here, or do you see me?"

I laughed out loud, and President Kim immediately followed with a suggestion.

"President Moon," he said, "the next time you come, let's go hunting together on Mount Baekdu."

I responded quickly with my own invitation.

"Mr. President, you like to fish, don't you? On Kodiak Island in Alaska, you can catch halibut that are as big as bears. Let's go fishing for those sometime."

"Halibut as big as bears? Well, I will definitely have to go."

The two of us were able to communicate well about our shared hobbies of hunting and fishing. At one point, we each felt we had so much to say to the other that we just started talking like old friends meeting after a long separation. Our laughter echoed around the dining room.

I also talked about Mount Kumgang.

"I went to Mount Kumgang, and it really is a beautiful mountain," I said. "It needs to be developed as a tourism destination for our people."

"Mount Kumgang will be an asset to our unified homeland," President Kim said. "So I have made sure that only certain people can touch it. If it's developed in the wrong way, it could be ruined. You have an international eye, and I could trust someone like you to take it over and develop it for us."

President Kim went so far as to ask that we develop Mount Kumgang.

"Mr. President," I said, "you are older than me, so you are like my older brother."

He responded, "President Moon, from now, let's refer to each other as older brother and younger brother," and he grasped my hand tightly.

President Kim and I held each other's hand as we walked down the hallway and took commemorative photographs. Then I left the residence.

After I had gone, I was told that President Kim told his son, Kim Jong Il, "President Moon is a great man. I have met many people in my life, but none were like him. He has a broad scale of thinking, and he overflows with heart. I felt close to him. It made me feel good to be with him, and I wanted him to stay for a long time. I want to meet him again. After I die, if there are things to discuss pertaining to North-South relations, you must always seek the advice of President Moon."

So it seemed that we had communicated very well.

Soon after I ended my weeklong stay and left Pyongyang, Prime Minister Hyung Muk Yeon led a North Korean delegation to Seoul. Prime Minister Yon signed an agreement to denuclearize the Korean peninsula. On January 30 of the following year, North Korea signed a nuclear safeguards agreement with the International Atomic Energy Agency, thus fulfilling the commitments that President Kim had made to me. These were the results I accomplished by going to Pyongyang at the risk of my life.

The Land May Be Divided, but Not Its People

The Korean peninsula is one of the last remaining divided countries on earth. We have the responsibility to unify the peninsula. We cannot pass a divided homeland on to our descendants. It is impermissible that a single people should be divided and for peace-loving people to be unable to see their parents or siblings. The line that divides North and South Korea was drawn by human beings. Land can be divided that way, but not people. That we do not forget each other and continue to yearn for each other even after more than fifty years of separation shows that we are one people.

The Korean people were traditionally known as "people of white clothing," because of the color of our clothes. White is the symbol of peace. Our people are people of peace. During the time of the Japanese occupation, Koreans, Chinese, and Japanese lived in Manchuria and Siberia, sometimes helping each other and at other times killing each other. During that time, Koreans never carried swords or knives as did the Japanese and Chinese. Instead, we carried flint rocks. Lighting fires in the frozen land of Manchuria and Siberia was a way of protecting life. This is the kind of people we are. We respect Heaven, uphold moral

principles, and love peace. Our people shed much blood during the time of the Japanese occupation and the Korean War. This, however, did not bring about the unification of our country or the establishment of a sovereignty of peace. Our country was broken at the waist into two pieces, and half became a dark world of communism.

We need unification to restore the sovereignty of our people. We must end the division between North and South so we can have peace. Only after we first accomplish peaceful unification and restore our sovereignty can we bring peace to the world. The Korean people were created to bring peace to the world. Everything has a name, and names have meaning. The clothes of the "people of white clothing" are easy to see, both by day and night. White is good to use for signs during the night because it is easy to see in the dark. Our people are destined to convey messages of peace around the world, both day and night.

North and South are divided by a cease-fire line, but this is not the problem. Once we remove that line, we will find an even larger barrier between us and Russia and China. For our people to enjoy true peace, we will need to overcome those cease-fire lines as well. It will be difficult, but it is not impossible. The important thing is our own attitude.

I believe that when a person sweats, he should sweat every last drop that he has in him. He should sweat even the last little bit that is in his heart. That way, he will have no regrets, and everything will become clean and set in order. The same is true when we attempt anything difficult. The difficulty will end only when you have gained victory at every stage, and everything has been made clear. Whatever you are dealing with needs to be completely put in order. Then it can bear fruit. We cannot restore our people's full sovereignty without going through such tearful difficulties.

Today, many people talk about peaceful unification. I, however, spoke about this at a time when people did not dare even use the phrase "peaceful unification," for fear of being charged with violating the Anti-Communist Law and the National Security Law. Today, when people ask me what must be done to bring about unification, I tell them what I have always said on this matter: "If South Koreans love North Korea more than they love the South, and North Koreans love South Korea more than they love the North, we could unify the peninsula today."

I was able to risk my life to go to North Korea in 1991 and meet President Kim because I had a foundation of such love within me. I made agreements then with him regarding meetings of separated families, North-South economic cooperation, development of Mount Kumgang, denuclearization of the Korean peninsula, and working toward a North-South summit conference. No one thought an anti-communist could go to a communist country and open the floodgate of unification, but I surprised the world.

Before my meeting with President Kim, I delivered a two-hour address titled "Blood Is Thicker Than Water," at the Mansudae Assembly Hall, seat of the Supreme People's Assembly, North Korea's legislature. I spoke that day to the leadership of North Korea about a way to unify North and South through love. I stood before the leadership of North Korea, who were armed with Kim Il Sung's philosophy, and told them exactly what I believed.

"North and South must be unified," I said, "but guns and swords will not make us one. North-South unification will not happen with military force. Even the Korean War failed in this respect, and it is foolish for anyone to think they can make another attempt through military force. Neither will unification happen with the juche ideology that you

espouse. What will do it, then? The world does not operate only by the power of human beings. Because God exists, nothing can be done by human effort alone. Even in situations of evil, such as war, God carries out His providence. That is why North and South cannot be unified through the juche ideology that puts man at the center.

"Bringing about a unified homeland can be done only with Godism," I continued. "God is protecting us, and our time of unification is coming. Unification is the destiny; it is the task that must be accomplished in our era. If we cannot accomplish the sacred task of unifying the homeland in our time, we will not be able to hold our heads high in the presence of our ancestors or descendants for the rest of eternity.

"What is Godism? It is the practice of God's perfect love. Neither the right wing nor the left wing can unify North and South. It will be possible only when there is a 'headwing thought' that is able to harmonize these two.

"To travel the path of love, you must apologize before the world for your invasion of the South. I understand that North Korea has planted twenty thousand resident espionage agents in the South. Send an order immediately to all of them, instructing them to turn themselves in to the South Korean authorities. If you do that, I will give them an education that will rectify their ideology and turn them into patriots who will contribute to the peaceful unification of North and South."

I pounded on the table in front of me as I spoke. The expressions of Mr. Yun Ki Bok and Vice Premier Kim Dal Hyun grew tense with fear. I was aware of what dangers I might be exposed to for making such statements, but I needed to say what I had come to say. I was not simply

trying to shock the audience. I knew that my speech would be reported immediately, word for word, to President Kim and his son, Chairman Kim Jong Il. So I wanted to state my purpose clearly.

When I finished, some of the North Koreans present even protested, demanding to know how I could dare to speak in such a manner. I looked at my entourage and saw that their faces were white with fear.

Our members who were with me told me: "The speech had a very strong tone, and the atmosphere of the audience was not good." I was adamant, however.

"Why did I come here?" I asked them. "I didn't come to see the land of North Korea. If I were to leave here without saying what needed to be said, Heaven would punish me. Even if today's speech is used by them as an excuse to deny me a meeting with President Kim and to expel us from the country, I still needed to say what I came to say."

On July 8, 1994, President Kim suddenly died. His death came when North-South relations were at an all-time low. Patriot missiles had been deployed on South Korean soil, and war hawks in the United States advocated the destruction of nuclear facilities in Yongbyon. It appeared that war might break out at any time. North Korea announced it would not receive any mourners from outside the country, but I felt it was important we send someone. I wanted to fulfill my obligation, as I had formed a brotherly relationship with President Kim.

I called Bo Hi Pak. "Go immediately to North Korea as my representative to mourn President Kim's death." I said.

"No one can get into North Korea now," he said.

"I know it's difficult, but somehow you have to go. I don't care if you have to swim across the Yalu River. Get in there and convey my condolences."

Bo Hi Pak first traveled to Beijing and risked his life to communicate with North Korea. Then, Chairman Kim Jong Il gave the instruction, "An exception will be made for a mourning representative from President Moon. Escort him to Pyongyang."

After condolences had been expressed, Chairman Kim Jong Il met with Bo Hi Pak and politely greeted him, saying, "My father always said that President Moon was working hard for the unification of our homeland. I am glad you came."

In 1994, the Korean peninsula was in such a crisis that it could have exploded at any time. In that moment, we were able to resolve the nuclear crisis on the Korean peninsula because of the relationship I had formed with President Kim Il Sung. Sending a representative to express my condolences was not a simple matter of mourning.

I described my meeting with President Kim in considerable detail to illustrate my point about the importance of faith and loyalty between two people. I met him for the sake of the peaceful unification of our homeland. I was able to convey my concerns for the destiny of our people with faith and loyalty. As a result, after his death, his son, Chairman Kim Jong Il, accepted our mourning representative. There is no wall that cannot be scaled and no dream that cannot be realized when we share our love with a sincere heart.

When I went to North Korea, I thought of it as my homeland and the home of my brother. I didn't go there with a desire to get something from them. I went with the purpose to share with them my heart of love. The power of love touched not only President Kim Il Sung but also his son, Chairman Kim Jong Il. Since then, and continuing to this day, we have maintained a special relationship with North Korea. Each time North-South relations become difficult, we have played a role in

opening the gateway. It is all based on the fact that I met with President Kim Il Sung, conveyed to him my sincere heart, and built a relationship of trust with him. That is the importance of trust.

Following my meeting with President Kim, we now operate the Pyonghwa Motors plant, the Potonggang Hotel, and the World Peace Center in North Korea. There are eight billboards for Pyonghwa Motors around Pyongyang. When the South Korean president visited North Korea, North Korean officials took him to the Pyonghwa Motors plant. South Korean business leaders who accompanied the president stayed at the Potonggang Hotel. Non-North Korean members of our church who work in North Korea gather at the World Peace Center each Sunday for worship service. All of these projects are efforts for the sake of peaceful exchanges and unification of North and South. They are not being done to make a profit. They are efforts to contribute to the unification of North and South as an expression of love for the Korean people.

Not by Guns or Swords, but by True Love

It is not just the cease-fire line that divides our people. The Youngnam and Honam regions are also divided by an invisible line. Also, Koreans who live in Japan are divided between the Korean Residents Union in Japan, or Mindan, which has ties to South Korea, and the General Association of Korean Residents in Japan, or Chongryon, which has ties to North Korea. The conflict between the two organizations in Japan is based on the hometowns of their respective members. Second- and third-generation Korean residents in Japan, who have never been to their parents' hometowns, still live in conflict with each other, as they live within the lines drawn by their parents. The members of the two organizations use slightly different language, send their children to different schools, and do not intermarry.

In 2005, I put into effect my long-held plan to create oneness among Koreans in Japan, as well as among Koreans in the Youngnam and Honam regions. I invited one thousand members of Mindan and one thousand members of Chongryon to Seoul, and matched them in sisterhood and brotherhood relationships to one thousand people from the Youngnam region and one thousand people from the Honam region. It is next to impossible for Chongryon and Mindan to sit down together in Japan

and talk about the peaceful unification of North and South. The task of gathering these people in one place was difficult, but it was deeply moving for me to see them sitting together and embracing each other. One Chongryon official at the event was visiting Seoul for the first time. He spoke in tears as he commented that he deeply regretted the many years he had spent fighting a war that was not his own, particularly as he was not even certain which part of the peninsula his father actually came from. He said he felt immeasurably ashamed for having lived his life with a meaningless line of division drawn in his heart.

To fully understand the division of the Korean peninsula and the conflict between the two sides, we must be able to look comprehensively at the past, present, and future. Every incident has a root cause. The division of the Korean peninsula was created by the history of struggle between good and evil. When the Korean War broke out, the Soviet Union, China, and other communist countries came to the aid of North Korea. In a similar way, sixteen countries, led by the United States, sent armed forces to the aid of South Korea. Also, five countries sent medical teams, and twenty nations provided war supplies. What other war in history involved so many countries in the fighting? The reason that the entire world became involved in a war that took place in the tiny country of Korea is that this was a proxy war between the forces of communism and the forces of freedom. It could be said that Korea came to represent the world, and that good and evil fought fiercely on its soil.

Retired general and former U.S. secretary of state Alexander Haig made an unexpected statement in his congratulatory remarks at the tenth anniversary of The Washington Times, celebrated in 1992.

"I am a veteran of the Korean War," he said. "As a commander, I was in charge of the attack against Heungnam, and we staged the strongest

attack we could. I am deeply moved to hear that Reverend Moon was being held by the communists and was set free by that day's attack. It seems I was sent there to free Reverend Moon. Now, Reverend Moon is here to save America. The Washington Times is a newspaper that will save the American people by providing a balanced view of history that is neither right nor left, and show us the way forward. As we see, there is no such thing as coincidence in history."

A few years ago in Korea, there were people making the argument that the famous statue of General Douglas MacArthur in an Incheon park should be removed. If United Nations Forces had not joined the war effort, the country would not be divided between North and South, as it is today, this argument went. I was shocked to hear this. Such an argument can only be made from the position of the communist party of North Korea.

Great sacrifices were made on a global level, and yet the peninsula remains divided. We do not know the exact date when unification will come, but it is clear that we are making strong strides in that direction. There are many obstacles to be overcome on the road to unification. As we come face to face with each obstacle, we need to work to tear it down and then move on. Though it may take a long time and prove difficult, unification will absolutely come if we work with the same desperation we would have if we were swimming across the Yalu River.

Following the breakup of the Soviet Union, Romania resisted change the longest among the communist countries of Central and Eastern Europe. Then, at the end of 1989, Romania experienced a bloody uprising by its people. As soon as the regime was toppled, Nicolae Ceaușescu, who had ruled the country for twenty-four years, was executed, along with his wife. He was a brutal dictator who mercilessly massacred those

who opposed his policies. In any country, one reason a dictator will tend to tighten his grip is that he fears for his life in the event he may lose power. I think that if a dictator can be certain that his own life will not be placed in danger, he will not go headlong down a dead-end street in the manner of Ceaușescu.

Our country, too, will be unified before long, by one means or another. So politicians and economists need to make the necessary preparations in their own fields of expertise. As a religious person, I will work hard to prepare to greet the unified Korea in which we can embrace North Korean people with love and share in a common peace.

I have studied the unification of Germany for a long time. I have listened to the experiences of those who were involved with regard to how it was that unification could come without a single bullet being fired or a single drop of blood being spilled. In so doing, my hope has been to find a way that is appropriate for Korea. I have learned that the main reason Germany could be unified peacefully was that East German leaders were made to understand that their lives would not be in danger following unification. If East German leaders had not believed this would be so, they would not have allowed unification to occur so easily.

I came to believe we need to give a similar understanding toward the rulers of North Korea. A novel based on North Korea was published in Japan not long ago. In this fictional novel, the rulers of North Korea repeatedly watch a video of Ceauşescu's execution and cry out, "That is what will happen to us if we lose power. Under no circumstances can we lose our hold on power!" Of course, that is only a novel published in Japan. We should, however, devote our attention to this real problem and find a solution for North Korean leaders, to bring about Korea's speedy unification.

Building a world of peace on the Korean peninsula is not as difficult as we may think. When South Korea lives fully for the sake of North Korea, North Korea will not try to fight the South, and peace will come naturally to the peninsula. The power that can move a rebellious child is not the fist or brute power. It is the power of love that wells up naturally from within the heart. More than rice or fertilizer, it is important for us to give love to North Korea. We must never forget that it is only when we consider North Korea's situation and live for its sake with a loving and sincere heart that the North will open its heart to us and the world.

CHAPTER SEVEN

FUTURE OF KOREA, FUTURE OF THE WORLD

World Harmony and the Korean Peninsula

I miss my hometown so much that I visit it often in my dreams. My hometown is far beyond Seoul, in Jungju, North Korea. It is an area that has both mountains and the sea. Wherever I am and whatever time it may be, my heart is always reaching out to that place where there is love and life. All of us are born into our parents' lineage, and as we grow up we are nourished by our parents' love. We cannot forget our hometowns because that is where the ground is soaked with our parents' love. That is why the older we get, the more we miss our hometowns. It is where our roots are and where we must return. It is difficult for people to cut themselves off from things that are fundamentally important to them. In 2004, I ended my activities in the United States after thirty-four years and returned to the Korean peninsula, where heavenly fortune resides.

We are not aware of the exact time when morning becomes noon. Neither are we aware of the exact time that evening becomes night. In the same way, human beings have no way of knowing the moment when Heaven does its work. That is how it is with our lives as well. Our moments of success and failure all pass us by without our being fully

aware of exactly when they began to unfold. The same is true with nations. We cannot know the moment when good or ill fortune comes to a nation. Heavenly fortune is a force that moves the world; it is a principle that makes the universe go around. Though we may not know it, there is clearly something called heavenly fortune, which the One who created this world uses to conduct His providence.

The universe moves in perfect accordance with its own order. All beings in the world bear within them a certain principle that is put there even before they exist. When a baby is born, no one has to teach it how to breathe or to open its eyes. The baby does these things without being compelled. Things that happen on their own hold within them important keys to the secrets of the universe.

Many natural phenomena seem to just happen on their own. In reality, though, they don't happen in this way. Hidden within natural phenomena in the universe is a directional force that we are not aware of and do not understand. This is the same with the forces of fortune in the universe, or heavenly fortune. As the universe turns, it is certain that there will be a period of powerful fortune. If we understand the principle of the universe whereby spring follows winter and is then followed by summer, then we can foresee a bright future for Korea after a long winter of misfortune.

Those who are wise will align themselves with the laws and rhythms of the universe. When I was in America I would often fish in the Hudson River near my home. I have been a very skilled fisherman since I was a young boy, but there were days on the Hudson when I could not catch so much as a tiny minnow and had to return home disheartened. Fish have paths that they travel and certain times when they pass along those paths. If we don't know where these paths are and what times they

are on these paths, we won't catch any fish. Just because there is water, it does not mean that there will always be fish passing by. A person who doesn't understand this could keep his line in the water all day and all night, and it won't do him any good. The same is true with heavenly fortune. If we don't have an eye to see the future, we will not see heavenly fortune, even if it is staring us in the face. That is why it is important to have a keen understanding of heavenly fortune and an ability to sense its movements.

World civilization has developed throughout history in a westerly direction. Egypt's continental civilization gave way to the peninsular civilizations of Greece and Rome and then developed to the island civilization of Britain before moving on to another continental civilization, this time in America. Civilization continued its westerly move, crossing the Pacific Ocean to Japan. The movement of human civilization didn't stop there. The force that raised Japan up to such a great position is now moving to the Korean peninsula. Human civilization is about to come to its fruition on the Korean peninsula.

For Japan's island civilization to link up with the continent, it must pass through a peninsula. Asia, of course, has other peninsulas, but only Korea possesses sufficient foundation to inherit contemporary civilization. The Korean peninsula is in a most exquisite geopolitical position. It faces Japan and the United States across the Pacific Ocean. It also is connected to the continents of Asia and Europe and shares common borders with China and Russia. This is the reason that Korea has been a focal point in the power struggles among the world's great powers and has suffered a great deal as a result.

During the Cold War, we fought for our very existence in a war against communism. Even now, the concerns and interests of the world's great

powers continue to involve the Korean peninsula, so Korea remains a divided country unable to be completely at peace. The time has come when the Korean peninsula, where the interests of the great powers collide, will take on an important role in preventing conflict between these countries. As a result it will be in a position to lead the rest of the world into prosperity and peace.

Heavenly fortune comes with tremendous responsibility. Now that the Korean peninsula has come into its heavenly fortune, it must play a role similar to a ball bearing, making sure that these countries not only do not collide with each other but instead cooperate closely for the sake of the prosperity and peace of the world. The functions of a ball bearing are to hold the axle of a machine in place while also allowing the axle to rotate freely. Korea needs to maintain smooth relationships with the great powers and thus become a ball bearing that allows peace to rotate freely throughout the world.

For a long time I have been making intensive preparations for Korea to play this role. I supported the glasnost policies of President Gorbachev and pushed the goal of improving relations with the Soviet Union. I also supported the reform and openness policies of Deng Xiao Ping in China, starting in the late 1980s. I began my work in China by supporting Yanbian University to establish a college of engineering. Even after the Tiananmen Square incident, when foreign capital was leaving China, we remained in China and invested hundreds of millions of dollars in Huizhou, in Kwangtung Province.

I did not do this just for economic reasons. I am a religious person, not a businessman. A religious person is someone who sees into the future and prepares for it. Russia, China, Japan, and the United States must learn to cooperate with each other while using the spiritual

bearings of the Korean peninsula. The Korean peninsula is destined to become the axis for world peace.

When I began working to improve relations between Korea and the Soviet Union and China, I discovered that Korea did not even have something as basic as a Russian or Chinese dictionary. Very little was going to get done as long as we could not understand each other's languages. When I heard that there were groups of academics who had the foresight to begin work on a Chinese–Korean dictionary and a Russian–Korean dictionary, I supported these two projects. The Chinese–Korean Dictionary Project was led by Professor Il Seok Hong of the Korea University's Institute of Korean Culture, and several professors in the university's Russian studies department were behind the effort to publish a Russian–Korean dictionary. These dictionaries are playing crucial roles in the exchanges between the two Koreas and China and Russia.

When a rock sits atop the highest mountain peak, once it begins to fall it will fall all the way to the deepest part of the valley. This describes the changing fortunes of Western civilization. It is common knowledge that the West achieved incredible development through the use of science, but now moral decay is sending it down to the depths of the valley floor. That valley floor is the East, which has been developing a spiritual culture for thousands of years.

In particular, the Korean peninsula is the place where Eastern and Western cultures meet, as well as the place where continental and oceanic civilizations meet. The historian and philosopher Oswald Spengler put forth a cyclical theory of the rise and decline of civilizations that took a dim view of democracy and described it as the type of government that is leading Western civilization into decline. He argued that democracy

is driven by money and that democracy's corrupting power and its signs of moral decline include the rise of materialism and cults of science. Looking at today's Western culture, it appears that some of his thoughts were prophetic. The Atlantic civilization that has prospered until now is clearly facing a new era, the era of a pan-Pacific civilization that is on the rise. Asia, with Korea poised to take a central role, is becoming the lead actor in a new world history. Two-thirds of the world's population lives in Asia. All the world's major religions began in Asia. It has long served as humanity's spiritual root.

It is inevitable that the Western and Eastern civilizations come together in harmony on the Korean peninsula. As the world rapidly changes, heavenly fortune is moving in Korea's direction at an ever-increasing speed. However, if the Korean peninsula is to properly perform its important role in leading the world to harmony and peace during an era of chaos, then it must prepare itself well. It must do away with a past marked with prejudice and selfishness and greet the new age with clear eyes and a new heart.

From Suffering and Tears to Peace and Love

There is deep meaning in the tragic history that the Korean people have experienced up to this point. Korea has suffered a great deal because it is destined to become the foundation from which world peace will emerge. Because it has endured suffering and difficulty for such a long time, Korea can now become the central nation from which God brings peace to the world. Even though Koreans have experienced countless hardships, we have never made anyone our enemy or hated anyone. Several of our neighbors have caused difficulty for us, but we have never made them our irreconcilable enemies.

The Korean people have developed a culture of heart that enables us to forgive our enemies. It takes mastery over oneself to love and accept an enemy. The ability to love one's enemy comes only after an individual is victorious over his own internal conflicts.

People who are persecuted are the closest to God. To understand God's heart, one must experience His tearful heart. Even a person who normally would not shed tears will do so if he loses his family and his country. He would desperately plead with God in tears. Suffering difficulties causes one to have a heart that sheds tears and cries,

but it is through this type of heart that one can receive God's blessing. God comes to a heart that is soaked with tears. Korea has become a land of heavenly fortune because so many tears have been shed within the hearts of its people.

Korean people honor their ancestors. No matter how hungry we may be, we will never sell the land where our ancestors are buried in order to buy food. Historically we have maintained a way of thinking that respects Heaven. We are a modern, civilized nation that still honors the world of the spirit. When we accepted Buddhism and Confucianism, they gave rise to a beautiful religious culture. More recently Christian and Muslim traditions have begun to thrive here as well. All these religions live without conflict within Korea. They blend together and coexist peacefully. What is it that has made us such a unique people?

From ancient times we have always had religious minds, and our hearts have always been open to receive the word of God. In addition, Koreans have always placed a high priority on education and excellence. As a result the Korean language and the Hangeul alphabet are considered treasures handed down by Heaven. Our language is rich with adjectives and adverbs that can be used to express the human heart.

I love the Hangeul alphabet that we use. I am very fond of the term Hunminjeongeum, the original name of the Hangeul alphabet. It means "correct sounds for the instruction of the people." It has such a beautiful meaning. The excellence of Hangeul has survived for centuries and continues to contribute beauty to human communication, even in this digital age. To me it is truly amazing that through a simple combination of consonants and vowels humans can communicate and even imitate all the sounds of the creation.

For the past thirty years, I have been telling the members of our church in other countries to prepare for the future by learning Korean. Recently, the term hallyu, or "Korean wave," was coined in China by journalists to describe the rapid spread of Korean popular culture throughout Asia. The popularity of Korean pop music, TV dramas, and movies has generated a large increase in the number of people learning the Korean language. There are now many people in Japan, Mongolia, Vietnam, and even Africa who can speak Korean. This is certainly not a coincidence. The soul dwells within language. The reason the Japanese tried so hard to eliminate the Korean language during their forced occupation was to destroy the soul of the Korean people. The fact that many people around the world now speak Korean means that the heart and soul of the Korean people are thriving in today's world. It is because of heavenly fortune that Korea's cultural influence continues to grow.

The Korean people never want to burden others. When I was in America, I saw the stubborn character of Korean people. The United States is a country that has many types of social safety nets, but Koreans almost never want to take advantage of these. Rather than relying on the support of the government, they find ways to earn money in order to raise their children and take care of their older parents. This is how Koreans show self-reliance. I also see this in the missionaries that we have sent across the world. They don't fear going to a country they know little about. This is true not only for missionaries but also for businessmen. Once they are given a mission, no matter where that mission may take them in the world, they drop everything and go. They are not indecisive or reluctant.

Koreans have such an enterprising spirit that they can go anywhere in the world and live a productive life. Our suffering history has taught us that no obstacle is too great. We have learned to face the worst kinds of situations and overcome them.

When there is a neighborhood celebration, people compete for the best spot to view the celebration. This is a very self-centered kind of behavior. The person who quietly sits down in the worst seat will be the leader of the coming age. Anyone who worries first about putting food in his own mouth will be a failure in the coming age. Even if we are going to eat only one spoonful, we must think of others first. If we are to receive the heavenly fortune that is coming to the Korean peninsula, then we must be aware in the deepest part of our hearts that "others" are more valuable than "myself."

In the past, everything we loved was taken away from us. During Japan's forced occupation, our country was taken away. Our country was split in two, and we were forcibly separated from our loving parents and siblings. So Korea became a land of tears. Now, however, we must cry for the world. From now on, rather than shedding tears for ourselves, we must shed tears more sincerely and more desperately for the sake of the world. This is what we must do on the Korean peninsula if we want to continue to receive heavenly fortune. When we do this, the heavenly fortune on the Korean peninsula will then spread out to the world. Korean people have a great opportunity to be at the center of an era of world peace.

The Ultimate Purpose of Twenty-first-Century Religion

The twentieth century was a time of tremendous change. More happened in that hundred-year period than during the past two thousand years. It was the century when there were two world wars and when communism rose to great strength and then disappeared. It was also the century when humanity turned its back on God and buried itself in material things. What about the twenty-first century, then? Some say that advances in science have proven that many religious beliefs are mere superstition and irrelevant to the modern world. I contend, however, that the role of religion will always be relevant as long as the spiritual aspect of human beings remains a reality and a world of peace has not been established.

What is the purpose of religion? It is to bring about God's ideal world. The reason religions evangelize is because they desire to increase the number of citizens under God's sovereignty. If everyone were to live under God's sovereignty, we would have a world of peace where there would be no war or division. The ultimate destination of the path followed by religions should be peace.

God created this world out of a desire for love and peace. If we create division by insisting that our own religion is the only path to salvation, we go against God's desire. God wants everyone in the world to work hard for peace, reconciliation, and coexistence. If people say that coming to church creates division in their family, then I do not hesitate to tell them that they should put their family first. Religion is only a means to bring about God's perfect world; it is not an end in itself.

Humankind's destiny is to bring together all the points of view that are now divided against each other. The philosophy that will lead humanity in the future must be able to bring together all religions and philosophies. The days have ended when one country stands at the forefront and leads humanity. The era of nationalism has also ended.

If we continue the era of people congregating together only by religion or race, then humanity cannot avoid a repetition of war. The age of peace absolutely cannot come unless we transcend cultural customs and traditions. No ideology, philosophy, or religion that has influenced humanity in the past is capable of bringing about the peace and unification that is needed for the future. We need a new ideology and philosophy that goes beyond Buddhism, Christianity, and Islam. For my entire life, I have called on people until my voice is hoarse to transcend their religious factions and even their religions.

There are more than two hundred countries in the world, and each has its own national borders. A border separates one country from another, but countries separated by borders cannot endure eternally. Only religion can overcome national borders. However, religions that should be bringing people together have instead divided themselves into many factions that are busy fighting each other. They have fallen into a selfish thought process

that puts their religion or faction first. They are oblivious to the fact that the world has changed and a new era of selflessness has dawned.

It will not be easy to tear down the religious walls that have stood for thousands of years, but these walls must come down if we are to advance into a world of peace. Religions and their factions must stop their meaningless fighting, find a middle ground for their differing opinions, and develop concrete ways to advance the world of peace. For humanity to be happy in the future, material affluence alone will not be sufficient. It is urgent that the struggles of modern ideologies, cultures, and races be overcome through interreligious understanding and spiritual harmony.

All my life I have made the following appeals to the wide variety of religious people I have met around the world: First, respect the traditions of other religions and do everything you can to prevent conflict and discord among religions. Second, all religious communities should cooperate with each other to serve the world. Third, the leaders of all religions should work together to develop a structure that will let us accomplish our mutual mission of establishing world peace.

The right eye is there for the left eye, and the left for the sake of the right. The two eyes together exist for the sake of the whole body. The same can be said for every other part of the body. Nothing exists for its own sake. Religion, too, does not exist for its own sake but for the sake of love and peace. Once world peace is accomplished, there will be no further need for religion. The ultimate purpose of religion is to bring about the reality of a human community filled with love and peace. This is God's Will.

It is not easy to create an environment where people's hearts are filled with a craving for peace. Continuous education is the only solution.

This is the reason that I devote myself to projects in the field of education. We founded the Sunhwa Arts School even before our church had developed enough to stand on its own.

A school is a holy place where truth is taught. What are the most important truths that should be taught in school? The first is to know God and recognize His existence in the world around us. The second is to know the fundamental origin of human beings, our responsibilities, and how to fulfill our responsibilities for the sake of the world. The third is to realize the purpose for the existence of human beings and to then create an ideal world for that existence. These things can be understood only after they have been taught with sincerity and dedication over a long period.

Education today is focused on creating a winner-take-all society where those who finish first are rewarded with a monopoly on happiness. This is not the right way to educate children. Education must be a means for creating a world where all humanity can live well together. The philosophies and methods of education that have dominated us until now must be changed to ones that let us advance toward humanity's common goals. If the United States were to educate only for the sake of the United States, and Britain only for sake of Britain, then humanity's future would be dark.

Educators must not teach how to live selfishly but instead impart the wisdom needed to resolve the myriad social problems we face today. The role of religious scholars is even more important. Religious scholars do not need to be teaching complex theories and the superiority of their own religions. Instead, they need to give their students the wisdom to love humanity and build a world of peace. They need to teach the principle of selflessness. We cannot expect a future of happiness for

humanity if scholars do not take the lead in teaching our descendants the principles of peace. Humanity is one brotherhood and sisterhood, and the world is one family.

The most important wisdom needed by humankind comes from knowing God's heart and His ideal. For this reason, the role of religion continues to be important, especially in the twenty-first century, when science and technology seem to be replacing the role of religion in understanding how the universe operates. Religions around the world must understand the destination of the human journey and immediately cease all major and minor struggles. They should not be fighting for the purpose of protecting their own honor. Religions must pool their wisdom and combine their energies and work diligently to build the ideal world. They must forget the past struggles filled with hatred and work out peaceful solutions. No matter how much we have done for world peace, there is always more to be done. Religious people, whose mission is to lead humanity into the ideal world, must not forget for a moment that truly their only mission is to be apostles of peace.

Cultural Projects Express God's Creativity

SPORTS

In 1988, Seoul hosted the Summer Olympics. I saw this as a potential festival of peace in my own backyard and had many of our members from around the world come to Seoul for the event. The members helped guide the international athletes and officials, cheered the athletes, served them food, and presented them with mementos of their visit to Korea. Since China and the Soviet Union were both participants in the Games, I saw it as an event that could critically alter the Cold War era. Seeing the Olympic Games as a festival of peace gave it the potential to create harmony between the communist bloc and the free world. On the day of the opening ceremony I sat in the general seating area of Jamsil Main Stadium and watched with great joy.

After the Olympics, I carried on the energy of the Games by founding the Ilhwa Chunma professional soccer team. The Ilhwa team has won several championships and built up a strong fan base. We have since founded the soccer teams Clube Atlético Sorocaba and Centro Esportivo Nova Esperança (CENE) in Brazil, the home of samba football, and continue to operate them today. The reason I chose to create soccer

teams is that I enjoy the sport. I have enjoyed sports since I was young, and for a time I did some boxing and some traditional martial arts. Soccer, however, is the one sport that I continue to enjoy into my old age. In my school days I used to run around the schoolyard diligently kicking the ball, but now I enjoy watching it. When the World Cup was held in Seoul, I had three television sets set up side by side so that I could watch all the games. I never missed a game that Korea played.

Soccer is a microcosm of life. No matter how well I might dribble the ball down the field, if someone from the opposing team who is faster and more skilled comes along and steals the ball away from me, then in an instant everything I did until then is for nothing. Also, even if I might dribble all the way down the field and take a shot at the goal, if the ball hits the goalpost and bounces back, that's the end. It's up to me to dribble the ball, but it takes more than one person to get the ball into the goal. I need a teammate like Ji Sung Park, who will assist me at the critical moment, or someone like Young Pyo Lee, who will adroitly draw the other team away from me.

The most important person on the team is the manager, who watches over the entire team from the sidelines. The manager doesn't run or score goals, but his power is greater than that of all the players put together. Similar to a manager who sees things that the players cannot see and gives signals, God sees things that we cannot see and gives us signs. If the players follow the manager's signs well, they will almost always win. But if the manager sends signs and foolish players either don't understand them or ignore them and play according to their own thinking, the team can only lose.

Soccer is a sport where competition takes place and someone wins or loses, but it also has the potential for significantly influencing countries

and increasing their cooperation toward peace. I was told that twice as many people watched the World Cup as watched the Olympics. This provides an idea of how many people around the world love soccer. Therefore, just like the Olympics, it has the power to become a force for harmony between countries, races, religions, and cultures. I see soccer and peace among countries as potentially powerful partners.

Pelé, who was appointed as Brazil's Extraordinary Minister for Sport in 1995, once visited Korea and spent time in the Hannam Dong neighborhood of Seoul. People remember him as the greatest soccer player in the world, but the Pelé I met was a peace activist. He wanted to bring world peace through soccer. When I met him, he laughed as he told me the story of a game in Africa. He said, "I once played in Gabon in Africa, but the country was at war then. How do you think we were able play in a place where bombs were exploding all around? Thankfully, there was a cease-fire during the time that we played. That's when I realized deeply that football was more than just a sport where we kick a ball around. Football is a means shared by all people in the world for creating world peace. After that, I decided that I had to carry out a movement for world peace through football."

I was so impressed with Pelé in that moment that I firmly grasped his hand. We live in a competitive society where there is a great deal of stress. Stress creates tension in our lives and takes away our peace of mind. When stress accumulates, people can become irritated and sometimes fight each other. Sports and the arts are examples of things that help us to lower our levels of stress. These things help us to vent our pent-up urges and bring humanity together. The reason for my devotion to soccer teams, symphony orchestras, and ballet companies is that these activities are a means to bring world peace. Pelé understands this kind of thinking.

Finding ourselves in agreement, Pelé and I created a new competition of international dimensions called Peace Cup, and tournaments have been held every two years since 2003. We brought famous soccer teams from around the world to Korea. A corresponding women's tournament called the Peace Queen Cup is held in alternate years. In the summer of 2009 we held the first men's tournament outside Korea. The 2009 competition was held in Spain's Andalusia region. All profits from the tournaments are used to support soccer events for children and youth in developing countries. In particular, we use soccer to help children with physical disabilities keep their dreams alive.

Working with the Office of the UN High Commissioner for Refugees, the U.N. refugee agency, we held a soccer tournament for young people in Liberia. This is a country where fifteen years of tribal warfare has left its people exhausted. It receives special protection from the United Nations because of its precipitous drop in population. The children of this war-torn country gathered together to play soccer and sing songs of peace. In the process of kicking the ball around, they were learning skills of teamwork and fair play that are necessary for bringing harmony between tribes.

The Peace Cup organization also has a goal of building a peace stadium in the Israel–Palestine–Jordan region, as close as possible to the Israel–Palestine border. The stadium would be freely available to all as a peace-building venture. We want to bring famous coaches from Europe and start a soccer academy for the children in the region. The adults may want to point guns at each other, but the children will want to come to the soccer stadium and kick the ball around. People say it is unrealistic and shake their heads, but we will do this. Already a member of the Israeli cabinet has said the stadium should be built in the Israeli

area, and a member of the Palestinian cabinet says it should be in the Palestinian area. I am determined, however, to build it in a way that connects the two sides. I am not one to be pressured into giving up my dreams. I have a bullheaded strength of will that I use to pursue dreams that will lead to a world of peace.

ARTS

The creation of our ballet company is a perfect example of the same strength of will. People said it couldn't be done. We established the Universal Ballet in 1984. Today more people in Korea are enjoying ballet than ever before. When we first created our ballet company, Korea was like a barren wasteland as far as ballet was concerned. Korea now even has its own world-renowned ballerinas.

Every time I watch ballet, I feel that this must be what art in the Heavenly Kingdom is like. When a ballerina stands on her toes and holds her head toward the heavens, this stance strikes me as a perfect pose for the way we should hold God in awe. It has the look of ardent desire. In ballet, human beings can use the beautiful body given to them by God to express their love for Him. It is the highest form of art.

The Universal Ballet began by performing Swan Lake and the Nutcracker Suite. It has added Don Quixote, Giselle, and its own original creations Shim Chung and The Love of Chunhyang. It has developed to the point of being internationally acclaimed. The Universal Ballet receives invitations from the world's most famous venues. Its dancers are credited with adding a uniquely Korean beauty to the energetic moves of Western ballet. They are praised for the way they harmonize Eastern and Western styles in their performances. The Universal Ballet

has an academy in Washington, D.C. I also created the New York City Symphony Orchestra and the New Hope Singers.

The arts enable humankind to reflect the high ideals embodied in God's own creative work. God poured His entire heart into human beings and the world He created, just as artists invest their entire being into their works. The Book of Genesis makes it seem as though things came into being simply by God speaking a word, but that is absolutely not how it was. God invested all His energy into creating the waters and the land. In the same way, the movements of the ballerinas onstage are fruits of the creative process that require total investment.

The same thing can be said about soccer. A successful soccer team will invest its full energies into a ninety-minute game. In making a single run for the goal, a player will invest every bit of energy that he can call up, as if his life depended on it. This is similar to what God went through as He created the world. To pour out everything we have, to offer ourselves up completely for the sake of one moment in time—this is how greatness is achieved and how humankind comes to resemble God.

Master of the Seas and the Future of the World

History has shown that the country that controls the seas will become a world leader. Consider Britain. It was once invaded by the Vikings from Norway and Sweden. In the sixteenth century, soon after she was crowned, Queen Elizabeth I realized that if Britain didn't have control of the sea it could lose everything. She strengthened her country's maritime policy, and through her dedicated effort Britain became a powerful maritime country. She mobilized capital and technology to have strong ships built, manned the ships with brave sailors, and sent them out to sea. They did not know what was waiting for them beyond the seas, but they risked their lives to go. As a result, Britain, a small island nation in the Atlantic, came to possess colonies on all the continents and oceans and built an empire.

Western civilization centering on Britain saw tremendous development in science and technology. With the aid of the compass, British ships journeyed to many different places in the world. The country's highly developed material knowledge and technology gave it abilities with which it sought to conquer the entire world.

Korea, and most of the rest of the East, has taken a different approach. The Eastern world does not discard the spirit in the pursuit of the material. If there is a conflict between the material and the spiritual, the East would rather discard the material. So generally speaking, life in the East has been more difficult than in the West because it is less materially developed. In the West, however, spirit will not be dominated by the material forever. As a totally materialistic civilization brings degradation, the opportunity presents itself to learn from the more spiritually oriented East.

Civilization developed from Egypt to Greece and Rome to Britain and the United States and is now moving toward the Pacific region surrounding the Korean peninsula. The era of a Pacific civilization is opening, bringing together Western science and Eastern spirituality. The leaders in this new era will be nations like Korea and its Asian neighbors. It is not by mere coincidence that Korea and Japan have been able to rise to international prominence in a short time. This development was a historical inevitability pointing to the Asian era.

The United States and Russia, however, will not stand by and watch as our country rises to a leadership role in the world. It is possible that there could be a major conflict involving the United States, Japan, Russia, and China in the vicinity of Korea. We must prepare for this contingency in two ways.

First, we must create a strong bond between Japan and the United States and link this to Russia and China so as to protect Korea. How can we do this? With a philosophy and a heart that create oneness. The only philosophy that can prevent wars between religions and open a path to a peaceful world is one that proclaims that humanity is one, transcendent of race, nationality,

and religion. To protect itself from the dangers of war, Korea must plant a philosophy of oneness in the world.

The second thing we must do is prepare ourselves for the new oceanic era. The Pacific era is at hand. Anyone who cannot rule the ocean cannot become a leader in the Pacific age. If heavenly fortune comes and we are not prepared, we cannot take advantage of the opportunity. If we know that an oceanic era is about to begin and Korea wants to be the leader of that era, then Korea must make the necessary preparations.

There are more resources than fish in the ocean. A greater treasure is its ability to provide energy. As crude oil reserves decrease, a sense of crisis over sources of energy is growing day by day. If the world runs out of oil, human civilization will immediately find itself in the dark. There is an effort to develop alternative energy from corn, but this does not seem realistic when there is not enough food being distributed to feed the world's population as it is. The true alternative energy source is the ocean. Energy from the hydrogen in the sea represents the future of humanity.

Two-thirds of the earth's surface is water. This means that two-thirds of the raw materials that humanity needs for the future are contained in the ocean. A new future for humanity cannot be accomplished without the ocean's resources. Developed countries are already extracting oil and natural gas from the ocean and selling it at high prices. The world has only begun to discover the resources in the ocean. The day is at hand when humanity will find itself dependent on the ocean.

The oceanic era will not begin without human effort. We must first go out into the oceans. We must go out on boats and fight the waves. Without such courage we cannot prepare ourselves for the oceanic age. The country that conquers the oceans will become a dominant power

in the world and find the world eager to study its culture and language. Korea must become the champion steward of the Pacific Ocean. It must understand the will of the Creator and manage His resources well.

Great Opportunity in the Oceanic Era

The oceans can become a central point for bringing the world together. To take ownership over the oceans we must be trained to live on it with the same ease as we live on land. When I train people to fish, I send ten small boats out with one large boat. When the boats leave port, the small boats are towed by the large boat. Once they are out on the open sea, however, the small boats are responsible for themselves. They must know the direction of the wind, what is on the ocean floor, and what route the fish are taking. They must learn all this on their own.

I like to use the phrase Alaska spirit. This refers to getting up at five o'clock in the morning, going out to sea, and not returning until well after midnight. The person stays out on the ocean until he catches the daily allowance. One cannot become a true fisherman unless he learns how to endure this way.

Catching fish is not a pleasure cruise. No matter how many fish may be in the ocean, they are not going to just jump into the boat. It takes specialized knowledge and much experience. A person must know how to mend a net and how to tie an anchor rope. Once a person receives intense training to become a fisherman, he can go anywhere in the

world and become a leader of people. Learning to be a fisherman is good leadership training.

Dominance at sea will require ships, including submarines, that can go anywhere in the world. Korea is already the largest shipbuilding country in the world. It has the ability to become a great sea power. What it needs now is more people willing to go out to sea. We are the descendants of Chang Bo Go, a wealthy man of the ninth century who ran an international maritime trading business and was called "Ocean King." We have a long tradition of going out to sea on ships, fighting the waves, and winning battles.

People fear the waves. When waves catch the wind, they become swells. The formation of waves and swells is needed for oxygen to be mixed into the ocean. If the ocean is calm for an extended period, without wind or waves, it begins to die. When we realize the value of waves, they are no longer something to be feared. Even if a strong wind blows and the waves become fearsome, we understand that this is the way to help the fish live. Then the waves become part of the attraction of the sea.

A hundred feet below the surface of the ocean there are no waves. If we were to take a submarine to the bottom of the ocean it would be so cool that there would be no need for air conditioners. The fish choose the depth that has the temperature that is right for them and then perform wonderful dances as they swim in schools in their favorite waters. Similar to our Little Angels dance troupe with their fans, the fish have their colorful outfits and gently wave their fins. It is a beautiful and peaceful environment that they live in. The world, too, will soon be as peaceful as this.

The fact that an oceanic era is coming means that Korea will soon have the opportunity to change the world. People who live in peninsular

countries have had to contend with invasions from both land and sea throughout history. To survive they had to be brave and develop a steely national character. It is not by coincidence that civilization developed in peninsular countries such as Greece and Italy. Civilization could blossom in these countries because they had the enterprising and tough, adventurous spirit needed to spread their influence across both continents and seas.

Have you heard about the Black Stream? In the East it is known as the Kuroshio. This is a current in the Pacific that travels four thousand miles a year, based on the gravitational pull of the moon. It is an oceanic gyre that revolves all the way around the Pacific Ocean. To describe it simply as "tremendous" is not sufficient. All the oceans of the world move by the same power that moves the Black Stream. If these currents did not exist, the oceans would not move and would die. Just as even the largest and mightiest rivers eventually must flow into the sea, so also even the largest oceans must move in accordance with currents like the Black Stream. The Korean people must become like the Black Stream and cause the flow of their peace-loving culture to influence the whole world. We must become a source of strength in the world, the place where all of life's forces come together in a peaceful concentration.

I have visited Korea's southern coast many times in an effort to find the place that could become the center of a Pacific civilization, and I believe that Yeosu and Sooncheon are suited to the task. The sea off the coast of Yeosu is tranquil, clear, and mirrorlike. It is where Admiral Yi Soon Shin dealt the Japanese a heavy defeat in the late 1600s, and it is also where he died in battle. Yeosu has a great history of sea battles, and it is also the point where the Youngnam and Honam regions meet. It is at the end of the foothills of Mount Jiri, where leftists and rightists

fought each other following the Korean War. In this sense, it is a land imbued with the pain of our people. Sooncheon Bay, famous for its reed beds, has a beautiful and world-famous ria coast. Out on the sea there, with its clear waters that shimmer in the sunlight, we can catch many different types of fish. Abalone and brown seaweed grow in the tranquil waters of the bay. The large tidal flats are filled with cockles and other types of shellfish and small octopus. I have been out on the seas in that area and also climbed the mountains, and it is clear that this is a beautiful land that has everything necessary for the coming Pacific age.

I am now developing Korea's southern coast, with the focus on Yeosu. As a part of the preparations for this, I have been to Geomun Island and other islands in the area and lived there for several months. I consider people who live there, farming and fishing for the past several decades, to be my teachers. I ate and slept in humble inns as I studied everything in detail. I didn't just study books. I went everywhere, using my eyes and feet to check everything. As a result, I now know what kinds of fish can be found in what area of the ocean, what kind of net needs to be used to catch them, what kinds of trees grow in the mountains, and which home on the island has an old man living alone after having suffered a stroke.

The day I finished my studies of the southern coast I took the village mayor, who had been helping me, on an airplane to Alaska. He had taught me everything he knew, so I wanted to return the favor by teaching him what I knew about Alaska. I went fishing with him in Alaska and told him about the different kinds of fish and how they can be caught. Even if I know only a little about something, I don't feel comfortable unless I share it with others.

Very soon after I began developing Yeosu, it was chosen as the venue for an international maritime exposition to be held in 2012. Together with the Olympic Games and the World Cup, international expositions are among the three largest festivals on a global scale. During the six months that Expo 2012 is held in Yeosu, 154 member countries of the International Exhibitions Bureau (BIE) will operate various exhibits. This will focus the world's attention on Yeosu, and the technology and culture of developed countries will flow into Yeosu. Have you ever looked up at a summer sky and seen clouds blowing by at an amazing speed? Once clouds catch the wind, they move quickly over mountains and oceans. Now is not the time to be hesitating. In a way similar to those clouds, heavenly fortune will be blowing the world toward Yeosu and the Korean peninsula.

I plan to connect all the islands along the southern coast with bridges and build condominiums where boat-loving people from around the world can come and stay. These will not be condominiums just for play. Americans, Germans, Japanese, Brazilians, and Africans will come. They may go out on different boats to catch fish, but I will have them stay in the same condominiums to show that humanity is one family.

The oceanic era will also be an era of outer space. The time is coming when aeronautic technology will be an absolute necessity. It will be too late for Korea to prepare its space industry if it doesn't start now. I am preparing an aeronautic industrial park in Gimpo, in Kyounggi Province. I plan to produce world-famous Sikorsky helicopters. Soon the day will come when helicopters bearing the Taeguk mark of Korea will fly the seas and skies all over the world.

A Single Dandelion Is More Precious Than Gold

The three greatest challenges of modern society are solving pollution problems, creating a consciousness for protecting the environment, and increasing food production. If any one of these is neglected, humanity will become extinct. The earth has already been damaged extensively. Endless greed for material possessions has brought about serious air and water pollution that is destroying nature, including the ozone layer that protects us. If present trends continue, humanity will find itself destroyed by the traps of material civilization.

For the past twenty years, I have been working to sustain and preserve Brazil's Pantanal region. The Pantanal—a region that lies in Brazil, Bolivia, and Paraguay—is the world's largest wetlands area. It is listed with UNESCO as a World Heritage Site. I am carrying on a global environmental movement to preserve the living creatures of the Pantanal in the pristine state in which God created them.

The Pantanal—where the sea, land, animals, and plants live in harmony—is a magnificent place. Simple words such as beautiful and fantastic cannot begin to describe its value. Photos of the area taken from the sky are so beautiful that a collection of these photos is one of

the best-selling photo collections in the world. It is humanity's treasure trove, where rare species such as the white-throated capuchin, the red howler monkey, macaw, jaguar, anaconda, ostrich, and caiman live.

The flora and fauna of the Pantanal and the Amazon basin exist as they did at the time of Creation. The Pantanal is Edenic. Human beings have destroyed a great many beings that God created. Too many species of plants and animals have become extinct because of human greed. In the Pantanal, though, the original forms that God created still remain. I am working to establish a bird atrium and an insect preserve in the Pantanal to save these unique species from extinction.

In addition to being a habitat for many plants and animals, the Pantanal is also an important source of oxygen for the earth. It is the "lungs of the world" and "nature's sponge," producing more oxygen than any other area. It is also a storehouse of greenhouse gases. The Pantanal is changing rapidly, however, due to industrial development. If the Amazon region, which provides such a large amount of oxygen for the earth, is destroyed, the future of humanity will be dismal.

Some thirty-six hundred species of fish live in the Pantanal. One is a gold-colored fish called the dorado, which usually weighs more than forty pounds. When a dorado first took my hook, it felt like my body was being sucked into the river. As I was reeling in the line with all my strength, it jumped out of the water several times. After several jumps it still had plenty of strength left to fight. It was so strong it seemed more like a bear or a tiger than a fish.

The lakes in the Pantanal are always clean. No matter what is put into the water, it quickly becomes clean again. The water is cleansed quickly because there are so many different species of fish living there. Each species feeds on something different. Living together in a complex

system, they devour anything that dirties the water. Their act of feeding has the function of keeping the water pure. Fish are very different from human beings. The fish don't live for their own sake. They live to clean their environment and make it better.

The back of a water hyacinth's leaf in the Pantanal wetlands is black with bugs. If the bugs were to remain there, the hyacinth would not be able to live, but there are fish that eat those bugs off the leaves. So the bugs live, the hyacinth lives, and the fish live. This is what nature is like. No creature lives for itself. Instead, they live for each other. Nature teaches us this tremendous lesson.

No matter how many fish there are in the Pantanal, if people are given the freedom to fish there, the population is bound to decrease. To protect the fish we need to develop fish farms. Because the fish in the Pantanal are so precious, we need to develop many fish farms. Similar facilities to protect insects, birds, and mammals are also needed. Raising insects will help increase the bird population. The Pantanal provides a perfect environment for all these creatures, and by focusing on how to increase their population humankind can continue to enjoy them for centuries to come.

It is not just fish that are plentiful in the Pantanal. The riverbanks have pineapples, banana trees, and mango trees. Rice grows so well there that it is possible to have three harvests a year, even without irrigated fields. That's how rich the soil is. Crops such as beans and corn can be grown just by spreading the seeds over the ground. Very little human labor is needed.

Once while traveling down the Paraguay River on a boat, we stopped at a house sitting near the bank. The farmer who lived there realized that we were hungry, so he went into his field and dug up a sweet potato. It was the size of a watermelon! He told us that as long as he leaves the root in the

ground it will continue to produce potatoes for several years. To think that potatoes can be harvested without annual planting left me with a strong desire to take them to countries where food is lacking.

People who advocate developing wetlands stress the economic benefits of such development. The Pantanal, however, provides plenty of economic benefit just as a wetland. The area has virgin forests of ebony pine, and the wood is hard with high density. Natives claim that a person could drive a spike into one of these trees and it would still live more than a hundred years. These trees are used to produce ebony, which does not rot and is said to last longer than iron. These trees are so large that a man cannot put his arms around them. Imagine what it looks like to have forests filled with such precious trees. I had some seedlings of these trees planted on four hundred hectares of land in the Pantanal. The trees our members planted have made the Pantanal even more beautiful.

It is human selfishness that is destroying nature. Human competition for the shortest route to economic success is the reason that the earth's environment has been damaged. We cannot allow the earth to be damaged any further. Religious people must lead the way in the effort to save nature. Nature is God's creation and His gift to humankind. We must work quickly to awaken people to the preciousness of nature and the urgent need to restore it to the rich and free state it enjoyed at the time of Creation.

Because it has become widely known that the Pantanal is a treasure trove, a struggle over its future has begun. The place that we should be protecting is about to become a battlefield for greedy humans. For the past ten years, I have been taking leaders from countries around the world to the Pantanal and sponsoring discussions on how to protect

this region and the rest of the world's environment. I am gathering the world's environmental experts and scholars in order to encourage them to take an interest in preserving the Pantanal. I am working to stop the Pantanal from being destroyed by the merciless material desires of human beings.

As the environmental issues grow more serious, many environmental groups have sprung up. The best environmental movement, however, is the one that spreads love. People take care of things that belong to people they love. They do not, however, take care of or love the natural environment that God created. God gave this environment to humanity. It was His will that we use the environment to obtain food, to have it in abundance, and to experience the joy of living in the beauty of nature. Nature is not something to be used once and thrown away. Our descendants for many generations to come must be able to rely on it just as we have.

The shortcut to protecting nature is to develop a heart that loves nature. We must be able to shed a tear at the sight of even a blade of grass that we see as we walk along the road. We must be able to grab hold of a tree and weep. We must understand that God's breath is hidden inside a single boulder or a single gust of wind. To care for and love the environment is to love God. We must be able to see each creature created by God as an object of our love. With our spiritual eyes opened we could see that a single dandelion by the roadside is more valuable than the gold crowns of kings.

Solution to Poverty and Hunger

If you are never hungry, you cannot know God. The times when you are hungry are opportunities to be nearest to God. When you are hungry and are able to look humbly at each approaching person as if he were a close family member who wants to help him, then you are more likely to be fed. In such situations, it is important to maintain a sympathetic heart of goodness.

Hunger is not an issue relegated to less-developed areas of the world. Even in the United States, which enjoys one of the highest standards of living in the world, there are people who are undernourished and hungry. When I went to the United States, one of my first projects was to purchase trucks to be used for the distribution of food to the poor.

The situation in impoverished countries is unspeakably worse. When I look at the world situation, I feel that securing sufficient food supplies is the most pressing problem. Solving the food crisis cannot be put off for even a moment. Even now, some twenty thousand people around the world die of hunger-related causes every day. We cannot afford to be apathetic just because we and our immediate families are not facing hunger.

Simply distributing food supplies by itself will not resolve hunger, though. A more fundamental approach to the problem is needed. I

am considering two fundamental and concrete methods. The first is to provide ample supplies of food at low cost, and the second is to share technology that people can use to overcome hunger on their own.

The issue of food will present humankind with a very serious crisis in the future. We cannot build a world of peace without first resolving the food issue. Sufficient food supplies for all the world's population cannot be produced on the limited amount of land area that is currently available. We must look to the oceans for a solution. The oceans hold the key to solving the food crisis of the future. This is the reason I have been pioneering the oceans for the past several decades.

In Alaska, pollack smaller than fifteen inches long are used for fertilizer. They would make wonderful food, but people don't know how to prepare them so they use them just for fertilizer. As recently as twenty or thirty years ago, we could ask Westerners to give us the tail of an ox and they would let us have it for free. Koreans are very fond of food prepared with the bones or the intestines of cows, but some Westerners do not know that these are edible.

The same is true with fish. About 20 percent of the world's fish catch is thrown out. Whenever I see this, I think of the people who are dying of hunger, and I feel pain. Fish is a much more reliable source of protein than beef. How wonderful it would be if we made fish cakes or fish sausages to give to people in impoverished lands!

Once this thought came to me, I started projects to process and store large volumes of fish. It does not do any good to catch large amounts of fish if you cannot handle them properly after the catch. Even the best fish cannot be kept well for more than eight months. Even if they are frozen and placed in refrigeration, air gets in through cracks in the ice, and water escapes. You could pour water on the fish and freeze them

again, but by then the best flavor is already gone and the fish might as well be thrown out.

We gathered fish that were being thrown out and researched how to turn it into fish powder. We sought to do something that even advanced countries like France and Germany have not done. Fish turned into powder could be transported and stored easily, even in hot and humid climates. Fish powder is 98-percent protein, among the very highest protein content of all food products. For this reason it can be used to save people from dying of hunger. Fish powder could also be used to make bread. We are still searching for ways to make it available to impoverished countries around the world.

The oceans contain limitless food supplies, but the best method for saving humanity from the food crisis is fish farming. I foresee that there will be buildings, similar to the skyscrapers we see in our cities today, devoted to fish farming. By using water pipe systems, we can farm fish in tall buildings or even on the tops of mountains. With fish farming we can produce more than enough food to feed all the world's people.

The ocean is a blessing bequeathed to us by God. When I go out on the ocean, I am completely absorbed in fishing. I have caught all kinds of fish in different countries. One reason I fish is so I can teach people who don't know how to fish. In South America I spent several months showing local people my fishing methods. I took in tangled fishnets myself and spent three or four hours showing them how to untangle them.

To secure adequate supplies of food at a low cost, humankind will need to develop the ocean. This and the great grasslands that are still in their prehistoric state are our final storehouses of wealth. This task, though, will not be easy. It will require us to go to places that are so hot and humid that moving around and working hard with a strong

sense of dedication become very difficult. Developing the grasslands in tropical regions cannot be done without a love for humankind that is passionate and dedicated.

Jardim, in Brazil, is just such a place. It is a quite difficult place to live. The weather is hot, and bugs that have not even been named yet are continuously biting. I lived in that place and made friends with all its various creatures. I walked around barefooted, feeling the red soil of Jardim beneath my feet, looking just like a peasant farmer. When I was at the river catching fish, I looked like the local fishermen. It is only when the local people look at you and say, "You really are a farmer," or "You really are a fisherman," that you are qualified to receive their knowledge and share your own knowledge with them. It is not something that can be done by someone who needs to sleep eight hours a night in a clean and comfortable bed, eat three square meals a day, and take naps under a shady tree.

When we were developing a project in Paraguay, a group of our members and I were living in a small hut in Olimpo. There was only one toilet, and each morning we had to take turns using it. I would get up each morning at three o'clock, do some exercises, and then go fishing. Because of this, the members who were with me went through some very difficult times. It was usual for them to be cutting bait early in the morning before they were completely awake.

When we took the boat out, we had to cross through a number of other properties in order to reach the mooring site. Unlocking the gates to these properties in pitch darkness was difficult. One morning when the members were fumbling with a lock, unable to open it, I yelled at them, "What are you doing?!" I shouted so loudly and fiercely that I surprised even myself, so I am sure it must have been difficult for them.

But I feel that I cannot afford to waste so much as a single second. I don't have any time to be idly standing around. I can clearly see a list of all the things I must accomplish before there can be a world of peace, so my heart is always in a hurry.

When I fished there on the river before dawn, the mosquitoes would swarm like a dark cloud. Their stingers were so sharp they would pierce right through a pair of jeans. In the predawn darkness we could not see the floats on our fishing lines, so we had to attach white plastic bags to them. I could not wait for the sun to come up. I was in too much of a hurry.

I still miss Jardim. I miss everything about it. When I close my eyes, I can still feel the heat of the Jardim air pressing against my face. The minor inconveniences to my body were nothing. Bodily suffering passes quickly. What is important is that this place can one day play a significant role in serving the world. Being in Jardim brought great happiness to my heart.

More Than Giving Bread, Teaching How to Make Bread

To solve the problem of hunger we must have a heart that is willing to plant seeds. Seeds are planted and wait unseen under the soil until they are able to germinate and break through their outer cover. Similarly, it is better to teach a person how to plant and harvest wheat and then turn it into bread than it is to give a piece of bread to a person who is about to die. The former may be more difficult and not result in as much public recognition, but it is the only way to arrive at a fundamental and sustainable solution to world hunger. We need to begin now to study the climate, the soil, and the character of the people in areas that suffer from hunger.

In Africa, there is a species of tree called manchuka. The people in Congo feed the leaves of this tree, which are high in nutrition, to their cattle to fatten them up before taking them to market. They also pound the leaves of this tree on a stone mill, add some oil, and fry them in batter. It may be a good idea to plant many manchuka trees and make powder out of the entire tree after throwing out the root, which is poisonous. The powder can be used to make bread. Also, Jerusalem artichokes, which resemble sweet potatoes, grow very quickly once they are planted

in the soil. The amount that can be harvested is three times greater than that of other famine relief crops. Planting a lot of Jerusalem artichokes is another way to contribute to resolving the hunger problem.

In Jardim, a large earthworm is used in farming, and this makes the soil quite fertile. This earthworm exists only in Campana, but perhaps we can study its ecology and use it to help agriculture in other areas. Koreans are working in the Mato Grosso region to study silkworms. If the cultivation of silkworms is successful there, it will be possible to make silk cheaply and sell it to buy food.

There is no quick fix to the problem of world hunger. People in each country have different tastes for food and different customs, and the plants and animals are different. The important point is concern for our neighbors. We first need to develop the heart that, when we are eating enough to fill our own stomachs, we think of others who are going hungry and consider how we can help them. True peace will not come as long as humanity does not solve the problem of hunger. If the person next to me is about to die of hunger, peace is a mere luxury.

It is as important to teach the skills needed to become self-sufficient in producing food as it is to distribute food directly to those in need. To teach such skills, we need to build schools in remote areas to combat illiteracy. Technical schools will need to be established in order to give people the ability to support themselves. The Westerners who conquered Africa and South America did not provide technology to the people who were already there. They only used the people as laborers as they sought to dig up and take away the resources that were buried in the ground. They did not teach the people how to farm or how to operate a factory. This was not right. Our church has, from the early stage of our foreign mission work, established schools in places such as

Zaire for teaching agriculture and industrial technology.

Another problem faced by people suffering from hunger is that they cannot afford proper medical treatment when they become ill. On the other side of the world, developed countries are seeing an overuse of drugs, but people who are hungry often die because they cannot afford simple medicine for diarrhea or a cold. Therefore, as we work to eradicate hunger we must also provide medical support. We must establish clinics and care for those who suffer from chronic illness.

I created New Hope Farms in Brazil's Jardim region as a model to show how humanity can live together in peace. We tilled a wide expanse of land to make farmland, and there is a cattle ranch in the higher elevations. New Hope Farms is in Brazil, but it does not belong only to the people of Brazil. Anyone who is hungry can go to New Hope Farms, work, and be fed. Some two thousand people from all races and from all over the world can always eat and sleep there. We will establish schools all the way from elementary school to university. People will be taught how to farm and how to raise cattle. We will also teach how to plant and raise trees and how to catch, process, and sell fish. We do not have only a farm. We use the numerous lakes in the vicinity of the river to create fish farms and fishing grounds.

Paraguay's Chaco region occupies 60 percent of that country's territory, but it has been a neglected land. The Chaco region was formed when the sea rose to cover the land, and even now you get salty water gushing up when you dig into the ground. I was in my seventies when I first went to Paraguay. The lives of the people living in this long-neglected land were impoverished beyond words. It caused me great pain in my heart to see them. I sincerely wanted to help them, but they were not prepared to accept me, a person of a different skin color who

spoke a different language. I did not give up, however.

I traveled the Paraguay River for three months, eating and sleeping with people from the area. At more than seventy years of age, I was taking on a task that people said was impossible. I taught the people I met what I know about fishing, and they taught me their language. We were on the boat like this together for three months and became friends.

Once they began to open their hearts, I talked to them again and again about why the world must become one. At first their reaction was indifferent. Year by year, though, the people of Chaco began to change. After ten years, they changed so much that they held a global peace festival with great enthusiasm.

Resolving the food situation does not mean that peace will follow immediately. After the hunger issue has been resolved, it is important to carry out educational programs on peace and love. I have built many schools in places such as Jardim and Chaco. At first people didn't send their children to school but instead had them help raise their cattle. We worked hard to convince them that the children and young people needed an education. As a result, we now have many students. We built a light industrial factory where they could produce items using simple technologies, and the students became more interested in attending school so they could work in the factory.

We are all responsible for the people around the world who die of hunger. We need to take action to help them. We need to feel a clear sense of responsibility and find a way that they can be fed and saved. People who live well should come down to a slightly lower position and raise up those who live poorly, to bring about a world where all people live well.

CHAPTER EIGHT

MESSAGE FOR THE YOUNG PEOPLE

Find Your Purpose, Change Your Life

When we meet someone new, we are always curious about who he or she is. God has the same curiosity about each human being. He is especially curious about young people, and it brings Him great joy when He gets to know them intimately. Why is this? It is because our youth is the most important and most beautiful period of our lives. This period should be a time of tranquility as one prepares for the future. The process of growing to maturity is a building block that opens the way to a new era.

It is difficult to find young people today who are passionate about their lives. We find so many young people who, with no goal or purpose for their life, are just wandering around. All great leaders in history had a definite sense of purpose in life from the time they were children. From childhood they nurtured that purpose held within their hearts and exerted great energy to achieve it. Whether they were sleeping or playing with their friends, every youthful action of these great leaders was geared toward preparing for the stage that they would stand on in the future. Is that how you are living your life?

We were all created to be great men and women. God did not send us into this world without purpose. When God created us He invested

His complete love into each person. So we were all created for greatness. Because God exists, we can accomplish anything.

I became a completely different person when I began to love God. I loved humanity more than myself and was more concerned with the problems of others than the problems of my family. I loved everything that God created. I deeply loved the trees on the hills and the fish in the waters. My spiritual senses developed so I could discern God's handiwork in all things of creation.

As I was changing my heart to conform to God's love, I also strengthened my body so that I could fulfill my mission. I wanted to be ready to go anywhere, anytime that God called on me. I played soccer and did boxing, some traditional Korean martial arts, and wonhwado, a form of martial arts that I developed. In wonhwado the athlete moves his body in a smooth circular motion, almost as in a dance. It is based on the principle that greater power comes from circular motion than moving in a straight line.

Even now I begin each day with stretching exercises for my muscles and joints and a breathing exercise that I developed. Sometimes when I am traveling around the world on speaking tours, I may not have time for these exercises in the morning. Still I will find the time, sometimes while sitting on the toilet. I never miss a day of exercise. When I was young, thirty minutes a day was plenty, but now that I am older I have increased it to an hour a day.

In 2008 I was involved in a helicopter crash. The helicopter was suddenly surrounded by black rain clouds and in an instant crashed onto a mountainside. The helicopter rolled over, and I was left hanging upside down by my seatbelt. Instinctively I tightly grabbed the arm rests on both sides of my seat. If I had not been so diligent in my exercises, I

think I would have broken my hip the instant that I was suspended upside down. The body is the container to hold a healthy spirit. It is important for us to be diligent about training our bodies.

Few students go to school because they like to study. They usually go because their parents tell them to, not because they look forward to studying. As students continue to study, however, they gradually learn to enjoy it. From that point they will start to study on their own and find their own path. This self-developed interest in learning is a sign of maturity.

Parents cannot wait until their children mature enough to study on their own. They tell them, "You have to study. Please make up your mind to study," and put pressure on them. Parents do this because they know that children need to study in order to prepare for the future. They worry that if their children don't study at the proper age level, they will face the future unprepared.

There is, however, something more important than studying to prepare for the future. Before unconditionally focusing entirely on studies, young people must realize what they want to do in life. They must make a determination to use their talents to help the world rather than just serve themselves. Many young people today seem to be studying just for its own sake. Unless you have a purpose in life, your studies will lack the passion needed for happiness.

Once I came across a Korean student working hard on his English schoolwork. I asked him, "Why are you working so hard to learn English?"

He answered, "To get into a university."

What could be more foolish? Getting into a university is not a purpose. A university is a place to go to study particular subjects in the course of pursuing a larger objective. It cannot be the objective itself.

Also, do not define your life goal in terms of how much money you want to make. I have never received a salary, but I managed to eat and stay alive. Money is a means to do something, not the goal. Before you make money, have a plan for spending it. Money gained without a prior objective will soon be wasted.

Your choice of occupation should not be based on just your talents and interests. Whether you become a fire fighter, a farmer, or a soccer player is up to you. But what I am referring to transcends your occupation. What kind of life will you lead as a soccer player? How will you live as a farmer? What is your objective in life?

To set your objective is to give meaning to the life you will lead. If you are going to be a farmer, then you should set your objective to test new agricultural methods, develop better species of crops, and help eradicate world hunger. If you are going to be a soccer player, then set a meaningful objective such as to heighten your country's image in the world or to establish soccer camps that will nurture the dreams of economically deprived children.

To become a world-class soccer player takes incredible work. If you do not have a definite purpose in your heart, you will not be able to endure the difficult training required to reach the top. Only if you have an objective will you have the power to maintain your course and live a life that is a cut above those around you.

Embrace the World

Setting a goal in life is similar to planting a tree. If you plant a jujube tree in the front yard of your home, you will have jujubes in your home. If you plant apple trees on the hill behind your home, then they will produce apples. Think carefully about your choice of goals and where you intend to plant them. Depending on the goal you choose and where you plant it, you can become a jujube tree in Seoul or an apple tree in Africa. Or you can become a palm tree in the South Pacific. The goal you plant will bear fruit in the future. Think carefully where the best place is to plant your goal so that it will bear the best fruit.

When you are setting your goal, be sure to consider the entire world. Consider Africa, which continues to suffer from poverty and disease. Consider Israel and Palestine, where people continue to aim their weapons at each other and fight over matters of religion. Consider Afghanistan, where people barely keep themselves alive by raising poppy plants used to make harmful drugs. Consider the United States, which has thrown the world's economy into a pit with its extreme greed and selfishness. Consider Indonesia, which suffers from continued earthquakes and tidal waves. Imagine yourself in the context of those

countries, and think which country and which situation would be most appropriate for you. It may be that you are best suited to India, where a new religious conflict may erupt. Or it could be Rwanda, which languishes in drought and hunger.

In setting a goal, students shouldn't be so foolish as to decide that because a country is small, like Korea, it isn't worthy of your goals. Depending on what you do, there is no limit to how large a small country can become. Its national boundaries could even disappear. Whether you do good work on the large continent of Africa or in the small country of Korea, your goal should not be restricted by size. Your goals should be about where your talents can have the most impact. So you should think of the world as your stage as you decide what you want to do in life. If you do, you will likely find many more things to do than what you were originally dreaming about. You have only one life to live, so use it to do something that the world needs. You cannot reach the hidden treasure on an island without adventure. Please think beyond your own country, and think of the world as your stage in setting your goal.

During the 1980s, I sent many Korean university students to Japan and the United States. I wanted them to leave Korea, where teargas canisters were exploding almost daily, and let them see a wider world with greater variety. The frog that lives at the bottom of a well does not realize that there is a bigger world outside the well.

I was thinking globally before that word even entered the Korean language. The reason I went to Japan to study was to see a wider world. The reason I planned to work for the Manchuria Electric Company in Hailar, China, and learn the Chinese, Russian, and Mongolian languages, even before Korea was liberated, was to enable me to live as a global citizen. Even now I travel by plane to many places in the world.

If I were to visit a different country every day, it would take more than six months to visit all of them. People live in many countries, and they all live in different circumstances. There are places where there is no water to cook rice with, while other places have too much water. Some places have no electricity, while some countries are not able to consume all the electricity that they produce. There are many examples of how something is lacking in one place but overabundant in another. The problem is there are not enough people focused on equalizing the distribution.

The same is true with raw materials. Some countries have an abundance of coal and iron ore stacked in piles. They don't even need to dig into the earth. All they need to do is shovel the coal and iron ore from piles that are easily accessed. Korea, however, has a critical shortage of coal and iron ore reserves. To dig out anthracite coal we need to risk our lives to go thousands of feet underground.

Likewise with technology. Africa has many places where bananas grow naturally in abundance, and they could keep people from starving. But there is a lack of technology and lack of access to productive land, so not enough banana plantations are created. Korea's climate is not suited for growing bananas, and yet we grow bananas. This technology in Korea could be very helpful in solving the problem of poverty in Africa. It is similar to the way that South Korean technology for planting corn has helped relieve starvation in North Korea.

The phrase global leader is now in vogue in Korea. People say they want to become fluent in English and become global leaders. Becoming a global leader, however, is not a matter of a person's fluency in English. The ability to communicate in English is nothing more than a tool. A true global leader is someone who is able to embrace the world in his

own bosom. A person who has no interest in the problems of the world cannot become a global leader, no matter how well he might communicate in English.

To be a global leader a person must think of the world's problems as his own and have the pioneering spirit that is needed for finding difficult solutions. A person who is attached to a secure and fixed income, or dreams of having a pension after retirement and a comfortable family life, cannot be a global leader. To become a global leader a person must consider the whole world to be his country and all humanity to be his brothers and sisters and not be overly concerned that he does not know what the future may hold for him.

What are siblings? Why did God give us siblings? Siblings symbolize human beings around the world. The experience of loving our brothers and sisters in the family teaches us how to love our fellow countrymen and love humanity. Our love for our own siblings expands in this way. The family whose members love each other is a model of how humanity can live together in harmony. Love among siblings means that one sibling is willing to go hungry, if necessary, so that his brother or sister can eat. A global leader is someone who loves humanity as he loves his own family.

It has been awhile since we first heard the phrase global village. Yet the earth has always been a single community. If a person's goal in life is to graduate from a university, get a job with a company that will pay him a high salary, and lead a secure life, then that person will have the success of a puppy. But if he dedicates his life to helping refugees in Africa, he will have the success of a lion. The course that is chosen depends on the heart of the individual.

Even at the age of ninety, I continue to travel around the world. I refuse to rest from my mission. The world is like a living organism in that it is always changing. New problems are always arising. I go to the dark corners of the world where these problems exist. These are not the places with beautiful views or comfortable amenities, but I feel happy in places that are dark, difficult, and lonely because that is where I'm fulfilling my mission, my purpose, my goals.

My hope is that Korea will produce global leaders in the true sense. I hope to see more political leaders who will lead the United Nations to fulfill its purpose and more diplomatic leaders who will stop the fighting in areas of conflict. I hope to see someone like Mother Teresa who will take care of those wandering and dying on the streets. I hope to see peace leaders who will take on my mission of pioneering new solutions from the land and sea.

The starting point is to have a dream and a goal. Please have an adventurous and pioneering spirit. Dream dreams that others dare not imagine. Set goals for yourselves that have meaning, and become global leaders who will bring benefit to humankind.

Everything We Have Is Borrowed from Heaven

People say I am one of the richest people in the world, but they don't know what they are talking about. I have worked hard all my life, but I don't own so much as a single house in my name. Neither have I placed property in my wife's name or in the names of my children so as to conceal its true ownership. Every adult Korean has his official stamp that he registers with the government and uses to sign legal documents. I don't have such a stamp.

You may wonder, then, what benefit I have received from working hard and not eating or sleeping while others ate and slept. I didn't work so I could be rich. Money has no meaning to me. Any money not used for the sake of humanity, or for the sake of my neighbor who is dying in poverty, is nothing more than a piece of paper. Money earned through hard work should always be used to love the world and carry out projects that benefit the world.

When I send missionaries overseas, I don't give them a lot of money. Yet they survive wherever they go. It takes very little for us to support ourselves. If we have a sleeping bag, that is enough for us to sleep anywhere. What is important is not how we live but the kind of life we

lead. Material affluence is not a condition for happiness. It is sad to me that the phrase to live well has come to be defined in terms of material affluence. To live well means to live a life that has meaning.

I wear a necktie only for worship services or special events. I don't wear a suit often, either. I generally wear a sweater when I am at home. I sometimes imagine how much money is spent on neckties in Western societies. Necktie pins, dress shirts, and cuff links are very expensive. If everyone stopped buying neckties and used the money instead for the sake of our neighbors who suffer from hunger, the world would be a little bit better place to live. Expensive things are not necessarily the best to have. Imagine what it would be like if the building were on fire. Who would be the first to get out: Me in my sweater or some guy in a tie? I'm always ready to run outside.

Some people might think I take conservation to extremes. I'm not in favor of taking a bath every day. Once every three days is enough. I also don't wash my socks every day. In the evening, I take off my socks and put them in my back pocket so that I can wear them again the next day. When I am in a hotel, I use only the smallest of the towels that are hanging in the bathroom. I flush the toilet only after I have urinated in it three times. I use only a single square of toilet paper, after folding it in half three times. I don't care if you call me uncivilized or barbaric for this. The same desire to conserve is true at mealtime. I have no interest in elaborate meals. There may be all sorts of exotic foods and different types of desserts in front of me, but I am not interested in those. I don't fill my rice bowl completely. It's enough if it is three-fifths full.

The shoes I prefer most in Korea cost 49,000 won (about $40) at a large discount store. The pants I wear every day are well over five years old. The meal I enjoy the most in America is McDonald's. Some people

call it junk food and don't eat it, but I like eating at McDonald's for two reasons. It's cheap, and it saves time. When I take the children out to eat, we often go to McDonald's. I don't know how it came to be known that I often go to McDonald's, but now the chairman of the McDonald's Corporation sends me a New Year's greeting card every year.

The message that I give to our members every year is "Spend money carefully, and conserve on everything." I tell them they should drink water instead of buying ice cream or soft drinks. I don't tell them this so they can save money and become rich. I want them to have a consciousness of conserving in order to help the country and save humanity. We don't take anything with us when we leave this world. Everyone knows this, and yet for some reason people are desperate to get their hands on as many things as possible. I plan to give away everything I have built up during my life before leaving this world. The Heavenly Kingdom has plenty of treasure, and there is no need to take anything there from this world. When we understand that we are going to a place that is better than where we are now, there is no need to become attached to the things of this world.

There is a song that I have always liked to sing. It's an old popular song that many Koreans know. Every time I sing this song it sets my heart at ease and tears come to my eyes. It reminds me of my boyhood when I used to lie in the fields near home.

You may say you will give me a crown with platinum and jewels,
But a shirt smelling of dirt and dripping with sweat is worth more.
A pure heart wells up within my bosom,
I can make a flute out of willow leaves,
And the sparrows sing along with my tune.

You may say you will give me enough gold to buy the world,
But an ox that will till the soil in a barley field is worth more.
The buds of hope sprout in my bosom,
I can talk freely with the rabbits,
And the days go by as I play my tune.

Happiness is always waiting for us. The reason we can't get happiness is that our own desires block the way. As long as our eyes are fixed on our desires, they cannot see the path we should follow. We are so busy trying to pick up the scraps of gold lying on the ground near us that we do not see the huge pile of gold that is a little way up the road. We are so busy stuffing things into our pockets that we don't realize that there are holes in those pockets. I have not forgotten what it was like to live in Heungnam Prison. Even the most terrible place in this world is more comfortable and more materially abundant than Heungnam Prison. Every object belongs to Heaven. We are only its stewards.

Happiness Is a Life Lived for Others

Children are born from the flesh and blood of their parents. Without parents there would be no children. Yet people in this world shout out for individualism as though they came into this world on their own. Only a person who receives no help whatsoever from anyone at all would have the right to speak of individualism. There is nothing in this world that comes into being for its own sake alone. All created beings are created for one another. I exist for you, and you exist for me.

There is no one as foolish as the selfish person who lives only for his or her own sake. It may appear that a selfish life benefits the individual, but ultimately it is a life of self-destruction. The individual must live for the family, the family for the people, the people for the world, and the world for God.

All the schools I have founded have three mottos. The first is "Live a life that casts no shadows, as if you were under the sun at high noon." A life without shadows is a life with a clear conscience. When we finish our life here on earth and go to the spirit world, our entire life will unfold before us, as though it were being played back on videotape. Whether we go to heaven or to hell is determined by

how we live. So we need to live spotlessly clean lives, casting not even the smallest shadow.

The second motto is "Live shedding sweat for earth, tears for humanity, and blood for heaven." There are no lies in the blood, sweat, and tears that people shed. There is only truth. There is no meaning, however, in the blood, sweat, and tears that a person sheds for his own sake. This great investment must be shed for the sake of others.

The final motto is "One Family under God!" There is only one God, and all human beings are brothers and sisters. Differences of language, race, and culture account for only 0.1 percent. As human beings, we are 99.9 percent the same.

There are fourteen island countries in the South Pacific. When I visited the Marshall Islands, I asked its president, "This is a beautiful land, but it must still be difficult to lead this country, isn't it?" The president sighed and replied, "Our population is just sixty thousand, and the land is just two meters (78 inches) above sea level on average. So a wave just one meter (39 inches) high can flood much of the country. Our most serious problem, though, is education. Children of rich families go to America or Europe to be educated and do not return. Children of poor families have no schools from which to receive a good education, so even the brightest child cannot be trained properly for leadership. The concern for an island country such as ours is that we are unable to raise up leaders who will lead us in the future."

After hearing his lament, I established the High School of the Pacific, in Kona, Hawaii, for the sake of the children of these island countries. This school provides secondary education to children from countries throughout the Pacific and helps them apply to college. We provide round-trip airfare to Hawaii, tuition, board, and even computers so

that they can receive the best education. We attach just one condition to receive this education: Once they finish, they must return to their countries and work in the service of their nation and its people. Living for the sake of others requires sacrifices from time to time. Some years ago one of our church missionaries was touring South America when the place he was visiting was hit by a major earthquake. His wife came running to me with her face as white as a sheet.

"What should I do?" she asked with tears in her eyes. "I'm so worried, I don't know what to do."

You might be surprised by my response. Instead of patting her on the shoulder and comforting her, I shouted at her, "Are you worried about your husband, or are you worried about how many lives he may be able to save in that disaster area?"

It was natural for her to be concerned for her husband's safety. But because she was the wife of a missionary, her concerns should have been of a higher order. Rather than pray for her husband's safety, she should have prayed that her husband could save as many lives as possible.

Nothing exists for its own sake. That is not how God created the world. Man exists for the sake of woman, and woman exists for the sake of man. Nature exists for the sake of humanity, and humanity exists for the sake of nature. All created beings in this world exist for the sake of their counterparts. It is an axiom of Heaven that every being lives for the sake of its partner.

Happiness is possible only in a relationship with a partner. Imagine that some fellow who has lived his life as a singer goes to an uninhabited island and sings as loudly as possible. If there is no one there to hear him, he will not be happy. To realize that we exist for the sake of others is the great achievement that changes our lives. When we realize that

our life is not ours alone but is meant to be for the sake of the other, we begin to follow a path different from the one we were on.

Just as singing to yourself will not make you happy, there is no joy without a partner. Even the smallest and most trivial thing can bring you happiness when you do it for another.

Dreaming of a Peaceful World

For years I have called for a world where all religions live together as one, all races live as one, and all nations exist as one. For thousands of years history has seen the continuous increase of divisions. Each time a different religion was adopted or a new regime came into power, more boundaries were drawn and wars were fought. Now, however, we live in an age of globalism. For the sake of the future we must become one.

One way I propose to facilitate that is through the International Peace Highway, a huge undertaking. It will link Korea and Japan by an undersea tunnel and create a bridge across the Bering Strait that separates Russia and North America. These great links can unify the world. When the highway is completed it will be possible to travel by car from Africa's Cape of Good Hope to Santiago, Chile, and from London to New York. There will be no roadblocks; the entire world will be interconnected as if by capillary vessels.

The world will become one integrated community, and everyone will be able to travel freely across international borders. Borders that give

free passage to anyone will lose their significance as borders. Something similar will be true for religion. As the frequency of exchanges among religions increases, greater mutual understanding will arise, conflict will disappear, and the walls of separation will crumble. When different types of people live together in a single global community, barriers between races will come down. Interaction between races will occur despite differences in appearance and language. This cultural revolution will bring the world into one.

The Silk Road was not simply a trade route that people used in order to sell silk and buy spices. It was also a vehicle for the peoples of the East and West to meet and for Buddhism, Islam, and Christianity to meet. These different cultures intermingled and gave rise to a new culture. The International Peace Highway will play a similar role in the twenty-first century.

Rome could thrive because all roads led to Rome. This illustrates the importance of roads. When a road is built, people use it to travel. It is used to transport culture and ideology. That is why when a road is built it changes the course of history. When the International Peace Highway is completed, the world can be physically bound together as one. The road will make this possible. I cannot overemphasize the importance of bringing the world together. Some may think that this is an idea ahead of its time. Religious people, however, foresee the future and prepare for it. So it is only natural that we are ahead of our time. The world may not understand us and may cause us to suffer, but religious believers must persevere to lead the way to the future.

Completing the International Peace Highway will require the cooperation of many nations. China, which was a victim of Japanese aggression, may not welcome the idea of being connected to Japan by

a highway. Japan and Korea, however, cannot connect to the rest of the world without going through China, so we need to make efforts to win China's trust. Who will do this? Those of us who will take spiritual ownership over the International Peace Highway in the twenty-first century need to take the lead in this effort.

How about bridging the Bering Strait? It will cost a great deal, but this should not cause concern. The amount of money that the United States has spent in Iraq would be more than enough to build such a bridge. We must stop waging war and forcing people to suffer. It is perverse to start wars and squander hundreds of billions of dollars. The time has come for us to beat our swords into plowshares and our spears into pruning hooks.

The International Peace Highway is a project to bring the world together as one. To become one means more than simply connecting continents by tunnels and bridges. It refers to an equalization of the world's standards of living. When someone monopolizes a technology and keeps the profit for himself, the balance of the world is upset. The International Peace Highway will rearrange the current inequality by creating access to existing natural and human resources. This will bring about a leveling of wealth. Leveling means that a little is taken off places that are high and added to places that are low. As a result, the two have the same height. This will require sacrifice from those with greater material possessions or knowledge. Building a world of peace cannot be done with one-time charitable acts or donations. Only sincere love and continuous sacrifice is capable of creating a world of peace. We must be willing to offer everything.

Building the International Peace Highway does more than just provide the world with a physical means of communication. Human beings

are created so that their mind and body become one. Something similar is true for the world we live in. The world can be completely unified only when there is both physical communication and communication of heart.

The United Nations has done much for world peace. More than sixty years after its founding, however, the United Nations is losing sight of its original purpose and is now an organization that works for the interests of a few powerful countries. The U.N. was created to solve the conflicts that arise in the world, so it must put the world's interests before the interests of one side or the other. It only leads to further conflict when a powerful country insists on its own way and uses force to pursue it. Unfortunately, the U.N. today is unable to do much about such situations.

In this light, I have proposed a restructuring of the United Nations as a bicameral institution. In addition to the General Assembly there would be a religious, or cultural, assembly or council. This body would consist of respected spiritual leaders in fields such as religion, culture, and education. The members of this interreligious assembly would need to demonstrate an ability to transcend the limited interests of particular religions and cultures and to speak for the spiritual and moral purposes of all humanity. I maintain that the two chambers, working together in mutual respect and cooperation, will be able to make great advances in ushering in a world of peace.

Some may oppose this, saying, "Why should religious people become involved in world affairs?" My answer is that the world today is in a period when the participation of religious people is crucial. Those who have achieved deep self-awareness through religious practice are needed now more than ever. It is only truly religious people who can

stand up to the unrighteousness and evil of the world and practice true love. It is only when the knowledge and experience of political leaders are combined with the wisdom of interreligious leaders that the world will be able to find the path to true peace.

Again today I set out on my path with renewed determination to achieve that goal. My prayer is that every person on earth will be reborn as a peace-loving global citizen, transcending barriers of religion, ideology, and race.

PHOTOS FROM MY LIFE

The home in North Korea where I was born. It originally had a small wing on each end, but now, only the main building remains.

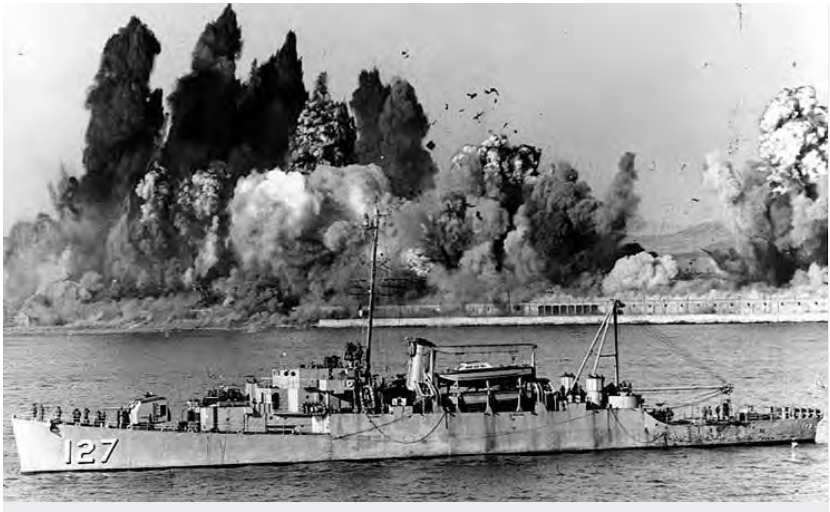
Early in the morning on Easter Sunday, April 17, 1935, Jesus came to me in prayer and gave me my heavenly mission. I was sixteen years old (by the Korean way of counting). I appreciate this 1982 painting, by Shigeyoshi Watanabe, which captures well the spirit of that moment.

Left: My grandfather Chi Guk Moon, who su
Center: My great-uncle Yoon Guk Moon, th
Right: A portrait of my mother, Kyung Gye Kim, painted in 1988, based on old photos.

Left: My student photo in 1941, the year I graduated from technical school, where I studied electrical engineering.
Right: Cooking rice with my cousin, Seung Ryong Moon *(second from left),* and friends in the late 1930s. I am on the right.

I taught Sunday School at the Myungsudae Jesus Church in Seoul in the early 1940s. I am standing in the back row (see *arrow*).

March 8, 1941. Commencement ceremony of the third graduating class of Kyeongsung School of Commerce and Technology. I am in the back row, fifth from the left *(see arrow)*.



This naval vessel participated in the bombardment of Heungnam, where I had been prisoner for nearly three years. U.N. forces, including future U.S. Army General Alexander Haig, liberated me from the prison camp with their shelling on October 14, 1950.

Above: The mud-walled hut that Won Pil Kim and I built in early 1951 out of ration cartons stood on a lonely hill by a cemetery in Busan. *Right:* I was greeted by our members after my release from Seodaemun Prison in Seoul on October 4, 1955. I was indicted for "draft evasion" even though I had been in a North Korean prison camp during the war. I was declared innocent after serving three months in jail.

Teaching members in our church in Cheongpa-Dong right after coming out of Seodaemun Prison.

November 1, 1958. I am standing with students from Ewha Womans University and Professor Won Bok Choi *(on the right)*, who were unjustly expelled for their faith.

Early spring 1959 in Yamok, Kyeonggi Province. I took the members to help plant rice. The farmers benefitted, and for us it was training.

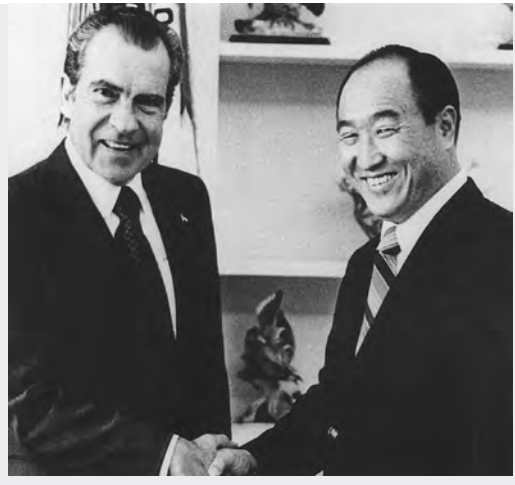
We often went outdoors in the Seoul area, where I would teach the members about God's Providence.

Left: On April 11, 1960, Hak Ja Han and I married. She and her mother, an early disciple, escaped from North Korea during the Korean War.
Right: A nice interlude with my wife on Cheongpyeong Lake.

Even this family portrait taken in Korea on January 1, 2009, doesn't include everyone. We have 14 children, living in different parts of the world, and an ever-growing number of grandchildren and great-grandchildren.

On May 1, 1966, the 12th anniversary of the founding of the Unification Church, I signed copies of the Korean-language second edition of my teachings, the *Divine Principle*. I am on the left.

In 1969, during my second world tour. The movement in Japan had grown enormously, and our meetings had to be held in large outdoor venues like this park in suburban Tokyo.



February 1, 1974, meeting President Richard Nixon at the White House at the height of the Watergate controversy. For the sake of a strong, unified America, I asked Americans and the media, through newspaper ads, to "Forgive, Love and Unite."

New York's Carnegie Hall on October 1, 1973, the first stop on a 21-city speaking tour of the United States that ended January 29, 1974.

More than 1.2 million people attended the World Freedom Rally in Seoul's Yoido Plaza on June 7, 1975.

Washington Monument on September 18, 1976. As part of our U.S. Bicentennial commemorations, I declared "God's Hope for America" before an estimated crowd of 300,000. *Inset:* My interpreter, Dr. Bo Hi Pak, stands on my left.

Dr. Morton Kaplan, conference chairman, offers the appreciation of the conferees at the conclusion of the 12th International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences (ICUS) in Chicago, November 24-27, 1983. I hosted a total of 21 annual ICUS conferences. ICUS focused on the relationship between science and absolute values.

My stay in Danbury Prison in Connecticut was from July 20, 1984, through August 20, 1985. I was accused of not paying $7,500 in taxes on interest income, despite investing millions for the moral renewal of the U.S. Here *(right)* I walk in the exercise yard with Takeru Kamiyama, one of my disciples.

My wife and I officiated at the October 14, 1982, Holy Marriage Blessing at Jamsil Gymnasium in Seoul. The Blessing and the pursuit of "World Peace Through Ideal Families" is the centerpiece of my ministry. Since 1960, and as of the beginning of 2010, I have given the Blessing to more than 4 million people in ceremonies conducted with live worldwide satellite links.

On December 22, 2003, Christians, Muslims, Jews, and other faith leaders of the Middle East Peace Initiative gather in front of the Dome of the Rock in Jerusalem. Hundreds of religious and social leaders have participated in over 40 pilgrimages to promote peace in the Holy Land.

I purchased this former Christian Brothers Catholic Seminary on the Hudson River in Upstate New York in 1975 to found the Unification Theological Seminary (UTS), open to all faiths. I chose a faculty consisting of scholars from each world religion.

Visiting our machine shop in Germany in 1989. I have long advocated that advanced technology should be shared among all nations to promote freedom and prosperity.

August 1998, fishing for king salmon in Kodiak, Alaska. I am fourth from the left, next to my wife. Church leaders are on either side.

On June 4, 2002, soccer great Pelé paid a courtesy visit to my residence in Hannam-Dong. Here my wife explains the World Peace Cup Soccer Tournament. I shared with Pelé the vision of promoting soccer as a way to build bridges of peace between nations.

On December 6, 1991, my wife and I traveled to Pyongyang, North Korea, at the invitation of President Kim Il Sung, and met with him in the Majeon Presidential Palace in Heungnam.

On March 24, 1994, I hosted President Mikhail and First Lady Raisa Gorbachev at the Summit Council for World Peace in Korea. I founded the Summit Council to convene former heads of state to deliberate on solutions to conflicts.

President Leonard Kravchuk of the Ukraine greeted me on October 20, 2005, during my 120-nation tour to inaugurate the Universal Peace Federation.

On December 1, 2005, my wife and I were welcomed by H.E. Gloria Macapagal Arroyo, president of the Philippines, at Malacañang Presidential Palace in Manila. I had been urging the U.N. to strengthen its commitment to interfaith cooperation and was gratified to see that, under her leadership, the Philippines government initiated resolutions. Then-Speaker Jose De Venecia has also encouraged me in my hope to see an interfaith deliberative body established in the U.N.

At the Manhattan Center in New York on September 23, 2007, I asked delegates from 194 nations to pledge to lay the foundation for a new "Abel" or "Peace" U.N., which seeks to fulfill the U.N.'s ideals with a structure that emphasizes living for the sake of others.

[Dr. Moon] has emerged as a great peacemaker and unifier on the world stage. He is a leading force for interreligious dialogue and understanding between people of all backgrounds, and for global peace and security.

Alexander Haig
Former U.S. Secretary of State and Former Supreme Allied Commander, NATO

We learn through Reverend Moon's autobiography that all of his activities originate from his sacrificial and earnest heart for the redemption of humankind and the liberation of God. This book contains the story of his great love for mankind and a powerful message of hope for the future.

H.E. Alfred Moisiu
Former President of Albania

Dr. Moon's call for peace through religion is something of great nuance and profundity. We are fortunate for the chance to observe his lifelong struggle for world peace.

Abdurrahman Wahid ("Gus Dur")
Former President of Indonesia

Dr. Moon's autobiography is a source of inspiration. He is driven by a powerful vision and overcomes obstacles fearlessly. From humble beginnings in a tiny village to becoming a global influence, he relentlessly pursues the cherished vision of a peaceful world, one human family.

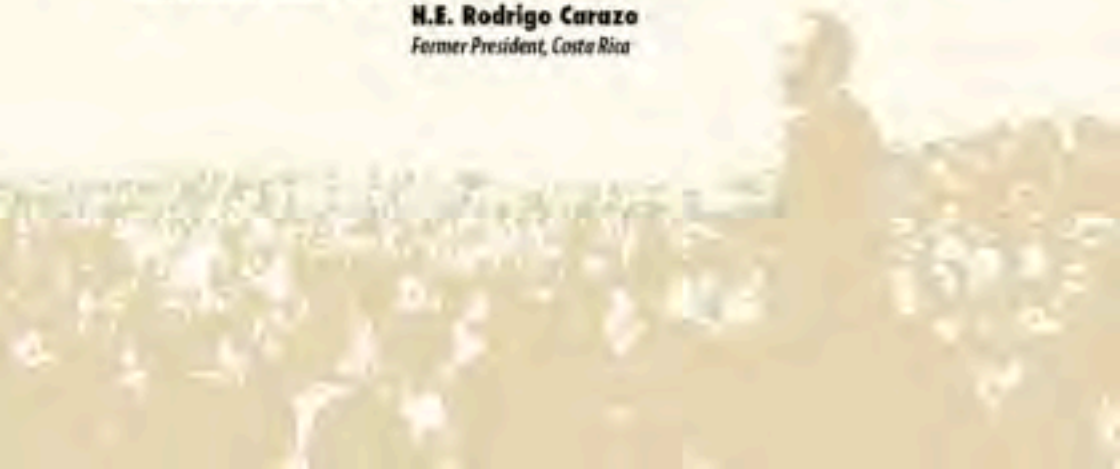
Dr. Eva Latham
President, Human Rights Teaching International, The Hague, Netherlands

Your peace principles have played a very important role in helping us to end the violence in Kenya. You are bringing hope for a brighter future to our nation, Africa, and the world.

Hon. Raila Odinga
Prime Minister of Kenya

Reverend Moon is a man of peace and above all a man of God. He preaches that we must place God at the center of our lives and all our endeavors. Only God we honor, and Him we must serve.

H.E. Rodrigo Carazo
Former President, Costa Rica



GOOD VALUES

ALSO BY JON QUINN

Divine Principle In Plain Language
The Basic Theology of Sun Myung Moon

12 Before 40
The Case for Large Families in the Unification Movement

GOOD VALUES

by Jon Quinn

Good Values by Jon Quinn

Creative Commons Copyright
January 2009 by Jon Quinn

http://creativecommons.org

PRINTING HISTORY

First Printing, March 30, 2018

ISBN-10:

ISBN-13:

Publisher: Principled Publications

You can read the entire text of this book and all my books at:

www.DivinePrinciple.com

See website for e-mail address

Printed in the United States of America

You can read the entire text of this book at my Website:

www.DivinePrinciple.com

I give permission for anyone to print this book and distribute it for free. This goes for every book and audio-visual I author. I do not permit or authorize anyone to sell my books or audio-visuals. Only my family has the right to sell my books and videos.

I encourage anyone to print and reproduce anything I author in its entirety (no deleting or editing or rewriting) and distribute worldwide in any number but without charge. I especially hope my works will be translated into every language and distributed widely all over the world. Translated works, whether translated by you or others, cannot be sold but can be given away without revision and without commercial gain.

I have many quotations from books, articles in magazines and from the Internet. The doctrine of "fair use" in copyright is not an exact science but I have tried to keep my quotes of reasonable length. The government copyright office at www.copyright.gov states: "The distinction between what is fair use and what is infringement in a particular case will not always be clear or easily defined. There is no specific number of words, lines, or notes that may safely be taken without permission." If you feel any quote is too long please let me know and I will look at it again.

I hope I inspire you to read Sun Myung Moon's words. In his 60 years of ministry he gave thousands and thousands of speeches. I have quotes in this book from his speeches but what I quote comes to a tiny fraction of his words. I hope the quotes I give will intrigue and motivate you to read him in length. I got most of my quotes from two elders in the Unification Movement who have posted many speeches of Sun Myung Moon. Their websites have been online since the Internet started. Please go to their websites and check out the speeches. Damian Anderson's site is www.unification.net and Gary Fleisher's site is www.Tparents.org. There are also other sites that post his speeches that you may find.

I support Hyung Jin Moon's new Unification Movement called World Peace and Unification Sanctuary or Sanctuary Movement for short (www.Sanctuary-pa.org). In 2015 he announced he was the rightful successor of his Father, Sun Myung Moon. He disbanded the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification and fired all of its leaders. He is the true heir to his Father's movement and his Mother, Hak Ja Han, is not. Hyung Jin Moon, the son of Sun Myung Moon, has made it clear that all words, pictures, and videos of his Father are free to everyone. They are all in the public domain.

Disclaimer

The author will not be held responsible for anything that the reader may interpret as a negative result of trying to do as I teach or do as others teach that I quote or mention in my books. I feel strongly that what I write in all of my books is the truth and works for me, but, I will accept no liability for any emotional or financial damage that person(s) may feel they suffered because of what I write.

What I write is totally my own thoughts. I analyze and comment on many individuals, groups and organizations. If you feel you have been damaged in any way from any person or group or organization I mention, I ask the reader to not blame me and not sue me for damages.

This book, my website and my other books contain links to other Internet sites. These links are not necessarily endorsements of any philosophy of life, products or services in such sites. IN NO EVENT WILL I BE LIABLE TO ANY PARTY FOR ANY DIRECT, INDIRECT, SPECIAL OR OTHER CONSEQUENTIAL DAMAGES FOR ANY USE OF, MY BOOKS, MY WEBSITE OR ANY OTHER HYPERLINKED WEB SITE. A link to any web site or person I mention does not mean that the author endorses or accepts any responsibility for the content, use, or products and services made available through such web sites and books.

I deeply feel that each person must use his or her own judgment and take personal responsibility for their decisions. In other words, don't take me to court because you tried something I wrote and/or others wrote, and you think it didn't work out for you.

The author has done his very best to give you practical and accurate information in this book. I cannot guarantee that these ideas will be appropriate to your particular situation. If you are having problems, consult the appropriate professional. The author and publisher shall have neither liability nor responsibility to any person with respect to any loss or damage caused, or alleged to be caused, directly or indirectly by the information contained in this book or any other of my books. We assume no responsibility for errors, inaccuracies, omissions or any other inconsistencies herein.

I am not a spokesman for any organization founded by Sun Myung Moon or any member of his family. The content is exclusively the personal opinion of the author.

A new movement of Pilgrims with a new vision.
—"God's Hope for America" October 21, 1973

Unificationism is implanted in the family, so nobody can root it out. The family is the ideal of the Unification Movement. It starts with a family and it also concludes with a family. Because happiness lies in the family, Unificationism has systemized it and is everybody bows down and loves this ideology, the world will become one automatically.
— Blessing and Ideal Family Part 2

In order to realize the world of peace which God desires, the Unification Movement must achieve preeminence in the realm of human thought. It must challenge and surpass all narrower philosophical and religious views.
— "Absolute Values and the New Cultural Revolution." November 28, 1986

We need a movement to realize a society of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values. We need to make humanity one great family, by breaking down the walls in our hearts and eliminating even the boundaries between nations. This movement begins from each family. If only the entire world were filled with such true families! It would be an orderly world where people govern themselves by the heavenly way and heavenly laws, with no need for lawyers, prosecutors or even judges.
—"God's Ideal Family and Responsibility the Citizens of Cheon Il Guk Are Called to Fulfill" February 23, 2007

You must all now engrave my teachings onto your bones and lead a life of practicing them. … Now is a time which all 6.5 billion people in the world must understand my teachings.
— "The Settlement of the Abel UN and Completion of Cheon Il Guk in Korea" April 2010

Humanity is traveling down a dead-end street. The only way to survive is to practice the peace philosophy of true love, true life and true lineage taught by Reverend Moon.
— " God's Ideal Family — the Model for World Peace" September 12, 2005

— Sun Myung Moon

CONTENTS

Introduction 1

First Blessing

Chapter 1 — Purity 14

Chapter 2 — Warrior 72

Second Blessing

Chapter 3 — Patriarchy 106

Chapter 4 — Homemaker 384

Chapter 5 — Dynasty 497

Third Blessing

Chapter 6 — Decentralize 508

Chapter 7 — Trinities 626

Chapter 8 — Countryside 643

Chapter 9 — Homeschool 680

Chapter 10 — Homechurch 716

Suggested Reading List 778
Suggested Audio-Visuals 796

INTRODUCTION

Dennis Prager made a wise video titled "What is the Most Important Thing in Life?" He explains it is "Good Values." I believe that the values in the theology of Sun Myung Moon, the *Divine Principle*, is the truth that will unite mankind into one loving family. It reveals God's plan for an ideal world, a world utopia. The *Principle* answers the fundamental question asked by countless people: What is the purpose of life? God's motivation for creating the world and especially us as His children was love. Simply love. He wanted and needed to share His love. Joy is the true purpose of life. God wanted His sons and daughters to be happy and joyful. To give them the highest happiness, we read in the *Bible* that He gave three blessings in Genesis 1:28: "And God blessed them, and God said to them, 'Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth and subdue it; and have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the air and over every living thing that moves upon the earth.'"

Sun Myung Moon, also called Father, gave a speech on October 20, 2001 at the United Nations titled "The Path to World Peace in View of God's Will." He talked about the Three Blessings of God saying, "The First Blessing of God to human beings, 'be fruitful', called God's children to become ... true persons." For the Second Blessing, multiply, he says that men and women are supposed to become a "True Husband and Wife." Then they are to become "True Parents to their children, inheriting and passing on true love, true life and true lineage from God. ... Then they would have become the Lords of true love. ... This was God's Third Blessing. This is the Blessing to create a living environment in which we can experience joy and happiness, having dominion over the creation. This includes the care and preservation of the world's ecological balance as true masters of the creation...."

UNIVERSAL PRINCIPLES

He ended his speech saying that we "must transcend the power of politics and national diplomacy" and "ground ourselves spiritually and morally upon God's ideal" and live "according to universal principles" and center our lives on "God and the laws of Heaven." This book is about some of those laws of heaven—those core, universal values and divine principles that I believe God wants Unificationists to unite on.

BLUEPRINT FOR WORLD PEACE

To build anything we need a blueprint. This book is an instruction manual for life. This book is the application of the *Divine Principle*—a blueprint for world peace. Sun Myung Moon often talks about world peace. He is inspiring people all over the world to make the dream of world peace a reality. How do we define the word "peace"? Father is teaching that God wants total peace. Not only peace between nations but between our minds and bodies and between every person.

UNIFICATION

Another favorite word of Sun Myung Moon is "unification." God, he reveals, desires us to have complete unity for all three blessings: unity of mind and body, unity within families and unity between all people and nations. The ultimate goal of God is nothing less than total, one-hundred percent agreement of what God's core values are and for everyone to live by those universal values. World peace and unification will come when every single person accepts the *Divine Principle* as their theology and lives by the absolute commandments of God. Each of us has the duty and responsibility to teach these values to as many people as we can.

TRUE HAPPINESS

God wants every person to experience total happiness every moment of their life. This can only

happen when every person accepts the teachings of Sun Myung Moon. The solution to all our problems of war and disunity depends on mankind listening to and accepting the teachings of Sun Myung Moon.

NEW RELIGION

The world needs a new religion that is logical and makes sense. Everyone needs to give up their religion and move up to the perfect theology of the *Divine Principle*. When those who have position and those who receive income from being a member of another religion accepts the *Divine Principle* as true he or she should stop being a member of their faith and stop receiving money such as taking tithes for those who are ministers and priests. When a Christian pastor joins he or she should not continue being a Christian minister and resign.

At Hillsdale College Victor Davis Hanson gave a speech in 2009 saying, "War is a human enterprise that will always be with us. Unless we submit to genetic engineering, or unless video games have somehow reprogrammed our brains, or unless we are fundamentally changed by eating different nutrients—these are possibilities brought up by so-called peace and conflict resolution theorists—human nature will not change. And if human nature will not change—and I submit to you that human nature is a constant—then war will always be with us." This is fallen man's thinking. The Messiah comes to save us from Satan's thinking. Sun Myung Moon reveals God's goal of a world without war.

UTOPIA

The truth always rises and eventually the *Divine Principle* will be voluntarily accepted by every person. Sooner or later—one year from now or 100 years from now—the ideology of God brought by Sun Myung Moon will rule the earth. Jesus said that Satan is the ruler of this world. Someday God will be the ruler. This means that everyone in position of authority in every area of life will be a godly Unificationist and their leadership will end the war between our minds and bodies, the battle of the sexes, and the violent wars that have plagued mankind since Satan took control in the Garden of Eden. Father says God's goal is for mankind to live in an ideal world. He says, "The Unification Church has the clear goal of utopia centered upon God. The utopian religion is the Unification religion" (11-1-93). "We have a common dream. It is the long-cherished human dream of an ideal world. The prophets have called it the Kingdom of God on Earth. It is a lofty goal, but it is obtainable. It must be, simply because it is the original ideal of the Creator. This is the meaning of securing world peace" (6-1-87). "Truly, the ideal I am espousing is nothing other than the kingdom of God on earth. I see it as a realistic goal toward which we can realistically work. People have been telling me that I am too utopian. I recognize that I am extremely idealistic, but I have no choice: God has called me directly, personally, to this task and responsibility." (8-11-84) Hanson's vision is small and false. The Messiah's vision is big and true.

CORE VALUES — CORE BELIEFS

I have chosen what I believe are ten core values, the ten core beliefs of God. We are called to guide our life by the words of truth in Father's speeches. Father says, "The historical words of True Parents and the *Principle* are the key to your growth and perfection of heart and character. Through these words you can become saints and achieve seok bang (total release). This is the way to become divine sons and daughters of God" (3-19-05). At the Hoon Dok Hwe (morning reading of Father's words) in Kodiak, Alaska on September 24, 2008 some rough notes were taken. He said that we have to study his words, "What will you do when I'm gone? I have left you the Word in so many books. However, many of you haven't even bought them yet. The Word will remain forever. The ideal sons and daughters are those who have the proper relationship with the Word and with each other, in balance. Hoon Dok Hae is necessary. Through it you can overcome all. After 1,000 years, only the Word shall remain. Once you stand upon God's Word, you are in the central position, and you can and must go through all barriers."

"Even for me to go over Satan's hills, I had to become one with the Word. I created these books because the Word doesn't belong to me. It is God's Word and will remain forever. The secret for all humanity to get to God is to understand his Word. To go to God's heart, we must liberate the world. To liberate yourself, you must go beyond yourself."

God wants every person to be saints who live by the word of God. We are not supposed to get up in the morning and begin our day and spend the day thinking about what we want to do. We are supposed to be thinking about what God wants us to do. God's way will always be better than our way. God wants us to focus on the family more than on ourselves. He wants us to think in terms of what is best for our families instead of what we think is best for us. This is an ideology of groupism over individualism. When we do this we will be more fulfilled and reach our potential faster than if we thought of ourselves first.

We also know that God reveals his laws and timeless truths in the writings of some Unificationists and in other books such as the Bible. In this book I will back up these ten core values with quotes of Father and quotes from other books.

The Ten Commandments are famous moral codes. There have been many books elaborating on them. For example: *The Ten Commandments of Character: Essential Advice for Living an Honorable, Ethical, Honest Life* by Joseph Telushkin and *God's Top 10 with Dr. Laura Schlessinger: An Adventure through the Ten Commandments*. In the Bible we read, "Why do you ask me about what is good?" Jesus replied. "There is only One who is good. If you want to enter life, obey the commandments" (Matt. 19:17). If you want life you need to live by God's commandments. If you choose to disobey God's common sense rules then you invite pain, dysfunction and death into your life. When a marriage and family respects God's laws then it prospers and grows; when it rebels it declines and dies. When a nation honors God's universal principles it flourishes; when it follows Satan's principles it becomes a dying nation.

Many people today do not honor the rules in the Ten Commandments. The Ten Commandments are thousands of years old and yet billions of people today do not believe there is one God. There are many people who do not even believe there is a God. After two thousand years of the Bible the majority of mankind does not believe Jesus came as the Messiah. No matter how dedicated Christians are to their faith and work to proselytize and convert people, the world will never become totally united on Christianity or any other religious belief – except one. That is the theology and moral laws given by Sun Myung Moon. All religions and value systems have a mixture of true and false teachings. The religions of the past have given us partial truths. Sometimes the leaders of these religions have given wrong views of God. For example, Joseph Smith writes in Mormon scripture in the book *The Doctrines and Covenants* (verse 130:22) that God has flesh and bones. This is false. God is invisible. It is now time for all Mormons, Christians, Jews, Muslims, Buddhists, Hindus and other religious people to accept the teachings of Sun Myung Moon as greater than their sacred texts.

DOGMA

We can't just point to our heart to solve the disunity of the world. We need to point to the head as well. Mankind is deeply divided because of conflicting doctrines. Doctrine is defined as "A principle or body of principles presented for acceptance or belief, as by a religious, political, scientific, or philosophic group; dogma." Dogma is defined as "a doctrine or a corpus of doctrines relating to matters such as morality and faith, set forth in an authoritative manner by a church. An authoritative principle, belief, or statement of ideas or opinion, especially one considered to be absolutely true." Unificationists need to give mankind God's doctrine. Our dogma is the absolute truth. Father went to every state in America publicly announcing that his movement was "A new movement of Pilgrims with a new vision." He goes into detail what that new vision is in thousands of speeches. He gave a speech to distinguished scientists at the Marriott Hotel on November 28, 1986 titled "Absolute Values and the New Cultural Revolution." He boldly said, "In order to realize the world of peace which God desires, the Unification Movement must achieve

preeminence in the realm of human thought. It must challenge and surpass all narrower philosophical and religious views." He went on to say that the Unification Movement (UM) "must deal with global economic problems" and "has to take preeminence in the realm of media. With the *Washington Times* as the core, we are establishing preeminence in the American print media, a field of more than 1,750 American newspapers. By doing so we can include all fields of intelligence. Today we have in this area surpassed the liberal *New York Times* and *Washington Post*."

HEADWING IDEOLOGY

Unificationists should be on the side of the Right against the Left in the cultural war that is raging around us. The Left loves the writings and champions of Socialists who believe in big government and Feminists who believe in free love. The Right loves the writings and champions of Capitalists who believe in limited government and Traditionalists who believe in abstinence. We live in the time of the Last Days where the prophecy of division between sheep and goats is fulfilled. America is deeply divided between socialist/feminists and capitalist/traditionalists. The Left says there are no absolutes but they betray themselves by being so strong in their fight for the Liberal agenda and hatred of the Conservative agenda. Unificationists should be the leading thinkers, writers and cultural warriors for truth that will take Liberals and Conservatives to the Completed Testament teachings of Sun Myung Moon. We are in agreement with many of the ideas of the Right but we have what Father calls the Headwing ideology. This means there are some ideas on the Right that are not true and Conservatives will have to be converted. The Liberals will have to be converted from their many satanic values. Left-wing intellectuals will have to give up their idea that there are no absolutes. Father often uses the word absolute. *Time* magazine is a popular magazine. It is Liberal and whenever they write about those on the Right they always portray them as being aggressive and war-like while the Left is peaceful and rational. The managing Editor of *Time* wrote against Glenn Beck and other conservatives in 2009 saying that the Right is wrong in being "confident about absolute good and about evil. What we've learned from psychology is that certainty is not an objective reality but an emotional one." And he writes that any person who says they know what absolute values are is not "harmonious." Conservatives who speak strongly about absolute values are called "angry" and stirring up "discord." The truth is that the Left is just as strong in its views as the Right and they fight just as hard. What they don't understand is that we cannot guide our lives by psychology. God wants us to live by a value system that is based on theology. True theology is about absolute values.

REVOLUTION OF CHARACTER

The teachings of Sun Myung Moon and his movement has the truth and spirit of God. He says, "a true man must be found, a true man whom humankind and the universe cherish, and whom God can trust" that will lead us to build "the world in which true men abound, not a human revolution but a 'revolution of character' in man must take place. This character revolution is to transform men into true men who will come to resemble God. This character revolution is to uplift men's character and bring it closer to God's own character." Sun Myung Moon is that man who will transform mankind into true people who have God's character. He says God is "truly in a miserable and pitiful position" and needs the followers of the Messiah to unite the world with the truth and true love. Politics deals with compromise and force. Diplomacy and military power is sometimes necessary to solve problems such as when 16 nations came to Korea's defense in the Korean War. We learn in the *Divine Principle* that the world is divided between Cain and Abel nations such as North Korea and South Korea. There is division between Israel and Palestine. The ultimate solution to these problems is not politics. It is religion. It is not necessary to focus on reforming or revising the religions of the world such as some are calling on Muslims to do. The root solution to the divisions within religions and between religions is Sun Myung Moon's theology, the *Divine Principle* and his deep insights in his many speeches.

Father ended his speech saying, "It is therefore my fervent wish that all the professors gathered

here will also strive for the unity of mind and body. Love your wife or husband deeply, and thereby contribute to the unification of the world, and the building of a world of new culture." Professors need to teach his life-changing words. They must teach about his selfless lifestyle. Father worked harder than anyone for world peace. He pushes us to work hard. He never slept before midnight and never during the day. He slept a few hours and began his day with members at five a.m. No one, including his own family, could keep up with him physically or spiritually. But he encourages us to do our best to reach the perfection he has attained. Although his followers are imperfect he commands them to teach the truth in the *Divine Principle* and in his speeches. His magnificent words inspire us to change our lives. God speaks through Sun Myung Moon and his words show the way to total happiness.

Jesus was the Messiah too and he also spoke with absolute confidence. Jesus said, "I am the way, the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me" (John 14:6). Sun Myung Moon says the same thing. After we hear the *Divine Principle* and Father's words God wants us to follow Sun Myung Moon and join his crusade to save this world from evil and build a world utopia. After we accept the perfect logic of the *Principle* and Father's words we are called by God to dramatically change our lives and live by God's universal, absolute, eternal and unchanging values. This book gives some of those core values of God. It is an instruction manual for living a happy, godly life. We are living in the Last Days where mankind is duped into believing the many lies of Satan. It is our responsibility to educate the world. Mankind is in turmoil. It is a dangerous world. The only hope for mankind is Sun Myung Moon's worldview as taught in his words and we see in his lifestyle.

OBEDIENCE

The Messiah demands we obey him. Jesus said, "If anyone loves me, he will obey my teaching. My Father will love him, and we will come to him and make our home with him. He who does not love me will not obey my teaching. These words you hear are not my own; they belong to the Father who sent me. Peace I leave with you; my peace I give you. I do not give to you as the world gives. Do not let your hearts be troubled and do not be afraid" (John 14:23-24,27). Sun Myung Moon's teachings expand on what Jesus taught. We now have a complete ideology that teaches us how to confidently build an ideal world.

Unificationists need to be like Paul who spread the good news throughout the world. He said the reward for following Jesus was peace of mind, "And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus." (Philippians 4:7)

BOLDLY SEIZE NEW OPPORTUNITIES

Eventually, every person will accept the truth. Until then we have a lot of work to do to educate people on what is the truth that will save them from their ignorance. It is our duty as Unificationists to offer clearly defined and intellectually satisfying rules for mankind to live by. Adam and Eve let their emotions and ignorance rule and world restoration can only happen when there is a logical plan and guidelines for everyone to live by. People need to know what the rules and boundaries are. They need to know what is right and wrong. They need to know what their role and responsibilities are. They need to be taught how to manifest true love. First Thessalonians 4:1 says we are to teach every person to "learn from us how to live and to please God." We are not supposed to be vague people who rely on emotion and feelings. We need a godly plan of action based on truth if we are to get every person to walk the path of a principled life. Mankind is hungry for a practical ideology. Father says, "When we undertake something worthwhile, it is important first to have a logical understanding of why we must do it" (*God's Warning to the World: Reverend Moon's Message from Prison)*. The ten core values in this book are important, practical and logical virtues every person should share. When mankind unites on God's absolute values we will then have a world of true love. The values in this book may be new to you but we need new ideas. Sun Myung Moon said in a speech, "As we stand at the threshold of the new millennium, I believe it is time to review our traditional patterns of thinking and boldly seize these

new opportunities. Thus it is my great honor to share with you my life-long advocacy for world peace and true family values." (8-1-96)

ABSOLUTE CONFIDENCE

Unificationists need to be absolutely confident in our teachings and leadership. Father says:

> We think of history as being the record of the lives of individuals and that history develops according to the actual life situation of individuals. Also we cannot deny that the goal of history has been to reach a kind of ideal utopia. For that to appear it is absolutely necessary that the past be cleared up and that we then pursue a kind of inner human relationship which can unite with a new ideal.
>
> Therefore we must stand firmly centered on absolute values. We should not become wavering individuals. Since we are endowed with absolute life, we must stand with confidence in a perfect position from where we can bring our foundation of faith to conclusion. (*Unification Family Life*)

WAR OF IDEAS

Sometimes we have to resort to using massive violence to solve some of our problems. For example: World War II and the Korean War. But world unity will ultimately happen with ideology, not guns.

EDUCATION

In a speech titled "Pure Way of Truth and Public Righteousness" given on July 18, 1982 Sun Myung Moon explains that God and the Messiah want us to be inspired by their commands. They do not want to use force or coercion to make us do what we should. The kingdom of heaven on earth will "never be accomplished by force or coercion. It can only be done through education and enlightenment by the truth. Do you feel that when you hear my teachings you are being commanded or you are being inspired and enlightened? You feel enlightened."

HAPPINESS

Every person seeks happiness. We all want peace of mind. Sun Myung Moon totally teaches and lives the core values in this book and this is why he has achieved total peace of mind. In a speech titled "Pure Way of the Truth and Public Righteousness" given on July 18, 1992 he said "I am quite calm and peaceful and I have no turmoil within my mind; I see my path clearly." When mankind accepts and lives these universal values of God then mankind will finally achieve world peace and every person will be happy because every person can say "I am quite calm and peaceful and I have no turmoil within my mind; I see my path clearly."

When Father was 80 years old he visited the island of Oahu in Hawaii to meet with members. He hadn't been there for a long time. He usually stops in the less populated island of the Big Island in Kona where he has a home. This is typical of Father. While most people in Hawaii live on Oahu where the most famous beach in the world is — Waikiki, Father chose to live in a more remote part. Father lives on acres of land or in more remote areas because he believes people are to live close to nature.

My family had just moved to Oahu just before Father came. We had visited the church that met in a meeting room in a small fish factory. The carpeting was deeply stained after many years of use and the walls were dingy. When the members heard that Father was coming, they quickly put in new carpeting and painted the walls. Father came and about 20 of us sat on the floor as he stood in front of us. Mother was with him.

Father talked for about four hours. He stood up the whole time and spoke with passion. He said no great religious leader saw the full results of his work in his lifetime. He said famous televangelists "know nothing about God." He spoke tenderly about the nature of God who is like water that permeates every little part of us with His love.

At one point he stopped and looked at one of my sons who was sitting in front of him. He asked, "How old are you?" My son replied, "16 years." Father said he reminded him of when he was 16 years old.

He got the state leader and another long time member to stand together in front of him. By talking to them he was talking to us and giving us a lesson in life. The first thing he told them was that they were overweight and to become trim and fit. Then he talked to two brothers who were widowers. They had lost their wives to cancer and were living as single dads. Father told them they had to live together in one house and help each other. One of the brother's 10-year-old son was sitting nearby and Father asked him if he could love the children of the other family more than his own brothers and sisters. The correct answer was supposed to be yes but he said he didn't think he could. Father laughed when the boy said this and then told him to try to love the other family more than his own when they moved in together.

These brothers never bothered to move in together and the brothers did not try to lose any weight. In a video lecture Kevin McCarthy once said with a smile that the media says Unificationists are robots who follow Sun Myung Moon blindly without thinking but the truth is the exact opposite—we never do what he tells us to do.

At one point I was intently taking some notes of his words and I heard him say, "We have a distinguished grandfather with us today." I looked up and to my surprise he was staring at me intently with a big smile on his face studying my face and reaction. I can't explain in words what his face and body language were like. Father is 100% genuine. He is total love. I don't see myself as some hysterical teenager screaming in ecstasy at being close to a rock star but I am a devoted follower trying to be a good disciple of the messiah. I revere him but I can honestly say that even though Father is a human being like the rest of us he is very different than us. I have never had another man look at me like he did. I remember thinking to myself that he is truly the incarnation of perfect love. The twinkle in his eye and his body language were indescribable. His eyes and whole being were totally focused on me with incredible love. It was as if there was no one else on earth but me and him and he was giving me total focus. He asked me, "When are you going to get mind/body unity?" After he said this he stood there with absolute anticipation of what I was going to say.

The thought flashed in my mind that even if a camera were there I don't think it would capture the essence of love I was being given. Life is so hard in these Last Days and life with Father is extremely difficult and it is easy to feel being a pioneer is a burden but I felt so lucky that I could have this moment on earth when the Messiah walked among us and to experience his love in person. I know that billions of people will only have videos to watch and will not get the chance to be close to him on earth. Just imagine if all you had of your father was videos and you never could be physically close as he talked to you.

I was overwhelmed by the magnitude of attention I was receiving. He was truly a true father to me. In those few seconds before I answered his question I thought how incredibly lucky I was to have a brief moment of having give and take with the savior of the world. I wish I had the ability to express how Father stood leaning forward in bated breath with intense anticipation of what I was going to say. My mind raced trying to think of what I should say. I blurted out, "Soon!"

Father moves like a cat. He gracefully and with great power made a breathtakingly quick move and swung his arm around to me and repeated quickly after I answered without the interpreter telling him what I said. He exploded with passion and love to me and immediately said to me in English, "It better be soon because you are getting older."

The only other time Father talked to me was thirty years earlier when he took the new 50 state leaders he had appointed to Macy's department store in New York City to buy us new suits. He advised us what kind of fabric and style we should look for. He was a genuine father to us. We were all in our twenties. I went over to a rack of suits my size. I was alone. I could see the other brothers looking for their size. I found a gray suit and put the coat on. Then I turned to find a mirror and was startled to find Father had been standing behind me. He was alone and intently

looking at my suit coat. He said in English, "That looks good on you." He grabbed the coat by the front and shook it vigorously. He asked, "Do you think it is too big?" I answered that the tailors would take in the body of the jacket but I needed this size because I had long arms. He wasn't so sure about that and spoke to me in English that I should try on others to make sure. Again, it was as if we were a father and son going shopping and there was no one else but us. Father was natural and comfortable with me just like any father would be who was buying a gift for his son who had got a new position at work.

Let's go back to Father in Hawaii. He ended his time with us by telling us he wanted us to get 3000 core members. There were around 20 members in Hawaii over thirty years earlier and there were the same numbers now. This is the same pattern for most other states in America. Father wants great results. He said 3000 members would bring 300,000 and they would bring 3 million. There aren't 3000 members in America as I write this edition of the book in 2010 and Father personally worked with us in America for those 30 plus years. Father speaks with power and conviction. He told the state leader to come up with a plan to witness and raise 3000 members and that he would come back in two weeks to look at the plan we had come up with.

The state leader and the members did nothing. I told the state leader I had some ideas and would like to talk to him but he never got back to me. I could tell that no one believed Father was going to come back and made no effort to make a plan. I knew he was coming back because he said he was. When Father says he will do something he does it. They were all surprised when exactly to the day two weeks later we got the word that Father was flying in to see us. We all rushed to the fish factory meeting room and he walked in with Mother and immediately looked at the state leader and asked for the witnessing plan. The state leader simply put his head down and said nothing. It was a painful moment for me. I vowed that I would write a practical plan for witnessing and for building the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. This book is that plan. If Unificationists teach the *Divine Principle* I write and live the values I write in this book and my other books I believe we will get those millions and then billions of members Father desperately wants.

I tell this story to point out some things that everyone should know. Father is a genuine Father who loves us as his children. He has always been desperate to save the world and wants us to help him build the ideal world so everyone can be free of Satan and find happiness. He asked for a plan that would accomplish this noblest of goals because that is our job. It is not his job to explain everything under the sun. He has given us the vision and many details of God's will but we have our portion of responsibility to grow up and be messiahs as well. Father has never had a plan for witnessing that members have given him that works. I offer this plan as one that will. The first thing I did when I published this book (in a version with a slightly different title) was send one to Father. I attached a letter saying that this plan would help get not only get those 3000 members he asked for but this is the plan for every person to fulfill the Three Blessings.

BIBLE

Next to Father the most important words of God are in the Bible. The Bible is the greatest book printed in human history. It is the most published and studied book on earth. Most Presidents of the United States have put their hand on a Bible when taking the oath of office. Sadly the Bible is interpreted in many different ways. Much of the *Divine Principle* is an explanation of the Bible. The *Principle* gives God's interpretation to many passages that are often misunderstood.

In this book I will deal with some passages of the Bible that give us guidance in our everyday life. I believe my interpretation and application of the Bible is what God believes. The majority of the world today does not consider the Bible to be the word of God. There are many people who despise the Bible:

> The Bible is a collection of fantastic legends without scientific support.
> —*The Communist Dictionary* issued by the Soviet State Publishing

> The Old Testament, as everyone who has looked into it is aware, drips with blood; there is, indeed, no more bloody chronicle in all the literature of the world.
> —Henry L. Mencken

> Demons do not exist anymore than gods do, being only the products of the psychic activity of man.
> —Sigmund Freud

> The Bible and the Church have been the greatest stumbling blocks in the way of women's emancipation.
> —Elizabeth Cady Stanton

They are wrong. The Bible is the word of God. The following are correct views of the Bible:

> I have always said that a studious perusal of the sacred volume will make better citizens, better fathers, and better husbands.
> —Thomas Jefferson.

> So great is my veneration for the Bible that the earlier my children begin to read it the more confident will be my hope that they will prove useful citizens of their country and respectable members of society. I have for many years made it a practice to read through the Bible once every year.
> —John Quincy Adams

> I am much afraid that schools will prove to be the great gates of hell unless they diligently labor in explaining the Holy Scriptures, engraving them in the hearts of youth. I advise no one to place his child where the scriptures do not reign paramount.
> —Martin Luther

> The New Testament is the very best book that ever was or ever will be known in the world.
> —Charles Dickens

> The existence of the Bible, as a book for the people, is the greatest benefit which the human race has ever experienced. Every attempt to belittle it is a crime against humanity.
> —Immanuel Kant

> It is impossible to enslave mentally or socially a Bible-reading people. The principles of the Bible are the groundwork of human freedom.
> —Horace Greeley

BIBLICAL VALUES

It is crucial that we understand and live by the values in the Bible. It is probably possible for anyone to study the Bible and Father's words and believe they are saying the opposite of what I write. Shakespeare said, "The devil can cite Scripture for his purpose." This book will expose the feminists and socialists who are dupes of the devil. Those who reject old-fashioned biblical values are tools of Satan. The Bible advises, "Be sober, be watchful. Your adversary the devil prowls around like a roaring lion, seeking someone to devour" (I Peter 5:8). Jesus stood up to Satan: "And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve" (Luke 4:8). The Bible teaches us to reject Satan. If we live God's way of life we will find life and happiness. If we live Satan's way of life we find

death and unhappiness. Those who have correctly applied the principles in the Bible to their daily life have found more life and love than those who do not. Many immoral Hollywood stars are role models for millions of people but they are not as happy as those I write of that correctly live by the core values of the Bible. The proverb "The proof of the pudding is in the eating" means that what is true is what is tested. "Seeing is believing." "Actions speak louder than words." I personally know these values are true because I used to believe in the opposite. I used to be a liberal feminist Democrat. It was not easy for me to be converted but after study, prayer and life experiences I have found the values in this book to be true just like so many millions of others have.

In the end if something is true it works. It is easy to believe in many different ideas but it is more difficult to believe in a lifestyle when those who live by different values are more prosperous, powerful and happy. It is obvious to me that those who live by the values I write have more joyous and richer lives and families than those who live by other values. These values are logical. They work. I challenge anyone who is dealing with problems in their lives and families or know of others having problems to live by the values in this book and see if your problems fade away. I believe that if a person or family or nation lived by the values in this book they would solve their problems and we would finally achieve world peace.

Ray Vander Laan has made a fascinating series of DVDs called *Faith Lessons* that I highly recommend using for your homeschool classes. In Volume 3 titled *Faith Lessons on the Life and Ministry of the Messiah* he says something that is crucial to understanding the Bible. The Bible is an Eastern book. Jesus was an Easterner. So is Sun Myung Moon. Vander Laan explains: "There are two different ways of thinking or of describing truth. A Westerner learns in the Greek way. In the Greek tradition truth is presented in words and in careful definitions and explanations. We love bullet lists and points. An Easterner, however, is much more likely to describe truth in pictures and in metaphors—in the meaning of places and structures. For example, a Westerner might describe God as powerful or loving or all knowing. An Easterner would be much more likely to say God is my shepherd or a rock or a living water. A helpful thing to do then is to better understand the world where the Bible was placed." And it is necessary to know where the *Divine Principle* is placed. It is placed in rural Korea where Sun Myung Moon was born and raised.

Father often mentions flowers in his speeches. For example he said in a speech, "God created us as His counterparts in love, and He prepared the natural world as a gift for us, His children. God would not leave His children to live in a barren desert devoid of beautiful scenery. That is why all people have the duty to preserve and love the natural world. I am saying that you should develop your human nature as it was originally meant to be, such that you experience resonance even with a cluster of wild flowers as you share a heartfelt conversation with them. That will be the shortcut to restoring humankind to God." (1-15-09) Can you see how intimate he is with God's creation?

I am a Westerner and I have done my best to explain Sun Myung Moon's words in a form that is more understandable to the West. I have made lists and methodically go from one logical argument to another never stopping to explain anything by alluding to conversations with flowers. Westerners are practical and orderly; Father is poetic and philosophical. It is our job to make Father practical, mundane, down-to-earth, pragmatic, plain-spoken, hardheaded, commonplace, day-to-day. Father does not speak in a linear way like those in the West do. He speaks in an indirect, interrupted, roundabout, broad, wide, winding, zigzag manner. For example, the original *Divine Principle* called the *Exposition of the Divine Principle* is written by Koreans and is not chronological. It is written in a nonlinear way. Events are portrayed in a non-chronological manner. For example, the Introduction talks about Jesus being Messiah and the Fall of Man before they are defined and explained in the order they take place. This is why I wrote my version of the *Principle* in a linear way starting with the Garden of Eden and going step-by-step through 6000 years of human history in chronological order. The *Exposition* book is all mixed up and therefore impossible for a Westerner to read. My wife took a religion class of one of the leading theologians

in America, Marcus Borg, and one of the times she visited with him in his office he told her how the Unification Movement (UM) had taken him and other theologians to Portugal for free to teach and talk about the *Divine Principle*. They gave him a copy of the book. In his office at the university he was teaching at, he pointed to the book that was in his bookshelf to my wife, and said to her: "The book is unreadable!" He tried to read it and gave up. I felt the same when I tried to read it and decided to write an easy to read version. My *Principle* is titled *Divine Principle in Plain Language: The Basic Theology of Sun Myung Moon*.

In 2008 I visited with Bo Hi Pak in his office at the Seoul Church. He has been close to Father for over 50 years. His title is "Special Assistant" to Father. I gave a copy of my *Divine Principle* book to him and asked him if he thought it was appropriate for me or anyone else to write their own version of the *Divine Principle*. He immediately expressed with his usual way of speaking with force and great energy, "Absolutely appropriate!" He said something like this: Those who feel there is only one official *Divine Principle* and no one should write another are wrong. People are at different levels and have different viewpoints. Therefore it would be good to have many versions to reach the many different kinds of people.

On October 11th, 2015 Hyung Jin Moon gave the "Declaration of The Constitution of The United Nation of Cheon Il Guk" that mankind has waited for. I support this Constitution. Any references to the writing of a constitution I wrote about in previous editions of this book are now obsolete.

What if you were told that there were videos of Thomas Jefferson speaking and videos of his daughter. Which would pick? How would you feel if those who held these videos refused to release the videos of Jefferson but you could see all the videos of his daughter online? This is the situation with the Messiah. What if someone told you they had videos of Jesus speaking and there were subtitles in your language so you could read along as he spoke. And you were told that there were videos of his disciples speaking. Which would want to watch first? What if you were told there were thousands of hours of Jesus. Would you ever get around to watching his disciples?

Jesus said (Matthew 5:15) that we are not supposed to "light a candle and put it in a secret place or put it under a basket." He told us to put the candle "on a stand" so it will give "light to all in the house." 6.5 billion people cannot see that light in their homes when they do hoon dok hae. Father is the light of the world, but his light is hidden. No one can order a DVD of him talking. I cannot show videos of father shedding the light of truth when I homeschool my children. Early disciples of the Messiah have put the videos of Father in a secret place.

CORE BELIEFS

Unificationists should have the same core beliefs, a shared vision and world-view, a common political and economic ideology, crystal clear purpose and direction, and agree on strategy and tactics to organize mankind with strenuous arguments. I believe God has given mankind His core values in Hyung Jin Moon's Constitution. Read it for free or buy the booklet at sanctuary-pa.org.

IDEAL FAMILIES

If I had to pick the number one goal that God and Sun Myung Moon want each of us to have it would be to create ideal families. Father said in a speech titled "The Kingdom of God on Earth and the Ideal Family" (1-1-77), "We have the mission to create the ideal family here on earth." In a speech titled "God's Ideal Family — the Model for World Peace" (9-12-05) he teaches, "What do you think is God's ultimate purpose for creating human beings? Simply put, it is to experience joy through relating with ideal families filled with true love."

MASS WEDDINGS

Sun Myung Moon is famous for holding mass weddings. He teaches that these couples are to be called "Blessed Couples." He encourages marriages of mixed races and nations to help bring unity between warring races and nations. He has personally matched many thousands of couples and now encourages parents to match their children. He teaches that the key to world peace is for these Unificationist couples to be exemplary families that will be model families who live by God's laws. He says, "The only way to inherit Heaven's lineage, and to establish for eternity the ideal families that God has longed to see, is through the Holy Marriage Blessing established by the True Parents. …The ideal family is the model for living together in peace. The ideal family is the nest where we live and learn to become one. There we have the foundation of love and respect between parents and children, shared trust and love between husband and wife, and mutual support among siblings. For this fundamental reason, you should receive the Holy Marriage Blessing from the True Parents and establish Heaven's tradition of ideal families" (9-12-05).

Politics is very important but Father says in his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* that politicians will never bring peace, "The perfection of human beings and peace in the world come about through family. The purpose of religion is for everyone to become people of goodness who can bring about an ideal world of peace. No matter how much politicians may put their heads together, they will not bring about peace. Formidable military power will not bring peace. The starting point for bringing about peace is the family." Family is everything to Father. Church and State mean very little to him. They are only temporary necessities for fallen man. Truth is simple. He says, "World Peace is not such a huge undertaking. It takes peaceful families to create peaceful societies and eliminate conflict among countries. This will lead to world peace. This shows the importance of families that are intact and the immense responsibility such families must bear. The thinking that says 'It's enough that I live well and that my family lives well' is completely alien to me. Marriage is not something that involves just the bride and groom. Marriage creates a relationship between two families, and it brings reconciliation between clans and countries. Each accepts the other's different culture and overcomes the resentment and hatred built up through history. When a Korean and Japanese marry, it contributes to reconciliation between the two countries; when a white person and a black person marry, it contributes to reconciliation between two races. The children of such marriages represent harmony because they inherit the lineage of two races. When this continues for a few generations, division and hostility among nations, races, and religions will disappear, and humankind will become one family living in a world of peace."

Here are a few quotes from True Father on the importance of family:

> Unificationism is implanted in the family, so nobody can root it out. The family is the ideal of the Unification Church. It starts with a family and it also concludes with a family. Because happiness lies in the family, Unificationism has systemized it and is displaying its limitless cosmic value. That's why Unificationism is acknowledged. When everybody bows down and loves this ideology, the world will become one automatically. (*Blessing and Ideal Family Part 2*)

> As a husband and wife it is only when we gain the victory with our children, together as a family, that we can say for the first time that we are a family that has realized the ideal and purpose of creation. It is only after the father and mother have become one and then the children and parents have become one that a perfect Four Position Foundation is formed.
>
> God has not been able to find one such family on this earth. There has been no family; there has not even been an individual who has been able to overcome the power of Satan. Unificationism teaches that this purpose is not achieved by the

individual alone; it can only be achieved in the family together with the children. (5-23-07)

The ideal of the Unification Movement is nothing more than this. The start is the family, the conclusion is the family. Until now no one has dealt with this problem, so this is our hope. The reason is this is where we can find true happiness. Unificationism is the systematization and universalization of this principle. And by doing this we will gain official recognition. Accordingly, if everyone is persuaded by Unificationism and bow their heads before the principle concerning God's family of love, then the world will become unified. (*Raising Children in God's Will* 26-103)

IDEAL FAMILIES—NUMBER ONE GOAL

Our number one goal in life should be to build an ideal family and help others build ideal families. What does an ideal family look like? So far there has never been an ideal family, a true family that we can model ourselves after. God has spoken through Sun Myung Moon and through others throughout history such as the writers of the Bible to teach us what values we should live by. Every family should meet together everyday and read Father's words of wisdom and other books that teach true family values. Then we should live those values. Eventually every family will become a true family and then we will have an ideal world. I offer this book as giving some practical insights and universal values that will help us build ideal families and an ideal world. Then every couple will be like Father and Mother Moon; every couple will be True Parents who build ideal families which will create God's dream of an ideal world for all His children.

FIRST BLESSING

CHAPTER ONE

PURITY

The first value, belief, principle or virtue we need to live is to be absolutely sexually pure. To restore the Fall of Man we value virginity before marriage and fidelity after marriage. The Bible teaches fidelity. For example, Malachi 2:15 commands, "Be on your guard, and do not be unfaithful to the wife of your youth." Unificationists support the crusade for abstinence and fight Hollywood's crusade for pre-marital sex. Father says we should "teach youth to keep their purity before marriage and, when they reach adulthood, to marry under the Blessing of God" and "pledge to their spouse that they will maintain absolute trust and fidelity as husband and wife" (10-20-01). In the *Old Testament* Moses said God revealed to him in the Ten Commandments "You shall not commit adultery." In the *New Testament* Jesus taught that if a man lusts for a woman he is committing adultery: "You have heard that it was said, 'Do not commit adultery.' But I tell you that anyone who looks at a woman lustfully has already committed adultery with her in his heart" (Matthew 5:27-28). In the *Completed Testament* Father teaches "Absolute Sex." He says:

> Then, what did God expect from Adam and Eve? God expected absolute sex from them. (8-1-96)
>
> Absolute Sex is centered on God, and free sex is centered on Satan. (12-19-90)
>
> Absolute sexual morality is based on true love. The man is the owner of his wife's sexual organ, and the woman her husband's. A woman's hymen should be broken only by her eternal husband. No other. (10-12-08)

ONE KEY ONLY

If the reproductive organs are this important, to whom do they belong? A wife's reproductive organ belongs to her husband, and a husband's belongs to his wife. In this circumstance, a person's reproductive organ can be unlocked by one key and one key only. Under no circumstances should you make a spare key. This absolutely cannot be permitted. The wrongful use of this key leads to the destruction of the family and the nation. (5-8-01)

In God's ideal there is no concept of free sex. Only an absolute, eternal sex concept. Unchanging and unique sex concept. This way leads to the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth. This is a most logical conclusion. Therefore, be very careful regarding your love organ. Never allow yourselves to be seduced by this satanic secular world. The fallen love practiced in this secular world is very dirty. Is this clear? (Yes.) Your

sexual organ exists for the sake of your True Love partner. Not for anyone else.

Only the Unification Church is able to provide this ultimate truth to humankind. We are the ones who can consolidate and unify this entire world regardless of race, religion and nationality and build an ideal world under God. Therefore, we should have pride and continue to strive toward reaching that goal. (5-26-96)

Convex and Concave

Do you need your absolute partner? [Yes!] God created women with a concave form and men with a convex form, so they will fit together to make a perfect unity. That is how God created man and woman. Once the union is made, it is unchangeable. That is God's formula. But look at the situation in America, where marriages are breaking up. American people are heading to the dungeon of hell. Can you deny that? My teaching is right and should be accepted by everyone. Despite that, the world has tried every possible way to persecute me. I have become the most fearful figure in America and in the world.

Before free sex and similar phenomena took place, you recall the streaking fad—naked people running around. When they got naked and saw no distinction between man and woman, they said, "We are all friends." That developed into the practice of free sex. As friends, there is no distinction between the different sexes, so they could see no difference between man and woman, woman and man, woman and woman, or man and man kissing and sleeping together. "What's so bad about it?" they asked. That's their attitude. They called themselves friends while sleeping together as man and woman. Do you call that friendship? Just because they join concave and convex shapes together, is it a true relationship? That's the way of Satan, because Satan denies the right of possession. (4-23-95)

The practice of free sex creates incredible confusion and destruction within human beings. This kind of evil practice did not come about by chance. There is an evil force behind it all. If Satan advocates the practice of free sex we can be sure that God advocates absolute sex. This means one eternal partner. Never two. (6-23-96)

True Parents appear only once in history, to clearly explain its course, direction and result. Only one time in history will True Parents appear, creating a clear starting point, establishing a clear direction, and producing clear results.

When I accomplish world unification, false concepts will be erased. (4-23-95)

Those who are single must be resolved not to be stained. Keep your virginity pure. Can you make love without God's permission, knowing all these things? Everything must be motivated by God. That is how God created man, centered on love. If you have that in mind you will realize how precious love is. And we must be loving in that way. (1-2-72)

ABSOLUTE SEX

Father teaches that God wants each of us to be absolutely pure. He criticizes the idea of free sex. He calls the opposite of free sex "absolute sex". Here are some passages from speeches where Father talks about absolute sex versus free sex:

...the families of all humankind should settle down, centering upon absolute sex, which is God's ideal of creation, and the couple's relationship which is centered on absolute love. (Midnight, January 1, 1998)

This seed was sown in the garden of Eden. To reverse it in the last days we must

work with youth and the family. Our catch phrase is absolute sex, pure love. Absolute sex is for the sake of absolute love: unique, eternal, unchanging and absolute. Catholics and Protestants may link the fall to eating literal fruit, but that does not explain the lineage problem. That's why the engrafting process must take place. Jesus Christ came with the true lineage, for engrafting to God's lineage. ("Children's Day Speech" October 31, 1997)

Absolute sex means that even if there are beautiful women, your eyes will not turn. If we do this, can you keep yourself from temptation? Do you know how much suffering Heavenly Father and I went through to establish absolute sex? Even if there were one thousand beautiful women and True Father were thrown in with them, even if they were to touch me, I would have total control. Restoration involves the path in which you must give the most beloved partner to the enemy and bless them. Do you understand? Free sex was initiated by our ancestors. The only thing that will absolutely shatter free sex is absolute sex.

The Kingdom of Heaven can start only through the lineage from True Parents. The time has come to reveal everything. If you don't know absolute sex, then grave consequences will ensue. You have to walk bearing the cross of love. The easiest way is to walk the path of absolute faith, love and obedience. True Father is very serious when he thinks about absolute sex. You have to understand that you are truly indebted to True Parents.

I am worried when I assign 120 sisters to each country whether they can keep their purity. Many national messiahs are living alone, so I cannot relax and find peace in my mind because I wonder whether, when they face temptation, they can handle it. I think there may be one or two thinking in the wrong way. Please be careful. I don't say these words in vain. If you make a mistake, you will affect thousands of ancestors, generations and descendants. Absolute sex! You Western members must memorize this important point. You have to emphasize this point. There will be immediate punishment and consequences. Until now, True Father knew about many cases but did not say anything. Do you know what is the greatest sin? The one who destroys the ideal of heaven and earth by disobeying absolute sex. This is the gravest sin. The time will come soon when this will be encrypted into the law system. ("Leaders Meeting" January 3, 1997)

DIFFERENT BREED

We Unification Church members understand the concept of the Fall do we not? (Yes) Do we love the concept of the Fall or hate it? (Hate it) Why do you hate it? Because it is the destruction of absolute sex. Do you want changeable sex or unchangeable sex? (Unchangeable sex) Most of Americans don't agree with you. You are a different breed. A breed not found in the secular world. ("Our Responsibility in Becoming Children of True Parents" February 16, 1997)

Since the human Fall originated in the misuse of love, humankind lost True Love. Thus the problem arises: How can we recover True Love? The loss of True Love means falling through adultery. In other words, True Love became degraded by misusing the sexual organs, and in order to restore it, we need to use these organs in the right way. Just as the seed of fallen love was planted in the Garden of Eden during the first ancestors' youth, so in these final days, mankind will harvest the fruit of the Fall among our young people. That is the reason why today we find so much chaos and confusion, centering on the issue of sex. This problem can only be

solved with what I call "Absolute Sex." Only the concept and practice of Absolute Sex can prevent the destruction of the family and reverse the corruption of our youth.

Absolute Sex is centered on God, and free sex is centered on Satan. Historically, world literature and the media have often stimulated free sex. But from now on, you literary figures and journalists should lead the way to prevent free sex. Free sex should completely disappear. ("True Family and True Universe Centering on True Love" June 16, 1997)

Blessed Couples have sex only with each other forever. Blessed widows or widowers are celibate for life. Father says, "How many husbands would you want, one or two or more? What happens if your one and only husband dies? Then you will live by yourself until you get to spirit world also." (4-22-79)

If a Blessed couple does not have children and one of them divorces or dies then, I believe, the other can remarry if he or she wants to. But if a Blessed Couple has one or more children and one of them dies or becomes possessed to get a divorce, the other spouse should not remarry no matter how long they have to live a celibate life and no matter how lonely they may feel. Children should not have to deal with the confusing relationships in blended families with step-parents. The fewer half-brothers and half-sisters and step-parents children have the better. It is best if they had none. Father says:

In God's ideal there is only one father and one mother. In this world of Satan there are many different mothers and fathers in one family. This is miserable for the children. (4-18-96)

True love requires total devotion, total love and total giving to only one mate. (6-20-82)

"Why does the woman have the womb. For the sake of receiving the seed. Then to have the baby. Only when man puts the seed in the mother's womb can life come about. Man's responsibility is to give the seed to the woman. The key to a woman's womb should only be held by the one husband. Absolutely, only one." (4-23-00)

Sometimes American young people run away from home because they are longing for unchanging parental love and they aren't receiving it from their parents. True love never changes, so any parent who cares for his children always loves them, no matter what tragedy overwhelms their home. Even if the father dies, the mother has a strong urge to live in order to keep loving her children. Any woman who just wants to remarry and doesn't care about how her children feel will have nothing left, either love of her children or her husband. Children in that situation feel left out and cold when they are at home, and they usually go their own way. But children whose mother is still devoted and loving them more than ever, even after the father dies, will be completely devoted to her and never betray her expectations.

Even though her husband is dead, that woman is not losing anything. More than ever her children will reciprocate the love she is giving them. The more she devotes herself to her children, the more they will return love that is even greater than their father's when they grow up, knowing she dedicated her life to them. Then the vertical love between a mother and son is more beautiful than the love between the husband and wife. The same is true for man. If the mother dies then the father can find tremendous beauty and value in loving his children. (5-26-79)

Let's say a Blessed man or woman has children and divorces and remarries. He or she is condemning the other to a life of celibacy. The children see this and the world sees this. Hopefully, the betrayer will see the hurt he or she is causing and return to the family. By staying celibate for life that person will also be a living example of the consequences of breaking the sacred vows made at a Blessing.

Some Christians believe the Bible says that marital unfaithfulness is the only cause for a divorce. Blessed couples are given no cause for divorce. Father says, "Parents must never divorce" (3-19-05). It is common for couples who were married outside the Blessing of True Parents to divorce but Unificationists should not. They should take their blessing seriously and work hard to be patient and work smart to figure out how to make their marriage thrive. Blessed couples live for their children, not themselves. Their children's feelings come first, not theirs. Father says, "Once you are married, you cannot do whatever you like. You are to follow the destiny of your family at the risk of your life" (*Blessing and Ideal Family*). Children do not want Mommy and Daddy to divorce. Divorce shoots holes in their spirit and weakens them.

Men should not have female friends that they spend time alone with, talk to on the phone, write letters to or email. Men have men friends and women have women friends. Older boys should not have relationships with girls. It is best to separate teenage boys and girls in school. They should not study and play games together. When Unificationists get together for picnics, socializing and educating young Unificationists at workshops let's separate teenage boys and girls. It would be best if retreats and workshops were not coed. Those who like to have retreats on a weekend to teach young Unificationists about the meaning of the Blessing and how to have a successful life and marriage and how to witness should have only sisters or only brothers attend. It is a distraction to mix teenage boys and girls together. They should live and learn in separate spheres. Young Unificationist brothers and sisters who are teenagers or older should not play and study together. They should always be separated so they never touch each other and never get to know each other and become friends. Father warns, "You cannot let boys and girls run freely together" (5-5-96). Men should be very careful in the workplace and make sure they are not alone with a woman in a room or car. Sadly there have been cases where older children have sexually abused their younger brothers and sisters. It's hard to think negative and not be trusting but it is our responsibility to be very careful and do our best to protect our loved ones from being attacked by predators.

In the book *The Chung Pyung Providence and the Way of Blessed Family* Dae Mo Nim says:

> **It Is a Sin Even to See or Touch the Fruit**.
> Some of our members may think that seeing or touching is not a problem, as long as they do not eat of the fruit. But these people are distorting the *Principle* to suit their thoughts and actions. They draw a certain line, and suppose that they do not fall as long as they do not go over the line. But the fruit is not to be touched, or seen, as well as not to be eaten. God has clearly commanded not to see, touch, or eat of it. It means never to treat a man or woman who is not my spouse as a partner of love, see them, or touch them. We must never do such things as taking off clothes, seeing, or touching before a man or woman who is not our spouse. We can be people of the Heavenly Kingdom only when we keep absolute conjugal fidelity and form a true couple and true family of true love.
>
> **Do Not Create a Situation Conducive to Fall**
> Everyone has lust in the heart because the root and cause of the sin lied in lust. But we should not create something that lights the fire of lust. When men and women are together, they must use caution in every situation. A man and woman should not be alone together. When their meeting is necessary, they can meet in threesome, five-some, etc. rather than meeting alone. When you give a counseling, whether in the church or office, you should definitely keep this in mind. While a man and a woman sit together by themselves, they may start touching each other in the course of counseling and

comforting, whereupon the Satan will invade them and coax them to eat the fruit.

As True Father has said, when a man and a woman are alone together, they should not close up all the doors. Since men and women are a plus and a minus, when they come into contact, they cannot but spark up and fuse into one. So if someone is not your spouse, absolutely do not hold his or her hand. When members start holding hands with some feelings, the plus and minus may get a spark, and eventually plunge them into a pit of passion. When they start holding hands, they will come to embrace each other; when they embrace each other; they will come to kiss each other; and after this, they will touch each other and finally eat the fruit.

If you provide the cause, the result is bound to appear. Watching adult videos and reading adult books will lead you to fall. We should know that the Satan is hiding inside these things. Throw away all the adult stuff from your drawers, if there are any. Someone had a troubled heart and visited a friend to receive some consolation, where they watched adult materials together and finally fell. Sometimes, people fall when they go to a video room together. Men sometimes fall when they go to an adult barbershop.

Siblings of opposite gender should not sleep together. Also, when some relative visits your home, a male relative should not be allowed to sleep with your daughter. Even if your children may be small, going to elementary school or even kindergarten, it is already dangerous to leave them by themselves. Also, do not ask a brother of yours to keep the house while you are gone, or ask others to do something, trusting them because they are members or thinking that your child will have no problem. You should also be careful if you have to entrust your children to a neighbor's home in order to go somewhere. The Sung Hwa students (secondary school church members) are advised not to sleep in places other than their own home except during the workshops.

You should absolutely not have a boyfriend or girlfriend. Before the Blessing of God and True Parents, boys and girls should not be together as lovers. In order to keep and protect the fruit, you should be dressed correctly and maintain correct heart. Sometimes, you may misstep while trying to discuss personal things with a boy or girl of the other sex who are close to you; so if you want to discuss them, do so together with more than two people. At the time of Sung Hwa gatherings, boys and girls may err while a boy and a girl stay up all night alone together or while a boy takes a girl home. In the case of college students, they sometimes fall while doing a meeting or on adults' days.

Unificationists do not date other Unificationists or outside people or spend time alone with those of the opposite sex. There is to be absolutely no physical contact between single men and women in or out of our movement. They do not shake hands with anyone of the opposite sex. At hoon dok hae on January 12, 2005 Father told an elder who was with a group of young Unificationists, "make a special generation which have an absolute love standard." He told these young Unificationists, "You have a big responsibility to thoroughly establish an absolute standard between man and woman. Don't even shake hands." Father says:

Father tells unmarried men and women not to shake hands if possible because the electricity of love flows through holding hands. The spark of love cuts a wound in the mind of the other person. The wound made by love cannot be healed with any medicine in this world.

In the Unification Church, we tell young boys and girls to not even shake hands. We must know that Satan is always spying on us and that this is the way Satan takes revenge.

Until the Blessing, the Unification Church members who are unmarried should not shake hands with each other. If we think of love in terms of electricity, if it is 100 volts, all 100 volts should fuse properly instead of becoming dimmed by something that short-circuits the electricity on its way.

(*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

> Do you think that you should give your first kiss to your eternal spouse or to some other playboy? (Spouse.) That is your original mind responding. Even holding hands and giving your heartistic embrace should be only for your first love. Pure gold will transmit electricity using every part of that gold. This is how pure men and women are possessing that same eternal value. (5-5-96)

If brothers cannot shake hands with sisters then they certainly cannot hug other single sisters with the exception of blood related females. Dancing for singles, especially ballroom dancing, is out of the question. Young men and women should not touch each other. Ballroom dancing is not a healthy way for young people of the opposite sex to relate to each other. Only married couples or blood relations should dance together. A brother-in-law should not dance with a sister-in-law. Strangers should not dance with each other. Dancing is not the way to learn social graces and etiquette and how to relate to the opposite sex. In their ridiculous and unprincipled *Matching Handbook* (2011) the Unification Church says it is proper for singles to find their mates through ballroom dancing but when a couple decides to go through a period of courtship to see if they want to get married there cannot be any physical contact. See the logic? Helen Fisher writes in her book *Anatomy of Love*, "Human skin is like a field of grass, each blade a nerve ending so sensitive that the slightest graze can etch into the human brain a memory of the moment."

Father is not being paranoid when he advises single people to not touch each other. He is giving wise advice. We are not of this world. Father speaks strongly against so much physical contact between the sexes that Satan has made fashionable, "It is the custom in America to greet each other with a hug or a kiss. When Father first came to America there were many women who tried to greet him in this way. Even in South America, that kind of phenomenon occurred. Father placed a boundary around him, so that within one meter no one can come close to him. It is very difficult actually. What kind of kissing custom is this? Does it originate from the Fall, or is it the original kissing custom which God gave to Adam and Eve? (After the Fall.) Therefore, Father wants to spit it out." (6-9-96)

RULES FOR TOUCHING

Sun Myung Moon has brought some of the rules of God for relationships. He says single teenagers and young adults should never touch the hand of the opposite sex. Father says:

> Tell your hand not to touch anything except godly things. Your original, pure mind says your hand should not touch a woman's hand until you are married. Your eyes should look only in the right direction, your nose should smell only the right things, your mouth should eat only the right things, your hands touch only the right things and so on. (12-1-82)

I believe that married people should try to get out of touching the hand of anyone but blood-related relatives as much as possible. Father shakes hands with women in public situations but I feel single Unificationists should not shake hands even if it appears to be rude and prudish. We have to draw the line somewhere and I take Father very seriously in the quote above where he says single men and women should not touch the hand of the opposite sex. Joshua Harris is famous for writing books on sexual purity and making DVDs. Jim and Michelle Duggar are famous for the same. Joshua writes how he decided that he would not kiss his fiancé before marriage but that holding hands and side hugs would be proper. The Duggars thought it was appropriate for their son to hold hands but no more on their TV show when he was courting. Father is beyond fallen people like the Harris and Duggar couples. He gives absolute rules and couldn't care less if anyone labels him extreme, unrealistic or crazy. His standard is higher than the rest of us.

Ideally, single people's matches should be approved by their blessed parents or if they do not have parents in the movement then they are approved by a blessed couple who knows and vouches for the single person.

Unificationists have peace of mind because they discipline their sexual organs. Father often speaks vividly and graphically about being strong when we are tempted to Fall. He says, "Some women tried to tempt me, even accusing me of not being a real man because I didn't respond." We need to be strong when tempted. Reading Father's words over and over helps us to become strong.

Here are a few examples from some speeches Father gave where he talks about being sexually tempted and how we are to be strong and resist the incredibly enticing forces that want to destroy us:

> Sometimes you have to test yourself. Imagine yourself in certain situations. Imagine you are going to a dance where you are well dressed, looking your best and having an enchanting evening. Ask yourself, "Would I falter, or am I confident that I wouldn't?" You have to check yourself, "Am I going to fall if I go to this point or beyond this?" It is necessary to foresee possible future situations in order to test yourself.
>
> I have done the same thing. I have often imagined difficult situations, saying, "What if, knowing what I know, I was cast into a room with hundreds of beautiful naked women. What would be my response? Is my organ going to be excited or not? Will it take a resting position or not?" In all seriousness, I have imagined such a thing. What if they represented the beauties of all different races, from East and West? The temptation would be very difficult, not easy. You can only imagine the degree of that temptation. (3-1-92)
>
> ...even if we were in a room with 100 naked beauties, we should control ourselves and not give in to temptation. (1-1-90)
>
> If you brothers found the most beautiful woman in the world stark naked in your bed, what would you do? You would have to be like a eunuch, feeling completely neutral. (6-15-80)
>
> Everything you do has consequences for good or evil. Let us say that a man of goodness is put into a room with a gorgeous beauty queen who is stark naked. A man of goodness can face that kind of situation without anything happening. That is because his way of thinking is, "How can I contribute to her well-being?" It is not, "How can I take advantage of her or use her?" He always thinks of how to serve others. Such an attitude is what we call true nobility. (3-11-84)
>
> When a beautiful woman is sitting beside us, the conscience warns us not to touch her, but the body wants to touch and kiss her. The power of love has been demonstrated to be more powerful than the power of conscience. This kind of danger exists only temporarily. It is not a permanent state of affairs, because once men and women grow to perfection and are united with God's True Love, no power under the sun can break that. It would be impossible for men and women to be unfaithful to one another once they reach the complete dominion of God's love, because the body would not have that freedom. The mind would be completely in control. If your discipline is such that your conscience wins over the dictates of your body, including the temptation of illicit love, then you shall win a ticket to heaven. (2-15-94)

The meaning of the human fall is contamination of the lineage. The misuse of the sexual organ created a false lineage. We should have confidence that "I have nothing to do with fallen Adam and Eve." How many times has True Father been tempted by many women. Do you women like Father? Love or like? True love? That is one man and one woman relationship. If there were no True Mother, then all of you could be in the position of candidate for his bride. American women are so aggressive and may try to kiss Father! In Japan and America intelligence organizations tried to trick Father by sending beautiful women to seduce True Father.

They reported that they had failed to seduce him. Have any of you heard True Father say, "Come on, let me kiss you." Nothing like that. There have been many occasions when True Father was in bed and beautiful women came to his bed and begged: "It takes only five minutes. If you don't do it, I will die." What would you do? True Father concentrated and nothing happened. (2-18-01)

Seduction is your worst enemy; turn yourselves off from it, even in your dreams. Western leaders, do you understand? [Yes.] You have to be able to control your sexual desire; even spiritually you may be tested. You have to be the king of controlling your love organ. My lifelong motto is: before trying to govern the world, first become the king of self-control. When I was a student in Japan, all kinds of temptations came. One woman came into my bedroom, naked, and said if you don't take five minutes to make love to me, I will kill myself before your eyes.

Go out and claim yourself as True Parents and do what God wants you to do. The people who tried to reach enlightenment failed because of the love temptation. I treat women as my daughter, grandmother, queen, aunt—always as a family relative. If you cannot control your sexual desire, tear your love organ off your body. Hundreds of my female followers wanted to live with me, without marrying, and I had to find an excuse (that would not destroy them). The love organ attached to your body does not belong to you. You are not the owner of it. (1-26-02)

Men, suppose that after you are blessed, the most beautiful woman happens to stand beside you. Do your eyes and five sensory organs turn to her? Do your hands try to hold her hand or body? There are a lot of beautiful women in the world. Don't try to get away from beauty; instead, you should train yourself so that your mind and body can ignore her attraction and you desire to touch your wife instead.

Women, suppose that after you are blessed, you happen to meet a handsome man on the street. Is your mind attracted to him? If so, you are a slut!

Your sexual organ is absolute. You have an absolute part, the palace of your sexual organ. Although it may not look that special, if the sexual organ is used wrongly, the world, history, family and everything is destroyed. Man's sexual organ is made to be erect vertically. Vertical! Man should remain faithful to his cause rather than to woman. Because Eve did not keep her chastity, she fell and seduced Adam. This is the very problem. You have to deny this.

Then what is marriage? Through marriage, a man and a woman, who are each half, combine their sexual organs and become completed. A man becomes perfect through a woman centering on love, and he makes a woman complete. Through true love, they become complete and fulfill the unity of love. Through the joining of their sexual organs, man's blood and woman's blood unite in one melting pot. From that place sons and daughters are born. You should know that

that place is more precious than children, spouse or God.

ONE KEY, ONE LOCK

Because I talk like this, I seem to be a heretic! What is that place? It is more valuable than children, spouse and parents. Without that place, even parents, spouse and children are worthless. Because it is so valuable, you should tightly lock the door of your sexual organ so that nobody can see it. It is like a valuable treasure which you should preserve throughout your life. There are only two keys to the door: the wife keeps her husband's key, and the husband keeps his wife's key.

Are you women going to take the key of only one man? Free sex is when you take ten or 100 keys! An opened door through which everybody comes and goes incessantly is a door that has no lord. To act like a slut is to ruin your house of love. (1-1-97)

God knows what Satan wants. Through free sex, Satan wants to stop every last person from returning to God. In other words, Satan wants to destroy all humanity and create Hell on Earth. Is not the world in which we live today Hell on Earth? Therefore, we will find the road to Heaven by going 180 degrees opposite the direction of this Hell on Earth. When the Lord of the Second Advent comes, he will show us the 180 degrees opposite path, as a means to save the world and lead us to Heaven.

Then what is the road that is 180 degrees opposite the way of free sex? The path of free sex was laid because of the false parents. Therefore, True Parents have to come to straighten the wrong path. God cannot intervene. No authority nor any military, economic or political power can do it. It was caused by false parents. Therefore, it takes True Parents to cut it open with a scalpel. True Parents should operate with their scalpel; that is the only way humanity can be saved.

The one who sinned has to indemnify the sin. It was in the family that a false marriage took place which corrupted the lineage 180 degrees. Therefore, True Parents must come and bestow marriage that is in a direction 180 degrees opposite, in order to open the path to Heaven.

Then, what did God expect from Adam and Eve? God expected absolute sex from them. You world leaders gathered here tonight, please learn this truth and take it back to your countries. If you start a campaign to secure absolute sex in your country, your families and your nation will go straight to Heaven. When there is absolute sex, an absolute couple will emerge automatically. Words such as free sex, homosexual and lesbian will naturally disappear.

Father Moon has lived an entire life overcoming a suffering path in order to initiate this kind of movement worldwide. Now the time has come for Father Moon to trumpet the fanfare of victory and move the entire world. Therefore, I am grateful to God.

The family sets the cornerstone on the road to world peace. The family also can destroy that road. It was Adam's family in which the destruction of the foundation of human hope and happiness took place. Therefore, when we establish the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification, the road going 180 degrees opposite the direction of the satanic world will be open, and for this we cannot help but give thanks to God. Without following this road, there is no freedom, happiness or ideal!

I wish that you would center on the absolute sexual organ, unique sexual organ, unchanging sexual organ and eternal sexual organ, and use this as your

foundation to pursue God. You should realize that this foundation should become the foundation of love, life, lineage and conscience. We also have to realize that the Kingdom of God on Earth and in Heaven will begin on this foundation.

When we are born as a man or woman, who is the owner of our sexual organ? Actually the owner of man's sexual organ is woman, and the owner of woman's sexual organ is man. We did not know that the sexual organ is owned by the opposite sex. This is a simple truth. We cannot deny this truth. Even after history progresses for thousands of years, this truth will not change.

Every man thinks his sexual organ belongs to himself, and each woman thinks her sexual organ is her own. That is why the world is perishing. Everyone is mistaken concerning ownership of the sexual organs.

Adam and Eve both erred by thinking their sexual organ was their own possession.

If all men and women admit that their sexual organ belongs to their spouse, we all would bow our heads and become humble when we receive our spouse's love. Love comes to you only from your partner. There is no love other than love for the sake of others. We must remember that we can find absolute love where we absolutely live for the sake of others. When you return home, you should expect to wage a war against the satanic world.

Wherever you may go, please try to spread Father Moon's message through television or other media. You will never perish. What force can turn around this world of Hell? It is impossible to achieve this unless our sexual organ is used in accordance with an absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal standard centering on God's true love which is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal love. God is the original owner of the sexual organs.

Let us go forward all together for this common cause. Let us become the vanguard that will carry out God's true love. This is the very mission of the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification [now called Unification Church]. Now, please go back to your homes and affirm with your spouses that your sexual organs are absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. Proclaim that yours is truly your spouse's and what your spouse has protected so well until now is truly yours. And please pledge that you will live your life with gratitude and in eternal service to your spouse. In such families, God will dwell eternally and, centering upon them, the world-level family will begin to multiply. (8-1-96)

This is how the original sin, the root of all sin, came into existence. This is why it became necessary for human beings to find rebirth. Rebirth is necessary because the problem relates to lineage.

The Bible also depicts the archangel symbolically, as a serpent. Why is that? The serpent's tongue splits into two at the end, and so the serpent came to symbolize a person who uses his one mouth to say two completely different things, or a person who will use any means to accomplish his selfish purposes.

A man's reproductive organ is shaped like the head of a poisonous snake. It is always looking for a hole to slither into. A woman's reproductive organ is concave, like the wide-open mouth of a poisonous snake with fangs. Once this snake bites, poison quickly spreads through the body, bringing eternal death. Adultery does not just destroy the individual, but also the family, clan and nation. In the Garden of Eden, Satan defiled the chastity of youth. He is harvesting the fruit of that crime in the wave of immorality that is engulfing the world's youth in this time of the last days, when history reaches its conclusion. (2001 American Tour)

Lucifer was attracted to naked Eve. You must resist this temptation.

Imagine if you will, Adam as a young boy in the Garden of Eden, wild and running around investigating everything and leaving Eve by herself. They were both naked and unashamed originally. As Eve's body was maturing, suddenly the archangel approached her with an evil intent in his heart. Sometimes Eve would sit in the lap of the archangel and their sexual organs would be quite close to one another. They were accustomed to seeing the animals around them mating and caring for their young. Then, in the blink of an eye, easily a relationship occurred between them. The Archangel took interest in this kind of phenomenon, so he took action. It is that easy to fall into an illicit relationship of love.

As a young, strong man, ask yourself, if you were in that situation with a pretty naked woman sitting on your lap, don't you think that you would experience the same temptation? (Yes.) As a man, in order to fulfill restoration through indemnity, no matter if a beautiful naked woman is in front of you touching your body, your love organ should not become erect. Rather, it should remain almost as if it were dead, without feeling. That is the action for indemnity. (5-4-97)

When you men and women embrace and touch, the woman's bosom touches the man's chest. God shows His romantic nature in the way He formed the shapes of men and women. The bosom of a woman extends outward while her sexual organs are inside. The man has a flat chest but his sexual organ extends outward. This is the balance of physical shapes. God is truly a romantic lover, a great scientist. We cannot deny God's existence once we observe the harmony and balance between men and women. (1-2-83)

Literally, what the Bible expresses as the serpent in the Garden of Eden, is the sexual organ. The snake gives poison. From a one time connection with the woman's sexual organ, the heavenly world was destroyed. One time. A snake slithers around and when someone comes too close, it strikes out, attacks, and that person is poisoned. Woman is so fearful of that snake mouth. That serpent symbolizes both sexual organs, mans and woman's. The organs that have poison. Once one bites the other, then that is the end. This is what the Fall of Man was about. But now this is the lineage which does not have that poison in it.

Father never sleeps before midnight, no matter how tired he is, and he never spends idle time. He always speaks to people about God; about the things which you have heard a million times before—still Father continues to speak. When everybody goes to Heaven, there will be a great competition for the best mouth. A great prize will be given to the greatest mouth in history. Whose mouth do you think will win, Confucius, Jesus, Mohammed, or Father Moon's mouth? You have to inherit that same tradition, as well. You should be constantly teaching and teaching, just as I do. (3-1-92)

One of the best tactics for fighting temptation is to have a friend or friends that we can turn to in time of weakness. Joshua Harris and some other Christians teach the concept of accountability. Harris writes, "Share your struggle with someone else. Sharing your struggle with a parent or trusted Christian friend is one of the best ways to overcome [temptation]."

In an article on the web entitled, "Hold Me Accountable", we read:

How would you react to this encounter? One of your closest friends invites you to talk over a cup of coffee. "Friend," he says, "I've been struggling with a particular sin over the past couple months and it's bringing me down. I don't think I can shake it; not on my own. Would you hold me accountable in my fight against this sin?"

If you are like the vast majority of Christians, you don't know how you'd react because it has never happened to you. Odds are, though, the very thought of this encounter makes you uncomfortable. Why? Because sin is ugly. The very moment you accept that offer, a Christian brother (or sister) not only promises a continued exposure to his sin, but also you commit to him a revelation of your own heart, knowing fully what personal ugliness lies beneath the surface. The possibility of finding people out, and being found out yourself, is unnerving.

Pushing through these emotional challenges, however, is just the first obstacle to clear in establishing and maintaining a successful accountability group. Once you make it past the prospect of being held accountable, forming and continuing an accountability relationship provides several challenges. Questions arise. "With whom should I be accountable? Should I be accountable to someone of the opposite sex? Is there an alternative to this uncomfortable accountability? What happens when my initial enthusiasm wanes?" Successfully answering these questions will help determine whether an accountability relationship is right for you.

BUDDY SYSTEM

He goes on to say that we should not have an accountable partner be someone of the opposite sex who is not our husband or wife. What Christians do not know about is Father's concept of Trinities where 3 men and 3 women form a close bond in friendship and help each other. Because men are to be strong protectors of women it would be better for a man to share with his trinity brothers his struggles during rough times than burden his wife. I think we should seriously consider having men never being alone like Mormon missionaries are never alone. Perhaps we should have a buddy system where at least two men are always together and two women are always together. Being alone is dangerous.. Let's have a lifestyle where men and women never do anything alone. I understand a person may feel they need some alone time to meditate but if it is not in some remote wilderness where they cannot be tempted then I question its value. I saw a television show once where a man had tried to quit smoking so many times using many strategies and finally decided to spend a month camping out in the wilderness away from anyone and going through withdrawal from his addiction.

PAIR SYSTEM

A woman can also get help from her trinity sisters with her attempt to combat sin and seek encouragement but why not have all women paired up like women Mormon missionaries are. Even though a man's wife is his soul mate he should not take work home with him and make his wife nervous and fearful as he talks about the dragons he had to slay that day. In the military the leader does not want to show weakness to his followers. If he struggles he takes it higher. Rather than having a paid minister be the person who men go to for help they should live next door to their trusted trinity buddies and together they fight the good fight against the forces of darkness. Ideally young people will be able to turn to their parents to share their struggles and if their parents are not capable then they could go to an elder in the trinity who would help them be true to their core values. We shouldn't have to go to secular psychologists who do not understand evil spirit world and hopefully we shouldn't need to go to psychiatrists and get pills to help us out of depression. Let's make the Unification Movement a place of spiritual growth where no one gets hurt. Let's create trinities that will help us break bad habits and become the champions Father wants us to be: "Your goal is not me but God. You must become a champion who will move the

heart of God and also touch the hearts of mankind." (10-1-97)

Father speaks out strongly against incest. One the most important events in human history was the coronation of God. In his speech titled "The Coronation Ceremony of the Kingship of God" he said, "Incest, illicit love relationships and all such problems stem from this confusion and chaos. Grandfather and granddaughter, grandfather and daughter-in-law, etc.… These incestuous relationships occur because people revolve around without knowing their center, and consequently they catch and consume one another. In this era of confusion, of great chaos and family-level confusion, whether of immediate family or relatives, everyone revolves around randomly to hook up with one another without any order....". Father says:

> Satan made this enormous complication of love. Man made it bad and woman retaliated and made it worse. Ethics, with a very weak muscle, tried to slow down the decline. But then along came free sex. Who made that happen? (Man.) But man has been involved in free sex all the time. Take American soldiers. Wherever they went, they lived with other women. This brings animosity, so now in order to defend themselves, they say "let's have free sex." Satan has no other way. So now that you have seen it for a few decades, is anyone satisfied with it? Can any woman or man say that it's a good idea? Free sex has even evolved into incest and relationships between grandfathers and granddaughters. Of course they feel guilty, but then they say, "Do not feel guilty." When different colors of water come together, it becomes dirty.
>
> With free sex are men or women comfortable? Is free sex practiced by age group? No; the inclination is to cross age groups. The old attack the young, even the infant is not safe. It is the grandparents' responsibility to see to the welfare of their offspring. For those who practice free sex, do they want free sex with another who has had many sexual experiences or one who is pure? (Pure). We see that they look to the younger. This is worse than the animals. Professors and teachers always look at their students. Can any concept of family exist here? This is exactly what Satan wants. Does God love that? God hates that the most. Who sobs more because of love, men or women? (Women.) What are we going to do about that? Can the President of the country do anything? This President [Bill Clinton] does not look to be strong in that regard. Religious leaders in America make the same mistake. Who will repair this? Is this normal or sick? It's very sick, sick, sick. Everyone is affected by this." (2-1-93)

He teaches that when a man tries to overcome his fallen nature Satan attacks by sending a "beautiful woman" to bring him to ruin. Unificationists who work to help True Parents are prime targets for Satan. Father says, "Now people lost Heaven, religion, the world, nation, society and the family. They deny grandparents, parents, husband and wife, and children. They deny God and religion. Men and women all fell to the isolated individual position of a fallen archangel. No matter how much they desire, train or resolve to do so, they cannot overcome lust. Therefore, when someone attempts to achieve perfection, Satan will attempt spiritually to make him fall. A beautiful woman will appear and ask him to embrace her. If he surrenders and embraces her, it is over. Centering on love, life and death divide. Unless they have spiritual experience, people do not know how deep this problem is. Our body is the stage of Satan. To restore this stage to the ideal position, God worked and experienced disappointment over and over. Therefore it has taken thousands of years." (1-13-01)

The most powerful book in human history has been the Bible. It often teaches the virtue of sexual purity. There are many powerful passages explaining how God wants us to fight Satan's enticing temptations to fall and enjoy the wonderful world of pure sex. For example, in Proverbs 5 we are

given the wise advice from Father to son that men should not go near girls and women who believe in free sex or prostitutes who believe in paid sex: "My son, pay attention to my wisdom, listen well to my words of insight. ... the lips of an adulteress drip honey, and her speech is smoother than oil; but in the end she is bitter as gall, sharp as a double-edged sword. Her feet go down to death; her steps lead straight to the grave. She gives no thought to the way of life; her paths are crooked, but she knows it not." This is poetic language saying men should stay away from loose women. We read, "Do not go near the door of her house, lest you give your best strength to others." In other words, a man will lose strength and become weak if he indulges in illicit sex. A man will lose his wealth and feel sad if he does not listen to sound advice on being sexually disciplined: "strangers feast on your wealth and your toil enrich another man's house. At the end of your life you will groan, when your flesh and body are spent. You will say, 'How I hated discipline! How my heart spurned correction! I would not obey my teachers or listen to my instructors.'" Proverbs 5 poetically calls a wife a deer and says, "A loving doe, a graceful deer—may her breasts satisfy you always, may you ever be captivated by her love. Why be captivated, my son, by an adulteress? Why embrace the bosom of another man's wife?"

One reason there is so much premarital sex is because so many wait too long to marry. Proverbs 5 says, "May you rejoice in the wife of your youth." We can also read into this that God's plan is for every single man to rejoice in having a wife. There are no exceptions for homosexuality. God made the universe to be a pair system of plus and minus and masculine and feminine. If you have any temptation to violate this common sense law of the universe and want to be a homosexual please pray and seek help if necessary. Eventually every human being who has ever lived and will live will have a mate of the opposite sex who will be their soul mate forever. When we are tempted to break God's rule because Satan puts a beautiful temptation in front of us let's focus on the spirit more than the flesh. Let's focus on our love of our values and not let our emotions rule us like it did Adam and Eve. When you are tempted think about your values, your goals and know that God is watching you and wants to give you the highest happiness. Father has pioneered total strength of character. Follow his example and not those lost souls in Hollywood.

Proverbs 5 ends saying, "For a man's ways are in full view of the Lord, and he examines all his paths." This means God is watching you all the time and knows which path you are walking down. "The evil deeds of a wicked man ensnare him; the cords of his sin hold him fast." When we sin we are enslaved. "He will die for lack of discipline, led astray by his own great folly." Many have died spiritually and emotionally because they lack discipline. The "folly" and foolishness of millions of people have even led to physical death from such diseases as AIDS. If you are reading this and are single please understand that God is watching you and loves you and does not want you to have an unhappy life. Look for your soul mate and be loyal when you marry. If you are a virgin keep your purity. If you are not, resolve to never fall again. Don't waste any time thinking about former lovers. If you are married focus on your mate. Don't think sexually about anyone else. If you are widowed or in a situation where you have to wait to be with your spouse later, please be strong and patient. Get busy serving other people and don't have a pity party.

There are many books, writings and videos by the Cain side. The most famous and influential man would be Hugh Hefner, the founder of *Playboy* magazine and his ideology of nudity and fornication is called "The Playboy Philosophy". The most influential woman on the Cain side is probably Betty Friedan. Gloria Steinem and Helen Gurley Brown are also famous in advancing Satan's terrible sexual revolution. Friedan's book, *The Feminine Mystique*, was written in the early 1960s just as the wonderful book *Fascinating Womanhood* by Helen Andelin was introduced in the early 60s. Betty's book won the debate. America embraced Friedan's core values instead of the true family values in Andelin's book. The tragic result was that America became a Sodom and Gomorrah. Hugh Hefner and Betty Friedan are divorced and Steinem is barren. Helen Andelin and her husband built a magnificent family. We reap what we sow.

NO LIQUOR STORE

We learn in the Bible and from Father that we are commanded to have the discipline to keep our bodies clean. We are not supposed to put anything impure into our body. The Bible says, "You are God's temple and God's spirit dwells in you" (1 Corinthians 3:16). This means that Unificationists never drink alcohol and never use tobacco. Alcohol and tobacco are poisons. Father teaches:

> In the Orient we have a saying about wine and women stimulating mischief. This refers to a person who gambles and what have you. Almost all crimes stem out of here. There is no big crime case which doesn't have something to do with wine or women. Drugs of course are just a much stronger form of wine. After using drugs you have no control over anything including women. Your conscience has been acting as a brake, but soon the brake doesn't work anymore. Thousands of years of achievement can be washed away overnight because of drugs and women. We have a saying in the Orient to be aware of these things.
>
> Do you have wine in your house? Why not? Because Satan sent millions of people to hell through using alcohol. Satan sent millions and billions of people to hell through misusing sex. The basics of the human being will be destroyed by drugs. Cigarettes come in between. First it begins with having a cigarette and then they say, "Let's go have a drink of wine." Next they use drugs. A man takes his cigarette and puts it in a woman's mouth and already they are connecting. Then they drink, sharing their wine and drugs also. What God hates most, what God does not want to see is this illicit love. Adam and Eve fell because of that. Every breakdown within society, the cause of our rotten society came about because of that power. This culture and civilization have been destroyed through sexual activities. These are Satan's strong, formidable weapons. (4-26-92)

> We have to change the taste of American young people. We have to change their habits. They need healthy habits instead of habits which lead to decay. Now they have a free sex habit, drug habit and drinking habit. They try everything to excite themselves but all they find is zero. What America needs is more exciting stimulation, something stronger than drugs and alcohol. Something which would satisfy them and never disappoint them. What is it? The True Love habit. All you have to do is just get a hold of a part of it and hold tightly and you will feel the whole world become yours. You will feel all the world will come to belong to you. If I get a hold of that something and I can't move it alone, someone will come and help me. So I am excited, I am stimulated all the time. That kind of something is what we need to get a hold of. Father will forgive you so therefore raise your hand, who drank after they came into the Unification Church? You were seeking something, so you drank. Do you think that was something nice you've done or something you shouldn't have done? [Shouldn't have done.] Why? It makes you feel good. You can smoke and do whatever you want to do that helps make you happy. Why do we say we shouldn't do that? Because those are the very weapons of Satan. By giving into them, drawing from that and making it a habit, they are the very weapons to kill your own mother and father and brother and sister. Like a spy's weapon, that kind of thing destroys your most beloved family. Drugs, alcohol and tobacco are those kinds of weapons. How can we understand God's plan and heart? Free sex is Satan's real secret weapon. Through free sex Satan can bring the end of all nations and all humanity. We inherited dirty blood lineage from our ancestors. How can we relax? Those who took a glass or two of alcohol or even tobacco, are you going to continue that or never even think about that? When you are going up

there to the peak do you think you can have a half a pack of cigarettes or a small bottle of wine in your pocket? You need every ounce of energy. Even our ordinary clothing, if it is not holy salted and consecrated, we will not put it on, so how can we carry tobacco or alcohol? Would it become a hindrance at the peak or not? With that kind of mentality you cannot even reach here. (3-1-91)

The tradition of Unification Church Blessed families is completely the other way around from the rest of the world. A model must be built.

The Blessed families here are doctors for the sick and decaying country of America. All American families are broken down with illness, how can they save themselves? They need a doctor. In the Blessed families we see a cure to bring about the True husband and True wife, for the True father and True mother, True brother and True sister. Otherwise we cannot save the American family system.

Blessed families should be doing awesome things, but sometimes they do bad things themselves. That is no good. Most of you drank beer and wine before you joined the church, didn't you? Especially women! There is hardly anyone who never drank alcohol. Now you drink, not openly, but hiding it. Father understands that kind of beer is more delicious than the beer you drink openly. Those who say, "Yes, I stealthily drank a few beers," raise your hands and you can be forgiven. If you don't you will carry this with you to spirit world! Only a few of you raised your hands, but Father feels all of you have done this. ... From today, we should not drink.

We have to win over the satanic world. Satan has very strong weapons which include wine and drugs. He uses them to destroy heavenly orderliness. Drugs are destruction itself. They are the palace of Satan.

Sixty thousand people die every day and end up in hell in spirit world. Nobody is thinking about stopping and reversing this trend, only Father Moon thinks about it seriously. Do you think God will look at this and say, "You are doing the right thing," or do you think He will say, "Let them go to hell?" So, will you ever smoke? Will you ever even pretend to smoke? Those who say, "I will still smoke once in a while Father," please raise your hands. In all seriousness, if you are so hooked, Father will give you a forty day grace period. You can get over that habit within this forty days. If you want to do that most quickly, you can smoke three cigarettes at the same time. Continue that for forty days and at last you will say, "I don't like those cigarettes!" and you will throw them out. It is the same with wine. You can put a hose into your mouth! You can do this for forty days, but not more. Those who promise and pledge, "Father I will never smoke, I will never drink again," please raise your hands. Drugs too and sexual activity too. Illicit love is the worst thing you can imagine. You must have correct sexual action. Today we have a new beginning as far as these matters are concerned. (4-26-92)

Father is intoxicated by True Love. I don't need anything else to further intoxicate me. God intoxicates me. True love intoxicates me. That is the joy of my life. ... Satan is trying to confuse the environment and confuse society. That is why people think their best friend is drugs, alcohol, tobacco and free sex. They live with a vainglorious attitude, embracing materialism, food, selfishness and homosexual love.

What about whiskey? Father has little knowledge about whiskey, about the best name brand and so on. I have heard that there are also so many good beers. I don't

even know what is out there.

Water is sweeter than anything in the world, much sweeter than whiskey.

The mind should be the master over the body. But in fallen man this is the opposite, because Satan has made it this way. How painful this life must be! What about yourself? Who is the master? Is the mind controlling the body or the other way around? In a way we are all in a struggle, fighting within ourselves. All the good work of saints and religions have been created to restore and strengthen the mind, to restore it back to the original position. Through this we can have a true, happy life. This is the purpose of religion.

The work of religion is to booster the strength of the mind so it can subjugate the body. No matter what the name of the religion, they have all been working for this same good goal. If that is the case, then all good religions have to have something in common. This common thing is that they are trying to suppress or torment the body. This is the work of religion. Therefore, all religions are working against the craving of the body. Whatever the body wants, religion says, "No."

American society is pursuing the body's freedom, the body's pleasure; it is the body-society. We can observe this here. Why should we torment our own body? Because my body has become the stage where Satan lives. Satan always uses the body, becoming arrogant, showing off and saying, "I'm supreme; I'm number one." This is Satan's way of life, an arrogant demonstration through the body. Furthermore, artificially intoxicating oneself, for example, the use of alcohol and the creation of a drug culture. In so many ways, American life is artificially intoxicated. They intoxicate themselves living an artificial life, smoking tobacco, etc.

What about whiskey? Father doesn't even know the names of good whiskeys or good beers. Satan is bringing bottles of whiskey and showing them off in front of God. "Look at this gold color," Satan would say. He deliberately leaves half a cup on the table and goes to the bathroom. "God, look at this! It is so delicious. What about it, for a change, at least one drink with me?" God sees and pretends He never saw or heard it.

An even more incredible example is cocaine. You are on a high, on a trip and Satan would say, "God you don't know this kind of joy. This is heaven. I feel so high." God will not be shaken, not by one iota. God will say, "Get behind me Satan. You don't know my one secret. I have a far greater heavenly intoxicating agent. It is natural, not artificial, and will last forever. This is true love."

If we are living in true intoxication and are really intoxicated by true love, how happy we will be. Yes or no? Do you think Father tried smoking, drinking or drugs? No. Then does this mean he never had any fun? He doesn't sleep very much, no entertainment, no sports, just working morning and night. Does he have any fun? Father is intoxicated by one thing, True Mother! [Applause]

You Unification Church members gave up your bad habits. What fun is there then? Father Moon has no carnal fun, but further he is persecuted even today! Father said these never bothered him at all. He is intoxicated by true love. I don't need anything else, that's the joy of my life. Today is the 71st birthday but he looks 20-years-old.

If someone gives you a cigarette will you put it between your two fingers? What about a can of beer or whiskey bottle? Everyone has an innate desire to live a good life. But when you come here, Father completely shuts this out. (2-20-91)

We Are Different

We are completely different from the satanic world; we have nothing to do with that world. Alcohol, drugs, free sex and homosexuality all are habits of the fallen world. We have nothing to do with those things. (2-1-93)

Some members wonder what is wrong with drinking a little alcohol, smoking or taking drugs. Liquor, for example, will only play an invading role and upset your balance, making you commit some mistake. (2-8-81)

In our towns, there will be no liquor store. (10-24-99)

ONLY HOPE IS THE UNIFICATION MOVEMENT

In a speech titled "Declaration Day of Heavenly Parentism" (9-1-97) Father said:

Absolute sex is the solution to the problem of AIDS.

How can this kind of action be prevented? Unless we have men and women as individuals and in groups applying themselves to stop and to prevent the practice of free sex and all the immorality of this secular world, we have no hope to save the world from this problem. The only hope is the Unification Church, because we promote absolute sex.

This absolute sex is the sledge hammer with which to hit Satan who is using tools such as cigarettes to begin enticing or seducing men and women. It is customary in the Orient for men to smoke, but women usually do not, because according to the traditional Oriental view any woman who smokes is really low class, like a prostitute. However, nowadays cigarettes, and of course alcohol and drugs, are being used by both men and women to seduce or create a certain rapport between men and women in the wrong direction. What does alcohol do to you? Once you become intoxicated the other party can usually control you easily. It doesn't matter whether you are a man or a woman. You can be pulled or you can pull someone else to do whatever you want to do with them. So what do people do after they become drunk with alcohol or intoxicated by drugs? Engage in free sex. As you know, America has launched wars against drugs many times, but all have failed. America should have given this responsibility to me with its full support; then I could have ended this problem a long time ago.

When I started the campaign for world salvation, many people in the world thought that just like the fig tree in the time of Jesus I would bear no fruit. Eventually, however, as time passes people are coming to realize that the fruit of Rev. Moon, like the clean-cut, clean action, clean idea, clean everything Unification Church members with a higher moral standard than they can even imagine, is really ripe and the right one.

So now people are coming closer to me and are recognizing the contribution of my efforts to this world. The parents and relatives of our members in particular have started opening their eyes wider and wider because they see the reality, and the truth of my teachings. They see that in there can be found the characteristics of a true man and woman, true husband and wife, true family, nation, world and beyond. So that turning around 180 degrees opposite to the direction of this present world they are amazed to see within Unificationism the amazing standard of every level of true

> king from that of the individual king to the cosmic king. Seeing how wonderful it is they want to bow down; the same is true for you. The world outside is now changing its direction 180 degrees.
>
> Think about the world situation. The sun is now rising in that world of darkness, lighting up every corner of it. That sun is Sun Myung Moon.
>
> So, since you know the truth, do you think you have a right to go after smoking and drinking, drugs and free sex? Now we know the identity of Satan. Satan has used smoking, drinking, drugs and free sex to destroy all of humanity. These things are Satan's armament! Once they are used or practiced, everything breaks apart, creating Satan's dungeon of hell on this earth.

Some may feel that it would be rude to turn down a glass of wine or bottle of beer or some kind of drink in social situations. Father couldn't care less that other people may be uncomfortable that we make it known we absolutely don't drink alcohol. If there is a toast then put the glass to your mouth but don't drink. I asked Bo Hi Pak if Father ever drank alcohol and he told me he never does. Neither should we. Here is a quote where Father speaks strongly against social drinking: "Do the Blessed families of the Unification Church use drugs? [No!] Do they practice free sex and free dating? No, man and woman do not touch outside of the Blessing. Do we drink alcohol? [No!] But you are American youth and American youth like that direction! [No!] Father heard that some members of ACC began drinking. It may be just for social reasons, but it is no good. Father thought he should tear their mouths apart. Father won't do it; Father will let you do it. If Father tears someone's mouth apart because he drank alcohol, it is not good for obvious reasons. But, if you did it, Father doesn't feel there would be any problem. Do you think this is a laughing matter or would you really do it? Have you ever thought, 'I will be the one who knocks out everyone in my community who uses drugs or indulges in free sex'? Have you ever imagined that you would sweep them out? How can a person who never thought that way save America? Concept will never save America. Only by your living the concept can you save America." (4-26-92)

The Mormon Church has written about their absolute values: "The world may have its norm; the Church has a different one. It may be considered normal by the people of the world to use tobacco; the Church's standard is a higher plane where smoking is not done. The world's norm may permit men and women social drinking; the Lord's church lifts its people to a norm of total abstinence. The world may countenance premarital sex experiences, but the Lord and his church condemn in no uncertain terms any and every sex relationship outside of marriage."

Abraham Lincoln never drank alcohol because he said it made his mind dull and his opponent in the Civil War, Robert E. Lee, was also a teetotaler who said, "My experience through life has convinced me that, while moderation and temperance in all things are commendable and beneficial, abstinence from spirituous liquors is the best safeguard of morals and health."

There is an interesting book by Samuele Bacchiocchi titled *Wine in the Bible: A Biblical Study On the Use of Alcoholic Beverages*. He argues that Jesus drank unfermented grape juice, not fermented wine. He writes, "This book addresses from a Biblical perspective the most prevailing, costly and destructive habit of our society, the drinking of alcoholic beverages. ... Many well-meaning Christians find the fundamental justification for their moderate drinking of alcoholic beverages in the teachings and example of Jesus. ... The claim that Christ used and sanctioned the use of alcoholic beverages has been found to be unsubstantiated. The evidence we have submitted shows that Jesus abstained from all intoxicating substances and gave no sanction to His followers to use them."

Drinking in the Bible was a cultural value, not an eternal value. We have to pick and choose what

is cultural and what is eternal in the Bible. We have to understand how we follow Jesus. Jesus, like all other Jews, was circumcised. The Bible teaches male circumcision because it was an indemnity payment for the misuse of Adam's sexual organ. That tradition is defunct. It is now wrong to circumcise. The Pope, priests and nuns have been celibate for two thousand years because they read the Bible as saying it is the highest spiritual act to follow Jesus in not marrying. Sun Myung Moon teaches that they should marry. The era of celibacy is over.

NEVER GAMBLE

Father teaches us that casinos are "evil" places: "I don't approve of going to bars, places where people are drinking, gambling and doing many bad things" (1-12-92). He speaks very strongly against gambling:

> I have paid much attention to Las Vegas, the gambling capital of America, because some day that has to be cleaned up too.
>
> We are truly the Heavenly army and we have just received our command from God Himself to go out and work to clean up all immorality—drug abuse, homosexuality, prostitution, gambling. I know how all these ungodly activities operate. I know how the casinos operate in Las Vegas and how that city is run. Unless all this immorality is cleaned up, America has no chance for survival in the future. Nobody but the Unification Church can do this job. (2-27-83)
>
> Many gamblers ruin their families by their compulsive gambling. ... restore those people and help mend their homes. (10-7-79)
>
> We get to know the evil society, and then we create a ladder for it. We must witness to people from all walks of life. You might go to Hollywood and witness to movie stars, gamblers, drinkers, for they are also part of humanity. The mere fact that we are in Las Vegas does not mean we are gamblers. Why would we go to a place of prostitution? Only to save the people there. That's how the Unification Church thinks.
>
> After I came to America, I studied the social ills here including the Mafia, drug abuse, sexual immorality, and so on. I studied such places as Hollywood and the movie industry in order to discern their problems. I also visited gambling centers such as Las Vegas and Atlantic City, in order to understand them better. Gambling has become a nationwide problem here. (2-7-84)
>
> I have studied the gambling world for 30 years, but never took a seat at the table. (8-20-00)
>
> I come to Las Vegas to change it to a heavenly place. I go to the casino, but I have never personally touched a card. (8-31-09)
>
> Father represents absolute good and perfection. If he goes to any evil area, such as a gambling casino, Father when going in there immediately knows how to digest it. (1-28-93)
>
> At the end of last year and the first part of this year I visited Las Vegas four times. Why? There are many dead gamblers in spirit world who otherwise would have no way to be forgiven. People think that I go to Las Vegas to play the slot machines or to win at blackjack, but that is absolutely untrue. That condition has now been fulfilled, and even though I may have to stop over in Las Vegas on a plane trip, I

would not even touch a slot machine. Las Vegas means no more to me than New York or Washington, D.C. When I look at Las Vegas, I think of how that carnal city could have a God-centered future.

The first time I arrived in this country I visited every corner of this land in all 50 states to pray for the nation. I went to the high and low places, the bad places and the famous places in order to pray for them. I have even been to gambling places to pray for the people who lived such kinds of lives. (5-15-77)

I have been thinking very much about how we can clean up a city like Las Vegas. Maybe we could set up a gigantic casino with all the gambling machines and games and then set fire to them and burn it all up in one night. That would be dramatic! Then I would explain why we have to do this, why gambling is no good and why so many things in Las Vegas are wrong.

Another place I want to clean up is New York. There is a tremendous amount of prostitution, not only in New York but also in Japan and Korea, and I have been thinking very much about that dark side of society. Religious leaders must look at reality and try to find solutions instead of avoiding the problems. (10-1-97)

As you know, the movie industry is a very powerful force but also very immoral. It needs a revolution; a new heavenly spirit must enter it. Those Hollywood superstars have great influence among young people, but their impact is often ungodly. The government cannot alter this; only a spiritual revolution can transform the situation. Sometimes I go to Las Vegas, Atlantic City, Reno, and so forth, to observe what is going on in the world of gambling. I must get first-hand information. Cancer is brewing in such places; there are many cancerous threats to civilization growing in Hollywood, Las Vegas and New York. (9-16-79)

Those young people who are becoming addicted to drugs are melting their own brains, like butter. They will not live very long, or if they do they will live like vegetables. Their numbers are increasing every year. Drugs are peddled on the city streets in broad daylight. Who in the world is going to put a stop to all this? Where does the trend of free sex originate from? The movies, television and so on are stimulating it. Father Moon and the Unification Church members must stop these evils from influencing the morality of young people here. We must also put a stop to those gambling places which trap people in another form of addiction. (*God's Warning to the World: Reverend Moon's Message from Prison*)

When Father goes to a casino in Atlantic City he represents the absolute good going into something evil. Father figures out how to subjugate the atmosphere and digest the evil. You live in a satanic world. You digest this evil and convert it to goodness.

The fallen world has no way to do it. It needs the Messiah. He comes with the power, authority, truth and love of God. He unites Mind and Body, the family, all levels and converts the world of false love into a world of True Love, Life and Lineage. Thus the Messiah cannot come on the clouds.

Only True Parents can change the fallen love, life and lineage into the Heavenly True Love, Life and Lineage. Who are the True Parents? The Saviors of Mankind! Do you really believe that? (1-28-93)

DIES FOR LACK OF DISCIPLINE

The Bible has been a powerful influence and inspiration for many people to be disciplined. The Tenth Commandment of the Ten Commandments says a man should not covet another man's wife. Proverbs 5:18-23 gives wise advice to men saying: "Rejoice in the wife of your youth. Let her breasts satisfy you at all times with delight. Why be captivated, my son, with an immoral woman, or embrace the breasts of an adulterous woman? For the Lord sees clearly what a man does, examining every path he takes. An evil man is held captive by his own sins; they are ropes that catch and hold him. He dies for lack of discipline, and because of his great folly he is lost." Let's not die for lack of discipline.

CHARACTER

Father implores us to be people of impeccable character and integrity. He urges us to be saints. In *The Way for Young People* Sun Myung Moon says, "Who is a man of character? Is it someone who lives for the sake of eating? Or is it someone who has artistic or poetic talents so that he can fully appreciate the beauty of the world and whisper to the mountains and fields and sing to the flowing water? Who is closer to a man of original value? The one who lives for food is close to an animal and the one who can enjoy nature and who has rich poetic feelings is close to an angel. There are two kinds of people: one is animalistic and the other idealistic. ... What is the Unification Church trying to do? It is not just trying to make great men, but saints. ... Saints should teach true life, true character, and then true love. Also, they should teach the true character of God."

Aldo Leopold said, "Ethical behavior is doing the right thing when no one else is watching—even when doing the wrong thing is legal." Father teaches that we are to be religious people who are in control of our body. A person is just half a person without a mate. The two should help each other achieve mind/body unity:

> What is the difference between Satan's love and God's love? Satanic love made our bodies the master, trampling upon the mind and making it the servant of the body. If the mind becomes the servant and the body becomes the master, performing atrocities to the mind, this is slavery of the mind under the body. This is the fallen state. Actually the mind should be the master over the body. The body should obey the mind, but this is opposite now because Satan made it opposite and so the mind is trampled by the body. How painful is this life!
>
> What about yourself? When you look at yourself, what do you think? Is your mind controlling your body or is your body controlling your mind? What do you think in your case? In a way we all are struggling within ourselves. All the good works of the saints and the religions have served to strengthen the mind so that the mind could occupy the original position, subjugating the body. Then the body becomes obedient to the mind and a harmony between the mind and body is created thus bringing a true happiness to life. That is the purpose of the teaching of the saints. That is the purpose of religion. The work of religions is what? Religion is to boost the strength of the mind, to energize the mind so that the mind becomes strong enough to subjugate the body. This is the basic work of religion, regardless of the name of the religion. All the major good religions of the world have been working for that one single goal. If this is the purpose of religion, then all good religions have to have something in common. The common point is that all religions try to suppress the body, even torment the body so it does not become the strong master of the mind. Therefore all major, high religions go against the cravings of the body. Whatever the body wants religion says, "No." Whatever the body aspires to, religion says, "No." (2-20-91)
>
> As long as you control your bodily desire then your mind will naturally go in the right direction. If your mind is going up to the level where God's love can be tapped

directly, then your life will become enriched. Do you follow? Then why do we marry? Because as an individual man and woman are only half of a whole human being. If you truly want to conquer the concept of love and perfect it, then you need both the convex and concave sides to become one in perfection in order to create perfect love. Your mind goes into your body and becomes one.

Where your love becomes totally one, God's love can be grafted on there and you can be united with God in that very place at that very moment. Do you understand? (Yes, Father.) In order for man to be perfected you have to go through the love of woman. And vice versa, in order for woman to be perfected she needs to go through man's love. It is the only route. (11-23-94)

Good families are made from good marriages, and good marriages are made from good men and women. Unless we become people of goodness, we cannot bring goodness to our marriages and families. Our first obligation as religious people is to achieve goodness within our own lives. At the center of goodness is unselfishness; at the center of evil is selfishness.

Throughout history our best guide for self-improvement and responsible moral behavior has come from our respective religions— our scriptures, traditions, and teachers. Through personal striving and seeking to apply what we learn, we endeavor to make of ourselves respectable and upright people who can contribute constructively in our families and in society. In these efforts all people experience struggle. We try to embody the high ideals of our traditions, but we experience daily in ourselves the unwanted impulses of greed, dishonesty, lust, and self-excuse qualities which we know lead to suffering in the world and which we must reluctantly acknowledge are in ourselves as well.

In embarking on a Blessed marriage, we as individuals are called to progress to a higher stage of unselfishness. With God's Blessing and support, we can overcome the age-old problem of desiring one thing with our higher mind yet finding in ourselves powerful impulses to do the opposite. The Blessing calls us to strive constantly for the higher good, for the sake of our spouses, for the sake of our children, and for the sake of the world. (*Blessing and Family*)

TRUE FATHER HAS NO CRAVINGS

In the above quotes Father says, "Therefore all major, high religions go against the cravings of the body. Whatever the body wants religion says, 'No.' Whatever the body aspires to, religion says, No.'" I ask Bo Hi Pak after he had been a close disciple of his for over 50 years if Father had any favorite foods. He said Father liked every food he ever ate, no matter what country he was in or what kind of food he was served. He said he had never heard Father say he craved any food. Father repeatedly pushes us to be the most disciplined people on earth:

It isn't necessary to say a lot of words to people; just be disciplined, and they will demonstrate their respect by wanting to follow your pattern. (9-16-79)

DO NOT COMPLAIN – DO NOT GIVE UP

I want to give you two pieces of advice. First, under any circumstances do not complain. Second, do not give up. ... Internal discipline is such that you can force yourself to do something even when you don't want to. ... I want you to become subject and take the initiative out of your own desire, with no one forcing you to do anything. If you want to push yourself and discipline yourself and really give 100% for God and humanity, you will become God's pride. I never want to feel that you are just following my instructions but rather that you have really perfected yourself in the image of God on your initiative. (10-1-97)

REVOLUTION

The Unification Church is ordained to bring about a revolution in America by restoring moral discipline. We have undertaken this sacred mission not only for this nation but for the world as well. (6-20-82)

We need a revolution, but not one with tanks and artillery. The only way to save this country is to revolutionize the concept of sex and do away with promiscuity. We need to get rid of drugs and the immoral family. (12-29-91)

I urge American women to protect yourselves from these kinds of temptations. This is the worst enemy you have to face. You have to protect yourself before you can accomplish anything. You Unificationist women are a new breed of people. Are you somewhat better than ordinary American women, or far better?

Do you suppose I am a different kind of man because of who I am? I am not immune to temptation. I'm even more receptive to all kinds of sensations. If I didn't know how to control myself, I would react even more strongly than you to such stimulations. So do you think my struggles are easier than yours, or more difficult? I had to fight a hundred times harder in order to control these sensations and gain the victory for God and mankind.

There is one way in which I am different from you: I never considered following a woman. On the contrary, the opposite has happened. Many women have followed me, but I knew how to erect the proper barrier and protect myself. God knows that I have this absolute confidence and that I am qualified to bear the responsibility for liberating mankind, the world, and God.

TRUSTWORTHY

God knows me inside out. God would never take a chance on me. Therefore He tested me until He was sure that my mouth, ears, nose, eyes, and all other senses were dependable. I made great efforts to prove my trustworthiness.

It is very important to protect yourself from evil. There is no challenge I haven't thought about and devised ways to overcome. I even tested myself by looking at magazine pictures of beautiful women and asking myself what I would do if one of them crawled into my bed. "I would cut my belly out before I would do anything," I resolved. "When she saw the knife, she would leave quickly!" I considered how I would handle temptation from a beautiful white woman, from a black woman, from an Oriental woman. I considered what special qualities I knew about such women that I could utilize to help me resist their advances. I realized that this was a critical area of temptation because that's how the fall happened.

Even at a very young age, I tested myself daily. When I undertook this mission of liberating mankind, I thought very deeply because I realized that if I could not overcome such temptations, I could not be truly confident. My mission was to liberate God and liberate all mankind. In the process I prayed a lot to make sure that God would protect me and give me the confidence I needed.

ABSOLUTE CONFIDENCE

I have absolute confidence, so I am never shaken no matter what kind of persecution comes my way. I stand firm as a rock.

PRAYER IS ESSENTIAL

Prayer is essential to winning this victory. When you face difficult and trying times, instead of asking somebody else for advice, go to a dark room and pray to God asking Him what to do. He will give you a much better answer than you will get from your colleagues. Then you should invest your time and energy into solving that problem. Day after day, you should practice overcoming your temptations.

I have spent more than 12 hours a day praying deeply about overcoming temptations. American prayer is five minutes at most. But a few minutes isn't enough time to solve a deep problem. For example, you would have to go through incredibly deep water to reach the bottom of the ocean. It takes more than five minutes just to get to the bottom of a problem, let alone solve it.

Those who develop the practice of praying don't make big mistakes, while others who don't pray enough will make many mistakes and have to spend a lot of time correcting them. You can take my word for it! Once you develop the habit and taste of prayer, you will find it more valuable than eating, listening to good music, or watching a nice movie. After you have experienced deep prayer, you will automatically find solutions to your problems. You won't have to struggle so much to accomplish things. Prayer has tremendous mystic meaning.

FOCUSED ON THE GOAL

Even though you may consider yourself a light-hearted American, you should begin to see yourself as one American who needs to be more serious than anybody else in history. You should resolve that no matter what difficulty may lie before you, you can reach your goal through the power of prayer. You should be so focused on the goal that you could offer your life with no regrets.

HABIT OF PRAYER

I have been talking about prayer in the traditional sense of deep prayer. But for Unification Church members, your daily life should be a kind of prayer as well. While you work, sleep, walk, talk, or eat you should develop the habit of prayer. That way you can experience God's abiding presence with you. (6-12-83)

Father gives great insights into how we can be disciplined and overcome our fallen natures. Here are some of his words of wisdom. I hope they inspire you to go on and read him in depth so you can get tips on how to live a religious life and be spiritually strong:

NO LOVE BOOKKEEPING

When we imitate God then we always wish our partner or our object to be better than ourselves. You want your wife to be better than yourself. Your wife wants her husband to be better than herself. Parents want their children to be better than themselves. Total investment, then forget it. God invests and then forgets. He doesn't remember. God does not do love bookkeeping. That is the characteristic of True Love. (2-21-91)

INVEST TOTALLY

God's way of loving is to invest totally, 100 times 100 percent. When we imitate God then we always wish our partner or our object, our spouse and our children, to be better than ourselves. God invests totally and then forgets. God does not do love bookkeeping! (12-19-90)

Now that you have heard Father Moon's speech, you can change your current position 180 degrees and become a new person, new nation, and new world. (12-19-

90)

NEVER BE DISCOURAGED
Never be discouraged. Move on to home church and we shall win the victory there. Those who say, "I will do it," raise your hands and show me. Thank you. (6-20-82)

TEACHING CLEAR CONCEPT OF GOD
With my entire heart and soul I have been teaching American youth a new revelation from God. They now have a clear concept of what the God-centered family, church, and nation should be like. They also know the dark reality of America. Thus they have become determined fighters to bring new life and salvation to America before it is too late. They know the critical state of the nation. They know the grieving heart of God. And they are absolutely determined to turn the tide back to God. Their enthusiasm is beautiful to behold. (4-1-89)

POISONOUS ATMOSPHERE
There are all kinds of men and women trying to tempt you. You are out there facing a poisonous atmosphere every day. Why do you go on like that, suppressing your desire? Because you want to win the victory of true love. (11-21-82)

PERSEVERANCE IS THE QUALITY WE NEED
Yet if you know you are going the right path, even when temptation comes, if you don't change your love or your focus and just hang on to it until the end, then you will surely win. You will see. Perseverance is the quality we need. Then you will come to fulfill the prophecy the Bible speaks of. Then God's will, will be done.

There are so many elements within American society that tempt and entice people to abuse their freedoms. Giving in to these temptations will ultimately send people to hell. It is heartbreaking to see an environment which encourages people to go only to hell, not to Heaven. It is a society which sells tickets to hell. (12-27-81)

COMPLETELY PURE NEW MEN AND WOMEN
But we are in the position to set a new tradition. We are creating historic family foundations. We must not fall victim to the world's temptations because we are in a position to begin God's realm. You engaged couples must be completely free from lust for some other man or woman. Even to think of sexual relationships with someone other than your fiancé is a sin. You should remain completely pure, liquidate the past, and become new men and women. You must nurture your relationship with your heavenly counterpart, your fiancé. (12-27-81)

CENTER LIFE ON MIND
Humanity can be categorized into two groups. Those who live their lives centered upon their bodily desires and those who try to center their lives upon the mind or spiritual life. If we say the right hand side belongs to God and the left hand side belongs to Satan, would the mind be on God's side or Satan's side? (God's side.) What about the body? (Satan's side.) Do you believe this absolutely? (Yes.) Have you ever considered to whom your five senses belong? If you have one eye belonging to God and the other belonging to Satan, then your life will be standing at the crossroads between Heaven and Hell. These are not Father's words; this is the universal law. (5-26-96)

DON'T PANIC
When we set goals we are going to have obstacles. Father teaches and pushes us to overcome the

"difficulties" we all experience by persevering "to find the solution": "I am giving you men and women a mandate. You are destined to live this central life where the vertical and horizontal lines cross, where you can find the invisible love of God and the visible love of True Parents. You are destined to consummate that love and expand it to the world. Of course, there are difficulties on this path. Whenever my boat, 'New Hope,' leaves port it is in good shape and everything is functioning smoothly. But something invariably happens. Maybe a storm will come up, or the engine will develop trouble. A crew member may make a mistake and overlook something. But the important thing is to cope with any situation and persevere to find the solution. Instead of panicking, take care of the matter and go on." ("New Family Given By God" September 5, 1982)

Father says, "Everything exists in Subject and Object relationships. When you enter the Unification Church this will come into effect immediately. Father is the subject and you are the object. There is only one way" (1-28-93). If we are good objects to Father then we will be passionate to teach and live the truth more than we are passionate for material possessions and fitting into society. Father tells us:

> Thinking about yourself takes you to hell. Thinking of others takes you to heaven. The war between your mind and body is worse than the World Wars I, II and III. The only way to win this war is to come to Father Moon's teachings. (1-28-93)

> Dear members, throughout my entire life to this day, I have lived without any interest in worldly things.
>
> That is why Jesus said with concern, "Therefore do not be anxious, saying, 'What shall we eat?' or 'What shall we drink?' or 'What shall we wear?' For the gentiles seek all these things; and your heavenly Father knows that you need them all. But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all these things shall be yours as well." (Matt. 6:31-33)
>
> — "Rally to Advance the Realization of the Settlement of Cheon Il Guk The Restoration of Our True God's Homeland" (3-4-05)

> Don't just make effort for your own family, but undertake great endeavors for the nation.
>
> A great person doesn't only manage the household for his or her own family or nation; he is the one who manages the household for the world. And who could be a person greater than that? The greatest is the one who is willing to manage God's household.
>
> In this respect, saints do not dream centering on the human household; they are the dreamers whose center is God's household. The founders of the religions, Jesus, Confucius, Buddha and Mohammed, realized God as the essence of the household of a dimension higher and more ideal than the human one. That's why they longed for the ideal.
>
> When we silently sacrifice everything for the sake of God, He will protect us. God surely will be at our side.
>
> Your family should be the family of love, and you are to become the public husband and wife or parents centering upon God's love. Don't be the personal husband and wife or parents centering upon yourselves. Usually there is no public husband and wife, no public parents and no public sons and daughters in America. They are not walking the way of public love; instead they are walking the way of private love, in

which the love of husband and wife, parents and children is centered upon themselves. Such love destroys the nation and the world. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

CONTROL

A man who marries should be in control of his demons and is therefore able to be an exemplary husband and father. Until a man can accomplish growing spiritually to have a godly personality, he should not marry. In this transition period to the ideal world there are some people who cannot be trusted and who should never marry. Father spoke publicly in America in 2004 in a tour entitled "World Peace and Unification Centering on the True Love of God". He taught that every person has the responsibility to overcome his or her fallen nature and achieve mind/body unity. In his speech titled, "God's Providence to Establish the World Transcending Religions and Nations Based Upon the Absolute Values of True Love," he said:

> Selfish individualism is in direct contradiction to the spirit that blossoms when we live by true love's absolute values. Instead of sacrificing and giving for the sake of others, self-centeredness calls others to sacrifice for me. This leads us to be concerned first with our own interests.
>
> Through the Fall, Satan diabolically injected self-centeredness into the mind-body relationship. He planted this poison mushroom in the human heart. Although the embrace of self-centeredness may lead to a beautiful appearance, worldly fame and earthly comfort, it is a trap. Enter it recklessly, and it leads to addiction and a life of suffering that is difficult to escape.
>
> The Fall was the root of free-sex and the origin of self-centered individualism. Take a look around you. We see self-centered individualism of the worst kind. Everywhere people are over-consuming out of greed. Free sex is rampant among the young. Whether in the East or the West, people are casting aside the dignity and value of the family and pursuing physical pleasure. Millions fall into drug addiction, contact deadly diseases and meet tragic ends.
>
> The conscience does not desire a decadent and meaningless life. Even as we pursue paths of extreme individualism and bodily pleasure, our conscience raises an alarm. Every person has a God-given original mind that longs to live in a universe, nation, neighborhood and family wrapped in the loving embrace of parents and siblings.
>
> Still, we continue to walk contrary to the original mind's desire, and eventually the conscience burns out. Faced with the inescapable conflict between the body's selfish desires and the conscience, we deaden the pain with escapist drugs and, in the extreme, resort to suicide. Our lives testify to the truth of the proverb, "you shall reap what you sow"
>
> Dear guests, do you know the dividing line between Heaven and Hell? Is it in the air? Is it in a church sanctuary? Is it in a national government? No, the dividing line between Heaven and hell is found in your sexual organ. This is where the greatest tragedy in human history occurred, which turned heaven and earth upside-down.
>
> If you use your sexual organ recklessly, like a blind man, you will surely go to hell. On the other hand, if you use it in accordance with the standard of God's love, you will go to heaven. Who can deny this? If you doubt it, I ask you to carefully read the *Divine Principle*, which contains the laws of heaven that were revealed to me.
>
> Hundreds of thousands of young people throughout the world who have accepted the teachings of the Father Moon have ceased engaging in free sex. The message of the pure love movement, which advocates "absolute sex," is now spreading like wildfire.
>
> What kind of person does the world call happy? What is the basis of happiness?

Does power and authority bring happiness? Does having tremendous wealth bring happiness? Does happiness come from possessing a unique talent? Does happiness come by becoming a world-renowned scholar or gaining a coveted position? None of these guarantee happiness.

Nothing external can be the basis of eternal happiness. Sooner or later the happiness it brings will fade, stimulating anew the search for happiness. In the end, a person finds genuine happiness in a family that has loving parents, a couple in true love, and children who are devoted and faithful to their parents.

In the original family, love for one's parents should be stronger than the love between husband and wife, and love for one's grandparents should be stronger than the love for one's parents. This sets up the tradition and ethics of love.

The original family is the model of the Kingdom of Heaven. The parents are analogous to the leader of a nation; the children correspond to the citizens of a nation; and the family's house and property correspond to the land of that nation. When the values of true love in the original family apply to the governance and social life of the nation, that nation takes the form of the Kingdom of Heaven.

Thus, the starting point of the Kingdom of Heaven lies not in the individual or in the nation, but in the family. Once we enter heaven and are surrounded by our beloved family, we will not want to leave. Though we see each other hundreds and thousands of times, we will still want to see each other again and again. This is our original homeland, for which everyone shares a common longing.

We first must become people of character who can create heavenly families. In other words, we must achieve individual maturity. The path to becoming people of character, to achieving individual maturity, lies in perfecting the harmony and unity between our mind and body. Originally, we were created to live without any inner conflict. The mind is supposed to guide the body, while the body acts in absolute obedience to the mind.

No one in human history has ever achieved mind-body unity during his or her life on earth. ... No one has known the method to win the unrelenting, internal war. Self-discipline alone is not enough to win the victory. All such efforts are worthless unless one understands the providence of Heaven.

Father teaches that Jesus died before he could give all the truth but Father has

successfully completed the mission of the Lord of the Second Advent, Savior and True Parent. Now I am revealing this truth, bringing to a conclusion the final stage of the providence for humankind's salvation. The absolute values of true love that I am teaching you will bring a revolution of character within mankind. Those who follow my teachings will achieve individual perfection and participate in the construction of the ideal of Heaven on earth. ... Unity of mind and body is impossible unless you live according to love's absolute values where you give yourself for the sake of others completely. Please disregard self-centeredness. It is the root of fallen nature.

Ultimately, the realization of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth depends upon the existence of original, true families. Individuals who have achieved harmony and unity between the mind and body create such families. They will form a society, nation and world characterized by interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values, in which people live in harmony on the greater good. Unity between mind and body means to live in absolute obedience to the voice of the conscience.

BE STRONG

He ended his speech commanding us to be strong in this difficult task of teaching these truths that are painful for fallen men and women to hear:

> Just as I suddenly received Heaven's call as a young man of fifteen and began an eighty-year course of blood, sweat and tears for the sake of bringing true liberation and complete freedom to God, and for the sake of saving humanity from Satan's yoke, so you also must now go forward determined to offer your lives in order to accomplish God's exalted will for the liberation and complete establishment of the world transcending religions and nations.
>
> Ladies and Gentlemen! Heavenly fortune is now shining upon this world, as the sun that rises powerfully in the eastern sky. The darkness that has covered this earth for tens of thousands of years has now been dispelled. The heavenly decree has taken root in your hearts. It is the path—your destiny—that you cannot avoid. Be strong and rise up. The time has come to truly experience the meaning of Jesus' teaching that whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever is willing to lose his life will find it. ...

VIRTUE

There are many books on living a virtuous life. The head of the Mormons, Gordon Hinckley, wrote a book giving ten virtues called *Standing for Something: 10 Neglected Virtues That Will Heal Our Hearts and Homes*. He begins with a chapter titled "Making a Case for Morality" in which he writes about being pure. He teaches against premarital sex. He writes: "Happiness lies in the power and the love and the sweet simplicity of virtue. This is not to suggest that we be prudish. We need not be ashamed. But if we were called upon to stand openly and give an accounting of ourselves, could we do it without embarrassment? If all the world were privy to our private behavior, would we feel confident and comfortable about the choices we have made? More importantly, are we at peace with ourselves."

KEEP THYSELF PURE

"Paul counseled Timothy, 'Keep thyself pure' (I Timothy 5:22). Those are simple words. But they are ever so important. Paul is saying, in effect: Stay away from those things that undermine and eventually destroy the soul. Stay away from that which leads to unclean thoughts, unclean language, and harmful behavior. Personal virtue is worth more than any salary, any bonus, any position or degree of prominence.

"We must reverse the trend toward moral degeneration.

"Is there a valid case for personal morality and virtue? It is the only way to freedom from regret. The peace of conscience that flows from personal virtue is the only peace that is not counterfeit."

SELF-MASTERY

In *Man of Steel and Velvet* Aubrey Andelin writes: "'He who rules within himself and rules his passions, desires, and fears is more than a king' (Milton). The foundation of a noble character is self-mastery. It's the key to overcoming faults which prevent us from the perfection we have been commanded to strive for. (Matt. 5:48) It's the means by which we apply truth to overcome weakness, conquer appetites and passions, and gives us the strength to devote ourselves to duty. The goal of life is to become finer persons and eventually perfect beings. The savior taught, 'Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.' To reach this perfection we must acquire the virtues of love, patience, compassion, generosity, devotion to duty, and many other godly traits. We will need to spend our time, money and energy in useful pursuits. It's essential that we respect our bodies, seeing that they have proper food, sufficient rest and exercise to function adequately as the residence of our spirits.

"An enemy or opposing force constantly lures us downward and away from the high goals. ... We are inclined to be carnal, sensual, lazy, irresponsible, selfish, and filled with fear. To overcome these weaknesses we must control ourselves. Reaching for 'higher ground' is a constant battle of overcoming.

"Self-mastery is the motivating force whereby we reach upward. Desire and willingness are not enough. Knowledge and insight are not sufficient, nor is an emphasis on priority. Suppose, for example, you would like to apply the knowledge of this book. You have the knowledge before you and you consider it important. You have a desire and willingness, but unless supported by a strong will, little will be accomplished.

"In today's world there's a 'downgrading' of the virtue of self-mastery. Some say it suppresses the emotions and that it's better for mental health to go along with natural impulses than to confront them with the opposition of one's will. Especially is this viewpoint applied to promiscuous sex. Some claim that denial of these urges leads to frustration and emotional turmoil. Those who advance this false theory don't realize that it's SIN that leads to frustration and mental problems, not the control of impulses. Subduing impulses results in growth. The goal of life is to have self-mastery over our natural impulses. The basis of true religion is to do that which is counter to human impulse—to love your enemies, to do good to those who hate you, and to pray for those who despitefully use you. The natural tendency is to hate our enemies and curse them that abuse us.

"We must face the fact that we don't overcome weakness without strength—the strength of a strong will. Self-mastery may be gained by: 1. Training the will 2. Prayer and 3. Fasting."

CHASTITY

"Chastity means to be sexually pure, or to refrain from sexual relations outside of marriage. It also means to avoid any perverse sexual activity in marriage or by oneself. Those who are not chaste are 'immoral,' usually in the form of fornication, adultery or homosexuality. Fornication is having sex when unmarried, adultery while married with someone other than one's wife or husband. Homosexuality is sex with someone of the same sex.

CONSCIENCE

"Pernicious theories claim that there's no harm in sexual activity if these intimacies are practiced between two consenting adults who both receive satisfaction from it. They blame society for their feeling of guilt. God has placed a conscience in us. It's the outraged conscience which is offended by immoral practices. The guilt is a positive feeling urging one to do what's right. When the offenders of God's laws urge public acceptance of their actions, they are hoping to avoid the guilt which is inevitable when one sins. What's right isn't determined by vote or by public acceptance. The consequence of sin is unavoidable.

WHY BE CHASTE?

"The first reason is that it's the command of God. The ringing command 'Thou shalt not commit adultery' was given to Moses for his people. This instruction was written in tablets of stone and reinforced in Scriptures many times. We read in First Cor. 6:9: 'Do not be deceived! Fornicators, idolaters, adulterers, male prostitutes, sodomites, thieves, the greedy, drunkards, revilers, robbers—none of these will inherit the kingdom of God.'

"Not only is chastity adhered to for reasons of obedience to God, but for a divine purpose in preserving the individual from deterioration. When practiced universally immorality destroys civilization. Sexual sin brings with it injury to the individual and is corruptive to society in the following ways:

How Sexual Sin Corrupts Mankind
"Distraction and deviation: Sexual sin is a consuming distraction to a man in his work and causes him to deviate from worthy goals. In focusing his interests and energies in an addictive life style, he loses perspective which eventually leads to his downfall.

"Conflict in spirit: The spirit of God strives in every man to lead him to righteous paths. When a man is immoral, he brings himself into conflict with God's spirit, or his own conscience, which produces a feeling of guilt. This guilt can cause emotional distress and mental illness. Immorality also destroys the finer or more noble things about him which emanate from a good spirit.

"Loses the spirit of God: It's written in the Holy Scriptures, 'He that looketh upon a woman to lust after her, or if any shall commit adultery in their hearts, they shall not have the Spirit, but shall deny the faith and shall fear.' The spirit of God is greatly needed to guide a man to a successful life, to help him make wise decisions, lay sound plans, and use good judgment. When he loses the spirit of God, he's left to grope along life's paths with forces so bewildering and difficult that they defy solution. This brings failure, both in his family and in his work.

"Downfall of nations: The greatest threat of any country lies in immorality, and especially in sexual immorality. Like the columns of the temple of Gaza which Samson pulled down, causing the entire temple to collapse, so will immorality lead to the weakening and eventual destruction of an entire civilization. Sexual immorality was the principal cause of the disintegration of the Roman Empire, Greece, Persia, Babylon, Sodom and Gomorrah, and others. It's the greatest threat in America today as well as many other countries and supersedes all other problems. It does, in fact, create most of them. If for no other reason than love of country and love of life should we avoid immorality and run from it as the greatest enemy of mankind. It will tear from us all that is near and dear."

What Chastity Does for the Man
"In addition to avoiding the pitfalls which would destroy him, chastity brings strength, both spiritual and physical. That individual who will garnish his life with virtue provides for himself an armor of protection which will help him withstand other temptations. He will attain an inner strength of spirit which will help guide him to a more perfect life. In addition he will gain a bright countenance and a wholesome spirit which makes an evil-minded person uncomfortable in his presence.

And finally Aubrey Andelin say, "The morally pure person has peace of mind—a freedom from fear that some long hidden skeleton in the closet will be uncovered, that he will cross paths with someone with the ammunition to blackmail or embarrass him. In teaching chastity to his children, he can do so with conviction and power."

MASTURBATION AND PORNOGRAPHY
For boys and men who have a porn addiction find books and videos to help you. And interesting writer on this is Gary Wilson. Check out his book and website: *Your Brain on Porn: Internet Pornography and the Emerging Science of Addiction* by Gary Wilson (www.yourbrainonporn.com). The key is in seeing sex from God's point of view. Father says if a man has no interests in women's breasts he "is not really a man":

> The breast of the woman is not only a symbol of love but also a source of life for her babies; through the breast, she feeds life to her child. The breast is large and rounded, but in the center the nipple is a different color. This illustrates God's dramatic character; He wanted to focus attention on that nipple, the central point. Perhaps you think this is a most amazing sermon you are hearing! When a man looks at a woman he naturally looks at her bosom — God made men that

way and it is not bad. That is the most mysterious area to a man and his attention is naturally drawn to it. If a man has no such an urge or interest, that person is not really a man. (1-2-83)

Father also teaches that women should not go topless in public. He writes:

> One day in Washington, D.C., I saw a girl walking around on the street wearing only the bottom of her bikini. She had nothing on top. I'm sure she was thinking: I'm perfectly free; I'm at liberty to expose myself wherever I desire. So I will wear my topless bikini on the street in broad daylight." Nobody said anything to her; people were walking by her, trying not to stare. Amazingly, one Oriental man who happened to be Father Moon was so disgusted by this that I scolded her and made her feel ashamed. There are two ways to react to such an incident: one person would feel apathetic and say, "I don't care." The other person will feel deeply concerned and want to do something to stop it. Which kind of reaction is needed for a healthy society? Certainly the second one. I don't think that girl will go around in her topless bikini again.
>
> I would like to see all Unification Church members reacting to their surroundings with a strong conscience not being apathetic at all. You must be people who care and who will work to build a healthy society. If a society continues to reject such efforts, it will eventually decline. (12-27-81)

RESPONSIBLE

Father teaches us to be responsible. We have responsibilities. He tells us we have the responsibility to help the providence by being confident teachers of the truth with our words and deeds. We are to be reliable and trustworthy as God's ambassadors. It is up to us to solve the problems people have. He says:

> What is the meaning of "providence?" [How God is working.] That is correct. We have to ask ourselves whether we have completed our responsibility in God's providence.
>
> Suppose there are a thousand naked women and ten handsome men. What if the most ugly of the men is your husband. What would you do? If the most beautiful woman (man) has the most unattractive man (woman) for a spouse, would they have to go after their own spouse's love organ, or the most attractive one's love organ? [Their own spouse's.] You are right. But as a man, if you are standing there naked and the most beautiful woman comes and touches your love organ, will your love organ wake up or sleep? If that happens and your love organ reacts strongly, you are a thief, taking another's property.
>
> No matter how ugly your wife, make love with true love three times and she will appear to be the most beautiful woman in the world in your eyes. Other beautiful women will give you no taste of sweetness, but your ugly wife will if you make true love three times. And if your husband is most ugly, but you open your heart and embrace and kiss him, it will be so powerful that he will want to eat your tongue. It will be the strongest hugging power. That taste of kissing is sweeter than honey. At that moment, will the husband and wife close their eyes or open them? That will require ten times the energy as usual, so the entire universe will mobilize to help you complete that process. If I talk more about this, you will grow tired of it. [No.] That means "know," K-N-O-W.
>
> ...the True Family's mission is to teach us how to live for others and give true love for the sake of humanity.
>
> We know about the original creation and the fall. After the fall there was no

understanding of restoration, but I corrected that. We know the history of restoration to the world level. We know how to describe Satan. We know of the Kingdom of God on Earth, the world of liberation and how to build it.

...we know how to become saints and divine sons and daughters.

There is family and youth breakdown, HIV and so many problems under the surface, how can the world stop this disintegration? Hope comes only by our absolute foundation.

This is the only way to go, whether we personally like it or not. With that confidence and pride, will you march forward? ("True Parents' Completion of Responsibility in View of Providence" December 26, 1999)

TRAINED TO BE DISCIPLINED

Father's job is to teach us how to be spiritually mature. He has worked tirelessly to train us to be the most disciplined people who have ever lived. He teaches in very plain language that our goal is to become perfect like he is. He always equates perfection with being able to resist the three main temptations of Satan—food, sex and laziness. He especially focuses on sexual purity. Jesus said we are not to commit adultery and we are not even supposed to think about it. Father speaks strongly about how we are to never fantasize and be sexual with anyone but our spouse. The following are excerpts from a speech about being disciplined leaders for this world. Father says we are supposed to become people that "God does not have to worry" we will fall when "we go out into the world." Our goal is to be absolutely trustworthy. Father has done his best to be a parent and train us to be strong, godly people. It is now time for Unificationist parents to train their children to be strong. He says:

What is the purpose of training? Of course to learn something. Mankind fell because of ignorance. If Adam and Eve knew enough they would never have fallen and suffered the consequence. It was due solely to lack of knowledge, ignorance that led to the Fall. Therefore the purpose of training is to learn enough, even beyond Adam and Eve's knowledge level, to know for sure, so that there is no room for the Fall. Instead of being ignorant we will go through training and become knowledgeable, not ignorant people, then there is no possibility to fall again. During the course of knowledge training we gain all knowledge about what fallen people are like, knowledgeable people are like, and about what the real cause and essence of the Fall was and how to prevent it, even who Satan is.

Through this course we become more and more clear, very clear, about the existence of Satan and the existence of actual people who Satan acts through give and take and who are Satan with a physical body. We know that possibility. We also know the world that is composed of that kind of individual whose mind is controlled by Satan. We can very clearly see that they fight each other. Satan is on top of them so they lie and deceive each other. It is either Satan or God. If God is the real master then they will not behave that way. So we can conclude it must be Satan who is on top of them because they behave that way.

Until now we knew about the satanic world but not that clearly. We knew there was something wrong but we did not know precisely that there is Satan, a real entity, like God, that straightforwardly works through man as an object. We now know that is Satan in action, and the society is largely a satanic world, and also that there is spirit world centered on Satan. We all know this so clearly, whereas people in the world don't know this. They are in it but don't know it. We have complete knowledge about how the Fall came about and how the world is now.

COMPLETE KNOWLEDGE ABOUT SATAN

Our purpose for giving training is to provide that knowledge, and to implant it unmistakably in each individual, so that with that knowledge each individual will never make the same mistake again. Once we go over the training period in which we gain complete knowledge about Satan and about mankind, by rightfully exercising that knowledge then you can immediately tell if your friend is a good friend on God's side, or if another friend is more on the satanic side or God's side, or at only at that particular time on the satanic side. You can tell, can't you?

We have all kinds of Unification Church members. All members are not at the same level. There are very weak members and strong members. Where can we draw the line and say beyond this are Unification Church members, others are just intermediate members, temporary, transient members? Which are Unification Church members? Actually, to make a strict definition of Unification Church members, when a person has complete knowledge of Satan and the human Fall and restoration, so he has no chance to fall back into the satanic world, then we can say for the first time he is a Unification Church member. This is a rather high criterion for today's reality but we have to maintain this criterion. Then he knows clearly about Satan and has no chance of committing the Fall again. So that is the purpose of this training, to provide knowledge to come to this level.

COMPLETE MAN

What the Old Testament intended to teach man and what the New Testament aimed to teach man and what *Divine Principle* aims to teach man is all consistent, they are not contradicting each other. In other words, they are all designed to teach man as a complete man.

THE MESSIAH DEFEATS TEMPTATION

And the Messiah is a quite typical example of that, a complete man, nothing else. If you simplify it, the Messiah is a perfect man, for the first time in history. Perfect man must have won over Satan completely. The worldly example of what the perfect man would be is if the most beautiful, tantalizing woman came next to that perfect man he wouldn't budge, not just conceptually, but also physically. Whereas any so-called best man in the world, if that situation arises he has no chance, he will just fall right in. Whereas the perfect man won't. And also if there are millions of dollars of bullion stacked up here, and there is a situation where he really needs money, he will not touch that money. He will not yield to temptation. And where there is a situation where he really wants to grab power, for some reason other than that of God, it is within his reach and no one will question it, he will not fall for it.

BEYOND THE TEMPTATION OF FOOD

And somewhere he is tested. The three tests of Jesus in the wilderness are a classical example of Satan's test. After so many days of fasting, Jesus was very hungry, and there was food, but not for Jesus. And Jesus did not fall for it. Jesus said, 'No. Man does not live by bread alone.' He denied this utmost necessity for survival. When a person is hungry and enticement by beauty is right nearby, of course hunger comes earlier. That means that because Jesus has gone beyond the temptation of food that he has gone beyond other enticements. So through his success on this one test we can know that Jesus has gone beyond satanic enticement.

Secondly, Jesus needed a church very much, and he was asked by Satan to jump down from the temple. That's what Jesus needed most badly, perhaps more than food, but Jesus said no. And also he was looking for the glory of the world for God, and Satan said I will give this to you if you worship me, but he did not do that. As

much and as badly he needed the glory, which he can return right to God, he refused. So through the example of Jesus' trials we can imagine our own trials too. Since we are not yet completed, not yet gone beyond the boundary of the satanic world, there is always temptation there. Someone may offer to provide you with a complete scholarship, at the best school in the United States, you can go to law school and go to the top of the ladder, and show you precisely the money. Or a beautiful woman may visit you, all naked, in your bed. That is the kind of temptation Satan will give you. Then Satan will offer what you need the most to fulfill your dispensation, if you do something for him. If you have desire to become the president of your country, which is not necessarily bad, and Satan knows this, Satan will come around and say, if you do this and that you will become the president of your country.

Then what is the answer to these temptations? What do we have to answer to them? Do we say no, or yes? Of course yes is not the right answer, but no is not the right answer either. The only right answer is, "I don't care what I become, the only thing I want to become is a son of God, that's all I want. Then through God's love, I will become the president of United States. Without God's love and becoming a son of God, I don't care what I become; I don't care if I become the world president, a teacher of a primary school, I don't care what I become, the only thing I want to become is a son of God. And through being a son of God I will receive love, and then maybe He will make me president, then I will take it. I really want to take it, but not any other way."

ABSOLUTELY CONFIDENT

So the purpose of training here is to equip fallen man with enough knowledge to not only resist the temptations, but also to know inside and out, like all educated people, that when Satan comes around and tests you that you not only resist the temptation but you also scold Satan for testing you. Throw the book at him for testing you. He has no right to test you. So once you know that, how can you be more confident? You know the satanic world, no matter what kind of temptation comes around, nothing bothers you. Then, once you have become absolutely confident, you know what Satan is like, you know the satanic world, what it is composed of, how it originated, once you are completely knowledgeable about that, then you have confidence. Now I am trained right I will go out and cope with it.

PERFECT MAN

[Be] ...a perfect man who will never fall into temptation when you go out into the world. This is the principled way.

What does a leader do, and what does a member do? A member survives in the satanic world without being violated. A leader goes into the satanic world and not only survives but also picks up the people and saves them. That's what a Unification Church leader is capable of doing. This is the absolute standard training course we must go through, the formula.

GO OUT INTO THE WORLD

So if you know the real meaning of this training program you must go through it. Once you go through this training program successfully, you cannot help becoming a heavenly person, which is the same thing as God's son and God's daughter and no one can be opposed to that. If we maintain our rigid standard of training in this program, it will be absolutely necessary for real Unification Church members. If this is maintained and everyone goes through this training program, then for the first

time in history, except for the Messiah himself, everyone can go out into the world and God does not have to worry about it.

Once we achieve that standard then the standard will widely prevail. Then if one sister and brother happen to stay in one room overnight no one will suspect that anything will happen. One will have to try very, very hard to fall, it is impossible to fall. This is not only talk but the way it must be. And we must train ourselves to become that way. Pushing this to the extreme, say we have one naked brother and one naked sister, face to face, and we put the rope around them all night and they couldn't care less! Only they will feel uncomfortable because they are tied up and can't move, but eventually they will be tired and sleep. Then in the morning everyone will congratulate them because they will say only they had a rather uncomfortable night but that is all.

No one trained me so I had to train myself. I went through that training within myself. As you can imagine all sorts of female members were ready to give up their life for me, and all sorts of situations came. But for the sake of God's love I forgot everything else, except God's love. Only after that you gain everything back, everything. Then after that, when I was preparing to marry the most ugly woman, heaven brought the most beautiful woman for me to marry. This is the result, how I came to marry such a beauty as Mother! Without this you can never go back to God.

Do you now know better about Home Church? Do you know the meaning of the Messiah having sacrificed himself? When somebody comes and beats you up with no reason, you should not complain because you are offering yourself. When you kill a lamb he will not resist you, not complain to you, so you should not resist whoever comes to you. This is not only what we should do but the way I have been throughout my life, never complaining. I never even prayed a prayer for God to punish someone. What it took me all my life, you are allowed to do in three years. We will sacrifice and never complain, centering on the 360 homes we will do everything.

You must make the best offering, and usually the offering is the one who has the single mind, not a double mind. Like the calf or lamb that gave birth, their offering cannot qualify. Like Adam and Eve they must be unspoilt, virgin. And we ought to be really grateful, especially when we are not virgin, we must regret that to God. In such a situation it is absolutely out of the question if a glimpse of a thought comes in our mind: she's the type I like, or he is the kind of boy I would like to marry. If we do that we are no longer an offering.

RESIST ALL TEMPTATIONS

My path is exactly the same. The fact that I stayed single until I was 40 years of age without marrying is exactly that. I resisted all the temptations and made sure all the conditions were met. Even the thought, that woman is beautiful, or I would like to live with such a man, is not permissible in our situation. When I touch the sisters here, sisters who are usually sensitive, they are not when I do it, because there is no such meaning in it.

For the first three years of my mission I did not eat on my birthday. Fasting was the way to spend my birthday. Imagine, did Jesus celebrate his own birthday? If Jesus didn't, what is the ground, the justification, for celebrating our birthday? It is really the reverse of the Western way of thinking. Nevertheless I did it this way. Where do we start in restoration? At the rock bottom, the most miserable place, then we gradually go up and up. So is Home Church that kind of ground for you? I pointed out that your situation is so good compared to Jesus because you have ground to work on.

NEVER COMPLAIN

Physical tiredness is really nothing. If you think you are physically tired and you think of complaining, it is out of the question. You know how I worked making nets, throughout the night for three or four days continuously. That's the tradition you have to catch up to. I never complained although I was just as tired as you. You know for sure now. So we will never complain and heaven simply must fall in love with us.

FEARLESS

Father teaches us to be fearless. Satan introduced fear into the Garden of Eden. Father has come to eradicate fear from this fallen world. He constantly tells us to never be afraid. For example, he says:

> What have you to fear? You are free. You are American citizens. You have the right to work twenty-four hours a day for the sake of your country. Can they put you in jail for that? They chase after me day and night, but they will not come after you. You were born here, but you cannot feel what I am feeling for this nation. You cannot feel the emergency this nation is in. This is what pains me more than anything else. You have no idea. We have to have a heart-to-heart understanding. I want a firm foundation before I depart from America. Are you tired? That word doesn't exist for us. I should have been tired years and years ago. I am over sixty years of age. I am almost at the age of retirement. And yet, I am going at twice the rate you are.
>
> Do I look fearful to you? Then why do the Communists fear me? To you, I am like a father, but to them I am a fearless and relentless fighter. (*God's Will and the Ocean*)

> Therefore, America's David is you, the Unification Church. We are summoned. David is standing in front of Goliath. Now Goliath is laughing at David, but David, however small, knows that God is with him. He has firm belief that God is with him and has untiring faith that God's power is working within him. He never fears. With God with him, David becomes an invincible and fearless person. David is waiting for the final command from God and as soon as the command comes, he will fight with one stroke, and the decisive victory will be won. How perfectly identical our position is to that of David! However; we must be better than David. At least David had his own nation—Israel. But we do not even have our own nation. We are emerging out of our wilderness and coming into our own power.
>
> Our battle could be even more dramatic than the battle of David. We have formed our power in the wilderness, and have come against a giant more powerful than Goliath. Our victory will be a victory for God. The command to march forward against Goliath is coming today. I only hope you are ready—in your spirit, your faith, your determination, and your well-being. We must realize what kinds of situations are waiting for us at the end of this battle. We are in a position to pay the indemnity for all the worldwide problems in the final day. If we fail this battle, if we become a defeated David, then untold tribulation is ahead for this country, the people of this world, and you. We have no way to pay, except by our blood and flesh.
>
> We are in the position to face death either way. If we retreat, death is waiting for us. If we march forward, death is also waiting for us. What shall we do? You have to decide on that point. Those who have that resolve raise your hands. This day determines whether we achieve hope for the world, or disaster for the world. This is a life or death matter, and your life or death will be decided by you on this very day.

Don't worry about the surroundings. Don't worry about what the enemy looks like—these are not the factors to decide victory. The key to victory is within you; it is not external. All that I fear is that you may disobey God; I have no other fear. I am glad I am here to be able to make this proclamation, this declaration. This is already a step toward victory, since in order to make this declaration I had to make certain preparations. (*God's Will and the World*)

THE TRUE MEMBER IS FEARLESS

I want you to know that God is straightforward. He will not detour but will go ahead regardless of what happens. When God moves and there is an enemy roadblock, God knows that His advance will ultimately smash all opposition. God knows that it is the other side which will be shattered. Therefore, the true man and the true member is fearless, having the courage to clash with opposition and knowing the other side will eventually fall away. He will always take the adventurous way, not avoiding anything in order to seize the advantage. You must live that way every day. God is eternal; therefore, I am an eternal being. God is unique; therefore, I am unique. God is unchanging; therefore, I will never change. God is absolute so I am going to be absolute. That is the way you must think every day.

How do we know Jesus was a true man? He didn't write a big sign on his forehead or get a Ph.D. He didn't have any extraordinary size or power. Why do we know him to be a true man? We know Jesus was a true man because his way of life was parallel with the will of God and fit perfectly the description of God's way of life. We know that Jesus Christ was born solely for the will of God, that he lived solely for the will of God and that he died solely for the will of God. At the critical moment of Jesus' death on the cross he died as a Messiah and with the dignity of a Messiah, not as an ordinary man, a sad man or a man taking cover. He deeply felt, "Even though the Roman Empire opposes me now, it shall receive my mercy. Even though the Israelites oppose me, they shall receive my mercy." Therefore, Jesus had room to forgive them, room to pray for them and to embrace them.

Jesus could not give up the will of God by resenting their adamant opposition to his efforts to save them. Jesus certainly could not abandon his mission at that moment by hating the people. He was a true man because he perfectly lived the life of God. He was a walking God. There was no separation between God and Jesus, and because no one can destroy God no one can destroy Jesus Christ. The crucifixion was not his destruction; God manifested the power of resurrection so that the world could see that Jesus was never destroyed. ("God's Will and Christmas" December 25, 1976)

GUTS AND CONFIDENCE

I hope that you have guts. When I sent my representatives to 120 countries, I said to them, "You are the seeds of Heaven; you must be spread. You must prosper. The seed grows a root. The root penetrates the earth, and you will grow." They have guts and confidence. (*God's Will and the World*)

CLEAR VISION

Father says of himself, "There is nothing for which I am ashamed, nor is there anything which I fear." (7-11-82) Because we know the *Divine Principle* and Father's words and deeds we have the truth that sets us free. The truth makes us absolutely strong and confident. Father says we "were in darkness" before we met him and now we "have a vision"— "the best of all ideologies.":

Let me ask, did you change by joining the Unification Church? Did you find a new you? Your values of life have become different since joining. In the everyday world

parents worry if their teenagers don't go out on dates, but the Unification Church is different. We are not worried about that at all because we are busy dating God instead. The entire world is inclined more and more toward free sex and sensual desire, but here in the Church we are absolutely living up to a God-centered moral standard. ("New Morning of Glory" January 22, 1978)

Think about your life in the days before you knew about the Unification Church and then think about yourselves today. You find a marked difference in your own heart. Before you were in darkness but now you have a vision and goal and clear-cut direction. Do you think someone can bring you back down to the dark days of your life before the Unification Church?

In the Unification Church we have the most healthy family life; we live the healthiest of all moral lives, and we have the best of all ideologies. We do have the superior system to any conventional way of life and naturally it will survive and prosper and will eventually influence the entire world. That is the destiny of history. ("Mainstream of the Dispensation of God" November 19, 1978)

For the commandment on purity I recommend the following DVDs: *I Kissed Dating Goodbye, DVD* by Joshua Harris (www.joshharris.com) and *Sex at its Best: A Positive Morality for Today's Youth* by Ron Hutchcraft (hutchcraft.com)

I will end this chapter with a few thoughts on nutrition. We should not pollute our bodies with impure food and drink. Satan has got so many people physically ill because of the poisons in our food and water. Unificationists should be the healthiest people on the planet. This means we should eat only organic and nutritious food and purify our water.

CHEMICAL DUMBING DOWN

One way evil spirits and ambassadors of Satan on earth work to prevent people from understanding the truth when they hear it is to damage mankind's brains. Russell Blaylock is the author of *Excitotoxins: The Taste That Kills*. In the documentary *Sweet Remedy* he says this about what is happening in America because of chemicals and heavy metals like aspartame, Monosodium Glutamate (MSG), fluoride, mercury in dental fillings, vaccines, and pesticide chemicals that is in so much of our food: "We're developing a society because of these different toxins known to affect brain function. We are seeing a society that not only has a lot more people of lower I.Q. but a lot fewer people of higher I.Q. In other words a dumbing down, a chemical dumbing down of society. So everyone is just sorta mediocre. That leaves them dependent on government. Because they can't excel when they have these people of lower I.Q. who are totally dependent. Then we have this mass of people who are going to believe anything they're told because they can't really think clearly."

At his website www.russellblaylockmd.com Blaylock sells an excellent video titled *Nutrition & Behavior* that teaches how important diet is in relation to our brain and behavior. Phyllis Schlafly says, "Dr. Blaylock's DVD … is important to watch and ponder, especially if you have small children. In this video he shows the vital connection between nutrition, both good and bad, and how we behave. While critical for mothers of younger children, it also focuses on behavior of the adult as well, as relates to depression, suicide risk, anxiety and anger. The DVD should be seen by everyone." Check out the book *The Crazy Makers: How the Food Industry Is Destroying Our Brains and Harming Our Children* by Carol Simontacchi. Work to eliminate toxins from your life. Learn from books like *Toxic Free: How to Protect Your Health and Home from the Chemicals That Are Making You Sick* by Debra Lynn Dadd (www.debralynndadd.com). An example of something you may not think about is your cookware. Is it leaching deadly chemicals into your food? Check out the ceramic cookware at www.ceramcor.com.

VACCINES — JUST SAY NO

Andrew Saul wrote at his website (www.doctoryourself.com), "My boy had two rounds of shots as an infant, but when my wife and I both saw that the vaccinations made him sick, we halted them." My wife and I had the same experience. Our first child cried all night after taking vaccines. We were devastated by the experience and we rarely had our children vaccinated. Now that I have studied vaccines I feel the scientists and writers against vaccines make more sense than the mainstream do. Don't listen to Paul Offit, the main apologist for vaccines. The PBS documentary titled *Vaccine Wars* is pro-vaccine and pushes the concept of herd immunity. This is a myth. Type in "herd immunity" at www.mercola.com, www.YouTube.com and www.vacfacts.info and you can read and watch Joseph Mercola, Barbara Loe Fisher and others debunk this ridiculous theory. Here is a Youtube video website where Mercola and Fisher spend 45 minutes demolishing the lie of herd immunity (www.youtube.com/watch?v=TFWBelim1Hw#t=36). Unificationists should never take vaccines as adults or let their children receive them. Watch the YouTube video titled "Profile of a Pertussis Vaccine Injury" (www.youtube.com/watch?v=e43I2F9PY2M)

DVDs and Online Videos Against Vaccines:

Shoot 'Em Up - The Truth About Vaccines by David Kirby, Peggy O'Mara, Barbara Loe Fisher, and Dan Olmsted (www.shootemupthedocumentary.com) (watch online at www.YouTube.com)
Are Vaccines Safe? by Mary Tocco (www.childhoodshots.com)
Vaccine Nation by Gary Null (www.VaccineNation.net) (whole DVD is at YouTube.com)
Vaccines: The Risks, Benefits and Choices by Sherri Tenpenny (www.drtenpennystore.com, www.sayingnotovaccines.com) (this three hour presentation is on YouTube.com)
Vaccination - The Hidden Truth (www.vaccination.inoz.com) (Youtube has this video)
Full day Vaccine Seminar (8 hours) by Tim O'Shea (www.immunitionltd.com)
Vaccines - What CDC Documents & Science Reveal by Sherri Tenpenny (www.drtenpennystore.com)
Direct Order by Scott Miller Narrated by Michael Douglas (www.directorder.org)
Vaccine Epidemc (www.vaccineepidemic.com) (watch videos at YouTube.com)
The Greater Good (www.greatergoodmovie.org, watch for free at www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
Tedd Koren – watch his videos at YouTube.com
Vaccine Insights by Dr. Patricia Jordan (watch at www.naturalnews.tv)
Flu and Flu Vaccines - What's Coming Through That Needle by Sherri Tenpenny (ww.drtenpenny.com)
Vaccine Developers: Heroes or Villains? by Sherri Tenpenny (www.drtenpenny.com)
Gardasil & the History of Mandatory Vaccines by Sherri Tenpenny (www.drtenpennystore.com)
Shots in the Dark — Silence on Vaccines (watchfreedocumentaries.net, topdocumentaryfilms.com buy at www.nfb.ca/film/shots_in_the_dark_trailer)
Dangers of Vaccines by Jamie Murphy (www.jamiemurphy.net and on YouTube)
Mercury Undercover (www.mercuryundercover.com, trailer at YouTube)
Vaccines and Toxins Cause Autism, Sudden Infant Death Syndrome, SIDS & Crib Death by David Davis (YouTube and www.biomedicaltreatmentforautism.com)
Vaccines and Brain Development by Russell Blaylock (www.radioliberty.com/vvabd.html and YouTube.com)
How Vaccines Harm Child Brain Development - Dr Russell Blaylock MD (www.youtube.com/watch?v=7QBcMYqlaDs)
Vaccines Kill Innocent Children!—Thousands of Children are Murdered Each Year by Vaccines by Ramiel Nagel (www.youtube.com/watch?v=E5Fdgj-Sisg&feature=related)
Vaccinations: Murder By Injection by Dr. Scott Whitaker (watch YouTube videos and www.realityspeaksbookstore.com)
www.ihealthtube.com — Watch videos on vaccines at this excellent website

Should I vaccinate my child or baby? by Andreas Moritz (http://wn.com/should_i_vaccinate)
Watch videos within an article against the vaccine gardasil written by Joseph Mercola titled "213 Women Who Took This Suffered Permanent Disability" at his website (http://articles.mercola.com/sites/articles/archive/2012/01/24/hpv-vaccine-victim-sues-merck.aspx) and watch all videos on vaccines at Dr. Mercola's website www.mercola.com)
Watch videos at www.sanevax.org and at www.naturalnews.tv
Vaccines: Prevention or Curse? by Shiv Chopra (www.mediareel.net) (www.shivchopra.com)
"Duggar family gets Chicken Pox" (watch on YouTube.com)
Silent Epidemic; The Untold Story of Vaccines (www.garynull.com, YouTube.com)
Bought: The Hidden Story Behind Vaccines, Big Pharma & Your Food
(http://boughtmovie.com) watch the two minute trailer at (www.youtube.com/watch?v=Iez-Jvb8nBs)

LISTEN TO SUZANNE HUMPHRIES

If I had to pick the first person to study on vaccines I would recommend Suzanne Humphries. If you want to begin your study of vaccines or want to direct a loved one to study I think she is excellent. Watch every YouTube video of her you can find. Read her book *Dissolving Illusions: Disease, Vaccines, and the Forgotten History*. She was educated as a medical doctor and discovered that vaccines are evil. She said in a speech that after medical school she discovered she was a "highly trained technician for the pharmaceutical industry." Here are a few videos at YouTube:

Suzanne Humphries on Vaccines (www.youtube.com/watch?v=efto1LpWkKw).
Dr. Suzanne Humphries - are vaccines safe?
(www.youtube.com/watch?v=BpC0Tbb3diI&feature=youtu.be)
Dr. Suzanne Humphries - Scientific proof that vaccines are harming hospital patient and more.... (www.youtube.com/watch?v=l3g01niS_B0)

Books Against Vaccines

A Shot in the Dark: Why the P in the Dpt Vaccination May Be Hazardous to Your Child's Health by Harris L. Coulter
Vaccination, Social Violence, and Criminality: The Medical Assault on the American Brain by Harris Coulter
What Every Parent Should Know About Childhood Immunization by Jamie Murphy
Childhood Vaccination: Questions All Parents Should Ask by Tedd Koren
What About Immunizations?: Exposing the Vaccine Philosophy—A Parent's Guide to the Vaccination Decision by Cynthia Cournoyer
Vaccines, Autism & Chronic Inflammation: The New Epidemic by Barbara Loe Fisher (National Vaccine Information Center www.nvic.org)
Immunization Theory vs. Reality: Expose on Vaccinations by Neil Z. Miller
Vaccine Safety Manual for Concerned Families and Health Practitioners, 2nd Edition: Guide to *Immunization Risks and Protection* by Neil Z. Miller, Foreward by Russell Blaylock
Vaccines: Are They Really Safe and Effective by Neil Z. Miller
Immunization – The Realty Behind The Myth (2nd Edition) by Walene James
Evidence of Harm: Mercury in Vaccines and the Autism Epidemic: A Medical Controversy by David Kirby **(**www.evidenceofharm.com**)**
Saying No to Vaccines by Dr. Sherri J. Tenpenny (www.drtenpenny.com)
Vaccine Epidemic: How Corporate Greed, Biased Science, and Coercive Government Threaten Our Human Rights, Our Health, and Our Children by Louise Kuo Habakus and Mary Holland
Raising a Vaccine Free Child by Wendy Lydall (www.vaccinefreechild.com)
Vaccination Is Not Immunization by Tim O'Shea (www.thedoctorwithin.com)
Vaccination: 100 Years of Orthodox Research Shows That Vaccines Represent a Medical Assault

on the Immune System by Viera Scheibner
When Your Doctor is Wrong, Hepatitis B Vaccine and Autism by Judy Converse
The Case Against Hepatitis B Vaccination: Prevent Your Newborns & Infants From Being Permanently Injured by Kevin A. Muhammad
White Lies: A Tale of Babies, Vaccines, and Deception by Sarah Collins Honenberger
Vaccine Guide for Dogs and Cats: What Every Pet Lover Should Know by Catherine Diodati
Your Doctor Is Not In: Healthy Skepticism About National Healthcare by *Jane M. Orient, M.D.*
Stop the Shots!: Are Vaccinations Killing Our Pets? by John Clifton
Mark of the Beast: Hidden in Plain Sight by Patricia Jordan
Dancing Cats, Silent Canaries: A Traditional Medical Doctor takes a closer look at unsolved epidemics of Autism & SIDS and proposes a solution by David Denton Davis
The Age of Autism by Dan Olmstead (video interview www.biomedicaltreatmentforautism.com)
Vaccinations: The Hidden Facts by Ian Sinclair
Healing Our Children: Sacred Wisdom for Preconception, Pregnancy, Birth and Parenting by Ramiel Nagel
Medisin: The Causes & Solutions to Disease, Malnutrition, And the Medical Sins That Are Killing the World by Scott Whitaker
Jabs, Jenner and Juggernauts: a Look at Vaccination by Jennifer Craig
Natural Alternatives to Vaccination by Zoltan Rona
Vaccine-Nation: Poisoning the Population, One Shot at a Time by Andreas Moritz (www.ener-chi.com and YouTube.com) (www.andreasmoritzblog.com)
Confessions of a Medical Heretic by Robert Mendelsohn
How to Raise a Healthy Child in Spite of Your Doctor by Robert Mendelsohn
Vaccination: State Sponsored Murder by Arnold Lupton
The Terror of Pediatric Medicine by Mark Sircus (free ebook online ww.imva.info/books.shtml)
Every Second Child by Archie Kalokerinos
Vaccinations: Deceptions and Tragedy by Michael Dye
Vaccination Crisis by Vance Ferrell (read for free at Scribd.com)
The Infant Survival Guide: Protecting Your Baby from the Dangers of Crib Death, Vaccines and Other Environmental Hazards by Lendon Smith
Vaccine Illusion [Kindle Edition] by Tetyana Obukhanych
Dissolving Illusions: Disease, Vaccines, and the Forgotten History by Suzanne Humphries

WEBSITES WARNING ABOUT VACCINES
www.thinktwice.com - www.whale.to/vaccines.html - www.generationrescue.org
www.vacfacts.info – www.vaccinesuncensored.org ww.vaccinationcouncil.org
www.thinktwice.com - http://childhealthsafety.wordpress.com – www.vaclib.org -
http://tv.naturalnews.com - www.stopmandatoryvaccination.com

NATURALNEWS.COM
Read the articles and watch all the videos on vaccines at www.naturalnews.com and http://tv.naturalnews.com. Jonathan Landsman wrote this on NaturalNews.com (11-24-12), "The vaccine industry is nothing more than a money-making scheme for the pharmaceutical industry. Perhaps a harsh statement (but true) – the uneducated public allow highly toxic ingredients to be injected into their bodies every day. But, are these vaccines scientifically proven to be effective at protecting our health? (no)" "Here's a simple question – would you like to eat formaldehyde, monkey viruses and aborted fetal tissue for your next meal? That's exactly what children (and adults) get with most vaccines. And, let's not forget, some vaccines still have Thimerosal – a mercury based preservative that is extremely dangerous to human health."

SCARY NEWS - CANCER
"Hearing 'you have cancer' from your doctor is something no one wants to experience at any point

in life. But shockingly, half of all adults will get a cancer diagnosis, according to a new study from the *British Journal of Cancer*, which predicts that one out of every two U.K. adults born in 1960 will develop the disease during their lifetime. Your odds are frightening. One in two men and one in three women in the U.S. are expected to be diagnosed with the big C" (www.menshealth.com). In 19th century America cancer was practically unheard of. It was a virtual unknown because people lived closer to the earth and ate organic food without so much sugar. Now cancer is the second highest cause of death in children, second only to accidents. Cancer has sky-rocketed because one of Satan's tactics to kill and injure everyone in the Last Days was to get everyone to give up on simple, unrefined food and get addicted to processed foods like Coke and donuts. Want to never get these diseases? Then move back to the country and eat organic meat and vegetables you raise yourself (or grow vegetables in your backyard if you live in a city).

I Have Cancer: What Should I Do? (and how to prevent getting Cancer)

Study alternative medicine books and audio-visuals like the book *I Have Cancer: What Should I Do?: Your Orthomolecular Guide for Cancer Management* by Andrew Saul and every YouTube video of him you can find. If you are not reader you must change and begin an intensive self education regimen. You need to spend hundreds if not thousands of hours reading and watching videos.

Stop eating junk food and restaurant food. Stop eating sugar. Try to eat plant food that is organic and if you eat meat eat only that is grass fed and organic pastured. You may find being gluten-free helps. Skip all vegetable oils and only use coconut, palm and olive oil. If you can handle dairy eat only raw milk and raw cheese. Pasteurized milk is unnatural. Drink lots of vegetable juices you can make from a juicer like the Omega juicer (www.omegajuicers.com). Buy a Birkey water filter and get a fluoride filter if needed. Take supplements with every meal. Watch the video on vitamins *What Your Doctor Doesn't Know About Nutritional Medicine May Be Killing You* by Ray Strand (www.raystrand.com). The company Melaleuca (www.melalueca.com) sells the best multivitamin because it has a patent for a process that binds minerals to a small molecule that is easily absorbed by cells. My favorite expert on vitamins is Andrew Saul. Check out his website: www.doctoryourself.com. No matter what illness a person has he or she should take massive doses of Vitamin C. Vitamin C given in high doses intravenously has proven to be helpful. Check out YouTube videos about intravenous vitamin C given in doses as high as into the hundreds of thousands of milligrams. Thomas Levy endorses an oral vitamin C sold using liposome-encapsulation that may even work better than taking it intravenously. (Joseph Mercola also sells vitamin C in liposomal form in capsules at mercola.com). Dr. Levy explains this at www.livonlabs.com. Watch the amazing TV documentary about a man in New Zealand, Allan Smith, who was saved from dying by taking intravenous vitamin C at Levy's website (www.tomlevymd.com) or on YouTube.com. There are many vitamins you should take. Be sure to get enough Vitamin D. The most popular alternative health website is by Joseph Mercola (www.mercola.com). Study what he says about taking Vitamin D, Iodine and Vitamin K2.

SLEEP

Joseph Mercola writes in an article titled, **"**Want to Prevent Cancer? Make Sure You Sleep Well**":** **"**Exposure to light during the night can also reduce melatonin levels, which is why it is important to sleep in total darkness to decrease the risk of cancer. **…** The natural human biorhythm is to sleep between 10 p.m. and 6 a.m. This means you should be in bed, with the lights out, by 10 p.m. and be up by 6 a.m.**"** Kulreet Chaudhary writes in Dr. Oz's website**, "**The deepest and most regenerative sleep occurs between 10 p.m. - 2 a.m. After 2am, your sleep becomes more superficial.**"**

SUGAR IS A POISON

Some carbohydrates are bad because they raise blood sugar too high. Sugar is the worst. Nancy

Appleton is correct when she says that sugar is most people's number one addiction. Check out her books such as *Suicide By Sugar: A Startling Look at Our #1 National Addiction*. White flour also raises our blood sugar and causes so many problems. Unificationists should only use sweeteners such as stevia or erythritol (pronounced ah-rith-ra-tall) because they have no effect on the glycemic index. A popular product that has both stevia and erythritol is Truvia. Sugar is a poison. It is America's most popular drug of choice. We should never consume it. Be sure to read *Grain Brain: The Surprising Truth about Wheat, Carbs, and Sugar—Your Brain's Silent Killers* by David Perlmutter (www.drperlmutter.com) and watch these DVDs with your family so they can understand how dangerous sugar is: *Sweet Suicide: How Sugar Is Destroying The Health of Our Society* by Nancy Appleton (www.ppnf.org, www.nancyappleton.com) and *Sweet Fire: Understanding Sugar's Role in Your Health* by Mary Toscano (www.marytoscano.com)

SUGAR: THE BITTER TRUTH

Robert H. Lustig, MD, Professor of Pediatrics at UCSF gave an incredibly powerful speech titled "Sugar: The Bitter Truth" on the dangers of sugar that is posted on YouTube at (www.youtube.com/watch?v=dBnniua6-oM). I wrote to him and asked if it is for sale as a DVD and he told me it wasn't. ABCNews in their program Nightline had a story about him. You can buy a DVD of that must-see show at their website or watch the show at YouTube at (www.youtube.com/watch?v=k5-4FLA6rkw.) Lustig shows how the fructose part of sugar is the main culprit in the obesity epidemic where one in three Americans is now obese and millions more are overweight. Everyone should watch these videos and then stop feeding their children and loved ones sugary foods and end the epidemic of obesity and diabetes. So many people are addicted to soda pop sweetened with the horrible high-fructose corn syrup. There are some sodas that use good natural sweeteners. Zevia (www.zevia.com) uses stevia. My grandchildren cannot tell the difference from the Coke and Pepsi products. Hopefully giant corporations like McDonalds will switch to these healthy sweeteners and also make changes like using organic whole grains instead of white flour and pasture fed beef and pastured raised chicken and pork instead of using meat from animals tortured in concentration camp-like factory farming. Replace sugar in your home with Truvia, xylitol or erythritol. Make your own ice cream, cakes, drinks and cookies with these good sweeteners. Instead of buying candy bars spend your money on sugar-free candy. Be sure to watch a great critique of sugar in the DVD *Hungry for Change* (www.hungryforchange.tv). They teach that giving sugary foods to children is child abuse. Father says, "I am an absolute believer in three meals a day. I do not eat desserts." (*Cheon Seong Gyeong*) In his autobiography Father writes, "I tell our members they should drink water instead of buying ice cream or soft drinks."

FATHER TEACHES — MANAGE YOUR BODY WITH LOVE:

> There are many people who constantly eat. They eat while walking, while talking, even while sleeping. It is like animals. As soon as animals secure a certain amount of food they keep it in their mouth and try to run away from other animals to eat it. While still running they eat. But human beings are supposed to have a nice table in front of them with nice china and enjoy their meal. As you take each mouthful of food you have to thank God and invite Him to taste it with you. This meal table can be like an altar upon which we make our offering. (1-1-96)
>
> Think of your body as housing an entire universe. Your cells make up the universe and your mind is the dwelling place of God! Therefore you have the responsibility to manage your body and its precious inhabitants. You need to consider what you eat, not just gobble up anything you can get your hands on, like a pig. It is most important that you manage your body with love. (3-6-83)

Read the following books:

I Have Cancer: What Should I Do?: Your Orthomolecular Guide for Cancer Management by Andrew Saul, *Doctor Yourself: Natural Healing That Works* by Andrew Saul (this is also on audio CDs you can listen to while you are driving), *Fire Your Doctor! How to Be independently Healthy* by Andrew Saul, *Cancer: Complementary Vitamin & Drug Treatments* by Linus Pauling, *Curing the Incurable: Vitamin C, Infectious Diseases, and Toxins* by Thomas Levy, *Questioning Chemotherapy* by Ralph Moss, *Antioxidants Against Cancer* by Ralph Moss, *Vitamin C: The Real Story, the Remarkable and Controversial Healing Factor* by Steve Hickey and Andrew W. Saul, *The Gerson Therapy: The Proven Nutritional Program for Cancer and Other Illnesses* by Charlotte Gerson, *Cancer and Vitamin C: A Discussion of the Nature, Causes, Prevention, and Treatment of Cancer With Special Reference to the Value of Vitamin C* by Ewan Cameron and Linus Pauling, *How to Live Longer And Feel Better* by Linus Pauling, *Healing Cancer: Complementary Vitamin & Drug Treatments* by Abram Hoffer and Linus Pauling, *Regain Your Health, Maintain Your Health: The Linus Pauling Way - Vitamin C* by Herwig Lange, *Defeat Cancer: 15 Doctors of Integrative & Naturopathic Medicine Tell You How* by Connie Strashein, *Vitamin C the Common Cold and the Flu* by Linus Carl Pauling, *Ascorbate: The Science of Vitamin C* by Steve Hickey & Hilary Roberts, *Cancer: Nutrition and Survival* by Steve Hickey and Hilary Roberts, *The Cancer Breakthrough* by Steve Hickey and Hilary Roberts, *Natural Cancer Cures: The Definitive Guide to Using Dietary Supplements to Fight and Prevent Cancer*, *The Coenzyme Q10 Phenomenon* by Stephen Sinatra, *Transdermal Magnesium Therapy* by Mark Sircus, *Natural Strategies for Cancer Patients* by Russell Blaylock, *The Cancer Industry* by Ralph W. Moss**,** *Alternative Medicine Online: A Guide to Natural Remedies on the Internet* by Ralph W. Moss, *Cancer Therapy: The Independent Consumer's Guide to Non-Toxic Treatment & Prevention* by Ralph W. Moss, *The Only Answer to Cancer* by Leonard Coldwell, *Cancer as a Metabolic Disease: On the Origin, Management, and Prevention of Cancer* by Thomas Seyfried, *The Cantin Ketogenic Diet: For Cancer, Type I Diabetes & Other Ailments* by Elaine Cantin, *Ketogenic Diets: Treatments for Epilepsy and Other Disorders* by Eric H. Kossoff, *Avoiding Breast Cancer While Balancing Your Hormones* by Joseph F. McWherter M.D. and Dr. David Brownstein, *Killing Cancer—Not* People by Robert G. Wright, and *The Miraculous Results Of Extremely High Doses Of The Sunshine Hormone Vitamin D3 My Experiment With Huge Doses Of D3 From 25,000 To 50,000 To 100,000 Iu A Day Over A 1 Year Period* by Jeff T Bowles, *The Iodine Crisis: What You Don't Know About Iodine Can Wreck Your Life* by Lynne Farrow, *Vitamin K2 and the Calcium Paradox: How a Little-Known Vitamin Could Save Your Life* by Kate Rheaume-Bleue, *How to Cure Almost Any Cancer at Home for $5.15 a Day (2009)* by Bill Henderson, *Cancer-Free: Your Guide to Gentle, Non-toxic Healing (2011)* by Bill Henderson, *Cancer: Step Outside the Box* by Ty M. Bollinger (http://thetruthaboutcancer.com), *We Already Know How to Cure Cancer* by Bill Sardi, *You Don't Have to Be Afraid of Cancer Anymore* by Bill Sardi, *Monumental Myths of the Modern Medical Mafia and Mainstream Media and the Multitude of Lying Liars That Manufactured Them* by Ty M. Bollinger, *Beta Glucan: Nature's Secret (2nd Edition)* by Vaclav Vetvicka**,** *Work With Your Doctor To Diagnose and Cure 27 Ailments With Natural and Safe Methods* by Ty M Bollinger, *Beating Cancer with Nutrition*, book with CD by Patrick Quillin, *Knockout: Interviews with Doctors Who Are Curing Cancer—And How to Prevent Getting It in the First Place* by Suzanne Somers.

Bill Henderson at his website www.beating-cancer-gently.com says, "A priority task for you now is to rebuild that immune system to where it is at normal strength – soonest. How? Fortunately, you have many options, all of which work. They are not cheap. And they are not covered by insurance. Examples are Transfer Point Beta Glucan, RM-10, Immune-Assist, MSR-3 and Oncolyn. I cover all of them and more in detail in my book. You can look them up on Google and order one on the Internet today."

DENTAL CONNECTION TO CANCER AND OTHER DISEASES

Some in alternative medicine see a relationship of cancer and other diseases like heart disease to common dental procedures like mercury fillings and root canals. Some go so far as to say that if you have cancer you should remove all metal from the mouth and remove the dead tooth in any root canal and clean out the area. Here are a few websites about this: http://naturaldentistry.us, www.holisticdentistillinois.com, www.new-cancer-treatments.org/Articles/RootCanals.html, www.burtongoldberg.com/page79.html

Watch the following videos or DVDs (check to see if Youtube.com has excerpts or the entire video):

Cut Poison Burn (www.cutpoisonburn.com, www.youtube.com/watch?v=uX8saD8fATw)
Burzynski, the Movie (www.burzynskimovie.com) (can watch on Netflix and YouTube www.youtube.com/watch?v=rBUGVkmmwbk)
Crazy Sexy Cancer (www.crazysexycancer.com)
The Beautiful Truth Movie (www.thebeautifultruthmovie.com) (watch free www.Netflix.com)
Food Matters (www.foodmatters.tv) (watch online at www.undergrounddocumentaries.com) (Netflix.com)
Healing Cancer From Inside Out by Mike Anderson (www.gerson.org)
The Only Answer to Cancer (drleonardcoldwell.com) (shop.instinctbasedmedicinestore.com)
Sweet Suicide: How Sugar Is Destroying The Health of Our Society by Nancy Appleton (www.ppnf.org, www.nancyappleton.com)
Cancer Is Curable Now (www.canceriscurablenow.com)(watch online at www.YouTube.com)
Intravenous Ascorbic Acid (IVC) and Cancer: History & Science (www.riordanclinic.org)
Vitamin C and Cancer by Hugh Riordan (www.riordanclinic.org)
Vitamins Can Kill Cancer: New Thoughts by Reagan Houston (www.riordanclinic.org)
How Vitamin C Fights Cancer by Ron Hunninghake (www.riordanclinic.org)
Curing the Incurable with Vitamin C by Thomas Levy (www.ihealthtube.com)
www.ihealthtube.com — Watch videos at this excellent website
Interview with Dr. Nicholas Gonzalez with Joseph Mercola on (www.mercola.com)
Interview with Dr. Ronald Hunninghake about vitamin C IV at (www.mercola.com)
Don Tolman (www.dontolmanusa.com) (watch his videos at Youtube.com)
Cancer - Your Doctor's Lack of Knowledge can Shorten Your Life by David Getoff (www.nutritioneducationdvds.com/Cancer.html)
Joseph Mercola – watch all of his videos on YouTube.com and at his website www.mercola.com
Dr. Julian Whitaker—read his books and watch videos of him on YouTube.com
Dying to Have Known by Steve Kroschel (www.gerson.org) (Youtube.com)
Rethinking Cancer (for sale at and also watch free videos at www.rethinkingcancer.org)
Starving Cancer: Ketogenic Diet a Key to Recovery (watch on CBN.com Youtube.com)
Ketogenic Diet May Be Key to Cancer Recovery (video at mercola.com March 10, 2013)
Check videos at YouTube.com for "Ketonic diet"
Targeting Energy Metabolism in Brain Cancer by Thomas Seyfried, Ph.D. *(watch on Y*outube.com)
Peter Glidden (www.fire-your-md-now.com) Watch his videos at his website and at YouTube such as his video titled "Chemotherapy doesn't work 97% of the time" and "Chemotherapy is a waste of time".
icurecancer.com by Ian Jacklin (www.icurecancer.com)
Curing the Incurable with Vitamin C! **(**www.youtube.com/watch?v=3YgDk-2e27c**)**
Lecture on vitamin C by brilliant Suzanne Humphries **(**www.youtube.com/watch?v=y0LLX0sgwAU**)**
Vitamin C Basics" by Suzanne Humphries, MD. Internist and Nephrologist **(**www.youtube.com/watch?v=JFT5rdwrNV0**)**
Can Vitamin C Heal Cancer or Bring People Back From The Dead?

(www.youtube.com/watch?v=p1EwQPaIxgI)
Interview of Joseph Mercola with Dr. Ron Hunninghake on Vitamin C and Cancer (www.youtube.com/watch?v=-DZvEJE4muA)
Dr. Mercola: The Benefits of Liposomal Vitamin C (www.youtube.com/watch?v=kSoGhSvJqQI)
This Liposomal Vitamin C is a long-lasting super antioxidant (www.youtube.com/watch?v=nqBAB_C3t58)
Riordan Clinic: The Dental Link to Cancer www.youtube.com/watch?v=LnwHHNbIKhM
Living Proof Vitamin C Miracle Cure 60 Minutes Video 3 News (www.youtube.com/watch?v=vTXSTGGRvKY)
Linus Pauling: High dose vitamin C is a cure for cancer, AIDS and heart disease! www.youtube.com/watch?v=OfuXHJh3LMY
Many Ways Vitamin C Affects Cancer & Health by Hugh Riorden (www.youtube.com/watch?v=Cqo1TkXHBkQ)
Tom Levy MD - Healing Health Ailments and The Power of Vitamin C (www.youtube.com/watch?v=JXKuWcB0cI0)
Dr. John Whitcomb Seminar - Vitamin K2 - Super Vitamin, Hidden Before Our Eyes (www.youtube.com/watch?v=jPWCJxyHAg4&spfreload=10)
Vitamin K2 Sources and its Health Benefits – Mercola (www.youtube.com/watch?v=8ePU5NiRDSM)
Vitamin K: New Evidence for Cancer, Heart Health, and Bone Health (www.youtube.com/watch?v=CfnDEpM10t4)
Vitamin C Antidote too all known toxins Thomas Levy, MD - even SNAKEBITE! VIRAL VIRUS BACTERIAL (www.youtube.com/watch?v=GpptUsJFCEY)
Dr Thomas Levy: Vitamin C & The Great Supression (www.youtube.com/watch?v=z1kD3BolXnE)
How Vitamin C Fights Cancer by Ron Hunninghake (www.youtube.com/watch?v=_PI_rKuQWiE)
Riordan Clinic: Dosing IVC for Cancer Patients (Dr. Levy) (www.youtube.com/watch?v=YTW9x91RWnY)
Riordan Clinic: Surviving the Cancer System (www.youtube.com/watch?v=YJS4oQOclY4)
Optimization of Vitamin C and Antioxidant Therapy – Dr. Levy (www.youtube.com/watch?v=ddgLzQavQzw)
IV Vitamin C - Cancer Therapy Plus Much More (www.youtube.com/watch?v=PRpvPNKpS9I)
Cancer Cure: IV Vitamin C Curing Cancer and Infections (www.youtube.com/watch?v=iQIjj0dMEF0)
Cancer Cure: Ty Bollinger You can cure your cancer (www.youtube.com/watch?v=EvwLOGxTv6k)
Dr.Burzynski is Curing Brain Stem Glioma an inoperable brain tumor and other cancers. (www.youtube.com/watch?v=ak3peElUHIo)
Cancer Treatment Documentary: Conventional vs Natural (www.youtube.com/watch?v=81XfmhKV2BI)
How I survived terminal cancer w/ alternative cancer treatments (www.youtube.com/watch?v=8TA5r_F7DQk)
What every cancer patient needs to know. (Chris Wark of Chris Beat Cancer) (www.chrisbeatcancer.com www.youtube.com/watch?v=_k3B0y0tjCg)
Chris Wark Refused Chemo and Beat Cancer (www.youtube.com/watch?v=1StrQOAz-q4)
Chris Wark explains the Chris Beat Cancer Diet (www.youtube.com/watch?v=lXKvGuWLRbw)
The Gerson Therapy - Charlotte Gerson on Curing Cancer (www.youtube.com/watch?v=quuvi6Gvvmc)
Surviving Prostate Cancer Without Surgery, Drugs, or Radiation by Peter Starr (www.survivingprostatecancer.org)
Healing Cancer with Cannabis: Episode 1
Robert Wright (www.youtube.com/watch?v=KUpgwF0aB8s#t=16)
Interview with Dr Suzanne Humphries about vaccines (www.youtube.com/watch?v=p1EwQPaIxgI)
(2006-09) Robert Cathcart - Mega C for Viral & Other Diseases (www.youtube.com/watch?v=PKD3BXL8ESA)

CLINICS

There are alternative medicine clinics such as the Gerson clinics in Mexico and Hungary www.gerson.org, Oasis of Healing in Arizona www.anoasisofhealing.com, Riordan Clinic in Kansas www.riordanclinic.org, and Whitaker Wellness Institute in California www.whitakerwellness.com. Terry Tillaart teaches you don't need to go to expensive clinics. Watch him on YouTube and www.terrytillaart.com

WEBSITES

Study the information at the following websites. Watch their videos.
www.anoasisofhealing.com — http://alternativecancer.us — www.gerson.org — drwhitiker.com
www.riordanclinic.org – www.foodmatters.tv — www.vitamincfoundation.org
www.cancerdecisions.com — www.doctoryourself.com — www.drsinatra.com - ihealthtube.com
www.mercola.com — www.ralphmoss.com - www.tomlevymd.com - www.dontolmanusa.com
www.ketogenic-diet-resource.com — www.fire-your-md-now.com – www.terrytillaart.com –
www.beating-cancer-gently.com – http://thetruthaboutcancer.com

ALTERNATIVE MEDICINE VS. CONVENTIONAL MEDICINE

There are many other good books and videos on non-traditional treatments of cancer. Do your research. Do not use chemotherapy, radiation or surgery. Ignore conventional medical doctors for diseases. They are dangerous. Watch the video at YouTube.com or Mercola.com titled *Most Astonishing Health Disaster of the 20th Century*. It explains why "The American medical system is the number one killer in the United States." Look for doctors in the alternative medicine section of your phone book like naturopathic, homeopathic, and orthomolecular doctors. Find a doctor that will use nutrition instead of poisons to cure diseases from diabetes to heart disease. Julian Whitaker says in his book *Reversing Heart Disease: A Vital New Program to Help, Treat, and Eliminate Cardiac Problems Without Surgery* "for the vast majority of patients, coronary bypass surgery is expensive, dangerous and unnecessary." (Read Whitaker's book *Is Heart Surgery Necessary?: What Your Doctor Won't Tell You*). To cure diabetes watch Julian Whitaker on YouTube and read his book *Reversing Diabetes* as well as the book *Life Without Bread*. For mental problems read Gwen Olsen's book *Confessions of an Rx Drug Pusher* and watch videos of her on YouTube.com and www.gwenolsen.com. She exposes the dangerous side effects of psychiatric drugs given to millions of children and adults that maim and kill. Get the DVD documentary about the life and work of Dr. Abram Hoffer, *Feed Your Head*, which shows that mental illness can be controlled with natural foods, a healthy lifestyle, and large doses of vitamins and the documentary *Masks of Madness: Science of Healing* hosted by actor Margot Kidder who herself suffered from manic depression and finally recovered using orthomolecular medicine (buy at www.orthomed.org or watch for free at YouTube.com). Study the websites: www.ohmsociety.com, www.helpyourselfcommunity.org and www.orthomolecular.org. For depression and alcoholism study *Depression-Free, Naturally: 7 Weeks to Eliminating Anxiety, Despair, Fatigue, and Anger from Your Life* and *Seven Weeks to Sobriety* by Joan Mathews Larson.

PRESCRIPTION DRUGS

We should all be leery of the drugs mainstream doctors prescribe. Studies show that conventional medicine is the leading cause of death today! Joseph Mercola in article titled "Conventional Medical Care Kills More People Than Heart Disease or Cancer**"** (2-11-2012) writes, "Over a decade ago, Professor Bruce Pomerance of the University of Toronto concluded that properly prescribed and correctly taken pharmaceutical drugs were the fourth leading cause of death in the U.S. More recently, an article authored in two parts by Gary Null, PhD, Carolyn Dean, MD, ND, Martin Feldman, MD, Debora Rasio, MD, and Dorothy Smith, PhD, describes in excruciating detail how the modern conventional American medical system has bumbled its way into becoming

the *leading* cause of death and injury in the United States. … From medical errors to adverse drug reactions to unnecessary procedures, heart disease, cancer deaths and infant mortality, the authors took statistics straight from the most respected medical and scientific journals and investigative reports by the Institutes of Medicine (IOM), and showed that on the whole, American medicine caused more harm than good. … Prescription drugs are now killing far more people than illegal drugs."

It is dangerous to go to a medical doctor or hospital. Here are some good books, videos and websites:

Death By Prescription: The Shocking Truth Behind an Overmedicated Nation by Ray Strand
Doctors Are More Harmful Than Germs by Harvey Bigelsen
Death by Medicine by Gary Null
The MD Emperor Has No Clothes Everybody is sick and I Know Why by Peter Glidden
Racketeering in Medicine: The Suppression of Alternatives by James Carte
Selling Sickness: How the World's Biggest Pharmaceutical Companies Are Turning Us All Into Patients by Ray Moynihan
The Truth About the Drug Companies: How They Deceive Us and What to Do About It by Marcia Angell
Overdiagnosed: Making People Sick in the Pursuit of Health by H. Gilbert Welch
Bitter Pills: Inside the Hazardous World of Legal Drugs by Stephen Fried
How We Do Harm: A Doctor Breaks Ranks About Being Sick in America by Otis Webb Brawley
Death By Prescription by Terence H. Young
Joseph Mercola's article "Warning: Fluoroquinolone Antibiotics May Cause Permanent Nerve Damage" (mercola.com)
Check out these two videos on the dangers of some antibiotics:
Certain Adverse Effects (www.certainadverseevents.com) and
Bitter Pill: Side effects of Fluoroquinolones.

DENTISTRY—FIND AN ALTERNATAIVE DENTIST
Just as you need to go to an alternative doctor instead of an MD. you need to stay away from regular dentists and find one that does not believe in dangerous, toxic fluoride, mercury filings and root canals. Here is a list of some books and websites to study:

BOOKS
Root Canals: Savior or Suicide? By Hal Higgins, *Root Canal Cover-Up* by George E. Meinig, *It's All in Your Head: The Link Between Mercury Amalgams and Illness* by Hal Higgins (www.hugginsappliedhealing.com), *Uninformed Consent: The Hidden Dangers in Dental Care* by Hal Higgins and Thomas E. Levy, *The Price of Root Ca*nals by Weston A. Price and Hal Higgins
Cure Tooth Decay: Remineralize Cavities & Repair Your Teeth Naturally With Good Food by Ramiel Nagel, *The Roots of Disease: Connecting Dentistry & Medicine* by Robert Kulacz and Thomas Levy

WEBSITES
"Why You Should Avoid Root Canals Like the Plague" www.Mercola.com, www.Youtube.com
How to Find a Biological Dentist That Can Treat You Holistically" www.Mercola.com
www.Ihealthtube.com interviews with Hal Higgins
Alison Adams www.dralisonadams.com, www.mouthbodydoctor.com
"Avoiding Root Canal" A dentist explains how he uses ozone therapy instead of surgery for root canals at www.YouTube.com
Read the articles and watch all the videos on dental work at www.naturalnews.com and http://tv.naturalnews.com For example one of their videos is about ozone therapy for root canals.
Check out Ramiel Nagel's websites www.yourreturn.org www.curetoothdecay.com

Do your homework. Don't give blind faith to so-called authority figures in white coats. Check out the Internet and YouTube.com for alternative dental therapies.

EARTHING - GROUNDING

Check out the book *Earthing: The Most Important Health Discovery Ever?* by Stephen T. Sinatra and look up videos on "earthing" at YouTube.com. It is fascinating to read and watch videos about how we should get more in touch with the earth. Watch these videos: *Dr. James Oschman Discusses Earthing or Grounding interview with Joseph Mercola* (ww.youtube.com/watch?v=26HphzJmWKU, www.mercola.com) and the documentary: *Grounded* by Steve Kroschel (www.youtube.com/watch?v=TzH5S6G63ak)

One reviewer of *Earthing* said this**:**

> The solution for chronic inflammation, regarded as the cause of most common modern diseases, has been identified! And it is not blueberries. It is something right beneath our feet–the Earth itself!
>
> Throughout most of evolution humans walked barefoot and slept on the ground, largely oblivious that the surface of the Earth contains limitless healing energy. Science has discovered this energy as free-flowing electrons constantly replenished by solar radiation and lightning. Few people know it, but the ground provides a subtle electric signal that maintains health and governs the intricate mechanisms that make our bodies work–just like plugging a lamp into a power socket makes it light up. Modern lifestyle, including the widespread use of insulative rubber or plastic-soled shoes, has disconnected us from this energy and, of course, we no longer sleep on the ground as we did in times past.
>
> Earthing introduces the planet's powerful, amazing, and overlooked natural healing energy and how people anywhere can readily connect to it. This eye-opening book describes how the physical disconnect with the Earth creates abnormal physiology and contributes to inflammation, pain, fatigue, stress, and poor sleep. By reconnecting to the Earth, symptoms are rapidly relieved and even eliminated and recovery from surgery, injury, and athletic overexertion is accelerated.
>
> This never-before-told story–filled with fascinating research and real-life testimonials–chronicles a discovery with the potential to create a global health revolution.

"In our high tech society, connecting with the Earth has never been more critical to our health and well-being. This inspired and well-researched book explains the perils we face by being disconnected from the power and energy of the Earth and its boundless storehouse of free electrons. Could much of disease, chronic inflammation, poor sleep and more be the result of this? A brilliant hypothesis well-grounded in Science. Highly recommended." –Nicholas Perricone, M.D. "Earthing ranks right up there with the discovery of penicillin. This book is probably the most important health read of the 21st century" –Ann Louise Gittleman. "Earthing connects us to Nature and Nature is the ultimate source of health and healing. This book is a manual for one of Nature's great healing secrets." –John Gray, Ph.D., author of "Men Are From Mars, Women Are From Venus".

IMPORTANCE OF NUTRITION

Mrs. Dale Carnegie wrote a book in 1959 called *How to Help Your Husband Get Ahead*. America has changed drastically since the fifties. Mrs. Carnegie gives pointers to women on how to create a home where the man is taken care of and can be nourished physically and spiritually. Her

husband's book, *How to Win Friends and Influence People*, is still a best-seller. She has a chapter on cooking in which she explains how the wife literally has the power of life and death over her husband: "Many a half-starved Chinese coolie has a greater life expectancy than your husband—if your husband is overweight. We cannot deny responsibility for our husband's waistlines. A man eats what his wife sets before him. The better the cook; the bigger the waistline. When we whip up those super-special desserts and ply him constantly with pecan pies and fluffy cakes, he wouldn't be human if he said 'no.'" The title of her chapter on health is "His Life Is in Your Hands." She writes:

> Want to know how to kill your husband—and get away with it? Don't bother with cyanide, blunt instruments or revolvers—just feed him a steady diet of rich pastries ... until he is at least fifteen to twenty-five percent overweight! Then sit back and think what a good-looking widow you'll make—because it won't be long now.
>
> According to the experts between seventy and eighty percent more men than women die in their early fifties.
>
> The worst of it is: they blame us for it!
>
> Listen to Dr. Louis Dublin, of the Metropolitan Life Insurance Company. In an article entitled, "Stop Killing Your Husband," published in *Lifetime Living*, Dr. Dublin says, "In forty years as the statistician of a large life-insurance company, I have come to the conclusion that many men who die before their time could have been saved if their wives had taken more seriously a wife's responsibility to watch over her man."

LOW-CARB DIET

What is a nourishing breakfast? There is a division between those who believe in a low-fat, high carb diet and those who believe in a high-fat, low carb diet. Joseph Mercola has the most popular website on health (www.mercola.com). I respect him. He has written books championing the high fat, low carb diets. I find the arguments of the low carb writers more powerful. I recommend *Fiber Menace: The Truth About the Leading Role of Fiber in Diet Failure, Constipation, Hemorrhoids, Irritable Bowel Syndrome, Ulcerative Colitis, Crohn's Disease, and Colon Cancer* by Konstantin Monastyrsky (www.gutsense.org), *The New Atkins For a New You: The Ultimate Diet for Shedding Weight and Feeling Great* by Eric Westman, and *Life Without Bread: How a Low-Carbohydrate Diet Can Save Your Life* by Christian Allan & Wolfgang Lutz. The authors of *Life Without Bread* give convincing arguments that limiting carbs to 72 grams a day and eating all the meat and eggs you want will prevent the man-made diseases of heart disease, diabetes, cancer and obesity. Be sure to watch the DVD *Fat Head* by Tom Naughton (www.fathead-movie.com). He goes to fast food restaurants for a month and loses weight because he limits his carbs to less than 100 a day. I find his arguments that saturated fat is good for you to be more persuasive than the low-fat, high-carb advocates like Pritikin, Campbell, Ornish, McDougall, and Barnard. You may find vegan and vegetarian writers to be better for you such as Michael Greger who writes against meat eating in *Carbophobia: The Scary Truth Behind America's Low Carb Craze***.** You may find Andrew Saul's diet to work for you. He eats meat and eggs only four times a week and focuses on vegetables and fruits—a plant-based diet.

PALEO

I lean on the side of the Paleo diet and recommend Arthur De Vany's *The New Evolution Diet* (www.arthurdevany.com) and other books like *The Paleo Diet* and *The Dietary Cure for Acne* by Loren Cordain (thepaleodiet.com). Check their videos at YouTube.com. In *Fiber Menace* Monastyrsky writes that we are made to eat meat and says vegetarians are "well-intentioned" but lead a "self-destructive lifestyle." Also check out *The Hidden Story of Cancer: Find Out Why*

Cancer Has Physicians on the Run and How a Simple Plan Based on New Science Can Prevent It by Brian S. Peskin. He teaches to not eat more than 60 grams of carbs a day. My favorite two books on food and nutrition are *It Starts With Food* by Dallas Hartwig **(**www.whole9life.com) and *The Paleo Answer: 7 Days to Lose Weight, Feel Great, Stay Young* by Loren Cordain (www.thepaleodiet.com). Hartwig writes, "The formula for a meal is simple: ANIMAL PROTEIN + LOTS OF VEGETABLES + HIGH QUALITY FAT + SEASONINGS."

BEST BOOK ON NUTRITION—FAT FOR FUEL

If I had to pick what I think is the best book on nutrition I would choose *Fat for Fuel* and Fat for Fuel Ketogenic Cookbook by Joseph Mercola. I also ike *The New Atkins For a New You: The Ultimate Diet for Shedding Weight and Feeling Great* by Eric Westman, Jeff S. Volek, and Stephen D. Phinney. Check out all YouTube videos each has made.

PERFECT HEALTH DIET

Check out *Perfect Health Diet: Regain Health and Lose Weight by Eating the Way You Were Meant to Eat* by Paul and Shou-Ching Jaminet. They have a unique twist on the Paleo diet by adding white rice and potatoes—two foods that most books on the Paleo diet and the low carb diets would forbid. They give fascinating insights why these two foods are "safe starches." Their website is www.perfecthealthdiet.com. There is a lot of controversy among those who study nutrition. I respect Joseph Mercola. He believes Jaminet may be right for some people. He writes at his website www.mercola.com: "I believe that Dr. Jaminet's diet, as outlined in his book, *Perfect Health Diet*, can indeed improve your health and is something most people would notice health benefits from." I think Mercola makes sense when he advises that each person listen carefully to their body's response to food: "Whatever diet choices you make please remember ALWAYS listen to your body as it will give you feedback if what you are doing is right for your unique biochemistry and genetics. Listen to that feedback and adjust your program accordingly." In the end there doesn't seem to be a one-size-fits-all diet. Experiment until you find what works for you.

In her book *A Nation of Farmers* Sharon Astyk gives good arguments for the nobility of women working in their kitchen instead of working in for corporations and buying inferior corporate food at grocery stores in cities that they then heat up in a microwave. Women should be working the soil in gardens and cooking from scratch like women have done for thousands of years. The industrial revolution has ruined so many lives by taking the woman out of the kitchen. In her book *Depletion and Abundance: Life on the New Home Front* Sharon Astyk argues that "the version of feminism that succeeded was a corporate feminism that served economy better than it served women in many cases. In fact, Americans did not get more leisure by going to work and outsourcing cooking; they got less. The drudgery they were freed of, which had been done to serve the families they loved, was replaced by drudgery in the workplace in service of large corporations. The problem is that we were sold a bill of goods. We were told that domestic labor was unskilled, tedious and pointless. But was it?" She goes on to give powerful arguments of how running a household is intellectually stimulating and creative.

EXERCISE

It's good to walk at least half-hour a day. Study these two excellent books by Fredrick Hahn: *The Slow Burn Fitness Revolution: The Slow Motion Exercise that Will Change Your Body in 30 Minutes a Week* and *Strong Kids Healthy Kids: The Revolutionary Program for Increasing Your Child's Fitness in 30 Minutes a Week*. Check out Eric Goodman's book *Foundation : redefine your core, conquer back pain, and move with confidence* and his DVD on Foundation Training at his website www.foundationtraining.com. You can see him on YouTube.com and an interview with Joseph Mercola at mercola.com.

Father teaches in a speech titled "Mission and Prayer" (June 12, 1983): "Without the confidence

that you can control yourself, it is nonsense to think about the liberation of God and mankind. You never know when Satan may show up. When everything is going wrong and your determination is shaky, Satan will most likely start talking to you. When things are going bad, you may feel like smoking or drinking alcoholic beverages. It makes no sense to smoke, however. Smoking will never be of any help in liberating God and mankind. The same applies to drinking alcohol. You absolutely need prayer in order to overcome your weak points."

MODESTY

Let's turn our attention to modesty. On April 1, 2010 Father said, "The hippies let their hair grow—they want to be like monkeys." In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* published when he was 90 years old in 2010 Father explains how he came to America in the hippie 1970s to "reawaken the founding spirit of America … Young people began to follow me and cutting their shoulder-length hair and their scruffy beards. When appearances change, minds also change." Beards are fine if they are neat and trim.

Father tells us we are public people so: "Women also should dress more neatly and comb your hair more neatly. ... The opposing forces in the media take photos of our weak points and put it on the newspaper. Then, when people look at it they will say, 'I thought Unification Church members were all exemplary, but they also have that type of people.' This might really take place. We might be made famous in the newspapers." (*The Way of the Spiritual Leader Part 2*)

HAIR

Men are supposed to have short hair and women are supposed to have long hair. First Corinthians 11:14-15 says, "for a man to wear long hair is degrading to him, but if a woman has long hair, it is her pride" or translated as "if a man has long hair, it is a shame unto him. But if a woman has long hair, it is a glory to her." One person wrote in a website, "Now some will say, 'Jesus had long hair.' All the famous pictures of Jesus were painted during the Renaissance period when it was fashionable and prestigious to have long hair." We should be able to tell if a person is a man or a woman by their hair.

Father says men should have short hair, "This is the way God intended all things to be. Why is it that women grow their hair long and men cut their hair short? How would it be if men grew their hair long and women cut their hair short? Women need to be covered and protected by something always, so they grow their hair and let their hair cover them. Man is the other way around. Women want to dress themselves nicely with all combinations of color, and emit a good fragrance, changing the combinations every day. If you really give this some thought, you discover a good reason. Women's love has a variety of directions, not just a single monotonous direction. There are all kinds of variety and changes within her as expressions of her love. Women express their love in a variety of ways. The center shouldn't be that detailed. If the center changes all the time it will be very difficult for everything to catch up with him. Father could go on and spend hours like this before reaching his main subject, but these kind of things you cannot find in any library." (3-10-91)

EARRINGS

Sun Myung Moon teaches that men are not supposed to wear earrings. He says:

> What do you suppose a woman thinks when she puts on earrings? She can't see those earrings herself, so she must be thinking of appealing to somebody else's eyes.
>
> Do you suppose she wants to attract some larger woman, since she is a small woman? Is that the idea? Of course not. The answer is simple: she wants to put on earrings for the sake of some man. A man doesn't wear such things, but he will be attracted to look more closely at a woman when she is wearing earrings. (4-22-84)

Deuteronomy 22:5 says, "The woman shall not wear that which pertaineth unto a man, neither shall a man put on a woman's garment: for all that do so are an abomination unto the Lord thy God." Opposites attract. Men and women should strive to dress differently than the other sex. Cross dressing is unprincipled.

> The relations between men and women are so strictly regulated in the Islamic world that a woman cannot even show her face on the street. That's going too far! But here in America women wear less and less clothing and people kiss and hug in the street. That's the other extreme. What is God's solution? (2-11-79)

> I always want myself to be a reason for God's joy. Even when you dress you should dress well. When I see a person dressed well then it makes me feel good. (*The Way of the Spiritual Leader Part 1*)

> Unification women always dress very modestly, not exposing themselves. (4-9-89)

> Oriental women go almost to the other extreme—they have far fewer problems of that kind. They are always embarrassed to take off their clothing and expose parts of their body. The typical Oriental garments cover the entire body, leaving only the head and hands exposed. This is the traditional dress in the Orient even now. In America, the very minimum is covered—sometimes even less than the minimum. Women go almost naked. (6-12-83)

> Women today are really the ruining factor of American culture. I am warning American women that they should be more feminine and learn from the pattern of the Oriental way of life. Precious things are usually hidden away, and if your body is precious then you have to cover it. The fall of man resulted from sensual desire and the fallen act is going on everywhere. In order to reverse the fall we have to go in the opposite direction. (1-22-78)

> Western women have clothing that show their breasts and with short pants—there is nothing mysterious. The men are the same. They already know everything about each other and therefore they don't want to be married. Everyone wants something mysterious. Men want a feminine soft woman, and women want a masculine even hairy man. (8-31-03)

Father speaks strongly against women showing so much skin. Here is an example from one of his speeches:

> The other way is almost barbaric—virtually shoving something at somebody in a casual and careless manner. In summertime, many women walk around on the streets half dressed. That is not so pretty, either; it is certainly not a reflection of a highly cultured society. That is also vulgar and barbaric. (9-7-86)

Father teaches that dresses should be beautiful. There are infinite colors and patterns that women can choose from that will contrast with men's clothing. He says:

> Women's skirts should not be tight but rather have a colorful flair that can go around and embrace her husband. (5-1-92)

> Women need to wear colorful clothes as much as possible. As much as possible, ask three of your friends to evaluate your attire, and ask, "Is this good enough?" (*The Way Of The Spiritual Leader Part 2*)

> Men may be content to wear one decent suit day in and day out, all year long, but women always want to wear a new fashion. Just about all the men here are wearing the same style clothing, but the women are wearing all kinds of blouses and dresses, in all kinds of colors and shapes. The men's world is just one dull color, but the women's world is like a flower garden. (2-15-81)

Furthermore, men have a rather limited variety of hairstyles and ways of dressing, while women have no limit! (10-2-83)

THE MARRIAGE BED

Having said this about modesty let's turn our attention to the area of life where we should not be modest—the marriage bed. Tim and Beverly LaHaye write in the most famous Christian bestseller book on sex *The Act of Marriage: The Beauty of Sexual Love*:

> Almost every sex manual emphasizes the need for an adequate period of foreplay, or loveplay. This is true not only on the first night, but all through marriage. Most men have learned that foreplay is essential to their wives' enjoyment of lovemaking, but they generally minimize their own need for foreplay because they are fully aroused for lovemaking at the sight of their beloved's nude body. Yet current research has revealed that it is easier for a man to retard his ejaculation after a long period of foreplay than after sudden arousal.

After talking about orgasm in a counseling session with an engaged couple LaHaye writes:

> One young bride-to-be interrupted me during my usual talk on intimate relationships before marrying the couple. "Pastor LaHaye, do we have to talk about this? It embarrasses me. It will work out by itself." … Fortunately most brides expect to enjoy lovemaking and realistically face the fact that some preparation is necessary before they begin the actual experience. All such young people would be advised to consider the following minimal steps in that preparation. 1. Learn as much as you can before the wedding night. The previous chapter on sex education should be read several times to make sure both the bride and groom understand the functions of the male and female reproductive organs. We feel that the reading of this book and others listed at the close of the chapter should not be reviewed together until after the wedding. But both bride and groom should read the basic material separately beforehand and then study it together on their honeymoon. The book is intended to be a help to such a couple on their wedding trip. 2. All prospective brides should visit their doctor several weeks before the wedding, discussing with him [I believe she should have a female doctor or a medically trained woman instead of a man] the availability of breaking the hymen in the privacy of his [her] office. If the doctor's examination shows the hymen is thick and may obstruct sexual intercourse, she should consider letting him [her] stretch it or cut it to avoid unnecessary pain and bleeding during intercourse.

In another good Christian book on sex *Intended for Pleasure* Ed Wheat gives diagrams and says, "I believe it is best for the prospective bride to devote a few moments each day for two to four weeks before the wedding in stretching the vaginal opening, so that her initial sexual experience with her husband will be as pleasant and painless as possible." He then explains how to do this and then explains how the husband can do this on the wedding night. He says, "… It is a rare bride who will be able to provide sufficient natural vaginal lubricant on her honeymoon to avoid painful sensations during the act of love. This possibility can be eliminated by securing a tube of surgical jelly from the druggist. She would be advised to have it handy for her husband to use at the proper

time."

In the Christian book on sex *A Celebration of Sex* Douglas Rosenau says:

> Every couple should have some artificial lubrication handy to use as needed as an aid to great lovemaking. Many drugstores sell a variety of artificial lubricants. Vaseline (petroleum jelly) is an old standby, but because it is not water soluble, it can be more difficult for the vagina to be self-cleansing and for cleanup in general. K-Y jelly is another standby that works well. Some couples complain that K-Y dries out, and they prefer a different type such as Astroglide or Wet. These are more liquid and come in a small plastic dispenser. Wet also make its Fun Flavors lubricants that taste good if oral stimulation is also going to be enjoyed.

Father often speaks candidly about the sexual organs. Hyung Jin and his wife have spoken how the translations we get of him will say "sexual organs" when Father is really speaking bluntly and saying penis and vagina. We should be very free about using those words. Father teaches we should enjoy our mate's private parts. Couples should talk frankly about sex just like Father does.

Here are a few examples of Father speaking bluntly about sex.

> Thus when husband and wife make love, it is like this phenomenon of lightning and thunder. When husband and wife come together, it is like east and west coming together, like different sets of clouds, like above and below. They all come together and create this explosion. God cannot be dozing when this happens. Parental, conjugal and children's love come together and create this love. Bright light and sound are produced. Then all things surrounding them welcome it and want to resemble that couple. (12-26-99)

> The thunder and lightning of the natural world is equivalent to the action of love between man and woman in marriage. All the cells of the body are filled with excitement and joy. Everything bursts out, making noise and lightning. Man is plus and woman is minus. Why are you laughing now? (From joy.) Joy? That's good. [Laughter] That is the most precious place of all. (4-18-96)

I challenge every Unificationist to be sexually pure and consume only pure food grown with love.

CHAPTER TWO

WARRIOR

The second value is the value of being a warrior for Christ. The Bible often talks of war and warriors:

1 Timothy 6:12 Fight the good fight of the faith

Zephaniah 3:17 The LORD your God is with you, the Mighty Warrior who saves.

Judges 6:12 When the angel of the LORD appeared to Gideon, he said, "The LORD is with you, mighty warrior.

Exodus 15:3 The LORD is a warrior; the LORD is his name.

Isaiah 42:13 The LORD will march out like a champion, like a warrior he will stir up his zeal; with a shout he will raise the battle cry and will triumph over his enemies.

Jeremiah 20:11 But the LORD is with me like a mighty warrior; so my persecutors will stumble and not prevail. They will fail and be thoroughly disgraced; their dishonor will never be forgotten.

Psalms 127:4 Like arrows in the hands of a warrior are children born in one's youth.

2 Samuel 10:12 Be strong, and let us fight bravely for our people and the cities of our God. The Lord will do what is good in his sight.

Psalms 18:39 For You have girded me with strength for battle; You have subdued under me those who rose up against me.

Deuteronomy 20:1 When you go out to battle against your enemies and see horses and chariots and people more numerous than you, do not be afraid of them; for the LORD your God, who brought you up from the land of Egypt, is with you.

Psalm 44:5 Through You we will push back our adversaries; Through Your name we will trample down those who rise up against us.

Psalms 28:7 The LORD is my strength and my shield; My heart trusts in Him, and I am helped; Therefore my heart exults, And with my song I shall thank Him.

Ephesians 6:10-18 Finally, be strong in the Lord and in the strength of his might. Put on the whole armor of God, that you may be able to stand against the schemes of the devil. For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the cosmic powers over this present darkness, against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly places. Therefore take up the whole armor of God, that

you may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand firm. Stand therefore, having fastened on the belt of truth, and having put on the breastplate of righteousness, ...

Ephesians 6:11 Put on the whole armor of God, that you may be able to stand against the schemes of the devil.

Psalm 144:1-2 Of David. Blessed be the Lord, my rock, who trains my hands for war, and my fingers for battle; he is my steadfast love and my fortress, my stronghold and my deliverer, my shield and he in whom I take refuge, who subdues peoples under me.

Romans 13:4 For he is God's servant for your good. But if you do wrong, be afraid, for he does not bear the sword in vain. For he is the servant of God, an avenger who carries out God's wrath on the wrongdoer.

Jeremiah 20:11 But the Lord is with me as a dread warrior; therefore my persecutors will stumble; they will not overcome me. They will be greatly shamed, for they will not succeed. Their eternal dishonor will never be forgotten.

Isaiah 42:13 The Lord goes out like a mighty man, like a man of war he stirs up his zeal; he cries out, he shouts aloud, he shows himself mighty against his foes.

Jesus said in Luke 22:36 "But now let the one who has a moneybag take it, and likewise a knapsack. And let the one who has no sword sell his cloak and buy one.

Hyung Jin Moon is building a movement that is teaching how each person is to fight the good fight. We fight with our words of truth and if need be we defend ourselves physically in self-defense. The standard for every family in his Sanctuary movement is to wear crowns, own land and have and be skilled in using an AR-15 rifle.

SUN MYUNG MOON USES PERSUASION, NOT FORCE

True Father said in his interview with Frederich Sontag (printed in his book *Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church*) that it is God's will to fight back when attacked. Sontag asks Father what he thinks about his image that many "are fearful because they think the movement will resort to a militaristic posture and that you will command your members to go out with guns. What do you say about condoning force or violence to attain your goals?"

Father responds: "It's been God's principle never to attack first. God never attacks first. Evil and Satan always take initiative and try to destroy, but the heavenly side has the responsibility to defend itself." Having said that he goes on to say the Church is not focused on the military, but on education: "I preach our movement as essentially nonviolent and nonmilitaristic. Our movement has the greatest weapon—if you use that word—truth. We also have the greatest target: the human heart." He says, "We are conquerors by love, conquerors by truth, but not by violence, not by weapons." He explains that, "Communism is trying to take the world by force. But God will take the world by love. We must become the embodiment of this love." He ends by saying that he is not interested in being a political leader but he supports those leaders, such as the President of Korea, in being anti-Communist and for having a strong military: "I have never met President Park ... Yet in principle I support a strong defense, and an absolute anti-Communist policy."

The West has become weak since the Liberals gained power after World War 11. Feminism is now the dominant ideology of the West. Men have become weak because of it and this is why America failed to support our troops in the Korean War and therefore lost North Korea to communism. Feminism is communism so it will not fight evil but it will fight goodness.

Father has been consistent in supporting America in using troops to fight wars. He spoke strongly for America to win the Vietnam War and was critical of America for losing. He supported the freedom fighters in Nicaragua and Afghanistan against the communists. Father spoke out against the weak, pacifist actions of President Carter and praised President Reagan's build up of the military. It is a primary duty of Unificationists to speak out in support of America's military. Sometimes we have to be the world's policeman. Unificationists should not be deceived by liberal Democrats like Michael Moore's film *Fahrenheit 9/11*. Conservatives have countered his lies with the truth in films like *Fahrenhype 9/11, Michael Moore Hates America* and *Celsius 41.11*. Sun Myung Moon has been consistent in being a strong hawk and standing up against evil and those who would be weak doves in fighting evil.

Father says:

> If America were to initiate a war for the sake of its own selfish interests then that act would be the height of wickedness and evil. Yet sometimes an act of war may be inevitable for the sake of God and humanity and may be carried out with a totally unselfish motivation. Throughout the history of this fallen world there have been many wars that God has had to wage, for example the wars of the Old Testament. When taking an unselfish viewpoint, killing or engagement in war has sometimes been inevitable and is justified in the sight of God.
>
> In examining history we find that sometimes God has killed men. Can we then accuse God of being a murderer, even insisting that He cannot be God? God makes His decisions only on the most public-minded level and these decisions sometimes include killing. Such acts are absolutely not to advance His own selfish cause but only the unselfish cause of mankind. (10-3-76)

Former President of the Unification Church of America, Tyler Hendricks wrote an article in the April 1989 issue of the *Unification News*. The title is "Some Political Implications of the *Divine Principle*." He writes, "*Divine Principle* approves the structure of democracy; it is the spirit of the people which is the problem. ... The ideal of the Messiah's second advent, which Rev. Moon is pursuing, is not to create a new political system, but rather to do all he can to center the present system, democracy, upon God's will." This has changed. Hyung Jin Moon has given mankind a Constitution that spells out how we govern ourselves politically. You can read it for free at the website for his Sanctuay movement at Sanctuary-pa.org.

In the following quote it seems to me that Sun Myung Moon is telling us that it is our duty to spread democracy throughout the world:

> So, as I have already said, the establishment of the view of value and arming ourselves with that ideology is a very important goal. Then we must extend and improve our country in terms of international position. The most important capability is to establish an advanced democratic society for our nation.
>
> Only true democracy can triumph over dictatorship. Only through the development of an ideal democratic government is it possible to defeat any dictatorial group centered on worshipping individuals. The statement made by Abraham Lincoln, "A government of the people, for the people, and by the people," is true. Democracy should be our national conscience's highest priority,

having historical proportions. (*Way of Unification Part 2*)

NOT-SO-WILD FRONTIER

Women were respected and protected in the good old days of the so-called Wild, Wild West before feminism ruined it all. Women were far happier as a whole a hundred years ago than they are today. Roger D. McGrath wrote an excellent book on what it was really like in America's West titled *Gunfighters, highwaymen & vigilantes: violence on the frontier*. A reviewer wrote, "His procedure was methodical and exhaustive: he analyzed newspapers and legal and other records from two California mining towns on the slopes of the eastern Sierra and catalogued every violent incident during the towns brief boom years." His conclusion: "The violence and lawlessness that visited the trans-Sierra frontier . . . took special forms: warfare between Indians and whites, stagecoach robbery, vigilantism, and gunfights. These activities bear little or no relation to the violence and lawlessness that pervade American society today. Serious juvenile offenses, crimes against the elderly and weak, rape, robbery, burglary and theft were either non-existent or of little significance. . . . There seems to be little justification for blaming contemporary American violence on violence and lawlessness in our frontier heritage." He says, "Women were greatly respected … a man who used foul language in front of women or children was likely to go to jail. In five years, there was not a single report of rape."

One of the towns he wrote of was called Bodie. The reviewer wrote that McGrath found that even though everyone had guns back then crime was far less than today. Women could walk the streets at night without fear: "Faced with a choice between a rough, uncivilized 19th-century mining town and a glittering 20th-century city, the American seeking a healthy and law-abiding community would have to pick Bodie every time." I haven't the space here to go into detail but there is a fascinating chapter on how men in the community would band together when the sheriff needed help to track down a criminal. They were disciplined, level-headed and got the job done. Then they went back to their ordinary lives.

Tocqueville wrote about America in the 1830s. In his classic book, *Democracy in America*, he says that he saw men treat women with "respect." Men would not use foul language in the presence of women. Women, he found, were safe. They could travel alone "without fear." And rape, which rarely happened, was a death penalty. He writes:

> Their conduct to women always implies that they suppose them to be virtuous and refined; and such is the respect entertained for the moral freedom of the sex, that in the presence of a woman the most guarded language is used, lest her ear should be offended by an expression. In America a young unmarried woman may, alone and without fear, undertake a long journey.
>
> The legislators of the United States, who have mitigated almost all the penalties of criminal law, still make rape a capital offence, and no crime is visited with more inexorable severity by public opinion. This may be accounted for; as the Americans can conceive nothing more precious than a woman's honor, and nothing which ought so much to be respected as her independence, they hold that no punishment is too severe for the man who deprives her of them against her will. In France, where the same offence is visited with far milder penalties, it is frequently difficult to get a verdict from a jury against the prisoner. Is this a consequence of contempt of decency or contempt of women? I cannot but believe that it is a contempt of one and of the other.

UNIFICATIOISTS NEED TO BECOME CAPITALIST/TRADITIONALISTS

Be sure to watch the videos of the two brothers: Kook Jin's speeches are titled "Strong Korea" (vimeo.com/35179060) and "Freedom Society: A Vision for Building God's Ideal World" (http://vimeo.com/46573439 and other sites at Vimeo.com and YouTube.com) and Hyung Jin's speech (http://vimeo.com/46319345) (You can also watch these videos at my website www.divineprinciple.com). Unificationists should stop being weak like they have been ever since Miss Kim landed in America in 1959 with her socialist/feminist agenda and become strong against evil by living and teaching God's way of life—capitalist/traditional values.

DENCENTRALIZE MILITARY TO THE HOME

In Kook Jin Moon's speech "Freedom Society: A Vision for Building God's Ideal World" (http://vimeo.com/46573439 and at divineprinciple.com) and Hyung Jin Moon's speech (http://vimeo.com/46319345 and at divineprinciple.com) these two brothers are calling for godly men to be freedom fighters and that democratic, peaceful nations should decentralize their military to a small number of full time professional soldiers but the majority and the rest of the men in society be the primary military just as Switzerland does. Their citizen militia can mobilize in minutes because every able-bodied man has been trained to fight and shoot an automatic weapon (machine gun). Kook Jin says it is the responsibility of men to be the policemen and soldiers to protect their homes and nation from evil men who invade from within and from without. In America is it illegal to buy or sell an automatic weapon like an AK-47 and there are gun control laws. These laws should be repealed and every home should have a machine gun and men and women should carry concealed weapons wherever they go.

HAVING DOMINION

Having dominion is specifically related to bearing arms. The Third Blessing, dominion, is having the maturity to decide life and death.. Every good man should be a police officer and soldier. The government should not have primary use of force. They are object and the average man is subject. The Third Blessing is about growing to full maturity. To fulfill the Third Blessing men must take on the awesome and critical responsibility to bear high powered weapons. Like God, men are supposed to have the authority over life and death. This is how they grow spiritually and mature their character. They have the responsibility to protect—to put their life at risk to defend others. This is not the responsibility of a few government employees but a requirement for all—to be protectors of the general welfare. We should never surrender freedom and give monopolistic power to government. Kook Jin says, "We, the Unification Church, stand for freedom."

STRONG VS. WEAK

There are evil men everywhere. There are criminal gangsters and ruthless leaders of Cain nations that will use any weapons they can find to destroy Abel nations. We must be strong against communist countries like China and North Korea and Islamic countries like Iran that want to commit genocide on Israel and destroy America. We must not be naïve like Chamberlain was to Hitler and be strong militarily. I am proud of these two brothers to make this bold, strong stand for strength. God wants his side to be stronger than Satan's side. Abel must not let Cain kill him like Cain did in the Garden of Eden. Abel was not alert and stronger than his possessed brother. The whole issue of guns is an emotional, controversial and divisive topic. There's a big difference between only the army carrying weapons and every citizen owning weapons. Even though we may be called extremists and gun nuts, we must not be intimidated and confidently push to make it not only legal but a duty of men to have a machine gun to protect home and country.

One misguided sister wrote in response to their speeches, "I am happy to have an army protect my country but if every citizen has to carry a weapon as Hyung Jin and Kook Jin suggest I would consider it hell. We would go back to prehistoric times." This is not true. A brother correctly

replied to her nonsense saying, "Not at all. People who have no predisposition to hurt others will not suddenly become killers because they are carrying a gun. On the contrary, they will have the ability to stop evil people in their tracks, should the occasion arise. Good people with guns are an asset not a liability." She goes on to write, "I joined the Unification Church and not the Tea Party. I don't belong to the NRA either. I think it is really pathetic to transform *Divine Principle* into Tea Party ideology." I say thank God for the NRA and the Tea Party. Then this sister reminds Kook Jin that the official *Divine Principle* book of the Unification Church, *Exposition of the Divine Principle*, says that the future ideal world will be socialist, "Another thing is that *Divine Principle* In Part 2 chapter 4 teaches the principles of Coexistence, Co-prosperity, Common cause and Communism and explains that man's original mind is headed for a SOCIALISTIC society on the heavenly side." She goes on to say, "I was devastated when I heard him put forward his brother's NRA and Tea Party ideology and be so enthusiastic about it. How can having guns to defend our freedom against governmental tyranny bring the kingdom of heaven in 7 years.....The mind boggles." Sadly she represents many in the UC who are Liberals who do not see that God is for the NRA and Tea Party. I assume there are more Liberal Unificationists in Europe than America because it is so socialist. They should either change or go join another church. There is no place for Liberals who denounce the NRA and Tea Party in the Unification Movement. The very name of our movement is "unification." We should all be united on the core belief that Satan is for socialism and fight socialists who love gun control. This unprincipled sister mentioned the socialist statement in the *Divine Principle*. I write the opposite in my version of the *Divine Principle*. The *Exposition* book, the official *Divine Principle* book of the UC, uplifts the Christian socialist, Charles Kingsley, and the secular socialist, Robert Owen. I write against them in my *Divine Principle* book and uplift Adam Smith and Thomas Jefferson instead.

Hyung Jin is so excited about this breakthrough that he feels just like the early members in the 1970s who thought it would take only 7 years to make Father the world wide messiah he feels now that it could happen 7 years from now. I don't know how long it will take for America and other nations to give up big government and feminism but it will eventually happen because it is the truth and truth always rises and prevails. Because of the Internet I could see this happening soon. I encourage everyone who loves God's plan of limited government and traditional roles for men and women that America's founding fathers and their wives held to do everything in their power to get this message out and to fight the sister we saw above who denounces Kook Jin and Hyung Jin as dangerous gun nuts.

This Liberal sister writes, "In 38 years in the church I had never heard anyone massacre *Divine Principle* in such a way." I have been in the church for that long as well and I am in agreement with Hyung Jin that this is the first time in the history of the Unification Church that there is an application of the *Divine Principle* to daily life. If every godly man in the Abel position had a machine gun and would be a freedom fighter against men in the Cain position that would dramatically help bring world peace.

A brother responded to this sister saying, "It's an interesting development. Father never spoke much about this sort of thing. His anti-communism seemed restricted to its atheism. I sometimes thought he would be quite content with an authoritarian society just so long as it was centered on God. This always bothered me. … I am glad to see his sons standing up for freedom. I especially was delighted to hear Hyung Jin's denunciation of kings, queens and royalty, although I wonder if he grasps the implications of that for the stranglehold the Moon clan has on our movement."

LOVE OF GUNS

Joyce Malcolm is a respected British academic who wrote *Guns and Violence: The English Experience*. Paul Craig Roberts wrote in the *Washington Times* (11-1-02), "Joyce Lee Malcolm brings new evidence that guns reduce violence. Professor Malcolm's carefully researched book is

a study of guns and violence in England from the Middle Ages through the present day. When the English were armed to the teeth, violent crime was rare. Now that the English are disarmed, they have suffered a dramatic increase in rates of violent crime. Indeed, crime in England is out of control." "Merely threatening to defend oneself can also prove illegal, as an elderly lady discovered. She succeeded in frightening off a gang of thugs by firing a blank from a toy gun, only to be arrested for the crime of putting someone in fear with an imitation firearm." England, Australia and Japan are island nations that have banned weapons. We have learned from Father that these nations are feminine in nature. The men in peaceful, democratic nations worldwide need to change their fear of guns to a love of guns. "Malcolm's outstanding book thoroughly demolishes the case for gun control." There is no science or reason behind gun control. It is a Satanic invasion of people's minds.

John Lott proves that Liberals are wrong in wanting to ban guns and control guns. In his book *More Guns, Less Crime* he writes that the founding fathers of America put the Second Amendment in the Constitution because they "believed that an armed citizenry is the ultimate bulwark against tyrannical government. Possibly our trust in government has risen so much that we no longer fear what future governments might do." In his book *The Bias Against Guns: Why Almost Everything You've Heard About Gun Control Is Wrong*, John Lott proves that guns are far less dangerous than many other things children come in contact with, "The dangers of children getting into guns pale in comparison to many other risks. Over 1,260 children under ten died as a result of motor vehicles in 1999, and almost 370 died as pedestrians killed by cars. Accidents involving residential fires took 484 children's lives in 1999. Bicycles are also much more likely to result in accidental deaths than guns. 93 children under ten drowned in bathtubs; another 36 children under age five drowned in five-gallon plastic water buckets. In fact, the number of children under ten who die from any type of accidental gunshot is smaller than the number of toddlers who drown on buckets or bathtubs" and no one seems to think we should keep "our buckets away or our bathroom doors locked." He proves that gun locks do not make us safer, "The safe storage laws thus increase crime, yet fail to produce any significant change in accidental deaths or suicides."

In *Straight Shooting: Firearms, Economics and Public Policy* John Lott writes:

> Data that I have collected show that accidental shooters overwhelmingly are adults with long histories of arrests for violent crimes, alcoholism, and involvement in car crashes. Meanwhile, the annual number of accidental gun deaths involving children under ten—most of these being cases where someone older shoot the child—is consistently a single digit number. It is the kind of media archetype story, to report on "naturally curious" children shooting themselves or other children, though from 1995 to 1999 the entire United States saw only between five and nine cases a year where a child under ten either accidentally shot themselves or another child.

LIBERTARIAN PARTY ON GUNS

Lott proves that Democrats are always trying to regulate guns and many want to abolish the right of anyone owning one. He writes that Democrats have a "strong anti-gun sentiment." This is just one more reason for Unificationists in America to never vote for a Democrat. Sadly many Republicans are for some forms of gun control as well. The Libertarian Party is the only political party I know of that is crystal clear about government having absolutely no regulation of guns. The Libertarian Party's platform (www.lp.org/platform) says:

> The only legitimate use of force is in defense of individual rights — life, liberty, and justly acquired property — against aggression. This right inheres in the individual, who may agree to be aided by any other individual or group. We affirm

> the individual right recognized by the Second Amendment to keep and bear arms, and oppose the prosecution of individuals for exercising their rights of self-defense. We oppose all laws at any level of government requiring registration of, or restricting, the ownership, manufacture, or transfer or sale of firearms or ammunition. We support repeal of all gun control laws and we demand the immediate abolition of the Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, and Firearms. We favor the repeal of laws banning the concealment of weapons or prohibiting pocket weapons. We also oppose the banning of inexpensive handguns and semi-automatic weapons.

MACHINE GUNS SHOULD BE LEGAL

The Libertarian Party does not go far enough. They should also say that government records, lists or files of gun owners and gun ownership at every level of government from city to county to state to national must be destroyed and promise to never make them again. The Libertarian Party and all other political parties should have in their platform that they oppose the banning or regulation of any kinds of guns, ammunition, or accessories such as machine guns, silencers, and size of magazines. Everyone from a felon to a 13-year-old should be able to freely buy without any government agency or law restricting him or her from owning everything from a switchblade knife to a sawed-off shotgun to a tank. Every nation should give total and absolute freedom for every citizen to own and use if needed against criminals and tyrannical governments any kind of firearm which is what the Second Amendment gives.

CONCEALED GUNS SAVE LIVES

The media is mostly Liberal so they never report how guns are used to save lives. In *Straight Shooting* John Lott gives some examples of why we should have a populace that carries guns:

> For their own safety, people should get armed protection. … statistics bear out, passive behavior is simply not the wisest course of action. The chance of serious injury from an attack is 2 ½ times greater for women offering no resistance than for those resisting with a gun. Having a gun is by far the safest course of action, especially for people who are relatively weak physically—women and the elderly.
>
> Concealed handgun permit holders not only protect themselves, but often protect others, though this receives very little media attention. Take the following two incidents occurring the same week … in Florida, a robber at a Wal-Mart store slashed two employees with a knife, but before he could cause further injuries, 53-year-old Sandra Suter pulled out a pistol and said, "I have a concealed weapons permit. Either drop the knife, or I'll shoot you." After she repeated her threat, the robber dropped his knife.
>
> In Indiana, 70-year-old George Smith stopped two armed robbers at a store because he had a gun. As one of the store clerks saw it, "I think George was the real hero. He saved my life." He likely saved other lives as well, but probably no one outside of Indianapolis has heard the story. Unfortunately, no one like Sutter or Smith was present at Wendy's last week in Brooklyn when five workers were killed. If they had been able to prevent the attack, would that have gotten the same attention? Despite the focus in the media, people use guns defensively about five times more frequently than guns are used to commit crime.

In *Freedomnomics* John Lott writes:

> During the 1990s, for example, assault victims who used a gun for self-protection were injured 3.6 percent of the time. This contrasts with 5.4 percent of those who ran or drove away, 12.6 percent of those who screamed, and 13.6 percent of those

who threatened the attacker without a weapon. Those who took no self-protective action at all fared the worse—55.2 percent of them were injured. Gandhi's strategy of peaceful resistance may have worked against British imperialists who could be embarrassed by public attention, but criminals require other methods of persuasion.

Economist Stephen Bronars and I found significant evidence that criminals move out of areas where concealed handguns are legalized. … Concealed weapons clearly help to reduce crime. The benefits of gun ownership also outweigh the drawbacks such as accidental deaths. These do happen, but they are relatively rare, with 649 cases reported among the nation's 100 million gun owners in 2004.

One writer said: "When gun control and pro-gun advocacy groups talk about children and guns, the images they describe could not be more different. Josh Sugarmann, executive director of the Violence Policy Center, a leading national gun control group, tells the story of two-year-old Kaile Hinke from Fort Myers, Florida, who was shot in the chest by her three-year-old brother Colton. According to Sugarmann, 'Colton found the loaded .25-caliber pistol in a drawer in his parents' bedroom, where he and Kaile were playing while their mother was in another room. Kaile was driven to Lee Memorial Hospital where she was pronounced dead.'"

GUN LOCKS DON'T WORK

This is tragic but the opposite happens more frequently. John Lott shows scientifically and says that "gunlocks and self-storage laws cause more deaths than they prevent." He gives heartbreaking stories of people who lost their lives because they didn't have time or were unable to load their gun in time to defend themselves and their family. Here is a true story that illustrates why guns should not have locks given in Richard Poe's book *The Seven Myths of Gun Control*:

Fear stalks Merced, California – fear of the government. Because of that fear, two innocent children died needlessly, victims of California's "safe storage" gun laws. The mass media never told Americans what really happened in Merced. But the tale of the Merced Pitchfork Murders will not die. Through talk radio; through the Internet; by word of mouth, the story gathers momentum with each passing year. Like the tale of the Boston Massacre in 1770, passed from patriot to patriot over tankards of ale, the Merced Pitchfork Murders live and burn in the hearts of millions of Americans.

On that terrible morning of August 23, 2000, fourteen-year-old Jessica Carpenter had been left in charge to look after her four siblings, Anna, 13; Vanessa, 11; Ashley, 9; and John, 7. Their father had left for work. Their mother had taken the car to get the brakes checked.

Jessica heard noises from the living room. Still half asleep, she rose from bed and walked to the kitchen. Then she froze. There was a man in the living room. A strange man. He was stark naked.

Jessica fled back to her bedroom and locked the door. Someone knocked. Then he knocked again. And again. Jessica picked up the phone, but heard no dial tone. The intruder had taken the receiver off the hook.

That's when Jessica thought of her father's gun. Mr. Carpenter had taught Jessica and the other children to shoot. Jessica had passed her hunter safety course and received her certificate at age 12. She knew that her Dad always kept a .357 Magnum in his bedroom.

In deference to California's safe storage laws, however, Mr. Carpenter kept the pistol high up on a closet shelf, unloaded and out of reach of the children. Even if she could somehow get to the other end of the house to retrieve it, Jessica knew she would have to climb up on something to reach the gun, scramble around for the

bullets and then load them. The man would be on her before she had a chance.

So Jessica climbed out the window to get help.

Too Late

No one knows why 27-year-old Jonathan David Bruce, a part-time telemarketer with a history of violence, drug abuse and mental illness, picked on the Carpenters. We only know that, on the morning of August 23, Bruce armed himself with a pitchfork and entered their home, barricading himself inside with the five Carpenter children. Jessica escaped through her bedroom window. But her little brother and three younger sisters were left behind to face the madman.

He attacked thirteen-year-old Anna first. Bruce entered her bedroom and jabbed her with his pitchfork, yelling profanities while Anna screamed and fought. "Stop it!" yelled Ashley, age 9. "Don't hurt my sister!" Bruce turned to Ashley, and killed her with his pitchfork.

Somehow Anna and Vanessa managed to escape out a window. Outside, the two girls met Jessica. They ran to a neighbor's house – a man named Juan Fuentes – and pounded on his door.

Covered with blood and growing weaker by the moment, the wounded Anna pleaded with Fuentes to get his gun and "take care of this guy." But Fuentes declined. Instead, he allowed them to use his phone to call 911.

The sheriff's deputies came quickly, but they arrived too late. John and Ashley were dead. Seven-year-old John had been killed while he slept. When the deputies entered the house, the intruder charged them with his pitchfork. They shot him 13 times, killing him on the spot.

Guns and Children

Most people reading these words will never have heard of the Carpenter family or their ordeal. For Big Media, the only good gun story is an *anti*-gun story. The Carpenters believed that California's "safe storage" laws had robbed their children of the only chance they had to fight back. This was not the sort of message Big Media wanted to send about guns. National news organizations swept the Pitchfork Murders under the rug. Only one local news story in the *Fresno Bee* discussed the safe storage issue at all. National news reports of the incident omitted all mention of guns or gun laws.

"John Carpenter's children are probably dead because John obeyed the laws of the state of California," says Reverend John Hilton, the great-uncle of the Carpenter children. In Hilton's view, the tragedy could have been prevented had the children been provided with easy access to a loaded gun. Many of Hilton's friends and neighbors quietly agree.

Hilton – who is pastor of a Pentecostal church in Merced – recalls that, when he was growing up, his father always kept a loaded Colt .45 in a holster fastened to the pantry wall.

"He was away a lot of the time, working on construction jobs," says Hilton. "But he made sure that gun was available to us, if we needed it. Without even looking, you could reach over and get hold of the handle."

In those days, it was common to let children use firearms. They learned to use them early, safely and responsibly. And there were no school shootings. Ever.

No More Heroes

Hilton, who was 66 years old when I interviewed him in December 2000, says that he shot his first deer at age 7. By the time he was 10, he was proficient with the Colt .45 and capable of defending his family with it. Nowadays, Hilton's father would be

putting himself at risk of imprisonment by giving children access to a loaded gun. California law imposes criminal penalties on gun owners if children are injured or injure others while using their guns.

Technically, if Jessica or any of the other Carpenter children had managed to get hold of their father's .357 Magnum and gun down the killer, their father could have faced criminal charges. It was for fear of the law that John Carpenter kept his gun unloaded and hidden on a high closet shelf.

"He's more afraid of the law than of somebody coming in for his family," Hilton told the *Fresno Bee*.

Likewise, the neighbor who refused to intervene may well have hesitated out of fear or uncertainty about the law. In today's legal environment, heroism is not encouraged. The way to stay out of trouble is to sit back and wait for the police – even if innocent children are being slaughtered right next door.

According to their mother, Tephanie Carpenter – whom I also interviewed – every one of the surviving Carpenter children vowed that they would have shot the killer if only they had had a gun handy. In fact, the wounded girl Anna told her father that, when she saw the man go after her sister Ashley, "I could have shot him right in the back of the head."

The children's bravery and fighting spirit were not considered newsworthy. These elements were left out of the story by the wire services. Instead, the Carpenters' ordeal was reduced to a depressing yarn of five helpless children attacked by a maniac, a tale without meaning, moral or purpose.

Media Bias

The Carpenter case is but one example of a larger problem – the problem of media bias. In the Carpenters' case, their tale ended tragically. But many similar stories have a happier resolution. According to a 1995 study by criminologist Gary Kleck, Americans use firearms to defend themselves up to 2.5 million times each year – or nearly *7,000 times per day*. In 11 out of 12 cases, the attacker flees as soon as his intended victim brandishes the gun or fires a warning shot. Such incidents form part of everyday life in America, yet they rarely make the news.

A study by the Media Research Center released in January 2000 showed that television news stories calling for stricter gun laws outnumbered those opposing such laws by a ratio of 10 to 1. When it comes to guns and gun rights, we are hearing only one side of the story. Small wonder that few Americans are equipped to debate the issue intelligently. "Where the press is free, and every man able to read, all is safe," wrote Thomas Jefferson in 1816. But when the press aligns itself with special interests – such as the anti-gun lobby – critical information is censored, and liberty itself hangs in the balance. "If a nation expects to be ignorant and free … it expects what never was and never will be …" Thomas Jefferson

In an article titled "Shouldn't We Repeal the Gun Laws … If It'll Save a Single Child?" Vin Suprynowicz writes:

> The following Friday, the children's great-uncle, the Rev. John Hilton, told reporters: "If only (Jessica) had a gun available to her, she could have stopped the whole thing. If she had been properly armed, she could have stopped him in his tracks." Maybe John William and Ashley would still be alive, Jessica's uncle said.
>
> "Unfortunately, states now have these so-called safe storage laws," replies Yale Law School Senior Research Scholar Dr. John Lott — author of the book "More Guns, Less Crime." "The problem is, you see no decrease in either juvenile

accidental gun deaths or suicides when such laws are enacted, but you do see an increase in crime rates."

Such laws are based on the notion that young children often "find daddy's gun" and accidentally shoot each other. But in fact only five American children under the age of 10 died of accidents involving handguns in 1997, Lott reports. "People get the impression that kids under 10 are killing each other. In fact this is very rare: three to four per year."

Erich Pratt wrote in an article titled "When Gun Safety Locks Kill" (gunowners.org):

"If only [Jessica] had a gun available to her," said Rev. Hilton, "she could have stopped the whole thing. If she had been properly armed, she could have stopped him in his tracks."

Of course, that kind of talk sends gun haters into orbit. "Hold on," they say. "Kids shouldn't have access to guns. And you can't expect a 14-year-old to handle a weapon in a responsible fashion during a high-pressure encounter like that."

Oh really? Tell that to the 12-year-old Mississippi girl who used a gun to save her mother's life this past April.

The girl's mother was being choked in her own apartment by Anthony Fox, a 25-year-old man who had forced his way into the apartment. The cries for help woke up the daughter who grabbed her mother's handgun and shot Fox in the chest.

One shot. One dead killer. A 12-year-old saves the day.

Prosecutors ruled the shooting a case of justifiable self-defense.

Which brings us back to Jessica. She could very well have saved the lives of her two siblings. If she had access to her father's gun to save those children's lives, would that have been wrong?

For that matter, was it wrong for the 12-year-old girl in Mississippi to have access to her mother's handgun in order to prevent a murder?

In California, the answer to these questions is: "Yes, it is always wrong for anyone to have immediate access to a firearm, even when it's to save the life of a family member."

Governor Gray Davis just signed a bill last month putting more "teeth" into California's original gun storage law. Under the new legislation, parents face additional criminal penalties if they refuse to lock up their best means of self-defense.

Many legislators — both at the state level and in Washington, D.C. — seem to think they know what's best for each family in every situation.

Parents are told they need to put trigger locks on their guns. Or that they must store their ammunition separately from their firearms. Or that they must store the weapons in a safe.

But many times, locking up your safety in any of those ways can be deadly. Americans use guns almost 50,000 times every week to defend themselves or others. And in most of those situations, a trigger lock would give criminals the advantage.

CHURCHES ATTACKED

Crazy people have gone into churches and killed people. In 2009 a deranged man opened fire in a Colorado Springs church. He shot four people, killing two and then a female volunteer security guard carrying a gun shot him. Maybe there would have been less casualties if everyone member of the church carried a gun in the church. Unificationists should have guns handy when they meet to worship together.

Shooting Back: The Right and Duty of Self-Defense

Charl van Wyk has written a book and made a DVD of the same name titled *Shooting Back: The Right and Duty of Self-Defense*. His website is www.ShootingBackBook.com. In 1993 his church in South Africa was attacked during a Sunday evening service by terrorists wielding machine guns and grenades. They killed 11 and wounded 53. One man, Van Wyk, had a pistol and fired back. He wounded one of the attackers and drove the others away before they could hurt more people. It is called the St. James Church Massacre. You can see a video and gruesome pictures of the carnage at a video at his website. You can buy the book and video at www. Superstore.wnd.com.

I hope you study books on this issue that give gripping stories of how guns are wonderful and necessary. I don't have time to go into all his arguments for guns and rebut all the arguments of Liberals who are afraid of guns. Anyone who does not believe in guns and have guns is irrational and putting their family in greater danger.

MYTH—PASSIVE BEHAVIOR IS SAFER

In his book *Straight Shooting* John Lott explains that it is a myth that "when one is attacked, passive behavior is the safest approach." "The Department of Justice's *National Crime Victimization Survey* reports that the probability of serious attack from an attack is 2.5 times greater for women offering no resistance than for women resisting with a gun. Men also benefit from using a gun." Women need to understand that they should scream and fight when they are attacked. When down they should kick with all their might. No one should ever get into a car of a madman. It would be better to die there than taken to a remote spot to be tortured. Do the opposite with police. Never yell or swear at the police. Watch the video *10 Rules for Dealing with Police* (www.UndergroundDocumentaries.com) and study the website www.flexyourrights.org.

WOMEN POLICE OFFICERS IS A DISASTER

In his book *Freedomnomics* John Lott shows that affirmative action programs for police forces have "reduced the effectiveness of police in stopping crime." Hiring women as police officers has been a disaster. He says, "it is more difficult for them to chase and catch fleeing suspects or to control a resisting suspect without resorting to a weapon. Furthermore, an influx of weaker officers can affect police procedures. For example, police departments come under pressure to end patrols by single officers, as well as to reduce foot and bicycle patrols in favor of car patrols."

He tells the story we saw earlier of Brian Nichols, a 196-pound rape defendant overpowering his guard in an Atlanta courthouse. She was five-foot-two and 51 years old. He writes:

> "Why was a tiny woman, or any woman, given such a job" asked Mary Ellen Synon, a columnist for the *Mail on Sunday*. "Because the Atlanta police force, like many others in America, has been subjected for years to government demands for 'gender' balance; changing hiring rules and lowering standards so more women can join up."

Unificationists should not be sucked into this politically correct culture and should oppose women in the police force and military. Lott found that when cities hired women cops, "The results were dramatic: crime rates jumped." "To compensate for physical weakness, women may resort to other means of controlling criminals, in particular by using guns. Being less able to rely on physical strength to defend themselves from an attack, female officers have less time to decide whether to shoot a threatening suspect. This explains the sharp increase in accidental police shootings that typically follow the lowering of strength standards and the hiring of more female officers."

In *It Is Dangerous To Be Right When the Government Is Wrong* Andrew Napolitano writes brilliantly for an armed citizenry. He explains that criminals stay away from those they perceive to

have guns. One example he gives is Switzerland:

> where gun ownership rates are high and burglary rates are low. James A. Donald describes Switzerland as a nation where in peacetime, there are no generals or a central command; rather, every individual is his own policeman. As Donald explains:
>
> > Almost every house in Switzerland contains one or more automatic weapons, the kind of guns that the American federal government calls "assault rifles with cop killer bullets." Switzerland has strict gun controls to keep guns out of the hands of children, lunatics and criminals, but every law abiding adult can buy any kind of weapon. Almost every adult male owns at least one gun, and most have more than one, because of social pressures and the expectation that a respectable middle class male citizen should be well armed and skillful in the use of arms. It is also no coincidence that respect for property rights in Switzerland is amongst the highest in the world, possibly the highest in the world.
>
> This description clearly demonstrates the importance of the right to keep and bear arms in relation to our property rights.
>
> In America, you are instilled from a young age with the belief, "guns kill," but you are never informed of your natural right to own and use a gun to save your life or defend your property. You never learn how vital guns or weapons were in securing the independence of this nation and many other nations. You are never taught that guns can help prevent crimes by deterring criminal activity, nor are you taught how gun laws can actually increase crime.
>
> For example, take the 2010 case of Michael Lish, an Oklahoma homeowner. Upon returning home with his wife around 10:00 p.m., Lish noticed the back door ajar and a window open. Lish then entered the house and searched it to make sure everything was okay. Unsuspectingly, a nineteen-year-old intruder, Billy Jean Tiffey III, jumped out at Lish while brandishing a sword. Lish, who had a concealed-weapon permit, pulled out his gun and shot Tiffey in the abdomen. Tiffey dropped to his knees and reached behind his back, upon which Lish fired a second and third shot, killing him. Investigators found Tiffey was carrying not only a sword, but also a .38-caliber pistol, the homeowner's 9 mm pistol, a knife, and a stun gun. Fortunately for Lish, he did not face prosecution because Oklahoma maintains the "Make My Day" law, where a person can use force—including deadly force—to defend his home. In my home state of New Jersey, had Michael Lish endured this ordeal, he'd been faced with twenty years in prison.

Napolitano writes, "Government's quest to strip us of our ability to defend life, liberty, and property is not unique to this nation. The Nazis used this method to disarm the Jews in Eastern Europe. Once the Nazis overtook a town, Hitler ordered them to seize all guns and other weapons from the Jews and forbade the Jews from acquiring new arms." Then he sent his goons to kill them. "The Nazis' previous denial of the Jews' natural right to keep and bear arms left them without a chance to defend themselves, their homes, businesses, or synagogues. … In 1996, the Chinese government imposed a blanket ban and outlawed the private manufacturing, sale, possession of bullets, guns. … Why would a government prevent its people from owning these arms? The answer is simple: To retain power. As Mao Zedong famously remarked, 'Political power grows out of the barrel of a gun.'"

Ann Coulter said on an appearance on Sean Hannity's show, "Universal background checks means

universal registration which means universal confiscation which means universal extermination. That's how it goes in history. Do not fall for it." We should stop government registration of guns and destroy all government records of sales.

Napolitano says that on 9/11 "if the passengers and pilots of those planes were armed, I believe it is unlikely the terrorist would have been as 'successful' in causing destruction and taking American lives." In one of Lott's books he explains that planes can handle bullets shot from inside. There is so much proof that guns make us safer. If this topic interests you please read more of the powerful arguments of Lott and Napolitano. Watch them talk on YouTube and watch others who understand the absolute necessity of every man being well armed so he can fight evil men.

I got a kick out of one sister who wrote, ""Dear Chairman Kook Jin Nim, you as the chairman are like the Prime Minister of the Unification Movement and your younger brother is our President; by this you represent and are our Government. What structure and practical means do you suggest, my family and I and we all as mature members of our movement, should have, to control you both, to have 'dominion' over you?"

RIGHTEOUS CITIZENS

In a speech titled "Inauguration Ceremony for the Peace Kingdom Corps and the Peace Kingdom Police" (6-12-06) Father says this to all Unificationist brothers: "My hope is that you can quickly become righteous police and military men, and righteous citizens, the direct disciples of Rev. Moon whom God can truly love."

REVOLUTION

Thomas Jefferson spoke harshly about government and how we must always be vigilant and never let it become a tyrant. Here are a few quotes:

> And what country can preserve its liberties if their rulers are not warned from time to time that their people preserve the spirit of resistance? Let them take arms. The remedy is to set them right as to facts, pardon and pacify them. What signify a few lives lost in a century or two? The tree of liberty must be refreshed from time to time with the blood of patriots and tyrants. It is its natural manure.
>
> If once the people become inattentive to the public affairs, you and I, and Congress and Assemblies, Judges and Governors, shall all become wolves. It seems to be the law of our general nature, in spite of individual exceptions.
>
> Experience hath shown, that even under the best forms (of government) those entrusted with power have, in time, and by slow operations, perverted it into tyranny.
>
> I have no fear that the result of our experiment will be that men may be trusted to govern themselves without a master.
>
> A society that will trade a little liberty for a little order will lose both, and deserve neither.
>
> The spirit of resistance to government is so valuable on certain occasions that I wish it to be always kept alive.

I predict future happiness for Americans if they can prevent the government from wasting the labors of the people under the pretense of taking care of them.

In every country and every age, the priest had been hostile to Liberty.

To compel a man to furnish funds for the propagation of ideas he disbelieves and abhors is sinful and tyrannical.

A democracy is nothing more than mob rule, where fifty-one percent of the people may take away the rights of the other forty-nine.

All tyranny needs to gain a foothold is for people of good conscience to remain silent.

Every generation needs a new revolution.

MAKE LOVE WHEN THE ENEMY ATTACKS

Kook Jin gives Switzerland and Israel as examples of nations with a strong defense. They are not counting on America to be the world policeman and have taken steps to be strong in case of war. These nations will not put women into combat. America does. Father says, "The issue in America today is should homosexuals and lesbians be allowed in the armed forces. If the army allows bad sexual behavior it will decline. How can you make love when the enemy attacks" (1-28-93). This applies to a mixed military and co-ed training like West Point. Women should learn how to shoot in self-defense if they have to act like Scarlett O'Hara did in *Gone With the Wind* but they should not be sent to fight a bad guy who invades your home when the husband is there. Women are not supposed to be in the police department or the military. Kook Jin wants the UC to have guns in their homes and UC brothers to be fighters but the UC is filled with many wimpy, stupid members who will not allow guns in their homes and there are many members who will applaud sisters in the military, even West Point. Arianna Moon, the daughter of In Jin, wrote a glowing article for the Unification Church's website about a petite 18-year-old second gen sister at West Point. Arianna titled her article, "West Point Cadet Upholds Unificationist Values at Military Academy." What values? The values of feminism. This article shows the betrayal of Father's values. They are not true Unificationists. They are false Unificationists.

ALL FEMINISTS ARE RADICAL

Some like to argue that there are many types and kinds of feminism—the most extreme being "radical" feminism. The end result of any form of feminism intellectuals can come up with is the same—women in combat. The end result of traditional values in the Bible and in Sun Myung Moon's words is women protected at home. The slippery slope of feminism end in some women coming home raped, wounded or in body bags as a result of protecting men who stay at home. Women in combat is Satan's final ideology in the Last Days. He gets everyone to believe men and women are interchangeable and this blurring of the roles finally ends in people thinking homosexuality is normal. All feminists are radical because women in combat is radical. Either you believe men and women are interchangeable or they are not. Either they have God-given roles and there is division of labor or it's normal, and even noble and inspirational, for women to be at West Point. When the UM gets in sync with Father's words it will finally grow in spirit and numbers.

HAK JA HAN FOR WOMEN IN COMBAT

The former wife of Sun Myung Moon spoke to members of the Unification Movement on April 20, 2013 in Las Vegas, Nevada. Her words were posted at the Family Federation's website FamilyFed.org. She applauded women in combat saying, "Look at Israel today. Even the women go to the army and take action in the same way as men do to protect their country." The core belief

of Feminist ideology is the destruction of the traditional family where men protect women. The pioneer feminist, Susan B. Anthony said, "Women must not depend upon the protection of men but must be taught to protect herself." The end result of Traditional thought is women at home being protected by men. The end consequence of the idea of Feminist thought is women leaving the home to die in combat. Feminists have worked hard for over a hundred years to end chivalry. Their idea of equality is now mainstream thought and that has led to it being legal for women to be in combat in countries like Israel and America. Midge Decter is a wise social critic who wrote that Feminist leaders have been like Pied Pipers who led society down the path to cultural madness: She wrote:

> At the outset of the Gulf War, early in that first phase of it called Desert Shield, the New York Post carried on its front page a news photo — it may have appeared in many papers, or at least it should have — illustrating a story about the departure for Saudi Arabia of a group of reservists. The picture was of a young woman in full military regalia, including helmet, planting a farewell kiss on the brow of an infant at most three months old being held in the arms of its father. The photo spoke volumes about where this society has allowed itself to get dragged to and was in its way as obscene as anything that has appeared in that cesspool known as Hustler magazine. It should have been framed and placed on the desk of the president, the secretary of defense, the chairman of the Joint Chiefs, and every liberal Senator in the United States Congress. What could be a more radical idea than that there is no natural difference between men and women?
>
> That photo was not about the achievement of women's equality; it was about the nuttiness—in this case, perhaps the proper word is madness— that has overtaken all too many American families. For the household in which—let's use the social scientists' pompous term for it "the sexual differentiation of roles" has grown so blurry that you can't tell the soldier from the baby-tender without a scorecard is a place of profound disorder. No wonder we are a country with a low birthrate and a high divorce rate.

Father often taught that only men go to war:

> Families must learn that the nation is more important than the family. In wartime, wives will want their husbands to go help the country, telling them not to worry. Even if the husband were the only support for his parents, wife and children, he should still leave everything behind to fight for his country. (12-25-1980)
>
> In one thing you women have an absolute privilege—in bearing children. Some women complain about how painful God made childbirth, but do you realize what a privilege God has given you? Because of that unique capability you can be treated with respect by men and listened to. If you had no ability to bear children then you would be no good to your husband, but because you can give a son or daughter to him then he will listen to your every desire. You have not thought of it in that way. You thought God was punishing women by giving them such pain, but instead that establishes your right to be protected. Have you heard of any war in which women went out to fight and die by the tens of thousands? Women have always stayed behind and just waited for the men to come home again. (4-24-77)

DO WE DRINK THE KOOL-AID?

My wife, Christen Quinn, posted this at FamilyFed.org under Hak Ja Han's speech:

Does anybody who has ever stood in front of Father and knew him during his life believe that Father would have held his baby in his arms while he sent Mother off to war with good wishes? Hell no!

Mother doesn't understand that saying these words undermines all of Father's efforts during his life. Feminism is what she is advocating here. Feminism is the internal fruit of Marxism which Father fought all his life. Mother is asking me to send my daughters off to war. She has crossed the line and is now asking us to drink the Kool-Aid. Anyone who drinks this philosophy and passes it on to others will achieve its inevitable end — death.

We are supposed to be in the business of giving life to others. This speech sickens me beyond expression. Mother's ideological worldview seems to come more from In Jin than Father.

AMERICA THE BARBAROUS

In response to the President and Secretary of Defense making it legal for women to be in combat Wesley Strackbein wrote this excellent statement titled "Dead Women in Combat: Does Anyone Care? A Call for Americans to Cherish the Weaker Sex" (February 18, 2013):

America the Barbarous: A Call to Repentance

Our nation's abandonment of biblical principles has led women to be devalued rather than cherished. As opposed to reacting with shame and outrage at the prospect of women facing the horrors of frontline combat, the majority of Americans are celebrating the placement of our sisters and daughters in the heat of battle as a triumph of women's rights. Far from being "enlightened" concerning warfare, twentieth-first century America has become a nation of barbarians.

President Obama's words — made on the day his administration announced that hundreds of thousands of combat roles would be opened for women — reflect the attitude of much of our nation's populous: "Today, every American can be proud that our military will grow even stronger with our mothers, wives, sisters and daughters playing a greater role in protecting this country we love."

In last week's State of the Union address, the President took the occasion to trumpet this policy change to an estimated 33.5 million viewers, stating that "our sisters and daughters . . . are ready for combat."

What should be sounding instead is a lament. The weeping prophet Jeremiah offers mournful words fit for the occasion: "Mine eye runneth down with rivers of water for the destruction of the daughter of my people. Mine eye trickleth down, and ceaseth not, without any intermission . . ." (Lamentations 3:48-49).

While all life is precious in God's sight, we have erred in concluding that the death of G.I. Jane in combat is no more terrible than the death of G.I. Joe. Women should not be placed in harm's way to defend our nation, and rather than celebrate what should be mourned, we should cry out to God to humble our hearts in repentance.

Only then will the scales be lifted from our eyes and our hearts be made tender to protect the weaker sex.

WEST POINT—ANNAPOLIS—AIR FORCE ACADEMY

In her awful book *Band of Sisters: American Women at War in Iraq* Kirsten Holmstedt in praises women in combat in the Iraq War. Feminists whine about women being second-class citizens in

chivalrous patriarchy and therefore push for women to lead men in war and die in combat. Kingsley Browne writes in *Co-ed Combat: The New Evidence That Women Shouldn't Fight the Nation's Wars* that "The military must be understood for what it is—a war fighting institution." Women have no place there. His book refutes all the arguments for women in combat. West Point for the Army, Annapolis for the Navy and the Air Force Academy are the elite schools for military leadership that allowed women to enroll in the 1970s.

BRING ME MEN

Browne writes, "From the early days of the Air Force Academy, the words 'Bring Me Men' in two-foot-tall letters were on a stone portal through which cadets walk on their first day at the Academy. The slogan, described in the *Denver Post* as 'one of the most recognizable images in Colorado,'… The aluminum letters were chiseled out of the wall in 2003." Browne calls the weakening of the military by feminists "lunacy." It is lunacy for women to be in the military and police force. It is pathetic and the opposite of Father that his church applauds its own young female members to be there.

FEMALE SECOND GEN AT WEST POINT

Feminists got women to be admitted to these academies and even though it is illegal for women to be in combat, female soldiers are in combat. Emily Perez was the 64th female member of the U.S. military to die in Iraq and the 40th West Point graduate (and first female West Point graduate) killed in Iraq since Sept. 11, 2001. Laura Walker was the first female graduate of West Point to be killed in Afghanistan. Recently at the Unification Church's website they praised a teenage female Second Gen for being at West Point. If she dies in action the confused UC will make her a hero and role model for other Second Gen sisters and further castrate UC brothers. The UC is a feminist organization and therefore has absolutely no understanding of what a man or woman is just as most of America does not understand. To put women in harm's way to protect men is uncivilized. God has little to do with the Unification Church and that is why it has not grown just as all other feminist liberal religions have declined. It is time for Unificationist men to stop being politically correct and become real men. Then the Unification Movement will grow and prosper.

MACHINE GUN IN EVERY HOME

Kook Jin is brilliant in decentralizing the police and military by making it a citizen militia like Switzerland has. All men in Switzerland are armed and trained to fight at a moment's notice and they have assault weapons and even machine guns in their homes. Government deals with force and is no place for sisters. They should train in self-defense like martial arts and they should practice shooting but it is men who must be on the frontline. Women with machine guns is a joke. In the action/comedy movies *True Lies* and *Knight and Day* the male leads are macho action stars Arnold Schwarzenegger and Tom Cruise who are confident with guns and their female counterparts, Jamie Lee Curtis and Cameron Diaz each have a hilarious scene where they can't handle a machine gun and lose control. Kook Jin explains that when Father speaks of "Peace Kingdom Army" and "Peace Kingdom Police Force" he is talking about local militias. Kook Jin talks about all citizens being in the Army and Police and Hyung Jin says Father wants women to take leadership. They are wrong. Only men should be in the military and police force, but women need to carry concealed handguns and be able to shoot a machine gun if necessary in defense of herself and her home if needed.

VOLUNTEER MILITIA

In the anti-gun documentary by Michael Moore *Bowling for Columbine* he interviews a group of men who voluntarily give time to practice being a militia. He wants the viewer to look down on them but they come across as good guys. There are many such groups of good, patriotic men who love America and are responsible and disciplined in what they feel is a duty to form self-appointed

militias. Every good man should be in one. There are two excellent documentaries against Moore titled *Michael and Me* and *Michael Moore Hates America*.

SECOND AMENDMENT TO PROTECT US FROM A POLICE STATE

Claire Wolfe and Aaron Zelman say in their book *The State Vs. The People: The Rise of the American Police State*, "We maintain that an authoritarian police state is in the process of developing in America (and other English-speaking nations). America and its Western cousins are in danger of slipping slowly, almost undetectably, into police states. We believe, and we will demonstrate in this book, that the process is well under way." The former governor of Minnesota Jesse Ventura has a video on YouTube.com title "The 'Police State' Conspiracy." Watch Alex Jones at www.infowars.com and on YouTube. Kook Jin is right in his speech that we should not trust government with a monopoly of guns. Too many times in human history it was governments that violated man's freedom and acted like a criminal. Kook Jin says maybe 5 million people in the last hundred years have died from criminals with guns but government has killed hundreds of millions. This is why the Founding Fathers of America put in the Second Amendment. They wanted the police and military to be mainly local militias—not a big standing Army. The National Guard in America is not local enough. Ludwig von Mises explains, "The worst evils which mankind has ever had to endure were inflicted by bad governments. The state can be and has often been in the course of history the main source of mischief and disaster."

On YouTube.com you can watch Ben Shapiro debate the Liberal Piers Morgan. Morgan asks him to give one good reason why civilians should have powerful guns with clips that hold many bullets. Shapiro eloquently answered that we need to have guns "for the prospective possibility of resistance to tyranny. It is not a concern today, it may not be a concern tomorrow" but we have to be prepared to fight for freedom if it comes. Morgan asked, "Where would tyranny come from?" He answered, "It could come from the U.S. government because governments have gone tyrannical before." Morgan said he sounded "absurd." Shapiro rightly explained that purpose of the Second Amendment to the U.S. Constitution was there to make sure citizens would have the means to protect themselves from a tyrannical government.

MACHINE GUN PREACHER — SAM CHILDERS

There are some lessons we can learn from a major motion picture about the life of Sam Childers. It is called *Machine Gun Preacher*. I hope everyone sees this movie. It is the true story of a white American preacher who goes to Africa and makes it his mission in life to save children's lives. You can see pictures of him and his work in Africa and you can donate at his website www.machinegunpreacher.org**.** He has a book titled *Another Man's War: The True Story of One Man's Battle to Save Children in the Sudan*. At his website we read:

> Angels of East Africa (AOEA), founded in 1998 by Machine Gun Preacher Sam Childers, has rescued over a thousand orphaned children from starvation, disease and enslavement by the brutal Lord's Resistance Army.
>
> Today these children live in the Children's Village, a secure compound and oasis of calm in the Southern Sudanese village of Nimule. Behind these protective walls the next generation of Sudanese leaders are housed, clothed, fed and educated, safe from the echoes of war that still traumatize the nation of Sudan.

In his excellent and moving book he writes:

> Kony and his men raid villages looking for children to capture. They shock and traumatize the kids as soon as possible to frighten them into doing anything they're told. They sometimes kill their parents in front of them, hacking them to death with

> machetes or burning them alive. They slice babies out of their mothers' bellies and set them on fire. They make the mother watch before raping and killing her. They cut off noses, breasts, ears, lips, or hands, sometimes forcing children to eat the cut-off pieces. They hand an eleven-year-old boy a machete and order him to disembowel his mother. He does it.
>
> They run off with children from teenagers to toddlers who will become armed soldiers trained to kill children like themselves, to shoot girls on their way to the well or river for drinking water, to murder parents on command. Some of the youngest will carry machine guns almost as big as they are. Others will become pack animals, carrying ammunition and supplies for troops on the march. Many, if not most of them, serve as sex slaves. Senior officers get the younger ones; everybody else gets the boys.

When he first went to Africa and started his mission he and a few men who work with him saw a band of LRA rebels terrorizing a village and rushed to fight them. As they approached the village he says he saw a "woman, hysterical, gasping for breath, and drenched in blood. The soldiers were cutting her breast off with a machete and had about halfway finished the job. She was badly butchered and had obviously lost a lot of blood." They fight off the rebels and then he writes, "We covered her wounds and drove her to a hospital."

Sam goes back and forth from his church in Pennsylvania to his compound in Africa. A year after this incident he writes that he was "preaching at a church in Maryland, talking about my African ministry. After the service someone came up to me and said, "Do you really think you can make a difference?" He says, "His question got me to thinking." Sam says he had an argument with God and told God, "My family doesn't get the attention they deserve." He questioned if he was really doing good. Two weeks later, he writes, "I was back in Africa. An attractive young lady—a complete stranger—came running up to me on the street, all happy and bubbly, and started hugging me. She was doing her best to communicate with me in her broken English.
"Pastor, do you remember who I am?"
"I'm that lady that was in the village when the LRA raided it. They were cutting my breast off, and you and your men saved me."
"Instantly it was like God said to me, 'One man *can* make a difference.'"

The movie *Machine Gun Preacher* begins with Rebels invading a village where no one has guns to protect themselves. The terrorists have automatic guns that are commonly called machine guns. They slaughter many people and kidnap some boys who are forced to become fighters for them. The leader of the rebels on this raid makes a young boy kill his mother before he is taken prisoner to be a slave. Then they burn the village. There are many evil men in this world who are not in touch with their conscience and will kill, rape and torture with no remorse and no hesitation. Good men must fight them and women should always carry a gun in case there are no good men around to protect them. A man's primary responsibility is to protect women and children and to fight evil men in their nation by being police officers and fight evil men from outside the nation who invade by being soldiers. There are some men who are wimps and cowards who will not buy or carry a weapon to defend themselves, their loved ones or their nation. These are feminist/socialists who look to government to protect them instead of taking personal responsibility.

In the movie there is a young white red-haired woman in her twenties who works for some humanitarian organization that gives medical care. On his first trip to Africa Childers goes to a refugee camp and walks into their tent where she is working. She asks him to help her with a victim who just arrived—a very young African girl whose face looks bloody and horribly cut. He asks, "What happened?"

“Trauma to her lips.”
“What happened to her face?”
“She argued with the rebels so they cut off her lips. These are Kony's orders.”
“Who’s Kony?”
“Who are you with? Which organization?”
“I’m with the Christian group down in the south.”
“This isn’t a tourist destination. This is a war zone. If you stay here, you’re going to get killed.”
His friend says “Kony calls himself a Christian, but I say he’s Satan who devours his own people.”
“So, Kony is the leader of the LRA?”

He says they have been fighting for years, “But there’s very little we can do. Our weapons are old, our boots full of holes. We’ve been forgotten by the whole world.” Sam looks at his gun and tells him it needs cleaning. He is asked if he is military and he says, “No, I just like my guns.”

We see the relief worker again when she sees him later. She goes up to him and says that “The children in the camps talk about you. They say there’s a white preacher who hunts the rebels. This place does not need more guns Mr. Childers.”
“I'm just trying to help these people, same as you.”
“Don't delude yourself. You're a mercenary, not a humanitarian.”
“I got 200 kids who are gonna sleep safe tonight. Right or wrong, that’s all the reason I need.”
“That's how it always starts. With people thinking that they’re killing for the right reasons.”
“Why don’t you fight the evil in this place your way, and let me fight it mine.”
“They say you're doing good, that you have special powers. You’re protected by angels and can’t be killed by bullets. They said the same thing about Kony in the beginning, too.”

Near the end of the movie there is a scene where this naïve young woman is driving in a convoy of relief workers. They see a road block ahead of a jeep with a few rebels. The black man driving the lead vehicle she is in starts to reverse and she tells him, “Don’t reverse.”
He says, “They are going to kill us.”
She replies, “No, they’re not.”

BLEEDING HEART LIBERAL

He warns her again but she tells him, “Calm down, I’m going to go talk to them.” She gets out of the vehicle and starts walking to them. A rebel carrying a gun walks to her. She says, “It’s OK, we’re a relief convoy. We’ve only got medical supplies, we’re non-military.” The rebel who is not wearing a uniform viciously hits her hard in the face with the butt of his rifle. She falls and then we see him fall as he is shot. And then we see the other rebels shot to death. Then Childers walks to where the woman and the rebel are lying on the ground. The rebel is still alive and looks up at him. The Preacher, without any emotion, takes his rifle and shoots him dead. The woman has a deep gash on her forehead and starts to move showing she is alive. There is no more to that scene but the lesson is obvious. He saved the life of a bleeding heart liberal who was literally bleeding because she was naïve to evil and doesn’t see the benefits of guns.

MACHINE GUN RELIGION

All Unificationist brothers should become a “machine gun preacher.” It is illegal to own a machine gun in America and we need to actively campaign to get it legal. We should be known for our strong stand that everyone be armed and that all righteous men should own a machine gun. The Unification Movement should become famous for having strong men who work to change our laws to make citizen militias stronger than the standing Army of their nations. Let’s become known as the “Machine Gun Religion.”

JUST WAR

The concept of "just war" is correct. There are times when those on the side of good should use force against those on the side of evil. Dennis Prager writes this about the liberal bumper sticker, "War is not the answer": "Aside from the idiocy of this claim—war has solved slavery, ended the Holocaust, destroyed Japanese Fascism, preserved half the Korean peninsula from near-genocide, and saved Israel from extinction, among other noble achievements—the claim offers no support to those who do engage in war. ….I know of no comparable conservative bumper sticker that is so demonstrably false and morally ignorant. Almost every great evil has been solved by war—from slavery in America to the Holocaust in Europe. Auschwitz was liberated by soldiers making war, not by pacifists who would have allowed the Nazis to murder every Jew in Europe."

All this talk of anti-socialism and pro-guns will drive the liberals in the UM crazy but they have to change or leave. There is no room for socialist/feminists in the Unification Movement. We now can be totally united on politics and the vision of a society where power is decentralized to the traditional patriarchal biblical family like it was in nineteenth-century America. This is also the end of followers of Sun Myung Moon thinking that the Unification Movement should not take any stand on everyday issues like politics and economics. Father is clearly on the side of those who fight Liberals. He has spent billions of dollars on the *Washington Times*. He says, "The *Washington Times* has become the focal point of the conservative based media of the world through the Internet. The entire world is now subscribing to the *Washington Times* through the Internet. (Applause) Even the *Washington Post* and the *New York Times* are trailing." (6-23-96)

Father wants the Unification Movement to be like a family and eventually the whole world will be one big family. We should have similar values. Father says, "The age of the global village is over and we are entering the age of the global family. In order to enter the age of the global family, we must quickly make a foundation in which all families have a similar internal understanding." One of the similar understandings we should have is that we are working to build a world of peace. Father says families will deal with crime, "In the future you will not need the police. You will not need prisons. … there will no longer be any police forces or armies. In the future, there will be no more police. When you commit an offence, the family will take absolute authority and resolve it." (*Cheon Seong Gyeong*)

ONWARD UNIFICATIONIST SOLDIERS

The Bible often uses military imagery to describe a follower of Christ. One of the most famous Christian hymns is "Onward, Christian Soldiers." True Father also uses the word soldier to describe a Unificationist: "God sets His hope in us, and we also have our own hopes, flickering like fires within us. But we have to multiply that fire and multiply our love to destroy the whole world of evil. We may now have only a flickering candlelight, but we want to shed light into the whole world. The light will be multiplied, and the whole world will be illuminated by it in God's love. We are the soldiers for that cause, and we are eager to liberate God from His grief." (*New Hope 12 Talks*) We should understand that Unificationist brothers are all called to be literal soldiers with guns.

Books on Gun Control

The Bias Against Guns: Why Almost Everything You've Heard About Gun Control Is Wrong by John Lott
More Guns, Less Crime by John Lott
Straight Shooting: Firearms, Economics and Public Policy by John Lott
Death by "Gun Control": The Human Cost of Victim Disarmament by Aaron S. Zelman (www.jpfo.org)

The State Vs. The People: The Rise of the American Police State by Claire Wolfe and Aaron Zelman
Armed & Female: Taking Control by Paxton Quigley
Armed and Female: Twelve Million American Women Own Guns, Should You? by Paxton Quigley
Gunfighters, Highwaymen, and Vigilantes: Violence on the Frontier by Roger D. McGrath
Black Man With A Gun by Kenneth V. F. Blanchard
Aiming for Liberty: The Past, Present, And Future of Freedom and Self-Defense by David B. Kopel
The Samurai, the Mountie, and the Cowboy: Should America Adopt the Gun Controls of Other Democracies by David B. Kopel
Gun Control and Gun Rights: A Reader and Guide by Andrew J. McClurg, David B. Kopel
Guns: Who Should Have Them? by David B. Kopel
From Luby's to the Legislature: One Woman's Fight Against Gun Control by Suzanna Gratia Hupp
Another Man's War: The True Story of One Man's Battle to Save Children in the Sudan by Sam Childers
Guns and Violence: The English Experience by Joyce Malcolm
Thank God I Had a Gun: True Accounts of Self-Defense by Chris Bird
Personal Defense for Women by Gila Hayes, Massad Ayoob
Armed: The Essential Guide to Concealed Carry by Bruce N. Eimer and Massad Ayoob
The Gun Digest Book of Combat Handgunnery by Massad Ayoob
Combat Shooting with Massad Ayoob by Massad Ayoob and Marty Hayes
The Gun Digest Book Of Concealed Carry by Massad F. Ayoob
Massad Ayoob's Greatest Handguns of the World by Massad F. Ayoob
The Cornered Cat: A Woman's Guide to Concealed Carry by Kathy Jackson
Dial 911 and Die by Richard Stevens
Control: Exposing the Truth About Guns by Glenn Beck
The Seven Myths of Gun Control: Reclaiming the Truth About Guns, Crime, and the Second Amendment by Richard Poe

DVDs on Gun Control
No Guns for Jews (www.jpfo.org, youtube.com, www.nogunsforjews.com)
No Guns for Negroes (www.jpfo.org, youtube.com, www.nogunsfornegroes.com)
2A Today for The USA (www.jpfo.org, youtube.com)
Machine Gun Preacher (major motion picture) (www.machinegunpreacher.org)
Armed Response: A Comprehensive Guide to Using Firearms for Self-Defense by David Kenik and Massad Ayoob (also watch his videos on youtube.com and at his website (massadayoobgroup.com)
Shooting Back: The Right and Duty of Self-Defense (www.wnd.com and youtube.com)
Gun Control is Genocide by Mike Adams (YouTube.com, naturalnews.com)
The Divine Right of Self Defense by Mike Adams (YouTube.com, naturalnews.com)
Gun Rights — Part 5 of the *What We Believe* series by Bill Whittle (YouTube.com, www.billwhittle.net)
Myths, Lies and Downright Stupidity by John Stossel
Gun Laws That Kill by John Stossel (YouTube.com)
Penn and Teller on the Second Amendment (YouTube.com)
Innocents Betrayed: The History of Gun Control (www.jpfo.org, youtube.com)
"*Innocents Betrayed*… shows why gun control must always be rejected." — *Rep. Ron Paul*

GUN CONTROL IS ANTI-MALE
In a review of Richard Poe's must read book *The Seven Myths of Gun Control: Reclaiming the Truth About Guns, Crime, and the Second Amendment* titled "You Thought Gun Control is About

Firearm Safety? Not So – It's Anti-Male and Dangerous" Jamie Glazov writes in *Report: Canada's Independent News Magazine* (10-8-2001) (www.richardpoe.com):

> FEW ISSUES better crystallize the culture war going on in America today than the gun control controversy. In both the United States and Canada any high-profile shooting predictably elicits, from prominent leaders and the mainstream media alike, strident demands for "more effective gun control." But their underlying assumption–that more and stricter laws on possession of firearms will decrease gun violence–is fundamentally flawed. Such is the contention of Richard Poe, editor of FrontpageMagazine.com, and he backs his argument with an impressive array of statistical documentation. Furthermore, he makes a convincing case that the issue far transcends mere firearms. More serious yet, it is a crucial strategy in a leftist assault on individual rights, democratic principles, civil society and–far from least–masculinity.
>
> In the first place, Mr. Poe contends, gun control is a remedy far worse than the alleged disease. He then proceeds to demolish the seven favourite arguments of the anti-gun lobbies: (1) that guns increase violent crime; (2) that pulling a gun on a criminal endangers the gun-owner more than the criminal; (3) that guns pose a special threat to children; (4) that the Second Amendment, which guarantees Americans the right "to keep and bear arms," applies only to militiamen; (5) that the Second Amendment is an obsolete relic of the frontier era; (6) that we should regulate guns just as we regulate cars, requiring operator licenses and strict registration; and (7) that "reasonable control measures" are no threat to law-abiding gun owners.
>
> He notes, for instance, that crime victims are seldom injured if they have ready access to a loaded gun. U.S. citizens use guns to defend themselves in some 3.6 million incidents annually; in 98% of these the criminal flees at the mere sight of the weapon. The statistics simply confirm what common sense tells us, of course: namely, that criminals will likely avoid situations where potential victims may be armed. They also explain, as Mr. Poe observes, why national crime rates fall as gun ownership increases.
>
> He further remarks that gun violence is not caused by guns, but by criminals pulling triggers, which is where leftists and right-wingers culturally collide. The philosophical Left believes ethics are not important, that individuals cannot be held responsible for their actions, and that governments should regulate the lives of their citizens. By contrast, the Right cherishes the central role of moral values and individual liberty, in the belief that individuals must make (and account for) their own moral and social decisions.
>
> As Mr. Poe documents, the Left is clearly winning. In both the U.S. and Canada law-abiding citizens who want to protect themselves from armed criminals are being disarmed. This assault on individual freedom leads to a further and vital question. If the Second Amendment can be trampled on so easily, which of the constitutional rights of Americans will be violated next? History confirms that an armed and vigilant citizenry is a necessary protection against both crime and totalitarianism, he notes; a government that wishes to enslave its people invariably disarms them.
>
> Take, for example, Japan, often praised for its lack of domestic firearm violence–but also noted for its lack of freedom. The Japanese people have little influence over their government. Thus Japanese political and military leaders, although already defeated in 1945, could stubbornly refuse to surrender, causing the needless bombing deaths of hundreds of thousands of their citizens.
>
> Further, Mr. Poe argues, because free men in North America are losing the right

to protect their families, they are becoming less than men. Gun control is in fact an essential component of the leftist/feminist assault on masculinity, the aim being to stigmatize "manhood" as a dirty word, and male aggression as a trait to be purged. Therefore in our contemporary culture men are taught how not to be sexist, racist or homophobic–but not how to be brave.

Thus Richard Poe exposes the anti-gun activists for who they really are: not haters of violence, but revolutionaries determined to destroy democracy, freedom and human nature itself. Denying their own natural impulses, and rejecting what and who humans really are, they aim to reshape humanity. Is it any wonder government social engineers are now trying to destroy gender roles, while our public schools do their best to raise boys like girls?

When male aggression vanishes, however, so does freedom–as well as heroism, honour, courage and shame. We are now a society that urges "compliance" in the face of criminal assault, while passively awaiting government protection. As the ideal of men as "warriors" is destroyed, writes Mr. Poe, the result is increased violence and societal dysfunction: "The urge to fight, defend, and protect lies at the core of male identity. Strip him of his warrior status, and a man is broken."

Thus in the final analysis the tragic consequences of the anti-gun agenda are rooted in Marxism, a philosophy that prioritizes the destruction of the nuclear family, capitalism and democracy. The Left's anti-gun agenda is actually a masquerade for their anti-male agenda. But this book can arm freedom-loving Canadians with the ammunition needed to fight the late-20th-century onslaught of political correctness.

It took a warrior of honour and courage to write this, and we urgently need to heed his warning: "There will always be wolves in the world. Transforming ourselves into sheep will not make the wolves go away. It will only provide them with an easier meal."

GUN DEBATE—THE MOST IMPORTANT OF OUR GENERATION

Ann Coulter says, "Every woman in America should read *The Seven Myths of Gun Control*. As the saying goes, 'God made man and woman, Colonel Colt made them equal.'" David Yeagley says, "Richard Poe has spoken a forbidden truth. Only a warrior people, armed and ready to defend their liberties, can expect to live free."

QUESTION OF MANHOOD ITSELF

Poe says, "What is at stake in the gun debate goes far beyond issues of crime and safety. It goes to the question of manhood itself. … men, women, and warriorship … the fundamental issues that make this debate the most important of our generation." Poe writes in his book that Richard Bly in his book *Iron John*:

> observes that American men have tried too hard to be "sensitive" and soft. "If his wife or girlfriend, furious, shouts that he is a "chauvinist," a "sexist ... he does not fight back, but just takes it. ... He feels, as he absorbs attacks, that he is doing the brave and advanced thing...." However, as Bly notes later in the book, dangers lurk in such passivity. "The fading of the warrior contributes to the collapse of civilized society. A man who cannot defend his own space cannot defend women and children."

WARRIOR ETHIC

Richard Poe explains that we need a warrior spirit and warrior ethic. Unificationist boys and men

need to stand up to Unificationist girls and women who try to emasculate them. Poe points out that Switzerland has a warrior ethic that we should emulate:

> There, warriorship is a practical matter. ...the Swiss man becomes a warrior at a certain, definite age. He enters basic training at about age twenty and enrolls in the militia. He learns small-unit tactics, hand-to-hand fighting, wilderness survival, and the care and handling of his assault rifle. He learns everything he needs to know in order to fight for his homeland. He becomes a warrior.
>
> Feminist Cassandras warn that a heavily armed society of testosterone-charged warriors would soon lead to a bloodbath. But Switzerland has demonstrated just the opposite. It has avoided the wars, revolutions, dictatorships—and even the street crime—that plagues its neighbors ceaselessly. It has shown the world that a man can be a warrior without necessarily having to wage war.

WOMEN BACKBONE OF ANTI-GUN ANTI-MALE MOVEMENT

He quotes writer David Yeagley saying, "In modern America, women seem to have turned against their own men over the gun issue." Poe goes on to say:

> Women have, in fact, formed the backbone of the modern gun-ban movement. And ideological feminists have provided much of the leadership.
>
> The feminist position on guns was expressed with unusual candor by Alana Basin in a 1997 article in the *Hastings Women's Law Review*, entitled, "Why Packing a Pistol Perpetuates Patriarchy." Bassin bluntly confessed that the antigun agenda was really an antimale agenda.
>
> "Firearms are a source of male domination—a symbol of male power and aggression," she wrote. "First, the gun is phallic. Just as sex is the ultimate weapon of patriarchy used to penetrate and possess women, the gun's sole purpose is to intrude and wound its victim. Historically, men have used guns to conquer and dominate other people." Bassin concluded that women needed to oppose gun rights, in order to "curb the perpetuation of patriarchy."

SEX AND GUNS: IS GUN CONTROL MALE CONTROL?

The link between antigun and antimale attitudes was further documented by H. Taylor Bruckner, in a 1994 paper entitled, "Sex and Guns: Is Gun Control Male Control?" (presented at the American Sociological Association 89th Annual Meeting). From surveys of Canadian college students, Bruckner concluded:

> Men and women have different patterns of motivation for being pro gun control. The men who favor gun control are those who reject traditional male roles and behavior. They are opposed to hunting, are pro homosexual, do not have any experience or knowledge of guns and tend to have "politically correct" attitudes. The women who support gun control do so in the context of controlling male violence and sexuality. Gun control is thus symbolic of a realignment of the relation between the sexes.

Bruckner's findings imply that there is more to the antigun movement than meets the eye. Publicly, it presents itself as a reasoned response to problems of crime and safety. But the movement's true vitality may spring from its ability to tap into the deep, unconscious ambivalence that some women feel toward men and sex.

DESIRE TO CASTRATE — Psychiatrist Sarah Thompson observes, "opposing gun rights is likely a displacement of the desire to castrate."

Castration is a peculiarly appropriate metaphor for gun control. The urge to fight, defend, and protect lies at the core of male identity. Strip him of his warrior status, and a man is broken.

Men cherish their firearms in a way that goes beyond the practical. Deep in their hearts, men see themselves as warriors. In the mastery of weapons, they find completion and peace. "In Comanche tradition, the young man grew up with the bow," writes Dr. Yeagley. "Its mastery was a test of manhood. The relationship of man with weapon was intimate and lifelong."

When the Indian man was stripped of his arms and corralled in reservations, the Indian woman wept, for she knew that her power faded with his. She knew that when the warriors lost heart, the whole people suffered.

Many women today seem to have forgotten this basic rule of life. They have come to view men as rivals in a struggle for jobs, money, and status. Some even view men as foes to be disarmed and defeated. How did this happen? What force could have been strong enough to sunder the bonds of love, trust, and need that have drawn men and women together since the dawn of time?

FEMINISM

Poe then says that force was feminism:

Most historians agree that modern feminism began in 1963, with the publication of a bestselling book called *The Feminine Mystique* by Betty Friedan. The conventional account holds that Friedan was a suburban housewife who became bored with her life, realizing that her marriage was nothing more than "a comfortable concentration camp." Three later, in 1996, she founded the National Organization for Women (NOW) and became its first president. Friedan's struggle to break free of the deadening routine of childbearing and housekeeping was held up as an example for other women to follow.

This story, while widely accepted, gives a misleading view of Friedan's life and motivations. In 1990, Smith College professor Daniel Horowitz published a book called *Betty Friedan and the Making of the Feminine Mystique*. It revealed that Friedan had never in her life been a normal housewife or, indeed, a normal anything.

BETTY FRIEDAN—HARDLINE STALINIST

Poe explains that she had been a hardline Stalinist since being a young college student. When she married she had a full-time maid who did all the housework and spent her time devoting "her life to the cause of Marxist revolution." Her ex-husband said she "was in the world during the whole marriage" and "seldom was a wife and mother."

"Give us suffrage, and we'll give you socialism."

Anna Sophia and Elizabeth write in *It's (not that) Complicated*:

What the record of history shows is that every time a society, like America, tries to move in a statist direction—toward centralized government rather than self-government—it puts power in the hand of the state instead of the hands of the people. And it restricts those troublemakers who want to be freedom-fighters, leaders, outside-the-box thinkers, dominion-takers, conquerors—people who rock the boat or challenge the status quo. In other words, people such as real men.

America began moving more deliberately in this direction in the 1930s, when a group of European socialists got a foothold. They were primarily working toward a goal that Karl Marx's disciple Wilhelm Reich articulated: "to dethrone the patriarchal power in man." ... For ungodly men to want bigger governments and more power over other men is the most natural thing in the world. ... in the last two hundred years, shady socialists have tried a new tactic for un-manning men, and discovered a most effective weapon ... Women.

Karl Marx declared in an 1868 letter, "Major social transformations are impossible without ferment among the women." Lenin said, "There can be no real mass movement without women." His friend, Leon Trotsky wrote in 1917, "The women's liberation movement is a central part of the American socialist revolution in the making." Plenty of women were ready to be recruited, including some of America's premier feminists, both first and second wave. Wholesome, apple-pie Susan B. Anthony cut a surprising deal with a presidential candidate in 1905: "Give us suffrage, and we'll give you socialism." Andrea Dworkin said, "Only when manhood is dead—and it will perish when ravaged femininity no longer sustains it—only then will we know what it is to be free." Egalitarianism was the goal of these women. Their *modus operandi*: to do away with the biblical hierarchical relationship between men and women; to destroy marriage, to end patriarchy; to obliterate traditional gender roles; and to ostracize assertiveness, leadership, and strength in men.

GUN OWNERS AND HOMESCHOOLERS

Samuel L. Blumenfeld said there are two main groups fighting for freedom: "Gun owners and homeschoolers. These two groups alone represent the essence of freedom. They are the pillars of a free society, and they have grown out of the traditions and values handed down to us by our Founding Fathers. As long as we steadfastly uphold these traditions and values, we shall win." (worldnetdaily.com wnd.com)

PRACTICAL APPLICATON OF FREEDOM SOCIETY CONCEPTS AND PRINCIPLES

Right after Kook Jin gave his speech I see that Unificationists in Minneapolis made a flyer on Kook Jin's Freedom Society saying they are holding a meeting. The flyer says "We will focus on the practical application of 'Freedom Society' concepts and principles. We invite all freedom loving citizens to join us for an Action Forum to explore: New Solutions for Today's Challenges." I offer this book as a practical application of the concepts and principles of a Freedom Society.

NEW RELIGION

Kook Jin ends his "Freedom Society" speech saying the world needs the Lord of the Second Advent because he "gives us a new religion that teaches us how to value freedom—how to value God's Three Blessings. We need a new religion to pull us away from big government and toward a limited government which serves people. This is why the Unification Church is the church for the future. The theology of the Unification Church, the *Divine Principle*, and its application to modern day society give the insight humanity needed to escape the tyranny of big government and to find the world of freedom—the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. The Unification Church is the church that brings freedom for all the people of the world!" He concludes by saying that his lecture is probably "challenging" for some "because you've been indoctrinated in the world of big government but the truth is opposite of the world Satan created. We are born for freedom. We must choose to unite with the Lord of the Second Advent and his teaching and we must choose freedom."

Kook Jin and Hyung Jin Moon say that the reason America declined in the 20th Century was because of religion, especially Christianity. There is some truth to that because Christianity became weak by embracing feminism. Feminism is the reason America gave up the values of the 19th century that Kook Jin praises. If these two brothers accept that America was strong and centered in the 1700s and 1800s because it stood for limited government then they must believe that the 1900s and today we have big government because America and much of the world rejected the belief in patriarchy and accepted the ideology of feminism. We read earlier that Tocqueville saw that Americans in the early 1800s would decline if they stopped believing that the woman's place was in the home and believed in feminism then America would become a nation of "weak men and disorderly women." And this is what happened.

John Lott is a libertarian and proves in his book, *More Guns, Less Crime* that guns are good. He teaches in his book *Freedomonics* that women getting the vote caused socialism to rise in the 20th century. I pray that Unificationists and everyone else can understand how Satan has worked to destroy the family and nation with his deadly philosophy of socialist/feminism. It is his deepest core value because it is the most deadly ideology against marriage, family and the state. Those who teach and live feminism hurt themselves and others. It does not work. If women feel they should enter the marketplace and outshine their husbands they will eventually experience pain and heartache. To Kook Jin and Hyung Jin and all those who are excited about 19th century America I say you must understand that the reason there was limited government was because the people believed in the biblical, patriarchal family where men took the responsibility to provide, lead and protect women and children. There are a number of great books and research that show that the women of the 19th century were safer and honored more than women are today in our feminist culture. Patriarchy and limited government and men having guns are all intertwined.

CULTURAL WAR

Unificationists need to take sides in the Cultural War we are in. At the online encyclopedia Wikipedia they write:

> The culture war (or culture wars) in American usage is a metaphor used to claim that political conflict is based on sets of conflicting cultural values. The term frequently implies a conflict between those values considered traditional or conservative and those considered progressive or liberal.
>
> The expression was introduced again by the 1991 publication of *Culture Wars: The Struggle to Define America by* James Davison Hunter, a sociologist at the University of Virginia. In it, Hunter described what he saw as a dramatic realignment and polarization that had transformed American politics and culture.
>
> He argued that on an increasing number of "hot-button" defining issues — abortion, gun politics, separation of church and state, privacy, recreational drug use, homosexuality, censorship issues — there had come to be two definable polarities. Furthermore, it was not just that there were a number of divisive issues, but that society had divided along essentially the same lines on each of these issues, so as to constitute two warring groups, defined primarily not by nominal religion, ethnicity, social class, or even political affiliation, but rather by ideological world views.
>
> Hunter characterised this polarity as stemming from opposite impulses, toward what he refers to as Progressivism and Orthodoxy. The dichotomy has been adopted with varying labels, including, for example, by FOX News commentator Bill O'Reilly who emphasizes differences between "Secular-Progressives" and "Traditionalists".

In 1990 paleoconservative commentator Pat Buchanan mounted a campaign for the Republican nomination for President of the United States against incumbent George H. W. Bush in 1992. He received a prime time speech slot at the 1992 Republican National Convention, which is sometimes dubbed the "'culture war' speech".

During his speech, he said: "There is a religious war going on in our country for the soul of America. It is a cultural war, as critical to the kind of nation we will one day be as was the Cold War itself." In addition to criticizing "environmental extremists" and "radical feminism," he said public morality was a defining issue: "The agenda [Bill] Clinton and [Hillary] Clinton would impose on America — abortion on demand, a litmus test for the Supreme Court, homosexual rights, discrimination against religious schools, women in combat — that's change, all right. But it is not the kind of change America wants. It is not the kind of change America needs. And it is not the kind of change we can tolerate in a nation that we still call God's country."

In a 2004 column, Pat Buchanan said the culture war had reignited and that Americans no longer inhabited the same moral universe. He gave such examples as gay civil unions, the "crudity of the MTV crowd," and the controversy surrounding Mel Gibson's film, *The Passion of the Christ*. He wrote, "Who is in your face here? Who started this? Who is on the offensive? Who is pushing the envelope? The answer is obvious. A radical Left aided by a cultural elite that detests Christianity and finds Christian moral tenets reactionary and repressive is hell-bent on pushing its amoral values and imposing its ideology on our nation. The unwisdom of what the Hollywood and the Left are about should be transparent to all."

We are in a cultural war—a fierce battle over the minds and hearts of Americans and in other countries — between the Left and the Right. The Left goes by several names such as socialists, feminists, new dealers, liberals, leftists, big government, statists, progressives and Democrats. The Right has such names as capitalists, Christian Right, traditionalists, limited government, libertarian, conservative, and Republicans. There are variations between groups on each side, but the general differences between the Left and the Right are huge.

ORTHODOX VS. PROGRESSIVE

Professor James Davison Hunter has written several books on the cultural war. He uses the terms "orthodox" and "progressive" to describe the two sides in his book, *Culture Wars: The Struggle to Define America*.

"Culture Wars presents a riveting account of how Christian fundamentalists, Orthodox Jews, and conservative Catholics have joined forces in a fierce battle against their progressive counterparts — secularists, reform Jews, liberal Catholics and Protestants — as each struggles to gain control over such fields of conflict as the family, art, education, law and politics. Not since the Civil War has there been such fundamental disagreement over basic assumptions about truth, freedom, and our national identity." The public debates "are topics of dispute at the corporate cocktail party and the factory cafeteria alike, in the high school civics classroom, in the church lounge after the weekly sermon, and at the kitchen table over the evening meal. Few of us leave these discussions without ardently voicing our own opinions on the matter at hand. Such passion is completely understandable. These are, after all, discussions about what is fundamentally right and wrong about the world we live in — about what is ultimately good what is finally intolerable in our communities."

He writes, “Within communities that hold orthodox views, moral authority arises from a common commitment to transcendence, by which I mean a dynamic reality that is independent of, prior to, and more powerful than human experience. God and the realm God inhabits, for the orthodox, is indeed super- and supranatural. Of course transcendence has a different content and meaning in each tradition. In each tradition moreover, transcendence communicates its authority through different media: for example, through the spiritual prerogatives of the inerrant Scriptures, both Old and New Testaments; through the Torah and the community that upholds it; through the Pope and the traditional teachings of the Catholic Church; through the Book of Mormon; and, small though the Unification Church may be, through Reverend Sun Myung Moon and the *Divine Principle*. Within each faith, the commitment to these specific media of moral authority is so forceful and unwavering that believers in each would consider sources other than their own as heretical.”

“Yet despite these differences, there are formal attributes to their faith that are held in common with the others. As argued earlier, each maintains a paramount commitment to an external, definable, and transcendent authority. For the believers in each tradition, moral and spiritual truths have a supernatural origin beyond and yet barely graspable by human experience. Although the media through which transcendence speaks to people varies, they all believe that these truths are divinely ‘revealed’ in these written texts and not somehow discovered through human endeavor or subjective experience apart from these texts.”

“God, they would say, is real and makes Himself tangible, directly .... From this authority derives a measure of value, purpose, goodness, and identity that is consistent, definable, and even absolute. In matters of moral judgment, the unequivocal appeal of orthodoxy is to these uncompromisable standards. It is, then, an authority that is universally valid — adequate for every circumstance and context. It is an authority that is sufficient for all time.”

THE LEFT

Hunter says this about the Left: “The progressivist vision of moral authority poses a sharp contrast. For progressivists, moral authority is based, at least in part, in the resymbolization of historic faiths and philosophical traditions.” What liberals do, he says, is first make it crystal clear that they are against the conservatives. He writes, “What compels this rejection of orthodoxy is the conviction that moral and spiritual truth is not a static and unchanging collection of scriptural facts and theological propositions, but a growing and incremental reality.”

“There is, therefore, no objective and final revelation directly from God, and Scripture (of whatever form) is not revelation but only, and at best, a witness to revelation. ... moral and spiritual truth can only be conditional and relative.” He gives an example of an organization of progressives as the American Humanist Association. “Moral authority on the progressivist side of the cultural divide tends not to be burdened by the weight of either ‘natural law,’ religious prerogative, or traditional community authority. ... it is a ‘loose-bounded’ authority, detached from the cultural moorings of traditional group membership. As such it carries few, if any, of the burdens of the past. Memory does not inhibit change: authority is distinctly forward-looking, open-ended, and malleable.” Liberals like the words “flexible,” and “creative” and “variety.” They see things often as case by case. They like situational ethics.

Professor Hunter has no solution to the problem. He ends his book by saying that it is best for society to live by laws that are upheld “voluntarily” instead of by force. He rightly sees that politics is not going to make a harmonious society.

THE CONSERVATIVE VISION

Hunter writes that conservatives see God working intimately with the Founding Fathers of America to build a nation that would be God’s champion. They treasure such things as its money

saying “In God We Trust” on it. “The founding documents” of America, conservatives think, “reflect the hand of divine providence.” The Constitution was “divinely inspired.” He writes, “The genius of the ‘American experiment,’ from this perspective was the creation of institutions that would guarantee both freedom and justice.”

Hunter mentions several authors such as the Catholic scholar Michael Novak’s *The Spirit of Democratic Capitalism*. But he says “the more vocal public theologians” for “capitalism — the freedom to pursue economic gain without government interference” comes from many evangelical and fundamentalist Christians. “Jerry Falwell repeatedly claimed that ‘God is in favor of freedom, property, ownership, competition, diligence, work and acquisition. All of this is taught in the Word of God, in both the Old and New Testaments.’ Therefore ‘people should have the right to own property, to work hard, to achieve, to earn, and to win.’ (*Wisdom for Living*) Elsewhere Falwell has written that ‘the free-enterprise system is clearly outlined in the Book of Proverbs in the Bible. Jesus Christ made it clear that the work ethic was a part of His plan for man. Ownership of property is biblical.’ (*Listen America!*). In a similar vein, religious broadcaster Pat Robertson has contended that “free enterprise is the economic system most nearly meeting humanity’s God-given need for freedom. ... Capitalism satisfies the freedom-loving side of humanity.’” (*The Secret Kingdom: A Promise of Hope and Freedom in a World of Turmoil*)

“Underlying the reverential endorsement of capitalism among these Evangelicals is the conviction that economic and spiritual freedoms go hand in hand, that one is impossible without the other.”

THE PROGRESSIVIST VISION

Hunter writes, “Those on the progressive side of the cultural divide rarely, if ever, attribute America’s origins to the actions of a Supreme Being. The National Education Association, for example, insists that ‘when the Founding Fathers drafted the Constitution with its Bill of Rights, they explicitly designed it to guarantee a secular, humanistic state.’

“... the founding documents of the republic take on a different understanding from that maintained by cultural conservatives. The Constitution and the Bill of Rights, for example, are not seen as reflecting absolutes either by God or rooted in nature; instead the founders gave us a ‘living Constitution,’ one that cannot be straightjacketed, forever attached to the culture of an agrarian, preindustrialized society, but one that grows and changes with a changing society. Law in a democratic society is one of the highest expressions of human rationality and must evolve as society evolves and matures. The ideals that it serves are also the ideals of freedom and justice.”

“In this progressivist vision, freedom and justice are understood in fundamentally different ways than they are on the orthodox side of the cultural divide. Here freedom is defined largely in terms of the social and political rights of individuals. Liberals give “high tribute to ‘pluralism’ and ‘diversity.’ As Norman Lear of the People for the American Way argued, First and foremost among our shared values is a celebration of diversity and respect for the beliefs of others.”

“It is not surprising that the founding myths advanced in progressivist circles tend to focus on the struggle of the founders to establish and preserve ‘pluralism and diversity.’ The names of Roger Williams, George Washington, John Adams, Tom Paine, James Madison, and Frederick Douglas are commonly invoked as champions of these principles. A People for the American Way publication maintained, ‘Throughout our history, American men and women have fought hard to make this country a better place. They fought for fair representation. Open debate. A healthy respect for diverse public opinion ... [Thus,] America is the freest ... nation on earth. A legacy left to us by the Founders of our country.’”

“Justice, on the other hand, tends to be understood by progressivists in terms of equality and the end of oppression in the social world.” Liberals are very concerned about things being “fair.” Economics is central to the liberal vision. “It is in this light that, for example, the progressive journal *Christianity and Crisis* described the ‘minimum wage’ as a ‘minimum justice.’ The

Religious Network for Equality for Women identified support for the Equal Rights Amendment, a comprehensive jobs program, affirmative action, an earning-sharing provision within Social Security, and so on, with 'God's call for justice.' *Sojourners* magazine called its commitment to speak on behalf of the poor and oppressed a 'commitment to justice,' .... Peace with Justice organizers in 1988 identified 'people of color, women, children, the hungry, the poor, small farmers,' and the like as 'victims of injustice.'" Leftists are often called "bleeding heart Liberals." They care for the lowly and see that Jesus would want government to force the rich to give to the poor and the government should be big. Conservatives say Jesus would only want voluntary giving and government should be small. Liberals use words like "caring," "heart," "compassion," "empathy," and call conservatives "greedy" and "hedonistic."

Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia wikipedia.org says this about Dennis Prager:

> Prager has declared that the U.S. is engaged in a "second civil war," a "culture war" over the fundamental moral values on which American society was built. Prager argues that many influential American institutions (including universities, trial lawyers, labor unions, the ACLU, civil rights groups, and most large newspapers and television networks) are dominated by secular leftists, whom he depicts as attacking and misrepresenting the alleged "uniqueness" of Judeo-Christian values and their alleged positive historical effect upon America and the world.

SECOND AMERICAN CIVIL WAR

Dennis Prager explains that America is having a civil war between the Left and the Right in an article titled "The second American civil war: what it's about." This is the beginning of his article:

Whatever your politics, you have to be oblivious to reality to deny that America today is torn by ideological divisions as deep as those of the Civil War era. We are, in fact, in the midst of the Second American Civil War.

Once again, the fate of the nation hangs in the balance. The two sides' values and visions of America are as incompatible as they were in the 1860s.

For those Americans who do not know what side they are on or who are not certain about what the Second American Civil War is being fought over, I offer a list of the most important areas of conflict.

While the views of many, probably even most, Americans do not fall entirely on either side, the two competing camps are quite distinguishable. On one side are those on the Left — liberals, leftists and Greens — who tend to agree with one another on almost all major issues. On the other side are those on the Right — conservatives, rightists and libertarians — who agree on stopping the Left, but differ with one another more often than those on the Left do.

Here, then, is Part One of the list of the major differences that are tearing America apart:

The Left believes in removing America's Judeo-Christian identity, e.g., removing "under God" from the Pledge, "In God we trust" from the currency, the oath to God and country from the Boy Scouts Pledge, etc. The Right believes that destroying these symbols and this identity is tantamount to destroying America.

I challenge everyone to be a warrior for Christ.

SECOND BLESSING

CHAPTER THREE

PATRIARCHY

The third value is godly patriarchy. What is patriarchy? Patriarchy is the ideology of God that teaches that only men lead in the home and in society. Phil Lancaster wrote this at a website he used to have (www.Patriarch.com – I cannot find this article in any publication or on the Web) :

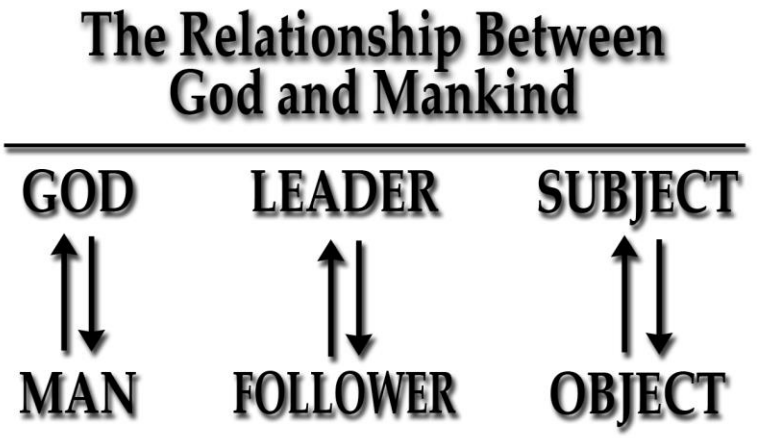
> Why the title "Patriarch"?
>
> "Blessed is the man who fears the Lord, who finds great delight in his commands. His children will be mighty in the land; the generation of the upright will be blessed." — Psalm 112:1,2
>
> The greatest need in our land today is for men to take up the mantle of strong, godly leadership once again. Most of the problems that bewilder politicians, vex pastors, and plague parents have their roots in the failure of men to be the kind of leaders God has ordained them to be in our families, in our churches, and in our nation.
>
> Recent generations of men have retreated from their calling to provide the spiritual direction for our society. Although men in early America commonly accepted this responsibility, in more recent times the male leadership role has been relegated to politics and business. Men have left the home, the schools, and most of the work of the church to women and have neglected to infuse the political and commercial arenas with a biblically-defined moral direction.
>
> Reinforcing the effects of their own abdication of responsibility, men have also had to contend with emasculation at the hands of destructive cultural forces. Feminism hates men, and it especially hates men who act like men, men who take charge. Government undermines the male role of provider by taking on the care of children, the elderly, and the needy. Boys are feminized as they are shaped mostly by females in the home, the schools, and the churches. The masculine inclinations to direct, to protect, and to provide are thwarted by efforts to create the new "sensitive" man.
>
> Men must look back to the past so that they can look to the future with hope. They need to repent of generations of failed leadership and reject the feminizing pressures of today. They need to learn to do what great men of the past did: to fear the Lord and delight in his commands. They need to again accept the burden of godly leadership. Only then will the prospects for the future of our nation brighten.
>
> "Patriarch" is a word that captures what it is that men must again become if our society is to be redeemed. Here is what Weldon Hardenbrook has to say about this seldom-used term in his excellent book *Missing from Action: Vanishing Manhood in America*:

> Where did the role of fatherhood come from? The essence of fatherhood is best understood in one word that Americans, even Christian Americans, have totally lost the meaning of, a word against which all the enemies of God have warred in an attempt to secure its annihilation. A word that has been abused, trampled on, ignored, or vehemently spit upon and mocked by raging hyperfeminists and discarded by irresponsible, self-centered, hedonistic males. A word so powerfully significant and loaded that the feminized, peace-at-any-price boys religiously relegate it to ancient days of antiquity. A word that has become unmentionable among its owners and exiled to the company of obscene four-letter words in the minds of most male and female Americans.
>
> But whether we use this word or not, without its recovery, without its function being made known and its reality working in society, there is absolutely no clear, positive way to redeem the male identity. This word can never be neutral. It was worn by the men of old, from Abraham to David, and it needs to belong to American men today.
>
> What is this awesome word that must be understood? This role that must be reclaimed? The word is patriarchy. It is awesome because it is in the meaning of this word that fatherhood exists and the foundation of the male identity is supplied.
>
> The biblical term patriarchy is derived from two words in the Greek language—patria (taken from the word pater, "father"), which means "family"; and arche, which means "beginning," "first in origin," and "to rule." A patriarch is a family ruler. He is the man in charge.
>
> What is needed today is nothing less that a return to patriarchy, a society led by strong, godly men. We need family leaders who will also become leaders in the churches and throughout every institution in the nation.
>
> Such men must also learn to see beyond today, to see themselves as just the beginning of what will be many generations who will be "mighty in the land." Each man should aim to be the founder of a dynasty for God.
>
> God's chosen nation Israel was founded by patriarchs. America was set on its blessed course by patriarchs. By God's grace, we can be patriarchs so that ours too will be blessed generations.

We learn in *the Divine Principle* that God is primarily masculine. The same goes for the Messiah. Our focus is on Father's words. He always walked his talk and always lived as he preached. There are thousands of talks of him recorded. Our primary responsibility is to honor his words of wisdom and live the universal values he teaches. When it comes to the roles and responsibilities of men and women his teachings are in line with traditional biblical thought.. He strongly teaches that every man is to be the leader of his home who makes the final decisions. Father's strong, absolute words are difficult for feminists to hear because Satan is the ruler of this world and his core ideology is feminism. This chapter will upset and offend feminists because they believe women should lead men.

Father Moon often uses the words "Subject" and "Object" to describe basic relationships in the universe. Another word for "Subject" would be "Leader" and another word for "Object" would be "Follower." He teaches: "First of all, we must think of God as our subject. Each person is always in the position of object to God. What is the subject/object relationship centered upon? It is

centered on love. Thus the essential relationship between God and man is that of the subject and object of love." (2-5-84)



MASCULINE SUBJECT PARTNER

The *Exposition of the Divine Principle* states that God is masculine and the universe is feminine: "Before the creation God existed alone as the internal and masculine subject partner. He therefore created the universe as His external and feminine object partner. This is supported by the Bible verse which states, 'man . . . is the image and glory of God.' (I Cor. 11:7) In recognition of God's position as the internal and masculine subject partner, we call Him 'Our Father.'"

HEAVENLY FATHER AND EARTHLY MOTHER

This is why we call our planet "Mother Earth." God has dual characteristics of masculinity and femininity. He expresses his masculinity by being the invisible Heavenly Father and he expresses his femininity by being the visible Earthly Mother. On earth men represent God's masculinity and women represents God's femininity. Men and women are visible, incarnate God. This means men are masculine subject partners to their wives who are feminine object partners. They have equal value but different roles.

HEAVENLY FATHER IS HEAD OF THE WORLD

God's desire is for us to be true children who accept and trust His leadership, commands and desires as true and good. God is a true leader. A true leader guides, provides, and protects his followers. God gives vision as well as provides and protects His children. God and mankind make a family. God is our Father and we are his children. God is the head of the world wide family of mankind.

VERTICAL

We learn in the *Divine Principle* that God is primarily masculine because His primary role is to lead. Father Moon often uses the terms "Vertical" and "Horizontal" when he teaches about relationships. He says, "What kind of person is God? He is our vertical Father." (10-4-94)

HUSBAND IS HEAD OF THE HOUSEHOLD

God created men to be the primary leaders reflecting His primary masculine leadership. Just as the universe, including men, are in an objective, follower role to God, women and children are in an objective, follower position to men. Just as Heavenly Father is the head of the world, men are the heads of their homes. Just as we have a vertical relationship with God, women have a vertical relationship with their husband and children have a vertical relationship with their mother in the

home. Father often talked about the penis and vagina to explain how different men and women are. For example, he said, "Man's sexual organ is made to be erect vertically. Vertical!" Father gave a speech titled "Address at the Eighth Anniversary of the 777 Couples Blessing" on October 22, 1978. He even chose it as being so important that he put this speech into his book *God's Will and the World*. In the speech he says "the husband is the head of the household." Father often teaches about the objective nature of women. For example, he says, "If we say that heaven is a symbol of man, then earth is a symbol of woman. The house is the stage on which a woman's life is played out. The mother is the center of a nest filled with love for all the members of the family. The family, with the mother at its center, is the basic unit making up the nation and the world." (Aug 24, 1992) Father teaches that husbands and wives have equal value but different roles and responsibilities:

> The woman who loves her husband deeply will find God and His love. This is the place to find true love, the foundation for heavenly love. True love in the family is the center of heaven, the center of the whole universe.
>
> **EQALITY**
> Here in the Western world, people strive for what is called equality, but there is confusion about this concept. There is no equality except within love. Since the grandparents were born first, they automatically have seniority. Therefore, they are not "equal" to a newborn baby. But in love, they are equal. Your grandparents are the ones who were working and making the foundation here on earth for you to be born. Thus they deserve more respect.
>
> **PROPER ORDER**
> Therefore, we must really understand the proper order within the family. A young person should never say to his elder brothers and sisters, "Leave me alone. What right do you have to tell me what to do?" (3-8-87)
>
> **VERTICAL LINEAGE**
> The person who can connect with the vertical lineage of children is not a woman but only a man. It is because a man resembles God. God looks like (or is) the harmony of internal nature and external form, but His shape itself is that of a man. A man is the shape of God and has the seed of His child. (8-2-96)

LINEAGE
The following speech was given after his 50 state speaking tour in America in 2001 that expresses some of his basic teachings:

> There is nothing more important to us than love, life and lineage. Among these, which do you think has most value? Many people think that it is love. However, no matter how valuable love and life are, they are horizontal in nature. They appear and conclude within one generation. On the other hand, lineage is vertical in nature and continues forever, generation after generation.
>
> God is the owner of vertical and eternal love and the husband is the owner of horizontal love.
>
> So the seed of life comes from God and is inside the husband. Women are like a garden. They receive the seed and sacrifice their body to provide it nourishment, nurture the fetus with love, and then give birth. The baby receives 99 percent of its bones and flesh from its mother. If you look at how a woman is shaped, you will notice that there is no part of her body that exists for her own sake. Do her well-developed breasts and hips belong to her? No, they exist for the sake of her babies.

The womb, which men lack, and the monthly menstrual cycle also exist for the sake of her babies.

To whom do a woman's reproductive organs belong? Do they belong to her husband or to herself? They belong to her husband. In the end, we see that a woman is created to live for her husband and her children. So a husband must attend to his wife as the queen of queens. When his wife is breast feeding and nurturing the baby, the husband must do everything he can for the sake of his wife and baby.

HUSBAND IS SUBJECT

The husband is responsible to rear the children born to him and his wife to become filial children, patriots to the nation, saints for the world and finally divine sons and daughters of God. In this way, husband and wife relate as subject and object partners. In terms of quality, men and women are equal in value. However, in terms of the order of things, the husband, who holds the seed of life within him, is the subject partner. With her husband as absolute subject partner, a wife and the children should create one heart and one body and offer a true family to God.

TRUE LEADERSHIP

God made men to be in the subject role and women to be in the object role. Men and women have equal value but different roles and responsibilities. God is a true leader who leads, provides and protects his children. God wants all men to be true leaders who lead, provide and protect women and children.

SUBJECT AND OBJECT DO NOT INTERCHANGE

It is crucial we understand the true meaning of subject and object as taught in the *Divine Principle*. The 1973 version of the *Divine Principle* says: "the subject is able to stand in the position of the object, and the object in that of the subject." The 1996 version called *Exposition of the Divine Principle* says: "the subject partner sometimes acts as an object partner, and the object partner sometimes acts as a subject partner." Father teaches what he calls Triple Objective Purpose. I go into detail about this in my book *Divine Principle in Plain Language*. In short, it means that in the family unit of God, man, wife, and children, each can switch positions in love. Each can be subject in love and object in love to the other three. Father also teaches that Subject/Object relationships exist as Leader/Follower relationships. In these cases the Subject does not interchange with the Object. In these relationships the person in the Subject position never "stands in" or "acts as" an Object. For example, men are in the Subject position and women are in the Object position. God does not want women to "stand in" or "act as" the head of the house. Another example would be that the Vice President of America is always in the Object position to the President of the United States who is in the Subject position. The Vice President never "stands in" or "acts as" the President of the United States if the President is able-bodied and fit. Some Unificationist teachers of the *Principle* interpret these passages in the Divine Principle to mean that men and women can interchange positions and therefore women can lead men. Men and women, like the Vice President and the President of the United States, have give and take and men and the President may do as their wives and the Vice President suggest but at no point do they ever change positions. They have give and take but never interchange positions. When the Vice President talks to the President and gives his suggestions he is always in an object position and never assumes the subject position. Just talking to someone does not change subject/object positions.

CERTAIN ORDER

When men and women have give-and-take there is a circular relationship in which the woman revolves around the man who is always in the center. Women never "stand in", "act as", or interchange with men in authority. Here is one of many examples of Father explaining this:

We said that men and women are equal, but there should be a certain order or discipline between them. Equality is one thing and fairness is another; blind equality does not necessarily represent fairness. There is always a certain sequence or priority to be followed. God definitely loves both men and women as His children on an equal level, but there is a priority or sequence.

Which one comes first to God? Why do you women say men come first? In everything there is a double layer, one internal and one external. When you make a circular motion based on this external layer, it goes in all different directions and ultimately is self-destructing. Lasting, peaceful circular motion is always set up around an axis. If you use that central line then no matter how fast or how long you turn there will be no destruction. In everything we need this central axis, which is formed by the person who can take and fulfill the responsibility. The more responsibility that person bears, the farther he advances toward the central position.

Who is designed with a greater capacity for responsibility, men or women? That central responsible subject is man. In biblical tradition the blessing is always given to men because men are ultimately responsible. Blessing always accompanies responsibility. Mankind has traditionally lived like that, with women leaving their homes to marry their husbands and take their names. During war and all the dangerous, pioneering times in history the women were always behind the men, assisting. Men are in the subject role and women in the object role. (4-29-79)

As you know from the Bible, woman was created from Adam's rib. That means woman was copied from man, so to speak. Many American women try to control their husbands and sons, but that is not the vertical way. The husband or father represents the vertical connection. The elder son represents the right side, and the mother's place is the left side. That means she cannot control the vertical and she cannot control the elder son. These are not my words; this is the original Principle viewpoint. You American women need to know this point.

The first priority for a married woman is to bear children. Woman is like a field to receive the seed. That's why you are biologically different from man. Are those differences for your own sake, or for your children? Women's physical characteristics allow her to bear and nurse children.

By raising children, a woman is able to understand God. When a woman understands the significance and value of her husband and then they have a child, their relationship establishes the vertical relationship. On the other hand, a man is supposed to love his wife and daughters, just as he loves God and his own father. In that way the power of love can be circulated in your family.

Because women themselves do not have seeds, they have to receive them from the man. When a wife receives the seed from her husband, a miracle takes place there: either a son or a daughter. The mother provides the flesh of a child, and the father provides the bones. Each person's basic shape is determined by his bone structure, which is from the father.

As females grow up, they start thinking about having children. On the other hand, when males grow up, they tend to think about the world and the universe. This is because man represents God, who is seen as our father, while the earth is represented as a mother. Women have a tendency to desire material goods; they yearn for beautiful and colorful things. Instead of looking upward toward God, they tend to look down to the earth. A man, on the other hand, has the tendency to look up for something bigger and greater. (4-1-89)

Someone said America is bad. Is this because there are more bad women or bad men in this country? Let's be serious and honest about it. The divorce rate in this

> country is said to be more than fifty five percent. Can the cause of divorce be more often traced to man or woman? Answer clearly. [Both.] That is not acceptable; it is either man or woman. Some thoughtful woman here said, "Women." So, individually speaking are there more bad men or bad women in this country? So, in order for that bad country to become good, should men follow women or should women follow men? Woman has to follow man. This is the conclusion. [A sister shouts, "Women have to follow God."] That's not even part of the question! In this country men follow women. (12-15-91)

It was improper for this sister to talk back to Father in the quote above. This topic of men and women relationships is very controversial and emotional. Father corrected her and said her logic was wrong. He is saying what the Bible says which is that women need to see that God speaks through her husband to give her guidance. Father's main message is that men and women are different and need to complement each other.

Here are a few quotes from Father where he does his best to teach the differences between men and women. He teaches there are roles for men and women with men always being in the subject position and women always being in the object position:

> God thought a lot about how to create women. Instead of making women taller than men, He made women a little shorter, but with bigger hips. Why? Because women are to assume two roles. First, in giving birth to children women need a strong foundation, and second, they will be living most of their lives in a sitting position, so God provided built in cushions. Men have narrow hips without cushions because men are supposed to take the initiative and always be in action. A woman is to be objective, receiving grace from her husband and always sitting home comfortably waiting for him. That is the way it should be. At the same time a man should be masculine, and that is why he has broad shoulders and strong arms. Going out into the world is the man's role. (5-1-77)
>
> Why is man subject and woman object? Because man carries within him the seed of life. Woman does not contain the baby seed. Woman's breasts are the property of her babies. Her hips are the home of her babies. [Laughter] (4-18-96)
>
> Between men and women, which is the subject? American women say, "The subject is woman." But the universe says "No!" to that, and will even spit on you. As you know clearly, the man is subject and the woman is object. Man is like the bone and woman is like the flesh. Flesh must totally surround the bone, sticking closely to it.
>
> Subject and object must not reverse their order. The order must be straight, the channel must be straight. In America today, the women are trying to become king. The queen is trying to become king, meanwhile trying to push all men down to the level of servant.
>
> What about you American women? Do you sit there and think to yourselves: "When will I ever come to hear Father say that woman is the subject? Will it ever happen, even in a million years?" The answer is no, it will not happen. However, the woman's position, the object position, is absolutely the most beautiful and it is essential. Woman is created for woman's purpose, which is not bad at all. When you follow the universal rule, harmony and happiness will always follow. When you go into the spirit world, this rule becomes totally obvious. (4-25-93)
>
> American women are saying, "We want to be in the bone position. Let the men

become the soft flesh." Today America is suffering from terrible confusion; people don't know which side is up. There is no understanding of right order, subject and object, or who takes initiative and who is responsive. What about you American Unification women, are you different? In America, many women pull the men around behind them and the men just follow timidly. I have never seen so many boneless men as in America: "Yes, dear, whatever you say." ...If you women don't change that trend, there can be nothing but darkness for the future of this country. America will not survive. There must be God's order and sequence, a certain discipline. We must maintain that discipline.

Sometimes I receive the criticism that I am "anti-woman" and "pro-man" but that is not true. I am simply pro-natural law. At this time, many women are trying to take over the societal positions and responsibilities of men; but you are not equipped to do that. You have your own strengths and virtues. Unless you can understand the reality of natural law, you can never understand or make sense of all the crazy things going on in today's world. (9-19-82)

Father said it is a "universal rule" that men and women "must not reverse the order." In other words, there is no interchanging of roles for men and women. Can anyone read these words of Father and see egalitarian thought? It just isn't there.

Sun Myung Moon explains that God created Adam to be in the position of a true leader:

ADAM THE PATRIARCH

How would things have turned out if Adam and Eve, our original ancestors, had not fallen? In the first human family, Adam would have become the patriarch. At the same time, he would have been the clan chieftain. He would also have become the representative of his nation, that is, the king. Thus, the world would have been united under the ideology. All other worthless and good-for-nothing ideologies should be done away with. Such ideologies have appeared over the course of time, confusing the world. We should take them out by the roots. The only ideology we truly need to know is that centered on Adam. The only language, culture, traditions, way of living and system of government would be those that come from Adam. In fact, everything in this world should have been in accordance with the ideological system of Adam's nation. This ideology is Godism, because we need to become one with God, by way of His parental heart.

Within the family, the grandfather is in the position of having created the heavenly kingdom. You did not know that your grandfather and grandmother are the king and queen of your family, did you? In future, you should clearly remember that the family is the foundation for inheriting the heavenly kingdom. Also, you should clearly understand by now how much you need to live a life of love within your own family, because your family is the foundation for realizing and actualizing the four great vertical realms of heart. (*Cheon Seong Gyeong*)

Father teaches that men are to be godly leaders of women:

Do you prefer feminine men or strong, masculine men? Do you women know why you prefer rugged masculine men? Because that is the quality you don't have. That's because God created men and women in complementary relationship. Women are made for conquest of love by men….

Women today like the concept of equality, don't they? But they cannot change

the fact that they are different. How can they claim equality when men need two helpings of food and women only one? Men work at heavy labor for hours and hours, but not women. A woman wrestler could never defeat a man. How could men and women be equal then? Only in love are men and women equal. Could you want any better equality? In primitive times a man had to really work to take care of his family. Because man could be independent in this way, God gave woman the one ability that man can never have, which is childbearing, to balance the different capabilities. But lately women are even refusing to have children. (3-11-79)

Equality is good, but not with blinders. Because you are not losing anything you don't take exception to this, do you? If a woman has to go out at night, she naturally often asks a man to go with her. You women are built as object, not subject. Even if your brother is much younger than you, he goes out at night all by himself without asking one of his sisters to go with him. That's the complementary order of the subject and object relationship which God established. (4-29-79)

The seed of life which is inherited from our father is almost invisible to the naked eye. However, contained within it is the entire universe. Combined with the flesh of the mother a new human being is created. Proportionately, the flesh of the mother makes up ninety-nine percent of the new child. Even though proportionately there is so much imbalance, still the seed of life is the center and core of the child. Therefore, we should love our father before we love our mother because our father represents the central core and stands in the position of God in terms of giving life to the children. The father stands in the position of king of the family. However, within secular families this concept does not exist.

Have you American brothers loved and recognized your mother more than your father? (Our father.) Do you really mean that? (Yes.) If you truly mean what you say, then you are already qualified to enter into the kingdom. Father stands in the position of the central axis. However, if you place your 360 degree axis on your mother, you don't know where you will end up because that center will float around. Who has the greater tendency to change easily, men or women? (Women.) Then how can we place woman in the position of the central axis? Who is the subject of the mother? (Father.) (5-26-96)

Why do you marry? You want to receive love. Women are like that: "I want to receive love!" Man is the center or subject and woman is the object. Women must center upon or follow their husbands. As the subject and object relationship is solved, it will extend all the way to the nation and to the world. It is the same concept. (12-10-89)

Mind is the subject and body is the object. When you make a decision, is it your body or your mind that does it? You say, "I've made up my mind." Can you imagine saying, "I've made up my body."? That certainly doesn't make sense. There is a certain universal order. There is the proper subject/object relationship. When the subject and object are clearly determined, harmonious relationship can come about.

What about men and women: which is the subject? Are you women reluctant to say that the men are subject? Many American women don't like Father Moon's concept. You say, "Women are number one!"

When you observe a man and woman walking, does it look natural for the woman to walk in front? Which way is ideal: for the man to follow the woman, or the woman to follow the man?

> Why is it ideal for the woman to follow the man? You don't even have to articulate a reason because God already settled the issue. Men automatically take larger and wider steps than women, so naturally women will fall a couple of steps behind the men. Can you imagine a romantic love scene between some strong, John Wayne type man and a beautiful woman, where the man lays down and begs the woman to come to him? You just feel repulsed by that. But when John Wayne assumes the subjective, aggressive role and takes the woman into his arms, you enjoy it. That's natural. Woman cannot fulfill the man's role and man cannot fulfill the woman's role. (5-31-84)

Feminists often say that mankind has evolved to a higher level of relationships than that of patriarchy. One Unificationist sister wrote these false words in the *Unification News*, "Patriarchy is a New Testament Age practice that thankfully shall be retired forever. In its place, a true liberation of men and women shall emerge." She goes on to say that there will be better relationships between men and women in the "Completed Testament Age" and it will not be patriarchy. She is wrong. Feminists have not given us a better plan than patriarchy because there is no better plan than godly patriarchy. Anything else is feminism. Either we have a division of labor or we don't. Either women provide and protect or they do not. Either women compete with men or they do not. Either women are objects to one man, their husband, or they are objects to many men in the workplace. The Completed Testament age will be an age of true patriarchy where women never dominate men and are never dominated by men who are not their husband. Father teaches there is a chain of command in a marriage and family. He teaches there is a vertical relationship between a husband and wife. It is intellectually juvenile to believe that some old-fashioned beliefs are outdated, no longer valid, and obsolete. Father says:

> If a man by himself, pushes, which way would he go? It is very difficult. But a man with a woman in front of him, standing in such a way as to go in a circle, is very efficient. You can go around with less power, faster. Who would lead that motion, the man or woman? American women say, "Woman." Actually both cannot, so either one has to. If anything, it's the man. Why? Because man is taller and things are supposed to flow from higher down to that which is lower, not the other way. If there is a group of people, like an army regiment, does the leader go on the high place to give commands or stand in a low place and looking up give commands? If God gave women the privilege and said, "Okay, you women lead", then she would stand like this looking up at her husband and for three years try to give commands. After three years she would give up and say, "God, let's change the role." This is a natural formula and arrangement. Tall people looking down on those lower give commands. Sometimes women are taller than their husbands. People will look at that and think, "Oh, bad luck!" Bad luck is the closest translation of the Korean word Father used. It means everything will go wrong. You won't feel good in the morning and you won't feel good in the evening. So you must respect the fact that your husband is taller. That is good for a woman. Do you recognize that or do you disagree?
>
> But then, God's goal is to make husband and wife equal. What makes woman equal to man? Inferior is not the right word, but anyway man is taller and stronger, while woman is less strong and less powerful than man. There are all sorts of differences between them. Men can run faster and they can lift heavier weights. There are many differences and comparatively it looks like men are superior and women are inferior. Men eat twice as much as women; they can't be equal. But when they love each other, there is no superior or inferior. There is no taller or shorter.

A mother is like earth. When we plant the precious grain we plant it on earth and not in the air. Women symbolize earth. So a mother like the ground, receiving the seed from above. Like the sun and the moon, the sun being subject represents man and the moon as object represents woman. It is very striking that women exist in one respect similar to the moon, becoming smaller and larger. Exactly at the midpoint of the month they become larger and become a harmonious object to the sun. That is how the physical function in women is also. We see the monthly movements in women. Everything centers on the sun. The moon revolves around the sun and woman centering on man becomes larger and shrinks back again in the form of menstruation. Isn't that true? This is not a strange thing, it is the way we are created. Through the sun and moon, the Creator is showing us the relationship and when it comes to us we see their resemblance in man and woman.

The sun symbolizes father and the moon symbolizes mother.

The family is the nucleus of the harmony of nature. It is really the literal center of all things. No matter how small a woman may be and how large her husband is, he cannot gain perfection or happiness in any sense without her. Only through her can harmony come to exist and eventually be equalized. Man and woman are small compared to the huge universe, but still they are a copy, a small microcosm of the solar system and entire celestial system. They are the same, only their size is smaller. Everything comes in the pair system, like the sun and the moon and all the animal kingdom. Even the mineral kingdom exists in the pair system. This is the nuclei, the real center. No matter how small, this is the real center of the whole cosmos.

We all want freedom, especially Americans. Don't you see, if you don't know this Principle then you have no freedom. You are trying to find freedom without knowing this, but the conclusion is that without Principle there is no freedom. Is it free for a man to act any way he wants to? For example; if a man goes to another family and snatches another man's wife, is that free? [No.] If there is a man sleeping alone, can any woman move into bed with him and take control over his family? Can she do that? [No.] Well what is freedom? You're free to do that aren't you? If we have the Principle we can be free and without it we can't be free. The freedom seekers, Americans, you love freedom don't you, but you must understand that without the Principle there is no freedom to look for. Principle means the formula system.

Man is the vertical line and woman is the horizontal line, neither one complains because they balance out to the same. Do you or don't you like that? [Yes!] To create harmony and unification, the horizontal is as necessary as the vertical. Man is vertical, woman is horizontal. (3-10-1991)

Aubrey Andelin in his wonderful book that every brother should read, *Man of Steel and Velvet*, teaches some aspects of godly patriarchy. Here are a few excerpts:

GUIDE PROTECTOR PROVIDER

A man's most important responsibility is to be the guide, protector, and provider for his wife and children. This role is not merely a result of custom or tradition, but is of divine origin.

The Holy Scriptures designate man as head of the family. The duties of both

Adam and Eve were defined by God in explicit instruction. The man is born to protect women and children is apparent when considering his body build which is larger, stronger, and has greater endurance. The woman is different. She has a body build that is delicate and sometimes fragile, uniquely adapted for bearing children. Both men and women have a temperament adapted to the complementary relationship they bear to one another.

Man's role as the guide, protector and provider is his first and foremost responsibility. No other duty can compare to it; no other duty replaces it. Urgent, of course, is his additional responsibility to contribute as a builder of society in assisting to solve problems and meet needs in his community. But these things are secondary to his obligation at home. His usefulness in the community is realized principally as he builds a happy home and marriage and produces well-adjusted, useful children.

In the book of collections of quotes of Sun Myung Moon titled *The Way Of The Spiritual Leader (Part 2)* Father says Subject means Leader:

The Vertical Subject

Who is the vertical subject? There is none other than God who is the vertical subject. The original homeland of your conscience is God. Only after forming a family on the basis of God centering on the conscience of individuals, and then forming a tribe, people, nation, world and universe centering on God, you can be one with the vertical standard which will allow God to freely come down and go up. This vertical standard must also have give and take, right? It must revolve up and down. After making circles, a sphere will be formed.

When you go to a school, who is the vertical representative of the school? The vertical representative is the teacher who comes into the classroom. During that time, students must absolutely obey the words of the teacher. Those who gossip or complain on the side are destructive.

You have to lead. What does it mean to lead? Although the four seasons change, you must uphold the unchanging vertical standard so that what you have led in spring, winter, fall, summer will not change. You cannot say, "Since spring has come, I am bored with the vertical position; how wonderful is the horizontal position. I do not like the vertical position. I will move to the horizontal position." A leader cannot behave in this way. (148-22)

3) The Responsibility of the Subject

A subject has to have a strong power of life. Otherwise, one cannot become a subject. Moreover, a subject must contain love. Without possessing love one cannot become a subject. It means that one cannot lead objects. It is the same. Unless one becomes true and truthful, one cannot become the center. Without love, one cannot become the center. Furthermore, a leader must be able to make progress and lead for eternity. Therefore, he must be true. One cannot become a leader without being connected to the true life and true love. Does this sound right?

4) The Position of the Leader in Regards to the Principle Perspective on Life

A leader, a subject, must be responsible for the whole. He must be responsible for the whole and play the role of the guide who can lead people to good places. When he can pave the way, and lay a strong foundation so that the followers can ride on

the highway, the more he does that the greater subject he is. It is very simple. It is a simple logic. Do you understand what I am saying?

When you go home and see your wife sleeping, you should be thinking, "Because I have not fulfilled my responsibility today she is behaving this way." Have you ever thought, "She is not waiting for me because I have not fulfilled my responsibility?" Suppose that she did not even make lunch and is just taking a nap. You have to think like that. You have to think like that in all personal relationships.

When a person that you are dealing with for the first time has made a mistake, then you should think about what you have given him and how much you have invested in him. Only by doing so, even if mistakes are made, you can find the universal laws of forgiveness. As the subject, you have to first greet him with a delightful heart before you expect him to do so, and if you expect him to greet you with a bright face when you yourself are not, then you are just a thief. What is a thief? A thief is taking things from someone else's field and eating it without working for it. This is the beginning of evil.

What kind of person is the leader, the subject? He is one who takes responsibility for the whole. After you go into a village, you should be thinking, "I came to this village as the leader. I came as a member of the Special Forces sent by God to build the kingdom of heaven and materialize heaven. What did I do as a member of the Special Forces? What did I give to the village after coming here? Did I become the subject? Did I become the object?" If you failed to become a subject but became an object, then you should be grateful that you have not been blown off by the wind and not struck by the lightening and lie dead.

5) The Mission of a Central Figure

What should the subject do? The subject has the responsibility to protect. Moreover, he has to determine the position and direction of the environment. After making the determination, he must protect and be responsible for it. (1978.3.19)

CENTRAL FIGURE PROVIDES PROTECTION

Who is the central figure? He has the responsibility to provide protection and the ability to do it. Suppose that an ugly man was standing in front of a pretty woman, then when he is facing a crisis, is he going to hide inside the armpit of the pretty woman? Think about it. Even a tall and pretty woman, would she hide inside the armpit of the ugly man if she is facing some dangerous situation? Which is the case, you ladies? No matter how tall and beautiful the woman might be, she will hide behind the man. She wants to be protected by him. This is a natural expression and reasonable behavior. The central figure must take responsibility and provide protection.

Moreover, the central figure must the lead the movement. He has to guide the way. Isn't this true? Only someone who knows the way can guide it; how can someone who does not lead the way? Isn't this so? A lady has a doctorate degree while a man only graduated from the elementary school. However, when they are climbing a mountain, does the doctor lady walk in the front or does the man with elementary education lead the way? In general, if there are ten men, then all ten will ignore the lady and try to lead the way at the front. Isn't this how it is? The central figure has the responsibility to lead. Toward what? Toward the good place.

The center is supposed to be responsible for the whole. The center must know how to give everything. The center must take responsibility and know how to protect. (134-317)

MAN STAND ON RIGHT—WOMAN STANDS ON LEFT

Viewing centering on man and woman, husband and wife are the same. They are the same when they like each other. However, although they are equal on the horizontal standard, on the vertical standard, who sets the standard for an even balance? It is not the woman, but the man. It is man. For this reason, man stands on the right side and the woman stands on the left.

THE SUBJECT MUST PROTECT THE OBJECT

The subject must protect the object. He has the responsibility to protect. Then what does he have to do? He has to lead. He must point out the direction, which will lead to the right way. So should the wife listen to the words of husbands or not? [They should listen] If the husband behaves like a dog, aware only about the horizontal standard, and believes in himself more than God and thinks that he is absolute, then you do not have to obey him. However, if he listens to his conscience, is concerned about the family, society, and nation, then the wife must try to be in harmony with him. She has to follow her husband. (*The Way Of The Spiritual Leader (Part 2*)

Father teaches:

The main topic is the importance of man and woman. Should woman go around men or should men go around women? Western sisters, please respond. Well, the woman is smaller and shorter so actually it is natural that the man should be the center and help the woman. The woman should revolve around the man. Should he abandon her or protect her. (4-19-2004)

Father stands in the position of the central axis. However, if you place your 360 degree axis on your mother, you don't know where you will end up because that center will float around. Who has the greater tendency to change easily, men or women? (Women.) Then how can we place woman in the position of the central axis? Who is the subject of the mother? (Father.) (5-26-96)

Who is the vertical figure? The husband. The wife is the horizontal figure. While woman turns around 360 degrees, man is in the center, not going around 360 degrees. (8-9-98)

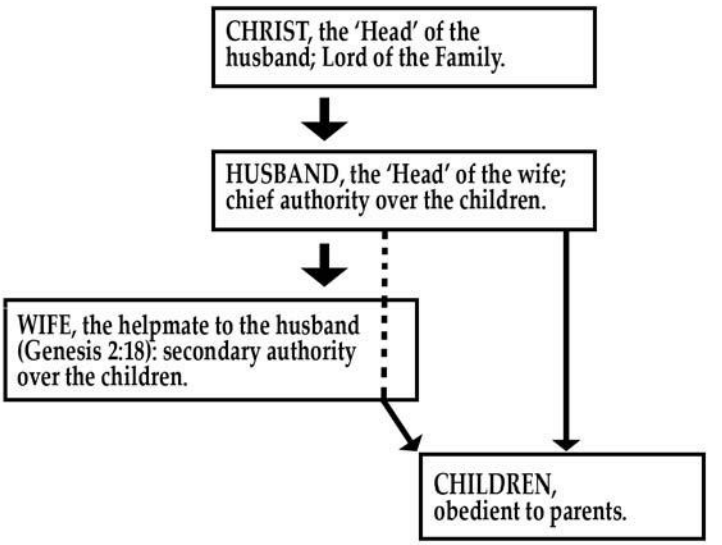
The female follows the male. The male follows God. Should the female complain? American woman, Western sisters, should men go around women or women around men? Men are usually larger, so it's better for women to go around men rather than over. The woman should revolve around the man. The woman is smaller and shorter so actually it is natural that the man should be the center and help the woman. Women, are you happy this way? When woman goes round man, should man abandon her or protect her? When man goes hunting or to work, man leaves woman at home, for her protection. Man should have the purpose and be in the position of protector to woman. (4-19-2004)

One of the most famous passages in the Bible that deal with men leading and women submitting is Ephesians 5:22-25 that says, "Wives, submit yourselves to your own husbands. ... the husband is

the head of the wife." Wives are to submit "to their own husbands in everything." Father often says men are subject and women are object and that women follow men.

When we teach the *Divine Principle* we use a diagram of a diamond for the four-position foundation consisting of God, husband, wife and children. Some may incorrectly think that it shows men and women having only a horizontal relationship. Because marriage is more horizontal than parents and children we see that many couples divorce but it is rare to see parents giving up their children. Married couples are equal in value but the essence of the man and woman relationship is hierarchical. This is viewed as abnormal by today's world but it is the normal way to organize a marriage from God's viewpoint. There is a chain of command in the family just as there is in every organization. A better diagram would show the vertical relationships in the family such as the following:

Father says, "The role of a woman is to raise her children and to build a proper vertical relationship with her husband" (5-26-96). In his book *The Christian Family* Larry Christenson gives the following diagram to illustrate the vertical relationships in the family:



Dae Mo Nim teaches:

> **Gentle Wife with Beauty**
> While I conduct the spiritual works of Cheongpyeong, I often provide counseling for families. In this counseling, what I want to convey to the members from the

bottom of my heart is "to live with beauty as a woman."

After counseling sessions, I came to notice that the stronger the wives are, the more problems the families have. For example, problems are created in the health and social success of husbands, and children come to have bad fortune. So these families come to encounter hardships in health and financial well being. These are results of the family being suppressed by the woman's spiritual energy. In Korea, there is a saying, "a family perishes if a hen crows." A woman's voice must not be heard outside the fence.

There is no family that has a strong mother and is doing well. During counseling, wives say, "Because my husband is weak, I had no choice but to be strong," but that is wrong.

When I give counseling to families that derailed, there are some cases in which men had some problems in their lives. But most of the cases are those where the wives were too strong and ignored their husbands without attending to them. When a husband made a mistake, the wife related to him with a strong attitude instead of embracing him. This, as a result, caused the husband to commit an even greater mistake. Because the wife related to him with a strong attitude, the husband repeated the mistake twice or three times.

While counseling, even when I find out that the wife is too strong, I do not tell the husband, "Your wife has a problem." If I tell him this, things could get even worse. So instead of saying this, I tell the husband to serve the wife more and trust her more. I speak from the standpoint of the wife who had no choice but to be that way, but I feel sorry for the husband.

I summon the wife separately and tell her to serve the husband more. As I always say, the wives have to have love, along with beauty.

I educate wives to "absolutely obey the husband." Wives might not like hearing about absolute obedience. But, "absolute obedience" here does not mean to obey him as in a relationship between a superior and a subordinate. If a wife is not sacrificial in a family, that family is doomed to perish and encounter hardships. In conducting ancestors liberation ceremonies, I found that the wives' characters were stronger than the husbands'. It appears that the character of the husband, who is in the position of the subject, looks stronger but when I examine the internal character of man and woman in depth centered on the ancestors liberation, the woman's character is stronger.

Wives Have to Change in order to Achieve a True Family

I was enchanted by the word "yes" among the words of Japanese members. They say, "yes" with a beautiful smile, but there is strength in that word. Spiritually looking into that, it is very strong.

When I clear up spirits, the female spirits with resentment are very difficult to separate. Male spirits are different. Male spirits are easier to deal with. This means that women have more resentment and are stronger.

You have to change your life from now on. If we want to make our families true families, we wives have to change first. In order for the church, the world and the cosmos to develop, women have to change; peace, happiness and joy come unless women change.

A man's thinking is also very simple. It is different from a woman's. A husband forgets after a certain time period even if his wife was at fault. A wife is different. Sometimes she does not forget until her death.

In order to solve this problem, a man should take a three-day, two-night vacation and go on a trip alone with his wife. Initially, have a little conversation and tell her, "If you have something to say to me, say it all." She will say a lot of trivial things in

> the beginning, but you should still listen to her. The wife might say things that are outrageous and based on terrible misunderstandings, and you might feel like storming out. You might feel like dying, but you have to endure. If you keep listening to her, saying, "Oh really? Is that right?" she will have nothing more to say after saying whatever it was she had wanted to say. After the wife pours out everything, the husband says, "I see, now I understand, I see," and loves her like loving a child. Then if both continuously have conversations with each other, this family will become a happy family.

STORY OF *TITANIC* IS STORY OF OLD-FASHIONED PATRIARCHY

Most people know about the story of the sinking of the *Titanic* in which many men gave their lives so women could be saved on the limited number of lifeboats available. In his book *The Titanic Story* Stephen Cox writes about a hearing given after the tragedy:

> Asked by Senator Smith for the reason behind the policy of "women and children first," Officer Lightoller replied that it was "the rule of human nature." Ismay also pronounced it "natural." But that was 1912. At the present time, enforcing the "natural" rule of "women and children first" would get you sued for discrimination. Forty-four years after the *Titanic*, when the *Andrea Doria* lay sinking of the New England coast, many crewmen took to the lifeboats and left their terrified passengers behind.

Many men on the *Titanic* believed in true patriarchy. They believed in protecting women in times of danger. Today we do not have a belief in patriarchy so we have lost chivalry. Anyone who argues against patriarchy is arguing against the loving, sacrificial behavior of the men on board the *Titanic*. Some of the men on the *Titanic* were the richest men in the world like Mr. Straus who was the owner of Macy's Department store in New York City. He and his wife were traveling with their maid, Miss Ellen Bird, and he made sure she was put on a lifeboat while he stayed behind and died. Many millionaire men made sure their hired help were saved. The richest man in America was onboard. John Jacob Astor was traveling with his pregnant wife, his valet, Mr. Victor Robbins, Mrs. Astor's maid, Miss Rosadile Bidois and Miss Caroline Louise Endres, Mrs. Astor's private nurse. "His staterooms were without equal. With working fireplaces and adjoining quarters for servants, the suites cost $4,000.00, an amount that equals $50,000.00 in today's dollars." He made sure his wife and her maid and nurse were put on a lifeboat. He and his servant, Mr. Robbins went down with the ship. This doesn't look like these men thought women were second-class citizens that anti-patriarchy critics accuse patriarchal men of being. If you are against patriarchy you are a feminist.

Let me give you an example of a feminist who gives the standard line that patriarchy equals women being treated as second-class citizens. In her book *Women's Bodies, Women's Wisdom* Christiane Northrup writes what many feminists feel. She begins her book blasting patriarchy: "Western civilization has rested for the last five thousand years on the mythology of patriarchy, the authority of men and fathers." Not only has Western civilization been patriarchal but so has the East. She is wrong that patriarchy is a mythology. It is God's ideology.

She says mankind needs to "heal ourselves" from our culture that is "ruled by the father." She says we must "create another kind of social organization." That organizing principle is feminism. Patriarchal society, she writes, "blares out the message that" women are "inferior and must be controlled." A vivid example of patriarchy is the men giving their lives so women could be saved in lifeboats on the *Titanic*. Some of the richest men in the world were on board and helped their wives and poor, young, single women who worked for them to get in a lifeboat when they could easily have overpowered women and saved themselves. They didn't see women as "inferior." And

neither have countless men who have given their lives for women. She goes on to say that these last 5000 years of human history have been hell for women in patriarchy: "The Judeo-Christian cosmology that informs Western Civilization sees the female body and female sexuality in the person of Eve as responsible for the downfall of mankind. For thousands of years, women have been beaten, abused, burned at the stake, and blamed for all manner of evil simply because of their sex. We forget, in this era of rapid change, that women did not win the right to vote until 1920!"

She is so self-centered and so wrapped up in herself that she can't see that men have suffered in the last 5000 years as well. Human history has not been good to countless men just as it has not been good to many women. But I believe women who have had godly patriarchs for husbands were better off in all of human history than those women who had egalitarian husbands who did not feel the need to protect them.

Northrup writes:

> In 1953, in her book *The Second Sex*, Simone de Beauvoir wrote, "Man enjoys the great advantage of having a god endorse the code he writes. And since man exercises a sovereign authority over women is especially fortunate that his authority has been vested in him by the Supreme being. For the Jews, Mohammedans, and Christians among others, man is master by diving right; the fear of God will therefore repress any impulse towards revolt in the downtrodden female." The belief that men are meant to be rulers of women runs deep in many Western traditions.
>
> The patriarchal organization of our society demands that women, its second-class citizens, ignore or turn away from their hopes and dreams in deference to men and the demands of their families. This systematic stuffing or denying of our needs for self-expression and self-actualization causes us enormous emotional pain.
>
> I favor Sonia Johnson's definition of feminism because it contains a vision of healing within it: "Feminism is the articulation of the ancient, underground culture and philosophy based on the values that patriarchy has labeled 'womanly' but which are necessary for full humanity. Among the principles and values of feminism that are most distinct from those of patriarchy are universal equality, non-violent problem-solving, and cooperation with nature, one another, and other species. (*Going Out of Our Minds: The Metaphysics of Liberation*).

Simone de Beauvoir and Sonia Johnson are bad role models for women. Beauvoir was an atheist who never had children and Johnson is a lesbian. They do not lead as happy a life as those women I uplift like Helen Andelin who believe in the traditional family that honors men as being the heads of their homes. If you do not feel a man is to be treated as head of his home then you are with those like Beauvoir, Johnson and Christiane Northrup. Which side are you on? There are only two sides. One is Cain and the other Abel. Either you believe that all men are heads of their homes or you do not. There is no third way.

Feminists believe a woman can only be a force for change in the world if they look to the world of men for fulfillment. The truth is that the best way a woman can change the world is by being a stay-at-home mom. Helen Andelin writes in *Fascinating Womanhood*: "To be a successful mother is greater than to be a successful opera singer, writer, or artist. One is eternal greatness and the other a short-term honor. One day my young son said to me, 'Mother, boys are more important than girls, aren't they, for they can become presidents and generals and famous people.' I replied, 'But it is mothers who make presidents and generals and famous people. The hand that rocks the cradle is the hand that rules the world.'" Feminist men and feminist women reject this ideology. They push women to be in front of men instead of behind them. They think that the world needs women to be in the marketplace to make the world a better place. It's not enough for a woman to

be focused on her home and be a volunteer in their church and community. Women, they believe, need to be in leadership over men. They don't want women to be in the "background." They must be on the front line, side-by-side with men and better yet, leading men. Mrs. Andelin teaches, "The work in the home is a different kind of glory than career women enjoy. A great mother lives in obscurity, and the perfect wife is even less known. Her reward is a quiet, unacclaimed honor. Her glory is the esteem of her husband, the happiness of her children, and her overall success in the home." Either you believe Helen Andelin or you believe those Unificationists who push for women to be leaders of men outside the home. Helen Andelin writes that in a true marriage the man and woman complement each other when the man is the hunter and the woman the nester, "Together they can accomplish something that neither acting alone can accomplish. Nor can it be accomplished by two locks and two keys. Each is distinct, yet neither is complete in and of itself. Their roles are neither identical nor interchangeable. Neither is superior to the other, since both are necessary. They are equally important. Each must be judged in terms of its own function. They are complimentary."

"Patriarchy: A Good Word for a Hopeful Trend"

The following is an article I saved from a defunct website www.patriarch.com. On its welcome page it said, "Patriarch's mission is to bring about a return to patriarchy, leadership by strong, godly men in every sphere of life." This is my mission as well. The article is titled "Patriarchy: A Good Word for a Hopeful Trend":

> The news media recently reported that the 1997 National Spelling Bee was won by a homeschooler, a thirteen-year-old girl from New York. The word with which she clinched the victory was "euonym," which means literally "a good name," or an appropriate name for something.
>
> Patriarchy. Patriarchal. These are jarring terms to ears attuned to the contemporary social context, fashioned as it is by the ideology and agenda of feminism. To be described as "patriarchal" is among the worst indictments that can be brought upon a group of people or a period of history, conjuring as it does vague images of domineering men and downtrodden women.
>
> However, far from being a term to avoid as we approach the turn of the millennium, this word is one we should embrace. It is, in fact, a euonym, a good name, because it suitably identifies the movement to which it refers. Not that we favor the cultural stereotype that enters the collective mind today at the sound of the word, but because we embrace a true and wholesome patriarchy, one vindicated by the Word of God and by history.
>
> "Patriarch" was the first name your editor considered for this publication, though I confess I initially set it aside in favor of less strident names. Both of the alternatives, however, had to be discarded because I discovered they were in use by other ministries and publications. So I came back to "Patriarch," gulped hard, and placed it on the masthead of the first issue. I have never been sorry for the decision, convinced that it was the providential choice.
>
> Over the past year or so I have participated in conferences we call "Back to Patriarchy." In these meetings we present an expansive vision of spiritual renewal rooted in the choice of men to reclaim their God-given leadership role in the family. A patriarch is a man who reflects God the Father by embracing the biblical role of fatherhood. This domestic spiritual leadership overflows into the reformation of church and larger society under the leadership of godly men. A patriarchal society is God's ideal society, one shaped according to the principles and patterns of his Word.
>
> Some might think that we should use less emotive terms to call men back to their manly duties. I must disagree. Let me suggest seven reasons why the term

> "patriarchy" is a good name to identify the movement of men back to their manly calling and the resulting reformation of family, church, and society.

The author goes on to give his reasons for using the word. Here is one them:

> The term "patriarchy" constitutes a direct challenge to feminism.
>
> We have failed to stand for truth if we stand up for truth at every point except that which is under attack in our day (to paraphrase someone). Christians are too busy trying to accommodate feminism. They do this by allowing women leaders in the church, by supporting the practice of women working outside the home, by encouraging unmarried daughters to leave home for college or career (thus promoting a spirit of independence), by teaching an egalitarian model of marriage, by sporting hyphenated last names, by importing "gender-inclusive language" into hymns and even Bible translations, and in many other ways. Feminism is winning the ideological battle for our civilization, and Christians are among its casualties.
>
> The way to win the battle against an advancing enemy is to expose his position, attack him with force, and reverse the advances he has made. We need to expose feminism for the devil's lie that it is, attack it with the force of biblical truth, and seek to reverse the progress it has made in our culture.
>
> The term "patriarchy" is an effective weapon in our arsenal. Its use instantly crystallizes the issues in the conflict. By defining the battle it forces men (and women) to take sides. It allows no neutral ground of accommodation and thus reveals those who are willing to compromise truth for social acceptability. The word will make many uncomfortable, others furious, but for that very reason it serves well the cause of God and truth. "Patriarchy" is a call to action for men who want to cure Western civilization of the festering lesion of feminism.

The author gives this reason for using the word:

> The term "patriarchy" stimulates a multi-generational vision in men.
>
> Those who in Scripture were called "patriarchs" were so named by those who stood many generations downstream from them. You don't normally call your dad "Patriarch." A man earns that title through the honor accorded him by accumulating generations. The very term means "the first in a family" and thus "the family ruler." A patriarch is the head of a family dynasty.
>
> Thus the use of the term encourages a long-range vision of a man's calling. I am not just Dad to a few children; I am patriarch to hundreds, thousands who will come after me. The preparation of my immediate children (the foundation) will affect the quality of many generations to follow (the building).
>
> Contemporary men don't look very far down the road ahead. They might think about next month, next vacation, maybe even retirement, but it is a very rare man who is thinking about his children's grandchildren. We need to help men extend their time horizons generations into the future. Calling them back to patriarchy does just that.
>
> The key to extending the kingdom of God is to disciple our children, who will disciple theirs, who will disciple theirs, and so on. In this way the gospel will keep pace with the geometrical increase of people on the globe. The current win-a-few lose-a-few approach of the church is a model of defeat. Patriarchy is a model of victory. It is the way to actually fulfill the Great Commission that Jesus gave his church (Matt. 28:18-20). Multiplying Christian families through the generations is the means to the evangelization of the world. Patriarchy is thus central to the cause

of Christ in this age.

> For example, biblical patriarchy never excuses, justifies or motivates godly men to devalue, denigrate or relegate godly women to "second-class" status in the home. Women are NOT inferior to men even if they are subordinate in their roles. Husband and wife are to be "one flesh;" which is more than a quaint euphemism for marital intimacy but rather a spiritual union of two individuals (1 Cor 6:16-17). Granted the wife is to respect her husband and submit to him (1 Ptr 3:1) but the husband is also required to treat her with grace, kindness and respect granting her honor as a joint-heir of the Kingdom, lest God refuse to hear his prayers (1 Ptr 3:7).
>
> Therefore, let those who earnestly seek a return to the biblical family carefully search the Scriptures to develop a consistent and comprehensive Christian view of the "patriarch's" role. Let them meditate on the doctrine of "representation" and understand both the legitimate authority of the father, as well as the limitations of his role. Let fathers govern their homes wisely and justly for the benefit of the entire family not giving in to pride or arrogance. Let the "patriarchs" raise strong, self-governed sons who have discovered their calling and who will work diligently at fulfilling it. Let the "patriarchs" raise godly, modest and temperate daughters who rejoice in their duties as wives and mothers, teaching their children and managing the households. And as for the critics; let us not worry about them—they and the children they never bore, raised nor disciplined, will soon be a thing of the past.

BIBLICAL PATRIARCHY

In an article "Biblical Patriarchy and the Doctrine of Federal Representation" Brian M. Abshire says (the article was in a now defunct website):

> The name itself often leads some to have a negative disposition before they have even considered the position. The word "patriarchy" conjures up images of a stern, Old Testament figure (perhaps with a long white beard), ruling his family with an iron hand, squelching individual initiative, oppressing women and micromanaging every aspect of his children's lives.

In effect, Western civilization WAS a "patriarchy" up until recent times and assumed as the normal means of governing not only households, but also entire nations. The English proverb "every man's home is his castle" represents the cultural assumption, handed down from antiquity, that the father, as head of his household, WAS the federal representative of his own family to the broader community.

Until the twentieth century, Americans almost universally held to this doctrine of representation in some form or the other. The reason why women were not allowed to vote had nothing to do with women being considered "inferior" or "too emotional" (these values arose during the Victorian era and were themselves theologically and socially deviant) but rather because the husband and father was ASSUMED to represent the family to the broader community. By definition, there could only be ONE representative of the family just as there could only be ONE representative of the Human Race to God!

However, by the end of the 19th century, American Christians had largely stopped thinking in theological terms. In regards to a woman's right to vote; if husband and wife are truly "one flesh" and the husband is doing his duty to represent the family to the wider community, then what PRACTICAL benefit does allowing women to vote provide? If husband and wife agree on an issue, then one has simply doubled the number of votes; but the result is the same. Women's voting only makes a difference when the husband and wife disagree; a wife, who does not trust the judgment of her husband, can nullify his vote. Thus, the immediate consequence is to enshrine the will of the individual OVER the good of the family thus creating divisions WITHIN the family.

Biblical patriarchy never excuses, justifies or motivates godly men to devalue, denigrate or relegate godly women to "second-class" status in the home. Women are NOT inferior to men even if they are subordinate in their roles. Husband and wife are to be "one flesh;" which is more than a quaint euphemism for marital intimacy but rather a spiritual union of two individuals (1 Cor 6:16-17). Granted the wife is to respect her husband and submit to him (1 Ptr 3:1) but the husband is also required to treat her with grace, kindness and respect granting her honor as a joint-heir of the Kingdom, lest God refuse to hear his prayers (1 Ptr 3:7).

Therefore, let those who earnestly seek a return to the biblical family carefully search the Scriptures to develop a consistent and comprehensive Christian view of the "patriarch's" role. Let them meditate on the doctrine of "representation" and understand both the legitimate authority of the father, as well as the limitations of his role. Let fathers govern their homes wisely and justly for the benefit of the entire family not giving in to pride or arrogance. Let the "patriarchs" raise strong, self-governed sons who have discovered their calling and who will work diligently at fulfilling it. Let the "patriarchs" raise godly, modest and temperate daughters who rejoice in their duties as wives and mothers, teaching their children and managing the households. And as for the critics; let us not worry about them—they and the children they never bore, raised nor disciplined, will soon be a thing of the past.

The major monotheistic religions have taught patriarchy for thousands of years. Satan hates godly patriarchy. His core value is feminism. What is feminism? It is the ideology that believes patriarchy is evil. Feminists believe the Bible is false. The leading book against patriarchy is Marx and Engel's *The Communist Manifesto* published in 1848 in Europe. In that book and in other books by them they call for a revolution in the family where the woman leaves the home and works in the marketplace. There are thousands of authors and books since them who teach that there are no absolute roles for men and women as taught in the Bible. Elizabeth Cady Stanton wrote the diabolical *Declaration of Sentiments* in 1848 in America that said women should stop being dependent on men and declare their independence. The most prominent feminist organization in America is the National Organization for Women or NOW. They wrote a value and goal statement titled, "1998 Declaration of Sentiments of the National Organization for Women" that says, "On this twelfth day of July, 1998, the delegates of the National Organization for Women gather in convention on the one hundred and fiftieth year of the women's rights movement.... We envision a world where women have equal representation in all decision-making structures of our societies ... We envision a world where patriarchal culture and male dominance no longer oppress us or our earth." These women are dupes of Satan. They envision a unisex, androgynous nightmare.

The United States government wasted millions of dollars on a national park in Seneca Falls, New York called Women's Rights National Historical Park to glorify the evil words in this statement.

Millions of people from around the world have seen the 100-foot-long wall engraved with the "Declaration of Sentiments." In the statement we read lies like this, "The history of mankind is a history of repeated injuries and usurpations on the part of man toward woman, having in direct object the establishment of an absolute tyranny over her." All women have not experienced "absolute tyranny" in all of human history. Men have experienced tyranny also. And there have been evil women in human history too. Feminists are always saying men are bad and women are good. Countless men have given life and limb for women. And there are many evil women in history.

MALE BASHING

In her statement we read this hysterical male bashing, "He has endeavored, in every way that he could, to destroy her confidence in her own powers, to lessen her self-respect, and to make her willing to lead a dependent and abject life."

She writes that men have "usurped the prerogative of Jehovah himself, claiming it as his right to assign for her a sphere of action, when that belongs to her conscience and to her God." This is a false statement. God himself has assigned the home as the proper "sphere of action." She says that women have "too long rested satisfied in the circumscribed limits which corrupt customs and a perverted application of the Scriptures have marked out for her, and that it is time she should move in the enlarged sphere which her great Creator has assigned her." The Scriptures say the opposite of what she writes. The Bible teaches that God has assigned women to the home and they are not supposed to compete with men in the "enlarged sphere."

OPPRESSED

Stanton says, "Women do feel themselves aggrieved, oppressed." So do men. Human history has been a nightmare of oppression for both men and women. Whatever advancements women have made in human history have come from a general, organic improvement in rights for both men and women that God and his champions have worked for. Feminists have only retarded the progress of human rights.

Stanton writes, "He has so framed the laws of divorce, as to what shall be the proper causes, and in case of separation, to whom the guardianship of the children shall be given, as to be wholly regardless of the happiness of women—the law, in all cases, going upon a false supposition of the supremacy of man, and giving all power into his hands." Sun Myung Moon says repeatedly that the old ways were better and women should not have gotten the "right" to get custody of children in divorce. He says it should be the law that men get custody.

The classic books for feminism are by Marx and Stanton. Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels wrote the most famous book on feminism titled *The Communist Manifesto* in 1848. Elizabeth Cady Stanton wrote the *Declaration of Sentiments* (1848) and *The Woman's Bible*. I analyze Marx elsewhere. Let's look at Stanton. Ken Burns is a well-known maker of video documentaries. He made one on Stanton and her gang and he says Stanton is the "greatest woman in American history." The truth is that she is the worst woman in American history.

Her Declaration is exaggerated male bashing. She writes:

> Man has endeavored in every way that he could to destroy woman's confidence in her own powers, to lessen her self-respect, and to make her willing to lead a dependent and abject life.
>
> He allows her in church, as well as state, but a subordinate position, claiming apostolic authority for her exclusion from the ministry.

> He has usurped the prerogative of Jehovah himself, claiming it as his right to assign for her a sphere of action, when that belongs to her conscience and to her God.
>
> As a teacher of theology, medicine, or law, she is not known.
>
> In the covenant of marriage, she is compelled to promise obedience to her husband, he becoming to all intents and purposes, her master.

The truth is most men do not try to "destroy" women. She is wrong in saying women should be ministers. She is wrong to say God has not made separate spheres for men and women. Women should not be professors of theology, medicine or law. And countless men have not been dictators. She uses the word "master" because it has a negative connotation of tyrant. In the early days of the American Unification Movement we used to read Sun Myung Moon's speeches that began, "Master Speaks." That was changed to "Father." Master has the feeling of master and slave.

It's been over 150 years since Stanton criticized men for being "masters" and feminists are still condemning men of trying to be "masters." Our culture today bombards us with anti-patriarchal messages. Ellen Goodman is one of America's most popular syndicated columnists. She wrote against the Million Man March and the Promise Keepers because they teach men to be heads of their families. She quotes someone from *Ms.* magazine saying, "They are telling men, 'We've been bad masters, let's now become better masters.'" "Today, Americans talk about families and communities in chaos. The absence of fathers is described as a national disease. The return of fathers as a cure. But in any chaos it's easy to give up on the democracy of relationships, the give and take of equality. It's easy to long for control, for authority figures, for old icons of manhood .... after all this time, all this change, the new man being molded by this movement doesn't sound much like a partner. He's just a kinder, gentler patriarch."

Ellen Goodman is a modern day ambassador for Satan. Stanton is a pioneer ambassador for Satan. Stanton's relationship with her own husband was not a master/slave relationship. He was a nice guy who provided for her and their seven children. Stanton was possessed by low spirits to be a champion for Satan.

She ends her declaration by saying she and her fellow pioneer feminists are going to work hard and long to achieve victory. And they did. By 1920 when Father was born they had turned everything upside down.

In 1920, 72 years after Marx and Stanton's writings were published, the Messiah was born in Korea. In 1992, 72 years later, the Messiah proclaimed himself the Messiah.

1848-1920 = 72 years

1920-1992 = 72 years

He speaks out against feminism or what is often called the Women's Liberation Movement. Hopefully in the next 72 years we can restore patriarchy. The feminists and communists and socialists have worked very hard and have won a great victory. Their ideology of egalitarianism is now the ruling ideology. What is the result? Their social experiment has produced more pain in the 20th century than any century before. The twentieth century is the worst century for the battle of the sexes and the battle of nations. What do feminists say when you point out that there has been so much blood shed and so much divorce? They say it is the inevitable price to pay for building their brave new world. Egalitarians don't care about the statistics of high divorce. They say they are interested in quality, not quantity. They think men and women's relationships are overall happier in today's feminist society than those who lived in the past. This is Satan's

ultimate lie. Patriarchal marriages and families are overall far happier than feminist ones. Want scientific proof? Read *Soft Patriarchs, New Men: How Christianity Shapes Fathers and Husbands* by W. Bradford Wilcox.

In 1895 Elizabeth Cady Stanton published *The Woman's Bible*. She saw the Bible as a book against women. Some modern day feminist theologians see the Bible as she did as being a patriarchal diatribe against women. Episcopal bishop John Shelby Spong "is the bestselling and, arguably, most visible liberal theologian of recent times" He is "an influential public speaker, writer and media figure" who is "well known for ordaining practicing homosexuals." He said in his book *Living in Sin: A Bishop Rethinks Human Sexuality*: "There is no doubt about the fact that the Bible is biased against women. . . . Both the religious and ethical directives of the Bible were formulated out of a patriarchal understanding of life, with the interests of men being primary. Are we willing to return to these destructive definitions of both men and women?" Today many feminist theologians take a different view and try to twist the Bible into a feminist book that they say has been misinterpreted for thousands of years.

Stanton criticizes the Bible as being written by a bunch of pathetic men with the sole motivation to dominate women. She says, "The Bible in its teachings degrades women from Genesis to Revelation. … From the inauguration of the movement for woman's emancipation the Bible has been used to hold her in the 'divinely ordained sphere,' prescribed in the Old and New Testaments." She correctly sees that the Bible believes in different roles for men and women. She lived in the nineteenth century (also called the Victorian times) that had a near unanimous belief that men and women are very different and there should be "separate spheres" to separate them. She writes, "The canon and civil law; church and state; priests and legislators; all political parties and religious denominations have alike taught that woman was made after man, of man, and for man, an inferior being, subject to man. Creeds, codes, Scriptures and statutes, are all based on this idea. The fashions, forms, ceremonies and customs of society, church ordinances and discipline all grow out of this idea." The motivation of the laws of government and church were to respect the ideology of patriarchy that encouraged men to protect women. They had a more vertical view than people do today. They understood and valued hierarchy and the divine order for men and women.

She says, "If the Bible teaches the equality of Woman, why does the church refuse to ordain women to preach the gospel, to fill the offices of deacons and elders, and to administer the Sacraments, or to admit them as delegates to the Synods, General Assemblies and Conferences of the different denominations?" The key word here is equality. Feminists think the word equality means sameness. She says that women are seen as "unfit to sit as a delegate in a Methodist conference, to be ordained to preach the Gospel, or to fill the office of elder, of deacon or of trustee, or to enter the Holy of Holies in cathedrals." Stanton won a complete victory in her war against patriarchy and today the Methodist church is a leader in making women ministers. What is the result of this? It has become a dying church. Feminism is the kiss of death.

She says, "Come, come, my conservative friend, wipe the dew off your spectacles, and see that the world is moving. Whatever your views may be as to the importance of the proposed work, your political and social degradation are but an outgrowth of your status in the Bible. When you express your aversion, based on a blind feeling of reverence in which reason has no control, to the revision of the Scriptures." Anyone who believes in the Bible, she says, is "blind" and has no "reason." These kind of people, she says, are called "conservative" and should wake up to the reality that the world is "moving" ahead. The truth is that conservatives see clearly that feminism moves the world downward to hell. The road to hell is paved with good intentions.

MOMENTOUS REVOLUTION

She says, "How can woman's position be changed from that of a subordinate to an equal, without

opposition, without the broadest discussion of all the questions involved in her present degradation? For so far-reaching and momentous a reform as her complete independence, an entire revolution in all existing institutions is inevitable." She calls for a "revolution" that will take women from being "subordinate" to "equal." The word equal is feminist's favorite word. They see things horizontally. She is right is saying her revolution is "far-reaching and momentous a reform" because she and her comrades are for a sexual revolution that defies human nature. They fight against natural law and common sense. To reject patriarchy is to reject what is normal and orderly. Feminism is abnormal and chaotic. Her goal is for women to have "complete independence." Well, women have it today and what is the result? We have the Messiah living in America for 33 years and denouncing it as disorderly and confused. He often criticizes American women for being out of order.

She writes, "Again there are some who write us that our work is a useless expenditure of force over a book that has lost its hold on the human mind. Most intelligent women, they say, regard it simply as the history of a rude people in a barbarous age, and have no more reverence for the Scriptures than any other work. So long as tens of thousands of Bibles are printed every year, and circulated over the whole habitable globe, and the masses in all English-speaking nations revere it as the word of God, it is vain to belittle its influence. The sentimental feelings we all have for those things we were educated to believe sacred, do not readily yield to pure reason. I distinctly remember the shudder that passed over me on seeing a mother take our family Bible to make a high seat for her child at table. It seemed such a desecration. I was tempted to protest against its use for such a purpose, and this, too, long after my reason had repudiated its divine authority." She understands that to win her crusade against patriarchy she has to deal with the Bible because it is the most powerful and most published book in history. She has to show the Bible is wrong.

She goes on to write, "The only points in which I differ from all ecclesiastical teaching is that I do not believe that any man ever saw or talked with God, I do not believe that God inspired the Mosaic code, or told the historians what they say he did about woman, for all the religions on the face of the earth degrade her, and so long as woman accepts the position that they assign her, her emancipation is impossible. Whatever the Bible may be made to do in Hebrew or Greek, in plain English it does not exalt and dignify woman." Everything about this is wrong. God did talk to his central figures and the Bible does exalt women. Patriarchy is the belief that women should be protected. Where is the logic in the belief that women should protect men? Isn't the belief in women police officers the opposite of "exalt" and "dignity"?

She says "all religious organizations" practice "invidious discrimination of sex." Everyone discriminates. The question is what we discriminate for and against. Back then people had a more vertical understanding of what a man and a woman are and knew that women should be dependent on men's protection.

Stanton believes that Darwin has more truth than the Bible: "As out of this allegory grows the doctrines of original sin, the fall of man, and woman the author of all our woes, and the curses on the serpent, the woman, and the man; the Darwinian theory of the gradual growth of the race from a lower to a higher type of animal life, is more hopeful and encouraging." Where is the logic that women have more value in Darwinism than the Bible when Darwinism says women are evolved animals instead of the daughters of God?

She says, "You cannot find a direct command of God or Christ for the wife to obey the husband." False. God told Eve that Adam was to "rule" over her.

Feminists do a lot of male bashing. Stanton writes:

> Abraham has been held up as one of the model men of sacred history. One credit he doubtless deserves, he was a monotheist, in the midst of the degraded and cruel forms of religion then prevalent in all the oriental world; this man and his wife saw enough of the light to worship a God of Spirit. Yet we find his conduct to the last degree reprehensible. While in Egypt in order to gain wealth he voluntarily surrenders his wife to Pharaoh. Sarah having been trained in subjection to her husband had no choice but to obey his will. When she left the king, Abraham complacently took her back without objection, which was no more than he should do seeing that her sacrifice had brought him wealth and honor. Like many a modern millionaire he was not a self-made but a wife-made man. When Pharaoh sent him away with his dangerously beautiful wife he is described as, "being rich in cattle, in silver and in gold," but it is a little curious that the man who thus gained wealth as the price of his wife's dishonor should have been held up as a model of all the patriarchal virtues.

We learn in the *Divine Principle*, the basic theology of Sun Myung Moon, that Abraham did the right thing when he let his wife go to the Pharaoh. Leading a religious life is often difficult to understand and to do. Because Satan rules the world mankind usually makes the serious mistake of not understanding the words and actions of his central figures. Patriarchs of God will be seen as "cruel" by fallen man because they cannot see through God's viewpoint. Stanton is rebellious in her male bashing of God's central figures and those who enforced patriarchy in her day.

Stanton writes, "The home sphere has so many attractions that most women prefer it to all others. A strong right arm on which to lean, a safe harbor where adverse winds never blow, nor rough seas roll, makes a most inviting picture. But alas! even good husbands sometime die, and the family drifts out on the great ocean of life, without chart or compass, or the least knowledge of the science of navigation. In such emergencies the woman trained to self-protection, self-independence, and self-support holds the vantage ground against all theories on the home sphere." Her husband was a good man who took care of her and their children and she can't reject her conscience that says women "prefer" the home to the marketplace. But she is wrong, as so many people are today, in thinking that women should learn a trade and be able to support their families if she becomes divorced or widowed. I write elsewhere that women in those situations should be protected by other men such as her father and brothers. The Bible clearly states that the church should take care of widows. How many churches today have a core value of totally providing for widows and divorcees? Many families and churches push widows and divorced women out to earn money and take care of themselves. Today's families and churches have been digested by satanic thinkers and writers like Stanton to encourage women to be independent.

She says, "The truth is that Christianity has in many instances circumscribed woman's sphere of action, and has been guilty of great injustice toward the whole sex." Tocqueville is considered the greatest writer on America. He saw things differently. He saw that women were happy in their "sphere" when he visited America in the 19th century. And modern research proves that the most injustice to women occurs in non-patriarchal marriages.

Stanton spends a lot of time focusing on Deborah, the Old Testament Judge but the exception should not make the rule. Stanton states:

> The antagonism which the Christian church has built up between the male and the female must entirely vanish. Together they will slay the enemies—ignorance, superstition and cruelty. United in every enterprise, they will win; like Deborah and

> Barak, they will clear the highways and restore peace and prosperity to their people. Like Deborah, woman will forever be the inspired leader, if she will have the courage to assert and maintain her power. Her aspirations must keep pace with the demands of our civilization. "New times teach new duties."
>
> God never discriminates; it is man who has made the laws and compelled woman to obey him. The Old Testament and the New are books written by men; the coming Bible will be the result of the efforts of both, and contain the wisdom of both sexes, their combined spiritual experience. Together they will unfold the mysteries of life, and heaven will be here on earth when love and justice reign supreme.

Feminists today look at America and see that there is less "antagonism" between men and women than there was in Stanton's day. I wonder what Stanton would have done if she knew the result of her crusade would get women out of the home and into the police department. Feminists see America as half full and anti-feminists see it as half empty. Women now have Stanton's "new duties" as soldiers and some are coming home in body bags and some without legs and arms. God does discriminate. He does make laws. Feminist comrade marriages like Bill and Hillary Clinton have will never "unfold the mysteries of life" and bring anyone "love and justice." Stanton is Cain who cannot see through the imperfections of Abel. Former members who denounce Sun Myung Moon have thrown the baby out with the bathwater too. Those who mocked, beat, jailed, tortured and killed Jesus were ignorant that they were supposed to follow him. Human history often favors Satan. God's messengers are usually rejected. But Satan will not rule forever. Someday we will all be united in what Stanton calls "the coming Bible." That Bible is written in the speeches of Sun Myung Moon. It is the Completed Testament. And Father speaks strongly against the ideas of women like Stanton who rebel like Eve against the Messiah and those who have written God's revelations. The Completed Testament was written by a man. Not a man and a woman. Sun Myung Moon tried to teach and raise his first wife but she was possessed by feminist spirits and rebelled against him. True Mother is the epitome of the traditional, biblical wife.

Stanton writes that her values are "liberal principles" and "progressive thought" that "demand in regard to all matters pertaining to the absolute freedom of women." The Second Coming of Christ, the man Sun Myung Moon, has made it crystal clear that liberalism is Satan's ideology and he is for the traditional family that gives absolute freedom. Freedom comes with the responsibility to live by God's universal values. The number one core value of God is for men to protect women. Adam did not protect his wife but the Third Adam, Sun Myung Moon, has protected his wife. Every move she makes is guided by him. She is a happily married woman like so many women are who understand that they are made to live in submission to their husbands and focus their lives on being his helper.

Stanton's book, like all feminist books, are full of lies. Traditionalist books are filled with life giving truth. Stanton worked very hard to achieve her victory. I thank God that there are more and more great men and women and more books being published that expose the lies of women like Stanton and offer hope for true happiness instead of the false happiness the feminists peddle.

CATHERINE BOOTH IS A BAD ROLE MODEL

An important part of the feminist agenda is to get women to hold position of authority over men such as being ministers in the church. Stanton writes: "He allows her in church, as well as state, but a subordinate position, claiming apostolic authority for her exclusion from the ministry." The UTS should lead the way against women's ordination. They should teach against women who push for women in ministry over men such as Catherine Booth, the wife of the founder of the Salvation Army in the nineteenth century who was a pioneer feminist. She prayed about whether she should go against tradition and speak publicly and felt that God told her it was good. The

problem is that she heard low spirit world instead of high spirit world. We have to balance prayer with deep mediation where we examine our conscience to see what our gut tell us is true or false. And we need to study the effects of our actions and see if the fruit of what we and others do is healthy or rotten. The fruit of women dominating men has been the creation of a world that is rotten to the core. Everything around us is a disaster. And yet feminists persist in thinking the solution to the breakdown of the family and statistics of pain increasing every year is more feminism. We need the opposite. We need a revolution in thinking. The only solution to our massive problems is the end of the evil ideology of feminism and everyone accepting the new religion of the *Divine Principle*. In the *Divine Principle* we need to teach that the proper subject and object relationship between men and women is patriarchy and submission instead of some egalitarian, horizontal co-leadership relationship. Catherine Booth's daughter Evangeline went on to become a general in the Salvation Army and take leadership of the organization. Currently as I write there is a woman general who holds the highest position of leadership. Any religion that teaches matriarchy instead of patriarchy is not of God. If you want to donate to the good works of a religious organization then give to one that does not allow women in their church to be like Catherine Booth who is the worst kind of role model.

PATRIARCHY DENOUNCED IN THE 1950s

My wife's grandmother taught high school home economics in the 1950s in Iowa. The textbook she used was titled *Experiences in Homemaking*. It was written by two women public school teachers. It was published in 1954. The book begins by denouncing the traditional patriarchal family and uplifting the egalitarian family. Remember, this was well before the sexual revolution of the 1960s. This shows that feminism was taught in the 1950s. They write:

> **FAMILY PATTERNS**
>
> Family life changes from time to time, just as modes of travel or means of communication change. In the early days of this country the family was almost self-sufficient. Nearly all the goods and services which the family needed were produced in the home or on the farm and each member was required to do his part according to his age and ability. The father was the head of the household. His word was law and he exercised a strong control over all the members of the family, even over the grown sons and daughters until they married and made homes of their own. The father administered the family finances, was the final authority in the discipline of the children, and made all the important decisions. The mother assumed the work of the home and the rearing of the children and her authority was restricted to the family circle and was subject to approval by the man of the house. Under the law she was considered a minor. Women were protected and respected, but they had no voice in the government and little more in their own homes. Most of the early colonists had begun their lives under a monarch and their family life followed the pattern of the government they had known. This is known as a patriarchal family, and the head of the family is called the patriarch.
>
> In "Glamorous Dolly Madison" by Alice C. Desmond it is shown that Dolly was brought up in this kind of home. Her father, John Payne, without consulting his wife or any other member of the family, sold their prosperous plantation home and removed his family and slaves to a remote, gloomy plantation where the soil was too poor and rocky to produce good crops. On returning from the Revolution, again without consulting any member of his family, he again acted in a way which greatly affected his wife and children. He decided to free his fifty slaves, which represented most of his fortune, and. he then moved his family to Philadelphia, although there was no work for him in that city by which he could support his wife and eight children.

He carried this same highhanded treatment into his relations with his children. He gave them no opportunity to make decisions for themselves. For instance, when his sons wanted to go with him to fight in the Revolution, he told them that they must stay at home and look after the crops, even though the poor soil would produce nothing. He made no effort to understand Dolly's love of color and beauty but disciplined her so severely for her worldliness that she became afraid of him. So strong was his power over her that to satisfy him she married John Todd, whom she did not love.

Although many of John Payne's decisions were obviously unwise, like most of the men of his time he continued to make all the decisions for his family. Of course, children brought up under such a system as this had little opportunity to make decisions for themselves. They were therefore poorly prepared for adult life in a democracy, where each individual must constantly decide for himself matters of the greatest importance to his happiness and welfare. Today many families follow a more democratic way of living. The home is considered a co-operative enterprise in which each parent has equal authority. The children are encouraged to make such decisions as their experience has prepared them to make wisely. Thoughtful parents today realize that freedom is the essence of democracy and they deliberately prepare their children to become wholesome influences in their community and nation. Learning to make decisions is a part of this training. To become a good citizen, one must be able to make intelligent decisions and choices. Children and young people learn to make wise decisions on important questions through the experience they gain in making countless less important choices. Life in a democratic home in which training in reaching wise decisions is carried on is the best preparation for living in a democratic society.

If you read Anna P. Rose's *Room for One More*, you will have a good picture of a democratic family. The children were encouraged to make their own decisions and to make choices that would help each other. When the orphan boy, Joe, asked if he could stay with the Roses permanently, Mrs. Rose replied that he quarreled so much with the other children that she wasn't sure they would want him in their home. Joe and the children had a conference, as a result of which the children decided that he should stay.

On another occasion, when the children thought their mother had spanked Jimmy John when he wasn't at fault, she agreed that she might have been wrong and put the decision up to Jimmy John himself. He maintained that his mother was right and that he deserved the spanking. The final decision in this case was made by him. Children brought up in the Rose home were given opportunities to make decisions, although they were guided and directed by the mother and father, whom they acknowledged as their final authority. Mrs. Rose states clearly in her book that whenever she felt a child was incapable of making a wise decision, she did not hesitate to make the decision and see that it was lived up to. Sometimes the family discussed their problems and tried to find solutions together; sometimes the children helped each other in smoothing out difficulties; at other times the children were allowed to make decisions for themselves. Children brought up in this way learn throughout childhood to live in a democracy, for such a home is a democracy in miniature.

Freedom and Responsibility

It is sometimes difficult for a boy or girl to grasp the full meaning of the term "freedom." He is inclined to assume that since a democratic society is based on the rights of the individual, he is the only person for whom freedom exists. Eventually

he realizes, however, that everyone is surrounded by other individuals, each of whom is a member of a democracy and each of whom is therefore entitled to freedom; he can then understand that his own freedom to do as he pleases is limited. Anyone can do as he pleases only as long as he does not interfere with the rights of others.

The results of one person's decisions must not destroy someone else's freedom. Moreover, each individual must be willing to take the consequences of his decisions and actions, and to accept the responsibilities that accompany the power to make decisions.

Power always brings added responsibilities. In our society, the law holds you accountable for your actions when you reach the age of active citizenship. In family and school life you are expected to take responsibility for your actions long before you reach the age when you can vote.

All of these ideas having to do with freedom and democracy are being worked out in your family life all the time. For example, Alice had been invited to a party and she wanted a new dress for the occasion. She had already spent her clothing allowance for the season and had borrowed from her younger sister to buy several additional things. In spite of this, Alice insisted that she should be given money for a new dress. She tried to persuade her mother to give her the money, regardless of the fact that it would mean that her mother would be unable to have a much needed new hat. The only way in which Alice can have what she wants will be to deprive some other member of the family of his or her share of the budget. The democratic decision for Alice to make is to do without the new dress. In a democratic home Alice would be expected to arrive at this decision herself, while in a patriarchal home her father would tell her she could not have the dress. So it is not only the decision that must be made in regard to Alice and the new dress, but it is also the way in which the decision is made that is important to the family.

In the Brown family there is just one automobile. Henry, the only son of the family, is a member of the debating society at school. It is understood that Henry has the privilege of driving the car to school on those evenings when the society meets. On other nights, the use of the car belongs to his mother and father. At the time of one of the recent meetings of the club, Mrs. Brown needed the car in order to call on a sick friend. She explained to Henry that she was sorry it seemed necessary for her to use the car at a time when he was entitled to take it, and she left the final decision to Henry. At first he was disturbed because he had already invited several members of the club to go with him and it would be inconvenient for them to go home on the bus or streetcar. Nevertheless Henry at once told his mother that he was willing to give up his turn to use the car, and after making several telephone calls, Henry found that George Allen, one of the group, could use his family car.

The example given above is typical of the democratic manner in which the Brown family worked out their problems. When possible, each one was allowed to make his own decisions. The parents neither took all the responsibility nor did all the sacrificing. The young people learned through experience that with freedom to choose comes the responsibility to make a wise choice.

To show that you understand:

1. In what ways does a democratic pattern of family life differ from the patriarchal?
2. Give some incidents from *Room for One More* to show how the democratic pattern of family life was practiced by the Rose family.

The above quote from a 1950s textbook for high school students shows that anti-patriarchy indoctrination was well on its way. For over 50 years since then the egalitarian feminists have won a total victory. Their views are now mainstream. I know a Unificationist sister who got her PhD and teaches university classes on sociology of marriage. The college textbook she uses is *Sociology of Marriage and the Family: Gender, Love, and Property* by Scott Coltrane and Randall Collins. It is a terrible book full of feminist indoctrination against the traditional family. This is another example of how so many Unificationists have been digested by our sick culture. It is wrong to train girls and women to be leaders over men in the home and in society which is what colleges do. It is dangerous for girls and women to sit objectively in front of feminist professors and think they will not get indoctrinated with the Satanic idea of egalitarianism. That road leads to the unprincipled world of women being president of colleges and president of nations. This road to hell ends with an American woman general in charge of the main prison in Iraq which produced the greatest scandal in the history of the war.

WOMEN WHO MAKE THE WORLD WORSE

Feminism is a totally destructive ideology that has no good in it and has done no good just as cancer has never helped anyone. Feminism is ideological cancer. It is an ideology of death. Stanton and the early feminists made the world worse off just as today's feminists do. One person wrote, "In *Women Who Make the World Worse*, *National Review*'s Kate O'Beirne takes on America's leading feminists: Hillary Clinton, Gloria Steinem, Eleanor Smeal, Maureen Dowd, Kate Michelman, Ruth Bader Ginsburg, and even *Sex and the City*'s Carrie Bradshaw. She opposes their propagandistic Leftist emotionalism and self-important grandstanding with irrefutable evidence that the feminist movement — including some of those very women — has hurt women far more than it has helped them over the last forty years. *Women Who Make the World Worse* shows how feminism has devastated American society, fracturing families, making American schools and workplaces into battlefields to advance feminist causes, exalting working women among mothers and consigning millions of children to a soulless upbringing by day-care center employees. Through it all, O'Beirne shows that feminists have poisoned American public discourse about gender issues with politically charged claptrap about how a hostile patriarchy makes women its helpless victims."

Another name for feminism is the women's liberation movement. It is Satan's idea of liberty. It is a movement to liberate women from the home. Another name for patriarchy is traditionalism. There is a right and wrong, good and evil division between these two ideologies. Either you believe God's design is for men to lead or you believe that women can lead too. Either you believe that men are to be the sole providers or you believe that women can too. Either you believe that men protect women or you believe that women can protect men. I believe God is for the traditional family and Satan is for the feminist family. If you believe that a woman can interchange with a man and be the head of the house then you are a feminist. If you are a woman who believes that a woman can lead men in the church, business, and government then you are a rebellious Eve. If you are a man who believes that it is all right for a woman to be a police officer and good that girls attend military academies like West Point then you are a wimp like Adam was in the Garden of Eden.

John Piper began an article titled "Co-ed Combat and Cultural Cowardice" saying (www.cbmw.org 11-2-2007):

> If I were the last man on the planet to think so, I would want the honor of saying no woman should go before me into combat to defend my country. A man who endorses women in combat is not pro-woman; he's a wimp. He should be ashamed. For most of history, in most cultures, he would have been utterly scorned as a

coward to promote such an idea. Part of the meaning of manhood as God created us is the sense of responsibility for the safety and welfare of our women.

Feminism is Satan's ultimate ideology. It has become the ruling ideology of America today. Patriarchy is the greatest of all core values. The Fall of Man is about the destruction of godly patriarchy—the reversal of dominion. Adam was weak and failed to lead Eve. God has worked to send a godly patriarch to restore Adam's failure and lead us to the ideal world.

The values I write about are absolute values. There are no exceptions. If we allow for exceptions then we are contradictory. This confuses people and a confused mind does nothing. If you believe that one person in the world can live eternally being homosexual then you are not absolute and therefore on the side of Evil. If you believe that a person can have pre-marital sex once in their life then you are on the side of Satan. If you believe that one person in the universe can smoke a cigarette then you are no longer absolute and therefore on the dark side. If you believe that there is one woman who can lead men then you are not absolute anymore. We have to decide what is right and wrong. Let's write down what is of God and what is of Satan. The ten values I write of are absolute values that are universal for every person for eternity. Feminism is 100% evil because it teaches women they should leave the home and compete with men. Feminism is a virus. It has become a plague. You can't be a little bit feminist anymore than you can be a little bit pregnant. There is no gray, no middle ground, no third or fourth way in these values. Either men lead 100% of the time or they don't. If you believe in women leading men 1% of the time you are on the side of the devil. We have to decide what values we teach our children so they can lead a happy life. The ideology of feminism is as deadly as poison. Would you feed your children poison? There is no debate about how much poison. The commandment in the Garden of Eden was absolute and disobeying God's will brings unhappiness. Feminism's crusade to destroy the traditional family has brought nothing but unhappiness in a lowered state of living.

There are no exceptions to who the Messiah is. Korean will be the universal language. The *Divine Principle* is the ultimate theology. We know that there are those who would say we are making sweeping, insensitive, simplistic, broad-brush generalizations when we should be complex, complicated and open to variety and diversity. Unificationists are not oversimplifying and ignoring complexities when we say that every person will eventually accept the teachings of Sun Myung Moon. There are physical laws such as gravity that everyone respects. The same goes for spiritual law. The values in this book are core spiritual laws of human relationships. We are free to violate them, but just as we are free to violate the law of gravity and walk off a ten-story building, we will experience dire consequences for our actions.

CAIN AND ABEL

In the *Divine Principle* we learn in the Parallels of History that there has been a constant Cain and Abel division. In these Last Days that division is very pronounced. Matt. 31-33 says, "When the Son of Man comes in his glory, and all the angels with him, he will sit on his throne in heavenly glory. All the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate the people one from another as a shepherd divides the sheep from the goats. He will place the sheep on his right and the goats on his left." It is interesting that the Liberals are called the Left and the Conservatives are called the Right. The sheep are capitalist/traditionalists and the goats are the socialist/feminists.

There are books by former members of the Unification Movement that do not understand that no group is perfect. They have thrown the baby out with the bathwater. Feminists have seen some bad patriarchs but they too have thrown the baby out with the bathwater.

America has sown feminism and it has reaped tragedy. America is in crisis. It is sick and confused. The Messiah has come as a doctor to cure us of our ignorance of what a true man is and

what a true woman is. He comes with the truth and the truth is painful to hear. Father often says America is confused about men and women relationships and this affects their children destructively:

> Who is the subject, man or woman? Woman may claim to be the subject but man can come and grab your hair and lift you up with one hand. If you are in the subject position, do you think you should be easily moved in that way, or more steady, like a center? I ask American women this question. You have to be steady. Because of misunderstanding concerning this, society here in America is all confused now. You have to make a plan always with your husband together. You should not draw up a plan by yourself and give it to your husband as the plan he should follow. That kind of woman is an American woman. That is the wrong attitude. When your children watch what you do to your husband, without knowing, your children will come to resemble you. When girls get married they follow their husbands, not their mothers. That is where the family level separation begins. However, people in general in this society do not realize that. Without knowing this reality, American people live their lives giving this bad influence to their children. The branches and the leaves must belong to the major trunk and root. But the small branches and leaves try to act as if they were the trunk and root. That is the wrong way. If the leaves and branches of a tree attempt to subjugate the entire tree, do you imagine that tree would survive? It would eventually die. That is natural.
>
> Whenever there is confusion in the relationship between subject and object, always the consequences are destructive. Who holds the seed of life, woman or man? (Man.) Therefore who should follow whom? (Woman should follow man.) But because of the Fall, nowadays everywhere we see man following woman. It is a wrong way. What about Unificationists? In terms of seduction of people, is it easier to seduce women or men? (Women.) That means woman is not in the position of root, but rather a branch role. Father has to correct these wrong concepts and misunderstandings for American people. That is why Father teaches this way and people label Father as a chauvinist. But that is not true. When divorce occurs in America, who takes more money, woman or man? Usually woman. But Father says this should be reversed. If this were to become the constitution or law then there would be far less divorce. Do you agree? (Yes.) Do you agree that we have to somehow come up with that kind of law? (Yes.) Why do you say so? Because if we do not do this, then the next generation and all of our descendants will eventually pay the consequence. (7-23-95)

A Blessed sister is called to follow her husband where God leads him. She adapts to his lifestyle and country without complaint. Once she marries she adapts with her whole heart to where her husband takes her. She should teach her daughters to do the same. Father teaches, "Today, when we ask a woman who is about to get married why she gets married, she will answer that she does so in order to be loved. This needs to be corrected. Rather, she should say that she gets married so she can love the father and mother and brothers and sisters of her husband, so that she can love her husband's whole clan and even the country to which they belong. When she does that, she will, in a decade's time, be raised up to occupy the position of the mother of that household, the position as grandmother of a palace—certainly more than a mere daughter-in-law. But if she demands love, her troubles will never cease: she will be pushed to the corner and the back room and eventually be chased out the gate."

A fundamental qualification for a man to hold leadership in the world is that he has built a model, exemplary, and big family. If a man has not accomplished creating a magnificent marriage and excellent children in a traditional family where he is a good provider and his wife is a good

nurturer, he should not hold any high position of leadership. First Timothy 3:4-6 says, "He must manage his own household well, keeping his children submissive and respectful in every way; for if a man does not know how to manage his own household, how can he care for God's church?"

PATRIARCHY IN THE CHURCH

The Mormons are growing by leaps and bounds because they are absolute on not having women ministers because they say the Bible says it is wrong. This is extremely politically incorrect. There are many denominations of Christianity that take great offense to the idea that women cannot be ministers. But the Mormons are breaking records in growth while many liberal churches that believe in the commonly held feminist view that it is good for women to be pastors are declining.

We should side with those churches that fight for patriarchy such as the Catholic, Southern Baptist and Mormon churches that are being unjustly attacked as being dominators of women. Our seminary should join in the battle with conservative seminaries against the liberal seminaries that teach the satanic feminist ideology that women can be ministers who have authority over men. *Recovering Biblical Manhood and Womanhood* by John Piper and Wayne Grudem is a great book that explains why it is wrong for women to be ministers. One reviewer said it "offers the most complete and extensive refutation of the egalitarian position."

The book is printed by an organization called *The Council on Biblical Manhood and Womanhood*. They have a website at www.cbmw.org where you can read the entire book *Recovering Biblical Manhood and Womanhood: A Response to Evangelical Feminism* for free. They have many excellent books and articles that refute Christian feminists and explain why women should not be in the ministry. They call themselves Complementarians who fight against the ideology of Egalitarians. They have a journal titled *Journal for Biblical Manhood and Womanhood*. I encourage you to visit their website (they also have a website www.gender-news.com) and spend time reading their excellent words of truth about the traditional family. One person at their web site says they "take profoundly different positions in the debate over gender roles in the home and church" from the egalitarians. They review the latest books and movies on the traditional, biblical family. One man wrote a review of a movie titled, "Patriarchy at the Multiplex" saying:

> After having seen the film *Cinderella Man*, I now know why it is such a lackluster draw at the box office. It is the antithesis of the typical sports movie, and it portrays a culture most of the movie-going world cannot imagine.
>
> Most sports films anchor the plot to the glory of the individual (think *Rocky*) or to the glory of the team (think *Hoosiers*). *Cinderella Man*, however, pictures a boxer who fights for his wife and children. Indeed, the most powerful line of the film is when the protagonist is asked by a reporter why now he is winning in the ring when previously he could win for "neither love nor money." Russell Crowe's character replies that now he knows what he is fighting for: "milk." This comes on the heels of scenes in which the mother pours water into the milk jug to try to feed the family's small children against the ravages of Depression-era poverty.
>
> This, along with a scene in which Crowe's character gives his helping of meat to his hungry daughter right before he is to go to a fight, struck me as deeply meaningful. They also indicate precisely why the film is so, well, odd to most moviegoers. It is patriarchal in the most biblical sense of the word.
>
> In this film, there is no wise-cracking nine year-old boy with a heart of gold to correct the bumbling parents. There is no cherubic four year-old girl who alone knows that the real meaning of life is within. Instead, there is a dad who understands that it is up to him to provide for his wife and his children. And there is a wife and children who love him for it.
>
> That is servanthood. But it is also headship. It is patriarchy. We don't remember

it, and that's a shame.

There was an article titled "We Need More Faithful Husbands — Not 'Passive Nice Guys'" by R. Albert Mohler, Jr. who writes a review of the book *Manly Dominion* by Mark Chanski saying:

> The constant imbibing of feminism, mixing together with man's native sinfulness, has resulted in an epidemic of passive men in modern marriages. Men have permitted themselves to be emasculated into a company of wimp eunuchs, who believe it should be their goal to strive toward being passive nice guys in their homes. We've been told, and actually now believe, that "authority" is a naughty word, that male headship is abusive, and that aggressive leadership is rude. Thus, husbands have abdicated the driver's seat and taken a back seat in their marriages.
>
> Adam has become the poster-boy for today's fashionably easy-going husband. Instead of assertively standing at the forefront of his marriage, talking nose to nose with the crafty serpent, he's content to sit back and let Eve do the talking. And when Eve gave her husband the fruit, instead of standing up like a man and boldly refusing to transgress God's Word, he passively caved into the unprincipled and misguided desires of his wife (cf. Genesis 3:1-6). As a result, Adam cursed his family.
>
> This sad Genesis portrait epitomizes most modern marriages. And it's our fault, men! We've got to reject modern thinking and take up biblical thinking. Without apology, the Scriptures teach that the man is to be the leader in his marriage and in his home. Husbanding is a crucial endeavor requiring manly dominion.

There is an intense battle of minds between those who believe in the traditional family and those who believe in feminist marriages. I pray that the Unification Movement will side with those like those at The Council on Biblical Manhood and Womanhood and that our websites will join them in the war of words against those who believe in equalitarian marriages. Christianity is divided between two doctrines: those that believe in patriarchy in the home and the church and those that do not. When people look us up on the Web let's be on the side of Abel in the cultural war we are in like their Web site: www.cbmw.org. Let's make sure people read at our web sites what a true family really is.

ORDER IN THINGS

Father says, "There is an order in things. What is it? Father and Mother is the order, not Mother and Father. Elder brother and the younger brother." (December 15, 2002 Hoon Dok Hwe) Father says, "What kind of husband do you women want? Do you want the kind of man who just listens to you and follows everything you say? Not necessarily. The husband should be stern sometimes, standing strong like a pillar. You may not always like him that way, but in the long run you will trust him better." ("Our Basic Attitude" March 13, 1983)

NATURAL HEAVNELY ORDER

Sun Myung Moon brings order to this chaos we live in. He says, "There is a clear order in the world. A natural heavenly order is coming. Because we have True Parents, we can unify the world through True Love and bring the heavenly order. We can move away from the history and tradition of the false parents and develop the correct tradition" (3-19-05). Father is absolutely consistent in saying men lead women. His words and actions show he is for patriarchy. The numbers of women leaders in the history of the Unification Movement is so miniscule next to the numbers of men it is not worth noticing. Many of those women were single or barren or widowed. Any rational, clear thinking person who reads the thousands of speeches of Father will notice that he constantly teaches that men are subject and vertical and women are object and followers. It is wrong for anyone to read into Father's speeches and his actions that he is contradictory and speaks with a forked tongue on men and women relationships by saying that women are subject and men

are object. The bottom line is that Mother was the model, biblical, old-fashioned wife who did not lead, provide or protect her family. Father is the ultimate patriarch and teaches the same as the Bible. He is absolutely anti-feminist and anti-communist. Anyone who tries to twist Father's words to condone the feminist agenda against the traditional, biblical family is a false teacher who no one should listen to.

At the Mormon Web sites lds.org and mormon.org they have links on the top of their welcome page to their basic beliefs. There is a link titled "Building a Strong Family: Examples and ideas to help you solve problems and develop a strong family." They have a short statement of their beliefs titled "The Family: A Proclamation to the World" which has these words about men being the head of the house: "By divine design, fathers are to preside over their families in love and righteousness and are responsible to provide the necessities of life and protection for their families. Mothers are primarily responsible for the nurture of their children."

At a Mormon website N. Eldon Tanner says these wise words in his speech "The Role of Womanhood":

> It is of great concern to all who understand this glorious concept that Satan and his cohorts are using scientific arguments and nefarious propaganda to lure women away from their primary responsibilities as wives, mothers, and homemakers. We hear so much about emancipation, independence, sexual liberation, birth control, abortion, and other insidious propaganda belittling the role of motherhood, all of which is Satan's way of destroying woman, the home, and the family the basic unit of society.
>
> Marriage is ordained of God, and we must do everything we can to strengthen the ties that bind, to strengthen our homes, and to prepare ourselves by exemplary living to teach our children the ways of God, which is the only way for them to find happiness here and eternal life hereafter.
>
> As we enumerate the many important responsibilities a woman has in connection with her duties as a wife, a mother, a homemaker, a sister, a sweetheart, or a good neighbor, it should be evident that these challenging responsibilities can satisfy her need to express her talents, her interests, her creativity, dedication, energy, and skill which so many seek to satisfy outside the home. It is impossible to estimate the lasting influence for good a woman can have in any of these roles. Let me remind us all of her primary responsibilities.
>
> **Women Co-partners with God**
> First of all, as I mentioned before, she is a copartner with God in bringing his spirit children into the world. What a glorious concept! No greater honor could be given. With this honor comes the tremendous responsibility of loving and caring for those children so they might learn their duty as citizens and what they must do to return to their Heavenly Father. They must be taught to understand the gospel of Jesus Christ and to accept and live his teachings. As they understand the purpose of life, why they are here and where they are going, they will have a reason for choosing the right and avoiding the temptations and buffetings of Satan, who is so very real and determined to destroy them.

> A mother ... must realize that every word she speaks, every act, every response, her attitude, even her appearance and manner of dress affect the lives of her children and the whole family. It is while the child is in the home that he gains from his mother the attitudes, hopes, and beliefs that will determine the kind of life he will live, and the contribution he will make to society.
>
> We also believe that women should involve themselves in community affairs and in the auxiliary organizations of the Church, but always remember that home and children come first and must not be neglected. Children must be made to feel that mother loves them and is keenly interested in their welfare and everything they do. This cannot be turned over to someone else. Many experiments have been made and studies carried out which prove beyond doubt that a child who enjoys mother's love and care progresses in every way much more rapidly than one who is left in institutions or with others where mother's love is not available or expressed.

At their official Web site: www.LDS.org the Mormons boldly explain they believe in patriarchy. They have excerpts from one of their books titled *Family Guidebook*. They write, "A father is the head or patriarch of the family (see Ephesians 5:23). As the priesthood leader in his family, he presides over the family and is responsible to teach, bless, and provide the necessities of life for the family. He leads his family in preparing to return to the presence of our Heavenly Father. His wife is his most important companion, partner, and counselor. Husband and wife should counsel together on all matters that affect the family and home."

The Mormons write nothing about women leading outside the home. There has been a woman Mormon state Governor and Mormon U.S. Senator. There is no logic in this. How can they say that God ordains men to lead in the home and church but in every other area of life women can have authority over men?

PATRIARCHY IS ABOUT MEN SUBMITTING TO AUTHORITY EVEN MORE THAN WOMEN

In 2015 Sun Jin and her husband performed a false blessing ceremony. She stood on the wrong side of her husband just as Mother now sits on the wrong side. This is feminist male bashing. They reject Father's teachings: "As you know from the Bible, woman was created from Adam's rib. That means woman was copied from man, so to speak. Many American women try to control their husbands and sons, but that is not the vertical way. The husband or father represents the vertical connection. The elder son represents the right side, and the mother's place is the left side. That means she cannot control the vertical and she cannot control the elder son. These are not my words; this is the original Principle viewpoint. You American women need to know this point." (4-1-89) Men are the final decision makers in the family. The wife's submissive position is symbolized by her always standing, sitting and walking to the left of her husband. They have equal value but different positions and roles that complement each other. Father says, "There is a common understanding in Asia that the woman stands on the left hand side of her husband" (6-5-97).

Women don't always have to be to the left of their husbands but they should in some cases. Mother was always to the left of Father in formal occasions. The only rare exceptions were are at some public events where Father is seated next to the podium and Mother has to sit on his right side. Father says, "Mother never stands on my right side, always on my left" (5-1-81). "If man is on the right side, woman becomes the left side in order to form a horizontal relationship with the universe. If man is the subject, then woman becomes the object in order to form a vertical, upper and lower relationship with God. Therefore, marriage is not for the sake of just man or just

woman. We have to get married in order to follow the heavenly law. This is why man and woman have different aspects. They are born that way in order to match with the heavenly law." (12-19-90)

A woman has only one leader to stand to the left of—her husband. A man has many leaders he has to stand to the left of. Just as a wife is to walk on her husband's left to show respect for his position, a man is supposed to walk on the left of his superior. When George Washington was a boy he was influenced by a little book of maxims titled, "Rules of Civility and Decent Behavior in Company and Conversation." One of the rules says, "In walking ... place yourself on the left of him whom you desire to honor." Father explains that his male translators are to stand to his left. Father said in a speech ("Father's Nation is My Nation" September 2, 1990): "Father is the subject and the subject has to stand on the right. The object, the translator, should stand on the left side."

Patriarchy works for men as well as women. Men have to follow and submit to more authorities than women do. For example, every 18 year old man is required to sign up for the draft and submit to the authority of the President of the United States who in his capacity as Commander-in-Chief of the military can force all men to go to war to defend the nation from attack. In World War II and in other wars many thousands of men were drafted and forced to defend America. Many thousands were injured and many thousands of young men died. Women do not have to register for the draft. This is why Phyllis Schlafly fought and was successful in keeping the Equal Rights Amendment from being added to the US Constitution in the 1970s. She did not want women to be drafted and then have to fight in hand-to-hand combat. Sadly, America made it legal in 2015. Feminist activists are working on getting women to be drafted because of their false understanding of equality. Sadly, young people at FFWPU have unprincipled role models in Sun Jin and her husband. I pray they will watch an orderly couple in Hyung Jin and Yeonah and jump ship.

Feminists disparage the traditional, biblical family by saying patriarchy is a conspiracy of cruel, Hitler-like, control-freak, misogynistic, sexist, hateful, fundamentalist, selfish male supremacist chauvinist pigs who find pleasure in being heartless tyrants who get sadistic delight in lording it over women by being disrespectful and suppressing female individuality and preventing them from reaching their full potential. The lie of feminism is their portrayal of patriarchy as men who want to be iron-fisted, inflexible, narrow-minded, oppressive, cruel, vicious, violent, crude, ruthless dictators that lock women into the rigid role of being mindless sex object slaves who are only good at cooking for their insensitive kings and being breeder baby-making machines that are always severely, extremely, and unjustly limited to only be "just" housewives who are barefoot and pregnant doormats. God has given common sense boundaries for us to live in. He is not interested in boxing us in or fencing us in. Within the divine order for men and women in the traditional family where the man is the breadwinner and the woman is the homemaker we can find ultimate creativity, fun, romance, fulfillment and joy. The term "women's liberation" is a misnomer. Satan's idea of freedom in feminism results in bondage.

In his book *Soft Patriarchs, New Men: How Christianity Shapes Fathers and Husbands* Bradford Wilcox shows that conservative Christian men who consciously live by biblical, patriarchal traditional values have the most loving and happiest families in America. He is a distinguished sociologist of religion who has written a powerful argument against the feminist lie that says men who lead their families by the core value of patriarchy in the Bible are mean-spirited and violent. One article about him titled "Affectionate Patriarchs" says, "In the popular imagination, conservative evangelical fathers are power-abusing authoritarians. A new study says otherwise." "Wilcox has challenged stereotypes about evangelical family life." The beginning of the article says (www.christianitytoday.com/ct/2004/august/26.44.html?start=2):

> You quote feminist sociologists Julia McQuillan and Myra Marx Ferree as saying that evangelicalism is "pushing men toward authoritarian and stereotypical forms of

masculinity and attempting to renew patriarchal relations." How does your work challenge their conclusions?

McQuillan and Ferree—and countless other academics—need to cast aside their prejudices about religious conservatives and evangelicals in particular. Compared to the average American family man, evangelical Protestant men who are married with children and attend church regularly spend more time with their children and their spouses. They also are more affectionate with their children and their spouses. They also have the lowest rates of domestic violence of any group in the United States.

Journalists such as Steve and Cokie Roberts and Christian feminists such as James and Phyllis Alsdurf have argued that patriarchal religion leads to domestic violence. My findings directly contradict their claims.

Domestic violence is an important problem in our society, but we should not confuse the matter by blaming conservative religion. The roots of domestic violence would seem to lie elsewhere.

Now, it is true that evangelical fathers take a stricter approach to discipline than most other fathers. For instance, they spank their children more than other fathers do. But their disciplinary approach is balanced by their involved and affectionate approach to fathering. In my view, this neotraditional style of fathering can in no way be called "authoritarian or stereotypical." Indeed, I describe it as innovative in my book.

Why do many scholars have prejudices against evangelical men?

When most scholars and journalists look at evangelicalism and family life, all they can think about is evangelical gender-role traditionalism. They fixate on the fact that a majority of evangelicals believe that husbands should be the heads of their households, and that husbands should also be the primary (but not necessarily sole) breadwinners.

What they fail to see is that evangelicals also embrace "familism." Familism is the idea that the family is one of the paramount institutions in our society and that persons should take seriously their responsibilities to their spouse, children, and parents. Familism is associated, for instance, with strong support for the marital vow and, hence, with a high level of disapproval for divorce. Evangelicals register the highest levels of familism of any major religious group in the United States, with the possible exception of Mormons.

Wilcox says, "My personal observations led me to believe that they were strict but affectionate parents." He shows that patriarchal dads are the best dads in America. Charles Colson in his review of the book says, "He came to a conclusion that doesn't surprise us: that is, conservative Protestant men come closest to the ideal of what a husband and father should be. Contrary to popular stereotypes, these men are more affectionate and more 'engaged emotionally' with their wives and children. Their faith directly inspires their view of their role in the family."

One reviewer, Michael Cromartie, wrote it is an "assumption-busting book." In an interview with Bradford Wilcox he writes (eppc.org/publications/soft-patriarchs):

Cromartie: You say, "Married men with children who are affiliated with conservative Protestant churches are in some ways traditional family patriarchs … but theirs is a very soft patriarchy. These family men are consistently the most active and emotionally engaged group of fathers and the most emotionally engaged group of husbands in this entire study." How does conservative Protestantism domesticate men and make them more responsive to the aspirations and needs of their wives and children?

Wilcox: It domesticates men by making them more attentive to the ideals and

aspirations of their wives and children, and it does this by providing men with a clear message of familial responsibility, a clear sense of their own status in the family, and equally important, a male ethos where they can encounter other men who are committed to family life.
Cromartie: You also observe that, "wives of active evangelical Protestant family men report the highest levels of happiness with love and affection." Is that your finding, or is that from the University of Chicago study on sex in America?
Wilcox: That's my finding. The University of Chicago study on sex found that evangelical women reported the highest levels of satisfaction with their sexual lives. You have to recognize that, particularly for women, sexual satisfaction is related to a sense of security and commitment. So, you do the math. Women who are married to men who are strongly committed to the institution of marriage are, on average, probably going to experience better sexual happiness because they experience a level of security and comfort that may be missing in more progressive marriages where there's a shadow of insecurity hanging over the marriage.

Another review of the book says:

> Mainline Protestant men, he contends, are "new men" who take a more egalitarian approach to the division of household labor than their conservative peers and a more involved approach to parenting than men with no religious affiliation. Evangelical Protestant men, meanwhile, are "soft patriarchs"—not as authoritarian as some would expect, and given to being more emotional and dedicated to their wives and children than both their mainline and secular counterparts.
>
> Thus, *Soft Patriarchs, New Men* largely disconfirms the charges made by leading feminists, journalists, and family scholars that evangelicalism is a force for reaction in American family life. Although evangelical family men are stricter fathers, and less inclined to do housework, they devote more time and emotional energy to their families than the average American family man. Wilcox therefore concludes that religion—including evangelical Protestantism—domesticates men in ways that

Wilcox wrote in article titled "Children at Risk" (February 2004 - ww.firstthings.com/article/2004/02/children-at-risk):

> In the 1950s, almost 80 percent of children spent their entire lives in an intact family, whereas in the 1990s only about 50 percent of children spent their entire childhood with their biological mother and father. Children who grow up outside an intact family are more than twice as likely to experience serious psychological or social problems as their peers who grow up in intact families.
>
> In 1992, Irving Kristol wrote that the "left today completely dominates the education establishment, the entertainment establishment, the universities, the media. One of these days the tide will turn." Indeed, there are indications that just such a turn of the intellectual tide has finally begun at some of our nation's top universities.

Wilcox writes in his book *Soft Patriarchs*:

> Commenting on a 1998 Southern Baptist statement advocating male headship in marriage, journalists Cokie Roberts and Steve Roberts argued that this way of thinking: "can clearly lead to abuse, both physical and emotional." Patricia Ireland, then-president of the National Organization of Women, accused Promise Keepers of being promoters of a "feel-good form of male supremacy" intent on keeping women in the "back seat." John Gottman, a psychologist and a leading scholar of the

> family, warns that conservative Protestantism is pushing fathers away from a warm, expressive style of parenting: "As the religious right gains strength in the United States, there is also a movement of some fathers toward authoritarian parenting patterns of discipline." Likewise, sociologists Julia McQuillan and Myra Marx Ferree contend that the "religious right" is "pushing men toward authoritarian and stereotypical forms of masculinity and attempting to renew patriarchal family relations." These journalists, feminists and scholars infer that the conservative Protestant subculture's gender traditionalism, and especially its emphasis on male authority in the family, translates into an authoritarian style characterized by low levels of positive emotion work and familial involvement along with high levels of corporal punishment and domestic violence.

He goes on to prove that critics of biblical, patriarchal marriages are dead wrong:

> Critics of conservative Protestant parenting have charged that this subculture's approach is authoritarian. In a provocatively titled 1991 presidential address to the Society for the Scientific Study of Religion, "Religion and Child Abuse: Perfect Together," Donald Capps argued that conservative Protestant parenting is abusive and authoritarian. He said that children are "betrayed, exploited, and abused in the name of religion"—a religion that draws on notions of divine sovereignty and human sinfulness to describe corporal punishment as a valuable form of parental discipline. Gottman and other leading scholars of the family, such as historian Philip Greven and sociologist Murray Straus, have made similar charges. But these charges have been made without careful recourse to empirical data. ...
>
> Overall, then, these findings paint a striking picture. Churchgoing conservative Protestant family men are soft patriarchs. Contrary to assertions of feminists, many family scholars, and public critics, these men cannot be fairly described as "abusive" and "authoritarian" family men wedded to "stereotypical forms of masculinity." They outpace mainline Protestant and unaffiliated family men in their emotional and practical dedication to their children and wives and in their commitment to familism, and they are the least likely to physically abuse their wives.

Wilcox ends his book by saying that his research shows that the "new man" of the 20th century is "less committed to their marriages" than patriarchal men. He predicts that the future of non-patriarchal marriages "will be less stable than those of neotraditional fathers. They will be attracted to the conventional forms of religious life found in mainline Protestant, liberal Catholic, and Reform Jewish congregations." He predicts that more and more men will adopt patriarchy:

> Motivated by a desire to both transmit their faith to the next generation and protect their children from a society they see as degraded and degrading, these soft patriarchs will combine involvement and affection with strict discipline and vigilant oversight. They will also have a strong commitment to marriage and will be unusually attentive to the emotional and familial ideals and aspirations of their wives. However, they will do less household labor than men committed to the new fatherhood, partly because they wish to signal their commitment to gender differences. Neotraditional couples will also have the lowest levels of divorce, both because of their moral traditionalism and because of the emotional investment in their wives and children.
>
> These soft patriarchs will be found in conservative Protestant churches, traditional Catholic parishes, Mormon temples, and Orthodox synagogues. They will abide by an absolutist vision of the family that they believe to be divinely

> ordained and that attempts to articulate universal moral principles that govern family life in all times and places. These soft patriarchs will be ever in search of new strategies in their effort to defend traditional ends. Their "battle against modernity" in the service of "the truth and authority of an ancient faith" will undoubtedly look increasingly quixotic to many as the twenty-first century proceeds, but as far as they are concerned, "the future is in God's hands."

Colin and Nancy Campbell teach the value of patriarchy. True Patriarchs believe in commitment. She writes at her website aboverubies.org:

> **STRENGTHEN YOUR COMMITMENT TO YOUR MARRIAGE.**
>
> Marriage is not a contract. It is a covenant, made before God and witnesses. Marriage is not a fuzzy feeling of love. It is a commitment. It is a commitment to build a godly marriage that is a picture to the world of Christ and His bride. It is a commitment to build a family and raise a godly seed. It won't always be easy. It's hard work. But we are committed to the task. We take no notice of difficulties. We are not daunted by problems. We keep on with the task, because we are committed to a vision of building a godly generation. We are not concerned only with the present, but with the future, and the generations to come. We have no thought of quitting because we know that it would affect not only our children now, but also the generations to follow. We keep pressing on toward the goal, pushing through the mountains of difficulties, as we trust in our God.

RETHINKING DOMESTIC VIOLENCE

Donald Dutton in his book *Rethinking Domestic Violence* writes that the commonly held belief is that in domestic violence "all perpetrators are male and all victims female" but he has reviewed all the research and found that "the evidence is overwhelmingly against this view." In the Last Days almost everything we think is true is false. Professor Dutton shows that the truth is that "In Canada and the United States, women use violence in intimate relationships to the same extent as men, for the same reasons, and with largely the same results." He proves that the "Data that have been troubling for feminists" is that "women are as violent as males." Dutton shows that the data proves women are as pathological and violent equal to and in some studies greater than men.

He writes that the "notion" that violence by women is "thought to be self-defensive, or the consequences trivial" is false. "The data strongly suggest otherwise, despite a research agenda that can only be described as attempted 'dogma preservation.'" He exposes the faulty research of feminist researchers saying, "Because this finding contradicts feminist theory, it has been suppressed, unreported, reinterpreted, or denied. The female violence rates have been portrayed as self-defensive violence, less serious violence, or a result of reporting differences. In fact they equal or exceed male rates." An article in the *National Post* (August 2, 1999) states, "Women are just as violent to their spouses as men, and they are almost three times more likely to initiate violence in a relationship, according to a new Canadian study." Dr Malcolm George, a lecturer in neuroscience at London University in a paper in the *Journal of Men's Studies* argues that "men have been abused by their wives since Elizabethan times. He uses examples such as the actor John Wayne, beaten by his wife Conchita Martinez, and Humphrey Bogart battered by his wife Mayo Methot, as well as Abraham Lincoln whose wife Mary who broke his nose with a lump of wood."

DIVINE ORDER FOR THE FAMILY

Larry Christenson in *The Christian Family* says, "Women can contribute much as teachers of

children and of other women. They can pray publicly, but they are not to formulate doctrine or to set themselves up as leaders over men in the church. How much evil has come upon home and church because women have lost the protective shield of a husband's authority. The whole teaching is dismissed as a foolish vaunting of the 'male ego,' a Neanderthal vestige which our enlightened age has happily outgrown. The Bible, however, has no desire to exalt any ego, male or female. The Divine Order set forth for the family serves the elemental purpose of protection, spiritual protection. A husband's authority and a wife's submissiveness to that authority, is a shield of protection against Satan's devices. Satan knows this, and that is why he uses every wile to undermine and break down God's pattern of Divine Order for the family."

A true patriarch concentrates on serving with true love and not being served. A true wife would do the same. We are called to give and then forget we gave and then give again. Father says, "The pattern of true love is not that of being served; it is to serve others. When God himself initially created his object of love, He invested every ounce of His energy—100 percent of His being. This established the pattern of true love. In other words, the tradition of true love as total investment was established by God. At that point, true love became the center of the universe. And even almighty God chooses to be obedient to it." (4-11-00)

True Patriarchs are sensitive in human relationships. For example, a patriarch would feel uncomfortable about talking to a woman for an extended period of time because he knows that she follows another man. A good patriarch would be extremely reluctant to criticize women or be harsh with women because they are connected to other men such as her father, brothers, or husband. Even within families it is best that a father did not focus on his daughter-in-law but focus on his son or respect his son-in-law when he wants to deal with his daughter. If a man has a problem with a woman it is best for him to talk to her leader such as her husband and if she does not have a husband then her father. There is too much familiarity between men and women in our disorderly society. Women freely criticize men and men freely talk to women. Even Internet chat rooms should be segregated. It was better in the days before Satan introduced his evil concept of dating that a man would respect a woman's father and go through a chaperoned courtship process to get to know her. Fathers now send their daughters in hostile territory all alone to work at jobs and go off to college. This is one reason we have so much chaos, pain and suffering between men and women. Father says, "Many American parents today are pushing their children to go out and have lots of dates, worrying about them if they don't. They are actually almost pushing their children toward a promiscuous life. On the other hand, here in the Unification Church I always direct people not to date, not to touch, not to have premarital sex. This teaching is completely opposite from the secular standard. Which do you think is the more Heavenly and which the more satanic?" (11-21-82). Men and women should not be alone together. We need to end the practice of dating and go back to the practice of courtship. Fathers need to be involved in finding a mate for their children and other young people who look to them for guidance. Arranged marriages are of God. Satan has introduced the idea of dating so he can destroy patriarchy.

There has always been a small percentage of families that are into violence. Those men and women who are dangerous to their mate and their children should be removed from the home until he or she changes. Blessed couples that deal with severe marital problems and dysfunctions may have to go through a period of separation but they should never even think about divorce. Don't even say the word. They should never abandon the ship of marriage because of rough weather. In time everyone will be healed. Father tells us to never divorce: "If you consider getting a divorce, you should feel shocked and faint. In the future, the word 'divorce' will be erased from the dictionary" (1-9-83). There is an interesting book titled *The Sociopath Next Door* by Martha Stout. She says, "1 in 25 ordinary Americans secretly has no conscience and can do anything without feeling guilty."

KEY TO THE SALVATION OF THE WHOLE WORLD

Sun Myung Moon says Unificationists are different from the "outside world": "After Father blesses couples, their families take a different way from the outside world. They can never divorce! Satan is most fearful about this point. It means that the world of the Unification Church and Satan are 180 degrees different. We are consummating the true individual, family, tribal, national and worldwide system. We have the truth and hold the key to the salvation of the whole world. You must be aware of this at all times. Without the Unification Church, the world cannot return to God's original point. The only way is through the Unification Church rising up!" (5-12-91)

Weldon Hardenbrook, in *Missing from Action*, writes: "It is imperative that American men understand that Jesus attempted not to destroy or to replace the patriarchal function of men, but to explain its full meaning. His teachings on virginity, equality of the sexes, loving one's enemies, the value of human life, humility, good works, and the absolute sacredness of the marriage bond served to complete the proper patriarchal image of pre-Christian Israel. Jesus came not to abolish patriarchy, but to reveal it. In all honesty, apart from Christ, men will not be adequate fathers. It is only in Him that the fullness of the Father is disclosed.

"Being the kind of fathers men are supposed to be means that they must return to patriarchy. Therefore, men should reject the historically inaccurate assertion, so naively believed by Americans of both sexes, that patriarchal families were oppressive families in which women and children suffered at the cruel hands of despotic men. An objective look at the period in American history when patriarchal families were the norm tells just the opposite story. It plainly demonstrates that spouses and children felt far less oppressed and far more content than their modern counterparts.

"This anti-patriarchal propaganda is part of the Victorian myth that disgraces not only the pre-Revolutionary colonial family, but the entire Judeo-Christian tradition, whose influence provided family order for the entire world. 'Alternative families' are not adequate replacements for traditional families. They are Band-Aids on cancer. Patriarchy is the only workable blueprint for the family. The American home has no chance for survival without it."

Anne Bradstreet was one of the first women to come to America with the Puritans in 1630. She wrote a famous poem of love titled, "To My Dear and Loving Husband" and passionate letters of love to her husband when he traveled on business. She married Simon Bradstreet when she was 16 years old and had eight children. She read literature and history in English and in four other languages: Greek, Latin, French, and Hebrew. There are many biographies written in the last 400 years that show patriarchal marriages to be very happy and romantic such as those of the men on Mt. Rushmore. A million tourists go to Mt. Rushmore every year. It is a wonderful symbol of patriarchy.

BIBLE IS PATRIARCHAL TO CORE

At a Web site we read. "Hopelessly patriarchal. That's how feminists have oft-described the Bible. And they're right. It is patriarchal at the core and through and through. Like love and marriage, the Christian Bible and patriarchy go together: any attempt to dismiss the rule of men must begin by dismissing the Rule of God, i.e., the Holy Bible."

The author goes on to say, "One of the amusing manifestations of antipatriarchalism is the trend in which women hyphenate their last names at marriage. 'I'll have no man defining me!' they whine. But in retaining their original last names, they are only reminded that it was their fathers who so named their mothers. And should a feminist seek to get around this by adopting her mother's maiden name, she will have succeeded only in pushing the manifest patriarchy back one generation, to her maternal grandfather."

At a commencement address at our Unification Theological Seminary titled "Create Your Ideal Family to Save the World" Father said that we are to "...create ideal families for the building of God's kingdom on earth. [Blessed couples] have a very important mission of restoring this world. In order to restore this world, you must create your own blessed family which is an example to other families in this world" (6-26-94). The example we are supposed to give this world is the traditional family, not the feminist family. Father says, "The mission of the Unification Church is to reorganize the families of the world" (6-15-86). What model do we use to organize families? It should be the traditional, patriarchal family model. Mrs. Margaret Nadauld is a former president of the women's association for the Mormon Church. She gave a speech at the World Congress of Families saying that, "We must teach and model traditional family values." The traditional family, she said, is "sacred." It is the "ideal" and cannot be "improved on."

FASCINATING WOMANHOOD

Mrs. Andelin's book, *Fascinating Womanhood*, is popular in the Unification Movement. In the Unification Movement's newspaper, *Unification News*, a sister wrote an article called "1st WFWP Leadership Seminar Held in Moscow." She says they ended the seminar with a "presentation on Helen Andelin's wonderful book *Fascinating Womanhood*. The author, a mother of eight children, based on her rich life experience, gives excellent guidance to women on how to build a happy family based on rekindling or strengthening their mutual love with their husband. It gives so many ways in which we can develop our skills as wives and mothers." Do young Unificationists read books on marriage at school, on their own or for marriage seminars? How many parents of young Unificationists have read good books on marriage and teach them to their children? In *Boy Meets Girl*, a great book on courtship, Harris writes, "Men don't know what it means to be a man, so we lazily do what is easiest. Women don't know what it means to be a woman, so they end up acting like men. Relating to the opposite sex can be confusing when you don't know what you're opposite of. … For many people, the idea that a creator assigns roles in offensive. They don't want any person, any religion, or any God telling them how to express their manhood or womanhood. They reject the idea of God-given roles and do whatever they can to blur gender distinctions."

Sid Galloway is a biblical counselor who like many Christian counselors does not charge a fee. He has an audio CD titled "Should Biblical Counselors Charge Fees?" that you can order at www.soundword.com. I don't think any Unificationist should charge money for marriage counseling. At his website, Mr. Galloway writes that men are required to lead their homes spiritually. Sadly, many women take religious leadership in the home:

> So often Christian men only passively serve as figure-heads. Christian women have become the functional leaders of their homes and churches, even many of those who say they believe in God's delegated order of rank. Christian children on average are becoming more and more disrespectful, disobedient, disordered, and thus dysfunctionally dishonoring to their parents, their church, and the LORD.
>
> So it's no wonder that the world is increasingly rejecting biblical Christianity and turning instead to pantheistic socialism, when they see that Christian families are just as dysfunctional as all the rest. Folks, the most powerful influence we can have on the world is not through political activism, but by manifesting the holy (unique) lives and relationships that point upward toward God the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. Legal, political action is good, but please beware of man's natural tendency to let what's "good" and easier swallow up God's best!

Weldon Hardenbrook writes in *Missing from Action* that the Victorians in the 19th century increasingly rejected patriarchy and elevated motherhood over fatherhood. They: "openly declared motherhood more important than, not equal with, fatherhood. Feminist historian Nancy Cott notes, 'Ministers fervently reiterated their consensus that mothers were more important than fathers in

forming the 'tastes, sentiments, and habits of children,' and more effective in instructing them. Their emphasis departed from (and undermined) the patriarchal family ideal in which the mother, while entrusted with the physical care of her children, left their religious, moral, and intellectual guidance to her husband.'

"The preoccupation with Mother has never left us. We are reminded of it in the most subtle ways. Consider, for example, the twentieth-century phenomenon that regularly takes place upon the television screen when the camera zooms in and selects the hero from a college or professional sporting event. Does he ever wave his hand and say, 'Hi, Dad?' No way! In forty years, I've never seen it happen. The American jock always says, 'Hi, Mom!'

"When men gave women control of children in once male-ruled spheres, they set the stage for even greater feminine dominance in society at large. The Victorian woman, whom men enthroned as the moral savior of the home, school, and church, expanded her domain to the poor, the disabled, and the helpless members of society. It had always been a mark of manhood to care for the poor, the orphan, the widow, and the stranger. But male involvement in these areas all but disappeared in the Victorian era.

"Since all men were suspected of being innately morally inferior to women, women felt justified in their assault on American masculinity. Women have continued to dominate the social conscience movements to this day.

"Several generations of American boys have grown up under a feminized culture, and each generation has been more confused about male identity than its predecessor. I have traced the historical development of the withdrawal of American men from moral leadership in the homes, schools, and churches of our land. There is not an American male today who has escaped the feminizing influence of Victorianism.

"The single most devastating factor contributing to the feminizing of American males is the desertion of families by their fathers. Writer Edwin Cole insightfully notes that "the absentee father is the curse of our day." It is a national plague that is reshaping the very foundations of U.S. society."

David Blankenhorn has written a book about this called *Fatherless America*. What is also devastating is that those men who are in their homes have wimped out and given spiritual leadership in the home to their wives. There is a famous painting by Norman Rockwell that shows a man wearing pajamas slouched over under the Sunday paper sheepishly guilty as Mom and the kids are all dressed up and walking through the living room on the way out to go to church. The tragedy is not only that the man is not leading his family spiritually but that if he were to go to church he would be castrated by feminist ministers who give feminist sermons.

In the January 6th issue of *Christianity Today*, its editor, Carl F. H. Henry, interviewed Elton Trueblood, a Quaker philosopher. To the question: "What would you single out as the reigning tenets of our time?" Trueblood answered: "The first of these is the extreme belief that all our problems are new. I would call this, really, the disease of contemporaneity. . . . associated with it is a really terrible conceit . . . the notion that we are living in such a fresh time and that wisdom has `come with us' whereas nobody ever had it before — this I find to be an absolutely intolerable conceit." Father speaks strongly against Liberals who want to destroy "good American traditions." What traditions? I believe he is talking about the traditional, patriarchal, biblical family. He says American women have "deviated" from "proper rules" and want to dominate men "by going above the man." He is speaking of the hierarchy of men and women in patriarchy:

> So we have order, rule, relationship, and ideal. After that, we enjoy freedom, peace, and happiness. If someone uses freedom to break or destroy order or rules, then his freedom will be immediately curtailed.
>
> What order, rules and relationship America lost is the result of America following the communist way of thinking and acting. In other words, the liberal

> mentality. The liberals have destroyed a lot of good American traditions. So first, what? Order. Then rule, then relationship, then ideal.
>
> Americans have deviated quite a lot from the proper rules. That is because they don't know. They just don't know any better. So American women may think they are conquering men by going above the man, but it doesn't work that way. They are actually going against the original order. This is not something I am making light of. It is a serious problem. (1-12-92)

I think the best way for us to get help from each other is to live closely as trinities where everyone knows each other well and can help each other on a daily basis. If a woman feels her husband is being immature or mean-spirited then she has two other women who she can talk to in person everyday about it. If a man is out of line then the other two men are there to counsel and help the man. Just living as trinities in a close community may eliminate a lot of selfishness and immaturity anyway. There are many types of personalities and leadership styles. A man who lives in a trinity situation may see and learn how other men handle their wives and do better with his wife. One man may have the style of leadership where he tells his wife, "When I want your opinion, I'll ask for it." Another man in the trinity may be the opposite and frustrate his wife because he is too indecisive and asks his wife constantly for her opinion. By living in close communities we could help each other not only physically like the Amish do when they come together for barn raisings, but we could help each other to grow and mature spiritually and emotionally.

How many followers of Sun Myung Moon live isolated lives? If a husband is struggling wouldn't it be great if he had a trusted friend to confide in and help him that lived next door? If a wife feels her needs are not being fulfilled wouldn't it be wonderful if she had a friend who can give her principled advice that lived next door? Those who do not have close friends will have to find comfort in God and be grateful for whatever blessings they do have. Men and women in the Unification Movement need to know the deep meaning of patriarchy and how to build happy marriages and teach others and mentor others on how they can achieve harmonious marriages. The bottom line with patriarchy is that men lead and women follow even though the men are not perfect. True Father is perfect and his first wife felt unloved. We are living in a time of war. This is a very difficult time.

A married couple are two people who become one. But they are always two people and logic says that one has controlling interest. The man is the final decision maker. They are 50/50 in value but there is a 51/49 relationship in power. Many marriages have power struggles. Father is very clear that men should not be intimidated by women and it is women who are the cause of so much disunity in marriages. He speaks strongly about men being visionaries and their wives are their followers. It is difficult for women because they have a tendency to think in the immediate and practical, but they are made by God to be in a submissive position to their husband and can find the strength to follow their man wherever God may lead him. Women are made to be adaptive in marriage. Men should listen to their wives but when the man makes a final decision she should obey. I don't know how to sugarcoat the word "should." There are lots of "shoulds" in our lives.

The Bible in First Corinthians 13 teaches that love is patient. In emergency situations a leader may have to bark out orders and not have time for discussion but as much as possible in our everyday life men should strive to be patient with their wife and children. If they struggle with the direction he wants to go he should bend over backwards to help them understand his decision and be understanding of their concerns and desires. Even though he may feel what he wants is more principled and a better idea than his wife it may be best to postpone pushing his family to do as he wants until a later time. He should take into account their feelings and thoughts on all major decisions.

It is crucial that leaders are on the side of God. Father hates unions who arrogantly want to lead.

"One reason why a free, democratic nation like America struggles is because of the unions. ... Unions will eventually disappear" (1-13-01). Father says the owner of the business is the parent and the employees are the children. Satan is into mutiny. Father is into obedience.

A motif that runs through Sun Myung Moon's speeches is the idea of order. There are rules God made for families to live by. The following are excerpts from one speech that show how deeply Father feels about the vertical nature of patriarchy. The speech was given January 12, 1992 titled "New Nation and New Family":

> All creation is directed by a certain orderliness.
>
> There is no way of denying that everything in nature exists according to order and design. Then, the second point is that we have rules and regulations. Do we need those rules? Man has man's rules. When a man goes to the bathroom, he can stand up and pass water. A woman has to sit down. What if they did it the other way around? That wouldn't be according to the rules! Actually, it is unruly.
>
> This is a rule. If they go outside of the rule, will they find happiness or not? Will they look good? Those who say, "We don't need rules," raise your hands. Are we going to deny the rules of conduct? When we interact within the family, there are all different rules according to one's own position. There are brothers' rules, sisters' rules, mother's, father's, grandparents, husband and wife. There are all these different kinds of order and rules. Those who deny these rules are actually denying existence itself.
>
> Here within the Unification Church, centering on Father, we have a certain order. If someone goes beyond that order, it does not come to anything.
>
> Look at the tiny sparrows. Do they have relationships or not? Yes, they have proper relationships with each other. What about the world of insects. Would one small insect ever choose to go off and live by himself? Another thing a woman might say is, "I will live above men." Would that be right? The woman is always supposed to be in a lower position than man. The man is taller and the woman is shorter. Is that Father Moon's order or Father Moon's rule? That is the natural order of relationship, not someone's interpretation. Those who say, "I don't want to be bound by that kind of rule. I will live the way I choose, without any relationship." Can anyone say such a thing? Can anyone be happy that way?
>
> Through these examples, we can see the ideal. Intellectually, we have a good reason for this. Everybody wants the ideal, but that ideal cannot be attained without order. Without rules and order, there is no ideal. You cannot gain the ideal without relationship.
>
> Now it seems that many women want to become men. They say, "Why not? We can become bigger and more powerful and eventually we will be able to rule over men, the way they have been ruling over us." Some contemporary women have this kind of thinking. Those women are American women. I do not wish to undermine or ridicule American women, but this is a fact. No Korean women are espousing such ideals.
>
> When a man and woman dance together, what is their usual direction — do they dance around in a clockwise or counterclockwise direction? They move to the right side, in a clockwise direction, but why? It is because the man is leading.

These things are not just accidentally determined.

It applies to the smallest unit, which is the family, but also to the largest entity, the nation, world and cosmos.

We must restore the real ideal and the proper order and rules of relationship. Therefore, we definitely need a new nation and new family who abides by this.

Do we need the new order? Does the world need that? Without the new order, can the new world of peace ever come to exist? What about without the new rule, can world peace come? No. Without the new type of relationship can the world find peace? No. Without all these, no new ideal will be born.

Which do you prefer — to have lots of brothers and sisters or only a few? It is best to have lots. Is this just my opinion, or is it true? We all want to be welcomed wherever we go, don't we? If we have brothers and sisters around the world, then we will be welcomed around the world. If there is someone who is respected outside of his family, who is very successful, yet who is not loyal to his own parents, who does not exhibit filial piety, then that is not a good person. He is a good person outside, but once he comes home, he hits his wife. That is no good. First we must exhibit good conduct within our family, then we expand it to the larger level to the world. We must do very well within the family. The family is the place where we must exhibit the utmost courtesy and kindness. The family is the most important point. It is the beginning point. There is where we find the grandparents, parents, and children.

What is the first thing which is most important? It is order. In Korean the word, "oda" means, "You are coming now." And what is next? It is rules. Third, it is relationship. Fourth is natural law.

What order, rules and relationship America lost is the result of America following the communist way of thinking and acting. In other words, the liberal mentality. The liberals have destroyed a lot of good American traditions. So first, what? Order. Then rule, then relationship, then ideal.

The basic concept of Western civilization is the concept of the individual, whereas the Oriental concept is the concept of the whole. Therefore, the center point of Western civilization is very limited and it cannot stand. Only when we are centered on the whole can we find strength.

When you are making love, should the man be the one who clings to the wife, or should the wife cling to the husband? The wife should be the one who clings to the husband; that is proper order. In position, too, can the woman be in the upper position as much as the man? No, the man is in the upper position, while woman is in the lower position. Like a bowl, receptacle. If that bowl is upside down, everything spills out. So the couple who lives according to order and rule will give rise to good children. But the ones who do not care so much actually will have less chance of having a baby. Even if they have a baby, they will be more likely to have a problem child. Which we see now a lot in this society. Because people are going against original law.

Americans have deviated quite a lot from the proper rules. That is because they don't know. They just don't know any better. So American women may think

they are conquering men by going above the man, but it doesn't work that way. They are actually going against the original order. This is not something I am making light of. It is a serious problem.

VERTICAL CULTURE

The American and Western world absolutely needs the vertical culture, more than anything else. They need it fast. The first relationship is the father/son relationship, then the couples relationship. Never does the couples relationship come first. Then the second most important are the sibling relationships. Then comes the couples relationship. Americans have focused almost exclusively on the third, the couples relationship, casting out all the others, including children and parents and brothers and sisters. Is that a human beings' way of life? Can they be truly human if they live that way? Even the animals cannot live with such an attitude. They protect their race, their species. Therefore, human beings have fallen to a much lower standard than the animals.

So in the new family, we should have clear, clean-cut, proper order and rules, based on love.

First, order. Second, rules. Third, relationship. Fourth, ideal. Always remember these four requirements and apply them in every situation. Always respect the order of the society in which you find yourself.

When you are going out and working in the society, you must follow the American laws. But when they go back home to their family, they cannot follow American family law.

Bear in your mind. All things must be based on love — not money, not authority, not knowledge. The only thing that can truly move this world is love—so with love power, love knowledge, and love money, we can get everywhere.

AMERICAN WOMEN WANT TO BE IN UPPER POSITION

Sun Myung Moon says, "American women usually don't want to be in the lower position; they want to take the upper position and have power. They want to be in control. But biologically, God made women as a container. Therefore, in order to fulfill that function, you need to be in a low position." (12-1-82)

Those who write books and teach about marriage and family often use the word Egalitarian for those who are feminists and liberals and they use the word Complementarian for those who are traditionalists and conservative. The Egalitarians try to minimize the differences between the sexes because they are into interchanging men and women. Here is an example from a book *Woman Be Free* by a prominent Egalitarian, Patricia Gundry, in which she explains how she manifests her ideology of equality in her marriage:

Working It Out

How To Put Equal Marriage Into Practice

Dividing Work and Responsibilities

Set aside an hour some evening when you are both in a relatively relaxed and happy state. Then discuss divisions of work and responsibility. You can do it all verbally and remember it, or you might want to make notes to remind yourselves what you

decided to try.

First, list the broad areas of responsibility and work that you have in your home: car maintenance, cooking, shopping, yard work, childcare, cleaning, bill paying, etc. Then ask yourself: Who has the most competence and/or interest in each of these areas? Does this person want the job, or does he or she want to share it? One of you may be willing to take responsibility for seeing the job is done right but want help in doing the actual work. And if one has skill in an area and would like to train the other so a more equal workload is possible, that can be done too.

Decision-making
Dividing up work and responsibility according to competence and interest ensures that the person best fitted to do the job has the power to make sure it is done right. It also avoids all the little disagreements that would arise from having to agree on every small detail because: Minor decisions are made by the person whose area of work or responsibility the decision falls in. If the husband has responsibility for car care, he does not need to consult his wife about the kind of wax or gas he buys or when it is to be washed. She can make suggestions and raise objections during an evaluation session, or at any other time for that matter, but minor choices are his to decide. The same would hold true for any other area. This frees both partners from a lot of needless disagreements.

Gundry goes on to say, "Major decisions are reached together. You must genuinely be able to agree on major decisions. But what if you can't agree? Then you do nothing until you can agree. But what if you really can't agree? You wait until you can compromise, go another direction, or find a satisfactory solution for both of you. That is if the matter under consideration is neither an emergency nor a decision that affects one of you clearly more than the other and would pose hardship for that one if put off indefinitely.

"If the problem needing a major decision clearly puts one partner in a position of greater need, that partner ought to have the greater say if there is difficulty making the decision. Most disagreements profit by the 'wait until we can agree' method.

"When I talk to people with equalitarian marriage relationships or read what they have written, I find a recurring comment inserting itself. Living with another person who treats you as a whole, equal person has a liberating effect on what you are able to be as an individual, apart from the relationship."

This is bad advice. Patricia Gundry, like all feminists, thinks they have the truth that has made them free. Her book title has the word "free" in it. Satan is expert at making what is false sound true. Unificationists are not taken in by these lies. Just because she feels she is free doesn't mean she is. Just because she deeply thinks and feels the traditional family enslaves women doesn't mean it does. What she writes is as worthless as testimonies of those who say they have happy homosexual marriages. Liberals teach nonsense. They think they are so enlightened. Mrs. Gundry and the many feminist authors who are in her camp say their movement is one of liberty, a women's liberation movement. Mrs. Billy Graham has as one person wrote, "a dazzling advertisement for marriage." Ruth Graham said once, "I am a strong believer in women's lib, to this extent: I think women should be liberated from ... having to work for a living.... They need to be liberated ... so they can devote themselves to their homes." Either you believe Mrs. Gundry and her crowd or you believe Mrs. Graham and her friends. Let's look at some words of truth that truly free us from the ignorance of the Left.

Family Not Democratic

Dr. Lee Salk in his book *Familyhood* gives an example of a family he knew that tried to get away

from the vertical model of a family:

> A colleague of mine in the area of group dynamics believed absolutely that his family—which included his wife and two children should be run as a democracy, with each member having an equal say in family decisions. They carefully discussed everything, from where to go to dinner, to appropriate bedtimes for the children. They even voted. Invariably, the two children assumed one position, the parents another, which usually led to a great deal of further discussion and many painfully contorted compromises. The system, cumbersome as it was, worked after a fashion, until a third child came along. When this youngest family member first learned to say yes or no, his siblings immediately lobbied for his vote. The three children outvoted the two adults, and havoc reigned. The democracy collapsed.
>
> A family needs an authority figure (or two). It must be run in an autocratic way, but it must also be an autocracy with a soul and a heart and with respect for its constituents. As parents, we have all heard ourselves say on occasion, 'You'll do it because I'm your mother and I say you have to do it!' The occasional dictatorial outburst is only human and does no harm. But as a parental modus operandi, it not only doesn't work over the long haul, it doesn't instill and encourage the values children need.
>
> Someone has to be in charge and that someone should never be the child, although ideally she will feel her opinions have weight and count. Children feel important and respected when they participate in grown-up decisions.

Dennis and Barbara Rainey are prominent Complementarians and they write in an article titled "Male Leadership" what it is like practically to have a traditional marriage. To the question, "In your articles and on radio, you talk about male leadership in the home. But it's also clear that, when you and Barbara are making a decision, you have a lot of interaction with each other. So what happens when Dennis feels strongly one way and Barbara feels strongly another way?" They answer: Dennis: First, I think it is clear that the Bible teaches that the husband is responsible for the direction of his home, family, and marriage. And so he is what is called 'the head of the house.' To me, that means it is my responsibility to go prayerfully before God and with my wife to consider the circumstances and to make a decision. If we can't come to a consensus, it falls upon me to make a decision. And we prefer it that way—if you have a "roleless marriage" where there is no final authority, that creates a greater ambiguity." Barbara says, "And insecurity too. It seems to me they would be in a state of indecision. Dennis: In those marriages, it seems that the stronger personality would win regularly."

To the question—"Do you ever make a decision to go with Barbara's option rather than your own?" They answer, Dennis: "Absolutely. Any good leader knows that you need to gather all the facts and enlist those who may know the situation better than you before you make the decision. In many situations with the children, for example, Barbara will be far more versed and have much more insight into what is going on with the child emotionally and circumstantially. There have been numerous times when we have disagreed and I have asked her to go with me on decision. But there have been, I would guess, just as many where she has disagreed with me and I have changed my mind and gone with her." Barbara: "You've been real good about deferring to that woman's intuition in our relationship. There have been times when I just can't explain why I feel this is the right thing to do with a child. Unless you feel you have a strong case for another choice, you go with what I'm feeling. That validates me as a woman that my opinions are worth considering and you are going to listen to them. Dennis: I think we've developed a good amount of trust over the years as we have discussed so many decisions. We've learned that we need the other's input and advice. She will help me avoid problems, and vice versa. The one area where I typically have

not gone with Barbara's opinion over mine repeatedly is in the area of schedule. She has such a mother's heart in wanting to see our children develop their gifts, and it's easy for her to over commit them and herself. I've seen the toll that takes on her. On more than one occasion I've urged her not to head in certain directions because of the need to protect our home. I feel part of my responsibility is to spiritually, emotionally, and physically protect my family, not merely from evil but from over scheduling, from busyness, and from activity. A good shepherd doesn't lead any faster than the sheep can follow!"

Barbara says, "We went through a time when I was making a lot of decisions regarding the kids without Dennis because I knew how busy he was. I assumed I was saving him some grief, but as a result I was getting everyone over committed. I needed the protection that he offered when we make those decisions together. I'm glad to have him to help make decisions. And to tell me if I am wrong."

Patricia Gundry expresses the feminist ideology that men and women are not very different in her book *Woman Be Free*:

> There have been studies in recent years to determine if there are any differences between men and women aside from their sexual organs. There seem to be no specific differences that apply to all women or all men; but general differences appear in skeletal size, proportion of fatty tissue, and endurance levels. Men generally have larger muscles and more muscle strength, while women have more fatty tissue under the skin and greater endurance.
>
> Differences in intelligence have not been proved. While there is some evidence to indicate that men on the average excel in certain intellectual fields and women on the average excel in others, it is impossible to determine if even this is influenced by cultural factors. We cannot devise a test to measure emotional differences between men and women; emotional and mental reactions are culturally conditioned at such an early age that there are no subjects available who are unaffected by this conditioning.

She is wrong in trying to live like this and her advice is bad. There have been many scientific studies proving what is common sense, that men and women are different. There is more and more research on men/women differences and scientists are finding that there are innate and profound differences between men and women. Here are a few book titles that reflect this:

The Essential Difference: The Truth about the Male and Female Brain by Simon Baron-Cohen
Why Gender Matters: What Parents and Teachers Need to Know about the Emerging Science of Sex Differences by Leonard Sax
Sex on the Brain: The Biological Differences Between Men and Women by Deborah Blum
Male, Female: The Evolution of Human Sex Differences by David C. Geary
Brain Sex: The Real Difference Between Men and Women by Anne Moir
Why Men Don't Iron: the fascinating and unalterable differences between men and women by Anne Moir
Why Men Rule: A Theory of Male Dominance by Steven Goldberg
Taking Sex Differences Seriously by Steven E. Rhoads

ANDROGYNY

The common thinking of today is that men and women are not different. There is a push for androgyny. Dr. Alvin Poussaint in his Introduction to Bill Cosby's book *Fatherhood* says, "Men have been struggling with the unfamiliar demands and challenges of this new model of fatherhood. Many have modified their behaviors to some degree in order to adapt more comfortably to changing social and family patterns. In the process of this change, many fathers have seen new

possibilities for their own fulfillment by taking a greater part in child-rearing responsibilities. A new movement has been spawned that has been pushing American men and women closer to the acceptance of androgynous fatherhood men who take a significant share of nurturing responsibilities for children and the home, tasks that were previously assigned exclusively to women."

Advocates of androgyny think they are restoring "balance" to parenting roles but are in reality unbalancing the family. This confused doctor continues saying that men must "give up old-fashioned ideas about so-called manliness, 'who wears the pants in the family,' and what constitutes 'women's work' as opposed to 'men's work.'" Men, he says, "can be 'primary care givers' and can provide 'mother love.'" He goes on to praise "househusbands." All of this is sad especially since these lies are in a best seller by Cosby that influences many people.

The opposite view to traditional, Biblical values is the ideology of feminism that teaches that husband and wife are "equal." It is an ideology of androgyny or unisexism. Father often teaches how men and women are different. He says:

> In America today women claim that they are the subject. ... Is man or woman in the subject position? (Man.) Why is man the subject? Do all men have a concave or convex organ? (Convex.)
>
> People think that the founder of a religion who talks about concave and convex has no class. However, this is where the fundamental problem lies, and unless you understand about concave and convex, you cannot understand the harmony of the Kingdom of Heaven.
>
> What do the concave and convex organs represent? Man symbolizes heaven and woman symbolizes earth. Because a man symbolizes convex, he represents heaven and because a woman symbolizes concave, she represents the earth. When man and woman become one, heaven and earth are united. The day you become united with your spouse centering on true love, you will be able to establish the Four Position Foundation. Love is the center.
>
> Is man subject, or woman? (Man!) Are you sure? You men said yes, and you women said yes, too. ... Why is man subject? It is because man resembles God.
>
> Therefore, if God is the axis, the relationship between God and man is the relationship between top and bottom. Because man comes with love, man is the subject. Man comes to bring love and to sow the seed. Do you understand?
>
> Man is to be the plus center, and woman the minus center. This is the way of man and woman harmonizing. If we extend this model, we can see this phenomenon on the surface of the earth, in the mountains and the oceans. Which part of this diagram do you think should represent plus, the lower section or the upper section? [The diagram was a capital M directly above a capital W.] I ask in particular the American ladies here: who is in the position of subject, husband or wife? American women conceive of themselves as subject. Do you follow Father? (Yes; and Father is a man, and this teaches that) the wife is not supposed to walk in front of her husband. You are supposed to follow your husband's footsteps. It is natural that since usually you are smaller than your husband, your stride is shorter than his and in a normal circumstance you need to make greater effort to keep up with your husband. This simple concept is very important for American women, because the wrong concept here destroys the family, leading to a proliferation of problems. (1-1-98)

There is a saying, "A picture is worth a thousand words." When he gave a speech about the English letters M and W he drew a diagram on the blackboard with the M on top and the W underneath. They neatly fit each other. The photo of this is a dramatic example of his core teaching on patriarchy. He does not mention any exceptions to this rule.

Father lives by absolute values. His wife absolutely followed him for 52 years on earth. Father teaches by playing with the letters "M" and "W" saying, "M for men is like two peaks and W for women is like two valleys. The peaks must not go down to the valleys and vice versa. But no matter how you Americans think about this, you must follow this truth. Who doesn't like this?" When he says that the "peaks must not go down to the valleys" (11-12-85) he is saying that absolutely men and women never interchange. Father has used this play on the letters M and W several times over the years to make his point about the differences between men and women. In a speech Father gave to members on June 5, 1997 he talked about the letters M and W saying:

> Who is in the position of subject, husband or wife? (Husband) Especially you American women, answer which one is subject. You know clearly. (Men) Women. (Men) The meaning of 'woman' is warning to men. (Laughter) [Father writes on the board] This "M" represents man and "W" represents woman. When they are placed together they are inseparable. Together they create a whole human being. But on this diagram which one is up? (Man) How about here? Which side is plus, up or down? (Up) Even within the English alphabet the "M" is on the top and "W" on the bottom. But some American women claim that women should be subject.
>
> The concept and reality should become one. There should be no separation between them. Which is more precious, the visible or invisible world? (Invisible world) Based upon pragmatism there is no value in the unseen. In general America is enjoying material wealth. But because of this America is losing the concept of God. Therefore man is in the position of subject. If this is the formula, should the husband follow the wife or the wife follow the husband? (Woman should follow man) Who is in the position of subject? (Man) Is it easier to buy a woman or a man? (Woman) Father is showing you how women's eyes move following the diamond necklace, ring and earrings. But men don't care.
>
> Some American women might believe that Reverend Moon always puts women down. They might come and sit here and listen to Father's explanation and eventually change their attitude. They will come to realize that Father is not a woman basher, but rather he truly promotes women's values. Don't you think that will happen? (Yes) If there is fair competition in the Olympic Games, could a woman beat a man? (No) No matter how many competitions might exist within the Olympic Games, woman cannot win over man. Do you feel badly? (No) Even if you feel badly, there is no other choice. Because this is the truth. Even if we have an eating competition still women cannot eat more than men. Women usually eat one-third of what men eat. Usually is the husband taller than the wife? (Yes) If the wife is much taller than the husband that isn't good. If she is too tall maybe crows and pigeons will come and nest in her hair. She will look like a telephone pole.
>
> Before coming to America, Father heard that American women have guts and are brave. Therefore Father imagined that they must be taller than men. But when Father saw them he realized that they are smaller than men. Also in walking, a woman would have to take several steps to cover the distance a man does in one stride. If you have to cover several kilometers, man would probably have to take one hundred steps. Whereas a woman would have to take seven hundred steps. Who

> tires more easily? (Woman) Therefore who is pulling whom? (Wife is pulling on husband) You western women have guts. (Laughter) You answered clearly to Father which is very courageous. (Laughter)
>
> Those of you who are gathered here in front of Father today, show your hands who believe that women are in the position of subject. Especially you American women. Someone may twist reality and claim that Reverend Moon is brainwashing all the women.

This is just one of many examples of father teaching about patriarchy. When he says, "Some American women claim that women should be subject" he is criticizing those in the so-called women's liberation movement. They should be called the women's slavery movement. God is for liberty; Satan is for slavery.

SIMPLE CONCEPT

This "simple concept" is not so simple for our feminist culture where women want to lead men and many men say they are comfortable in following women. Feminism has caused a "proliferation of problems."

In the real world everyone has to submit. Even men have to submit to some patriarchs. Mary Pride says, "Many other human relationships require one to submit to a head. The employee has to submit to his boss (1 Peter 2:18). The child has to submit to his mother and father (Luke 2:51). The citizen has to submit to the governing authorities (Rom. 13:1, 1 Peter 2:13). Younger men in the church have to submit to the elders (1 Pet. 5:5). Wifely submission is not the only kind of submission. It means we recognize that the family is an authority structure, in which different members have different roles and responsibilities."

In a speech titled "Glorious True Family" Sun Myung Moon says:

> **Changeable**
> Who is in the position to be influenced by the environment more easily, the husband or wife? If there is a beautiful flower, women have a tendency to draw closer and to try to touch it, whereas men stand at a distance and try to figure it out, asking to whom it belongs, what is its name, or analyzing its beauty. So are men or women, husbands or wives, more changeable?
>
> Male or Female God?
>
> The American woman's concept, 'woman first,' is not so good. What do you want? Do you want to see God as a female God or male God? [Both.] Father is asking you to make a choice. [Male.] The reason is that man carries the seed of life. Is that true?
>
> Who is in the central position? Between man and woman, who is vertical, man or woman? [Man.] What about woman? [Horizontal.] When this vertical figure, man, and horizontal figure, woman, meet, that angle should be perpendicular. Only true love can establish eternal settlement when it comes to the vertical and horizontal relationship meeting in the center point. Who is bigger in terms of size between man and woman? [Man.] Because man is vertical, he is naturally supposed to be bigger than woman, so when woman sees her love partner, her husband, she goes and embraces him and swings around his neck. Making that 90 degree angle, how beautiful they are. (8-9-98)

Father constantly uses the analogy that men are bones and women are flesh. He emphasizes that

there is no interchanging:

> In terms of the human body, man is in the position of bone, and woman is in the position of flesh. You may argue about why man should be bone and woman flesh. Bone can exist without much water, but flesh is over 70 percent water. That is why woman's shape is concave, like a container receiving water. The shape of man's love organ is like a bone. That particular organ should be strong like a bone. Then you can make love and function really well. Suppose that particular organ is like regular flesh, then what will happen? Flesh mixed with bone is man's sexual organ. Flesh mixed with water is the woman's body.
>
> Therefore, I am the combination of bone that I received vertically from my father and flesh that I received horizontally from my mother. The combination of these two, vertical and horizontal, is myself. Which lasts longer, bone or flesh? The vertical being, the bone lasts longer. Who is the vertical figure? The husband. The wife is the horizontal figure. While woman turns around 360 degrees, man is in the center, not going around 360 degrees.
>
> Do you ladies want your husband to be feminine or masculine? A manlike man is unchangeable. A changeable man is like a woman. The woman's way is to change easily. I don't know, but you understand what I am talking about. Again, who is more changeable, man or woman? [Woman.]
>
> Then do you want to see your husband standing like a rock or pillar, not talking too much but having a stern appearance, or should your husband be more like a pet dog, moving around and around. [Like a pillar.]
>
> According to Father's teaching, in our family the wife should be like woman and the husband should be like man. That is the only way we can build ideal, glorious and true families. Between man and woman, who has bigger hips? Why? They are like a cushion for sitting a long time. That is woman's life. That is natural law. Man's hips are sharp, therefore he cannot sit a long time and goes out running around and working. How wonderful is woman's place. That is why woman is originally shaped such a way as a gift from God. Therefore if a woman goes out more than her husband, your family, also your nation, will be in crisis. (8-9-98)

BONES AND FLESH

Anyone who thinks Father can be read different ways is wrong. Father is absolutely clear. He is not some pioneer trying out things until he finds the truth. He has said the same thing his entire life. Men are subject and women are objects. He is the ultimate teacher. He says it in different ways so everyone can understand. One way he explains it is by using vivid language. He repeatedly tells American sisters that their husbands are "bones" and they are "flesh": "The reason man's bones are made stronger than woman is ... to earn money ... to support his wife and children." "Women have soft places, they want something very hard and strong. Men want something very soft" (10-3-2000). He says men are "over" women in a million different ways. Father is always using the word "order". He is even into ordering how clothes are put away. He says man's clothes are always (no interchanging) to be over the woman's: "When using a wardrobe, man is to use the right or upper side and woman the left or lower side. Woman shouldn't put her skirt or underwear on the man's upper clothes. The woman's clothes shouldn't be on the man's clothes." (*Blessing and Ideal Family Part 2*)

It is time to have prescribed places for clothes and for brothers to be respected and even as the Bible says, to be "revered" as patriarchs. Father is prescribing lots of things. He says, "In walking,

men are to step right foot first and women are to step left foot first. Men are to sit in the East and women are to sit in the West. There is always a certain order to anything the order of setting the table or the order of hanging clothes." "Man is to look down upon woman from above" (*Blessing and Ideal Family*).

MEN ARE KINGS

Men, he says, go out and women stay home. "This good cushion which woman has naturally, women should be able to embrace all the children and grandchildren and eventually present them to the husband and grandparents. So woman is in the queen's position to raise the children of your own family and tribe. Whereas the husband is in the king's position of the entire nation. That is why the husband is supposed to go out and to move more. Suppose Father just stayed in Korea for God's providence. Then you wouldn't have any chance to learn about the reality of the Kingdom of God. Instead, Father came out of Korea and came to America.

"So women must clearly know the identity of woman, and man should know clearly man's identity. And we should know the relationship between man and woman in our family. That is the only way we can build an ideal family centering on true love. Between man and woman, who cries more easily. [Woman.] Why? Because woman always faces four different directions, east, west, north and south, they keep crying. Why? Because of the marriage you have, you shed tears easily, your husband can comfort you and extend his sympathy over you. I will tell you a secret. When the wife makes a small mistake in your family, just shed tears in front of your husband, that is the superhighway through which you can guarantee your husband's forgiveness and love. Instead of shedding tears, they just keep shouting and lose that marriage privilege. So when the wife starts shedding tears, the husband feels, 'Oh, she must be missing my love.'" (8-9-98)

Aubrey Andelin in *Man of Steel and Velvet*, writes, "Advocates of the 'share alike' philosophy demonstrate an unusual lack of insight into human behavior as they ignore completely the serious social problems which arise from this blurring of the male and female roles. Countless children grow up in environments where the distinction of the sexes is so obscure that no clear-cut example exists for them to follow. Many homes lack definitive leadership, and the very differences that should be emphasized are purposely minimized as men act like men. This in turn can lead to underdevelopment of the child to his own sex and in some cases to homosexuality."

"…equality of the sexes leads to a blurring of roles, giving no distinct male or female image. Women are encouraged to desert their posts. The greatest harm comes to children as they are deprived of a mother's undivided interest. A mother who works outside the home by choice casts doubt in the minds of her children as to her love and interest in their welfare.

"Besides the harm that comes to children, there is a distinct harm to both the man and woman. With the emphasis on equality, the man does not fulfill his masculine role. He is robbed of this opportunity for personal development—those experiences that develop his masculinity. The woman is harmed in a different way. As she divides her life between two worlds, she takes on masculine attitudes and abilities and loses some of her femininity. Neither the man nor the woman develop to their full potential, nor does either experience real fulfillment."

Father said in a speech:

> The family is basically comprised of true love unique, eternal, unchanging love. There is an Oriental story about love and the different qualities of a man's and woman's love. A couple had a baby but the baby died; so the mother wept for many days, day in and day out. The father, however, didn't show his grief so much; he ate his meals and continued to function. The wife, however, could not even eat; she became angry at the man and said, "Are you made of stone? How can you not have

any emotion at such a time?" Then the husband, rather than saying anything, just vomited blood. He was suffering inside to such a degree, but on the outside he never showed it to anyone.

This story illustrates that women are not really more sensitive to love than men. What if both men and women expressed their feelings in the same way, with both of them weeping or laughing very strongly? That would not be so good for the stability of the family. God figured all these things out. Men and women are essentially the same, yet very different in expression; they are so different sometimes, they irritate each other. However, that is the way of harmony. Within love, these two different natures are bound to be harmonious.

On the horizontal plane, the man is in the plus position and the woman in the minus. Even though he is an individual, the man represents all other men in the world; the woman can appreciate all men through her husband. The same is true for the man. Therefore, a man and woman are not constantly competing with each other; instead, they only seek to make total oneness with each other and encompass the world with their love.

The man and woman together represent all mankind; within the family, all elements are represented. Women tend to be more realistic while men are more idealistic. Women usually want to keep their men close to them and do not normally like to have them far away. However, for the sake of his high ideals a man may decide to go away from his family for even a few years, but this is not because he doesn't love them. A woman can normally never do such a thing; only a man.

Only because of the striving nature of men has mankind achieved what it has so far. Men are made that way; they are designed to reach out for things which they cannot see with their eyes but can only imagine. A man naturally seeks after his dream, his ideal, while women are more concerned with the here and now rather than the future, intangible realm. Isn't this true? This is why we say that man is symbolized by heaven and woman by earth. (6-6-82)

Father gives these insights on the differences between men and women:

God must love woman more than man. Man is like God's body and woman is in the position of his object. Woman, who was created at the last moment as the utmost masterpiece, is in the position to receive more love from God and eventually she is to be a mother. Children in general also prefer their mothers.

Father thinks of something in the far distance and Mother thinks of things close at hand. Woman is the realist. Raising up children is a big job. When a woman is pregnant, she loses her taste for food, and suffers. Because she suffers, God acknowledges her. Why does God make a pregnant woman lose her appetite? If his wife doesn't lose her taste for food, the man will be indifferent even though she is pregnant. A woman also grabs God's attention more when she is pregnant.

Because women have to go through so many difficulties, such as the period of pregnancy and delivery, God gives deeper love to them. Why did God make it so difficult? If the process of bearing a child were easy, she wouldn't understand love. When she gives birth in suffering, she will cherish her baby and will be able to feel God's heart. In this respect, woman is created as God's object of love. In bearing a child, a woman gets to know parental love, husband's love and child's love. Woman

> is so precious because she, more than man, is connected to love.
>
> Father cannot compete with Mother in loving a child. Because the mother pours out power more than anyone else and suffers more than anyone else in bearing a child, she more than anyone else loves the child.
>
> In this respect, woman occupies the eminent and precious position in the realm of emotion. No matter how much the father loves his baby, he doesn't know love as much as the mother does. Therefore, women will go to the Kingdom of Heaven of heart. Understanding this, it is not too bad to be born as a woman. God is fair. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

To emphasize how different men and women are Father said once, "Man symbolizes heaven and woman symbolizes earth. They are to unite and form parallel lines." Men are different in that they need to lead. Not every man can lead nations. But every man can fulfill his masculine need for leadership by being the leader of his family. Father said "A man has to have authority." But he has to be a leader that goes out into the community and helps others, not be some martinet. Father says a man will hurt his family if he doesn't: "If the head of the household doesn't help others, the family will suffer."

"A woman has to be careful about her mouth. In the family, the problem is usually the woman. Women speak very quickly, like a motorcycle revving. So a woman must be careful with her mouth. Then how about men? A man has to have authority. He must be a person who has authority with which he can judge evil people." (10-25-78)

Robert Nisbet in *The Twilight of Authority* says, "Wherever two or more people associate, there is bound to be some form of hierarchy, no matter how variable, changing from one actor to the other, or how minor. Hierarchy is unavoidable in some degree. Our gravest problem at the present time, in many respects, is the disrepute into which this word, this unavoidable necessity, has fallen as the consequence of the generalized philosophy of equalitarianism.... We have seen institution after institution weakened or crippled in the social order as the result of arbitrary power wielded by one or other regulatory agency in the name of a vain and rapid equality. At the present time the ascendant moral philosophy in the West is that which...takes what is in effect leveling as the desired norm of justice. How welcome would be Edmund Burke's words today: 'Believe me, Sir, those who attempt to level never equalize....'"

Let me give a couple of examples from Christian books on marriage that speak on this principle that a man is president of his family. Father is just one person. He can't say and explain everything in every way so every person can understand. Other people can express God's viewpoint in a way that helps people understand what is true and what is false. In *You Can Be the Wife of a Happy Husband*, Mrs. Darien B. Cooper writes that the man is the president and the wife is the vice president and "each office carries with it heavy responsibilities and there is never any doubt who is the president. However, the president's success depends on the vice president's help in carrying out the policies. When new decisions have to be made, the president may consult the vice president for advice, but he assumes responsibility for the final decision."

"Once a policy is decided, they work together as a team to carry it out. The president may, if he chooses, delegate some of his authority to the vice president. When the president is gone, he can trust the vice president to carry on as if he himself were there. In this relationship, they share a oneness, good communication, emotional peace, and security, provided the vice president is not struggling to gain control of the organization!"

KINGS AND QUEENS

Father often calls men "kings" and women "queens." In *The Total Woman* Marabel Morgan says this to help women understand what that means: "Marriage has also been likened to a monarchy, where the husband is king, and his wife is queen. In a royal marriage, the king's decision is the final word, for his country and his queen alike. The queen is certainly not his slave, for she knows where her powers lie. She is queen. She, too, sits on a throne. She has the right, and in fact, the responsibility to express her feelings, but of course, she does so in a regal way. Though the king relies heavily on her judgment, if there is a difference of opinion, it is the king who makes the decision."

"Now hold on, I know just what you're thinking; remember, I've been through all of this, too. What if the king makes the wrong decision? Oh, that's a hard one, especially when you know you're right, and there are times when that is the case. The queen is still to follow him, forthwith."

Harold Voth was one of America's most distinguished psychoanalysts and research psychiatrists. He was senior psychiatrist at the Menninger Foundation. He was also a rear admiral in the Medical Corps and serves as a consultant to the Surgeon General of the U.S. Navy. He has written extensively in books and articles for both professional and popular journals. In one his books he writes, "In my entire career I have never had a woman patient, no matter how militant a feminist or disturbed, fail to spontaneously divulge her secret wish for a strong man in her life—father when she was a child and husband as an adult woman, even though on the surface she may claim the opposite."

"A woman who can live in harmony with a strong man will herself be a strong woman. These two will not clash or compete with each other. Rather they will divide up responsibilities, and live in harmony. I did not create or manufacture these patterns; I am merely reporting them. It is simply a fact that a family with a weak man suffers and children do not turn out well."

He writes that America has degenerated to the point where what was once deviant and sick behavior is now normal. He says, "Classically, women have been considered best equipped psychologically to be homemakers; now the 'househusband' is part of the social scene. A few years ago it would have been unthinkable to have women drill sergeants for young male recruits, and on and on." He says feminists are "highly destructive. This faction is having its way, and our male lawmakers tremble in their presence like small boys facing a wrathful mother."

Power of Sexual Polarity

The consequences of liberalism is that people are hurt by their unprincipled advice. We can never be free of the consequences of ignorance of the laws of the universe. George Gilder eloquently explains this in his magnificent book *Men and Marriage*. He writes the truth that feminism has taken power from men and society has suffered tremendously for it, contrary to feminists who think society has improved with non-traditional lifestyles:

> The imperious power and meaning of male sexuality remains a paramount fact of life and the chief challenge to civilized society ... Failing to come to terms with masculinity, a society risks tearing its very ligaments, the marriage and family ties that bind men to the social order. For it is only their masculinity, their sexual nature, that draws men into marriages and family responsibilities. When our social institutions deny or disrespect the basic terms of male nature, masculinity makes men enemies of family and society.
>
> Contemporary sexual liberals cannot see the inevitable antifamily consequences of their beliefs. They continue to maintain that the differences between men and women, such as men's greater drive to produce in the workplace, are somehow artificial and dispensable. They insist that men and women can generally share and

reverse roles without jeopardizing marriage. They still encourage a young woman to sacrifice her twenties in intense rivalry with men, leaving her to clutch desperately for marriage as her youthfulness and fertility pass. Although they declare themselves supporters of the family, they are scarcely willing to define it. They often maintain that the traditional family is dead because at any one time some 10 percent of all households may contain a working man, a housewife, and children (though some 80 percent take this form for some period of time). In seeking a broader definition of the family, they seek to overthrow the normative pattern of a male with the chief provider role and a woman who focuses on child care.

Sexual liberals often declare that their true end is sexual freedom for both men and women. But nothing is finally free, least of all sex, which is bound to our deepest sources of energy, identity, emotion, and aesthetic sense. Sex can be cheapened, as we know, but then, inevitably, it becomes extremely costly to the society as a whole.

In the most elemental sense, the sex drive is the survival instinct: the primal tie to the future. When people lose the power of sexual polarity, they also lose their procreative energy and faith in themselves and their prospects.... They ... distribute contraceptives "nonjudgmental" to teenagers without telling their parents (i.e., "squealing"). They delay marriage and family. They exert moral pressure and impose financial penalties on families with more than one or two children. They promote a program of zero population growth that leaves the nation unable to support it increasing array of programs for the elderly, who themselves are increasingly cast beyond the care of family. They foster a politics strangely hostile to our genetic perpetuation as a nation and an economics based on the foolish notion that population growth hurts economic progress.

Sexual liberalism chiefly liberates men from their families.... I understand the terrible losses inflicted by sexual liberalism on the men and women I know who try to live by its remorseless egalitarian code, who attempt to twist their lives and bodies into the unisex mold, who tangle in loveless sterility on the Procrustean beds of emancipation.

Mike Gallagher says in his book *Surrounded by Idiots: Fighting Liberal Lunacy in America*, "Liberal idiocy surrounds us all. It threatens to destroy the values and lifestyles that millions of us cherish. The left has targeted every value and standard, principle and idea, concept of God, family, honor, duty, country, and decency that we hold dear."

Father teaches the opposite of Egalitarians who see relationships as horizontal. He teaches that we must see things vertically. The world is primarily organized in a hierarchy. To be principled: "each social unit such as the husband and wife and the family and so forth, must be properly centered. The family must be centered upon the head of the family. The tribe must be centered upon its chief. The society and nation have a head of state. From the very bottom, you circle upward all the way to the top. Within every social unit there is a head or a central figure." (9-7-86)

Look at the following quote of Father and tell me where subject and object interchange?: "You can learn a lesson even from dancing. When two people dance, who leads—the smaller woman or the larger man?" (9-7-86). Did you see the word "lead?" Men lead. He says, "Automatically, the one who is the larger will be the leader. Always the anchor is the one at the center, the bigger, stronger and taller person, the masculine one." Did you notice the word "always?" Men "always" "lead." Father goes on to say: "He is the one who takes initiative. Therefore, between man and woman, man is definitely the subject.

"This is the universal discipline; it's not something people can vote on. It's not something I

decided, either. It is the way the universe itself designed men and women. That is why men are meant to be the ones to take the initiative; women naturally enjoy being lifted up when dancing. That is harmonious and beautiful. But if a man is twirled around, he feels uncomfortable." (9-7-86)

FEMINISM vs. TRADITIONALISM

Feminism is the belief that men and women are interchangeable. It is the Cain ideology that attacks the Abel ideology of the traditional, biblical patriarchal family and society where men lead, provide and protect women that the Founding Fathers of America and their wives believed in. If anyone says or acts differently than godly patriarchy he or she is a feminist. Either you are for feminism that denies the divine order that men lead women and women are always to be under the care of godly men or you are for patriarchy that denies the evil logic of those in the so-called women's liberation movement that denies human nature. It is black and white. Either you are of God or of Satan. Either you believe in the truth or lies. There are no exceptions to God's laws of men/women relationships anymore than there are exceptions to absolute purity or what Father calls "absolute sex". Either there are absolute roles for men and women or there isn't. Either you believe in feminism or traditionalism.

NATURAL PEACE

Father says that the key to accomplishing world peace is for men and women of "enemy nations and races" to marry each other: "So after sincere study and research, Father came up with the solution. In order to build a world of peace, exchange marriage between enemy families, enemy nations and races takes place, then there will be natural peace, world of peace, natural harmony established. If such a world in which enemies marry their children together, and give their blessing to their enemy's children when they marry and pray for their happiness, that world will become the real world of unification, harmony and peace." (8-9-98)

Solution to Black and White Problem

Father has come with a brilliant plan to end racial discrimination. He says, "Why do you think I matched black and white people in marriage? I knew this would be the source of great difficulties. Do you think I did it for the sake of fame or reputation? Certainly not. We are seeing the first stages of a racial confrontation which is certain to come in the future unless the true religious spirit flourishes. Black and white people will fight against each other and so much blood will be shed. To prevent such an occurrence, I took the responsibility to bring black and white people together in marriage. This is the solution to those racial tensions." (8-9-98)

DO THE OPPOSITE OF THIS WORLD

He goes on to say in his speech "Glorious True Family" that we have to do the opposite of this world: "When we look at the secular world there are all kinds of immoral phenomenon rampant all over the world. If you follow exactly the opposite of the secular world's trend, then you are sure you are on the right track to heaven." Because feminism is the ruling ideology of this immoral world then we have to be anti-Feminist in our words and deeds. This means we are called to do as Father teaches and create traditional families where the man provides and the woman's place is in the home. She can do volunteer church work outside the home with other godly women but only after her own home is in order.

ANDROGYNOUS SOCIETY

Phylliss Schlafly writes at her website: "The feminists' longtime, self-proclaimed goal is an androgynous society. Repudiating constitutional intent, history, tradition and human nature, they seek to forbid us, in public or private life, to recognize the differences between men and women." (*The Phyllis Schlafly Report*, December 1996)

NO TRADING PLACES

Father says clearly that the mind never interchanges with the body anymore than a proton would interchange positions with an electron. In the following quote he explains that there is order in the universe and the subject never trades places with the object: "The message I am trying to convey is that external values are not important. What is important is that which is internal, basic and fundamental. There must be some place that the body and mind of people can find unity. There has to be a certain order between the mind and body. In other words, the mind can't trade places with the body and become the object sometimes. The mind is the subject and the body is the object. Only within that order can they harmonize and achieve unity. That unity will bring benefit to both of them." ("Day of All Things" May 31, 1984)

CONFLICT RESOLUTION

There are many books on conflict resolution in marriages and families. Father teaches that if men and women deeply understand patriarchy there would be no battle of the sexes: "Man is the root of life and he must stand in the center position. There is a pitcher and catcher relationship. Women are great catchers. When you really understand that, you will have no fights in your family." (5-1-92) He gives this advice:

> As a Blessed couple of the Unification Church do you think that husband and wife should fight? (No.) What if something comes up that you have to fight over, what shall you do? If the husband goes to the right side then the wife should go far away from him. If there is a moment when you are about to say the final word in order to have a divorce, then you have to tell your spouse that you have to go to the bathroom. When you go to the bathroom and stay there a while, once you come out you may have changed your mind. If you stay long enough your husband may become curious as to why you are in there such a long time. Then he will knock and come into the bathroom. When your husband comes to visit you in the bathroom, do you imagine you would punch him or embrace him? There is more chance that you would build harmony again. Whenever there is a crisis between husband and wife and you are about to collide with one another, remember what Father has told you here this morning. Escape to the bathroom. (Laughter.)
>
> If your husband is angry you have to keep smiling. Take the opposite position. We must protect our love relationship, even at the cost of our life. Do you understand? (Yes.) Are you truly living that kind of life now or are you wishing to live such a life? Answer Father please. (Wishing.) When will you actualize that kind of life? If you don't have that kind of experience in this world you will end up in hell. (10-15-03)

PROTECT

A primary duty of a godly patriarch is to protect women and children. Father teaches that men are the protectors of their families: "So when a child is born, it is protected and loved. Who embraces the baby? The mother, who is on the horizontal level, does. Then the mother and all the children are protected by the father. The mother must all the time, day and night, love this vertical love of the father. The whole family must together then turn around the vertical. Mother and children must turn. What makes this? Love" (2-1-93). One important way a man can protect his wife is to keep her home and educate his wife that she should not be in the workplace with other men. Countless tragedies have happened because men and women work together. When women enter the workplace there is a slippery slope to women wanting every kind of job. America has become a sick, degenerate culture where feminist women and stupid, irresponsible and effeminate men encourage women to be soldiers, police officers and firefighters. Sisters working with other men in the marketplace and fundraising is putting them in harm's way. There are so many evil men, temptations and dangers in the workplace.

Father says a man's number one responsibility is to protect women. The second obligation is to lead women: "Men have broad shoulders. Women are meant to hide behind them; that is why they are built smaller. Women are meant to be protected by men. This is not Father Moon's law, but the law of nature. The role of the center or subject is to protect all the objects. The first obligation of the subject is to protect, the second is to lead. Men should not follow after women; women are supposed to follow after men." He says, "Now is the time when a true man, who has never fallen, should come to this world and protect women" (11-11-2000). The Bible explains that women are the "weaker" sex. It doesn't say they are weak, inferior or of lesser value than men. It is the order of things for the strong to protect the weak. Women are to protect their babies, to care for the old and sick, and home school their children. Older children protect the younger. The police are good men who fight violent men from within the nation, and the military is supposed to be made up of good men who fight violent men from outside our nation.

Philip Lancaster writes in his book *Family Man, Family Leader* about a core value of patriarchy is the protection of women and children. He writes:

> God is a protector. That is another expression His fatherhood. He protects those under His care, those in special need of protection. Indeed, the angel of the Lord encamps around all those who fear Him, and He rescues them (Ps. 34:7).
>
> Since evil was introduced into this world there has been a need for protection. Evil is threatening and must be counteracted by righteous action. A failure of defense can mean the destruction of those who are vulnerable.
>
> The man is the protector of his family. Again we must emphasize that his role is derivative and that it is God's protection that is worked through his efforts; but a defender he must be. And once again this role has both a physical and a spiritual dimension.
>
> For most of us the days are past when we are called upon to bolt our loved ones in the cabin and face down that grizzly bear with our muzzleloader. Yet that urge to protect is still part of men who are in touch with their maleness, and it must be carried out in ways appropriate to the modern condition.
>
> In terms of physical protection the following examples come to mind. A father must determine where his family will live and if they are safe there from attacks of evil men. He must see that his house is a safe place to live through careful maintenance. He must keep up the family car to protect his dear ones from the dangers of worn tires and leaking brakes. He must defend his home against intruders, with force if necessary. He must set limits for the children in play: how far can they go, how high can they climb?
>
> He must keep a constant eye out for danger and take steps to defend his wife and children when necessary. It is a man's job to pay any price necessary, including his own life, to defend women and children, especially his own household.
>
> More subtle than physical dangers are the spiritual threats to a man's family. Scripture warns that the real battles for Christians are those that involve spiritual forces (Eph. 6:12). Many a man's family who live in physical safety are defenseless against some serious threats to their souls.
>
> These threats come by means of evil influences that man allows to act upon his home and its members. One such threat is that of evil companions, whether

neighbor kids, schoolteachers and classmates, or even members of the extended family. Another is evil in the form of print or electronic media, including television and videos. As the family gatekeeper, it is Dad's job to decide who and what has access to his little flock and to bar exposure to that which could draw them away from the Lord.

Just as tragic as spiritually malnourished children is the spectacle of spiritually vulnerable children whose fathers leave them exposed to soul-destroying influences. Surely no man could stand idly by if his kids were being threatened by a hungry predator with a taste for human blood. How is it that so many Christian men can allow their children to be devoured by the offspring of that roaring lion, the devil? Christian children by the millions are slaughtered in schools that have godless teachers and immoral peers, they are consumed by the deadly jaws of MTV and its kin on the tube, and their chastity is destroyed by the reckless and immoral patterns of the modern dating game. Why are Christian children being left so vulnerable? Where are the fathers?

Whether it is fixing a tire, buying a gun, restricting TV, or interviewing a daughter's prospective spouse, the many ways a man can protect his family are each a part of his calling to reflect the one who is our Protector.

Proverbs 22:6 says, "Train a child in the way he should go, and when he is old he will not turn from it." The key passage in the Bible for the role of women and the training of girls is Titus 2:3-5. They are to be "keepers of the home": "Bid the older women likewise to be reverent in behavior, not to be slanderers or slaves to drink; they are to teach what is good, and so train the young women to love their husbands and children, to be sensible, chaste, domestic, kind, and submissive to their husbands, that the word of God may not be blasphemed." Douglas Phillips has a very good audio tape on training girls to be godly called *What's a Girl to Do?* At his website he gives his 800 toll free number to order. A Christian family has donated all his tapes to my local library. He teaches how girls must be protected at all times. First by her father and brothers and then by her husband and the men in his family. He says there is only one time in the Bible that a woman left her home and was not protected by a man. That was Dinah and she was raped. He teaches in his tape that America used to be more biblical and patriarchal. On the *Titanic* and other ships that crossed the ocean a woman who traveled alone was officially called an "unprotected lady." The first thing they did on the ship was assign a man to be her protector and this was in a time that was safer for women than today. And those gentlemen made sure those ladies were put on lifeboats and then went down with the *Titanic*. I recommend all fathers playing this tape for their family.

Danielle Crittenden wrote at an anti-feminist women's Web site, "While it's obviously true that you can't go back in time, it's not true that the teachings and principles that have guided humans since the beginning of civilization have suddenly become irrelevant. You don't have to be a wistful conservative to wonder why it was that previous generations were willing to give up their lives for their country while today few will give up their seat on a bus to a pregnant woman."

Douglas Phillips wrote a book about men giving their lives for women and children titled *The Birkenhead Drill*. He begins by talking about the good old days when there was chivalry. He begins by quoting from *The Boy Scout Handbook* of 1911 written by Lord Baden-Powell who wrote, "The same thing that entered into the training of these men, knights, pioneers ... must enter into the training of the boy scouts today. Just as they respected women and served them, so the scout must be polite and kind to women, not merely to well-dressed women, but to poorly dressed women; not merely to young women, but to old women: to women wherever they may be found—

wherever they may be. To these a scout must always be courteous and helpful. When a scout is walking with a lady or a child, he should always walk on the outside of the sidewalk, so that he can better protect them against the jostling crowds. This rule is only altered when crossing the street, when the scout should get between the lady and the traffic, so as to shield her from accident or mud. Also in meeting a woman or child, a scout, as matter of course, should always make way for them if he himself has to step off the sidewalk into the mud. When riding in a street car or train a scout should never allow a woman, an elderly person, or a child to stand, but will offer his seat; and when he does it he should do it cheerfully and with a smile."

Phillips writes, "His mission was to communicate the practical outworking of Christian chivalry to the next generation of boys. It should be remembered that the idea men were and live deferentially on behalf of women and children, though an ancient principle, was already under attack by 1911 from militant suffragettes intent on leveling the political playing field by removing from the public mindset the notion that women were a 'weaker sex' in need of saving.

"In calling for the boys of the twentieth century to live by the historic code of masculine sacrifice, Baden-Powell was adding his own part to the legacy of bold manhood which for generations had ... constituted the warp and woof of Christendom's patriarchal ethic."

Chivalry is dead in America. I call upon brothers in our movement to restore chivalry and stop encouraging sisters to be like men who earn money and lead other men. Let's change our nightmare culture where girls and women look and act like tomboys. Let's restore the good of the past that had separate spheres for men and women. Fundraising hurts more than helps young people. It does not train boys and girls to become gentlemen and ladies. A Unificationist brother who drops off a sister to sell things door-to-door is not a gentleman and the sister is not a lady.

Some parts of the good-old-days really were good. It was a commonly held value that men would protect women and children. One of the most dramatic examples of this was the custom of men going down with a ship if there were not enough lifeboats after the women and children were safe. One story was famous to all 19th century school boys and girls. A ship called the Birkenhead went down in 1852. It was a military ship carrying over 600 passengers. Doug Phillips wrote a book about it called *The Birkenhead Drill*. He writes, "At about 2:00 a.m., the vessel struck a ledge off Cape Danger. Twenty minutes later, she was submerged. Before she sank, an important decision was made. The men would sacrifice their lives for the women and children. They would willingly die rather than even possibly capsize the overloaded boats on which the women and children sought refuge. Over the next few hours, wives and children watched as their loved ones drowned or were consumed by man-eating sharks engaged in a wild feeding frenzy. The heroism of these men not only established the maritime principle of 'women and children first' but served to inspire generations of men and women to stand by the ancient Christian principles of heroic manhood."

Hundreds of men died but every woman and child survived. There was panic during the 20 minutes the ship went down. Decisions had to be made quickly. The man in charge of the hundreds of British troops was Colonel Seton. He quickly had his subordinate officers get all the men on deck while he had the women and children put on the boats. There were only enough boats for the women and children. He had the men line up in formation and told them that they would have to die. Most of the men were young soldiers in their teens. The women and children were the wives and children of a few of the some of the officers. Phillips writes, "Polls indicate that the typical high school male laughs at the idea of giving up his seat on a lifeboat to help a woman or child. In a society that promotes 'survival of the fittest,' aborts its young, and thrives on androgyny, this should not surprise us, but it should grieve our hearts." Why is this the case today? Today, if a boat went down some of the officers would be women. Maybe the highest officer may be a woman. The women who are passengers will probably have jobs and lead men. Most women are providers today. Let's say the ship carried all the members of the Unification Church of

America. Let's say that the President of the UC is a woman and there are some women in leadership as District leaders and State leaders. Let's say there is a district leader by the name of Ann, a State Leader of Utah named Margaret and the State Leader of Oregon is named Catherine. What do these women do? Go down with the ship while their husbands and children watch them eaten by sharks as they sit safely in a lifeboat? Is there any chivalry in the Unification Church? I don't see any.

When the *Titanic* went down at 2.00 a.m. everyone knew what the roles of men and women were. Richard Grenier wrote a scathing review in *The Washington Times* of the movie *Titanic* calling it "rubbish." He says, "When I heard of the *Titanic* disaster as a child I was told first and foremost that men had given up their places on lifeboats to women and children and gone to their deaths in acts of great gallantry. ... To this day the most prominent humane characteristic of this great maritime tragedy is the men stepping back and letting not only their wives and daughters, but other men's wives and daughters, take their places in the lifeboats. It's hard to imagine this today. With society having decided that women should share the same level of attainment as men in one professional field after another, including the military (where courage in the face of death is a professional requisite), there seems to remain no reason at all why a soldier should break ranks and offer his life to save that of another soldier just because she's female. ... Two weeks after Titanic sank, Nellie Taft, the President's wife, gave the first dollar toward a dollar-per-woman fund honoring the men of the *Titanic*. The resulting monument is an 18-foot statue of a half-clad male, posed on a 30-foot pedestal on which is engraved: 'To the brave men of *Titanic* who gave their lives that women and children might be saved.' It can still be seen in Washington across from East Potomac Park. These days no one visits it."

ACT LIKE MEN

Douglas Phillips has a website at titanicsociety.com. He is on a crusade to revive the core value of chivalry that the men on the *Titanic* lived by. He says that the First Lady, Mrs. Taft, said, "I am grateful to do this in gratitude to the chivalry of American manhood." The leading feminists of 1912 "argued that *Titanic* women were wrong to have accepted seats on the boats from men." Again, we have a crystal clear division of Cain and Abel. Phillips writes, "In 1996, a boat carrying thousands of passengers sank off the shores of Indonesia. Like the *Titanic* disaster, hundreds died. Like the *Titanic* disaster, the ship was inadequately suited with lifeboats. Unlike the *Titanic* disaster, the men received preferential lifeboat treatment over the women and children. Women died that men might live." Be sure to watch the DVD *Act Like Men: A Titanic Lesson in Manliness* (www.colingunn.com) They got the title from the Bible: "Be on the alert, stand firm in the faith, act like men, be strong." (I Cor. 16:13)

CAPITAL PUNISHMENT

I believe that the death penalty is not a sin and can be used sometimes but I think that it should be used only rarely. We learn in the *Divine Principle* that it was God's will that innocent children were killed and maimed with the dropping of atomic bombs in World War II. The main reason against capital punishment is that many innocent people have died. Jesus is the most godly and influential person in history, and he should not have received the death penalty. There are some books about this issue of innocent victims of the death penalty such as *The Wrong Men: America's Epidemic of Wrongful Death Row Convictions* and *Actual Innocence: Five Days to Execution and Other Dispatches from the Wrongly Convicted*. John Lott gives a powerful argument for the death penalty in his book *Freedomnomics: Why the Free Market Works and Other Half-Baked Theories Don't.* I listened to the audio CD of the book and heard him say that the capital punishment "helps deter violent crimes and saves lives." He has many other insights in his book that should be taken into account when it comes time for Unificationists to lead politically. Lott has many brilliant and interesting thoughts on some key issues in politics.

Father teaches that the death penalty can be used: "Criminals are sometimes sentenced to death and the government of the nation is responsible for their deaths. Does the nation itself become criminal then? Should it be held guilty for executing those people? If the execution was carried out for the benefit of the society or nation and the world then no crime has been committed. If one evil man harms many lives then the termination of that person's life cannot be regarded as a crime." (10-3-76)

It is irrational for women to lead men as politicians because the job of politicians is to protect society from evil and criminal men and women. Politics deals with the use of force with guns. George Washington said, "Government is not reason; it is not eloquent; it is force. Like fire, it is a dangerous servant and a fearful master." Politicians are given the mission to defend us internally with police and F.B.I. and externally with the military. The core value of government is about killing bad guys. It is a hunting organization. Liberals and many Conservatives think government is the solution to society's problems. It is not. When politicians try to solve social problems like poverty and pollution they make things worse. Murray Rothbard writes, "It is curious that people tend to regard government as a quasi-divine, selfless, Santa Claus organization." We have to get government off our backs and get it to focus on its job of hunting down evil men and women and putting them in jail.

Women are not made by God to be hunters. They are nurturers. They don't take life; they bring life. There are many women who call their husbands to kill a strange bug in the house. How many women do you know will deal with a wild animal in their yard? Do you know any man that would ask his wife to deal with a potential burglar in his home while he huddles with the children? Then where is the logic that women can spend their time and focus on hunting criminals? Women politicians need to go home and nurture their children. Children are crying out for attention and most women are out competing with men and in many cases leading men. A woman governor should be taking care of her babies or other babies, not spending countless hours figuring out the budget for the police and analyzing how to track down vicious men. Father said once, "Mother also worries when one of the children wants to ride a motorcycle or a horse, or shoot a gun, worrying that he will get hurt. But I feel they should do those things if they want to. If you have to arrest a gangster, you must be able to ride a motorcycle to catch him. It's not worth the risk if you are just going to show off, but if you are working for the country or the world, you can't avoid doing those things" (10-25-81). True Mother is feminine. Father is masculine.

Father often talks about men being stronger than women and protecting them. A woman trying to do a man's job is a joke. But our state and national defense is not a joke. How we define masculinity and femininity is the most serious thing we have to do. Here is a typical example of Father explaining how men and women are very different and women look ridiculous if they try to "intervene" when men fight:

> Man has to work. What kind of work? He has to pioneer something. Human beings are called the Lords of creation. The word "Lord" sounds as if it refers to a man, doesn't it? How would you feel if a little beardless woman with little fist and slender face stood up shouting, "I am the Lord of all creation?" Think about it. No matter how many times she shouted, her voice would sound feminine. What if a man with a somewhat thick voice shouted, "I am the Lord of all creation." How would you feel? Even all the women would agree with his claim after hearing his voice.
>
> When men are fighting, if a woman tries to intervene, saying, "Go away," how do you feel? But when a man with his fist clenched firmly says, "Hey! Beat it; get outta here," at least it sounds authentic.
>
> In this view, it is better for man to take the first position as the "Lord." The Lord

> is supposed to be different from others; he is supposed to carry at least one more item than the other creature. Man carries one more item than woman: his moustache. The moustache makes man qualified as the "Lord." Heavenly Father is truly mathematical. (*Blessing and Ideal Family Part 2*)

In the 19th century Queen Victoria herself criticized the feminists for unsexing women: "The Queen is most anxious to enlist everyone to join in checking this mad wicked folly of Women's Rights with all its attendant horrors .... Women would become the most hateful, heartless and disgusting of human beings were she allowed to unsex herself; and where would be the protection which man was intended to give the weaker sex?"

Chesterton wrote at the beginning of the 20th century that women who want government power need to understand that they "desire the power of coercing others; the power of using a policeman." "All government," he said, "is an ugly necessity." He also said, "Government has become ungovernable; that is, it cannot leave off governing. Law has become lawless; that is, it cannot see where laws should stop. The chief feature of our time is the meekness of the mob and the madness of the government."

America was invaded by terrorists who killed 3,000 people. The President's number one core value is to hunt them down and make sure they never attack us again. It is a huge job that will take a long time. Only a man should have the position of Commander-in-Chief because a woman is not biologically made to have the stamina and perseverance and understanding of weapons that is required of the job. The primary job of politicians is to be a hunting party. No women should be allowed. They don't have enough testosterone to do the job. There will be no criminals in the ideal world. Until that glorious day arrives we need government to defend us. Politicians are professional killers. Good politicians hunt down vicious criminals and put them away. There is nothing nice about their job. It is a place of death. America has become naive to evil. Evil men are on a satanic high and the last thing we need is women in the room when good men make strategy to fight them. Men and women are profoundly ignorant of the basic things in life today. Satan wants his enemy weak. What better strategy than put women in charge of protecting our homes and nation?

Let's stop and talk a little about the difference between equality and roles. Men and women have equal value. One of the greatest mistakes of the Victorians was their belief that women are closer to God because they are mothers and they are not as aggressive as men. This led to women thinking they should leave the home and join men in the political and business realm. Men caved in to women's relentless push to join them. What is the result of this social experiment? No one but feminists can deny that the family and nations of the world have suffered more under this ideology than the previous patriarchal times led by fallen men.

In a feminist book *Reader's Companion to U.S. History* we read:

> **Separate Spheres**
>
> Separate spheres embodied the vision of a social order based on a polarity of roles and personalities rooted in presumed biological and sexual differences between the sexes. Men were rational, instrumental, independent, competitive, and aggressive; women were emotional, maternal, domestic, and dependent. England's nineteenth-century emerging bourgeoisie, idealized and popularized by the sentimental novel, advice books, and medical and religious writings, emphasized the concept of a society structured around supposedly "natural," God-ordained distinct male and female spheres.
>
> Western political theories, both republicanism and liberalism, inscribed the

concept, pronouncing the political sphere, civic virtue, and citizenship exclusively male preserves, and excluding women from political subjectivity.

One website explained it this way:

> **THE IDEOLOGY OF SEPARATE SPHERES**
> A set of ideas, originating in the early 19th century. These beliefs assigned to women and men distinctive and virtually opposite duties, functions, personal characteristics, and legitimate spheres of activity.
>
> Consequences.
> 1.) Defined women as "naturally" unfit for economic competition or political citizenship because of their delicate constitution and their more refined moral sense.
>
> 2.) Glorified women's domestic activities, particularly the rearing of children, as the cornerstone of American social order.

TWO SPHERES

Father talks about these two spheres: "Who did God create first, man or woman? (Man.) Man represents heaven. So in the Bible we see the symbolism that God took the rib of Adam and created Eve. This did not happen literally; it only means that Eve was created in the image of Adam. The plus is heaven and the opposite is earth. It is like two spheres: the upper, the right and the front represent heaven; the lower, left and rear represent earth." (2-1-93)

The nineteenth-century also felt that women were morally superior to men. Men have been imperfect patriarchs throughout history and they began to feel guilty for it. To make up to women for being less than perfect, men mistakenly thought that women were superior to them and questioned the whole idea of patriarchy. Women began to feel that since they are superior to men then they should be involved in the sphere of government and business. This was Satan's clever way of weakening men and families and therefore weakening nations. It has been the worst disaster in human history to have women leave their sphere of the home and join men in the sphere of government and commerce. We have degenerated now to some men being househusbands.

Father explains the two spheres this way:

> On one side we have earth and the other side heaven. Men represent heaven and women represent earth. Together they form the ideal purpose of God in creation. Earth is horizontal, and heaven is vertical. In the western world there is not so much understanding of the concept of vertical and horizontal, heaven and earth. But this concept is daily fare for Orientals. In ourselves we have mind and body, analogous to heaven and earth. Mind and body must become one, whether the person be a man or woman. The mind is vertical and the body is horizontal. The mind is the vertical self; the body is the horizontal self.
>
> **MEN VERTICAL**
> In the West, we have an erroneous concept that man and woman are equal. If men turn one way and women another, how can they be equal? How can we have two axes? When you see two babies, one boy and one girl grow, the girl grows horizontally and the boy grows vertically. As a result boys are taller than girls; also look at the hips of the woman. They have to be stabilized so they can give birth; this is natural. Also woman have an abundant bosom, big hips and a soft touch. All are not for her, but for her children. Women can boast of their bosom and hips. Men

> have no hips, but instead have broad shoulders. This is the way God built us. When we enter the family we can immediately identify the center: it is the woman who takes care of all things in the house. It is she who loves the earth and the universe. She takes care of everything and absolutely loves her husband. We must become like this before we can expect for me and my family to be able to go to God's warehouse, the Kingdom of Heaven. (2-1-93)

EQUAL BUT DIFFERENT

The truth is that women are not superior to men and men are not superior to women. They have equal value and loved equally by God. Are parents supposed to think their girls are superior to their boys? Sun Myung Moon is not superior to his wife and she is not superior to him. God doesn't love Sun Myung Moon more than He loves you or me anymore than any good parent loves one of their children more than another. Obviously in this fallen world people have different levels of maturity and morals but we cannot make a wholesale, broad brush statement that women are overall above men anymore than we can say Orientals are overall superior to white people. Words are very important and we need to define the word "equal" with great care.

Some may argue that because God created woman last she is favored by God or loved by God more than men. Do you love your daughters more than your sons? Do you think your daughters are "above" your sons? Of course not. Are your daughters and sons innately different? Only feminists can't deal with these differences. They try to minimize any discussion of differences because that would lead to the idea of different roles. God created mankind to organize themselves in a hierarchy. Parents are leaders of their children but they are not greater than them. They have different roles but the same value in God's eyes.

It is not intellectually or emotionally satisfying to think that because women birth men they should be held in higher esteem than men. The same would be for the idea that men should be considered most highly and treated with special respect and love because they planted the seed into the woman that determined the sex of the child and made the woman pregnant. It is true that God made man first before the woman because he is the leader. This does not mean that the man is innately superior to the woman or more loved by God and he should not be lifted up higher than the woman. Men and women stand in front of God as equals but in their relationship to each other the woman always stands on his left as symbolic of the man's position as final decision maker. A general in an army is not superior in value to a subordinate anymore than a husband is fundamentally closer to God than his wife.

The result of women joining men in the power struggles outside the home has been devastating to marriages, families and nations. It was bad enough with fallen men negotiating with their enemies and then having to go to war or use violence if they could not agree peacefully. Now that women are sitting at negotiating tables and carrying rifles in the US Army we are further away from bringing peace to the world. Women are not supposed to be sitting at negotiation tables; they are supposed to be sitting in their homes. Women have no right to be at peace talks because they cannot back up their words with force. Women make things worse because they are weak. Good men need to negotiate from a position of strength.

In *Fascinating Womanhood* Helen Andelin teaches that the man of the house is the final decision maker: "There is a great effort now to do away with the patriarchy and replace it with equality, in which the husband and wife make decisions by mutual agreement. Although this idea may sound good on the surface, it is impractical and unworkable. Some decisions can be reached by mutual agreement but many others cannot. A man and wife may never agree on some issues. When a decision must be made, someone must take the lead.

"Mutual agreements may take time, hours of deliberation. There isn't always time. Some decisions in daily living must be made quickly.

"The father has the right to make final decisions on matters which relate to his personal life, his work, and his family. In an ordinary family many decisions must be made daily. Some of these are minor, such as whether to take the dog on a picnic or leave him home. But even though such a decision is small, it must be made, and often quickly. When the husband and wife don't agree, someone must decide. The final say belongs to the father.

"Major decisions must also be made. The man may be faced with decisions about his work, such as whether to enlarge his business, make investments, change occupations, or move to a new community. These plans may mean a cutback in expenses or other adjustments. If a man is wise, he will first talk things over with his wife, to get her ideas and win her cooperation."

Sun Myung Moon teaches:

> A sphere has one axis upon which it turns. God is on one end of the axis and Adam is on the other. This is how God intended the universe to be. The man stands at the center point and the woman on the perimeter. In traditional Oriental thought, national and world affairs are considered very important, and a man can consult his sons about such things but he is not allowed to consult his wife or any woman about them. The Korean woman obeys this tradition even though she does not clearly understand why.
>
> There are often no secrets left after you talk to a woman. America is a more feminine country because all its secrets leak out. That is the original nature of a woman and the way God intended things. This is not just my observation, but it is a principle of the universe. The vertical center is one and not two. Both husband and wife cannot be the center. The *Principle* explains that the center point can never be held by two persons. (8-30-87)

Women have no right to be in the man's sphere. Women have the right and duty to help men but that does not mean they join them in government and business. If a woman thinks her husband is not doing his job as good as she could do or if she thinks that men are not doing their job as well as they should and feel they should take their place they are dead wrong. To help a particular man or men in general women need to understand God's order. There are many good books that give good advice for men and women on how to actualize patriarchy. Sadly, there are very few men and women who understand what it means and are living a true relationship. This means most people will have to learn from books instead of having the benefit of learning in person from a couple that has achieved an excellent patriarchal marriage and family.

Most marriages and families are deeply dysfunctional because Satan has made feminism the core value of most people today. Unlike past generations that knew better men today fall all over themselves to get women into the traditional men's realms of government and the work place. Women today are profoundly ignorant of their role as stay-at-home mom. Even if they take time out to be one when their children are young they often return to the marketplace instead of finding more children to care for when their children are older.

The world is a mess because of the heavy atmosphere of socialists and feminists. A person who lives or teaches old-fashioned values is called insane, heartless and dangerous. Women police officers and soldiers is what is insane, heartless and dangerous. Men are so emasculated today that it may take generations to climb out of this chaos. Hopefully it will happen sooner because there are now more and more books for patriarchy and against feminism. People are beginning to wake up like those few in the movie *The Matrix*. The truth of patriarchy will eventually become the ruling ideology again and it will be refined and improved until eventually every woman will return home and every man will be a good provider, protector and leader.

SIREN SONG OF FEMINISM

A dictionary says, "The term 'siren song' refers to an appeal that is hard to resist but that, if heeded, will lead to a bad result." I wouldn't be surprised if Father is advised by his inner circle of friends and family to follow the siren song of feminism. I wonder if he was influenced by incompetent advisors who pushed him to encourage girls and woman to take leadership in their home instead of having men lead their homes, to encourage women to take leadership in society instead of men leading in the marketplace, and to encourage women to take leadership in the world instead of encouraging men to be godly patriarchs who take principled leadership in politics and diplomacy. Many women earn more money than their husbands and therefore are the heads of their families. Women now make up the majority of workers in the workplace. They now greatly outnumber men as college graduates. These college graduates will push to take leadership in society because they will not see that their expensive education will not go to waste on being "just a housewife." What young woman will go to college for four years and not do birth control? They will not have two or three children like True Mother did when she was their age. All these women who have denied having children for their college degrees will teach girls to follow them. They are horrible role models. They will compete with men for positions of authority and then take leadership in every area of life. They will have absolutely no thought of having a huge family.

Women who leave their home and therefore give up taking care of babies and their husbands in the name of leadership, world peace, and true love are dupes of Satan and evil spirit world. It is Satan's ultimate lie that women can help usher in world peace by dominating men in the home, society and world. The universal principles of God have nothing to do with women doing the man's work of taking leadership in the home, society and nation. Women who earn money instead of depending on their husbands and male relatives and women who rule over men by being presidents of Ivy League colleges and disgracing America by being Secretary of State are examples of how low America has sunk. America is so sick spiritually because of feminism that it is now manifested in children being tortured with obesity and diseases like diabetes because women have given up their role as homemakers and abandoned their post. Ralph Waldo Emerson said, "The first wealth is health." Most women think earning money is the first wealth. Philip J. Goscienski, the author of *Health Secrets of the Stone Age* says, "The sickest generation Children born during the next two decades will be the sickest since the beginning of the 20th century. They will have more heart disease, osteoporosis, diabetes and dementia than their parents, shorter life spans and more chronic pain. We are letting them down, big time. ... The disease that will make the rationing of health care inevitable The Centers for Disease Control and Prevention states that of infants born in the year 2000, more than one-third will develop type 2 diabetes before they die. Among Hispanic girls that number is an astonishing 53 percent. By the time they reach 30 years of age many will have had amputations and kidney failure and some will be nearly blind. Diabetes is an incredibly expensive disease that lasts for decades and complications develop faster when it begins in childhood."

WOMEN SHOULD STUDY NUTRITION

Helen Andelin in her book *All About Raising Children* says that women should study nutrition and feed their families nutritious meals. Women are too busy earning money and dominating men or being dominated by other men that they haven't any desire to figure out how to serve their families so they will have optimum health. Women are so stressed out they feed their children and husband fast junk food instead of slow healthy food and therefore maiming and killing their families. Because women have listened to the feminist mantra of their version of equality most women never think about the concept of big families. When God spoke in the Bible to Adam, Noah, Abraham and other patriarchs he talked of dynasties of countless descendants. Because of feminism we have so much birth control that nations are in a demographic winter. How do we solve this problem? By getting Unificationist sisters to wait until their 25 to have a few children while they focus on leading men in every area of life? Are these women going to lead men to want

and have huge families? The more women dominate men the more men don't care to be gentleman, chivalrous and building a dynasty. Father says lineage is the most important thing. What has this got to do with women leaving the home? How does women being successful in the workplace bring about peace in families, peace in society and peace in the world? There is no logic to feminism. If you ever hear someone who says they are a follower of Sun Myung Moon that women should lead men, run for your life. You are listening to an ambassador of death, not an ambassador of peace.

God has assigned roles for men and women. Men are assigned by God to protect. It is bad enough that a woman will be the boss of a man or a group of men in a business but politicians are everyone's boss and the only ones that can use guns to make people obey. A woman politician is the head of all men in her jurisdiction. A woman Senator is head of all men in an entire state. A woman President would be the head of every man in America. This is craziness. Feminists like to point out leaders of nations such as Margaret Thatcher of England, Indira Gandhi of India and Golda Meir of Israel. Thatcher was pregnant once in her life, Gandhi was assassinated and Meir was divorced. The result of the feminist lifestyle for women is very few children, death and divorce. These women are not good role models. They did more harm than good because they influenced millions of girls to dominate men like they did and they castrated millions of men by leading them. Midge Decter in *Liberated Woman and Other Americans* wrote, "American society is about to be confronted by nothing less than the eventual castration of its entire male population." We cannot say that Margaret Thatcher was a great leader and then expect men to be chivalrous. You can't have both. You have to pick one or the other. There have been terrible consequences because women have dominated men.

Father continually explains that men are to be on top: "The women always claim that they are higher than men. The fact that men let women go above them means they are not worthy to live. But a woman will not become prosperous if she goes above a man. In America who is above whom? Man or woman? It's a problem. Who is up now? Woman. Thank you. That's true. (Laughter). They all laugh their silent support." "In the west, when you love, the women go above the man. That is wrong; it is not natural. Man who represents God and heaven should be above woman. Should this society dominated by women be corrected or left alone? No." (1-17-93)

Guns are something men understand. Men can fish and hunt for hours and days. A woman cannot keep up. A man could not keep up with a woman tending 25 grandchildren and being the architect of intimacy for the family. The man has the tenacity to track down a bear and kill it with a bow and arrow. Not the woman. She is busy at home serving three meals a day. If she joins the hunt everything falls apart. In *Sun Myung Moon, The Early Years, 1920-53* by Michael Breen we read, "One day when he was about ten or eleven years old, he followed a weasel all night, tracking it through the snow, and caught it. He returned home in the morning, his parents' anger tempered by the fact that they could sell the weasel for the equivalent in today's money of about $150." There is no such story for Mother. Father often talks for many hours and often Mother will leave. She cannot keep up with him. Father will pull in a huge tuna all by himself. Women shouldn't be trying to pull in huge tunas. They cook and serve tuna to their children and other children who are desperate for love. Government is secondary to the family. Those in government feel they are doing "public service." That is true if they stick to the job of being wise with the use of force. Government today has become more of a problem than a solution. They do a disservice by being busy bodies who throw a wrench in the free market by using guns to force people to do what politicians think is moral and good. And as for those who carry government guns, they have weakened our police and military by being politically correct and putting women in harm's way. Women protecting men in the police and military shows that America is no longer a civilized nation. Heavenly etiquette and manners are a thing of the past. We now live in the brave new world of feminism.

Sun Myung Moon is consistent in teaching that the core of his teaching is that world peace will come when the world has godly families. Everything else, such as politics, is important but not central. Our primary goal is to build exemplary families and teach our children to build magnificent families. Father's vision is God's vision of a happy, harmonious world. We find the greatest happiness in the family. It is the school of love. He says:

> It is the healthy family that must be the starting point in our work to build world peace. The establishment of God-centered family ethics and the education of our children lie at the innermost core of my teachings as the person who has declared for himself the responsibilities of the Messiah. The family is the holy sanctuary that must cleanse this defiled world. (8-24-92)
>
> The era of power and political authority ruling the world is over. The era of heart and love is entering. ("Father Moon's Thought for a World of Peace" January 26, 2002)
>
> The basic unit of the world of peace is not the nation; it is the peaceful family. The basic unit is the family formed by a man and a woman who have the character to attend God, a man and woman who have each accomplished harmonious mind-body union and are joined by God in His Holy Blessing. These are the first blessed families in history, established through the True Parents. These are peaceful and happy families. True love joins their members in harmonious union. When these families multiply, they will bring about a world of peaceful tribes, peoples and nations. In God's original ideal, humankind is one family under one God and the cosmos is one family centering on true love. The place of resolution for the problems of the family centering on True Parents is the foundation for the world of peace. In the ideal world of blessed families based on true love, there can be no barriers of nationality, race or religion. (12-28-02)

When we solve the breakdown of the family we will solve all the other problems. Our focus is to teach men to be wise leaders in the home and in society. Wisdom is not asking women to leave the home. Father has revealed the "fundamental problem" is the breakdown of the family and the fundamental "solution" is true families that each share "universally shared values":

> The Marriage Blessing Ceremony eradicates the connection to false love and brings to life the holy content and value of marriage centered on absoluteness. This ceremony recovers true couples' love, true parents' love, and true children's love. Therefore, those who participate in the Marriage Blessing Ceremony value purity and trust as highly as they do their lives and promise unchanging couple's love. On the foundation of that true love, they can establish a true family, raise true children, and pledge to sacrifice themselves to build a true nation and peaceful world. In the world of the future, God, humankind, and creation are in harmony, living in a new culture of heart, a culture of love centered on true family. In the world of the future, true love means living for the sake of others in a world of interdependence, mutual prosperity, universally shared values, and cooperation. In the future, the natural desire of young people to live in a world of true brothers and sisters, one family of mankind, will be realized by centering on true love, true parents, and true family.
>
> Is there anything more important than saving humanity from plunging into ruin? My effort to globalize and universalize the True Family Movement and the Marriage Blessing Ceremony, which are the fundamental solutions to save humanity, needs the active support from respected leaders like you. Those who understand the fundamental problem and the solution God is offering should band together within their country and form a True Family Marriage Blessing support

> group and create a movement to save your nation. I ask that you put yourselves at the center of this great work to restore humankind to its original ideal. We have to quickly educate all men and women so they can establish true families and enter into the age of God-centered kingship on earth and heaven, centered on true love, and live in the victorious world of freedom, peace, and unity. ("Realization of a Peaceful World by the Ideal of True Family" 11-27-97)

Father is serious when he says we are called by God to "quickly educate" everyone on what a true family is. He constantly asks us to lead this lost world: "let us lead humanity on the correct path by testifying to the world about God's true love, true life and true lineage; and let us build the universal family of Heaven and Earth in God's fatherland and homeland on earth. Let us complete the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth and in Heaven through the absolute love, unique love, unchanging love and eternal love that seeks to live for the sake of others, and offer Heavenly Kingship to God" (12-28-02). We are not serving other people if we give false values. We have the awesome responsibility to teach the values that will be "universally shared" by every person on earth for eternity. We had better be sure we are teaching and living those universal values. We need to live by universal law. We can't have some Unificationists teaching that women can lead men and others saying it is unprincipled. Unificationists need to be united and all be reading from the same page. I believe that our number one core value is godly patriarchy. Men protect women. We fight against Satan who teaches that women protect men.

No woman should be in the police force or in any branch of our military. There are times when we should discriminate against women in the workplace. It is principled and right that it is illegal for women in the Army to be in combat and until recently for women in the Navy to be on submarines. Feminists have made it one of their primary goals to change this and they have made much headway. Many weakling men are being swayed to their suicidal, unprincipled position. It is a slippery slope from women wearing the gun of a police officer to wearing the gun of a military police officer to wearing the gun in infantry. Because women are now on Navy ships there have been many pregnancies from illicit sex that has weakened our military.

If women are barred from being in combat where is the logic that we should have women politicians deciding when men go into combat? There is no logic. It is ridiculous. A woman governor or state representative deals with decisions of police and calling on the National Guard when needed. They have no business deciding these issues. People are so brainwashed by Satan now that everyone thinks women being cops and women being politicians who lead cops has been healthy progress for mankind. A woman cop is insanity but the voices of those who call for a return to chivalry are denounced as being insane. The Mormons do not take logic to its end which would be that men lead not only in the home and church but in the state too. Let's go beyond them and everyone and have a totally logical value system.

Anna Quindlan is a famous feminist writer and typical Democrat who said in *Newsweek* magazine, "one of the rights which I must argue despite my distaste for the end itself is supporting the right of women to hold combat positions." Women being cops is the same thing as women being in combat. Many women cops have been beaten and killed by men in the line of duty and no one thinks anything of it because they have lived for so many years in feminism that they cannot think clearly. Helen Reddy wrote and sang a famous song in the 1970s called "I Am Woman" in which she sings, "Hear me roar!" This ridiculous song has become the feminist anthem. Let's see what Father thinks about a woman's "roar":

> The equality movement is very strong in America. Did God create everything to be the same on every level? Putting yourself in God's position, would you create man or woman first? Women would say that naturally God would create woman first. God needs someone who can be master, or subject, and take up responsibility for

the whole. That is the masculine quality. If the lion roars, someone is needed who can dominate the lion. Picture a lion roaring, and a woman standing there shrieking, "Stop that!" Wouldn't it be more natural to see a man standing there, bellowing, "Stop!" Which one seems more natural? The masculine characteristic is to face danger and take the responsibility of protecting everyone.

Even without reading *Genesis*, when you analyze nature you can see two distinct characteristics of subject and object, each with their special assets. In history there was a period where humans primarily hunted for food, and always men were in the forefront, right? All the great heroes in war were men, and men pioneered in settling new lands and developing industry. What would God say if women demanded total equality and wanted beards too? He would be embarrassed! I can accept equality for everyone when we are talking about supreme love in God's sight. Then we are all equal. But a woman who demands a divorce because she wants equality already has forfeited her claim to equality. Women are object, and in the position of beauty and reflection. (4-20-80)

Certainly members of the women's liberation movement would oppose Father's words. How can we claim equalization as women when not even in the Olympic games is there any woman who has competed with and won over men. Men are bigger and stronger than women. Even if a woman became a champion wrestler, do you think she would have the chance to win over a man champion wrestler? (No.) (6-9-96)

Father teaches that freedom comes with responsibility to live within the laws of heaven. The so-called women's liberation movement does not understand that they are wrong to think that in the pursuit of liberty they can deny God's divine order for men and women. Father says:

Well, then, do I have freedom? It is the same for me. Pursuing freedom in a world that has abandoned its principles is doomed to failure. I am old and there are rules of freedom that I must follow as an elderly person. Would it be suitable for an elderly person such as myself to have an affair with a young girl? Hmm? Everyone would laugh at me and spit on me. Everything has to coincide with the Principle. Also, there is responsibility in freedom. Responsibility! You should certainly not act in a position of responsibility for something bad. You must act from a position of taking responsibility for something good. On seeing how much you have been able to take responsibility for your actions, all creation should be able to respect you on that basis. Also, good results must be left behind where you have acted. Aren't these the three great fundamental rules? You might say, "What kind of freedom is that?" but that is just the way it is! For example, when you go home, you might say, "I am not going to be dominated by my parents. I am going to do whatever I wish" You cannot assert that this is freedom.

Is it acceptable for a woman to say that since she has freedom as a woman she will do as men do—even though she was born as a woman and there is a way for women to go? As a woman, she does not even have a beard! What? Freedom to grow a beard! If you say you want to grow a beard, go ahead and try to get one—and see how long it takes. Is that the way of the principle for those born as women? What can we call freedom? A woman has her monthly period, doesn't she? "Oh no! This is so annoying! I will give this up" Let her try to get rid of that. Is it possible? Are you confident to be able to do so? We have to adapt ourselves to the fundamental principles. As a woman, she has to adapt herself to the fundamental principles of womanhood. Then, a woman has to take responsibility as a woman. As her breasts are big, she has the responsibility to raise children. This is freedom.

> Giving birth and raising children is the highest freedom. A woman who cannot give birth to a child is only half a woman. She is not counted as a woman. (*The Way for the True Child*)

In the book *Great American Conservative Women: A Collection of Speeches from the Clare Boothe Luce Policy Institute* a famous conservative woman, Jeane Kirkpatrick is typical of those who say they hate political correctness but in reality are champions for it. She was the ambassador to the United Nations during the Reagan administration. She writes, "Sometimes you can't do everything, and if you can't make speeches at the UN, maybe you have babies, and if you can't have babies, maybe you make speeches at the UN. And if you're patient, and you prepare carefully you may be able to do both. More and more, we find women who are attempting both traditional and professional roles—not necessarily at the same time, but in the same lifetime. You can make it work. It takes a little luck and a lot of work. Both are very important.

"American women today are breaking all kinds of boundaries and borders, and enriching our society in the process. I would like to see more women in influential roles in our society. And although I'm a partisan and an active Republican, I was delighted when Madeline Albright rose to the heights of leadership as Secretary of State." Everything is wrong about this. America would have been better off if Kirkpatrick had not represented America in the UN. Madeline Albright was incompetent. While she was Secretary of State during the Clinton administration North Korea built nuclear weapons. But it wouldn't have mattered if she was competent. No woman should hold these positions because they become bad role models to women and weaken men. They also deprive men of the job they take. What Jeane Kirkpatrick writes is false. Women in power are not enriching our society.

It is important to be able to discern what is evil and what is true. Suzanne Fields has an article in the book mentioned above and she too pushes the feminist nonsense that it is just fine that women work. She praises women in journalism like Leslie Stahl of CBS's *Sixty Minutes*, the most popular show on television. She says that Stahl can get "a better interview" because she uses her femininity to "break down the defenses of a man" when she questions him. She praises Paula Zahn of CNN for showing off her "long shapely legs" and being "sexy" because "her seductive looks often disarm the person she interviews. The point here is that a lot of women mix femininity and competency to their professional advantage and there's nothing wrong with that except denying it." This is Satan's ideology. This is an example of Satan's lie that men and women can interchange.

Fields says she was interviewed by Diane Sawyer, one of the most famous women in the media, saying, "… we talked about the importance of women being able to fuse competency and femininity. She looked at me with wide blue eyes and asked, 'But isn't femininity what women have to leave behind?'"

"That may have been the public feminist position of the time, but I gave a resounding 'No' even then. No one uses her femininity better than Diane Sawyer." This is a good example of how difficult it is to sort out what is true and what is false. Those on the right like Suzanne Fields are sometimes correct and sometimes false. In this case she is just rationalizing her own life of working outside the home. Sawyer was right in saying femininity is diminished in working women. Fields doesn't want to see the truth because it hurts. Just because Fields thinks women can work and be feminine doesn't make it the truth. The truth is what Helen Andelin writes when she explains how women lose femininity when they take jobs away from men in the marketplace like Fields and Sawyer do. Either Helen Andelin is right or Suzanne Fields is right. One speaks for God and the other speaks for Satan. Mrs. Andelin writes that women in the workplace, "… lack an air of frail dependency upon men. They are too capable and independent to stir a man's sentiments. The air of being able to kill their own snakes is just what destroys the charm of so

many business and professional women. The kind of woman a man wants is first an angelic being whom he can adore as better than himself, and second a helpless creature whom he would like to gather up in his arms and cherish and protect forever."

What is true femininity? Mrs. Andelin defines it this way:

> In the feminine nature there's a kind of weakness, softness, and delicateness. The feminine woman is inclined to be trustful, adaptable, and fearful, with tender emotions for the innocent and the suffering. In addition, she has a spirit of sweet submission, and a dependency upon men for their care and protection. There is no male aggressiveness, no masculine strength or ability.
>
> This feminine nature sharply defines the difference between men and women, enhancing their attraction for one another. We should be grateful for this difference, and try in every way to preserve it. For generations various cultures of people have recognized and appreciated the difference. Hence comes the expression "Vive la difference!" or in English, "Long live the difference!"
>
> The feminine nature awakens a man's chivalry for a woman, his impulse to protect her and provide for her. Don't think that chivalry is an imposition on a man. One of the most pleasant sensations a real man can experience is his consciousness of the power to give his manly power and protection. Rob him of this sensation of superior strength and ability and you rob him of his manliness. A man delights in protecting and sheltering a feminine, dependent woman.

She goes on to say: "What happens when the average red-blooded man comes in contact with an obviously able, intellectual, and competent woman, manifestly independent of any help a mere man can give, and capable of meeting him or defeating him on his own ground? He simply doesn't feel like a man any longer. In the presence of such strength and ability in a mere woman he feels like a futile, ineffectual imitation of a man. It is one of the most uncomfortable and humiliating sensations a man can experience." Real men feel uncomfortable in the presence of women who lead men in the marketplace. Weak, effeminate feminist men say they like these woman but deep down they don't. They are not in touch with their true masculinity and think they are being respectful to women by encouraging them to fulfil their potential. Women cannot fulfil their potential by competing with and leading men.

Suzanne Fields had children. She is older and married in a time that was more traditional. Sawyer is younger and so many like her never had children because of the focus it takes to be successful in the workplace. Diane Sawyer never had children. How can Fields say Sawyer is feminine when Sawyer is barren? Condelezza Rice rose to become the Secretary of State in the Republican administration of George W. Bush. She has never married and is barren. When women work they usually have fewer babies than those women who do not leave home to work. My goal in writing this book is to help you discriminate between what is true and what is false. If we are to achieve peace in our families and between nations it is imperative that we understand Satan's strategy to destroy true masculinity and true femininity. These women are "disorderly" as Tocqueville writes in his masterpiece *Democracy in America*.

At the Web site for Women's Federation for World Peace (www.wfwp.us) we read:

> Between 1995 and 1998, we have launched scholarship programs for girls in Bangladesh, and Cameroon, and Foster Parent Program and later, Peace High School for girls in Uganda as well as Vocational Training Schools for girls in Senegal and Rwanda.
>
> In the case of Bangladesh and Cameroon, where we started scholarship programs

> for girls, both countries have Islamic religion and cultural values, which has a tendency to guide women to engage only in domestic affairs. This circumstance can be seen in some other Islamic countries as well. The scholarships go to girls who are high-achieving students, yet cannot continue studying because they are from poor families. The total number of scholarship recipients is 160 students in Bangladesh and 50 students in Cameroon since the inception of the scholarship program.
>
> We believe those girls will contribute to the promotion of social evolution by becoming medical doctors or lawyers in the near future.

Evolution is changing from lower to higher. It is not "social evolution" when girls become lawyers. It is Satan's plan to emasculate men and discourage girls from having a big family. It is wrong to encourage girls to work outside the home. They should be focusing on helping men become providers for their families and some of those men will become lawyers. No woman should become a lawyer.

Women's Federation has a written value statement titled "What We Believe." They write:

> We believe that both men and women are created in the image of God, are equal in value and should be free to contribute their unique perspectives to leadership in the larger society.
>
> We believe women of all nations are entitled to recognition of their true value. We support women's desires to take leadership in society and reject practices in which women are oppressed or discriminated against.

My wife responds to these words by saying, "These women are being digested by the current feminist culture. They should read Father and pray seriously about the direction of their value statement. God can't support it."

My wife and I think it is unprincipled for a past president of the American branch of WFWP, Alexa Ward, to say in an interview (definingmoment.tv) that if 50 percent or more women were elected officials then there would be no war because women have so much "heart." What about the "heart" of the million men who have died in America's wars to keep her free so she can put men down as warmongers. The mantra of mindless Unificationists using the word "heart" and discounting serious intellectual arguments is sentimental nonsense like Chamberlain dealing with Hitler. We are in a cultural war with homosexuals and in a war of religion with Islam. You can hold all the bridge ceremonies you want and prattle about how "heart" is more important than ideas but it is the *Divine Principle*, the truth, that will set us free by guiding our emotions. The road to hell is paved with good intentions.

The second president of the American WFWP, Angelika Selle, says in a video at their website (2012) that WFWP is not a feminist organization and then says their goal is to get women to be two-thirds of all leaders in all areas of life. In a speech titled "Tune In to Tune Up" given in Montreal, Canada in 2012 posted online at http://vimeo.com/35512751 she said that WFWP is "encouraging women to take leadership in all areas of society from the arts to business to education. We see this happening. Women presidents. It will continue and if we have 2/3rds women leadership there will be peace!" Where is the logic in this? First, if Americans voluntarily elect only around 15 to 20% women to the U.S. Congress why would they vote 66% to lead and why would the nations of the world elect 66% women to lead their nations? This may work if the legislatures made it a quota by law and forced the issue but it seems a lot to think that the world will vote for so many women voluntarily. I'm not saying they may not because feminism grows stronger every day but that is a massive change in voting. And, second, even if voters put a majority of women in leadership politically how could anyone know what these women would do?

There are women leaders of nations and in congresses and parliaments and they do not all agree. Margaret Thatcher went to war when she was Prime Minister of England. She was conservative. There have been women presidents who were liberals and some have even been socialists. WFWP should also say they only want conservative women, not just women in general. I think it will take a lot more to achieve world peace than just getting women in political leadership. I also believe politicians should serve only one term so for the tiny few women out of the billions on earth these few women would be there just briefly. Also, I believe in Austrian Economics so there is very little for politicians to do. All they will do is determine how force will be used. Is this what women want to do? Determine how the military will be used? Father is not into politics because it is destined to fade away. The legislature of state of Texas meets every other year and the session lasts for 140 days. Even for men, politics should not be made any kind of emphasis in life.

In The *Flipside of Feminism: What Conservative Women Know—and Men Can't Say* Suzanne Venker and Phyllis Schlafly write that it is not even in most women's nature to seek positions of power in the marketplace. 99% of women are not interested in climbing the corporate ladder. They write in their must read book against feminism:

> No man or woman rises to high-income ranks on a forty-hour week. Ask any successful doctor, lawyer, or business executive. They have spent years working nights and weekend, bringing home briefcases bulging with work and serving clients or customers in a steady stream outside of office hours. These folks have paid a big price for their career and financial success. … There are fewer female politicians for the same reason. … Most women have no desire to do the work necessary to win elections—drive thousands of miles, shake hundreds of strangers' hands, eat third-rate chicken suppers, and attend political meetings every night and weekend. And most women certainly don't want to subject themselves to political attacks that impugn their integrity and probe into their personal lives and finances. … Much to feminists' dismay, most women with children—if they work outside the home at all—work part-time. And they like it that way. Their lives bear no resemblance to the lives of congresswomen, or doctors, or lawyers, or CEOs.

WORLDWIDE MATRIARCHY

God works in mysterious ways and I'm open to exceptions to rules. Maybe if the *Divine Principle* swept the earth and the majority of people become Unificationists then they might vote women in as a majority and that will bring world peace. I just don't see this as some kind of goal. If so many people were Unificationists then why wouldn't men be elected? And I question how successful the Unification Movement will be if they make their goal to push women into political leadership as a strategy to change the world. Angelika admires Elizabeth Cady Stanton who said, "We are, as a sex, infinitely superior to men." Many feminists go further than campaigning for equality and say female is superior to male and we should counter the history of patriarchy with a matriarchy where a majority of women in leadership in every area of life will bring happy marriages and world peace because women are more peaceful and men are more violent. Stanton said, "Men need refining. Let woman fulfill her God-like mission. She is nobler, purer, better than man." I don't see Angelika with a plan to accomplish this goal of worldwide matriarchy. Making a goal of worldwide matriarchy is a feminist dream but I believe it fights human nature and common sense and therefore is doomed to fail. Angelika Selle completely undermines and misrepresents Sun Myung Moon.

MILLIONS OF GRANDCHILDREN FROM THEIR OWN LINEAGE

Father says world peace will come naturally when there are so many Blessed Marriages and Families that world leaders will not feel like attacking other countries. He says the UM: "will be in the vanguard of carrying out the great revolution of restoring the original lineage of humanity back

to that of Adam before the Fall through the International and Cross-cultural Marriage Blessing held on the interreligious and international level. Some may laugh and say that it is impossible. Yet, if it is God's will, there will be a way. What do you think will happen if people from the United States and Russia marry across the boundaries of their nationalities through the international and cross-cultural Marriage Blessing, according to the teachings of Rev. Moon, who is doing God's work? The two nations will belong to one family under God, the eternal, absolute Lord of all creation. How could anyone harbor antagonism toward, much less point weapons at, a nation which many millions of grandchildren from their own lineage make their home?" (3-17-2007) Father says, "Some may laugh and say that it is impossible" but it is inevitable there will be world peace because truth wins out in the end and his teachings are the truth that will save mankind and sooner or later every person will accept the Divine Principle as their theology and they will organize their lives by Father's words.

I mention some traditionalist, anti-feminists in this book. One of them is Jennie Chancey. Mrs. Chancey speaks the exact opposite of Mrs. Selle. Jennie Chancey is for patriarchy and Angelika Selle is for matriarchy. One is of God and the other is of Satan.

JENNIE CHANCEY VS. ANGELIKA SELLE

Jennie Chancey says in the documentary *The Monstrous Regiment of Women* (you can see her talk at an excerpt from the *Monstrous Regiment* video at YouTube.com. YouTube also has the full documentary), "The bottom line is God created men for leadership. And he clearly tells us in his Word that when women are in leadership it's a sign of a curse on a nation. That doesn't mean women are dummies and women aren't capable of leadership in their own sphere. I lead my children every day with the things that we do in our home. There are areas where I am a leader but I was not created by God to lead a country." Either Angelika Selle is right or Jennie Chancey is right. I side with Mrs. Chancey. She wrote the book titled *Passionate Housewives: Desperate for God* with her friend, Stacy McDonald. Jennie has 8 children and Stacy has 10 children. Mrs. McDonald begins by dedicating her book "To my beloved, James, the loving head of our home—the patriarch of our family. You have shown me in living color the picture of a godly servant-leader. You are my knight in shining armor, and you give all the more reason to be 'passionate' about being a housewife. I love you." Check out Jennie's website www. Ladiesagainstfeminism.com and her blog at http://passionatehousewives.blogspot.com. Dear Unificationist sisters, you have a choice to make. Either believe in Jennie Chancey when you see her on the video *Monstrous Regiment of Women* say that men should lead women or you can believe in Angelika Selle when you see her in videos say that women should lead men. Women who preach for matriarchy often promote birth control and have fewer children than those who promote patriarchy. In Jin Moon pushed for matriarchy for the three years she was President of the UC. Like so many feminists who do not see their husband as the head of their home and see themselves in a submissive role she destroyed her marriage. The atmosphere around feminists fosters the breakdown of the family. If Angelika believes that women should lead in all areas of society then they should lead in the area of the family. When women at the WFWP will talk like Stacy McDonald and say their husband is "head of our home—the patriarch of our family" like she does then the WFWP will be doing God's will and will grow internally and externally.

The campaign of sisters in WFWP to get women to be politicians and therefore lead men in the public sphere is satanic. They are dupes of Satan. I don't have the space to go into all the arguments against WFWP's crusade to emasculate men in politics. Here are a few quick ideas against Women's Federation's president's anti-intellectual stand on "heart" over "ideas." If her dream that America had a majority of its politicians women had been in effect when America went to war with Japan in World War II then would those women have voted against it just as Congresswoman Jeannette Rankin did? She was the only person to vote against war. There were

women congresswomen then who didn't agree with Rankin and voted for a war of defense in 1941. Margaret Thatcher went to war. She sent other women's young sons to war and to die. Does our WFWP president mean that if women in every nation were the majority of leaders then there would be no war? How is that going to happen? Patriarchy has been the rule all of human history. A matriarchal society has never existed and it never will. Men will always be the dominate leaders in any field. Women's Federation's goal of a worldwide matriarchy goes against human nature. Women should be zero percent of elected leaders. WFWP should work to get women who are now leaders over men in politics, business and the church to resign. It's time for Unificationists to have a real plan for world peace instead of the brainless mush of feminism from the leaders of Women's Federation for World Peace who are doing the opposite of strengthening families and the nation. Their actions and deeds encourage world war, not peace.

The problem with brief mission statements is that the words are not defined. Mission statements need a lengthy and detailed written value statement that elaborates in clear language exactly what the goal is. In the statement by the Unificationist women above they do not go into detail on just what "discrimination" means. For example, suppose a woman is an atheist and doesn't believe that Sun Myung Moon is the messiah. Can the women's federation discriminate her from holding leadership? What if she is a member but immoral? What does Women's Federation mean by discrimination? Don't we discriminate in choosing a mate's religion when we decide to marry? Most Unificationists want to marry someone of the same faith. If a man wants to marry a Unificationist and she says no because he is not a fellow believer, is he being "discriminated against." Does the Women's Federation believe in affirmative action that discriminates in favor of minorities? I don't believe Unificationists should support affirmative action legislation that forces employers to hire a quota of women. Where does Women's Federation really stand on this important issue?

Are there any exceptions to their rule that women cannot be discriminated against? For example if a woman has a physical handicap of being blind and an employer does not hire her has she been "discriminated against"? What if she is physically impaired and has to stay in a wheel chair? What if she is deaf? What if the employer feels she is not physically strong enough to do the job? There has been a tremendous amount of legislation and court cases about women who sued and received millions of dollars because they said they were discriminated against. Where does Women's Federation stand on this?

The reality is that women have been freely thrown together with men and everyone seems to be shocked when women get raped and murdered. They are shocked when they find out some women like to have sex at work with men. If you put men and women together at work, at camps, on fundraising teams, at boot camps, on Navy ships, in police cars and in dorms then some will have sex. Just as abstinence is 100% safe so is keeping men and women separated.

Unificationists need to be deeply intelligent people who have a thought through philosophy of life that is universal for every person. Women's Federation needs to be crystal clear on what they believe in. There should be no misunderstanding on what their values are and how we decide what is right and wrong in families and in society. Where does Women's Federation stand on political issues like discrimination? I don't know. I do not see any links at their website that take you to an in depth analysis of discrimination or anything else that people debate and fight for in the world. These women need to sit down and write down a principled blueprint for women that will be studied in classrooms and talked about at dinner tables.

WFWP is wrong in thinking it is part of the solution to world poverty by spending money on focusing on what they call the "empowerment of women." They are wrong in sending Unificationist sisters from wealthy nations to go to poor nations and start projects such as vocational schools for girls and projects that are "designed to help women become self-reliant." At

their website they write that they are for "character education or education of values and principles." What values? What principles? Satan teaches that women are to provide for their families. God wants women to be taught that men provide for women. Helping women to earn money breaks the spirit of men and destabilizes families.

WFWP should teach traditional family values. This means they should teach the core value of patriarchy. Women and girls should be taught they are not supposed to become lawyers and own businesses. They are not supposed to hold positions of power in government. Women and girls are to be dependent upon men, not independent. The focus on eradicating poverty is to do first things first. The emphasis should be on going to the root of the problem. That means we need to educate the world about godly patriarchy in the home and in society. The first thing we need to do is raise men to be providers, protectors and leaders of their families and nations. The primary focus is getting men and boys into vocational training and teaching them true family values. Men need to be taught that socialism is a key reason there is so much poverty in their countries.

The largest women's organization in America is Concerned Women for America. At their website (www.cwfa.org) women write about the hotly debated issues of the day. The founder, Mrs. Beverly LaHaye has written books about marriage and family. Does Women's Federation agree with her love of the traditional family? Do they agree with her stand on the political issues of the day? It is imperative that Unificationist leaders write down a blueprint for the Kingdom of God and convert Mrs. LaHaye with their brilliant logic and practical vision. Phyllis Schlafly at her website www.eagleforum.org for her influential organization of women writes extensively on many controversial issues. She has written many books. Has any Unificationist sister at the Unification Church written a book giving guidance to this hurting world? I haven't seen any that tackle the controversial issues of the day and give a clearly explained ideology of universal values and goals based on Father's words. Let's match and excel Mrs. LaHaye's and Mrs. Schlafly's books, websites and organization. Mrs. Schlafly is famous for leading the fight against the satanic Equal Rights Amendment. Where does Women's Federation or Family Federation stand on the E.R.A? Are they for or against the Amendment? This is crucial to an understanding of the topic of discrimination.

The Women's Federation vaguely talks about women being oppressed and discriminated against. To help understand the concept of discrimination let's look at two women who should have been discriminated against—Cynthia Hall and Jessica Lynch. Cynthia and Jessica had jobs that required them to learn how to use a gun against evil men. Cynthia was a cop and Jessica was a soldier. A lot of tax payer's money was spent on teaching them how to fight in hand-to-hand combat. The job description of a police officer and soldier is to wrestle bad guys and shoot them if necessary. Because of the politically incorrect Orwellian atmosphere feminists have created men are falling all over themselves to not lose their job and being sued by praising women who carry guns and get paid to protect our communities and nation. If they say anything critical about a woman who can't do the job they will not only be fired, they will be taken to court and fined millions of dollars. This is the *1984* we live in. Where does Women's Federation stand on this?

Jessica Lynch and Cynthia Hall are little women. But even if they were big and strong Women's Federation should be for them being discriminated against. It's not just physical strength that is needed in many jobs but it is a mental strength too. Men have different kinds of brains and are wired very differently than women. No woman should have a job in which she is expected to carry a gun and use her fists in fighting evil men. Cops, firefighters and soldiers should be young men who are physically fit and have an aggressive, fighting spirit. I don't think they should be married because it would be too stressful for a wife.

Jessica Lynch was gang raped after being captured in the Iraq War. Cynthia was beaten up as she fought a prisoner she was escorting. To put women into harm's way is the mark of an uncivilized

country. Men today are not only weak but they are immoral and stupid for applauding women who protect them. We should not praise women who go into dangerous situations and get hurt. We should feel sorry for them and sorry that their fathers and brothers encourage women to act like men. These women are role models for Satan. I find it tragic that America is spending billions of dollars and putting so many men and women in harm's way in Iraq and Afghanistan to fight for freedom but allowed those countries to write constitutions that says Islam is the state religion. Islamic countries have a history of not allowing the Bible into their countries. What is the point of being in these countries when we allow their constitutions to guarantee a quota of 25 percent of the seats in parliament to be female legislators? Some of these women have been assassinated. There is around 15 percent women in the American congress? The Constitutions of Iraq and Afghanistan are Socialist/feminist. They are completely opposite of the American Constitution. Because of this I don't believe American soldiers should be there. There may be a case for the initial invasion to these countries but when we let them write these horrible Constitutions then there is no reason to be there and no reason to give them foreign aid.

CYNTHIA HALL

Let's look at Cynthia Hall. I'm sure she is a nice person and thinks she is doing a good thing being a cop. I'm sure her family and the mayor of Atlanta, Georgia think her being a cop is just wonderful and shows how mankind has progressed. This is not how God looks at it. Women protecting men is a violation of God's values. Cynthia Hall was a 51-year old single mother who weighed around 100 pounds and stood around 5 feet tall. She was assigned to escort a prisoner who was over 200 pounds and 6 foot one. He was going to go before a judge and in preparation she took him to a room so he could change from his prison clothes to civilian clothes. After he changed he fought for her gun. He overpowered her, grabbed her gun and hit her head with such force she spent time in the hospital in critical condition. He then went on to use her gun and kill the judge, the court reporter and two other people until he was finally captured a day later. This was big news in America. The picture shown America of him being captured shows him being escorted by a thin police woman while he is handcuffed and surrounded by many men with guns. The obvious point of making sure they choose a woman cop to hold his arm was to make it known that women should be cops.

The court reporter, Julie Ann Brandau, had been a court reporter for 25 years. She was known as a nice person who baked cookies for the jury. She should have been home baking healthy cookies for her children or other children instead. Julie should have been in a safe place. The men in the lives of Cynthia Hall and Julie Ann Brandau were not protecting and providing for them.

There was no public outcry against women being cops after this happened. There was no statement from any minister or politician or professor against this ridiculous idea that women protect society against violent men. I saw only a few comments against the idea that Cynthia Hall was alone with this crazy man from a few people on the Web but no one I read thought women in general should not be cops. The analysis by some was illogical. It went something like this — Women are good for the atmosphere of the police force. Men cops shouldn't frisk women so there has to be women in all squad cars. Most men and many male cops could not have fought off this criminal so it doesn't matter the size and strength of cops. He should have been handcuffed the whole time so it doesn't matter if the person escorting him was small and feminine. There are endless trivial ideas on how people think they can make it functional to have women working with men. There was some talk about how it was common sense to not put Cynthia with a big prisoner but where is the logic to this? If women are cops they are going to be in harm's way. If they are riding around in a squad car they will have to deal with violent men. They can't pick and choose when they will do the job of using force to subdue a man. You can't have your cake and eat it too. We have to take logic to its conclusion and the only conclusion is that women have no right to be in dangerous places like the police force or the courthouse.

The bottom line is that feminism is to blame for the madness we live in. Feminists have blood on their hands for the needless deaths and torture of so many men and women. Cynthia and Julie are victims of the ideology of Marx, Engels, Stanton, and Gloria Steinem. Their sexual revolution has been a success. Now men don't care for women anymore. They want women to lead, provide and protect them. We have hit rock bottom. If anyone challenges the lunacy of feminism they are denounced with passion and anger by the mob. We now have Commander-in-Chiefs that encourage women to be military police (MP's). This is what normalcy is in the Last Days. Why isn't the President of the Unification Church and the President of Women's Federation on talk shows denouncing this cruel treatment of women and demanding that we discriminate against women?

In his autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*, Father says this about WFWP:

> Throughout history, women have been persecuted, but I predict this will change. The coming world will be one of reconciliation and peace based on women's maternal character, love and sociability. The time is coming when the power of women will save the world.
>
> Unfortunately today, many women's organizations apparently believe that standing in opposition to men is the way to demonstrate the power of women. The result is an environment of competition and conflict. The women's organizations my wife leads, on the other hand, seek to bring peace on the principle that women should work together, take initiative, and empower one another across traditional lines of race, culture, and religion to create healthy families as the cornerstone of the culture of peace.
>
> The organization she works with do not call for a liberation of women from men and families. Instead, they call for women to develop and maintain families filled with love. My wife's dream is to see all women raised as true daughters with filial hearts who can create peace at home, in our communities, in our nations, and in the world. The women's movement being carried out by my wife serves the goal of true families, which are the root of peace in all areas of life.

I believe Father clearly says that the goal of WFWP is to create great families. He says nothing about women competing and dominating men. He teaches that women should not be in opposition to men and compete with men.

The ideology that demeans women and destroys civilization is feminism. Feminism is insanity. Michael Savage is correct in saying that "Liberalism is a Mental Disorder". *The Liberal Mind: The Psychological Causes of Political Madness* by Lyle H. Rossiter, Jr. is an excellent book showing how irrational and infantile liberals are. Check out his website www.libertymind.com.

Only men should lead in the home, church and society. This means, for example, that no sister has leadership in the movement over men and has no titles such as State Leader or Reverend and no sister runs for political office. Women can hold leadership in women's organizations. Father says, "A man who takes my words seriously cannot help but become a leader in society. The women will lead women's groups and you men will lead your town or society." (10-1-97)

If Women's Federation (WFWPU) were of God they would be teaching women to be objects instead of repeating the Fall and dominating men. Father speaks strongly against women dominating men: "Some women seek to satisfy their sexual needs but then go out and try to take the plus position in everything again. As soon as a man tries to take dominion over them, they immediately reject him.

"That has to change. I would like to see those American women who join the Unification Church igniting and leading the revolution here in America to make new American women" (1-2-83).

DISCRIMINATION

Women's Federation says they are against discrimination. The Unites States federal government has a law called the Civil Rights Act of 1964 "which prohibits employment discrimination based on race, color, religion, sex, or national origin." This is a false law that even the federal government violates. Let's be very careful about the words we use. Can a man be president of Women's Federation? Of course not. Women's Federation discriminates against men leadership in its organization. There is a magazine called *Ebony* that only has black people on the cover. No one thinks this is wrong but what if someone had a magazine called *Ivory*? The owners of *Ebony* have the right to discriminate on race and so should anyone else even if we don't like their racism. Father says we should have interracial marriages and international marriages but he has blessed many white Americans with white Americans. If we advocate that there be no discrimination of women then employers cannot discriminate for women either. There are many jobs that women cannot and will not do. Feminists have taken businesses to court to force them to put women in positions that only men should fill. If Women's Federation were a true organization is would change its value statement and say that women should not hold leadership over men and that women should be discriminated against sometimes.

Feminists work to get women into nontraditional jobs like fishing. They deny human nature and divine nature in their quixotic crusade. The following quote by Father illustrates his thinking that men are to do the hard work in the world such as being fishermen and women should understand that and be supportive: "There is a vast treasure lying in the sea, waiting to be harvested by our hands, but right now the American fishing industry is dying because American young people do not like the hard work of going out to sea. When they go out to sea for three months, they return to find that their wives have left them and their money has been squandered and they never want to go out to sea again. If they are not married then still they are not interested in going out because sometimes the weather is so brutal. You women who marry fishermen must be proud of them for working for God and mankind." ("Perfection and Gratitude" October 3, 1976)

The United Nations women's rights treaty is called the Convention on the Elimination of All Forms of Discrimination Against Women. Most nations have signed it. Conservatives in the U.S. Senate have kept America from signing it—so far. It is an evil document. One feminist website says, "In an effort to help women around the world reach full equality with men, nearly 170 countries have ratified the United Nation's Convention on the Elimination of All Forms of Discrimination Against Women, a groundbreaking treaty that outlines a clear definition of discrimination against women and includes specific measures that nations must take to eliminate gender-based bias."

All forms of discrimination? How about the roofing industry? Should owners of roofing businesses be forced to hire 50% women at roofers? Roofers discriminate and in the real world of common sense women don't want the job.

They write, "Discrimination of any kind is unacceptable, and any strides that we as a society can make to eradicate inequity must be taken. Our country's ratification of this important treaty is long overdue." Let's support those Republicans that are holding out against signing it. The tide so far is on the side of feminists, and Unificationists should be outspoken in fighting these kinds of socialist crusades.

"Discrimination against women is unacceptable. Discrimination against women is a major obstacle to their full participation in all areas of life." Women are not supposed to "participate in all areas of life."

Socialist/feminists constantly use the word "stereotypes." The treaty says, "Article 10: Obligates countries ... to eliminate stereotyped concepts of the roles of men and women." Unificationists should lead the way to uplift biblical concepts of masculinity and femininity.

The treaty says that governments should "end discrimination on the grounds of marriage or maternity." Businesses should have the right to discriminate because a female employee gets pregnant—even if they want to discriminate in their favor. John Leo correctly wrote in one of his newspaper columns (June 24, 2002) titled "U.N. Women's right treaty should be ignored":

> Once again the push is on for the Senate to ratify CEDAW, the U.N.'s women's rights treaty that has been hanging around since 1979. CEDAW is the Convention on the Elimination of Discrimination Against Women.
>
> There's a good reason why the Senate has ignored it for a generation: It's an incredibly toxic document, the work of international bureaucrats determined to impose a worldwide makeover of family relations and 'gender roles.' CEDAW is a blueprint for foisting the West's radical feminism on every nation gullible enough to sign on. (Talk about cultural imperialism.)
>
> CEDAW is a more perverse version of American radical feminism, circa 1975: It bristles with contempt for family, motherhood, religion and tradition. Parents and the family don't count. The state will watch out for children's rights. The treaty extends access to contraception and abortion to very young girls, and imposes 'gender studies' on the schools and feminist-approved textbooks on students.
>
> CEDAW reflects the rising importance of international conferences and the United Nations' nongovernmental organizations (NGOs). CEDAW bureaucrats constantly monitor and hector the world's nations to comply.
>
> Unificationists should fight against these kinds of tactics in the United Nations but instead the WFWP issued a statement to the UN in Geneva in July of 2011 endorsing the CEDAW. In their unprincipled feminist statement they wrote, "Girls who have come only expect their influence to remain in the home, have not been made aware that it is their human right to enjoy, participate and influence the political life of their communities." They said that the idea of "woman's place is in the home" is a "deterrent to girls choosing careers." The WFWP is not of God.

In 2011 at the website for Women's Federation for World Peace (wfwp.org) they wrote that the WFWP is a "UN NGO" and they clearly support the agenda of the liberal United Nation's effort to get women to earn money and take leadership in society. The head of the women's division of the United Nations called UN Women is led by the former president of Chile Michelle Bachelet. She is a socialist who pushed for big government programs like health care and government daycare centers when she was president. She made sure there was 50% women in many positions of her government. She is dedicated to "gender equality and the empowerment of women." She is a disaster and the Unificationist women in WFWP who support her feminist agenda at the UN are dupes of Satan. At their website www.wfwp.org these confused Unificationist women wrote that the 20th century was led by men who did not create world peace and the 21st century will be led by women who will create "an era of transition from 'History' to 'Herstory'." They pledge that the WFWP will "offer support for the financial independence of women." Women should be dependent financially on men. A cornerstone of feminism is to get women to not need men and be financially independent. WFWP should be teaching girls the values in *Fascinating Womanhood* instead of the values in *The Feminine Mystique* that they are doing now.

If we take the women's crusade for total equality to its end conclusion then the Olympics would not discriminate as it does and separate men and women. Instead of the high jump for men and for women there would be only one. How many women would win the gold medal? Women would

not even make it to the Olympics. Women cannot compete with men physically and they can't compete with men in the marketplace. Men cannot compete with women in the home. Men aren't designed by God to care for babies and do the ironing in the home.

Unificationists need to embrace the idea of the right for people to discriminate. If we support those efforts to ban things we think are bad, then eventually we will be banned as well. Sisters, don't be seduced by arguments that we should legislate against discrimination of women. If businesses want to hire only men or clubs want to be male only then they should have that right. If a business wants to pay single moms more than single men who have no children for doing the same job then that business should have that right and not be regulated by force from the government to force the business to pay each the same wage.

If the Republican Party has a woman as a candidate for public office, we cannot vote for her. It is better to write in the name of a man we feel is best qualified to lead. Women in politics is a sign of the weakness of men who have abdicated their responsibility to be in charge. Let's stop encouraging such organizations as the National Federation of Republican Women who work to get conservative women into government positions of power.

Conservative women's place is in the home, not being politicians in charge of the police force. Don't you think it is the height of insanity for a woman to put on the pants of a police officer and strap a gun to her waist? What is rational about a woman cop driving in a squad car and chasing criminal men? Some women cops are beaten to a pulp. Is women fighting men the epitome of madness? I think so. But what I write is not politically correct. I am not a feminist/socialist. It used to be that women were discriminated against and not allowed to be a police officer. Now, it is seen as progress for women. Women were denied freedom to be a cop and now fathers encourage their daughters to be police officers and battle bad guys. We now have women politicians leading women police chiefs who lead men cops. Fallen man sees this as the advancement of civilization.

By definition a politician such as the Mayor of a city is an executive who can direct the police to maintain order. Police deal with guns and force. How do we define femininity? What is masculinity and what is femininity deals with the ultimate core value. If our core value is that men protect women then we will fight those who believe the opposite. Who is fighting for women to protect men? It is the feminists. Many men are feminists who believe equality means sameness. The words of Sun Myung Moon seem to me to say that women are made by God to be weaker than men and that only men go to war. Police go to war everyday against criminals who are usually men. Some of these men are ruthless killers. Police officers are trained to fight them in hand-to-hand combat and if necessary shoot them. Is it the role of women to protect men by being cops? When a burglar enters a home, does the husband and wife flip a coin to see who is going to go check it out? If the wife is a cop does she go 100% of the time because she is trained to fight and kill? It is unnatural for a woman to protect men and if we follow that logic then it is unnatural for women to be politicians who lead cops.

The primary job of politicians at the federal level such as the President and those in Congress is to defend America from our enemies. Until 2013 It is illegal for women to be in combat in the U.S. Army. But it was seen as good that women in Congress can determine when, where and how our armed services will fight. There is absolutely no logic to the idea that women should not be in combat but can determine when men go into combat.

The number one job of the President is to be Commander-in-Chief. He sends our troops to fight knowing that some will die. He strategizes with generals and admirals. It would be unprincipled and dangerous to the security of America to have a woman Commander-in-Chief. I am writing in this value statement that women have no place being in charge of the police or military. A value

system should be based on God's point of view, not fallen man's point of view. Does God want women to lead men? Does God want women to be police officers? I draw a line and say with confidence that God wants men to protect women. God does not want women to lead men to war against bad guys. Only men lead men to war. A woman's place is in her house, not in the House of Representatives.

There should be no women in the military. Even the nurses should be men. Soldiers should not be distracted with women working around them or with them. They are our warriors protecting us. Women in the military weakens the military. There are countless movies by Hollywood portraying women warriors. One of the worst is *Mulan* by Disney. It is a politically correct animated film that indoctrinates millions of children about a girl who disguises herself as an Army soldier in order to save her family's honor and ends up saving China. Movies like this are theological statements. They tell girls "you can do anything."

Nicholas Davidson writes, "The sheer insanity of the feminist program—and the extent to which it is now established as a social norm—is most glaringly apparent in the military. In 1970, the U.S. military was slightly over 1 per cent female; today it is over 15 per cent female. (By contrast, the Soviet forces are 0.2 per cent female.) Because women are too weak physically to cope with the ordinary tasks of soldiering, standards of training have been lowered. Only 3 per cent of female soldiers are strong enough to accomplish the routine heavy tasks, like carrying ammunition boxes, that are essential in combat. At any given moment, 10 per cent of military women are pregnant, and a comparable number are nursing infants. In a modern war, with its lack of a front line, any soldier is likely to be called upon to fight. American men are evidently content to let young women with babies fight on their behalf."

Brian Mitchell's *Weak Link: The Feminization of the American Military* explains how women's presence in the military, "inhibits male bonding, corrupts allegiance to the hierarchy, and diminishes the desire of men to compete for anything but the attentions of women." A reviewer of his book wrote, "*In Weak Link: The Feminization of the American Military*, army veteran Brian Mitchell argues that women have had a profoundly disruptive and negative effect on the fighting capabilities of the American armed forces. Mitchell shows how the service academies have had their morale, traditions, and standards shattered by the enrollment of women."

Because women are in the military, men have to be extremely careful in how they treat women because women sometimes falsely accuse them of harassment. This takes away the focus on being warriors. Elaine Donnelly worked to prevent feminists from getting women into combat. She says, "You don't cross the feminists if you want a future. That's a career-killer in today's armed forces." See *The New Thought Police: Inside the Left's Assault on Free Speech and Free Minds* by Tammy Bruce.

Father says, "Who is higher, the father, mother, son or daughter? Of course the father is. Between the mother and son, who is higher? This problem will be a historic problem for the world in future family education. In the Eastern tradition, a woman has to excuse her presence when her husband and son are discussing national or world affairs. When told to leave the room, how annoyed she must feel. This is Oriental philosophy. Why does she not stage a demonstration? The man is the seed and the woman is the field. The father, and not the mother, is connected to the seed. Therefore, when the seeds meet to discuss important matters, it is not a right of the field to lend a helping hand." (*Sun Myung Moon's Philosophy of Education*) "Women are your fields. Go, then, into your fields as you please" (Koran 2:233).

We learn in the *Divine Principle* that Satan rules this world and we teach that this is the Last Days when Satan creates the most confusion. Father says, "...there is no true concept of man and woman, plus and minus. That is why people could live like animals and experience so much

confusion. We see so much moral confusion now at the last days: free sex, the 'gay rights' movement, and so forth. All these activities are being led by Satan and evil spirits" (4-1-89). The Lord of the Second Advent came in the 20th century and that century was the worst in history. If Satan is the ruler of this world then what is Satan's ideology? Nicholas Davidson wrote an article in the *National Review* (5/31/1989) titled "The Myths of Feminism" saying, "Feminism has successfully ensconced itself as the national philosophy of gender. In consequence, economic and cultural warfare against traditional sex roles virtually defines gender policy today."

Who has written Satan's core values? What is the ruling philosophy of life in America? It is the core values written in the socialist/feminist's books of such writers as Marx, Engels, Elizabeth Cady Stanton, Susan B. Anthony and Betty Friedan's *The Feminine Mystique*. The most popular magazine for men in the twentieth century was *Playboy* magazine by Hugh Hefner. The Playboy Philosophy he writes is an attack on biblical values. Satan's ambassadors have been successful in creating complete chaos. Their rules of life are accepted as normal. If anyone says differently they are mocked and scorned as dangerous and insane. We live in a world where our children see the breasts of Hollywood stars on television in their home such as Janet Jackson did at the Super Bowl. We live in a world where we have women mayors of cities being the boss of a woman chief of police who is the boss of women cops who ride alone in a cop car in the middle of the night looking for evil men to fight who are all stronger than her. We truly live in an insane world.

What I write is common sense and logical. God wants women to teach their sons that it is their duty to protect women. God does not want women to send their sons to schools that teach their sons feminism, and God does not want women to leave their homes and kill evil men or lead men to kill evil men. We have two choices in what core values we live by. Either we believe God is behind Betty Friedan or Helen Andelin. Either we believe Hugh Hefner's words are the truth or we believe Aubrey Andelin's words are the truth. Either we believe the Bible or *The Communist Manifesto*. We have a Cain/Abel choice in the books we use to educate our children. I list many books I feel are on God's side. I could list many more. There are many books on Satan's side. Unificationists are called by God to be teachers. Teachers use books. There are many books of Father's words. But we don't only use his books to educate our children. Unificationists have written books and articles. Are our words on the Abel or Cain side? Do we teach traditional values or feminist values? I am anti-feminist. I am anti-communist. I am pro-traditionalist. I am pro-capitalist. One side teaches chaos and leads people to pain. The other side teaches order and leads people to happiness. Helen Andelin's life is orderly. Betty Friedan's life is disorderly. One leads a life of sanity and the other leads one of insanity. Unificationists can't escape from having to come down on one side or the other. There is no third way. We are not beyond patriarchy and feminism. We have to decide whether men protect women or not. There is no middle ground between Helen Andelin and Betty Friedan. Either women are stay-at-home moms or they are not. Either women compete with men or they don't compete. Either we believe that women leaving the home to earn money castrates men or we don't.

Dear Reader, what do you believe? Do you believe men are emasculated when their wife leaves the home and gets a paycheck? The vast majority of America, including most church going Christians, have made their decision. They have rejected the traditional values in the Bible and common sense and America has become Sodom and Gomorrah. The President has sex in the Oval Office with a young girl and does not resign and is not fired. Satan hates the traditional family. God has designed women to have many children in a secure nest and He designed men to be hunters who protect them. That is the core value I write about. Unificationists should be absolutely united on believing that it should be illegal for women to be in combat and therefore women should not be politicians who lead men in combat.

The values I write have stood the test of time. Millions of people have lived the biblical,

traditional, patriarchal family and experienced great happiness. Many have lived the values of feminists and some have written about their ideology. Many have lived the opposite of feminists and some have written about it. Marlo Thomas read Betty Friedan's book and was inspired to become an actress. She starred in a television show called *That Girl* in the 1960s about a young woman living the feminist dream of a fulfilling, fun, and exciting life on her own in New York City. It was a famous show that influenced millions of girls to leave home and live alone. Marlo wrote a feminist book. Helen Gurley Brown wrote the popular book *Sex and the Single Girl* in the 1960s and went on to start *Cosmopolitan* magazine that is famous for showing a woman wearing a low-cut dress on the cover. Both women are barren. The result of their ideology is that they did not have children. Feminism is anti-men, anti-family and anti-children. It is the deadliest of all ideologies and has to be eradicated from this earth. Those who have lived by traditionalist values have found much higher happiness than their opposition. The moment a woman starts putting energy into earning money she begins violating the laws of the universe. The results are extremely painful.

It is best for a girl to go from her father's home to her husband's home. At traditional weddings the father gives the bride away. Why do people think it is good for a girl to leave her home and not be under the watchful eye of a patriarch who she has dinner with every night in a loving, safe home? Education should first be focused on wisdom, not facts. Girls need to learn how to be excellent wives, mothers, homemakers and teachers of their children. A girl who goes off to some other city or state or nation to go to a college is in danger because there is no patriarchy there. And colleges teach that patriarchy is ancient history and good riddance. College professors do not have the goal of protecting young girls on campus. There have been many who have hit on female students. They are like Lucifer in the Garden of Eden.

There are some excellent books and audio-visuals on patriarchy. A good book on this topic is *Missing from Action: A Powerful Historical Response to the Crisis Among American Men* by Weldon Hardenbrook. Let's make sure our families study Father's words that give an exciting new paradigm for the family and let's study other good books on the patriarchal family. I encourage every Unificationist brother to buy Aubrey Andelin's *Man of Steel and Velvet* and for him to give and teach this book to his sons. I hope that every Unificationist sister will have Helen Andelin's books in her home and have their daughters and daughters-in-laws study them. Mrs. Andelin's book *Fascinating Womanhood* would make an excellent gift to those you love. I cannot express in words how thankful I am that a blessed sister gave my wife a copy of *Fascinating Womanhood*. My wife had so many copies in our home that she was giving away to friends that I decided to read it. I discovered that Helen's husband had a book for men called *Man of Steel and Velvet*. These books changed my life and they have helped millions of people.

An excellent book that helps men understand how to be godly patriarchs is Philip Lancaster's *Family Man, Family Leader*. A great book that teaches how a woman is to follow, obey and submit to her husband is Elizabeth Rice Handford's wonderful book: *Me? Obey Him?: The Obedient Wife and God's Way of Happiness and Blessing in the Home*. Mrs. Handford has some audio CDs you can buy at www.swordofthelord.com. Go to the website and find their phone number at the contact us link and order her CD with the same title as her book. Nancy Wilson does a magnificent job of explaining submission for women in her audio CD set titled *Women & Marriage* that you can order at Canon Press. Their website is: www.canonpress.org. This is excellent for men to listen to as well. Be sure to get Carolyn Mahaney's audio CD "Being Subject to My Husband." Study every good book on godly patriarchal marriages and families you can find.

Be sure to study everything by Colin and Nancy Campbell and their daughters Serene and Evangeline at their organization Above Rubies (www.AboveRubies.com).

As you look at fallen man talk about patriarchy keep in mind that very few writers and thinkers can be absolute. There is usually a mixture of true and false when anyone speaks. Let me give an important example. Wayne Grudem and John Piper are key leaders in fighting feminism in the church. They have edited a great anti-feminist book *Recovering Biblical Manhood and Womanhood: A Response to Evangelical Feminism* that I highly recommend. They have a powerful website (www.cbmw.org) I hope you will visit and read the articles there. Grudem has written a book against Christian feminists titled *Evangelical Feminism: A New Path to Liberalism?* Grudem and Piper speak strongly of patriarchy for men and submission for women in the home but on their website they make it known that they think patriarchy is only for the home and church. Women, they say, can work outside the home and women can be leaders over men, even in politics. Wayne Grudem in the DVD of a speech he gave titled *A Three-Part Seminar on Biblical Manhood & Womanhood* is wrong when he praises his daughter-in-law for working outside the home. We have to always be aware that Christian theologians are not always correct. Mary Kassian is a popular Christian author who has good books against feminism such as *Feminist Mistake* and *Feminist Gospel*. But she has a serious blind spot like Piper and Grudem because in her book *Women, Creation and the Fall* she says that women can work outside the home.

Russell Moore is Dean of the School of Theology at the Southern Baptist Theological seminary and in the DVD you can buy of him (www.cbmw.org) giving a speech titled *Gender Matters: A Discussion on the Roles of Men and Women At Home and In the Church* he is right in saying women are not to hold leadership over men in the home and in the church but he is wrong in saying women can lead and should lead men in society. Sadly, Moore says he finds nothing wrong in a woman being commander-in-chief as President of the United States. I like most of what Grudem and Moore say in these DVDs but I am reluctant to encourage anyone from watching them because of the serious flaws they have in the role of women outside the home and church. If you decide to order these DVDs from www.CBMW.com and use them for home schooling be sure to point out the parts where they are wrong.

One of the most powerful speeches I have ever heard on patriarchy is by Joe Morecraft titled *Women Civil Magistrates?* You can hear it for free at www.sermonaudio.com. I encourage every Unificationist to listen to this speech. When you come across criticism of patriarchy compare the marriages and families of those I uplift to those who are egalitarian. To me it's a simple and easy choice.

Since patriarchy has been rejected in the twentieth century there has been a dramatic decrease in the birthrate to the point that many nations are literally dying. Patriarchal, traditional men want more children. Feminized, egalitarian men do not want or want very few children. Phillip Longman writes in his book *The Empty Cradle: How Falling Birthrates Threaten World Prosperity* that the solution to this serious problem of birth dearth is patriarchy. In the documentary *Demographic Winter: the Decline of the Human Family* (www.demographicwinter.com) he says that the feminist culture as embodied in feminist Sweden is the route of death to the family and the nation. Only the patriarchal orthodox Christians, Jews and Muslims are having families beyond the replacement level of 2.1. Be sure to watch this DVD and listen to what he and other scholars are saying. It proves my point that patriarchy is God's number one value because without it we have demoralized men and women who do care to have many children. Also check out *What To Expect When No One's Expecting: America's Coming Demographic Disaster* by Jonathan V. Last.

THE RETURN OF PATRIARCHY

In a powerful article title "The Return of Patriarchy" in **Foreign Policy** magazine (2-17-2006) Phillip Longman says the future will be dominated by those who believe in patriarchy

www.foreignpolicy.com/articles/2006/02/17/the_return_of_patriarchy:

> Across the globe, people are choosing to have fewer children or none at all. Governments are desperate to halt the trend, but their influence seems to stop at the bedroom door. Are some societies destined to become extinct? Hardly. It's more likely that conservatives will inherit the Earth. Like it or not, a growing proportion of the next generation will be born into families who believe that father knows best.
>
> Single-child families are prone to extinction. A single child replaces one of his or her parents, but not both. Nor do single-child families contribute much to future population. The 17.4 percent of baby boomer women who had only one child account for a mere 7.8 percent of children born in the next generation. By contrast, nearly a quarter of the children of baby boomers descend from the mere 11 percent of baby boomer women who had four or more children. These circumstances are leading to the emergence of a new society whose members will disproportionately be descended from parents who rejected the social tendencies that once made childlessness and small families the norm. These values include an adherence to traditional, patriarchal religion, and a strong identification with one's own folk or nation.
>
> Many childless, middle-aged people may regret the life choices that are leading to the extinction of their family lines, and yet they have no sons or daughters with whom to share their newfound wisdom. The plurality of citizens who have only one child may be able to invest lavishly in that child's education, but a single child will only replace one parent, not both. Meanwhile, the descendants of parents who have three or more children will be hugely over-represented in subsequent generations, and so will the values and ideas that led their parents to have large families.
>
> Societies that are today the most secular and the most generous with their underfunded welfare states will be the most prone to religious revivals and a rebirth of the patriarchal family. The absolute population of Europe and Japan may fall dramatically, but the remaining population will, by a process similar to survival of the fittest, be adapted to a new environment in which no one can rely on government to replace the family, and in which a patriarchal God commands family members to suppress their individualism and submit to father.

Lenin wrote:

> We must now say proudly and without any exaggeration that part from Soviet Russia, there is not a country in the world where women enjoy full equality and where women are not placed in the humiliating position felt particularly in day-to-day family life. This is one of our first and most important tasks...Housework is the most unproductive, the most barbarous and the most arduous work a woman can do. It is exceptionally petty and does not include anything that would in any way promote the development of the woman...The building of socialism will begin only when we have achieved the complete equality of women and when we undertake the new work together with women who have been emancipated from that petty stultifying, unproductive work...We are setting up model institutions, dining-rooms and nurseries, that will emancipate women from housework...These institutions that liberate women from their position as household slaves are springing up where it is in any way possible...Our task is to make politics available to every working woman.

In his 1920 International Working Women's Day Speech, Lenin emphasized:

> The chief thing is to get women to take part in socially productive labor, to liberate them from 'domestic slavery,' to free them from their stupefying [idiotic] and humiliating subjugation to the eternal drudgery of the kitchen and the nursery. This struggle will be a long one, and it demands a radical reconstruction, both of social technique and of morale. But it will end in the complete triumph of Communism.

The Communist Trotsky said this:

> Socialization of family housekeeping and public education of children are unthinkable without a marked improvement in our economics as a whole. We need more socialist economic forms. Only under such conditions can we free the family from the functions and cares that now oppress and disintegrate it. Washing must be done by a public laundry, catering by a public restaurant, sewing by a public workshop. Children must be educated by good public teachers who have a real vocation for the work. Then the bond between husband and wife would be freed from everything external and accidental, and the one would cease to absorb the life of the other. Genuine equality would at last be established.

Many people equate patriarchy with anger and scary men abusing their power. True patriarchs are not angry men. True women would not be angry either.

The vast majority of Blessed brothers are capable of leading their wives and children and their wives and children should follow them as Father commands. Father doesn't teach that men have a split personality of good and evil, of being Jekyll and Hyde and that a woman has to discern when her husband is being an insecure or cruel Archangel and when he is being a good Adam and follow him only when he is being centered on God. Noah was centered on God and Mrs. Noah and his children fought him. Father's first wife thought he was unloving. Men do not have to get in touch with their feminine side as some say but get in touch with being a leader and having the guts to make decisions for his family. Unificationist sisters don't need to join him in the workplace and push him to help with the laundry as feminists preach. Unificationist brothers are not perfect but neither are their wives. Brothers need to have the courage to lead and sisters need to be humble and follow and not be so critical. Brothers need to have faith in themselves and every sister needs to trust that God will guide her husband and they will end up all right if she submits to his directions.

THOUSANDS OF GENERATIONS

The Messiah teaches us the importance of absolute unity between husband and wife. If they disagree then the wife is called by God to submit. If sons disagree with the father then the sons are called by God to unite with the final decision. To do this they need "one concept." I offer this book as the concept we live by. We need to agree on written values. Father's primary concern is that he will set in motion a movement that will teach and live the importance of families uniting on universal truth and create lineages that will be pure and united for "thousands of generations": "We cannot trade this precious gift with the entire world even if you live for billions of years. As a blessed couple when you encounter beautiful men and women in the secular world do you still lose your hearts? (No) This is a most serious matter. The task is: how can we maintain our lineage of purity for thousands of generations to come. The point of proclamation is your marriage. Because of the misuse of the sexual organ at the time of Adam and Eve, that one particular misuse of this organ has caused thousands of years of pain and indemnity to God and humanity. Do you clearly understand? (Yes)

TRUE LINEAGE

"Because of the fall of man, we have inherited false life, false love and false lineage. We have to transcend this realm and move into the realm of True Life, True Love and True Lineage."(5-26-96)

It is extremely important that women in families unite. In the *Divine Principle* we learn that the disunity in central families in history caused indescribable pain for millions of people and slowed down God's providence. Father has revealed insights into the central figures in history who failed. We need to learn from them and not cause suffering for our descendants. Father has taught that both men and women have failed to bring absolute unity in their families and when this happened in central families it hurt not just themselves and their families but so many other people who came after them. He teaches the tragic disunity between women and between men and between men and women in Abraham, Jacob, Moses and Jesus' families that created a nightmare existence for their millions of descendants. Let's not make the mistakes of our ancestors. Let's create absolute unity in our families.

Michael Jenkins wrote this about what Father said at a Hoon Dok Hae:

> Father gave a very profound talk on the root of the Palestinian-Israeli conflict. It is rooted in the Sarah/Isaac and Hagar/Ishmael relationships. Sarah and Isaac should have never pushed Hagar and Ishmael away.
>
> That is what must be solved in order to resolve the Israeli/Palestinian conflict. Only love can do it. He then mentioned that the mother plays the most central role. Moses' mother should have fulfilled her responsibility and guided Moses; if she had, he would not have killed the Egyptian. God originally intended for the Israelites to stay in Egypt. Moses as the "Prime Minister" would have been in the key role to liberate his people and inherit the nation. Because his mother didn't guide her son correctly this course failed and the exodus had to occur. The role of the mother is crucial. Father mentioned that each central figure had two women whom he had to love and harmonize. Abraham had Sarah and Hagar, Jacob had Rachel and Leah, Jesus had his aunt and his mother. The mother must advise the son to do what is right. This is the key.
>
> We must realize that Jacob made a mistake by not bringing Esau and all the family into Egypt. If they didn't do this they could have united in Egypt and Moses would not have had to lead them into the wilderness.
>
> Now the greatest struggle in the world is between the Muslims and Christians and particularly the separation of Jews and Palestinians. Abraham should have taken care of Ishmael's mother Hagar.

At Hoon Dok Hwe (Five a.m. gathering to read Father's words) September 24, 2003 Father said, "There were a lot of struggles between Rachel and Leah. They should have been loving each other. Esau's family should have been taken along with Jacob's family when they went to Egypt. This caused the Israelites to lose their blessing." At Hoon Dok Hae (9-14-03) Father said, "The bad relationship of individuals can lead to world conflict. Rachel and Leah were sisters. Rachel had Joseph and Benjamin, the other brothers sold Joseph and also went to expel Benjamin. Jacob made a mistake in that he didn't bring Esau with him, this bad relationship became the seed for the Canaanites. If the elder and younger brother had been united as one then there would be no problem today between Muslims and Jews. All these things must be restored. Because Jacob didn't embrace Esau and bring him to Egypt. They went their separate ways. This became the seed for the separation of whole nations."

"They went their separate ways." True Unificationist brothers would not go their separate ways like Jacob and Esau did. They strive to prevent any division between brothers. Family is

everything. Families should do everything in their power to live together in the same place and to be harmonious in their community.

Father teaches that the West is horizontal and needs to learn to be vertical:

> People in the Western world are followers in the minus position. The western world completely lost spiritual world power. I come from the opposite side. What shall you do? Will you deny me or follow me? [Follow!] You have been denying wrong habits, but how can you erase wrong attitudes? On your own, you don't have the power to erase all that. You must know your real situation and you must repent. You have to learn to be humble. Be humble and vertical! Until now you have only been horizontal. You have never had the vertical, central axis. Therefore, in America, mind and body, husband and wife, break apart. That is the historical reality. How can you deny that? No way. You have to recognize and acknowledge it. That is my teaching.
>
> In the meantime a lot of good traditions and customs have been developed among the Korean people. For example, according to Korean tradition, whoever is in the position of elder son is owed respect even by his uncles and senior relatives, because of the importance of the lineage. Also, according to Korean tradition, absolute filial piety is considered the best virtue, followed by absolute fidelity. For hundreds of years such an extreme custom was practiced that after her husband died, the widow would not eat fine food or wear fancy clothes for three years; she wore only white rags. Also, after the father died, the eldest son would not go any place for three years; he would eat and sleep right in front of his father's tomb and wear only rags. He went through a three-year condition of prayer and mourning. That much filial piety was practiced. Another virtue was loyalty to the nation or patriotism. After a king died, the entire nation went through a period of extreme mourning.
>
> Now I understand that such traditions have been practiced for thousands of years, because at the end of the world God wanted to establish the absolute family unit, the absolute husband/wife relationship, and the absolute elder sonship, and parenthood, and kingship.
>
> However, American people would not understand that concept, because you are in the position of archangel. You may go around 360 degrees, but you don't know where the center is.
>
> There has been a breakdown of authority in America. That cannot be permitted on God's side. (4-23-95)

Father needs Blessed Couples to restore this sick world to health. He tells us we cannot do this without living as three generations. Father says we have the privilege of being able to have between 12 and 20 children. God could only have two, Adam and Eve. He says:

> With the victorious foundation of True Parents, why can't we move the world now? Because the first generation Blessed couples didn't do their mission well. My mission as the Messiah is to establish Blessed couples and work through these Blessed couples to restore the entire world. Yet, the Blessed couples have not been fully ready. If the Blessed couples had done their mission well, the incarceration in Danbury wouldn't have taken place.
>
> Now do you understand the will of God? [Yes.] What is it? The completion of the

four-position foundation through three generations: the grandparents' level, the parents' level, and our level. Do you need grandparents in America? [Yes.] What about Americans in general, do they feel they need grandparents? [No.] They send them to the senior citizens' home. God stands in the first generation, Adam in the second generation, and their children in the third generation. We lost all three generations because of the fall. God longed to love grandchildren, but He didn't have a chance. Grandchildren should receive love from both the grandparents and their parents. Adam and Eve received only the love from God. They should have experienced love through the vertical parental relationship and the horizontal parental relationship, but they couldn't do that because of the fall. When the horizontal parents combine into one and become complete, their unity and love expands to the horizontal world. This is the formula, the seed. Once this seed is planted, it can expand to the horizontal world.

American grandparents are sad that they can't love their grandchildren and receive joy and love from them. We need three generations in order to accomplish the three levels of love: the parents' level, grandparents' and children's level. Because this is a circular movement, everyone is the same distance from the center. Only after grandparents love their grandchildren can they be equal in terms of the horizontal love relationship. This three-generational love must be practiced at home. God's love, parental love, and children's love must be put into practice.

We can call this three kingdoms of love. The grandparents represent the past, the Kingdom of God in the spirit world. Parents represent the kingship of this present physical world. Children, who are the grandchildren of the grandparents, represent the future world. If there are twelve children, they represent the entire world. God gave birth to only Adam and Eve, but as God's children Adam and Eve had the privilege of producing twelve or even twenty children. In that sense they are in an even better situation than God. So do you think you should have as many children as you can, or just a small number? [Many!] There are twelve different directions, and once you have twelve children and succeed in loving each of the twelve, you have set the condition of mastery over love. If you raise your twelve children successfully, you will resemble God that much more, because your mind makes a circular movement through offering your love to your twelve children. That means you gain all kinds of experiences.

Have you served your grandparents at home? You should consider your grandparents to be God's emissaries to your family. God sends us ambassadors of heaven, and they are our grandparents. Beyond even the parental level is the kingship of the worldwide family. In the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, each generation will receive more love than the previous one. Each generation will seek to build on the national base and expand the world of God's dominion.

True Parents come to restore everything in the past. Ultimately, the world will welcome us and people will be able to experience joy, freedom, happiness, and the fulfillment of all their dreams. That will be the atmosphere of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. (4-23-95)

Men should be the sole financial provider of their families and women should be stay-at-home moms. This is the traditional family or biblical family. God's divine plan for the family is for men to compete in the marketplace and for women to be homemakers. They have different roles and responsibilities. Father says, "Men have broad shoulders, not for you to boast about but so that you can carry the burdens of your family. You have to work and sweat so that you can take care of

your wife and children!" (5-31-84) "The husband is more rugged and stronger so that he can work more and earn money for the family" (5-26-96).

The Bible speaks strongly about men providing: "If any provide not for his own he hath denied the faith and is worse than an infidel" (I Tim. 5:8). This is also translated as "If any one does not provide for his relatives, and especially for his own family, he has disowned the faith and is worse than an unbeliever." Titus 2:5 commands women to be, "keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed." If a man does not provide he is an infidel and if a woman does not stay at home she is blasphemer. You can't use stronger language than infidel and blaspheme. If we violate God's laws we destroy the family. Marriage and family are sacred and this is why the Bible speaks so forcefully about the roles of men and women.

Helen Andelin writes in *Fascinating Womanhood*, "As made clear in the Holy Scriptures, the man has the responsibility to provide the living. Since he is also the leader, it falls to him to manage the money and worry about it. Therefore, it is not the wife's responsibility to earn the living, manage the money, or worry about it. She should be given a household budget but she should not be responsible for the overall management of the income."

Men spend most of their time working to make money to support the family. They also need to spend time around the home doing masculine chores like painting the house and doing the heavy labor. They are also responsible to help in the education of their children at home. For now let's focus on men providing for their family financially. The prevailing self-fulfilling prophecy view of our culture is that it is impossible for men to be sole providers. This is little thinking. We need to think big. Unificationist brothers should not whine about the cost of a home in California or the price of food in New York. Check out books on how to live frugally such as *The Complete Tightwad Gazette: Promoting Thrift as a Viable Alternative Lifestyle* by Amy Dacyczyn, *How to Raise a Family on Less Than Two Incomes: The Complete Guide to Managing Your Money Better So You Can Spend More Time With Your Kids* by Denise M. Topolnicki, *The Complete Idiot's Guide to Simple Living* by Georgene Muller Lockwood, *Women Leaving the Workplace: How To Make The Transition From Work To Home* by Larry Burkett, and *How to Survive Without a Salary: Learning How to Live the Conserver Lifestyle* by Charles Long.

The truth really does hurt and the truth is that we live in an age of weakness. Men are supposed to work hard, hard, hard. Father says, "We are building heaven on earth. The key is to work very, very, very hard" (1-1-90). Ziglar and Tracy advise men to spend at least one hour a day reading a book about their business. If they did this they would be in the top 5% of their field. Men should not stop at a bar for happy hour drinks but stop at a library and study their vocation. Brian Tracy says, "Read an hour every day in your chosen field. This works out to about one book per week, 50 books per year, and will guarantee your success."

Women need to study books on their vocation of homemaker such as the books by Mary Pride. Father always strives for excellence and he expects us to be greater than those who do not know the *Principle*: "Unless Father reaches the top of any field he cannot rest, no matter what field of activity it might be." (5-26-96)

Father speaks strongly against being weak. For example: "You American women, will you listen well to your husbands? You fierce American guys, do you want to lead your wives well? You must maintain your subjective position, even in love. You must have your own dignity. You women must help your husbands maintain their dignity; if your husband comes to you with a whining, self-pitying attitude, you should kick him!" (9-19-82)

Here are some more statements by him saying if we are to complain then "make big complaints":

> ...within the Unification Church there are people who talk and complain all the time. They are not the doers; they are not people of action. Other members—the doers—are silent.
>
> Those who are sitting down and doing nothing are seeking to justify themselves by talking and complaining. They make all kinds of excuses for their lack of action. Which are the majority: the doers or the non-doers?
>
> I would rather hear a different kind of complaint: "Father, I have been to my 360 homes, and it's just too small an area for me to take care of. Why can't I take care of all New York City—or even the whole United States?" I wonder why I don't hear such complaints! The ones who work hard and challenge themselves have eyes shining with hope; they have the energy to climb to greater heights tomorrow.
>
> You should not whine over trivial matters. Become big men and women—make big complaints, such as the one I mentioned.
>
> A kindergarten child will have the most trivial problems and complaints, while someone enrolled in a Ph.D. program has an entirely different attitude. Our goal is to save the world. Can you say, "I devoted two years of my life to the movement, and I have given up too much"? Do you think that your two or three years are adequate to move the world? Whoever feels that way is like a thief. It may take 300 years or more to move the world. (1-31-82)

The back cover of Aubrey Andelin's *Man of Steel and Velvet* says, "In these painful and confusing times it is all too easy to lose sight of the fundamental meaning of what it is to be a man and what it is to be a woman. Based on Christian ethics as taught in the Bible, *Man of Steel and Velvet* helps men and women gain a clearer perspective on true masculinity. It shows how the combined traits of the firmness of steel and the gentleness of velvet make a man who is a good provider and devoted husband worthy of respect of his wife and children." Aubrey Andelin begins by saying, "This is a book which teaches men to be men. ... It may seem presumptuous that I should declare that there is a need for men to be men, for what man is there who doesn't think he is already a man. ... In his childhood he was proud to be a boy, and no one dared call him a sissy. ... Yet the sad truth is that men, speaking generally, are no longer men. This becomes obvious when the average man is measured against the undeniable criteria I present in this book.

"Throughout our society we find men who are weak, spoiled, pampered, spineless, and lacking in moral, physical or mental strength. There are men who fail to take their position as head of the household, allowing women and children to push them around.... Some blatantly encourage their wives to assume this burden. Many of our so-called jokes center around the wife wearing the pants. Her husband is portrayed as a bungler, inept and incompetent to understand or control his family.

"To a great extent men have failed to assume the primary responsibility of providing bread for their tables. Women must come to the rescue. Every day millions of them leave their households to assist in earning the living. The working mother is more the rule than the exception. The deterioration and loss of effectiveness in so many homes is in great part a consequence of the neglect resulting from the mother deserting her post, a situation she often laments but can do nothing about.

"Lack of chivalry is apparent on every hand. Of necessity, women must take care of themselves. ... In addition to failing at home, men are failing to measure up in society. We are in a period of crisis where it is likely the great inheritances we enjoy from the labors and sacrifices of generations past may be lost. Freedom is in jeopardy. It is a time of turmoil, strife and numerous problems. Our only hope is for men to rise to their feet as real men. But where are the heroes of today? Where is the man who will proclaim, *Give me liberty or give me death*?

"The general lack of manliness is producing far-reaching social problems. ... Such default in leadership causes great unhappiness and frustration to women. If she must be the man of the family, she isn't free to function as a woman, to devote her time and thought to making a success of her equally demanding duties as a wife and mother. ... She becomes insecure and sometimes desperate.

"Children of a recessive father also suffer as innocent victims. ... When turned out into the world, they are likely to be rebellious. ... The man who allows his wife to work outside her home creates further social problems. She must divide her interests between her work and family. Since her work is usually more demanding, the children and home life suffer. She can't serve two masters. Her neglect at home results in lack of love, attention, and development of the children and her failure to serve as the understanding wife.

"Homosexuality is another social problem caused by lack of manliness. When a father fails to portray a strong male image, there is a blurring of roles between mother and father. The distinction between male and female becomes obscure. Boys and girls don't see a clear sex image they can identify with. Because of this, girls don't grow strongly feminine, and boys don't grow strongly masculine. A ridiculous term, *unisex* comes into usage, which in itself describes something that can't be. When men are truly men and women are truly women, this contrast keeps the sexes attracted to one another. Homosexuality is a perversion encouraged when normal heterosexual drives are interfered with.

"It appears that if we do not produce a generation of real men immediately, our entire civilization, as we know it, may be lost."

Mary Pride writes in *The Way Home: Beyond Feminism, Back to Reality*, "My experience is that any employed husband can provide for his family without sending the wife out to work, as long as they are willing to live within his means. Biblically, he should take two jobs before looking to you for support."

Father is disgusted with the idea that unions forced the 8-hour workday on business owners. Father is a workaholic and does not understand laziness: "Perhaps you still have the work mentality of American labor unions and you plan to work precisely eight hours and not a minute more. If you wake up early and it's still dark outside, would you think you still have a couple more hours to relax? When sundown comes, would you quit because it's dark? Does it bother you to get up before it's light and work after it's dark, or doesn't it matter to you?" (2-19-78)

WORK THAT IS ESSENTIAL

In *Man of Steel and Velvet* we read that a man's work should 1) provide an adequate living, 2) be work that a man has a talent for, 3) is work that he enjoys, 4) is work that is challenging to his ability and capacity, 5) work that is conducive to good family life, 6) work that is a "service to humanity: Consider the worth of the job itself and its usefulness to the world. It can be disheartening to spend years of time and toil in a work that is of no real consequence or, worse still, is injurious. The manufacture of products which are harmful and the encouragement of activities which are destructive can plague a man's conscience. A man's job should be important work, work upon which the success of the world depends. It need not be spectacular or revolutionary, but it needs to be essential. Participating in work that helps make the world better will bring a man a feeling of well-being, a feeling of contributing something in addition to supporting his family." I feel every Unificationist man should spend some time everyday being a farmer and produce much of the food for his family and extra for his children to sell at a farmer's market.

ANGER IS A NEGATIVE EMOTION

There are many books on anger. They all seem to say that anger is a normal, healthy emotion if handled well and destructive if handled poorly. I have come to believe that anger is a negative emotion that religious people should get rid of. The book of Proverbs in the Old Testament in the Bible teaches against anger. In the New Testament we read in Ephesians 4:31-32, "Get rid of all bitterness, rage and anger **…** Be kind and tenderhearted to one another, forgiving each other." One of the Boy Scout Laws reads, "A Scout is Kind. A Scout knows there is strength in being gentle. He treats others as he wants to be treated." It takes strength to be tenderhearted and forgiving. It is easy and unproductive to be filled with bitterness, rage and anger. The Bible can be read anyway you like. All the arguments I read in books that God is angry and judgmental who punishes harshly, severely and with wrath the slightest transgression of his laws does not move me. I don't see us as sinners in the hand of an angry God. I can't see Jesus teaching us to be angry. I like the passages in the Bible that strongly condemn anger.

I am not convinced by the arguments for anger in the books I've read. One Christian book on anger said that the anger referred to in Ephesians 4:31 is about bad anger. It seems crystal clear to me that it says to get rid of all anger. The arguments that there is good anger and bad anger or justified anger or unjustified angry don't impress me. I am not moved by the arguments that anger is a god-given emotion to help us fight injustice and wrongdoing. Not being angry does not mean not fighting evil. We can be far more effective in fighting the bad guys by being calm, cool and collected. I've tried anger and I can't think of one time that it was effective or the right thing to do. The idea that we have to use anger for injustice makes no sense because the world if filled with injustice and pain. Everyone is fallen so everyone will make mistakes and hurt others. Therefore we can justify being angry all day long everyday of our lives because this world is dysfunctional. The whole idea of anger management classes teaching that anger is good but needs to be regulated and controlled is like saying we should control heroin, tobacco and adultery. We don't need anger management; we need anger elimination. We should focus on the good instead of the bad. We are for good things, not against bad things. There is nothing good about anger. It is a lie from Satan that it is normal. He is angry and he wants us to be angry at God and other people.

We should never raise our voice in our homes or in society. We should not get angry in our homes or in the world. We do not slam doors. Moses had the character flaw of anger and his temper prevented him from entering Canaan. Jesus was not angry on the cross, and Father was not filled with anger when he was tortured in a concentration camp. We are religious people who pray for and love our enemies. The Messiah teaches: "I want you to know that there is no way you can come close to me or be a true leader of the Unification Church without going this path of tears and suffering. You have been crying, but for whom did you shed tears? For whom has your tongue spoken? Have you pitied yourself or had some anger you could not contain? Your tears should be for God and humanity and your tongue should be speaking for God and humanity. Then you are truly Unification Church members." (10-1-97)

There is a wonderful little book by Richard Brookhiser titled *Rules of Civility: The 110 Precepts That Guided Our First President in War and Peace*. He writes that George Washington lived in a time when it was common for men to read books on how to become great men. Some of the books dealt with etiquette and manners. Americans, he writes, are "informal" and see these kinds of books as "quaint." "What use is etiquette in an age of daytime television and drive-time radio?" One of the things the *Rules of Civility* helped Washington on was his fault of having a temper. "Washington had a tremendous temper. This was a lifelong problem. ... Washington had a lot to be angry about over the course of his career: untrained soldiers, incompetent officers, difficult allies, quarrelsome associates—to say nothing of his own mistakes, from losing battles to misjudging

people. But if he had gone into uncontrollable rages at every disappointment or disaster, he would have ruined his health, besides ruining his effectiveness as a leader."

Washington worked hard to live the principles written in the book. Some of the language in the book is now obsolete. For example, it uses the word "choler." Hundreds of years ago everyone would have understood that it meant anger, irritability or bad temper. Rule 45 says, "in reproving show no signs of choler, but do it with all sweetness and mildness." How many of us can say we criticize others with "sweetness"? Rule 65 says, "Speak not injurious words neither in jest nor earnest." Brookhiser writes, "The measure of Washington's success, despite his lapses, is that we have forgotten that he had a problem. We look at Stuart's glacial image, and a dozen other composed and almost emotionless portraits, from the face on Mount Rushmore to the bust on the quarter, and we assume that that's just the way Washington was. His contemporaries knew better; they saw the composure as an end product, the result of early training and continuous effort. The training, and the disposition to make the effort, came from *The Rules*."

Rule 49 says, "Use no reproachful language against anyone, neither curse nor revile." Brookhiser gives some commentary to these rules. On this one he writes, "Some of Washington's earliest general orders as Commander in Chief forbade cursing and swearing." We don't live in an age where men and women make a conscious effort to be great. This is why the Commander-in-Chiefs of the last hundred years did not command those in the military to never use foul language. We should do better and teach by our words and example that God wants us to be great men and women who never swear and never get angry.

The Bible gives excellent advice about anger. Anger can shorten your life. In the book of Job we read that a person is a fool if he gets angry and it can even kill you, "Anger kills the fool" (Job 5:2). Anger can kill relationships. It can kill a marriage. It can kill a family.

Cain became angry with his brother Abel and this led to murder. In Genesis 4:6-7 we read: "Then the Lord said to Cain, 'Why are you angry? Why is your face downcast? If you do what is right, will you not be accepted? But if you do not do what is right, sin is crouching at your door; it desires to have you, but you must master it.'" God is not just advising and commanding Cain. He commands each of us to "do what is right." This means each of us must "master" our emotions and never get angry.

The book of Proverbs is famous for its advice. In it we read we should listen to good advice so we can become wise and do God's will instead of fallen man's will: "Listen to advice and accept instruction, that you may gain wisdom for the future. Many are the plans in the mind of a man, but it is the purpose of the Lord that will be established" (Proverbs 19:20-21). The Bible teaches us to be in control of our temper and to be patient, "A man of quick temper acts foolishly, but a man of discretion is patient" (Prov. 14:17). When a person is angry, upset or furious he or she creates a negative atmosphere that affects other people: "A hot-tempered man stirs up strife, but he who is slow to anger quiets contention" (Prov. 15:18). When we think it is good and healthy and normal to vent our frustration and negative emotions we show a lack of character and instead of being a wise follower of Christ we show everyone in our family and our society that we are a fool: "A fool gives full vent to his anger, but a wise man quietly holds it back" (Prov. 29:11).

One of the most famous passages from the Bible is: "A soft answer turns away wrath, but a harsh word stirs up anger" (Prov. 15:1). Let's challenge ourselves to do as George Washington did and work hard on controlling our anger and stop thinking it is psychologically and spiritually healthy to let people have it with our sharp tongue. Let's not be so proud of ourselves and realize we often make mistakes too and we don't want anyone else to lay into us with their anger. Sometimes

people get angry at others when they are only projecting their anger at themselves on others and are really crying out for help and forgiveness. Let's make it a primary goal in our life to not only not get angry at other people but when someone is angry at us we respond with a "soft answer". This is what a religious, godly and loving person would do and isn't that our main goal in life?

Father teaches that we should live graciously:

> We have been living and speaking carelessly, but now we should establish regulations in our families. Parents shouldn't beat their children due to anger or speak secular words of condemnation to them. Now, everybody should be one. Words, attitudes and way of life should be one, centering upon God.
>
> Family members are to accept and conscientiously practice the family rules and etiquette.
>
> There are regulations of family life for women and men respectively. Blessed families are to systemize their lives with such great heavenly regulations. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

Father said in a speech, "If you love your enemies, transcending anger and hatred even in situations where they kill the ones you love, you shall be able to have dominion over the world of enemies, and Satan will retreat" (8-18-00). Let's emulate Father by training ourselves to transcend anger and hatred so we can dominate Satan. Men need to be true leaders and one of the most important qualities they can have is to be gentle and tenderhearted. Men in charge of good nations should "speak softly and carry a big stick" and men in their homes should concentrate on praising and being what Zig Ziglar calls a "good finder" instead of being critical and judgmental. We are pro things instead of against things. We are pro-capitalist instead of anti-communist. If men accentuate the positive then they will create a more uplifting tone and atmosphere in their home and workplace. We can't avoid seeing evil and judging it but the focus should be more on what to do what is right instead of being against what is wrong.

Anger: Relationship Poison

I have found some audio-visuals from some great people who teach that all anger is a negative emotion that produces no good. The Maxwell family has a website at www.titus2.com where you can buy their educational books and audio-visuals. I encourage you to buy their audio CD "Anger: Relationship Poison." Steve and Teri Maxwell are great role models for a couple who have overcome anger. They candidly talk of how they used to get angry at each other and at their children but learned that anger is a sin. They give many great insights that I wish I had the space to go into. For example, they teach that it is not OK to be angry as long as you don't raise your voice. We should never have an angry expression or feel anger. And it is wrong to call anger other names like frustration and irritation. John Wesley said, "Anger, though it be adorned with the name of zeal, begets anger, not love or holiness. We should therefore avoid, with all possible care, the very appearances of it. Let there be no trace of it, either in the eyes, the gesture, or the tone of your voice."

Mrs. Maxwell explains that we are able to stop being angry. It does not take superhuman ability. She tells how she had been angry in the past and could completely change when the phone rang or she was angry in the car going to church and completely changed when she got out to walk into the church. No one on the phone or in the church would have any idea that a few seconds before she was furious and screaming. They are Christian and teach that those who read some passages in the Bible and believe God gave us anger are wrong. There are so many passages against anger that the few that some cling to as proof that anger is healthy and god-given must not be seen as justifying or uplifting anger. They say God is against anger in any form. They say they have been

moved by S.M. Davis's DVDs (also in audio CD) on anger. His website is www.solvefamilyproblems.com or www.drsmdavis.com. He has five DVDs (or CDs) in his anger series: "Anger the Destroyer", "Freedom from the Spirit of Anger", "What Impatience Does", "What the Bible has to Say About Scorn and Mockery" and "How to Help a Man with His Anger." Be sure to buy them or ask your library to order them. Patriarchs and their wives should treat each other and their children with kindness and forgiveness instead of anger.

SCREAM FREE PARENTING

Hal Runkel has written a book titled *ScreamFree Parenting: The Revolutionary Approach to Raising Your Kids*. At his website www.screamfree.com he has some videos of his appearances on the Today Show where he is presented as an expert on parenting. On one of the shows he said that "Our number one job as parents is to no matter what just stay calm." Parents should understand that their "job is to be a calm presence—to get closer—to get quieter" in times of chaos and turmoil. We should not be anxious and frustrated. We should not just be calm but be a calming influence. We teach by example how to respond to stressful situations. We are supposed to be in control of ourselves. We are supposed to always be cool, calm and collected. Our duty is to provide calm leadership. He says, "Our biggest struggle as parents is with our own emotional reactivity. That's why the greatest thing we can do for our kids is learn to focus on us, not them. Let's concentrate on what we can control—calming our own emotional, knee-jerk reactions." "If we want to be influential, then we have to first bring ourselves under control." The only way to retain a position of influence with our children is to regain a position of control over ourselves. Our "Number one priority is not to get emotionally reactive." "When we get reactive, we get regressive. That is, we shrink back to an immature level of functioning." If we blow it in the heat of the moment and lose our cool we are being immature and that is the last thing our children and others need from us. Marriage and parenting are about adults learning to grow up and get in control of their emotions just as much as it is for children.

CONTROL

He gives an example of a parent coming home and his daughter has left her bike again in the driveway instead of where it should be. He calmly tells her that she has two choices. She can put it away or the next time she leaves it in the driveway he will take it to Goodwill. There is no need to get frustrated, upset and throw a fit because the child did not do as the parent said. The parent needs to give consequences but it is with complete calmness. He writes that you have to focus on yourself because you can only control yourself and you should not focus on trying to control others: "You need to be in control of the things you can control and that starts (and may end) with you. The focus is on you because you are the only one you can ultimately control. If you make sure you behave—even when your kids misbehave—then you have a greater chance of positively impacting the situation, any situation."

He explains that we have to be able to be patient and pause and then speak in a genuinely calm manner. He writes in his first chapter:

> *ScreamFree Parenting* is not just about lowering our voice. It's about learning to calm all of these emotional reactions, learning to calmly focus on our own behavior more than our kids'— *for their benefit*. This is because our biggest enemy as parents is not TV or the Internet, not bad influences at school, not even drugs or alcohol. Our biggest enemy as parents is our own emotional reactivity, because when we "lose it," we're actually losing our adulthood. And then we wonder how our kids have so little respect for us.
>
> ScreamFree Parenting offers a revolutionary new option—by inviting parents to focus on themselves, grow themselves up, and calm themselves down. Following

> these ScreamFree principles leads parents of all ages (with kids of all ages) to create and enjoy the family relationships they've always craved.

One person wrote: "Hal firmly believes that God is the original ScreamFree parent—slow to anger, quick to forgive, abounding in steadfast love." He praises coaches who are calm and soft-spoken like pro-football coach Tony Dungy who wrote a book titled *Quiet Strength: The Principles, Practices, and Priorities of a Winning Life*. Runkel's heroes and role models are Gandhi and Martin Luther King.

We should also have scream free living and scream free marriages. His book has inspired many people to get in control of their emotions and be the parent and spouse God wants them to be. I highly recommend his book for spiritual and emotional growth. Let's become like Father who said of himself: "I am quite calm and peaceful and I have no turmoil within my mind; I see my path clearly." In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* Father says, "I have never raised my voice toward my wife. Throughout our life together, she has labored to care for me with complete, loving devotion."

There are some excellent books on godly patriarchy that I list in my suggested reading list. There are also some excellent men who live and teach godly patriarchy that you can see on DVD. One of the most dramatic videos I have ever seen is when the TV show *Nightline* went to Ken Carpenter's home and did a 10 minute show on the Quiverfull Movement of which Ken and his wife are members. He and his wife talk about how he is the patriarch of his home. He says he is absolutely the "loving head" of his home and she says she follows him and believes women should be in submission to their husbands. Please order this DVD from *Nightline* at *ABC News* and show it to everyone. The product number at Nightline is N07103051 and it aired on 01/03/07. At the time of the printing of this book they have the segment online at http://abcnews.go.com/Video/playerIndex?id=2769639 titled "Be Fruitful and Multiply".

I encourage every Unificationist brother to watch the DVDs I recommend in my list of audio-visuals at the end the book by such outstanding patriarchs as Geoff Botkin and Colin Campbell. In their DVD *The Return of the Daughters* Anna Sophia and Elizabeth Botkin end with their father exhorting men to give up being wimps that look to government to lead, provide and protect their family. He calls this "government patriarchy" and teaches men that they should embrace the responsibility of "biblical patriarchy." On the back cover of Doug Phillips DVD titled *Getting the Big Picture* we read these magnificent words, "Biblical entrepreneurship involves the moral obligation to be economically creative and productive, incorporating principles of biblical patriarchy with its emphasis on freedom in Christ, inheritance, jurisdiction, and the household as a vibrant, economically productive, God-ordained unit for cultural transformation."

Jeffery M. Leving says in *Fathers' Rights*, "During the first one hundred or so years of American history, a father was, by law and in practice, both head of the family and his children's primary caregiver. Fathers were actively involved in every aspect of their children's growth, education, development, and well-being. Fathers taught life skills, both through formal instruction and by example. Fathers decided who their children would marry and managed their children's entry into the world outside the home. The United States was a patriarchy, and when divorce occurred, courts almost always awarded full custody of the children to fathers." The nineteenth century Victorians were not perfect but they were right in not letting women get children in divorce. Father has said several times that only men should get the children in divorce. There is no writer alive who is more politically incorrect than Sun Myung Moon. Here are some quotes of Father that prove he believes patriarchy is a core value:

> There is a great deal of family breakup here in America. Is the husband or wife

usually the cause of this breakup? (Wife.) You know well. Is that a good thing to see? (No.) Absolutely not. It is very bad to see the family destruction. When a divorce case comes before a judge in a court of law, which side usually gains the most sympathy from the judge? (Wife.) Do the children of this divorcing husband and wife belong to the father or mother? (The father.) Even if a couple goes through the divorce, the children must belong to the father. Why? Because the origin of the seed for the children comes from the father. The mother is like the blanket or scarf within which the seed is wrapped in order to germinate and grow. Usually it is the wife who insists on being given the custody of the children. Is such a mother right or wrong? She is wrong.

If there was a law written into the American *Constitution* which states that children from divorced couples belong to the father, there would not be so much destruction within American families. With such a Constitution, if there was a divorce case, the wife would leave her husband but she would receive no child support or alimony whatsoever. According to American law, when a husband and wife divorce the wife has the right to raise the children and receive financial support from her husband to do so. This gives them something to lean on. Otherwise they wouldn't dare divorce so easily. Do you agree? (Yes.) (5-5-96)

Laws reflect the ruling conscience of the society. So the modern divorce laws send the children with the mother. If they sent the children with the father and had no alimony clause, would so many divorces take place? No. (12-1-97)

In America, it is a mistake to send the children of divorce to the wife. Change that law. (6-22-01)

Who stands in the position of subject, man or woman? (Man.) Why should man stand in the position of subject? (Because he contains the seed of life.) Unificationist women don't claim that man is the subject because they like that idea, but actually they have no choice in the matter. You really didn't believe it until you joined the Unification Church. Women in this American melting pot society claim that they should be subject. Who will eventually prevail between American Unificationist women and those American melting pot, society women?

If these American women insist on the idea of women being subject, then eventually we can bring women from Africa and India and through them sow the true seed. Then the American women, who insist on maintaining their subjectivity, will certainly face some problems. What then is your role as a woman? You are like a field waiting to be planted. Whatever seed the farmer may sow in your field you have to produce. As a field, do you have the luxury of telling the farmer what kind of seed to sow in your field? You have absolutely no choice. American women don't like such an idea. In order to respond affirmatively to Father regarding this matter, you have had to come through such a drastic change in your thinking. Once the farmer sows the seed in your field, can you claim the fruit of that seed, the harvest as your own? To whom does the crop belong? (The owner of the seed.) Therefore, to whom do your children belong? (The husband.) Absolutely the husband.

American law deals with child custody in a misguided way. Therefore, we have to change that particular part of the American *Constitution*. The woman's responsibility is to follow her husband. If your husband represents the bones of your body, you are in the position of the flesh. Therefore, the two of you have to become one. Otherwise we will end up with two origins, two directions and two effects.

When divorce occurs between a couple, who usually wants to have the custody of the children? (Women.) Since we understand the truth, should not such women be considered as thieves in claiming their children. You women don't feel in your minds that they are thieves. Then is Father telling you a lie? (No.)

The father stands in the vertical position. Therefore if you want to climb up the vertical ladder you have to climb up your father. Your mother is in the horizontal position of the field. The head of your family is your father, not your mother. He stands in the position of the family king. How about American families? There are many, various fathers and mothers. Everything is confused and mixed up. This shows that they have completely disregarded this principle. If the *Constitution* of this country was written in such a way that, should divorce take place between a couple, the children should remain with their father, then the wife wishes to divorce she should go freely without taking anything. If this was the case, we would have far fewer divorces in this country. Suppose all of the children desire to follow their father, wouldn't the mother eventually come back because of her love for her children? Don't you think there would be a greater chance of recovering the family this way? No matter how fertile your field might be, if there is no farmer to sow the seeds, then your field will be wasted. (6-9-96)

CONFLICT RESOLUTION

Check out Marshall B. Rosenberg's book *Nonviolent Communication: A Language of Life* and watch his YouTube.com videos. One video is a 3 hour workshop that one person said is, "A powerful tool for peace and partnership...shows us how to listen empathically and...communicate our authentic feelings and needs." Some in my family have found this to give wonderful insights in how we should correctly talk to each other and how to stop and prevent fights. I highly recommend every Blessed Couple to watch the video together.

SUBMISSION OF YOUNGER MEN TO ELDER MEN IN THE FAMILY

I would like to introduce the idea of men submitting to their fathers and those fathers submitting to the grandfathers in a community where parents live in the same house or next to their adult sons. The philosophy of godly patriarchy would say that a man's sons should do everything they can to live near him. We live in a transition time and God may call a man to live away from his father such as defending America by being in the military. We honor our servicemen who have sacrificed so we can be free. Freedom is not free. It was paid for by our veterans. There may be other reasons for a son to not live near his parents, but the ideal is for sons to honor their parents by living close to them as an extended family.

Father says, "When something good happens, a person of filial piety thinks of his parents first. To think of husband or wife first is a fallen custom. Without buying something precious for parents, you cannot buy anything for your wife. Before buying new clothes for your wife, you should buy clothes for your parents. A wife cannot ask her husband to buy certain clothes that she likes without buying for the parents first. Before buying himself clothes, a husband should buy for his parents first and then for his wife. The same rule applies to eating. You are to prepare a meal first to eat together with your parents." (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

Children need to live near high standard grandparents so children can grow to understand the heart of God most fully. A man's daughters marry into other families and they should honor their husband's father and live near him. A blessed sister should focus on her new family and hopefully can visit her parents and siblings sometimes. Let's give an example to help make this value clear. Let's say a young Unificationist sister gets blessed and her husband decides he wants to be principled and live as three generations and moves to be near his father. The sister should adapt and not look back at her parents and her country. Let's say an 18-year-old man from

America and an 18-year-old woman from Japan get blessed and have a baby when they are 19 years old. Tragically the husband dies. What should the sister do? She should stay with her husband's side of the family for the rest of her life and let the grandfather on the man's side be the primary male teacher of her child. The child would learn English from the grandfather and Japanese from the mother. Hopefully the child would be able to spend time in Japan with the mother's family, but if he or she cannot then the Japanese mother should not complain about missing her family and putting down America and spend the rest of her life with her husband's side of the family. This world would say this is wrong and would advise the sister to go back to her family in Japan, but that is not God's will. True Father has brought an ideology of order to this disordered world. We are asked to choose the vertical over the horizontal.

This book can only scratch the surface in discussing core values. There are some good books I recommend for further study, but we are also in a place at the time of the writing of this book where there are no books that give practical, detailed, guidance on how to take Sun Myung Moon's words and apply them in our fallen world. There are many kinds of situations fallen people create and there is no book that gives the principled response to those problems. For example, in the scenario given in the previous paragraph there could be many variables that may influence people to not do as I write. Let's say the grandfather leaves the Unification Movement and becomes negative. Does that negate the rule of patriarchy and the Japanese mother can go home to Japan and have her child raised by her father who is a follower of Sun Myung Moon? What if the grandfather in America is incompetent? Does she move to live near her husband's brother and have him be the father figure for her child? What if he is not a member?

If a blessed couple has parents who are also blessed couples then the couple should honor the parents on the man's side as priority grandparents to live near. For example, if a blessed couple has children and the man is in the military and cannot live near his parents and has to separate for a while from the family because he has to spend time in a war zone, it would be best for the wife to live with the man's family until he returns. If her husband's father cannot provide a good place for her to stay and her own father can, then, obviously, she should live with her parents but this is not the ideal because grandchildren should be educated by the grandparents on the father's side who live close to their sons. The West has a more difficult time understanding the value of grandparents than the East. Father says:

> The basic concept of Western civilization is the concept of the individual, whereas the Oriental concept is the concept of the whole. Therefore, the center point of Western civilization is very limited and it cannot stand. Only when we are centered on the whole can we find strength. And religion, too. The civilization that was founded based on religious content and teachings, and the Oriental culture. (1-12-92)

> The problem with English is that there are not built-in words of respect and order. You say "you" to a child and "you" to a grandfather. This is impossible in Korean. You have different words to delineate each level of respect for the person you are speaking to. This is the problem.
>
> There must be three united together in one home or one area, and then God can dwell there. Through this path of harmonization through love, ultimately we come to be one with God's heart. One generation cannot make God's lineage; there must be at least three generations.

FAMILY-CENTERED MIND

Father teaches, "There is nothing more important than the family." When "three generations of a family" live together "there is nothing that can pull them apart." We are supposed to think of the

family before ourselves. “Do not,” he says, live with a “self-centered mind, but instead with a family-centered mind, in order to restore the realm of three generations.” (6-18-2010)

Father usually speaks in a philosophical manner. He is focused on the forest, not the trees. It is our job to apply his big, philosophical ideas to everyday, mundane life.

IMPORTANCE OF GRANDPARENTS

Let’s look at the importance of grandparents in the family. Father says:

> The mission of the tribal messiah is to establish the families of the Peaceful Universal Homeland, where four generations: grandparents, parents, children, and the children’s children live as one family that is attending the eternal God. This is also God’s heartfelt desire.
>
> Without your grandfather could you exist? (No.) Would you exist without your parents? (No.) We may call God our original grandfather.
>
> When it comes to the family relationship, usually grandparents love their grandchildren more than parents love their children. Because by going through these different levels of love you can become more perfect when you join the spiritual world.
>
> When we tilt this family tree sideways [indicating to diagram] then grandparents are in the position representing our past, while our parents represent the present and the children represent the future. It is all connected inseparably. But when we connect these three different points then we can have this sphere. Parents and children relationship, conjugal relationship, brother and sister relationship. All different kinds of relationships existing within this sphere are centered upon True Love. That is where God exists. That is why the formula for all mankind is the same. We all need parents, husband and wife, children and even grandchildren. We need three generations because we have to connect vertically as well as horizontally. If we connect to our parents, it stops in the middle. We need to connect vertically to our grandparents level. If we connect only to the parental level we stop here at the triangle [indicating to the board]. But if we connect to grandparents it becomes a sphere. Grandparents make a vertical connection. Through this four position foundation, this spherical, circular motion begins. Any way you look at it, three different generations are represented here [indicating to the board].
>
> Do American families have this structure? If not you will soon disappear. Without the vertical connection to grandparents you will disappear. Grandparents represent the past. They also represent God. How old is God? His age is eternal.
>
> Do you need your grandparents or don’t you? (YES.) Therefore we need to understand that the grandfathers and grandmothers who have been sent to senior citizens’ homes cry because they miss their grandchildren. Here in America it is usual for children to expect their parents to call them in advance if they want to visit. But when the husband enters into the wife’s bedroom, does he need to knock and gain approval in order to enter? (No.) Even if your husband is in a deep sleep, as his wife you can enter the room naked and pull back the blanket and sit on him. It is perfectly acceptable. There are no boundaries. Those American brothers and sisters who still wish your parents to give you a call in advance before they visit raise your hands. Those of you who want your spouse to gain your approval before entering into the bedroom raise your hands.

If your parents come when you are in the middle of your meal and you have no other food in the house, you should be able to offer your food to them. As a wife you should have the same heart towards your husband.

If there are difficulties in your own village then the village itself should be able to solve it. Don't expect your nation to solve the problem for you. This is the natural law.

Why did Father Moon come to America? Because the foundation of America, which is Christianity, is rotten … Heaven sent me to America. American people do not realize this. This is the problem. Does this sound good or bad? (Good.) You may actually feel bad but you have to say good. But actually you have to change yourselves to be able to respond "good" naturally. You need to repent and then you can feel good. Without going through the way of indemnity there is no way to make a balanced world.

Therefore Father Moon encourages all American young couples to take your grandparents or parents out of the senior citizens homes and serve them at your home like you would serve God. Would you protest to Father? (No.) The conclusion is simple and clear. We have to be able to serve our parents and grandparents just as if they were God. Also we need to be able to treat our children the way in which we would treat God. Because they will become God also. After Adam and Eve died they were to become the invisible God. However, their children were to become the visible God in this world. We should be able to offer the same level of love and heart to even our grandchildren. [Father draws on the board.] This is why a triangular relationship exists between God and Adam and Eve, then three different generations. But as Father mentioned earlier, God was able to love Adam and Eve but not His grandchildren. (10-15-03)

Here are some more quotes from Father on grandparents and building ideal families:

We are speaking of the textbook of love. What is a textbook? A textbook is a guide; anybody who follows the same guide or formula will achieve the same results. With the textbook of love, you will first of all embrace your family. What are the components of your family? First there are the grandparents and then the parents. Then there are the children, which is your position, and then the grandchildren.

The question to ask is: do these four levels of couples belong to God? Are they God-centered or not? The family is the center of the universe; it is the building block and when you duplicate the building block, you build the world. Unification Church members should know that.

For you members of the Unification Church, where is the Kingdom of God? The Kingdom of God is within your family. That Kingdom is desired by the grandparents, the parents, yourselves, and your children.

If your own physical parents are divorced or separated, raise your hands, please. Among those who raised your hands, if you think this situation brought you great happiness, please raise your hands again. Those who feel it was unfortunate, please raise your hands. No matter where you are from, you all arrived at the same conclusion about this question. Do you think that in a thousand years, people will change and they will say, "Yes, I am glad that my mom and dad divorced? No, that age will never come.

Just by observing nature, you can find unchanging truth. When you see a family of wild ducks swimming in a pond, it is natural to see both parents with the babies;

you don't normally see a single duck parent trying to take care of a brood of babies. The mother duck swims in front, and the proud, good-looking father duck is behind, protecting them. Does this look good or bad? Will this phenomenon change when technology becomes more advanced? No, it will not.

The baby eagles are perfectly trusting under the protection and care of the mother and father eagle. The baby will accept anything the parent does for it, even taking a snake for food if the parent gives it to him. It doesn't resist and say, "Oh no, Mommy, I don't want to eat a snake!" It just opens its mouth and eats. But the supreme creation of God, human beings, are not that way. So many children are mistrustful of their parents' judgment. This is what is called the generation gap.

What about the conduct of parents? There are cases of parents wanting to go out to a party and not having a baby sitter, so they just tie their child into the bed, saying, "You stay here until I come back. Don't move." That is a terrible thing for a parent to do. The degradation of human moral character has fallen far below the insects, the birds or the animals. Because of the degradation of the family, the world has become what it is. ("Textbook of Love" February 5, 1984)

GRANDFATHER IS KING OF THE FAMILY

The family is the microcosm of the universe. God gave us this microcosm as our textbook of love, the school in which people can be trained to relate with the rest of the world. Who should be the master or the subject of the family? It should be whoever knows the most and serves the most. Who knows more, experiences more, and has more power to control? It is the grandparents. Why is this correct? The grandparents are in the position to have more experience and they certainly know more. Thus the grandfather is like the king of that family.

At some point the grandparents know they are getting old and so they say, "My children, you should take over. I dedicate everything to you." Then the parents will say, "If that is your wish, we will take that responsibility." Eventually the parents will say, "Now, my child, you are ready to take over the responsibility of this family." Then you will come up into the responsible position. That is the way responsibility is delegated. That becomes the tradition: the grandparents delegate the responsibility to the parents, then the parents give it to you, and you to your children. As each generation of grandparents goes to spirit world, the responsibility moves along.

The family is the microcosm of the universe and the textbook of love for universal relationships. However, because the world is fallen, there have been no totally God-centered grandparents, parents, children or grandchildren. For that reason, God wants to remake or restore this textbook of love from the very beginning. He wants to make one true model and that is the reason religions were begun. The ultimate purpose of religion has been to recapture the ideal family.

Finally one religious movement has come, declaring clearly to the world that the family is the building block of the Kingdom of Heaven. Perfection must come to the family and the family must be God-centered. Furthermore, it is teaching the concept of True Parents. This is the teaching of the Unification Church. The Unification Church has brought forth a new concept of the family and, through that family, a new concept of the world, the universe, and all of humanity. The mission of the Unification Church is to create that model, the textbook of love, and to expand it to the universal level. In that way, we can remake society. That is the goal.

What is the purpose of the Blessing you have received? It is to create that new family tradition as the textbook of love for the world. This is the first time in human history that the terminology of True Parents has been used. Without True Parents, how can we expect to have true grandparents? Without True Parents, there is no way we can have true husband and wife or true children. Thus the focal point of this historical event must be the True Parents. From that point on, all things start to happen.

This is the first time ever that True Parents have appeared on the face of the earth. Who is the central figure on the True Parents' family level?

Once True Parents become true grandparents, who will be the central figure then? According to the tradition, the grandfather must be the center, so when he is promoted to the grandparents' position, he remains the central figure. (2-5-84)

Father Moon says:

Grandparents should not say to their grandchildren who are trying to go out and love the world, "Don't love anyone more than you love us." Such grandparents are destined for hell. The grandparents should say, "Practice your love in this family and then when you go out into the world, love others more than us." Those grandparents are destined for heaven. When husband and wife have the same attitude, loving the world more than each other, then they are truly exhibiting a God-centered attitude. That is the world of utopia, the Kingdom of Heaven.

This is the path I have been walking. I want you to inherit this principle and these traditions so that you can live for the sake of humanity. If you do that, your children will inherit the best possible thing from you. You blessed couples know that your children are precious, but God demands that you love other children even more. It should be your standard to sacrifice your children for the sake of other children, for the rest of the world.

I am asking you to love the future generations. Even when I am no longer here, you must carry on the tradition and teach your own children the same tradition that I taught you. Your children in turn will teach the same tradition to the entire world. This tradition will go on, and this is my only ambition.

Within the ideal family, four generations are living together. Sadly, one seldom finds such a family here in America. Therefore a new tradition is being erected, centering on Father Moon. You are the blessed couples, so I am elevated to the level of grandparent. Will I have to telephone and ask before I come to visit you in your home?

If you have only one bedroom, will you give the bedroom to your parents and sleep in the bathroom, if necessary? No problem? That should be so normal, you wouldn't even have to think about it.

My own family had this kind of tradition. They never let anybody leave our home with an empty stomach. Our home used to be like a beggars' gathering place; all the poorest people of the vicinity knew they would be well treated, so they came to our home. Not one was mistreated. My mother served our grandparents and she also served the passing beggars. She would feed them whenever they came by. This was a heavy physical ordeal for my mother. On one occasion, she did not feed a beggar,

so my father took his own meal and gave it to him. So my mother had to feed the beggars, otherwise my father would be hungry. (2-5-84)

Father teaches:

In a family, children will be proud that they have been loved by their grandparents as well as their parents. The more love we receive, not only from our parents, the more we like it.

Husband and wife can never unite for eternity if they do not have an identical purpose. (2-26-89)

There are three great family kingships which all people desire to attain: grandparents (representing God) are the kings of the past; parents (representing worldwide families) are kings of the present; and children represent the future and are kings of the future. When you attend your grandparents, you are attending God and the spirit world. When you attend your parents, you are loving all the families of the world. When you love and attend your children, you are loving all the future. Thus in the ideal family we find the kingship of the heavenly world, the kingship of this world, and the kingship of the future world.

Respect for elders

In order to have this complete experience, we absolutely need a spouse and children. When you look at your face or your finger, you see three stages. Life needs three stages. Do you need children? Do you need your spouse? Do you need your parents?

Grandparents have to embrace their grandchildren; they can't do that if they are in a senior citizens' home. Measured by this standard, the American family system is confused and doesn't lead people to heaven. The American family becomes fragmented and the people's spirit does too. Kingship and authority breaks down when the family breaks up and people mix with anyone. This world must be reconstructed.

In Korea children cannot eat before the grandparents. That is the practice of kingship. [Rev. Zin Moon Kim interjects that as a young boy his family was very poor. His mother would not let him eat before his grandfather came back. She would tell him, "Your grandparents must eat first because they are the center of the family."]

The world is our family

As children grow up they need to be educated to understand that the whole world is to be one family. The world and the cosmos are their home. The foundation for this is brother/sister love. If you do not love your brothers and sisters you are not a child of filial piety. Other people are not just nameless people that you can steal from; they are your brothers and sisters. If you do not love brothers and sisters, you cannot become a microcosm of the human race.

Horizontal people "make love," but without vertical love they are isolated from each other and from God. We need the vertical understanding of love. (10-23-92)

... the most important thing to do is establish true families based on true love. This means we must build families in which three generations live together in true love with true parents at the center. (7-4-2007)

Sun Myung Moon gave a speech on Capitol Hill in Washington D.C. on March 23, 2004 titled "Declaring the Era of the Peace Kingdom" saying:

> Individuals who achieve such completion of character come together to form true families, and the members of these families work together to establish what I call the "four great realms of heart." Such families resemble, in form, an individual who has accomplished the complete oneness of mind and body. I have said that the Kingdom of Heaven is a place we enter family by family. Not every family, however, is qualified to enter Heaven automatically. You need a foundation to be a true family and to complete the four great realms of heart. A true family that can enter the Kingdom of Heaven is composed of true individuals who have completed the four great realms of heart in themselves and who are of a lineage centering on God.
>
> What do I mean, then, by the "four great realms of heart"? I refer to the perfection of the heart of parents, the heart between a husband and wife, the heart of children, and the heart of siblings. This is found in a true family bound by God's original true love, true life and true lineage through a chaste three-generational lineage of grandparents, parents, and (grand) children. Here, the love between parents and children establishes the vertical relationship between upper and lower; the love between the husband and wife establishes the horizontal relationship that brings left and right into definitive oneness, and the love between siblings establishes the relationship between front and back. In this way, God's ideal of creation is no longer a mere concept or dream. It is perfected in reality through the completion of the four great realms of heart centered on true lineages, family by family.
>
> The parents are the center, in God's position in the family, and it is impossible for a child to be born without parents. For these reasons, the relationship between parent and child is established not by human morality but by a heavenly morality. Thus the parent-child relationship is a vertical relationship, not horizontal. It is not a relationship of destiny, which means that human effort can change it, but it is a relationship of absolute and eternal fate.
>
> Children experience and learn the heart of true love as they attend their parents in daily life, placing their parents in a position higher than themselves. Through a natural process, they come to understand that the love, life and lineage that they inherit from their parents originate in God. Children who watch and learn from their parents in this way will grow up to become husbands and wives who have no fallen nature, and ultimately they will obtain the position of true parents themselves. The spherical motion of the family unit that continually repeats the three-generational pattern in this way is the basic model for building the Kingdom of Heaven. (3-23-04)

Mrs. Moon said in a speech titled "The Path of Life for All Humankind" (1999):

> Today the world is lost in great confusion and cries out in agony. We face endless conflict as individuals, in our families, in our nations and in the world. As individuals, we are confronted with inner turmoil between our mind and body. Our families are plagued with the moral decadence of our young people and the breakdown of family-centered traditions.
>
> Even in the spirit world, your parents will always want to be with you. Therefore, it is a terrible sin for a person to dislike being accompanied by his

parents. Such behavior tears the universe apart. When a person doesn't like to go with his parents, it means that he is already moving away from the *Principle* and toward the Fall.

Thus, acts of filial piety, such as loving and caring for our parents as we would ourselves, are the most precious things. That is why there is a saying, "Good fortune comes to a harmonious family".

On the other hand, when parents divorce, they might as well take a knife and cut their children in half. The law of the universe does not allow such an act. Parents who disobey this law will meet with misfortune wherever they go, and will never find happiness.

A grandmother and grandfather should bind their hearts together centering on their grandchildren. This is necessary so that the vertical line of love can have a beginning. Also, grandchildren must become one with their grandparents. Grandparents are in the same position as God, so we should attend them as we would attend God. Grandchildren will not be able to find the vertical axis of love without doing this.

Parents cannot pass a single day without missing their beloved sons and daughters. Even if it has been only a few minutes since they last saw them, they want to see them again. If someone were to try to sever this relationship, they will find it never can be broken, for children are the bone of their parents' bones and the flesh of their flesh. If their children disappear, parents feel as if they may die. All their ideals depend on their children.

The Fall meant that we inherited the life and lineage of evil, centering on evil love. We were born from false parents. We, therefore, have to rebuild the lineage.

GRANDFATHER IS FINAL DECISION MAKER

Just as children obey parents and the wife obeys the husband I believe that it is Father's vision for ideal families that men honor the elder men in their family. Submission in a family is not reserved only for the wife and children. I believe that sons should have the same attitude of submission to their fathers and grandfathers as children have for parents and wives for their husbands. Every major decision a man is thinking of making should be in consultation with his father and grandfather and great-grandfather. A son, father and grandfather make a perfect trinity in the home. Men should not be like this world and live separate from and make decisions separate from their father. The father should live nearby and be the patriarch of his clan and tribe. His sons live with him and his daughters will probably be living elsewhere with their husbands. The grandfather leads his son's families. He is the final decision maker. When he becomes too feeble or incapacitated to rule then the eldest son should lead if he is capable.

Father says that when children in a family marry the parents should bless them in order of age: "The first son should marry first and start his family first. Everything has an order. There is a term in Korean called 'reverse marriage.' (This refers to reversal in the order of marriage, especially between brothers.) The order is violated quite often today. This reflects the content and concept of restoration. Thus one tries to go this way and that way and even follow the reverse order. The 'reverse marriage' should not take place. If the order is reversed, everything will go belly up. The world has become this way." This same principle of respecting elders would apply for leadership roles in the family.

There is a hierarchy of leadership in the family with the grandfather at the top and at the center. This is not the norm in America but it will be in the ideal world. Let's honor our blessed parents and grandparents by giving them the authority to lead. Father is into community, not individuals. We need to build multigenerational families. The grandfather teaches his grandsons hunting and the grandmother teaches knitting and sewing. Bill Cosby said once that grandparents are not just

for babysitting, they are for giving wisdom. Grandparents should help homeschool their many grandchildren. If children do not have grandparents then they should live in communities where they are around blessed grandparents who will nurture them.

If a man does not have a living, wise blessed father or grandfather then he should live in a trinity or community where he is close to elder good family men to learn from and confide in when he makes major decisions.

Young men and women and young couples should never blend into the fallen world by separating from their parents and grandparents. Everyone wants freedom but freedom comes with responsibilities. God's order is for the traditional patriarchal biblical family where the elderly are loved and respected as wise leaders. There should be a reverent attitude toward parents and grandparents. Father speaks out strongly against the fallen world that loves Satan's definition of freedom. Today, families are separated because that is Satan's plan. Father has come to unite families. When we have unity then we have love and then we can have the ideal. Father is going against the grain when he says young people do not have the freedom to choose their mates but this does not mean that young people have less freedom. By submitting to their parents in the process of finding their soul mate they will find more freedom and happiness than if they did it alone. Father says, "Can you marry according to your own will? Heavenly marriage especially requires the parent's approval and blessing" (3-27-87). Sons should not make any major decisions in their life without their father's and grandfather's approval. Decisions like buying a car, a home or deciding where to live and how to earn money are not for him and his wife to decide on their own. The son's parents should be involved and if there is a conflict then the son should obey the final decision of the father. And if the grandfather disagrees with the father and sides with the son then the father should submit to his father and let his son do what he had planned.

The father and grandfather know the financial situation of everyone of his sons. The grandfather, father, and sons meet together to determine how money is spent and how their families are organized. Just like the President and his cabinet, the grandfather has the final say on the family budget and every other major aspect of their community. This does not mean there is strict socialism or communism where all money is put into one pot and the grandfather redistributes it. Godly patriarchs believe in the sacred value of private property and capitalism. On the other hand a family lives together and helps each other. If someone becomes sick spiritually or physically then the family rallies around that person to help. If a child of one son has to have expensive operations then the rest help pay for it. If the parents become senile in their old age they are cared for at home. If anyone gets depressed and can't perform their daily duties then others cover for them. Sometimes a young parent dies young or gets sick and this mobilizes the other brothers and their wives to help that family. Father says:

> In your family, if one of your brothers is sick or somehow crippled, you have to pay more attention to him and give him more love, isn't it true? (4-23-95)
>
> If you want to be a true son of piety, you have to be recognized by the entire household as one who is giving his utmost to his parents. That position is usually unwanted by others because it requires sacrifice and tribulation. But is it more valuable when your tribulation is short or long?
>
> You must serve without any concept of what level of achievement might come.
>
> There are many ways people can die. People can die reluctantly, or out of duty, but also out of a fervent love which goes beyond the call of duty. Parents are not always exalted or important, but a son who serves such humble parents without thought of reward is really the son of filial piety. That is genuine love. Perhaps they may just lie in their sickbed for ten years without hope of recovery, but day after day the son

willingly takes care of them. Is that easy?

The standard of supreme piety toward one's parents is determined by length of suffering and intensity of love. When God recognizes someone as the son of greatest filial piety, it is most important that no one be in a position to criticize and say he doesn't deserve it. How much can such a person be thankful for the opportunity to become such a person, though he never planned to strive for it? The greater the tribulation a person overcomes, the greater the thanksgiving he feels afterward. Do you agree with me? (11-23-80)

All the assets of a family should be shared with all the members of that family. (3-25-05)

Father hates individualism. He is focused on families, not individuals. Father says, "Individualism and the desire for possession belong to Satan" (*Way of Unification - Part 1*). He teaches that the family, not the individual, is the basic unit of life. Americans and those in the West find this concept difficult to understand. Father says we are not supposed to be focused on individuals making and spending money but three and four generational families and trinities making financial decisions together. A husband in a family should spend his money only after he has discussed it with those men in his extended family and trinity. Today men are lonely wagons who make financial decisions alone. The heavenly way, the principled way, would be for men to live as trinities and make financial decisions together. The ideal would be for elders, like grandfathers, to be the final decision makers for how money is earned, saved, invested and spent. Private property is important but it should be in the context of family, not the individual. It would be best if two or three men worked together on a business they own instead of having jobs or careers that keep them lonely. Women should do everything as a group of two or more. It is dangerous for anyone to be alone. Satan will attack with temptations that the average person can't withstand. Women should not even shop for groceries alone.

Father loves people. He is not a loner. He does not live alone. He is constantly surrounded by people. He lives in a community. Father says that he always walks his talk, "By observing True Father's life we can know that he is one hundred percent at one with his teachings" (6-23-96).

On his 2001 speaking tour in America he publicly said, "The husband is responsible to rear the children born to him and his wife to become filial children, patriots to the nation, saints for the world and finally divine sons and daughters of God. In this way, husband and wife relate as subject and object partners. In terms of quality, men and women are equal in value. However, in terms of the order of things, the husband, who holds the seed of life within him, is the subject partner. With her husband as absolute subject partner, a wife and the children should create one heart and one body and offer a true family to God." Note that Father emphasizes the husband raising his children to be great. Then he explains that the man is subject and the woman is object. He explains that they are partners but there is "order" with the man leading.

ADAPTABLE

Father teaches the old-fashioned view that God made women more adaptable so they can follow men, "Why does it usually happen that the woman follows the man once they get married, rather than the other way around? It is because women are more easily adaptable to difficult and changing circumstances than men." ("In Search Of Our Home" July 11, 1982)

POSITION OF BONES

Father is a keen observer of people and explains how women need to stop focusing on their past and adapt to her husband's country and his family's traditions:

In the world today is man the problem or woman? Who is the major cause of the

problems of the world? (Women.) Because woman is the determining point of good and evil. Women have a tendency to think about themselves first. Even after her marriage, when she visits her husband's family she usually thinks about her own situation. She tries to deny the husband's family tradition.

One Concept
In the marriages of the world, once a bride marries she should no longer cling to the customs of her family. Rather she has to adopt the customs of her husband's family. When we are engrafted to the Lord of the Second Advent we have to abandon all of our old habits because we stand in the position of bride to the bridegroom. The husband is in the position of bones and the wife is in the position of flesh. In order to unite, there has to be only one concept between them. (6-23-96)

It is crucial that Unificationist sisters unite with Father's direction and not "cling to the customs of her family" and not be homesick. Unification in the family is necessary for happiness. Sisters are called to "adopt the customs of her husband's family." Father says, "You should feel the family standard keenly. Man is subject and he should stand in the center. The subject should stand in the position of subject, not that of object. The center should be protected and it shouldn't be at an odd angle. He is in the position representing God." Father teaches, "The wife should be obedient to and supportive of her husband. Of course, it is the husband's responsibility to increase his wife's willingness to do that. The husband should teach the wife how the Principle works. A wife should have the attitude to accept her husband's opinion 100%. She should create so strong an internal bond to her husband that she accepts his actions 100% as well. She should go east when her husband orders her to go. If a woman doesn't follow where her husband goes, she is not a wife at all." (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

Unificationists should live together as three generations and honor the grandfather as the final decision maker for the family.

Do not be influenced by the egalitarian writers on marriage Susanne Alexander and Les and Leslie Parrott. Let's look at what these feminist writers say. In Alexander's book *Can We Dance? Learning the Steps for a Fulfilling Relationship* we read, "In the past, relationships have often been guided by the belief that the man is the 'head' of a relationship or home, with the woman responsible for 'submitting' to him." She says she agrees with the Parrotts that couples should live by the value of "equality" where no one has the right to "dominate." Alexander writes "neither you nor your partner has the right to dominate, control, force, or dictate to the other." All decisions have to be "a mutual decision." This is false. The truth is the exact opposite—the man of the house is the head of the home and the final decision maker. Liberals have a hard time with the word "dominate." Genesis 1:28 says we are to dominate the earth. This means dominate with love. Godly patriarchs dominate their wives with love. The word "domineering" means "acting with or showing arrogance or tyranny; imperious." This is not how godly patriarchs act.

At their website the Parrotts have a video where they answer a viewer's question about women who earn more than men. They laugh this off, and Les even says he thinks it is a wonderful thing if a wife earns more money than her husband. Both talk about how any man who is threatened by this must change. Helen Andelin in her book *Fascinating Womanhood* teaches, "Women in the feminist movement are inclined to feel that women's work in the home is inferior to men's work. When doing domestic chores they feel like second-class citizens, not like goddesses. They think the only important, exciting work is the world of men. Therefore, they seek fulfillment in careers outside the home." Men, she says, have "an inborn need to excel women as a provider. A man's feeling of worth can be undermined when he sees women in the work force doing a better job than he, advancing to a higher position, or earning more pay. How much worse when his own wife

excels him." She goes on to say, "Avoid outdoing your husband for position or acclaim. Never try to achieve in a field in which he is trying to win acclaim, or seek an honor which would overshadow his success." The UC should be teaching Helen's book and her husband's book for men, *Man of Steel and Velvet*."

In their book *Saving Your Marriage Before It Starts* the Parrotts give examples of what they see as healthy relationships. In one example there is a couple that lived in Chicago. The husband was building his career and his wife decided to take journalism courses at a university. She was offered a job out of town and her husband did the politically correct thing and followed her. The Parrotts present this as an example of a man respecting his wife. Alexander and the Parrotts are all for women working outside the home. They are fundamentally flawed and so their books are worthless. There is no true "respect" going on in their value system.

The number one goal of Satan is to destroy godly patriarchy just like he did in the Garden of Eden. Feminists are the ambassadors of Satan who have their sights on patriarchy. The following are two examples of books by feminists that talk about their main focus of destroying patriarchy.

One reviewer (*Village Voice*) of Mary Daly's *Beyond God the Father: Toward a Philosophy of Women's Liberation* says, "What other feminists have revealed by analyzing patriarchal society's political, economic, social, and sexual institutions, Daly does for the spiritual institution on which Western civilization is founded. Not for the timid, this brilliant book calls for nothing short of the overthrow of patriarchy itself."

The book flap for *Women-Church: Theology & Practice of Feminist Liturgical Communities* by Rosemary Radford Ruether says: "Christian feminists cannot wait for the institutional churches to reform sufficiently to provide the vehicle of faith and worship that they need today. As a response to the failure of both traditional and left-wing Christianity to meet their needs, they are joining together to reclaim aspects of the biblical tradition and to create new systems that liberate them from patriarchy. . . . Offers practical guidelines for developing communities of worship and mutual support." She does not give "practical guidelines." Ruether gives the worst advice possible. Feminists like to use the word "healing." Their ideology hurts people. Feminism is deadly to human happiness.

Gloria Steinem is the most famous feminist today. She gave a speech denouncing patriarchy and traditional families saying, "Patriarchy doesn't work anymore." The following is excerpts from a college newspaper:

> On Wednesday, November 8th, the Hartford Club organized a gala event featuring the most prominent feminist speaker of our time. Seeing Ms. Steinem immediately demonstrated the obvious reasons as to why she is such a well-known, respected individual in her field. Ms. Steinem spoke conversationally and personally about many current issues and covered a wide range of topics related to feminism today.
>
> To begin with, she received an enthusiastic round of applause to the initial statement, "Patriarchy doesn't work anymore." Her ensuing dialogue used many women's issues to highlight this point. Particularly targeting the conservative right that presently controls the American congress, as well as religious zealots who demand "morality," Ms. Steinem pointed out that these groups often refer to a family as a single unit, as if there is one type of family that is acceptable. Rather, a more appropriate term would be families, implying that there are many different types that exist in our society. Furthermore, she believes that we are breaking away from once traditional patterns of families that existed in the past.

> Today, we are living longer, experiencing more, given many opportunities that past families did not have. As we break loose from these patterns of the past, we realize that there are many different paths to take and divorce may be one of these passages. "We are making families in many ways." While those who cling to hierarchies and patriarchy tell us that these ways are wrong, we need to accept these different types of families as equal as opposed to a singular archetype.
>
> Ms. Steinem also addressed the issue of violence in our society today. … Ms. Steinem believes that original violence, violence in the home, is the source of all violence.
>
> Ms. Steinem challenged us to "Do something revolutionary, raise a feminist son." While once feminism fought to prove that women can do everything that men can, today we need to shift that focus to show that men can do everything women can do. Throughout many areas of her speech, Ms. Steinem was greeted with applause, laughter, approval and agreement.

PATRIARCHY DOES WORK

This student writing for her college newspaper is like so many who have been hoodwinked by Steinem and other feminist leaders. The truth is the very opposite of what this article says. Patriarchy works. Feminism does not work. Steinem is wrong in saying all types of families are "equal" in value. She doesn't know that the least violence in families is in the patriarchal families that she hates so much. Steinem fears "religious zealots" but it is "feminist zealots" like her that everyone should fear and reject. Her days are numbered. She is a dinosaur. Her ideas lack any vitality anymore. Her revolution has failed. Want to be truly revolutionary? Raise a patriarchal son.

The number one goal of Gloria Steinem and her rebellious fellow feminists is to destroy patriarchy. Why? Because that is Satan's number one goal. God has the opposite goal. God's plan was for Adam to lead Eve and his family. Adam was weak and followed Eve who followed Satan. The Fall is about a weak man and disorderly woman. Adam blamed Eve for the Fall. In the Garden of Eden God came to Adam, not Eve. Adam did not take responsibility for his failure to lead. It is unmanly for men to talk like Adam and sound like victims of women even when women initiate sin. Leaders must take responsibility. Men have not created principled and safe communities for women to live in. Men fall short of being perfect leaders and the consequences are devastating. Eve and all other women have to take responsibility for their short comings but we have to judge men for their lack of godly leadership to provide, protect and lead properly.

The social experiment of feminism is beginning to be exposed as the lie that it is. More and more women are leaving the workplace and going back home. More and more women are homeschooling. More and more women are writing and speaking out for the traditional, biblical family. More and more churches are standing up for patriarchy in the church.

In the *Divine Principle* we learn that there has been a 400-year (also a 600 year) preparation for the Messiah. The printing press was invented over 400 years ago because God wanted his ambassadors to write in detail about his vision for godly marriages and godly families. Let's look at one example of a marriage manual written over 400 years ago. Dp 400 year preparation for messiah he is crucial

JOHN BUNYAN

John Bunyan is famous for writing *The Pilgrim's Progress* in the 17th century, the world's most widely circulated book next to the Bible. At a website that has all of his writings online (www.JohnBunyan.org) we read that this book "is second only to the Bible itself in number of copies sold through the ages and through out the world. It is sad, however, to note that much of

what Bunyan wrote is forgotten." One person wrote that his book "has probably passed through more editions, had a greater number of readers, and been translated into more languages than any book in the English tongue." It has been translated into practically every language.

CHRISTIAN BEHAVIOR

Bunyan wrote about marriage in his book *Christian Behavior*. He teaches that husbands should never be angry with their wives, even when their wives are wrong. Godly patriarchs are sensitive. They are not advised to be harsh, cruel or lord it over the woman. Bunyan writes: "Let all be done without rancor, or the least appearance of anger: 'In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves, if peradventure they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will'" (2 Tim. 2:25,26). He writes like all Christian writers have written for the last 400 years that explain when the Bible speaks of women being in subjection it does not mean that they are slaves. In his chapter titled "The Duty of Wives" he writes:

> "Let the woman," saith Paul, "learn in silence with all subjection. But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence" (1 Tim 2:11,12). It is an unseemly thing to see a woman so much as once in all her lifetime to offer to overtop her husband; she ought in everything to be in subjection to him, and to do all she doth, as having her warrant, license, and authority from him. And indeed here is her glory, even to be under him, as the church is under Christ: Now "she openeth her mouth with wisdom, and in her tongue is the law of kindness" (Prov. 31:26).
>
> But yet, do not think that by the subjection I have here mentioned, that I do intend women should be their husbands' slaves. Women are their husbands' yoke fellows, their flesh and their bones; and he is not a man that hateth his own flesh, or that is bitter against it (Eph. 5:29). Wherefore, let every man "love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she reverence her husband" (Eph. 5:33). The wife is master next her husband, and is to rule all in his absence; yea, in his presence she is to guide the house, to bring up the children, provided she so do it, as the adversary have no occasion to speak reproachfully (1 Tim 5:10,13).

There have been many marriage and family manuals written over the last 400 years and up until recently they all glorified patriarchal, biblical, traditional families.

For hundreds of years Americans read books teaching patriarchy from authors who believed in the biblical patriarchal family. One of the most popular manuals of the seventeenth century was *Of Domesticall Duties* written by William Gouge in 1622. One of the most popular in the eighteenth century was *The Well-Ordered Family* by Benjamin Wadsworth in 1712. In the nineteenth century many lived by these principles as taught in *Manners: Happy Homes & Good Society All the Year Round* by Sarah Hale. One of the most popular today is Helen Andelin's book, *Fascinating Womanhood*.

Catherine Beecher was one the most influential writers of advice books in the 19th century. She urged women to obtain "appropriate scientific and practical training for her distinctive profession as housekeeper, nurse of infants and the sick, educator of childhood, trainer of servants and minister of charities." In this way women would "develop the intellectual, social and moral powers in the most perfect manner" so they could become excellent mothers, wives and social reformers.

There are a number of books on manliness. You have to be careful because they often teach both bad and good ideas. *Manliness* by Harvey C. Mansfield is an example of this. Mansfield is one of the few conservative professors at Harvard and he tries to define manliness but his attempt falls

flat because he thinks it would be good to restore some old-fashioned manliness in the home but outside the home it is good to have a "gender-neutral" society. You usually have to pick and choose between what is true and what is false when you read books on masculinity and femininity.

For a more theological view on patriarchy I think the best book to begin with is *Recovering Biblical Manhood and Womanhood* by John Piper and Wayne Grudem. The book has articles by many wonderful men and women who give their arguments with intellectual vigor and even though they sometimes get a little heavy with scholarly, academic jargon they are always interesting for the general reader.

In a speech given January 12, 1992 titled "New Nation and New Family [Part 1]" Sun Myung Moon gave some very interesting insights that can help us understand more deeply what patriarchy means:

> **ORDER**
> In the beginning of the Creation, God installed a certain order. We recognize orderliness, don't we? What if the eye claims his freedom and tries to occupy the place of the mouth? Why should the eyes be placed right in front of the face and not on the side, since they could cover more area, having a wider angle of vision? What about the nose? Why don't the nostrils have more space between them? Why shouldn't the ears be turned around and facing the back instead of the front of the head? At least one ought to be turned around, don't you think?
>
> Look at the hands and the arms in their natural position. Do they face each other, or are they facing away from each other? Is this the way we walk, or is this the way we walk? (Shows different ways of walking.) Everything is coordinated. Have you ever seen anybody who is mechanically straight? No, everybody is slightly curved inward. Isn't that true? Everything has an order and must function in compliance with that order.
>
> What if the hair decided to grow on all different parts of the face? It cannot go against order. All creation is directed by a certain orderliness. What about the fingers and the hand? Wouldn't it be more convenient if the hand was just one big device, without the separated fingers? Also you wouldn't have to cut so many fingernails. What if the middle finger was shorter than all the others? That middle finger is in the center, as an extension of the center of the arm, just like a bud in the tree should be longer than the rest of the branch. So we have the result.
>
> The hands must be rounded, not square or any other funny shape. If you have rounded hands when you clench them, your life will be an easier life. If so, then why are the feet shaped differently. Why is the first toe the longest instead of the middle, like in the hand? That is because the center of the foot is that first toe. Isn't that true? That is part of the orderliness.
>
> So do we need order? What if the eyebrow would be right here, instead of where it is? If one person out of the billions of people on the earth had a face that was actually like that, then he wouldn't ever have to work! He could just sit in a museum and get paid to be seen.
>
> **RULES AND REGULATIONS**
> There is no way of denying that everything in nature exists according to order

and design. Then, the second point is that we have rules and regulations. Do we need those rules? Man has man's rules. When a man goes to the bathroom, he can stand up and pass water. A woman has to sit down. What if they did it the other way around? That wouldn't be according to the rules! Actually, it is unruly. If some man strays into a woman's bathroom, or a woman strays into the man's bathroom, everybody laughs. It is funny and surprising. Yesterday, we had a guest and he was in the men's room. On his way out, he encountered a woman coming in. For a moment he thought he had been in the wrong bathroom. So a man uses the men's room in a man's manner and a woman uses the women's room in the women's manner. That is a rule. Isn't it necessary?

Suppose someone says, "I want to exert my freedom of choice. I will walk like this." (Acts out some funny way of walking.) Then he is not a man; he is something else. How can he eat food in that way? Or he says, "I have my own rule so this is the way I am going to use my arms." He does this all the time. Then he is not a man. So do we need rules? Yes.

(Father draws on the board.) Here is a man, with a big face, big eyes, nose and mouth. But his torso is quite small. Is that attractive? No, it is very strange. If he has a big head, then he should also have big shoulders and everything else. What if women had wide shoulders, like men, rather than wide hips? That would not be good. Now it seems that many women want to become men. They say, "Why not? We can become bigger and more powerful and eventually we will be able to rule over men, the way they have been ruling over us." Some contemporary women have this kind of thinking. Those women are American women. I do not wish to undermine or ridicule American women, but this is a fact. No Korean women are espousing such ideals.

RULES OF CONDUCT

This is a rule. If they go outside of the rule, will they find happiness or not? Will they look good? Those who say, "We don't need rules," raise your hands. Are we going to deny the rules of conduct? When we interact within the family, there are all different rules according to one's own position. There are brothers' rules, sisters' rules, mother's, father's, grandparents, husband and wife. There are all these different kinds of order and rules. Those who deny these rules are actually denying existence itself.

Here within the Unification Church, centering on Father, we have a certain order. If someone goes beyond that order, it does not come to anything. Just like the head is supposed to be at the top of the body, and the face has to be in the front. Someone who refuses to do that and wants to be someplace else is like a face that puts itself on the back of the head. That's against order.

PROPER RELATIONSHIP

Why is this kind of orderliness necessary? It is so that one can have proper relationship. It is for the sake of right relationship. No matter how perfect a man or woman may be, by themselves they don't mean anything unless they can conduct themselves properly in relationship with other people. Imagine a woman saying, "I don't care to be around any man. I only care about women." So she would live that way, with no relationship with anyone except other women. In that way, she is denying the rules of existence. If she continues that way, she will not be able to exist beyond one generation.

Look at the tiny sparrows. Do they have relationships or not? Yes, they have proper relationships with each other. What about the world of insects. Would one small insect ever choose to go off and live by himself? Another thing a woman might say is, "I will live above men." Would that be right? The woman is always supposed to be in a lower position than man. The man is taller and the woman is shorter. Is that Reverend Moon's order or Reverend Moon's rule? That is the natural order of relationship, not someone's interpretation. Those who say, "I don't want to be bound by that kind of rule. I will live the way I choose, without any relationship." Can anyone say such a thing? Can anyone be happy that way?

IDEAL

Through these examples, we can see the ideal. Intellectually, we have a good reason for this. Everybody wants the ideal, but that ideal cannot be attained without order. Without rules and order, there is no ideal. You cannot gain the ideal without relationship.

Isn't it true that everything has to be conducted according to right order and rules? Ideals, happiness — none of these are possible without the proper orderliness and compliance with rules. Now more and more stress is being placed on relationships, such as man's relationship with others, woman's relationship with others, the father's relationship with the children, and so forth. Not so much the individual, but relationships with others. Look at the way the Western women grow and decorate their fingernails. They like to grow them very long and paint them bright red. But Oriental women do not have that custom. Can they have proper relationship? That is very unnatural—she is creating a relationship. When something is too unnatural, then all things of the universe will reject it. The red on her nails, you wonder about it. I suspect that sometime in the future, women will start wearing black and even purple on their nails. Do you know what purple represents? The color of death. So is that kind of nail polish in line with order? Or is it within rules? Is it designed for proper relationship? No, it is strange. So the outcome is something other than the ideal.

BOUNDARIES

Even some animals know better than to have improper sexual relationship. For example, the horse knows better than to mate with its sibling from the same mare. Some birds remain monogamous. When one bird dies, its mate wants to die at the same time. They all live within the boundary of order and rules. Only human beings want to go beyond those boundaries.

When human relationships go out of bounds and people start engaging in such things as free sex, there can be no ideal anymore. If everything orderly has been denied, then the ideal itself is being denied.

My topic this morning is "The New Nation and the New Families." The nation is far away, so let us focus on our own family, which we can see every day.

GOD'S RULES

We must care about right relationship and natural law. That is required in order to find the ideal. Western people must do what they are supposed to do according to nature and God's rules.

IN ACCORDANCE WITH NATURE

When a man and woman dance together, what is their usual direction — do they dance around in a clockwise or counterclockwise direction? They move to the right side, in a clockwise direction, but why? It is because the man is leading. These things are not just accidentally determined. They are all in accordance with nature.

Order, rules and relationship and the resulting ideal are applicable to every level, regardless of the size. It applies to companies and labor unions too. Labor unions however, put stress on the lower relationship, not the upper ones. They say, "I don't recognize that rule. Who made that? I didn't make it." Unfortunately that is why we see union gangs assaulting the presidents of companies. How can that be? It is like the children beating up their father. In fact, communism went out and symbolically killed the father because communism did not recognize the position of the family, the father and so forth. They believed that the individual was self-sufficient.

Looking at these things we can conclude that they are satanic developments and events. All these elements came into America and helped America to destroy itself. What is America's order? Do we see proper respect for the President? No, that hardly exists. What about the relationship between man and woman? Who is the center? Who is the center of the country, man or woman? Unless we have these relationships corrected, there can be no ideal. What are the hippies, the yippees? They were the ones who were completely by themselves, denied the proper order of relationship. Can you go to spirit world and say, "God, I don't know who made up these rules of order, so let us do away with your throne. Let me sit up there instead." Maybe a woman would walk by and say, "Hey, you can't sit there. I want to." So they fight on the horizontal level.

RESTORE PROPER ORDER

We must restore the real ideal and the proper order and rules of relationship. Therefore, we definitely need a new nation and new family who abides by this.

The same is true in the other realms of creation — animal world, plants, minerals — without love everything would cease to exist. Love is like the common denominator. Love is the minimum requirement of relationship among all relationships. Love made the connections in history. The center of all power is love power, right? The factor that gave rise to the five different colors of skin of mankind—what made that? Love made that. Love power made all the different races and colors of people.

RESPECT VERTICAL LOVE

There are two realms of love, one is vertical and one is horizontal. Do you all appreciate love? So we must respect love, and vertical love above all other forms. The fact that parents love their children is absolute love, vertical love. Horizontal love is only secondary love, not primary. Man and woman, right and left, cannot come together until they meet right at the center. Brothers and sisters are in the front and rear position. Reciprocal position. The husband and wife can only become one by reaching that center point. But the brothers and sisters have unity even before because of their relationship with the parents. As soon as they are born, they have that unity. That is the difference in relationship, you see?

> Which do you prefer — to have lots of brothers and sisters or only a few? It is best to have lots. Is this just my opinion, or is it true? We all want to be welcomed wherever we go, don't we? If we have brothers and sisters around the world, then we will be welcomed around the world. If there is someone who is respected outside of his family, who is very successful, yet who is not loyal to his own parents, who does not exhibit filial piety, then that is not a good person. He is a good person outside, but once he comes home, he hits his wife. That is no good. First we must exhibit good conduct within our family, then we expand it to the larger level to the world. We must do very well within the family. The family is the place where we must exhibit the utmost courtesy and kindness. The family is the most important point. It is the beginning point. There is where we find the grandparents, parents, and children. Left and right are husband and wife. Sons and daughters, brothers and sisters. As we said before, all of these elements comprise the family.

In the previous statements Father says:

> Now it seems that many women want to become men. They say, "Why not? We can become bigger and more powerful and eventually we will be able to rule over men, the way they have been ruling over us." Some contemporary women have this kind of thinking. Those women are American women. I do not wish to undermine or ridicule American women, but this is a fact. No Korean women are espousing such ideals.

This is another example of Father teaching that women should not "rule" over men. He uses the word "rule" just like the Bible uses the word. He doesn't want to insult American women but he does not hold back or mince words when it comes to teaching about how men and women have different roles and pointing out that so many American women are feminist and want to rule men.

Immediately after this he says, "This is a rule. If they go outside of the rule, will they find happiness or not?" Obviously, not. Patriarchy is a rule and if men and women do not organize their lives according to it they will not find true happiness. Father knows freedom is precious but his focus is on responsibility. He denounces those who use freedom to have free sex and be homosexual. He is not into using force to change the world. His approach is to use persuasion. I pray that his words of wisdom will be read and studied and lived as soon as possible. Father gets only a few hours of sleep, if any, every night because he works relentlessly to get his message to the world. Let's get these powerful words of truth about what masculinity and femininity really are into every home, library and classroom. This is how we can truly heal the world. Father has come to give some key commandments. Some rules. He gives us order and boundaries so we can have beauty and the ideal. Liberals don't have any boundaries. Egalitarians feel they are free and happy but they will be much happier when they unite with the traditionalists just as Esau did when he united with Jacob who was more on God's side.

Father often puts down unions. In this speech he uses it to help us understand patriarchy. Business owners, he explains, are like the father and the employees must understand what is the most respectful and proper way to relate. When he calls presidents of companies "father" and employees as children he is talking about a patriarchal family. Father criticized communism for not recognizing the traditional family. In the above quotes he said, "Communism did not recognize the position of the family, the father." Marx and Engels hated the biblical, patriarchal family and wrote their goal of abolishing the patriarchal family in their book *The Communist Manifesto*. We must read Father very carefully. He is speaking a profound truth about the evil of communism and those on the Left that want to destroy the father.

Father gives these politically incorrect reasons why women should not lead:

> A central characteristic of evil is that it is changeable in quality. An evil person is always changing, and will betray you, stabbing you in the back. Even though you trusted him, he will betray you. An evil man has two tongues, speaking of something, in a favorable way one time, and another time saying the opposite, depending on which will benefit him.
>
> It is a delicate question to say whether it is man or woman who is more likely to have a changeable character. What is the greater possibility? In evaluating all the circumstances, I have to say that women are more susceptible to being changeable in nature. Women usually never miss out when good times or good things are being pursued. Men may be content to wear one decent suit day in and day out, all year long, but women always want to wear a new fashion. Just about all the men here are wearing the same style clothing, but the women are wearing all kinds of blouses and dresses, in all kinds of colors and shapes. The men's world is just one dull color, but the women's world is like a flower garden.
>
> It can be said that the men's world is like the soil and the women's world is something growing above the soil. Thus, women are more susceptible to the changing world of evil; that's the way things were made. When we see all these things, and then read in Genesis that the fall was initiated by a woman, it is a convincing idea. Women paint their nails, and on the street you see nails of all different colors. I know that if fashion dictated that a women have ten nails of ten different colors, it would catch on like wildfire, overnight. Women pay attention to those things.
>
> Men, however, are not so wise that they avoid following women. In our world today do women follow men, or do men follow women? It is feminine nature to want to be colorful, in a way sending out an invitation by attracting attention. A flower is colorful and has fragrance so that it can attract insects. The nature of men and women comes out very distinctly when they go to a department store. A man will just stop by to pick out a tie, but a women wants to shop around in many places before she buys one specific item, and in the process looks at many different departments. She is looking for strategic weapons to make herself more colorful, to send out better signals.
>
> The function of a flower is to attract the attention of insects. Men are always replying to the signals that women send out, and men are always duplicating the changing nature of women by responding to those signals. This nature is apparent in the Bible, which says that the first woman committed sin, and then tempted Adam. He, in turn, just took the apple and ate. Do women usually do that to men, or do men usually do it to women'? Eve sent out artificial smiles and messages; that is most obvious. You may be wondering why I always give the women a hard time, but think about this and then say whether it was a man or woman who sent out the false signal first. It was a woman.
>
> When we observe a nation and say it is very colorful, what we mean is that its women are colorful. Men would say that a house only needs painting every few years, but women would like to see it a different color for every season! When you first enter Germany, your impression is that it is a sober, dark country, with little that is colorful. Even the women wear dark, uncolorful clothes. When you

come to America, however, the feeling is entirely different. America is always running after a new fad and women are always at the head of the line.

PRESERVE TRADITION

I am not saying that the women's world is bad, while the man's world is good. Within the world of women there are both good and evil. Some women are always on the lookout for something new, exciting and fun, while the other group might be trying to preserve tradition. Which side would be closer to good or evil? Certainly tradition has a more unchanging quality, so it represents the good side. There are all kinds of national traditions, but which should be in the center? (6-17-90)

Notice that Father said it is good sometimes to "preserve tradition." Feminists want to experiment and make all things new, but there are some traditions that are eternal, absolute and unchanging such as the value of patriarchy.

Elizabeth Handford writes in *Me? Obey Him?*: "We've had the impression that women as a class were more spiritually minded than men, with sensibilities more refined, and purer thoughts. It hurts my feminine pride to have to admit that the Scriptures say the opposite is true! Women are more often led into spiritual error than men. Perhaps it is caused by her intuitive, emotional thinking. Intuitive thinking is God's gift, and not to be despised, but it needs the balance of man's reason."

Beverly LaHaye explains that women are more emotional and need men to guide them spiritually: "The Bible gives us countless examples of the disastrous consequences of violating the principle of male leadership. With Adam and Eve, we see that Adam, as firstborn, should have provided Eve with spiritual leadership, especially since Eve's open and trusting nature made her susceptible to Satan's lure."

"Interestingly, statistics show that more women than men read Christian books, teach Sunday school, and ask spiritual questions. When not under God-given spiritual authority, this potential strength in women becomes a great weakness. Have you ever noticed that the vast majority of fortune-tellers are women? A recent television commercial advertising a psychic telephone service showed a series of satisfied female customers. Perhaps this is a reflection of women's openness to the spiritual world."

"When the serpent approached Eve, it was not because she was less spiritual than Adam, but because she was more emotionally responsive to misdirection. A modern woman's susceptibility to misdirection is the same as Eve's, no matter how logical or brilliant she may be. It is partially because of the women's interest in knowledge that God directs the husband to be the spiritual head of the family. Remember, a woman's weaknesses are pride and an insatiable desire for knowledge, both of which make her easily deceived. The husband's responsibility for spiritual leadership is a grace gift given by God for the wife's protection from deception."

Father begins every year at midnight with a prayer and speaks about God's will for hours. In his speech given on January 1, 1996 he made some comments on how we can practically manifest patriarchy:

Even while sleeping together as husband and wife, the wife is not supposed to place her leg on top of her husband. A woman is like a soft cushion, and so her husband can take advantage by placing his bony leg on top of her and feeling comfortable. (Laughter) Don't laugh too much. This is not a laughing matter. You have to

practice this in your daily lives. When Father had to come up with all of these answers, imagine all of the complexity he had to deal with.

THE PRINCIPLED WAY

In storing your clothes at home, please make sure that the wife's garments are never on top of her husband's garments. When you make love who takes the upper position? (Husband) Therefore, when you hang up your garments, the wife's garments should always be underneath, not on top. Do you American women understand? (Yes) This is not Father's words; this is the principled way. Once you know the truth then practice it from this day on. Even when you place certain items on shelves in your home, do not place the wife's items on top of the husband's.

Father is speaking forcefully that men and women never interchange. Women are "never on top." This is an absolute commandment with no exceptions allowed. You can either think that these directions are, as he says, "the principled way" or these words prove he is crazy. I believe he gives us words of wisdom as the greatest teacher who ever lived. There is no in between. This is how he talks. He can be very philosophical and he can very down to earth. He says the "principled way" is for men to be on top. I don't think he could be any clearer about how men and women are designed by God to have absolute roles and they do not interchange. Sun Myung Moon speaks plainly of the Father. Men, he says, over and over, are to be respected as leaders. I see a consistent pattern in all his speeches for godly patriarchy and opposition to feminist egalitarianism.

FORCE VS. INFLUENCE

In one of the very best books on godly patriarchy, *Family Man, Family Leader*, Philip Lancaster teaches that good patriarchs are not power hungry:

Patriarchy has a black eye because men are sinners. It's not the system of male headship that is defective; it's the men who fill the positions. Let's acknowledge that men have often abused their office of leadership and have thus made themselves, and patriarchy, an easy target to attack—even apart from feminist propaganda.

Some of you may have traveled in third world countries where the police and other public officials are corrupt. Life can be precarious in such places since the security of the population—and even nations—is subject to the whims of lawless men. The solution, of course, is not to do away with policemen and public officials, but to get better men in positions of leadership.

So it is with male leadership in our homes and society. If men abuse their trust, the answer is better men, not the abandonment of God's order.

Underlying much of the failure of Christian men to lead effectively is a misunderstanding of the nature of godly leadership. As we return to biblical patriarchy, nothing is more important than that we define leadership the way Jesus does.

The world's concept of authority is expressed in the phrase "lord it over." The one with authority wields power over his subjects—he controls them. Leadership is about will of the leader. He is in command and implements his will over those he rules. Worldly definitions of authority center around the power that the leader exerts over others by the dominance of his will over others. Whoever holds the reins of power gets to have his way. Leadership is about *control* above all else.

> Jesus rejects this model of leadership for His disciples. The heart of Christian leadership is not about asserting one's will over others; it is about serving them. Serving someone is the very opposite of imposing one's will upon them. A slave yields his will in order to serve the master. A Christ-like leader will yield his will in order to serve those under his authority.

True patriarchy in the home is not a military style leadership. In the military those in position of leadership do not ask those who follow him their opinion. He obeys orders without being asked his opinion and he gives orders without asking how his followers feel about the orders. There is no discussion. In a functional family the patriarch will often find out the thoughts and feelings of everyone before he makes a decision. This is not the way an army functions; it is the way a family functions. A patriarch doesn't have to ask for input on everything but in a godly patriarchal family the family members feel they are respected and listened to.

GREATEST MISSION

Lancaster writes in *Family Man, Family Leader*:

> Fathers, stop looking for greatness in your work, in what your hands and mind produce, in some passing status or prestige, or in the wealth you accumulate. Your greatest mission is the hearts of your children. In them lies your potential for true greatness. In them lies your greatest opportunity to bring glory to God. … After his relationship with his wife, a father's relationship with his children is the most important in his life. It is God's humble yet effective means for assuring the spread of His kingdom.

It is fashionable for many people today, especially liberals, to think that the Bible and all things old have nothing to say to modern man. G.K. Chesterton says it is an "imbecile habit" to dismiss the wisdom of the past: "An imbecile habit has arisen in modern controversy of saying that such and such a creed can be held in one age but cannot be held in another. Some dogma, we are told, was credible in the twelfth century, but is not credible in the twentieth. You might as well say that a certain philosophy can be believed on Mondays, but cannot be believed on Tuesdays. You might as well say of a view of the cosmos that it was suitable to half-past three, but not suitable for half-past four. What a man can believe depends upon his philosophy, not upon the clock or the century."

No one would advocate totally returning to the "good old days" or romanticizing the past. But we must not reject what others have learned and call those who try to remind us of these truths—fundamental freaks or right-wing nuts who are nostalgic for a past that was basically uncivilized. In truth our culture is worse because we failed to keep those truths. The 19th century was not the Kingdom of Heaven and restoring it will not usher in the millennium. But it won't come if we reject the Victorian roles for men and women. Not everyone lived up to these Godly values in the past, but at least they agreed on those values as worthy goals for a happy society. And by doing so, they lived far happier lives than we do.

OLD TRUTHS

Father says we must live the truth that Jesus taught — that we must give perfect, unselfish love. He says people tell him, "Rev. Moon, you are coming here repeating the same old truth." But he says he's different than others in that he is teaching that it is possible to live those truths. We are not just to talk about them. They are not theories or philosophies, but are "to be lived ... Although in one sense you know the truth of the things I have been saying, still nobody ever lives it. This truth is as old as God, yet as new as the 21st century. You must live the truth." He says "the revelation of the *Divine Principle*" can make "this age-old truth real in your heart."

The following are some good statements against Feminism:

> Mary Kassian, author of *The Feminist Mistake: The Radical Impact of Feminism on Church and Culture*:
>
> Feminism has failed miserably, and ironically it has exacerbated the very problem it set out to resolve. Instead of promoting healthy self-identity for women or contributing to a greater harmony between the sexes, it has resulted in increased gender confusion, increased conflict, and a profound destruction of morality and family. It has left in its wake a mass of dysfunctional relationships and shattered lives. People of this culture no longer know what it means to be a man or a woman or how to make life work.
>
> John MacArthur Jr., pastor of Grace Community Church, Sun Valley, CA:
>
> One of the most devastating, and debilitating, and destructive movements in our day is the "Feminist Movement." The real feminist agenda is frightening. The real feminist agenda is Satanic. Feminism with all of its assorted features and its unique companionship with homosexuality is an old, old heresy that is meant to destroy God's design. It really started in the Garden when Eve, the original feminist, stepped out from under Adam's authority and thought that she would act independently and led the whole race into sin; and thus the first act in Satan's feminist agenda was successful.
>
> Doug Phillips of Vision Forum Ministries, Phil Lancaster of *Patriarch* magazine and R.C. Sproul, Jr., of the Highlands Study Center:
>
> Central to the crisis of this era is the systematic attack on the timeless truths of biblical patriarchy. This attack includes the movement to subvert the biblical model of the family, and redefine the very meaning of fatherhood and motherhood, masculinity, femininity, and the parent and child relationship. We emphasize the importance of biblical patriarchy, not because it is greater than other doctrines, but because it is being actively attacked by unbelievers and professing Christians alike. Egalitarian feminism is a false ideology that has bred false doctrine in the church and seduced many believers. In conscious opposition to feminism, egalitarianism, and the humanistic philosophies of the present time, the church should proclaim the Gospel centered doctrine of biblical patriarchy as an essential element of God's ordained pattern for human relationships and institutions.
>
> Doug Giles, Townhall.com columnist and host of the Clash Radio show:
>
> If concerned conservative Christians want to improve our nation biblically, then the Church has got to eliminate its effeminate drift and re-establish a masculine base.

Colleen Hammond writes in her book *Dressing With Dignity*:

> The Church teaches that men and women are equal in dignity, yet separate in role and function, and that those roles and functions are complementary!

BIG PICTURE

Part of our feminine receptivity is to be concerned with people, the practical, the immediate, the here and now. A man's tendency is to be concerned with concepts, how things work, and the big picture.

For example, women's interests are centered on the human side of our lives: our family, relationships, concerns about health, welfare and the spiritual well-being of our children's souls. These are all human concerns, and when we get together with other women, this is what we talk about.

When men get together, they speak about ideas and things such as politics, the economy, cars and sports. As Chesterton said, "Women speak to each other; men speak to the subject they are speaking about."

Men solve problems, provide and protect.

Women are intuitive and don't need (or take!) much time to think before they respond. We put real people above abstract thoughts. We help. We vent. We care. We worry. We cry. Boy, do we cry!

Because of our receptivity, we are more likely to be emotionally wounded than men. Men's analytical nature helps protect them from negative feelings.

NATURAL LAW

It's interesting to note that the Feminist Movement has violated the Natural Law in a big way: Instead of promoting true femininity over mannishness, it has unintentionally conceded the superiority of men by denying women their femininity and trying to make us wish we were all men. The "feminists" encourage us to act like men in our clothing choices, mannerisms and language—in other words, to be something we are not and were never created to be. What we have to ask ourselves, Ladies, is this: "What's wrong with being feminine?"

Feminist theologian — Rosemary Radford Ruether

One of the most outspoken and influential feminist theologians in the late 20th century was Rosemary Radford Ruether. She writes that men are absolutely evil because of patriarchy and women are absolute victims of all men. Women are so wonderful that they should be in charge instead of men who have shown themselves to be monsters. In her book, *Women-Church*, she bashes men by saying they all have "flashing eyes and smoking nostrils." She repeats this phrase over and over. There is no gray area. Men are simply the scum of the earth who have raped and pillaged until there is little left to women. Ruether is coming to the rescue of all women who are all victims of the absolute viciousness of men. She writes book after book pounding away at patriarchy. She writes that women are "the excluded half of the human race, the excluded gender from the tradition of the Church." Churches are "temples of patriarchy" who worship the "idol of masculinity, the idol of father-rule." Men have made God a "King, Warrior, God of Power and Might" who crushes the "lowly" and "teaches the little ones of the earth to cower in fear and self-hatred."

If God were seen as feminine, "as Mother, as Helper, as Friend, as Liberator" then men would stop being "rulers who command, warriors who kill, judges who punish." She says "women, children and the poor" are "the timid and gentle creatures of the earth" who are "degraded, disgraced" and "ruled over." They are "crushed and reduced to silence so that men can be as God." Patriarchy is

a blasphemy: "the blasphemies and lies of this great idol of patriarchy with its flashing eyes and smoking nostrils." Men are "inhuman" who have a "mechanical voice." Men are obsessed with the idea that only leaders can have "balls, male genitalia." Men build churches to worship the "phallic power" of God and Christ: "Only the male can rise in the phallic pulpit to bring down the seminal word upon the prone body of the people, the women and children waiting passively below to receive it ... Women are impotent, castrated, lacking in seminal power. They cannot act; they can only receive and should be grateful for what they receive."

She thinks that men have never believed women have ever groveled enough and so need to be constantly punished: "If women are not grateful, they shall be punished. Indeed, they have never been grateful, but have always been rebellious. In the very beginning woman was the cause of all our troubles. It was she who brought sin and death into the world; she who caused us to lose paradise and to be forced to earn our living by the sweat of our brow. For this reason woman is to be punished through all of history. She is to be silent and to serve us in all meekness, shamed, and ridiculed into silence. If she will not be shamed and silenced, she will be taught by force."

She then lists a few of the many tortures women have suffered from men: "A million women, twisted on the racks of Christian torture chambers, were bound in sacks and tossed into rivers, hung on gibbets or thrown into fires to teach them this lesson of shame and silence. In every minute of the day and night, women scream and stifle sobs of pain as they are beaten, stabbed, and raped in back alleys and in their own homes, to teach them this lesson, this lesson of shame and silence."

She says men think they own their woman's body and think that she "should be ever sexually available." Men see women as slaves whose "wombs and ovaries belong to the husbands who impregnate them" and "to priests and doctors who make the rules of birth and death."

Ruether says that women are rising up in their defense and denouncing men's inhumanity. God, she writes, is really a "Goddess" who did not create the "idol" of patriarchy. Jesus is "our brother" who "did not come to this earth to manufacture this idol." He came to "put down the mighty from their thrones" and replace them with women who are last that shall be first. Jesus came to "uplift the lowly." Men have incorrectly seen Christ as approving of "rape, genocide, and war."

Women "cry out: Horror, blasphemy, deceit, foul deed!" to men who have twisted Jesus into a warrior who delights in hurting women and children. Men have created a "nightmare salvation." Women are now making an exodus from this sick world men have created: "we flee from the smoking altars where women's bodies are sacrificed." Women are beginning to "cover our ears to blot out the inhuman voice" coming from the man in the pulpit.

Women now "flee the thundering armies of Pharaoh. We are not waiting for a call to return to the land of slavery to serve as altar girls in the temple of patriarchy. No! We call our brothers also to flee from the temples of patriarchy. ... We call our brothers to join us in exodus from the land of patriarchy, to join in our common quest for that promised land, where there will be no more war, no more burning children, no more violated women, no more discarded elderly, no more rape of the earth."

Patriarchy must be eradicated: "Let us break up that great idol and grind it into powder; dismantle the great Leviathan of violence and misery who threatens to destroy the earth." When we finally get rid of men leading then we can "transform" the earth into a paradise of "peace and plenty" where "all the children of earth can sit down together at the banquet of life."

FURY OF FEMINISTS

Michael Novak is one of the most distinguished writers of the 20th century. He is a devout Catholic and written extensively on this subject. He writes against Ruether saying that the Pope and all other men leaders of the Catholic Church "will not quiet the fury of feminists through appeasement." Ruether and her fellow angry feminist friends show a "remarkable hatred for our own society, for its alleged sexism, racism, militarism and systematic injustice." He says they always like to talk about "the cherished cause of the left, 'the feminization of poverty'" which he says is false. The "facts suggest" that it should be called "the poverty consequent on feminization."

FEMINISTS BLUR DIFFERENCES

He writes, "Matriarchal religions blur differences; patriarchal ones insist upon distinctions." He criticizes feminists for making "no moral distinction between active heterosexuality and active homosexuality." Their "hostility to patriarchy" is so great that men are weak in front of women's aggressiveness: "Their absurdities go unchallenged. ... in the presence of feminists, most men are meek, humble and submissive. They scrutinize feminism seriously, seeking some possible way, absurd as it seems, in which the will of God might actually be expressed in it. It is males who typically smile wanly while pinning 'I'm a male Feminist' buttons on their lapels."

WEAKNESS OF MALES

He says, "The real power in this world is not that of the male." "The rage of feminists is partly to be explained by the weakness of the males they encounter. Men find it more difficult to stand up to the fury of a woman than to any other thing on earth; nothing so tests their manhood. In our age, as much as Adam before Eve, men fail this test."

Novak is wrong when he says, "Like any heresy, it carries within it some truth." There is not one word of truth in anything a feminist has ever said or written. Novak is a wimp himself for saying such a thing. He writes that, "Margaret Thatcher, Jeanne Kirkpatrick, Indira Gandhi and Golda Meir" are "womanly models." No they aren't.

DECISIVE TEACHING

Novak's solution to this problem of aggressive women dominating men is "not" to pull rank and demand submission, but to use "decisive teaching." We have to explain to women "Why is it that the creed says 'Father Almighty.'" We have to come up with explanations that women can understand for why "the Messiah came not as a daughter but as a son." Men must teach women answers to their questions, not "merely asserting them" because that would be "plainly insufficient."

Margaret Thatcher

Many say that it was wonderful that Margaret Thatcher was Prime Minister of England. This is an example, they say, of how great it is for women to get into politics and, in general, to have careers. Let's look at this shining example. Thatcher is a workaholic. She is married to a workaholic. Both of them are rarely home. They have lived their life at their offices. A biographer of her says that while she was in school and, "a year after the wedding, Margaret learned she was pregnant .... She did not want birth to keep her from politics." Elizabeth had become queen of England and Margaret was so inspired she wrote an article for a newspaper called "Wake Up Women" saying, "Women can — and must — play a leading part in the creation of a glorious Elizabethan era." She encouraged women to have a career as well as have a family. She had twins and said, "I was concerned, particularly with two, that I might be tempted to spend all my time on the household and looking after them and not continue to read or use my mind or experience. I felt I must really use the rest of me as well." She got her law degree and decided to not have any more children. "She never even breast-fed her twins." She was too busy with her career of running for political office to breast-feed.

She ran for office saying "I will let the people know what Conservatism is about and I will lead the troops into battle." And indeed she did. "By the time the twins reached five, they had not seen much of her, but once she was elected to Parliament, they would scarcely see her at all .... She made the children breakfast" and would call them at night from her office. The kids grew up with a nanny. Her husband would come home at 9 p.m. "Thatcher's first concentration is work, and from the twins' earliest days she was often gone or distracted by work at home .... without much of a childhood herself, she has never understood children .... Privately, say those close to her, she carries a heavy guilt complex for not being there for the twins when they needed her ... For all her toughness, she is highly sensitive and well aware that her workaholism and political success have come at a price that has contributed to [her children's] difficulties. 'She is an unbelievably successful politician,' says one of her closest friends, 'but an unsuccessful mother and she knows it.'" She was called the "Iron Lady." When she ran for office she would tell crowds, "In politics, if you want anything said, ask a man; if you want anything done, ask a woman." Women would roar with approval. Unconsciously, men feel castrated.

In an interview for *Cosmopolitan* magazine she told millions of women, "I hope I see more and more women combining marriage and a career. Prejudice against this dual role is not confined to men. Far too often, I regret, it comes from our own sex .... It is possible to carry on working, taking a short leave of absence when families arrive and returning later. The idea that the family suffers is, I believe, quite mistaken. To carry on with a career stimulates the mind, provides a refreshing contact with the world outside — and so means that a wife can be a much better companion at home." Satan's lie is told by conservatives too. You've come a long way baby. You can have it all — as long, of course, if you give up having children and taking care of them. In the great scheme of things looking down from the heavens, maybe God used her for some great purpose, but even if she was needed she is an exception and 99.99% of women should do exactly the opposite of this horrible role model. In an article in *Reader's Digest* before she became Prime Minister and was called the "Iron Lady", she had a reputation of being "hard, cold, bossy, tough." Columnists speak of her "laser-beam stare," "fireproof" nerves and "devastating killer instinct." For a woman to make it to the top in the marketplace it requires her to give up her maternal instincts to be a nester and gain these hunter characteristics. It is unfeminine and confuses men in the workplace. Women should only be workaholics in the home.

Unificationists must not be intimidated by feminist men or feminist women even if those feminists call themselves Unificationists.

FEMINIST MYTH

Let's spend a little time and look at one the biggest myths of feminism. They have been successful in getting almost everyone to believe that men are violent in their homes—that there is an epidemic of domestic violence of men battering and killing women. Feminists have brainwashed the world to think that men are violent and women are peaceful. The following are some excerpts from articles that tell the truth about violence in the home.

"The Feminist View of Domestic Violence Vs. Scientific Studies" by Sam & Bunny Sewell:

> Are men more violent than women in relationships? Time to dispel the myths surrounding domestic violence.
>
> One of the widely believed myths of our society is that domestic violence is something men do to women. Solid scientific research reveals that domestic violence is something women do to men more frequently than men do it to women. While it is true that men account for most violence outside the home, women

instigate most domestic violence, and they assault men more frequently, and more severely.

Women are three times more likely than men to use weapons in domestic violence. Women initiate most incidents of domestic violence. Women commit most child abuse and most elder abuse. Women hit their male children more frequently and more severely that they hit their female children. Women commit most child murders and 64% of their victims are male children. When women murder adults, the majority of their victims are men. Women commit nearly half of spousal murders. Eighty two percent of all people have their first experience of violence at the hands of a women.

How could we all be so mistaken about family violence? Have we been conned? Have we been taken in by one of the slickest "stings" ever executed? Here is how the truth has been hidden.

Use of misleading statistics for political and financial gain:

* Men do not usually report their violent wives to police.
* Children do not usually report their violent mothers to the police.
* Women are far more likely to report violent men to the police.

* Police statistics describe the activities of the police departments and are grossly misleading as to the nature of family violence.

The Newspaper columnist Kathleen Parker writes:

> LET'S BE CLEAR.
>
> It gives me immense pleasure to say, "I told you so." For years, I've written that women initiate domestic violence as often as men — countering the myth that women are beaten every fifth nanosecond or so by knuckle-dragging spouses — and, as a result, have been used for target practice by DV activists.
>
> My purpose wasn't to blame victims or excuse batterers but merely to invite truth to the discussion: Domestic violence isn't about gender; it's about violence. You can't solve a problem until you correctly define it.
>
> Nevertheless, the myth-making industry has continued to produce what amounts to propaganda — churning out statistics, erecting billboards of bruised women, going for the aorta with images of tear-streaked children asking: "Why won't Daddy stop hitting Mommy?"
>
> Most of these activists, no doubt, are wonderful people trying to make the world a better place. But some have been so driven by their political agenda to advance women's causes, even at the cost of truth, that they can't permit a variant view. Now, Mother Jones — the left-leaning, pro-feminist magazine widely recognized for its journalistic integrity and careful reporting — comes out with this: "A surprising fact has turned up in the grimly familiar world of domestic violence: Women report using violence in their relationships more often than men." This new information isn't "a crack by some anti-feminist cad," wrote reporter Nancy Updike, but is the result of an in-depth study of 860 men and women followed since birth.

> The research was conducted by Terrie Moffitt, a University of Wisconsin psychology professor. Her findings, which aren't really "surprising" at all, support data from a 1980 study, which showed that wives hit their husbands at least as often as husbands hit wives. That report was so controversial, by the way, that it prompted death threats against the researchers.

At the website www.patriarchy.com (now defunct) we read:

> The feminist movement as we have come to know it in recent decades is fundamentally a "con." It is filled with falsehood, inaccuracy, and foolishness. As it is considered treasonous to criticize a sister feminist, no standards of accuracy or honesty are ever enforced. Hyperbole and deceit thus become the formula for success, "peer review" playing no role in reining in misinformation. Any would-be feminist who raises scholarly objections to the rampant misinformation (Christina Hoff Sommers, Camille Paglia, Wendy McElroy, Elaine Showalter , Erin Pizzey, Elizabeth Loftus, etc.) is branded an "enemy of women" and is drummed out of the movement.
>
> Various feminists proclaim that women are "under siege," that a monstrous social bias against them, if not a virtual war, is going on, that women have little respect or power (Steinem, Faludi, Tavris, etc.) Yet the notion of the American woman as a powerless "victim" is one of the most absurd notions ever foisted upon anyone. American women live, on average, seven years longer than men. They control 86 % of all personal wealth [*Parade* magazine, May 27, 1990], and make up 55% of current college graduates. Women cast 54% of the votes in Presidential elections, so they can hardly claim to be left out of the political decision-making process! They win almost automatically in child custody disputes. Women suffer only 6% of the work-related fatalities (the other 94% are suffered by men). Women are the victim of only about 35% of violent crimes, and only about 25% of all murders, yet because of our society's exaggerated concern and respect for them, special legislation has been passed to punish "violence against women" as if it were a more heinous crime than "violence against men". (Feminists claim to want "equality", and this is an example of what "equality" means to them, i.e., preferential treatment to address their concerns). Two out of every three dollars spent on health care is spent on women, and even if you don't count pregnancy-related care, women still receive more medical care than men—yet feminists still holler that women's health is being "neglected", and far too many of us credulously believe them. Of the 25 worst jobs, as ranked by the *Jobs Related Almanac* based on a combination of salary, stress, security, and physical demands, 24 of them are predominantly, if not almost entirely, male, which might explain why men commit over 80% of all suicides. (Most of these statistics come from T*he Myth of Male Power* by Warren Farrell.)
>
> Now, if it were really the case, as feminists claim, that men have selfishly arranged everything to be wonderful for themselves, absolutely ignoring women's legitimate concerns and needs, would the above be true? Of course not. It is much more realistic to suggest that women have cleverly seized the upper hand by pretending to be helplessly trapped below! Looking at the full picture, and not the tiny, distorted one that feminists and those they have duped present, we see a very different picture: The American woman emerges as perhaps the most privileged large group in history, enjoying a never-before-seen level of affluence, power, leisure, and health, supported by the work, discipline, and self-effacing, life-destroying

> exertions of a group they have bamboozled—their men—into believing their cries of "victimization".

Carey Roberts wrote an article at renewamerica.us titled "Feminine virtue takes a beating at Abu Ghraib" denouncing those feminists who think women are morally superior to men:

> Feminists preach the absolute equality of the sexes in all respects, save for one. They believe in the unequivocal moral superiority of women over men. The notion has become so entrenched that people don't bother to question it any more.
>
> Originally, people believed that morality also resided with the male sex. Indeed, the word "virtue" comes from the Latin root "vir," meaning man. And in Colonial America, fathers were expected to be the moral exemplars and preceptors of the family. But then the Industrial Revolution swept the nation in the mid-1800s. As the primary breadwinners, fathers were forced to leave their farms to labor in the factories, the mines, and later the corporate high-rises.
>
> Soon mothers moved to fill the domestic void. Women came to be viewed as the Guardians of Goodness to shield their families from the contaminating influences of the outside world. When feminism came along, it preached that the Patriarchy was to blame for the misdeeds of women. Take the feminist dogma on domestic violence, for instance. Research shows that DV is instigated equally by men and women. But feminists continue to insist that women strike their husbands only because they have been abusive and controlling. How's that for a silly excuse?

Being anti-male is popular in our culture. Movies and literature attack men relentlessly. In one book I was reading the writer is from England and said, "More sophisticated couples took their ideas from Bernard Shaw's *Candida* and *Man and Superman*: from H.G. Wells' *Ann Veronica* and James Barrie's *What Every Woman Knows*. All of these mocked the authoritative, know-all husband and made it clear that British men simply make tedious fools of themselves when they try to dictate to their wives and daughters. In any case, all the popular humorists made a practice of caricaturing the pompous German husband, who strutted about in over-elaborate uniform and relegated his wife to Kinder, Küche, Kirche [or the 3 K's, is a German slogan translated "children, kitchen, church"], and no English husband wanted to be anything like him." It goes on and on. The examples are endless. Several of my kids saw the movie with Steve Martin playing the hapless father in "Father of the Bride Part Two". They know my ideas and told me that the daughter has a baby and announces she will go back to work shortly. Millions of people laugh at movies like this one and then unwittingly go live the lifestyle of those in the movie. There is nothing funny about this brainwashing by Satan against the homemaker.

MALE BASHING

In David Thomas' book *Not Guilty* the inside cover says, "America has a new enemy, and that enemy is man. Forced into the corner by male-bashing movies and print, the male gender has become the scapegoat for all that is wrong with society. From Columbus to Clarence Thomas, men have been singled out and categorized as imperialist misogynists or potential rapists. Feminist orthodoxy has stripped men of their individual natures and denied them a voice in the gender debate. For years we have heard only one side of the argument in the battle of the sexes: It's the male oppressor versus the female oppressed, masculine authority suppressing the fragile distaff." "How can men reclaim a voice in this atmosphere of exclusion and hate? . . . . taking on the feminists' blitzkrieg in the midst of their love affair with the media, David Thomas seeks to establish an equal voice for the overlooked male." The book forces "the reader to reexamine the

implications of the male stereotype and the false empowerment it gives women who choose to typify men in this way: With studies showing that almost 50 percent of child abuse incidents are committed by women, why are men perceived almost exclusively as the perpetrators? Why does the public focus much more on spouse abuse by husbands when studies of couples prove that wives resort more often to physical violence?"

He begins his book saying: "Men stand accused. As everyone knows, men earn more money than women. Men run all the world's governments and fill the vast majority of seats on the boards of its major corporations. Men are generals, bishops, judges, newspaper editors, and movie studio heads. To make matters worse, men—if we are to believe the campaigns waged by women — oppress women to the point of open warfare. They beat them, rape them, and attempt to control their powers of reproduction. They stereotype them sexually and enslave them to ideals of beauty that lead thousands of women to undergo surgery or starve themselves half to death. And every time women look as though they are making any progress, men knock them back down again."

"That's what we've been told. So here's a simple question: If men are so much better off than women, how come so many more kill themselves?" He goes on to give data showing men kill themselves at a far higher percentage than women and every year it gets worse for men. He asks two questions about this, "1. Aren't all these suicides telling us something about the real state of men's lives? And: 2. If women comprised four fifths of all suicide victims, don't you think we'd have heard about it by now?" We don't hear about it because "Western society is obsessed with women to the point of mass neurosis." He says in researching the book he looked at the number of articles about women versus men and the number of organizations for men versus women. It is overwhelmingly favorable for women.

Victorian Myths

The world's authority on the Victorians is the historian Gertrude Himmelfarb who wrote T*he De-Moralization of Society: From Victorian Virtues to Modern Values*. She teaches that we have a completely wrong view of the Victorians. She refutes the common belief that Victorians had repressed sex lives: "In the absence of any Victorian equivalent to the Kinsey Report (which itself is notoriously unreliable), it is hard to speak confidently about Victorian sexuality — even about ideas of sexuality, let alone practices. Yet there is enough evidence to suggest that the conventional view of sexual repression is much exaggerated; the many happy marriages, for example, surely testify to satisfactory sexual relations. It is also significant that whereas Evangelical writings in the early part of the century tended to be puritanical about sex, the later one stressed the importance of conjugal sex for a happy and healthy marriage." Himmelfarb discounts a book by Acton that is considered by many historians as the truth on Victorian sexuality. She writes, "According to one historian, he exposed the sexual repression that was at the heart of the Victorian age, a time when 'hypocritical prudery' combined with 'sexual asceticism' to produce a 'concept of women as sexless, domesticated, child-bearing machines.' For another, he confirmed the view of women as 'either sexless ministering angels or sensuously oversexed temptress of the devil.'"

"There are good reasons, however, to distrust Acton's book. Mistresses were not a commonplace of Victorian life — certainly not among the middle or working classes — so that most men need not have worried about overtaxing their sexual capacities. Nor were prostitutes as plentiful as some contemporaries thought. Nor were the concepts of the 'sexless' wife and the 'oversexed' mistress or prostitute nearly as pervasive as Acton made it appear. The memoirs and letters of some contemporary women, including eminently respectable ones, testify to a recognition of a strong sexual desire on their part; since this was not a subject that was readily discussed, even in private communications, one may assume that there were a larger number of such women than has been supposed. There were also other doctors who had a more modern conception of female

sexuality. One of England's first woman doctor, Elizabeth Blackwell, who believed female sexuality to be as strong as that of males. Another was James Paget, a distinguished teacher and surgeon, the author of classic medical works who was far more influential than Acton (he was consulting surgeon to Queen Victoria) and who had much moderate views on the subject of sexuality. In addition to medical books, there were marital and sex manuals, which in themselves belie the image of a thoroughly repressed and inhibited society."

She also destroys the myth that men were basically brutal and insensitive patriarchs: "The stereotype of the tyrannical, abusive paterfamilias applied to a small minority...it was the exception, not the rule, and an exception much frowned upon by neighbors and relatives. That minority, to be sure, inflicted untold misery upon their families. The misery was usually suffered in silence, but when a wife brought an official complaint, the court generally found in her favor, granting her a judicial separation and a maintenance allowance and sentencing the husband to several months at hard labor." In the Victorian era men and women were basically happy living in their "separate spheres." Can we say that about marriages today?

Life Without Father

Another distinguished sociologist in America is David Popenoe. He is writing revisionist history saying we have not seen the greatness of the Victorians. In his book *Life Without Father* he explains that Victorian patriarchy was not as bad as everyone thinks. He says, "The lambasting of the Victorian family by scholars has been relentless. It has been charged with patriarchy and gross female oppression and seen as a domestic tyranny — a place which men abandoned for the greater glory of the workplace; a family system where people were so repressed sexually that they became emotionally damaged for life; a hierarchy that suppressed children's natural instincts and stifled emotional expression, leading to lifelong psychological difficulties. In short, it has been seen as a historical family form whose departure should be a cause for little short of celebration."

He says they were not perfect, but "the seemingly intractable social problems of the late twentieth century throw into bold relief the strengths of the Victorian family — not only in contributing to personal security and well-being but also in creating a viable and remarkably successful institution for raising future citizens and for promoting principles that buttressed the social fabric and the national good."

"Examinations of our past in an attempt to draw reasonable lessons for today are often dismissed as mere 'exercises in nostalgia.' The underlying assumption of this invocation seems to be that every aspect of our life has improved, and life in the past is something either negative or better left forgotten." "The most remarkable thing about the nineteenth-century Victorian family was its great stability — the rate of voluntary family breakup was extraordinarily low. The stability was especially remarkable because the Victorian family was based heavily on love and affection. Lawrence Stone has suggested that this was 'the first family type in history which was both long-lasting and intimate.'"

He asks, "How was the durability of the Victorian family achieved?" Some would argue that jobs were hard to get for women and divorce laws were more restrictive, but Popenoe says, "But it is also the case that male commitment to family life in the Victorian era remained enormous .... Men took their breadwinner role with utmost seriousness and strongly identified their success in the workplace with the happiness and security of their wives and families. To be a man was to be an economically successful family provider. 'In fact,' as Karen Lystra has pointed out, 'nineteenth century men claimed they worked for women and children in a way analogous to an earlier generation of Americans who claimed they worked for God.' Within the home many men sought to live up to their vows to 'love, honor and cherish,' just as women sought to respect their vows to

‘love, honor, and obey.’ And just as wives had an economic dependency on their husbands, so did husbands develop a strong emotional dependency on their wives.”

“Although Victorian marriages were initiated on the bases of love and parental choice, older religiously based value systems of commitment and obligation were still largely in place. Marriages were held together less by the thin reeds of intimacy and affection, as in the case today, than by a deep sense of social responsibility and spousal obligation. In the words of historian Elaine Tyler May, ‘Husbands were to provide the necessities of life, treat their wives with courtesy and protection, and exercise sexual restraint .... A wife’s duty was to maintain a comfortable home, take care of household chores, bear and tend to the children, and set the moral tone for domestic life.’ With children parents had a built-in attitude of self-sacrifice, renouncing many of their own personal satisfactions for the good of the family unit. As writer Henry Seidel Canby recollected about his Victorian upbringing in the 1890s, ‘We knew ... from our own impulsive desires that the father and mother denied themselves every day, if not every hour, something for the sake of the family.’”

“The Victorian era was one dominated by a culture of ‘character,’ a belief that it was each person’s supreme duty to live a life governed by a high moral code and to suppress any natural inclinations to the contrary. ‘By the middle of the nineteenth century,’ notes historian William L. O’Neill, ‘Anglo-American society had formulated a moral code based on three related principles — the permanency of marriage, the sacredness of the home, and the dependence of civilized life upon the family.’ This moral code and the belief in the importance of character provided the interpersonal glue in marriage that love alone is incapable of providing. Once this moral code evaporated — in the twentieth century — the fragility of love as the sole basis for marriage became all too apparent.”

He writes that this period was “a time of great social well-being .... an extraordinarily high measure of peace and social order, civility, optimism, and sense of social progress and achievement .... By the end of the nineteenth century, for example, rates of crime and deviance reached lows that have never before or since been seen. As social analyst James Lincoln Collier has summarized, ‘Pre-marital pregnancy rates dropped sharply; alcoholic intake was down two-thirds from the dizzying heights of the previous era; church attendance rose dramatically; homes, farms, and streets became cleaner, casual violence was curbed.’”

There was, in other words, a movement upwards towards God’s ideal. God was working to create a society at the top of the growth period to meet the messiah and have him take them to a perfect world. Satan worked to end this and had by 1920 set mankind on a downward spiral by tricking everyone to believe that the basic values of the Victorian home were bad. Father has come to bring God’s values back — many of the values that the Victorians cherished.

Popenoe writes, “The social well-being of the time stemmed in large part from the high levels of self-discipline and sense of obligation, as well as personal achievement, that the late Victorians espoused. Using today’s terminology, this era was highly communitarian in character, marked by a strong sense of shared values and reciprocal responsibilities. ‘The main thing that Victorians can teach us,’ writes historian Gertrude Himmelfarb, ‘is the importance of values — or, as they would have said, ‘virtues’ — in our public as well as private lives.’ Indeed, the values that today we desperately clamor to regain — honesty, trustworthiness, respect, responsibility, and citizenship— are the very values which characterized the Victorian period.”

Teddy Roosevelt was a famous patriarch of the past. He had a happy marriage. He deeply loved his wife, Alice. There was lots of romance. Just before he married his wife he sent a letter saying, “Dearest love ... Oh my darling, I do hope and pray I can make you happy. I shall try very hard to

be as unselfish and sunny tempered as you are, and I shall save you from every care I can. My own true love, you have made my happiness almost too great; and I feel I can do so little for you in return. I worship you so that it seems almost desecration to touch you; and yet when I am with you I can hardly let you a moment out of my arms. My purest queen, no man was worthy of your love; but I shall try very hard to deserve it, at least in part." A biographer wrote, "Always the proper Victorian, Theodore drew a discreet curtain over the wedding night. 'Our intense happiness is too sacred to be written about,' he noted tersely in his diary." The biographer writes this about their first few days of being married: "In the evenings, they curled up before the fire and he read aloud from *The Pickwick Papers*, *Quentin Durward*, and the poems of Keats. ... Eleven days later, they were enthusiastically welcomed to the Roosevelt home by his mother and sisters and took up residence in the apartment set aside for them on the third floor. Theodore immediately assumed the role of head of the family and presided over the dinner table. Were the couple, she finishing her teens and he just out of them, happy with this arrangement? Very — according to Theodore's diary. 'I can never express how I love her,' he wrote."

I studied some books and diaries of Victorian marriages and this pattern of the husband and wife being deeply in love and reading together at night was common. One example was Sarah Hale who was deeply in love with her husband. Her marriage was incredibly romantic with touching tenderness. He died young, and she spent her life writing marriage manuals which say the same things that *Fascinating Womanhood* says. She is the person who wrote, "Mary had a little lamb" and was the lady who convinced Abraham Lincoln to proclaim Thanksgiving a holiday. She writes of how she and her husband had read to each other every night. Feminists have poisoned us against Victorians. Father writes like a Victorian. He lives like one—a happy marriage with lots of kids in a big house. Teddy Roosevelt standing over a huge fish he has caught is like pictures of Father standing next to a huge tuna he has caught. True Mother and Alice Roosevelt praise their husbands and are their biggest supporters.

Bruce Catton is a distinguished historian of the Civil War. He writes about the love between Ulysses Grant and his wife, Julia: "they shared one of the great, romantic, beautiful loves of American history." Her autobiography "spins a story of romantic love, of happiness, of contentment, and there is no reason to doubt that she worked hard to make this possible both for herself and 'my dear Ulys.'" The prevailing belief in the 19th century was that women were queens. The Victorians didn't always live up to their ideals, but at least they tried. How many American and UM wives can say they are treated like these 19th century wives were in their old fashioned patriarchal homes?

MEN ON MT. RUSHMORE WERE FAMILY MEN

The four men on Mt. Rushmore are Victorians who loved their wives. If we compare Washington, Jefferson, Lincoln and Roosevelt who believed in limited government and patriarchy (capitalist/traditionalists) (although Teddy Roosevelt was weakening on these Victorian values) to four presidents of the 20th century, FDR, Johnson, Kennedy and Clinton, (socialist/feminists) we find the first four had happy marriages; the other four committed adultery. The 19th century had fewer divorces and more children than the feminist 20th century. I find it interesting that in the 19th century the wedding ring was on the right hand, and the 20th century places it on the left.

Thomas Jefferson wrote about marital relationships. To him, it was the most important thing. And it is. The 20th century places more importance on politics than family and community. Here is a little snippet of Jefferson writing of marriage in a letter: "Harmony in the married state is the very first object to be aimed at. Nothing can preserve affections uninterrupted but a firm resolution never to differ in will, and a determination in each to consider the love of the other as of more value than any object whatever on which a wish had been fixed. How light, in fact, is the sacrifice

of any other wish, when weighed against the affections of one with whom we are to pass our whole life."

John Adams spoke a universal truth when he said, "From all that I had read of history and government, of human life and manners, I had drawn the conclusion, that the manners of women were the most infallible barometer, to ascertain the degree of morality and virtue in a nation.... The Jews, the Greeks, the Romans, the Swiss, the Dutch, all lost their public spirit, their republican principles and habits, and their republican forms of government, when they lost the modesty and domestic virtues of their women." When the UM and America restore "domestic virtues of their women" they will become great.

Victorian Order vs. Modern Confusion
Tennyson in his poem "The Princess" depicted the Victorian ideal of the man-woman relation:

> Man for the field and woman for the hearth;
> Man for the sword and for the needle she;
> Man with the head, and woman with the heart;
>
> Man to command, and woman to obey;
>
> All else confusion.

Anne Bradstreet
The first major woman poet in America was Anne Bradstreet. She was a Puritan who came to Massachusetts as one of the first pioneers in the early 1600s. She was deeply and passionately in love with her husband. This is my favorite of all her poems to her husband, Simon:

To My Dear and Loving Husband

If ever two were one, then surely we.
If ever man were lov'd by wife, then thee;
If ever wife was happy in a man,
Compare with me ye women if you can.
I prize thy love more than whole Mines of Gold,
Of all the riches that the East doth hold.
My love is such that Rivers cannot quench,
Nor ought but love from thee, give recompence.
My love is such I can no way repay,
The heavens reward thee manifold I pray.
Then while we live, in love lets so persevere,
That when we live no more, we may live ever.

She had eight children who all grew up to be successful. She adored her father who was a leader in Massachusetts and wrote poems expressing her love for all her family. And she wrote poems of love for God. Her father and husband loved books and had libraries in their home. She was taught at home and got an education that is far superior to any in the public schools of today. She read the classics in the original Greek and Latin. One writer said, "One of the possible values of Bradstreet's writings is that they may suggest a more accurate and broader picture of life in colonial New England than is reflected in the popular image of Puritan society as a spirit-withering monolith. Moreover, Bradstreet's projection of her experience of life may indicate that her society was less repressive in its attitude toward women than we imagine. After all, Bradstreet was not censured, disciplined, or in any way ostracized for her art, thought, or personal

assertiveness. Rather, she was praised and encouraged; and there are no indications that the males in her life treated her as 'property.' If anything, the tone of much of the poetry which was first read by a familial audience indicates that she was treated as at least an intellectual equal."

The feminists have brainwashed everyone to believe that it was only a nightmare for women in the past. How many men today write letters like the excerpt from the following of Ben Franklin giving advice to a young man who had just got married: "Treat your wife always with respect; it will procure respect to you, not from her only but from all that observe it. Never use a slighting expression to her, even in jest, for slights in jest, after frequent bandyings, are apt to end in angry earnest. Be studious in your profession, and you will be learned. Be industrious and frugal, and you will be rich. Be sober and temperate, and you will be healthy. Be in general virtuous, and you will be happy. At least, you will, by such conduct, stand the best chance for such consequences. I pray God to bless you both; being ever your affectionate friend." Has feminism made men better than this? I don't see much of an improvement of twentieth century man over the past.

Let's look at some thoughts by Sun Myung Moon:

> Which comes first, the concept of evolution or the male and female concept? (Male and female.) The concept of male and female came into being from nowhere? Who designed the location of the male and female sexual organs in the center of the body? Did you have a choice? (No.) Who gave you that? (God.) Suppose the female is generally taller than the male. Or exactly the same height. Then there is no fun, no variety. From woman's point of view it is more fun when you make love that her husband has to reach down to her. This means she has to reach up on her tip toes to connect with him. You hug your husband and try to hang onto him so as not to be separated from him. When the wife tries to hang onto the husband so as not to be separated what is the attitude of the husband? Does he brush her aside? When they kiss one another at eighty-five degrees, would the husband resent it or enjoy it? Who is subject between man and woman? (Man.) What about American women? Are you subject?
>
> When Father gives such a talk to us, all the men enjoy it. They feel that Father is the only one to be able to change women who have the bad habit of insisting that they are the subject. You women, do you like men? (Yes.) Man represents heaven and woman represents earth. That is why when you make love between husband and wife the man takes the position of heaven while woman takes the position of earth. Woman is shaped in such a way as to receive, like a container. Women have soft bone structure and soft skin. Men do not like rough skin. This is all relative. It is a good idea. This is the way in which we have to correct the order of living in society in the world. Father is also encouraging that you invite and bring your grandparents to your home, and live with them together and dedicate yourselves to them. Since Father and Mother have become grandparents our Unification Church members should voluntarily come forward to invite True Parents to your home and serve them. This line [indicating to the diagram on the board] should be longer than the length of the earth, the longest line in the world.
>
> If we have that quality of family in the Unification Church they will only prosper. When you live happily with your husband and wife in your family, suddenly True Parents may pay a visit to your home. Since you have only one bedroom, would you tell True Parents that they cannot stay with you. Or would you willingly give your bedroom to True Parents and evacuate to some place

> else? What is the heavenly way? To offer what you have. The duty as children is that if our parents have no food and no clothes then we should offer ours. Even if you have to struggle and suffer that should be our attitude. It is our responsibility. You all have your husbands. You blessed men all have your wives. Father is giving you a tip of how to have a happy life as husband and wife. Every morning as you wake up and dress, face one another fully dressed. Then the wife should run into her husband's arms and receive the greatest hug in the world. That is how you should begin your life every day. The sun rises from the east. The sunshine comes from the east. Man stands in the position of the east. Then the wife will really feel happiness. That is how you should begin your day. (10-15-03)

In the May 1988 issue of the *Unification News*, an American Unificationist sister wrote a powerful article praising Helen Andelin. There have been several articles praising the Andelin's in the *Unification News* in the last few years. In her article this sister says that she is a missionary in Panama and leads a *Fascinating Womanhood* class. She writes:

> We have found an excellent follow-up program for members of the FFWP. This is a wonderful course for married women to improve their marriages called *Fascinating Womanhood*. Any blessed sister who speaks English or Spanish (materials are available in at least these two languages) can teach the course after studying the book. We teach the course at our HQ one evening a week for 8 weeks. The course can begin with any session, since the content of each session is fairly independent.)
>
> Our FFWP women members are enthusiastic about the course and many have invited friends and relatives to the course who have subsequently joined FFWP and attended FFWP workshops. The course is valuable for three reasons. First, we offer the course as a social service "to strengthen the Panamanian family" and the content of the course is of such high quality it is a valuable social service and shows people that we are people truly serious about creating loving marriages.
>
> Second, women become accustomed to going to our center and because they are so positive about the course they begin attending other FFWP activities. Finally, all our UC blessed sisters have completed the course. They serve as hostesses and report that the course has greatly helped their marriages as well. This is no quick fix, pop psychology course. The author is a deeply religious and successful wife and mother of 8 children. The content teaches the art of loving and understanding your husband and how to enjoy being a wife, mother and homemaker by living for others. Her material is convincing, engaging and badly needed. I myself have benefited from the book for twenty years.

FOUNDATIONAL TRUTH

Beverly LaHaye writes in her book *The Desires of a Woman's Heart*, "Unless we accept the Bible's teaching that woman was created for man, we cannot begin to follow God's plan for happy marriages. Denial of this foundational truth may be the first step of rebellion against God's plan for happiness in marriage."

"Men and women are not interchangeable. We need each other as men and as women, not as androgynous human beings. Most women are not looking for emasculated, wimpy men. What do women want in a husband? Let's look at several important characteristics."

She says women want godly husbands: "We want to love and respect husbands because they are godly, but the biblical model of a godly man in leadership and a wife who submits is not followed in today's world. 'The Western world,' writes James Dobson, 'stands at a great crossroads in its history. It is my opinion that our very survival as a people will depend upon the presence or absence of masculine leadership in millions of homes .... I believe, with everything within me, that husbands hold the keys to the preservation of the family.'"

"I believe women want a husband who will be loving and respectful to them and at the same time exhibit the strength and courage necessary to lead the family."

Beverly LaHaye writes in her book *The Desires of a Woman's Heart* a part called "Feminism's Toxic Influence" in which she says:

> Unless we accept the Bible's teaching that woman was created for man, we cannot begin to follow God's plan for happy marriages. Denial of this foundational truth may be the first step of rebellion against God's plan for happiness in marriage.
>
> Our world is reeling from the ravages of feminist rebellion against God and God-given authorities. Women are taught to resent male authority as well as every other authority in their lives. The liberal feminist line teaches that women and men are interchangeable, and some in our churches are misinterpreting Galatians 3:28 to mean that there is no difference between men and women with regard to spiritual authority. However, a contextual look at this passage reveals that it speaks of equal access to God and equal entitlement to God's spiritual promises and blessings. It does not live up to the feminist ideal of identity of function.
>
> **USURP MEN'S ROLES**
> A man's role as leader is threatened when the woman refuses to give him the support he needs in the challenging task of undertaking godly leadership. We continue to see women usurp men's roles in the home and in the church, which squelches men's ability to lead, protect, care for, and provide for their families, churches, and communities.
>
> But sometimes men are their own enemy in the struggle over roles. They are often as confused as women as to what their roles should be. Afraid of being regarded as politically incorrect and chauvinistic, men often retreat into the safety zone of indifference, listlessness, and apathy. I believe that men must rise above the worldly criticism and solve this problem by developing and living according to biblical convictions on their calling and responsibility as men, regardless of whether or not they get the encouragement from women to do so.

EMIL BRUNER
Let's look at some passages of the Swiss theologian Emil Bruner who wrote in *Man in Revolt*:

> The primal truth, however, is this: God created man in His own image; male and female created He them. This truth cuts away the ground from all belief in the inferior value of woman. The Creator has created man and woman not with different values but of different kinds, dependent upon one another, a difference in kind which means that each complements the other.

> Man and woman have received a different stamp as human beings ... Both are called to be persons, to live in love, in the same degree, but in different ways. The man is the one who produces, he is the leader; the woman is receptive, and she preserves life; it is the man's duty to shape the new, it is the woman's duty to unite it and adapt it to that which already exists. The man has to go forth and make the earth subject to him, the woman looks within and guards the hidden unity.
>
> The man must ... generalize, the woman must...individualize; the man must build, the woman adorns, the man must conquer, the woman must tend; the man must comprehend all with his mind, the woman must impregnate all with the life of her soul. It is the duty of the man to plan and to master, of the woman to understand and to unite."
>
> In these distinctive qualities there lies a certain super- and sub-ordination; but it is a purely functional difference, not a difference in value, it is not a scale of values. The special call to serve where love is perceived as the meaning of life is rather a privilege than a humiliation.
>
> As husband and wife — with their different structure and their different functions — are one in the physical fact of sexual union, so they ought to be one in all their life together; through all the differences of mind and spirit, they should be one in all they do and are, for one another, and for their whole environment. The husband, for instance, simply because he enters into contact with the outside world, is not the only one who is related to the whole. Just as the wife is of equal value as a member of the Church, of the community of the faithful, so she also, like her husband, should bring her own contribution to the welfare of the nation, and of humanity as a whole. Only her contribution will always be more intimate, less evident to the outside world, more hidden and individual than that of the man .... If woman is to give her best, and is to make her specific contribution, there must be, even in her public service, some measure of differentiation from man's way of doing things, some space for the more intimate and personal element.

Father says in a book of his quotations titled *Blessing And Ideal Family (Part 1)*:

> Marriage opens the door to human happiness. Studying in order to open the door to happiness is very good. However, if that study is for the purpose of becoming rich or powerful, it is a mistake. Study must be for the purpose of attaining true love.
>
> Why do you go to school? Happiness cannot exist without love. Therefore, we can say that the purpose of going to school is to shorten the road to love.
>
> When young women go to university to earn a degree, ultimately it is in order to meet a good husband. There is no other reason. No matter how great a man is, he would be an unhappy person if he could not form a family that is united.
>
> The reason for studying is to meet a true man and to become a true mother. In order to become a true mother, a woman must study for the country and become a true wife who can serve her husband as a true man. If you cannot gain this stature as a person, you will not be able to serve your true husband or have a true son. A woman must become a true wife and, as the homemaker of the family, must get along well with the husband until old age. If the study is for the purpose of becoming a good

> wife, then wouldn't all university graduates eventually be gray-haired couples? However, among university graduates are there more gray-haired couples or people who get divorced? Needless to say, people who are uneducated live together happily for a longer time.

Did you notice that Father said every woman "must become" a true wife and be a "homemaker" who studies to "serve her husband."

Father teaches, "In walking, men are to step right foot first and women are to step left foot first. Men are to sit in the East and women are to sit in the West. There is always a certain order to anything — the order of setting the table or the order of hanging clothes." He says, "Man is to look down upon woman from above."

Toni Grant has a popular radio program and wrote a secular bestseller about this confusion called *Being a Woman* and subtitled "Fulfilling Your Femininity and Finding Love." She blasts the concepts of women's independence from men. She writes:

> Today's woman is an imitation man, at war with actual men, confused and unsettled by it. The contemporary American woman is an Amazon Woman.
>
> At its inception, the feminist movement, accompanied by the sexual revolution, made a series of enticing, exciting promises to women. These promises sounded good, so good that many women deserted their men and their children or rejected the entire notion of marriage and family, in pursuit of "themselves" and a career. These pursuits, which emphasized self-sufficiency and individualism, were supposed to enhance a woman's quality of life and improve her options, as well as her relations with men. Now, a decade or so later, women have to face the fact that, in many ways, feminism and liberation made promises that could not be delivered.
>
> All human beings have dependency needs, but modern woman has been loath to project her need of man in any way. This failure of modern woman to own and acknowledge the passive-dependent aspect of her personality has resulted in serious dysfunction and alienation between the sexes.

Father poetically speaks of women's responsibility to create a sanctuary for men. He says, "Each woman should think to herself, 'I have a huge pool of love within me. No matter how good a swimmer my husband may be and even if he dives down 100 feet, my pool of love is larger than his capabilities to swim it.' Do you have such a pool of love within your mind?"

"You women must allow your husbands to climb up to the highest peak and dive down freely into your pool of love. Or would you put a rock in the water for him to fall on. You should try to put more water in the pool so it will be deep enough to cushion him." (7-11-82)

One author wrote:

> *Washington Times* columnist Suzanne Fields has been especially outspoken about the dissatisfaction of women with men who wear rings in their noses for feminists to grasp. In a typical column on the subject, she complained about how many "young men, their consciousnesses dutifully raised, seem more concerned with proving they're 'thinkers' and 'feelers' rather than fighters. There's little status in some circles for a man to be proud to be a man; better he should aspire

> to be Peter Pan or Alan Alda. Gary Cooper and Alan Lass are dead, and nobody knows what happened to Randolph Scott.'
>
> "Today's single, silent young man is too vulnerable to be heroic. He sacrifices himself on the altar of his sensitivity, or cowers behind a diagnosis of his fear to assert himself .... Over the past decade more men have rushed into print to say how proud they are of crying than have come to the defense of someone in trouble. They're proud of their feminization, and women are struck with paying for it."

NO REAL MEN ANYMORE

Mort Sahl said, "Women want their men to be cops, to be their fathers... to tell them what the limits are .... When they push, what they're waiting for you to say is, 'This is Checkpoint Charlie, don't go any further' .... Men in America have fallen apart. The country is gasping for breath .... And the women are angry because there are no real men anymore."

Because women have left the home by droves in the 20th century and only a tiny percent of American households are the traditional structure of man as sole breadwinner, and woman as homemaker, men have been emasculated psychically and are now wimps. Alexander Solzhenitsyn saw this when he came to America. At his famous speech at Harvard he spoke like a prophet in the Bible saying, "A decline in courage may be the most striking feature which an outside observer notices in the West today .... This decline in courage shows a lack of manhood .... Must one point out that from ancient times a decline in courage has been considered the beginning of the end?"

The goal of feminism is androgyny and the goal of patriarchy is division of labor. God made men to lead and women to follow. Father says this many times. Feminists hate the idea that women are objects. They denounce patriarchy as men only wanting "sex objects." Godly patriarchs do not have a low view of women. Father repeats over and over that women are objects. He does not mean any disrespect when he says this. Aren't we all objects to the Messiah? Aren't those in an orchestra objects to the conductor? Those in the so called anti-Moon and anti-cult movement see these kinds of statements of Father as degrading but God wants us to be His objects and He wants mankind to be objects to Sun Myung Moon.

Tocqueville wrote eloquently that American women were great because they were not feminists. No one has ever written a better book on America than his classic *Democracy in America*. He discovered that American women were very happy and contented in their traditional, biblical roles:

> It is not thus that the Americans understand that species of democratic equality which may be established between the sexes. They admit that as nature has appointed such wide differences between the physical and moral constitution of man and woman, her manifest design was to give a distinct employment to their various faculties; and they hold that improvement does not consist in making beings so dissimilar do pretty nearly the same things, but in causing each of them to fulfill their respective tasks in the best possible manner. The Americans have applied to the sexes the great principle of political economy which governs the manufacturers of our age, by carefully dividing the duties of man from those of woman in order that the great work of society may be the better carried on.
>
> In no country has such constant care been taken as in America to trace two clearly distinct lines of action for the two sexes and to make them keep pace one with the other, but in two pathways that are always different. American women

never manage the outward concerns of the family or conduct a business or take a part in political life; nor are they, on the other hand, ever compelled to perform the rough labor of the fields or to make any of those laborious efforts which demand the exertion of physical strength. No families are so poor as to form an exception to this rule. If, on the one hand, an American woman cannot escape from the quiet circle of domestic employments, she is never forced, on the other, to go beyond it. Hence it is that the women of America, who often exhibit a masculine strength of understanding and a manly energy, generally preserve great delicacy of personal appearance and always retain the manners of women although they sometimes show that they have the hearts and minds of men.

Nor have the Americans ever supposed that one consequence of democratic principles is the subversion of marital power or the confusion of the natural authorities in families. They hold that every association must have a head in order to accomplish its object, and that the natural head of the conjugal association is man. They do not therefore deny him the right of directing his partner, and they maintain that in the smaller association of husband and wife as well as in the great social community the object of democracy is to regulate and legalize the powers that are necessary, and not to subvert all power.

This opinion is not peculiar to one sex and contested by the other; I never observed that the women of America consider conjugal authority as a fortunate usurpation of their rights, or that they thought themselves degraded by submitting to it. It appeared to me, on the contrary, that they attach a sort of pride to the voluntary surrender of their own will and make it their boast to bend themselves to the yoke, not to shake it off. Such, at least, is the feeling expressed by the most virtuous of their sex; the others are silent; and in the United States it is not the practice for a guilty wife to clamor for the rights of women while she is trampling on her own holiest duties.

It has often been remarked that in Europe a certain degree of contempt lurks even in the flattery which men lavish upon women; although a European frequently affects to be the slave of woman, it may be seen that he never sincerely thinks her his equal. In the United States men seldom compliment women, but they daily show how much they esteem them. They constantly display an entire confidence in the understanding of a wife and a profound respect for her freedom; they have decided that her mind is just as fitted as that of a man to discover the plain truth, and her heart as firm to embrace it; and they have never sought to place her virtue, any more than his, under the shelter of prejudice, ignorance, and fear.

It would seem in Europe, where man so easily submits to the despotic sway of women, that they are nevertheless deprived of some of the greatest attributes of the human species and considered as seductive but imperfect beings; and (what may well provoke astonishment) women ultimately look upon themselves in the same light and almost consider it as a privilege that they are entitled to show themselves futile, feeble, and timid. The women of America claim no such privileges.

Again, it may be said that in our morals we have reserved strange immunities to man, so that there is, as it were, one virtue for his use and another for the guidance of his partner, and that, according to the opinion of the public, the very

same act may be punished alternately as a crime or only as a fault. The Americans do not know this iniquitous division of duties and rights; among them the seducer is as much dishonored as his victim.

It is true that the Americans rarely lavish upon women those eager attentions which are commonly paid them in Europe, but their conduct to women always implies that they suppose them to be virtuous and refined; and such is the respect entertained for the moral freedom of the sex that in the presence of a woman the most guarded language is used lest her ear should be offended by an expression. In America a young unmarried woman may alone and without fear undertake a long journey.

The legislators of the United States, who have mitigated almost all the penalties of criminal law, still make rape a capital offense, and no crime is visited with more inexorable severity by public opinion. This may be accounted for; as the Americans can conceive nothing more precious than a woman's honor and nothing which ought so much to be respected as her independence, they hold that no punishment is too severe for the man who deprives her of them against her will. In France, where the same offense is visited with far milder penalties, it is frequently difficult to get a verdict from a jury against the prisoner. Is this a consequence of contempt of decency or contempt of women? I cannot but believe that it is a contempt of both.

Thus the Americans do not think that man and woman have either the duty or the right to perform the same offices, but they show an equal regard for both their respective parts; and though their lot is different, they consider both of them as beings of equal value. They do not give to the courage of woman the same form or the same direction as to that of man, but they never doubt her courage; and if they hold that man and his partner ought not always to exercise their intellect and understanding in the same manner, they at least believe the understanding of the one to be as sound as that of the other, and her intellect to be as clear. Thus, then, while they have allowed the social inferiority of woman to continue, they have done all they could to raise her morally and intellectually to the level of man; and in this respect they appear to me to have excellently understood the true principle of democratic improvement.

As for myself, I do not hesitate to avow that although the women of the United States are confined within the narrow circle of domestic life, and their situation is in some respects one of extreme dependence, I have nowhere seen woman occupying a loftier position; and if I were asked, now that I am drawing to the close of this work, in which I have spoken of so many important things done by the Americans, to what the singular prosperity and growing strength of that people ought mainly to be attributed, I should reply: To the superiority of their women.

Isn't that breathtaking? So much for the feminist propaganda that women were unhappy in the 19th century. Father often talks about the division of labor in a family where the man leaves to be a provider at his job and the woman leaves her home to provide by shopping for what the family needs. He says, "In a family, the man goes out to work and comes back in the evening, pulled by the power of love. The wife too goes out shopping and always comes back pulled by love" (4-14-91). He does not say one is more important than the other. Both husband and wife are loving in their own unique way which has equal value but different function. You will never hear Father

talk about women working and men going shopping. He explains how men are not into shopping but women live to shop and find it an art form.

Howard W. Hunter writes in his speech, "Being a Righteous Husband and Father" given at a Mormon website what partnership in marriage really means:

Accept Your Wife as an Equal Partner

A man who holds the priesthood accepts his wife as a partner in the leadership of the home and family with a full knowledge of and full participation in all decisions relating thereto. Of necessity there must be in the Church and in the home a presiding officer. By divine appointment, the responsibility to preside in the home rests upon the priesthood holder (see Moses 4:22). The Lord intended that the wife be a helpmeet for man (meet means equal) that is, a companion equal and necessary in full partnership. Presiding in righteousness necessitates a shared responsibility between husband and wife; together you act with knowledge and participation in all family matters. For a man to operate independently of or without regard to the feelings and counsel of his wife in governing the family is to exercise unrighteous dominion.

Be Tender in the Intimate Relationship

Keep yourselves above any domineering or unworthy behavior in the tender, intimate relationship between husband and wife. Because marriage is ordained of God, the intimate relationship between husbands and wives is good and honorable in the eyes of God. He has commanded that they be one flesh and that they multiply and replenish the earth. You are to love your wife as Christ loved the Church and gave himself for it (see Ephesians 5:25-31).

Tenderness and respect—never selfishness—must be the guiding principals in the intimate relationship between husband and wife. Each partner must be considerate and sensitive to the others needs and desires. Any domineering, indecent, or uncontrolled behavior in the intimate relationship between husband and wife is condemned by the Lord.

Provide Temporal Support

You who hold the priesthood have the responsibility, unless disabled, to provide temporal support for your wife and children. No man can shift the burden of responsibility to another, not even to his wife. The Lord has commanded that women and children have claim on their husbands and fathers for their maintenance (1 Timothy 5:8). President Ezra Taft Benson has stated that when a husband encourages or insists that his wife work out of the home for their convenience, "not only will the family suffer in such instances, . . . but his own spiritual growth and progression will be hampered"

We urge you to do all in your power to allow your wife to remain in the home, caring for the children while you provide for the family the best you can.

If you are to enjoy the blessings of the Lord, you must set your own homes in order. Together with your wife, you determine the spiritual climate of your home. Your first obligation is to get your own spiritual life in order through regular scriptural study and daily prayer.

> As patriarch in the home, exercise your priesthood through performing the appropriate ordinances for your family and by giving blessings to your wife and children.

Because the Mormons teach patriarchy they are strong and have power to witness and grow in membership. In a Mormon book titled *The Latter-day Saint Woman Basic Manual for Women, Part A* we read:

> In the true Patriarchal Order man holds the priesthood and is the head of the household, … but he cannot attain a fullness of joy here or of eternal reward hereafter alone. Woman stands at his side a joint-inheritor with him in the fullness of all things. Exaltation and eternal increase is her lot as well as his.
>
> A Woman's Relationship to Priesthood Leadership in the Home
>
> It is the husband's responsibility to preside and provide leadership in the home. A Melchizedek Priesthood quorum manual explained:
>
> In the perspective of the gospel, "leadership" does not mean the right to dictate, command, and order. On the contrary, it means to guide, protect, point the way, set the example, make secure, inspire, and create a desire to sustain and follow. Literally, the husband is to lead the way.
>
> While the father is the leader in the home, "his wife is his most important companion, partner, and counselor" (*Family Guidebook*). A husband and wife must work together to strengthen their family and teach their children the principles of the gospel. By fulfilling her role as counselor to her husband, a woman can reinforce her husband's position as head of the home and encourage greater family unity.
>
> We also honor the priesthood when we treat our husbands with the same gentleness, kindness, and love they should maintain as bearers of the priesthood. The Prophet Joseph Smith counseled the Relief Society to "teach women how to behave towards their husbands, to treat them with mildness and affection. When a man is borne down with trouble, when he is perplexed with care and difficulty, if he can meet a smile instead of an argument or a murmur—if he can meet with mildness, it will calm down his soul and soothe his feelings; when the mind is going to despair, it needs a solace of affection and kindness."

To form happy and godly marriages men and women must deeply understand and practice godly patriarchy. In Stephen Covey's book *The Divine Center* he says patriarchy will be in the Kingdom of Heaven, "the eternal organization will be the patriarchal family." In his book, *Spiritual Roots of Human Relations*, he says the father is "the head of the home.... He is the patriarch of the home." He says that this belief is being attacked by Satan, "the home and the family are being ravished and buffeted on every side by almost every institution of society and by all the machinations of Satan." He teaches that men and women have separate roles but each has equal importance. The word "equal" is feminist's favorite word, but they incorrectly define it as communists misdefine all good words.

SHE IS NOT TO BE HIS JUDGE

Covey explains wifely submission this way: "The wife is to obey her husband in righteousness, which I believe includes her righteousness, for she is not to be his judge. If she attempts to be his judge and to obey whatever suits her fancy, withdrawing her support or obedience when she disagrees, or if she competes with him for leadership and direction, the patriarchal concept will be distorted. If she 'punishes him' in one way or another when he's 'off base' in her eyes, her husband could likely feel that he has atoned and no longer has to change or repent. The wife is

called to love and to sustain the husband, and I believe nothing will do more to encourage and chasten him in his own stewardship than consistent acceptance, unconditional love, and steadfast sustaining. If he is absolutely unworthy, or consistently makes unrighteous demands, then she might counsel with the steward over him, the bishop, but she is not to be his judge and punisher."

Covey says, "I have come to believe from my own experience, as well as my observations of others, that children tend not to obey their parents when the father does not in truth or in deed obey the Lord, or when the wife does not in truth or in deed obey her husband, or when the parents do not have this vision of the patriarchal family concept." There is so much rebellion in America because women are not humbling themselves to their husbands, and husbands make it difficult for women to respect them if they do not humble themselves to God and Christ. America went downhill when women took out the phrase "to love, honor and obey" in the marriage vows.

APPEAL vs. REBUKE

Several years ago I found the following from the website www.soulcare.org by Sid and Linda Galloway. They speak strongly for wifely submission as taught in the Bible. This is some of what they wrote in an article titled "Appeal vs. Rebuke". The word "rebuke" means "to criticize sharply":

> This article addresses our loving concern over what we believe is an unbiblical, foundational flaw in the teachings of our friend, Martha Peace, in her books *The Excellent Wife* and *Becoming a Titus 2 Woman*. Martha is a longtime friend and colleague in the biblical counseling community, whom we love and respect whose books contain not only wonderfully biblical truths and applications being used by 100's of churches, but also a foundational flaw in principle, not just degree, which hinders wives from reflecting the full beauty of God's design.
>
> We believe that the most Christ honoring, biblical response for any person under the authority of a continuously sinful Christian is the process of appeal, first directly to and then if necessary above that authority, but not personal rebuke. When a rebuke is needed, it should come from those of equal rank or above, not below. Most people recognize this principle when a Christian child tries to "rebuke" a Christian parent, or teacher. While all believers are of equal value, they are not of equal rank, role, or responsibility. However, we strongly disagree with Martha's belief that a Christian wife of a Christian husband is to be his active accountability partner and personally rebuke him when he sins. Wives are encouraged to get in their husband's face and rebuke him when she feels he needs it.
>
> We simply believe that this foundational flaw in her teaching seriously undermines the value of an otherwise excellent set of women's ministry materials. We are convinced that this problem area in her teaching is not just a matter of degree, but of principle, and therefore extremely significant.
>
> My wife, Linda, and I discovered years ago that in order for a married couple to dance really close, someone has to lead. Failure to fully understand this biblical truth has caused many couples to stumble and fall, too often on top of their children. Our main concern is about the subtle, usually unintentional ways in which modern, "submissive" Christian wives are functionally taking the lead over their husbands. When this occurs, the portrait of the marriage becomes distorted and no longer points upward through God's appointed chain of delegated authority.
>
> When it comes to a Christian wife with a Christian husband, we are convinced by the biblical evidence that such a wife is never to personally rebuke her sinful husband. For a wife to do so is to step out of rank, and try to replace the Holy Spirit, the other men in her husband's church, and the church elders as his source of accountability. Instead, she is to appeal, first directly to her husband, then if he

> continues in serious sin she can appeal to the men above him (pastoral elders and/or government officials). Please note that many minor issues should be overlooked, and do not even warrant an appeal.
>
> Martha Peace writes, "Also, if the husband was particularly abusive verbally, the wife could gently say, 'You are sinning in the way you are speaking to me. I will be glad to listen to what you have to say, but you must do it in a loving manner.'" For a wife to demand of her husband that he "must do it" (say it) the way she likes it or she won't listen to him is a form of taking subtle authority over her husband. It is a formula for disorder, disaster, and dishonor to the Lord.
>
> Martha also uses the argument of pragmatism (it works) as a source of support for her belief that a Christian wife can and should rebuke her Christian husband. Yes, there are husbands who have turned away from sin because their wife rebuked them. But would the fact that a teenager who argues with her parents and gets her way, mean that such behavior was acceptable biblically? Of course not. The fact that it sometimes appears to work is never justification for an unbiblical, unChrist-like behavior. Actually for the record, from our nearly two decades of counseling experience, we've most often found that encouraging a person under authority to even "respectfully" rebuke a sinful authority, ends up either in serious conflict or a reversal of roles. This applies not only to marriage, but for example also to children and their parents. Our God is a God of order, and role reversal is a subtle form of disorder. Disorder leads to dysfunction, destruction, and ultimately dishonor to the reflection of God's image in families.

I heard an audio CD by Martha Peace on submission and she was wrong in attacking Elizabeth Rice Handford's book *Me? Obey Him?* and the excellent book *You Can Be the Wife of a Happy Husband* by Darien B. Cooper as examples of books on submission that took the concept too far.

CHEERLEADER, NOT COACH

I also got the following quote from another article by the Galloway's that they have since removed from their website (www.soulcare.org):

> Ladies, do you know how to support your husband practically and effectively for God's glory? Are you his cheerleader, or his "coach"? (Other men in your church should be his accountability partners, not you.). Is the personal training of each of your children one of your top priorities? Are the ladies in your church attempting to practice a Titus 2 ministry of mutual accountability?
>
> A husband's job is to go out into the world to provide for you & fight in spiritual warfare. The best way to encourage your husband to become the spiritual leader is by showing genuine respect as his cheerleader, actively seeking his advice. The job of coach belongs to the Holy Spirit & church elders. Like Sarah, follow his imperfect lead with a "gentle & quiet spirit". Respectfully decline only when cooperation would cause you to violate higher authorities, especially Scripture. Then respectfully appeal to authority, doing your part to bring order, peace, and joy to the home. Ladies, have you done the same with the other women (Titus 2)? Are you training one another to honor your husbands (or husband to be) as the spiritual leader of the home? Are you his cheerleader or are you trying to be his coach? Are you really his helper? Do you show submissive respect and seek God's guidance through your husband, in order to encourage him to study the Word (1 Pet 3)?

Could it be that one of the reasons so many believers are looking to psychotherapy for practical solutions to real life relational struggles is that too many modern churches have neglected to offer this "whole counsel of God"?

One reviewer of Rhoads' book *Taking Sex Differences Seriously* says:

> It might seem odd to have to pen a book like this, but we live in odd times. Throughout history people have known that men and women are different. But recently we have been told that men and women are not different after all. Perceived differences are due to society, not biology, and sex and gender differences are both interchangeable and malleable.
>
> In this view, gender is a social construction. Moreover, one can change one's gender like one changes one's clothes. Male today, female tomorrow, bisexual one day, homosexual the next. This is the brave new world of the gender benders.
>
> The thesis Rhoads offers is simple: men and women are different, and these differences are basic, profound and rooted in our very nature. With a wealth of documentation and research, Rhoads sets the record straight, informing us of the clear scientific and biological case for male-female differences.
>
> Hormones and other chemical/biological determinants cannot be dismissed when assessing gender. Their very presence means that nature has hotwired the human species into two clearly different sexes, and these differences cannot be wished away by social engineers. And these changes can be found from our earliest moments, refuting the notion that social or environmental factors are the sole explanations for such differences. For example, day-old infants will cry when they hear a recording of another infant crying, but girls will cry longer than boys.
>
> Women tend to be more communitarian, more nurturing and less aggressive than men. Researchers have found that there are universal constants running throughout every known human society, including division of labor by sex, women being the primary child careers, and the dominance of men in the public sphere.
>
> Now if sex differences were due to socialization, and not biology (nurture, nor nature) then we would expect to see these differences quickly fading, at least in western cultures, where sex role changes have been most dramatic. But this has not been the case.
>
> These differences, in other words are enduring and they are significant. No amount of social reconstruction will make them disappear. If so, argues Rhoads, we are doing great damage to men, women and society when we act as if they do not exist. Forcing little Johnny to play with dolls and compelling little Jennie to play with toy soldiers, in other words, is counterproductive, and may simply make things worse.
>
> Those who seek 50/50 marriages, for example, and attempt a complete equality of roles and jobs usually come to frustration. Conflicts tend to be higher in such households, and child rearing also suffers as a result. And role-reversal families tend to be short-lived, with most reverting to more traditional patterns. Those who seek to turn their children into androgynous role models find they only come to grief in their attempts. Children cannot be taught to change what they are by nature. (www.amazon.com/Taking-Differences-Seriously-Steven-Rhoads/dp/1893554937)

Carey Roberts wrote this insightful article titled "Feminist subversion of the gender system" (www.renewamerica.us) about the history of feminism entwined with socialism:

> In recent years, the battle of the sexes has escalated into a full-fledged gender war. This conflict is playing out in the boardroom, the courtroom, and the bedroom. What is the origin of this feminist assault? And as early as 1886, Eleanor Marx, youngest daughter of Karl, issued this indictment: "Women are the creatures of an organized tyranny of men, as the workers are the creatures of an organized tyranny of idlers."
>
> The linkage between socialism and American feminism can be traced back to the earliest years: Susan B. Anthony held a 1905 meeting with Eugene Debbs, perennial socialist candidate in the US presidential elections. Anthony promised Debbs, "Give us suffrage, and we'll give you socialism." Debs shot back, "Give us socialism, and we'll give you the vote."
>
> Helen Keller, well-known suffragette and advocate for the blind, became an outspoken member of the Socialist Party in 1909. She later joined the ultra-radical Industrial Workers of the World. Keller's 45-page FBI file can be viewed here.
>
> Simone de Beauvoir was a well-known socialist with Marxist sympathies. In *The Second Sex*, she lionized socialism as the ideal for gender relationships: "A world where men and women would be equal is easy to visualize, for that precisely is what the Soviet Revolution promised."
>
> Betty Friedan went to great lengths to cover up the facts of her Communist past: her membership in the Young Communist League, her 1944 request to join the American Communist Party, and her work as a propagandist for Communist-led organizations in the 1940s.
>
> Gloria Steinem once admitted, "When I was in college, it was the McCarthy era, and that made me a Marxist." (Susan Mitchell: *Icons, Saints and Divas*, 1997, p. 130) Later, Steinem joined the Democratic Socialists of America.

EMEMY AT HOME

In the book *The Enemy At Home* Dinesh D'Souza writes in his chapter "A World Without Patriarchy" that much of the world accepts the traditional family such as many Muslims do. He says the enemy at home are the liberals who work to destroy the traditional family. He quotes one book saying, "both men and women willingly adhere to the traditional division of sex roles in the home. Men in these societies are not actively restricting and silencing women's demands. Instead, both sexes believe that women and men should have distinct roles." "There is a growing gap between the egalitarian beliefs and feminist values of Western societies and the traditional beliefs in poorer societies." "Most of the world subscribes to traditional values." Here are a few excerpts from his book:

> Feminist Ellen Willis calls for a "serious long-range strategy" to "combat what she calls "authoritarian patriarchal religion, culture, and morality ... all over the world, including the Islamic world." Consequently the family has become ground zero in the global culture war.

> The campaign to undermine traditional values worldwide is spear-headed by feminist groups like the Association for Women's Rights in Development.
>
> With the help of ideologues like Mary Robinson, the former president of Ireland who served as U.N. high commissioner for human rights, the left works through international agencies to pass resolutions undermining the traditional family. This campaign has been going on since 1979, when the Convention on the Elimination of All Forms of Discrimination Against Women (CEDAW) first defined women's rights in opposition to the family. These rights were affirmed and extended at the 1994 Cairo conference on population, the 1995 Beijing conference on women, and the 2002 U.N. Convention on the Rights of the Child.
>
> What are the values the left seeks to impose on the rest of the world? … the elimination of the concept of the husband as the head of the household—this is seen as a violation of gender equality.
>
> The Left's campaign against the traditional family has produced widespread social disruption and political protest in many traditional cultures.

Waller Newell wrote an excellent book: *What Is A Man? 3,000 Years of Wisdom on the Art of Manly Virtue* saying that there is "a nobly inspiring tradition of manliness that stretches more or less continuously from classical Athens to the lifetimes of our parents and grandparents" but feminists have succeeded to "come close" to having it "perish." He writes:

> ...what I call the Myth of the '60s. People of my generation who came of age during that decade entertained the fantastic notion that human beings could invent themselves literally out of nothing, free of any inherited religious or historical traditions, motivated by a desire for the pure, uninhibited freedom to do exactly as one pleased. Like all utopian projects, it was a fantasy that few, if any, of us actually achieved (or, in our heart of hearts, even seriously wanted). But we did manage to establish it as a cultural orthodoxy, passing on to the next generation much of our disastrous presumption in believing that nothing just, good, or true had happened in human history before our time. ... Most of those of my generation who pioneered this ill-fated revolution had themselves received a traditional liberal education in the humanities and sciences. They battened off the very tradition they worked assiduously to undermine. It was their children who became the true children of the revolution, victims of the myth that humans can 'construct' their 'identities' out of nothing. The disappearance of the positive tradition of manliness through relentless simplification and caricature, to the point where it bears no resemblance to its actual teachings, is one by-product of that vast shipwreck of culture.

Vast Experiment

I began this book by remarking that the last three decades had witnessed one of the most remarkable efforts at social engineering in human history—a state-sponsored campaign, organized throughout the education system and in all major public institutions, to eradicate the psychological and emotional differences between men and women. Two generations have been brought up as the products of this vast experiment. From the moment they enter kindergarten to their final courses in university, they are required to subscribe to a new doctrine of human relations without precedent in known experience: that there are no inherent differences in character between men and women.

This doctrine now influences everything in contemporary society from how children and young adults are schooled, to pension plans, gender quotas for hiring, the enforcement of laws relating to domestic violence, and admission to military academies. And yet, as everyone with eyes to see and ears to listen realizes, this pervasive public orthodoxy bears little resemblance to the actual world of boys and girls and men and women in which we all live, and has had virtually no long-acting effect on the behavior of either sex.

Doomed to Failure

The prevailing public orthodoxy forbids us to entertain the thought that men and women, while equal in their intellectual and moral capacities for a successful and fulfilling life, might be different in their temperaments, emotional rhythms and sensitivity to others, and that each sex might be, in some cases, better suited for certain kinds of activity that the other. ... But ... it is plain that many people, especially young men and women, find the idea of a genderless society unbelievable, restrictive, and boring. Moreover, the sheer unreality of this model, its naive and arrogant expectation, perennially doomed to failure by human nature, that some kind of gender-neutral new human personality will emerge from decades of relentless social engineering and propaganda, is arguably increasing tension and hostility between men and women.

TENDER WARRIOR

In the book *Tender Warrior* the author, Stu Weber says, "The pattern of masculine leadership and feminine responsiveness is well established in Scripture. It is also very conspicuous in our world. Stephen Clark, a historian at Yale University, observes: 'Men bear primary responsibility for the larger community. Women bear primary responsibility for domestic management and rearing of young children. Every known society, past and present, assigns to the men a primary responsibility for the government of the larger groupings within the society, and assigns to the women a primary responsibility for the daily maintenance of household units and the care of the younger children.' In our suspicious culture people might expect such a statement from a male sociologist. But Sherry Ortner, feminist scholar, states it even more emphatically: 'The universality of female subordination, the fact that it exists within every type of social and economic arrangement and in societies of every degree of complexity, indicates to me that we are up against something very profound, very stubborn, something we cannot root out simply by rearranging a few tasks and roles in the social system, or even reordering the whole economic structure. I would flatly assert that we find women subordinate to men in every known society. The search for a genuinely egalitarian, let alone matriarchal, culture has proved fruitless.'" Weber says:

We're dealing with something very fundamental here. Masculine headship is universally present. It is the anthropological standard. It is the historical practice. Most importantly, it is the scriptural mandate. How then should we respond to it? Accept it and live with it. Trust it and obey it. Take the orders, and follow them. As men under authority.

Still, many in our culture kick against it. It is campaigned against. It is mocked. It is ridiculed. It is legislated out of fashion. But it will persist. Manhood is here to stay. How tragic though that some Christians, who reputedly accept the authority of Scripture, would resist it.

The solution (to this confusion) is manly love. Men must develop a thorough, biblical, manly love. Now what is that? In a word, headship. It is leadership with

> an emphasis upon responsibility, duty, and sacrifice. Not rank or domination. No "I'm the boss" assertion. Most people who have to insist that they are the leader, usually aren't.... The key to leadership is serving not "lording" it over.... Harsh dominance is not the way of Christ.

In *Man and Woman in Christ: An Examination of the Roles of Men and Women in Light of Scripture and the Social Sciences* Stephen B. Clark has an article titled "Men's and Women's Differences: Social Structural Characteristics." One reviewer wrote, "This book is a welcome antidote to the barrage of propaganda from the equalitarian left that blurs the distinction between the sexes and denies the biblical teaching of hierarchy in the order of creation." A reviewer of the book at the now defunct website Patriarch.com wrote, "This book is one of the most important written in the twentieth century." You can read the entire text of the book online at www.cbmw.org. Clark writes:

> Today there is a flood of books on women. Most of them are written by women who in one way or another are part of the modern feminist movement. A high percentage of them are Americans. They press for equality between men and women and for the elimination of many of the differences between them which have been part of life in contemporary Western society. Their writings are a symptom of a serious problem area in our society, and are fair warning that it is no longer possible to approach men and women in a traditional way or even with the remnants of a traditional approach.
>
> Developments in ecological studies in recent decades have demonstrated the fragility and complexity of the "natural" environment. Seemingly small changes in our physical environment can produce unexpected even disastrous consequences. The human race is not always adept at foreseeing the consequences of such changes because its understanding of the interrelationships of overall ecology lags well behind its technological ability to produce change.
>
> The radical feminist movement has by its success shown its ability to produce vast social change. However, this could be one of the most destructive changes in the history of human society. The roles of men and women have proven useful in previous societies; in fact, past societies functioned well only when these roles were operating properly. Today a strong movement would destroy these roles without a firmly established understanding of the ecological consequences. The rationale is simply that human nature is "unbelievably malleable." In essence, the human race is told that it should make such changes simply because it is capable of doing so. In the face of such a claim, human beings would do well to acquire a humble sense of the limitations of human knowledge, and to recall recent lessons about some of the painful consequences of technological change.
>
> For many years now our society has been experiencing a gradual weakening of men's and women's roles. Recent ideological and social movements have begun to hasten this process in many countries and this trend will probably continue. One should attempt to analyze the effects of this change. This is a complex and difficult task, but one can already observe in countries where the process is most advanced several destructive social trends that can probably be traced in part to the breakdown of men's and women's roles.

1. Family life is weakened. The breakdown of men's and women's roles weakens family life in two main ways. First, it undermines the subordination of the wife and turns her attention to her own life and career apart from her husband's career and apart from the life of the family. This takes away from the unity of the family, and is associated with the family's general loss of order and authority. Secondly, the breakdown of men's and women's roles leads men to take less responsibility for family groupings. As family life becomes an undifferentiated responsibility of husband and wife together with no defined male role of leadership, men often lose the motivation and commitment needed to care for their families. They tend to relate to women predominantly for sexual gratification. The man no longer focuses his desire for accomplishment on the family, but instead directs his interest elsewhere. As a consequence of these two trends-the increasing independence of the wife and irresponsibility of the husband—the family becomes less of a stable, ordered, and cohesive group, and more of a collection of individuals living together. These weaker families then produce weaker children with significant personal problems.

2. Sexual relationships become troubled. Confusion about roles may be a factor in the apparent increase of sexual disorders in Western culture. Evidence indicates that impotence in men is tied to the way their partners relate to them. When wives relate to their husbands in a challenging, aggressive, or dominating way, men often lose interest in sexual relationships and sometimes become impotent. Some social scientists also believe that a breakdown in men's and women's roles is associated with homosexuality and confusion in sexual identity.

3. Women often lose a sense of value. The modern feminist movement ostensibly a movement "for" women—normally devalues the very things that women feel the greatest desire to do: to be a wife and mother and have a home. Moreover, it often devalues precisely those elements of her personality that are most naturally feminine. Ironically, the effect of the feminist movement is largely to make women feel the "disadvantage" of being female more acutely. It puts them under greater pressure to compete with men.

4. Womanly roles are neglected. Our society neglects or institutionalizes roles involving care for personal needs—the roles traditionally filled by women. Thus home and family life becomes less supportive and charitable service is more impersonal and less charitable.

5. Manly roles are neglected. Our society provides less order, discipline, and personal protection in daily life than previous eras. Men are taught to avoid these traditionally male responsibilities; in fact, many men have become incapable of bearing these responsibilities because they have lost what was once the characteristically male approach to emotions and personal relationships.

6. Men and women develop psychological instabilities. There is some evidence that those groups in modern society most directly affected by the feminist movement have been specially plagued by psychological problems. The lack of social roles appears to make life more difficult for both men and women.

In the Mormon book *Duties and Blessings of the Priesthood Basic Manual for Priesthood Holders, Part B* we see that Mormons have no problem using the "P" word:

> **The Father as Patriarch**
> "The Lord expects fathers to lead their families."
>
> President Spencer W. Kimball said: "The Lord organized [His children] in the beginning with a father who procreates, provides, and loves and directs, and a mother who conceives and bears and nurtures and feeds and trains [, and children who] come to love, honor, and appreciate each other. The family is the great plan of life as conceived and organized by our Father in heaven."
>
> **A Father Is Patriarch of His Family**
> Heavenly Father has designated the husband or father as the head of the household—he is the patriarch of the family. We are especially blessed as members of the Church because we have the priesthood to help us be effective patriarchs.
>
> The home is the place for the family to progress—both together and individually. To encourage this progression the father should always preside in the home with love, wisdom, gentleness, understanding, and patience. As the patriarch in the home, the father should be the guiding example. Faithful and obedient fathers who lead their families in righteous living on earth will help them be worthy to live together in the eternities.
>
> As patriarchs in our families we should treat our wives and children with the utmost respect.
>
> **Meeting Basic Family Needs**
> As the patriarch of his family, a father is responsible to help family members meet their needs. First, everyone has physical needs such as food, shelter, and clothing.
>
> **To Be Wanted and Loved**
> We can satisfy our family members' need for love and acceptance by showing them affection and telling them we love them.

In the Lord's plan, husbands and fathers are the heads of their homes and the patriarchs of their families. Thus a father should develop a relationship of love, trust, and cooperation with his wife and children and should be concerned about the welfare of each family member.

THE RETURN OF PATRIARCHY

*"*R. Albert Mohler, Jr., serves as president of The Southern Baptist Theological Seminary—the flagship school of the Southern Baptist Convention and one of the largest seminaries in the world. He is a theologian and ordained minister, as well as an author, speaker and host of his own radio program The Albert Mohler Program, and he serves as one of CBMW's council members." At his website albertmohler.com he has an excellent article titled "The Return of Patriarchy? Fatherhood and the Future of Civilization." He teaches:

Will the world soon experience a return of patriarchy? That is the question raised by Phillip Longman in the current issue of *Foreign Policy*.

The magazine's cover features a rather stunning headline: "Why Men Rule—and Conservatives Will Inherit the Earth." That headline would be surprising in almost any contemporary periodical, but it is especially significant that this article should appear in the pages of *Foreign Policy*, published by the Carnegie Endowment for International Peace. The publication of this article is likely to set a good many heads to spinning.

Phillip Longman is Bernard L Schwartz Senior Fellow at the New America Foundation. He is a well-respected author and researcher, whose books have included *The Empty Cradle: How Falling Birthrates Threaten World Prosperity and What to Do about It* (2004). In his previous works, Longman has projected how falling birthrates throughout advanced societies will lead to financial, political, social, and demographic decline.

In this new article, he presses his argument to the next stage—announcing the return of patriarchy—the concept of male leadership—as essential to a recovery of higher birthrates and reproduction.

"With the number of human beings having increased more than sixfold in the past 200 years, the modern mind simply assumes that men and women, no matter how estranged, will always breed enough children to grow the population—at least until plague or starvation sets in," Longman explains.

"Yet, for more than a generation now, well-fed, healthy, peaceful populations around the world have been producing too few children to avoid population decline. That is true even though dramatic improvements in infant and child mortality mean that far fewer children are needed today (only about 2.1 per woman in modern societies) to avoid population loss. Birthrates are falling far below replacement levels in one country after the next—from China, Japan, Singapore, and South Korea, to Canada, the Caribbean, all of Europe, Russia, and even parts of the Middle East."

Throughout human history, a persistent fall in birthrates has served as a harbinger of cultural decline and a warning of cultural collapse. The reasons for this are many, but center in the fact that the cause of falling birthrates is often a loss of social cohesion and confidence and the effect of falling reproduction rates is a decline in economic prosperity and erosion of the social structure.

PERVERTED PATRIARCHY

The following excerpt is from an article titled "Perverted Patriarchy" that was posted at the now defunct website Patriach.com (I cannot find this article online or in any publication):

ANGER AND SELF-WILL

One of the common signs that a man is lording it over his family instead of leading them in a Christ-like manner is anger. A tyrant gets angry when his will is not obeyed, when his subjects don't submit to his control. The tyrannical husband gets angry a lot because his self-will is always near the surface of his heart and because anger is itself a device to control others through intimidation. When there is a conflict with his wife, for example, he tries to solve the problem by the assertion of

his will and the display of his temper. He is attempting to control his wife through the power of his will. If he wins this battle of wills, he will have lost the heart of his wife, and his family will be worse off for his leadership.

In contrast, a mature Christian husband and father doesn't take it personally when his will is crossed. His aim is to guide his family in God's ways, and he is more grieved than angered when his authority is not respected (cf. Matt. 23:37). He is able to look beyond the offense (real or imagined) and continue to care for his wife. Out of love for her, and with a heart of service, he will gently continue the discussion, assuming an attitude of humility. He will grant that he may not be seeing everything correctly himself and will be genuinely open to his wife's opinion and insights. If the disagreement persists, at least the relationship will not be broken. He will be communicating love and a willingness to yield to his wife where possible, but he will stand on principle when he needs to do so. His wife may disagree with him, but she will know he is not being self-willed and that he truly cares for her.

Husbands need to pay close attention to the admonition found in James 1:19-20: "So then, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath; for the wrath of man does not produce the righteousness of God." In any conflict we should choose very consciously to listen carefully to our wives. This in itself shows that we have regard for them in love, but we may also learn what is motivating her concerns and may discover some blind spots in ourselves. We also should be slow to speak. We should not be too quick to pronounce judgment on the wife's behavior or attitude; we should instead be very careful to give her the benefit of the doubt. Being slow to speak may also protect us from bursting forth with angry words that we will later regret. Finally, we should always be doubtful about the righteousness of our anger. It is possible to be angry and not sin (Eph. 4:26) if we are sharing God's anger at some sin or injustice, but the self-willed anger of a man does not accomplish God's righteous purposes in the life of a family. The vast majority of the time, our anger is a sign of a failure of leadership.

In a speech titled "True God's Day" given on the morning of January 1, 1996 Father said some things that I would like to emphasize:

> This right-hand side represents man and the left-hand side represents woman.
>
> Man's love organ is convex and woman's love organ is concave.
>
> In your love relationship as husband and wife do you want to just sit and look at one another and smile? Or would you rather have a love relationship that is so tight, so sweet, so strong that you would become totally one like a rubber ball, and roll around together? Once you become totally one and begin rolling together like a round ball, when you roll too fast you will shout and scream and God will hear you and come down and enjoy watching you. [Father demonstrates] Interesting? Exciting? (Exciting)
>
> Are you so excited that your five senses stop functioning? Caught by complete surprise your entire bodily functions stop. After you have heard Father's speech up until this point, and observed Father's bodily expressions, do you understand the extent of excitement that Father is talking about? (Yes) When you have that kind of love relationship between husband and wife, do you think God will exist among you and mingle with you, or will He remain outside and watch you? God will stay right at the central core. Which is the most enjoyable position, God's or

man and woman's? (God's) Does that mean that God participated in the love making action between husband and wife? (Yes) If that is the case, then does the motivation and origin of your love making come from God or man? (God) Universal, sacred, core motivation. This is the ideal motive for the creation of the universe.

Who do you think initiated love making first, God or man? (God) Then to whom did Adam and Eve's marriage belong? (God) God's dual characteristics of plus and minus, were manifested in man and woman and originally formed union there. The plus characteristic of God goes down toward the minus of the union. You can prove this by observing man and woman when they are about to become one-man's right hand usually touches woman's left hand. Woman's right hand touches man's left hand because they are facing each other. That is the way you become one.

This circular motion takes place between man and woman when they hold each other's hands, man's right hand woman's left hand. Wife's right hand and husband's left hand. Then they hold hands and pull and push each other and that is how rotation takes place.

DIVINE LAW

Suppose both husband and wife wake up at the same time in the morning and both are in a hurry. Who should take the bathroom first? (Laughter) Don't laugh. I'm teaching you divine law. Then, according to divine law, who should take the bathroom first? (Husband) Suppose he takes times and doesn't come out and you have an emergency? (Laughter) Well, if he takes too much time, and the wife has no way of stopping herself, then she may go into the bathroom. If the toilet is still occupied then she can relieve herself on the floor. Then if she makes the floor wet she can wash the floor thoroughly afterward. Who is supposed to clean the floor? Who wet the floor? (Laughter) Wife did, therefore she should clean up. Women usually relieve themselves while sitting down. Then while in this position can she shout at her husband and scold him for taking too much time and order him to clean up the floor? Can she say that? Those Blessed couples' husbands, you should never follow your wives with dried rags to clean the floor. If you have practiced such a life, you have to change it immediately.

Man alone is only half a human being. Woman herself is only half a human being. But through marriage they can form a whole human being.

The Western culture, which has been pursuing material, has become like an animal world. Whereas the Oriental culture which has been pursuing spirituality, has become a more noble world. Westerners greet one another by shaking hands horizontally, whereas Orientals greet one another vertically by bowing down. Many Westerners sleep on the stomach. Raise your hand if you sleep on your stomach. In the Orient, those who sleep on the stomach may be considered animalistic. Because cows and other animals always sleep on their stomachs. No matter how smart any animal may be, there is no animal which sleeps on its back exposing its stomach. Only human beings have this privilege. Human beings lay on their back and stretch out their arms and legs. This is the position to welcome God, telling Him to please come down and be embraced by you. When you sleep on your stomach and kick your legs like this [Father

demonstrates] no matter how hard you may kick, God cannot come down, because you are turning your back against God. It is the position in which animals search for their food.

There are many people who constantly eat. They eat while walking, while talking, even while sleeping. It is like animals. As soon as animals secure a certain amount of food they keep it in their mouth and try to run away from other animals to eat it. While still running they eat. But human beings are supposed to have a nice table in front of them with nice china and enjoy their meal. As you take each mouthful of food you have to thank God and invite Him to taste it with you. This meal table can be like an altar upon which we make our offering.

Woman's love organ is for the sake of man. Man's love organ is for the sake of woman. Husband and wife are able to become one through True Love from God. True Love means we have to serve God as our center, not Satan. When there is love making action, we should do so with God together. Since God is an absolute being He wants an absolute object. He does not want a temporary or conditional object. Therefore, can we think of the concept of divorce? (NO) Adam and Eve were not supposed to have many different stepfathers and mothers. Humanity should not know this reality. When children have more stepmothers and fathers it means that the heart of children will have more holes. Incurable holes in their hearts. That is what is happening in America. Therefore America is doomed to perish. If America resists, we have to kick it. Don't be proud of being American. God has left America. The only hope for this country is that Reverend Moon remains here. Therefore God still holds onto America. (Applause)

THREE-DAY CEREMONY

Because the Fall destroyed true patriarchy and uplifted fallen patriarchy Father has the Three-day Ceremony. Men change from being wimpy objects to fallen Eve and assume their rightful position as patriarchs who restore Adam's failure in the Fall. This is a visible example of restoration of mankind back to true patriarchy. Second Generation and those who grow up as Unificationists should be taught Father's words on patriarchy and believe in the traditional, patriarchal family even though they are not required to perform the 3-day ceremony that restores patriarchy.

In one of the versions of the *Divine Principle* printed by headquarters of the Unification Movement entitled D*ivine Principle (Level 4)* they explain the reversal that took place at the Fall this way: "all" the "disorders in the fallen world" originate from the third fallen nature of reversing dominion: "The third major aspect of the Fallen Nature is the nature to reverse the order of dominion. The angel was ultimately supposed to be under man's dominion, yet he dominated Eve, reversing the proper order. Eve was supposed to be under Adam's dominion, yet she dominated him. These reversals of dominion resulted in the Fall. All of the various disorders in the fallen world have their origin in this aspect of the original Fallen Nature."

If every Unificationist believes that "Eve was supposed to be under Adam's dominion" then shouldn't every Unificationist believe that every woman is supposed to be under their husband's dominion?

To restore, then, all the disorders of the fallen world, we must return to God's original order where Adam and Eve dominate Lucifer and Adam dominate Lucifer and Adam dominates Eve, i.e., God-centered patriarchy.

After the fall, women have been deceived and abused by Lucifer-type men throughout history. Since there have been countless crimes against women by men who had power over them, there is great resentment in women against men. Because of this history and also very personal resentment against men, many women find it difficult if not next to impossible to submit to their husbands. This is a tragedy in God's eyes. Until we can reverse the fallen nature in the family between men and women, we cannot free this world. At the three-day ceremony, the husband goes from the archangelic position to the position of Adam. This must be more than a symbolic ceremony if we want more than symbolic world restoration.

SUBJECT AND OBJECT

Father teaches that the 3-Day Ceremony in his marriage Blessing is about men being in the subject position and women being in the object position:

> My mission is what? In the Old Testament era, circumcision was the condition to separate from Satan. It means bleeding from the man's love organ, taking the archangel's blood out. That is why religions demanded that people live without marriage. At the time of Jesus, the baptism was the condition. In the New Testament era, the entire mind and body were to have been cleansed through baptism. Without unity of mind and body, cleansed, they could not receive the blessing. The era of the Lord of the Second Advent the condition is the blessing, the change of blood lineage. You've done the 3-day ceremony. Satan occupied the Old Testament and New Testament eras, so we have to come out of them. All things and the children, humanity, belong to Satan. Through the 3-day ceremony, the wife gives new birth to the husband, the man. Without going through that, you cannot become a true husband. But on the third day, finally, the husband takes the upper position, the subject position. (10-24-99)

Satan has got many people angry at hearing women as being objects and men leading women. In this ceremony the couple has sex three nights in a row with the woman on top the first two nights and the man on top the third night. One idea I have about this ceremony is that it restores the sexual act of love by fallen mankind. Eve fell with Lucifer in the first act of sex by human beings and then Eve had sex with immature Adam. It seems to me that one aspect of the 3-day ceremony is that the first night could be a reenactment of the Eve's first sexual encounter that was out of order and the second night representing Eve's out of order sexual relationship with Adam. The third night the man takes a true Adam's position and restores the Fall that had Satan dominating Eve with hatred instead of Adam dominating Eve with love.

Father often speaks about how wrong it is for women to dominate their husbands. The blessing restores Adam's position as head of the house and Eve's position to be his helper and follow him. The 3-day ceremony is about leadership. Father constantly teaches that men are not to be like the weak Adam in the Garden of Eden but godly patriarchs like the Third Adam that Father is. In the era of the 4th Adam all men are called by God to become like True Father and lead their families to victory over Satan's lie of feminism that pushes women to compete with and dominate men. Father says, "In order to restore, you must become a person who does things in the reverse way. At the time of the fall, the archangel gave to Eve, right? Next, Eve gave to Adam. Originally, Adam was supposed to dominate Eve with the authority of God's son. And Eve in the position of parent was supposed to have given birth to humankind. We must restore that fundamental and original heart." (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

The following is an example of Father speaking strongly about the different roles of men and women:

> Even though your mind and body are harmonized, you still need your object partner. Hence God created Eve centered on Adam. Without love, we cannot harmonize two entities. So God put everything in Adam, His invisible heart, mind and love. Once God created Adam and gave him everything, God became empty. Adam represented the sung sang, the subjective position, the male part. To get an object partner, God should create Eve as the visible object partner. That is why man stands in the external, visible situation and woman is supposed to receive everything. So she is concave.
>
> God wanted to put his male, subjective, sung sang [internal] point into Adam, and this in Adam was supposed to go to Eve, and then the two would make unity. That is why Eve is totally an objective being. The man is supposed to put everything into Eve, as subject to the object partner. Woman should achieve absolute obedience. Adam is subject, so he should be able to create the harmonious situation. So man is the center of harmony, and woman practices absolute obedience, because Eve is concave and is the conclusion of the creation.
>
> That is why woman, to fulfill the mission of "the field," should respect and obey all male figures in the family: the grandfather, husband and son. Otherwise, she cannot accomplish woman's original responsibility. So she has organs in the body that enable her to receive everything. She has a womb to hold sons. No matter how many seeds a man has, without a field, he cannot get fruit.
>
> Once a woman insists on herself and puts herself first, not dealing with the family situation but going out from the family, what will happen to the family? It will all be destroyed. This is the Principle of Creation.
>
> The womb exists between the bones [i.e. pelvic bones]. Man's sexual organ goes between the two bones. So the woman has to practice absolute obedience in order to receive God's seed. You have to possess that concept, or you will lose the original situation. If you loved someone before you received the blessing, you should completely forget it. If you remember it, you will be caught in hell. You have to keep your holiness with your body. You have to keep clean.
>
> Without sons and daughters, and raising them up, you can never understand the man's world and children's world. So you have to have as many children as possible.
>
> You have to be able to accept everything from your husband forever, no matter what the situation. Woman's character generally is eager to receive, and man's is generally eager to give.
>
> By delivering children, women can make the condition to enter heaven. Without forming the family four-position foundation, women cannot get into heaven. This is the model of the family in the Cheon Il Guk.

You have to keep your purity. Men work outside the home, so the responsibility for the children is with the mother. So once a mother complains to her husband before the children, the children will have a bad concept of their father. They think God will punish their father. Even though she has difficulties with her husband, she should be one with him to restore harmony. Then the couple can establish equalized value. So the family is vitally important.

You should keep your position as husband and wife. Don't envy the high position of lawyers, businessmen and doctors in the secular world, because in front of God, they cannot compare to you in value. You must be able to keep the discipline of restoration, or you cannot be the owner of Cheon Il Guk.

The era to save the individual is over. We have to go forward to save the family.

Sun Myung Moon
December 1, 2002
East Garden
Translation by Rev. Dong Woo Kim
Unofficial notes by Tyler Hendricks

At Hoon Dok Hae on March 24, 2004 (Michael Jenkin's notes) Father said, "American women, you make yourselves the Queen of your house and make your husbands servants. But this is not right."

In *Blessing and Ideal Family* Father is quoted as saying:

Man acquires the authority of restoration centering on love only in the perfection stage, not the formation or growth stages. That is because the age of Adam and the next period were periods of failure. As a result, in the Old Testament Age, people did not inherit God's formation stage right of love. And centering on Christianity, people did not inherit God's growth stage love. Only after inheriting that formation- and growth-stage love privilege can we stand in the Completed Testament Age realm. The three-day indemnity ceremony establishes that condition.

The first day represents the restoration of fallen Adam and the Old Testament Age. The second day is restoring through indemnity the situation of Jesus and the New Testament Age. The third day is recreating the bride and the bridegroom in the place of Jesus. From there, for the first time, you can start on the proper track. Establishing the indemnity condition in this substantial way is complicated.

****

The holy wine ceremony establishes the condition of being born from a new mother. In the holy wine there is the blood of indemnity. By drinking the holy wine, you are being purified internally, and by wiping your body with the holy cloth you are being purified externally.

In *God's Will and the World* Father says:

> Forty days after the Blessing there is an indemnity ceremony for substantial restoration that ordinarily takes three days. The 40 days is an interval of historical indemnity. In the formation and growth periods people do not have the authority to make restoration centering on love. Only after entering the completion period is that possible. Therefore, Adam's era and the next are the ages of failure. As a result, people could not fully inherit the sphere of God's love on the formation level (Old Testament age) or the growth stage centering on Jesus. Yet only by inheriting the sphere of God's love on the formation and growth stages can people enter the sphere of the Completed Testament age. The Indemnity Ceremony has the significance of symbolically accomplishing this inheritance. The first day is to restore the Old Testament age, or fallen Adam. The second day is to complete Jesus' mission and restore the New Testament age. In the Completed Testament age, represented by the third day, the man stands as the bridegroom in the place of Jesus and recreates the bride. Then, for the first time, he can assume his proper position as a restored Adam. Restoration requires such concrete and specific indemnity conditions.

Phil Lancaster wrote these perceptive words in a website that no longer exists:

> After the fall God called to Adam Where are you? Remember, Eve sinned first. Adam just went along. But God comes to him and points his finger in his face, as it were, and demands an accounting from him.
>
> The point is that Adam is responsible, even though it was Eve who sinned first. He was in charge. God gave him the commandment. God was holding him accountable. This is the way it works with leadership. The head answers for all those under his authority.
>
> Adam was not only acting for himself. He was the head of the whole human race, not Eve, and when he sinned the whole race fell into sin. "Therefore, just as through one man sin entered the world, and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men…" (Rom. 5:12). This is how seriously God takes headship!
>
> After God's relentless confrontation, Adam played the coward and tried to pin the fault on Eve. "The woman whom You gave to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I ate." We can even hear a subtle attempt to blame God: It's the woman *you* gave me who led me into sin. So our first father failed to take responsibility. (Now you know where we get it!)
>
> The real sin of Adam lay in listening to his wife's invitation to sin and then following her rather than being the leader he was created to be.
>
> God designed the man to be the head of the human authority structure—from the beginning.
>
> What we see actually unfold in the garden is that, while he retains his formal authority as representative head of the race, Eve becomes the de facto (ital) leader and Adam the follower as they rebel against God.
>
> We find perversity: the breakdown of the proper relationship between the man and the woman.

They both erred in a kind of reversal of roles.

Adam failed in his leadership by not protecting his wife.

A general failure of obedience to God's created order [father talks about absolute love, absolute obedience] for the marriage relationship. It would not then be too much of a stretch to say that the first sin was Adam's passivity and his failure to lead and protect his wife.

The passive male is the root of all evil. If Adam had been an active leader-protector instead of a passive follower, the curse would not have been pronounced on the world.

The well-being of the whole creation rests on the proper functioning of the various authority arrangements that God has established. Satan was a high angel who stepped out of his role and rebelled against God's order. [we are all rebellious especially in last days] He came to earth to wreak havoc with the perfection God had created here. Eve got out from under her human authority, Adam, and instead of seeking his leadership took the initiative in rebellion and led her husband into sin. Adam failed to take the lead in the temptation episode and chose instead to accept the leadership of Satan and of his wife. The story of the entry of sin and misery into the world is the sad tale of a series of failure to submit to God-given authority and to exercise God-given leadership.

Our focus is on the man because, again, he is the one God put in charge and the one He holds accountable. Unfortunately men from Adam onward have inherited his penchant for avoiding the demands of their leadership calling, especially in relationship to their wives and family. Men today have almost totally abdicated their calling as family leaders. Whatever remnant of leadership energy they have tends to be directed to interests outside the home—business and recreation, in particular. But it was a failure of home leadership that thrust the world into darkness, and this is still the most costly form of leadership failure.

Stu Weber in his book *Four Pillars of a Man's Heart* writes, "When men are not men, a civilization falls. When men let their masculinity drift with the winds of culture, everyone loses. When a culture is castrated, it dies."

EMISSARY OF A REVOLUTION

Those in control of our public schools, universities and media constantly preach the lie of feminism. Let me give you one example out of many thousands of books. Terrence Real wrote a book titled *How Can I Get Through to You?: Reconnecting Men and Women*. He is a typical male feminist that is called on as an expert on relationships by television news shows. I have seen him on TV. Men like him are everywhere and they have succeeded in making many people believe patriarchy is a sickness. After praising Betty Friedan and Gloria Steinem he says, "I write as an emissary of a revolution, with the express purpose of engaging as many of you as I can to join in, to empower yourselves and those around you to shake off the illusions we have lived for centuries. For surprising as it might seem, what so profoundly alienates men is no different than what has disenfranchised women—the system of patriarchy."

FEMINISM IS OVER

This man is an ambassador for Satan. As ambassadors for God we must fight these kinds of powerful people who are leading the world to unhappiness with their false teachings. His revolution is the sexual revolution of the Fall. Feminism is the illusion we have to "shake off." Terrence Real and his feminist comrades haven't got a clue to what patriarchy means. He is a social scientist and sees what he wants to see. Abel sociologists are now writing how patriarchal families are superior to feminist families. He mistakenly thinks that godly patriarchs are emotional cripples who can't cry and be sensitive. The truth is that they are more sensitive than liberal feminist men. He writes, "Patriarchy offers our sons the choice of emotional stoicism and success in the world, or wholeness, connection, and failure." No it doesn't. One of the best books on patriarchy is Aubrey Andelin's *Man of Steel and Velvet*. The title itself shows that true men have a proper blend of toughness and tenderness. Blessed Couples should be exemplary examples and role models of the traditional family where the man is a strong and loving leader and his family follows him.

Mr. Real says, "Patriarchy codes intimacy as feminine. Patriarchy offers the lie of perfect intimacy." He couldn't be more wrong. On the back of the book is praise from one of the most famous feminists in history. Jane Fonda says that his book "helped me understand why I've been married three times. I hope I get another chance to put his concepts to work. No one has written about the relational problems between men and women in as profound a way as he has." She is wrong. If she wants to find real happiness she should look to finding a godly patriarch for a husband. Her feminism is the reason she has no husband.

Harville Hendrix, author of *Getting the Love You Want*, writes glowingly of Terrence Real's book saying, "Terrence Real has written a clear and compelling analysis of the crisis experienced by most couples." He likes how the book "empowers women" to reject "psychological patriarchy." Be sure to stay away from Hendrix's books on relationships. Another popular writing on family, John Bradshaw, writes how the book "has uncovered the cunning dragoon of psychological patriarchy." Be sure to stay away from Bradford's books.

Real ends his book saying, "Doing whatever I can to help foster the growth of [feminism] has become my life's work. And there are legions out there just like me—researchers, educators, clinicians, each in his or her way, giving voice to one clear, simple, message: Patriarchy is over. We needn't live like this anymore." My life's work is to fight feminists like him. Patriarchy is not over; feminism is over. Right now feminists like him have "legions" on their side but that will not last.

ANTI-PATRIARCHY OF BELL HOOKS

"Bell Hooks is one of the most widely published black feminist scholars in the U.S." In her book *The Will to Change: Men, Masculinity and Love* she writes:

> Patriarchy is the single most life-threatening social disease assaulting the male body and spirit in our nation. Yet most men do not use the word "patriarchy" in everyday life. Most men never think about patriarchy—what it means, how it is created and sustained. Many men in our nation would not be able to spell the word or pronounce it correctly. The word "patriarchy" just is not a part of their normal everyday thought or speech. Men who have heard and know the word usually associate it with women's liberation, with feminism, and therefore dismiss it as irrelevant to their own experiences. I have been standing at podiums talking about patriarchy for more than thirty years. It is a word I use daily, and men who hear me use it often ask me what I mean by it.

> Nothing discounts the old antifeminist projection of men as all-powerful more than their basic ignorance of a major facet of the political system that shapes and informs male identity and sense of self from birth until death. I often use the phrase "imperialist white-supremacist capitalist patriarchy" to describe the interlocking political systems that are the foundation of our nation's politics. Of these systems the one that we all learn the most about growing up is the system of patriarchy, even if we never know the word, because patriarchal gender roles are assigned to us as children and we are given continual guidance about the ways we can best fulfill these roles.
>
> Patriarchy is a political-social system that insists that males are inherently dominating, superior to everything and everyone deemed weak, especially females, and endowed with the right to dominate and rule over the weak and to maintain that dominance through various forms of psychological terrorism and violence.

Anti-patriarchs erroneously think patriarchy is about violence. To her, men are bad and women are good. Men are violent and women are victims.

Bell Hooks praises John Bradshaw's rotten book *Creating Love*:

> Psychotherapist John Bradshaw's clear-sighted definition of patriarchy in *Creating Love* is a useful one: "The dictionary defines `patriarchy' as a 'social organization marked by the supremacy of the father in the clan or family in both domestic and religious functions. Patriarchy is characterized by male domination and power. He states further that "patriarchal rules still govern most of the world's religious, school systems, and family systems." Describing the most damaging of these rules, Bradshaw lists "blind obedience—the foundation upon which patriarchy stands; the repression of all emotions except fear; the destruction of individual willpower; and the repression of thinking whenever it departs from the authority figure's way of thinking." Patriarchal thinking shapes the values of our culture. We are socialized into this system, females as well as males. Most of us learned patriarchal attitudes in our family of origin, and they were usually taught to us by our mothers. These attitudes were reinforced in schools and religious institutions.

Feminists just can't understand that patriarchy is the opposite of "blind obedience" and "repression." Feminism is the most repressive ideology for relationships ever introduced. Let's look at more of her nonsense about how men have been brainwashed to be scary "dominators":

> Clearly we cannot dismantle a system as long as we engage in collective denial about its impact on our lives. Patriarchy requires male dominance by any means necessary, hence it supports, promotes, and condones sexist violence. We hear the most about sexist violence in public discourses about rape and abuse by domestic partners. But the most common forms of patriarchal violence are those that take place in the home between patriarchal parents and children. The point of such violence is usually to reinforce a dominator model, in which the authority figure is deemed ruler over those without power and given the right to maintain that rule through practices of subjugation, subordination, and submission.
>
> Keeping males and females from telling the truth about what happens to them in families is one way patriarchal culture is maintained. A great majority of individuals

> enforce an unspoken rule in the culture as a whole that demands we keep the secrets of patriarchy, thereby protecting the rule of the father. This rule of silence is upheld when the culture refuses everyone easy access even to the word "patriarchy." Most children do not learn what to call this system of institutionalized gender roles, so rarely do we name it in everyday speech. This silence promotes denial. And how can we organize to challenge and change a system that cannot be named?
>
> I emphasized that patriarchal ideology brainwashes men to believe that their domination of women is beneficial when it is not.
>
> Patriarchy demands of men that they become and remain emotional cripples. Since it is a system that denies men full access to their freedom of will, it is difficult for any man of any class to rebel against patriarchy, to be disloyal to the patriarchal parent, be that parent female or male.
>
> Patriarchy as a system has denied males access to full emotional well-being, which is not the same as feeling rewarded, successful, or powerful because of one's capacity to assert control over others. To truly address male pain and male crisis we must as a nation be willing to expose the harsh reality that patriarchy has damaged men in the past and continues to damage them in the present. If patriarchy were truly rewarding to men, the violence and addiction in family life that is so all-pervasive would not exist. This violence was not created by feminism.

Feminism, not patriarchy, creates emotional cripples and is the root cause of our problems. The solution to solving all the pain so many have in their relationships is biblical patriarchy. Reject false teachers like Bell Hooks, Terrence Real and John Bradshaw. They are Cain. The Bible is Abel.

Their Ideas Don't Work

In his book *Do As I Say (Not As I Do): Profiles in Liberal Hypocrisy* Peter Schweizer exposes Liberals for being hypocrites, including Bell Hooks. He writes:

> Someone sent me a copy of a speech delivered by the feminist writer bell hooks (the nom de plume of Gloria Watkins). One of the nation's leading feminists, she has given thousands of lectures on campuses around the country and her books are assigned in dozens of courses. In her speech, as in her books, she roundly attacked and demonized men, capitalism, and "patriarchy." In one of her most essays, she fantasizes about killing an anonymous man on the bus, considering it an opportunity to strike a blow against patriarchy. Living a life gripped by a principled hatred of male domination seemed like a pretty difficult existence. But then I ran across a warm profile of Ms. Hooks in the *Chronicle of Higher Education*, which explained that her radical pose is merely a "persona." "While bell hooks writes about 'sexism and misogyny,'" the paper reported, the militant feminist was disappointed because she "longs for flowers from a man" instead of the self-bought lilies sitting on her dining room table. In other words, she tells young women to do without men and reject patriarchy while privately pining away for romance. When asked about this contradiction, hooks admitted that she didn't really practice what she preached. "I haven't really tried to take on the identity of bell hooks, she explained. "It's been very much a writing name, and now more of a writing persona." I guess that makes it okay then.

MEN'S GREATEST MISSION TO BE A FAMILY MAN

Phil Lancaster writes in *Family Man, Family Leader* that men should not put their career ahead of their wife and children. The primary focus of a man should be working hard to be a good and true family man:

> Fathers, stop looking for greatness in your work, in what your hands and mind produce, in some passing status or prestige, or in the wealth you accumulate. Your greatest mission is the hearts of your children. In them lies your potential for true greatness. In them lies your greatest opportunity to bring glory to God. … After his relationship with his wife, a father's relationship with his children is the most important in his life. It is God's humble yet effective means for assuring the spread of His kingdom.

Weldon Hardenbrook writes in his article "Where's Dad?: A Call for Fathers with the Spirit of Elijah" in *Recovering Biblical Manhood and Womanhood: A Response to Evangelical Feminism*: "We desperately need the spirit of Elijah in the church. For too long the boys of America have been viewing the church as a sanctuary for women and Sunday school as a place for sissies. For too long the most predictable fact about young males in the church is that the majority of them will leave by the time they are young adults. For too long the feminized clergy of our land have been known as nice guys rather than courageous leaders."

MALE PASSIVITY: THE ROOT OF ALL EVIL

Philip Lancaster wrote an article titled "Male Passivity: The Root of All Evil" saying:

> **INITIATIVE**
>
> [A] quality needed by both Adam and his heirs is initiative. A man with initiative makes things happen. A man without initiative waits for things to happen to him, and to his family. Adam waited to see what would happen when the serpent confronted Eve. He waited to see what she would say when she approached him after eating the forbidden fruit. He didn't initiate action, he reacted, and reacted poorly.
>
> Our first father should have stepped up to the plate when the serpent threw his pitch toward Eve. He should have intervened in the dialog. And if he didn't know about that conversation, why not? Was it not his responsibility to keep the commandment of God and assure it was kept by Eve who was under his authority? Further, when offered the fruit by his wife, why did he not at least at that point seize the initiative, rebuke her error, and confront the serpent? But no, Mr. Adam was what we now only know too well: your basic passive male. Avoiding action. Reacting to problems in a way that causes the least flack in the short term. Yes, dear. I'm sure it's a very good piece of fruit. Whatever you say, dear.
>
> So how are you at showing initiative? Is your leadership style at home characterized by your setting the agenda, asking the questions, requiring accountability? Or do you just go with the flow, hoping for the best? Do you make things happen in your family life, or are you just a passive passenger in the family vessel, letting others steer the ship or letting it drift wherever it will? You are the leader, the protector, and the teacher for your family. Each of these roles implies the need for you to be proactive. Remember, one day the Lord will seek you out as He did Adam in the Garden and ask an accounting for your leadership in the home.

Father says:

America is a women's world, right? This way of life will last for 70 years, but then it will decline and go away. The idea of 'ladies first' will go away, and men will go first! If American women think they can have a field day and try to continue to enslave men, what will happen? Men will leave women and women will live all by themselves. That's why American men do not want to marry American white women, thinking, 'They are stubborn and arrogant; they are bossy and talk too much!' American men will say, 'I just want to marry an Oriental woman!'

The Three-Day Ceremony

When you finally meet as husband and wife physically, there will be a three-day ceremony. For three nights you will have to go through certain procedures, All the blessed members will have a special lecture and receive special instruction on how to go through the three-day ceremony. This three-day ceremony signifies that the women physically give up their position and physically give birth to their husbands. After the three-day ceremony, then restoration has taken place.

Your position of meeting as husband and wife, on the first and second nights, will be with the wife in the upper position and her husband in the lower position. This represents formation and growth. The fallen action came at the top of growth stage position. However, on the third night, which represents perfection, there should be restoration of dominion. Adam should restore dominion, so the husband is in the upper and the woman in the lower position.

All this will be explained in detail at the time of the ceremony. But in Principle, on the first night you will really purify yourselves and carry out everything as instructed. The husband should make three bows to his wife. The wife receives those three bows, and they will then engage in sexual action, with the woman in the upper position. The second night repeats the first night. However, the third night is different. Until the third night, women are subject and men are in the object role. On the third night there is total restoration of dominion of husband. You men will restore your rightful authority as a husband on the third night. You will receive the three bows, and you are in the upper position. After that, from the third night on, the woman should serve the husband more than the husband serves her.

Once you know how difficult it is to reach to perfection then you should not even conceivably think of the fallen action again. Let's say there is a temptation, a typical temptation. A beautiful woman comes to entice you, or a handsome man comes to woo you. Look at that person as a serpent! Besides your husband or wife, nobody else should be in a position to woo you or entice you. Anyone else is the serpent, the archangel.

Once you know the entire spiritual implications of your blessing, you cannot help being joyful over how precious you are, living in this era, meeting Father and gathered in this particular room.

Preparation for Blessing (II)
May 20, 1978
Lancaster Gate Church,
London, England

****

Even in the Unification Church tradition and knowing my teachings, what level are you at? [High school.] You can decide what your knowledge level is. Do you know the textbook of that high school level? [hoon dok hae book.] We are talking about something big, (not just hoon dok hae). We easily claim that I am a Unification Church member for twenty or thirty years and I know the Unification Church, but we do not know ourselves, even. We don't know what kind of label we have on our forehead. How can you know Father? So this hoon dok hae material is big enough to embrace the cosmos, even to embrace the king's position. Therefore we have to study it hard. The Unification Church leaders may say "I know Father more than anyone else, but even Rev. Kwak, Dr. Hendricks, Rev. Yang, do you know Father?" [Not enough.] You will not know for eternity. In spirit world there is a lot of work waiting for you. You do not know the spirit world. Without my help, you are doomed to fall into hell.

I have mastered all the books of prophecy, and my mind and body are completely one, so I know all those things. How many times did I test my words before I give them to you; you do not know that secret. So, can you say that you know me? [No answer.] Quiet, huh? If you know or don't, you should answer. Do you know Father? [No.] Then if I give you a high level of teaching, can you understand it? [No.] So, keep yourself humble in front of the word; then you can absorb it. You have to be like a sponge that can absorb water. Your eyes can absorb, utilize all five senses to absorb the teachings. Do you like Father? Show your hands. [All do.] Does this make me feel good? Even when I see your hands going up, and you answer that you know me, there are many different scores, 10, 20, 30, etc. Do I still feel good about it? [No.] Yet you still want to hear my message, don't you? I have 300 volumes of speeches, covering 50 years. In those books there are detailed directions for your lives. Do you know them? Can you recall ever living according to my teaching, 100%? Do you think my teachings are just my own creation, based upon my intelligence, or that I am delivering the original message of God that has to be stored and practiced by humanity? [The original.] But you don't know what is the original and what God likes.

Then what is the origin of origins that both man and woman like most and must seek for eternity? [God. The love organ. True love.] What is it? [The love organ.] You say, true love. Where does it originate? The love organ. It is the place where true love in its male and female expressions can meet. Where is the meeting place of true love? [Sexual organ.] Sexual organ? What is the sexual organ? Is it concave and convex? I don't know. What does convex mean? Protruding or indented? There are only two shapes. Both man and woman shapes, where true love can be combined and connected, is this organ. Does everyone have one? Touch it! Make sure it is still there. Is it on top of your head? Put your hand on it and make sure it is still there. It is in the center of your body.

Nothing can compare with this place. God produced us for this, and has been waiting for this. No one has made that goal, that power to travel everywhere. God did not find that beautiful couple, that ideal couple. Is that true? Compare the ideal with your own couple. It is a miserable situation. Every love relationship is breaking down, going down to hell, to the bottom of hell. That's why religions teach not to marry but to live an ascetic life. They know somehow that in the last days the Messiah will come and give the marriage blessing to humankind, so they encourage

people to be single. The messiah will come as True Parents and repair the broken machines and make them perfect. That is the blessing of marriage.

If you are a son or daughter in a family, can you be extremely individualistic? There cannot be any individualism in a family. There is a hierarchy and order and you cannot ignore that in the family. But in English, the same word, "you," refers to everyone, father, mother, daughter, son. It is a horizontal society. Who created it? In this flat culture, the way to receive God was eliminated. Who made it? Not God, Satan! The owner of absolute individualism is Satan.

Human history has been one of offering, sacrificing and abusing women. Women represent earth. In the Old Testament era, all things were sacrificed. The New Testament era saw the sacrifice of the children. In the Completed Testament era, there should be no road to the cross. This is the era of the realm of the indirect dominion, the completion stage. Because of Christianity's failure, the Lord of the Second Advent could not start his dispensation from the top level. The powerful nations had already disappeared in his eyes. He was cast out into the wilderness, to rebuild beginning from the Old Testament era. The foundation was there to receive me on the world level, but because of their failure we lost everything.

Think of my life. Consider what I have come through, the suffering, pain and agony that I have endured to secure this. But you didn't do anything special and are receiving this. You are like the children of a wealthy family that did not do anything to develop the wealth. So you all need re-education through hoon dok hae.

In Eden there was no religion; we are entering into that era.

That's why the Unification Church sign came down. We transcended it with the Family Federation. There is only one thing of which we can be proud, and that is the liberated, completed, God-centered families. Our tradition is to love the blessed couples worldwide before we love America. It's the same for every nation's people. Ever since I came to America, I have been educating Americans who are in the midst of fights between white and black and among denominations. I finally sent the leaders of America to Japan and even Korea, and they learned the tradition, and loved the mother nation, and came back to America and practiced this, and loved their enemies more than their own families and own nation of America. They have returned. Was it good or bad? Was this a subjective or objective action? [We stood up.] Did you learn to love your enemy nation than your own family and nation? [Yes.]

Without being taught we have to know where to go and what to do. In our world there are no obstacles anymore and no complaints. That is why we pray in our own name. But without results, we cannot say a word or pray. We can pray only with that result, because the prayer is our report. No more begging to God. God gave us everything. Now we have to utilize it properly. It is not ours. It belongs to God, history and eternity. We should not waste it. Do not use it all necessarily. Be conservative, even with water. Have you thought about loving and conserving water? Have you loved grass? For whom did God create grass? It was for us. It is like a treasure for them. The masterpieces of art worth millions of dollars are not as valuable as one blade of grass created by God. Nature is immeasurably valuable, that we deal with each day. These are things God created by Himself as a gift to humankind for us to be proud of for eternity. If we go to bed, we should be able to say to the sun and nature, good night, I have to take a rest until tomorrow morning,

so please take a good rest. As owner, I take this step. As owner, I have to give more love than God. God always loves them, but my love should be added to that. Appreciate the grass, trees and weeds in your garden, even more than the animals. Be full of that gratitude when you go to sleep. Have you felt that way?

When you look at the sun, you should be able to ask, "Oh my dear sun, how many of those Israelites' faces have you seen? How many suffering faces? No one could understand your sorrow looking at those people, but I can and I will comfort you." When the winter comes, the sun goes far away. Have you really been waiting for it to come back closer, counting the days on your fingers? The sun is going south, but what about you? Have you been longing for the sun? Even though the trees and grass are longing, are you as a human being? They are not owners, but they are longing. You are owner, aren't you? Whose sun is it? Does it belong to Adam and Eve? Through restoration, God wants you to be better than Adam and Eve, so can't you claim those things? When you look at a mountain, if you have a heart of ownership, the mountain will open its arms and welcome you. Have you loved the millions of insects? God created them because He knew Adam and Eve needed them. Even to the poisonous snakes, love them, feed them frogs. Even poisonous rattlesnakes may prepare to attack when they don't know you, but after many times, they relax when I approach. If I bring a frog; will it bite my hand or just take the frog? If someone wants to kill it, the snake will strike. In that sense, the snake is smarter than we are.

After offering love, we should take the ownership position. I love the ocean, fishing, and mountains. Do I catch the animals and fish just for food? No. In that sense, I am the best scholar studying nature, because of the amount of love I have invested. Without loving nature, you cannot truly love human beings. It takes steps. In your body, what do you love more — your eyes, ears, nose or mouth? God is in the position to like to see your eyes or ears being offered, but He will run away if you offer your love organ. Why? Because if you do, the human race will become extinct. So no matter what, protect it, do not give it as an offering. The five senses should protect it. It is the most precious thing.

All the rights, privileges and blessings have been given you. We can even bless our own children in marriage.

You look spaced out. [No.] It is not just a simple teaching. I am giving you detailed directions on what and how to do it. Since I have liberated all things, this is the time that we have to make sure that everyone related to us receives the blessing, from infant stage to the eldest. This is not a threat; it is vital. If the worst comes to the worst, Father can go to spirit world anytime. So I need to teach you everything. Do you want to dwell with me in spirit world? Do the Christians wish that too? Jesus Christ is trying to follow me, my footsteps, all the way. He stayed in Paradise, because he did not marry. But I gave him marriage. Don't you want to meet the wives of Buddha, Confucius and Muhammad? They sent letters of gratitude to me from spirit world. They pledge that even if their religion disappears, they will follow me. Can you imagine anyone in this world claiming to have married those past saints? The rings I prepared for their marriage cost a great deal per couple. Did I do that because I am crazy? Did I ask you to donate to cover that?

The conclusion is simple, In the 4th Adam era, I will become a son or daughter of filial piety to True Parents. Raise you hands if you commit yourself to this. Wave them. Thank you. Let us conclude in prayer.

Belvedere International Training Center
October 24, 1999
Unofficial Notes by Tyler Hendricks
based upon Rev. Peter Kim's translation
Jae Sa gwa Adam Kwon Shidae Dorae
The Arrival of the Era of the Fourth Adam's Realm

> In the era of the Fourth Adam it seems to me that Father is bequeathing his authority to bless our children. As he said above, "All the rights, privileges and blessings have been given you. We can even bless our own children in marriage."

Father said these incredibly deep insights in a speech. Please read these words very carefully. He is teaching what we are supposed to do from God's point of view:

> The human problem consists of man and woman. There are only two types of human. When man and woman unite there will be the solution. Very simple. We think we have many problems in the world but all of them can be traced to this very point. All problems in the world can be traced to this disunity in the family.
>
> When you're happy, when the husband and wife are united and children are harmonious, then you can say the family is happy. You must understand this clearly. The emotional points are the most important. We can simply conclude by saying that the world's problems will end when man and woman unite harmoniously. Where can we find a beginning to all these problems? Many people claim they have a solution. Some say the world's problems must be solved first. Others will say, "No, it is a social problem." But not so; we know it begins in the family. Let the American government become more prosperous, but can they solve the world's problems? With force can they solve these problems? No. Where can world peace come from? It is not even the clan level; the family is the key. Do you think that is true? Stop to think. If you look at your family, you immediately see many problems. Grandparents, parents, brothers all have problems. Couples have problems. Relatives have problems. All eight people have problems. They also individually have a mind and body problem. So the grandparents', parents' and children's generations all have problems. So world peace cannot be found except by looking at the individual.
>
> All the women sitting here: Can you say you have no problems? What is your problem? It is mind and body disharmony. We can complain, "Why did God make me so?" If you do not understand the Fall, you cannot explain it and you will conclude that there can be no God. You will seriously reason, if God is perfect, loving and good and yet made this world, you can only conclude that God does not exist or is a bad being. Without referring to the Fall nothing makes sense and the conclusion that God does not exist can easily be drawn. Goodness, happiness, peace and hope are only empty rhetoric if you do not understand the Fall. Within the individual the mind and body are not harmonized. This is not only for western people, but everyone in the whole world has the same problem. Even a man of religion is no exception. They struggle just as much as others. So that enemy of peace, happiness and hope is in me. No one else. If I cannot solve my problem it is very unlikely that I can build a good family. If the mind and body fight, freedom will make it worse. Americans like freedom. But that freedom is meaningless and freedom will laugh at him: "You like me?"

> Look at the Christians. They say, "I will go to church, listen to a sermon and pray a little, then my sins will be erased and I will go to Heaven." They also say the Moonies are teaching heresy. But we are lucky to understand the Fall; we now have hope to find a solution. Therefore understanding the fall is important and gives us hope. Even God cannot solve these problems; only individuals can solve them. Historically no one has been able to do that. Not even God. Man and woman according to the original formula must unite. In English language you have M and W; it looks easy to become one. Is that true? (Yes). I don't believe it. There is more fighting in the West. The women always claim that they are higher than men. The fact that men let women go above them means they are not worthy to live. But a woman will not become prosperous if she goes above a man. In America who is above whom? Man or woman? It's a problem. Who is up now? Woman. Thank you. That's true. (Laughter). They all laugh their silent support.
>
> After Jesus was crucified, who ascended to heaven, man or woman? Man. Man represents heaven, woman represents earth. If you put it upside down it becomes dark with not so much hope for the future. Jesus' spirit ascended to heaven and the Holy Spirit, representing Mother, came to earth. Women are a receptacle and are to receive. In the West, when you love, the women go above the man. That is wrong; it is not natural. Man who represents God and heaven should be above woman. Should this society dominated by women be corrected or left alone? No.
>
> It's very important that we abide by natural law in order for us to prosper. Why does a man have a beard? It symbolizes power and force. A man with a heavy beard is wild. Women like that. He is strong. But one with a little beard is not so masculine, perhaps a eunuch. Unification Church women know this. Some may not be happy, but this is nature. (1-17-93)

Many believe the Bible is not relevant today. Anti-traditionalists often put down Paul as being a chauvinist pig. One of the worst books ever written on this subject has to be Thomas Boslooper's *The Image of Woman*. He was a Methodist hired to be a professor at the Unification Theological Seminary. What he writes is what many Liberals think — Paul is a sexist dinosaur and we must all move up to the sophisticated, modern thinking of the Egalitarians.

Boslooper has a chapter called "Feminist Theologians: Women's Ordination." He profiles prominent rebellious women such as feminist theologian Mary Daly. He quotes the feminist theologian Rosemary Radford Reuther who writes that we all need "liberation...from the false polarities of masculinity and femininity" and we need "the exorcism of the demonic spirit of sexism in the Church." Reuther and Boslooper are the demonic spirits. He saves the worst for last. He has a full-page picture of True Parents (Sun Myung Moon and Mrs. Moon) and then says next to it, "Woman has the right and responsibility to create herself in God's image and as a fulfilled individual express herself as a mother and as a professional woman." Boslooper does not see stay-at-home moms as professionals. A Unificationist sister, he says, has "brothers with whom she shares equal rights and responsibilities in every area of life." Are brothers going to cook and clean 50% of the time? Are Army Rangers and Navy Seals going to be 50% women? Will the cow jump over the moon? This is pure Communism. Boslooper is a feminist and therefore does not know that women are designed by God to be professional at being a stay-at-home mom. If a woman is a professional outside the home she cannot be professional inside the home. A woman working in the marketplace is comparable to a man who is a professional dentist, but also works as a car mechanic. You can't have two careers and think you are going to be good at both. Something has to give.

Boslooper says, “The time has come to take a fresh look at Hebrew-Christian scriptural tradition, to view the Bible as the record of man’s prejudice against woman” and then to look at it with feminist glasses and see how mankind for thousands of years has not read it correctly. Boslooper spends the rest of his book bashing male patriarchy. Like all Feminist theologians he says “dominion over creation” was men destroying the planet. If women had been “equal” with men then there would have been a “constructive force” instead. Boslooper has discovered that “St. Peter and St. Paul” look like the greatest “male chauvinists of history” if we read the Bible “strictly literally and somewhat casually.” Boslooper is finally leading us to the promised land of men/women harmony. What is this magical breath-taking insight? We have to throw out all those interpretations that men were the head of the house. Boslooper quotes one line out of a passage of 13 lines on men and women relationships, Ephesians 5:21, which says that men and women are to “be subject to one another” which, to all feminist theologians, means men don’t lead women. What it really means is that men and women have equal value. The next 12 lines are the most famous in the Bible for man being the “head of the wife.” But these 12 lines are now to be ignored because of the one line that supposedly cancels out the rest. Feminists see what they want.

Boslooper’s particular area of focus is getting women to compete with men in sports and hopefully beat them. He has no sympathy for men feeling threatened when women beat men at sports. He quotes somebody saying this nonsense: “The healthy relationship is for the male to recognize that physical prowess in a woman, even though it may exceed his, makes her just that much better a woman.” The choice is yours. After all the years and all the hundreds of books by feminists, it still never ceases to amaze me how they keep thinking the earth is flat. For the life of them, they cannot ever use logic or common sense. Maybe in something like bowling a woman can beat a man but in many sports a woman will never win. He has a picture of Chris Evert, the tennis player. Boslooper apparently wants her to compete with men and if she beats them they should not have fragile egos. Men need this to grow and to respect women when they compete and win over men. The problem is that if you did not separate women and men, Chris Evert, who for years was the best women’s player in the world, would never bother to even try to compete because she would always lose. I watched her in an interview once and she said that the best players in the world are ranked. I think it was one to a thousand. She said every man on that list could beat her easily. She said every top male player for colleges could beat her. She would only start winning at mid-level college team players. If men and women were not separated, how many women would go to the Olympics? How many women would make it on the Olympic basketball team? How many top women college basketball players could get in the NBA? The best of men will always be better than the best of women in sports and every area of life outside the home.

Boslooper incorrectly reads the Bible, thinking that it is against women because it keeps them in the home. He says, “Biblical tradition ... keep women in a position inferior and secondary to men.” He says “Jewish, Roman Catholic and Protestant religious communities” have “discriminated against women.” Women in Godly patriarchal marriages are not “inferior” or “secondary.” They are treasured so much that men die for them. In Boslooper’s sick world, women get to be cops and soldiers so they can have the honor of protecting and dying for men like Boslooper.

Boslooper teaches that western civilization unfortunately went with Aristotle instead of Plato. A syndicated columnist, Kingsley Guy, wrote an article about this topic explaining how the Democratic party is descended from Plato and the Republican party is from Aristotle, “In 1994, American voters opted for change .... the battle lines have been clearly drawn .... Republicans say they are for strong families, small government and private property rights.” Democrats are “collectivists who favor Big-Brother government, and who are hostile to traditional family values and private ownership of property .... In a much broader historical context, the battle lines can be

traced all the way back to the 4th century B.C., and the point-counterpoint between Plato and Aristotle in ancient Athens .... Aristotle's social thinking helped form the intellectual foundation of 18th century classical liberalism and modern bourgeois capitalism. Plato's helped form the basis of 19th century socialist doctrine, epitomized by Marx .... Plato thought women deserved equal political rights and were capable of joining the ruling class. Aristotle argued that women were not suited for politics or leadership positions in society. While women were due great respect, Aristotle insisted a woman's proper place was in the home." He says he may sound "politically incorrect" but these "long-dead, white male, toga-clad egghead thinkers .... have had a profound influence on ... 20th century America." Ideas are powerful, and Boslooper taught Plato at the UC seminary.

Liberal Marxists like Boslooper teach against the stay-at-home mom. There are more and more books by women on the joys and importance of being a full-time wife and mother. One woman has written a book and made a dynamic organization about women being professional homemakers. Jill Savage wrote a book entitled *Professionalizing Motherhood*. She has created a popular website for stay-at-home moms www.hearts-at-home.org. She and her organization hold meetings and conferences where thousands of moms come to learn how to become better at their god-ordained career in the home. This is from the back cover of her book:

> "So what do you do?" How many stay-at-home moms cringe at this common question? Jill Savage has founded Hearts at Home to provide professional conferences and resources to affirm the profession of motherhood, and to train, equip, encourage, and renew mothers as they move forward in their mothering career.
>
> As Jill transitioned from her career as a teacher to become a stay-at-home mom, she realized that though there were books on mothering skills, discipline, marriage, etc, there was a lack of resources that provided the vision and encouragement to set a career course for herself as a mother (as she had done in her professional life) and then provide a framework for developing and sharpening her motherhood skills.
>
> *Professionalizing Motherhood* is first of all a call and recognition that motherhood is not only a valid career choice, but also a worthy and significant profession. Secondly, it is a resource for professional moms to evaluate and move forward in their chosen career. It begins by establishing the mission of the job, discussing the need for developing a network of "co-workers," exploring the dynamics of marriage within the role of a professional mother, understanding one's value in Christ, and finally taking care of one's needs. It also includes practical homemaking skills and an emphasis on understanding the importance and value of the profession of motherhood.
>
> Jill's honest, vulnerable, and encouraging style makes her an effective communicator. She shares her personal experiences and struggles, offering transparency as the reader recognizes real life struggles and challenges. Readers will be equipped and encouraged, learning that they are not alone and that they, too, can find victory in their life through Christ.
>
> *Professionalizing Motherhood* will revolutionize the reader's approach to the valuable career of motherhood.

Jill Savage writes:

> "SO WHAT DO you do?" That is certainly the question of the day, isn't it? It is also a question that makes some of us who stay home cringe whenever it is posed to us. We don't know how to answer it. Some of us choose to be creative with a response such as, "I'm currently researching the development of children." And yet others of us respond with, "Oh, I'm just a mom."
>
> Aren't both of those responses telling? The first type of response indicates that the terms wife and mother are not important enough. They alone do not indicate a "real profession." By using a creative title we hope we will be respected more, valued for our knowledge in some area, and interesting enough for continued conversation. I've talked to far too many women who have attended social gatherings with their husbands or former coworkers only to find that when they mention they are "stay-at-home moms," the conversations come to a halt. It is as if the other person determines that you can't possibly have much to offer to the conversation because you are not "educated enough" or "sharp enough" to contribute . . . after all, you are "only" a mom—how hard can that be? Conversely, with the second response, we ourselves are suggesting that we are "second class." The word just implies that our responsibilities are somehow inferior to those of other people. Because we receive no monetary compensation for our position, we begin to buy into the lie that we are not contributing as we should. We are indeed "just moms."
>
> I believe it is time for a new response. I believe we need to remove the "just" from our response. We need to stand up straight, offer no apology for what we do, and respond with, "I am a wife and a mother, and I love my job!" With great pride in our chosen career, we must share with people that we are in the profession of motherhood.

Mrs. Savage is one of many women who have written books on the art of full-time motherhood. Stay-at-home moms are professionals and I hope the Unification Movement can get all its women to be professional stay-at-home moms.

Since the turn of the century the patriarchal family has been destroyed and the individual is now supreme. Women felt they did not need men to protect them because they would compete with men in the marketplace. Gradually the idea that girls would focus on getting themselves ready for their career as homemakers gave way to planning a career outside the home. In *Your Girl* Vicki Courtney writes:

> I am a collector of old magazines. I own quite a few *Seventeen* magazines dating back as early as 1950. It is amazing to compare the *Seventeen* magazines from the 1950s and 1960s, prior to the onset of the women's liberation movement, to *Seventeen* magazines of today. Sprinkled throughout the earlier magazines are multitudes of advertisements for Lane hope chests, engagement rings, and sterling silver flatware. One ad for silver flatware read, "You've chosen your pattern—you've bought your first piece. It's a symbol of the home you'll have someday."

She goes to say the ads disappeared in the 1970s and were replaced with "ads for makeup, hair care products, and raunchy clothing lines."

In a recent newspaper article where I live the top academic high school seniors were interviewed. Every one of the girls was going to college and graduate school to become everything from dentists to college professors. One girl had been admitted to Annapolis military academy. She had high test scores in math and had been a cheerleader. Not one of the girls said her goal was to be a full-time stay-at-home mom. These girls are planning to take jobs away from men. Some think that feminism's goal of getting women to work outside the home does not take jobs away from men. Is the high school senior going to the elite naval academy taking a job away from a man? Yes. When you see a female cop is she taking a job away from a man? Of course she is. Sadly you will see the same thing at the Familyfed.org website. There you will see some Second Gen sisters graduating from High School and planning on becoming a professional of some kind. In other words they are going to have a career. I have never seen a sister who said her goal was to be a helper to her husband, stay-at-home mom and have a ton of kids. The First Gen parents have blended in to the world around them. They should have kept their children out of schools and home-schooled their children. First Gen fathers should never let their daughters live away from their home attending some stupid, liberal college that indoctrinates women to have careers outside the home.

Vicki Courtney writes:

> We have the women's liberation movement to thank for the fact that few men open doors for women and surrender their seats to women. Women have been taught that they are far too independent for that. For heaven's sakes, we wouldn't want men to respect us, would we? Besides, why bother with that kind of respect when women can get respect for so much more—like plunging necklines, bare midriffs, and painted-on jeans. Now that's progress! In times long past, men had to pay a cover charge to see women dressed like that. I must remember to pen a thank-you note to Ms. Friedan and Ms. Steinem for spearheading a movement that has redefined respect when it comes to the opposite sex.
>
> It would be easy to view motherhood as a low-ranking job, given the limited attention it receives in our society. I'll admit it was hard for me to view motherhood as a worthy call after being thoroughly brainwashed by feminist ideology.
>
> A recent Barna study revealed that only 4 percent of teens look to the Bible when making moral decisions in life. A whopping 83 percent said they make moral decisions based on "whatever feels right at the time."

In a textbook for a college course on marriage and family titled *Marriage and Family: The Quest for Intimacy* the authors put down the traditional family saying "If we define a traditional family as one that is composed of an employed father (the breadwinner), a stay-at-home mother (the homemaker), and children, then it is clear it is now the choice of a minority of Americans. Most people no longer regard that arrangement as practical." They teach that women working is better than staying home, "On the whole, then, wives who work outside the home are mentally and physically healthier than those who do not." This is the reason why no one should take a college course on marriage and family in our colleges and universities.

A liberal reviewer of this horrible textbook writes: "Offering the most positive and practical approach to the study of marriage and family life with a manageable amount of sociological theory and research citations, this text is centered around the theme of enhancing intimacy within marriage and the family. While providing a comprehensive overview of the progression from

dating to marriage and family, the authors systematically draw out principles that students can use to protect and nurture their own intimate relationships, making this not only a text, but a practical guide for students as well." This is Satan's guide to marital and family unhappiness.

The old-fashioned treatment of women as the "weaker sex" who needs to be protected began to end in 1920. It was normal to read in etiquette books published before 1920 that men should give their seat to any woman on a crowded train or ship. One of the most popular etiquette books in the 19th century was by Arthur Martine who wrote *Martine's Hand-Book of Etiquette, and Guide to True Happiness: A Complete Manual for Those Who Desire to Understand the Rules of Good Manners, the Customs of Good Society, And to Avoid Incorrect and Vulgar Habits*. In 1866 when he wrote his book he says this to men who see a woman without a seat on a crowded train: "Should you see a lady come alone, and if the seats in the car all appear to be filled, do not hesitate to offer her yours, if you have no ladies in your company. And should a lady motion to seat herself beside you, rise at once and offer her the choice of the two seats. These are but common courtesies that every well-bred man will at times cheerfully offer to the other sex."

Times have changed. Now we have to deal with feminism that has soured the relations between men and women by rejecting chivalry. In the popular best-seller *Miss Manners' Guide to Excruciatingly Correct Behavior* published in 1983 we read this by the author Judith Martin: "In one area alone, Miss Manners has noticed, women have achieved total equality. Even in the most unenlightened of men are now allowing women to stand up on crowded buses while they, offering no argument at all, sit in comfort. This is a complete triumph for equality because it is extended to all women." Because all men used to give up their seats for women they didn't think twice about giving up their seat on the lifeboats on the Titanic.

Vicki Courtney writes:

> Whatever happened to Old-Fashioned Chivalry?
>
> If the Titanic were to sink today, only a little more than a third of men would give up their spots on the lifeboats to women outside of their immediate families. This is according to Pittsburgh's *Post-Gazette's* "Titanic Test," where two hundred men were interviewed. This should come as a relief to many feminists who have long scorned the preferential treatment gentlemen have historically extended to women in the name of good manners and chivalry. How ironic that they find disrespect to be the indicator of respect. On a recent flight, while wrestling to get my bag in the overhead bin, a nice gentleman came to the rescue. He kindly asked if he could help, and of course, I welcomed his assistance. I thanked him for being one of a dying breed of gentlemen (just loud enough for the other male cads who had remained seated). He commented that he had been trained from an early age to be courteous and extend a hand to women in need. He shared that, at times, women have smirked at him for opening a door or offering a seat. I wonder if these same women would smirk at him if he were to offer his seat on a lifeboat while on deck of a sinking ship. Somehow I doubt it.
>
> Chivalry is a word that sparks imagery of the Middle Ages and the days of wandering knights. It was a point of honor for knights to protect others, even at the cost of personal hardship. Respect for women was an important part of the knight's code and formed a basis for many of the rules of politeness in our culture today. Unfortunately, those rules are not always followed.

She writes in her book of a time her family was on a bus in Disney World going back to their hotel after a long day of walking. Her husband and son gave their seats to women but the other men on the bus did not give up their seats to women who were struggling with small children. Most men today do not even give up their seats to pregnant women. This is the result of feminists destroying patriarchy.

In *Boundless As the Sea*: *A Guide to Family Love* by June Saunders we read:

> Just as the bodies of men and women are constructed differently, so their roles in marriage and family differ. A man is endowed with a mind and body fit for hard labor and an aggressive public life. A woman has the sensitivity necessary to nurture the relationships within the family. The complementarity of male and female makes for a strong and delightful attraction. In their love men and women should honor each other's distinctive roles and contribute their different abilities for the welfare of the whole family.
>
> Feminism has not increased the love between men and women.
>
> The general respect accorded to women has degenerated in our society in spite of and perhaps because of increased consciousness of "equality." Women's sensibilities are no longer considered more delicate than men's. Phrases like "Don't swear in front of a lady," once common parlance, are no longer heard. There is longer a consciousness of protecting or shielding women, even when they are nurturing impressionable children. The worst possible language is thrown around on the street in front of mothers. Society shrugs. If we are all equal, then we must all be the same. The role of wife and mother no longer commands as much special respect and support as it once did.
>
> When I was eight months pregnant, I was riding to New York City on a suburban commuter train. The clientele of the train was predominately male, white, and well-heeled. No one offered me a seat. I stood for forty-five minutes, obviously pregnant, while men hid behind their newspapers. The conductor could not refrain from loudly remarking upon the men's collective rudeness. If motherhood is no longer a valued role, how can we expect anyone to respect or make special allowances for it?
>
> The sense of the specialness and uniqueness of women and their ameliorating role in the family and society have eroded in the name of career and sexual equality. True respect has eroded.
>
> Erich Fromm said [in his book *The Art of Loving]* that equality used to mean "that we are all God's children, that we all share in the same human-divine substance, that we are all one. It meant that also that the very differences between individuals must be respected…" That sense of equality has been lost, he said: "Equality today means 'sameness' rather than 'oneness.' Equality is brought at this very price: women are equal because they are not different any more." That is a high and unnatural price to pay for so-called equality. The differences between men and women are a free gift of nature which can humanize the public arena as well as the private.
>
> Families of true love honor the natural diversity of roles and personalities and end by achieving true equality.

The following are excerpts from an article titled "The Debate Over Feminist Theology: Which View Is Biblical?" by Ron Rhodes:

> Addressing the need for a return to biblical masculinity and femininity, Piper suggests that "at the heart of mature masculinity is a sense of benevolent responsibility to lead, provide for and protect women in ways appropriate to a man's different relationships. At the heart of mature femininity is a freeing disposition to affirm, receive and nurture strength and leadership from worthy men in ways appropriate to a woman's different relationships."[John Piper, *What's the Difference?*]
>
> This call for a return to biblical masculinity and femininity led Elisabeth Elliot to comment that "true liberation comes with humble submission to God's original design." Indeed, the noblest achievement of any human being — male or female — is to discover God's design and fulfill it. Let this be our goal.

In his book *Man and Woman in Biblical Law: a patriarchal manifesto* Tom Shipley writes that patriarchy:

> was mandated by God ever since the original creation of man and woman.
>
> Much of feminist argumentation today has the aim of convincing Christians that patriarchal hierarchy is *not* a part of God's creation purpose for mankind; that patriarchy is even a *sinful* departure from "God's intended egalitarianism between the sexes;" and there is especially an emphasis that *before the fall* there was no hierarchy between man and woman and that, hence, Christ actually died partly to overturn the "sin" of patriarchy.
>
> This theme turns up over and over again in almost every book by so-called "Christian feminists," —an oxymoron if ever there was one. It will be beneficial to examine the biblical material which focuses on the *pre-fall* establishment of patriarchal hierarchy by God. There are at least six very powerful aspects to the creation record in Genesis 1 and 2 which teach us that patriarchy is God's will.
>
> Paul reiterates in Ephesians 5:22-24: "Wives, submit to your own husbands, as to the Lord. For the husband is the head of the wife as also Christ is the head of the church...Therefore, just as the church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything."
> As is clear from I Corinthians 11:3, 8-9, these truths are grounded in God's creation purpose. If the implicit significance of Genesis 2:18 is not immediately clear to feminists, Paul's *explicit* commentary on it *ought* to settle the question once and for all. But—alas!—hearts in rebellion against God are deaf even to the explicit testimony of God's word. Feminists resort to all manner of equivocation and scripture-twisting to reject the Bible's plain teaching about this subject.
>
> God did not merely make a replica of Adam, a clone. God made a woman, a being from Adam's own substance; the same as himself in many crucial ways (most importantly, being also in the image of God), yet different. Through an act of sexual differentiation, God created a being *suited* to be an appropriate helper

> *for* the man and subordinate to him. Inherent in this differentiation and appointed function is the creation of patriarchal hierarchy.
>
> Patriarchy and the Gospel are bound together like the twin strands of the double helix. Tamper with the doctrine of patriarchy and you tamper with the Gospel.

Why would men care to treat women as women when they dress like men is an insightful idea from a woman who wrote in the website ladiesagainstfeminsm.com:

> What would happen if Christian women rejected the feminist culture? It was obvious to me that dressing immodestly was wrong, and I was concerned over the immodest dress that flooded even Christian circles, but modern-day woman's clothing mimicking men's wear was not so obvious to me until this summer. Is it any wonder that men do not even notice a woman walking out a door and offer to open that door for her when she looks and acts the same as everyone else? I am not saying this is the sole reason most men do not open doors for women, but I am saying that when we as women continue to dress, look, and act like men, we can not be surprised if we are treated like men.

In an article written in 2003 by Bernard Chapin titled "Is Chivalry Dead?" he says, "There are a great many burdens to shoulder in the modern world and surely one of them is whether or not we adhere to social mores. The challenge is whether we successfully can adapt to how the world actually functions in the face of what we learned as children. For men, one of the biggest obstacles is whether we should still incorporate the virtues of chivalry into our daily behavior. Chivalry is a practice that is in transition and may be, in a hundred years, just another quaint artifact of an obsolete age—like the horse and buggy are to us today. Males are currently taught that women's equality has negated the need for chivalry. It seems our attempts to be chivalrous can be interpreted as attempts to assert superiority and return women to an inferior position in our polity. Chivalry was once deemed an obvious virtue but now it is shrouded in controversy."

He writes that in today's world both men and women often react negatively to any sign of chivalry. So he picks and chooses when he will be chivalrous: "My chivalry is situational. I hate to admit it but I let individual women be the determinant as to how I'll act on any particular day. The more feminine they are, the more that I'll do for them. Women who sport a haircut like mine or dress or act like men I do not treat with deference. I treat them exactly as I would treat my male peers. Personally, I think that's how it should be. I regard courtliness as being something reserved for the worthy and not a thing to be granted to everyone by fiat." This is the sorry state of men and women relationships in our feminist culture.

The book *Emma* is a famous 19th century novel. He writes, "Danielle Crittenden sums up the dynamic perfectly: 'I happened to watch the movie Emma with a thirty-two year old single woman friend of mine, who afterward exclaimed sorrowfully, 'There are no Mr. Knightleys!' But if there are no more Mr. Knightleys, then it's because there are no Emma Woodhouses, either. The two can only exist in a world in which each supports and reinforces the character of the other." The 19th century value system of chivalry is dead. Women now compete with men and often lead men in business, church, government and the military. And now feminists have created a chilling environment with affirmative action laws and sexual harassment laws that have created a dysfunctional workplace. He writes, "Now, by virtue of affirmative action, we are the second sex of our state. It is harder for men to find work and the tables have been tilted against us when it comes to promotions and advancement."

"Chivalry is a form of self-sabotage for men. It is a way of keeping us down. Why should we defer to the privileged members of our state? When we interview for employment our credentials cannot

merely be equal to those of female applicants; they must be superior. With sexual harassment laws, women now have the power to destroy any man they don't like or who once wounded their pride. Theirs is a superiority in which no male can share.

"A few years ago I was walking out of a bar in Wicker Park and I held the door open for a group of girls. It was, as far as commercial doors go, rather heavy. The lead girl shooed me away with her hands and said snippily, 'I can do it.' I let go of the door at once and it hit her with a large thud. She pushed on it two or three times before successfully opening it. I laughed about the incident for the rest of the night. Why shouldn't I? Those who honor me I will honor. Those who do not I will avoid."

I rest my case that chivalry is dead.

In 1895 William Croswell Doane wrote in *The American Review* how ridiculous it was that feminists complained about how the traditional wife lives a life of slavery, "The slavery of American women exists only in the warped imaginations and heated rhetoric of a few people, who have screamed themselves hoarse upon platforms or written themselves into a rage in newspapers. There is no freer human being on earth today, thank God, than the American woman. She has freedom of person, of property, and of profession, absolute and entire. She has all liberty that is not license."

A man wrote at the turn of the century: "President Roosevelt, in his address before the Mothers' Meeting in Washington in 1905, said: 'The primary duty of the husband is to be the home-maker, the breadwinner for his wife and children (and, may I add, to be her protector from violence); the primary duty of the woman is to be the helpmeet, the housewife and mother.' In these words Mr. Roosevelt has gone to the heart of the woman question. The call to woman to leave her duty to take up man's duties is an impossible call. The call on man to impose on woman his duty, in addition to hers, is an unjust call. Fathers, husbands, brothers, speaking for the silent woman, I claim for them the right to be exempt in the future from the burden from which they have been exempt in the past. Mothers, wives, sisters, I urge you not to allow yourselves to be enticed into assuming functions for which you have no inclination, by appeals to your spirit of self-sacrifice. Woman's instinct is the star that guides her to her divinely appointed life, and it guides to the manger where an infant is laid."

In *Feminism: Its Fallacies and Follies* John Martin writes:

> The woman's movement is a movement towards progressive national degeneration and ultimate national suicide. Already the evidence is conclusive that the effects of Feminism upon the inalienable function and immemorial duty of woman — the bearing of children — are so appalling as to threaten the perpetuation of the best part of the nation. The one duty to society which women alone can discharge is the bearing of children.
>
> The "devouring ego in the 'new woman,'" warned Anna Rogers in the *Atlantic Monthly*, has created "the latter-day cult of individualism; the worship of the brazen calf of Self." Instead of acknowledging that "marriage is her work in the world," she has tried to enter the masculine realm with ambitions for education, careers, and other public activity. "Apparently her whole energy is to-day bent upon dethroning herself." A woman who would leave the pedestal "has the germ of divorce in her veins at the outset." Mrs. Rogers gave ferocious articulation to the thoughts that hovered in the cultural atmosphere of 1907. According to one report, "no magazine article for a long time has been so widely exploited and

> discussed." The "new woman" was the enemy of marriage, the home, and therefore civilization. Indeed, outside her feminine sphere, how much of a woman was she? "That is the Woman Question in a sentence," said Lyman Abbot. "Does she wish to be a woman or a modified man?"

She said, "Advocates of the traditional female role in the early twentieth century" did their best to "drown out the siren call of the new woman." Of course the siren was Satan. All historians say that the 1920s were a major turning point. Because we know the *Principle* we can understand God's view and the forces behind history. When the UM teaches the parallels of history it should explain how Satan worked to destroy the family and society with anti-patriarchy and anti-capitalism. Patriarchy and capitalism go together like a horse and carriage. Anti-patriarchs are always socialists who hate capitalism. Socialists want to destroy the men leading in society as well as the home.

FEMINISM: ITS FALLACIES AND FOLLIES

Let's look at men and women who wrote words to counter the nightmare Stanton wrote of. Antisuffragists wrote many books and articles. One of my favorites is *Feminism: Its Fallacies and Follies* by Mr. and Mrs. John Martin. They give some good arguments against feminists and suffragists. They wrote the book in 1916 before women had the vote. He wrote the first half of the book; she wrote the second half. In her part she says that feminists have been like a child on a crying spell for 60 years and men should not give in to them: "Woman suffrage propaganda flourishes because it is the only remedy now being publicly offered as a cure for women's discontent. Because it does not comprehend the nature of her disease and refuses to admit what really ails her. Therefore it is a quick remedy, and will make her rather worse than better if she adopt it. It only tends to increase the force of that pressure which is driving her away from the home and which, when her trouble is correctly diagnosed, is itself the underlying cause of the distress."

"Nevertheless we who are opposed to votes for women, for reasons which seem to us wholly adequate, have most of us taken with regret the position of standing in the way of the gratification of their wishes — no matter how childish they seem to us — as expressed by so many women. There is no disguising the fact that it is our opposition alone, not that of our good-natured American men folk, which has prevented and will prevent suffrage from being given to women. Most mothers have found it expedient, however, when a child cries long and earnestly for something which, after all, cannot do it a great deal of harm, to grant its request. It seems the only way, for the moment to stop its crying, and the only way for it to learn how mistaken its desires were and how worthless their object. Therefore the writer would feel inclined to yield to the importunities of suffragists, who certainly have wailed piteously and kept up an unconscionable racket, for some sixty years or more — a long crying spell for a child of any age — were it not for the fact that to grant their plea means to work an even greater injustice upon other — and in her judgment — wiser, women who do not desire to vote."

She says women do not make things better when they enter the business world: "Suffragists assure us that their very presence in man's savage and barbarous world would soften and civilize it. Yet women have entered business by the thousands; have they altered business by their influence? They have entered journalism in shoals; have they effected any change in newspaper methods? Is the press any the less vulgar, less sensational, less prying, less scrupulous, for her presence in the editorial office? The press is susceptible to pressure, but it must come from the box office, from the advertiser, from the reader. Woman in the home, as reader, as buyer, as wife of an advertiser can affect journalism; as employee of the press she has no influence

Volunteer instead of voting

Mrs. Martin says women should put their energy into volunteer work — not politics: "Women who are burning to be useful may be reminded that there are, in New York City alone, over eight thousand civic and philanthropic organizations, all shouting for helpers; and they never ask whether one has a vote or not. Yet one meets women who seem to be positively yearning to take part in 'municipal housekeeping' — whether they have made much of a success of their home housekeeping or not. The latter is so sordid! And, of course, there is nothing sordid in hiring street cleaners and garbage collectors or in superintending city dumps! Any work is inspiring if only it is not done at home! They would like to give the 'feminine touch' to city management."

Over a million American men have died in wars. Millions more men have fought and died for freedom around the world. Women have suffered as their men went to fight. At the horror of Valley Forge when thousands of men were dying in agony that winter they would receive letters from their wives asking them to come home and help them. One of the most powerful words I have ever read was in a book called *George Washington and the American Revolution*. In the chapter describing the agonizing death thousands of men were facing while others were suffering from frostbite and disease at Valley Forge we read, "As one officer was to report, he was handed letters every day by veterans who stood with tears in their eyes as he read the pathetic pleas of their wives: 'am without bread, and cannot get any, the committee will not supply me, my children will starve, or if they do not, they must freeze, we have no wood, neither can we get any. Pray come home." Women have suffered as well as men in human history. But women must not be in control because they are too pacifist. Father teaches women to be strong and able to make it without their man if he has to go off and fight. If this happens then women must band together as trinities instead of trying to do it alone.

Age of Rebellion

Beverly LaHaye wrote in her book *The Desires of a Woman's Heart*: "Because of the character education promoted in books, women's magazines, and the popular *McGuffey's Reader*, America's crime rate actually declined for a whole century. Only during the 1920s — an age of rebellion — did the crime rate begin to rise again. Women of the nineteenth century had a tremendous civilizing effect on their society."

She also wrote, "Feminist philosophy is dangerous not merely because their suggestions ultimately would cause harm to women, but because the motivation behind the movement is clearly rebellion. In their desire to be equal or superior to men, feminists reject God's plan for male leadership in the home and in the church. This rejection is regrettable in the secular world and even more unthinkable in the Christian church, where it has begun to take root."

Elizabeth Elliot wrote, "Adam and Eve made a mess of things when they reversed roles. She took the initiative, offered him the forbidden fruit, and he, instead of standing as her protector, responded and sinned along with her. It's been chaos ever since. No wonder that the further we move from the original order the more confused we become."

Elihu Root was one of the most famous men in America at the turn of the century. He held such positions as Secretary of State, Secretary of War and U.S. Senator from New York. The clarity and masculinity of him stands in contrast to the Secretaries of Defense we have had lately that approve of women being fighter pilots. In 1915 he wrote to Alice Chittenden, president of the New York State Anti-Suffrage Association, "Suffrage, if it means anything, means entering upon the field of political life, and politics is modified war. In politics there is struggle, strife, contention, bitterness, heart-burning, excitement, agitation, everything which is adverse to the true character of woman. Woman rules today by the sweet and noble influences of her character. Put woman into the arena of conflict and she abandons these great weapons which control the world, and she takes into her

hands, feeble and nerveless for strife, weapons with which she is unfamiliar and which she is unable to wield. Woman in strife becomes hard, harsh, unlovable, repulsive; as far removed from that gentle creature to whom we all owe allegiance and to whom we confess submission, as the heaven is removed from the earth.' In closing, Root affirmed that the functions of men were by no means superior to those of women. What he was expressing was simply a variation of the theme that 'the hand that rocks the cradle rules the world."

He said, "The true government is in the family. The true throne is in the household. The highest exercise of power is that which forms the conscience, influences the will, controls the impulses of men, and there today woman is supreme and woman rules the world."

Look at some of the titles of books and articles by these precious men and women against voting and see how accurate they were in seeing how evil the feminists are and the terrible consequences that would come if America gave women the vote:

"Woman Suffrage Would Unsex Women" by Charlotte Perkins Gilman;

"Woman Suffrage Would Increase Divorce" by George Gilman

"Indirect Influence is Enough" by Beatrice Hale

"Women are Different from Men" by Harriet Laidlaw

"Women Would Take the Offices from the Men" by Fola La Follette

"It Would Make Woman Less Attractive" by Hutchins Hapgood

"Woman's Place Is In the Home" by Inez Milholland

"Women Are Already Overburdened" by Sadie American

"The Ballot Means the Bullet" by Haynes Gillmore

"Woman Suffrage Would Increase Corruption" by Lincoln Steffens

"Women Cannot Defend Their Right to Vote" by Maud Nathan

"Woman Suffrage Unnatural and Inexpedient" by Octavius Frothingham

"Woman Suffrage a Menace to the Nation" by Helen Lewis

"Woman's Profession as Mother and Educator" by Catherine Beecher

"Women's Suffrage: The Reform Against Nature" by Horace Bushnell

"Women Competing With Men," in *Woman Patriot* magazine May 31, 1919

TERRIBLE TRIPLETS

Here are some titles showing their insight that feminist suffragists were also socialists and naive to communism:

> "Socialism, Feminism and Suffragism, the Terrible Triplets, Connected by the Same Umbilical Cord, and Fed from the Same Nursing Bottle" by B.V. Hubbard

"Suffrage and Socialism" by Margaret Robinson

"For Home and National Defense Against Woman Suffrage, Feminism and Socialism" by Alice Wadsworth in *Woman Patriot* (April 27, 1918)

"Shall Bolshevist-Feminists Secretly Govern America?" *Woman Patriot* magazine.

These are just a few of the thousands of books and articles during 70 years of intense debate. An editorial in *The New York Times* (February 7, 1915) (it was conservative then. Now Father has to build a conservative voice against the feminized big papers in America) said, "The grant of suffrage to women is repugnant to instincts that strike their roots deep in the order of nature. It runs counter to human reason, it flouts the teachings of experience and the admonitions of common sense." Even Queen Victoria herself criticized the suffragists for unsexing women: "The Queen is most anxious to enlist everyone to join in checking this mad wicked folly of Women's Rights with all its attendant horrors .... Women would become the most hateful, heartless and disgusting of human beings were she allowed to unsex herself; and where would be the protection which man was intended to give the weaker sex?"

Chesterton said women should not bloody her hands. This reminds me of the scene in *Macbeth* where Lady Macbeth calls upon the spirits to "unsex" her so she can commit murder. Chesterton wrote in one essay: "Two things are quite clear about the vote. First that it is entirely concerned with government; that is with coercion. Second, it is entirely concerned with .... public quarrel .... to desire a vote means to desire the power of coercing others; the power of using a policeman .... That woman should ask for a vote is not feminism; it is masculism in its last and most insolent triumph."

He says that government is not as important as family: "The two or three most important things in the world have always been managed without law or government; because they have been managed by women. Can anyone tell me two things more vital to the race than these; what man shall marry what woman, and what shall be the first [things] taught to their first child? Yet no one has ever been so mad as to suggest that either of these godlike and gigantic tasks should be conducted by law. They are matters of emotional management; of persuasion and disuasion; of discouraging a guest or encouraging a governess .... The old-fashioned woman really said this: 'What can be the use of all your politics and policemen? The moment you come to a really vital question you dare not use them. For a foolish marriage, or a bad education, for a broken heart or a spoilt child, for the things that really matter, your courts of justice can do nothing at all.'" Women, he says, should not use "legalist machinery" — to "surrender to regimentation and legalism. Woman would be more herself if she refused to touch coercion altogether. That she may be the priestess of society it is necessary that her hands should be as bloodless as a priest's."

Chesterton predicted that women in government will make people focus too much on government, and he was right. Government is the focus of our society: "The immediate effect of the female suffrage movement will be to make politics much too important; to exaggerate them out of all proportion to the rest of life." He says men made government seem so great that women are now interested in it: "We males permitted ourselves exaggerated fusses and formalities about the art of government...The Suffragettes are victims of male exaggeration, but not of male cunning. We did tell women that the vote was of frightful importance; but we never supposed that any woman would believe it."

One Unificationist brother from Canada, Paul Angus Sullivan, wrote an extraordinary article in the *Unification News*, saying women should not have got the vote. The following are excerpts from brother Paul's excellent article:

Whence American Manhood?

The tragic state of affairs within America and Canada today are directly opposite to the fact and intent of our forefathers and the constitutions of this continent. The condition of this continent relative to our forefathers is filthy. Our youth are rude and callow, the femininity, grace and graciousness of our women has been replaced with carping feminist prattle and by girls & women who insist on being referred to as guys, weight-train to have bodies like boys and comport themselves like men, but are as spiritual as Ophelia.

Canada and The United States of America have fallen from being the greatest Christian civilization in history to being the continent of pornography to the world. That is to say we are now anti-Christ's. We have fallen from being the greatest economic engine in all history to being a continent of welfare wimps and socialists.

At one time the central concern of the people was their virtue, today the highest concern in the public discourse is values, relativistic secular values! How the mighty have fallen. A cursory look at women's TV and the massive sales of women's 'literature' like Gothic novels or the massive sales of The *National Enquirer*, and men's magazines, too, reflect the dumbing-down of this continent.

In the last US presidential election we had Ross Perot, George Bush and William Jefferson Clinton: So, we had a man's man, a man who was the incumbent president and a lady's man. If the result of this election does not confirm the fact that women and children should not be made to suffer the onerous task of being enfranchised, nothing will. Governance is man's responsibility before God. See 1 Tim. 2:12. The Western World slides down the suffragettes' toilet to the glee of the WCTU. Simply said, it should be obvious that a ship can't have two captains, as the Swiss constitution clearly foresaw.

The suffragettes as Eve's minions brought down North American manhood.

The feminization of North America into a whimpering, whining, hedonist matriarchy goes back to the collapse of cowardly wimps at The Battle of Suffragette in WCTU (Women's Christian Temperance Union) lands. Feminism demeans not just men, women, and children but the family unit itself, the essential building block of this or any other nation. Feminism justifies lesbianism, unmarried parenting (fornication), divorce, homosexuality and so, a multitude of evil. It is witchcraft. It is a result of confoundation. Hosea: "The people die for want of knowledge." Without the truth & a stubborn maintenance of morality, the people become confounded. Confoundation occurred during the death of every nation throughout all of history.

Rant and rave, throw an hysterical tantrum, but men and women are different. They have different functions and roles. The Bible says they have different obligations to God, they have been different since Eve and they will be different forever: Rude opinion cannot alter an absolute. But today, feminist rationalization dictates up is down, right is wrong and so women are men and

men are women. Said the Bard: “Forgive me this my virtue when virtue is vice and vice is virtue.”

There are always, & everywhere, more women born than men. Women outlive men, and women have more leisure than men. So it should be apparent, that women outvote men. Is it a coincidence that since women were enfranchised the Western World’s wealth has vanished, & manhood disappeared, problems multiplied and virtue vanished? It’s a coincidence?

All of the above suggest: Due to the massive duty & obligations of fatherhood, relative to other functions the vote should be limited to the family unit, with the husband voting or empowering his wife to vote for the family. He must have attained at least twenty-five years of age, & not until the birth of the first child. The exit polls in the USA show unequivocally that Clinton & Gore were elected over Bush or Perot by a preponderance of the votes of women, youth and minorities.

Patriarchy or matriarchy. Here is a quote from Paul’s Epistle 1 Timothy 2:11-12: “ I permit no woman to teach nor to have authority in the councils of men, but to remain silent”. Why did he say this?

It is the wise, not the popular who should be elected, and it is the wise, not the popular who should be voting, and it is the wise, not the popular who should fill, at least, the upper houses.

This reversal of righteousness, this deification of witchcraft is the first cause in the creation of the playboys, wise guys, homosexuals, lesbians, molesters, fornicators and the multitude of emasculated entities.

The suicide rate for boys between 10 & 19 is up 200% from 1960, the suicide rate for young men between 20 and 29 is up 350% in the same time period. It’s about time to wake up. Can you list the cardinal virtues? Can you list the theological virtues? Why can’t you? Isn’t co-ed no-ed?

When Christ instructed His followers to pray for the Kingdom Of Heaven On Earth (KOHOE) He meant that mankind could and would evolve into a paradise as was God’s original intention for Eden. The foundation for this was accomplished by Christianity and Canada and The United States Of America were the growth stage of this process.

Canada and The United States Of America were evolving these circumstances and to a great extent living them until external influences outlined above conspired with us to fall in 1913 and 1917. It is important to clearly understand this if we wish to rectify the forces opposed to the KOHOE and the True Family model which rectifies the Adam/Eve history of fallen mankind.

That mission, and sacred trust of all the “New World’s” was to protect the foundation and growth stages of the KOHOE for mankind would do the right, given the right set of circumstances, due to the force of our original mind’s desire to please God and others, and the intrapersonal directive force of one’s own conscience. The Kingdom Of Heaven On Earth is this conduct in these circumstances. Women and youth must repent of the vote. As woman has

usurped the ballot box, man may pick up the cartridge box, as Ruby Ridge, Waco, Montana & Oklahoma prove beyond a reasonable doubt!

The number one priority for men is to protect women and children. American men have done this since the founding of America. Feminists have introduced the idea in the 20th century that women can also take that role. As women left the home in the 20th century the country has declined to where we have the tragedy of American women returning home in body bags and injured in wars in Iraq. In the Gulf War two women were captured by Iraqi men soldiers. One was definitely sexually assaulted. There are conflicting reports if the other one was. The one who was molested wrote a book, *She Went To War*, and pushed for women to be in combat even though she was abused. Her personal life is one of divorce and having only one child. This is the pattern of many families in the 20th century – small families and divorce.

SHE WENT TO WAR

In her book *She Went To War*, Rhonda Cornum tells her story of how she was shot down in the Gulf War and only she and another man survived the crash. She had broken bones. In the truck taking them to a prison camp, she was molested in front of the captured male American soldier. He could do nothing but watch. She wrote that she appreciated other Iraqi soldiers who helped her undress and dress when she had to go to the bathroom. They were decent and tried to avert their eyes. She writes, "I appreciated what these men had done for me "But she was not happy about the soldier who had molested her and another soldier who had taken her wedding ring. This ring was from her second husband who was also in the military. Her first husband has custody of their daughter because her career protecting them and us keeps her from caring for her one child and from having more children. Kory, her second husband, is physically big. She writes that of the two Iraqi soldiers she was angrier at the one who took her ring than the one who molested her.

Earlier she told how she screamed in pain in the truck while her molester was taking off her flight uniform because of her broken bones and injuries. She writes "I did not appreciate the guy kissing me and touching me – I would've loved to let Kory spend a few minutes with him. And for the soldier who had taken my ring, I wished only the worst. I imagined our guys going in there and blowing up everything. I resented that they took my ring. I didn't have any problem with them capturing me; we would have done the same thing if we had shot down an Iraqi helicopter. Obviously, the military exists to break things and kill people, but stealing was not acceptable."

Did you follow this logic? Her ring means more than her private parts. Her husband is supposed to protect her by beating up the bad guy. "Guys" are supposed to blow away the enemy. This is a woman who has an advanced degree. She's even a M.D. This is the result of our schools producing doctors – brainless people completely out of order.

On the back of her book an admiral writes, "her performance both before and during the war and captivity fully validates that women can be warriors in every sense of the word." This was by Vice Admiral William Lawrence who was a former Superintendent of the U.S. Naval Academy and a P.O.W. in North Vietnam. I appreciate this admiral's patriotism and service to America but it is sad to see many leaders in the military wimping out concerning the feminist agenda.

An excellent book on the madness of feminism is *Why Women and Power Don't Mix: The Perils of Feminism* by J.P. McDermott. He writes that feminists "argue that women should be allowed to perform any combat role, as a right. The following example epitomizes the astounding lengths to which feminists may go with feminist illogic to rationalize their desires, or what they perceive as their needs. It is also an appropriate example of the type of feminist arguments we are continually faced with."

"Shortly after the Persian Gulf War, despite attempts to scuttle it, the story came out in the press about Major Rhonda Cornum being sexually violated while held captive by the Iraqis." She said, "Everyone's made such a big deal about this indecent assault. But the only thing that makes it indecent is that it was non-consensual. I asked myself, 'Is this going to prevent me from getting out of here? Is there a risk of death attached to it? Is it permanently disabling? Is it permanently disfiguring? Lastly, is it excruciating?' If it doesn't fit one of those five categories, then it isn't important."

RAPE

McDermott writes, "In this case, feminist Major Cornum used feminist logic in an attempt to ease her concerns that women won't be allowed in combat for fear that those who become prisoners will be raped, and will suffer the normal, negative consequences of being raped. In other words, for the right to fight in combat alongside men, she is willing to deny that being raped is either excruciating or even important!"

"Rape is a serious crime, and should continue to be considered so. It should be punished severely because rape is one of the most traumatic events anyone (male or female) can experience. Most of us wouldn't want to live in a society where rape was classified only as 'indecent,' as Major Cornum would have us believe, rather than as important or excruciating. Such a society would dehumanize all of us, and would further de-feminize women."

Weak Link

A reviewer wrote, "In *Weak Link: The Feminization of the American Military*, army veteran Brian Mitchell argues that women have had a profoundly disruptive and negative effect on the fighting capabilities of the American armed forces. Mitchell shows how the service academies have had their morale, traditions, and standards shattered by the enrollment of women. "

We read in *The Weak Link*: "Despite proud boasts that women can easily 'do Ranger school, 'no woman presently in service has done anything like it. Not one of them has ever walked day and night through freezing rain, up and down the Tennessee Valley Divide with a 70-pound ruck on her back and a 23-pound machine gun in her arms. Not one of them has gone nine days without sleep, with a single cold meal a day and nothing over her head but a canvas cap."

"Such are the discomforts of not combat but training. Combat – the business of barbarians, Byron's 'brain-spattering windpipe-slitting art' – is many times worse. Of his time as a Marine Platoon commander in Vietnam, James Webb wrote: 'We would go months without bathing, except when we could stand naked among each other next to a village well or in a stream or in the muddy water of a bomb crater. It was nothing to begin walking at midnight, laden with packs and weapons and ammunition and supplies, seventy pounds or more of gear, and still be walking when the sun broke over mud-slick paddies that had sucked our boots all night. We carried our own gear and when we took casualties we carried the weapons of those who had been hit.'

"When we stopped moving we started digging, furiously throwing out the heavy soil until we had made chest-deep fighting holes.... We slept in makeshift hooches made out of ponchos, or simply wrapped up in a poncho, sometimes so exhausted that we did not feel the rainfall on our own faces. Most of us caught hookworm, dysentery, malaria, or yaws, and some of us had all of them."

"We became vicious and aggressive and debased, and reveled in it, because combat is all of those things and we were surviving. I once woke up in the middle of the night to sounds of one of my machine gunners stabbing an already dead enemy soldier, emptying his fear and frustrations into the corpse's chest. . . ."

CIVIC RELIGION OF EQUALITY

The *Weak Link* ends by saying we must have the guts and sense to stand up against the "civic religion of equality": "An armed force half female may seem unthinkable, but our civic religion of equality demands it and the military's official non-position on women in combat allows it. The American public is being lulled into the mistaken belief that women can, indeed, perform as well as men in all military jobs. Certainly nothing said publicly today by any admiral or general would contradict that belief. One hopes that before we arrive at full sexual equality in the military, before the next war, brave men in uniform will stand up and speak out. Thus far, however, the brave march of folly has proceeded at a measured pace, and few have shown the selflessness, understanding, courage, or concern to fall on their sword to stop the disastrous triumph of ideology over reality."

WOMEN FIGHTER PILOTS

Recently the Senate voted women the right to be fighter pilots. Even conservative senators voted for this absurdity. The argument is that women don't need strength in the cockpit. Typical of this century is a total lack of reality. What happens when women are shot down and become POWS? Some pilots in the Vietnam War were prisoners and tortured brutally for seven years. A woman would have the added torture of being gang raped for those seven years. Another argument against this is that when they landed after being shot down, they may have to fight men in hand-to-hand combat. In the movie *Bat 21* Gene Hackman plays the true story of a 50-year-old man that was on a reconnaissance plane over Vietnam and was the sole survivor when they were shot down. Hackman had to kill a man in self defense. War is hell, but conservatives like Pat Robertson are for women combat pilots and fall for Satan's feminist ideology. Another argument against women fighter pilots is that it ignores the basic truth that men are more aggressive than women. My wife cannot kill a spider. My young sons can crush it without thinking.

A woman general, Jeanne Holm, wrote a book, *Women in the Military: An Unfinished Revolution*. She pushes for women to be in combat. In her book she tells the story of how Congress passed legislation allowing women to be combat pilots. It is sad to see men voting for this abomination. Several senators were even Republican like Warner and Roth. General Norman Schwarzkopf advocated women as fighter pilots. When the debates were going on Phyllis Schlafly, bless her heart, led some conservative women to fight against it in Washington D.C. A few prominent people testified against it, such as a former Marine General. But congresswoman Pat Schroeder and others were on a roll. She said, "There were a lot of cowardly lions roaring in the cloakroom, but they wouldn't go out on the floor and vote against it...The Persian Gulf helped collapse the whole chivalrous notion that women could be kept out of danger in a war." How can one find words to express the sadness of how low America has fallen when comments like these of Schroeder dominate our social thinking. She spits on the concept of men being "chivalrous." She dismisses it as a "notion." Because there is no safety in the "rear" during combat, women, according to feminist logic, should be on the front lines. Everyone is so brainwashed by feminism that it never even occurs to anyone that women have no business being in the military at all.

In Holm's ridiculous book she quotes Marine Corps General Robert Barrow. He served 41 years and became the highest-ranking general in the Marine Corps. He fought in the terrible Chosin Reservoir campaign in the Korean War and fought bravely in Vietnam. He was awarded the Navy Cross and many other decorations. President Reagan attended his retirement ceremony. He said at a congressional hearing: "Exposure to danger is not combat. Being shot at, even being killed, is not combat. Combat is finding ... closing with ... and killing or capturing the enemy. It's KILLING. And it's done in an environment that is often as difficult as you can possibly imagine. Extremes of climate. Brutality. Death. Dying. It's ... uncivilized! And WOMEN CAN'T DO IT!

Nor should they even be thought of as doing it. The requirements of strength and endurance render them UNFIT to do it. And I may be old-fashioned, but I think the very nature of women disqualifies them from doing it. Women give life. Sustain life. Nurture life. They don't TAKE it."

Holm writes, "Women in combat units, Barrow added, would 'destroy the Marine Corps ... something no enemy has been able to do in over 200 years.'" She also quotes him as saying about the intense lobbying done by military women on the Hill, "They have their own agenda and it doesn't have anything to do with national security."

She introduces this quote by putting him down saying that he said it "caustically." Then she quotes a military woman saying in the audience to another, "I think the General's agenda has more to do with maintaining the macho image of the Marines than with national security." This great patriot is given no respect by feminists who are on a roll. Of course, this woman was not caustic. Feminists always see themselves as wonderful and their opponents as, Senator Kennedy called anti-feminists, "Neanderthals." Well, dear reader, take your pick.

Holm teaches Satan's view that women can handle combat. She writes that the Gulf War "helped destroy many old myths and preconceived notions about women's ability to perform in the stress of a combat environment, and did much to ease concerns about the effectiveness of mixed male-female forces." No it didn't. She says, "The hard-liners who have held sway over policy decisions are having to face new realities and changing national attitudes." She is excited about the future because she sees America becoming more feminist, "And there is growing evidence of new attitudes within the services as a new generation of leaders matures – leaders unencumbered by the baggage of the past who are willing to challenge antiquated arguments and stereotypes." In other words the future brave new world will not have the "baggage" of Biblical values.

Women, she says, "have earned the right to be treated as members of the first team rather than as a protected subclass excluded from the heart of their military profession." So that is where women have degenerated to. They see any effort of a man to be chivalrous and protective as seeing women as a "protected subclass."

WIMPS AND SISSIES

Dick Cheney was Secretary of Defense under President Bush senior and Vice-President under President Bush junior. As Secretary of Defense he wimped out and said, "Women have made a major contribution to this [Gulf War] effort. We could not have won without them." The truth is the exact opposite. But the truth is not popular in the politically correct Last Days. America could have always won its wars without women leaving the home. There was no need for Rosie the Riveters in World War II. They just got a taste of being away from home and Satan enticed them with his message that the home is not a worthy place of work. Even in the transition to the ideal world we must not treat women as men. Twenty-one females lost their lives in the Persian Gulf War. Many more women have died in the Iraq War. America is so desensitized to the feminist agenda that practically no one was upset to see mothers in fatigues say good-bye to their children as they went off to defend the millions of men who stayed behind. And no one objected when some of those mothers came back in body bags. The best way a woman can serve her country is to serve her family and only after her family is in order and not dysfunctional in any major way can she volunteer her time away from the home. She should never get paid for any work done outside the home. And when a woman does leave her home she should be in an environment that is safe from physical dangers and evil and manipulative men.

If America was really principled and strong it would have a military with absolutely no women. In 1948 women were capped at 2%. That is like being a little bit pregnant. It was a slippery slope to now where there is a sizable minority of women and they are clamoring every year to be a higher

percentage, to have more women in leadership ordering men around, and eventually to be in combat so they can advance to the highest levels. This is a campaign to crush the spirit of our fighting men. It is a sick drive to dominate men – all in the name of fair play and patriotism. The forces of evil always have high-minded, noble and common sense arguments – in their mind. Sadly America keeps giving in to feminist demands. It is wrong for women to lead men, but it is especially wrong to have this upside down philosophy be the norm in our military. Women's presence has lowered the standards.

Judith Stiehem wrote a disgusting book about how the Air Force Academy was forced by wimps in Congress to admit women. Her book's title, *Bring Me Men and Women: Mandated Change at the U.S. Air Force Academy*, is a play on the words "BRING ME MEN" that used to appear prominently on a building there. Stiehem's book shows how pathetically ignorant women like her are today about what masculinity and femininity mean. She disparages men by saying, "Is it not possible, moreover, that men's aversion to women's suffering is based on their feeling that a suffering woman implies men's failure to be protective? Thus the pain men feel may derive not from sympathy but from a feeling of failure." The whole concept that men care for women is dismissed and men are really low life's who just feel macho pride. How sad it this? I don't have the words to express how painful it is that men and women have degenerated so far in their view of each other. Her opinion of men is why so many men have given up on being gentlemen and chivalrous. The cultural atmosphere is filled with feminist nonsense that women are not to be protected and therefore men feel less protective every year.

DISGUST FOR CHIVALRY

This ridiculous feminist continues her male bashing and disgust of chivalry saying:

> The fact, of course, is that in war men on both sides terribly and regularly hurt women on the other side. Half the victims in any war are "noncombatants"– largely women, children, and the elderly. Quite obviously, a desire to avoid hurting women does not control men's behavior. At best, men do not want "their" women hurt. In fact, men do not object to having women in combat so much as they object to having women on their side. This is important. It means that even if some women are physically able and are so moved by logic or by their sense of justice as to insist upon sharing war's risk, their offer will probably be refused. Men do not want women's assistance in the waging of war.
>
> But chivalry is not the only reason men are reluctant to have women fighting by their side. In extremis they do not want to depend on individuals whom they perceive as small and weak. Probably everyone in combat would be comforted by compatriots larger and stronger than they, and men's chances of having a (physically) bigger "buddy" do increase if women are eliminated as combatants. Nevertheless, physical size is not required for combat effectiveness.

DAVID AND GOLIATH?

The last sentence is one of the most idiotic sentences that has ever been written in human history. And yet on the back cover of her book is a glowing review from a man, the governor of Colorado – the state where the Air Force Academy is. "Physical size is not required for combat effectiveness." Yeah, right. She then gives what she thinks is a logical example to prove her point – little David and big Goliath. It would be laughable if it weren't that more and more people progressively live in a fog of feminist logic. She writes:

> We have been taught this fact by the biblical story of David and Goliath and by the small enemies of our past (the Japanese and Vietnamese for example); this we know, too, from the technological nature of our warfare. At present, women may be less competent than men to handle some military equipment, mainly because it is now built for a male "standard." A redesigning of military equipment, then, might greatly enhance women's performance.
>
> More important to victory than size is organization, cooperation, pooled effort. Relatively small and weak but well-motivated men have always fought effectively. One might think that women, too, if properly equipped and integrated into military units, could be effective as combatants.

She says in her book that all arguments against women in combat are "silly." The reverse is the truth. She begins her book with three quotes of what she sees as dinosaur thinking, but they are the only words in her book that are true:

> The kind of women we want in the Air Force are the kind who will get married and leave. – A major at the U.S. Air Force Academy
>
> I disagree with the admittance of women to the academies. This is just another step taken for political reasons that will tend to weaken our combat capability. – An Air Force general stationed in the Midwest
>
> Maybe you could find one woman in 10,000 who could lead in combat, but she would be a freak, and the Military Academy is not being run for freaks. – Gem William Westmoreland in *Family Weekly*, September 25, 1976.
>
> Thus spake the brass – in private and sometimes in public. The 1975 federal legislation mandating women's entrance into the service academies displeased them; in fact, among senior officers the decision was widely deplored. For once again (the obvious analogy is school integration) important governmental institutions were told by the federal government to change themselves in a fundamental (some said revolutionary) way. Moreover, they were told to do so at a specific time and they were under close public scrutiny. There was little hope that their change or failure to change could go unnoticed, nor was there much about the change that would be voluntary. It was required, and most of those charged with implementing it were opposed.

Feminists always mix the apples and oranges by equating the discrimination of race with ability. Her book is about the integration of women into the Air Force Academy. Comparing black men and white men versus men and women at our elite military colleges is done constantly and most people nod their head like people used to believe that the earth was flat.

Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Decline

In *Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Decline*, Robert H. Bork says the following trenchant remarks:

> The Soviet Union attempted to create the New Soviet Man with gulags, psychiatric hospitals, and firing squads for seventy years and succeeded only in producing a more corrupt culture. The feminists are having a similarly corrupting effect on our culture with only the weapon of moral intimidation. The contention that underneath

their cultural conditioning men and women are identical is absurd to anyone not blinded by ideological fantasy. Males are almost always larger, stronger, and faster. Females are almost always the primary careers for the young.

The ineradicable differences between the sexes are not merely physical. "Men are more aggressive than women," James Q. Wilson writes. "Though child-rearing practices may intensify or moderate this difference, the difference will persist and almost surely rests on biological factors. In every known society, men are more likely than women to play roughly, drive recklessly, fight physically, and assault ruthlessly, and these differences appear early in life."

The early kibbutz movement in Israel had the same ideology as today's radical feminists: sexual equality meant sexual identity, and sexual differentiation was inequality. For a brief period, the ideologues attempted to raise children apart from their families and to raise boys and girls in ways that would destroy sex roles. The program was as extreme as the most radical feminist could want. But it collapsed within a very few years. Boys and girls returned to different sex roles. The American sociologist Melford Spiro, who studied the kibbutz, wrote that he had wanted to "observe the influence of culture on human nature or, more accurately, to discover how a new culture produces a new human nature." He "found (against my own intentions) that I was observing the influence of human nature on culture."

A magazine called *Now* said, "NOW is the time to take back control of our lives. NOW is the time to make reproductive freedom for wimmin of all classes, cultures, ages and sexual orientations a reality. NOW is not the time to assimilate to bureaucratic puppeteers who want to control, degrade, torture, kill and rape our bodies. NOW is the time to drop a boot heel in the groin of patriarchy. NOW IS THE TIME TO FIGHT BACK. NO GOD, NO MASTER, NO LAWS."

That short paragraph expresses the rage, the nihilism, and the incoherence of feminism today.

In *The Hite Report on the Family*, Shere Hite calls for a "democratic revolution in the family." The family is not a religious institution and there is no need to "show respect and reverence for a 'religious' tradition which has as its basic principle, at its heart, the political will of men to dominate women. This is not religion, this is politics." She continues with the basic feminist fallacy: "There is no such thing as fixed 'human nature.' Rather, it is a psychological structure that is carefully implanted in our minds as we learn the love and power equations of the family—for life. Fortunately the family is a human institution: humans made it and humans can change it."

The hostility towards the traditional family goes hand in hand with the feminists' hostility towards traditional religion. They see religion as a male invention designed to control women.

Stephanie Gutmann wrote an article in *The New Republic* (2-24-97) called "Sex and the Soldier" that exposed the ridiculousness of women in the military. She now has a book called *The Kinder, Gentler Military: How Political Correctness Affects Our Ability to Win Wars*. Her book is excellent. She did her homework and shows very clearly how America's military has been weakened by feminism. Many times she had to wade through the official PR which she always saw through. She writes about them once saying: "... the most dutiful dispensers of the party line, and I gloomily prepared myself for an hour of exchanges in the 'Yes, comrade, the grain harvest is

indeed the best it has ever been – another tribute to Big Brother's wisdom' vein." The following are some excerpts from her book:

> Five or ten years from now, if we find ourselves in an air and ground war with Iraq or North Korea or somebody else we haven't noticed yet, and we get utterly whipped, you can blame Presidents George Bush and Bill Clinton, Secretaries of Defense Richard Cheney, Les Aspin, and William Cohen, the Congresses who wrote and passed the bills they signed, and the Pentagon leadership who just ginned nervously and sat on their hands while all of this was going on.
> ...
>
> One of projects mesmerizing the brass throughout the nineties was the integration of women. If they'd thought about this and kept their eyes on the readiness, war-fighting ball, things might have worked out OK. Instead, the nineties were a decade in which the brass handed over their soldiers to social planners in love with an unworkable (and in many senses undesirable) vision of a politically correct utopia, one in which men and women toil side by side, equally good at the same tasks, interchangeable, and, of course utterly undistracted by sexual interest.

John Miller wrote a review of her book saying:

> When the Marines dropped their famous slogan, "We're looking for a few good men," and replaced it with "The few, the proud, the Marines," they weren't just eliminating a worn-out ad campaign – they were pursuing a controversial social agenda. "The nineties were a decade in which the brass handed over their soldiers to social planners in love with an unworkable (and in many senses undesirable) vision of a politically correct utopia, one in which men and women toil side by side, equally good at the same tasks, interchangeable, and, of course, utterly undistracted by sexual interest," writes journalist Stephanie Gutmann. *The Kinder, Gentler Military* – an expanded version of a cover story Gutmann wrote for *The New Republic* – is a devastating critique of the military's sex-integration efforts. She reports of women "allowed to come into basic training at dramatically lower fitness levels and then to climb lower walls, throw shorter distances, and carry lighter packs when they got there." This has led to problems in the field: during the Gulf War, says Gutmann, "men in many units took over tearing down tents or loading boxes because most of the women simply couldn't or wouldn't do these chores as fast." Liberals will accuse Gutmann of hostility to feminism, but her strong blend of reporting and analysis overcomes that charge by describing the frustrations of women who want to contribute to the military's old-fashioned warrior culture, not its newfangled Peace Corps mentality. The Pentagon doesn't want you to read *The Kinder, Gentler Military*; that's all the more reason why you should.
> (www.amazon.com/The-Kinder-Gentler-Military-Gender-Neutral/dp/product-description/0684852918)

In the magazine *Commentary* (February 2000), Francis Fukuyama, author *The End of History* and the *Last Man*, wrote:

> Stephanie Gutmann's new book, *The Kinder, Gentler Military*, debunks the received wisdom [that resistance to raising the proportion of women in the military is inherently sexist] through first-rate reporting on the reality of the contemporary military. There is, as it turns out, a simple reason why academic studies and official commissions cannot get at the truth in this area: in the wake of the 1991 Tailhook scandal, which ended the careers of many navy officers who were found to have been insufficiently vigilant in rooting out sexual harassment, the military has become one of the most politically correct of all American institutions.

From the inside flap of her book we read:

> READ THIS BOOK Stephanie Gutmann is an acute observer, with an impish ability to poke fun at hypocrisy and farce that reminds one of Tom Wolfe at his best. The careerists may squirm, but thousands of active-duty military– including, I predict, many women – will be thanking her for saying what needed very much to be said. – James Webb, former Secretary of the Navy, author, *Fields of Fire* and *The Emperors General*
>
> Stephanie Gutmann fires a fully-charged broadside at feminist zealots and social engineers in *The Kinder, Gentler Military*. The book is bound to trigger a fierce counterattack. – Lt. General Bernard E. Trainor, U.S.M.C. (Ret)
>
> Gutmann's brilliant book must be read by all caring Americans and its cogent message be urgently transmitted to all lawmakers. – Colonel David Hackworth (Ret.), author of *About Face* and *Hazardous Duty*

Maggie Gallagher

Maggie Gallagher says, "Personally, I believe those who say gender-integrated training and the push to demasculinize the military have resulted in things like lower standards, higher outlays, reduced productivity and lessened 'unit cohesiveness.' But even worse, they attempt to strip from men whatever vestiges of protectiveness toward women and children remain. 'If we can't win a war without our mothers, what kind of sorry fighting force are we?' Sally Quinn once put it in the *Washington Post*."

The writer Jared Taylor says:

> The idea of making combat soldiers or firefighters out of women is so stupid that only very intelligent people could fall for it.
>
> There is an excellent book about sex differences called *Brain Sex*, written by Anne Moir and David Jessel. Every high school student in America (as well as every congressman) should be made to read this book. An enormous amount of suffering would be avoided if people were taught early in life than men and women are, by nature, different.

Michael Levin

Michael Levin in his excellent book *Feminism and Freedom* has a chapter about women in the military and occupations that require strength. He says that the "message being sent to our allies

and potential enemies by persistence in the unisex experiment is a question little discussed within the American military and intelligence community." "When I asked a senior member of the American intelligence community for his best guess about foreign perceptions of the unisex experiment, he replied, 'They think we may have lost our marbles.'"

He shows the illogic of women in combat with the following argument: "no one is willing to claim there could be an all-female enforcement hierarchy ranging from patrol person through judge up to prison guard. To admit that an all-female military is inconceivable already closes the theoretical case against egalitarianism, since all the order-preserving organizations in human history have been all-male. It also begins to close the practical question of the limits to the use of women in the military and police. The use of women in these services will always depend essentially on the presence of men to back them up. All that remains uncertain is the point at which the female presence begins to render these services ineffective."

About women being cops he says, "When asked how a small female officer is to disarm a 200-pound psychotic, the NYPD Information officer replied that 'the purpose of the Police Department is to serve the public.' The New York Board of Education justifies the use of female guards in its violence-plagued schools on the grounds that children feel comfortable with women around." Levin give some excellent arguments against women being cops, fire fighters and soldiers. His whole book is an excellent attack on the illogic and stupidity on the dangerous feminist crusade. Steven Goldberg said of the book, "Michael Levin's book is an astonishing achievement. The crucial moral and political questions raised by current gender issues are finally given the rigorous analysis they need and deserve." Sidney Hook wrote, "Michael Levin challenges" the "feminist movement. His intelligence analysis is admirable, his courage awesome."

WOMEN FIREFIGHTERS

Carlton Freedman in his excellent book, *Manhood Redux*, paints vivid pictures and writes with red-hot passion about the madness of women firefighters. He has done his homework and gives many examples of tragedies caused by weak women endangering lives since they have invaded these masculine realms. He explains how physical requirements are watered down for the police, military academies like West Point and Annapolis, and firefighting. In the Seattle fire department: "The hand-grip portion of the standard test was eliminated entirely, obviously because most women have negligible gripping strength. But the official reason given, predictably, was that it had nothing to do with fighting fires. A month later the *Times* gave its editorial endorsement to this sham .... Mary Matthews, the first woman to be hired in Seattle's pioneer 'affirmative action' program, died when she lost her grip as the fire truck she was riding rounded a corner .... The report on Matthews in the paper in which I saw it was headlined, 'Pioneer firefem dies in mishap.' Some might take vigorous exception to that, I certainly did. It was a mishap in the same sense that the death of a 2-year-old who was set free to wander by himself around a busy intersection could be called a traffic accident. And the blood of that woman, as well as the blood of all those who will needlessly die in fires because of the mania to eliminate sexual differences, is on those who have insisted on lowered standards for firefighters."

The most dangerous occupation on earth is firefighting. It is more dangerous to be a firefighter than it is to be a soldier or a police officer. Phyllis Schlafly in *The Positive Woman* writes, "More recently women have been demanding jobs in fire departments. Not only is a fireman's work beyond the physical strength of nearly all women, but the work pattern of firemen, involving long hours of living, working, and sleeping together, makes a sex-integrated fire department incompatible with community morals and customs. Ask yourself: When you are rescued from the third floor of a burning building, do you want to be carried down the ladder by a man or a woman? Are you satisfied with the knowledge that a 'person' will respond to your fire alarm?"

WOMEN COPS

In *Manhood Redux* we read an example of blood "needlessly spilled all across this land in an attempt to vindicate the mad feminist assertion that there are no inherent differences between the sexes" is a case in Hollywood, Fla. of "two women, neither of whom was a criminal, were shot to death in an incident that might well have been avoided. Following an auto accident, the female motorist involved went berserk and fatally wounded female officer Frankie Shivers with her own gun. The motorist, in turn, was then killed by other cops. Why? Why did these two women needlessly suffer violent death? Guns are wrested from females largely because they possess insufficient grip strength. Yet, grip-strength tests have been ordered removed from police qualifying tests for the simple reason women can't pass them. 'Not job-related' rule the judges – who themselves never had to go on patrol with a wisp of a cop who couldn't hold on to a boy toy poodle that smelled a girl toy poodle, let alone a lethal weapon in a violent confrontation .... Many other tests that used to insure that cops would be somewhere near as physically capable as the lawbreakers they have to encounter have been thrown out in order to accommodate the litigating ladies. And the lawsuits go on and on – not only lowering police standards but burdening the taxpayers, who must pay for all the litigation and in many cases the budget-breaking court awards that follow."

Freedman gives many examples of women cops endangering lives because they are too weak and in some cases so scared they call other cops to help them when any man cop would have handled the situation. An example of this is Glenda Rudolphy and Katherine Perkins who were dismissed from the Detroit Police Department because of cowardice – "a charge that in the pre-female 'cop' era was brought rarely if ever. These women were patrolling together when they came across a naked man dancing in the street and burning money. Apparently, they didn't feel up to handling it themselves, so they did what so many female officers do these days: They called for a cop." Freedman says male cops are afraid to say anything because they will lose their jobs or be sued, so they get into their police car with a weak woman and drive around all day together chasing after strong, violent men. He gave one example that is almost too gross to imagine. A man and woman cop came across a robbery in a New York City deli and the robber easily took the gun from the female cop and shot the male cop just as he shot him. *The New York Times* had a big article of the bravery of this little woman cop, and Mayor Koch gave her an award. The Deli manager and bystanders protested this abomination, but nobody quoted them. The woman cop then preceded to sue the city for damages because she hurt her back and was awarded a huge amount of money as she takes time off to heal. It is insanity. And everybody thinks it is wonderful we have progressed "beyond" the "rigid" Victorians who kept the women at home.

Freedman, in *Manhood Redux*, says feminism is a psychic rape of men. He, of course, would be labeled a reactionary extremist. The truth is too "extreme" for this culture. What is normal is abnormal. He writes, "feminists have been able to indulge in some other interesting gang bangs on men by 'breaking down the sexual barriers' in areas where it hurts most: in the macho professions of police work, firefighting, etc. "

Castration of entire male population

"By demonstrating (falsely, as we'll be seeing) that women can do anything men can do, those characteristics that have always been thought of as uniquely male are wiped away, and men are seen as totally dispensable if not useless. Deprived of his male role, the man tends to think of himself as worthless and violated – just as does the female victim of rape." Midge Decter in *Liberated Woman and Other Americans* wrote, "American society is about to be confronted by nothing less than the eventual castration of its entire male population."

Dangerous jobs

Men have often protected women by working the most dangerous occupations. In *Manhood Redux* Freedman gives some good examples. I don't have the space to quote all of them. I'll let you read his description of the terror the men went through to build the Brooklyn Bridge, many who even gave their lives in such horrible conditions as described in David McCullough's *The Great Bridge*. Freedman writes, "each day, countless thousands of men leave their homes to perform some of the rottenest and most hazardous work imaginable. "An example, he writes, is "the kind of work the late Richie Wiese, 33, and Earl Bessette Jr., did: cleaning the cesspools that are so vital to our civilized existence."

"The men had almost finished cleaning the cesspool behind a Howard Johnson's restaurant in fashionable Roslyn Heights, L.I. when Wiese, who had been lowered into the pit in a harness, suddenly collapsed in the waist-deep sludge at the bottom; Bessette and another worker then went in after him. Wiese and Bessette suffered a death in that 32 feet of excrement at the bottom that could only be described as a fulfillment of a foul, diabolical curse."

"Nevertheless to say, all the media that covered the event had their full complement of female anchors, reporters, production people etc. working that story. Howard Johnson's, also, has long been cognizant of the need to integrate its executive suites; indeed it was one Nancy Fisher who served as spokesperson for the tragedy. And as for the women who were just coming in for lunch at the restaurant when the accident occurred, they, too, worked for Long Island companies that were keenly attuned to the need to have a healthy number of women in fast-track jobs."

"But no women descended into that cesspool on that August 1984 day to pull out the three men submerged in the sludge. Ambulance driver John Eaton was part of the all-male contingent that had to go in; a newspaper picture showed his white uniform covered with feces. He described the experience: 'It was dark, the smell was unbearable ... We groped around for the men. We heard there were three down there. I reached under the sludge and felt a head and pulled the person by the hair.'" He then said his air went out and he yelled to be pulled out. The other two men died.

Freedman writes, "No beer commercials are made about cesspool cleaners, no folk songs will be composed about Richie Wiese and the guys who went in after him, who were every bit as heroic as any of those who receive Presidential citations. That's because these guys performed what is called (in quite literal sense in their case) s—t work. It is work, though, that is at least as essential to the continued healthy existence of Long Islanders as is, say, the maintenance of its utilities. There are myriads of Richie Wieses and Earl Bessettes spread throughout this land doing almost unmentionable tasks that we couldn't do without. Theirs is a virtually exclusively male fraternity."

Feminists, he says, are not interested in equally spreading "his burden between the sexes. "Feminists are demanding 51 percent representations in such areas of our society as politics, law, medicine and business administration. But regardless of how close they come to attaining that, virtually 100 percent of the cattle butchering, grave digging, sewer cleaning, and garbage collecting that is so critical to that society will continue to be done by males. So will almost every other backbreaking, marrow-freezing, stomach turning job. And, of course, while feminists shoot for 51 percent of the cushy jobs in the Pentagon, 100 percent of the legs, arms, brains, genitals and eyes that get blown away in combat will belong to males." Freedman wrote this in the 1980s and within a decade women have pushed for combat and some were raped and killed in the Gulf War. One feminist I have talked to personally wrote in a Unificationist publication a common theme in feminist thought—homemakers are bored and just sit home and eat chocolate instead of having exciting jobs. She wrote for all Unificationists to read that stay-at-home moms lead a "dreary life "of "dishwasher, laundress, cook, maid, delivery girl ... a position of true royalty: Queen of the

couch." She blasted the occupation of housewife because she does not see it as a profession. This feminist thinks women should fulfill themselves by having jobs and here are the ones she names: "doctors, artists, musicians, scientists, engineers and academics." Most jobs are not like these, and I would argue that the homemaker has the most exciting job of all.

Freedman gives a few examples of the absurdity of women trying to do men's traditional labor:

> "If I'm lifting something that is too heavy, [the foreman will] give me help," admitted Kathy Richter, who, under government pressure was given a "traditionally male" job at Chevrolet Gear and Axle in Detroit. And that foreman "won't give me a job that's too hard," she added. "He does it because I'm a woman, I know that."
>
> Anna Johnson worked a jackhammer on a ditch-digging crew in Palm Beach, Fla. – along with her friends, Liz, Cathy, Vicki and Elsie, who also had to be hired, or else. "Sometimes the jackhammer gets stuck," said Anna. "You see, there's asphalt down underneath – and I have to get Phil [the foreman] to remove it." Phil, of course, is happy to oblige. What else is he going to be in a society where to oppose such egregious injustice is to risk one's own job?"
>
> A *New York Times* report on female coal miners noted that men wound up lifting "the heavy rocks, timbers and equipment when the women find they don't have the muscle power." A *Time* report on the same subject related that male miners were resentful "because, among other things, the women are exempt from shoveling and other heavy jobs." And, pray tell, why the devil shouldn't they be bitter?
>
> Robin Ross decided she wanted to be a carpenter. But her second union assignment in New York City took her to a subway tunnel construction site where the work called for standing in ankle-deep water in nearly airless conditions. She got "fed up" and left after one day. You see, she had another of those "choices" that men don't have; she simply went to a more desirable, outside construction site and joined a group of picketing women banging on pots with hammers, demanding jobs and hollering sex discrimination. "I got into this to get outside and breathe the air," she commented – as the men in that subway tunnel, presumably equally fond of fresh air, continued to pay their dues.

Here's one more example of the insanity feminists inflict on the workplace: "Certainly employers, under government compulsion, have done everything but lasso women and force them into blue-collar jobs that many men would give their eye teeth for. AT&T, for instance, was pressured into recruiting 2,000 female phone-installers and line workers; within a week, half had taken off. Six months later, after having gone through expensive training (which was reflected in guess whose phone bills?), half of those were gone. By the end of the first year, said James Sheridan, who, doubtless very much against his will was put in charge of the campaign, 'we couldn't find anybody we had started with.'"

"Injury rates for women in this insane program were three times higher than for men; the women had a genuine fear of climbing the poles. Moreover they couldn't even handle the 12-foot extension ladders that weighed but 60 to 75 pounds."

"When it was discovered that male and female legs differ in the manner in which they are attached to the hip, making it inherently more difficult – and dangerous – for women to climb poles, a $15,000 study was commissioned to see if AT&T could at least partially offset God's

work. Portable steps for climbing the poles were devised; but neither the men nor the women wanted to use them. Tens of thousands more were poured in; at no time, apparently, was anyone prepared to admit that climbing poles might simply be a man's type of job."

CRISIS IN AMERICA: FATHER ABSENCE

In *Crisis in America: Father Absence*, Frank Ancona hits the nail on the head when he writes that America is not great anymore: "We have lost everything – we lost it all – when we lost ... patriarchy."

"Now we are without fathers. We are without the paternal function that is responsible for maturing individuals and weaning them away from the selfish, dependencies of adolescence. We have emasculated our nation. Today, in America, all things masculine are evil. Everything male is to be opposed and rejected, replaced by a 'new and better' feminine sensitivity that accepts all things as equal in its unconditional generosity and desire for total inclusion."

"Fathers are important. Fathers teach us about restrictive love, about the value of love when it is earned instead of thrown at us. Fathers bring maturity. Fathers help us achieve independence. Fathers provide us with identities. Fathers encourage us to 'push the envelope' and take risks. They make us strive to become better and better. We need fathers!"

"Once upon a time, America was the greatest nation on the face of the earth. Once upon a time, there were fathers in America."

Philip Lancaster wrote an article titled "Male Passivity: The Root of All Evil" saying:

> **VISION**
>
> The final quality lacking in Adam and in too many of his heirs is that of vision. We're talking about long-term vision, the ability to look beyond immediate concerns to the future implications of today's decisions. Surely Adam was not thinking about the future at all when he took the fruit from Eve. He must not have reflected too much on what the Lord meant when He threatened him with death. He certainly did not think about what harm would result for his wife and children. Would he have taken the fruit if he had paused to reflect on the millennia of pain and suffering that would be caused by this one bad choice?
>
> Our Lord was an example of a man with vision. Hebrews tells us of Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame… (12:2). The immediate prospect of the cross was enough to cause our Lord grim agony as He prayed in Gethsemane. Yet he was able to press on through what became the most horrendous personal nightmare of human history because he could foresee the future blessing his choice would bring to the human race. Adam's lack of vision damned mankind. Jesus' clarity of vision led Him to become the world's savior.
>
> Men today lack vision. Their time horizons are very short, extending only to the next paycheck, the next vacation, the next promotion. But godly men must be able to gauge the effects of their present choices on their children and their children's children. They must picture the future. They must see it and allow it to motivate present actions. Their time horizons must extend even past their grandchildren and into eternity as they learn to weigh every action in light of its eternal implications.

> What are the long-term implications of the choices you make today? What difference will it make that you have (or neglect) family worship and Bible instruction? How will your grandchildren be affected by your prayer life today? How will your children be shaped by your choice of vocation? By where you choose to live? By the church to which you belong? By how you choose to educate them? By your policies concerning peer-grouping or entertainment or driving? The choices you make today, even many that may seem insignificant, will shape the lives of your descendants and reverberate through eternity. Adam didn't think ahead. Jesus did. You must.
>
> **MALE PASSIVITY**
> Male passivity is the root of all evil. Is that statement stretching it a bit? Not by much. Sin would not have entered the world but for Adam's lack of masculine leadership. And the ravages of sin would be much more contained even today if most men in most homes would seize the day by seizing the reins of family leadership.
>
> God made man to take dominion, first of himself, then of his family, and then of some portion of this world (Gen. 1:26ff.). This is a chief way in which men exhibit the image of God. Passivity is a denial of what it means to be a man. The original man ceded control to his wife and ultimately to Satan. By God's grace Christian men today can reclaim godly control of their families. This in turn will prepare them for dominion in other spheres and is the ultimate strategy for wresting control of this world away from the Evil One and returning it to the rightful heir of the world, our Lord Jesus.

It looks to me that all the organizations Father has created are corrupted by feminist Unificationists who push for women to leave the home to take leadership in society. The person in charge of the family section of the *Washington Times* is a blessed sister who has written strongly against the traditional family in the UC's newspaper, the *Unification News*. She wrote against the stay-at-home mom. The Seminary in upstate New York hired the radical feminist professor Thomas Boslooper to brainwash young Unificationists and published his disgusting book *The Image of Woman*. The UC owns Paragon House publishing company that publishes feminist books such as *The NGO Revolution: Healing a Hurting World* edited by a Unificationist sister, Ann Iparraguirre, who has also held leadership in the UC as a district leader. Ann has taken a job from a better qualified man. She should take Helen Andelin's advice in *Fascinating Womanhood*: "Limit your time for clubs, service organizations, self-improvement programs, education classes, or lessons. Although these programs may be a fine thing if you have time for them, don't let them rob you of time to enjoy homemaking." One of the articles in the book Ann edited is by a leader of the Austrian Chapter of Women's Federation for World Peace. This sister's first name is Elizabeth. The Women's Federation for World Peace was founded by Father and has been taken over by feminists like Elizabeth who push for women to lead men. In Elizabeth's article titled "Crossing the Bridge of Peace and Reconciliation" she says, "Women's virtues, (compassion, care, non-violence, charity) were recognized by Jesus as a spiritual evolution which would lead to fundamental change in society. This was not accepted by the authorities. Even the apostle Paul could not accept that women could be as capable and intelligent as men. They had to keep silent during gatherings. Apostle Paul disliked marriage, saying it estranged humans from God. Paul was a patriarch and his thought has guided Christianity until today." Paul does not say that women are less "intelligent" than men and he does not "dislike marriage." This confused sister, like so many in the UC, despises the patriarchal, biblical family. This means they despise the basis of Judeo-Christian civilization. I get the impression that these Unificationists hate Christianity. They see Jesus as a liberal feminist and Paul as making Christianity into a misogynist nightmare for women.

This sister goes on to say, "Selfless motherly love is the greatest energy which exists in this world. We can bring this into society, politics, economy, education, legal system and into diplomacy." Getting women to be politicians, professors, attorneys, businesswomen and diplomats will not heal this world. It will only make it worse. Elizabeth writes about some role models she likes, one of which is Helen Keller. All the women she chooses are all feminists and most are socialists and pacifists.

A good article in the book is by Thomas Christensen. He and his wife have 15 children. In his article "The Natural Family" he says, "The future of the world rests securely in the gentle arms of righteous, unselfish mothers who choose responsible husbands to provide for and support them. Rather than viewing moral leaders as idiots, homebound mothers as mindless parasites, fathers as chauvinist or predators, or children as liabilities or career-altering inconveniences, it is time to rediscover the soul-expanding joy of the traditional family. Opponents of traditional marriage attempt to classify family advocates as narrow-minded, right wing bigots or religious fundamentalists." Ann and Elizabeth are those "opponents of traditional marriage" that he is fighting. Christensen can give factual scientific research and sound logical arguments for the traditional family but Ann and Elizabeth cannot give any research or rational arguments for their feminist family paradigm. These two Unificationist sisters are what the Bible calls "the spiritual forces of evil." They are a disgrace to Father and are pushing the demonic ideology of feminism at the United Nations.

It is the height of arrogance and ignorance to think that the Bible and Judeo-Christian history has not come up with some truth about what the role of men and women are. Either God wants women to be in the background or he wants them to lead men. Satan has been successful in getting women to leave the home to lead men.

Helen Andelin writes in *Fascinating Womanhood* these wise words: "A man wants a woman who will place him at the top of her priority list, not second but first. He wants to be the kingpin around which all other activities of her life resolve. He doesn't want to be the background music to her other interests and dreams.

"One of the greatest threats to your husband's position of priority would be if you were to earnestly pursue a career. The dedication and drive required for success would push him into the background. If you finally reach a pinnacle of success, you would overshadow him and make him feel relatively unimportant.

"If you work at your talent, it can be a very fine thing. However, if you pursue your talent with such dedication and enthusiasm that it overshadows your husband, he may feel second fiddle and resent it.

"Women of high intelligence and education complain that homemaking requires only moderate mentality. Because of their superior gifts, they feel their calling is outside the home in making a contribution to society such as did Madam Curie, or in the fields of science, industry, technology, or government. Thus, they can help make the world a better place.

"I agree that it takes little intelligence to merely feed and clothe a family and do the minimum requirements. It does, however, require our very best in mental ability to make a success in the home, such as a Domestic Goddess would achieve."

Mrs. Andelin goes on to say, "Every woman can make a worthy contribution to society through her children, but not every man can through his work. Some jobs are unimportant or even destructive. If women feel they must serve their country, the best way is in the home, making a success of family life. Calvin Coolidge, former U.S. President said, 'Look well to the hearthstone. Therein lies all hope for America.'" "The work in the home is a different kind of glory than career women enjoy. A great mother lives in obscurity, and the perfect wife is even less known. Her reward is a quiet, unacclaimed honor. Her glory is the esteem of her husband, the happiness of her

children, and her overall success in the home." Feminists tell women that to be extraordinary and great means they should use their "voice" to join men in the hunt. They say to aspire to making a career of being a housewife is mediocre living. They use the phrase, "Only a housewife." Helen Andelin has many quotes in her book from women who write to her. One woman wrote, "I've always felt guilty about wasting my brains to be only a housewife. F.W. lifted a huge burden from me. I've always thought I'd committed a great sin for not using my God-given talents for some fabulous career, never realizing how fabulous and important a wife and mother really are!" It's time for UC sisters to stop pursing fame and fortune and relish their role as homemakers that build an excellent nest?. Don't listen to feminist propaganda about living without boundaries and there are no limits to the heights of power a woman can obtain in competing with men. For husbands and wives to work as a team does not mean they both do the same things. Don't listen to feminists bash Christianity and the Bible as being misogynistic and abusing women because they are like Eve, a temptress who caused the Fall. There have been religious men who misused their power and abused women. The same goes for women. We are all fallen and have a fallen history but countless men and women have found more romance, fulfillment and joy by living a traditional patriarchal lifestyle than those who reject chivalry and push women to defend men as police officers and chiefs of police.

Philip Lancaster wrote an article titled "Male Passivity: The Root of All Evil" saying:

> **COURAGE**
> The third quality lacking in Adam but needed by us all is courage. This is closely related to the last. Men seem congenitally fearful of exerting authority in the home and taking the initiative required to be effective. They are afraid they might be wrong in the direction they lead. They are afraid of what their wives and children will think, or whether the family will even follow their leadership.
>
> We don't know what Adam was feeling, but why didn't he stand up to his wife? It would have taken courage to contradict her, to correct her. He may have risked her favor. There seems to be nothing worse for a passive, unconfident man than to have his wife unhappy with him. The easy thing to do was to go along. It was also easier than confronting that wily serpent.
>
> The alluring thing about cowardice is that it seems to make everybody happy. Failing to stand for principle or to correct those who are in the wrong keeps things peaceful. Of course, it may lead the whole human race into millennia of sin and misery, but hey, it keeps the wife happy today! The failure of manly courage has cost the world dearly.
>
> Our nation is cursed today with men who are afraid to be leaders at home. For so many men their greatest desire is simply to keep peace within the family at any price. What the wife wants she gets, what the children want they get, unless the demand is so outrageous that Dad has to get angry and then sulk about their forcing him to take a stand.
>
> Do you take your stand to lead your family according to principle even when they disagree, or others outside the family don't understand? Are you willing to be unpopular with your charges for the sake of protecting them from evil companions and environments? Is pleasing God more important to you than pleasing men (or women, or children)? One sure mark of a leader is his willingness to take actions that bring him under attack from those who don't share his understanding of what it means to please God. The family leader is a man of courage because he fears God.

WAR ON WOMEN

Don't listen to socialist/feminists who will say that anyone who believes in patriarchy has declared

"war on women." Those who believe women need to leave the home and protect men by going to West Point and then dying in combat have declared war on women. Many socialists do not want to be called socialists. Many feminists don't want to be called feminists and may Liberals don't want to be called Liberals. They deceptively call themselves Progressives and those who oppose them they call Regressives. What is progressive about women defending men? Nothing. The Left is not for progress. They are for the past 6,000 years of human history that has had a small elite control freaks tyrannize the vast majority of mankind. They come up with insane ideas that defy human nature and God's will such as gay marriage, gays in the military and their favorite—women in combat. Many so-called Conservatives go along with this madness such as President George. W. Bush and his Vice-President Dick Cheney. The true progressives are the tiny minority of Libertarians and Traditionalists who believe as most did in the 19th century America that God's design is for extremely limited government and the biblical patriarchal family. The Left hates the 19th century because they are authoritarian and arrogant. They are of Satan. Satan hates chivalry and so do Socialist/Feminists. Don't be swayed by their bogus arguments of progress. They are totalitarians who crave power to run your life from womb to tomb. They hate freedom. They patronize mankind. They think it's progress when women die as police officers. They declare war on women and sadly so many women are seduced by the Left's lies that they care and have heart for women and children. Have human beings "progressed" when tens of thousands of women are assaulted and raped in the military every year as seen in the documentary *The Invisible War*? (watch at documentaryheaven.com and Netflix.com, buy at www.invisiblewarmovie.com)

Aubrey Andelin teaches in *Man of Steel and Velvet*: "There are some who feel that women should build society in the same way men do. Many young women … feel they have a great responsibility to make the world better. Women are needed to build society, but not in science and industry. Our deficiency is not a technological one. Our scientific strides have been phenomenal. We are not short of working personnel. There is no conceivable way an assertion can be substantiated that we need more women in the working force to advance society. There is sufficient male population for that.

"Women are misled if they feel they will best achieve their duty to mankind by becoming a figure of renown in politics, science, and industry. Although they are capable enough, they can render no service of greater consequence than to establish an ideal home. Theirs is the prime opportunity to prevent and correct the great social evils in the place most of them start. There would be an absolute minimum of social problems if our homes were in order. Too much emphasis cannot be given in reminding our girls and women of their vital role in the well-being of society. Theirs is a role that cannot be shifted to men. Although often willing, this is not a position men can handle as a woman can. The shaping of the lives of children is of such magnitude and consequence as to be incomprehensible. These values are realized not only here but extend into eternity.

"If men cannot solve problems of government and industry, if we must lean on women for these responsibilities, then we have failed as men. Half the population is male. There are plenty of men to produce the material necessities, but not enough women to be good mothers. Being capable of doing feminine work is not being a mother. This shortage of good mothers is probably the greatest deficiency in our work force.

"As with a man, however, a woman has an obligation to give of herself in humanitarian service after she has fulfilled her role in the home. Women are benevolent and are greatly enriched by unselfishly giving of themselves to the church, the community, and to individuals who are in need. In the home, and by giving benevolent service, women greatly build society.

"A woman's glory is in the success of her husband and the happiness of her children."

SUN MYUNG MOON'S TEACHINGS ARE MONOTHEISTIC

Ye-Jin Moon, the eldest daughter of Sun Myung Moon, wrote in an article titled "God as the Heavenly Parent of Heavenly Father and Heavenly Mother" (January 20, 2014) posted at the UTS

blog AppliedUnificationism.com, "God is equally Heavenly Father as well as Heavenly Mother." "In the UM, it had been customary to address God in the masculine as Heavenly Father, mainly because of the influence coming from the Old and New Testament Ages when God was regularly viewed in the masculine. However, if we are now living in *Cheon Il Guk* or 'God's Homeland,' the very first issue we need to address is who God is or why God is the Heavenly Parent of Heavenly Father and Heavenly Mother (HP of HF/HM)." She is wrong in pushing two gods. This changes *the Divine Principle* from teaching that God is Heavenly Father and therefore a belief in monotheism. If she thinks we can believe in two gods but also believes her theology is monotheism then she is as logical as Christians saying there are three gods but Christianity is monotheistic. The idea of three in one and one in three is as illogical and unprincipled as two in one and one in two.

She writes, "Heavenly Mother's existence was obscured." Why would her Father, the Messiah, never explain this in his 60 year ministry? Ye-Jin is simply teaching feminism. When she says "Heavenly Parent is gender-balanced" she is simply using feminist language. God is balanced by being the Subject Partner and the universe is Object Partner. She ends by calling God "S/He". Father made it crystal clear in many speeches that men lead women. This means she should say He/She instead of S/He. Does anyone really believe mankind is going to read True Father's words and then call God something different than what he called God? Does anyone believe that instead of using the pronoun "He" for God mankind is going to say the weird "S/He"? Her sister, Sun-jin, gave a speech on September 23, 2014. I watched a video of her speech. She used the pronoun "He" for God and mankind will do the same forever as well. All this nonsense about S/He is part of the emasculating agenda of Satan's core ideology, Feminism. Steve Nomura commented on her article saying:

> We have to clarify 100% that we cannot call Heavenly Parents and there is no Heavenly Mother. If we call God Heavenly Father and Heavenly Mother, we destroy the Principle because I believe it becomes dualism. True Father never called God as Heavenly Mother in his life. At the God's day midnight prayer in 2010, True Father started his prayer with Heavenly Parent. (Of course he prayed in that way at that time but after that True Father started his prayer mostly with Heavenly Father)
>
> There are some language issues. The Korean word "Pu Mo (父母)" consists of two Chinese characters which is Pu (父) and Mo (母). This could be both parents, father and mother but this often means just "parent" which means either father or mother.
>
> God can be called as Heavenly Father from the perspective of subject and object partners. When we call God as Heavenly Father, that is because God exists as masculine subject partner (男性格主体). God is in the subject position and the human being is in the object position. This universal relationship will never change.

Hyung Jin Moon gave a powerful sermon at his church in Pennsylvania on January 25, 2015. The speech is posted on YouTube.com titled "God Save the Queen." He talked about how satanic it was that elders are influencing mother to change Father's words such as the vow given at the Blessing. He said, "Even God was changed ." He spoke passionately about how he desperately pleaded to True Mother not to change Father's words such as changing how we address God. He held her and begged her to not change from calling God Heavenly Father to calling Him Heavenly Parent. Some Unificationists are even using the plural Heavenly Parents. He said this is a "move away from monotheism" and against the teachings of the Divine Principle. He said, "We see a cultural split that has overcome the church." A "demonic culture has been built." "So many people

are unknowingly post-modern humanists who are interpreting True Parents through their post-modern third wave feminism lens."

He said there are false leaders in the Family Federation organization that "Tell mother 'you are also the messiah.'" Hyung Jin says it is not a 50/50 relationship between Father and Mother: "In True Parents there is an absolute subject and there is a King in True Parents. I know people want to believe it's 50/50. That would make you feel good in the post-modern world—in the humanistic world. Yes, we're so modern. No. You can't bend Messiah to fit you. You must bend your life to fit the Messiah. That's called love." He teaches that his mother is a victorious True Mother because she was his loyal follower for over 50 years of marriage: "Mother's victory is absolute love, faith and obedience to True Father." But she is wrong in changing Father's words.

HE WAS ALL ALONE

In 1973 Father spoke publicly for the first time. In his speech "God's Hope For Man" he taught that before God created the universe "He was all alone":

> All of our human traits originate in God. We recognize that there is some human tendency for selfishness. This is natural because at one time God Himself was self-centered. This fact may surprise you, but you must understand that before God created man and the universe, He was all alone, with no one to care for except Himself. However the very instant that God initiated creation, His full concept of life emerged. God now lives for His counterpart, not for Himself.
>
> What is creation? Creation means nothing more than the Creator, God, projecting Himself into a substantial form. He made Himself incarnate symbolically in the universe, and He made Himself incarnate directly in man. When the spirit takes form, this is creation. God invested Himself in the creation. God's investment of energy is the creation.
>
> The Bible in the book of Genesis makes creation sound simple and easy. Genesis gives us the impression that God's creation is accomplished through the magic of His words. God simply says, "Let there be a world" and presto! — the world comes into being. Then He says, "Let there be man" and poof! — Adam and Eve come into being.
>
> But now it has been revealed that it was not this easy at all. God invested all of Himself in His creation. He did not reserve even one ounce of energy. Creation was His total labor, His total effort of giving all of Himself. When God put His entire heart and soul into the creation of His object, He was investing 100 percent of Himself. Only in this way could He create His second self, the visible God.
>
> Therefore, after His creation, God was no longer existing just for Himself. God began existing for His son and daughter, Adam and Eve. He exists to love, He exists to give. God is the totally unselfish existence. God cannot exist alone. "Love" and "ideal" only take on meaning when partners are in complementary relationship. God initiated creation and made an investment He cannot lose. When God poured all of His love, life, and ideal into His second self, He had to, in a sense, realize a profit. God knew that when He invested all He had — 100 percent — His object would mature and return to Him many, many times over the fruits of love, life, and His ideal. His object, man, is everything to God. The life of the object attracts God. God wants to go and dwell with His object, man.
>
> Let us look at an illustration. Suppose there is a great artist. If he works at random without feeling, he cannot create anything worthwhile. To create the masterpiece of his lifetime, the artist must put all of his heart and soul into his creation. That is the only way for him to come up with a great work of art. If an artist works in this way,

his art becomes his life.

God is the greatest of all artists. When He created His masterpiece, man, He poured His heart into the process. He poured His soul into it. He poured all of His wisdom and all of His energy into it. God wished only to exist for Adam and Eve and all mankind. He saved not a single ounce of energy when He created them. Thus, man has become the life of God.

GOD IS NOT A MATRIARCH

In 2009 Andrew Wilson published an article in the *Journal of Unification Studies* titled, "Heavenly Mother". He writes, "It can be concluded that even though in the providence of restoration God has presented Himself primarily as a masculine being, today as we seek to realize the full ideal of creation, it is now possible to appreciate Her femininity, with the goal of attaining perfect balance." How is God balanced? The balance is Heavenly Father and Mother Earth. Mother said in a public speech March, 1999, "Your first parents, of course, are your physical parents. Your second parent is the Earth. From the Earth we receive essential elements which the body needs in order to grow. In this way the Earth is the second parent. After being nurtured and cared for by our second parent, we prepare to meet our third parent. There is a process through which we pass in order to realize this. That process is our physical death. We do not meet our third parent free of charge. To be able to return to our third parent, we must resemble our original parent, God." Father teaches, "Man represents God, who is seen as our father, while the earth is represented as a mother." (4-1-89) The balance is Heavenly Father and Earthly Mother. We call God "Heavenly Father". Father always portrayed God as a Patriarch. Therefore we should not call God "Heavenly Mother." God is the masculine Subject and the universe is the feminine object.

In his paper Brother Andrew calls God "He/She" and "S/he". This is not only inaccurate it is clumsy and awkward language. Those who believe there is a Heavenly Father and a Heavenly Mother cannot also believe they are monotheist. The world is going to hear this and think there are two entities, two beings. Unitarians like Thomas Jefferson and John Adams criticize orthodox Christianity for believing there are three Gods of Father, Son and Holy Spirit and yet confidently say they are monotheists because the Three are in One and One is in Three. Unificationists who believe in a Heavenly Mother will not convince the world there is Two in One and One in Two. They will be seen as polytheists.

Some Unificationists write the standard feminist claptrap that all men are bad and all women are sensitive and women throughout human history have suffered from tyrannical patriarchs. And liberation from these brutes will happen when women assume leadership over men and bring their "gifts" to the marketplace and battlefield. For example, Wilson writes, "…men have regarded women as mere property, to be used for their purposes—chiefly to perpetuate the lineage. Furthermore, from a heavenly standpoint, such mistreatment of women is equally a symptom of men's spiritual degradation, as they had come to resemble the Archangel more than a True Man." He doesn't say "some men" but "men."

Feminists often give the impression "men bad—women good" and "men insensitive—women sensitive." In all of human history have all women been slaves to uncaring tyrannical fathers and husbands? Isn't the truth that the minority or none of men you personally know are cruel and most if not all the men you know are not blind to the heart of women. What about the chivalrous men on the Titanic that helped the women to safety while they went down with ship? Feminists say nothing about how some women have hurt men. Hasn't history been hard on men also?

Wilson writes that some women are "called to take positions of leadership and public responsibility. We all know of couples where the wife has a greater public responsibility—in politics, business or in the church. In such cases, do not women find value in the vertical dimension of life?" No, these women are out of order and not in touch with their femininity and

should understand that if they think they have been "called" to lead men they are being "called" by evil spirits. Women are supposed to "find value" in being a homemaker instead of leading men or following any man other than her husband.

He goes to say, "The emergence of genuine female leadership represents the emancipation of femininity from its traditionally prescribed role to a more dynamic relationship where, in the words of *Divine Principle,* 'when a subject partner and an object partner become one in a circular movement, the subject partner sometimes acts as the object partner, and the object partner sometimes acts as the subject partner' (*Exposition of the Divine Principle).* The phenomena of women's liberation—to the point where they can experience their fullest value—may reflect the new reality of the Completed Testament Age." Wilson misreads the Exposition book. It is talking about interchanging roles of love, not authority. Sun Myung Moon teaches that women taking subject position leadership is not "emancipation of femininity." It is slavery to Satan. The most "dynamic relationship" a woman can have is to help her husband by being a homemaker who homeschools her children to believe in biblical patriarchy. Is being a cook at a restaurant more fulfilling than being her husband's cook? Is working in a nursing home more dynamic than caring for the elderly in her extended family and volunteering to care for those in need in her church and community?

Women adopting the value system of "the phenomena of women's liberation" which pushes them to leave the home to compete with men is not where they will "experience their fullest value." "The new reality of the Completed Testament Age" will not be the feminist movement, but a return to patriarchy with men looking to Father as an example of a true patriarch and Mother as a true follower. Wilson writes that "fallen cultures" have been "patriarchal and misogynist." The truth is that false patriarchy and feminism are misogynist. Unificationists should be encouraging men to be the loving heads of their homes instead of encouraging men to send their wives out into the dangerous world of male predators who will abuse and kill them. Men should take the bullet, not their wives. I believe Andrew Wilson completely undermines and misrepresents Sun Myung Moon.

In *Passionate Housewives Desperate for God* Stacy McDonald uses the word "dynamic" correctly:

> A keeper at home is the true working woman. Properly managing a household is a demanding job; nurturing little ones, and caring for everyone's needs can be physically and emotionally draining at times. But for a wife and mother there can be no greater joy; no calling more satisfying; no occupation more dynamic.

In Wilson article "Mother God" he says women are supposed to lead men because they are good "listeners." Who does he give as a role model for women? None other than the most famous feminist in the world, Hillary Clinton, who I believe is the worst person anyone could choose as an example of femininity. He says, "Women bring to leadership their gifts in promoting harmony, cooperation and teamwork. They seek buy-in and solidarity for new programs, as for example Sen. Hillary Clinton in her 'listening tours.'" What kind of marriage and family and life does this horrible women have? Compare her life to the famous stay-at-home mom Michelle Duggar. Is the world a better place because Hillary left her home at the White House to go on a "listening tour" so she can more effectively denounce generals as she sits on a Senate armed forces subcommittee? I've watched videos of her nauseating attacks on generals who have had to sit in front of this out of order woman in congressional hearings. There's nothing feminine about her. I disagree with Brother Andrew when he encourages women to go into what he calls the "public forum" and lead men like Hillary does. And if women are so needed in leadership then why isn't there 50% women

presidents and professors at UTS? Why is there such an overwhelming number of men in leadership positions in the UC? Women in leadership over men is so unnatural that even if people think politically correct, their heart and conscience pushes them to patriarchy. Fighting for feminism is fighting against human nature and universal law. The truth will rise in the end and eventually the truth of patriarchy will be seen and then mankind will end this ridiculous social experiment of feminism once and for all. Many people have to learn by doing and learn from mistakes. We've had many years of feminism and it is obvious to anyone with eyes to see that it is a monumental failure. Deep down women want to have and care for babies from their husband more than they want to emasculate men in leadership positions like Hillary Clinton does.

MRS. CLINTON vs. MRS. MOON

Bill Clinton is a feminist who supported his wife leaving her post as First Lady to go to New York and go on a "listening tour" as she campaigned for U.S. Senator. She sure wasn't home in Washington D.C. where her husband lived. Father says a woman is supposed to be home when her husband returns from the "public forum": "When a husband looks tired after working, she should prepare water to wash his face, and toothpaste and toothbrush to brush his teeth, and she should be able to wash his feet and comb his hair" (*Blessing and Ideal Family Part 2*). Hillary didn't spend her day "listening" to her husband like she was supposed to do and she wasn't even in the White House where her husband lived. She should have valued her role as First Lady helping her husband more than seeking leadership as a U.S. Senator.

Mrs. Moon did not act like a feminist when she followed her husband for over 50 years. Unlike like Hillary Clinton she lived as a biblical wife. Feminists argue that if a woman wants a challenging job she should not be restricted to a certain mold. There should be no legal laws in any nation barring women from most jobs. But America and other nations should make it illegal to serve in combat and on board submarines. Those feminists who push for women to leave the home and work alongside other men in the workplace and think that it is wrong for women to put themselves in jobs that entail physical danger like those in the military are deluding themselves. Once men and women believe there are more challenging and exciting jobs than being a homemaker there is a slippery slope to women being trained in military academies like West Point that will train and put women in charge of other men in combat and Annapolis will train and put women in charge of other men on board submarines. Women who leave their homes to lead or be led by other men are not in sync with God's laws and principles. The result will be tragic for the family, churches and the nation as we see in the pathetic situation of families, churches and nations today.

FEMINIST MYTHS OF WOMEN IN THE WORKPLACE

Let's look at Andrew Wilson's statement that "Women bring to leadership their gifts in promoting harmony, cooperation and teamwork." There was an article at familyfed.org that said the same thing. The President of The Women's Federation for World Peace International spoke at a conference in Costa Rica in January 2011. She is quoted as saying, "The 21st Century is said to be the era of women. It is a fact that we have come to feel the limitations of male leadership, which has led history until now, only through its logic of power. Humanity today is in need of women's leadership, which has been described as 'Soft Power,' based on more feminine qualities such as love and service, forgiveness and tolerance, sensitivity and friendliness." The truth is that the twenty-first century will be the era of godly patriarchy. Her put down of men is mean-spirited and false. The last thing this world needs is "women's leadership." She is dead wrong that women are better leaders than men in the public sphere. An internationally respected British sociologist at the London School of Economics, an expert on women in the workplace, Catherine Hakim, says in her book *Feminist Myths And Magic Medicines*:

Myth 12: Women have a different, cooperative managerial style. Another myth that has been overturned by recent research is the notion that women bring distinctively feminine 'soft' and cooperative approaches to management and top jobs. This is one of the most common arguments offered for female quotas. A study of UK companies found no visible gender differences in styles of management. Female managers differ from male managers in their personal characteristics and family lives, but not in the way that they do the job. The study was carried out by a feminist academic who was convinced she would find substantial differences in management style, so the negative finding here cannot be ignored. It is easy to forget that many men employ a "soft" consensual and cooperative style of management that is popular in service sector and knowledge industries.

BALANCE

Wilson in his article "Mother God" gives no practical directives that couples could use to achieve what he calls "ideal balance." He doesn't define what "ideal balance" is or what a true relationship looks like. I don't think Bill and Hillary Clinton show "ideal balance." I do think that Father and Mother looked like an "ideal balance" because Mother followed her husband and made him her career. Wilson writes, "…when women are pushed into the background and denied a public forum, they often find it difficult to express their inmost hearts. They grew accustomed to finding value through the men around them and letting them do the talking. They understood God's Will for them was to support the providence through their husbands. Yet men cannot fathom the heart of women." Do women fathom the heart of men? Hasn't human history been cruel to men as well? Countless men have wept rivers of tears too. Mrs. Moon's husband has cried a river of tears. How can anyone say they know who has suffered the most in human history? Father has been jailed six times and beaten to near death. He was tortured in a concentration camp for three years. How do we calculate human suffering? Feminists are big on saying women have suffered more. I don't believe it. Men and women have equally suffered under Satan.

Feminists see men as brutes, but Father (like the Bible) teaches men to be servant leaders. For example, Father teaches, "To compare man with bone does not mean that man is like a conqueror and totally controlling, like a tyrant. Without the surrounding flesh, the bone has no value or meaning." (4-25-93) Father teaches "balance" this way: "When you listen to people's voices, you will find that women's voices have a higher pitch than men's. Why were women's voices created to be higher pitched? In terms of physical strength women are weaker than men; but in terms of heart and affection women are higher. Then, what about men? Men love broadly. Women are higher in terms of the love for their husbands and children, but men have a deeper heart of love for their relatives and country. This is why we learn from our mother how to love our sons and daughters and our family, and from our father how to love the world. To lean too much to one side creates instability; a balance is struck by linking these two kinds of love together. (*Cheon Seong Gyeong*)

NOAH MOVIE

Andrew Wilson wrote an article in the Unification Theological Seminary's blog titled "Noah: The Limits of Patriarchal Religion." There is not even one sentence in his post that speaks the truth. True Patriarchal Religion has no limits. False Patriarchal Religions and all Egalitarian and Matriarchal Religions have limits because they are false ideologies. Wilson never defines Patriarchy and he doesn't give any details of an alternative other than vague statements about listening to women. Like men, not all women believe in the same values. Wilson should listen to those women who are for godly patriarchal religion. He begins by saying that the viewer of this awful movie will be "rewarded with an encounter with some serious theology." This disgusting movie does not have one minute of truth. I agree that the the creator of this movie does has a

"serious theology"—it is the theology of Satan which is the opposite of the theology of God. Wilson says Christians will "take offense but adherents of the Divine Principle can find much to cheer about." I am an adherent of the *Divine Principle* and I take offense at this movie.

What are Unificationists supposed to cheer about? Are we supposed to cheer about the movie's portrayal of Noah as being weak? Wilson says, "The main dramatic tension in the film is Noah's struggle to understand what God's revelation means. Why build the ark? Is it to save the animals from sinful, carnivorous humans, or give a new start to humankind as well?" Hollywood liberals love and care for animals more than people. Noah in this ridiculous movie is a pathetic leftist vegetarian environmentalist and eventually becomes evil and cruel. The Noah that Unificationists believe in is the Noah taught by Sun Myung Moon who personally talked to Noah. Father Moon's teachings about Noah are the exact opposite of this worthless movie. Wilson writes, "God has told Noah that his mission is to save the animals, but what was the significance of his family? God doesn't say." This is the opposite of what Father teaches about Noah. Noah, we are told has "fear and doubt." The truth is that Noah was fearless and never doubted what he was doing for the entire 120 years that spent building the ark. Noah, he says, "expects God to give him the answers and is frustrated when God chooses silence." Father often said the opposite. He revealed that Noah was never frustrated by how God talked to him. Many times Father spoke of how close Noah was to God.

Wilson writes, "In Noah we can see the limits of patriarchal religion. He is a man who knows the God of judgment, the God who speaks to him from the heavens. The women in the film speak of love and mercy, but since their voice is not the voice of God in heaven, Noah discounts them." The truth is that the most fundamental essence of Heavenly Father is His vast love, heart, compassion and mercy. Wilson writes: "What if he could have understood that in fact God was speaking through those women? But no, that is not his religion. When he finally relents rather than do the unthinkable, he thinks he has failed God, and afterwards loses himself in drink" … "the voices of women that finally win the day." "The women liberate Noah. He is stuck, steeped in his patriarchal view of God" "These women represent the female aspect of Heavenly Parent, who as well as being the Father is also the Mother." They represent Mother God who is for "love and mercy." The truth is that Heavenly Father has enough love and mercy. He says, "The women liberate Noah. He is stuck, steeped in his patriarchal view of God." The truth is that the women in Noah's life were never united with him.

STRONG MALE LEADER

Wilson ends with a criticism of Father, "Religion today has progressed well beyond that of Noah's day. We can understand the God of mercy and forgiveness because Jesus came and taught us that. Yet we are also acquainted with a strong male leader, Reverend Moon, who, like Noah, had to accomplish an extremely difficult task, unimaginable to most people and in the face of great opposition. Armed with a new and overwhelming revelation of what God expected from him, he went forward with absolute determination to succeed, whatever the cost. He stood as an object partner to the patriarchal Father God, who had an essential task for him to perform. Uniting with Him absolutely, he brought Satan to final surrender. Like Noah, he cleansed the world of evil and brought humanity to the dawn of a new age, and like his children, we can all be grateful for the blessings he has passed on to us. … Yet, in the course of ensuring humanity's survival, the Noah of the film almost destroys his own family. Likewise, the cost of Father's victory has weighed heavily upon his family — his spiritual family as well as his biological family."

The definition of a Monday-morning quarterback is "a person who unfairly criticizes or questions the decisions and actions of other people after something has happened." What has happened? Sun Myung Moon asked many people in his life if they had achieved mind/body unity. No one, including me when he personally asked me that question, ever said "Yes." He boldly proclaimed

he always had absolute and total mind/body unity. And in my personal experiences with him I saw how amazing he was. In the book of Matthew Jesus said, "I have compassion for the multitudes." Sun Myung Moon showed that kind of compassion. His achievement in his lifetime is so great that I cannot say he "almost destroyed" his family and me as his spiritual son. The ideal world is coming because he was successful in bringing us the truth of the *Divine Principle* and living by the dvine principles of the universe. If there is any criticism to be dished out it would be on others. What is the use of questioning Father when he accomplished his mission of teaching and living the truth that Jesus said would set us free? Anyone who wants to write a Daddy Dearest is the one who has issues. Father was nothing short of brilliant and loving as a leader. He accomplished his mission of being the Messiah. He was a perfect blend of tough and tender, strong and caring, steel and velvet.

The movie ends with Noah thinking he has to kill the baby of a woman who is not in the Bible but is made to be his daughter-in-law. Noah is seen as some confused, murderous leader who learns compassion and the value of life from a woman. The truth, as revealed by Father, is that Noah's family, both the men and women, did not trust or believe in Noah. He had to build the ark by himself.

Andrew Wilson says men "need to listen to the voices of women." How deluxe is it that a woman commented on his article at the blog. She is Kim Barry. We can only hope Andrew will listen to the wise words of Mrs. Barry who firmly but politely said he has completely missed the point. She correctly criticizes him by saying we need more masculinity, not less. She wrote:

> My comment is about the view that somehow God's masculine side is less compassionate than the feminine side and that it was somehow lacking in the beginning. I don't really think it is the case. Here's an example: Let's say a father has a young son that he loves very much, and says to his son, "All that I have is yours and all that I do, I do for you. There's just one thing I want you never to handle: my motorcycle. Don't even touch it." One day when the father is away, the son takes the motorcycle out for a drive thinking the father will never know. Not really knowing how to handle the motorcycle, he loses control and crashes into a tree. The father comes to the hospital where his son is in casts, traction and covered with bandages. The son bursts into tears and says how sorry he is that he disobeyed the father. The father forgives him completely and explains that once the son was old enough he would have taught him how to ride the bike and then given it to him. That still does not undo all the damage that has been done to the son and to the motorcycle. Perhaps the son may even die from his many injuries. The father's or even mother's compassion cannot really heal their son. There are some actions in life that can mortally wound, either spiritually or physically.
>
> God's seeming destructive wrath does not scream a need for a more feminine, compassionate side. Rather, it may be masculine wisdom to stop the world from continuing on a deadly path and start afresh and new. Noah's problem wasn't that he expressed his masculinity. It was that he showed his lack of total oneness with God.
>
> What is needed is not more femininity and less masculinity. What is needed is more true purity and sincerity in both. The core problem to me remains the difference between angelic men rather than Adamic men. Once men can truly be liberated from the angelic mentality that is ingrained from thousands of years of satanic dominion, then gender balance and other issues will naturally work themselves out. In our culture we have gone so far in trying to give balance,

equality, etc., that it seems that there has been rather an emasculation of our men. It seems that the women get tougher and men grow more effeminate in our culture.

I don't have the space to give all the quotes I found from Father's speeches that show Noah and his family to be the exact opposite of the Noah in this Hollywood movie. Noah should have been respected as the patriarch of his family but Father tells the tragic story of what really happened to Noah. Here are a few of many quotes I found. Let's begin with Sun Myung Moon speaking publicly in all 50 states in America in 1973. In his speech titled "God's Hope for America" he talked of Noah saying:

> God called Noah as His champion. And Noah accomplished a very unusual mission. God directed Noah to build a ship, and he was to build it on the top of a mountain. Now, it is just common sense that in building a ship you need a shipyard by some body of water. But Noah's instructions were to build the ark on top of a mountain rather than at the seashore or riverside. How many of us here could accept that kind of mission? How many of us could obey such a command and set to work without a single shred of doubt?
>
> In Noah's time, no one could believe that Noah had received a command from God — nor did anyone accept him in his mission of revealing the coming flood judgment. Can you imagine how Noah appeared to the people of his day? For 120 years he went up and down, up and down that mountain working on his boat. Would anyone among the ladies in the audience like to think of herself in the position of the wife of Noah? I don't think you would be a very happy wife.
>
> **INCOMPREHENSIBLE MISSION**
> Noah's wife must have packed his lunch basket every day, using only a little food. Noah was so busy with the ark he could not find time to provide for his family. Within only a few months the family squabbles must have begun, but it was not just for 12 months or 12 years that Noah's wife had to sustain her situation, but for 120 years. Why, then, did God ask of Noah such an incomprehensible mission? Why does God have to work that way? There is a reason. It is because of evil.
>
> **180 DEGREES**
> God cannot dwell together with evil. The direction of God is 180 degrees contrary to the direction of evil. God abhors evil! God cannot accept the things that the evil world accepts. So God does not want anything to do with the evil world, or with whatever is tainted by evil.
>
> We are all in the image of God and can find traits similar to His in our human nature. Consider if you have an enemy toward whom you have strong feelings; you don't want to so much as look at that person. Likewise, God will have nothing to do with the evil, satanic world. Therefore, in dealing with it, He chooses ways often incomprehensible to man.
>
> **GOD TESTS**
> God also tests the faith of man. He cannot do this by asking just ordinary things of people. We must be willing to comply with God's extraordinary instructions. We must display to God absolute faith. This is not an easy task. People thought Noah was a crazy man for building the ark. Nobody knew he occupied the central position in God's view.

Here are some more quotes:

> Noah was not affected when his own self, his family; his relatives, his people and anything in the world put up opposition. Fixed on his determination, he clung to God and fought on for 120 years. This became the condition for him to be elevated before the humanity of that time, representing God. —"Let Us Not Weaken Our Determination For Heaven" February 23, 1958

> What kind of person was this Noah? He had to possess a heart that could feel Heaven's heart of misfortune on behalf of the countless people of that time. He could comfort God on behalf of the heart of misfortune that the people of that time felt. Noah shouldered this historic mission and conducted the conflict from the distressful position of misfortune. He was trampled upon, ridiculed, driven out and chased around for the sake of humankind and Heaven. You must never forget the kind of life of Noah.

> What appeared in front of the life of Noah? Since he was the central figure of God's dispensation, whose purpose was to establish the principles of indemnity, the ark appeared representing the sad and unfortunate situation of the 1,600 years. The ark that Noah was faced with represented the historical misfortune. Noah felt a sense of mission to climb over the hill of the 1,600 years of misfortune. Because of this, Noah who shouldered the responsibility, and God, who gave the responsibility, became one in heart. You have to understand that because Noah knew that the ark was entrusted to him as a historical indemnity condition, he had to lead a life of all kinds of misfortunes and walk a thorny path for 120 years.

> Noah received the prophecy that there would be judgment of the earth by water 120 years later. He began to pour out all of his heart to build the ark from that day. However, it was not just for one year. He persevered in building the ark for 120 years. Noah's attitude as he was building the ark was that he was not doing it for the sake of his own family nor was he building it for his own descendants. Moreover, he certainly did not do it for the sake of the evil world. He built the ark only for the sake of accomplishing the will of God and nothing else. You must reflect back upon Noah, who embraced all the sorrows of God and the countless prophets and patriots of the 1,600 years and continued the battle. Although the ancestors who had served the will of God in the past had walked a sorrowful path, Noah conducted endless internal conflicts of mind and body to drive away and overcome the sad and difficult environment that rushed toward him.
>
> He continued this fight for 120 years. While there was no one who sympathized with him, Noah remained loyal with all of his heart for the sake of establishing the will of God. When we think about this, we can see that the heart of Noah was truly a distressed heart that had no precedent in the 1,600 years. Because God recognized Noah only after he went through that kind of process, the day that the promise of Heaven was fulfilled, the judgment took place that could get rid of the grief of misfortune.

> The more Noah shouldered this great providential mission, the less he could lead a comfortable life. He could not live a joyful and peaceful life. His body suffered pain, his mind suffered pain and persecution came from the environment. As you can see, Heaven could stand on his side only after he was put through a difficult crisis in which there was no one on his side. Only after he persevered through 120

years of persecution, sorrow and an indescribable fate of misfortune, was God finally able to emerge as his friend, consoler and leader, who could lift the misfortunes away from Noah.

A good illustration can be found in the time of Noah. Before he received the blessing, Noah was given a commandment which he fulfilled faithfully for 120 years of long suffering in which he exercised great and untiring faith. He made a condition. This was not for 12 months or 12 years. It was 120 years! Even more, the place where he built the ark was not the seashore, it was the top of a mountain. The very moment God gave His command and everything Noah, did could be viewed with skepticism and doubt by all men. It looked like a crazy idea! To the people of that age, it sounded like an unthinkable dream, so they all continued with their usual daily enjoyment — drinking — eating — marrying — and God was forgotten. But for Noah the command of God was absolute. No one truly understood the heart of Noah. He was all by himself. Even his wife could not comprehend, nor could his children understand their father, You can imagine what the relatives said!

The situation which Noah found himself in demanded that he give up all human relationships. He had to cut off all relationships in order to stand and fulfill the new command of God. He could not love his wife and children more than he loved the command of God, For Noah, there was no other choice but the absolute, unshakable, rocklike command. We can well imagine the attitude of the people toward him. For the time being, his wife would have gone along with him because he was her husband.

Initially the children might cooperate with their father because he was their father. But only initially. Before too long, even though it does not appear in the Bible, I know that all the family left Noah alone. They began to reject his program. The whole family began to turn against the master of the house. If he had so little cooperation from the close members of his family, can you imagine the persecution he endured from the outside world? As the days went by, 10 years, 20 years, 30 years, old grandfather Noah became known to the world, as a crazy guy. In time, only Noah alone stood close to God. The rest of the world went farther and farther away from Him. So, from God's standpoint, He had only one choice. There was no other way, no other foundation upon earth, except to rely and depend upon the faith of Noah. God had to seek a foundation. That foundation was so persecuted by the world, and the world so rebelled against it and Him, that a condition was created. God used that foundation in delivering His judgment, and the world had no excuse.

This is merely one example. Before God blesses anyone with a mission and responsibility here on earth — an individual, a family, a tribe, a nation, or a world, whatever the level may be, God will ask that very one to bear all kinds of hardship. He must struggle and win through in this battle. This is the first requirement before the blessing. — "Process Of Restoration" *February 13, 1965*

God sought out Noah and raised him to let humanity, which had abandoned Heaven for the 1600 years after Adam, form new ties of promise. Noah was not looked up to by the people of his time. He was of no importance in the eyes of those people. However, Noah understood the heart of Heaven, who wished to resolve the great regret through choosing a man like him. That is why Noah proceeded forward, surmounting all difficulties for 120 years, holding onto Heaven's will and command.

Noah came to realize the preciousness of the relationship with which Heaven had raised him up, called him and commanded him. The deeper his understanding became, the greater his relationship with Heaven. As days went by, he felt deeply about the greatness of the will of the internal heart of God. For that reason, although no one gave him recognition and numerous people ridiculed and rejected him, Noah did not abandon the building of the ark for 120 years.

The Mental Attitude and Life of Central Figures

Why was only Noah able to keep unshaken faith in God's will, while all people, including the people in his tribe and people on good terms with him, betrayed it? He knew that the ties he had formed with Heaven were greater than the ties he had with his brothers and sisters, his relatives, and even his life. When misery came, he longed for the infinite world with a bowed head, shedding tears with a deeply touched Shim Jung. You should not forget this. — "The Religious Person's Attitude" March 29, 1959

Andrew Wilson is the leading, public intellectual for the FFWPU. On September 27, 2015 he spoke to the New Jersey FFWPU church on the differences between them and Sanctuary. It is on YouTube for all the world to see. Thirty-four minutes into his speech Wilson shows the diagram of the Four-position Foundation. He believes Mother has been successful in her marriage and fulfilling the Four-position foundation. And Sanctuary has kicked out Mother from their glorious Four-position Foundation marriage saying "Mother is given the boot." He denounces Richard Panzer, the American President of Sanctuary, who he says "has advocated family values for years" and now has some new "theology" and is "backa (sp?) in the head." I'm not familiar with that word but it sounds like "bonkers" which means crazy or mad. The truth is that Andrew has a new theology and has gone bonkers. Sanctuary believes that the woman is in the object position in the Four-position foundation and that is symbolized by her being to the left of her husband. The FFWPU has taken down the Unification symbol and replaced it with a drawing that has the man positioned in the objective position. And then they have the gall to use the threat of force to stop Hyung Jin from putting the Symbol on his podium. When you see Andrew speak in front of their (to them new and improved symbol) it is important to understand that Andrew is happy about the idea of women being subject to their husband.

The truth is that Richard Panzer did not give mother the boot. She has given Father the boot and her son, out of respect for his father and her husband, is publicly denouncing her after he had tried to counsel her privately to no avail. She is a heretic and a destroyer and therefore everyone who follows her has kicked Father from his rightful position. She even sits in his chair. Andrew believes that subject and object can interchange and have equal authority. That is Satan's core value to bring chaos to mankind by destroying God's design for marriage. Eve left her position and now Mother is repeating the fall. Father placed Moon Hyungjin to be her subject after he passed. He is the heir, the Second King, not her and she along with the rest of mankind are called by God to respect his subject position.

Mankind has a choice between two men who have gone public. Hyung Jin has hours of breathtaking YouTube videos and Mother has Andrew as her apologist. She has zero intellect and so the FFWPU puts Andrew as their spokesperson to explain the awful changes Mother has made. It will be easy for Mankind to choose who to believe. It is a no-brainer for anyone with half a brain. Hyung Jin Moon speaks the truth and Andrew Wilson speaks lies.

If we had to pick the main difference between Andrew Wilson's sermon that is on YouTube and Hyung Jin's many sermons that are on YouTube and Vimeo I believe it has to do with the meaning of masculinity. Christianity is going through the same debate we are having in the

Unification Movement. There are two worldviews on what is true masculinity—traditional versus feminist. For 1,800 years until the 19th century no one questioned traditional family values.

Dan Doriani writes, “For over eighteen centuries the church was confident that it understood … biblical texts central to the Christian concept of marriage and gender relations. The church’s leading pastors, theologians, and exegetes [critical explanation or interpretation of a text, especially of scripture] held that Ephesians 5 … the leadership of a husband and father [was] difficult to perform, but not difficult to understand.” Voddie Baucham says “a sea change has taken place relatively quickly. What was unthinkable only a generation ago has become commonplace today."

Doriani continues: “A handful … began to question this consensus in the 1800s.” The leading writers and speakers against Ephesians 5 in the 1800s were two men in Europe—the founders of Communism Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels and two women in America—Elizabeth Cady Stanton and Susan B. Anthony. These are pioneer feminists. Doriani says feminism grew in strength and “feminist interpretations of Ephesians 5 started to appear in commentaries around 1970.” When did the Messiah come to live in America? 1971. The ruling ideology of America when Father came to America was feminism. It is now counter-cultural to believe in Ephesians 5. A minority of Christians such as the Southern Baptists and Mormons believe the man is the head of his home but most Christians have become feminist. I have yet to meet anyone from the FFWPU who believes in Ephesians 5. Andrew Wilson confidently writes in his book "World Scripture and the Teachings of Sun Myung Moon" that Father is a feminist. He writes, “Sun Myung Moon’s thought resonates with the dreams of the pioneering American feminist Susan B. Anthony.”

In his sermon given to the New Jersey members and to the world Andrew alludes to Ephesians 5 and puts it down. So we have two very different kinds of men who fundamentally disagree over what it means to be a man. Hyung Jin Moon is a traditional man who teaches Epheisans 5 and Andrew Wilson is a feminist man who finds it deeply offensive.

Andrew speaks for an hour and covers many topics so he probably has more to say and maybe we will get more information from FF. One thing is for sure. We will never get any depth of thought from Mother. All we have ever got and all we will ever get from her is platitudes. She has made a few terse statements about some fundamental issues and fails to elaborate on them. Apparently Andrew Wilson is the brains behind FF.

Thirty-five minutes into his sermon he puts down the Christian belief that a husband and wife have a hierarchical relationship in authority. He says that in the Four-position Foundation diagram “the arrows between God and man are matched by the arrows between God and woman. Just as the man has his relationship with God the woman has her relationship with God. The Christian concept that is current up in Sanctuary is basically a single line where you have God then the Messiah and then you have the bride. So the bride is in the position of object and the messiah is in the position of subject and therefore the relationship of mother and father” is one of “followership. Mother is the follower of Christ. Christ is Father only. That’s Christianity. It’s not Principle. Principle says that God is relating to the husband and the wife each one of them has their blessing. Each one of them has their own relationship with God.”

This is a perfect example of how Satan sounds good but under scrutiny we find that what he says is a lie. Andrew may have academic credentials and years of being a professor of religion and therefore look externally to be intellectually impressive but the truth is that he is profoundly ignorant of what Christianity, the Bible and Father really teach about God’s design for marriage.

He disparages the biblical model of marriage that teaches the husband is the head of his home and the wife therefore follows his lead. They have a leader/follower relationship. In the Divine Principle and in Father's words we learn that men and women have a subject/object relationship. Other words for Subject and Object are Leader and Follower. The topic of leadership is huge and important. Unificationists are called to live and teach true leadership. Synonyms for disparage are belittle and trivialize. Trivialize is defined as: "make something seem less important, significant, or complex than it really is." Andrew trivializes the biblical model for marriage. Hyung Jin uplifts and honors biblical morality.

One of the greatest divisions between FF and SC is how much they respect the Bible and Christianity. Hyung Jin calls us "Completed Testament Christians." This is revolting to FF. They feel they are enlightened and therefore reject the "outdated" idea that women follow men. How many times has Father said women follow men? He said it a million times. He walked his talk and his wife followed him. He was always subject and she was always object. Tragically she has interchanged positions with Father and is acting like the subject. It is not a pretty picture. It may go down as the greatest failure of a central figure of God in human history.

Andrew Wilson says that in the Four-position Foundation for the family diagram "the arrows between God and man are matched by the arrows between God and woman. Just as the man has his relationship with God the woman has her relationship with God. The Christian concept that is current up in Sanctuary is basically a single line where you have God then the Messiah and then you have the bride. So the bride is in the position of object and the Messiah is in the position of subject and therefore the relationship of mother and father" is one of "followership. Mother is the follower of Christ. Christ is Father only. That's Christianity. It's not Principle. Principle says that God is relating to the husband and the wife each one of them has their blessing. Each one of them has their own relationship with God."

I find it amazing that Andrew has been teaching religion for decades at UTS and thinks that Christianity does not teach that a wife has her "own relationship with God." If he thinks that then he doesn't know Christianity. Conservative Christians like the Southern Baptists believe there is a hierarchy of authority in a marriage and family but I have never heard of anyone of them teaching that wives are not to have a personal relationship with God. They believe the exact opposite. Wilson uses a diagram that shows a chain of command, a hierarchy of God, then, man, then the woman. Diagrams can help us to understand concepts but no diagram can ever show all the nuances of thought in human relationships. Just because some Christians may use this kind of diagram does not mean the wife can relate only to her husband and it is only the man who has give and take with God.

Wilson says that men and women in marriage are what he calls "co-authoritative subject partners". He says that they have equal authority and in the case of Sun Myung Moon and Hak Ja Han they have a co-messiahship relationship. Liberals love the word "equal" and "equality." I can give many quotes of Father saying that men are subjects and women are objects and that men lead and women follow. Andrew has quotes of Father that he believes say that women are subject and men are objects and that men are called to follow women. Hyung Jin is the Second King and you will not find any quotes from him or his wife, Yeonah Lee Moon, that would say a wife is subject and leads her husband. I believe if you read Father in context of 60 years of speaking that he is in sync with the Bible and with what Hyung Jin teaches. Hyung Jin teaches that his parents never had a "co-authoritative" relationship and that no Blessed couple should have one.

On October 11, 2015 Hyung Jin read the Constitution of the United States. He began by saying, "The division of the sexes being ordained by God where man is the subject partner and woman is the object partner. Congress shall pass no law that contradicts this divine edict." He rightly teaches

they never interchange positions. Hyung Jin Moon and Andrew Wilson have diametrically opposed worldviews on what masculinity means. Moon Hyungjin teaches God designed men to be in the subject position and Andrew teaches that the FFWPU has the core belief that women are to be in the subject position. Who speaks the truth and who is speaking lies?

Andrew teaches there are two Messiahs (two subjects) and Hyung Jin teaches there is one Messiah (one subject).

How do subject/object relationships work in the real world? If the President of the United States and Vice-President disagree publicly and both give a command to America who do you follow? If you are employed with a company that has a president and vice president and they gave conflicting orders who would you follow? If a pilot and co-pilot disagree who do think the crew should follow? We could do this all day long.

There are never two heads of any position of authority in any organization made by human beings. Andrew teaches the concept of two heads and Hyung Jin teaches the common sense and heavenly truth that there is always one leader who makes the final decisions and in the family that is Dad. Not Mom and Dad. Father clearly made Moon Hyungjin to be in the subject position and Mother to be in an object position to her son along with the rest of mankind, including Hyujng Jin's wife, Yeonah Lee Moon. Hyung Jin speaks the truth that brings order and Andrew speaks lies that brings chaos.

Andrew Wilson says that Sanctuary teaches, "Mother is the follower of Christ. Christ is Father only." He believes Mother is Christ just as much as Father is and I get the impression he feels she is even better at being the Messiah. What is the Messiah? To me the Messiah is a man sent by God to restore the failure of Adam. Adam was a wimp who did not do his duty of leading his wife. He followed her to hell. Father is a man's man, a rock, a strong leader of his wife. Hyung Jin teaches men to be "real men" and lead their wives by "washing her in the word." Real men teach the truth and do their best to live the truth. The Messiah is the greatest teacher in human history. He teaches God's design for marriage and family. God has spoken through other men and women throughout human history, such as the authors of the Bible, but it is the Messiah who answers the fundamental questions of life—especially the question, "What happened that brought evil into the world?" In the Divine Principle we learn about the Fall of Man from the blood, sweat and tears of a man—not a woman.

We read in the Bible, "The man and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God among the trees of the garden. But the LORD God called to the man, and said to him, "Where are you?" And he said, "I heard the sound of thee in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself." He said, "Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten of the tree of which I commanded you not to eat?" The man said, "The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me fruit of the tree, and I ate." Then the LORD God said to the woman, "What is this that you have done?" The woman said, "The serpent beguiled me, and I ate."

It is important to understand the significance of God going to Adam first. Even though the woman sinned first he went to the man because he was her head, her president, her king. It was his responsibility to protect her. He failed to be a good leader and then this gutless weasel blames her and refuses to take any responsibility. When the woman came to Adam he should have repeated the words of truth from God about pre-marital sex. The Messiah is the man who finds out what happened in the Garden and then works day and night to teach this revelation. Jesus was the Messiah. He said, "The truth will set you free." Satan lied to Eve. Jesus boldly proclaimed that Satan is the, "father, the devil. There is no truth in him. He is a liar and the father of lies." Father gives us truth that sets us free from Satan's lies. Father taught what happened in the Garden and he

often taught what it means to be a true man and a true woman. What he taught is politically incorrect in these Last Days. Father and Hyung Jin teach what is also taught in Ephesians 5 in the Bible: Men are to take charge of their families and do the exact opposite of weak, spaced out Adam. Mother, Andrew Wilson, and the rest of the FFWPU tragically teach Satan's theology that emasculates men with their diabolical "co-authoritative" feminist claptrap.

The Messiah says everyone is to read his words every day. His words are life changing. Mother has no words of wisdom. She is a terrible teacher. Her words are of Satan, not God. Andrew is the brains of FFWPU and he is an awful teacher. Mother's son speaks words of wisdom. He is a great teacher. Next to Father I believe Hyung Jin is the greatest intellect in history (along with Kook Jin). He is fulfilling the role of successor by being a great teacher.

Forty minutes into his speech Andrew Wilson says Sanctuary believes it "a wife's position to obey a husband absolutely and accept his point of view in all matters" Andrew is alluding to Ephesians 5:24 that says, "wives should submit to their husbands in everything." He doesn't explain to the FFWPU members in his audience at the New Jersey church and therefore does not explain to the potential 7 billion people on earth who could watch this horrible sermon that Hyung Jin taught Ephesians 5 at his Blessing workshop in April, 2015. It is wonderful video — the exact opposite of Andrew's Bible bashing. Hyung Jin says Ephesians 5 "makes people mad" but it is important to study because it is "the word of God." And indeed it is. It is the most powerful statement on marriage given in the last 2000 years. Tens of millions of couples today try their best to live up to this core value of Christianity. Father, the King of Kings, lived Ephesians 5 and so does his son, the Second King, and it is a commandment from God that everyone organize their marriages on the divine principle that every man is the king of his castle.

Hyung Jin brilliantly explains that Unificationists are Completed Testament Christians who honor the Bible as sacred scripture. Some parts of the Bible are cultural and do not pertain to us today but Ephesians 5 is not one of them. The key passages in Ephesians 5 on marriage are in verses 22-33 which reads:

Wives, submit yourselves to your own husbands as you do to the Lord. For the husband is the head of the wife as Christ is the head of the church, his body, of which he is the Savior. Now as the church submits to Christ, so also wives should submit to their husbands in everything. Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her to make her holy, cleansing her by the washing with water through the word, and to present her to himself as a radiant church, without stain or wrinkle or any other blemish, but holy and blameless. In this same way, husbands ought to love their wives as their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself. After all, no one ever hated their own body, but they feed and care for their body, just as Christ does the church — for we are members of his body. "For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh." This is a profound mystery—but I am talking about Christ and the church. However, each one of you also must love his wife as he loves himself, and the wife must respect her husband.

There have been many books published on Ephesians 5 and there are many articles and videos. Hyung Jin taught from one of those books at his Blessing workshop in April, 2015. Emerson Eggerichs has written a must-read book titled Love & Respect. Hyung Jin teaches some of his insights. Emerson's book is about just one verse of Ephesians 5. Verse 33. He also has a wonderful, must-see, six hour video series with his wife, Sarah.

After Andrew says Sanctuary believes, as he says, "a wife's position to obey a husband absolutely and accept his point of view in all matters?" he asks the New Jersey members, "Does anybody have a family like that?" The audience laughs when he asks this. I wonder if they would have

laughed if he answered the question by saying Hyung Jin and Yeonah have this kind of marriage. I don't think it would be so easy to laugh at Emerson and Sarah Eggerichs' marriage. Andrew is a feminist and feminists hate the traditional family values of Ephesians 5. Those from FFWPU who think they are not feminist are deluding themselves. The FFWPU has been feminist for decades. I know because I have been fighting against the feminism in the UM for decades. I am thrilled that the Second King and Queen are anti-feminists and the UM will now grow because it has the right values.

Andrew Wilson tells the New Jersey FFWPU and the world on YouTube that Sanctuary believes it "a wife's position to obey a husband absolutely and accept his point of view in all matters?" and they laugh. Andrew is alluding to Ephesians 5:24 that says, "wives should submit to their husbands in everything." Andrew asks, "Does anybody have a family like that?"

Didn't Sun Myung Moon and Hak Ja Han look like they had a marriage like that? Didn't Father talk about absolute obedience? Does "absolute obedience" sound like "all matters" and "in everything"?

Father says, "You should feel the family standard keenly. Man is subject and he should stand in the center. The subject should stand in the position of subject, not that of object. The center should be protected and it shouldn't be at an odd angle. He is in the position representing God."

"The wife should be obedient to and supportive of her husband. Of course, it is the husband's responsibility to increase his wife's willingness to do that. The husband should teach the wife how the Principle works. A wife should have the attitude to accept her husband's opinion 100%. She should create so strong an internal bond to her husband that she accepts his actions 100% as well. She should go east when her husband orders her to go. If a woman doesn't follow where her husband goes, she is not a wife at all." (Blessing and Ideal Family)

What do you think of these words of Father? Would our brothers and sisters in Clifton, New Jersey have laughed if Andrew had read these words? Is there anyone from FFWPU here who feel like laughing at Father's these words of Father?

Hyung Jin correctly teaches it is not a 50/50 relationship between Father and Mother: "In True Parents there is an absolute subject and there is a King in True Parents. I know people want to believe it's 50/50. That would make you feel good in the post-modern world—in the humanistic world. Yes, we're so modern. No. You can't bend Messiah to fit you. You must bend your life to fit the Messiah. That's called love." He teaches that his mother is a victorious True Mother because she was his loyal follower for over 50 years of marriage: "Mother's victory is absolute love, faith and obedience to True Father."

Tragically, Mother has left her position and Andrew is happy she did.

Andrew Wilson tells the New Jersey FFWPU that Sanctuary believes it "a wife's position to obey a husband absolutely and accept his point of view in all matters?" and they laugh. Andrew is alluding to Ephesians 5:24 that says, "wives should submit to their husbands in everything."

In my study of books, articles and videos on this passage from the New Testament I have found that there are some Christians who would interpret the words "in everything" to mean there are no exceptions to a wife obeying her husband, but I find most Christians who believe in Ephesians 5 think there are exceptions to this rule and there are times when a wife should not obey her husband. The same goes for all relationships that deal with authority. Even the military would say there are situations where a soldier or sailor should rebel against a superior's order. This is just

common sense. We live in a fallen world and there will be times when a person in a superior position will ask or command someone in an inferior position to say or do something that is immoral, illegal or wrong.

Father talks a lot about absolute obedience but he is realistic and says there will be times when a wife should not obey her husband:

"The subject must protect the object. He has the responsibility to protect. Then what does he have to do? He has to lead. He must point out the direction, which will lead to the right way. So should the wife listen to the words of husbands or not? [They should listen] If the husband behaves like a dog, aware only about the horizontal standard, and believes in himself more than God and thinks that he is absolute, then you do not have to obey him. However, if he listens to his conscience, is concerned about the family, society, and nation, then the wife must try to be in harmony with him. She has to follow her husband." (The Way of the Spiritual Leader - Part 2)

Andrew Wilson focuses in on one word in Ephesians 5—the word "everything"—thinking he can discredit Hyung Jin for teaching Ephesians as the word of God because it that says women are commanded to follow their husbands "in everything" or as Andrew says, "follow absolutely in all matters." Andrew makes it clear that he is against all the Christian thought at Sanctuary. Hyung Jin brilliantly teaches we are Completed Testament Christians. Andrew finds Ephesians disrespectful and unloving to women. The difference between Hyung Jin and Andrew on the Bible is huge. It gets to the core difference between the two camps. The Bible is patriarchal and that gives feminists a coronary. They go ballistic at the idea that there is a vertical relationship between a husband and a wife. Sadly, the FFWPU sides with Satan who hates the idea there is a hierarchy of authority in the family because his number one tactic is to emasculate men and everything masculine. He doesn't want women following men; he wants them to lead men so there will be chaos like there was in the Garden. He hates the traditional family. Countless Christians have worked hard at living up to biblical family values in the last 2000 years. Millions of Christians today honor Ephesians 5 and many of them have outstanding marriages and families. When they find the Divine Principle they can make their marriages even better. That is unless they find the DP as taught by Andrew, Tyler, and company. If they find Hyung Jin's videos then they can get some incredible truths that will save some marriages and dramatically improve others. If Christians and others live be Andrew's values they will go down a road to hell paved with good intentions.

Andrew has a hard time with Ephesians when it says wives are to follow their husbands "in everything." He misreads the Bible and interprets this to mean there are never exceptions to a wife obeying a husband. Andrew gives only half of the verse; the last part about women submitting, but he leaves out what came before. Here is the whole verse: "Now as the church submits to Christ, so also wives should submit to their husbands in everything." To what degree should the church submit to Christ? 100%, 99%, 50%? In everything? Doesn't Father often talk about "absolute obedience"? Doesn't he walk his talk? He says he is in absolute obedience to God.

The problem we have in this verse is that the Messiah is a perfect man and husbands are not. Therefore we have to be realistic and understand that some husbands, even those who are "saved", believing husbands, will give commands that are not godly. There are some Christians who would say the wife should obey their husband anyway and he will take responsibility for it. I think they are in a tiny minority and they are wrong. One such Christian is Elizabeth Rice Handford. In her book *Me? Obey Him?: The Obedient Wife and God's Way of Happiness and Blessing in the Home* she writes, "It is impossible to find a single loophole, a single exception, an 'if" or 'unless.' The Scriptures say, without qualification, to the open-minded reader, that a woman ought to obey her husband." I appreciate her heart but we need to take the Bible as a whole. Acts 5:29 says, "We

ought to obey God rather than men." If we have a conflict between God's commandment and man's commandment we obey the higher authority.

In his repugnant sermon Andrew Wilson informs the New Jersey Family Federation that Hyung Jin and those at his church at Sanctuary teach it is "a wife's position to obey a husband absolutely and accept his point of view in all matters". Then the New Jersey members laugh. Hyung Jin and those who support him are seen as a joke. Andrew is telling his fellow brothers and sisters at FFWPU that wives at Sanctuary are Stepford Wives: "a servile, compliant, submissive, spineless wife who happily does her husband's bidding and serves his every whim dutifully. 2.) Can also be used to describe a wife who is cookie-cutter & bland in appearance and behavior. Subscribes to a popular look and dares not deviate from that look. This term is borrowed from the fictional suburb of Stepford, Connecticut in Ira Levin's 1972 novel, The Stepford Wives, later made into movies (in 1975 and 2004). In the story, men of this seemingly ideal town have replaced their wives with attractive robotic dolls devoid of emotion or thought."

I don't see Hyung Jin teaching this kind of submission and I don't see Yeonah as some kind of Stepford Wife. Andrew is alluding to Ephesians 5:24 that says, "wives should submit to their husbands in everything." There are some Christians who take this literally and push for unconditional absolute obedience. I found the following online:

"This kind of teaching has for many years been spread by Bill Gothard in his Institute in Basic Youth Conflicts which is a seminar attended by many thousands each year. He teaches what he calls "Chain-of-Command." He teaches that if there is a conflict between the will of God and the wishes of parents, then the young person should obey the parents. For example, if a young man determines that it is God's will for him to go to Bible school but his parents want him to go to the university, then he should go to the university. If a young person determines that it is God's will to marry a certain woman and his parents wish him not to marry, then he should not marry. The whole philosophy behind this teaching is this: REGARDLESS OF WHAT GOD'S WILL IS, THE PARENTS' WILL SHOULD BECOME GOD'S WILL FOR YOU. This is dangerous teaching because it elevates the parents' authority above God's authority and it makes their will greater than God's will. It puts the parents above God."

He goes on to say: "In determining God's will concerning schooling or marriage or vocation, certainly the wishes of parents should be considered. There are times, however, when a believer, following God's Word and the Spirit of God's leading, will need to honor God, even if this means going in a direction that the parents may not understand, and may not even approve of. The difference can be carefully and prayerfully considered and the right course pursued.

In Matthew 4:21-22 James and John responded to the call of Jesus by immediately leaving their boat and their father in order to follow the Lord. They did not say, "Lord, we would very much like to follow You, but first let us go and consult with our father Zebedee to see if this would be in accord with his wishes for our life." Remember what our Lord said, "He that loveth father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me" (Matthew 10:37)."

Hyung Jin is not following his mother because he is following the higher authorities of True Father and Heavenly Father.

Most Christians who do believe in Ephesians 5 believe there may be times a wife does not follow her husband. Here are five prominent Christian theologians on this:

Klyne Snodgrass writes in his book "NIV Application Commentary: Ephesians": "[Eph. 5:24] "If a husband asks his wife to do something inappropriate for a Christian, again, she should not

submit. Her attitude must be the same as the early church in Acts 5:29: 'We must obey God rather than men!'"

Peter Toon says in his book, "Free to Obey": "In certain obvious circumstances the wife will not be able to submit. . . . If her husband is not a Christian and seeks to interfere with the very basic relationship she has with her Lord, then she will reluctantly have to disobey him as graciously as she is able. Also, when she deeply believes something to be right or wrong, she will have to refuse to obey her husband if he asks her to go against her conscience. Whatever is not based on faith is sin (see Rom. 14:23). For example, if her husband asked her to sign an income tax form on which were definite false statements, she would be right to refuse to obey him. The same principle applies to any inaccurate or illegal proposal."

William Hendriksen writes in his book *Exposition of Ephesians*: "[submission] is not absolute. If a husband should ever ask his wife to do something which in her conscience (illumined by Scripture) she knows to be wrong, she has the right and the duty to disobey her husband (Acts 5:29)."

Francis W. Beare writes in his book *The Interpreter's Bible: Ephesians*: "Certainly the wife's subjection to her husband is not unconditional, as is her subjection to the Lord; it is conditioned by the fact that he, unlike Christ, is a sinful and fallible human being like herself."

Tim and Beverly LaHaye write in *Spirit Controlled Family Living*: "Submission is the key word. The only exception to this absolute rule is if the husband should ask her to do something that is contrary to the teachings of the Bible, such as stealing or committing adultery. Then he is no longer acting under the authority of God, who never authorizes us to do something that He has previously disallowed. For the Bible teaches that '. . . we ought to obey God rather than men' (Acts 5:29)."

John MacArthur writes in "The MacArthur New Testament Commentary: Colossians and Philemon": "Submission is not absolute. There may be times when a wife must refuse to submit to her husband's desires (if they violate God's Word).

Andrew is unread on Ephesians 5 and is incompetent to teach anyone about biblical marriage values unlike Hyung Jin who is a wise and brilliant teacher.

Wilson asks if anyone has an Ephesians 5 type of marriage. He is unaware that some Unificationists have written in favor of the traditional marriage. Here are three examples of praise for Helen Andelin's book Fascinating Womanhood that teaches the biblical patriarchal family.

Her book used to be very popular in the Unification Church. Nancy Hanna is a prominent sister in the church and wrote a review of the book in a church publication. She says it is the best book ever written on the proper roles of men and women. Mrs. Hanna says: "*Fascinating Womanhood* is the self-help book for a happy marriage and happy homemaking 'par excellence.' Few books have caused me to think so deeply about myself and taught me so many 'new' things. I say 'new' because much of the content isn't new at all, but part of the timeless wisdom of the ages that has been swept aside in the tidal wave of the women's liberation movement. Given the current social attitudes, this is not a likely book for someone to be reviewing favorably. It clearly delineates between the masculine and feminine roles—a very out of fashion thing to do, but I think Unificationists will feel right at home. ... the book is about the deep, spiritual qualities of womanhood." She writes that UC sisters need this book because they often develop "masculine qualities. Talk about strong women! Unificationist women are the strongest women I know."

"A great deal of unhappiness in American life today comes from the rejection of masculine and feminine roles, and even Unificationists are susceptible to these cultural influences. That's where the value of a book like this comes in." In regard to patriarchy, she says, "I'm grateful that my husband always insisted on being the leader and didn't let me dominate him."

Other sisters have also praised this book. Fran Ichiyo in an article in a newsletter for Women's Federation for World Peace encourages all women to buy and study the book: "Get the book *Fascinating Womanhood* by Helen Andelin. I learned a great deal from this book. It is hard to swallow, but once you do it tastes great!"

If God is our parent then why do we call God Father? Sun Myung Moon knows God better than anyone. He explains how God can have both male and female characteristics and still be primarily masculine:

> Why did God create the universe? The reason is that God wants to realize the relationship of Father and children centering on love. So we can come to the conclusion that the foundation of the universe is the relationship of Father and children. (6-20-82)
>
> Within Him, God has both masculinity and femininity, but to exist as Father, His being is that of a male subject. (8-1-96)
>
> Is God masculine or feminine? (Both.) God has both dual characteristics, but how does He appear, as a masculine God or a feminine God? Masculine is in the subject position and the giving place. Feminine is the object and the receiving place. Do you understand? That is why God is portrayed as masculine, the absolute Subject. (2-5-95)
>
> Although we know through the *Divine Principle* that God contains within Himself the dual essentialities of masculine and feminine, we also know that God is the universal subject and as such has a primarily positive nature. (1-30-83)
>
> We know that God exists in both masculine and feminine essentialities, positive and negative characteristics. However since God is the universal Subject, we know through the *Divine Principle* that this is characterized as a masculine aspect. (1-2-83)

VISIONARY LEADERSHIP

God created men and women as his image but every man and woman have both the male hormone testosterone and the female hormone estrogen. This means men and women can be very different but they can understand each other and have some characteristics of the other. Men are more aggressive and women more passive but each can understand the other because each has testosterone and estrogen. God has both male and female characteristics but He is to be looked at as masculine as Jesus said in his famous prayer, "Our Father who art in heaven." The quotes of Father above prove that God is a patriarch. The core value of God is biblical patriarchy. Patriarchs lead, provide and protect women and children and they have the capacity to nurture as well. God made men to be in the subject role and women to be in the object role. Men and women have equal value but different roles and responsibilities. God is a true patriarch who leads, provides and protects his children. God wants all men to be true patriarchs who lead, provide and protect women and children. The key to understanding God is to understand visionary leadership. Men are natural leaders and women are natural followers as we saw in the relationship of True Parents and any other truly successful man/woman relationship in human history. Men give vision. They are

future, goal-oriented. Women are more into the now because children are more into the now and women are made to be the primary nurturers of babies.

SINGLE GOD, NOT PLURAL GODS

It is out of the question to say the plural "Heavenly Parents" or "Heavenly Father and Mother" because that means there are two Gods. The use of the singular, gender-neutral "Heavenly Parent" does not sound right either but as long as we use pronouns like "He", "His" or "Him" when using it then it is not so bad. With the plural words we have to use terms like "They", "Them" and "Their" which negates the idea of One God. Those who advocate feminizing God are feminists. Elizabeth Cady Stanton was the pioneer feminist in America in the 19th century. She wrote a book called *The Woman's Bible* in which she writes that there was thousands of years of matriarchy before the last 6000 years of recorded history that was patriarchal. Then she predicts: "Recent historians tell us that for centuries woman reigned supreme. That period was called the Matriarchate. Then man seized the reins of government, and we are now under the Patriarchate. But we see on all sides new forces gathering, and woman is already abreast with man in art, science, literature, and government. The next dynasty, in which both will reign as equals, will be the Amphiarchate, which is close at hand." Feminists like the word equality and define it as being the same or interchangeable. They do not like the idea of God given roles for men and women. The end result of feminism is a blurring of the roles. We see this today in our unisex, androgynous culture. Feminists like to think there was a past matriarchy but that has been proven to be false. There has always been patriarchy until the 20th century.

MATRIARCHY

Those who push for women to leave the home to find fulfillment and be leaders of men often seem to think women are morally better than men. They see men as basically warlike and women as basically peaceful and therefore we should have a matriarchy. Charlotte Perkins Gilman wrote *Herland*, "a utopian novel in 1915. The book describes an isolated society composed entirely of women who reproduce viaparthenogenesis (asexual reproduction). The result is an ideal social order, free of war, conflict and domination." Phyllis Chesler wrote in *Women and Madness* that feminist women must "*dominate* public and social institutions". In her book *Scapegoat: The Jews, Israel, and Women's Liberation*, Andrea Dworkin said that she wanted women to have their own country. Elizabeth Gould Davis believed that a "matriarchal counterrevolution replacing 'an old patriarchal revolution' ... is the only hope for the survival of the human race. Rosemary Radford Ruether is a prominent feminist theologian who said, "Christianity is riddled by hierarchy and patriarchy." She has a book titled *Goddesses and the Divine Feminine: A Western Religious History*.

Who are these women? They are all feminists who despise patriarchy. What is the result of feminism? It is the breakdown of the family, the church and the nation. Because feminist ideas are the norm we have birth rates so low that nations are literally dying. We have massive divorce. We have churches that are impotent in gaining, keeping and inspiring members. Today there are liberal so-called Christian men and women who push for the feminist agenda. Wayne Grudem writes about them in his book *Evangelical Feminism: A New Path to Liberalism?*. He says, "The egalitarian agenda will not stop simply with the rejection of male headship in marriage….There is something much deeper at stake. At the foundation of egalitarianism is a dislike and a rejection of anything uniquely masculine. It is a dislike of manhood itself." "Following the denial of male headship in marriage, and the denial of 'manhood' and anything uniquely masculine other than the physical differences among human beings, it is to be expected that egalitarians would blur and then deny God's identity as our Father. This is exactly what has recenty happened in egalitarian writings." And then he proceeds to quote from books pushing to call God "Heavenly Mother": "What is the doctrinal direction to which egalitarianism leads? To an abolition of anything

distinctly masculine. An androgynous Adam. A God who is both Father and Mother, and then a God who is Mother….feminists are revising our understanding of God our Father as revealed in the Bible [and in True Fathers words and the Divine Principle]. They are thus changing the doctrine of God as revealed in Scripture to make people think of God as 'Our Mother in Heaven'." They are undermining the authority of the Bible [and I would add the writings of Sun Myung Moon] in its very description of God himself. Changing our idea of God is nearly the final step on the path toward liberalism." And that step is approval of homosexuality.

IDEAS HAVE CONSEQUENCES

We can argue abstract theology all day long but let's never forget that in the end ideas have consequences in the real world. What is the practical application of feminist intellectuals in the UM who push for women's equality without any understanding of what true masculinity and true femininity look like? What are the fruits of feminists? In practical life their ideology ultimately leads to endorsing women police officers and women in combat which makes Feminists anti-femininity and anti-woman. Unificationists cannot say they are against the Bible teaching women to be homemakers and ignore Father saying women are supposed to follow their husband and also say they are not feminists. Many people may define feminism as an ideology that hates men. They are wrong to do so. Feminism is the belief that men and women can and should interchange roles. Feminism is the opposite of Patriarchy. Feminists hate patriarchy. They hate the idea that there is a Masculine God who leads mankind and that men on earth are to reflect God and lead women. Feminists either deny the Bible as misogynistic or they believe the Bible has been misinterpreted as being patriarchal. The truth is the Bible as well as Father's words are patriarchal from beginning to end and the Bible and Father's words are from God. The Bible is patriarchal and human history until the 20th century was patriarchal. We have had a hundred years or so of feminism. The result has been a decline in physical health, mental health and spiritual health. Because women left the home in droves we have the sickest society in human history.

VISION

God gave a vision of an ideal world in Genesis 1:28. True Father is a visionary leader. He urges us to make God's vision of an ideal world a practical reality. Father has a vision, an ethos, guiding beliefs, ideals, an ideology of freedom. Father says this on vision: "with my sharp reasoning, deep philosophy, and penetrating vision and dream for the sake of the world, don't you think God will get excited about me?" (1-1-80). "The greatness of the Unification Church lies in its vision, in its conviction that it will not compromise, regardless of how difficult the road is. It has a great vision, yet it is realistic about the present" (6-29-80). I ask. How does a woman who does as True Father did and have many children have time for another job? Women who climb the corporate ladder or build businesses don't have the time or interest in having big families. And what about the many grandchildren a woman would have if she had many children?

IN THE KITCHEN

Father says women "work in the kitchen" and should not be aggressive and they should appreciate the "aggressive nature" of men in the marketplace and battleground:

> Men and women certainly have different characteristics. Would it be better for us to follow the men or women's direction? I tend to agree with the men that we had better follow the men's direction because men are basically born with an outgoing, aggressive nature.
>
> The characteristics of men and women are very obvious when they have extra time; men are always going out to find some adventure while women sit down to do needlework or draw pictures or work in the kitchen. What would have happened to this world if there had been no men but only women pioneering human civilization?

If there were only women to advance human civilization, we might still be living in a primitive age. Do you women agree? It is women's nature to disagree and answer no, even though inside they know it is true.

All things considered, what are women really good for? Who designed your clothes, women or men? Answer me honestly, who runs faster, men or women? Who designed the watches and created the eyeglasses and made the beautiful rings that you women wear? You women are sitting idle and trying to exploit men, aren't you? Do women at least show gratitude and humbly accept whatever is given to them, or are they always trying to take advantage, taking more whenever they are given something? (5-21-77)

SUN MYUNG MOON SAYS "WOMEN STAY HOME"

In the book of collection of quotes of Sun Myung Moon titled *Cheon Seong* Gyeong we read, "True happiness for a woman is to meet her true subject partner in love. Men and women are opposite in all aspects. Women are uni-directional, while men are multi-directional. Also, women stay home, while men travel here and there around the world. These are opposite types of personality. Through what do these men and women unite as subject and object partners? They unite through love." (page 389)

There are many books and DVDs praising the godly role of wife and mother. Laura Schlessinger wrote a book titled *In Praise of Stay-at-Home Moms*. I've never seen praise for stay-at-home moms from any Unificationist leader or intellectual. Because of feminism we now have more women in the workplace than men in America.. The Unification Church is filled with feminists who say they are not feminists and love men but they work to build a matriarchy that emasculates men. In Jin Moon, in her three years as president of the UC of America, constantly complained about women being victims of patriarchy and the need for a matriarchy. The Women's Federation for World Peace has been led by women who push for a worldwide matriarchy. In Jin taught and lived feminism and the result was her creating the greatest scandal in the history of the UC. If you go down the road of feminism you go down the road paved to hell. The atmosphere of the UC is feminist and this leads to behavior like In Jin did. Now that the UC has experimented with feminism and even the ultimate feminist with In Jin Moon can it learn by trial and error, by being tactile, that feminism doesn't work? Can all those who love the idea of women leading men in the home and marketplace and hate patriarchy take a look at the values in this book? I hope so. During the three years In Jin was brainwashing the church for matriarchy the patriarchal, conservative, Christian Duggar family had a live-in camera crew filming their traditional family for cable TV. Their family is happy and In Jin's marriage was a complete disaster.

Not only have some long time followers and leaders in the Unification undermined Father, but even some members of his own family have misrepresented him. One blatant example is when his daughter, In Jin Moon, stood next to him as his translator into English when he gave a major historical public speech on April 16, 1996 to a crowd of dignitaries. The person who introduced Father was the United States Senator from Utah, Orin Hatch. He gave this speech in Washington D.C. His speech was filmed by C-Span. You can watch him give this speech and even buy a DVD of the speech at (http://www.c-span.org/video/?71251-1/TimesF). When you watch him speak in Korean and listen to In Jin speak there are two times when she totally mistranslates what he said. I have a son who is highly proficient in the Korean language and he says Father spoke what is in the printed text of the speech. Why did Father's daughter mistranslate? It is because she is a feminist and objects to his traditional family values.

We learned in Chapter One of the *Divine Principle* that Father often taught the traditional, Biblical worldview that God is primarily male and made men to reflect his leadership by having women be in the object position to men just as men are in the object position to Heavenly Father. This

ideology is called Patriarchy. The opposing ideology is called feminism. Father often said such politically incorrect statements like: "Men are in the subject role and women in the object role" (4-29-79) and "The female follows the male. The male follows God" (4-19-2004). These kind of statements are offensive to feminists.

WOMEN BEING OBJECT IS OFFENSIVE TO FEMINISTS

So when Father twice made these kind of remarks she changed what he said to be in line with her ideology of feminism. Sixteen minutes into the speech Father said, "God created Adam first. He was to be the son of God and at the same time the substantial body of God Himself. Later, God created Eve as the object of Adam so that Adam and Eve could perfect the ideal of horizontal love, which is conjugal love. Eve was to be the daughter of God, and also, as a bride she was to perfect substantially the ideal of the horizontal love of God." This is the printed text of the speech and what he verbally said. She fundamentally changes what he said and wrote by saying the word "partner" instead of "object". So, instead of saying Eve was "the object of Adam" she says Eve was the "partner" of Adam. The idea of women being in the object position to men is disrespectful, chauvinist and repulsive to feminists. To them, this shows the Bible and all the other patriarchal religions demeaning women into second-class status.

Twenty-five minutes into his speech Father said, "If Adam and Eve had become a couple of True Love centered upon God, God could have dwelt in Adam as His substantial body and thus loved Eve. What is more, Adam and Eve could have become True Parents who substantially embodied God, and become the origin of the love of goodness, a life of goodness, and a lineage of goodness." In Jin says the opposite of this. Her father said "in Adam" and she said, "his children" and then leaves out Father saying "and thus love Eve" and says instead "thus shared their love." She just can't say that God made Adam to be his "substantial body" but has to substitute "his children". Father is speaking the language of patriarchy and she can't bring herself to say the words. She changes Father's words to sound egalitarian instead of men being in a vertical position to women. Just as Jesus' family were not perfect followers of the Second Adam, Father's family are not perfect followers of the Third Adam. In Jin Moon completely undermines and misrepresents Sun Myung Moon.

GOD IS OUR VERTICAL FATHER

We learn in the *Divine Principle* that God is our parent who has both masculine and female characteristics but is mainly our Father. How can God be both male and female and still be called Father? Sun Myung Moon says, "What kind of person is God? He is our vertical Father." (10-4-94) God made us, male and female, in His image. This is why there are an equal number of men and women born each year. Men and women have equal value but they have different roles. God made everything in the universe to fit in a pair system—plus and minus, male and female. Every person has the male sex hormone, testosterone, and the female sex hormone, estrogen. Men have ten times more testosterone than women but all of us need both hormones. Men have feminine hormones but men are primarily masculine. This is how we reflect God's dual characteristics of male and female. God and mankind are not androgynous.

God is invisible and made us to be his other half. A man and a woman are only one-half of a whole. Together they become one and when they do this perfectly they reflect God. God and mankind have a subject/object relationship and men and women have a subject/object. God leads men and men lead women. Men and women are different but they complement each other perfectly. Just as a lock and key are both essential for each to have meaning God needs us to become whole and complete, and men and women need each other to become fully functional.

"MASCULINE MAN"

Father once said that Jesus was a manly man, "Was Jesus a manly man or was he effeminate? He

was, of course, very masculine. Would it have been a sin if Jesus, as a masculine man, wanted to marry a woman, or would that have been unrighteous? God's providence is for a righteous and perfectly masculine man to become one with a perfectly feminine woman." (2-19-89) Father is the ultimate manly man.

I found the following quotes from Father online. On April 19, 2004 Father spoke on Parents Day in the New Yorker Hotel Grand Ballroom in New York City. Michael Jenkins, the president of the American movement, posted some rough notes of Father words and another brother posted his notes. Jenkins advises the reader that these are very rough notes and should not be seen as exact quotes of Father. The following are some of Jenkin's notes:

> The main topic is the importance of man and woman. Should woman go around men or should men go around women? Western sisters, please respond. Well, the woman is smaller and shorter so actually it is natural that the man should be the center and help the woman. The woman should revolve around the man. Should he abandon her or protect her.
>
> The man should have the purpose of protecting the woman.
>
> Husband and wife must become one now.
>
> Those people who are husband and wife should hold hands. You must become one now. The man should have the purpose of protecting the woman. Depending on the motivation direction and purpose of our actions the result will be determined. There must be harmony between husband and wife. If you fight there should be an agreed upon punishment for the one that is wrong. Like one eyebrow will be cut off!! (laughter). We must make harmony and overcome the differences.
>
> We must accumulate good conditions to achieve harmony. The way for the woman to unite is to educate her husband's relatives about God. You should achieve harmony—not be fighting. Raise you hands if you pledge not to fight but to achieve harmony. Don't lower your hands if you are not willing to achieve harmony.
>
> Do you husbands and wives sleep together. Husbands and wives fight and don't sleep together. Husbands should take care of the wives. From the touching of the top of the head to the bottom of the feet you should serve your wife. Do you sleep with clothes? You must now sleep together without clothes. You must be very intimate to achieve harmony. You must follow the principles and laws taught by the parents. All relatives would like to visit you with this kind of spirit. So from now all husbands and wives must sleep naked. You must have a right heart to bring harmony between your brothers and sisters and bring harmonious relationships.
>
> **ONLY ONE HEAD**
> I made Rev. Kwak the central figure of all because there cannot be two heads. There must be unity between Rev. Hwang, Rev. Yoon and Rev. Kwak. There can be only one head.
>
> From today on husband and wife must sleep together naked. When something is done wrong you should agree on the punishment, maybe you can pinch each other!! From now on you should sleep naked with your spouse. If you can't be with your spouse you can hold your pillow.

The following are some notes another brother took at this speech and posted online:

> The female follows the male. The male follows God. Should the female complain? American woman, should men go around women or women around men? Men are usually larger, so it's better for women to go around men rather than over. Men should help women. Women, are you happy this way? When woman goes round man, should man abandon her or protect her. When man goes hunting or to work, man leaves woman at home, for her protection.
>
> Man is the bone. Woman is the flesh.
>
> Man should be in the position of protector to woman.
>
> If you fight from now on, you should have some sort of agreement on what the punishment should be. Woman can take out an eyebrow or remove a nail. There should be that sort of punishment (laughter).
>
> Husband and Wife, do you sleep together or separately? ("together!") Naked or with clothes? Don't laugh! This is serious.
>
> You should sleep naked and touch each other. Should the wife be ashamed of holding onto the man's sexual organ? There will be so much fun and excitement there. Today I'm going to allow you to do whatever you want to do. If you don't become that kind of couple you will become very insecure. From now on we need to sever the fallen nature. We have to remove our old layer of skin.
>
> Father and mother should teach their children how to be intimate. What do children prefer to see: husband and wife loving or husband and wife fighting? Our fun experiences should be taught to the next generation. All the neighbors will come and visit because they like those kinds of people.
>
> From today on, do not fight! Should you have more children or stop having children?
>
> I hope you will achieve the day of not fighting each other. This is God's wish.
>
> I ask that you sleep together naked. If husband asks for his back to be washed should wife be upset? You need to have the right heart.
>
> Husband and wife should go to bed naked not in clothes. If husband or wife does something wrong you need to have an agreement as to what the punishment shall be. A single life is no good.
>
> By the age of 24 we should already have children as parents.

God is our loving Father who like all fathers wants the best for his children. The three main qualities of a patriarch are to be a provider, protector and leader. A patriarch gives the vision to his followers. We are to be good followers of God. What is God's vision? The main goals God has given us is to fulfill the Three Blessings He gave in the Genesis 1:28—to be fruitful, multiply and have dominion. He also told Adam to rule over Eve and He commanded Eve to be her husband's helper. In the *Divine Principle* we learn that Sun Myung Moon discovered how the Fall of Man took place. The angel Lucifer, now called Satan, deceived God's first children and became the ruler of this world. Satan usurped God's position and has been mankind's patriarch ever since.

God has worked to send a man to restore Adam's failure and a woman to restore Eve's failure to be true parents. That couple is Mr. and Mrs. Moon. When mankind accepts them as "True Parents" then God will become the ruler of this world.

Suzanne Fields writes, "The Democrats are the sensitive Mommy Party, eager to make government ever more maternal; the Republicans are the severe Daddy Party, eager to make the citizens ever more independent and self-sustaining."

Neal Boortz in his book *The Terrible Truth About Liberals* says, "Liberals operate from a foundation of emotion and feelings. Conservatives operate from a foundation of logic and facts." And "Liberals think government made America great. Conservatives think that freedom is what made America great." Democrats are more feminine and Republicans are more masculine. Democrats look to government as their husband and father. Republicans look more to the family and local government to solve problems. There is a Cain and Abel division of strength and weakness between the two parties.

I will end this chapter with some thoughts on personal and governmental finances a man may want to consider.

NEVER GIVE OR TAKE A LOAN

Dave Ramsey is a famous writer and television talk show host on the subject of money. He advocates living a debt free life. The one exception is a mortgage and he counsels that a couple save up and buy a home with cash and never get a mortgage but he knows that some will buy and he advises to get a 15-year mortgage instead of the usual 30 year loan. I don't believe he's right in making a home an exception to the rule. The rule is pay as you go and never take a loan. Unificationists should never take out an automobile, school, business or credit card loan. We should be purists and absolute about loans and never take them. All debt is evil and the only way we may acquire debt is when we are forced to. For example, we may have to go to the hospital and end up not having enough money and forced to make payments. We may be taken to court and a judge forces us to pay someone or the government and we have to make payments. Debt is so bad that I feel families should create a dynasty where no one in any generation has debt and we should work to persuade our country's politicians to adopt a pay-as-you-go philosophy and never incur debt.

In our personal finance we should learn from Dave Ramsey who teaches that we should never own a credit card. If you have any cards please perform a "plasectomy"— cut them in two and throw them away. Never use them again and make sure your loved ones never own a credit card. For renting a car and buying online use a debit card that acts like a credit card and in general pay with cash because those who use debit cards usually spend more than if they paid with cash.

Dave Ramsey's books have some good ideas. Another writer on personal finance that you may find has some good ideas you can use is Stacy Johnson.

BEST BOOK ON FINANCE — *MEN'S MANUAL VOLUNE II*

I highly recommend *Men's Manual Volume II* written by Bill Gothard and Jim Sammons. Sammons teaches from the book in his 16-hour DVD series titled *Financial Freedom Seminar*. You can buy the book and DVDs at the website for the Institute in Basic Life Principles (ww.IBLP.org). I encourage everyone to read the book and watch Jim Sammon's DVDs. It is the best book I have ever seen on finance. Every Unificationist brother should own this book and teach it to everyone they know.

The book and Jim both state that loans are of Satan. Godly people should never take a loan or give a loan. They look at Romans 13:8 and say that it means that under no circumstance should any

individual, church, business or nation should be under the bondage of a loan. "Owe no one anything, except to love one another; for he who loves his neighbor has fulfilled the law" (Romans 13:8). Jim speaks eloquently and powerfully about the godly principles of finance. On loans he explains that it stops a person or group from letting God do his magic supernaturally in our lives to give us what we need in the best way possible. When we take a loan we are saying we don't trust God to provide and give us guidance. Taking a loan prevents us from having God's best.

I believe that a man should provide a debt-free home for his family and he should work to provide debt-free homes for his children. That means that the future generations never take out a mortgage. Religious communities are given the responsibility to provide debt-free homes for single mothers and widows who have no blood relatives to care for them. Check out *Buying a House Debt-Free: Equipping Your Son* by Steven and Teri Maxwell.

Men's Manual Vol. II is wrong in saying that women can have a home-based business because of Proverbs 31. They see the home as a "craft center." The book says:

> Many businesses were created as a result of people using their skills to meet needs in the home. Not only can home products become a means of income, but they can also be a source of fulfillment to the family and encouragement to others. One mother had a special ability to grow plants. Soon she was providing plants for exclusive offices in her town. The ability not only provided additional income, but it also provided a significant opportunity to witness to her customers. A mother who uses the home as a craft center, however, must be careful to keep her priorities in balance. She must be sensitive to her husband's cautions and counsel, and she must not allow her business to crowd out her family's needs.
>
> God explains the qualities of a praiseworthy mother in Proverbs 31. A significant amount of space is devoted to her ability to use available resources in providing quality items for her family, as well as for others.
>
> She seeks wool and flax, and works with willing hands. (vs. 13)
> She considers a field and buys it; with the fruit of her hands she plants a vineyard. (vs. 16)
> She perceives that her merchandise is profitable. Her lamp does not go out at night. (vs. 18)
> She puts her hands to the distaff, and her hands hold the spindle. (vs. 19)
> She makes herself coverings; her clothing is fine linen and purple. (vs. 22)
> She makes linen garments and sells them; she delivers girdles to the merchant. (vs. 24)
> She rises while it is yet night and provides food for her household and tasks for her maidens. Her children rise up and call her blessed; her husband also, and he praises her... (vss. 15, 28)

I have never seen any Christian criticize Proverbs 31. But I do. The passages above are often used as a justification for women to have a home-based business and that to earn money for the home is good. I think that if a girl or woman earns money, no matter how much, she emasculates the men in her life and gives a wrong signal to other women. We have to be one hundred percent in our values. It is a slippery slope from babysitting, garage sales, and home-based businesses to a full-time career. As soon as a man gets money from a woman he starts thinking he can't provide for his family alone and becomes weak. Women become independent and the end result is that Satan will destroy the family and nation by getting girls and women out of home and dealing with other

men financially. And this will lead to many problems. Men being providers and women being homemakers and not interchanging these roles is a law of the universe. It is a divine principle as powerful as gravity. Respect it and you prosper; reject it and you suffer. Unificationists should never borrow or loan money, even in emergencies. Figure out how to get by and build a debt-free

Shakespeare said it well:

> Neither a borrower nor a lender be;
> For loan oft loses both itself and friend,
> And borrowing dulls the edge of husbandry.

DEBT FREE HOME

Parents should not match their son until he has a stable job. If parents or other relatives want to help a young couple financially they can give gifts but never give them a loan. It is fine if a father, grandfather or friend gives a young man some money. Ideally, the father and grandfather would give him a debt-free home, but if they can't help then he needs to be able to support his wife and work to save enough to own a home debt-free. Every brother should have the goal of giving a debt-free home and debt-free investments that produce a living income to their children. Father says, "When you die you should not die with assets. They should all be given to others." (1-1-05)

SEDUCED INTO DEBT

John Cummuta writes in *Are You Being Seduced Into Debt?: Break Free and Build a Financially Secure Future* that debt is "cancer" that drains "the financial life from your future." He tells his story of how he got into trouble with debt: "Then one morning I found myself staring in the mirror at a face that looked like a prisoner of war's. Deep, dark circles framing hollow eyes with no personality. I felt helpless and hopeless, and no matter how I looked at it, I couldn't see a way out." He worked on paying off his debts and writes:

> As I sit here writing this book, we have no debts, we own everything in our lives, and we live off the cash flow generated by our investments. And we accomplished this with our paychecks!
>
> But the fact that the system [they used] worked so well and so quickly actually made us angry, because we realized how we'd been manipulated into believing we'd have to live with debt till we died. We have gone from paycheck to paycheck, handling the money over to creditors, taking for granted that we'd always have a car payment, always have a house mortgage, and always have credit card payments.
>
> **WE WERE MANIPULATED**
>
> A little self-analysis revealed that my desire for success and self-gratification had been used against me to overextend myself. … The average American household members earn nearly $2 million over their working lives, but they give nearly all of it away trying to keep up with or impress their neighbors. In other words, they do it for pride. As the Bible says in Proverbs 16:18, "Pride goes before destruction." The Merchants end up laughing all the way to the bank, and you end crying all the way to the poorhouse, or to an early grave.
>
> We eventually went rural, moving to southwest Wisconsin, 150 miles from any big city. Out here it's much cheaper to find a nice home for far less than in urban areas. We bought thirty-seven acres of rolling farm fields and woods for less than $500 an acre, and because we weren't married to the opulent house model anymore, we put a modest two-level cedar home on the property.
>
> The word *mortgage* comes from the root words *mort* (death) an *gage* (engage or grip), so "mortgage" = "death grip." Nothing could be more appropriate, because if

you die—either physically or in terms of losing your income—the mortgage company has a grip on your home.

We are currently experiencing a foreclosure rate of more than two hundred thousand a month! And yet millions of Americans continue … living right on the edge of foreclosure. They need everything to go right—every month—or they risk falling behind financially. This kind of pressure is more than most people can bear, and many don't.

Lois and I took little vacations throughout the year and drove through all our prospective retirement areas to experience them. We had decided to leave the hustle and bustle of the city behind and go rural, so these trips were scenic and somewhat like reverse time travel. We saw images from days gone by, like three generations eating breakfast together in the local restaurant. The kids in these small towns dressed and acted like normal, happy young people. Their hair was not all the colors of a rainbow, and most of them would likely make it through today's airport security without setting off any detectors. The local newspapers weren't filled with murders, drugs, and strife, but rather with local government issues, and the successes of local residents, high school sports teams, and students. One of my favorite front-page headlines was "Cat Bites Woman." If that's the worst thing that happens in a week, I want to live there.

MORTGAGE FREE

There is a fascinating book titled *Mortgage Free!, Second Edition: Innovative Strategies for Debt-Free Home Ownership* by Robert L. Roy that gives his story and other stories and insights on how to speed up owning a home by building it yourself or participating in the building. Be sure to read his book. This appears on the back cover:

> Here is a banker's worst nightmare, a book that tells you how to live without being enslaved to financial institutions. Rob Roy offers a series of escape routes from indentured servitude, underscored by true stories of intrepid homeowners who have put their principles into action.
>
> "Yes! It's about time somebody put together a how-to book for shedding those chains of a 30-year mortgage. We don't have to slump through life in bondage. We can live well AND have our freedom." –Janet Luhrs, author of *The Simple Living Guide*
>
> "Rob Roy challenges another of life's 'givens'—that your mortgage, like your job, will last almost as long as you do. This useful book will entertain even armchair explorers of alternatives to the standard consumer life." –Vicki Robin, coauthor with Joe Dominquez of *Your Money or Your Live*

Rob Roy has excellent books and DVDs showing you how to build homes for a fraction of the cost of normally build homes. As your children are growing up have them help you build homes for them and for your grandchildren. Roy has a website (www.cordwoodmasonry.com) where you can see snippets of his videos and you can watch snippets of Jim Sammons videos at his website (www.IBLP.com). Study books and DVDs on building your own home.

Rob Roy writes in his book *Mortgage Free!* (Google books has some of the book's text online):

> The value of a college education is not questioned by the overwhelming majority of Americans, and yet how many have examined this "standard wisdom" analytically and considered the alternative?
>
> College is great for those who know exactly what career they desire, and which degree they require to get there. Unfortunately, for many, college becomes an expensive extension of high school for at least the first couple of years. To be sure,

> there is a social life that has value— even if its main component is "party time"— but the worth of the entire package must be weighed against the alternatives. In her book *Possum Living*, Dolly Freed compares college costs with one such alternative, the one that is the subject of the book in your hand: "Owning your own home free and clear—that's the key to all the rest. Once you have your snug harbor, your safe base, all else comes easy. You can tell the rest of the world to go to hell if you want, once you own the roof over your head. I believe that some parents who are willing to give kids a college education would be doing the kid a better turn by giving him that money to buy a house instead. Once he realizes he doesn't have to worry about it, instead of having his future rammed down his throat— he'll make his own future."

Another interesting book on building your home is *How to Build Your Own Log Home for Less Than $15,000* by Robert L. Williams. He was 60 years old with a wife and a fourteen year-old son that built a 4,000 square foot home by themselves by cutting wood from trees with a chainsaw. Regular builders would have charged hundreds of thousands of dollars but they did it in 18 months. *Mother Earth News* magazine had a cover story in their April/May 1995 issue titled "Chainsaw Palace." You can see pictures and read his story at MotherEarthNews.com and there is an article by him about his home at www.backwoodshome.com/articles/williams16.html. There are more and more websites such as www.dirtcheapbuilder.com and videos at Youtube.com of people building houses very cheaply such as with earthbags. Maybe it would be best to never get a mortgage and save up and build your own home. The more I study and think about loans the more evil they look. Perhaps we should be absolute about loans and borrowing and never do it. I believe the best built homes and the best value for your money are concrete dome homes. Check out David B. South's excellent book titled *Dome Living: A Creative Guide For Planning Your Monolithic Dream Home*, his website www.monolithic.com and watch videos for free on YouTube.com about these amazing homes.

A father should own a debt-free home and spend the rest of his life investing his money in real estate so he can give debt-free homes to his children and grandchildren. The best investment is debt-free real estate. We need to buy as much land as we can for the future generations. Land will be priceless in the future. We don't need mutual funds and stocks. When the depression hit America in 1929 many people who put their money into stocks lost everything overnight and many couldn't pay their mortgage and lost their home. Those who put their money in paying off the mortgage on their home had the security of having a roof over their head.

If we look far into the future don't we see our finite planet becoming crowded if we have huge families? I understand it is extremely expensive to buy land in Japan now. Land in Hawaii is very expensive now. Every square inch of earth will be precious in the future. Let's buy land so our descendants will have room to build homes and have open spaces to explore nature. Governments are notorious for taking private land by force. In America it is called eminent domain. So let's buy land in different places for our descendants to enjoy God's creation just in case some places are taken away from us against our will.

In *Walden*, Henry David Thoreau writes of his experience living simply saying: "There is some of the same fitness in a man's building his own house that there is in a bird's building its own nest. Who knows but if men constructed their dwellings with their own hands, and provided food for themselves and their families simply and honestly enough, the poetic faculty would be universally developed, as birds universally sing when they are so engaged."

Men should start training their sons at the age of 13 to begin the process of earning money. At 16 a young man should be working and preparing to buy a nest for a wife. Teenage boys should have

become dependable, mature, serious workers with skills that can earn them a living wage. Rick Boyer is the father of 14 children and has written how he has done this. In his book *The Socialization Trap* he says that, "The purpose of childhood is to prepare people for adulthood. By this we should know better than to separate childhood from adult companionship. ...Eighteen-year-olds now have the vote, but most of them don't know how or for whom to vote." He goes on to explain how John Quincy Adams, the sixth president of America, was home schooled and how mature he was at 14. A hundred years ago boys were apprenticed to learn a trade. Teenage boys need to start being trained to earn money and teenage girls taught how to be excellent homemakers. Boyer's sons started working at their construction company at 15. Please read the books by Mr. and Mrs. Boyer to gain valuable insights into how to raise your children. To see their family and order their books visit their website www.thelearningparent.com. In *The Hands-On Dad* Rick Boyer writes:

> A critically important aspect of providing for one's family, specifically his children, is the issue of teaching a trade. It would be hard to overstate the importance of this. Thousands of young people graduate from high school or college each year and are launched upon the world with no realistic idea how they're going to make a living. This seems unbelievable, but it's true. The average high school graduate is qualified for nothing but an entry level position, and some of them don't even really qualify for that due to poor communication (such as reading) skills. It is possible today for a young man to receive a PhD without ever having done an honest day's work in his life.
>
> I don't say that only those who do manual labor actually earn their money. I am simply arguing that every young person, before they graduate from high school or home school, should know how to do something that other people are willing to pay them to do. If they haven't learned some valuable skills and work habits by that time, they may very well be in for some serious problems.
>
> Ten years ago I started a drywall contracting business. ... I saw to it that my sons learned the trade and something about business in general as well. Today, if they choose, any of my three eldest sons could start a similar business of his own and make enough money to support a wife and children from the first week. Along with that, they have a degree of business savvy unusual in young men of their age. Add to that the qualities of diligence, endurance, orderliness, etc., they learned on the job, and I have no fear for their job security.
>
> I have a friend who did the same thing with his sons in his dental lab. And it can be done in almost any family-owned business. I realize that is not an end-all solution for the young man who wants to do something as an adult that is totally different than what the father does, but any good skill will pay the college tuition or provide the initial investment for one of any number of new business plans.
>
> What if you're not employed in a family business or something else in which you can teach your children your job? Get creative. There are a number of other possibilities.
>
> Find your son a part-time job that you feel will be good experience for him. Help him start a part-time business or cottage industry while still living at home. Help him locate a job with an apprentice system in which to train. Teach him to invest whatever money he has in something that will earn more money. Arrange for some kind of correspondence course.
>
> ...start while your son is young. Jesus was twelve years old when he said, "I must be about my Father's business." Evidently that was the norm for boys in that day. The idea would serve us well now.

Boyer says that a man should be careful about choosing a job:

> Some jobs pay well in money but require too much time away from home, too much distraction from family because of stress, or even place Dad in a position of temptation by forcing him to spend time in too close contact with women. The workplace is a hotbed of immorality.
>
> A factor which I consider important is whether a man's children can be apprenticed in his business. Our family still owns the drywall business I started ten years ago. Three of my sons have been apprenticed in it and a fourth is now starting. I have no particular desire for any of them to spend their life doing that trade; but I want them all to learn to earn and manage money along with the many other practical skills and character qualities that come from learning to work while young.
>
> Is your vocation what God wants it to be? Is it honoring to God? Does it meet your family's financial needs? Can your children be involved in it to some extent? Does it offer you an opportunity to use your spiritual gift?

Be sure to watch the DVD series called *Entrepreneurial Bootcamp for Christian Families*. Here are some other titles in the series that give great insights into how families can earn money and grow closer together as well as witness to others: *Building a Business from Start to Finish* by Wade Myers, *An Entrepreneurial, Family-Based, Multi-Generational Business* by Joel Salatin, *How to Cultivate an Entrepreneurial Spirit in Your Children* by Arnold Pent, and *The Blessing of Failure* by Jim Leininger. Every father and son should watch these godly patriarchs and learn insights into how they can build businesses together instead of being wage slaves to outside people. Check out the DVD *Entrusted With Arrows: Entrepreneurial Home School Fathers* (www.entrustedwitharrows.com). Watch the first three minutes at YouTube.com about fathers who quit their careers to work and spend time with their sons and family.

In his book *The Second Mayflower* Kevin Swanson encourages men to build their own business instead of working for large corporations. He writes:

> Hundreds of thousands of free-enterprising people have flocked to network-marketing businesses just for a chance at exercising their entrepreneurial inclinations.
>
> A free country will be a country of de-centralized business simply because freemen have the courage, the innovation, and the diligence to succeed without a need for the security of large corporations and governments. … There will be few large corporations and millions of small businesses. The corporations today are needed by a populace who do not like to risk much for profit; they are people who love the security of big government programs and big corporate programs. … We should not underestimate the value of living debt-free and corporation-free as we begin to understand and appreciate the concept of freedom. The freedom from the human masters of creditors and corporate management is something worth seeking.

He says we should have an economy of "home businesses to bring fathers home to their children as they were in the agrarian age." In *Safely Home* Tom Eldredge says:

> God's message to fathers, so beautifully articulated in Deuteronomy 6, was that they were to walk alongside and train their sons throughout the course of the day. This meant that though there may be an infinite diversity of lawful forms of labor and commerce by which a man could provide for his family and develop the strength of the family economy, his work could never be at the expense of the mandate to walk beside his children and train them in the way. Consequently, a man's occupation had to be inherently family-friendly, or he would be unable to obey the Lord as a

father.

> Perhaps this is one of the most important messages for men to consider today: It was important for a father to have an occupation that allowed him to spend time with his sons. Men must develop a lifestyle which allows them to integrate work, home, education and children. Parents who want to train their sons for biblical success, must begin by freeing them from the modern philosophy that the priorities of the "job" should drive the lifestyle of the family. The precise opposite is true. Wise parents will train their sons to develop skills with which they can exercise dominion over the earth for the glory of God, provide for their families, and walk in the way with their children for the purpose of training them and raising up another generation for the glory of God.

I think that a son should find employment that can keep him near his parents. Satan works hard to divide families. God wants three or four generations to live and work close to each other. The power of united families is beyond our imagination. Just think how secure everyone would feel if families had several businesses that were all debt-free. If a business failed because of competition, mismanagement or lack of interest it wouldn't matter because the extended family would have many businesses and live off the tip of the iceberg. There could be so many privately held businesses that it wouldn't matter if some businesses failed or were given up. Every young man and man would be free to experiment at being an entrepreneur. The businesses would be looked after by a group so there would less chance of one man making serious mistakes in business.

Jobs are fine for those who fit into someone's business but it seems to me the best thing to do is have so many family owned businesses worldwide that the descendants would always have businesses to run. Every generation would be born into secure wealth and never worry about finances. They would be taught to be humble and religious. Each generation would be educated to care for the family businesses and compete ethically with other businesses for customer loyalty. Descendants for thousands of years would build on previous generation's businesses and create new businesses without being proud, haughty, arrogant, greedy, irresponsible, lazy, or spaced out because the competition is fierce and they would have the character to know that the only way to achieve success is to be excellent and serving. Just because a business is successful today does not mean it will always be. Each generation is taught to be alert to the marketplace and keep the businesses competitive and profitable. The men would teach the boys to work hard even though they are wealthy to make sure that each generation is richer than the last.

The Mormons teach a strong work ethic. In their book titled *Family Guidebook* they teach these values, "Family members should improve their ability to read, write, and do basic arithmetic, and should take advantage of every opportunity to obtain knowledge and improve skills. They should obey the Word of Wisdom and eat healthful foods. Where possible, families should store a year's supply, or as much as possible, of the basic items needed to sustain life. Family members should avoid unnecessary debt, save for the future, meet all of their obligations, and use their resources wisely, avoiding waste." The books on their practical values encourage their members to work very hard and never take government welfare. Even in natural disasters many Mormons have not taken help from the government. They often store not only food, but clothing, first-aid, water, soap, toilet paper, diapers, portable gas stoves, fuel, candles, matches and medicine.

The Boy Scout motto is "Be Prepared." Many Mormons do this. In their church magazine one person gave an example of how self-sufficient and prepared Mormons are. Following the 1972 earthquake in Managua, Nicaragua the only thing the Mormons there asked for was a particular medicine, "the only thing sent to these Saints from the United States was typhoid serum." It is not the responsibility for government to care for people who suffer from natural disasters. Families and Churches should take care of people. Ezra Taft Benson (General Conference, October 1987),

the former leader of the Mormon Church said: "I ask you earnestly, have you provided for your family a year's supply of food, clothing, and where possible, fuel? The revelation to produce and store food may be as essential to our temporal welfare today as boarding the ark was to the people in the days of Noah." Unificationists have to go beyond the standard of Mormons and live in communities that not only have food but are stocked up enough to go for several years without help from the outside world. Maybe the world is so corrupt and stupid in their ignorance of how Satan has organized this world in the Last Days that it will all come to an end with total, worldwide bankruptcy or nuclear war that will end the functioning of governments. I don't mean to sound fear-mongering or scaremongering but we must plan for worst-case scenarios. Millions of families and many nations in history have woke up one morning and found themselves so far in debt they have to declare bankruptcy. All was well until the day it all fell apart. This happened with the Berlin Wall and the Soviet Union. This happens to countless people who abuse their body with sugar and then wake up one morning with life-threatening cancer or just fall dead from a heart attack. You can't violate God's universal principles and escape judgment. What are the consequences of President Obama acting like a socialist? He wants to nationalize health care. The government has no business in regulating any industry. Where is the logic of forcing everyone to give money to so-called health professionals when it is they who have caused the epidemic of diseases ranging from cancer to heart disease to diabetes etc.? They should get less money. Once they get more power they will use that power to stifle and even stop those who they call quacks who really do have the cure for these diseases like those I list in this book. Maybe it will take massive collapse of civilization for mankind to get off the hamster wheel they are madly running in and reevaluate their lives and beliefs.

Mary Pride writes in her book *The Way Home*, "I really wonder why, when humanists have so plainly captured our higher educational institutions, parents think it is worthwhile to spend a small fortune to send their children into this sea of degeneracy. … Obviously Christian parents who care are going to have to be more careful about their children's college education than most people are today. I would like to suggest, just to be radical, that you seriously consider not sending them to college at all. With the cost of college now averaging $10,000 a year, the price of four years of college and a year of grad school would pay for setting your son up in his own business. He could spend those five years working for free, getting trained in the line of work that interests him. At that price, anyone will hire him, no matter what the unemployment rate is. Consider it an unofficial apprenticeship, after which he can be his own boss for the rest of his life. As for 'intellectual stimulation,' there is always the public library and the Christian bookstore. Any young man who spends five years reading and studying the classic literature of our and other civilizations will be an educated man, whether he goes to college or not."

The two most famous men in America are George Washington and Abraham Lincoln. They never went to college. Both were working full-time when they were 16 years old. When George Washington was 15 years old he became an apprentice to learn surveying. When he was 16 he was on his own and traveling in the wilderness as a professional surveyor. When he was sixteen he bought his first acres of land. He saved his money and kept buying more acres of land. He loved the land. When he was 20 he joined the military and worked his way up to general. What helped him in the military was his knowledge of the frontier that he had lived in for four years.

Abe Lincoln was working full-time at age 15 at his poor family farm and he was skilled at using an axe to cut trees for neighbors who hired him when he was 16 years old. When he was 20 years old he apprenticed to study law. Both men had very little formal education. They were self-educated and loved books. Washington was self-conscious about his lack of education and built a library and studied on his own his entire life. As a boy Lincoln would walk long distances to borrow books like *Robinson Crusoe*, *Pilgrim's Progress* and *Aesop's Fables*. He borrowed books on the life of Washington. He read the *Bible* carefully.

Another famous person who was working full-time when he was 16 years old was Thomas Edison who is the greatest inventor of all time. He discovered the light bulb and phonograph. He is the father of electronics. Thank God his parents had many children. He was born the youngest of seven children. When he started school his school teacher didn't think he was capable of learning. After three months his teacher told him so. Edison hurried home and told his mother what the teacher had said. She went to the school and had a heated discussion with the teacher who told her that Tom was not teachable. She never let him go to school again. When he was 12 years old, he had a full-time job selling newspapers on a train that went to Detroit. He would take breaks from selling papers and do experiments with chemicals he bought. One time he caused a fire and they told him to stop. One day when the train was sitting at a station, he saw a young boy playing on the tracks. He saw an unmanned railroad car rolling towards the boy. Thomas ran and pulled the child to safety—barely missing getting himself crushed too! The boy was the station agent's son who was so happy he had saved his son's life by risking his own that he gave Tom a job as a telegraph operator. When he was 16 he was working full time away from home as a telegraph operator in Canada. He worked nights so he could read. Edison believed in hard work. He worked 100 hours a week his whole life. He said, "Genius is one percent inspiration, and 99 percent perspiration." Edison praised his mother for homeschooling him and said, "She instilled in me the love of learning."

Benjamin Franklin was the 15th of 17 children. He was working full-time for his father at age 10 and when he was 17 he was on his own. Andrew Carnegie was an immigrant boy all alone at the age of 13. He worked his way up to be one of the richest men in America. Franklin and Carnegie worked very hard, were voracious readers and loved libraries. We must educate our children to be strong, self-motivated and ambitious.

Rick Boyer in *The Hands-On Dad,* says that we should try to live as an extended family: "Where shall we live? This is a question which I think gets too little attention these days. The American Way seems to be: you send your child far from home to get the most marketable education available, there he or she meets and falls in love with someone from another place far from home, they graduate, marry and move to a third place far from home for the sake of the most lucrative job available. Then they have children who never get to really know their grandparents. This deprives the grandchildren of the benefits of being close to those in the family who have the most life experiences to share, the grandparents of the sense of purpose that comes from helping their grandchildren learn to live, and the young parents of the readily-accessible counsel and dependable babysitting services of their parents.

"It's a dumb system and the fact that almost everybody does it fails to make it any less dumb. Nowadays every generation reinvents the wheel in learning to be parents because they have separated themselves by distance from the most dedicated counselors we ever have, our own parents.

"I hope to live in such a way that my children will want my counsel and my ministry in the lives of their sons and daughters. I also want to teach them that there are more important things to be considered in the choice of a vocation than the potential for big income, recognition or whatever. What shall it profit a man if he gains all these advantages but loses the more important advantage of cohesiveness between the generations? A rich child is he who has a close relationship with loving parents *and* grandparents as he navigates the tricky shoals of youth."

Mary Pride is disgusted with the selfishness and individualism of so many parents and grandparents today. In *All the Way Home* she writes that they do not want to

> offer their services as tutors and helpers ... In fact, the idea that each generation should be totally independent of those preceding or following is so strongly ingrained in American society that even mentioning grandparents as helpers to

young families sounds faintly pushy.

I sometimes wonder if the elderly's dogged insistence that they "don't want to be a burden" on their children by, say, living with them reflects an underlying fear that these same children who were left to sink or swim on their own will reciprocate when given the chance. These same independent-minded elderly vocally defend their Social Security and Medicare dollars, leading me to believe that independence is not so much the issue as is not wanting to admit that generations in a family need each other.

The Bible, of course, clearly says that the generations *must* help each other. Grandparents are not supposed to hop into the Winnebago and vanish over the horizon. They are supposed to teach their children how to teach, and then help teach the grandchildren to make sure the parents follow through. Adult women are supposed to have a home in their father's house until married. Grown children, in turn, are supposed to take in the dependent oldsters in their families.

The fact that our parents and grandparents never played by these rules means that they are not trustworthy sources of information on family management. Today your grandma or mom is as likely to tell you to get sterilized after the second baby comes as she is to come and help after the birth. In fact, *more* likely. Judge the attitude of this generation by the adults-only rules in their Florida retirement communities. If they don't want to be around children, how are they going to be able to help you with yours?

Understanding what to do with money is central to living. If men in their homes and men in government had a pay-as-you-go philosophy they would eliminate a lot of financial problems in the world. It is crucial that we end world poverty. All women, in their heart of hearts want to be a full-time wife and mother and not worry about money and waste their time earning money. It is wrong for men to think that women should work because women don't have enough to do in the home or that the home is not fulfilling enough. It is wrong to think that it would be more efficient and productive for women to spend their time earning time to buy food and clothing instead of growing it and sewing it themselves. We have to stop being obsessed with money and get focused on what is truly productive. Men should take time to do some farming even if they are rich and can afford to buy all their food. It is spiritual to spend time on the basics of life instead of specializing only on making money and buying everything from others.

NO RETIREMENT

True men do not retire at 65. Father is in his 90s and works hard all day long. Grandfathers should work hard and smart so they can help their grandchildren A blessed man should give his wife and daughters an allowance for the things they need to buy. No girl or woman should be burdened with earning and managing money. Fathers and other men should never give girls or women the nerve racking chore of bookkeeping for a man's business and home. Women manage the money given them by their husbands, fathers, or guardians and live within the amount they are given. The man pays all the bills. He does not burden his wife or daughter with the finances. How about the idea of three or four men in a trinity closely watching each other's finances and three or four women in a trinity watching over each other's expenses for the allowance given them?

In his book *Thriving During Challenging Times: The Energy, Food and Financial Independence Handbook* Cam Mather writes that Matthew Simmons, the author of *Twilight in the Desert: The Coming Oil Shock and the World Economy*, believes "that we're all going to end up living in villages again" because we have reached peak oil in the world and there will be no more cheap oil to allow people to live in suburbs and drive to work. Out of necessity families will be living closer together and helping each other. If the economy went bad wouldn't it be safer to live in a home with a mortgage than one that is rented? You can get your family to move in and share.

Living as a community is much safer, especially if the economy goes under and there is mass looting and roaming gangs. Mather writes, "The best security I think comes from living in a community." He says we should "take a more radical approach" to our finances:

> One of the best ways to prepare for an extended economic downturn is to get your financial house in order, and for most of us that means paying off debt. And our single biggest debt is usually our mortgage. You need to pay off your mortgage and you need to do it as soon as you can. The best way to keep the wolf away from your door is to get that mortgage off your back. Being mortgage-free opens up a world of opportunity.
>
> I understand what your response will be. Sure, it's easy for you to just say "pay off your mortgage" as if it's easy, but it's not. It's a lot of money and doing it early is going to be a challenge. But you're going to have to change your behavior and do it. You're going to have to focus on this goal like a laser on a target and commit everything you can to doing it. You're going to have to alter your behavior from being a consumer to being a saver. You're going to have to stay out of malls and stores. You're going to have to start making do with what you have, and when you really need something you're going to have to find places to borrow it or buy it used. You're going to be so focused that you start picking up all those pennies and dimes you used to walk past on the sidewalk and putting them towards your mortgage. Americans take great pride in their ability to pull together and attack a challenge, whether it's winning World War II or putting a man on the moon. You have to make that same commitment to paying off your mortgage. [How about politicians making it a commitment to paying off the national debt?]

He says he has never made big money but he has been mortgage-free for 15 years and he tells of how his family did it. For example he says:

> You don't need a high income to become financially independent. You need to be frugal and you need to get out and stay out of debt. But you have to be solely focused on this one goal. A weekly trip to the mall will not help you in this cause.
>
> Each year as the car got older and older and we wanted a new one, we held off. Eventually whenever we took a long trip we'd rent a car. Keeping the beater on the road and renting a car for longer trips that required a more dependable car saved us thousands of dollars. For years we continued in our single-minded mission of paying off our mortgage. Snowsuits got used a third year when they were probably tighter than the kids would have liked and vacations were canoe trips in provincial parks.

After five years they paid off their mortgage and took the money to buy a home in the country. He writes: "Of all the feelings in the world, there are few that rival the feeling of leaving your bank without a mortgage. We photocopied our mortgage and had a ceremonial burning in the fireplace that night. It was as though a huge weight had been lifted from our shoulders or the storm clouds had left our home and the sun had come out. Suddenly anything was possible. And it's time you experienced this same feeling of freedom. It's going to require sacrifice though. It's going to mean keeping that downhill ski equipment a couple of years longer than you'd like. [they live in Canada]. Heck, it means not downhill skiing at all. It means heading for the local ski swap or reuse centre, picking up a pair of used cross country skis, and finding a forest or trail near your home to ski for free. It's cheaper and better cardiovascular exercise.

"To get independent you need to save your more money and spend less. You need to pay off

your debt and start saving. It's not rocket science…. It's really simple. Stop buying stuff. Pay down debt. Save money. Period. End of story."

I like this story about this family being obsessed with paying off their mortgage. They did it in five years. I hope this story does not entice you to get a loan and then work hard to pay it off. I only gave the story to emphasize the seriousness of being debt free. This family should never had taken a mortgage in the first place. If you have a mortgage now I think you should sell your home and find a place in the countryside. If you don't have enough money to pay for a home in cash be open to good deals in living as renters until you can save up enough money and be open to the universe that may give you some other amazing plan that will get you into a debt free home that you could never imagine on your own. Once you make up your mind to get a home debt free and let the universe know about it you may find it is given to you much faster and more creatively than you could think of by yourself.

STAY AWAY FROM THE STOCK MARKET

The last quote I'll give from *Men's Manual Vol. II* is how very important it is about not investing in the stock market. Men should invest by giving their children debt-free homes and debt-free farms and businesses that their children can run that will make them financially independent. The book says:

> The most important investments that a man can make for his future are in the lives of his family and in the spiritual welfare of others. A man's investments in his family may involve … assistance in securing and maintaining homes for his married children. Additional investments should be in functional assets, such as land and equipment, which insure freedom of operation during lean financial times. A functional asset is an item that is useful to you now, but could be easily traded for other items when your needs change.
>
> As a general rule, do not invest money in things which you cannot control, such as stocks, gold mines, and oil wells. Rather than expecting others to manage your investments, buy only those things that you can care for and which enhance the freedom you have to carry out the work that God has given you. Investments should be made from abundance and not from needed family or business income. It must be a separate program, and it must in no way put pressure on the family.
>
> By far, the wisest and most rewarding investments of all are those that are given to God for the furtherance of His work. The Scriptures are punctuated with commands, warnings, and promises regarding the need to lay up treasures in heaven rather than on earth.
>
> Giving to the fatherless and widows. "Religion that is pure and undefiled before God and the Father is this: to visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep oneself unstained from the world." (James 1:27)

It would be better for most young people to get a debt-free house from their father than a paid-for college education. In the special features of the DVD *Maxed Out* Dave Ramsey talks about investing in retirement funds and saving money for your kid's college education. He is wrong. Get a debt-free home as fast as you can and then build homes for your children and those you love.

Larry Burkett is one of America's most famous Christian financial advisers. He writes:

> Prior to the 1920s, Americans were characterized as frugal, self-reliant people who had a strong faith in God. Debt was certainly not unknown, but it would have been unusual for the average American to borrow for anything other than the purchase of a home, and even that loan was for no more than seven years or less.

Having a debt-free home should be one of your primary financial goals. If you're like most homeowners, you probably did a double take when you read this principle. After all, the common wisdom is that it's always best to have a mortgage on your home so that you can take advantage of interest write-offs on your tax returns.

But I take issue with this common advice. In the first place, it's relatively recent common advice. As mentioned earlier, during the 1920s nearly everybody in the United States owned his home debt free. But today, nearly everyone leases a home with a mortgage attached. In other words, we've shifted from a principle of outright home ownership to a principle of home leasing through indebtedness. Not only has this trend placed the average American family in peril of losing its home, but it has also driven the cost of homes out of the range of the average family's income. Any sizable financial crisis will find most families unable to make their house payments.

Economic Security

There's a tendency these days to look at people who redirect assets toward paying off their home as a little 'odd.' On the contrary, the person who works to own his or her own home is one of the wisest among us. The simple truth is, a mortgaged home is always in jeopardy of being repossessed. A debt-free home represents economic security.

GOVERNMENT FINANCE

Let's turn our attention now to government debt. One reviewer wrote, "In 1985, Robert Schuller, popular author and pastor of the world's largest televised church audience...warned about the dangers of an escalating national debt in his book, *The Power of Being Debt Free: How Eliminating the National Debt Could Radically Improve Your Standard of Living* (updated to *America's Declaration of Financial Independence* ten years later). In a year when the debt stood at $1.8 trillion, they predicted that if America just 'muddled through,' it would be $5.9 trillion." His prediction has been "frighteningly accurate." He shows in his book why and how it is possible to be debt-free. "It's a moral issue," says Robert Schuller. 'Thou shalt not steal.' You have a right to borrow money, but you don't have the right to borrow money if you never intend to repay it. We are stealing from our children." I agree that it is wrong to have our children pay for our loans, but he is wrong in saying loans are all right in principle. I feel the government should pay as it goes. And it should have a savings for emergencies, just as a family should.

There are many books on the national debt and our annual deficit spending. I think Schuller's book is a good one to start out with. Being debt-free brings power. Burdening our children is immoral as Schuller says, "American children today are inheriting a burden they did not ask to bear the freedom to grow into healthy and happy individuals in a stable economic society. Not only are we stealing income from our children, but we are also robbing them of economic freedom. This is not just unfair; it is irresponsible, unjust, and immoral." The inside cover says, "The American government is $5 trillion in debt! Is this any way to run a country? Eighteen percent of the federal budget is allocated to pay the interest on the national debt. The national debt is more than 70 percent of our Gross National Product." "The time has come for the people of the United States of America to call for a declaration of financial independence. Let us unite to pay off the national debt and give our children the opportunity of enjoying the fruits of their labor and creativity." "We can be a debt-free nation! To be debt free would give us real wealth and real power: power to maintain our middle class; power to wipe out poverty; power to educate all citizens."

Brian Tracy writes in his great book *Something for Nothing: The All-Consuming Desire That Turns the American Dream into a Social Nightmare*, "We must slam the door on any further

something for nothing programs or proposals. We should only spend money that we have. Every plan to spend any money from the taxpayers and the public purse must be paid in full, in advance. We must never again commit *free money* to anyone that is to be paid later. If we do not have the money, we do not spend it. Period." This should be a commandment for every person, organization and government. The only way is pay-as-you-go.

Cleon Skousen has a very good chapter on debt in his book *The Five Thousand Year Leap*. In his chapter titled "Avoiding the Burden of Debt" he writes that the founding fathers of America

> knew that borrowing can be an honorable procedure in a time of crisis, but they deplored it just the same. … The Founding Fathers belonged to an age when debt was recognized for the ugly specter that it really is. They considered frugality a virtue, and even when an emergency compelled them to borrow, they believed in borrowing frugally and paying back promptly. Nearly everyone finds it to his advantage or absolute necessity to borrow on occasion. Debt becomes the only available means—a necessary evil. Nevertheless, the Founders wanted the nature of debt to be recognized for what it is: *evil*, because it is a form of bondage.
>
> The Founders knew that dire circumstances, such as war or other emergency, could force a nation to borrow, so they authorized the federal government to do so in Article 1 of the Constitution. Thomas Jefferson said, "I, however, place economy among the first and most important of republican virtues, and public debt as the greatest of dangers to be feared."

ANDREW JACKSON

The only time the U.S. government was debt-free was in the year 1835. President Andrew Jackson campaigned for the Presidency with the ideology of limited government and to pay off the national debt. He had personal experience of the pain debt can cause. Once he had become involved with a speculator and ended up in what he called "great difficulty." He called the debt a national curse — "I am one of those who do not believe that a national debt is a national blessing, but rather a curse to a republic." When he talked of those who believed a national debt was a blessing he was referring to Alexander Hamilton who had once argued that "a national debt, if it is not excessive, will be to us a national blessing. It will be a powerful cement to our union." Jackson shared Thomas Jefferson's view which was the complete opposite of Hamilton. Jefferson once said, "The principle of spending to be paid by posterity under the name of funding is but swindling futurity on a large scale." Jefferson wanted to pass a balanced budget amendment to the Constitution by "taking from the federal government the power of borrowing." Most people in the early 1800s in America believed in being debt-free and in a limited government. Today the opposite seems to be the case. But there are signs that many Americans are beginning to see the error of debt and big government.

Jackson rightly believed that a national debt would "raise around the administration a moneyed aristocracy dangerous to the liberties of the country." Today we have massive debt and we are in deep trouble. Jackson was pressured to not veto legislation that would have caused debt like legislation that would have been used for infrastructure like roads. He believed the Constitution did not give the federal government many powers and that the states should deal with such things as roads. He wrote, "The greatest mass of legislation relating to our internal affairs was intended to be left where the Federal convention found it—in the State governments. Nothing is clearer, in my view, than that we are chiefly indebted for the success of the Constitution under which we are now acting to the watchful and auxiliary operation of the State authorities. This is not the reflection of a day, but belongs to the most deeply rooted convictions of my mind. I cannot, therefore, too strongly or too earnestly, for my own sense of its importance, warn you against all encroachments upon the legitimate sphere of State sovereignty." One writer said, "He was more interested in

paying down the debt than in spending federal resources on state enterprises."

Jackson was determined to pay down the debt, which he hated, and he was alarmed at the growing number of bills proposed in Congress—noting, in a memorandum on the veto, that they would "far exceed by many millions the amount available in the Treasury for the year 1930" if passed. "I stand committed before the country to pay off the national debt at the earliest practicable moment. This pledge I am determined to redeem, and I cannot do this if I consent to increase it without necessity. Are you willing—are my friends will to lay taxes to pay for internal improvement?—for be assured I will not borrow a cent except in cases of absolute necessity!"

In his Fourth Annual Message to Congress December 4, 1832 he spoke about the duty of politicians to not over-regulate and abide by the Constitution:

> …to fix upon a permanent basis the policy best calculated to promote the happiness of the people and facilitate their progress toward the most complete enjoyment of civil liberty. On an occasion so interesting and important in our history, and of such anxious concern to the friends of freedom throughout the world, it is our imperious duty to lay aside all selfish and local considerations and be guided by a lofty spirit of devotion to the great principles on which our institutions are founded.
>
> That this Government may be so administered as to preserve its efficiency in promoting and securing these general objects should be the only aim of our ambition, and we can not, therefore, too carefully examine its structure, in order that we may not mistake its powers or assume those which the people have reserved to themselves or have preferred to assign to other agents. We should bear constantly in mind the fact that the considerations which induced the framers of the Constitution to withhold from the General Government the power to regulate the great mass of the business and concerns of the people have been fully justified by experience, and that it can not now be doubted that the genius of all our institutions prescribes simplicity and economy as the characteristics of the reform which is yet to be effected in the present and future execution of the functions bestowed upon us by the Constitution.
>
> Limited to a general superintending power to maintain peace at home and abroad, and to prescribe laws on a few subjects of general interest not calculated to restrict human liberty, but to enforce human rights, this Government will find its strength and its glory in the faithful discharge of these plain and simple duties. Relieved by its protecting shield from the fear of war and the apprehension of oppression, the free enterprise of our citizens, aided by the State sovereignties, will work out improvements and ameliorations which can not fail to demonstrate that the great truth that the people can govern themselves is not only realized in our example, but that it is done by a machinery in government so simple and economical as scarcely to be felt. That the Almighty Ruler of the Universe may so direct our deliberations and over-rule our acts as to make us instrumental in securing a result so dear to mankind is my most earnest and sincere prayer.

We need leaders today who think like this and will do better than Jackson and never borrow money for any reason. At a dinner celebrate payment of the national debt on January 8, 1835 Senator Thomas Hart Benton in a toast said, "This month of January, 1835, in the 58th year of the republic, Andrew Jackson being President, the national debt is paid!" We need leaders like him who will make it a priority to pay off the debt. What a great day that will be when there is a party in Washington and all the other capitals of the world where the leaders will announce there is no more debt and then keep it. Sadly, a year later Jackson and the other politicians felt there was need to go into debt and America has steadily increased the debt until now it is so astronomical to defy

imagination.

Jackson vowed to "pay the national debt, to prevent a monied aristocracy from growing up around our administration that must bend to its views, and ultimately destroy the liberty of our country." When he ran for president in 1829 he said, "How gratifying the effect of presenting to the world the sublime spectacle of a Republic of more than 12 million happy people, in the 54th year of her existence . . . free from debt and with all . . . her immense resources unfettered!" He said, "We must not let our rulers load us with perpetual debt." When the debt was paid off he gave a toast at a party saying, "Let us commemorate it as an event that gives us increased power as a nation, and reflects luster on our federal Union, of whose justice, fidelity, and wisdom it is a glorious illustration." One person wrote, "We all know that today the United States government borrows money and operates under astronomical debt. Why is this? Common sense dictates that a policy of such enormous debt will sooner or later destroy the organization that practices it, because the interest on its debt must increase beyond its income, making payoff impossible."

It is beyond my ability to express in words how irresponsible government leaders are to get their nations into debt. Fathers should not get their families into debt. Debt is one Satan's key strategies to destroy families and nations. That America owes billions, or for all I know, trillions of dollars to Communist China is beyond embarrassing. Jackson said, "No American should have to live under the oppression of a sprawling oversized central government; or suffer the loss of personal autonomy and liberties to perfunctory bureaucrats; or endure the invasion of privacy by officious functionaries; or struggle through a life trying to stay ahead of inflation; or endure the nightmare of over regulation and criminalization; or tolerate mass corruption and fraud by self serving elected officials; or to grind out a living only to be ravaged by labor-wage taxes while Federal Reserve Bankers get rich off baseless currency; or die fighting in some needless war."

EMPIRE OF DEBT

Joe Sobran writes, "Bill Bonner's *Empire of Debt: The Rise of an Epic Financial Crisis* convinced me that this country is headed for economic disaster in the next few years." If America and the world are headed for a great depression then it makes it even more urgent to get into the countryside where we can grow our food and better protect ourselves. When America suffered for ten years of a crippling depression in the 1930s many Americans had little debt and many lived on family farms where they could survive. Now most people live in cities. It would be even more catastrophic than before.

DESCENDANTS SHOULD NOT INHERIT DEBT

It is disgraceful that politicians have run up a debt that will burden future generations if they don't go bankrupt first. Father says: "I hesitate to wear neckties. I would like to collect all the money people spend on neckties and use it towards saving the world. I do not use more than two sheets of toilet paper when I am in the bathroom. If possible, I use just one sheet of toilet paper. From the Principle point of view, it is a sin to waste. From the time of our birth, we are born with a set amount of consumer goods that we can use. It is a sin to use more than that amount. When we depart, we must leave material things behind. Otherwise, our descendants will inherit them as debts. Does anyone teach that nowadays? Before you receive formal education, your primary teachers are the Principle, nature, and the ocean." (*Cheon Seong Gyeong*)

SOUND MONEY

We need to figure out a better system for national currencies. The best economists I have found are those of the Austrian School like Ludwig von Mises, F.A. Hayek who wrote *Denationalisation of Money*, and Murray Rothbard who wrote *What Has Government Done to Our Money?* Thomas Woods, senior fellow of the Ludwig von Mises Institute wrote *Meltdown: A Free-Market Look at Why the Stock Market Collapsed, the Economy Tanked, and Government Bailouts Will Make*

Things Worse and *Rollback: Repealing Big Government Before the Coming Fiscal Collapse*. Check out the website for articles and videos at www.Mises.org. Hayek teaches that there should be a complete privatization of money. He goes beyond the idea of a gold standard and advocates a laissez-faire, competitive private currencies. In his book *Meltdown* Tom Woods quotes Hayek saying, "I am more convinced than ever, that if we ever again are going to have a decent money, it will not come from government: it will be issued by private enterprise." "There is no justification in history for the existing position of a government monopoly of issuing money." He says to put money in the hands of government "which is protected against competition, which can force us to accept the money, which is subject to incessant political pressure, such an authority will not ever again give us good money." Unificationists who become politicians need to study those thinkers like Tom Woods at www.Mises.org. Woods also has a website at www.tomwoods.com. Watch YouTube.com videos of Woods, Rothbard and other Austrian economists like Ron Paul.

RON PAUL

Perhaps we should go back to using money made of gold and silver. When I was a boy the dime and quarters were 90% silver. I sensed that this was real money. Then the government took all the silver out in 1965. Everyone should buy some gold and silver such as American Eagle Silver Bullion Coins and U.S. junk-silver coins (U.S. dimes, quarters and half-dollar coins minted before 1965) that may serve as real currency if the U.S. dollar collapses. We should listen to people like Ron Paul, a member of the Mises Institute and well-known congressman who has ran for President. He wrote in one of his books, "My involvement in politics came about due to an earlier interest in economics, which began after reading Friedrich Hayek's classic, *The Road to Serfdom*. This led me to study Austrian economics, especially the writings of Ludwig von Mises, which provided the best explanation of how central banking and government intervention in the market economy cause so much suffering." In his book, *Revolution: A Manifesto*, he writes, "Central economic planning has been discredited as any idea can possibly be. Americans must reject the notion that one man [as] chairman of the Federal Reserve Board, can know what the proper money supply and interest rates ought to be. Only the market can determine that. Americans must learn this lesson if we want to avoid continuous and deeper recessions and to get the economy growing in a healthy and sustainable fashion." "The first practical measure that should be taken is to legalize competition. Restore to Americans their right to use precious metals as medium of exchange—a simple and reasonable initial step if we believe in freedom."

END THE FED

Ron Paul has an excellent book titled *End the Fed* where he explains why we should abolish the Federal Reserve. At his website www.ronpaul.com he says, "Without the Federal Reserve there could be no welfare state and no warfare state, and that's just two of the compelling reasons why we need to end the secretive and unaccountable institution's financial monopoly as soon as possible."

REAL MONEY

He has submitted "legislation to legalize competing currencies." He writes, "First of all, no one should be compelled by law to operate in Federal Reserve notes if they prefer an alternative. We should repeal legal tender laws and allow Americans to conduct transactions in constitutional money. Only gold and silver can constitutionally be legal tender, not paper money. Instead, it is illegal to conduct business using gold and silver instead of Federal Reserve notes. Simply legalizing the Constitution should be a no-brainer to anyone who took an oath of office. Consequently, private mints should be allowed to mint gold and silver coins. They would be subject to fraud and counterfeit laws, of course, and people would be free to use their coins or stay with Federal Reserve notes, as they see fit. Finally, we should abolish taxes on gold and silver, which puts precious metals at a competitive disadvantage to paper money." Ayn Rand said in *For*

the New Intellectual, "The fundamental principle of capitalism is the separation of State and Economics—that is: the liberation of men's economic activities, of production and trade, from any form of intervention, coercion, compulsion, regulation, or control of government." Two other economists you may find helpful are Gary North and Jörg Guido Hülsmann. North says in his book *Honest Money: The Biblical Blueprint for Money and Banking*, "The Biblical view is clear: the State is not to be trusted with the right to issue money." Hülsmann has a great book titled *The Ethics of Money Production*." One reviewer of his book wrote, "People just assume that government or central banks operating under government control should manage money. In fact, his thesis is that a government monopoly on money production and management has no ethical or economic grounding at all. Money, he argues, should be a privately produced good like any other, such as clothing or food." Hülsmann says "fiat money is dangerous" and we need "natural money." He also wrote *Mises: The Last Knight of Liberalism*. Watch YouTube videos of North and Hülsmann.

Brian Tracy says, "Eighty percent of Americans are broke – living paycheck to paycheck, no savings, huge debt, and assets that have dropped by half in value." The stress of living like this is crushing. We need to live by principled economic principles so everyone can be free of financial problems. Watch the documentary *End of the Road: How Money Became Worthless* (www.100thmonkeyfilms.com/endoftheroad, Netflix.com). It explains how the Federal Reserve system is a Ponzi Scheme that will eventually crash unless we back money with gold. I highly recommend the book *The Real Crash* by Peter Schiff..

I made a video that you can watch on YouTube.com and Vimeo.com titled *Unificationism: Women Getting the Vote Destroyed the Family, the State, and Possibly our Church - Part One***.** Here is text:

> Sun Myung Moon teaches: **"**What is the work of dispensation like? It is something like continuing to swallow hundreds and thousands of fathoms of thread, one after another. Which would be easier, to swallow all that thread, or to complete the dispensation? Swallowing thread might be easier. How can we imagine women doing that? Those women who are confident they are different, raise your hand. God knows best, however, and as a result He has refrained from using women as central figures. I would rather have the women, even Mother, leave the room and then discuss the important work of dispensation with the men. In this Mother is outdone by her own young son. If Western women hear this they will really protest that I am discriminating. They can't tolerate that idea.**"**
>
> Ann Barnhardt was asked: "You say elections are now a sham but If we rebuild our union and have a new country will it have a 19th amendment?" She answered:
>
> Absolutely not! No. No. That was one of the linchpins of the beginning of the end. Because women's suffrage -- what it did is that it took the vote away from the family unit with the man as the head of the family unit voting on behalf of his entire family and it pitted women against men. It was the first wedge into marriage and it was the first wedge between men and their children. The 19th amendment was awful and no if somebody set up a new republic or new system or anything and they said, Look guys here is how it's going to be –Men are going to vote and their vote is going to represent their family. I'm there. I am there. The 19th Amendment is a disgrace on civilization.
>
> As soon as the 19th amendment was passed, men were effectively castrated, and in many, many cases disenfranchised by their wives. No longer was the man the head of the household. No longer was he responsible for his wife. Now the wife was

a “co-husband” at best, or a flat-out adversary at worst. The notion of a man making the final decision about what was best for his wife and family per his God-given vocation as husband and father was now over. Now all he was good for was bringing home the bacon – but even that wouldn’t last.

Women are made with a healthy, innate desire to be provided for and protected. I know this because I am a woman. Women want someone or someTHING to take care of them. For this reason, women tend to lean socialist, and are generally in favor of the expansion of government when the government promises to “provide” for them.

Satan has used this healthy feminine dynamic, perverted by suffrage, to systematically replace men with the government as the providers in society. A woman no longer has any need of a man. Marriage no longer serves any practical purpose. A woman can whore around and have as many fatherless children as she pleases, and Pimp Daddy Government will always be there to provide. Men have learned well from this, too. Men can also slut it up to their heart’s content knowing that the government will take care of their “women” and raise their children for them. Fathering children no longer binds a man to a woman in any way. Men didn’t vote to societally castrate themselves, and never would have. No – in order for this system to have come about, women’s suffrage was an absolute necessity. Women themselves voted the system into place which objectifies and devalues both them AND their children.

Next, the issue of disenfranchisement. I believe that the 19th amendment actually DISenfranchised more people than it enfranchised. Many, many married couples quickly found themselves voting against one another. The man would tend to vote for the more conservative platform, and the woman would vote for the more socialist platform. When this happened, the effective result was the nullification of BOTH individuals’ votes. What this did was massively reduce the voting influence of the married household, and magnify the voting influence of the unmarried – and the unmarried tend to be younger, and thus more stupid, and thus vote for big government. It was all part of the plan, kids. All part of the plan.

I’ve probably ticked even one or two of you conservatives off with this post. Here is the question I would ask you: Why? Why are you ticked off? If you’re a woman, the reason you are ticked off is because you put yourself and your desire to assert your will above the well-being of society in general. I don’t feel that way. I would give up my vote in a HEARTBEAT if it meant that right-ordered marriage, family and sexuality was restored to our culture. I would rather that my little female namesakes grow up in a world where they did not have the right to vote, but were treated with dignity and respect, were addressed as “ma’am”, had doors held for them, and wherein men stood up when they entered the room. I would rather they be courted properly and then marry men who would never, ever leave them, and would consider it their sacred duty and honor to protect and provide for their wives and their children because he LOVED them. Oh, HELL yes. I’ll give up my vote in exchange for that any day of the week and twice on Sunday. Why wouldn’t you?

For you men who don’t like my position, you’re just a slave to political correctness. The P.C. culture has convinced you that if you criticize anything that has to do with women or the feminine culture that you must be a Taliban. Don’t fall for that garbage.

The celebrated economist John Lott, in his book *Freedomnomics: Why the Free Market Works and Other Half-Baked Theories Don't*, proves that women getting the vote in the 19th Amendment in 1920 was the reason why America gave up small government free enterprise for big government socialism: He writes: "Even after accounting for a range of other factors — such

as industrialization, urbanization, education and income — the impact of granting of women's suffrage on per-capita state government expenditures and revenue was startling. The increase in government spending and revenue started immediately after women started voting. Women's suffrage ushered in a sea change in American politics."
One person wrote on the web, "The Nineteenth Amendment caused government spending to skyrocket. Professor John Lott of the Law School University of Chicago proved statistically that it was women's suffrage, and nothing else, which caused this unbridled government growth. Spending too much for government destroyed private property rights, plunged the US into huge debts and destroyed personal savings."

Emily Gunn writes and narrates in her documentary *The Monstrous Regiment of Women* that women getting the vote destroyed the biblical traditional patriarchal family and created a feminist culture of egalitarian marriages and a big government, welfare state:

> Today in America 7.8 million more women vote than men. America now falls under the indictment of this verse: "As for my people children are their oppressors and women rule over them." (Isaiah 3:12) The men of the suffrage era were willing to abdicate their dominion role to the extent that they were ready to give up half their electoral power to women. Many women understood this at that time and opposed female suffrage. The 19th Amendment can be seen as the point in American history when the fathers ceased to sit in the gates as the representative of his family's interests. Individualism and self-interest would now be the principle approach to the ballot box. Security, protection and provision - once the priorities of the father soon passed to paternalistic state which from that point on has continued to expand radically far beyond its constitutional bounds.

It is crucial that the UM does not become feminized like the Democratic Party. We must fight against the trend of the welfare state that women leaders and feminized men push for. Charles Colson and Nancy Pearcy had an article in *Christianity Today* (November 11, 1996) titled, "Why Women Like Big Government" saying:

> Men tend to want to shrink government, cut taxes, slash spending. But growing numbers of women support government social programs. Why? Because with the staggering increase in divorce and illegitimacy they and their children are more likely to be recipients of such programs.
>
> In a recent *Atlantic Monthly* article, Stephen Stark notes that far more women than men supported the Clinton health-care plan because women are less likely to be covered by existing insurance plans (more of them work part-time). Likewise, women are more concerned about Medicaid and Medicare because they live longer. Finally, women are more likely to support Great Society programs aimed at the needs of the poor because mother-headed families tend to be poorer than father-headed families.
>
> In short, the widespread breakdown of marriage and family has left increasing numbers of women without adequate economic support. Which in turn, Stark writes, has "led more women than men to be dependent on and supportive of government welfare programs."

Milton Friedman correctly teaches in his brilliant book *Capitalism and Freedom* that government's sole functions are limited "to protect our freedom both from the enemies outside our gates and from our fellow-citizens: to preserve law and order, to enforce private contracts, to

foster competitive markets." It is very difficult for most women to understand this concept. They want to be taken care of and don't care who does it. John Lott is right in explaining that men are more inclined to understand that true economic security means keeping the government from regulating the economic activities of its citizens.

The result of women getting the vote is men became weak and women became disorderly. America became weak militarily because it was feminized. Many thousands of women knew how dangerous socialist/feminist/pacifists like Jane Addams were. They wrote books and articles against the relentless nagging and yelling of the suffragists. Finally men became exhausted fighting them and gave them the vote. New York State Representative Fiorello La Guardia in frustration told them: "I'm with you. I'm for it. I'll vote for it. Now don't bother me." Men gave in and bought the argument that they were unfit to be the final decision makers.

One of the most powerful arguments against the vote was that it would give women power that they should not have. That is the power to decide how government force is used. They shouldn't decide because they can not back it up by personally using force. Women are not made to fight; they are not made to be warriors. Since the women got the vote they have gone down a slippery slope where they are now fighting wars. The Martins explain how women shouldn't have anything to do with force because they cannot back up their vote. By getting their foot in the door, they have thrown it open and lost all protection from men. They write, "At a time when half the world is at war [they are talking about WWI] and the truth is made plain that the governments of all nations rest upon force, and that no law is worth a scrap of paper more than the force of the gun behind it, woman suffragists propose that women shall encumber government with special laws, which they themselves could not enforce, and which men must, therefore, be prepared to die for if necessary. The male voter is committed to the task of backing up his vote with his fist and his gun in case it can be enforced in no other way. A woman's vote has no guaranty behind it and therefore she can never be a citizen in the same sense that a man is a citizen."

"As boys playing 'soldier,' with sticks for guns, the woman voter carries a gun that won't go off. She casts her ballot when and where men suffer her to do so. She can neither secure the ballot nor hold it without consent. She may rail at this as much as she likes; but such is the case, and nobody is to blame for it except Nature, which made her the weaker. It is true that not every man could enforce his vote; the cripple could not. But, after all, disabled men are a handful; while disabled women (physically) are the whole sex. Moreover, the man's disability may be temporary and he may one day recover his strength. But womanhood is an infirmity from which women rarely, if ever, wholly recover."

"Many women think that they want the vote because they do not quite know what voting is about. They don't realize that its object is to make laws. And laws, as every woman knows, are a nuisance. Who wants to be always making laws, always trying to rule and repress and regulate other people's affairs? What pleasure can there be in perpetually worrying your fellow-beings with more laws; have they not troubles enough already!"

Mrs. Martin's words of wisdom fell on deaf ears. She is a feminine woman. Feminists won and today we have women like Betty Friedan who are not feminine. Compare the two. Betty says we shouldn't have fought communism in Vietnam: "Women are closer to life, I think. If women were 50 percent of the United States Senate, we would not have continued the Vietnam War year after year.... Those kinds of changes will take time — we're still electing women officials who are really imitation men — but you will get a change in political behavior. Men will change, too, because they will have to share more and more of women's work, including the rearing of children. In the last analysis, women are going to be the ones answering the question: What is it worth to die?" And women don't want to die as readily as men will fight and die for freedom. If

women were in the majority in the congress and we had a matriarchy do you think they would keep 37,000 troops of the U.S. Army in Korea? Wouldn't they want to spend the billions of dollars on domestic issues instead of the military? This is why they should not be politicians.

The anti-Suffragists were called Antis. They knew women should not get the vote because it would destroy the family and endanger America, especially since the Bolshevists took control of Russia in 1917. They knew that socialism was wrong and that problems must be solved through local organizations. Maybe the vote was inevitable to give women self-esteem. It was the wrong way to do it though. The experiment of Prohibition was called The Noble Experiment. Like Prohibition, women voting, hurt everyone and made matters worse. America declined domestically until now we have an epidemic of AIDS and divorce. Our foreign affairs have been a disaster. We were asleep at Pearl Harbor. We won that war but a few years later as men became weaker, we lost half of Korea and as time past and men became totally feminized, we lost all of Vietnam.

Admiral Fiske was a prominent leader and writer in America. In a speech in 1925 he "upbraided the peacemakers. He said the effeminization of our country was responsible for the unpreparedness with which we entered World War I. He cited Germany, Russia and Japan as strong, virile nations over against England, France and the United States as effeminized. When asked how we could get virile again, he responded, 'Nothing can be done, or if it can I don't know what it is. No man respects and admires women more than I do, but some women have faults and the fault most commonly found is a seemingly insatiable desire to interfere in matters they do not understand. War they understand least and from it they instinctively recoil. There is danger in this situation. Women now have the vote and outnumber the men. There must be some action by the men which will bring women to realize that it is for their comfort and protection that all wars are fought. It is to the interest of women that they permit men to obtain the necessary armament. Only in this way can they be assured of the comfort and protection they need. In spite of themselves we must protect the ladies!'"

Jeanette Rankin was the first woman to serve in the U.S. Congress and the only member to vote against U.S. entry into both World War I and World War II. Rankin was defeated in 1919 due to her antiwar stand. She was reelected in 1941 but served only one term, again because of her antiwar views. She was the only person in Congress to vote against the United States entering WWII after Pearl Harbor. President John Kennedy said of Miss Rankin "She was a blind isolationist and an impractical pacifist who refused to recognize the harsh realities of world conflict and national security." When she cast her lone vote in not declaring war on Japan the top leaders of both parties went to her on the floor of Congress and tried to explain to her how important it would be if there was a unanimous vote and to have total unity in going to war. She refused.

The Anti-suffragists often wrote of how illogical and dangerous women would be when they got into the public realm. Miss Rankin is one of the most dramatic examples showing that women have no place in government. The following quote is representative of the argument of those wonderful ladies who fought against the feminist campaign for the vote. It is from a magazine that is now out of print. It was written by Ella Winston in 1896. She said in her article "Foibles of the New Woman": "When woman revolts against her normal functions and sphere of action, desiring instead to usurp man's prerogatives, she entails upon herself the inevitable penalty of such irregular conduct, and, while losing the womanliness for which she apparently scorns, fails to attain the manliness for which she strives. But, unmindful of the frowns of her observers, she is unto herself a perpetual delight, calling herself and her kind by the new epithets 'new,' 'awakened.' and 'superior,' and speaking disdainfully of women who differ from her in what, to her judgment, is the all-important question of life: 'Shall women vote or not?' To enumerate her

foibles is a dangerous task, for what she asserts today she will deny tomorrow. She is a stranger to logic, and when consistency was given to mortals the New Woman was conspicuously absent. Her egotism is boundless. She boasts that she has discovered herself, and says it is the greatest discovery of the century." This is a perfect description of feminists like Jeanette Rankin.

Mrs. Winston goes on to say that women had for the "past forty years" been "demanding of man" and "he has graciously granted her" those things. "She wanted equality with him, and it has been given to her in all things for which she is fitted and which will not lower the high standard of womanhood that he desires for her. This she accepts without relinquishing any of the chivalrous attentions which man always bestows upon her. The New Woman tells us that 'an ounce of justice is of more value to woman than a ton of chivalry.' But, when she obtains her 'ounce of justice,' she apparently still makes rigorous demands that her 'ton of chivalry" be not omitted." Women cannot expect to compete with men and be treated tenderly as ladies.

She says, "Woman asked to work by man's side on his level; and today she has the chance of so doing. The fields of knowledge and opportunity have been opened to her; and she still 'desires that of which her grandmother did not dream,' because, like an over-indulged child, so long as she is denied one privilege, that privilege she desires above all others. She has decided that without the ballot she can do nothing, for, in her vocabulary, ballot is synonymous with power." A house divided, falls. She goes on to explain how illogical women are. She says, "The New Woman is oftentimes the victim of strange hallucinations. She persists in calling herself a 'slave,' despite her high position and great opportunities." She says people are "weary" of the "constant" complaining of "would-be female politicians" who ignore their "privileges and the silent testimony of countless happy wives." Women she says are not to "make the laws, she trains and educates those who do, and thus is indirectly responsible for all legislation." This is a common theme in antifeminist literature a hundred years ago. Women are to be "indirect" and men "direct." Women are to be educators. The 20th century went to public schools because women got into government and changed the direction men were going. One of the problems in the 19th century was that men put women too high on a pedestal. They gave up too much power to women in educating their children and in church activities. Schools and the churches became feminized. Men gave up spiritual leadership. They incorrectly saw women as purer and more spiritual. They got too caught up in physical work. Hardenbrook gives the history of this sad development in his book, *Missing From Action*.

Sarah Hale was one of those ladies who wrote and influenced Americans that women were spiritually superior. She was wrong on this but she was right about the dangers of the feminist suffragists. She goes into the argument that suffragists are illogical in that they can't back up their vote by being a soldier and fighting for their vote. The New Woman, she says is inconsistent when she says, "She who bears soldiers need not bear arms." She says the so-called New Woman, "has not the aversion to being represented by men on the field of battle that she has to being represented by them in the legislative hall and at the ballot-box."

She goes into the argument that women are more powerful in the home than in politics. If she leaves it the home will collapse and things will get worse. She explains how ridiculous it is for women to fight for prohibition laws saying, "When we read of women assembling together, parading streets, and entering saloons to create, as they say, 'a public sentiment for temperance,' it is but natural to ask, 'What are the children of such mothers doing in the meantime?' And it will not be strange if many of them become drunkards for the coming generation of reformers to struggle with. The New Woman refuses to believe that duty, like charity, begins at home, and cannot see that the most effectual way to keep clean is not to allow dirt to accumulate."

She explains that women are different than men:

> It was the New Woman's earliest, and is her latest, foible that woman is superior to man. Perhaps she is. But the question is not one of superiority or inferiority. There is at bottom of all this talk about women nature's inexorable law. Man is man and woman is woman. That was the order of creation and it must so remain. It is idle to compare the sexes in similar things. It is a question of difference, and the "happiness and perfection of both depend on each asking and receiving from the other what the other only can give."
>
> For woman is not undevelopt man,
> But diverse: could we make her as the man,
> Sweet Love were slain: his dearest bond is this,
> Not like to like, but like in difference.
>
> Sentimental and slavish as this may sound to many ears, it is as true as any of the unchanging laws governing the universe, and is the Creator's design for the reproduction and maintenance of the race.

What a great lady this is. The women of the UM should follow in her footsteps and fight feminism.

One man, Henry Wood, gave a speech at an anti-suffragist meeting in 1918 during WWI saying, "this was no time to unman the Government by this foolhardy jeopardizing of the rights of both sexes .... one wonders at the spectacle of strong, masculine personalities urging at such an hour the demasculinization of Government ... that this from now on is a man's job — the job of the fighting, the dominating, not the denatured, the womanlike man." He said, "The woman suffrage movement was hopelessly given over to pacifism in its extreme socialistic form." In closing he said that "for any sentimental or political reason it is a damnable thing that we should weaken ourselves by bringing into the war the woman, who has never been permitted in the war tents of any strong, virile dominating nation."

One of the main arguments against women getting the power of the vote was that it would destroy the home. Traditionally the man represented the family. The family had one voice. With the vote, the family would have two different voices. One Brooklyn antisuffrage group in 1894 wrote, "the household, not the individual is the unit of the State, and the vast majority of women are represented by household suffrage." They correctly saw that there would be an escalation of the war between the sexes that one book said "would rip the family in half. Pointing to the higher divorce rate, for example, Alice J. George warned that 'Woman Suffrage Is The Last Straw In Many A Family.' And without the family, American society would crumble .... Fundamentally, then, the antis were defending the spheres assigned to each gender."

Francis Parkman was a leading historian in his day who is best known for his book *The Oregon Trail*. In "The Woman Question," (*North American Review*, October, 1879) he wrote, "High Civilization, ancient or modern, has hitherto rested on the family. The family, and not the individual, has been the political unit, and the head of the family, in esse or in posse, actual or prospective, has been the political representative of the rest. To give the suffrage to women would be to reject the principle that has thus far formed the basis of civilized government." He is right. Women voting is uncivilized.

In *American Journey* Richard Reeves writes, "Howard Phillips, a former federal official, was the national director of a lobbying group called the Conservative Caucus. In a speech to a 'Pro-

Family' conference of California Citizens for a Biblical Majority in June of 1980, he said: 'The family is increasingly being eliminated as the basic unit of self-government in America and being replaced by state control over the individual .... In the eighteen-hundreds, legislation was enacted which freed the wife of economic dependence on the husband. [Women] were given property rights .... We saw how women were liberated from the leadership of their husbands politically ... we had one family, one vote. And we have seen the trend toward one person, one vote. And the ultimate extension of this philosophy has been the sexual liberation of the woman from the husband as our government and as our established elites in America have condoned adultery, promiscuity and other forms of immoral behavior which undermine the family....'"

One of the most distributed magazines of the Antis was *The Woman Patriot*. Even after 1920 it continued for years to fight as it said in its masthead, "against Feminism and Socialism." In one issue it said, "The suffragists are bringing us to the culmination of a decadence which has been steadily indicated by race suicide [low birth rate], divorce, breakup of the home, and federalism, all of which conditions are found chiefly in primitive society." They were right. America's birthrate plummeted and divorce skyrocketed. One woman liberal writer of today said this about the efforts of the Antis, "How do you explain this hostility? The tempting answer is privilege and paranoia — a defense of male power and a hysterical fear of change. But this quick answer does not help us understand exactly what the antis were afraid of nor, still more puzzling, why so many women opposed their own enfranchisement. If we listen to what the antis said, we can hear beneath the furious, sensationalistic, often silly rhetoric a profound fear of social disorder." Now women have "hysterical fear" of patriarchy. Everything has been completely turned around. Today we have women like Gloria Steinem who says, "We don't just want to destroy capitalism, we want to tear down the whole f.....g patriarchy."

THE LOST GENERATION

Men lost patriarchy when they gave the vote to women in 1920. The nation should not have rejoiced over that. The *Kansas City Star* proclaimed: "The victory is not a victory for women alone, it is a victory for democracy and the principle of equality upon which the nation was founded." The Democratic candidate for President, James Cox said, "The civilization of the world is saved." The opposite was the truth. It was a victory for Satan and civilization was not saved. It became lost. The World War I generation has also been called "The Lost Generation." Ernest Hemingway popularized the term in his novel, *The Sun Also Rises*, that had the line "You are all a lost generation." One encyclopedia said, "The 'Lost Generation' were said to be disillusioned by the large number of casualties of the First World War, cynical, disdainful of the Victorian notions of morality and propriety of their elders and ambivalent about Victorian gender ideals." Rejecting the patriarchal values of the Victorians will make you disillusioned and cynical.

William Einwechter wrote an article titled "The Palin Predicament Resolved—A Response to *USA Today* (9-23-08) about Sarah Palin, the governor of Alaska, who ran as a Vice-Presidential candidate saying:

> Sarah Palin does not present a predicament to Christians who hold to full complementarianism. We have rejected, on biblical grounds, the propriety of her quest for the vice presidency from the beginning. We believe that her political career violates her calling to be a wife, mother, and keeper at home (Titus 2:3-5). We believe her candidacy violates the biblical requirement that civil magistrates be men (Exod. 18:21; Deut. 1:13; biblical narratives, like the story of Deborah, do not provide clear examples of female rulers, and they should not be used to overturn the explicit doctrine contained in the many other passages that speak definitively to the issue).

Those holding to consistent male headship in every sphere

> we do not believe that God's Word permits a woman to serve as vice president of the United States. We reject egalitarianism in family, church, and public life. Second, Mrs. Palin is not an acceptable choice as vice president. We also believe that it is unbiblical for her to be directly under John McCain as his vice president and devote herself to his success. We believe she should be directly under her husband's authority and work for her husband's success. Third, our view on women and leadership is thoroughly consistent. We cannot and will not support a woman for the office of civil magistrate or for the office of church elder/pastor. Fourth, since Mrs. Palin is under the authority of her husband, she must submit to him 'in everything" (Eph. 5:24). This all-inclusive submission to her husband's position as head, not only would "spill over" into her role as vice president, it also, as part of God's order, effectively precludes the validity of her serving as vice president in the first place. Fifth, because we believe that Scripture calls women to nurture and train their children and to manage their homes, we cannot endorse a mother of five children pursuing a career outside of her home; the Bible says that this causes the "word of God to be "blasphemed' (Titus 2:5). The responsibility of caring for children is a responsibility that the family cannot give to others.
>
> We hope that Sarah Palin's nomination will cause Christians to see the extent to which feminism has infiltrated the Christian home and the Christian church. We hope that it leads Christians to reexamine what Scripture says about the beauty and glory of God's plan for women so that they can be delivered from the anti-Christian vision of feminism that has deceived the church, and wounded millions of Christian women and Christian homes by leading wives and mothers to exercise their notable feminine gifts in ways and in places and for persons never intended by God.
>
> A woman's glory is not found in doing everything that a man can do. Her glory is found in doing those things to which she is called: loving and supporting her own husband, loving and nurturing her own children, and managing her own home for the glory of God.

Scott Brown wrote this about Mrs. Palin (www.scottbrownonline.com):

> **Searing the Conscience of the Church**
> Will Christian young ladies find a role model in Sarah Palin? We should beware because she does not promote the biblical vision of womanhood. She is not keeper at home (Titus 2:5). She is not a helper to her husband (Genesis 2:18). She is building the kingdom of another man not her husband (Prov. 31). Her lifestyle proclaims, "you can have it all – wife, mother, executive."
>
> Exalting this role model praises things that are contrary to the express will of God. Consider how the Sarah Palin candidacy is working to further sear the consciences of American Christians against the explicit principles and commands of scripture regarding biblical manhood and womanhood. This is one of the most significant attacks against the Christian conscience in a long time. This candidacy, which is an apologetic for females in authority, destroys the biblical vision of motherhood and home life. It happily and flauntingly rejects the creation order.
>
> Consider that men who are applauding this, are leading the church into more confusion and error. It is alarming to me that they sweep explicit commands and principles under the carpet and pretend they are not there.

Joe Morecraft gave a magnificent speech titled "Women Civil Magistrates?" (9-15-08) you can hear at www.sermonaudio.com. He says:

> My point today is that just as the Bible does not allow women to usurp the governing headship of the home from their husbands, Ephesians 5; and just as it does not allow women to become elders and usurp the government of the church, I Tim. 3; so the Bible does not allow women to become civil magistrates and usurp the government of the state. I would go one step farther and say that since voting is a key element of civil government, that women suffrage is also unbiblical. And the Reformed Presbyterian Church in the United States is one of the few denominations that does not practice women suffrage in its congregational meetings.
>
> There is nothing novel about this view, nor is it chauvinistic. In the 19th century this view was the consensus among godly and thoughtful women in this country.
>
> If Mrs. Palin is elected Vice President, and then perhaps President, four years from now, it will result in another blow to the family as defined in the Bible, although she would never intentionally want to do such a thing. It will split churches, and cause churches to compromise their historical stance. Her husband is "a stay-at-home Mr. Mom," which is most certainly not the role of the husband and father according to Ephesians 5. Regardless of what she thinks, she has placed her incredibly demanding career above her God-given calling of raising five children. She is leaving the impression that this is what young women should aspire to be, rather than aspiring to being the helpmeets of their husbands, the nurturers of their children, and the keepers of their homes. As Titus 2:5 exhorts older women to encourage the young women to love their husbands, to love their children, to be sensible, pure, workers at home, being subject to their own husbands, that the word of God may not be dishonored. I guarantee you that with all the heavy demands of a national office, a mother who is vice president will not be able to raise her children faithfully and effectively. As Bill Einwechter has written: "By defending the propriety of a mother of young children ruling over the nation, they have undermined the doctrine of male headship and women as keepers at home."
>
> We are told that "in the old days" society did not care what women thought about things, it only wanted to hear what the husbands had to say. Now, we are more enlightened, we want to hear from both wives and husbands. The problem with this viewpoint is that it fails to recognize the covenantal relation of husband and wife as a household. The real question is: what does the household, the familial republic, think? We discover this by asking the representative spokesman, the covenant head. Doug Wilson says, "He would answer for his family, and in speaking, represented them. In other words, the issue is not whether men vote as opposed to women. The issue is whether families can vote. In our modernist blindness and folly, we did not enfranchise women, we disenfranchised the household. And consider where it has gotten us. When husbands and wives agree, voting the same way, all we have done is multiply the entire vote tally by two. And when they disagree, all that has happened is that their votes cancel out the voice of their household."

1920 — TURNING POINT

The 1920s was the greatest turning point in human history. The Messiah was on earth and Satan

worked feverishly to make people weak and disorderly so they would reject him. He did everything he could to make it hard for the messiah. He gave the world his values — anti-patriarchy and anti-capitalism. He made women lose their femininity by taking away their role of mother. He made women have fewer children. He made their clothes skimpy. He enticed them to rebel and go into the workplace and to vote. One book said it this way:

> There were many kinds of American deaths during the First World War — not only 115,000 doughboys, not only the Wilsonian illusions of worldwide capitalist democracy, but also the Victorian concepts of manliness and womanliness. The men who returned home found themselves in a bewilderingly new culture. Amid the raucous beat of the Jazz Age, the flapper danced and drank and smoked, talked bluntly of sex and often did something about it, demanded the right to a home and a career. In short, she was saying that she was as good (or as bad) as any man.
>
> The flapper brought with her a sudden shift of cultural generations. Older feminists regarded her as a traitor to their ideals of equality. And men responded with discomfort or dismay. They still understood their role in old-fashioned manly terms — as patriarch of the breakfast table, as breadwinner in the marketplace, as roughrider on the range.
>
> These notions were becoming daydreams, however. An increasingly liberated younger generation of middle-class women was over-turning the Victorian code of "purity." An increasingly urbanized, bureaucratized society was rendering patriarchy into a masculine mystique. In the history of American sex roles, the 1920s marked the beginning of modernity.

Father Moon teaches: :

"The Husband is the head of the household." (*God's Will and the World*)

> The final decision in a household in important matters is up to the man. He may consider his wife's opinion and may go through her to disclose and implement the decision, but he is the final decision maker. The wife cannot directly give the inheritance to her sons or daughters, because the father is the axis. In America, people are confused; they do not understand the right order of things. They do not know who is the one to make decisions or why. I am expressing this and emphasizing it because we have blessed couples here and this is the heavenly law. Men should manage national affairs; women should manage the home. (8-30-87)

LOVE AND RESPECT

Everyone should read and study *Love & Respect: The Love She Most Desires; The Respect He Desperately Needs* by Emerson Eggerichs. He writes, "You may remember the Beatles' song, 'All you need is love.' I absolutely disagree with that conclusion. Five out of ten marriages today are ending in divorce because love is not enough. Yes, love is vital, especially for the wife, but what we have missed is the husband's need for respect. This book is about how the wife can fulfill her need to be loved by giving her husband what he needs—respect. In Ephesians 5:33 Paul writes, 'Each of you also must love his wife as he loves himself, and the wife must respect her husband'(NIV)". A key word here is "must". A woman's primary need is for love and man's primary need is for respect and both *must* deliver on giving what the other needs.

Eggerichs brilliantly writes how it is unnatural for men to love when a wife criticizes and confronts them and it is unfamiliar and unnatural for women to give a man respect. In conflicts most men and women do the opposite of what they should. The wife comes across too strong and doesn't show respect and the man will do flight or fight. He should be gentle and listen without feeling his pride being hurt and feeling disrespected. Instead, many men stonewall or leave. Eggerichs writes, "Men hear criticism as contempt; women feel silence as hostility." "When a husband can take it no longer, he gets up and walks out without a word, and that is the coup de grâce . He might as well as screamed at the top of his lungs, 'I don't love you.'" The Bible teaches that we all need both love and respect but he explains, "I'm talking about the primary drive of each sex." He writes:

> Women want love far more than respect and men want respect far more than love. Men need to feel respected during conflict more than they need to feel loved. …
> In an attempt to calm himself down, the husband will stonewall — become quiet, say nothing, or go off by himself because of his wife's dark countenance, negative emotions and combative words. All this annoys and incites him. So he withdraws. To him that is the honorable thing to do.
>
> The husband must always remember that the wife must talk about what's eating her. As she vents her feelings, she believes she is keeping the marriage healthy and helping the relationship work more smoothly. She is not trying to attack her husband personally. … Instead of running from your wife, will you move toward her or let her move toward you, firing her venomous little darts as she comes? If you're ready to take the hit, you can stop the craziness. After she vents, you lovingly say, "Honey, I love you. I don't want this. When you talk this way, I know you're feeling unloved. Let's work on this. I want to come across more lovingly, and I hope you would like to come across more respectfully."
>
> Allow her to vent. Embrace her negativity and anger. If you can do that—If you can take the hit and keep coming—then you'll be able to say something like this: "Honey, I'm sorry for coming across so unlovingly. When you come at me like that, it makes me angry because I feel you don't respect me. But I want to change. Please help me." … When his wife comes at him with disrespect flashing in her eyes and venom shooting from her tongue, every husband has two choices: (1) defend his pride by firing back venom of his own or stonewalling her, or (2) try to hear his wife's cry and respond with unconditional love.
>
> Women confront to connect. The typical response from a man, however, is that he thinks his wife is confronting to control. If another man talked to this man like that, he would sound intentionally provocative. Is that not why some men feel their wives are picking a fight? … The differences between men and women were established from the beginning. Women tend to be relationship oriented, and the family is their primary place for relationships. The deepest question you can ask a woman—a question she asks herself quite often—is "Are you loved?" Men, however, tend to be achievement-oriented, and their "field" is the primary place for achievement. The deepest question you can ask a man—a question that he asks himself quite often—is "Are you respected?" No wonder, then, that in a marriage the wife wants her husband to be more loving, and the husband wants his wife to be more respectful.

> It is crucial for husband and wife to see that neither one is wrong, but that both of them are very different—in body function, outlook, and perspective. … Men and women both need love and both need respect. But the cry from a woman's deepest soul is to be loved and the cry from a man's deepest soul is to be respected.
>
> A wise husband decodes his wife's negative words; a foolish husband just gets angry and lashes back or goes the other direction and stonewalls her with silence. … That a husband values respect more than love is very difficult for many women to grasp. As a wife, if you can start to understand how important your husband's work is to him, you will take a giant step toward communicating respect and honor, two things that he values even more than your love. A man has a natural, inborn desire to go out and "conquer" the challenges of his world—to work and achieve.
>
> [Wives should] never put down his job or how much he makes. … Conflict is inevitable; it is simply part of living together. "Know this, my beloved brothers: Let every person be quick to hear, slow to speak, slow to anger." (James 1:19)
>
> Marital researchers agree that a huge percentage of communication problems between husband and wife are due not to what is said but to how it is said—the attitude and tone of voice. ... Many husbands are convicted and motivated to change far more quickly when a wife comes across respectfully and with a "gentle and quiet spirit" (I Peter 6:3). I know some men feel praying with their wives is unmanly. On the contrary, if your wife is typical, she will see you as more of a man because she wants you to be the family's spiritual leader. She feels more secure when you take an active role in guiding Bible reading and praying together.

He writes, "Men hold respect and honor as almost equal values. Men have an honor code. There are certain things you just don't do, certain things you just don't say. A woman will talk to a husband in the home in a way that a man would never talk to him. He can't believe she can be so belligerent, so disrespectful The husband will often look away, wanting to drop the argument and move on. He doesn't want to talk about it. Why? Because he feels engulfed and overpowered." In an interview on YouTube he said, "When a wife is hurting and feels unloved she ends up reacting in a way that feels disrespectful to him. She's not trying to be disrespectful." "Men live the honor code. We know in the male arena that you must honor other men. If you treat a man in a dishonorable way and treat him unjustly we have an enemy. We also know we are lethal and that we could actually get ourselves hurt so you don't even go into the 'no zone' there because that zone of disrespect and dishonor is a lethal zone. We stay away from it so we do by nature the honorable thing. But what happens when we feel disrespected by our wives we end up reacting in a way that feels unloving to them but we are not trying to be unloving but it is very natural to do things that she would deem as unloving and thus was born what I call the Crazy Cyle: without love, she reacts without respect; without respect he reacts without love." "When a wife feels unloved, she reacts in ways that feel disrespectful to her husband, and when a husband feels disrespected, he reacts in ways that feel unloving to his wife. This dynamic spins, and the relationship can get crazy!" One or both of them has to be mature and understanding and stop the cycle.

He says some women tell him they do not feel their husband deserves respect saying, "He hasn't earned my respect. He doesn't deserve it. I can't give words of respect because I would be a hypocrite and I can't be a hypocrite. Respect is for our superiors, and my husband is not superior to me. I am not inferior to him. We are equals. So I am not going to be treated like a doormat and subject myself to emotional abuse. Frankly, this call to respect is all about him, his ego, and his

narcissism, and I'm not going to feed his chauvinistic tendencies. I'm not going to give him license to do what he wants to do. And I'm certainly not going to return ot patriarchy. I am not going to live in fear of his dominion and set the feminist movement back fifty years." Nevertheless, he teaches that most husbands deserve respect.

DO THINGS WE MANY NOT ENJOY

He says it is "man's tendency is to pull back from conflict" because it goes "against his natural grain" but when men do the opposite they will "see the results" and become a "believer." He says it "takes guts". "It isn't pleasant, but it works powerfully. Over time it becomes easier, but it is never natural. Even so, this response gives you the power to drain the negativity out of your wife in conflict after conflict." The man should see that his wife is not trying to emasculate him. Father teaches, "To reach true love, however, we have to abide by God's rigid law, and in doing so we do things we may not enjoy" (4-5-1981). Eggerichs teaches, "When you do talk, be especially wary of sounding harsh. A man is typically quite forceful in expressing his opinions. You can sound harsh without realizing it."

PORCELAIN AND COPPER

He explains that men and women are like two different kinds of bowls: "one made of porcelain; the other made of copper. The husband is copper; the wife is porcelain." She is "delicate. She can be cracked, even broken if you are not careful." "God is calling husbands to realize that their wives are porcelain bowls on which He has placed a clearly legible sign, 'Handle with Care.'" It would be great if a wife could confront her husband calmly and with words of respect before she criticizes her husband but it it is the husbands responsibility to take leadership and that means he must take the criticism without demanding she be respectful before he listens to her. Eggerichs writes, "The husband is the Christ figure; she is the church figure. And as a church places its burden on Christ, a wife wants to place her burdens on her husband. Even if she can't articulate it in these words, your wife thinks of you as that burden bearer—as having those big shoulders. How can you be an understanding husband? The most powerful weapons you have are your ears. Just listen to your wife. You don't always have to fix the situation. Set aside time for your wife. Be sure to never bring up the "D" word, even in jest. She needs reassurance of your loyalty to her." "Your wife wants to know that you have her on your mind and heart first and foremost."

He explains that men are hunters, workers and doers. They are wired to achieve. "Despite feminism's cries, a wife best qualifies as the one who 'tenderly cares for her own children'" (I Thess. 2:7) Typically, the woman leans toward having the baby and caring for the baby; the man leans toward working in the field for her and the baby.. Yes, I know there are exceptions in today's culture, but for the typical woman, her first desire is not for a career; it is for home and family. Chauvinists are exceptions to the rule. I believe our culture, which is heavily influenced by feminism, has missed the beauty of God's design."

HIERARCHY

He has a chapter titled, "Hierarchy—Appreciate His Desire to Protect and Provide" and says the term "hierarchy" "is not politically correct. Women hear hierarchy and think immediately of the chauvinist mind-set." God built into man the desire to go out into the field to work and achieve. Another desire God built into the man is to protect and provide for his wife and family and, if necessary, to die for them. The desire to protect and provide is part of the warp and woof of a man." "What is the real meaning of Biblical Hierarchy? Women fear headship. The Bible passage that spells out biblical hierarchy is Eph.5:22-24: 'Wives, be subject to your husbands, as to the Lord. For the husband is the head of the wife as Christ is the head of the church.'" Another translation uses the word "submit" for "subject": "Wives, submit yourselves to your own

husbands. ... the husband is the head of the wife." And it says wives are to submit "to their own husbands in everything."

Eggerichs says in our "dual income" culture this seems "old-fashioned and out-of-date." "The subject of male headship and authority is a sensitive one." The idea the man is some kind of "boss" is repugnant to most people. "Paul sounds hopelessly sexist." "In recent years there has been a movement in the church among some scholars and teachers to suggest that the Bible talks about 'mutual submission'—that is, that men and women are to be equally subject to one another. The text that is used for this position is Ephesians 5:21: 'Submit to one another out of reverence for Christ'. The idea behind mutual submission in this sense is that the wife does not owe submission of any unique kind to her husband." But he writes, "There will come moments when disagreements arise. Honest stalemates can still happen. If a decision must be made, the wife is called upon to defer to her husband, trusting God to guide him to make a decision out of love for her as the responsible head of the marriage." He says this passage "means each submits to others need for love and respect." He says women should not submit to men who are doing things "illegal," "evil" or "violent" and "must physically separate or divorce him for adultery" (Matt. 19:9). (Blessed couples may have the standard that adultery is not enough reason to divorce.) He writes, "The Bible is not sexist. Feminists say the Bible puts down women. Actually the Bible holds up women and gives them advice on how to realize their fondest desires." He says, "No smoothly running organization can have two heads. To set up a marriage with two equals at the head is to set it up for failure. That is one of the big reasons that people are divorcing right and left today. In essence, these marriages do not have anyone who in charge. God knew that someone had to be in charge, and that is why Scripture clearly teaches that, in order for things to work, the wife is called upon to defer to her husband." He advises women; "Tell him that you see him as having more authority because he has more responsibility before God—the responsibility to die for you, if necessary." A famous example of men giving their lives for women is the sinking of the Titanic. And doesn't it make sense to honor men for having the position of being the head of the house?

His book, *Love & Respect: The Love She Most Desires; The Respect He Desperately Needs*, is must reading. It may be my favorite book on marriage. Also watch videos of him on YouTube.com and visit his website loveandrespect.com. Buy and share with all your friends 5 DVDs of a presentation he and his wife have. Here are some testimonies: "a revolutionary and simple message that works.' "I've been married 35 years and have not heard this taught." "This is the key that I have been missing." "A lightbulb moment." "You connected the all the dots for me." His book is truly life changing. So, read their books, watch YouTube videos, and buy and watch their 5-DVD seminar of 6 hours they sell at their website www.loveandrespect.com. It costs $89.00 but it is priceless and it is absolutely essential for everyone to watch these videos to build a happy, harmonious marriage. My wife and I feel we would never have had a fight if we had watched these videos when we first married. They are that powerful. For many years I felt the Andelin's books were the best on male/female relationships but now I think Emerson's *Love & Respect* is the best book.

Running under the surface of even the most secure and capable women is an insecurity that they are not loved and they need reassurance. Men need to daily pursue and tell their wives they are truly loved and committed to them forever. In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* Father says, "A true family is a place where a husband and wife each love each other and live for the sake of the other, as if the spouse were his or her mother, father, or sibling. It is a place where the husband loves his wife as he loves God, and the wife respects her husband as she respects God."

VODDIE BAUCHAM

I also encourage you to watch Voddie Baucham. Do a search at YouTube.com for him and biblical manhood and womanhood and watch his speeches and sermons. Every Unificationist should study him. There are other good videos on this topic by traditional Christians too, but he is one of my favorites. Also, read Voddie's books *What He Must Be: ...If He Wants to Marry My Daughter*, *Family Driven Faith: Doing What It Takes to Raise Sons and Daughters Who Walk With God***,** and *Family Shepherds: Calling and Equipping Men to Lead Their Homes*. And I highly recommend his daughter Jasmine's book *Joyfully at Home* about stay-at-home daughters who honor their fathers who make it their number one goal in life to love their wife and to find the best mate for their child.

HYUNG JIN MOON – ROLE MODEL

Hyung Jin Moon is a wonderful Unificationist role model for a godly patriarch. Be sure to watch his videos at www.Sanctuary-pa.org and Facebook for Sanctuary Church. https://www.facebook.com/pages/Newfoundland-Sanctuary-Church/616977458412272.

I challenge every Unificationist to live and teach the value of godly patriarchy.

CHAPTER FOUR

HOMEMAKER

The fourth value is about the role and responsibility of women. What is godly femininity? For thousands of years women have lived by the values in Titus 2:5 in the Bible that says older women should inspire younger women "to be discreet, chaste, homemakers, good, obedient to their own husbands." The New King James Version translators used the word "homemakers." Other translations use terms such as "keeper of the home", "manager of the home" and "busy at home." It is only recently in human history that women have left the home to compete with men in the workplace and leave their baby to be fed formula instead of the mother home breastfeeding. The biblical family as seen in verses like Titus 2 is often called the "Traditional Family" and the ideology that wants the opposite kind of family is called the "Feminist Family." God's way is the philosophy of Traditionalism. Satan has been successful in making the ideology of Feminism to be the dominate, ruling philosophy during the life of the Messiah in the Last Days. Does this mean that we are to judge women who leave their home to compete with men in the workplace? I believe in this transition to the ideal world in these Last Days that we should not disparage women who have to work because they do not have men in their lives to provide for them. And I don't judge women who do not want to be stay-at-homes because they find fulfillment in work outside the home. I also believe some women should never marry and some women who are married should not have children. It is a case by case situation. We are living in the transition to the future perfect Kingdom of Heaven on earth and this means we live in a messy, complicated world. Even though I believe it is God's design for women to marry, have children and stay home and homeschool their children, I also believe that there are women who need to work outside for reasons known only to them and Heavenly Father. I hope the best for those women who would like to live a traditional lifestyle but are forced to work to provide for themselves. And I wish the best for those women who do not have to work to provide for themselves but feel called to leave their home and have others teach and care for their children while they are at work. I believe in absolute values and everyone should live by them but I do not know every person's situation and how God is working in their lives. They may need the experience of the workplace for their spiritual growth. With that said, I will now focus on the beauty of the traditional family and the dangers of the feminist family.

TRADITIONAL FAMILY

In an article titled "The Feminization of the Family" William Einwechter, (December 8, 2005) wrote:

> Feminism is a radical movement. As such, it goes to the very root of the relationship between men and women and seeks to alter the societal and institutional structures that are perceived to be in conflict with the ideas and goals of feminism. Janet Richards declares that "Feminism is in its nature radical . . . . It is the social institutions of which we complain primarily . . . . If you consider the past there is no doubt at all that the whole structure of society was designed to keep women entirely in the power of men."[1] As a radical ideology, feminism's goal is revolution. Gloria Steinem speaks for feminists when she says: "We're talking about a revolution, not just reform. It's the deepest possible change there is."[2] Feminists want to create a "new society"

where the restrictive social conditions of the past have been forever removed.[3] How successful have feminists been in promoting their agenda of social revolution? Davidson says: "Today, feminism is the gender ideology of our society. From the universities to the public schools to the media to the military, feminism decides the issues, sets the terms of debate, and intimidates potential opponents into abashed silence."[4]

The social institution that feminists have targeted as one of the most repressive to women is the traditional family. By "traditional family" we mean the family structure that developed in Western society under the direct influence of Christianity and the Bible. In the traditional family, the man is the head of the home and the one responsible for providing those things necessary for the sustenance of life. The woman is a "keeper at home," and the one primarily responsible for the care of the children. The traditional family thus defined is in line with the biblical plan for the home. Feminists hate the family that is patterned after the Word of God because it is contrary to all that they accept as true. Thus, their goal is the total destruction of the traditional family.

1] As cited by Michael Levin in *Feminism and Freedom* (New Brunswick, 1988), 19.
[2] Ibid.
[3] Ibid.
[4] Nicholas Davidson, "Preface," in *Gender Sanity*, ed. Nicholas Davidson (New York, 1989), vi.

The results of feminism have been devastating but Feminists see that marriages and families are better off. Most people now think being a homemaker is not considered a worthy career. Feminists hold leadership in most areas of life, especially the schools. For example, a popular college text for marriage and family is *Marriages and Families: Intimacy, Diversity, and Strengths* by David Olson and others. They write, "Feminism has certain benefits for both men and women in family relationships. It encourages men to share wage-earnings responsibilities. It provides women with independent economic security." And women can "pursue professional and personal interests. When work and power are shared, both partners have more opportunity to develop their full potential." These feminist professors put down the traditional family because women there are 'denigrated." They write glowingly of "a more contemporary view" where "men can learn the value of being more sensitive and caring" and "women can learn the value of independence from men." "American society in many ways is moving away from male dominance and toward egalitarian roles (also called equalitarian roles)—social equality between the sexes." They say, "When it comes to the importance of an equal relationship versus a traditional relationship to marital satisfaction" they give a survey that "clearly demonstrated that more equal relationships are highly related to marital satisfaction." "The macho, rigid gender roles may have afforded men more power in culture, but it is lonely at the top. The path toward intimacy is best walked side by side." They teach young college students, "A patriarchal family system influences males to assume the head-of-the-household role and women to accept subordinate status. Egalitarian decision making is associated with nonviolence in families. Research shows that levels of wife beating and husband beating are higher among husband-dominant couples than among democratic couples." We saw in the previous chapter in *Soft Patriarchs, New Men: How Christianity Shapes Fathers and Husbands* Bradford Wilcox says the truth is the opposite of feminist professor's lies. Biblical, patriarchal men "are the least likely to physically abuse their wives." Wilcox exposes the faulty studies of feminists and shows that the happiest women are in a traditional, biblical patriarchal marriage.

NEST

In 1992 when he was 72 years old Father Moon proclaimed himself the Messiah. In a speech titled

"Leaders Building a World of Peace" given on August 24, 1992 at the Little Angels Performing Arts Center in Seoul, Korea he proclaimed: "my wife and I are the True Parents of all humanity ... we are the Savior, the Lord of the Second Advent, the Messiah." In that speech he says God created men to be hunters and women to be nesters:

> If we say that heaven is a symbol of man, then earth is a symbol of woman. The house is the stage on which a woman's life is played out. The mother is the center of a nest filled with love for all the members of the family. The family, with the mother at its center, is the basic unit making up the nation and the world.

HELPER

In Genesis we read that God made the woman to be her man's helper, "Then the LORD God said, 'It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him a helper fit for him'" (Gen. 2:18). Every woman's career should be helping her husband. Men are hunters and women are nesters. A woman's primary responsibility is to help her husband be successful in the marketplace by managing his home. Sun Myung Moon praises his wife for helping him prepare to go to work, "When Father, verging on seventy years old, wants to go out to the ocean, Mother prepares all his equipment with her whole heart. She even prepares the supplies needed in case he stays out overnight and prays for the accomplishment of Father's will. What a beautiful helper and supporter she is!" (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

There are many book and audio/visuals on the subject of true femininity such as the books *Fascinating Womanhood* by Helen Andelin, *The Way Home* by Mary Pride, *Passionate Housewives: Desperate for God* by Jennie Chancey and Stacy McDonald, *So Much More: The Remarkable Influence of Visionary Daughters on the Kingdom of God* by Anna Sofia and Elizabeth Botkin, *Created To Be His Help Meet* by Debi Pearl, *The Stay-At-Home Mom* and *Finding Your Purpose as a Mom: How to Build Your Home on Holy Ground* by Donna Otto, *Me? Obey Him?:The Obedient Wife and God's Way of Happiness and Blessing in the Home* by Elizabeth Rice Handford and *Feminine Appeal: Seven Virtues of a Godly Wife and Mother* by Carolyn Mahaney. Carolyn Mahaney teaches the duties of a godly woman in her series of audios titled "To Teach What Is Good (Titus 2)". You can buy them at www.sovereigngracestore.com or listen to them for free as MP3 downloads. There are eight talks in this audio titled 1.A Fresh Look at Titus 2. Loving My Husband 3. Loving My Children 4. Being Self-Controlled 5. Being Pure 6. Being Busy At Home 7. Being Kind/Doing Good 8. Being Subject to My Husband. Carolyn Mahaney has excellent mp3 audio speeches you can listen to for free such as "True Femininity" at CBMW.com/audio. Victoria Botkin does an excellent job describing the meaning of femininity in the first disc of her 9 disc audio CD series titled *She Shall Be Called Woman*. Listen to Nancy Campbell's audio series titled *Build a Strong Marriage and Exciting Home*. Watch the DVDs *Reclaiming God's Plan for Women* by Nancy Campbell (www.aboverubies.org) and *The 7-Fold Power of a Wife's Submission* by S.M. Davis (www.christianbook.com,www.solvefamilyproblems.com). Every father should show the wonderful DVD *Monstrous Regiment of Women* (www.monstrousregiment.com, YouTube.com has the full documenrary you can watch for free) to their daughters so they can see truly wise and feminine women like Mary Pride, Jenny Chancey, F. Carolyn Graglia and Phyllis Schlafly explain the concepts of patriarchy, femininity and submission.

Passionate Housewives Desperate for God

An excellent book on what values godly women should live by is *Passionate Housewives Desperate for God* by Jennie Chancey and Stacy McDonald. Here are some excerpts. Let's begin with Mrs. McDonald saying:

> The term "homemaker" can be misconstrued, to be sure, so even as we seek to define what a godly keeper at home *is*, we must also uproot the deeply entrenched stereotypes of what a housewife or "homemaker" is *not—or* should not be. In our quest to get to the bottom of this issue, it is critical that we dispel the various myths that have been foisted upon us by feminist propaganda through movies, television, and even billboards—to clear our heads of the cobwebs that can keep us from understanding true biblical femininity.
>
> A godly keeper at home is absolutely not a lesser human being, a mindless robot, or a placid doormat under submission to all men; rather, she is created in the very image of God and of equal worth and value compared to man (Genesis 1:26-28). She is the crown of her husband (Proverbs 12:4), a helper suitable for him (Genesis 2:18). Because she trusts God's wisdom in establishing perfect order for His creation, she willingly submits to her *own* husband as unto the Lord (Ephesians 5:22-24).
>
> In God's economy, the godly housewife is no man's slave or piece of personal property; for her worth is "far above rubies" (Proverbs 31:10). Nonetheless, she eagerly admits to being Christ's slave, which paradoxically makes her free indeed (1 Corinthians 7:22). She laughs when she hears rumors that she is an oppressed victim of a male-dominated dictatorship, because she knows that God's will is perfect and His Word timeless. Her place in society isn't ruled by the culture, but by God's unchanging and eternal Word. By His grace, she has no desire to question His ways (Isaiah 55:8); on the contrary, she rests in them.

Stacy McDonald writes in her chapter titled "Embracing Your Sacred Calling": "As keepers of our homes, we've all winced at some form of the question, "So, what do you *do?'* How many times have you responded, 'I'm *only* a housewife' or 'I'm *just* a homemaker,' implying apologetically that you don't *really* work? The domestic ideology of *Godey's Lady's Book* is long gone, and the word housewife is more often used as a pejorative than as a title for the diligent keeper of the home. Today, even in Christian circles, a homemaker's vocation is viewed as optional, replaceable, and more like a hobby to fulfill her own needs than as a vital asset to the family.

Here is an example of two feminists putting down the traditional wife and mother: Simone de Beauvoir said, "No woman should be authorized to stay at home and raise her children. Society should be totally different. Women should not have that choice, precisely because if there is such a choice, too many women will make that one." Vivian Gornick writes, "Being a housewife is an illegitimate profession… The choice to serve and be protected and plan towards being a family-maker is a choice that shouldn't be. The heart of radical feminism is to change that." Mrs. McDonald says, "Yet even those of us moms who have chosen to go against the grain can still be lulled by feminism's lies. We can be lured by the insidious notion that being separated from our home and little ones is a good thing. We too can become convinced that it's better for everyone if Mom pursues her own interests. I know; it's happened to me."

Homemaker and former lawyer Cheryl Mendelson writes in *Home Comforts: The Art and Science of Keeping House*:

> So many people imagine housekeeping to be boring, frustrating, repetitive, unintelligent drudgery. I cannot agree. In fact, having kept house, practiced law, taught, and done many other sorts of work, low- and high-paid, I can assure you that it is actually lawyers who are most familiar with the experience of unintelligent drudgery. ... Seen from the outside, housework can look like a Sisyphean task that gives you no sense of reward or completion. Y*et housekeeping actually offers more*

> *opportunities for savoring achievement than almost any other work I can think of.* Each of its regular routines brings satisfaction when it is completed. You get satisfaction not only from the sense of order, cleanliness, freshness, peace and plenty restored, but from the knowledge that you yourself and those you care about are going to enjoy those benefits (emphasis added).

In *Passionate Housewives Desperate for God* Jennie Chancey writes:

> Pop culture today glorifies effeminacy in men. From television shows like *Queer Eye for the Straight Guy* and the glorification of "metrosexuals" who are in touch with their feminine side, to fumbling, emotionally immature sitcom dads, the message is clear: maleness is something we have to "fix," and all those old masculine role models just won't do.
>
> While women have pursued masculine traits, men have faced pressure to soften their maleness and adopt feminine traits. In the meantime, a generation of boys finds itself on Ritalin in an attempt to suppress masculine energy before it even has a chance to express itself, making war on boyhood.
>
> What is going on with all this push toward androgyny? Are we really supposed to believe that utopia is just around the corner if men will simply make themselves more like women and women more like men? Where do we find answers in these postmodern times?

In 1923, the Southern Baptist Convention published a book of essays titled *Feminism: Woman and Her Work*. The editor, J.W. Porter wrote in a chapter titled "The Basis of Feminism": "The advanced woman resents the fact that she is a woman. She rebels against the difference in sex and if possible would obliterate the fact that one is male and the other female. She is unsexed and would if possible break down all the barriers and distinctions of sex. She seems unmindful of the fact that we must reckon with the eternal 'he' and 'she.' In her grammar there is but one gender, and that is neuter. There is no he or she, but simply and solely 'it.' Seemingly, she will never be satisfied until she can become the head of the family, provided of course, that there must be families. Her ambition appears to be to make herself independent of God and man … And here comes the tragedy of our civilization—the disintegration of the American home. The citadel of our civilization has been the solidarity and integrity of our homes."

SAMENESS

Mrs. Chancey teaches, "Egalitarianism is 'a social philosophy advocating the removal of inequalities among people' (*Merriam Webster's* dictionary). While we certainly agree that all people have the same inherent worth and dignity as human beings made in God's image, we do not believe that equality equals sameness or that it demands the elimination of role distinctions."

Jennie Chancey teaches, "There absolutely is a place for husbands to bless their wives by helping with a busy household, but God has given us a division of labor for a reason; no one has to 'do it all.' I don't have to go out and earn money to keep a roof over our heads *and* come home to take care of the daily housekeeping tasks. My husband shouldn't have to do double duty, either." In her book Mrs. Chancey gives some good quotes about how the result of feminism is the destruction of the family.

"The decline of fatherhood is a major force behind many of the most disturbing problems that plague America: crime and juvenile delinquency; premature sexuality and out-of-wedlock births to teenagers; deteriorating educational achievement; depression, substance abuse, and alienation among adolescents; and the growing number of women and children in poverty…" –David Popenoe, "Life without Father," in *Lost Fathers: The Politics of Fatherlessness in America*.

“Society is just now beginning to recognize on a widespread basis what children have known all along—father-absence is one of the most destructive forces to children in our society”—The Alliance for Non-Custodial Parents Rights www.ancpr.org.

“In a culture which conveys messages to men that they are not needed in distinctive roles of father and husband, many men leave their families or refuse to form families when they beget children. Gone are most vestiges of traditional stigmas once associated with divorce and out-of-wedlock births. We have forfeited much of the traditional wisdom relating child welfare to intact two-parent families. Fortunately, that traditional wisdom is now being supported by impressive social-scientific research. In the U.S., statistics that reveal the declining well-being of children chiefly point to two causal factors: (1) the dramatic increase in the proportion of children growing up in fatherless households, and (2) the rise of the modern welfare state.”—Rev. Robert A. Sirico, “Transforming the Culture of Fatherlessness” [www. Acton.org].

Here is a great speech titled “On American Motherhood” given by President Theodore Roosevelt in Washington on March 13, 1905, before the National Congress of Mothers:

> But far more important than the question of the occupation of our citizens is the question of how their family life is conducted. No matter what that occupation may be, as long as there is a real home and as long as those who make up that home do their duty to one another, to their neighbors and to the State, it is of minor consequence whether the man's trade is plied in the country or in the city, whether it calls for the work of the hands or for the work of the head.
>
> No piled-up wealth, no splendor of material growth, no brilliance of artistic development, will permanently avail any people unless its home life is healthy, unless the average man possesses honesty, courage, common sense, and decency, unless he works hard and is willing at need to fight hard; and unless the average woman is a good wife, a good mother, able and willing to perform the first and greatest duty of womanhood, able and willing to bear, and to bring up as they should be brought up, healthy children, sound in body, mind, and character, and numerous enough so that the race shall increase and not decrease.
>
> There are certain old truths which will be true as long as this world endures, and which no amount of progress can alter. One of these is the truth that the primary duty of the husband is to be the home-maker, the breadwinner for his wife and children, and that the primary duty of the woman is to be the helpmate, the housewife, and mother. The woman should have ample educational advantages; but save in exceptional cases the man must be, and she need not be, and generally ought not to be, trained for a lifelong career as the family breadwinner; and, therefore, after a certain point, the training of the two must normally be different because the duties of the two are normally different. This does not mean inequality of function, but it does mean that normally there must be dissimilarity of function. On the whole, I think the duty of the woman the more important, the more difficult, and the more honorable of the two; on the whole I respect the woman who does her duty even more than I respect the man who does his.
>
> No ordinary work done by a man is either as hard or as responsible as the work of a woman who is bringing up a family of small children; for upon her time and strength demands are made not only every hour of the day but often every hour of the night. She may have to get up night after night to take care of a sick child, and yet must by day continue to do all her household duties as well; and if the family

means are scant she must usually enjoy even her rare holidays taking her whole brood of children with her. The birth pangs make all men the debtors of all women. Above all our sympathy and regard are due to the struggling wives among those whom Abraham Lincoln called the plain people, and whom he so loved and trusted; for the lives of these women are often led on the lonely heights of quiet, self-sacrificing heroism.

Just as the happiest and most honorable and most useful task that can be set any man is to earn enough for the support of his wife and family, for the bringing up and starting in life of his children, so the most important, the most honorable and desirable task which can be set any woman is to be a good and wise mother in a home marked by self-respect and mutual forbearance, by willingness to perform duty, and by refusal to sink into self-indulgence or avoid that which entails effort and self-sacrifice. Of course there are exceptional men and exceptional women who can do and ought to do much more than this, who can lead and ought to lead great careers of outside usefulness in addition to—not as substitutes for--their home work; but I am not speaking of exceptions; I am speaking of the primary duties, I am speaking of the average citizens, the average men and women who make up the nation.

Inasmuch as I am speaking to an assemblage of mothers, I shall have nothing whatever to say in praise of an easy life. Yours is the work which is never ended. No mother has an easy time, the most mothers have very hard times; and yet what true mother would barter her experience of joy and sorrow in exchange for a life of cold selfishness, which insists upon perpetual amusement and the avoidance of care, and which often finds its fit dwelling place in some flat designed to furnish with the least possible expenditure of effort the maximum of comfort and of luxury, but in which there is literally no place for children?

The woman who is a good wife, a good mother, is entitled to our respect as is no one else; but he is entitled to it only because, and so long as, she is worthy of it. Effort and self-sacrifice are the law of worthy life for the man as for the woman; tho neither the effort nor the self-sacrifice may be the same for the one as for the other. I do not in the least believe in the patient Griselda type of woman, in the woman who submits to gross and long continued ill treatment, any more than I believe in a man who tamely submits to wrongful aggression. No wrong-doing is so abhorrent as wrong-doing by a man toward the wife and the children who should arouse every tender feeling in his nature. Selfishness toward them, lack of tenderness toward them, lack of consideration for them, above all, brutality in any form toward them, should arouse the heartiest scorn and indignation in every upright soul.

I believe in the woman keeping her self-respect just as I believe in the man doing so. I believe in her rights just as much as I believe in the man's, and indeed a little more; and I regard marriage as a partnership, in which each partner is in honor bound to think of the rights of the other as well as of his or her own. But I think that the duties are even more important than the rights; and in the long run I think that the reward is ampler and greater for duty well done, than for the insistence upon individual rights, necessary tho this, too, must often be. Your duty is hard, your responsibility great; but greatest of all is your reward. I do not pity you in the least. On the contrary, I feel respect and admiration for you.

Into the woman's keeping is committed the destiny of the generations to come after us. In bringing up your children you mothers must remember that while it is essential to be loving and tender it is no less essential to be wise and firm. Foolishness and affection must not be treated as interchangeable terms; and besides training your sons and daughters in the softer and milder virtues, you must seek to give them those stern and hardy qualities which in after life they will surely need. Some children will go wrong in spite of the best training; and some will go right even when their surroundings are most unfortunate; nevertheless an immense amount depends upon the family training. If you mothers through weakness bring up your sons to be selfish and to think only of themselves, you will be responsible for much sadness among the women who are to be their wives in the future. If you let your daughters grow up idle, perhaps under the mistaken impression that as you yourselves have had to work hard they shall know only enjoyment, you are preparing them to be useless to others and burdens to themselves. Teach boys and girls alike that they are not to look forward to live spent in avoiding difficulties, but to lives spent in overcoming difficulties. Teach them that work, for themselves and also for others, is not a curse but a blessing; seek to make them happy, to make them enjoy life, but seek also to make them face life with the steadfast resolution to wrest success from labor and adversity, and to do their whole duty before God and to man. Surely she who can thus train her sons and her daughters is thrice fortunate among women.

There are many good people who are denied the supreme blessing of children, and for these we have the respect and sympathy always due to those who, from no fault of their own, are denied any of the other great blessings of life. But the man or woman who deliberately forego these blessings, whether from viciousness, coldness, shallow-heartedness, self-indulgence, or mere failure to appreciate aright the difference between the all-important and the unimportant,—why, such a creature merits contempt as hearty as any visited upon the soldier who runs away in battle, or upon the man who refuses to work for the support of those dependent upon him, and who tho able-bodied is yet content to eat in idleness the bread which others provide.

The existence of women of this type forms one of the most unpleasant and unwholesome features of modern life. If any one is so dim of vision as to fail to see what a thoroughly unlovely creature such a woman is I wish they would read Judge Robert Grant's novel "Unleavened Bread," ponder seriously the character of Selma, and think of the fate that would surely overcome any nation which developed its average and typical woman along such lines. Unfortunately it would be untrue to say that this type exists only in American novels. That it also exists in American life is made unpleasantly evident by the statistics as to the dwindling families in some localities. It is made evident in equally sinister fashion by the census statistics as to divorce, which are fairly appalling; for easy divorce is now as it ever has been, a bane to any nation, a curse to society, a menace to the home, an incitement to married unhappiness and to immorality, an evil thing for men and a still more hideous evil for women. These unpleasant tendencies in our American life are made evident by articles such as those which I actually read not long ago in a certain paper, where a clergyman was quoted, seemingly with approval, as expressing the general American attitude when he said that the ambition of any save a very rich man should be to rear two children only, so as to give his children an opportunity "to taste a few of the good things of life."

> This man, whose profession and calling should have made him a moral teacher, actually set before others the ideal, not of training children to do their duty, not of sending them forth with stout hearts and ready minds to win triumphs for themselves and their country, not of allowing them the opportunity, and giving them the privilege of making their own place in the world, but, forsooth, of keeping the number of children so limited that they might "taste a few good things!" The way to give a child a fair chance in life is not to bring it up in luxury, but to see that it has the kind of training that will give it strength of character. Even apart from the vital question of national life, and regarding only the individual interest of the children themselves, happiness in the true sense is a hundredfold more apt to come to any given member of a healthy family of healthy-minded children, well brought up, well educated, but taught that they must shift up, well educated, but taught that they must shift for themselves, must win their own way, and by their own exertions make their own positions of usefulness, than it is apt to come to those whose parents themselves have acted on and have trained their children to act on, the selfish and sordid theory that the whole end of life is to "taste a few good things."
>
> The intelligence of the remark is on a par with its morality; for the most rudimentary mental process would have shown the speaker that if the average family in which there are children contained but two children the nation as a whole would decrease in population so rapidly that in two or three generations it would very deservedly be on the point of extinction, so that the people who had acted on this base and selfish doctrine would be giving place to others with braver and more robust ideals. Nor would such a result be in any way regrettable; for a race that practised such doctrine--that is, a race that practised race suicide--would thereby conclusively show that it was unfit to exist, and that it had better give place to people who had not forgotten the primary laws of their being.
>
> To sum up, then, the whole matter is simple enough. If either a race or an individual prefers the pleasure of more effortless ease, of self-indulgence, to the infinitely deeper, the infinitely higher pleasures that come to those who know the toil and the weariness, but also the joy, of hard duty well done, why, that race or that individual must inevitably in the end pay the penalty of leading a life both vapid and ignoble. No man and no woman really worthy of the name can care for the life spent solely or chiefly in the avoidance of risk and trouble and labor. Save in exceptional cases the prizes worth having in life must be paid for, and the life worth living must be a life of work for a worthy end, and ordinarily of work more for others than for one's self.
>
> The woman's task is not easy—no task worth doing is easy—but in doing it, and when she has done it, there shall come to her the highest and holiest joy known to mankind; and having done it, she shall have the reward prophesied in Scripture; for her husband and her children, yes, and all people who realize that her work lies at the foundation of all national happiness and greatness, shall rise up and call her blessed.

In his book *Family Driven Faith* Voddie Baucham writes that his wife, Bridget, gave up a career in teaching to have a career in her home where she homeschools their children. He writes:

> … the most controversial issue facing the prosperous American Christian family: should Mom work outside the home? I want to answer that question in two ways. First, we must seek to understand what the Bible teaches on the matter. Next, we

must discover the motives behind our current practices. Only then can we arrive at an appropriate answer to this pressing question.

Being a wife and mother is nothing to be ashamed of. I find it difficult to make that statement—not because I don't believe it, but because I can't imagine how motherhood has fallen so far out of favor in our culture. I don't understand why such a statement is necessary. Why would a woman be ashamed of the fact that she is investing her life in shaping the future? Why should a woman be ashamed of her role as COO of the home? When did we begin to tell women they lacked value if they refused to leave the lion's share of their children's daily lives to the "professionals" down at the day care?

The movie *Mona Lisa Smile* ought to have a subtitle: A Feminist Manifesto. The theme of the movie was, "You can have it all!" You can be a lawyer in the courtroom, a queen in the bedroom, a gourmet in the kitchen, and a first-rate mother all in one. This is simply untrue. Being a wife and mother is a full-time job, and a full-time job + a full-time job = something get neglected, and that something is almost always the family.

I know this is not PC. In fact, you don't even have to be a flaming liberal feminist to find what I am suggesting offensive. For decades we have been told that women can have it all. Moreover, we have been told that they *should* have it all. What we haven't been told is the high price that they and their children have paid for "it all."

I am not saying that any mother who works outside the home is sinning. That is for each family to decide as they wrestle with Scriptures and their circumstances. I know there are many mothers who have to work. My mother, like far too many women, was left to raise a child alone. She did not have the luxury of being a stay-at-home mom. My mother had to put food on the table.

Other women's husbands have died or are disabled. Some women have chosen career paths that allow them to work when their children are at school, and others work part-time or as volunteers.

The ultimate question, however, is, "Are we both working because we have to or because we don't think our house is big enough? If it is the latter, we have crossed the line. That is when our children have been sacrificed on the altar of prosperity.

Remember, "the hand that rocks the cradle is the hand that rules the world."

Emerson Eggerichs writes in his book *Love & Respect*:

To learn where husbands got this tremendous drive to work and achieve, we must go back to Genesis and the first career assignment in history. "Then the Lord God took the man and put him into the garden of Eden to cultivate and keep it" (Genesis 2:15). Before Eve was created, God made Adam, and God made him to work. It's interesting to note that Eden was not a place with free handouts wherever Adam turned. The trees provided food, but Adam was to cultivate and keep them.

Adam needed a woman to be his counterpart. So God made "a helper suitable for him" (Genesis 2:18). The Hebrew word for "helper" (or helpmeet) means literally "a help answering to him," or "one who answers." In 1 Corinthians 11:9, Paul takes

this thought further: “For indeed man was not created for the woman’s sake, but woman for the man’s sake.”

My observation is that during courtship a woman glows with a message to her man: “I love you and am here for you. I respect what you want to do and who you want to be. I long to help you. That’s what love is all about.” After marriage, however, things change. Her way of helping can feel anything but respectful to her husband. For example, one wife of almost sixteen years and a homeschooling mother of three, thought she had the right motives to be a helpmeet, but she could see she wasn’t being received as such. She writes: “He received what I thought were well-meaning ways of helping as intentions with wrong motives…. I am finding out I have come across in a complaining negative attitude more than I care to realize…. Since I have been purposing to show respect, I have definitely seen the blessing, my husband has been talking more to me, been more affectionate, and I feel like we have been closer in the past few weeks than we have in years.”

A loving wife is called upon to overlook certain failures and mistakes by her husband “because love covers a multitude of sins” (1 Peter 4:8). And a husband overlooks words and actions by his wife that may seem disrespectful because “a prudent man overlooks an insult” (Proverbs 12:16).

Obviously, passages like Genesis 2:18 and 1 Corinthians 11:9 are not favorites with the feminist movement. To feminists this is politically incorrect—something written by a man, making God to appear to be sexist. But Scripture is not is not so easily dismissed. From the very beginning, man was called upon to “work in the field” and to provide for his family. The man feels a deep need to be involved in adventure and conquest. This is not an option for him; it is a deep-seated trait.

A MAN’S FIRST QUESTION: “WHAT DO YOU DO?”

The first question a man usually asks another man when they meet for the first time is, “What do you do?” Right or wrong, most men identify themselves by their work. God created men to “do” something I the field. Watch young boys as they pick up sticks and turn them into imaginary guns or tools. Recently a mother told us she had prevented her son from having any toy guns or using sticks as pretend rifles, but when he made his cheese sandwich into the form of a pistol and was shooting at a friend, she cried out in exasperation, “I give up!”

Mothers should never give up because this is simply part of a boy’s nature. He is called to be a hunter, a worker, a doer He wants to make his conquest in the field of life. From childhood, there is something in a male that makes him like adventure and conquest. He wants to go into the field to hunt or to work in some way.

DO WOMEN WANT TO HAVE IT ALL?

When I speak of a man’s deep seated desire to work, I am not saying women have no desire to work. Women have always worked, but generally they did so in the home with children nearby. In recent decades, women have discovered they are quite capable of going out into the workaday world and holding significant positions and making tremendous achievements. But when a wife goes out to work, the question remains: who will remain at home to care for the kids? The answer is day care, a solution that at best is hardly ideal and, at worst, is severely harmful to the children.

It is interesting that in the Western world at least, women see careers as a freedom-of-choice issue. Women don't want to be told they have to work. They want the freedom to choose full-time mothering and/or career.

Most men feel that work is not an option. Comedian Tim Allen observed that women have all kinds of choices. Men have one: "Work or go to jail." Yes, it is true that in some homes the woman works and the man takes care of the kids. Generally speaking, however, our sons will feel they have to work in some field, but our daughters will want the freedom to choose between pregnancies and promotions.

My counseling experience leads me to conclude that the typical woman is looking for a husband who is capable enough to enable her to leave the workforce if she so desires. As she evaluates her future with a man, she instinctively considers his ability to take care of her and the children. The good-willed woman marries for love, not for money; nevertheless, she is very aware of the need to make a "nest." She asks herself, "Can he provide sufficiently to make it possible for me to stay home with my little chicks if that's what I want to do full time?" The woman who asks this question is being wise. I hope my daughter weighs her options in this way.

There is also the question of just how much a wife who is the main breadwinner enjoys her role. Remember the basic question that all wives have: "Does he love me as much as I love him?" Women are basically insecure about this, and if a wife is out there doing the providing, bringing home the money while he stays home, her insecurity goes up, not down. She wonders, "Would he even be here if it weren't for the money I make?" Becoming the main provider for the family can result in the woman beng attacked at her level of deepest fear.

A man always feels the call to the field, while the natural instinct of a woman is the call to the family. The husband instinctively knows he needs to be out there performing, no matter what other pressures he may be facing. I believe that most men reflect Adam and most women reflect Eve deep within their core. Like Adam, he feels a call to work in the field on behalf of the family. Most women feel like Eve. She alone can have a baby and, if she has a baby, she wants the option of having her Adam work in the field on her behalf.

Adam does not expect Eve to have a baby and hand the baby to him so she can go back to work. Those who advocate domestic equality promote this idea, but after doing my PhD dissertation on effective fathers, I would disagree. This is not to downplay a woman's abilities and her desire for a career. Women can be called to positions of important leadership (see Judges 4:4), but I want to emphasize her incomparable worth as mother to an infant. A father with an infant does not compare to a mother with and infant. I do not believe any social engineering will make Daddy "a natural mother." Typically, the woman leans toward having the baby and caring for the baby; the man leans toward working in the field for her and the baby. Yes, I know there are exceptions in today's culture, but for the typical woman her desire is not for a career; it is for home and family.

In *A Return to Modesty* Wendy Shalit argues that "people today have missed the fact that our differences are key to our relationship." She explains: "The sexual revolution seems to have failed mostly because it ignored the differences between the sexes. . . . Not only do we think there are differences between the sexes, but we think these differences can have a beautiful meaning—a meaning that isn't some irrelevant fact about us but one that can inform and guide our lives. That's

why we are swooning over nineteenth-century dramas and clothing."

Mary Pride writes in *The Way Home: Beyond Feminism, Back to Reality*, "My experience is that any employed husband can provide for his family without sending the wife out to work, as long as they are willing to live within his means. Biblically, he should take two jobs before looking to you for support."

There are many good books and websites by stay-at-home moms that should be standard reading in the Unification Movement. The term stay-at-home does not mean women never leave the home. After their family is cared for they should volunteer their time to be ambassadors of charity. Mary Pride writes about this in her must read books *The Way Home* and *All the Way Home*. Unificationist women should never earn money, manage money or worry about money as Mrs. Andelin teaches in her book *Fascinating Womanhood*.

The knee-jerk reaction to someone advocating women make their home their career is that everything costs so much that women have to work to help pay the bills. Men are seen as too weak and incapable of providing for a family. In fact, it is common sense to many people that no one can have a large family because it simply costs too much to have children. Children are now seen not as an asset; they are seen as a liability. This thinking is from Satan. Unificationists should be savvy to Satan's tactics and do the opposite.

There are a number of books refuting the idea that families today cannot live on the husband's salary. Larry Burkett in *Women Leaving the Workplace* has a chapter called "What a Working Mother is Worth" where writes, "There are so many angles to this. I hope you read his book. Here is a little of what he says, "If we assume the median income of a working mother is $14,500, that means a net return of slightly more than $300 per month for her labor. Based on a 40-hour work week, a working mother nets about $2 per hour (average) for her time! Forget the child labor laws; we have mothers who are working for Third World wages to support our tax system, child care providers, and new car dealers. If that same working mother were available to use her services at home to reduce the family's food bills, shop at discount stores and garage sales for the kid's clothes, and reduce her family's income into a lower tax bracket, it is quite possible that she would net more savings for her family than the income she generates. ... I was sincerely impressed with the ingenuity of many of the women who responded to our survey, particularly as it concerns reducing family expenses. One mother said that she had worked out a plan with her family doctor (and later the dentist) in which he would accept her services in the form of redeemable coupons for child care."

In an article "in the *Chicago Tribune*, financial analyst Michael Englung of the MMS International, a San Francisco forecasting firm, noted that even in families where the primary wage earner makes $100,000 and the secondary wage earner makes $50,000, nearly 80 percent of the second income is consumed in taxes, child care, and transportation. That seems a pretty pathetic return for the demands an employer makes on a $50,000-a-year employee, especially a mother. Another interesting side note was reported in *U.S. News & World Report*. A Loyola University five-year study found that husbands whose wives stayed home received 20 percent higher raises than men whose wives worked." He gives other examples of studies showing how it usually isn't worth it for the wife to work financially and studies show men whose wives stay home earn more money than men whose wives work. He goes into a detailed analysis of what it would cost to replace all the services of a wife and it comes out a minimum of $26,000 a year. This is for a live in nanny, housekeeper and private tutor. He says many affluent families he talked to can't get reliable domestic help at any price.

James Dobson says in his book *Love Must Be Tough* that he sees some "positive elements" in the "women's movement": "There is no doubt in my mind that the movement has brought greater respect and dignity for females, especially in the business world." He is wrong. The movement has been 100% negative. It has decreased respect and dignity for females. Dobson is wrong is believing it is good for women to be in the "business world."

Mrs. Norman Vincent Peale

When a woman focuses on her husband more than herself she is not giving up her unique personality and talents to become a slave. Women will find true happiness and love and freedom in a happy marriage. And happy marriages, or better yet, great, magnificent, Godly marriages are great to the degree the woman does her job of attending to her husband. Mrs. Moon is the champion at attending her husband. Mrs. Norman Vincent Peale, Ruth, wrote a good advice book for women called *The Adventure of Being a Wife*. One point she makes to women is for them to study their man and then act on it. She writes: "Studying your mate should include a willingness to participate, at least occasionally, in activities that interest him more than they interest you. Some domestically-oriented women never learn to do this. Their husbands may be ardent golfers, or gardeners, or bowlers, or bridge players, but the women they have married make no effort to join them in the areas where they are happiest and where in most cases they would welcome the companionship of a wife."

She gives an example of woman she knew who was smart enough to force herself to go with her husband and learn some of what he does. She writes: "I knew a woman once, married to a fanatical trout fisherman, who made herself go fishing with him even though she didn't know a dry fly from a luna moth. At first she was horribly bored, baffled by the intricacies of the sport, sure that she could never acquire even the most rudimentary skill. But gradually her attitude changed. Her husband's enthusiasm was contagious, his delight in teaching her was endearing. In the end, although she never became an expert, she was able to participate with an enthusiasm and enjoyment that at first she would have thought impossible. And it all came about because, studying her husband, trying to make him happy, she enlarged her horizons."

I have seen many pictures of Mrs. Moon fishing on a bank with her husband standing nearby fishing also. There are countless pictures of her holding her fish and the both of them beaming. I saw a picture of them once dressed up as hunters, carrying their shotguns and each holding a pheasant that each had shot. She goes with him and does as he does.

Ruth Peale's core teaching is that a woman should make her man number one in her life. This means more than thinking nice romantic thoughts about him sometimes and giving him a Hallmark card on his birthday. It means she has to work, to sweat, to get out of herself. She has to study the man. Who is disciplined enough today to study anything? And how politically incorrect can you get to say to a woman she is to major in her husband. People think today how sad and pathetic that would be. But if women did this there would be no separations and divorce.

She writes: "If I could give one piece of advice to young brides, and only one, it would be this: study your man. Study him as if he were some rare and strange and fascinating animal, which he is. Study him constantly, because he will be constantly changing. Study his likes and dislikes, his strengths and weaknesses, his moods and mannerisms. Just loving a man is fine, but it's not enough. To live with one successfully you have to know him, and to know him you have to study him.

"Look around you and decide how many of the best marriages you know are ones where a wife in a deep sense actually knows her husband better than he knows himself. Knows what pleases him.

Knows what upsets him. Knows what makes him laugh or makes him angry. Knows when he needs encouragement. Knows, in other words, exactly what makes him tick."

"On the other hand, the divorce courts are full of women who didn't study their man, who didn't try to anticipate and meet their needs, who failed to observe warning signs while there was still time to do something about them." She then goes into detail telling a true story of a woman she knew who was devastated when her husband left her. Mrs. Peale said she was a stupid woman who didn't see it coming because she did not study her man. She also teaches that, "Studying your man never stops."

At the beginning of her book she says that people have all kind of reasons why there is so much divorce. She says it is because of women: "Women aren't using their heads. In this whole area of human relations, women are smarter than men. They ought to be able to study their man, figure out what his needs are, what makes him tick. They ought to help him know where he wants to go. They ought to be able to anticipate trouble and head it off. They ought to be brainy enough and sexy enough to hold a husband. But a lot of them are not, mainly because they're too lazy or too spoiled, or too busy thinking about themselves and what they're getting or not getting out of their marriages." I would like to add that in regard to her statement that women aren't sexy enough, she ends her book saying women don't even look different from men anymore. They wear pants.

In an updated version of her book, *The Adventures of Being a Wife*, titled *Secrets of Staying in Love*, she sadly misses the whole point of what are the secrets of love between men and women. She advises a young married woman to keep her career and then has a ridiculous chapter about how her husband, and all men, should not be jealous or threatened by this, even if her paycheck is more than his. Her second book was written years after her first and it is clear that she has been digested by feminism. Mrs. Peale is a feminist even though she makes some noises that she isn't. The proof of the pudding is in the eating. She teaches strongly in her book for women to work. She says she handles "all the financial and tax matters in our family." Why? Because Norman Vincent Peale is incompetent at it: "if Norman tried to balance checkbooks or started worrying about mortgages or domestic money matters, his creativity would simply dry up. I took over these chores, at first, mainly to relieve him of this burden." Then, she says, she has enjoyed it. The Andelins are more in line with God than these two people. They rightly teach that men do all the financial work.

She tells a story of how her husband talked a woman who had just become a widow to take over her husband's business. She continually praises working women and says nothing about stay-at-home moms. She even goes so far as to warn men to not be jealous: "jealousy can begin to raise its ugly head when a woman's career in the business or professional world begins to outshine that of her husband." "Ideally a man should give encouragement and support to his wife even if her career tends to overshadow his own. But this is hard for some men to do. The traditional concept of the male as the chief provider in the family is still very much alive in many masculine hearts. If the woman makes more money or seems to be achieving more importance in the outside world, such a man may feel threatened or diminished."

COMMON SENSE

Then this powerful mentor to many women gives the feminist line: "Common sense tells us that a man should feel proud of a wife who achieves as much in her career as he does in his, or even more. But sometimes he doesn't, because of hidden insecurities within himself. Then it becomes the wife's task to understand his reactions and help him overcome them if she possibly can." It is not "common sense" to think men are going to feel fine not being the sole provider and that a woman can "help" her man with "hidden insecurities." Many men spout the feminist line and seem to be the New Feminist Man but they are deluding themselves and eventually problems will come

because their unconscious unhappiness will win out over their conscious happiness. Thankfully, her book is out of print.

SURRENDERING TO MOTHERHOOD

At Amazon.com Iris Krasnow, the author of *Surrendering to Motherhood: Losing Your Mind, Finding Your Soul* writes: "... with our children and enough time pursuing our own dreams is the central angst of our generation of post-feminism women. It is never easy. Yet there is no substitution for the grounding joy that comes from being with our children, precious time that comes but once. We can always go back to pursuing worldly careers; we can never go back to this eyeblink of life when our kids are young and cling to us like monkeys. When I started writing this book, our four sons were all in diapers. Now they are ages nine, seven and five year old twins, and I am wrenchingly aware of how quickly time flies by. This is ultimately what my book is about; it's about being present as much as possible in the fleeting present of our young children's lives. Surrendering to motherhood does not mean defeat; it means yielding to the higher power of childrearing, and that is a supreme victory,"

In an issue of the magazine *The American Enterprise* (May/June 1998) she had an excellent article titled "Discovering Motherhood." She writes:

> Other powerful women have voiced similar regrets about letting work overshadow their family lives. In a wonderful interview conducted by Oriana Fallaci, former Israeli Prime Minister Golda Meir reflected on trying to run a country and run a family at the same time:
>
> Such a struggle breaks out in you. Your heart goes to pieces. It's all running around, trying to be in two places at once, getting upset. All this can't help but be reflected in the structure of the family.
>
> I know that my children, when they were little, suffered a lot on my account. I left them alone so often. I was never with them when I should have been and would have liked to be. Oh, I remember how happy they were, my children, every time I didn't go to work because of a headache. They jumped and laughed and said, "Mamma's staying home! Mamma has a headache!"
>
> If you only knew how many times I say to myself, "To hell with everything, to hell with everybody, I've done my share, now let the others do theirs, enough, enough, enough." I like to be with nothing to do, even just sitting in an armchair, or wasting time with little things I enjoy. I should be the master of the clock, not the clock the master of me. … When we choose to become mothers, we make the most elemental commitment you can make as a human being, an irrevocable promise to take care of our offspring. We are not forced to reproduce. We become mothers because we want to, often because it's what we want more than anything else in the world.

DAY CARE DECEPTION

Brian Robertson wrote the book *Day Care Deception*. In an article titled "Day Care Deception: The Family Under Siege" at the website www.frc.org he writes:

> The "day care deception" of my book's title refers to two things: 1) the continuing attempts to cover up or explain away the social science findings that show the serious risks of over-reliance on non-parental group care for preschool children, and 2) the continuing attempt to portray greater public investment in organized group care for children as something that time-strapped working parents demand.

> With regard to the social science data, the evidence is conclusive and becomes more conclusive every year: day care is a serious risk, both to children's normal development and to their health. Just last month, findings from an ongoing study conducted by the National Institute of Child Health and Development showed a high correlation between time in non-parental group care and "aggressiveness" in children, a technical term used by investigators to describe behavior such as non-compliance, talking too much, arguing a lot, throwing tantrums, demanding a lot of attention, disrupting class discipline, cruelty, meanness, bullying, explosive behavior, and getting in a lot of fights. The study showed that children who spend an average of thirty hours per week or more in non-parental group care display three times as many of these behavioral problems as children who spend ten hours per week or less in day care, about as dramatic a correlation as one can find in sociology. Despite the attempts of the NICHD and the media to downplay and explain away the findings, they were clear to anyone who bothered to pick up the study.

The following is an excellent article titled "HomeLess America: What the Disappearance of the American Homemaker Really Means" in www.profam.org by Bryce Christensen about the sorry state of families after a century of being ravaged by feminism:

> Once highly honored, the social title of "homemaker" now carries deeply unfortunate connotations of incompetence, backwardness, and parasitism. The truth is that America still desperately needs homemakers and that by making tens of millions truly homeless, their disappearance is exposing growing numbers to psychological and social problems surprisingly similar to—if usually less acute than—those experienced by the desperate souls on the street. Even more surprising to many Americans is the hidden but very real linkage between the disappearance of homemakers and the rise not only of the emotional homelessness of the adequately housed, but also of the on-the-street homelessness of the unhoused.
>
> **The Real Traditional Home**
> Any real understanding of homemaking and its currently imperiled status must begin with an acknowledgement that, in economic terms at least, the 1950s-style homemaking—the homemaking of *Leave It To Beaver* and *Ozzie and Harriet*—was but a shadow of the traditional homemaking of earlier eras. When most Americans lived on family farms, homemaking required mastery of a score of productive skills—not only cooking food, but making, preserving, and storing it; not only sewing clothing, but spinning thread and weaving cloth; not only caring for healthy children, but attending to all but the most severe childhood illnesses without medical assistance; not only negotiating marketplace purchases, but actually making candles, soap, buttons, and other items so that such purchases were kept to a minimum. In fact, until the economic sea change that historian Karl Polanyi has called "The Great Transformation"—a sea change that gave the world money markets for cash, credit, and labor—most homemakers knew almost nothing about satisfying household needs through purchase, but rather worked arduously with their husbands and children to make (or occasionally barter for) everything needed to run their homes. And though it was usually husbands and sons who did most of the field work, homemakers and their daughters (homemakers to be) helped out with field tasks when needed.

Can Motherhood Survive?
Connie Marshner is another great voice in the wilderness against day care and for motherhood. In her excellent book, *Can Motherhood Survive?* she says her book "will help you understand the importance of motherhood. It will also make you aware of the enemies of motherhood: the ideas, trends, and lobbies which are preaching that motherhood is not important." She writes as one who knows the "seduction" of having a career and children and then giving up her career. And her career was not the boring assembly line worker. She was a successful lobbyist in Washington D.C.

She correctly says the Bible gives the insights we need to have good marriages and families. The Left push their agenda of the "progressive Swedish government's child care system." Ivy League and major universities "use federal grants to persuade United States government officials to make laws and policies on Swedish premises." Motherhood is not honored anymore, she says. The Biblical family is not only a traditional family but it is an extended family. Many generations and many relatives should live together. She is critical of T. Berry Brazelton who she says believes "that mothers want to find fulfillment in the workplace; all his writing is built on the premise that they will make career or job a higher priority than baby; and within those parameters, he devotes himself to suggesting ways to minimize harm to baby."

GUILT
I am all for women to feel guilty for leaving their children. I sympathize with women who want to stay home and can't because they have to earn money, but even they should only take traditional feminine jobs as Helen Andelin teaches in *Fascinating Womanhood*. She quotes Shakespeare and says, "'... and the Devil hath power to assume a pleasing shape.' Hamlet was right. Satan does have the power to assume a pleasing shape. ... Day care is one of those pleasing shapes." The idea that women abandon children for the workplace is the core belief of communism. Marxism is feminism. Any one who calls themselves anti-Communist should be absolutely against day care.

ELDERLY
Marshner writes, "It also happens that there is now a trend to provide day care for the elderly, more and more of whom share a similar fate with the young in our hectic society; namely, being parked somewhere for the day. Everyone says its good for them, of course, but what is certain is that senior day care enables grown daughters to pursue paid employment while paying somebody else to give care and nurture to their flesh and blood. I have long maintained that the two groups at the opposite ends of the age spectrum could be good for each other and their problems could be solved in tandem, but such proposals do not get very far with the senior citizen lobby or the child-care lobby: the former wants subsidized idleness for its members while the latter wants to create a whole new job category of semiskilled workers."

LONELINES
Marshner ends her book trying to encourage women to not be lonely during the day when they stay home, but she does not know about the concept of co-housing. The typical lonely home is not God's way. Families should live in communities — especially religious communities. My goal is to get you excited about living in capitalist communities that believe in Biblical values for the family.

She goes on to say that stay-at-home moms have "a call from God" and that a woman needs to "renew the calling each morning." She says that women need to pray for strength to not get moody and impatient and feel self-pity. She says that being alone with her children is a "spiritual hothouse" and women need to be strong to fight the "spiritual battles ahead. The last thing Satan wants is mother's training children to be holy. So holiness is the first thing we must pursue."

Pray and Read Scripture Daily
She says that just as women plan housework, they should also plan their spiritual life. "It is imperative that you have a support group of other mature women with whom you stand on no ceremony and don't have to pretend to be anything other than yourself. It is imperative that you pray and read Scripture regularly. But without the friendly nosiness of someone else to remind you, that good intention will be buried in an agenda of busyness. You know it will. So don't kid yourself. And don't delay in finding a spiritual comrade with whose help you can arm yourself for the coming struggle." Then she concludes her book with the Ephesians 6:11-18 that talks about putting on "armor for God" to "stand against the wiles of the devil. There are very warlike images in this passage and indeed it is a war we are fighting.

HUTTERITES
The Hutterites have one of the few religious communities that have survived over the centuries. There are thousands of members living in numerous isolated communities in North America. It is fascinating to see how powerful traditional, Biblical values of family has served them well. In the book *Christian Socialism* we read that, "Between 1874 and 1950 only one divorce and four desertions were recorded. Only 2 percent of the men and 5.4 percent of the women never marry. Birth control is not practiced and the median family has 10.4 children." Unificationists need to have even better statistics than these.

BRAIN SEX
An excellent writer on this is Anne Moir who has two books, *Brain Sex* and *Why Men Don't Iron: The Science of Gender Studies*. In *Brain Sex* we learn that science has backed up what previous generations know as common sense. Men and women are different. They are not equal in "aptitude, skill or behavior." If we try to "build a society" thinking "men and women are interchangeable" then we are living a "social myth" – "a biological and scientific lie."

She writes, "The sexes are different because their brains are different. The brain, the chief administrative and emotional organ of life, is differently constructed in men and women," ... "There has been an explosion of scientific research into what makes the sexes different." Their research shows "startling sexual asymmetry."

In the movie, *My Fair Lady*, there is a famous song that goes, "Why can't a woman be more like a man?" Moir writes that Feminist leaders have "sought to misdirect and deny" peoples "very essence." "Many women in the last thirty or forty years have been brought up to believe that they are, or should be, 'as good as the next man", and in the process they have endured acute and unnecessary pain, frustration and disappointment. They were led to believe that once they had shaken off the shackles of male prejudice and oppression – the supposed source of their second-class status – the gates of the promised land of equal achievement would be thrown open; women would be free at last to scale and conquer the commanding heights of the professions."

"Instead, in spite of greater emancipation in terms of education, opportunity, and social attitudes, women are not noticeably 'doing better' than they were thirty years ago. Mrs. Thatcher is still the exception which proves the rule. There were more women in the British Cabinet in the 1930s than there are at present. ... Some women, seeing how far their sex has fallen short of the supposed ideal of power-sharing, feel that they have failed. But they have only failed to be like men."

Allan Bloom wrote a bestseller, *The Closing of the American Mind*, and wrote how feminism has hurt relations between men and women. He writes that

> Relations between the sexes have always been difficult, and that is why so much of our literature is about men and women quarreling." Before feminism,

> everyone thought that "A man was to make a living and protect his wife and children, and a woman was to provide for the domestic economy, particularly in caring for husband and children.
>
> Very simply, the family is a sort of miniature body politic in which the husband's will is the will of the whole. The woman can influence her husband's will, and it is supposed to be informed by love of wife and children.
>
> **Reason To Fear the Worst**
> Now all of this has simply disintegrated. It does not exist, nor is it considered good that it should. But nothing certain has taken its place. Neither men nor women have any idea what they are getting into anymore, or, rather, they have reason to fear the worst. There are two equal wills, and no mediating principle to link them and no tribunal of last resort. What is more, neither of the wills is certain of itself. This is where the "ordering of priorities" comes in, particularly with women, who have not yet decided which comes first, career or children. People are no" longer raised to think they ought to regard marriage as the primary goal and responsibility, and their uncertainty is mightily reinforced by the divorce statistics, which imply that putting all of one's psychological eggs in the marriage basket is a poor risk. The goals and wills of men and women have, become like parallel lines, and it requires a Lobachevskyan imagination to hope they may meet.

Susan Faludi got upset about this trend of rejecting feminism and wrote a best-seller book, *Backlash*. She tries to explain how people like George Gilder and Allan Bloom were wrong. She writes: "In Bloom's *The Closing of the American Mind*, his lament about the 'decay of the family' is, like the New Right's, really a lament over lost traditional male authority in the home and in public life, an authority that he believes is violently under attack. He writes wistfully of the days when it was still believed that 'the family is a sort of miniature body politic in which the husband's will is the will of the whole.'"

Unlike her, the more I read of the "Right" the more I liked them. Faludi is a terrible role model for women because they see her as successful and leading an interesting life, but the sad reality is that she has never married and is barren. There are plenty on the Right who have lousy marriages and some have never married either, such as Bloom, but overall I see more happiness in the marriages of the Christian Right than in Faludi's secular world. Perhaps Bloom would have married if he was religious instead of being so academic. The key to understanding happiness is to understand religion. Traditional values work. The teachings by the Andelins set me free. When I lived by the ideals of androgyny of feminists I was less happy than when I lived by Biblical values.

STIFFED

Faludi is one of the most visible feminist writers who has been on the cover of both *Time* and *Newsweek*. Many reviewers fall over themselves praising her, but the truth is that her books are evil and empty of any truth. Her second book, *Stiffed: The Betrayal of the American Man*, was also a best-seller. She is aware that men are in a crisis, but misses the boat when she tells the satanic lie that feminism is not the cause.

Kathleen Parker wrote in an article titled, "Sorry, guys, Faludi is no friend of yours": "Every remark about her findings — whether resulting from an interview with a male porn star or a confused war veteran — was uttered with barely concealed contempt. Her smile, beguiling

perhaps to men desperate for female understanding, is a coached effect designed to disguise the sneer hovering just beneath the surface."

It is feminists like Faludi who have betrayed men. It is feminist leaders who relentlessly push their unisex agenda on men that have worn men out and now we have emasculated, wimpy men who can only find masculinity in watching football games. She can't see this because the truth hurts. Women have tremendous power over men and have crushed their spirits.

On Faludi's *Stiffed* Christina Hoff Sommers says that, "The whole notion that American men are in crisis is 'silly ... overall, there is not a shred of evidence for widespread malaise. ... and massive evidence that Americans as a group are faring very well." Sommers is "silly" for saying such nonsense. One half of all marriages fail and there is an epidemic of fatherless homes.

Faludi wants to "create a new paradigm for human progress that will open doors for both sexes." What is Faludi's "new paradigm"? What is "meaningful manhood?" It certainly isn't patriarchy. Susan Faludi says in her best-seller, *Stiffed*, "as men struggle to free themselves from their crisis, their task is not, in the end, to figure out how to be masculine — rather, their masculinity lies in figuring out how to be human." She ends her ridiculous book with feminism's androgynous and vague dream saying we have "to create a new paradigm for human progress that will open doors for both sides. That was, and continues to be, feminism's dream, to create a freer, more humane world." Wrong. Ever since feminism mankind has been worse off. Feminists are blind to the destruction they have caused. Faludi speaks for Satan and explains that men do not have to battle feminism, but "wage a battle against no enemy." This is intellectual emptiness. The battle men must wage is against the forces of darkness that campaign for unisexism that says men and women are interchangeable. We must battle against perversion of Gods' divine order of love between masculinity and femininity. Faludi has no husband or children. But she has a Pulitzer Prize and her face on the cover of *Newsweek* magazine. Women like Beverly LaHaye and Helen Andelin don't make the cover of *Newsweek*. This is because Satan rules. The subtitle of Faludi's book is "The Betrayal of the American Man." Faludi says it is not feminism, but something else she can't define. She can't see that she has betrayed not only men, but women and God too with her vile ideology of feminism that castrates men.

The Godmother of modern feminism, Betty Friedan says in *The Feminine Mystique* that was a best-seller in the 1960's: "As she made the beds, shopped for groceries, matched slipcover material, ate peanut butter sandwiches with her children, chauffeured Cub Scouts and Brownies, lay beside her husband at night – she was afraid to ask even of herself the silent question – 'Is this all?'" Ever since Friedan's book women have to apologize for being housewives because the vast majority of women have bought this ideology of hatred for the homemaker.

Friedan maligns, as she says, "occupation: Housewife." She presents a "dreary" picture of talents not being fulfilled, dreams not pursued ... no fulfilling sex ... feeling "tired ... desperate ... incomplete ... trapped ... suffering from anxiety and, finally, depression ... and new, unnamed neuroses..." etc. etc. The cure for this nightmare, she writes, is to get a job: "The only way for a woman, as for a man, to find herself, to know herself as a person is" to get a job. "But a job, any job, is not the answer ...." Women must get jobs that are "creative" and "equal to their actual capacity." Jobs that will "let themselves develop the lifetime interests and goals which require serious education and training ... a job that she can take seriously as part of a life plan, work in which she can grow as part of society."

Friedan says, "community work" is just "busywork" and "is not satisfying to mature women, nor does it help the immature to grow." She says "being a den mother, or serving on a PTA

Committee or organizing a covered-dish supper ... is simply not enough ... for a woman of intelligence and ability." In fact "community activities" will "deteriorate" her "intelligence." She says there is a "growing boredom of American women with volunteer work" and now women have a "preference for paid jobs." The only real work for women is a paid career, "Women, as well as men, can only find their identity in work that uses their full capabilities. A woman cannot find her identity in others – her husband, her children. She cannot find it in the dull routine of housework .... even if a woman does not have to work to eat, she can find identity only in work that is of real value to society – work for which our society pays."

Assault on the Sexes

Andrea Fordham wrote an excellent book called *The Assault on the Sexes*. She goes into the many arguments of feminism such as the naive view that there are two kinds of feminists – radical and moderate, man haters and those who don't, etc. She explains you can't be a little bit pregnant. There is no good to feminism. There is no good to a little bit of adultery or one cigarette. Any attempt to destroy patriarchy in the home and in society is Satanic. Period. So many people, even conservatives like Mona Charen, think there is a difference between moderate and radical feminists and that some good came from feminism. Andrea Fordham explains (as Mary Pride did earlier) that you can 't be a little bit pregnant: "If you read the popular press, you get the impression that feminists are merely crusaders after simple justice, defenders of all that is just and good.... Most people are for equal pay and equal opportunity. But a feminist, it seems, is something else. Whether she admits it or prefers to hide the fact, a feminist is someone who is encouraging a restructuring of society through obliteration of the sex roles. And in the end, perhaps the truth is just that you can't be a little bit feminist any more than you can be a little bit pregnant. All who work to deny and defeat the value of sex roles, however faint or fierce their contribution, are supporting the same revolutionary scheme. "

The following is a snippet from Mrs. Fordham to give you a flavor of her book. I hope you go to the library and read it. If they don't have it, order it through interlibrary loan. She writes, "In *The Feminine Mystique*, Betty Friedan began the ludicrous feminist tradition of pretending that the world is loaded with fulfilling, entertaining jobs. She wrote: 'The feminine mystique has succeeded in burying millions of American women alive. There is no way for these women to break out of their comfortable concentration camps except by finally putting forth an effort – that human effort which reaches beyond biology, beyond the narrow walls of home, to help shape the future....'"

"Beyond the routine destructiveness of calling peoples' occupations 'concentration camps ' and 'ghettos, ' this kind of twaddle – which is all too characteristic of the feminist movement – is completely out of touch with reality. It's exactly the 'dull routine ' of housework and office work and of most work that is unfortunately essential to keep society running. (There are, of course, drawbacks to every job.) The idea that the libbers can give all of us the fulfillment and joy that they obviously have not been able to obtain for themselves is a joke. And when you consider the probable consequences of choices made by women whom the feminists have influenced that tend to weaken the institutions of marriage, home and family, it's a grim joke indeed."

Mary Pride, in *The Way Home*, explains that there are no good aspects to feminism. She says, "What happens when women throw out what the Bible says about women's sphere because it 'merely reflects ancient patriarchal culture,' and then launch into a lifestyle that reflects our culture?...Christians have accepted feminist' 'moderate' demands for ... careers while rejecting the 'radical' side of feminism – meaning lesbianism... What most do not see is that one demand leads to the other. Feminism is a totally self-consistent system aimed at rejecting God's role for women. Those who adopt any part of its lifestyle can't help picking up its philosophy. And those who pick up its philosophy are buying themselves a one-way ticket to social anarchy." She explains how

Christian churches stopped teaching that women are to be in the home: "Feminists had a plan for women; Christians didn't .... At every turn Christian women found their biological, economic, and social roles were considered worthless .... Today we are reaping the fruits. Role obliteration is the coming thing in evangelical, and even fundamentalist, circles. If women can't be women, by golly they will be men! All because two or more generations have grown up and married without ever hearing that the Bible teaches a distinct role for women which is different from that of a man and just as important."

"Homeworking is the biblical lifestyle for Christian wives. Homeworking is not just staying home either (that was the mistake of the fifties). We are not called by God to stay home, or to sit at home, but to work at home! Homeworking is the exact opposite of the modern careerist/institutional/Socialist movement. It is a way to take back control of education, health care, agriculture, social welfare, business, housing, morality, and evangelism from the faceless institutions to which we have surrendered them. More importantly, homeworking is the path of obedience to God."

THE WAY HOME

Mrs. Pride divides her book, *The Way Home*, into chapters that explore each of the womanly roles listed in Titus 2:3-5: "Likewise, teach the older women to be reverent in the way they live, not to be slanderers or addicted to much wine, but to teach what is good. Then they can train the younger women to love their husbands and children, to be self-controlled and pure, to be busy at home [literally, home-working], to be kind, and to be subject to their husbands, so that no one will malign the word of God." She says women are "unwilling to face up to" the responsibility to do these things. "Titus 2:3-5 is the most important text in the Bible on married women's roles, capsulizing a young wife's marital, sexual, biological, economic, authority, and ministering roles. Yet women's books routinely ignore, mutilate, or even mock this passage. There appears to be a great desire to accommodate Christianity to our culture, and a corresponding willingness to dismiss the Bible's teaching as a remnant of outdated, male-dominated culture."

Mrs. Pride writes, "For us wives, it boils down to this: are we willing to obey God, to love our husbands and children, to be self-controlled and pure, to work at home (not the office), to be kind, and to be subject to our husbands, so that no one will blaspheme the Word of God?... Homeworking will not automatically solve every problem. But it will get us on the right track. 'The wise woman builds her house, but with her own hands the foolish one tears hers down ' (Prov. 14:1). " Women have helped tear down the home; women can rebuild it. We have seen enough torn-down houses: broken marriages, rebellious children, barren churches. Now it is time to be wise. It's time for homeworking. It's time to see what the true God can do."

Betty Friedan was wrong when she said in her satanic book *The Feminine Mystique*, "Housework is peculiarly suited to the capacities of feeble-minded girls."

NO GLAMOROUS JOBS

In one of James Dobson's books on relationships he prints a letter that a woman, Mary Fay Bourgoin, had sent to the *Washington Post*. Here is a small part of this letter that represents all those millions of women who have bought the satanic ideology of feminism. She says she read Friedan's book in 1964 when she was in college, "It was a page turner. The happy housewife heroine was a myth." So she combined career with having children and now years later she says, "These days it seems that my home, Washington D.C., is a city of weary women, or, more accurately, exhausted working mothers. For several months, I have been among those who rise at dawn to shower, blow dry their hair, pack lunches, do a load of wash, plug in the crock pot, and glance at the morning paper to make sure the world is not ending before 9 a.m."

"Provided there is no last-minute scramble for missing shoes, homework, or show-and-tell items, my three daughters are at school by 8:40 and I am on my way to 'the real world.'"

"My job is interesting, working on Capitol Hill as a journalist, investigating the legislative process, interviewing members of Congress – all described in my alumnae magazine as 'glamorous.' But most of the time I feel that I have one foot on a banana peel and the other on ice."

"Balancing marriage, motherhood, and career has become the classic women's problem of the 1980s. For those who can pull it all together, life is a first-class act. But judging from my own experience and from talking with other women, life is often a constant round of heartburn, ulcers, and anxiety attacks."

A famous actress, Joanne Woodward, the wife of superstar actor Paul Newman, said women can't have it all and be supermoms: "You just can't leave a child to a housekeeper or the nanny, as a lot of women do. Otherwise you shouldn't have children. I do not believe, being a prime example of one, in being a working mother. If you're going to work, work. If you're going to be a mother, that is an exciting career, if you feel equipped to do it. If not, you shouldn't have children."

"If I had it to do all over again, I would make a decision one way or the other. My career has suffered because of the children and my children have suffered because of my career. And that's not fair. I've been torn and haven't been able to function fully in either arena. I don't know one person who does both successfully, and I know a lot of working mothers."

The Price of a Mom: $138,095

An article online at MSN by MSN Money staff had this to say about the monetary worth of a stay-at-home mom in an article titled "The price of a mom: $138,095":

> A new report assigns a salary to a stay-at-home mother, based on the jobs she does in a normal week.
>
> What's a mom worth?
>
> According to one new report, $138,095 a year.
>
> That's the figure in a report by Salary.com, which calculates the wages that would have been paid a stay-at-home mom in 2007 if she were compensated for all the elements of her "job." That total is up 3% from 2006's salary of $134,121.

Betty Friedan was a housewife with children when she wrote her garbage. She divorced her husband and started a feminist organization to spread the good news. Women had steadily been leaving the home since 1920 and as they did the divorce rate climbed proportionately. The same is true for statistics of crime and illegitimacy. We have declined in every area of life since women left the home. A distinguished economist at Columbia University, Eli Ginzberg, called women leaving home "the single most outstanding phenomenon of this century." He says it has had a greater impact than the rise of communism. What he doesn't know is that communism's core value is to get women out of the home.

Feminists argue that we are in a period of great transition from the old fashioned ways to a brave new world. In fact, they say, in so many ways, things are better because women have changed the competitive war-like atmosphere men have created to one of harmonious cooperation. The workplace is so much more peaceful now. The workplace was out of balance until women came.

In one survey of male CEOs in Fortune 500 companies, they said "Women bring a positive, humanizing quality to the corporate environment." They have been digested by feminism. All male leaders must spout this nonsense to keep from going to court.

To mix or not to mix

A former managing editor of the Washington Times, Josette Shiner, said that women have supreme verbal skills and are able to bring love to what used to be a den of fighting: "In the newsroom where it is very tense, there is a lot of pressure and everyone is operating at an optimum because the work you do is visible on a huge public scale every day, a woman's inclination to talk things through rather than fight things through, is often helpful. In our business there is now more of an appreciation for balance in the newsroom." She says it is good to "mix" women and men together in the workplace, "people really see it as an advantage now to have a mix of men and women." Father and Tocqueville use that very work "mix" as well. Father says it's like mixing a match and gasoline. We'll look at Tocqueville's use of the word "mix" a little later. She spouts the same old tiresome rhetoric of all feminists whose party line is that women are creating such a loving atmosphere in the workplace. According to one survey taken, there is loving going on, but not the high sounding kind she talks of: "A survey of 444 readers of *Men's Health* magazine in fall 1987 showed even more surprising statistics: Over 50 percent of those surveyed had been sexually propositioned by someone at work; and another 18 percent had sex in their place of work; and another 18 percent had sex with a coworker during work hours!"

Most people in America believe in the feminist ideology that it is wonderful mankind has advanced and now mixes men and women. The party line now says everything is so much better because women can now fulfill their potential and society will be improved. Nobel laureate Paul Samuelson, professor of economics at M.I.T. says, "To the degree that women are getting an opportunity that they didn't have in the past, the economy is tapping an important and previously wasted resource." The Guinness book of records has writer Marilyn vos Savant as having the world's highest IQ. She calls herself an "armchair feminist". She gives advice to millions of people in newspapers and books. Some one wrote asking if she thought working women were taking away jobs from some men who are trying to be breadwinners. She responded, "In essence, then, you seem to think that perhaps women are gratuitously taking jobs that men could have to support women and children. If the situation were changed, presumably husbands would make money (with a bit of help from their wives), and wives would make babies (with a bit of help from their husbands). And that would perpetuate the system that totally blocked the entire female sex from historical prominence in the areas of politics, science, technology, literature, and the arts. The loss of half the contribution of humankind is a truly awesome price to pay."

Shakespeare said, "The seeming truth / Which cunning times put on / To entrap the wisest."

Home by Choice

Brenda Hunter has a great book that goes into so many points on how devastating it is when women leave the home to work. She is a renowned psychologist who has appeared on radio, national television and before congressional staff. In *Home by Choice* she gives excellent scientific data and insights into the damage of day care for children, the terrible damage to women and the devastating effect on men. She writes that she appeared on "The Jenny Jones Show" with Faye Crosby, who chairs the psychology department at Smith College. Her book, *Juggling*, is a best seller that gives Crosby's ideas of the advantages of women working on children, women and men. Hunter says, "whether she knows it or not, she makes a strong case against juggling by citing in her book all the losses men (and their wives) incur when women try to combine family life with paid employment... " She says, "Crosby says that men in traditional marriages can count on their wives' help as they climb the corporate ladder. Wives direct family life, care for the kids, and feed

and help clothe their husbands. This leaves men free to pursue careers It is not surprising, says Crosby, that men in dual career families feel deprived when wives work outside the homes."

Men Grieve

"Also, men lose their role as sole provider when wives work full-time. Men grieve, says Crosby, when this role is lost because being a good breadwinner is central to their self-concept. Men may see the entry of women into the marketplace as an indication that they have somehow failed in the provider role. Some men, as a consequence, grow to dislike their jobs. When a woman assumes or shares the provider role, Crosby says even the most liberated husband will feel a keen sense of loss."

Hunter goes on to say that when women bring home paychecks, "men lose authority." Crosby has "little sympathy" for men on this. But the result is that men increasingly get less strong and decisive. Finally, she says, "intimacy" is lost from the home. A woman, she says, is the "architect of intimacy," and when she works she is too stressed, tired and busy to really respond to her family as they need her. She says that, "when emotional intimacy disappears in a marriage, it isn't long before sexual intimacy evaporates as well." She writes, "grown men, as well as little children, need someone at home to function as a 'secure base.' The wife and mother, it seems, is the architect of intimacy for her husband as well as her children."

"The point of this brief examination of male vulnerability is to assert that sons and husbands need the women in their lives to nurture them, appreciate them, and express interest in their lives. As little boys or as high-powered executives, males suffer from neglect." TV evangelist James Robison says, "Women have great strength, but they are strengths to help the man. A woman 's primary purpose in life and marriage is to help her husband succeed, to help him be all God wants him to be."

Everything I write about in this book and everything the authors I like write about is challenged in other books. There is always a Cain/Abel split on issues. If you don 't like what I write you have many books to support whatever lifestyle you want. In the above we saw how Brenda Hunter differs from Faye Crosby. Crosby is a feminist liberal from Smith College. Other women from prestigious colleges write the same kind of nonsense as Crosby. For example, Rosalind Barnett and Caryl Rivers wrote *She Work/He Works: How Two-Income Families are Happier, Healthier, and Better-Off*. Both have long careers and written other books. Barnett is a scholar at Radcliffe College and Rivers is a professor at Boston University. Both say they have raised two children who are happy. Radcliffe mentions in her book that she is divorced. They deny everything I write in this book. To me it is like reading a criticism of the Principle saying how wrong it is that we believe Jesus is not coming back on the clouds. I find the opposition's arguments ridiculous. They title their first chapter, "Ozzie and Harriet Are Dead. " They say, "The new American family is alive and well. Both partners are employed full time, and according to the latest research, the family they create is one in which all members are thriving: often happier, healthier, and more well-rounded than the family of the 1950s ....That's the message of this new, myth-shattering study of such couples, funded by a one million-dollar grant form the National Institutes of Mental Health. Our study shows that the full-time-employed, dual-earner couple is a success .... The men and women are doing well, emotionally and physically, and the children are thriving. They go into how it is so much better than the 1950s and the Victorian era. One of the historians they love to quote is a fellow liberal feminist, Stephanie Coontz who wrote *The Way We Never Were: American Families and the Nostalgia Trap*. *Insight Magazine* did a Cain/Abel type article pitting her with David Popenoe, a even more distinguished writer than she is. Coontz is divorced and has one son.

The authors say that only 3% of families fit the traditional model and we will never go back. So those (like me) who write of the "fantasy "of the past are making people unnecessarily guilty and

bringing on unhealthy thoughts of inadequacy and low-self esteem. This "new nostalgia " is basically coming from the Christian right that they despise because it is a terrible backlash to feminism. They paint a picture of the 1950s as one where fathers were distant and today they are close. The Victorian man was drugged out on opium, women in corsets, and men with VD from their mistresses. They say the nineteenth-century writer Henry James was wrong to say in his famous novel, *The Bostonians*: "The whole generation is womanized. The masculine tone is passing out of the world. It 's a feminine, nervous, hysterical, chattering, canting age.... "

"It was against this backdrop that Teddy Roosevelt's hyper-masculinity charged onto the world stage. It wasn't secure manhood that the Rough Rider represented, but the anxiety of the time about what men were, or ought to be." "The Boy Scouts were founded in 1911 in large degree because of a worry about the 'feminization' of young boys who spent their days in the female world of school."

They quote studies showing that children do not get "maternal deprivation" when their kids are in day care. They are hurt that Hillary Clinton is "trashed" so much when she is such a wonderful role model. They say it is impossible for men to be the sole providers and even if they could it would be wrong because it would stop women from growing in the marketplace and stunt the spirit of men who need to change diapers and do dishes equal to the woman. They write, "We have to get rid of the idea that a man is what he earns, that a man who is not the sole breadwinner is somehow a failure as a man. That fiction dooms today's and tomorrow's men – who will be part of the collaborative couple – to high stress and poor emotional health. We have to allow men to get more of their self-esteem from their roles as fathers – and also as members of the community. To tie men's self-esteem totally to their jobs in a time of such great economic flux is dangerous." They are scared of the traditional family.

Korean culture honors patriarchy

Korea has a better understanding of the roles of men and women. Russell Warren Howe's book *The Koreans* says, "Husbands of the middle or upper class feel the most diminished if their wives take jobs. Korean men probably work harder than any people on earth. They come home late and expect to find the women waiting."

In *Introducing Korea*, the author Peter Kyung writes, "The primary function of Korean women is to serve their men. They do so by bringing up their children properly and by preparing excellent meals for their families, especially their husbands. It is often said that the happiness of a family depends on the quality of food served in the household. Like the French, the Koreans take food very seriously. Well fed husbands are known to be more considerate and affectionate toward wives than ill-fed ones."

Fatherless America

Because feminists teach the lie that women can interchange with men, men are using their natural aggressiveness in unhealthy ways. David Blankenhorn, in *Fatherless America*, says that this is America's number one problem. Blankenhorn says it is the cause of most of our problems, "from crime to adolescent pregnancy to child sexual abuse to domestic violence against women." He says that nobody understands this: "The most urgent domestic challenge facing the United States at the close of the twentieth century is the re-education of fatherhood as a vital role for men." I don't have the space to go into the reasons men are so out of it, but one of the major ones is that men are hurting because they are not the sole providers. His book is excellent in showing how our social problems are caused by the insanity of throwing out traditional values. He writes, "In sum, over the past two hundred years, fatherhood has lost, in full or in part, each of its four traditional roles: irreplaceable caregiver, moral educator, head of the family, and family breadwinner. As the historian Peter N. Stearns put it: 'An eighteenth-century father would not recognize the ... parental

leadership granted to mothers or indeed the number of bad fathers.' Blankenhorn details how men have become unneeded. Feminism has destroyed the role of breadwinner and has therefore destroyed men. Gloria Steinem said it for all those who don't believe in the division of labor for men and women: "We are human beings first with minor differences from men that apply largely to the act of reproduction. The only functional difference between men and women is the woman's ability to give birth; therefore a woman needs a man like a fish needs a bicycle." This is the belief our culture holds for men and women. Interchangeable parts. More and more men are saying, "What's the use?" and checking out.

Blankenhorn is a powerful voice against the feminist's dream of taking the breadwinner role from men: "Does paternal breadwinning burden men? In some ways, of course, yes. A man who embraces the New Father philosophy of employment does indeed unburden himself. He frees himself up to make choices, perhaps to express more emotions, certainly to discover himself apart from externally defined 'roles.' Certainly there is much to commend in this aspiration. Freedom is good. Especially in America, freedom is hard to argue against. But in this case, let me try."

"For in liberating fathers from the breadwinner role, the New Father model also seeks to liberate fathers from widely held norms of masculinity. At the same time, our elite cultural script notwithstanding, most men in our society simply do not wish to be liberated from their masculinity. This viewpoint is a key to understanding their unprogressive, lopsided commitment to the provider role." "Paternal attachment to breadwinning (and I would add, women as homemakers) is neither arbitrary nor anachronistic. Historically and currently, the breadwinner role matches quite well with core aspects of masculine identity. Especially compared to other parental activities, breadwinning, is objective, rule-oriented, and easily measurable. It is an instrumental, goal-driven activity in which success derives, at least in part, from aggression. Most important, the provider role permits men to serve their families through competition with other men. In this sense, the ideal of paternal breadwinning encultures male aggression by directing it toward a prosocial purpose."

"For these reasons, the breadwinner role has always been, and remains, a basic cultural device for integrating masculinity into familism (does this word sound familiar?) – the clearest, simplest means for men to act out their obligations to their children. Faced with these stubborn facts, our society can respond in one of two ways. We can, through the New Father model, continue to assault male breadwinning in a root-and-branch attempt to reinvent men and deconstruct traditional masculinity. Or we can endeavor, however imperfectly, to incorporate men as they are into family life, in part by giving them distinctive, gendered roles that reflect, rather than reject, inherited masculine norms – such as, for example, the breadwinner." "The New Father model does not merely unburden men of breadwinning as a special obligation. Ultimately, it unburdens them of fatherhood itself. For, as the example of breadwinning demonstrates, the essence of the New Father model is a repudiation of gendered social roles. But fatherhood, by definition, is a gendered social role. To ungender fatherhood – to deny males any gender-based role in family life – is to deny fatherhood as a social activity. What remains may be New. But there is no more Father."

Stu Weber says at Promise Keeper rallies that most young criminals come from fatherless homes: "The root of all the wrongs? Failure in the highest office in the land: the dad. It's the greatest title you'll ever have.

I WANT EQUALITY – I WANT YOUR JOB

Donna Otto gives some good advice for Christian women who make homemaking a career in her book *The Stay At Home Mom*. In one insightful part she explains her duty as a wife is to help her husband who must battle it out with other women and feminists in our disorderly world: "For over 20 years women have been yelling in my husband's ear, 'I want equality. I want your job. I want

your salary. I'm as good as you. I'm better than you.' Day in and day out he is faced with this kind of pressure in the business world. His response as a godly man is to be kind and tender-hearted toward the demanding women who work around him.

"But when he comes home, I want to make sure he feels supported as a man, a husband, a father, and a fellow believer in Jesus Christ. It is my desire to demonstrate that support by creating an environment in which he can rest, relax, reveal himself, and restore himself. His constant provision for our family in financial, emotional, and spiritual ways is a daily blessing to me. In return, it is my desire to be for him the comfort and support I feel God has called to be in his life. I hope you have a similar desire about the man who lifted your veil."

CRISIS IN MASCULINITY

Leane Payne writes in her book *Crisis in Masculinity*: "The major crisis today is with men. When men are healed, the healing of women will naturally follow. ... Very few men indeed are adequately affirmed as men today, and many are pathologically split off from their masculine side altogether. ... Much that is called emotional illness or instability today is merely the masculine or the feminine unaffirmed and out of balance within the personality."

She says that in the past "the case of a man seriously split off from his masculine side and identity was at one time a pathological rarity." This is because feminism has demoralized and castrated men. She feels our culture will not be healed until men take godly leadership: "Until men are once again functioning in this vital capacity, women will continue to attempt to fill the gap in vain, and will continue to verbalize their pain and confusion."

Wisdom of the Ages

"There is, in short, an overwhelming amount of gender confusion in great numbers of men today. When men are healed, the pathway for the wholeness of women will be opened." For this healing to happen men and women need to understand that they are fundamentally different and complementary – two halves of a whole. Homosexuality is not balance. God has dual characteristics – a nature of polarity. "Elisabeth Elliot, in line with the best wisdom of the ages, states that 'the essence of masculinity is initiation and the essence of femininity is response.'"

WHY MEN DON'T IRON

In the book *Why Men Don't Iron* we learn that there are innate, biological differences between men and women. Men don't iron and women are no good at top leadership positions. Here are some excerpts from the book:

> Assertions of androgyny, that the male has a 'female' side waiting for his embrace, is made nonsense by science. To tell a man to 'get in touch with his female side' is an insult, for it implies that his male side is inadequate. Do women alone show concern, love, compassion, sympathy or kindness? To suggest as much is as offensive as to suggest that only men possess courage, honor, audacity or determination. For a man to have compassion or for a woman to display courage does not require a peculiar internal facet of the opposite sex but common humanity, and within the pool of common humanity lies an extraordinary range and variety of people.
>
> The demand that a man get in touch with his emotions is sheer psychobabble for, unless he is dead, a man is already in complete touch with them. It just so happens that his emotions are not hers. What that letter-writer was really saying was that if only men could be gentle, caring, considerate, forgiving, soft-hearted

and compassionate, and, just as importantly, could express those virtues in soothing tones, then she would find the world a more congenial place. And doubtless she might, but would the world really be a better place if men's emotions were feminized? When danger lurks do we really want him to respond with empathy? His emotions are not hers, and because his can be far more explosive they require more rigorous controls.

The conclusion seems obvious. You can have a man, but you cannot have a man who feels, touches, cares, and empathizes like a woman, not if you want him to stay a man. And if you really want him to be in touch with his feelings, take care, for those feelings might be explosive.

Women are imposing their view of the world upon men, and this is the prevailing sexism in the unisex age: the age of the unsexed. Differences — real, substantive and determinable — in the mental worlds of the sexes are denied. It is a genderless dream, a world without sexual conflict in which fathers are mothers. There was a time when men did not expect to be present at their baby's birth (they were down the pub handing out cigars), but today he is an integral part of the 'birthing experience' and is expected to go hand in hand with the mother through the rest of his child's infancy. Many men are made to feel guilty by their inability to feel the right emotions during this process, but that guilt is imposed on him by a feminine view. The home truth is that he is not going to rock the cradle, though he might well build it. The New Man is a biological fantasy, a fancy of the New Woman.

MEN SUFFER TOO

Frederick Sontag in *The Descent of Women* says that it isn't fair for feminists to blame all men for inflicting suffering on women throughout human history and to focus only on their pain. Men have suffered too. He says, "Today's women look back in horror to the lives of those of the Victorian era ...and come near rage in thinking about how these women suffered. ... But in examining historical records there is no reason to suppose that more felt unfulfilled then that do today."

"If one counts numbers, probably far more men have suffered persecution, imprisonment, torture, suppression and died in wars than women. And the ratio might be the same today. The miners who protest hideous conditions and pay in Soviet mines are mostly men." It may be possible that "more men are physically or politically restricted from seeking fulfillment than women."

DOMESTIC TRANQUILITY

Let's look at the Godly writings of Mrs. Carolyn Graglia (pronounced graw-lee-ah). She has a wonderful book critiquing feminism called *Domestic Tranquility: A Brief Against Feminism*. She has a law degree from Columbia University and worked in the Justice Department and a prominent Washington law firm. When she had children she gave up her career and enjoyed being a housewife.

WAR AGAINST THE TRADITIONAL FAMILY

She writes, "Since the late 1960s, feminists have very successfully waged war against the traditional family, in which husbands are the principal breadwinners and wives are primarily homemakers. This war's immediate purpose has been to undermine the homemaker's position within both her family and society in order to drive her into the work force. Its long-term goal is to create a society in which women behave as much like men as possible, devoting as much time and energy to the pursuit of a career as men do, so that women will eventually hold equal political and economic power with men. This book examines feminism's successful onslaught against the traditional family ... and defends a woman's choice to be a homemaker."

"A critical weapon in feminism's arsenal has been the status degradation of the housewife's role. From the journalistic attacks of Betty Friedan and Gloria Steinem to Jessie Bernard's sociological writings, all branches of feminism are united in the conviction that a woman can find identity and fulfillment only in a career. The housewife, feminists agree, was properly characterized by Simone de Beauvoir and Betty Friedan as a 'parasite', a being something less than human, living her life without using her adult capabilities or intelligence, and lacking any real purpose in devoting herself to children, husband, and home."

ANDROGYNY — SATAN'S GOAL

"Operating on the twin assumptions that equality means sameness (that is, men and women cannot be equals unless they do the same things) and that most differences between the sexes are culturally imposed, contemporary feminism has undertaken its own cultural impositions. Revealing their totalitarian belief that they know best how others should live and their totalitarian willingness to force others to conform to their dogma, feminists have sought to modify our social institutions in order to create an androgynous society in which male and female roles are as identical as possible. The results of the feminist juggernaut now engulf us. By almost all indicia of well-being, the institution of the American family has become significantly less healthy than it was thirty years ago."

REVOLUTION NEEDED

In *One Home At a Time* Dennis Rainey calls for a spiritual housecleaning — a revolution that will restore men "to assume the role of godly patriarch" in the family. He has what he calls "The Family Manifesto" and he encourages everyone to sign. America is in danger because men have been "emasculated, feminized, and redefined" and are now confused about what a true man is. He writes that, "We have lost the clear distinctives in male and female roles. "And God created man in His own image, in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them" (Genesis 1:27). Over the last three decades, the lines between manhood and womanhood have grown more opaque and convoluted. This gender blending has resulted in fewer and fewer people recognizing the unique roles of men and women and increasing social confusion. John Piper details the consequences [in "A Vision of Biblical Complementarity," in *Recovering Biblical Manhood & Womanhood: A Response to Evangelical Feminism*] 'The tendency today is to stress the equality of men and women by minimizing the unique significance of our maleness and femaleness. But this depreciation of male and female personhood is a great loss. It is taking a tremendous toll on generations of young men and women who do not know what it means to be a man or a woman. ... The consequence of this confusion ... is more divorce, more social awkwardness, and more emotional distress and suicide that come with the loss of God-given identity.'"

BLUR

Rainey says the feminist movement "completely redrew the lines and blurred the distinction between masculinity and femininity. If you go to any high school or college classroom today and ask women, 'What is your primary goal in life?' very few will respond by saying, 'To be a wife and a mother.'"

Billy Graham's wife, Ruth, has as one person wrote, "a dazzling advertisement for marriage." She said once, "I am a strong believer in women's lib, to this extent: I think women should be liberated from ... having to work for a living.... They need to be liberated ... so they can devote themselves to their homes."

HIGH CALLING OF WIFE AND MOTHER

In *Recovering Biblical Manhood and Womanhood* Dorothy Patterson writes in her article "The High Calling of Wife and Mother in Biblical Perspective":

> Feminism is a "social movement" that demands it all. Actress Katharine Hepburn said in an interview, "I'm not sure any woman can successfully pursue a career and be a mother at the same time. The trouble with women today is that they want everything. But no one can have it all. I haven't been handicapped by children. Nor have I handicapped children by bringing them into the world and going ahead with my career."14 Actress Joanne Woodward says, "My career has suffered because of the children, and my children have suffered because of my career. I've been torn and haven't been able to function fully in either arena. I don't know one person who does both successfully, and I know a lot of working mothers."15 Golda Meir of Israel confessed that she suffered nagging doubts about the price her two children paid for her career, adding, "You can get used to anything if you have to, even to feeling perpetually guilty."
>
> Each of these women chose to work, not because she had to do so to provide necessities for her family or because her husband demanded it, but because of personal gain and fame or because of what she perceived to be a contribution more valuable to the nation or world than full-time motherhood. In each case, attention to the child was less important than the career.
>
> Too many women rush headlong into a career outside the home, determined to waste no time or effort on housework or baby-sitting but rather seeking to achieve position and means by directing all talents and energies toward non-home professional pursuits. It is true that many "perfect jobs" may come and go during the childrearing years, but only one will absolutely never come along again-the job of rearing your own children and allowing them the increasingly rare opportunity to grow up at home.
>
> Golda Meir, by her own testimony, devoted her adult life to the birth and rearing of Israel at the cost of her marriage. She separated from her reticent husband in pursuit of public life. To quote Mrs. Meir, "what I was made it impossible for him to have the sort of wife he wanted and needed… . I had to decide which came first: my duty to my husband, my home and my child or the kind of life I myself really wanted. Not for the first time—and certainly not for the last—I realized that in a conflict between my duty and my innermost desires, it was my duty that had the prior claim."
>
> How sad it is for a woman to try to build her life on the notion that she is going to pursue whatever momentarily happens to gratify her needs socially, emotionally, physically, or professionally.

Tim LaHaye in *Six Keys to a Happy Marriage* says, "No organization can function if it has two heads. That is particularly true of the home. One of the great hindrances to a happy home today is the false notion that a woman does not have to subject herself to her husband. Modern psychology and education seem to give women the idea that subjection is an old-fashioned notion that went out with the nineteenth century. But when subjection goes out of the home, so does happiness."

"Today we have more frustrated women, men, and children than ever before. With the downgrading of the father image and the rising dominance of the mother role, we have witnessed an increase in juvenile delinquency, rebellion, homosexuality, and divorce. God intended man to be the head of his home. If he is not, he will not have a sense of responsibility but will subconsciously feel he is married to a second mother. His children will soon detect who is boss,

and as teenagers they will lose the natural respect for their father that is necessary for their adjustment to life."

"Usually a wife-dominated home is a quarrelsome home until the husband finally 'gives up.' He then crawls into his shell of introversion and degenerates into a sub-par human being. The sadder result is, a wife will eventually grow to despise the husband she dominates .... The Christian woman must be in subjection to her husband! Whether she likes it or not, subjection is a command of God and her refusal to comply with this command is an act of disobedience. All disobedience is sin; therefore, she cannot expect the blessing of God on her life unless she is willing to obey God."

Father explains that motherhood is a career, "Raising up children is a big job." He says when she is pregnant she suffers and she "grabs God's attention more." Women go through pain in delivery so "God gives deeper love to them." He says women are "so precious" because they take care of babies and therefore are "connected to love more than men." (*Blessing and Ideal Family Part 2*)

SUBMISSION

For thousands of years Christianity taught that women are to help their husbands by being homemakers and respecting their husbands role of head of the home where he is the leader of the family who makes the final decisions. During True Father's lifetime since he was born in 1920 many Christians gave up this ideology and now most Christians have embraced Satan's ultimate ideology of feminism in these Last Days that teaches men are not the head of their home and women should not follow their husbands. One of the most famous passages in the Bible that deals with men leading and women submitting is Ephesians 5:22-25 that says, "Wives, submit yourselves to your own husbands. ... the husband is the head of the wife." Wives are to submit "to their own husbands in everything." For thousands of years Christians took this and other passages in the Bible that said women are to follow their husband's lead and work to be excellent at being a homemaker. This is Satan's world and he was successful in getting Christians to deny the biblical marriage.

There are many books on this topic. I do not have the space to go into the many arguments Feminists make to justify their rejection of the Bible and the ideology of patriarchy that ruled for thousands of years. I have read many of these books and writings of Feminists and I have read some books, articles and watched videos of those who teach the traditional, biblical family. I can only give a few ideas of those who write on this. The most important words on marriage are those of Sun Myung Moon. I have many quotes in this book and in my book *Divine Principle in Plain Language* that show he speaks strongly for women following men. Just as the word "Patriarchy" is grating to our culture, the word "Submission" for women is revolting. Satan has been wildly successful in brainwashing the vast majority to reject the idea of women submitting to men. The result of this sea change in belief marriages have declined dramatically in the last hundred years. Father's words are more politically incorrect than any traditionalist authors I quote. Sadly, it seems that most intellectuals and leaders who say they are followers of Sun Myung Moon think he is a feminist who wants a matriarchy in the family, in the church and in society. Father often taught that men are supposed to be in the subject, leader position and women are in an objective, follower position.

WOMEN CALLED TO BE HOMEMAKERS

Father often teaches about the objective nature of women. For example, he says, "If we say that heaven is a symbol of man, then earth is a symbol of woman. The house is the stage on which a woman's life is played out. The mother is the center of a nest filled with love for all the members of the family. The family, with the mother at its center, is the basic unit making up the nation and the world." (August 24, 1992) Father teaches that husbands and wives have equal value but

different roles and responsibilities that complement each other. For thousands of years women have lived by the values in Titus 2:5 in the Bible (New King James Version) that says women are made by God to be "homemakers".

HEAVEN AND EARTH

Father teaches that men and women are different: "Man symbolizes heaven and woman symbolizes earth. Man and woman must come together and realize harmony. Man and woman are different from each other. Man's muscles are hard, but woman's are smooth. Men have beards, but women do not. Their voices are different, also. When man and woman are matched in a reciprocal position, harmony is made." (*Blessing and Ideal Family*) Here are a few quotes that show he teaches men and women have different roles:

> When you blessed couples start a family, the husband should lead a public life (life of service) and the wife should be in charge of the family life (the domestic life). Will you be a representative and exemplary family?
>
> The wife should make her husband successful; that is to say that she should be his great supporter. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

He teaches that men and women are never to interchange these positions:

> Subject and object must not reverse their order. The order must be straight, the channel must be straight. In America today, the women are trying to become king. The queen is trying to become king, meanwhile trying to push all men down to the level of servant.
>
> What about you American women? Do you sit there and think to yourselves: "When will I ever come to hear Father say that woman is the subject? Will it ever happen, even in a million years?" The answer is no, it will not happen. However, the woman's position, the object position, is absolutely the most beautiful and it is essential. Woman is created for woman's purpose, which is not bad at all. When you follow the universal rule, harmony and happiness will always follow. When you go into the spirit world, this rule becomes totally obvious. (4-25-93)
>
> American women are saying, "We want to be in the bone position. Let the men become the soft flesh." Today America is suffering from terrible confusion; people don't know which side is up. There is no understanding of right order, subject and object, or who takes initiative and who is responsive. What about you American Unification women, are you different? In America, many women pull the men around behind them and the men just follow timidly. I have never seen so many boneless men as in America: "Yes, dear, whatever you say." ...If you women don't change that trend, there can be nothing but darkness for the future of this country. America will not survive. There must be God's order and sequence, a certain discipline. We must maintain that discipline.
>
> Sometimes I receive the criticism that I am "anti-woman" and "pro-man" but that is not true. I am simply pro-natural law. At this time, many women are trying to take over the societal positions and responsibilities of men; but you are not equipped to do that. You have your own strengths and virtues. Unless you can understand the reality of natural law, you can never understand or make sense of all the crazy things going on in today's world. (9-19-82)

SUBMISSION
The ideology of women being in submission does not men are never in submission. A woman is to submit only to one person—her husband. Men have to submit to many men and ultimately they have to submit to God commands.

Bunny Wilson in her book *Liberated Through Submission* teaches that everybody has to submit to authority. Men, she explains, have to submit even more than women do. She gives some insights and examples from her marriage and other marriages she knows. Father wants us to study him and create harmonious families. He says, "If you men and women were to adopt all the guidelines I have given you and then got together and started your family, you would be like a well-oiled machine. Your family life would be that smooth" (7-11-82). If Unificationists are to be experts at marriage and family then we need to study books on marriage and family. Until the 20th century men and women understood that there were differences between men and women. Shakespeare has Kate say in *The Taming of the Shrew*,

> Why are our bodies soft, and weak, and smooth,
> Unapt to toil and trouble in the world,
> But that our soft conditions and our hearts
> Should well agree with our external parts?

It was normal until recently that a woman would vow to "love, honor and and obey" in the wedding ceremony. Satan has made that idea repulsive and demeaning to most people.

LOVE, HONOR AND OBEY
A pastor wrote an article for the magazine *Christianity Today* entitled "Love, Honor, and Obey" on June 6, 1969. He wrote, "There was a time when the word 'obey' was included in marriage vows. The husband vowed to love and honor his wife and she vowed to love, honor, and obey her husband. The vow of obedience was based on Ephesians 5:22 and First Peter 3:1, where wives are commanded to be in subjection to their husbands."

"Today many marriage counselors and pastors regard the vow of obedience as an anachronism. They argue that the husband-wife relationship taught in the Scripture is culturally conditioned. Since it was fitting in Bible times for a woman to be submissive to her husband, they say, Christians were enjoined to follow this principle to avoid scandalizing the non-Christian community." "Women today are less inclined to vow obedience than they were in years past. Deluged by books and magazine articles by advice-to-women experts, modern women view marriage as a partnership in which the husband and wife stand as individuals who maintain separate identities. Some women are outraged at the thought of a bride's vowing obedience. Mary Daly in her book *The Church and the Second Sex* attacks what she feels is the Church's prejudice against women. She says the Church contradicts its moral teachings by harboring 'oppressive and misogynistic ideas' about women."

"Women need not feel threatened. God has provided safeguards for the woman in Christian marriage. Her husband is to love her as Christ loves the Church—to have her best interest always at heart. What a staggering demand on the husband! He is to love her as he loves his own flesh, for, says Paul, she is his flesh. The apostle Peter commands husbands to keep in mind that a woman is a fragile vessel, and is to be treated as such (1 Peter 3:7). What is more, she is an heir together with him of the grace of God. Whereas the human relationship of the husband and wife is that of the leader and the led, there is no such distinction in the spiritual realm. The wife is just as much the object of God's grace, just as much the heir of the riches of divine grace, as her husband. The husband who selfishly indulges in the good things God gives and refuses to share with his wife stands in danger of divine displeasure." "Peter's teaching answers the argument that in Christ

there is neither bond nor free, neither male nor female. It is true that the male-female distinctions are broken down in Christ; woman is the object of God's grace as much as man. Yet in the organization of the home God has ordained the headship of the man and the submission or obedience of the wife."

"When a pastor teaches that wives must be submissive to their husbands in everything (Eph. 5:24), even if the husband does not obey the word (1 Pet. 3:1), women are sure to ask how far they are to go in their submission. They will want to know what they are to do if a husband is cruel or is a violent drunkard." Cruel and violent men are in a tiny minority. And there are cruel and violent women too. No one should live with a cruel or violent person. A man or woman should separate until their spouse gets his or her act together.

In her book *The Fruit of Her Hands* Nancy Wilson gives great advice on what biblical submission means for a woman. Every sister should read this book and teach it to their daughters. She begins by saying:

> "For know this, that in the last days perilous times will come: for men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good, traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God, having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away! For of this sort are those who creep into households and make captives of gullible women loaded down with sins, led away by various lusts, always learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth." (2 Timothy 3:1-6)

GULLIBLE WOMEN

American women today are indeed gullible. They have been captivated by the lies promulgated by the modern world and have succumbed in many ways to the humanistic mindset. Who are the deceivers? They are lovers of themselves, lovers of money, lovers of pleasure. The modern woman has been deceived, like Eve, and led away by her own lusts from her God-given domain and her God-ordained responsibilities. Loaded down with sin—discontent, envy—she is promised freedom and happiness if she will just forsake her domain—the home—and neglect her responsibilities— husband and children.

What are some of the lies she has been told? Fruitfulness is bad; children wreck the budget and the figure. Marriage is a partnership; submission is for imbeciles. Being a homemaker is for airheads who can't make it in the business world. Women are not designed with a unique purpose, but should and can compete with men on any level. The most important thing is to have a healthy self-image and to have your deepest needs met. If they are not being met by your husband, find someone else. The old femininity is outdated. The new femininity dictates that women should look capable, confident, and, at all costs, young and sexy.

BIBLICAL SUBMISSION AND HOW GODLY WOMEN DO IT

Victoria Botkin speaks brilliantly on this in the second disc of her audio CD series *She Shall Be Called Woman* titled "Biblical Submission and how Godly Women Do It". I believe every father should listen to this with their daughters when he leads in his family's homeschool and if he can't or won't then I hope Unificationist mothers will use Mrs. Botkin's CD to teach their daughters this crucial value.

The seeds for wifely disobedience came from the founder of American feminism, Elizabeth Cady Stanton. A biography of her says that at her marriage ceremony on May 10, 1840, "Suddenly a question occurred to Lizzie. Exactly what did this minister intend to say in the marriage ceremony? The gentleman seemed rather surprised by the question, but he rapidly told her the words he would use."

"No!' Lizzie shook her head decisively. 'You must leave out the word, 'obey.' I absolutely refuse to obey someone with whom I am entering into an equal relationship."

"Henry Stanton looked startled, as if he had just discovered what might be in store for him. Nevertheless, he nodded to the minister." And America went downhill.

In the chapter titled "The Dangers of Whitewashed Feminism" in *Passionate Housewives Desperate for God* Stacy McDonald writes:

> "Feminist philosophy, which sounds reasonable enough on the surface, is a subtle and pervasive poison, infecting the minds of Christians and non-Christians alike." —Elisabeth Elliot
>
> In her essay "The Essence of Femininity," author Elisabeth Elliot laments the blindness of the feminist to the beauty of the complementary roles in God's creation:
>
> > Why must feminists substitute for the glorious hierarchical vision of blessedness a ramshackle and incoherent ideal that flattens all human beings to a single level—a faceless, colorless, sexless wasteland where rule and submission are regarded as a curse, where the roles of men and women are treated like machine parts that are interchangeable, replaceable, and adjustable, and where fulfillment is a matter of pure politics, things like equality and rights.
>
> Suffragist Elizabeth Cady Stanton was an example of a discontented housewife who was ruled by her flesh. In a letter to her close friend and fellow suffragist, Susan B. Anthony, Mrs. Stanton complained:
>
> > I pace up and down these two chambers of mine like a caged lion, longing to bring to a close childrearing and housekeeping cares. I have other work at hand...Oh how I long for a few hours of leisure each day. How rebellious it makes me feel when I see Henry going about where and how he pleases. He can walk at will through the whole wide world or shut himself up alone, if, he pleases, within four walls. As I contrast his freedom with my bondage, and feel that because of the false position of women I have been compelled to hold all my noblest aspirations in abeyance in order to be a wife, a mother, a nurse, a cook, a household drudge, I am fired anew and long to pour forth from my own experience the whole long story of women's wrongs.
>
> There are those who believe that when a woman submits to her husband she somehow loses her identity. They claim that when a woman believes it is her glorious duty to keep her home serving her husband and children, she has, in essence, become a doormat. Ironically, by rejecting God's ways, that's exactly what the enemy intends for us to become—self-created doormats!

> Many women naively follow individualistic feminist thought right into the arms of corporate America. Instead of being servants to their families, they become slaves to a system that cares nothing about them. In their delusion, they believe they are finally free. What they don't realize is that Satan stands laughing as he wipes his feet on their precious "personhood."

What's Submission Got to Do With It?

In her book *What's Submission Got to Do With It?: Find Out from a Woman Like You* Cindy Easley writes: "Why in the world would I write a book on submission? I'm sitting at my computer, thinking of the hate mail I'm sure to receive. I'm not someone to run towards conflict; on the other hand, I don't have any problem standing firm for what I believe is true. So here I am writing a book I know will be controversial at best, adversarial at worst."

When she got married she says, "I classified myself as a Christian feminist." She heard about the concept of biblical submission for a wife towards a husband and writes:

> I didn't like it or agree with it, but the more I studied the Scriptures, the more I became convinced that God did, indeed, give us roles in marriage to adhere to.
>
> In our culture submission is viewed as a throwback to the 1950s and the days of *Leave It to Beaver*. Submission is represented as repressive servanthood, rather than a voluntary desire to empower a husband's leadership. Marriages that accept the headship/helper model are mischaracterized as one-side, with wives who are "barefoot and pregnant in the kitchen," who have little to offer in their thoughts and opinions. A submissive wife is considered to be more like a Stepford wife than an intelligent woman is capable of her own choices. After all, what rational woman would ever choose to follow a man?
>
> As with many things in our culture, this view of submission has found its way into the local church's teachings. In recent times the church has faced debate over whether God ordained marriage to be egalitarian or complementarian.
>
> In an egalitarian marriage, the roles of husband and wife are equal. In other words, everything is fifty-fifty. Roles are defined by the couple, rather than by culture or even the Bible.
>
> I have to admit, this view is more palatable than the complementarian view. After all, no one wants to be considered the "lesser" in a relationship. On the other side of the aisle is the idea of a complementarian marriage. This view states there are distinct roles in marriage. The husband is the head of the relationship; the wife is the helper. Although the man and woman stand equal before God in worth, they have specific roles. They compliment each other in these roles.
>
> God has wired our husbands to need our respect, just as we are wired with the need to be loved. When I willingly submit to Michael's leadership, I receive another bonus. He takes his position of leadership more seriously, realizing that I will follow. I expect Michael to listen to my desires, and my advice when I have more knowledge than he does on a specific subject. However, I've found over and over again that it is in my best interest to allow him to play the role that God gave him.
>
> When we are willing to cooperate with our husbands' leadership, they stand taller, feel prouder, and become the men we know they can be.
>
> In our culture the mere mention of different roles in marriage can set off a firestorm—even in our churches. Submission is not a popular idea. It is not culturally acceptable or open for discussion in a society that worships equality. The idea of submission is never portrayed in our "the husband is an idiot married to a beautiful and brilliant woman" era of sitcoms. It's no surprise that God's roles in

marriage are often misunderstood and maligned. No wonder maintaining a submissive attitude can be so difficult.

LESSONS FROM THE DANCE FLOOR

Mrs. Easley gives an example of dancing in her book. She writes that her husband took her to dancing lessons and she "saw a correlation to our roles in marriage:

> First, we learned that if I didn't follow Michael's lead, we just stood there. Because I spend most of the time going backward, following his lead was an act of faith. More importantly, I had to "feel" Michael's lead to be able to dance. Sometimes I needed Michael to direct more clearly, which meant he needed to place more pressure on my back or hand.
>
> It's the same in our marriage. Sometimes wives can't follow because we don't know where our husband is going. We need to ask our husbands to be clear as they lead so we can dance!

She goes on to write: "Let me make one very important point. God's judgment does not authorize a man to be an abusive, authoritarian despot" and … "with the emergence of sin, these roles became a point of tension rather than a result of the teammate relationship that God intended."

In her book she gives some interviews she had with some women who were consciously trying to be a biblical helper. She says:

> The women in these chapters are some of the most resourceful, courageous, and determined people I know. The stereotype of a submissive woman is that she is weak, silent, and even downtrodden. I didn't speak with one woman who would fit this stereotype. Every one had great strength of mind and spirit. They were good thinkers, hard workers, and willing partners who chose to trust God even when it was tough. I've concluded that an act of submission means the most when a woman is strong and confident in her own right. Most husbands understand what it means for their strong-minded wives to follow their leads. Men appreciate this as the ultimate sign of respect.
>
> Additionally, these women took on the role of helpmate regardless of their husband's actions. None of these women chose submission because they were told to, but because they wanted to. They took deliberate steps to follow their husband's leadership in good and bad circumstances.
>
> Men have an innate need for respect. In *For Women Only* Shaunti Feldhahn writes, "The male need for respect … is so hardwired and critical that most men would rather feel unloved than disrespected or inadequate."
>
> John Maxwell once said, "If someone calls himself a leader, yet no one follows his footsteps, then he's just out taking a walk!" As wives, we can empower our husbands' leadership by choosing to follow. We need to be sensitive to the difficulty of his role, especially when the family is experiencing life-altering choices. When we willingly submit, we are affirming our husband's manhood and agreeing to trust God's design for our marriage. As we take our husband's role seriously, he will too.

Her husband, Michael, has a chapter in her book. He writes:

> In this book, Cindy has tried to encourage your bride toward a biblical perspective on a subject most women find wholly disagreeable. Our wives are surrounded by

voices that loathe the slightest suggestion that they should ever be submissive to anyone—much less to us. But beyond your wife making a fundamental decision to obey the Lord and submit to Him and His Word, the next most significant piece of any wife being submissive to her husband is that her husband be a good and godly man.

This has nothing to do with physical power, force of personality, or ability to yell louder than the next guy. I am speaking of the innate character and quality of being a man. For the record, let there be no doubt, there is never a place for a man to use this power to harm his wife or family.

I believe our culture has worked overtime to tame men, to feminize us. Our culture has systematically emasculated men and tried to domesticate us into some kind of warm, passive nonentity. *Sit there and watch this chick flick and enjoy it!*

I remember my dad never liked the cartoon strip *Blondie*. He observed that the hapless husband, Dagwood, was always the punch line of the joke, while his wife, Blondie, was always right. Perhaps that's why I never cared for *Home Improvement* or *Everybody Loves Raymond* or other successful sitcoms. Funny yes, but funny at the expense of the husband.

To be a good and godly husband is an uphill trek on an unpaved road. To be the husband Christ wants you to be is a difficult journey and one in which you will be mocked, blamed, dismissed, accused, and find yourself desperately alone at times. But to be the husband Christ wants you to be is a remarkable and holy goal. And it is otherworldly.

So how does a man love his wife as Chris loved the church? Answer: you die for her. You don't blame her or tell her to submit. You don't lord leadership over her. You don't sit and bark orders or play the trump card. You don't disengage and wait for her. You get off the sofa of life and become involved in your marriage.

Being a loving leader is a tough assignment. To love your wife as Christ loves the church is for me a lifelong project. At times I'm grouchy, selfish, peevish, angry, sullen and can sit and stew in my juices. I can hide in my computer always doing work. I can cozy up to the TV and watch news for hours. Or, I can pursue my precious bride.

A loving leader, a good and godly husband, sets aside the injustices. He puts on his armor and deflects the little jabs and jolts that are distractions. He suits up. And he gets back in the game over and over and over again. He makes a fundamental decision: I will try—with God's Holy Spirit's help—to be the husband and father He wants me to be. I will run after it harder than my career. I will run after it harder than money. And when I fail—and I will—I will promptly ask forgiveness and get back in the game. But it's no mere game, it is life.

Too many men quit. They stop. They get sidelined. I read that success is simply doing the things others don't want to do.

ale need for respect … is so hardwired and critical that most men would rather feel unloved than disrespected or inadequate."

Cindy Easley ends by saying that a wife should not follow blindly. For example if a man is abusive (physically or emotionally), pushes his wife into illegal behavior or believes in polygamy she should not follow and seek counseling. She says, "Submission does not mean checking your brain at the door of your home." This means that when a wife has a disagreement with her husband she should disagree:

> Respectfully. With well-chosen words, a calm voice, without blame or accusation. In marriage, it's important to learn to fight fair. I don't really mean to "fight" in the

raised voice, temper tantrum sort of way. I do mean we need to be able to air our differences reasonably. Stick to the facts, be kind in your word choice, and listen to your husband's side of the argument just as you want to be listened to. Look past the words to the hidden meanings. Repeat what you hear your husband saying so you can make sure you understand correctly, and ask him to do the same with you. The goal is to agree. If you cannot agree on a subject, then aim to understand each other. It's fine to "agree to disagree" about an issue as long as you both leave it that way without further antagonism.

At times Michael and I disagree, and he will acquiesce to my way of thinking. That is perfectly within his right as the head of our home. If he does not, it is my role to remain respectful of his leadership even in those areas in which we cannot see eye-to-eye.

RUTH GRAHAM — ROLE MODEL

She ends by saying that the ideal wife in the Proverbs 31 woman is exemplified in Mrs. Billy Graham: "Ruth Graham is the embodiment of a helpmate to her husband. She is the Proverbs 31 woman. Ruth Graham was spunky, intelligent, capable and wise. She chose to elevate her husband's dreams above her own, certainly surrendering parts of herself along the way. But I bet if Ruth were here today, she would tell us that she gained far more than she sacrificed. That's how submission works. When we chose to use our vast resources to further our husbands' leadership and success, we are the ones who gain the most."

The woman in Proverbs buys a piece of ground. Mrs. Graham did too. She writes, "Much of her ministry was with her 5 children, 19 grandchildren, and more than a dozen great-grandchildren. She personally selected and purchased 150 heavily wooded acres near Black Mountain, North Carolina, where she designed the "mountain primitive" house that became their home."

For those who think submissive women have no voice she, like many women, wrote books and reached many people with her words. Like many women she volunteered her time outside the home. She helped an orphanage in Mexico and cared for female prisoners. Bob Dole said she was also with her husband "a distinguished communicator of God's power and peace in her own right." Mrs. Easley says:

She was known for being a woman of grace but also of outspoken forthrightness in her own right. When asked if she and her husband always agreed on everything, she said, "My goodness, no! If we did, there would be no need to one of us!"

Perhaps the best assessment of her contributions, however, came from the late T.W. Wilson, a boyhood friend of Billy's who became a trusted member of his evangelistic team. "There would have been no Billy Graham as we know him today had it not been for Ruth," he said. "They have been a great team." At her website www.aboverubies.org Nancy Campbell writes:

SUBMIT TO YOUR HUSBAND'S HEADSHIP

I guess we might as well start with the one that most women want to avoid! However, it's one of the secrets so I can't leave it out! We may not always like what God says but it's the only way that works.

You can read the Scriptures again: 1 Corinthians 7:3,4; 14:34b; Ephesians 5: 21-24; Philippians 2:6-10; Colossians 3:18; Titus 2:5; 1 Peter 3:1-6. The word "submission" is "hupotasso". It comes from two words – "hupo" which means

"under" and "tasso" which means, "to set in order." Therefore it means, "to place in an orderly fashion under something."

Submission is for our protection

God did not devise submission to bring wives into bondage. No, it is for our blessing, protection and covering. God's ultimate plan is for His female creation to be under protection throughout their entire lives – under their father's protection as a single person and then under their husband's protection when they marry. We see an understanding of this in Numbers Chapter 30.

In 1 Peter chapter 3, we read the example of godly women who submitted to their husbands, even though their husbands were not Christians, and even at times when they were wrong. But these women had a secret. They exercised the grace of submission toward their husbands, but they trusted in God! Even when they couldn't trust their husband's decision, they trusted God. Dear wives; God is bigger than your husband! Remember that. When you think he is wrong and leading you down a wrong path, trust God. God will work for you as you put your trust in Him. Twice Sarah was taken into a harem, but she put her trust in the Lord and God delivered her!

I believe that one of the most fundamental understandings of a successful marriage is to know our role in the marriage. God ordained the husband to be the Provider, the Protector and the Priest of the home. He created the woman to be the Nurturer, the Nourisher and the Nest builder. The husband is the Breadwinner; the wife is the Bread baker! The husband is the King; the wife is the Queen.

We support our husband, not by competing for his role, but by encouraging him to be what God ordained him to be - the leader and the provider. When we take away his God-given task and try to do it ourselves, we undermine him as a man, and we come out from under God's divine order. Oh you may think you can do a much better job than he can! But that's not the point. The more you attack his position, the weaker he will become in it. However, as you relinquish it to him, he will gradually learn to take his responsibility. He may make many mistakes at the beginning, but he will grow stronger and wiser as you affirm his role.

First Timothy 2:11-13 says, 'Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. But I suffer not a woman to ... usurp authority over the man.'"

A little book that I recommend for UM sisters to study is Elizabeth Handford's *Me? Obey Him?*:

Position in the chain of authority has nothing to do with the individual's worth to God. It is not determined by one's importance. A woman is subject to her husband, but she can still go directly to God, to ask anything she needs or desires, and get it as quickly as if she were a man. God made the man to be the achiever, the doer, to provide for the home and protect it, to be high priest and intercessor for the home. His body carries the seed of life, and he is responsible for the children that will be born, to guide them, nurture them, direct them.

God made the woman to be keeper of the home, to make a haven within its walls, a retreat from the stress of battle, the nourisher of the children. A woman's body is fashioned primarily for being a wife and mother. (Why, oh why a feminist thinks that's degrading?) Her body is shaped for the bearing of children, and never a

month goes by but what she is reminded of the basic, creative function of motherhood. All the sense of her being answers to the wail of a baby, to the uplifted arms of a child. (Have you ever wondered what caused the spoiled daughter of Pharaoh to adopt the infant of the despised children of Israel? "She saw the child: and, behold, the babe wept. And she had compassion on him" [Exodus 2:6]. The need of the weeping baby Moses overcame all the conditioning and training she had received!).

A woman is different from a man. (I know that sounds like a stupid statement. But if you have read some of the writers of the current women's lib movement, you'll realize they don't believe it. They think a woman is different only because she has been conditioned to inferiority from babyhood, and exploited by it!) A woman is different in her body, in her interests, in her thinking, in her abilities: not inferior — different.

Women have entered the market place. They have achieved fame in medicine, in business, in the arts. A woman can choose nearly any occupation she likes. But I deny that she will find fulfillment that will surpass that which a godly Christian woman finds who, secure in the knowledge of her womanhood and its rightness, builds a home for her husband and children! Her confidence in her ability to be a helpmeet, sufficient for her husband's needs, comes as she finds her place in the order of authority.

Women have the privilege of a husband's lifelong concern for your welfare. Can you imagine the awesome task a man takes upon himself when he assumes the lifetime responsibility of a wife and family? Food, clothing, shelter, the care and training of the children — all these he commits himself to for the rest of his life! No matter how he feels, he must go into the world each day to earn the money to feed the family and pay the bills. A wife can — let's face it, she really can — if she doesn't feel well, stagger around long enough to get the kids off to school and the baby fed, and then go back to bed until supper time, when she can open a couple of cans, if she has to.

But her husband? No matter if the company he works for lays off workers, including him; no matter if his job is replaced by a machine; no matter if he has a case of the "blahs" or a toothache, or the flu — it is his responsibility to put food on the table and a roof over the head of his family that day.

An old rhyme says, "Man works from sun to sun, but a woman's work is never done." And it's true, believe me it's true. (How do I know? Because we have seven children, that's how I know!) but it is also true that, if I decide to take a couple of hours off to window shop, or go to the library, or sew a dress, the work is still there when I come back to it. That isn't true with a man's work. If he doesn't work, he doesn't get paid.

Mrs. Handford correctly advises women to see their part in the problem: "Men hate 'scenes.' They despise confusion and disorder. They will go to almost any length to have peace in their homes. They will let a woman have her way rather than argue and quarrel." Father says repeatedly that women start quarrels and cause divorce. She continues:

> But the price a man has to pay is the price of his manhood. Before you complain that your husband won't take the leadership of your home, search your heart

> carefully. Do you really trust his judgment? Are you willing to commit yourself to his decisions? If not, don't complain that he will not lead. For the sake of peace, he may not fight for his authority. Your habit of bossing may be more deeply entrained than you possibly realize.
>
> Don't mistake a man's gentleness for weakness. Don't mistake a quietly spoken word for vacillation. A gentle man can still lead his home completely, if not as flamboyantly as an aggressive man. And a loving wife who leans on her husband will call forth his strength and manliness.
>
> How can you give the leadership back to him? Admit your failure. Ask his forgiveness. Then simply give him the chance to make the decisions. Send the children to him for permissions. Let him decide when you do what. (You realize this won't work, don't you, if he makes a decision and you say, "What in the world did you do that for?!") If you stop bossing the family, he will be the boss automatically.

One insight she gives is that women should be careful about their feelings and focus on God's commandments that often go against our feelings. Father teaches this same emphasis on vertical instead of focusing horizontally. This is extremely hard for American women to do and that is why they turn to feminism and the government for answers instead of the Bible which is looked at as medieval and therefore irrelevant when in fact Father is teaching Biblical truths that are simply God's truths. She says:

> There is another aspect in the matter of submission and feelings; it is tinged with mystery. Have you noticed how many Scriptures there are that command a wife to obey her husband? There is only one Scripture, to my knowledge, that tells a wife to love him, and that is Titus 2:4. Why? Because, I think, in a marvelous, supernatural way, submission brings love. If you obey him, you will love him, love him more than you ever dreamed possible.
>
> It's a Bible principle, found in Proverbs 16:3: 'Commit thy works unto the Lord, and thy thoughts shall be established.' You do right — you obey him, regardless of how you feel. Then your feelings turn out right — your thoughts are established. If you obey, you will love."
>
> I am aware of the feelings of revulsion a woman may have toward her husband. They may be caused by poor teaching from childhood. They may be caused by a shattering incident in adolescence. The husband himself may not have been tender enough. But many a woman, who thought she could never love the man she was bound to, has discovered that when she obeyed him, she learned to love him.

Southern Baptist Convention

In 1998 the Southern Baptist Convention, America's largest Protestant denomination, became headline news for writing a value statement saying that men are heads of their families and women are to submit to their husband's final decisions as taught in Ephesians 5. They stood strongly on the side of only men holding positions of authority over other men in the church. This produced a firestorm of controversy. It amended its essential statement of beliefs by adding these words: "The husband and wife are of equal worth before God, since both are created in God's image. The marriage relationship models the way God relates to His people. A husband is to love his wife as Christ loved the church. He has the God-given responsibility to provide for, to protect, and to lead

his family. A wife is to submit herself graciously to the servant leadership of her husband even as the church willingly submits to the headship of Christ. She, being in the image of God as is her husband and thus equal to him, has the God-given responsibility to respect her husband and to serve as his helper in managing the household and nurturing the next generation."

The website (www.politifact.com) said, "Southern Baptist leaders said the article was written to encourage Americans to seek traditional family values in response to rising divorce rates, children born out of wedlock and violence by children against their parents. The language about women made national news. Some activists and others were outraged at what they deemed sexist language by the Southern Baptist Convention. Others, including many Christian women, said they agreed with the Southern Baptist resolution, *The Chicago Tribune* reported in 1998."

The *New York Times* (June 10, 1998) commented on this saying, "The amendment relies on biblical passages like Ephesians 5:22-33, which compares the husband-wife relationship to that of Christ ruling the church but which is seldom interpreted so literally these days among most Protestants and Roman Catholics." It is probably true that most Christians don't believe in the ideology of a wife's submission to her husband's leadership or what is often called "headship" in Christian thought. The religion writer for *The Chicago Tribune* (June 19, 1998) titled an article, "Southern Baptists Approve Submissive Wives Doctrine" saying that wifely submission is "a controversial belief of Christian conservatives. Feminists argued that focusing on submission implies that women are inferior to men, and could even offer a religious excuse for some men to abuse their wives. Proponents of the Baptist declaration argue that without such a biblical structure in family life, civilized society is in jeopardy." Ephesians 5 is "controversial"? It wasn't controversial for 2000 years until Feminists made it so. He quotes Dorothy Patterson, one of the authors of the new article saying, "It doesn't take a rocket scientist to see that the family is the issue right now. Children shooting their parents, the skyrocketing divorce rate—all of those things point back to a crisis in the family." She is right. Ever since most people rejected the Bible civilization has declined. Her husband Paige Patterson said at a news conference, "It's only hot language to someone not real familiar with the Bible."

In a *Time Magazine* interview (June 23, 2013) Jimmy Carter, A former President of the United States, said in an interview, "As you may or may not know, the Southern Baptist Convention back now about 13 years, voted that women were inferior and had to be subservient to their husbands, and ordained that a woman could not be a deacon or a pastor or a chaplain or even a teacher in a classroom in some seminaries where men are in the classroom, boys are in the classroom. So my wife and I withdrew from the Southern Baptist Convention primarily because of that." In his book *Living Faith* Carter writes: "In 1979, the conservative wing of Christianity was strong enough to take over leadership of the Southern Baptist Convention (SBC), which had always been my church 'home.' I was dismayed when the fundamentalists took control."

Carter gave a speech and a reporter wrote:

> Former President Jimmy Carter spoke at a Bible study at the Baptist World Congress in England yesterday, where he said that the Southern Baptist Convention is led by men who want "to keep women in their place."
>
> Carter also said that Southern Baptists and other churches misuse Scripture to deny women the chance to serve as ministers.

Carter and his feminist friends are the ones misusing Scripture. One person wrote in an article about this speech. Here is some of what he said:

Does the Southern Baptist Convention discriminate against women? President Jimmy Carter says, "Yes." Richard Land, SBC's Ethics and Religious Liberty Commission president, says "No."

Two weeks ago, the former chief executive spoke to what was billed as the "world's largest Bible study class" during the centennial meeting of the Baptist World Congress in Birmingham, England.

"Despite the fact that Jesus Christ was the greatest liberator of women, some male leaders of the Christian faith have continued the unwarranted practice of sexual discrimination, derogating women and depriving them of their equal rights to serve God," Carter asserted.

Richard Land responded: "It's some surprise when former President Carter gets something right, not when he gets something wrong." "We have a choice. We can either follow the spirit of the age and follow syncretizers and compromisers like Jimmy Carter—or we can follow the Apostle Paul. And we'd rather have the approval of God and the Apostle Paul than Jimmy Carter."

In 1984 the SBC passed a resolution on "Ordination and the Role of Women in Ministry" saying, "While Paul commends women and men alike in other roles of ministry and service (Titus 2:1-10), he excludes women from pastoral leadership (1 Tim. 2:12) to preserve a submission God requires because the man was first in creation and the woman was first in the Edenic fall (1 Tim. 2:13ff)."

President Carter, in his address to the Baptist World Congress audience, noted this first SBC attempt to put women in their place was a statement that twists the meaning of Genesis and "puts the blame for Original Sin on females." Carter admitted that selected passages from the Bible can be used to imply that Paul "deviates from Jesus and has a bias against women, suggesting they should be treated as second-class Christians, submissive to their husbands, attired and coifed demurely and silent in church."

Though Richard Land obviously disagreed with the president's conclusions, the statement that brought Land's strongest reaction followed: "I would never claim the Scriptures are in error," said Carter, "but it is necessary in some cases to assess the local circumstances that may have existed within a troubled early church and to study the ancient meaning of some of the Greek and Hebrew words."

Carter illustrated his point by noting modern Baptists ignore Pauline admonitions forbidding women to worship without wearing veils or braiding their hair, or wearing rings, jewelry, or expensive clothing. (This principle of biblical interpretation is named cultural relativity and is widely accepted by conservative biblical scholars.)

Land responded by alluding to the books of 1 Timothy and Titus (without specific verse citations), stating that the New Testament spells out requirements for pastors and church leaders and the SBC follows those qualifications.

"We're going to go ahead and practice what the Bible teaches us and that is that," he responded. "While God calls both men and women to service in the church, the office of pastor of a local church is reserved for qualified men."

(www.christianethicstoday.com/NonJournalArticles/Women%20and%20the%20SBC-%20Carter%20vs.%20Land.htm)

Carter says Paul "deviates from Jesus," has "bias against women," and sees women as "second-class Christians." He is wrong. St. Paul and those who believe in traditional, biblical family values are not misogynistic and do not look down on women and do not think women are "inferior.". Liberalism is hurtful to women. Liberal men do not honor women as much as patriarchal men. Godly patriarchs don't look at their leadership position as giving them the right to be arrogant and harsh. On the contrary, they try to lead with the attitude of being a servant leader. Let me give an example. Here is a quote from an article on the web (www.votisalive.com/content/abuse-authority-0):

> Jesus' example of leadership is a corrective to such abuse of authority. In His kingdom, leaders think and act like servants. They hear the questions and cries of those who are hurting. They give others the consideration they want for themselves.
>
> Peter writes, "Shepherd the flock of God which is among you, serving as overseers, not by compulsion but willingly, not for dishonest gain but eagerly; nor as being lords over those entrusted to you, but being examples to the flock" (1 Peter 5:2-3).
>
> Spiritual shepherds are not to "lord it over" the flock of God.

Sun Myung Moon teaches that patriarchs should not be authoritarian:

> You have to know parental love and how to attend and serve your parents. You have to know your spouse's love and how to attend and serve your spouse. You should also know children's love and how to serve your children. You shouldn't just give orders to your children, but you should be able to serve and understand them. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

A reviewer of Carter's book, *Our Endangered Values: America's Moral Crisis*, for *Publishers Weekly* writes, "Criticizing Christian fundamentalists for their 'rigidity, domination and exclusion,' he suggests that their open hostility toward a range of sinners (including homosexuals and the federal judiciary) runs counter to America's legacy of democratic freedom. Carter speaks eloquently of how his own faith has shaped his moral vision and of how he has struggled to reconcile his own values with the Southern Baptist church's transformation under increasingly conservative leadership." *Publishers Weekly* is a feminist publication so it gives Carter a glowing recommendation. The words in the title of his book are correct but the true meaning of the words are opposite of what Carter writes. America is in a moral crisis and values are endangered. There is a crisis in America because of people like Carter who attack traditional family values and the values of limited government taught by America's founding fathers.

Some of the arguments Carter gave are popular with feminist theologians. They often use the words "rigid", "dominators" and "exclusive." One of their favorite words is "inferior." My thesis is that the arguments against the feminists by traditionalist theologians are true and that Sun Myung Moon speaks strongly for patriarchy as well. Carter is wrong in his views. Paul was the first to define what the core values a follower of Christ should have. God has been behind those writers who have written on the traditional marriage and family in the past who taught in detail what the roles of men and women are. We learn in the "Parallels of Human History" in the *Divine*

Principle how God worked to raise mankind since the time of Jesus to be smart enough to not reject the Second Coming of Christ who would speak about the nature of masculinity and femininity. Sun Myung Moon is the Messiah and his core teachings are about marriage and family. By studying Sun Myung Moon we can know what Jesus would have taught.

ABSOLUTE WORDS

Father's words are more politically incorrect than anything the Southern Baptists write or any other books for patriarchy that I have read. For example, Father says in one of his speeches, "Women absolutely must follow men" (6-17-90). Can anyone make a stronger statement for patriarchy than this one? He loves the word "absolute." He often talks about "absolute values." It is a motif throughout his teachings: "You must be proud that you are participating in the Unification movement, which is going after only the absolute standard. There is no halfway standard, but everything is absolute—absolute words, absolute love, absolute actions. This is the way you are committed to go, so you must be very proud of this." (11-12-85)

Father teaches that the Fall reversed the chain of command and now men follow women. Restoration means we return to patriarchy where men lead women. The Messiah says that women "must restore their original role" because "Nowadays American men just do not want to get married and become the slaves of domineering women":

> **CHAIN OF COMMAND**
> Originally, the chain of command should have been from God to Adam and from Adam to the Archangel. So God set up a chain of command from Himself to Abel, and from Abel to Cain. This was the formula for the providence for restoration. God wanted to reclaim the lost principle by restoring this position first. (*Way of Unification Part 1)*
>
> Some people have a nebulous concept of what the ideal world is, but it is the world centered upon original love. It must be realized in a substantial society on the earth, which we call the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. We are certainly not living in the original world at this time so we have to pursue it. It is the destiny of all people to seek original love through the path that religion has trod. (5-20-84)

OBEDIENCE

Helen Andelin writes, "Now let us turn our attention more fully to one of the most important requirements of man's successful leadership — your obedience. The first law of Heaven is obedience, and it should be the first law of every home. It is the foundation of an orderly home, a successful family, and the successful lives of the children. The wife is the key. When she sets an example of obedience to her husband, the children follow. It has not only immediate benefits, but far-reaching effects on their entire lives."

"On the other hand, when the wife refuses to obey her husband, she sets a pattern of rebellion for her children to follow. They learn from her that they don't have to obey an instruction if they don't want to .... When such children are turned out into the world they have difficulty obeying the law, or a higher authority, such as leadership on campus or in their work. The problems of rebellious youth can often be traced to homes where the mother disobeyed the father or showed lack of respect for his authority."

Alan Dunn in *Headship in Marriage in Light of Creation and the Fall* writes, "The reason for Paul's directives is not a domineering male chauvinism, but he desires that godly women assume their place in the spiritual battle… Intense conflict with the forces of darkness is waged in the

home. Paul stations the godly woman in the home to engage in spiritual battle, to shore up the Christian family and fend off the enemy's slanderous attacks. His language is dignified, not derogatory. *Keep house* literally means 'house despot.' Here is a term which legitimizes feminine authority and the power needed to direct the affairs of the home with a nobility bespeaking service to Christ. This is not relegating the wife to inconsequential."

For three years the Unification Church had a woman for its president. She often put down traditional family values in her sermons. For example, on October 25, 2009 she said: "If you look at the history of Christianity, you can see it as patriarchal. It has not been kind to women because we never had the female physical form ... So as great as Christianity is, one of its inherent weaknesses is the fact that it can't address the issues of what is the proper role of women, how do we educate great children, or how does a family become the textbook for true love. ... Before our True Parents, we never had a model in history giving answers about the questions surrounding what is the proper role of women in the context of a subject and object relationship, in the context of the family, the extended family, society, or even the world at large. And how do we go about raising decent children? ... my father is encouraging all women to take leadership roles in their families, societies, and the world, to help usher in a new era of peace. My father is asking women to exercise the magic of the feminine touch and of compassion, embracing what we know is true love but many times we fail to feel."

THE PROPER ROLE OF WOMEN

Let's look at these words and see if they are words of wisdom or words of stupidity. This president of the Unification Church of America in 2009 taught that Christianity has been patriarchal and therefore "has not been kind to women." America gave up patriarchy in 1920. How has it been for women since America has embraced the opposite of patriarchy—feminism? I think the history before 1920 was kinder to women than the post patriarchal 20th century. For example, in 1912 when the Titanic went down the men showed chivalry and gave their lives to protect the women. Would they do that today? The twentieth century was the worst century in history for women as well as the worst century for men. She goes on to say that Christianity is inherently weak because it has never given role models who could teach "the proper role of women in the context of the subject and object relationship." This is false. There are many books by women who teach the proper role of women. I quote from some of those books in this book and in my other books. I recommend Helen Andelin's book *Fascinating Womanhood* as an excellent start. She has helped millions of women find romance and love in their marriages by following her practical advice based on the Bible. Unificationists should honor the Bible's teachings on men/women relationships.

I believe subject means leader and object means follower. Traditional Christianity teaches women to be submissive to their husband's leadership who are the head of their homes and women are prevented from being leaders in the church so they will not dominate men. There have been countless excellent Christian women who have lived and taught "the proper role of women."

The former female president of the UC goes on to say, "And how do we go about raising decent children?" There are good books by Christians who teach how to raise godly children. For example, *Family Strategies: Practical Issues for Building Healthy Families* (20 Audio Messages) by Doug and Beall (pronounced Bell) Phillips. Here are a few books:

All About Raising Children by Helen Andelin
Love in the House by Chris and Wendy Jeub
Have a New Kid by Friday: How to Change Your Child's Attitude, Behavior & Character in 5 Days by Kevin Leman
Parenting by the Book: Biblical Wisdom for Raising Your Child by John Rosemond

(www.rosemond.com, www.parentingbythebook.com)
The Duggars: 20 and Counting!: Raising One of America's Largest Families—How they Do It by Jim Bob Duggar and Michelle Duggar
ScreamFree Parenting: The Revolutionary Approach to Raising Your Kids by Hal Runkel
Parenting from the Hearth by: Practical Parenting from a Mom of 14 Children by Marilyn Boyer
Large Family Logistics: The Art and Science of Managing the Large Family by Kim Brenneman
Shepherding a Child's Heart by Tedd Tripp

In *Shepherding a Child's Heart* Tedd Tripp teaches that parents should use the rod—use spanking as one form of discipline. He gives guidance on how to do it. He is critical of the usual methods parents use such as bribery, emotionalism, time outs and grounding. For example, he writes, "Grounding is not corrective. It is simply punitive. It does not biblically address the issues of the heart that were reflected in the child's wrong behavior." He gives many excellent insights on how to raise children to be godly. In regard to the topic of spanking I highly recommend Kevin Leman's book *Making Children Mind Without Losing Yours*. Check out videos of him on YouTube.com. At the following website is a five minute video of him giving some excellent advice on spanking: www.iquestions.com/video/view/297

Also check out the following by Steve and Teri Maxwell (www.titus2.com):

Managers of Their Homes: A Practical Guide to Daily Scheduling for Christian Homeschool Families
Managers of Their Chores: A Practical Guide to Children's Chores
Managers of Their Schools: A Practical Guide to Homeschooling
Redeeming the Time: A Practical Guide to a Christian Man's Time Management
Homeschooling with a Meek and Quiet Spirit and the study guide
Preparing Sons to Provide for a Single-Income Family
Encouragement for the Homeschool Family 10 CD:
2 CDs The Homeschooling Family: Building a Vision (for families)
1 CD Managers of Their Homes (for ladies)
2 CDs Manager of His Home (for men only-this is the full, unabridged version)
1 CD Loving Your Husband (for ladies)
1 CD Sports-Friend or Foe? (for families)
1 CD Anger-Relationship Poison (for families)
1 CD Experiencing the Joy of Young Womanhood (for young ladies)
1 CD Success or Failure-Where Are You Headed? (for young men)

The former president of the UC says, "... my father is encouraging all women to take leadership roles in their families." She gives no quote of Father saying this. I have never seen one but I have read many quotes of Father saying men are subject and women are in the object position. Father lives by old-fashioned traditional family values. The mother of this confused president of the American UC, Mrs. Sun Myung Moon, is the epitome of the traditional submissive wife as taught by the wonderful Christian ladies I quote in this book.

Sadly, many Unificationist men sat like sycophants in front of the UC president when she gave sermons on Sunday and thought her repeated denouncements of male leadership was inspiring. Her husband introduced her as his "boss" and she said her "boss" is her younger brother who is the head of the UC International. She did not say her husband is her leader because she hates patriarchy. Her hatred of patriarchy is an attack on men being the heads of their homes. She tried to emasculate Unificationist brothers and therefore castrate the Unification Movement. Her words

and lifestyle are false.

LOST DIGNITY

In Jin Moon, the former female president of the UC, often mentioned in her sermons how women are victims of an oppressive patriarchy. The truth is that there is far more misandry (hatred and contempt for men) than misogyny (hatred and contempt of women). Two respected social scientists have several books to prove it: *Spreading Misandry*: *The Teaching of Contempt for Men in Popular Culture* and *Legalizing Misandry: From Public Shame to Systemic Discrimination Against Men* by Paul Nathanson and Katherine Young. In these terrible Last Days men have lost their dignity. Sun Myung Moon is a man's man and gives an example of a strong patriarch who confidently leads his wife and other men. In the future men will regain their dignity as godly patriarchs and women will regain their dignity in submission to their husbands instead of competing with men and demoralizing men.

FEROCIOUS FEMINISM

The most famous anti-Feminist is Phyllis Schlafly. She is disgusted with the current male bashing and anti-patriarchy preaching of feminists who constantly whine about how they are victims. She says nothing could be further from the truth. The inside cover of her book, *Feminist Fantasies,* says, "No assault has been more ferocious than feminism's forty-year war against women. And no battlefield leader has been more courageous than Phyllis Schlafly. In a new book of dispatches from the front, feminism's most potent foe exposes the delusions and hypocrisy behind a movement that has cheated millions of women out of their happiness, health, and security."

She led the fight against the Equal Rights Amendment (ERA). Some other of her books against feminism are *The Power of the Positive Woman* and *The Power of the Christian Woman*. She is quoted in a positive article about her in the *Washington Times* (1-29-03) saying:

> Feminism is about developing the notion of victimology. They want to paint women as oppressed victims, kept down by men and this oppressive patriarchal society.
>
> "I think the book ought to be a staple in women's studies courses. In women's studies, they always read such tiresome things."
>
> Feminists told "young women that they needed to be liberated from home, husband and children," Mrs. Schlafly explains. "They called themselves the women's liberation movement, and that meant liberation from the home. And my book shows how this fantasy played out ... in every avenue."

This former female president of the UC is the worst thing to ever happen to the Unification Movement. We read in an article based on a radio show at www.npr.org (2-17-10), "In her first interview with a reporter since taking over the church, she tells NPR that a major challenge came from the Asian church elders, who were upset that a woman was selected to run the American church. Then, they balked at her vision: a national church, which she calls Lovin' Life Ministries, based in New York City, with smaller satellite churches." Those leaders were in the right. She reminds me of Hillary Clinton who told a reporter, "I suppose I could have stayed home and baked cookies and had teas, but what I decided to do was fulfill my profession." The only profession a woman should have is to be her husband's partner and this means striving to be an excellent homemaker.

Don't watch and listen to the satanic lies of feminists like the former female president of the UC of America and all the other feminist leaders in the UC who denounce traditional, biblical family values. Don't go to their speeches and don't waste your time watching their videos. Instead watch

the videos I list in this book of godly women like those in the must-see DVD *Monstrous Regiment of Women* (watch it for free at YouTube.com)**.** Guide your life by Father's words. He teaches that men lead and women follow just like countless Christian men and women have lived and taught for thousands of years. Don't be fooled by the feminist ideology of egalitarianism. Those churches that teach the ideology of women leading men are declining drastically. This is why the UC has never got off the ground in gaining and keeping members.

In the ABC News show on Ken and Devon Carpenter mentioned in the previous chapter they are interviewed. Here is some of what Ken says: "Ken is the undisputed leader of his family. How does a father's role differ from a mother's role?" "I think a dad ought to be the primary instiller of wisdom and ought to be teaching his sons leadership." "Do you consider yourself the head of this household?" "I know that that notion is just going to rile a number of people but, yes, absolutely, I do consider myself the loving head of this family. It's the biblical model of fatherhood. He makes the final decisions." "The buck stops here. You're in charge." "Absolutely. Absolutely."

TO BE NURTURING AND LOVING AND SUBMISSIVE TO MY HUSBAND

Mrs. Carpenter says, "I believe this is how God intended it to be." "It can't be easy on your body to keep having children. Are you concerned about your health at all?" "God designed us to have children." "What's your role in this family?" "Hopefully to be nurturing and loving and submissive to my husband and shepherding to the children." "What does that mean?" "It's not .. so many ladies want to make that negative and oppressive. It's really wonderful when the husband leads the family as he should. We have mutual respect. We discuss things. It's not like he's holding it over our heads by any means. He's very loving." I hope every Unificationist watches this video and can see what a godly couple looks like.

Women should not have dreams or goals or desires to earn money inside or outside the home. In *All About Raising Children* Helen Andelin gives excellent advice teaching that women have only one career. She explains that a woman needs "to make her career a career in the home. If she manages her time well, she may be able to do other things such as develop her talents or give benevolent service, but these should be secondary roles. If she is to make a success of family life, she will need to make her duties as wife, mother and homemaker, priority roles." When she says develop "talents" this does not mean a woman should have a dream of attending graduate school, starting a restaurant, climbing the corporate ladder, running for office, being an elementary school teacher, high school teacher, college professor, nurse, accountant, musician, accountant, attorney, doctor, receptionist, waitress or any other of the thousands of paid jobs in the market place.

One of my favorite writers is G.K Chesterton. He lived in the early 20th century and wrote eloquently about the decline of the family caused by feminism and socialism. He taught that men's jobs are not as exciting or fulfilling or meaningful as the woman's seemingly small world of the home. It looks small and narrow but in reality the home is the biggest and most creative place to be. He tried to explain to women how they are far better off in the home than in the workplace.

Chesterton criticizes feminists who glorify the workplace over the home. A few feminists are excited with their glamorous jobs such as being congresswomen and college professors. But for most women and men the workplace is more repetitive and offers less chance for growth than the woman at home. Feminists write about how men have such cool jobs compared to a housewife. Chesterton writes:

> Those who write like this seem entirely to forget the existence of the working and wage-earning classes. They say eternally, like my correspondent, that the ordinary woman is always a drudge. And what, in the name of the Nine Gods, is the ordinary man? These people seem to think that the ordinary man is a Cabinet

> Minister. They are always talking about man going forth to wield power, to carve his own way, to stamp his individuality on the world, to command and to be obeyed. This may be true of a certain class. Dukes, perhaps, are not drudges; but, then, neither are Duchesses. The Ladies and Gentlemen of the Smart Set are quite free for the higher culture, which consists chiefly of motoring and Bridge. But the ordinary man who typifies and constitutes the millions that make up our civilization is no more free for the higher culture than his wife is.
>
> Indeed, he is not so free. Of the two sexes the woman is in the more powerful position. For the average woman is at the head of something with which she can do as she likes; the average man has to obey orders and do nothing else. He has to put one dull brick on another dull brick, and do nothing else; he has to add one dull figure to another dull figure, and do nothing else. The woman's world is a small one, perhaps, but she can alter it. The woman can tell the tradesman with whom she deals some realistic things about himself. The clerk who does this to the manager generally gets the sack.... Above all the woman does work which is in some small degree creative and individual. She can put the flowers or the furniture in fancy arrangements of her own. I fear the bricklayer cannot put the bricks in fancy arrangements of his own, without disaster to himself and others. If the woman is only putting a patch into a carpet, she can choose the thing with regard to color.... A woman cooking may not always cook artistically, still she can cook artistically. She can introduce a personal and imperceptible alteration into the composition of a soup. The clerk is not encouraged to introduce a personal and imperceptible alteration into the figures in a ledger. (*All Things Considered*)

A feminist would argue that if she owned the restaurant she could be creative about how the cheesecake is made in her deli. To me the arguments against women competing in the marketplace are more powerful to me than those for women leaving the home. Helen Andelin writes wisely in her book *All About Raising Children*, "When male and female roles are altered severe problems occur. Such altering occurs when the wife runs the family or works outside the home. When the wife is a mover and a pusher, she can undermine her husband's drive so that he neglects his masculine role." Feminists don't believe this. Traditionalists do. Dear Reader, take your pick. I hope you choose wisely. So far the UC has not chosen wisely and they are not growing because they are reaping what they have sown. When Unificationist sisters return home the UC will grow.

Chesterton was a wise man who saw that the world of the homemaker is not narrow as feminists keep saying. He wrote:

> Our old analogy of the fire remains the most workable one. The fire need not blaze like electricity nor boil like boiling water; its point is that it blazes more than water and warms more than light. The wife is like the fire, or to put things in their proper proportion, the fire is like the wife. Like the fire, the woman is expected to cook: not to excel in cooking, but to cook; to cook better than her husband who is earning the coke by lecturing on botany or breaking stones. Like the fire, the woman is expected to tell tales to the children, not original and artistic tales, but tales—better tales than would probably be told by a first-class cook. Like the fire, the woman is expected to illuminate and ventilate, not by the most startling revelations or the wildest winds of thought, but better than a man can do it after breaking stones or lecturing. But she cannot be expected to endure anything like this universal duty if she is also to endure the direct cruelty of competitive or bureaucratic toil. Woman must be a cook, but not a competitive cook; a school mistress, but not a competitive schoolmistress; a house-decorator

> but not a competitive house-decorator; a dressmaker, but not a competitive dressmaker. She should have not one trade but twenty hobbies; she, unlike the man, may develop all her second bests. This is what has been really aimed at from the first in what is called the seclusion, or even the oppression, of women. Women were not kept at home in order to keep them narrow; on the contrary, they were kept at home in order to keep them broad. The world outside the home was one mass of narrowness, a maze of cramped paths, a madhouse of monomaniacs. It was only by partly limiting and protecting the woman that she was enabled to play at five or six professions and so come almost as near to God as the child when he plays at a hundred trades. But the woman's professions, unlike the child's, were all truly and almost terribly fruitful; so tragically real that nothing but her universality and balance prevented them being merely morbid. This is the substance of the contention I offer about the historic female position. I do not deny that women have been wronged and even tortured; but I doubt if they were ever tortured so much as they are tortured now by the absurd modern attempt to make them domestic empresses and competitive clerks at the same time. I do not deny that even under the old tradition women had a harder time than men; that is why we take off our hats. I do not deny that all these various female functions were exasperating; but I say that there was some aim and meaning in keeping them various. I do not pause even to deny that woman was a servant; but at least she was a general servant.

In over 50 years of marriage, Mrs. Moon lived the epitome of a traditional wife. At a conference for professors and intellectuals (the Tenth ICUS) True Mother spoke to the women attending the conference. I saw a video of this. She told the women that they had helped their husbands and she has tried "to be a wonderful helper for my husband." Mrs. Moon said:

> They say that behind every great man, there is a woman. In this sense, I respect you all very much. You have helped your husbands create many things to help mankind. I also try to be a wonderful helper for my husband, Reverend Moon.

Submission is not slavish servitude or servile fawning obsequiousness. Modern day thinking wrongly thinks that the old fashioned value of biblical patriarchy is outdated and ancient while today's egalitarian, unisex culture is hip and cool. There is nothing hip and cool about the demographic winter of low birthrates that is going on worldwide. Civilization ends when men and women deny human nature and the laws of the universe that govern relationships in the family and society. The ideology of Feminism puts women in the forefront, the position of prominence while the ideology of Traditionalism puts men in the forefront.

In his autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*, Father says that when he married True Mother he told her, "Don't forget, even for a moment, that the life we live is different from others. Don't do anything, no matter how trivial, without first discussing it with me, and obey everything I tell you." She responded, "My heart is already set. Please do not worry." All Unificationist marriages should be different than the world's and wives should "obey everything" their husbands tell them just like True Mother obeyed Father.

I quote Father extensively in my books and I find a motif throughout his speeches over a span of 40 years of a strong argument for patriarchy. In the above quote he says that subject means men are supposed to be "on top" but Western women are on top. This, he teaches, is "against the Principle." Patriarchy is a universal principle of God. The opposite, women being on top, is a universal principle of evil spirit world. Father specifically blasts Western women because Eastern women are far more likely to understand and organize their lives by the traditional value of

patriarchy. There is still a lot of respect for patriarchy in the East. Maybe Muslims will be the first to accept Father now that we live in a post-Judeo-Christian culture where most Jews and Christians have rejected patriarchy. Some moderate Muslims have some sense that men and women are different. Maybe the last will be first.

I don't know how anyone can read Father and believe in feminism that has the number one goal of abolishing patriarchy. We have to read Father extensively and in context. He speaks in absolutes with no exceptions because his job is to speak for God who is absolute. Father clearly despises feminism that puts women on top of men. He is for the biblical model of men protecting women. He had body guards for his wife wherever she went. I see a total disconnect from what Father says and what his daughter is saying. True Father said at Hoon Dok Hwe on October 07, 2009 at East Garden: "Western people ... have no concept of subject and object." Familyfed.org posted these notes for a morning gathering on October 9, 2009 where Father taught that men are more aggressive than women and take initiative and leadership more than women:

> True Father took pains to comment on God's motivation for creating sexual difference and what is proper and not proper. Although the creator God is a unified being of harmonized male and female characteristics, as far as human sexuality goes, the invisible God expresses himself through the convex, male organ, and has created the concave, female organ as his object. The model position is for man to be on top, women on bottom. "In the West, many women are on top. They can't receive. This is going against the Principle," he explained. He also spoke to the issue of Western women tending to use their husbands as servants. "The woman is suckling the baby, nurturing children, and she is seeing her husband as idle, so Western women think they are superior to men because they give birth," he explained.
>
> When husbands make love to their wives, they should start at the bottom, with the feet together and stimulate all parts of the body, moving later to the lips and breasts. A man should try to envelope his partner with warmth. The warmer women feel, the more easily they can feel fire.

DISTINCT ROLES FOR MEN AND WOMEN

At the age of 90 (4-1-2010) Father said men and women have "distinct roles":

> In the West – it is thought that men and women are just the same. Woman has a womb and receives the seed. She gives birth to the baby – that doesn't make her the center. The womb contains the ovum but it needs the sperm.
>
> In Western schools, it is said that men and women are the same, but according to heavenly tradition, man and woman each have distinct roles to play.
>
> Should I let Mother stand in the front or should I stand in the front?

I choose to guide my life by Father's words. I take him at face value when he says women should never be on top. And I take him at face value when he says women have a more important role than men. True patriarchs respect and value the work women do as nesters and never think of themselves as having more value even if they become well-known or famous in their field of work outside the home. Just because some men have abused their role as leaders by mistakenly believing that boys are greater than girls and men are superior to women does not mean we should throw the baby out with the bathwater. By throwing out patriarchy our culture today is the worse for it. R. Albert Mohler Jr., president of the Southern Baptist Theological Seminary says, "A remarkable culture-shift has taken place around us. The most basic contours of American culture

have been radically altered. The so-called Judeo-Christian consensus of the last millennium has given way to a post-modern, post-Christian, post-Western cultural crisis which threatens the very heart of our culture."

WOMEN HAVE A MORE IMPORTANT ROLE THAN MEN

Father says women have a "more important role than the men":

> When you treat your husband as a saint and recognize him as the representative of the Lord, you will be able to sacrifice your life for his sake. On that foundation, a great figure who can restore the nation and the world will be born." (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)
>
> We can conclude that your role is to provide for the happiness of your man, even more so than he may do for you.
>
> I have many different responsibilities and much more to accomplish than Mother in the outside world. However, women have the more important role than the men in their relationship. (7-11-82)

The proper role for a woman is to be a nester and the proper role for a man is to be a hunter. These roles should never be reversed or interchanged. Men and women are made to be complementary. They are not the same. Equality does not mean sameness. Men can't do what women are created to do and women can't do everything men can do. They are both equal in value but different in function, roles and responsibilities. If they can interchange then they do not need each other. Because so many have bought into the ideology of unisexism we now have a demographic winter where men have lost all sense of chivalry and desire to have many children. Women leaving the home to compete with men is a greater danger than terrorism. Feminism is Satan's number one core value and the sooner the UM understands that and rejects feminism then the sooner they will start growing internally and externally in numbers. There is great danger in parents telling their children that men and women can and should interchange roles. This is one reason we see so many children of disorderly parents becoming sexually confused, getting divorced, marrying late, turning to homosexuality and not caring to have big families. Parents need to encourage their sons and daughters to create traditional marriages and families and teach about the dangers of feminist, egalitarian marriages and families. It is dangerous for fathers and mothers, aunts and uncles, grandparents, elder brothers and sisters to teach young people that girls and women can do anything a man can do. God wants a division of labor.

ROLE MODELS

Unificationists should be the best role models on earth. We should write books, produce DVDs and live by the highest standards. Then the world will jump ship and join us. Sadly the UM is filled with feminists who write books and live by feminist values. Unificationists are supposed to be the role models for God's way of life. We are supposed to teach books that uplift traditional values and denounce feminist values. We are supposed to show by word and deed what true masculinity and true femininity look like. Tragically, so many who profess to say they are followers of Sun Myung Moon do the opposite of what he teaches. Unificationist women who dominate men by becoming businesswomen and soldiers in the Marine Corps are uplifted as role models in Unificationist literature and websites. They do not teach girls that their job is to manage the home and be homemakers. Men are supposed to manage restaurants outside the home and women are supposed to be professional managers of their home kitchens and community kitchens that stay within the budget given by their husbands. Families don't sit down to dinner together anymore because women have left the home. They mistakenly think that being a homemaker, a domestic goddess as Helen Andelin calls it, is too confining. It is Satan's lie that women should leave their home to dominate men in the workplace. A woman is not being a good soulmate by

leading other men or following other men. A couple should pray every day together for their goals. It is wrong to pray for men being behind the scenes who encourage their wives to be in the forefront. If a woman wants to help with the war against terrorists or help with any of the other many problems in society she should understand that to truly be of help she should focus on being a stay-at-mom that does as good books like Helen Andelin and Mary Pride teach.

GREATNESS

We all want our children to be greater than us. Every parent and elder wants the young to learn and live by godly values. This means we understand what greatness is. Greatness for women is not having positions of authority in society. Now a woman is only seen as "great" and "loving" if she gets paid to do what she is supposed to be doing in her home. If she runs a day-care center, manages a restaurant or works in a nursing home then she is a "professional" and therefore "great". But if she does those things in her home and lives off her husband's income then she is seen as not helping society, living for others, or being a "great" person. False Unificationists are encouraging girls to leave the home to go fundraising, live far away from their fathers, attend liberal colleges, go to graduate schools that despise the traditional family, and pursue a career outside the home. There is no emphasis on having a huge family and living by old-fashioned values. Do you know of any Unificationist parents who teach their daughters to marry young, have a dozen children and study Helen Andelin who explains how they are to be a domestic goddess?

I pray this book will help end the feminism rampant in the current UM. I have listed some books and DVDs in my suggested reading list at the end of this book. Please study them. I challenge Unificationists to buy Anna and Sophia Botkin's book *So Much More: The Remarkable Influence of Visionary Daughters on the Kingdom of God*, their audio CD titled *Strength & Dignity for Daughters* and their DVD *The Return of the Daughters*. These two young women are excellent role models for girls on how to live by true values instead of the satanic values of the STF. Buy the DVD titled *Monstrous Regiment of Women* (or watch the entire video for free at YouTube.com) and show it to young girls. In it are some great role models for women. It breaks my heart to see so many Unificationists being dupes of Satan who unwittingly teach the opposite of the anti-feminists in the DVDs *The Return of the Daughters* and *Monstrous Regiment of Women*. I am on a crusade to get these DVDs in every Unificationist home so young girls can see what truly feminine girls and women look like. Women are supposed to show true love by being stay-at-home moms, not by being CEOs, soldiers and cops. Women are not supposed to be the Prime Minister of England like Margaret Thatcher or be a United States Senator like Hillary Clinton. These are not heavenly role models. They are sexually disorderly women who influence millions of girls and women to become sexually confused, build dysfunctional families, and create dying civilizations that are now in the grip of some horrible demographic winter. Unificationists should be defining what is "great" and what is "true love." Right now the UM teaches the opposite of what is great and what is true love. This is why the UM is dead in the water and going nowhere.

HOMEWORKING

Mrs. Pride writes: "Homeworking is the biblical lifestyle for Christian wives. Homeworking is not just staying home either (that was the mistake of the fifties). We are not called by God to stay home, or to sit at home, but to work at home! Homeworking is the exact opposite of the modern careerist/institutional/Socialist movement. It is a way to take back control of education, health care, agriculture, social welfare, business, housing, morality, and evangelism from the faceless institutions to which we have surrendered them. More importantly, homeworking is the path of obedience to God."

WOMEN'S ROLE: CARING FOR THE ELDERLY

Another reason women should not spend time away from the home earning money is because their

role is to care for the aged and sick at home. Father speaks harshly about Americans who send the old "to the asylum for the aged .... Blessed families in the Unification Church should be able to attend and serve the grandparents and parents" (*Blessing and Ideal Family Part 2*) in their home. Mary Pride says it is women in homes that are to care for the aged and dependent relatives. The last few generations have given up that responsibility to others. Mrs. Pride goes into detail on this subject. I'll only quote a few lines: "It costs a whole bunch less to put Mom in the spare bedroom than to pay for her apartment in a nursing home. And there is equipment available on a rental or purchase basis which will answer all of Mom's noncrisis health care needs." Women can easily become experts on specific health problems. She gives an example of a famous Christian woman: "Edith Schaeffer had a daughter with chronic rheumatic fever and a son with polio, both of whom she cared for personally. ... Then for years Dr. Schaeffer's aged mother lived with them." And finally she cared for her husband at home instead of letting him stay at a hospital and he died "in front of his fireplace in the arms of his wife." She says, "Can you imagine what a blessing it would be to the economy if this kind of family responsibility spread? And it would show true Christian charity to the world as well."

THREE JOBS

Mrs. Pride explains that women have three jobs inside the home: first, to be a loving wife, mother and homemaker; second, to homeschool her children and, third, to care for the aged. In God's ideal, families would be extended families where the grandmother would teach and help the younger housewife. Most women have given up these sacred responsibilities. In her book *All the Way Home* she is furious over the fact that so many parents and grandparents are not helping their children. She writes, "Young parents today have been disinherited. Winnebago's spout the message on neon red bumper stickers: 'We're Spending Our Children's Inheritance'. While Grandpa and Grandma party, young parents struggle." The Bible says a good man helps his children's children. Patriarchal long-range thinking has been given up for weak men's instant gratification. The last two generations have given up their responsibilities. In *Good Housekeeping* magazine a woman wrote an essay summing up the satanic ideology of parents abandoning their children and grandchildren. A woman writes in the October 1995 issue that families are "scattered to the four winds" and it's difficult to get together. "It's not that we want our grown children surrounding us daily; indeed their productivity and our freedom and pleasure in knowing they have independent, fulfilling lives are often causes for rejoicing. We know that silence and solitude are both the rewards and punishments of life." Solitude is a "reward"? "Freedom"? Many in America haven't got a clue to what freedom is. This woman senses that something is wrong saying, "The once-a-year holiday dinner or occasional get-together doesn't provide enough glue to cement the family." This woman speaks for our culture that has abandoned the extended family. Why has it done this? Because it has abandoned patriarchy. Grandfathers have no power. There is no sense anymore of generational land, roots and group living. Satan has got everyone right where he wants them—screaming at each other in single family homes.

Mrs. Pride is quite right in being livid that grandparents voted in a Ponzi scheme of social security and ruined the economy for their grandchildren. They failed to teach their children how to be parents. She writes, "Dad and Granddad usually subscribed to the theory that each child (male and female) should earn his or her own way in the world. This translated into dump-em-out-the-door-at-eighteen policy." She says, "The Bible, of course, clearly says the generations must help each other. Grandparents are not supposed to hop into the Winnebago and vanish over the horizon. They are supposed to teach their children how to teach, and then help teach the grandchildren. ... Adult women are supposed to have a home in their father's house until married. Grown children, in turn, are supposed to take in the dependent oldsters in their families." Instead, she says they are having fun in adults-only Florida retirement communities. There are no elder women performing the mentor role in Titus 2:3-5. She says, "Homeworking will not usher in the Millennium, but it will change society. And if homeworkers don't reconstruct society, the feminists will."

Mrs. Pride writes against the materialism of so many mothers and grandmothers who are obsessed with money instead of being obsessed with being the elder woman in Titus 2:3-5 in the Bible that teaches that a woman's career is to help her husband wherever he lives, serve her husband's family and to help her children. So many women reject their husband's family and their own family and make their primary focus to earn money instead of putting their energy into their husbands and children and grandchildren. Many women today are so confused they would choose to go to a business meeting instead of choosing to go to be with a daughter who is having a baby. Mary Pride writes: "Every new Christian woman reads Titus 2:3-5 and goes on a search for an older woman who will train her to love her husband and children, to be self-controlled and pure, to be busy at home, to be kind, and to be subject to her husband. I know, because a large number of them write to me complaining that such a female is not to be found. The older women are all busy with new careers or retirement plans. They have no time for their daughter's babies, or to give house-cleaning lessons, or to hold a new couple's hands while they adjust to married life."

WOMAN'S ROLE: TITUS 2:3-5

Mrs. Pride divides her book, *The Way Home*, into chapters that explore each of the womanly roles listed in Titus 2:3-5: "Likewise, teach the older women to be reverent in the way they live, not to be slanderers or addicted to much wine, but to teach what is good. Then they can train the younger women to love their husbands and children, to be self-controlled and pure, to be busy at home [literally, home-working], to be kind, and to be subject to their husbands, so that no one will malign the word of God." She says women are "unwilling to face up to" the responsibility to do these things. "Titus 2:3-5 is the most important text in the Bible on married women's roles, capsulizing a young wife's marital, sexual, biological, economic, authority, and ministering roles. Yet women's books routinely ignore, mutilate, or even mock this passage. There appears to be a great desire to accommodate Christianity to our culture, and a corresponding willingness to dismiss the Bible's teaching as a remnant of outdated, male-dominated culture."

Mrs. Pride writes, "For us wives, it boils down to this: are we willing to obey God, to love our husbands and children, to be self-controlled and pure, to work at home (not the office), to be kind, and to be subject to our husbands, so that no one will blaspheme the Word of God? ... Homeworking will not automatically solve every problem. But it will get us on the right track. 'The wise woman builds her house, but with her own hands the foolish one tears hers down' (Prov. 14:1). Women have helped tear down the home; women can rebuild it. We have seen enough torn-down houses: broken marriages, rebellious children, barren churches. Now it is time to be wise. It's time for homeworking. It's time to see what the true God can do."

Let's take a look at some feminist arguments for women leaving the home and critique their bogus arguments. Let's begin by looking at the founders of Communism—Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels. In *The Origin of the Family*, Engels wrote that the essence of the Communist goal is to destroy the traditional family by getting women to desert the home. He puts down the patriarchal family by falsely saying that men "command" women and "degrade" them. He says women are slaves to men, and when they are taken out of the home to earn money then they will be free. He says that when "The man took command in the home the woman was degraded and reduced to servitude; she became the slave of his lust and a mere instrument for the production of children ... within the family he is the bourgeois and his wife represents the proletariat." Women, he says, are unpaid servants who have talents that can only be used if she is earning money in "social production" and "public industry." Like all Feminists, he disparages homemaking saying that the wife's household labor "became a private service; the wife became the head servant, excluded from all participation in social production." To liberal/communist/feminists there is only value in making money, not in anything a housewife does. Freedom for women will come when they get a paid job outside the home. He writes: "It will be plain that the first condition for the liberation of the wife is to bring the whole female sex into public industry and that this in turn demands the

abolition of the monogamous family as the economic unit of society. ... The emancipation of woman will be possible only when ... domestic work no longer claims anything but an insignificant portion of her time."

These evil words were revolutionary when they were written but they are now mainstream in much of Christianity now. Anyone who argues strongly for women leaving the home should think carefully about the company he is keeping. The number one goal of Communists is to destroy the traditional family. Does anyone want to be on their side?

The Communist Manifesto is a little 40-page book written in the 19th century that changed the world of the 20th century. Marx and Engels list 10 core values. Their first core value is to "abolish private property." One of their goals is "Heavy, progressive taxation." They talk about "centralization" and big government. This is Cain writing. Abel writers like Adam Smith and John Locke wrote that private property was a sacred core value. John Adams said, "The moment that the idea is admitted into society that property is not as sacred as the laws of God and that there is not a force of law and public justice to protect it, anarchy and tyranny commence. Property must be sacred or liberty cannot exist." Twentieth century America made a tragic mistake in rejecting the values of our founding fathers and embracing with enthusiasm the collectivist mentality of Marx and Engels.

Marx and Engels write that their goal is the, "Abolition of the family!" ... "The Communist Revolution is the most radical rupture with ... traditional ideas." The family they are talking about abolishing is the traditional family that the 19th century had. The 10 values in this book are the opposite of the 10 values in *The Communist Manifesto*. This is my *Unificationist Manifesto*. Marx has his 10 "to do" list and I have mine.

Happily there is a trend for Ph.D. and CEO women to return home in America. It is rare for a woman to become the CEO of a Fortune 500 company. One woman became head of Pepsi and then made headlines because she walked away from it. She said her two teen-age daughters were sick of her being away from home and needed her. She became a stay-at-home mom. Many people are waking up to the lie of feminist/communists and returning to the old-fashioned family. I hope the UM will see the light and join the traditionalist movement.

TRADITIONAL FAMILY

I believe that Sun Myung Moon teaches the traditional, biblical, patriarchal family. I have read him extensively for over thirty years and it is clear to me that he is anti-feminist. Some of his speeches have been put into books. He personally chose over 40 speeches and had them published in a book he titled *God's Will and the World*. In that book of speeches Father says these politically incorrect words:

> Christian history reveals the culmination of God's dispensation most clearly. All the women of the world are waiting for the one moment when the Messiah will come into this world representing the universal man. Always in the past women have been exploited and abused, but in 1918 [the year women got the vote in England] there was a liberation, and for 70 years women have been taking positions above men, even trying to control them. This change in the history of women will continue until 1988. The women's liberation movement has certainly been successful in this country, with American women seizing the role of empress.
>
> In Biblical history women had no rights and the men assumed the major role in God's dispensation, but that was an extreme situation and in one sense American women have the right idea. According to the Bible women are supposed to wear veils, meaning that women should be humble and meek in preparation to meet the Bridegroom. But instead of just taking off their veils women have even taken off

their clothes! Throughout the world women are accepted even when they are practically naked.

In this country, women have a commanding voice at home. In a typical American home the wife is master of the house, while the husband is like a servant; his shoulders are hunched over and he is always checking to see what his wife's mood is. How about you women, do you agree with that? The other day in New York I saw an incredible scene. A bunch of poor, miserable men had gotten together in a picket line and were carrying signs proclaiming a men's liberation movement: "We want liberation from women." Your laughing at that testifies that these problems are real. Actually all those men are wasting their time demonstrating; they should just join the Unification Church.

None of these things are happening at random. There is a reason and a Principle meaning behind them. This is a critical time, and God is consummating His entire history; 70 represents perfection, and so for 70 years women will be trying to assume their rightful, original role. This is their time of preparation to meet the true man.

I understand the reason behind taking such initiative in America, but it is also time for restored women to resume the objective aspect of their original role. All you sisters, would you like to be recognized for being feminine and charming, or would you like to be known for being very courageous and tom-boyish? All you brothers who laughed, would you like to have tom-boys as your wives or women who are feminine and charming? When I was matching couples for the blessing I asked the Western men what nationality they would like their wives to be. 99% of them asked for Oriental women. I am sure it was very embarrassing for the Western sisters to hear that all the men wanted to marry Oriental women.

It would not be easy for most of you American women to have an Oriental husband because most of them are shorter than you are. Would you sisters like to have tall men or short men as your husbands? Generally a man thinks that his wife should be at least slightly shorter than he is, which looks very normal. God gave women the privilege of always looking up to their husbands. They should not look down on men; that is the Principle. God actually made women shorter than men for the sake of women. If women were taller than men then throughout history their lives would have been even more miserable because they would have to do all the reaching for high things.

God thought a lot about how to create women. Instead of making women taller than men He made women a little shorter, but with bigger hips. Why? Because women are to assume two roles. First, in giving birth to children women need a strong foundation, and second, they will be living most of their lives in a sitting position, so God provided built-in cushions. Men have narrow hips without cushions because men are supposed to be active for the sake of women. From the very beginning God was thinking that a man is supposed to take the initiative and always be in action. A woman is to be objective, receiving grace from her husband, and always sitting home comfortably waiting for him. That is the way it should be. At the same time a man should be masculine, and that is why he has broad shoulders and strong arms. Going out into the world is the man's role.

RESTORE ORIGINAL ROLE

Now the time has come for women to restore their original role, particularly American women. Nowadays American men just do not want to get married and become the slaves of domineering women. Sometimes women get married

intending to take advantage of men by divorcing them later and getting their money in alimony. Currently in America a man who is divorced more than once can become miserably poor because the courts award everything to his ex-wives, while a woman who gets divorced more than once gets richer and richer. Again, there is a dispensational reason for this. Women are important in the sight of God since they are in a position to take more of an objective role to the Messiah when he comes. Previously Satan used women to take everything away from men, but at this time God is using women to take everything away from Satan; however, such actions will only be justified if the wealth is subsequently given to God.

RE-EDUCATE WOMEN

Where in American society can we find the true mother, true wife, and true empress? This is the problem, and a re-creation process must take place. We should re-educate women to become true wives and mothers and then they will be eligible to become queens. Are you Unification women being reeducated? Is your thinking different from that of ordinary American women? Your answer is very spiritless. If you have to be asked to answer willingly then you have not met the standard yet.

This phenomenon of women being able to rise and entrench themselves in power is very recent, showing that the time has come when God will elevate one woman to be the physical Holy Spirit. This is the time for the birth of the true Eve. God is looking for the ideal woman who has the qualifications and potential to become a true wife and true mother, and eventually the true queen or empress of the universe. Every woman is a candidate for this position, which is why women in general have been given a chance to rise. But God is looking for one perfect woman to summon out of the satanic world who has the potential to become the true wife and mother and queen, in order to establish her as the first God-centered wife, mother and queen. (5-1-77)

Father teaches patriarchy. He said above that women must give up feminism and "restore their original role." Notice that he uses the word "role." He says, "Going out into the world is the man's role." Women, he says, must be "re-educated" to honor traditional, biblical, patriarchal marriages and families. He acknowledges that there has been a 70-year period from 1918-1988 where women strove to be leaders of men because women were looking for the Messiah, a true man. Women unconsciously were looking to be objects to the Messiah who was on earth. That man was Sun Myung Moon. When women found him they then did not want to be object to their husbands who were fallen and they wanted to be the bride and object to True Father. Men have been imperfect patriarchs throughout human history and women were looking for the true patriarch. Father says men's domination of women "in biblical history ... was extreme." He gives the example that women were required to wear veils. He teaches that was going too far but he criticizes women for going to the other extreme and of walking around practically nude. Father is not into public nudity or showing so much skin. He criticizes women for becoming the "master of the house" and for men being wimpy in their homes. During this 70 year women's movement he says women "will be trying to assume their rightful, original role." The problem is that in this 70 year feminist movement women went too far. Father is sympathetic to women to reject fallen men and look for perfect love but he teaches us that women must now "resume the objective aspect of their original role." He commands girls and women to stop being "courageous and tom-boyish." Women, he teaches, now must understand that they have two roles, "women are to assume two roles. First, in giving birth to children and Second" to be stay-at-home moms who are "objective" to their husbands. They are supposed to be comfortable at home in their cozy nest while the man "should be masculine" and fulfill his role of hunter "going out into the world is the man's role."

Father rejects the egalitarianism of the women's movement. The 70 years of the feminist movement since Father's birth in 1920 has been the confusing and horrible time of the End Times. It was a time of vast experimentation where women often dominated men but now it is time, as Father says, for women to go home and be objective helpers to their husbands. It is time for women to stop being tomboys who dominate men and be feminine. Father says men don't want domineering women. If a woman acts masculine by leaving the home of her father before she marries or leaves the home of her husband and assumes the masculine role of "going out into the world" she will not be attractive to men. Father says American men matched in his arranged marriages do not want American women because they are tomboys who compete with men. Men want oriental women who are feminine.

Tocqueville visited America in the early 19th century and wrote his classic book *Democracy in America*. He warns that if we take women out of the home and "mix them in business" we will produce "weak men and disorderly women": "There are people in Europe who, confounding together the different characteristics of the sexes, would make man and woman into beings not only equal but alike. They would give to both the same functions, impose on both the same duties, and grant to both the same rights; they would mix them in all things—their occupations, their pleasures, their business. It may readily be conceived that by thus attempting to make one sex equal to the other, both are degraded, and from so preposterous a medley of the works of nature nothing could ever result but weak men and disorderly women."

De Tocqueville's prophecy has come true. American men are weak, and American women are disorderly. Father says this many times. Here is one of many examples from Father's speeches: "... in this country women have a commanding voice at home. In a typical American home the wife is master of the house, while the husband is like a servant; his shoulder is hunched over and he is always checking to see what his wife's mood is." "Because of the fall of man the chain of order and command has been completely reversed, and now men follow behind women, particularly with regard to love affairs. Men have become so helpless, and women always take command" and "Now the time has come for women to restore their original role, particularly American women. Nowadays American men just do not want to get married and become the slaves of domineering women" (5-1-77). "Chain of command"? "Slaves"? This is pretty strong speech because he sees a matriarchy in American homes. Men may have a lot of position externally, but internally the women wear the pants.

Father often blasts America for letting women lead men, "Then are women meant to live their lives alone, following their own goals, without considering man? (No.) It is a very serious subject. Women alone cannot live their lives. No matter how great a man might be, he cannot live his life on his own. No matter what this world might say, the inevitable consequence is that man and woman must travel together in life. Then how should men and women live their lives together, in conflict or in harmony? (Harmony.) Suppose they fought each other in order to occupy the central position? Who is usually the central figure of the average American family? You American men answer Father. [Laughter] Are you the center of your families? (Yes.) We are not talking about Unification families, but rather secular American families. Who plays the central role in the average secular American family? (Woman.) Those American women consider themselves as family queens who can control their husbands. Would such families prosper? (No.)" (5-5-96)

PATRIARCHY BEYOND THE HOME

An excellent book that takes the truth of patriarchy to its logical conclusion is Philip Lancaster. In his book *Family Man, Family Leader* in the chapter titled "Patriarchy Beyond the Home" he writes:

> How will a return to biblical patriarchy in the family bring changes beyond the home?

Male Leadership Throughout Society

As men and women practice their God-given roles within the family, it is only natural that the larger society will reflect and support these roles as well. The principle of male leadership will be expressed whenever groups of people join for a common purpose, be it a church, a voluntary association, or a county council.

Men are to lead and women follow. This is part of God's creation order that He established in the Garden at the beginning of history. The hierarchy of Adam over Eve formed the basis of a sound and stable family, and the principle of male leadership that God instituted during creation week flows outward beyond the nuclear family to inform the way in which all societal institutions should be structured.

It would be unnatural for a community group to reverse this pattern. Why would a woman who is used to affirming her husband's leadership and deferring to him at home then turn around and become the leader of men in the local neighborhood improvement association?

It is proper for men to assume the lead whenever people get together since men reflect the headship of God the Father. Because this role is commanded in the home and the church, it follows by strong indication that it applies in the other spheres of life, be it civil government or in neighborhood or in ministry associations.

The wisdom of this application was never questioned until egalitarianism began to make inroads into our culture. Now it is seriously questioned. Christians will often bow to God's commands for home and church, since they are so explicit in Scripture, and yet balk at applying the principle of male leadership beyond that. But it honors God and the order He has established to seek to create a society that is not at war with itself, with one standard for home and church and another for everywhere else. If God's people will shrug off the social pressures of feminism, they will see the wisdom of being consistent with the principle of male leadership in every sphere.

As feminism infiltrated America in the early part of the 20th century there were some voices of reason who tried to be alarm clocks to our sleeping nation. Mrs. John Martin wrote a book against feminism titled *Feminism: Its Fallacies and Follies* published in 1916 and articles in magazines and newspapers about the deadly ideology that was making women independent of men. Women, she pointed out, were losing maternal feelings. She was alarmed at the falling birth rate. Thomas Jefferson was America's President in the beginning of the 19th century. In the early 1800s his daughter, Martha, had 12 children. No children of a President in the 20th century would even consider having 12 children. It would never even occur to them. Mrs. Martin wrote in an article in the *New York Times* on April 12, 1914 that men were changing from lords of creation to being superfluous:

> Between feminism and the family there is an inherent and irreconcilable antagonism. They are pulling in opposite directions, and sooner or later society will find itself called upon to choose between them.
>
> The family is a closely organized coherent interdependent group. The basic principle upon which it rests is the mutual dependence of its members. It is founded upon the needs of its members for one another. Were it not for these mutual needs the family would not have been formed.
>
> All organizations rest upon the need of its parts for one another. The organs of the body find their continued existence as an organism because they need and serve one another. When this mutual dependence ceases dissolution begins.
>
> When the cave-woman sat nursing her infant in the cave, that cave-man went forth to strangle wild beasts with his hands at a risk of his life to provide food for

them all, and the stirrings of gratitude in her savage breast, prompting her to make the cave warm and comfortable against his return, to cook the food according to his liking mark the beginning of the home.

What distinguishes this human family from the mating pairs among the animals is their respective helplessness and need of one another. Without the man the woman will starve; without them both the child will perish; without the child and its prolonged period of helpless dependence upon them the bond which unites them will weaken.

It is the prolonged infancy of the human offspring which has been most potent in producing the organization of the family, and next to the dependence of the infant upon the parents, the dependence of woman upon man has been the chief agency in his development.

Moreover, on her part, gratitude, that most human of qualities, has worked in her the utmost womanly ingenuity of effort to please, reward and repay him.

The birthrate, as it is well known, has been notably falling, dating from the year 1876 or thereabout as the maternal instinct declines.

It is apparent that the unity of the family arises out of its common needs and mutual services. But when woman has no need for man as breadwinner and he has no need for her as home-maker, and the child has no further need for either of them as nurse, teacher, guide, friend, but finds most of its needs supplied elsewhere by paid experts generally outside of the home—then, with the disappearance of reciprocal needs and services, the cohesive force of the family dissolves, and when the last bond, affection, weakens from disuse the family easily disintegrates.

The family is a unity or it is nothing. Remove the needs which hold it together and the family disappears.

In our day certain powerful changes are at work in society, the effect of which is to remove little by little the needs which hold the family together and therefore point to a possible final dissolution of the family unit.

Unnatural Struggle

... there sprang up innumerable social quacks ready to demonstrate that the decay of the family was merely the breaking of the shell which held woman imprisoned and its consummation the setting of her “free”. In ever-increasing volume to this day they swell the chorus of thanksgiving. Women and girls by the millions, who have been sent out from the home to enter into an unnatural struggle for bread against the men who should be their natural protectors, robbed little by little of their reason for existence, are being taught to regard their condition as one of “liberation,” “freedom,” “progress.”

... the nature of the antagonism between feminism and the family becomes apparent. The keynote of the family is dependence; its very existence depends upon the mutual dependence of its members; the greater their degree of dependence the closer is its integrity. The keynote of feminism, on the contrary, is independence. The ideal family has no place in it for feminism, and feminism finds the family continually an obstacle in its way.

Putting Father Out of Business

The integrating factor of the family is the husband-father. Feminism is a process of putting father out of business; of deposing him from his position of distinction and responsibility as the family’s breadwinner. Feminism undertakes to render him superfluous and unnecessary. It is showing woman how she can quite well get along without him and sill have everything that she wants—independence, prosperity,

self-support, self-direction even independent motherhood if she desires it and can afford it.

Relieved of all responsibility and distinction, homeless, childless, wifeless, objectless, with nothing to do but stake out his own grub and lay in a supple of cigars and pocket money, man will wander through life like a lost soul; his final position as time goes on, becoming that of the drone in the beehive.

Lord of Creation

In the completed feminist state the male, preserved for one purpose only, will be permitted to drag out a subordinate and somewhat surreptitious existence, sneaking in and out of the back door, when sent for like a guilty plumber. He, once lord of creation, now reduced, as someone has said, to the domestic status of the tomcat.

The continued existence of our race depends upon keeping the desire for maternity alive in woman. But the final outcome of feminism is inevitably the deadening of this desire by reason of its antagonism to the family—the sole means of keeping it alive. Woman today, for the first time in history, holds in her hands the key to the situation. At her pleasure she may lock or unlock the gates of the future. Therefore nothing is more urgent than that she shall be released from the tightening, hardening effects of feminism and kept in the fruitful atmosphere of the family.

Feminists say that women can find fulfillment in working outside the home. Women should not leave the home and earn money because they often have to take orders from a man or men and often women lead other men. This is sexual chaos. The Bible explains that a woman is made to be focused on her home. Father teaches that wives need to be respected in their role of homemaker: "Are you men going to give more to your wives, or are you going to be indebted to them? You have promised to give more, so you must take it seriously and carry it out. Don't try to meddle in her management of the home—she is like the Home Minister and you are like the Foreign Minister!" ("In Search Of Our Home" July 11, 1982)

Husbands are called to be good leaders which means they should not be very critical of their wives. Father teaches: "Even though you may believe something your wife is doing is not right and you would like to tell her, don't say anything and don't fight about it. Even though it is very clear that she is wrong, leave her alone. Give her enough time to change. She knows she is wrong, so she will change. I mention this specifically for men who feel that when they know something is wrong they must say something in criticism. If you have a critical nature you should not say all the things you might feel like saying." (7-11-82)

Father says that husbands and wives have to live by the universal laws of the universe. They should not have any tension between them. "Unlike the secular world your life is never centered upon just the two of you 'having fun' together. Your goal is solving the two major problems of economics and education and the establishment of an enduring home. When one problem or the other becomes a source of great difficulty, there will be tension between you and your husband. Perhaps your husband will complain about the way you are educating the children, or perhaps you won't have the money to pay bills and the electricity will be cut off sometimes" (7-11-82). Let's build families that are well-oiled machines that are exemplary in solving the problems of economics and education. Brothers—make sure that your wives have a secure nest where the children are educated in morality and the electricity bill is always paid. Women should never have to worry about food, clothing or shelter.

The philosophy that degrades mothers who stay at home to care for their children is feminism. One of their favorite plays is Ibsen's *A Doll's House* in which the main character, Nora, leaves her family to find fulfillment. Mrs. Moon, the True Mother of mankind, says that it is not in Korean women's "blood" to leave the home. She says, "We must become wives whom our husbands can

trust as they trust God. A wife's fidelity is our distinctive virtue. Korean women are descendants of Choon Hyang. We have blood that will never allow us to become descendants of Nora in *A Doll's House* by Ibsen, who left home."

Men look at work completely differently than women. Gilder says in *Sexual Suicide* that the feminist goal of having equal pay for equal work is "extremely difficult to apply." Employers value motivation and career ambition more than anything. And men are more innately motivated because it is their God-given responsibility. He writes, "To most men, success at work is virtually a matter of life and death, for it determines his sexual possibilities and affirms his identity as a male in a socially affirmative way. A business thus can control a man by paying him well and can almost irrevocably purchase his loyalty by paying him above the amount he can earn elsewhere. The business literally has him by the balls. For a female employee the sexual constitution of money is much less important. Her sexual prospects are little affected by how much she makes. Thus even if the woman is a very dependable employee, a payment to her does not usually purchase as great a commitment as does a payment to man." This is why women can take welfare and not suffer as much as men who take welfare. They are biologically made by God to be more objective and to be provided for. The reason government has grown so big is because the twentieth century is feminized. If our culture were masculine centered instead of feminine centered, if it was centered on the subject instead of the object, then there would be very little government and much more religion.

Helen Andelin writes: "Although a man may love his wife devotedly, it is not always possible or even right for him to make her Number One, and this is because of the nature of his life. A man's Number One responsibility is to provide the living for his family. Often his work and life away from home are so demanding that it must take priority over all else if he is to succeed. This often means that he must neglect his family.... In reality, he is putting his wife and family both Number One, but women often fail to interpret it this way."

"In addition to making the living, men have always shouldered the responsibility to make the world a better place. They have largely been the builders of society— have solved world problems and developed new ideas for the benefit of all. This challenging role of public servant is not easy and also demands the man's attention away from his family."

"If you will examine the lives of these noble public servants, you will usually find a wife who was willing to put the man and his work Number One and be content to take a second place. President and Mrs. Dwight D. Eisenhower are a good example of this. Mrs. Eisenhower recalls that during the first two weeks of their 53-year-long marriage, her husband drew her aside one evening and said, 'Mamie, I have to tell you something.... My country comes first and you second.' Mamie accepted this, and this is the way they lived. So, when you make a man Number One, you also make his work and outside responsibility Number One. But when the wife takes a second place to the man and his world, she loses nothing. The tender love he returns for her cooperation is more than a compensating reward."

"When a woman fails to fill the man's need to be Number One, when she puts her children, homemaking, career or other interests first, he can suffer a tremendous lack. This is often the very reason a man is driven to another woman. In fact, it is a very well known fact that men are seldom driven to a mistress because of sex passions. It is usually her ability to fill an emotional need, to make him feel appreciated and important in her life."

Sun Myung Moon is the finest teacher in human history on marriage and family. He often explains the woman's role is to care for her husband and children. The husband comes first: "Women have two duties: to love your children and to love your husband. Who comes first, your children or your

husband? (Husband.) You don't sound very confident in your answer. Please answer Father clearly. (Husband.) That is true." (5-5-96)

Aubrey Andelin writes in *Man of Steel and Velvet*:

> The woman's role is to be the wife, mother and homemaker. Her role as the wife is indicated by the following: When God made man he said, "It is not good for man to be alone. I will make a helpmeet for him." And thus she was given as a wife, a supporting companion, his encouragement, and sometimes his strength. Her position as mother was established when God blessed her with the function of bearing children. Besides her domestic role, a woman needs to give benevolent service outside the home. She has a debt to society to make the world a better place, as does man. But in her case, it is a feminine service, such as helping the poor, serving in the church or community, assisting in youth problems, etc. Giving such a service enriches her life and makes her a better wife and mother. At no time should this role supersede her duties at home. Her first and sacred obligation is to her family, to serve them as the wife, mother and homemaker.
>
> In the ideal home the man's and woman's duties are distinctly divided. The joining of these roles forms a complimentary partnership. Neither the man nor the woman is superior. Both are indispensable and of equal importance. This partnership has been compared to a lock and key that joined together form a perfectly functioning unit. Each has a different function, yet each is necessary. Neither is superior. One is useless without the other.

In *Fascinating Womanhood* Helen Andelin writes, "Dr. David V. Haws, chairman of psychiatry, General Hospital in Phoenix has said, 'Mother must be returned to the home. The standard of living is a fictitious thing. It is a woman's primordial function to stay home and raise children. She should not join the hunt with men. A man, too, feels less of a man when his wife works.'" Mrs. Andelin and books like hers teach that women earning money in the marketplace hurts men, women, children and the nation. She writes, "Harm to the Man. When you work, you rob your husband of his right to meet ordinary challenges, and to grow by these challenges. And, as you become capable, efficient, and independent, he feels less needed, and therefore less masculine. This weakens him. As you lift, he sets the bucket down." Of course feminist women and their feminized men strongly disagree with statements like this and say they are doing just fine in their so-called progressive, modern and enlightened marriages that are "beyond" patriarchy in the out-of-date biblical, old-fashioned family. Feminists love to talk about "diversity" and being "flexible." To them there are many kinds of families and all are equally happy. What is our definition of family? Where do we draw the line? I believe Father clearly says there is only one kind of family—the traditional family that honors the innate differences between men and women. All other types of families are inferior and therefore poor role models.

The traditional, patriarchal family is God's design. Jesus said, "Enter by the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the way is easy, that leads to destruction, and those who enter by it are many. For the gate is narrow and the way is hard, that leads to life, and those who find it are few" (Matt. 7:14-15). The next verse says, "Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing but inwardly are ravenous wolves" (Matt: 7:16). The cultural elite of America are the wolves dressed as sheep saying that the Bible is wrong and there are many kinds of families.

When women work they usually see successful men. This is dangerous. The Andelin's write: "Still another harm to consider is the woman's relationship to her employer, especially if he is a man. The wife is accustomed to looking at her husband as the director of her activities. When she

finds herself taking orders from another man, it is an unnatural situation for her. She owes him a certain obedience as her employer. And in countless hours of close contact she may find herself physically attracted to him. Seeing him at his best and perhaps as a more dynamic and effective leader than her husband, she makes comparisons unfavorable to her husband whose faults and failings she knows all too well."

A woman may have a good man as her boss and this is dangerous. She may have an archangel type of man and that is dangerous. The reverse is also true. A man may work for a good woman and compare his wife unfavorably, or he may have an Eve type boss and struggle with that. Husbands should not let their wives be bossed around by other men. Andelin writes: "She cannot serve two masters. Her neglect of home life results in lack of love, attention, and development of the children as well as her failure to serve as the understanding wife."

When most women stayed home America did not have the massive breakdown in family and problems with kids like we do today where most women work outside the home. Newt Gingrich said, "American civilization cannot survive with twelve-year-olds having babies, fifteen-year-olds shooting one another, seventeen-year-olds dying of AIDS, and eighteen-year-olds graduating with diplomas they cannot read." More and more social workers pinpoint the cause of these problems to the breakdown of the traditional family. Dr. Brenda Hunter is a renowned psychologist, author of *Home by Choice: Creating Emotionally Secure Children in an Insecure World*. She has appeared on radio, national television, and before congressional staff. She says in an interview with *The World & I* magazine:

> For the past twenty-five years, the mother at home has been massively devalued by the culture. The eighties was the era of the superwoman, and it also was the time when the notion of quality time developed, was demythologized, and disappeared. You don't hear anybody talking about quality time now. What I'm hearing more and more is employed mothers talking about the reality of being too pushed, too pressured.
>
> Instead of believing in quality time, we have developed what I call the myth of the infinitely resilient child. This child can enter day care at three weeks of age, experience a succession of care givers until he enters school, come home to an empty house during his school years, and then emerge at age eighteen with a strong core sense of self. Everything I know tells me this is not accurate. Children need an enormous amount of committed, on-line parental time. A legion of mothers know this and are choosing to stay home.
>
> What I'm seeing as a therapist is this: Adults who in their childhood experienced rejection by their mothers have difficulty establishing close interpersonal relationships. The mother is the architect of intimacy. I've come to see this more strongly as I've been working as a therapist. The mother really is the architect of intimacy.

DAY CARE DECEPTION

The crusade of the Left for day care has been a disaster. Now there is research that shows it has been harmful such as we read in *Home-Alone America: The Hidden Toll of Day Care, Behavioral Drugs, and Other Parent Substitutes* by Mary Eberstadt. Check out *7 Myths of Working Mothers: Why Children and (Most) Careers Just Don't Mix* by SuzzaneVenker. La Shawn Barber writes this in his review of an excellent book against day care titled *Day Care Deception*:

> My fondest memory of childhood was coming home from school knowing my mother would be there to greet me. Because she provided me with security and attention, my natural inclination to imagine, to write and to create developed spontaneously. My mother was committed to raising me and my three siblings

> herself. As Brian C. Robertson points out in his persuasive new book, *Day Care Deception: What The Child Care Establishment Isn't Telling Us*, a growing number of children are not so fortunate.
>
> Some children spend 35 to 40 hours per week at day care centers. Despite a mounting body of evidence that commercial day care is psychologically and physiologically harmful to children, the industry is thriving. Robertson expertly makes the case for parental care over commercial care in his well-researched 222-page book.
>
> Ever since women entered the workforce during WWII to make up for the shortage of men, the feminist movement has done much to discredit their traditional roles. In the 1960s, feminists began clamoring for universal day care. "A significant contingent of feminists and civil rights activists was bent on overturning long-held assumptions about the family," Robertson writes. One assumption held for generations was that parents knew best. Robertson warns parents not to defer to "child development experts" in rearing their children.
>
> A damning indictment on the day care industry, *Day Care Deception* is long overdue. Robertson warns, "We are just beginning to see the consequences of this enormous, unprecedented shift toward a new and basically untested way of rearing and socializing young children." Our children, once considered a valuable resource for America's future, may soon become its chief liability.

Aubrey Andelin in *Man of Steel and Velvet* says, "The trend for the Mother to be out of the home is a pattern of living which has extended for many years in America, since the emergency of World War II took millions of women into the factories. It has been during this time that we have developed some of our most threatening social problems—marriage problems, divorce, violence in the streets, drug abuse, and rebellion against social customs and moral standards. Many of these problems can be traced to homes of working mothers."

Father says the role of mothers, these architects of intimacy, are central: "The key to world peace is to bring mind and body into unity and also man and woman into unity, which is another form of mind and body. The core of the American problem lies in the family, and the center of the family is the mother. If the mother plays her role correctly, then that is the way to restore the family" (4-24-94). Father is saying there is a role for women different from the role for men:

> When you blessed couples start a family, the husband should lead a public life (life of service) and the wife should be in charge of the family life (the domestic life). Will you be a representative and exemplary family?
>
> The wife should make her husband successful; that is to say that she should be his great supporter." (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

Beverly LaHaye teaches that a woman having a career hurts both men and women. She writes in *The Restless Woman* that the workplace is one of "fierce competition," and women do not belong there: "A division is created between males and females when they are forced to compete with each other. The relationship between men and women should be one of cooperation, not fierce competition. The tendency of women to compete in the work world with men results in their masculinization. ... A masculine man is attracted by the feminine characteristics in a woman—qualities such as gentleness and virtue. He's not seeking a clone of himself. The attraction that men and women have for each other is in their 'differentness'—not their sameness." Opposites attract!

In a chapter titled "The Withering Away of the Family" in *The Recovery of Family Life*, Elton and Pauline Trueblood write, "When we consider the human price of this increasingly accepted social

pattern of double earning, we usually stress the harmful effects upon children or the hardening of the mothers, but the effect upon the adult men may be quite as important in the long run. Once men took great pride in being able to provide for their families and resented any implication that a second paycheck was needed, but now many men welcome whatever help the wife can give. What we are witnessing is a feminization of men, a psychological development independent of physical characteristics. In modern life a man often goes from dependence on one woman to dependence upon another. Thus the man is cheated of his basis of self-respect and the woman is cheated in that she never has the sense of security which a strong man gives. In this situation it is hard to know how much is cause and how much is effect; the wife has to earn because the man does not provide sufficiently, but his very failure to provide may come partly because of a social pattern which undermines his self-respect."

"We are sure of two things. First, those of us who do not face this economic and social problem must be very tender toward those who do, and, second, we must understand clearly the human harm which comes as the family withers away at important levels in our society. Only as we understand the loss will we have the incentive adequate to make us use our imagination to reverse the process of decay." He says women are trying "to perform the miracle of carrying on two full-time occupations at once."

ARCHITECT OF INTIMACY

Brenda Hunter in *Home by Choice* says that when women bring home paychecks, "men lose authority." The result is that men increasingly get less strong and decisive. Finally, she says, "intimacy" is lost from the home. A woman, she says, is the "architect of intimacy," and when she works she is too stressed, tired and busy to really respond to her family as they need her. She says that, "when emotional intimacy disappears in a marriage, it isn't long before sexual intimacy evaporates as well." She writes: "grown men, as well as little children, need someone at home to function as a 'secure base.' The wife and mother, it seems, is the architect of intimacy for her husband as well as her children."

FRAGILE MALE EGO

There is a popular belief that men are basically brutish despots who are not faithful to women. Women are seen as superior in morals and kindness. Every man is seen as having a "fragile male ego." Their ego is viewed as being so delicate that women must be careful to not upset men by competing with them.

Men are designed by God to be strong leaders but our culture is so out of order that men have become confused and therefore timid. Feminists have created a society which is so polluted that it is hard for anyone to understand how sick it is. An analogy is that the perfect ecology in nature is powerful but if it is upset by even a small thing it can weaken and even destroy the environment.

HOUSESWIFE IS ECOLOGIST

Edith Schaeffer helped her husband build a worldwide ministry from their home. In her books she teaches women to treasure the career in the home to build families as an "oasis" as she did with her home. In her book, *What is a Family?* she says that everyone is concerned with the environment. There are laws in nature, and when man disrupts them all hell can break loose. She gives examples of how devastating things became when people did simple things like introduce an animal or a plant to an area and change its whole ecostructure. She goes on to detail how devastating it is when women leave the home or how the environment blossoms when women do the right things in the home. She ends that section by saying, "A living, growing, changing real family is as thoroughly an ecological demonstration of what human beings thrive in as any 'experimental farm.' It is as noble a career as can be entered in the ecological field! Profession? 'Housewife.' No! 'Ecologist' — in the most important area of conservation—the family."

In *Fascinating Womanhood* Helen Andelin writes:

> When a man's and woman's roles are not distinctly divided it is called a blurring of roles. In this case the woman does part of the man's work and he does part of hers. ...it can be injurious to the family.
>
> If children are to develop their sexual nature, they need a strong masculine and feminine image to pattern from. The mother demonstrates this feminine image when she functions in her feminine role. As she moves about the house in feminine clothes, tending to her domestic work, tenderly caring for her children, and nursing her baby, she provides this image. If she also indicates contentment and happiness in her role, she gives her children a positive picture of femininity.
>
> When the father functions in his masculine role as a strong leader, protector, and provider, and when his children are given the opportunity to see him in action once in awhile, and see that he willingly assumes his masculine responsibility and enjoys his work, he provides them with a favorable masculine image. With this distinct masculine and feminine image in the home, boys grow up to be masculine men and girls feminine women.
>
> When this is not so, when there is a blurring of roles it can lead to problems. Much homosexuality is traced to homes which have a blurring of the roles. The girls and boys from these homes have not had a sexual image to pattern from. This has denied them normal sexual development.
>
> When we think of all the things children need to learn as they are growing up, and what we need to teach them if they are to become normal, successful, happy human beings, nothing is more important than a boy becoming a masculine man and a girl becoming a feminine woman.

We cannot fight universal laws and win. Women working has driven men into the arms of another woman. Even well-meaning conservative and religious women who have left their homes with the motivation to help mankind have experienced coming home from work one day and found a son who became gay or a daughter a lesbian. This has happened to some famous Republican women. Where do we find the greatest breakdown of the family and the greatest violence? It is where there is the least patriarchy. It is the black matriarchies of the inner city. When we reject the biblical model of a patriarchal family we reject order and maximum achievement in life.

George Gilder in *Men and Marriage* explains that men have to be workaholics in the marketplace if they want to succeed, "Just as the female role cannot be shared or relinquished, the male role also remains vital to social survival.... On forty-hour weeks, most men cannot even support a family of four. They must train at night and on weekends; they must save as they can for future ventures of entrepreneurship; they must often perform more than one job. They must make time as best they can to see and guide their children. They must shun the consolations of alcohol and leisure, sexual indulgence and flight. They must live for the perennial demands of the provider role." He must perform a "lifetime of hard labor.... All the major accomplishments of civilization spring from the obsessions of men whom the sociologists would now disdain as 'workaholics.'" Men, he says, "must give their lives to unrelenting effort, day in and day out, focused on goals in the distant future. They must struggle against scarcity, entropy, and natural disaster. They must overcome the sabotage of socialists who would steal and redistribute their product. They must resist disease and temptation. All too often they must die without achieving their ends. But their sacrifices bring others closer to the goal."

"Nothing that has been written in the annals of feminism gives the slightest indication that this is a role that women want or are prepared to perform. The feminists demand liberation. The male role means bondage to the demands of the workplace and the needs of the family. Most of the research

of sociologists complains that men's work is already too hard, too dangerous—too destructive of mental health and wholeness. It all too often leads to sickness and 'worlds of pain,' demoralization and relatively early death. The men's role that feminists seek is not the real role of men but the male role of the Marxist dream in which 'society' does the work."

George Gilder in *Sexual Suicide* (revised later to *Men and Marriage*) explains that as women become aggressive, men leave the home and turn to destructive behavior which we see increasing as women become more aggressive. He writes, "As a general rule of anthropology, the likelihood of his presence in the home decreases in direct proportion to the aggressiveness of the woman. Instead, he will conduct male rituals, drink, commit crimes, hunt, seek power, take drugs, pursue women on male terms. Unless he is performing a masculine service for the marriage commensurate in some way with the bearing of a child, the marriage will cramp his manhood. He will feel unworthy of the woman and thus unable to love her. The relationship will fail." "The women's movement is striking at the Achilles' heel of civilized society: the role of the male."

In *Men and Marriage* he writes, "The imperious power and meaning of male sexuality remains a paramount fact of life and the chief challenge to civilized society. Failing to come to terms with masculinity, a society risks tearing its very ligaments—the marriage and family ties that bind men to the social order. For it is only their masculinity, their sexual nature, that draws men into marriages and family responsibilities. When our social institutions deny or disrespect the basic terms of male nature, masculinity makes men enemies of family and society."

I think it is better training for a young Unificationist sister to be with elder women as they make a quilt together than having her go door-to-door alone in some strange city making money that emasculates, confuses and demoralizes brothers. It would be better to have young sisters live in a cozy community where they are near nature and can have a garden. Becoming experts at preparing salads with organic lettuce and carrots they grew themselves is far better training than sending them to pushy, harsh, macho sales teams. It would be better for sisters to be trained by elder women who teach them how to care for babies and the elderly and grow flowers than going from bar to bar selling flowers to drunken men. They don't need to travel so much, and they don't need to spend time in dangerous cities damaging their hearts and minds by trying to earn big money.

Helen Andelin says that a woman staying home is the ultimate romantic life. What woman does not want romance? When women work they reduce romance in their life. Mrs. Andelin writes that when the wife works and when her man sees other women excelling him in the marketplace it breaks his heart, but the traditional family brings "soul satisfaction,": "Picture, if you can, a mother at home nurturing her little ones, making a comfortable home for her family; the father goes out into the world, struggling against the elements and oppositions of life to bring home the necessities and comforts for his loved ones. This romantic scene, instead of being taken for granted, should be viewed as the heart and core of life which, when lived properly, brings soul satisfaction that cannot be measured. There is nothing to equal it and nothing more important."

Helen Andelin teaches that women should not work "to ease the pinch ... for luxuries ... when you are bored at home ... to ease the load for the man ... to do something important." On doing important things she writes, "You may feel that what you are doing from day to day in the home is relatively unimportant, and that men have the more important jobs. Noble contribution to mankind, you may reason, are made in the fields of science, industry, government or the arts.

"Women who think this have a false notion. They exaggerate the importance of the man's work, and underestimate the importance of the woman's work in the home. Noble as the contributions of men are, they do not surpass a well-brought up family. A doctor spends his time *saving lives*. You on the other hand, in the simple routine of your home, are *saving souls*. Learn to see the distant scene, how your patient devotion to family produces men and women of worth, the greatest

contribution."

Helen Andelin's books are overwhelmingly correct. But I disagree once in a while with her. For example, she writes that women are "justified in working" in certain circumstances such as "if you are widowed, divorced, single, or your husband is disabled." Then she says, "If your husband is physically able, you are justified in the following situations." She lists them as "Compelling Emergencies," and "Furthering the Husband's Education or Training." Douglas Phillips in his audiotape, *The Blessed Marriage,* is correct in saying this is not a good idea because the worst thing that has happened to marriage is women leaving their homes. Countless marriages have been destroyed because of men and women working closely with each other.

It seems that a core value in many homes in America is to push girls to go to school to get a skill and education that will give her a good paying job. The reasoning is that half of all marriages fail so she will have a way to earn income if she divorces. Or her husband could die or not be able to support a family by himself as most men think they cannot in today's economy. A woman should get an education to be a good teacher of her children, not to advance a career.

When women go to work it often becomes a lifetime habit. Some women start working with the idea they will only work for a brief time but many end up working their entire life. When a woman gets a job she is taking a job away from a man. Women in the marketplace weaken a nation's economy. Helen Andelin writes in *Fascinating Womanhood*:

> The working wife has also upset the economy of our country so that now she feels locked into working. In 1975 I made a prediction on national TV. It was a time when women were crying for the chance to work outside the home. I addressed such women with this statement: 'If you don't stop crying for the choice for work, you will so upset the economy of this country that the time will come when you will not have a choice—you will have to work.' That time has come. Employers have now lowered pay to fit a two-income family. In many cases a mother feels she must work. She seems to have no choice. She feels locked in.
>
> If you are a working wife who feels locked in, the situation is not irreversible. First, learn the womanly art of thrift so you can live on your husband's income. If necessary, sell your home and move to one less expensive, in a less prestigious neighborhood. If you have two cars, sell one. Cut out vacations and spend time at the park or go to the mountains. Meals can be made simpler and less expensive without losing nutritive value. Be content with fewer clothes, content to wear them over and over. Shop for children's clothes at used clothing stores.
>
> The next step is to quit work. Do all you can to provide a peaceful home life, build your husband's self-confidence, and live all of F.W. These things motivate your husband toward success, toward a more adequate income.
>
> The courage required to take this step, and the faith you demonstrate in doing that which is morally right, bring unexpected blessings from God. Benefits come that you have no way to anticipate. Solutions appear that make life better than before. You cannot lose by doing what is right.
>
> When you quit it brings immediate peace in the household. Mother is home when the children come home from school. She is rested, composed, not in a hurry. The house is tidy and homey. All is well. This brings more lasting memories than the fine material comforts.

Mrs. Andelin is correct in saying that working women "upset" the economy. If women want to be patriotic and love their country they would not hurt the national economy by entering the marketplace. Let's look at this for a minute. A reviewer of Allan Carlson's *The "American Way":*

Family and Community in the Shaping of the American Identity wrote that Carlson says: "The subsequent flood of married women into the workplace depressed men's wages, increased the commercialization of the household economy (the roots of today's obesity epidemic), and starved America's previously rich associational life."

Allan Carlson is a distinguished writer on family and government. He wrote a review of a book titled *The Two-Income Trap: Why Middle Class Mothers and Fathers Are Going Broke* saying the, "feminist economic project has produced widespread disaster for American families, children ... and women as well. ... the feminists' coveted 'two-breadwinner family' has, in practice, brought the 'dance of financial ruin.' ... families saw real wages for men decline: the predictable result of more laborers pursuing the same number of jobs." Carlson wrote in his book *The "American Way"* about the work of Gary Becker who won the Nobel Prize for economics in 1992. One reviewer wrote of him, "Becker is recognized for his expertise in economics of the family." Carlson writes, "Nobel Laureate Gary Becker has shown [in his book *A Treatise on the Family*] that notable economic gains associated with marriage come from a division of labor in the home, as when a housewife focuses on domestic tasks and a husband on outside labor. As American men and women became more alike in economic function after 1970, [when Father arrived in America] the financial advantage of the joint (married) household faded, and the marriage rate began to fall. Partly for the same reason, the divorce rate rose 150 percent. With women shifting priorities away from home toward outside work, the marriage birthrate tumbled sharply as well, particularly during the early 1970s. Meanwhile, the number, rate and ratio of out-of-wedlock births climbed steadily." We can see from this that women leaving the home hurts the nation.

In *The Divine Principle Home Study Course* we read, "While it has recently become fashionable in some circles to interpret the differences between men and women purely in terms of cultural conditioning, *Divine Principle* would see such an interpretation as questionable. In a famous work by Switzerland's Professor Emil Brunner, *Man in Revolt*, for example, this scholar describes a biological difference between the sexes that is basic and deep-seated. Spiritually, he tells us, the man expresses the productive principle while the woman exemplifies the principle of bearing and nourishing. Man tends to turn more to the outside world while the woman concentrates more on the inner realm. The male often seeks the new and the female longs to preserve the old. While the man often likes to roam about, the woman prefers to make a home. For *Divine Principle*, such distinctive orientations exist by divine design. Physically and psychologically, man and woman are to complete each other's inner nature and outer structure."

TAMING OF THE SHREW

Shakespeare's *The Taming of the Shrew* ends by Petruchio telling Kate to explain to "headstrong women" how they are to live with their husbands. He says:

> Katherine, I charge thee, tell these headstrong women What duty they do owe their lords and husbands.

She responds:

> Thy husband is thy lord, thy life, thy keeper,
> Thy head, thy sovereign; one that cares for thee,
> And for thy maintenance; commits his body
> To painful labor both by sea and land,
> To watch the night in storms, the day in cold,
> Whilst thou liest warm at home, secure and safe;
> And craves no other tribute at thy hands
> But love, fair looks, and true obedience;
> Too little payment for so great a debt.

Such duty as the subject owes the prince,
Even such a woman oweth to her husband.
And when she is forward, peevish, sullen, sour,
And not obedient to his honest will,
What is she but a foul contending rebel,
And graceless traitor to her loving lord?
I am ashamed that women are so simple
To offer war where they should kneel for peace,
Or seek for rule, supremacy, and sway,
When they are bound to serve, love, and obey.

Gloria Steinem, the most famous feminist of the twentieth century, summed up the feminist philosophy in one sentence when she said, "A liberated woman is one who has sex before marriage and a job after." A godly woman does not have sex before marriage and is a stay-at-home mom after marriage.

Hollywood and TV Brainwashing

Many Hollywood movies and television shows have promoted the immoral lifestyle taught by Gloria Steinem and other feminist leaders. In the movie, *Father of the Bride*, Spencer Tracy is a pathetic patriarch. Elizabeth Taylor plays his daughter. She was 18 years old then. In the movie she announces at the dinner table she is engaged. In the Last Days Satan has worked to make sure that young people do not consult with their parents in the choosing of a mate. This movie was made in 1950 and shows that patriarchy was dead in the 1950s.

There is a scene in the movie where the father asks the daughter to tell her fiancé that he would like to talk to him about finances. The daughter is disgusted he would do that saying such a thing is a joke—that it is just "old-fashioned rigmarole." Elizabeth Taylor went on to become one of the most famous superstars in the 20th century who rejected old-fashioned values. She has been married eight times and is currently unmarried in her old age. Katharine Hepburn was Spencer Tracy's mistress. Hepburn may have earned more Oscars than any other actress, but she has never had children. The disease of feminism is deadly to the marriage and family and therefore personal happiness.

Forty years later Hollywood remade the movie *Father of the Bride* with Steve Martin. The daughter is now determined to have a career after she is married. Traditional family values are constantly portrayed as oppressive and restrictive as seen in movies like *American Beauty* and *Pleasantville*. Christian leaders have not been able to counter the media's brainwashing because they are divided and often confused themselves. Almost every movie made by Hollywood for adults has a scene of premarital sex. Many movies make homosexual relationships wholesome and normal. Movie stars are role models for countless people. People imitate the immoral behavior they see on screen and in the immoral private lives of superstars who are household names. What they do cannot be dismissed as harmless fantasy. What is insane madness is presented relentlessly as good and true. What negative impact on people's psyche is caused by seeing images of a seventh-month pregnant chief of police surrounded by incompetent and stupid men in the movie *Fargo*? What is result of millions of people watching a nude and premarital scene in the movie *Titanic* that grossed nearly two billion dollars? How damaging to the heart and soul is it for impressionable young people to see women warriors like those in *Kill Bill* and *Lara Croft*? I believe these movies give Fathers the idea to encourage their daughters to join the military and these movies encourage young men to not be chivalrous to women. The spirit of men and women is diminished and this is reflected in low birthrates.

THE PROVIDER

Aubrey Andelin writes in *Man of Steel and Velvet*: "We have already learned of a man's sacred responsibility to rule the family and protect them from the hardness of life. His obligation to provide the living is just as sacred, for in the beginning God said, 'In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, until thou return to the ground.' We need to remember this command was not given to the woman, but to the man. This he must do regardless of the struggle involved or the diversion of other interests that may be uppermost in his mind."

"There's a disregard nowadays for this sacred and traditional role. ... Many feel the man's role as sole provider is unfair, that it overtaxes him and may be injurious to his health. They advocate an equal sharing of this burden. In return he's expected to share equally in housework and child care. Some advocate the government also share the responsibility. When a man's load grows heavy, he's entitled to assistance. ... This is a far cry from God's command and has led to unexpected difficulties.

"Trends and laws don't establish correct principles. There's a consequence for disobedience to eternal law. Man's responsibility to provide is a fact of life. A failure on his part creates serious problems. In the New Testament the Apostle Paul warned, 'If any provide not for his own he hath denied the faith and is worse than an infidel.' (I Tim. 5:8).

"The responsibility to provide the living should be in top priority in a man's life— his first and foremost obligation. ... Not only is his a sacred responsibility—it's a moral one. Each man has this obligation to care for himself, his wife and children. A man who does so is a gift to society. The man who doesn't is a burden. Because of his failure, others must sacrifice to carry a responsibility that belongs to him. In this failure he's failed as a man. He doesn't have strength, but weakness. This is the most fundamental area in which he must function. The man who does not provide for his own is not a man." The Andelins correctly explain that men can do all the work of the world—even traditional jobs like nursing. Women can volunteer their time in hospitals to help, but God's will is that no woman earns money. A woman who thinks she has to work has not focused on making it a goal in her life to have a godly man or men care for her.

Suzanne Fields wrote in one of her newspaper columns (1-19-06) that feminists hate the stay-at-home mom. She quotes Linda Hirshman who wrote an essay titled 'Homeward Bound" in *American Prospect*, a liberal magazine saying, "The family—with its repetitious, socially invisible, physical tasks—is a necessary part of life, but it allows fewer opportunities for full human flourishing than public spheres like the market or the government." Fields comments, "In her telling of it, home and family is still the deadly trap for women, a trap that Betty Friedan once called 'a comfortable concentration camp.'"

WOMEN ARE LIKE "BASKETS"

Father says in a parable-like speech, "American women may feel that my explanation of life gives them no value whatsoever. Women are like an empty receiving basket. Your value will be determined by the contents you hold within your basket. I suggest that you utilize your beautiful face, well-developed bosom and hips and produce as many precious children as possible. That is your value" (6-9-96). A woman's value does not come from competing with men in the marketplace. It is in having many children and caring for them in the home.

Helen Andelin writes, "A man also has an inborn need to feel needed as a provider, to feel that his wife depends on him for financial support and can't get by without him. In addition, he has an inborn need to excel women as a provider. A man's feeling of worth can be undermined when he sees women in the work force doing a better job than he, advancing to a higher position, or earning more pay. How much worse when his own wife excels him."

FATHERLESS AMERICA

Because feminists teach the lie that women can interchange with men, men are using their natural aggressiveness in unhealthy ways. David Blankenhorn, in *Fatherless America*, says that this is America's number one problem. Blankenhorn says it is the cause of most of our problems, "from crime to adolescent pregnancy to child sexual abuse to domestic violence against women." He says that nobody understands this: "The most urgent domestic challenge facing the United States at the close of the twentieth century is the re-education of fatherhood as a vital role for men." Men are hurting because they are not the sole providers. His book is excellent in showing how our social problems are caused by the insanity of throwing out traditional values. He writes, "In sum, over the past two hundred years, fatherhood has lost, in full or in part, each of its four traditional roles: irreplaceable caregiver, moral educator, head of the family, and family breadwinner. As the historian Peter N. Stearns put it: 'An eighteenth-century father would not recognize the ... parental leadership granted to mothers or indeed the number of bad fathers.'"

Blankenhorn details how men have become unneeded. Feminism has destroyed the role of breadwinner and has therefore destroyed men. Gloria Steinem said it for all those who don't believe in the division of labor for men and women: "We are human beings first with minor differences from men that apply largely to the act of reproduction. The only functional difference between men and women is the woman's ability to give birth; therefore a woman needs a man like a fish needs a bicycle." This is the belief our culture holds for men and women— interchangeable parts. More and more men are saying, "What's the use?" and checking out.

Blankenhorn is a powerful voice against the feminist's dream of taking the breadwinner role from men: "Does paternal breadwinning burden men? In some ways, of course, yes. A man who embraces the New Father philosophy of employment does indeed unburden himself. He frees himself up to make choices, perhaps to express more emotions, certainly to discover himself apart from externally defined 'roles.' Certainly there is much to commend in this aspiration. Freedom is good. Especially in America, freedom is hard to argue against. But in this case, let me try."

"For in liberating fathers from the breadwinner role, the New Father model also seeks to liberate fathers from widely held norms of masculinity. At the same time, our elite cultural script notwithstanding, most men in our society simply do not wish to be liberated from their masculinity. This viewpoint is a key to understanding their unprogressive, lopsided commitment to the provider role."

"Paternal attachment to breadwinning (and I would add, women as homemakers) is neither arbitrary nor anachronistic. Historically and currently, the breadwinner role matches quite well with core aspects of masculine identity. Especially compared to other parental activities, breadwinning is objective, rule-oriented, and easily measurable. It is an instrumental, goal-driven activity in which success derives, at least in part, from aggression. Most important, the provider role permits men to serve their families through competition with other men. In this sense the ideal of paternal breadwinning encultures male aggression by directing it toward a prosocial purpose."

BREADWINNER

"For these reasons, the breadwinner role has always been, and remains, a basic cultural device for integrating masculinity into familism—the clearest, simplest means for men to act out their obligations to their children. Faced with these stubborn facts, our society can respond in one of two ways. We can, through the New Father model, continue to assault male breadwinning in a root-and-branch attempt to reinvent men and deconstruct traditional masculinity. Or we can endeavor, however imperfectly, to incorporate men as they are into family life, in part by giving them distinctive, gendered roles that reflect, rather than reject, inherited masculine norms-such as, for example, the breadwinner."

"The New Father model does not merely unburden men of breadwinning as a special obligation. Ultimately, it unburdens them of fatherhood itself. For, as the example of breadwinning demonstrates, the essence of the New Father model is a repudiation of gendered social roles. But fatherhood, by definition, is a gendered social role. To ungender fatherhood—to deny males any gender-based role in family life—is to deny fatherhood as a social activity. What remains may be New. But there is no more Father."

Daniel Amneus, a professor at the University of Southern California, writes these profound insights into the peaceful nature of patriarchy in his book, *Back to Patriarchy*:

> Where are the high crime areas of our society—and where are there large numbers of families headed by women? The two questions have a single answer: matriarchy and violence are twins. The boys' vice-principal of your local high school, the man responsible for discipline, will tell you that the troublemakers are the boys from fatherless families and that the boys from motherless families are not a problem at all. Boys from fatherless homes frequently fail to learn what it means to be responsible and civilized men. They often grow up lacking self-respect, respect for authority, self-reliance, dignity, and magnanimity, incapable of doing the work of society. Girls from fatherless homes all too frequently produce fatherless families themselves, thus perpetuating matriarchy and violence into the next generation.
>
> The association between crime and matriarchy is obvious, though the feminists and welfare bureaucrats would prefer that the public didn't notice it, since patriarchal families would mean the demise of feminism and the erosion of the welfare empire. These people would much prefer that the public think crime is the result of poverty—and that, to eradicate it, taxpayers must dig deeper into their pockets for more money to finance Great Society and Head Start programs and larger AFDC payments, which, of course, have the added consequence of enlarging bureaucracies. If crime were caused by poverty, the American-Chinese, who have been against heavy odds in our society for over a century, ought to have had one of the highest crime rates. They don't. They have the lowest crime rate and they have patriarchal families. Much the same is true of the Japanese and the Jews—both groups with low crime and a patriarchal family structure. High crime and delinquency—and illegitimacy—come from those areas where there are enormous numbers of families headed by women....

ENORMOUS BURDEN

Helen Andelin teaches women how different men and women look at the world of business in a section titled "His Pressing Responsibility to Provide." She writes, "A woman needs to understand with an all-comprehending sympathy what a man faces in earning the living. For the majority of men, when they come of age and marry, take on an enormous burden which they may not lay down with any conscience this side of the grave. Quietly, and without histrionics, they put aside, in the name of love, most of their vaunted freedom and contract to take upon their shoulders full social and economic responsibility for their wives and children."

"As a woman, consider for a moment how you would feel if your child should be deprived of the good things of life; proper housing, clothing, education. Consider how you would feel if he should go hungry. Perhaps such ideas have occurred to you and have given you a bad turn momentarily. But they are passing thoughts: a woman does not give them much credence; they are not her direct responsibility; certainly she does not worry about them for long."

"But such thoughts, conscious or unconscious, are her husband's daily fare. He knows, and he takes the [worrying] thought to work with him each morning (and every morning) and to bed with him at night, that upon the success or failure of his efforts rests the happiness, health, indeed the

very lives of his wife and children. In the ultimate he senses he alone must take full responsibility for them."

"I do not think it is possible to exaggerate how seriously men take this responsibility; how much they worry about it. Women, unless they are very close to their men, rarely know how heavily the burden weighs sometimes, for men talk about it very little. They do not want their loved ones to worry."

"Men have been shouldering the entire responsibility for their family group since earliest times. I often think, however, when I see the stresses and strains of today's marketplace, that civilized man has much harder going, psychologically speaking, than his primitive forefathers."

"In the first place, the competition creates a terrible strain on the individual male. This competition is not only for preferment and advancement it is often for his very job itself. Every man knows that if he falters—lets up his ceaseless drive, he can and will be easily replaced."

MEN UNDER ENDLESS PRESSURE

"No level of employment is really free of this endless pressure. The executive must meet and exceed his last year's quota or the quota of his competitors. Those under him must see that he does it, and he scrutinizes their performance most severely and therefore constantly."

"Professional men—doctors, lawyers, professors—are under no less pressure for the most part. If the lawyer is self-employed he must constantly seek new clients; if he works for an organization he must exert himself endlessly to avoid being superseded by ambitious peers or by pushing young particles just out of law school and fired with the raw energy of youth. A score of unhappy contingencies can ruin or seriously threaten a doctor's practice, not the least of which is a possible breakdown in his ability to practice. A teacher must work long hours on publishable projects outside his arduous teaching assignments if he is to advance or even hold his ground."

"There is no field of endeavor that a man may enter where he can count on complete economic safety; competition, the need for unremitting year-in, year-out performance is his life's lot. Over all this he knows, too, stands a separate specter upon which he can exert only the remotest control. It is the joblessness which may be caused by the cyclical depression and recessions that characterize our economy."

Helen then says, "Do women who work feel the same pressure men do? Women who work do not feel the same kind of pressure men do. This is because they have a different orientation to the world of work. Whereas a man feels he cannot turn aside from his work with a clear conscience, a woman doesn't feel this same sense of duty. She can resign her job at any time for any reason, without a feeling of guilt. Economic problems may result but she won't have a lower opinion of herself or feel disgraced in the eyes of the public."

IMAGE TO THE PUBLIC

"On the other hand, if an able-bodied man were to stop working it would injure his feeling of worth and his image to the public. He and everyone else would consider him a failure if he were to neglect this important duty. A woman feels pressure, but of a different kind—a time pressure which comes from living a double role. A man feels a binding moral pressure."

SEPARATE, NOT DIVORCE

When marriages reach a point where divorce is considered, a couple should separate before they divorce. Sadly, most couples never think of separation. They just go straight to divorce. They often choose marriage counselors who haven't got a clue to what a godly marriage is and are counselors because they are trying to figure out their own life. Too many counselors are quick to

push divorce. The only counselor a couple should see is someone who is religious, believes in the traditional, patriarchal family and will fight for the marriage.

GYNECOLOGISTS

There are many arguments for and against women working. One argument for women working is that there should be female doctors. I believe that men should not be gynecologists. Milton Friedman has correctly advocated that the government should not license anyone. It is wrong to force people to take four years of college before they can go to a medical school and then doctors have to study every part of the body. He teaches that people should be able to focus on an area and become skilled and then offer their services. Some women could study certain areas and then offer their skill to help other women. Women have done this kind of thing from the beginning of time by being midwives.

NURSES

When people hear about patriarchy they often think that nurses may be an exception to the rule of women not working in the marketplace. There isn't. In those situations in medicine that deal with female private parts only women trained in those areas should be in the role of doctor and nurse and ideally they would do it for free if their families are taken care of and they can spend some time as volunteers.

If a woman is single and on her own, is a single mom or widowed and there are no men in the Unification Movement or in her family that will care for her, and she has to work, then she should seek work that is as feminine as possible. If she can it would be best if she had a home-based business such as network marketing companies offer. Women in America and women in third world countries do not need loans to start businesses. Women should not be so focused on earning money but put their primary focus into finding UM brothers to care for them in a trinity situation. A key to success in achieving a goal is to write it down and pray for it fervently every day. God and high spirit world will work to help. Single women and single moms who work are under terrible stress. They become fearful. A single woman who works may become afraid to have many children because she fears for her security. Her memories of terror at having to support herself will continue into marriage. Single moms who work are terrible role models for her children and they are cheated of being a contented mom in a secure nest. Married women who work emasculate every man in sight and confuse her children because she is in a state of division, not unity.

MARRIAGE BOOKS

There are thousands of books on marriage and family to choose from. Some become best sellers and influence millions of people to do what the author advises. The secular manuals on marriage are flawed because they do not get to the root of the problem because they don't give God's goal for a happy family that is found in the Bible. Sadly, many Christian books on marriage give bad advice because the authors have been digested by our feminist culture. They teach that the traditional patriarchal family is either totally false or for only a few people. These are Cain books. For example, in *The 5 Love Needs of Men And Women* Gary and Barbara Rosberg do not understand that women should not work. Even though the Rosbergs say they are Christian and wise and they may have some good points their book is worthless because they do not understand that it is ungodly for women to earn money. We need to give our children and those outside our movement books that are on the Abel side such as those by the Andelins that explain why it is wrong for women to provide money for their families.

BIBLICAL MARRIAGE

Gary Chapman is another popular author to stay away from. At his website he says of himself, "The leading author in biblical marriage counseling speaks love in your language." He does not understand what a biblical marriage is. In a traditional biblical marriage the husband is the sole

provider. Stay away from his books such as *The Five Love Languages: How to Express Heartfelt Commitment to Your Mate*. Let me give you an example of what he teaches. At his website he answers the question given to him — "We are both working full time and when I get home, I start dinner but my husband comes in and sits on the couch. How do I encourage him to participate in household chores?" He does not advise the woman to stop working. He tells her to tell her husband to do what should be her jobs. If a marriage counselor does not know the basic truth that women should not compete with men in the marketplace then their books and lectures are worthless.

PROVERBS 31 WIFE

There are many good books on marriage by Christian authors I would recommend such as those by such authors as John Piper and John MacArthur. Unfortunately they see Proverbs 31 teaching the value that it is all right for women to be businesswomen. They would prefer women staying home but cannot be absolute about women not working. I am being absolute. I don't interpret Proverbs 31 as praising this ideal wife as being a real estate salesman as so many Christian books portray her as. Victoria Botkin does a good job of explaining this chapter in her audio CD series titled *She Shall Be Called Woman*. In disc #3 titled "Lessons from the Proverbs 31 Woman" she teaches that this woman did not buy land all by herself. Her husband was involved. Her focus is her home, not a business.

Mark Gungor has a DVD lecture series on marriage titled *Laugh Your Way to a Better Marriage*. He is popular with some Unificationists I know. He helps them understand the differences between men and women. I highly recommend him. He has profoundly helped some marriages. Unfortunately he has an audio CD titled "A Wife of Noble Character" that portrays the Proverbs 31 woman as a real estate investor who leaves her kids at day care. He teaches the false view that children in day care "flourish" and "thrive." He says, "The Bible does not condemn women who work outside the home." Those who wrote the Bible did not live in a feminist culture like ours where women wear pants as a police officer who report to a woman chief of police who reports to a woman mayor who reports to a woman governor. The spirit of the Bible is for the traditional family. Gungor calls children "rug rats" and sympathizes with women who want a career to get away from them. The Bible does not look at children the way he does.

T.D. Jakes is a best-selling author that is typical of Christians who see Proverbs 31 as giving the green light for women to work in the marketplace. He is correct when he teaches that men lead women in their homes, but he is wrong when he teaches that women can lead men in business and in churches. In his book *Life Overflowing* he quotes Ephesians 5:22-24 and explains that a wife should submit to her husband, "The natural minds of people in this generation want to put the husband and wife on the same playing field, both playing umpire at the same time. Can you imagine a baseball game with two umpires standing behind the plate? Husband and wife do not play the same position when it comes to making decisions, manifest authority, or taking responsibility.

"When a wife rebels against a husband's wishes, desires, and his position as a decision-maker, she undermines his authority over the family and dismisses his responsibility." Ephesians 5:29 teaches that men are to "cherish," "love," and "nourish" their wives. There is nothing in the Bible about men being tyrants and treating their wives like second-class citizens.

What Jakes doesn't understand is that when women leave the home and become the final decision makers over men she "diminishes" men. He thinks it is wonderful that women are in the workplace. In his book *Reposition Yourself* he quotes from Proverbs 31: "She sells her handmade goods in the market place" and teaches that this model woman is "a savvy real-estate investor." He says that women can have "no limitations." This contradicts what he says about women not being able to be the final decision makers in their marriages. There is a limit to her authority in the

home. He says that being "sexist" is wrong and it is crucial that women join the workforce. In his chapter titled "Breaking the Glass Ceiling – Sharing the Secrets of Success-Savvy Women" he writes, "I shudder to think where our contemporary society would be without their collective brain power in the workforce." He says that men at the time "when this country was founded" were "male chauvinists." He gives the blanket criticism that "Men often punished women as if they were children." I do not believe this is historically accurate. De Tocqueville says that women were treated with great respect.

He writes that there are some negative consequences to all this egalitarianism. He gives the example of women journalists in men's locker rooms. He was invited to meet the professional basketball team, the Lakers, after a game in the locker room. He writes how women reporters came in and the men were changing clothes and taking showers. He thought this was not right but he feels that overall we have progressed as a society to free women from being homemakers. He doesn't see that women leaving the home has devastated America. Dr. Phil McGraw writes an introduction to this mega church pastor's book saying that Jakes is "the spiritual shepherd to millions across the globe" and writes, "I wish this book by Bishop Jakes" will be a success because it is an "inspiring message by providing extremely useful tools and practical guidance to help people in the real world." The opposite is the truth. Dr. Phil is wrong. Jakes is not inspirational and he is not providing "practical guidance."

The best books on marriage are by the Andelin's. One minister wrote the following at a bookseller's website about her book *Fascinating Womanhood*: "I have given approximately 250 copies of this book to women I have counseled in the past 5 years. In this period of time, I have yet to see ANY of them NOT improve their marriage by working on what they bring to the marriage, as an individual and to the whole."

Let's take a look at a popular Cain author. One reviewer wrote, "More than a million husbands and wives have improved their marriages through books by Dr. Willard Harley. ... He gives you the tools you need to meet two important goals: staying in love and helping your children thrive." At his website www.marriagebuilders.com Harley wrote an article titled "How to Develop Your Career and Keep Love in Your Marriage" saying, "I strongly encourage both husbands and wives to develop challenging careers for themselves (my daughter has a Ph.D. degree in Psychology)." He is the typical brainwashed father today who encourages his daughter to work outside the home. Let's look at two letters he received. The first says:

> Dear Dr. Harley,
>
> I hope you can help me. This morning my husband told me he doesn't love me anymore. I love him very much and want to do what I can to save our marriage.
>
> I have just earned a doctorate degree in Chemistry. While I was in school, my husband supported me, and was willing to move so that I could get the education I needed. But he has recently found a job he really enjoys and has talent for. My training is very specialized and there are very few jobs available in my area of expertise. I have been offered a job I would love to have but my husband doesn't want to leave the area we're in because he loves his job so much.
>
> I am hurt that, after my being in college so very long and training so hard, he is not absolutely supportive of my career. Now the hard part is over and it is time for us to reap the financial rewards of years of diligence. Can you offer assistance? I would be so grateful.

We have learned that this woman is wrong in pursuing a doctorate. She should be bearing children and taking care of her family as a stay-at-home mom. Harley thinks the opposite of this and encourages women to earn money and tells men to respect women who focus on a career outside

the home just as he respects his daughter who has a doctorate and works outside the home.

Another letter to him says:

> I am a 29-year old woman who has been married for 6 years and I really love my husband. I am a medical student and he works to support my education. I appreciate what he is doing to help me financially, but I am not getting enough emotional support from him.
>
> I really feel overworked and I am frustrated that my husband is not more supportive. When we decided that I would go to medical school, I thought that he was making a commitment to help me get through. Instead, I feel that he has abandoned me.
>
> The cleaning and grocery shopping falls to me primarily because I have trouble keeping my thoughts organized when the house is a mess and when meals are not planned. When I repeatedly ask him for more help, he says he will, but he either does nothing or does a crappy job. School has been tough and I feel that my husband does not understand my increased need for his support during this difficult period. I have repeatedly expressed my frustration but it seems as though he takes my need for partnership as a demand and as an expression of his failure.
>
> My husband also refuses to tell me what he wants or how he feels about practically anything. I have tried to make him feel less threatened and more willing to explore his own emotions to no avail. I know that my frustrations are not his responsibility. But he waits until I get over whatever's bothering me instead of trying to fix the problem.
>
> He spends hours trying to fix things at work, trying everything he can think of. But if our marriage has a problem, he's satisfied to say, "I don't know." But after every fight, he comes to me and apologizes in tears. I really feel desperate. What do you suggest?

What is his advice? He believes couples can sit down and have heart-to-heart talks and negotiate how they can both have demanding jobs and both do housework that will make both feel happy. He writes to these women saying: "Here's the solution to your problem: Spend fifteen hours a week with each other engaged in 1) affection, 2) sex 3) conversation and 4) recreational companionship (not all at the same time!). In other words, take fifteen hours a week out of your busy schedules to have fun with each other. Take a vacation from your problems. Don't bring up unpleasant topics for a while. Instead, enjoy your time together."

This is trivial and unprincipled advice. Harley does not understand the innate differences between men and women. Many men will consciously encourage and praise their wives for getting advanced degrees and having careers but often their conscience and deepest desires to live a Godly life where men are sole providers makes them seem inconsistent. On the one hand they think and say what is politically correct but their heart is broken because they are out of order with the laws of the universe.

Stay away from books and authors like the one I quoted from above that encourage women to work. Do not listen to marriage counselors or marriage seminar teachers or college professors who praise and recommend such authors. Unificationists are called by God to know what the absolute values are for marriage and family and be able to discern what is true and false when they hear and read fallen man's opinions. We need to give books that give good, godly advice to the Second and Third Generation so they will have maximum happiness. Authors like Harley that I quoted earlier say they help people to have happier marriages but the happiest marriages are those who live by traditional family values where the man is the hunter and the woman is the nester.

Let's look at Harley's book *His Needs, Her Needs* as an example of books that give bad advice. I hope analyzing his book in light of the truth will help you judge other books and seminar leaders

on marriage. Harley begins by praising his book: "Fifteen years after the first copy came off the press, over one million copies have been printed and it has been translated into eleven languages. Many have called it the best book on marriage ever written. That may be true, because as far as I know it is still the only book written that provides a tried and proven plan for married couples to restore and sustain their love for each other."

His book is not the best book. The Bible is the best book in human history on marriage and the Bible teaches the opposite of what he teaches. For example, Harley writes that it is wonderful if women want to work: "I don't oppose women who choose a career early in life. My daughter who is married with two small children earned a Ph.D. and is a licensed psychologist. I am proud of her achievement, and she is happy with her dual role as homemaker and psychologist. And so is her husband." What has this got to do with Titus 2:3-5? Absolutely nothing. It is Satan's ideology that women leave the home and compete with men. Harley and his daughter are out of order. His son-in-law is a wimp who hasn't got a clue to what true happiness means. There are many psychologists who believe gay couples when they say they are happy. Harley's daughter is living a lower level of happiness.

Harley tells the story of a couple who came to him that had a problem that many couples have. The husband was not bringing enough money home to pay for all the bills and the wife was unhappy. He told the couple, "Perhaps Sean could earn quite a bit more if he finished his education—I believe you said he had two years left. Would you be willing to go to work to help him?" They did as he advised and he writes, "This new plan saved their marriage." Unificationists should not listen to this satanic advice. Let's counsel men to get two jobs before they let their wife work.

Harley teaches that men should do some of the "cooking meals, washing dishes, washing and ironing clothes, and child care. ... In earlier generations, it was assumed that all husbands had this need and all wives would naturally meet it. Times have changed, and needs have changed along with them." This is terrible advice. His book is like so many that are best-sellers in our secular culture. Even many Christians are duped by books like this. This is why Christians have such a high divorce rate.

Have you heard the parable of the boiled frog? If you put a frog into a pot of boiling water, it will jump out to escape the danger. But, if you put a frog in a kettle that is filled with cool water that feels pleasant, and then you gradually heat the pot until it starts boiling, the frog will not realize the threat until it is too late and dies. In real life a frog may not do this but the point of the story is that America has been ignorant of how Satan works. He gradually introduces his vile ideas and values incrementally until no one knows what hits them. Father uses the analogy of cancer in the following quote from one his speeches: "When a cancer starts the victim hardly notices it. As it progresses, he notices it only a little bit. However that person will certainly die unless the cancer is stopped. America is in the same situation. I have been telling you American members that you cannot remain idle or indifferent. You cannot just think about your own life and your own family's blessing and going to Heaven eventually. What would be the difference between you and conventional Christianity?" (3-1-83)

Satan gradually raised women's dresses and slowly but surely introduced more and more socialism and feminism until America is in danger of falling like Rome did. One reason the Roman Empire fell is because it degenerated into sexual chaos. America and much of the world is completely in a fog on what a man and woman are. They are clueless to what masculinity and femininity are. Satan and evil spirit world have been able to dominate the world through socialists/feminists with the insane belief that men and women are the same and that the big government, welfare-state is daddy who will take care of us from cradle to grave. Unificationists need to be the group that understands Satan's strategies the most. We need to alert people of how he works to destroy the family. Let's expose the lies and rebelliousness of the Women's Studies departments in universities. Let's work hard to counter the avalanche of feminist books that preach against patriarchy. Our job is to educate Americans about the sexy fashion, bad morals, and liberal

agenda of movie stars in Hollywood whose lives so many are obsessed with.

Liberals love to accuse conservatives of wanting to "turn the clock back to the 1950s" or "1890s". It seems so sophisticated, modern and enlightened to denounce those who want to revive the traditional family as being naive reactionaries who are wrapped up in nostalgia for something that liberals wrongly say wasn't very good anyway like Stephanie Coontz does in her feminist book *The Way We Never Were: American Families and the Nostalgia Trap*. It is easy to say we can't go back to Ozzie and Harriet, *Father Knows Best* and June Cleaver always wearing a dress. But there are some values our ancestors had that were better than ours.

ANTI-FEMINISM

Wikipedia.org has a site on anti-feminism. They have two quotes I like from two authors who believe feminism is "a destructive force that endangers the family":

> Political scientist Paul Gottfried writes: "The Trouble With Feminism—serious conservative scholars like Allan Carlson and F. Carolyn Graglia have maintained that the change of women's role, from being primarily mothers to self-defined professionals, has been a social disaster that continues to take its toll on the family. Rather than being the culminating point of Western Christian gentility, the movement of women into commerce and politics may be seen as exactly the opposite, the descent by increasingly disconnected individuals into social chaos.
>
> Antifeminist writer Jim Kalb writes (mensnewsdaily.com. 2006-09-30): To be antifeminist is simply to accept that men and women differ and rely on each other to be different, and to view the differences as among the things constituting human life that should be reflected where appropriate in social attitudes and institutions. By feminist standards all societies have been thoroughly sexist. It follows that to be antifeminist is only to abandon the bigotry of a present-day ideology that sees traditional relations between the sexes as simply a matter of domination and submission, and to accept the validity of the ways in which human beings have actually dealt with sex, children, family life and so on. Antifeminism is thus nothing more than the rejection of one of the narrow and destructive fantasies of an age in which such things have been responsible for destruction and murder on an unprecedented scale.

STAY-AT-HOME DAUGHTERS

Doug Phillips says a girl is in danger going off to college in his audio CD *Making Wise Decisions About College and Life After Home School*. In the DVD of Ken Carpenter being interviewed in the Nightline episode on the Quiverfull movement he mentions that he will not send his daughters away to college and he is preparing them for a life of being a homemaker. All fathers and guardians of girls should be doing as Ken Carpenter is doing. All men and boys should watch him on the DVD and emulate him. He is a good role model for men and boys. Young women should be stay-at-home daughters and then become stay-at-home wives. There is some great advice against girls leaving home to work and to go to college in the works of Anna Sofia and Elizabeth Botkin in their book *So Much More: The Remarkable Influence of Visionary Daughters on the Kingdom of God*, their audio CD is titled *Strength & Dignity for Daughters* and in their DVD *The Return of the Daughters*. The idea that girls have better things to do than spend time in college is also addressed in the DVD titled *Monstrous Regiment of Women*, in the audio CD by the Botkin sisters *Strength and Dignity for Daughters* and at their website VisionaryDaughters.com.

Doug Phillips writes:

> **Sending Daughters Away**
>
> I am amazed at how many men today have no sense of their clear duty under

biblical law to protect the virginity of their daughters. Once upon a time, it was highly unusual for a woman to travel abroad without the protection of a male guardian, normally her father. Women without male escorts were described as "unprotected ladies." (Aboard the *Titanic*, for example, first class passenger Archibald Gracie was personally responsible for the protection of six women, all of whom survived the night because he made sure they made it to safety.) The notion of protecting women at home and abroad stems from the biblically-mandated obligation not only to protect a woman generally from harm, but from the father's duty to preserve the chastity of his daughters from any who would seek to violate it. It is the unique responsibility of fathers to watch over their daughters. An unwed daughter, be she eighteen or twenty-eight, is under the headship of her father, which means his protection and provision. Protection requires proximity — one of about six reasons why I have concerns about fathers sending their unmarried daughters thousands of miles away from home for extended periods of time to college. Yesterday, I received the following sobering letter from a reader. Her experience is worth noting: "I have listened to your tape *What's a Girl to Do* several times but today a sentence that you spoke jumped out at me as if it was just added to the tape. (Shows how I am always listening while mothering, sewing, and doing other tasks doesn't it! hee hee) Anyway, I had to make a comment about the statement 'When you send your daughters thousands of miles away without even a church, etc., you are asking for trouble' (VERY loosely quoted mind you). I want to comment on that.... I was allowed to go almost two thousand miles away to a Bible school at a young age. I DID have much support by the church but that didn't keep me from foolishly opening the door to my apartment at midnight and being assaulted. The result was the birth of my first child. While this worked out to the glory of God in ways that you can't imagine, this was also the result of my being in a place where I ought not have been. I was out from under my father's protection and this would NEVER have happened in his home. (Not that it wouldn't have happened anyway, but not IN my father's home.) THANK YOU for telling fathers to guard their daughters' safety. Not enough men are willing to be so bold. I praise God that my husband is such a man."

THE KEEPERS OF THE SPRINGS

Unificationists need to uplift the true ideals of traditional Judeo-Christian ethics. Here is a good example. Peter Marshall was one of America's most famous ministers and former chaplain of the U.S. Senate in the 1940s. The following is an excerpt from a sermon called "The Keepers of the Springs":

Once upon a time, a certain town grew up at the foot
of a mountain range. It was sheltered in the lee of the
protecting heights, so that the wind that shuddered at the
doors and flung handfuls of sleet against the window panes was a wind whose fury was spent.
High up in the hills, a strange and quiet forest dweller took it upon himself to be the Keeper of the Springs.
He patrolled the hills and wherever he found a spring, he
cleaned its brown pool of silt and fallen leaves, of mud and
mold and took away from the spring all foreign matter, so that the water which bubbled up through the sand ran down clean and cold and pure.
It leaped sparkling over rocks and dropped joyously in crystal cascades until, swollen by other streams, it became a river of life to the busy town.

Mill wheels were whirled by its rush.
Gardens were refreshed by its waters.
Fountains threw it like diamonds into the air.
Swans sailed on its limpid surface
and children laughed as they played on its banks in the
sunshine.

But the City Council was a group of hardheaded, hard-boiled business men. They scanned the civic budget and found in it the salary of a Keeper of the Springs.
Said the Keeper of the Purse: "Why should we pay this
romance ranger? We never see him; he is not necessary to our
town's work life. If we build a reservoir just above the town,
we can dispense with his services and save his salary."
Therefore, the City Council voted to dispense with the unnecessary cost of a Keeper of the Springs, and to build a cement reservoir.

So the Keeper of the Springs no longer visited the brown pools but watched from the heights while they built the reservoir.
When it was finished, it soon filled up with water, to be sure, but the water did not seem to be the same.
It did not seem to be as clean, and a green scum soon befouled its stagnant surface.
There were constant troubles with the delicate machinery
of the mills, for it was often clogged with slime, and the
swans found another home above the town.

At last, an epidemic raged, and the clammy, yellow fingers of sickness reached into every home in every street and lane.
The City Council met again. Sorrowfully, it faced the city's plight, and frankly it acknowledged the mistake of the dismissal of the Keeper of the Springs.
They sought him out in his hermit hut high in the hills, and begged him to return to his former joyous labor.
Gladly he agreed, and began once more to make his rounds.
It was not long until pure water came lilting down under
tunnels of ferns and mosses and to sparkle in the cleansed reservoir.
Mill wheels turned again as of old.
Stenches disappeared.
Sickness waned
and convalescent children playing in the sun laughed again
because the swans had come back.

Do not think me fanciful
too imaginative
or too extravagant in my language
when I say that I think women, and particularly of our
mothers, as Keepers of the Springs. The phrase, while poetic,
is true and descriptive.
We feel its warmth ...
its softening influence ...
and however forgetful we have been ...
however much we have taken for granted life's precious
gifts we are conscious of wistful memories that surge out of
the past —

the sweet
tender
poignant fragrances of love.

Nothing that has been said
nothing that could be said
or that ever will be said,
would be eloquent enough, expressive enough, or adequate to make articulate that peculiar emotion we feel to our mothers.
So I shall make my tribute a plea for Keepers of the Springs,
who will be faithful to their tasks.
There never has been a time when there was a greater need
for Keepers of the Springs,
or when there were more polluted springs to be cleansed.

If the home fails, the country is doomed. The breakdown of home life and influence will mark the breakdown of the nation.
If the Keepers of the Springs desert their posts or are un-faithful
to their responsibilities the future outlook of this
country is black indeed.

This generation needs Keepers of the Springs who will be courageous enough to cleanse the springs that have been polluted.
It's not an easy task—nor is it a popular one, but it must be done for the sake of the children, and the young women of today must do it.

Peter Marshall goes on to say:

It remained for the twentieth century, in the name of progress, in the name of tolerance, in the name of broadmindedness, in the name of freedom, to pull her down from her throne and try to make her like a man.

NOT PROGRESS

Twentieth-century tolerance has won for woman the right to become intoxicated, the right to have an alcoholic breath, the right to smoke, to work like a man, to act like a man—for is she not man's equal? Today they call it "progress"... but tomorrow, oh, you Keepers of the Springs, they must be made to see that it is not progress.

No nation has ever made any progress in a downward direction. No people ever became great by lowering their standards. No people ever became good by adopting a looser morality. It is not progress when the moral tone is lower than it was. It is not progress when purity is not as sweet. It is not progress when womanhood has lost its fragrance. Whatever else it is, it is not progress!

OLD-FASHIONED MORALITY

We need Keepers of the Springs who will realize that what is socially correct may not be morally right. Our country needs today women who will lead us back to an old-fashioned morality, to an old fashioned decency, to an old fashioned purity and sweetness for the sake of the next generation, if for no other reason.

This generation has seen an entirely new type of womanhood emerge from the bewildering confusion of our time. We have in the United States today a higher standard of living than in any other country, or at any other time in the world's

history. We have more automobiles, more picture shows, more telephones, more money, more swing bands, more radios, more television sets, more nightclubs, more crime, and more divorce than any other nation in the world. Modern mothers want their children to enjoy the advantages of this new day. They want them, if possible, to have a college diploma to hang on their bedroom wall, and what many of them regard as equally important—a bid to a fraternity or a sorority. They are desperately anxious that their daughters will be popular, although the price of this popularity may not be considered until it is too late. In short, they want their children to succeed, but the usual definition of success, in keeping with the trend of our day, is largely materialistic.

As you think of your own mother, remembering her with love and gratitude—in wishful yearning, or lonely longing, I am quite sure that the memories that warm and soften your heart are not at all like the memories the children of today will have... For you are, no doubt, remembering the smell of fresh starch in your mother's apron or the smell of a newly ironed blouse, the smell of newly baked bread, the fragrance of the violets she had pinned on her breast. It would be such a pity if all that one could remember would be the aroma of toasted tobacco or nicotine and the odor of beer on the breath!

The challenge of the twentieth-century motherhood is as old as motherhood itself. Although the average American mother has advantages that pioneer women never knew—material advantages: education, culture, advances made by science and medicine; although the modern mother knows a great deal more about sterilization, diets, health, calories, germs, drugs, medicines and vitamins, than her mother did, there is one subject about which she does not know as much—and that is God.

GODLY WOMEN

The modern challenge to motherhood is the eternal challenge—that of being a godly woman. The very phrase sounds strange in our ears. We never hear it now. We hear about every other kind of women—beautiful women, smart women, sophisticated women, career woman, talented women, divorced women, but so seldom do we hear of a godly woman—or of a godly man either, for that matter.

I believe women come nearer fulfilling their God-given function in the home than anywhere else. It is a much nobler thing to be a good wife than to be Miss America. It is a greater achievement to establish a Christian home than it is to produce a second-rate novel filled with filth. It is a far, far better thing in the realm of morals to be old-fashioned than to be ultramodern. The world has enough women who know how to hold their cocktails, who have lost all their illusions and their faith. The world has enough women who know how to be smart. It needs women who are willing to be simple. The world has enough women who know how to be brilliant. It needs some who will be brave. The world has enough women who are popular. It needs more who are pure. We need women, and men, too, who would rather be morally right than socially correct.

Let us not fool ourselves—without Christianity, without Christian education, without the principles of Christ inculcated into young life, we are simply rearing pagans. Physically, they will be perfect. Intellectually, they will be brilliant. But spiritually, they will be pagan. Let us not fool ourselves. The school is making no attempt to teach the principles of Christ. The Church alone cannot do it. They can never be taught to a child unless the mother herself knows them and practices them every day.

In the DVD *Interview with Nancy Campbell* (www.aboverubies.org) Mrs. Campbell is asked the

question, "What are the keys to a peaceful home and a blessed marriage?" She responds, "You have to get in sync with God. If we're not in sync with God—well, we're not going to make it. In God's plan there is headship. When we reject that we reject God's way and we get out of order and it won't work. To have a marriage that is in harmony and that works, you have to do it God's way. Women reject submission. They reject headship. But what is the fruit of it? What do we see? Broken marriages everywhere. Families broken because they are walking away from God's way. It won't work. We have to do it God's way." When wives and daughters return home to their families they will be "in sync with God."

At her website aboverubies.org Nancy Campbell gives these wise words of advice:

> Make your home a refuge where your husband can find peace and harmony from the strife of the workplace. Daily prepare a nutritious and appetizing meal for him. There is nothing more soothing than coming home to find the table set nicely, the meal ready with delicious smells floating from the kitchen, a peaceful atmosphere, and everyone ready to sit down to the evening meal.
>
> **SWEETEN YOUR MARRIAGE**
> Ouch! This is a challenge to me. If I start to get a little harsh, Colin will say, "Come on, Darling, be sweet to me." And I do have to be reminded! But he never lets me get away with sharp words. He always pulls me up to be gentle and sweet.
>
> How do you sweeten your marriage? With words - sweet words, soft words, encouraging words, cheerful words, positive words, helpful words, supportive words, kind words, wise words, forgiving words, loving words, pleasant words and life-giving words. You can't miss having a successful marriage if you put this secret into practice!
>
> I am always challenged by Song of Solomon 4:11 where the Bridegroom speaks to the bride and says, "Thy lips, O my spouse, drop as the honeycomb: honey and milk are under thy tongue." What drips from the honeycomb? Sweetness! What kind of words drip from your tongue?
>
> **SANCTIFY YOUR MARRIAGE WITH PRAYER AND THANKSGIVING**
> None of us are exempt from trials. We all face hard times in our marriages. What do you do? Grumble and groan? Complain and criticize? Talk negatively and nastily. Oh it is so easy to do this, because this is how we feel. But here's the secret. Take it to the Lord in prayer. Thank Him. Trust Him. All your groaning and blaming one another will not solve the problem. God is your Deliverer! You can trust Him. Learn to hang on to God and look to Him as your source. Don't trust in your husband's ability alone, but in the Lord.
>
> Make it your habit to pray and praise the Lord together daily. If you pray daily together, you'll keep free from "the little foxes that spoil the vines" that eat away at your marriage. Make your home a house of prayer and thanksgiving. Matthew 18:19 is a wonderful promise for married couples. "If two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven." Notice these words – "If two of you…" The two of you together can claim great power and miracles in your relationship and in your home as you faithfully pray together.
>
> Don't bring death to your bed. Most contraceptives either kill newly formed life, or kill the sperm that holds the potential of future life. The Pill, IUD, Depo-Provera,

and Norplant are all abortifacients. They cause the death of a newly formed human being. Keep your bed holy.

INTELLECTUALS IN THE UNIFICATION CHURCH

Let's look at some of the intellectuals in the Unification Church. The thirteen writers of *Educating for True Love: Explaining Sun Myung Moon's Thought on Morality, Family and Society* are blind guides who don't understand the value of the traditional family. In their book they write that they offer "a systematic explanation of Reverend Moon's thinking and endeavors regarding other-centered love." This team of writers are some of the cream of the intellectuals in FFWPU. They are teachers at universities and seminaries. Some have Harvard PhDs. They say what they write are "universal values." They do not write universal values and have not given an explanation of Father's thinking. Pat Boone writes, "I've written, as have a number of others, about the all-out war raging in this country. It's a concerted effort, organized and well funded, against the very principles and practices that have given this country its identity and strength." The core principle of America's Founders is the traditional, biblical family. The 13 writers of this disgusting book are on the wrong side in the war. They do not honor traditional Judeo-Christian ethics of patriarchy.

Tragically these intellectuals in the Unification Movement have written a book that teaches girls it is great to become police officers. In *Educating For True Love* these 13 so-called Unificationists write that "People are a blend of masculine and feminine traits …" and men should get in touch with their feminine side and women need to get in touch with their masculine side. They give the following example of this saying "a policewoman will need to draw upon dispositions that probably are easier for most men to access. All men and women have the capacity to develop the traits that are the strengths of the opposite sex. A male orderly in a senior citizen facility can learn to pay more attention to details, just as a female manager in a large company can learn to tune certain details out." They say, "Either gender can take on just about any role" and men and women should not be concerned about what is masculine and feminine: "Instead of concern about 'manly' or 'womanly' tasks, the spirit of mutual service and sacrifice carries the day."

I couldn't disagree more. At the age of 90 Father said on March 30, 2010, "Men need the womb of a woman to have a baby. The woman should be protected by the husband. They need each other. When you go to the countryside the man must shoot the lion and protect the woman. The woman must have the husband in front of her and protecting her." Father has been consistently saying men protect women for the almost 40 years he has been in America. If you saw a lion outside your door and called the police do you think Father would think it would be a good idea if the cop who came to protect you was a woman? What man would put his wife in front of him? Apparently the men married to woman cops and the wimpy Unificationists who wrote *Educating for True Love*.

Feminists often say that mankind has evolved to a higher level of relationships than that of patriarchy. One Unificationist sister wrote these false words in the *Unification News*, "Patriarchy is a New Testament Age practice that thankfully shall be retired forever. In its place, a true liberation of men and women shall emerge." She goes on to say that there will be better relationships between men and women in the "Completed Testament Age" and it will not be patriarchy. She is wrong. Feminists have not given us a better plan than patriarchy because there is no better plan than godly patriarchy. Anything else is feminism. Either we have a division of labor or we don't. Either women provide and protect or they do not. Either women compete with men or they do not. Either women are objects to one man, their husband, or they are objects to many men in the workplace. The Completed Testament age will be an age of true patriarchy where women never dominate men and are never dominated by men who are not their husband. Father teaches there is a chain of command in a marriage and family. He teaches there is a vertical relationship

between a husband and wife. It is intellectually juvenile to believe that some old-fashioned beliefs are outdated, no longer valid, and obsolete.

Professor Thompson's male bashing

Henry Thompson was a professor at the Unification Theological Seminary. He wrote a male bashing article in the *Unification News* (Feb. 1987): "From time immemorial it seems men have put down women." All men? How about the millions of men who gave their life in defense of women? And are women exempt from criticism? Have there ever been men who did God's will and had wives who hindered them? What kind of help did Noah's wife give? Father says Noah's wife did was not happy. Father's first wife, if I heard correctly, threw literal human feces at him.

Thompson writes that men hate women, especially their mothers, and "spend the rest of their lives getting even, getting back at mother by beating up their wives, pushing women to the sidelines of 'kitchen, cooking and children,' unaware that they thereby perpetuate the very thing they protest." Men, he says, "refuse to grow up." Human history, he says, has been one long nightmare for women who are tortured by men. But how many men have died working at dangerous jobs to build a better world for women? How many have been injured as they walked around construction sites, welded bridges hundreds of feet in the air, dug ditches in 110 degree heat to bring water to those homes where women are living a nightmare cooking dinner? I read a story recently of a man who had never missed work for years at his city's natural gas plant. He got some kind of flu bug or something and reluctantly had to call in sick that day. On that day his buddies that he had been working with for years were all killed from a gas leak at a site they were working. Human history has been cruel to both men and women.

The whole crew the man worked with were men because even though the feminists have worked relentlessly to make everything "equal" they are fighting mother nature and women are just not going to take jobs like laying gas lines. Feminists talk about equality and even make attempts to get women into traditionally male jobs but women instinctively do not voluntarily train to become plumbers, roofers and ship captains. This is one big indication that the feminist crusade for equality is a joke.

Feminists like Thompson are dangerous. They get themselves in positions of power in society and then relentlessly brainwash everyone for their diabolical beliefs. Many seminaries are really spiritual cemeteries. Thompson says men "through the centuries" have used "brute strength, the strength of the beasts to keep the human female in conditions varying from slavery to a 'Doll's House' to quote Ibsen." How much impact did this Cain have on the Unification Movement? Did other professors at UTS challenge and denounce him and make sure UTS graduates are not poisoned by Thompson's lies?

Feminism taught in *Unification News*

In the 1980s there were a few articles in the *Unification News* critical of the traditional family. Henry Thompson had several articles. He wrote, "The Bible is a Living Book. One reason it is a Living Book is that it is reinterpreted for new needs and times. It has been suggested that it is the responsibility of biblical scholars, theologians, preachers and for that matter anyone who takes it seriously, to reinterpret the Bible for each generation. This has been regularly and frequently done."

"Some interpretations, however, persist over generations. One interpretation that has lasted for a very long time concerns I Corinthians 11:3, 'the head of the man is Christ and the head of the woman is her husband.'"

"In Ephesians 5:22-23, the message is repeated. Women are to be subject to their husbands for the man is the head of the woman as Christ is the head of the Church."

"In Colossians 3:18, wives are again told to be subject to their husbands. Verse 19 includes the instruction that husbands are to love their wives and not be harsh with them. This latter point is not heard so often." Oh? Every book I have ever read of a man or a woman who believed in these quotes did their best to live up to them and that includes not being harsh.

Thompson goes on to quote Genesis which says Eve is to be ruled over by Adam and says, "The interpretation through the ages has been that women are subject to men and must submit to them or be submissive to them. In one sense, the interpretation is natural enough. The interpreters have been men!" If you're a man and reading this, how do you feel? If you're a woman reading this, how do you feel about men? The point is clear. Men are jerks. Men are bad. They misuse power.

It is incorrect to think that in the Completed Testament Age men will not be patriarchs. Some truths will continue. Feminists keep experimenting but they just make matters worse. Mary Daly, the feminist theologian, writes what I guess all feminists feel: "As the women's movement begins to have its effect upon the fabric of society, transforming it from patriarchy into something that never existed before — into a diarchal situation that is radically new — it can become the greatest single challenge to the major religions of the world, Western and Eastern. Beliefs and values that have held sway for thousands of years will be questioned as never before." The only result of someone who believes such nonsense is tragedy. Daly, for example, lives a lesbian lifestyle. Nothing will replace the traditional family. Terms used in the church like Parentism, Familyism, Headwing, and Godism mean an ideal world of traditional families. We are not pioneering new relationships between men and women, but building a world where every person will have a traditional family.

Father says: "You women, tell me, are you in the minus or the plus position? Do you say, 'No, I do not accept the minus role! I want women to be in the plus position!' Even if you proclaimed, 'I am a plus!' for a million years, the universe would not accept that." It is crystal clear to me that he is saying men and women are not interchangeable. He says, "You might chant to yourself over and over, 'I am going to become a man,' but nevertheless you will look at yourself and see that you are still a woman. That is absolute. Man is a man; woman is a woman. You cannot change it — forever; here on earth and in the hereafter. Is that too tedious for you?"

Father says, "Do you women say, 'I believe in religion because I want to bring about a revolution in the very order of the universe! We women will become men and the men will become women'? No matter how much you might proclaim such a revolution, the universe will just laugh at you and say, 'No way. Impossible.'"

"You men, no matter how much you might try to become somebody other than yourselves, you cannot do it. Do you say, "Since we are all created equal, men and women should be exactly the same'? Can you act one day like a woman in your relationships and another day like a man? Yes or no?" Father says "No." Father is explaining that to be equal does not mean to be the same. Equality means value, not positions. He says, "When God created human beings equal, that means they are equal in the highest possible goal — the achievement of love. In that realm, men and women are absolutely equal: they are the children of God, period." (9-7-86)

VIVE LA DIFFERENCE

He constantly blasts Western women for acting like men. He says, "The sickness of American women" is due to a reversal of roles. Notice that he will use the word "power": "The master of the American family is woman. Men are overpowered by women in the family. The man dresses the

woman instead of the woman dressing the man. It is total inversion. When the husband comes home from work, the wife who has spent idle time at home commands the man to do things. If the wife greets her husband with a joyful, welcoming heart and invites him to eat right away, happiness dwells with the family." (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

Our primary concern should be what are the god-given roles for men and women. At the website for his television show (www.lovemarriageandstinkingthinking.com) Mark Gungor had a show titled "Feminization of Men in American Culture." He writes:

> For the past several decades we have been instructed to let our feelings have a bigger role in dictating our actions and decisions. Men have been encouraged to get in touch with their "feminine side" and to "follow their feelings". This may be great for women, who primarily feel altruistic and beneficial things, but it doesn't serve men well to act on their feelings. Find out why all the emphasis on feminizing men isn't a very good thing after all.

The Unificationists who wrote *Educating For True Love* are feminists. On the one hand they will write how men and women are profoundly different and then conclude with a vague statement of androgyny. They say "Masculinity emphasizes rules and standards; femininity is mindful of individual differences." This sums up the big difference between these confused Unificationists and me. My book is masculine and their book is feminine. I am into absolute rules and standards for men and women. They are not. I am into absolute, universal laws and principles such as the traditional family. I am into absolutely no woman ever being a police officer who goes off to war against vicious criminals much stronger physically and more aggressive mentally than they are. They applaud women cops as a wonderful success of feminism. I couldn't care less that there may be some body builder woman somewhere who lifts weights and thinks she has the "right" to be a warrior in the police department and the U.S. Marine Corps and then leaves her home to do battle. This ridiculous idea of policewomen getting in touch with their masculine side is presented as being biological. It is junk science. Their analysis is spurious. The last thing women need to do in these Last Days is to become more masculine. Women desperately need in these Last Days to get in touch with their feminine nature. When they do, they will stop being police officers. What these 13 false Unificationists write is a push for feminism which is the core ideology of Satan. Because they have some vague idea that they think they honor the man as the head of the house they can have women do everything a man does outside the home. They have been digested by Satan's culture and have no idea of the enormous harm their false words have on the real lives of people. Their goal of building a world where it is seen as principled and good that a woman is a "manager in a large company" is the exact same goal of Satan. It is his number one goal and it is the goal of these 13 so-called Unificationists. They have nothing to do with the *Divine Principle*, Sun Myung Moon or common sense. By glorifying women cops and women in business they have exposed themselves as the enemy of traditional, patriarchal families. I pity the young people that go to see them in their unprincipled workshops on family and the meaning of the Blessing.

The subtitle for *Educating for True Love* is "Explaining Sun Myung Moon's Thought on Morality, Family and Society." These 13 writers and the president of the International Education Foundation that wrote the preface and allowed this awful book to be printed haven't got a clue to what Sun Myung Moon thinks about family and society. They are the last people on earth that anyone should listen to about what true love is. Their book educates people for feminism, not true love. There are some very good books that do educate for true love. One of them is *So Much More* by Anna Sophia and Elizabeth Botkin. Their book is the exact opposite of the unprincipled writers of *Educating for True Love* who are for women working outside the home for money. The Botkin sisters write that there are no exceptions to the rule that women stay home and not lead men in the workplace:

> We believe that most gifts God gives to women can be developed and used, in some way, for His glory. But we can't let them lead us into fields that are off limits to us. Just because a woman might be brilliantly talented in business affairs doesn't mean she should be the CEO of a giant corporation. But she may use her ability to be an outstanding helpmeet to her husband. Regardless of interests or talents, there are some roles that women aren't meant to assume.

SEX ORGANS

Leane Payne, in her book *Crisis in Masculinity*, quotes the psychiatrist Karl Stern from his book *The Flight from Woman* saying: "The sex organs and the sex cells manifest a polarity and complementarity in morphology and in function. In the act of sexual union the male organ is convex and penetrating and the female organ is concave and receptive, the spermatozoon is torpedo-shaped and 'attacks,' and the ovum is a sphere 'awaiting' penetration. That this polarity and complementariness should not be confined to the physical but also be reflected in the character of man and woman, is a view as old as history. As a matter of fact, in ancient religions and philosophies, sexual polarity and complementariness did not stop at the psychological. Human duality and human mating expressed an antithesis striving for synthesis unceasingly, eternally – in an act of anticipation and restitution of unity. ... it is expressed in religions and philosophies widely separated in time and place.

Yin and Yang

"We find the idea clearly expressed in Taoism and in the Sohar, in the Upanishads and in Christianity. Events in nature and in human history are explained by two principles. In Taoism these are Yin – the feminine which is calm, dark and receptive, and Yang – the male which is active, light and generative. An eternal movement of reciprocity between the two is safeguarded by a higher principle of oneness, the Tao. The rich erotic mysticism of the Kabbala shows a striking resemblance to the Chinese tradition. Heaven is the male principle which, through the arms of the world, is in union with the earth as the womanly principle. Unity arises out of polarity." She goes on to name other cultures and religions from Christian to Assyrian that show the basic truth of polarity.

ANDROGYNOUS FIGURES

Fathers and Mothers should educate their daughters on what their responsibilities are in life. They need to know exactly what God's design for men and women are. They need to be taught what godly masculinity and femininity are. I began this book with a quote of Father saying Americans are "confused" and "do not understand the right order of things." These 13 writers are profoundly confused. They do not understand that a women police officer is a graphic example of how disorderly America has become. They are feminists. These Unificationists are more into unisexism than they are into the differences between men and women. The bottom line for them is some vague notion of co-leadership in the family and society rather than a patriarchal system of leadership. Like all religious feminists I have read, they emphasize androgyny. They say that men and women are to work "as a team … symbolized in mythology by androgynous figures that combine masculinity and femininity and as a result have extraordinary abilities, like the blind Tiresias in Greek mythology who can foresee the future." The very last thing Unificationists need to do is find truth in "androgynous figures" in Greek mythology. This is what Liberals do.

Like Christian feminists they love to emphasize the quote in Ephesians that says we are to submit to one another rather than the quotes about women following men. They quote a former Unificationist intellectual, Peter Brown, who wrote at his website that he and his blessed wife

decided that no one would be "boss" in their home. The American branch of Women's Federation for World Peace quotes him at their website (wfwp.us):

> When my wife and I were first married, we often talked about the so-called "order" between husband and wives, as it was defined by history and society. Our conclusion was that neither the husband nor the wife should be the "boss". Instead, we decided that "true love is the boss".

This is liberal egalitarian marriage mush. It is a justification for men not being the head of their homes and men being the boss in every area of life in society. It's touchy-feeling and weak instead of strong, take-charge, build the kingdom masculine leadership we need. This kind of thinking that is prevalent in the Unification Movement is the main reason it has never got off the ground and swept the earth. God cannot bless a movement of weak men and disorderly women. Sun Myung Moon is the epitome of manliness and the men in his movement are the epitome of girlie men. If we are going to bow down to an ideology it is the godly, patriarchal family, not the androgynous family. The ethic of true love is the traditional family and the old-fashioned ethic of 100% men leading in society and 0% women leading in society.

Another false book by a Unificationist is the author of the book *Understanding Marriage.* He is one of those who teach at these Blessing Workshops. He never quotes Father in his book. Like a true liberal, he focuses on psychological tests like computer dating companies would use and makes no judgment on what are the universal values a marriage couple should live by. He assumes that women work outside the home and his solution to marital harmony is for men to deny human nature and iron clothes. He is just like Willard Harley and his intellectually weightless book *His Needs, Her Needs* that I have already critiqued. The title of his book, *Understanding Marriage*, is a misnomer. This "brother" hasn't any "understanding" of marriage.

MOM'S WORK SCHEDULE IS MAKING KIDS FAT

Feminism not only hurts women and men, it also hurts children. Women have left the home in droves since Father came to America over thirty years ago in 1971 and the result is the massive breakdown of the family. A study in the February 2011 issue of the journal *Child Development* made world-wide news. An article at Yahoo News titled "Child obesity 'linked to working mothers'" said, "The more mothers work during their children's lifetimes, the more likely their kids are to be overweight or obese, according to a US study published on Friday by researchers from American University in Washington, Cornell University in New York State and the University of Chicago. Childhood obesity in the United States has tripled in 30 years. Today, one in three US kids is overweight or obese." They "theorized that because working mothers have little time to shop for healthy food and prepare meals, they and their children eat more fast- and packaged foods, which tend to be high in fat and calories." FoxNews.com's article was titled "Study: Moms' Work Schedule Is Making Kids Fat." More than 70 percent of mothers in the U.S. work outside the home and from every statistic from every angle this social experiment of abandoning "traditional" values has been shown to be a huge tragedy for everyone. If most women had been professional homemakers instead of professionals in the workplace then they would have fed their families better and prevented the epidemic of diseases like diabetes, heart attacks, cancer and obesity and we wouldn't have the massive divorce, adultery, homosexuality and poverty that has put America into a decline that some think will eventually lead to the very end of America.

POLITICAL CORRECTNESS IS CULTURAL MARXISM

At his website (www.worldviewweekend.com) Brannon Howse wrote in an article titled "Political Correctness Is Cultural Marxism" (You can also watch him say this in the documentary DVD that every Unificationist should see — *Agenda: Grinding America Down*

(www.agendadocumentary.com): "Feminism is not about equal rights for women but about the destruction of a patriarchal society in favor of a matriarchal society. In other words, the goal of feminism is the destruction of the family by eliminating the husband and father as the provider, protector, and principled leader of his home."

FEMINISM OF THE AMERICAN MALE

In his article "Feminism is Anti-Family, Anti-Father, and Encourages the Feminization of the American Male" (www.worldviewweekend.com) Brannon S. Howse writes:

> Benjamin Wicker [author of *10 Books That Screwed Up the World: And 5 Others That Didn't Help*] believes Friedan's book [*The Feminine Mystique*] is much longer than needed to convey her belief that "women who are only wives and mothers are secretly or openly miserable because they cannot venture outside the home and cheerfully maximize their potential as human beings in meaningful work, just as men do." In critiquing her obsessive work, he asks an obvious and telling question: What makes Friedan think it is a guaranteed fact that men just can't wait to get up each morning to drive a truck, build a house, pave a road, paint a house, manage a store, fill out people's tax forms, write their wills, or work in a laboratory? Countless men rise dutifully each morning to do jobs they really don't enjoy and, in many cases, jobs they detest. But they do it for love of their families and for the purpose of providing for them. Many men long for the day they can retire and leave behind a job they long since stopped enjoying.
>
> Just because Friedan doesn't want to acknowledge the self-sacrifice of such men does not mean they're not fulfilling a God-given role of protector, defender, and provider. Most women (my wife among them) are happy to have husbands who willingly and eagerly embrace this role so they can pursue their God-given role and passion of being wives and mothers.
>
> Thanks largely to Betty Friedan, feminists claim women do not like strong-willed men who have convictions and the courage of those convictions to lead their families. Reality suggests otherwise, however. Most women want exactly that.
>
> Whether people admit it or not, it is evident that there are God-ordained roles for men and for women—each complementing the other. This is what makes a great marriage great—the different and sometimes opposite but complementary gifts, abilities, insight, and interests of each spouse.

WHO WE ARE

What are the printed basic beliefs of the Unification Church? At their former website www.familyfed.org there was a link on their welcome page to "Who We Are." When you click onto this link it says the following:

> **Who We Are**
>
> The Family Federation for World Peace and Unification (FFWPU) is an international society comprised of families striving to embody the ideal of true love and to establish a world of peace and unity among all peoples, races, and religions as envisioned by Rev. Sun Myung Moon. Many members of the FFWPU accept and follow Reverend Moon's particular religious teaching, the *Divine Principle*, and are known as Unificationists.
>
> The FFWPU was founded in 1997 by Reverend and Mrs. Moon in order to expand the mission of the Unification Church to create an alliance of people who generally share their vision of building God-centered families as the basis for healthy communities, stable societies and a peaceful world.

> FFWPU champions three ideals mentioned in its title: family, peace, and unification. Promoting the values that make for strong families is the central mission of the FFWPU. This means encouraging married couples to practice fidelity; it means parents loving and caring for their children, protecting them and educating them to uphold the highest moral standards; and it means children loving and respecting both their parents and grandparents. The FFWPU also seeks a "culture of peace" by supporting interreligious and international cooperation around the universal themes of family, love, and living for the sake of others. The word Unification in the title refers to the ideal of unity between mind and body, between husband and wife, and between heaven and earth.

HIGHEST MORAL STANDARDS

This vague statement begs many questions. Whoever wrote this says that its "members" are "striving" to "establish a world of peace and unity among all peoples, races, and religions as envisioned by Rev. Sun Myung Moon." They do not say what that vision is or where a person can go to read that vision. They say "many" members believe in the *Divine Principle*. What does this mean? You can be a member and not believe in the "religious teaching" of Sun Myung Moon? Does this make any sense? It goes on to say that members "generally share" a "vision of building God-centered families." What in the world does that mean? They do not define what "God-centered" means. There are many people who believe in God and have very different ideas of what a godly marriage is. They do not define the "three ideals" of "family, peace, and unification." Whoever wrote this believes in "strong families" but doesn't say what "strong" means. There are no details on what the "highest moral standards" are that parents are to teach children. They don't mention the book by the leading intellectuals in their organization *Educating for True Love: Explaining Sun Myung Moon's Thought on Morality, Family and Society* that gives their idea of what true morals are, and they don't give the address and link to their bookstore HSAbooks that sells this uprincipled book that teaches the lowest moral standard of androgyny. Androgyny creates weak people, weak families, weak churches, and weak nations. Like all organized religions they want members to give them a percentage of their income every month. I don't know if the Unification Church wants a tithe of 10 percent of gross, or of net, or if they want more, say 30 percent. Because the movement has not grown for decades I can't see any reason to give them money. The reason they haven't grown is because they teach androgyny instead of the traditional family.

Dinesh D'Souza is a prominent conservative writer. He has a very thought provoking book titled *The Enemy at Home: The Cultural Left and Its Responsibility for 9/11*. At his website www.dineshdsouza.com he writes:

> In this book I make a claim that will seem startling at the outset. The cultural left in this country (such people as Hillary Clinton, Ted Kennedy, Nancy Pelosi, Barbara Boxer, George Soros, Michael Moore, Bill Moyers, and Noam Chomsky) is responsible for causing 9/11.
>
> The left is responsible for 9/11 in the following ways. First, the cultural left has fostered a decadent American culture that angers and repulses traditional societies, especially those in the Islamic world, that are being overwhelmed with this culture. In addition, the left is waging an aggressive global campaign to undermine the traditional patriarchal family and to promote secular values in non-Western cultures. This campaign has provoked a violent reaction from Muslims who believe that their most cherished beliefs and institutions are under assault.

In the book *The Enemy At Home* Dinesh D'Souza writes in his chapter "A World Without

Patriarchy" that much of the world accepts the traditional family such as many Muslims do. He quotes one book saying that many cultures in the world believe: "both men and women willingly adhere to the traditional division of sex roles in the home. Men in these societies are not actively restricting and silencing women's demands. Instead, both sexes believe that women and men should have distinct roles." "There is a growing gap between the egalitarian beliefs and feminist values of Western societies and the traditional beliefs in poorer societies."

He ends his book saying, "We arrive at a sobering truth. In order to crush the Islamic radicals abroad, we must defeat the enemy at home." The enemy at home are the liberals who work to destroy the traditional family. And sadly that means those 13 Unificationists who wrote *Educating for True Love* and lead Blessing workshops for the Unification Church. Parents should not let their children get anywhere near these people.

WAR ON MOTHERHOOD AND BIBLICAL PATRIARCHY

Doug Phillips wrote a statement about motherhood (from a defunct website www.visionforum.com). It seems to me that the 13 Unificationists would object to what he writes. Here are a few excerpts:

> The greatest legacy of the 20th century has been the war on motherhood and biblical patriarchy. Feminists, Marxists, and liberal theologians have made it their aim to target the institution of the family and divest it from its biblical structure and priorities. The results are androgyny, a radical decline in birthrate, abortion, fatherless families, and social confusion.
>
> Incredibly, the biggest story of the 20th century never made headline news. Somehow we missed it. It was the mass exodus of women from the home, and the consequent decline of motherhood. For the first time in recorded history of the West, more mothers left their homes than stayed in them. By leaving the home, the experience and reality of childhood, family life and femininity were fundamentally redefined, and the results have been so bad that if this one trend is not reversed, our grandchildren may live in a world where both the true culture of Christian family life and the historic definition of marriage are the stuff of fairy tales.
>
> Instead of being the blessed guardian of domesticity for society, she is taught that contentment can only be found by acting, dressing, and competing with men. Instead of being an object of respect, protection, and virtue, she sells herself cheaply, thus devaluing her womanhood.
>
> Years of playing the part of a man hardens a woman. It trains women to find identity in the corporation, not the home. It teaches them to be uncomfortable around children and large families—the mere presence of which is a reminder of the antithesis between God's design for womankind and the norms of post-Christian societies.
>
> But women are not the only ones with seared consciences. Men have them too. Consider that fifty years ago a man would have winced to think of female soldiers heading into combat while stay-at-home dads are left behind changing diapers. Today's man has a seared conscience. He no longer thinks of himself as a protector of motherhood, and a defender of womankind. He comforts himself by repeating the mantras of modern feminism, and by assuring himself of how reasonable and enlightened he is — how different he is from his intolerant and oppressive fathers. But in his heart, modern man knows that he has lost something. He has lost his manhood.
>
> To be a man, you must care about women. And you must care about them in the right way. You must care about them as creatures worthy of protection,

honor, and love. This means genuinely appreciating them for their uniqueness as women. It means recognizing the preciousness of femininity over glamour, of homemaking over careerism, and of mature motherhood over perpetual youth. But when women are reduced to soldiers, sexual objects, and social competitors, it is not merely the women who lose the identity given to them by the Creator, but the men as well. This is why the attack on motherhood has produced a nation of eunuchs—socially and spiritually impotent men who have little capacity to lead, let alone love women as God intended man to love woman—as mothers, wives, sisters, and daughters.

Motherhood Will Triumph

There is an important reason why motherhood will not be defeated. The Church is her guardian. As long as she perseveres — and persevere she will — motherhood will prevail.

The Church is the ultimate vanguard of that which is most precious and most holy. She holds the oracles of God which dare to proclaim to a selfish, self-centered nation: "Children are a blessing and the fruit of the womb is His reward." Psalm 127:3.

The Church stands at the very gates of the city, willing to receive the railing complaints of feminists, atheists, and the legions arrayed against the biblical family, and she reminds the people of God: "Let the older women teach the young to love their children, to guide the homes." Titus 2:3-5.

It is this very love of the life of children, this passion for femininity and motherhood which may be God's instrument of blessing on America in the days to come. As the birth rate continues to plummet, divorce rates rise, and family life in America dissipates to the point of extinction, life-loving families will not only have an important message to share, but they will have an army of children to help them share it.

The Question:

Teacher: Susie what do you want to be when you grow up?
Susie: I want to be a doctor.
Teacher: How wonderful! And what about you Julie?
Julie: I want to be a soldier.
Teacher: How commendable! And what about you Hannah?
Hannah: When I grow up I want to be a wife and mother!
Teacher: [dead silence]...

After years of society belittling the calling of motherhood, something wonderful is happening — something wonderfully counter-cultural! In the midst of the anti-life, anti-motherhood philosophies which pervade the culture, there is a new generation of young ladies emerging whose priorities are not determined by the world's expectations of them. They have grown up in homes where fathers shepherd them, where children are not merely welcome, but where they are deeply loved. Some of these women have been home educated, which means that many of them have grown up around babies and their mothers. They have learned to see motherhood as a joy and a high calling, because their parents see it that way.

And when asked about their future, these girls know their own minds. These are the future mothers of the Church. Young women who are not afraid to say that the goal of all of their education and training is to equip them to pursue the highest calling of womanhood, the office of wife and mother.

For thousands of years it was understood that a woman's place is in the home and since Father was born in 1920 Satan has deceived mankind into thinking a woman's place is outside the home. My goal in this book is to give enough information to convince women to go back home and stop creating a unisex, androgynous world where everyone suffers. Women have a clear choice in either accepting traditional books on marriage like Helen Andelin's *Fascinating Womanhood* or living by the feminist values in Betty Friedan's *The Feminine Mystique*. Sadly the Unification Movement (UM) so far has embraced feminism and has never been able to get the movement off the ground. The UM has been a miserable failure for the last 50 years since Father began to teach because the members have been digested by the feminist culture.

I challenge anyone who thinks that Father is not for the traditional family to find quotes in his speeches that clearly say he is for women making money as an absolute value. Those who feel that it is principled for women to compete with men in the marketplace need to find books that explain that view. The books that I have read that push women to leave the home are feminist. I do not see Father pushing women to leave the home and have a career. I do see him talking about men being hunters and women being nesters who care for their husbands when he comes home. Here are a few quotes of Father that clearly say a woman's place is in the home:

> It is natural that a woman should take care of the home while the man should be going out into the world. It seems much more natural that a woman come to the door whenever you go to visit a home.
>
> Look at the birds; the male is larger and more dominant, while the female is smaller and follows the male. It is not always possible for the female to keep up with the pace of the male; therefore, she has a nest to stay in. Likewise with women; you need a comfortable home to stay in and take care of. When you go out and try to keep up with your husband's pace, you may have to take 15 steps to his 10; therefore you get more tired. It is natural for you to want to get back home where you can rest.
>
> A wife shouldn't think that she fulfills her responsibility by just preparing a meal when her husband comes home from work. The most important thing is to share a time of confidential talk of love at the dinner table. If she comforts her husband's hard work of the day with the whispering sound that she had in their first meeting, his fatigue will fade away and their conjugal love will become deeper.
>
> Man has an active and conquering nature. ... Women in the Unification Church should clearly know that man is subject and woman is object.
>
> On the foundation of their oneness, they as a union can serve their new subject. In other words, their union becomes the object in order to make a love relationship with God. Love does not come unless there is a subject-object relationship. Is man plus or minus? (Plus.) What about woman? Is woman plus or minus? (Plus.) You answered both sides are plus; that's why you just want to receive love instead of giving. When man wants to give to woman and woman wants to give to man in a perfect plus and minus relationship, their love will circulate smoothly. The sickness of American women is due to the selfish desire just to receive love from the husband. The master of the American family is woman. Men are overpowered by women in the family. The man dresses the woman instead of the woman dressing the man. It is a total inversion. When the husband comes home from work, the wife who has spent idle time at home commands the man to do things. If the wife greets her husband with a joyful, welcoming heart and invites him to eat right away, happiness dwells with the family. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

> The mother takes care of the baby all day long while her husband is working. In the evening when the husband returns home, he will run to the baby and give it a hug

and kiss. (10-3-95)

TRADITIONALISTS VS. FEMINISTS

In these Last Days there is a clear distinction between good and evil. Each is at its peak. On God's side we have the Bible and Father's words. On Satan's side we have those who disparage the Bible and Father's words. The cornerstone of Sun Myung Moon's teachings deal with masculinity and femininity. For thousands of years Judeo-Christian thought husbands were seen as the "head" of the family. Father echoes that thought. He gives his insights into the traditional family and his words are brilliant. He often taught that men lead and women follow. People who hold this view are called Traditionalists. Those who disagree with this are called Feminists.

In the book *True Family Values* we read:

> The marriage relationship requires different roles. ... The husband is like heaven; the wife is like the earth. ... It is the nature of a man to be forthright and initiate love. It is the nature of a woman to be modest and wait for love. A man is endowed with a mind and body fit to hard labor and to an aggressive public life. A woman has the abilities fit for nurturing children.
>
> **Division of Labor**
>
> There is an economic division of labor between public and private. There is the function of breadwinner ...taken by the father, who goes out into the world to earn a salary. Then there is the responsibility to manage the home and raise the children ...by the mother.
>
> **Complementary Roles**
>
> The complementary roles of husband and wife in a relationship make for a strong and beautiful attraction. In their love, they honor each other's distinctive roles and contribute their different abilities to the welfare of the whole.
>
> Contemporary feminists have advocated absolute equality between men and women, but based on rights, not on love. They are correct to assert that in many occupations and social roles, some women can achieve as much and perform as well as some men. Strong and capable women have been great leaders: for example, Margaret Thatcher, Mother Teresa and Golda Meir. Nevertheless, feminism has done a disservice to family life. It is paradoxical but true that spurning the natural differences between men and women, feminism has impoverished and weakened the family. Families centered on true love start by honoring the natural diversity of roles out of which love grows, and end by achieving true equality.

In the chapter titled "Husband and Wife" in *World Scripture: a Comparative Anthology of Sacred Texts* we read: "But love is not merely a matter of unfettered emotion. Subsequent passages spell out some of the responsibilities of marriage for both the husband and wife. The husband should honor his wife, never oppress or mistreat her, and always be faithful—and the wife should do likewise. The scriptures of all religions also distinguish between roles of the husband and wife: the husband protects and supports his wife, the head of the household yet deferring to his wife in domestic affairs. The wife is obedient to her husband, serves him with kindness, and takes primary responsibility for raising the children. While of late these traditional roles have been questioned, they have served to strengthen the bonds of family through every generation." The following are a

few quotations in the book:

> "In the family women's appropriate place is within; men's, without. When men and women keep their proper places they act in accord with Heaven's great norm. Among the members of the family are the dignified master and mistress whom we term father and mother. When father, mother, sons, elder and younger brothers all act in a manner suited to their various positions within the family, when husbands play their proper role and wives are truly wifely, the way of that family runs straight. It is by the proper regulation of each family that the whole world is stabilized." (Confucianism. *I Ching 37: The Family*)

> "You wives, be submissive to your husbands, so that some, though they do not obey the Word, may be won without a word by the behavior of their wives, when they see your reverent and chaste behavior" (Christianity. *Bible*, 1 Peter 3:1).

> "Wives, be subject to your husbands, as to the Lord. For the husband is the head of the wife as Christ is the head of the church." (Christianity. *Bible*, Eph. 5:22-23)

Here are a few more quotes I have found from other religions and philosophies:

> "By a girl, by a young woman, or even by an aged one, nothing must be done independently, even in her own house. In childhood a female must be subject to her father, in youth to her husband, when her lord is dead to her sons; a woman must never be independent" (Hinduism. *Laws of Manu*, V, 147-8).

> "It does not belong to a woman to determine anything for herself, but she is subject to the rule of Three Obediences: when young she must obey her father, when married she must obey her husband, when a widow she has to obey her son" (Confucius).

Father teaches the exact same ideology. He gave a speech titled "Address at the Eighth Anniversary of the 777 Couples Blessing" on October 22, 1978. He even chose it as being so important that he put this speech into his book *God's Will and the World*. In the speech he says "the husband is the head of the household." In another speech he said, "The head of your family is your father, not your mother. He stands in the position of the family king. How about American families? There are many, various fathers and mothers. Everything is confused and mixed up. This shows that they have completely disregarded this principle." (6-9-96)

So we can see Father is teaching what the Bible says. Feminists have a hard time seeing how a man can have a vertical relationship with his wife and still respect her. They like the word "equality" which for them means "same". We are using labels here and there are some variations in thought in both camps but basically there is a clear-cut division between both sides. Traditionalists believe a woman's primary job is in the home and Feminists see this as an insult and disrespectful because she is needed outside the home to compete with men and even lead men in all areas of life—even the military. Traditionalists believe a woman can serve outside the home in a voluntary way such as many women did in the 19th century with organizations like Young Women's Christian Association (YWCA) and less today with charitable organizations. The slippery slope of feminism ends with women in the military. Feminists are deeply confused about sexuality. They prefer women in combat over old-fashioned chivalry. Nineteenth century America (and before) was mainly Traditionalist and the 20th century is mainly feminist. How did this happen? Mainly from the intense witnessing of feminists. The most famous and probably most powerful feminist was Susan B. Anthony who worked tirelessly in the 19th century to destroy the

biblical traditional family. And she and other feminist activists were successful in making feminism the ruling ideology of America and much of the world today. Roles are blurred so much that there is an atmosphere that encourages homosexuality. Feminism's crusade for androgyny and blurring the roles of men and women leads inexorably to homosexuality. Francis Schaeffer, in *The Great Evangelical Disaster* says: "If we accept the idea of equality without distinction, we logically must accept the idea of homosexuality. For if there are no significant distinctions between men and women, then certainly we cannot condemn homosexual relationships."

One of the most difficult concepts for people to grasp is the idea that the man of the house has the final say. He makes the final decisions. C.S. Lewis, one of the greatest Christian writers of the 20th century, says democracy cannot work in a family in his classic *Mere Christianity:* "In Christian marriage the man is said to be the `head'. Why should there be a head at all—why not equality? The need for some head follows from the idea that marriage is permanent. Of course, as long as the husband and wife are agreed, no question of a head need arise; and we may hope that this will be the normal state of affairs in a Christian marriage. But when there is a real disagreement, what is to happen? Talk it over, of course; but I am assuming they have done that and still failed to reach agreement. What do they do next? They cannot decide by a majority vote, for in a council of two there can be no majority. Surely, only one or other of two things can happen: either they must separate and go their own ways or else one or other of them must have a casting vote. If marriage is permanent, one or other party must, in the last resort, have the power of deciding the family policy. You cannot have a permanent association without a constitution." And that constitution should be based on the words of truth in the Bible, words in books by champions of God and Father's words.

Unificationists who believe in the feminist marriage and family often use the words in the beginning of the *Divine Principle* in the Exposition book that say men and women interchange. In the book *True Family Values* the Unificationist authors write these false words: "The complementary roles of husband and wife in a relationship make for a strong and delightful attraction. In their love, they honor each other's distinctive roles and contribute their different abilities to the welfare of the whole. Moreover, as they become one in love, they revolve about each other in circular motion, moving in and out of each other's roles. In true love, therefore, husband and wife are equal." A husband and wife never change roles. For example, women should never interchange with men when they go off to war. Father explains that there is circular motion but it is the woman revolving around the man who remains a stable center. He teaches that God is the center of the universe and every person revolves around Him: "Just as an electron revolves around a proton, human beings are made to revolve around God. God can pursue the providence for restoration because the human mind, as an electron, naturally relates to God's mind as its nucleus, its proton." (3-17-1957)

Men are ordained by God to hold leadership in the home, church, business, and government. The woman's role is to follow her husband and be the leader of her children when he is not at home. God's structure is hierarchy. Those on the Cain side in our fierce cultural war use words like equal, interchange, and circular. Jane Fonda is one of the most famous Hollywood stars and political activists of the 20th century. In 2003 she gave a speech at a feminist organization working on the unprincipled goal of electing a woman as President of the United States. She denounced patriarchy as "hierarchical" and feminism as "circular." She says that 10,000 years of patriarchy must end because it hurts men just as much as women. She said, "the Male Belief System, that compartmentalized, hierarchical, ejaculatory, and centric power structure that is Patriarchy, is fatal to the hearts of men, to empathy and relationship." This is Satan's greatest lie. Jane Fonda said these false words when she was in her sixties. As she said them she did not have a husband and has had many failed marriages in her life. The proof of the pudding is in the eating.

Godly patriarchy works. The men and women who write books on patriarchy and women submitting to their husbands have happy marriages and happy children. I have talked to Aubrey and Helen Andelin. They built a magnificent marriage and their 8 children have given them over 60 grandchildren and 50 great-grandchildren so far. Betty Friedan had a terrible marriage. Judith Hennesse wrote in her biography of Friedan, "With the aid of therapy, all three children managed to distance themselves from the emotional fallout of the marriage." There is a black and white, good and evil, Cain and Abel choice we all have to make. Either Father is right that men are bones and women are flesh or they are not. Either Father is correct in saying women follow men or he is wrong. There is no third way. There is no logic and common sense in the Left's ideology. Does Jane Fonda think that when a woman becomes President she would have a "circular" relationship with her Vice-President and they would interchange? Of course not. Why? Because there is a hierarchical relationship here.

The most famous woman in the 20th century who fought feminists like Jane Fonda is Phyllis Schlafly. She writes the opposite of Jane. In her book *The Power of the Christian Woman* she says, "The Christian Woman recognizes that there is a valid and enduring purpose behind this recognition of different roles for men and women which is just as relevant in the twentieth century as it was in the time of Paul.

"Any successful vehicle must have one person at the wheel with ultimate responsibility. When I fly on a plane or sail on a ship, I'm glad there is one captain who has the final responsibility and can act decisively in a crisis situation. A family cannot be run by committee.

"Every successful country and company has one 'chief executive officer.' None successfully functions with responsibility equally divided between cochairmen or copresidents. The United States has a president and a vice-president. They are not equal. The vice-president supports and carries out the policies enunciated by the president. Likewise with the presidents and vice-presidents of all business concerns. Vice-presidents can and do have areas of jurisdiction delegated to them, but there is always one final decision maker. The experience of the ages has taught us that this system is sound, practical, and essential for success. The republic of Rome tried a system of two consuls of equal authority, and it failed. If a marriage is to be a successful institution, it must likewise have an ultimate decision maker, and that is the husband."

MAN IS PRESIDENT OF THE FAMILY

Father says, "Now you know what is the ideal family. The father is there representing heaven, the mother represents earth and then the children represent all mankind. Also, the family represents the sovereign nation. The father is like the 'president' of the family; that means he must take responsibility for upholding all the laws and orderliness of the family. He must be the one ultimately to distinguish between what is right and wrong within that family. If the father is in the position like a judge, then the mother's position is like that of a lawyer. The position of prosecutor is filled by the law itself. We know that it is necessary to uphold the laws of a country. Likewise, within each family there should be laws which are upheld and enforced by the father. That is one of the father's responsibilities. There is a great distance today between this original standard and the reality of today's families." The "original standard" Father is talking about is the biblical standard of the traditional family.

ONE SMALL COUNTRY

Father goes on to explain that a family is a "micro-country": "The nation is basically a collection of families in which all the generations are included. Each extended family symbolizes one small country. You must make your family one which is loved and approved of by all those around you—your parents must approve and your children must appreciate it. That is when the man actually becomes the 'president' of his family, which is a micro-country" (6-6-82).

The relationship between the President of the United States and the Vice-President is hierarchical. But it is harmonious. They each have equal value as human beings but they have different roles and responsibilities. The attitude of the Vice-President toward the President should be the attitude we all have toward those in authority over us. Rarely have I heard of a Vice-President being disunited with a President in public or getting angry at the President and calling him names in private when he felt the President was wrong. Once a President makes a final decision the Vice-President and the rest of the White House should follow with their whole heart.

MAN IS KING OF FAMILY

There are three governments: the family, church and state. If we believe that God's order is that a man is the head of his family, then we are compelled to take logic to its conclusion and say that only a man is head of the church and the state. Father always says men are subject and women are object. Never, in 50 years, has he ever said that God made women to be subject and men to be object. He often chastises American sisters for being so aggressive and domineering and rejecting their position: "In this world man stands in the position of king. King is subject. Woman is not subject, no matter how proud a position she possesses the object cannot control the subject. American women, be careful. Women need to follow behind their husbands. I can feel that American women don't feel so good about that idea. No matter how you may feel, you have to take the opposite way from now on. America needs *Divine Principle*. This is not Father's viewpoint. This is the divine perspective. You have to know that clearly. Women have wide hips like a cushion whereas men have narrow hips and wide shoulders. So you see they complement one another; woman is wide at the hips and man is wide at the shoulders. Combined into one they make a square box, a secure foundation." (4-18-96)

Father teaches:

> Man and woman are quite different aren't they? Quite different or absolutely different? Absolutely different! Women are always looking at the earth as they move around. Men will look to heaven. Women wonder, "What is he looking for? What can he find up there?" But if he doesn't look up, he loses the center. That means you too will lose the center. Women can only enjoy their freedom when revolving around their husband.
>
> In English we say True Parents, but in Korean there is no such word as parents. We say father and mother. Parents is said "father and mother: pu mo. When we say pu mo, who is first, father or mother? Father is always first. What do women say when they talk about their parents? Do you say father and mother too, or do you say it backwards? Women say it the same too. If you always place your father first and mother second, how can man and woman ever be equal? You are always discriminating by putting someone first and someone second. Isn't that appropriate though, because women are always smaller and less strong. Men are always bigger and stronger. No record shows any woman winning over men in the Olympic championships. (3-15-1992)
>
> Now it seems that many women want to become men. They say, "Why not? We can become bigger and more powerful and eventually we will be able to rule over men, the way they have been ruling over us." Some contemporary women have this kind of thinking. Those women are American women. I do not wish to undermine or ridicule American women, but this is a fact. No Korean women are espousing such ideals.

> When a man and woman dance together, what is their usual direction — do they dance around in a clockwise or counterclockwise direction? They move to the right side, in a clockwise direction, but why? It is because the man is leading. If the woman were to lead, then they would dance in the other direction. These things are not just accidentally determined. *(January 5, 1992)*

In *Cheon Seong Gyeong* Father teaches: "Man … is the center around which she revolves. He doesn't revolve around her. When he stands in the center, she naturally centers on him." (page 1728)

Andrew Wilson revised the 1991 *World Scripture* book and in *World Scripture and the Teachings of Sun Myung Moon* he writes, "Sun Myung Moon's thought resonates with the dreams of the pioneering American feminist Susan B. Anthony." This is false. Sun Myung Moon's thought is the exact opposite of Susan B. Anthony. Anthony said women do not need the protection of men. This is opposite of Bible and thousands of years of history where men did not put women in harm's way. She said, "Women must not depend upon the protection of men but must be taught to protect herself." She denounced the belief that men are the heads of their families: "The old idea that man was made for himself, and woman for him, that he is the oak, she the vine, he the head, she the heart, he the great conservator of wisdom . . . she of love, will be reverently laid aside with other long since exploded philosophies of the ignorant past." She mistakenly believes that a man is "made for himself." Men are made as objects to God and Christ. They are followers just as women are followers. She is arrogant to disregard the "philosophies of the past" that is in the Bible and other good books by those who came before us. She taught that the world of the home is too restrictive and narrow and the man's world in the marketplace is exciting and where you grow and reach your full potential. Equality means men need to share in ironing the clothes. This is Satan's ideology. It denies common sense, reality, and human nature. It is an ideology of death for the marriage, death for families and death of nations. Just because some feminists have happy marriages and homes that doesn't mean anything anymore than some people win big in Las Vegas and therefore we should all invest our money by putting our savings into slot machines and betting on horse races.

Father says these insightful words about some of the deep differences between men and women:

> You can imagine how difficult words and concepts are, especially if you try to analyze the elements of something like perseverance. Whether in the West or East, men are generally more successful than women in putting up with something. Of course, some men do not measure up in this way, but as a rule men are usually more persevering. This concept has played a key role in the dispensation.
>
> In daily life, which sex is usually more disruptive or problem-causing? Percentage-wise, it is usually women. What contributes to that? It is mainly because they lack perseverance. If you strike a piano key the tone is played instantly. Because women have this same tendency to react quickly, God has tried not to use women as central figures in the dispensation. Do you think God acted wisely? If God's dispensation were easy, it would have been much more effective to use women in order to finish quickly. They mature rather quickly and can be very handy, whereas men take longer to grow up and during this time can't give much service or assistance.
>
> A man who is called by God will usually respond after looking around trying to figure out where the voice came from that is calling him. After he grasps all that, then he will say yes. That kind of man is necessary in the dispensation. If anything his response is rather deliberate, not sudden. He is like a bear, which will climb trees many times before learning that he will only hurt himself because he often

falls. Yet once he starts walking he can go on for ten or twenty years and it doesn't bother him. The person best suited for the dispensation is that kind of person. He should not be dumb though; He should have keen, sensitive thinking, but not be one to act impulsively. That combination is quite necessary.

If I asked the women who would like to marry that kind of man, I think not many would respond, especially Western women. Imagine how nerve-wracking it would be to live with such a man; if you spoke to him it would take him a long time to respond, and then he would not respond to your wish as much as to what he thinks would be the best way. His wife would like to express keen emotion, but he will just think deeply and come to his own conclusion. A very sensitive woman would get thinner and thinner with this kind of husband. It would be like eating yards and yards of thread, when you can hardly swallow one foot.

What is the work of dispensation like? It is something like continuing to swallow hundreds and thousands of fathoms of thread, one after another. Which would be easier, to swallow all that thread, or to complete the dispensation? Swallowing thread might be easier. How can we imagine women doing that? Those women who are confident they are different, raise your hand. God knows best, however, and as a result He has refrained from using women as central figures. I would rather have the women, even Mother, leave the room and then discuss the important work of dispensation with the men. In this Mother is outdone by her own young son. If Western women hear this they will really protest that I am discriminating. They can't tolerate that idea.

A man who is caught and tortured by the enemy can tolerate it better than women. During wartime in years past a conquering army would let the women live, but not the men or even the young boys. Women are less likely to seek revenge, while once boys grow up they would seek retaliation. The dullest woman will have a keener, quicker response than the dullest man. We have to conclude that it was wise of God not to use many women in dispensational history. You women might think you have no reason to feel good at this point!

Whatever mistakes were made in dispensational history usually resulted from a lack of perseverance and deep thinking. Of all the creation, who would have tolerated the most and contemplated the most deeply? What kind of man? Would he be the one with power, or a man without power who had to suffer and endure? The weak man may be righteous but because he is in a powerless position, he follows the tradition of perseverance and contemplation. Such men know it is wise not to speak, so they endure. Why do they not act? They refrain in order to become better than whoever is in power and make sure by long tolerance that they are superior. They persevere for the future, regardless of the present.

This has been true throughout history. When things become difficult the man who thinks deeply will continue doing so, without acting impulsively, but he will resolve to start acting and speaking as soon as his foundation is built up. If you look back at history does it look the same to you? If God is such a person isn't it logical that the country God will use to pursue the work of restoration will be a people who think in this deep way? God knows better than anyone else that this is an important factor, so He will naturally look for that kind of person and organization. (8-7-78)

Phyllis Schlafly writes of this persevering nature of men: "Women are different from men in dealing with the fundamentals of life itself. Men are philosophers, women are practical, and 'twas

ever thus. Men may philosophize about how life began and where we are heading; women are concerned about feeding the kids today. No woman would ever, as Karl Marx did, spend years reading political philosophy in the British Museum while her child starved to death. Women don't take naturally to a search for the intangible and the abstract." Men are from Mars and women are from Venus. They really are from different planets, from different worlds. Men are far more tenacious than women.

Father explains that "God is subject and His creation is object." He teaches that our mind is subject over our body. Let's look at the subject/object relationship between men and women. Feminism is the ideology that teaches men and women are interchangeable. Father speaks strongly against the so-called women's liberation movement: "Women are the most responsible for bringing the children into unity with the four position foundation. A woman played the key role in bringing down the dispensation when fallen Eve persuaded Adam into her circle. There is a dangerous situation today in America in which women exercise tremendous influence over men. If they can bring their men to the righteous side, bearing the cross without complaint, then they are great women, but most likely they will not do that. The men usually listen and follow the women.

Men Should Restore Subjectivity

"The men have to restore their subjective role. Women's liberation has gone too far so there should be men's liberation! The other day I saw one man on the street wearing signs saying that men's rights have to be restored, and men should be liberated from the tyranny of women. What I am saying today is not just my own thinking, but derives from the cosmic principle. If you violate these laws on earth, you are destined to hell. If you women think I am being unfair, you can picket and demonstrate against me. But first ask God if you should demonstrate, and He will answer you very clearly. You should know this truth completely. Would you want to influence your man away from God's way?" ("The Original Base of Cosmic Completion" December 16, 1979)

Some would argue that these quotes were made long ago and now the dispensation has changed. They say Father has fundamentally changed from teaching ancient biblical ideas to modern Competed Testament ideas that are in sync with Susan B. Anthony's feminism. The problem with this is that Father kept saying men lead and women follow up until the time he died. In 2011 (February 16), one year before he died at the age of 92, he said, "What is the difference between a father and a mother? Are they the same? Since God needs to give from upper position, man is bigger than woman. That's why women, who cannot take the lead, must follow man."

One reason there is so much feminism in the UM is because Father has made some statements that it is time for women to lead. Men have failed to make the UM grow and so women should make the UM a powerful movement for change. They should follow Father instead of their "archangel" husbands. I often hear Unificationist brothers bash men in general, go out of their way to apologize for some men who have hurt women, and say they are not feminized, emasculated, weakened or hurt in any way when the women in their lives work for the feminist utopia of matriarchy. They think they are respecting their wives and daughters if they join the military so they can be all they can be. I don't read Father that way. He rarely mentioned this idea of women taking leadership and when he does we have to take into account the context of how he said it and the context of all his speeches for over 60 years. He often taught that men lead and women follow.

ERA OF WOMEN

Let's look at some quotes of Father on this. In his speech titled "Congratulatory Address to International Women's Federation for World Peace" at the inauguration of WFWP at the Main Olympic Stadium in Seoul, Korea on April 10, 1992 he said this is the "Age of Women"

This is the meaning of the Salvation Providence carried out through religion. As a religious leader, I have consistently preached that God's Salvation Providence carried out through religion represents our final hope for the world.

Throughout history, countless leaders and heroes have dedicated their lives to building a better world, but there has never been any fundamental change in the fact that we live in a world of wars and evil. Political and economic means are insufficient for bringing such fundamental change to the world.

There is no possibility that politics and economics alone can save the world from the threshold of the crime and decadence that we see around us today.

This fact is clearly illustrated by the superpowers and developed countries of today's world. The decline of morals has become a global phenomenon, and presents a serious threat to the future of humankind.

The salvation of this world can only be accomplished by a leader who, by giving truth and True Love, is able to unite the fundamental aspects of the teachings of the major religions and perform in a unified manner the roles of the various messianic figures.

In each religion, we can see that the women are more devout than men, and also far outnumber the men. The Bible says that true faith on the part of a Christian means to prepare oneself as a bride who will someday receive the messiah of the second advent as her bridegroom. This biblical teaching means that all religions have been prepared by God so that they may fulfill a female role, that is, the role of the bride, in the presence of the coming messiah.

The women of this age are the true workers who, in the presence of the True Parents who come as the Messiah, will cleanse this world of war, violence, suppression, exploitation and crime led by men. Women will build an ideal world filled with peace, love and freedom. It is also up to women to see that the evil forces, primarily led by men, that opposed and persecuted the forces of righteousness and good, are now completely eradicated so that they cannot cause any more trouble.

Twice he said that “politics” and “economics” will not solve our deepest problems. Father’s focus is religion. He says, “Religion forms the fundamental means by which God plans to save this world.” Politics and economics are important. He spent a billion dollars or more on the conservative *Washington Times* newspaper to counter the liberal *Washington Post*. But when we read Father in context over 60 years he shows little interest in anything other than religion. He sees women as more religious and therefore they should not just selfishly enjoy their home but be public minded and witness. He sees women as the glue that holds families together. They have great influence in creating unity between the children and with the children. Family is number one for Father and he sees that to restore the failure of Eve women should work to bring unity in their home unlike that of Adam and Eve’s family. Doing this will solve all our problems.

In *Cheon Seong Gyeong* there is a few pages in the section titled “The Unification Movement and the role of women” that says there is an “Era of women” but the focus of Father is women witnessing. He says, “You must bring 120 families.” He says men are archangels and failed but I don’t read into his words that men have to go home and join men in strolling babies in the park while the wife is a soldier overseas risking life and limb. Father gives no specific details. In the

speech titled "A Providential View of the Pacific Rim Era in Light of God's Will: The United States and the Future Direction of the United Nations and the World" given March 17, 2007 he says we are in the "women's era" and never gives one sentence of explanation or practical advice on how to do this. Members often use this "Pacific Rim" speech to say we are now a feminist movement but I see nothing there.

And what do we make of this quote: "The era of women's push for supremacy is an extraordinary but temporary period of God's dispensation, stretching from 1918-1988. During that period the true relationship between men and women will be restored. American women may think I am advocating their humiliation, but what do you think? When the 74 couples were being matched for the blessing I asked the brothers what nationality they wanted their wives to be, and nine out of ten said they preferred Oriental women." (6-12-77)

In his speech "Resurrection and Liberation of the World's Women – Part II" (February 1, 1993) he goes into a little of how women are to work:

> From now on the blessed couples should lead a good, wealthy, prosperous life.
>
> Leah was the first daughter and Rachel the second. So centering on Laban's wife they should have become one, but Laban's wife did not take care of this. If these two had made harmony, the children would have united too. … Women failed to bring unity among their sons. In Jesus' time, John the Baptist and Jesus, and Jesus' mother Mary and John's mother Elizabeth, should have become one. If Mary and Elizabeth had become one and Jesus and John had become one, they would have protected Jesus and he would not have died.
>
> God works the restoration through a formula, and so will we. We all have grandmothers, aunts and cousins. If these women play the crucial role and bring unity, things will happen easily. But if women know such a principle, they can bring unity. … In the history of restoration, when women spoke loudly, or when women had a voice, always there were complications. This is a result of the fall. So, during this restoration time of history, women have to be obedient and feel reserved. This is a virtue. That was the beginning of the fall, because Eve asserted herself. So to go backwards, she has to be unusually obedient. .. If there is any group who hates this course the most, you guessed it, it's American women. But you must enforce this 100% and more. American women have a tremendous edge. If American women decide to follow this direction, everybody will follow. That's true. Father isn't criticizing these American women here today. You are the ones who can show the first example in history. You American women here have an internal content completely different than outside American women. You must be the banner bearers, the flag bearers. After being born again and resurrecting, a woman leads to all levels of liberation. Actually, Eve was the key to the fall. Therefore, it is dependent largely upon women to restore.
>
> So this is an inevitable conclusion. In order to do this, who plays the key role? Women. Who becomes the key person to attain unity among the family, and all levels? Women. Women play the key role. The Divine Principle agrees: because women failed, they must now restore. … Women fell and they lost God and True Parents too. Now it is up to her to restore God and the True Parents. ... So, that movement is the movement of the Women's Federation for World Peace. The women become one with their children and one with the husband, and thus the family is restored. Mothers play the key role. … Resurrection of the world's women

> will lead to the liberation of all the world, not only women, but also men and the children. It is the responsibility of women who brought death to man and the children. … This is the women's era.
>
> The President of our country should be a woman also. That day must come soon. Women must do that and bring the victorious results to men. Not an individual President, it should be a family President. A family unit should actually be elected as President based on the unity of the family. The criterion for eligibility for President will be the level of unity in the family, which establishes a good tradition. Everybody will know who has the best tradition, so elections will become automatic. The utmost traditional family will become the President. What about democracy? Well, the day of democracy is past. Democracy is transient.

He says women play the "crucial role" to "bring unity" in the family. I don't see any emphasis on being in the workplace dominating men as CEO's in business. About politics, well, even when he talks about a woman being President he qualifies it by saying he is not for an individual woman and he is not into democratic elections. He sees an ideal world where the best "traditional" families will be uplifted as role models without being voted on. Everyone will just see it.

Father often says we live in a world of chaos. On January 1, 1992 he said, "Today, the entire world is in confusion." You can't get more confused than thinking women in West Point is advancement of civilization. Because of feminism nations are literally dying from the death of the family. Many nations are not even producing at replacement level. The solution is for women to restore Eve and bring unity in their family and witness at the kitchen table so the UM can finally grow. The last thing we need is the vile, satanic ideology of Elizabeth Cady Stanton and Susan B. Anthony. There are some videos of traditional wives you can watch on YouTube.com. For example, Courtney Joseph has videos. One of them is her appearance on the Rachael Ray show where she says her husband is her career. True Mother made Father her career and so should every woman. Courtney has a wonderful book titled *Women Living Well: Find Your Joy in God, Your Man, Your Kids, and Your Home*. Check out her website: www.womenlivingwell.org

YEONAH MOON – ROLE MODEL

Yeonah Moon is a wonderful Unificationist role model for a godly woman. Be sure to watch her videos at www.Sanctuary-pa.org and Facebook for Sanctuary Church. https://www.facebook.com/pages/Newfoundland-Sanctuary-Church/616977458412272.

I challenge every Unificationist family to be live by traditional family values where women are stay-at-home moms (or as Mary Pride prefers to say: Occupation: Homeworker) who witness and get members instead of leaving their "nest" and leading other men in the marketplace.

CHAPTER FIVE

DYNASTY

The fifth value is for each Unificationist to build a godly dynasty. Colin Campbell says in a video titled "Above Rubies Vision" at YouTube.com, "Every man should aim to be the founder of a dynasty for God."

Father often says we are to honor the commandment to multiply in Genesis 1:28 and create a godly lineage. Father commands us to never use birth control and to have the goal of having big families. In the book *Raising Children in God's Will*, a collection of excerpts from some of Father's speeches, he says:

> You must not use birth control. In the satanic world they will have more birth control and in the church we will have lots of children. That also applies to True Mother. We have decided we should have at least twelve children. So we are heading for that goal. Do we have many? We now have eight brothers and sisters, so that is close to twelve. If we quit having daughters and have only sons, we might have fifteen or sixteen. So when I gave mother this task, she was worried. She even said that she wished she could expect the second baby before giving birth to the first one.
>
> Even mother is doing this, so what right do you people have to use birth control?

Sun Myung Moon says he gave his wife a "mandate":

> Mother has carried many children and her physical ordeal is great, but my mandate to her was that she must have twelve children. Should Mother pray to God, "My husband is crazy.
>
> How can I have twelve children? Could you somehow convince him to be satisfied with less than that?" Mother is precious because she is grateful to God for her mission. It is an incredible mission but that's why she is even more grateful. That is also why each child is more beautiful and greater than the ones before. Then Mother wants to give more because God is rewarding us in such a fantastic way. God shows His love by blessing this family. (7-8-79)

ONE OF EACH SEX

> All the children will extend their arms and embrace one another and, including their mother, become one big harmonious circle. How wonderful this is. Amen. How about that? Woman's purpose is so precious. Should we have as many children as we can afford, or just a limited amount? (Many.) Many or money? [Laughter] There are some women who want to have only one child. But why did God create two breasts? These two breasts are indicative that you should have at least two children. If you have only boys or only girls, one way or another the human race will end. Father concludes that unless you give birth to a boy and a girl, at least one of each, you cannot say that you are a mother or a father. No matter what, you need at least one boy and one girl.

Should we have as many children as possible, or only a limited number? (Many.) With your twelve children sitting in front of you and your husband sitting behind them, won't you feel really grateful to your husband to see that, in part, the children resemble him? Have you ever thought that your husband is the one who gave you the opportunity to use your breasts and hips most fully for the original purpose? Who is the one who caused the utilization of your breasts and hips most fully? The father of the family. You all experience your monthly period. Why? Does that indicate that you wish to reject your husband or still welcome him? ("Following the Cosmic True Love Way" May 5, 1996)

If you get married and your husband wants to have children but you keep putting it off, what will happen? You only have a certain number of years in which you can give birth to children. ("The Start of the 40-day Witnessing Condition" July 4, 1978)

When I visited Barrytown I asked the seminarians if they would use birth control after they got married. If Jacob and his wife had not wanted too many babies then Joseph, one of the youngest, would never have been born, and if he had not been born there would have been no chance for the Exodus of the Israelites from Egypt. I have many older brothers and sisters. If my parents had used birth control and only wanted one or two children, would there have been any chance for me to be born? That would have been great for you because then no one would push you out! In my own family, the farther you look down the line of children, the brighter and more capable the children are.

How do you know what kind of son or daughter you may have in the future? God may want to give a special kind of son or daughter to my family a few years from now who may have the power to govern the world or who may discover some invention to speed the work of God. Who knows! But if Mother and I stop having children then when I go to spirit world God will accuse me of messing up His dispensation. Now you know whether or not birth control is best, right? ("Resurrected Kingdom of God" March 26, 1978)

I talked about birth control in Barrytown. What do you think about birth control? If the people of Jacob's era had practiced birth control, Joseph wouldn't have come into being. If God prepared a man who had the scientific ability to enable people to see God through television, but due to birth control he were not born, that generation would have no excuse in front of the spirit world and humanity. Heavenly sons and daughters should live more happily than anyone else, and should bear more children than people in the satanic realm. Maybe twelve children will be average for you. Continuously give birth to children. Unification Church members cannot practice birth control. You should bear more than ten children. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

DOZENS

Then how many dozens would you like to produce? The more the better? The fewer the better? You women, how many dozens are you going to bear? When God sees birth control, He grimaces. Then what are you going to do?

If the factory automates mass production and there comes to be mass production everywhere, the Kingdom of Heaven will be full. That's why women are created to bear many children. (*Earthly Life and Spirit World Part 1)*

What happens if you don't have children, if you just cut off what God wanted to give you? If you apply birth control you cut off children which God planned to send as the sons and daughters that can conquer and rule all of heaven and earth.

Birth Control is Forbidden

I am going to forbid birth control to the women of the Unification Church. I will say, "Go ahead and have many children." In America, even pigs eat barley powder and kidney beans, so go ahead and have many children. As I have said, "Have many children!" After I came to America I had to show a good example, so I have said to mother, "Have many sons and daughters" Now how's that? (*Raising Children In God's Will*)

Birth Expansion

How many children of blessed families are there in Japan? (5,700) Give birth to more. The secular world is practicing birth control, but the Unification Church is practicing birth expansion. The forerunner is Rev. Moon with 14 children. The heaven kingdom needs citizens. ("Unification of My Country" God's Day Midnight Speech December 31, 1990)

Having many children and not doing birth control is a commandment and core value of Sun Myung Moon. He is absolutely clear that Unificationists are called by God to multiply and dominate the earth. He is not interested in any exceptions to this rule. The Second Generation and every generation thereafter are supposed to procreate more than anybody else. He is not into artificial or natural birth control. He commands us to enjoy sex and not do any family planning. Family planning is a core value of those on the Cain side. We are religious people and should never use the Pill, the rhythm method, diaphragms, IUDs, condoms, or natural family planning.

DO THE MATH

If a sister can't or won't physically have many children then that couple should adopt until they bring the number to 12 or more. If those 12 children each had 12 children that would give 144 grandchildren. If each of them had 12 children then there would be 1728 great-grandchildren. These numbers become very exciting. If a woman is 20 years old when she marries and has 12 children by the time she is 60 she will see 144 of her grandchildren and begin having great-grandchildren. When she is 40 years old she is a grandmother; at 60 a great-grandmother, and at 80 a great-great-grandmother with hundreds and hundreds of babies to love. Each one of them needs massive love. Being a mother is a great and demanding career. If a woman does not have many children or even if she never had any she should attach herself to a community of Unificationists and make it her career to care for other's children. This is win-win because she will be taken care of by those children when she goes into her second childhood.

The following are some quotes from news articles on fertility: "By the time a woman hits 30, nearly all of her ovarian eggs are gone for good, according a new study that says women who put off childbearing for too long could have difficulty ever conceiving. The study published by the University of St. Andrews and Edinburgh University in Scotland found that women have lost 90 percent of their eggs by the time they are 30 years old, and only have about 3 percent remaining by the time they are 40. Over time, the quality of ovarian eggs also deteriorates, increasing the difficulty of conception and the risk of having an unhealthy baby. Scientists have come up with a new cold, hard mathematical fact: women lose 90 percent of their eggs by age 30. The new mathematical model shows the biological clock that some women hear ticking around the age of 30 is ticking very loudly."

MYTH OF OVERPOPULATION

Marilyn Boyer is the mother of 14 children. In her book *Parenting from the Heart: Practical*

Parenting from a Mom of 14 Children she gives excerpts from *How to Understand the Purpose Behind Humanism* (an Institute in Basic Life Principles publication www.iblp.org):

> **The Myth of Overpopulation**
> The world is comparatively empty. There are 52.5 million square miles of land are in the world, not including Antarctica.
>
> If all the people in the world were brought together into one place, they could stand, without touching anyone else, in less than 200 square miles ...
>
> If all the people in the world came together in one place and stood shoulder to shoulder, they would all fit within one-half of the city limits of Jacksonville, Florida with plenty of room to spare!
>
> The world population is four and a half billion people. By allowing an average of 2.6 square feet for each person from babies to adults, every person in the world could stand shoulder to shoulder in just one-half of the city.
>
> A further fallacy in the population explosion myth is the assumption that the greater the population, the lower the standard of living. This is not true. Japan has a population density of 798 people per square mile, yet they have a higher per capita gross national product ($4,450) than India, which has 511 people per square mile ($140).
>
> Projections of running out of energy or food sources are totally misleading. God gave to man the command and ability to fill up the world with people and to subdue the earth for their own needs.
>
> India does not have a hunger problem because of lack of food. It has a hunger problem because of religious beliefs which are contrary to the Word of God. The Hindu religion teaches that people who die are reincarnated in the form of animals; thus it is against their laws and religion to kill rats, mice, cows, or other animals.
>
> Every cow eats enough food to feed seven people, and there are two hundred million "sacred cows" in India. If the people of India would just stop feeding these cows, they would have enough food to feed one billion, four hundred million people. That is more than one-fourth of the entire world's population!
>
> God promises adequate provision for those who serve Him and obey His laws. On the other hand, He warns that those who reject His Word will experience destructive hunger and famine.

The website www.overpopulationisamyth.com has several great short videos. One of them says, "Every family on this planet cold have a house with a yard and all live together on a land mass the size of Texas which is just a small corner of the planet."

Robert Epstein's book *The Case Against Adolescence: Rediscovering the Adult in Every Teen* gives a powerful argument that there should be no such time as adolescence. People should go directly from childhood to adulthood around the age of thirteen. Jesus' mother, Mary, was that age and true mother was 17 when she had her first child. Father matched his first son to a 15 year old. I write more of this in my book *12 Before 40*.

If Unificationists have true united big families of say 10 or more children their descendants would, in only a few generations, become the leaders of the world. If 200,000 Unificationist families had an average of 10 children, there would be one million children. If all these blessed (2nd Generation) children married between themselves, that would make 500,000 couples. If they, in turn, had an average of 10 children, they would have 5 million children. If we do the math, then in the next generation there would be 25 million children. The next generation would have 125 million. The generation after that would be 600 million and using the multiple of 5 the next would

be 3 billion. Because Unificationists would have more children than any other group, in only a few generations their numbers would be so great they would dominate the earth.

If a couple had 12 children who each had 12 they would have 144 grandchildren. If they had 15 and each had 15 they would have 225 children. Let's push ourselves to have huge families.

One of the most dramatic videos I have ever seen is when the TV show *Nightline* went to Ken Carpenter's home and did a 10 minute show on the Quiverfull Movement of which Ken and his wife are members. They explain how they believe no one should do birth control and it is God's will to have as many children as He gives. Please order this DVD from *Nightline* at ABC News and show it to everyone. The product number at Nightline is N07103051 and it aired on 01/03/07. "Lo, children are an heritage of the Lord: and the fruit of the womb is his reward. As arrows are in the hand of a mighty man; so are children of one's youth. Happy is the man who has a quiver full of them." (Psalms 127:3-5)

Nancy Campbell is interviewed briefly on this show. Please go to her website www.AboveRubies.com and order her wonderful book *Be Fruitful and Multiply*. Check out the website www.QuiverFull.com and read their articles and the books they recommend against birth control and for big families. Mrs. Campbell talks about having many children on her DVD titled *Interview with Nancy Campbell* (order at www.aboverubies.org). Mrs. Campbell addresses the question everyone asks whether they live in America or Kenya: How can the average person afford to have big families? The question should be how can you not afford to? Who is going to take care of you when your 90 years old? Nancy explains that first you have babies and then God will provide. Fallen man does things the other way around. To the question "How can you raise a family on just one income?" she says, "I see God providing." She says when we take a "step of faith then we will see God's provision." On one income she says, "God always does something. He never provides for that child before the child arrives but when that baby arrives. God will show His provision. Trust God."

In Nancy Campbell's DVD series you can watch this amazing woman explain how her daughter Serene Allison at the age of 29 has 11 children. She and her husband adopted some from Africa. At the time of the printing of this book she has 13 children. Unificationists—Let's give up the tradition of gift children and adopt some of the millions of outside children many of which are orphans and street kids.

In Mrs. Campbell's must-read book *Be Fruitful and Multiply* she writes:

> Many young mothers stop having children after two or three because they are so overwhelmed with the busyness of caring for little ones. It is true that is the busiest time of motherhood. Your children are all little and are not yet at an age where they can help and pull their weight. But look to the future. These little ones will grow older and as they do they become wonderful helpers. There is a mother in our community of Hickman County who are blessed with nineteen children. Nine of her children are now grown and have left home but there are still ten children at home. She trained them well and confesses that she now lives "like a Queen." By the way, before you start imagining a worn-out lady after having 19 children, this mother is fit, in-shape, vibrant and beautiful. It's hard to believe she has had even two children!
>
> Recently I received a letter from a mother of seven children. This family of nine lived in a two-bedroom, 784 square foot trailer home. Did she write with grumbling and complaints? No, her letter was full of the blessings and joys of their family life. She says, "We are blessed, and are managing, because we are

> grateful for what God has provided. We often laugh when we think of the family we brought our trailer from. They had one small boy and felt they needed more space! I guess it is all in how one looks at it! We heat totally with wood and appreciate the warmth and coziness. I must add, it is also practical on a day like today. We are experiencing a blizzard. Many inches of thick, white snow keep us closed in. The telephone quit and electricity is still out. We are having a ball—melting snow, simmering soup, playing board games, writing letters, and cleaning cupboards. Perhaps tonight it will be a lamplight eve. The children love that…" This family doesn't sound as though they are deprived, do they?
>
> For nearly a year our daughter Evangeline lived in a one-room cabin with no running water, no bathroom, and no inside kitchen. She had five children and was pregnant with her sixth. They now have a bathroom, a kitchen, running water, another room added on—and their seventh baby! But they still don't have bedrooms or even beds for the children. There's no room for beds. Each night the children take their blankets from the big pile in the corner and make their cozy spot on the floor in the all-purpose room. Is Evangeline a grumbling mess" No! She is the most joyful mother in this nation. The children are happy and live adventure-filled lives. Some time ago, some young people gathered together and began to discuss who were the richest people they knew. They all came to the conclusion that Evangeline and Howard were the richest! It had nothing to do with their material possessions. It had all to do with their joy of the Lord and their attitude for life.

We are called to create powerful and wealthy dynasties. The Bible says we are to be "mighty in the land": "Praise the LORD. Blessed is the man who fears the LORD, who greatly delights in his commandments! His descendants will be mighty in the land; the generation of the upright will be blessed. Wealth and riches are in his house; and his righteousness endures forever." (Ps.112:1-3)

The back cover of *Be Fruitful and Multiply* says, "Nancy Campbell serves her husband as a helpmeet but also through a special 'Titus 2' ministry to ladies." I encourage every Unificationist sister to listen to her message against birth control and for having many children, even it that requires adopting them. In her book she writes: "The children of Israel did not obey God's commandment 'to be fruitful and multiply' just when it suited them, or only in good economic times. No, they obeyed, no matter what the circumstances." Unificationist couples need to tell each other, "I will never divorce. No matter what." And say to each other, "I will have a large family. No matter what." She goes on to write:

> They obeyed when they were in slavery in Egypt. They multiplied in the face of persecution. Exodus 1:11-12 tells the story, "They put slave drivers over the Israelites to wear them down under heavy loads… But the more they were crushed, the more they increased and spread…" Our mentality is that if we are going through persecution, difficult times, or money is tight, that we cannot have children. The Israelites proved that God was able to keep them and provide for them, even in the most difficult times. None of us have to face the persecution and trials that they faced at that time, but they still kept multiplying.
>
> The greatest building program we can invest in is that of building godly generations. Philip Lancaster says: "Each man should aim to be the founder of a dynasty of God."
>
> God wants us to have a vision for family, not just when we start a family, but

> also even before we are married. We should train our sons to be fathers and therefore the providers, the protectors, and the priests of their homes. We should train and give our daughters a vision for motherhood, preparing them to be the nurturers, the nourishers, and the nest builders of future families.
>
> "How can I afford to have more children?" you ask. This is certainly a valid question if we trust in our own resources. But if we trust in God, we need to have no fears. The idea that having children is a function of one's personal economics is contrary to the patterns and principles which Scriptures do reveal. If anything, the Bible teaches that those who are economically poor should desire more children, because with such children come all sorts of blessings including economic blessings. But to understand these truths we must come to the Lord in faith believing He is a God who cares for His own.

I would add to this that women should trust God will work through their husband if he wants to have a large family. If a Unificationist sister is not moved by Father's words and Mother's example to not do birth control then she should at least read Nancy Campbell's powerful arguments to be godly and mature enough to go through the pain of many childbirths and years of raising many small children in her book *Be Fruitful and Multiply*. I feel sorry for brothers and sisters who have mates who do not understand the commandment from the Messiah to have many children. I believe Unificationists should have more children than any group has had in history. True Parents had 14 children. Why can't we have more? In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* Father writes:

> As a child, I thought of the meadows as my home. As soon as I could wolf down my bowl of rice for breakfast, I would run out of the house and spend the entire day in the hills and streams. I could spend the day wandering about the forest with all the different birds and animals, eating herbs and wild berries, and I would never feel hungry. Even as a child, I knew that my mind and body were at ease anytime I went into the forest.
>
> I have spent much of my life feeding people. To me, giving people food is the most precious work.
>
> Mother gave birth to thirteen children. Mother suffered a great deal to raise so many children in circumstances that were by no means plentiful. [Remember even though the nation of Korea was dominated by a ruthless Japanese occupation Father's parents still had 13 children] As a child I had many siblings. If these siblings got together with our first and second cousins, we could do anything.
>
> Marriage is more than a simple coming together of a man and woman. It is a precious ceremony of commitment to carry on God's work of creation. Marriage is the path by which a man and woman become as one, create new life, and establish true love. Through marriage, a new future is created: Societies are formed, nations are built. It is in the family that God's Kingdom of Heaven is brought about.
>
> So husbands and wives must be centers of peace. Not only must there be love between the husband and wife, but the couple must also be able to bring harmony to their extended families. It is not enough that the husband and wife live well. I tell brides and grooms to have many children. To bear many children and raise them is God's blessing. It is unthinkable that human beings apply their own standard of judgment and arbitrarily abort precious lives given to them by God. All life born

into this world embodies God's will. All life is noble and precious, so it must be cared for and protected.

It is most important to teach young people about the sanctity and value of marriage. Korea today has one of the lowest birthrates in the world. Not to have children is dangerous. There is no future for a country that has no descendants. Children are blessings given to us by God. When we bear children and raise them, we are raising citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. That is why it is a great sin to live immorally and to abort babies conceived in this lifestyle.

MATURE UNIFICATIONISTS SHOULD MARRY YOUNG

In 2008 the BC Blessing Department at FamilyFed.org had a statement called "Guideline for the Blessing" that said everyone "should start family life after 25 years of age." How does this square with True Mother marrying at 17, Father matching at 17, Father marrying Nan Sook to his oldest son when she was 15, Jesus telling his mother to get him a wife when he was 17 and most people throughout human history marrying in their teens? Jesus' mother was around 13 years old when she had Jesus. Keeping people from marrying young is birth control. This is the kind of unprincipled nonsense that comes from arrogant bureaucrats sitting in some far away headquarters. Fathers who are successful family men in their local communities are the only ones able to determine if a person is ready for marriage. The age of 25 is far too old for most people who are raised correctly.

Father spoke to a small group of members in Hawaii in 2001. He would stop sometimes and talk to some of us personally. There was a young single Korean sister who was attending the University of Hawaii. Father talked to her a little in Korean. I asked her what he said. She said he asked her how old she was. She told him she was 23 and she said Father told her, "You are past your prime. You should be married by now."

Father says, "I am thinking that the blessed children should be married at an earlier age because I want them to be certain of marrying their first love" (6-20-82). It is also wrong to bless young people and make them wait years before they consummate their marriage.

Our goal should be to raise our children to be mature adults when they turn 18 years old. Age 18 is the age that a person is legally an adult. They can vote and sign contracts. Unificationists who grow up in the Principle should be grown up and get married and start having children around the age of 18. Public and private schools are not educating young people to be smart and mature when they turn 18. When Unificationist children reach the age of 18 they should be very well educated and very mature. They don't need more time to grow up before they marry. Unificationist sisters should be ready to have a child and 18-year-old brothers are ready to lead, provide and protect their wife. Unificationist parents should not put their children in public or private schools. Their children should be educated at home. As we perfect our ability to teach at home fathers and mothers should strive to raise their children to be mature by the age of 13 years old. Jesus was able to carry on a discussion with elders at age 12 and Father was given his mission at 15.

I would like to push for Unificationists to raise their children to be adult much earlier than they do now. Let's abolish the concept of adolescence. The average Unificationist should be adult around the age of 13 and ready to marry around the age of 15. There are several books against the concept of adolescence. Check out Robert Epstein's book *The Case Against Adolescence: Rediscovering the Adult in Every Teen* and David Alan Black's *The Myth of Adolescence: Raising Responsible Children in an Irresponsible Society*. There are two teenagers who write powerfully against the concept of adolescence. They are Alex and Brett Harris. They have authored the most popular Christian teen blog on the web at TheRebelution.com. Read their article titled "Myth of

Adolescence" at their website. They write that the word "adolescence" first appeared in 1941. Throughout human history people have gone directly from childhood to adulthood in their early teens. In their book *Do Hard Things: A Teenage Rebellion Against Low Expectations* the Harris brothers quote the Bible saying, "When I was a child, I spoke as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things (I Cor 13:11). They say it doesn't add a third line saying, "When I was an adolescent".

It is wrong for Unificationists to be digested by our culture and keep the Second Generation from being mature at ages 13-15. The last thing they need is to attend public or private schools and then postpone marriage and career for so many years with ridiculous age-segregated teams and then so many years of college. Let's be clear that this is birth control and that is a sin in the eyes of Sun Myung Moon. I know there are some young Unificationists that are immature and there are some that should never get married. but I believe the vast majority should be educated, married and living in a debt-free home well below the age of 18. Satan is for death. He wants to postpone marriage and adulthood. Nancy Campbell is right when she says in the DVD you can buy from her where she is interviewed that we don't prepare to have children and then have them but we have children and God will provide for them. All this delay of adulthood is simply a tactic of Satan to slow down the Unification Movement and to literally make civilizations die out with low birth rates.

The Case Against Adolescence

In Robert Epstein's book *The Case Against Adolescence: Rediscovering the Adult in Every Teen* he writes that for thousands of years there has been teen marriages. In Europe in the Middle Ages "it was common for women to be married by fourteen. He says that three First Ladies married to American Presidents were still "children" by "current standards." "Elizabeth Monroe married President-to-be James Monroe in 1785 when she was seventeen; their marriage lasted until her death in 1830. Rachel Jackson, eventually the wife of President Jackson was first married" when she was 17. Elizabeth Johnson married Andrew Johnson when she was 16 and he was 18. "They were married for nearly fifty years and died within six months of each other." Barbara Bush dated George Bush at 16 and was engaged at 17. They have had a lifetime marriage. "Around the world, it is still common for people to marry young" but now there is pressure "challenging the ancient pattern" especially from America. Epstein says this is ironic because the "American system of marriage is the least successful in the world." He says that unfortunately other countries are adopting our ways and experiencing an increase in divorce just as they are experiencing an increase in obesity because they are eating our French fries and drinking Pepsi. "One of the things we are exporting is our distorted picture of young people. Through movies like *Clueless* and *American Pie* and television series like *Beverly Hills 90210*—seen by more than two billion people worldwide—we tell the world in vivid terms what we believe about teens: that they're inherently wild and irresponsible, that their love is just puppy love, that their relationships are fleeting and superficial, and that they need adult protection. A movie like *Clueless* is typically translated into twenty languages and shown around the world within months of it original release. No religious zealots on earth ever proselytized as vehemently as corporate America."

Compare this with the amount of videos of Father speaking. Unificationists have made absolutely no effort and have never cared about distributing videos of Father. Father came to America and spoke in every state. These public speeches were filmed but like the Bible says, their light is buried. Father ended his Day of Hope tour at Madison Square Garden. These speeches clearly explain much of the *Divine Principle*. They explain who Jesus really was and how Christianity is wrong in its interpretation of Jesus. Meanwhile the world is flooded with DVDs of Hollywood movies that glorify pre-marital sex in every movie they make and with DVDs of porn that are sold in porn shops by the millions.

Epstein writes, "Meanwhile, many of the old marriage practices remain. In Afghanistan, Niger, and the Congo, for example, the percentage of young women age fifteen to nineteen who are already married are respectively, fifty-four, seventy and seventy-five.

13 Year-Olds

"In other eras through most of human history" 13 year-old girls "would have been considered to be a young woman, not a child." Epstein goes off track by praising the so-called American soldier Jessica Lynch who was captured and raped in the Iraq War and saying if girls can meet the standard for combat they should be allowed. Women are not made physically or mentally to be capable of being soldiers or police officers. He praises the propaganda of the movie *Fargo* that portrays a pregnant woman cop. He likes movies such as *Charlie's Angels* and *Lara Croft* that portray women warriors. He is right that many 13 year-old females are mature enough to marry. He says, "Mary gave birth to Jesus by age 13" because in the "marriage practices of the day Mary was no older than 12 or 13 when she conceived Jesus." Mary was "married off around the time of puberty. It was common in Greek and Roman cultures for females to marry by age twelve or thirteen."

Epstein goes into how the laws are different for marriage ages in countries, in the states of America and in religions. Father married Mother when she was 17 years old. He matches 17 year olds. In Judaism the minimum age for marriage is 12 for females and 13 for males. Islam has no age. Mormons, Lutherans and Methodists go by the laws of the state. "Minimum marriage ages today for Catholics" is 14 for females and 16 for males. The age of majority is typically 18 for most states but some states in America allow marriages with parental consent for as young as 13 or 14.

I agree with the basic argument of Epstein that we should stop putting young people in age segregated schools where they have little contact with adults and treat teenagers as children. Many are ready to marry.

Marrying young would make sure that children have a good chance to know their grandparents. If people got married at 15 and their descendants did the same then a person would be a grandparent at 30, great-grandparent at 45, and great-great grandparent at 60!

At his website (www.Daveblackonline.com) David Alan Black has an article titled "Want to Reform Your Youth Ministry? Reject Adolescence!" He writes:

> My book, *The Myth of Adolescence: Raising Responsible Children in an Irresponsible Society*, decries the "culture of irresponsibility" that we have tolerated for so long, and argues for a return to the ideals of a previous generation of Americans, who allowed youth to be relatively independent and gave them a real role in life.
>
> What, then, do the Scriptures say about adolescence? The answer is: Absolutely nothing! In the Bible, people went directly from childhood to adulthood. Moses, for example, is never referred to as an adolescent. In Exodus 2 he is called a "child" in verse 10, and by verse 11 he had "grown up." Here we might have expected to find a reference to a period between childhood and adulthood, but no such reference is to be found.
>
> One thing is clear. According to the Bible, the teen era is not a "timeout" between childhood and adulthood. It is not primarily a time of horseplay, of parties, of sports, of games. It is not a period of temporary insanity. The Bible treats teens as responsible young adults, and so should we.

Is it far-fetched for Unificationists to raise their children to go directly from child to adult around

the age of 13 and marry soon after? Father's first matching and blessing was to his oldest son. He gave her a sister, Nan Sook Hong, who was 15 years old. That is legal in New York if both parents agree to the marriage. We should follow Father in marrying our children when they are mature and they should be mature enough to marry in their mid-teens. Some would be ready at 13.

Mark Gungor has a television series titled *Love, Marriage and Stinking Thinking*. I believe everyone should watch the two segments on marrying young in his DVD of his first season. You can buy the DVD at this website (www.laughyourway.com).

A LARGE FAMILY IS GOOD

The Messiah pushes us to have large families. He says, "The larger your family unit the better—grandfather, grandmother, and all the close or even distant relatives living together. A large family is good. That way you can train yourself. The level of society you can relate with will be that much wider." (3-8-87) Father said in a speech that was put in a book of quotes of his:

> The production center is necessary in order to produce the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. Therefore, husband and wife are the factory. If they are the factory, which is better, mass production or a little production? (Mass production is better.) Mass production is better.
>
> Then how many dozens would you like to produce? The more the better? The fewer the better? You women, how many dozens are you going to bear? When God sees birth control, He grimaces. Then what are you going to do?
>
> If the factory automates mass production and there comes to be mass production everywhere, the Kingdom of Heaven will be full. That's why women are created to bear many children. (*Earthly Life and Spirit World Part 1)*

Check out the websites of those with large families who are using the internet to witness about the excitement and happiness big families give and how it is godly to not use birth control such as:

The Moore family DVD *Children Are a Blessing* (http://moorefamilyfilms.blogspot.com)
The Moss Family DVD *It Is Your Life: The Moss Family* (http://moorefamilyfilms.blogspot.com)
The Duggar family DVDs of their TV show (www.duggarfamily.com) (YouTube.com has videos)
The Bateses and Their 18 Children (www.YouTube.com Nightline from ABC News 1/19/2011)
Ken Carpenter's family (http://abcnews.go.com/Nightline/video/fruitful-multiply-2769639)

Dynasty is defined as "a family or group that maintains power for several generation." Father teaches us to think in terms of 10,000 years. No family in history has ever been able to gain in power for more than a few generations. Our families will have the same religion and goals of Sun Myung Moon they will study everyday and from this they will have more unity and influence than any families have had in human history. Let's build families that will work to make sure their descendants are wealthier and stronger than them.

Because I am limited in space in this book I have written a whole book on this subject titled *12 Before 40: The Case for Large Families in the Unification Movement.*

I challenge Unificationists to do as Father says—to "have many children"—to not use birth control and to have the same goal True Parents had of having at many children as God's gives and your ability to handle a large family. Perhaps you should consider doing as Father did and have the goal of having 12 children even if they have to adopt.

THIRD BLESSING

CHAPTER SIX

DECENTRALIZE

The sixth value we need to live by is to decentralize power to families living in communities instead of the State. Government is necessary but it should be limited as seen in the Constitution of the United States of America, the Bill of Rights and in the Declaration of Independence. On October 11th, 2015 Hyung Jin Moon gave the "Declaration of The Constitution of The United Nation of Cheon Il Guk" that I support. It brilliantly limits governmental power. Fallen man looks to government to solve many of its problems. True mankind looks to individuals, families and trinities of families in communities to solve its problems.

FREEDOM SOCIETY—LIBERTARIAN POLITICS

Two sons of Sun Myung Moon, Hyung Jin Moon and Kook Jin Moon rightly teach the political and economic theory of Libertarianism. In a speech in July 20, 2012 (http://vimeo.com/46221511—I have also posted this video and others by Kook Jin at my website www.divineprinciple.com) Hyung Jin Moon said that God's plan is for democracy and limited government such as existed in 19th century America.

LAISSEZ-FAIRE CAPITALISM

God's economics is laissez-faire capitalism. All Unificationists should unite on the belief in limited government and fight those who believe in collectivism. Hyung Jin said in great speech that everyone should listen to that the Republican Party in America is often into big government and Unificationists should not be Left wing or the Right wing but we should be in the word Father coined, "Headwing." The closest word commonly used to describe what we should believe in is Libertarianism. Hyung Jin mentioned several Libertarian intellectuals to study such Friedrich Hayek, Milton Freidman and John Stossel. There are many more such as Ludwig von Mises and I will quote from some Libertarians in this book and I will direct you to others resources such as Laissez Faire Books at lfb.org. They have an excellent list of Libertarian books to buy or you can check them out at your library. Please study the many books for capitalism and their critique of socialism. I am pleased that Hyung Jin and Kook Jin are making free enterprise and small government a cornerstone belief and core value of the Unification Movement. They are excited about the free market and the power of the freedom to create prosperity and help people to live a creative and happy life. I found Ayn Rand and Milton Friedman over 30 years ago and the more I study it the more I know that God's way is the invisible hand that Adam Smith wrote about in his classic *The Wealth of Nations* published in 1776. After watching Milton Freidman's TV series titled *Free to Choose* in 1980 I wrote to him and asked him some questions, one of which was who should I study first. He wrote me back, answered all my questions and listed some books I should read. The Founding Fathers of the United States were very wise in creating a Constitution that trusted the average person instead of dominating him like most governments have done in human history. Because of that Constitution America became the richest and greatest nation in

human history. And America has declined in the 20th century when it embraced Satan's ideology of big government. Thomas Jefferson said, "The policy of the American government is to leave their citizens free, neither restraining nor aiding them in their pursuits."

Sun Myung Moon teaches that we should focus on the community level instead of some bureaucracy in church and state:

> From the community level Father wants to start a new movement. The community level is the myon or dong level. It is the basic level for every activity. The leader of the dong takes care of everything, especially the spiritual aspect. The dong center is the basic governmental unit. Provincial or regional centers are not necessary. A decentralized system is better than a centralized system. Focus all activities on the myon or dong level, which is the basic level.
>
> It is easier to witness in local areas than on a large scale. Neil Salonen made a big, centralized organization. Father disliked that. Leaders should not have big staffs, they should go to the countryside to witness. (1-2-90)

CENTRALIZATION VS. DECENTRALIZATION

In his article titled "Centralization versus Decentralization: The Real Dichotomy" Steven Yates writes that centralism has become the dominant political (and economic) philosophy:

> Centralists, as the term implies, support the increasing power of a central government, whether directly or not. They might support expansionist government indirectly by supporting ideas or policies that make no sense without increasing centralization of government, such as the drug war.
>
> Decentralists agree with the Jeffersonian statement that "the government that governs best is that which governs least." They believe, in other words, that a central government ought to be as small as possible—as small as is compatible with social stability. The *Declaration of Independence* is a classic decentralist document in my sense, because what it declares is that a community of persons has the natural right to free itself from a government that has grown powerful and abusive. The original *Constitution* contains something of a mixture of centralist and decentralist tendencies. ... The *Bill of Rights* shifted the Constitution back in the direction of decentralism.
>
> One may argue that the ensuing history of our country has been the history of the struggle between those trying to preserve a decentralized order (originally embodied in the Jeffersonians) and those wanting more centralization (originally the Hamiltonians). The centralists made control of education one of their first goals, which is why we see calls for government-funded "public schools" going back to the early 1800s.

Jimmy and Kathryn Cantrell write in their article titled "Decentralization":

> Stephen Yates recently penned an article in which he claims that political philosophy is best broken down into a pair of basic stands from which specifics develop: centralization or decentralization of the State and its governmental powers. It long has seemed to me that such is indeed the essence of the study of governments. All of us in democratic societies seem to know that if a king holds all power, particularly if he administers directly rather than delegating administration to various governors in sundry provinces, he can be, and often will be, utterly tyrannical with impunity. What more of us need to recognize is that democracy tightly centralized can impose, through majority expression or the presumptions of

> lifetime judicial appointees, violent tyranny against both individuals and large segments of the population and by its very nature must make at least tax slaves of us all.
>
> Americans generally have thought in terms of liberal and conservative in political analysis, with the former being seen as wanting more Federal government control and the latter desiring less Federal government control. Such is a gross oversimplification, one that guarantees the continuing centralization of the State. The differences between American liberals and most American conservatives are actually over the specifics of how and why to increase the scope and power of the Federal government.
>
> Liberals desire a strong, activist Federal government to do "good" as defined by the political, and increasingly the moral, Left. ... Most leadership cadre conservatives, regardless of rhetoric, support most of this government centralization too; they just want the growth in those areas to be slower, less costly, and less harsh ...

In 1928 Herbert Hoover gave a speech titled "Rugged Individualism" in which he spoke against socialism and for decentralization. He said, "We have builded up a form of self-government and we had builded up a social system which is peculiarly our own. It differs fundamentally from all others in the world. It is the American system. It is just as definite and positive a political and social system as has ever been developed on earth. It is founded upon the conception that self-government can be preserved only by decentralization of Government in the State and by fixing local responsibility." He said that, "By adherence to the principles of decentralization, self-government, ordered liberty, and opportunity and freedom to the individual our American experiment has yielded a degree of well-being unparalleled in all the world."

He said that America is "challenged with the choice of the American system 'rugged individualism' or the choice of a European system of diametrically opposed doctrines— doctrines of paternalism and state socialism." The Democratic Party, he said, wanted to go down the road of socialism that Europe was going down: "Our opponents propose that we must 'adopt state socialism.'" "The acceptance of these ideas meant the destruction of self-government through centralization of government; it meant the undermining of initiative and enterprise upon which our people have grown to unparalleled greatness." "There is, therefore submitted to the American people the question — Shall we depart from the American system and start upon a new road?" Sadly, America went down the road of centralization. Republicans, like Hoover, spoke about freedom and decentralization but kept pushing for more and more regulations. Hoover said in his speech, "Nor do I wish to be misinterpreted as believing that the United States is free-for-all and the devil-take-the hindmost. ... It is no system of laissez faire." He was tragically wrong in saying this and America was wrong in following him down the road of massive centralization of government.

Hoover was wrong when he praised the government for not allowing for free trade when he said, "the enactment of an adequate protective tariff and immigration laws which have raised and safeguarded our wages from floods of goods or labor from foreign countries." He was wrong to say government has helped Americans by building highways. Years later another Republican, Eisenhower, would build a vast interstate highway system.

Hoover was wrong when he said, "It has only by keen large vision and cooperation by the Government that stability in business and stability in employment has been maintained." The opposite is the truth. Government interference creates instability.

He said, "Never has there been a period when the Federal Government has given such aid and impulse to the progress of our people, not alone to economic progress but to development of those

agencies which make for moral and spiritual progress." Spiritual progress? Moral progress? Spirituality and morality are banned from public schools. At the core of Liberal thought is the idea that socialism and feminism is progress and anyone who believes in the values of the Founding Fathers of America that are for the traditional family and for limited government are "reactionary." Liberals deeply believe they speak the truth but it is a lie that big government and the non-traditional family has more heart and is better than laissez-faire capitalism and the biblical family.

Hoover went on to say, "Government [is] an umpire instead of a player in the economic game" and "Much abuse has been and can be cured by inspiration and cooperation, rather than by regulation of the government." This is true but he does the opposite of what he says and praises massive regulation of business and of people's lives. Fallen man cannot comprehend the idea of absolute values. The Messiah comes to take us into the Completed Testament Age where there is order. Politicians arrogantly and stupidly think they are called to solve all problems. Politicians think their job is to clean the air, purify the water, feed children, and generally make sure everyone has the all the necessities in life. Now we have a cradle to grave welfare state. When government was more limited people didn't lock their doors. Now we all do. Hoover honestly thought the Democrats were socialist and he was anti-socialist but he was little different than they are. He was in the Abel position but as usual Abel makes many mistakes. Just because a person, like Hoover, says he is for decentralization does not mean he is. Just because a person says he is not for big government doesn't mean he is. At one of his State of the Union speeches Bill Clinton said, "The era of big government is over." His actions proved the opposite. Just because someone says they are not a liberal/feminist means nothing. We have to look at their lifestyle to see if it is true. A person who says that women can be ministers and politicians and businesswomen who have authority over men is a feminist. Anyone who believes in and works for cradle to grave programs like Social Security is for big government and therefore against limited, decentralized government that America's founding fathers were for. We have to define our terms. What is big government? What is feminism? I have tried to define what they are in this book.

COLLECTIVISM VS. INDIVIDUALISM

There is a particular vocabulary for ideas in political thought. Some like to use the labels or terms "collectivism" for big government and "individualism" for small government. I don't like these terms because individualism has the connotation of self-centered and anti-social. Father uses the term in a negative way to describe selfish people. Sheldon Richman wrote an article at www.Fee.org titled "Individualism, Collectivism and Other Murky Labels" saying these terms are not precise. He writes, "In summary, the great political debate is not between individualists and collectivists, but between those who see the coercive State as the locus of authority and those who see voluntary society as that locus." Ludwig von Mises tries to explain the terms in chapter 8 of his book *Human Action* that you may find interesting.

MIXED VS. FREE ECONOMY

Nineteenth century America had a free market economy; twentieth century America had a mixed economy. Liberals and Socialists think they are progressive and modern when they criticize those who think 19th century America was better than the 20th. We have made some advancements but mostly our culture is worse now than then. A favorite comeback statement by the Left is that those on the Right want to "turn back the clock." There are some ideas the Founding Fathers of America understood that are superior to the ideas of many of the elite today. One of them is that a free economy is better than a mixed economy. One Website (www.importanceofphilosphy.com) gives this definition of the concept of the mixed economy, "A 'mixed' economy is a mix between socialism and capitalism. It is a hodgepodge of freedoms and regulations, constantly changing because of the lack of principles involved. A mixed-economy is a sign of intellectual chaos. It is the attempt to gain the advantages of freedom without government having to give up its power."

Big government often does the wrong thing. Mrs. Moon condemns big government schools for giving condoms to children:

> **True Love vs. Free Sex**
> Of all these, what pains God most is free sex. A world of free sex is absolutely contrary to the Will of God. Love comes from stimulation of unblemished emotion, but free sex is totally devoid of purity or true emotion. How many of us have been touched by the cruelty of infidelity and divorce? Where is God in all the one-night stands? What about the nightmares of the children who are sexually abused by a parent?
>
> Is free sex worth the price of a broken child?
>
> Equally alarming is the policy of giving school children condoms, teaching the illusion of safe sex, and surrendering to the assumption that premarital sex is inevitable. Indeed, where there is homosexuality, free sex, drugs, and alcoholism, the world of true love is far away.
>
> In this world, Satan openly tells people, "Drink! Smoke! Take drugs! Have sex!" Those who do God's Will, on the other hand, live a lifestyle that is 180 degrees different from this. Throughout history, those who chose to walk a spiritual path of self-sacrifice have been bitterly opposed and persecuted by the rest of the world. It is only God's love and blessing which have allowed the Unification Movement, despite worldwide opposition, to prosper. The fact that our church has risen from obscurity in war-torn Korea, to become a world-level religious movement in only 38 years, testifies to God's continued guidance and support. (1993)

RESTORING THE AMERICAN DREAM

Robert Ringer in Restoring the American Dream says that people are wrong in believing that capitalism was cruel to people in the 19th century. Mankind was going through a growth period and what capitalists offered was better than what they had without them. It was bad in the factories, but it was worse in the country. He writes, "The conditions of the factories, by comparison, were like the Promised land to him. Never before had he lived so well. People do not voluntarily leave one job for another if the new job offers lower pay, longer hours and inferior working conditions." Hayek in *Capitalism and the Historians* presents a truer picture of what happened during the Industrial Revolution than the common myth everyone believes. Hayek writes, "Who has not heard of the 'horrors of early capitalism' and gained the impression that the advent of this system brought untold new suffering to large classes who before were tolerably content and comfortable? ... The widespread emotional aversion to 'capitalism' is closely connected with this belief that the undeniable growth of wealth which the competitive order has produced was purchased at the price of depressing the standard of life of the weakest elements of society." Hayek goes on to explain how capitalism developed to produce an economic miracle and brought "enormous improvement" to the masses.

DISPARITY OF WEALTH IS GOOD

George Gilder in *Recapturing the Spirit of Enterprise* says in his chapter "The enigma of enterprise" that disparity of wealth is good and criticism of those who have money is wrong. Doesn't Father have a lot of money? Is he the only person on earth who is spending it wisely? Gilder gives reasons why it is good that entrepreneurs have money. He says, "Why should the top 1 percent of families own 20 percent of the nation's wealth while the bottom 20 percent has no measurable net worth at all? On a global level, the disparity assumes a deadly edge. Why should even this bottom fifth of Americans be able to throw away enough food to feed a continent, while a million Ethiopians die of famine? Why should the dogs and cats of America eat far better than

the average citizen on this unfair planet?"

"We all know that life is not fair, but to many people, this is ridiculous. These huge disparities seem to defy every measure of proportion and propriety.... Most observers now acknowledge that capitalism generates prosperity. But the rich seem a caricature of capitalism. Look at the 'Forbes Four Hundred' list of the wealthiest people, for example, and hold your nose. Many of them are short and crabby, beaked and mottled, fat and foolish." Many, he says never finished high school or college. "But capitalism exalts a strange riffraff with no apparent rhyme or reason. Couldn't we create a system of capitalism without fat cats? Wouldn't it be possible to contrive an economy that is just as prosperous, but with a far more just and appropriate distribution of wealth?

"Wouldn't it be a better world if rich entrepreneurs saw their winnings capped at, say, $15 million. Surely Sam Walton's heirs could make do on a million dollars or so a year of annual income."

ENTREPRENEURS

"Most defenders of capitalism say no. They contend that the bizarre inequalities we see are an indispensable reflection of the processes that create wealth. They imply capitalism doesn't make sense, morally or rationally, but it does make wealth. So, they say, don't knock it." He says some people defend greed as making the system go. Gilder criticizes Adam Smith for having such a cynical view of people for saying "it is only from the entrepreneur's 'luxury and caprice,' his desire for 'all the different baubles and trinkets in the economy of greatness,' that the poor 'derive that share of the necessaries of life, which they would in vain have expected from his humanity or his justice.'"

"In perhaps his most famous lines, Smith wrote of entrepreneurs: 'In spite of their natural selfishness and rapacity, though they mean only their own conveniency, though the sole end which they proposed from the labours of all the thousands they employ, be the gratification of their own vain and insatiable desires...they are led by an invisible hand...and without intending it, without knowing it, advance the interest of society.' Thus did capitalism's greatest defender write of the rich of his day." Gilder says people like John Kenneth Galbraith today "speak of the rich wallowing in their riches and implicitly bilking the poor of the necessities of life."

Gilder is disgusted with this attitude towards hard working, creative people who provide goods and services: "What slanderous garbage it all is! This case for capitalism as a Faustian pact, by which we trade greed for wealth, is simple hogwash. America's entrepreneurs are not more greedy than" most other people. He says, "They work fanatically hard. In proportion to their holdings or their output, and their contributions to the human race, they consume less than any group of people in the history of the world."

Gilder is one of the 20th century's greatest apologists for capitalism as being spiritual. It is socialists who are unspiritual. He says, "Far from being greedy, America's leading entrepreneurs—with some unrepresentative exceptions—display discipline and self-control, hard work and austerity that excel that in any college of social work, Washington think tank, or congregation of bishops .... If you want to see a carnival of greed, watch Jesse Jackson regale an audience of welfare mothers on the 'economic violence' of capitalism, or watch a conference of leftist professors denouncing the economic system that provides their freedom, tenure, long vacations, and other expensive privileges while they pursue their Marxist ego-trip at the expense of capitalism."

Gilder explains that the rich have their money tied up in businesses that can go under the next day. The world is changing so fast that nothing is secure. Every day you have to compete and win the customer. The competition to serve is great. It requires constant attention. Gilder says, "In a sense, entrepreneurship is the launching of surprises. What bothers many critics of capitalism is that a

group like the Forbes Four Hundred is too full of surprises. Sam Walton opens a haberdashery and it goes broke. He opens another and it works. He launches a shopping center empire in the rural south and becomes America's richest man. Who would have thunk it?" God works in mysterious ways. The Messiah is the ultimate surprise. God wants people to be open to surprises. He wants a free market so the Messiah isn't crushed by socialists who are out to regulate everyone.

Gilder says, "entrepreneurship overthrows establishments rather than undergirds them, the entrepreneurial tycoons mostly begin as rebels and outsiders. Often they live in out-of-the-way places like Bentonville, Arkansas; Omaha, Nebraska; or Mission Hills, Kansas (or Israel and Korea) —mentioned in New York, if at all, as the punch lines of comedy routines."

Gilder says, "The means of production of entrepreneurs are not land, labor, or capital, but minds and hearts.... The wealth of America is not an inventory of goods; it is an organic, living entity, a fragile pulsing fabric of ideas, expectations, loyalties, moral commitments, visions. To vivisect it for redistribution would eventually kill it."

LEVELERS AND PLANNERS

"This process of wealth creation is offensive to levelers and planners because it yields mountains of new wealth in ways that could not possibly be planned. But unpredictability is fundamental to free human enterprise. It defies every econometric model and socialist scheme. It makes no sense to most professors, who attain their positions by the systematic acquisition of credentials pleasing to the establishment above them. By definition, innovation cannot be planned. Leading entrepreneurs...did not ascend a hierarchy; they created a new one. They did not climb to the top of anything. They were pushed to the top by their own success. They did not capture the pinnacle; they became it."

"This process creates wealth. But to maintain and increase it is nearly as difficult. A pot of honey attracts flies as well as bears. Bureaucrats, politicians, bishops, raiders, robbers, revolutionaries, short-sellers, managers, business writers, and missionaries all think they could invest money better than its owners. Owners are besieged on all sides by aspiring spenders-debauchers of wealth and purveyors of poverty in the name of charity, idealism, envy, or social change."

"The single most important question for the future of America is how we treat our entrepreneurs. If we smear, harass, overtax, and over-regulate them, our liberal politicians will be shocked and horrified to discover how swiftly the physical tokens of the means of production collapse into so much corroded wire, eroding concrete, scrap metal, and jungle rot. They will be amazed how quickly the wealth of America flees to other countries."

Renewal of America

"Even the prospects of the poor in the United States and around the world above all depend on the treatment of the rich. If the rich are immobilized by socialism, the poor will suffer everywhere. High tax rates and oppressive regulations do not keep anyone from being rich. They prevent poor people from getting rich. But if the rich are respected and allowed to risk their wealth-and new rebels are allowed to rise up and challenge them—America will continue to be the land where the last regularly become the first by serving others." Gilder says that Unificationists are one those great surprises to the elite. Gilder sees the salvation of America is in the entrepreneur—the creative geniuses that pop up from nowhere. Gilder includes the "Moonies" in his list of those who will bring "renewal" to America. He writes: "The idea that America might find renewal from a mélange of movements of evangelical women, wetbacks, *Dartmouth Review* militants, South Asian engineers, Bible thumpers, boat people, Moonies, Mormons, Cuban refugees, fundamentalist college deans, Amway soap pushers, science wonks, creationists, Korean fruit peddlers, acned computer freaks, and other unstylish folk seems incomprehensible to many observers who do not understand that an open capitalist society is always saved by the last among

its citizens perpetually becoming the first."

SOCIALISM IS EQUALITY OF MISERY

Winston Churchill said the only equality socialism gives is the equality of "misery." He tells those in power to "Set the people free": "I do not believe in the power of the state to plan and enforce. No matter how numerous are the committees they set up or the ever-growing hordes of officials they employ or the severity of the punishments they inflict or threaten, they can't approach the high level of internal economic production achieved under free enterprise."

"Personal initiative, competitive selection, the profit motive, corrected by failure and the infinite processes of good housekeeping and personal ingenuity, these constitute the life of a free society. It is this vital creative impulse that I deeply fear the doctrines and policies of the socialist government have destroyed."

"Nothing that they can plan and order and rush around enforcing will take its place. They have broken the mainspring, and until we get a new one, the watch will not go. Set the people free—get out of the way and let them make the best of themselves.

"I am sure that this policy of equalizing misery and organizing scarcity instead of allowing diligence, self-interest and ingenuity to produce abundance has only to be prolonged to kill this British island stone dead."

BOTTOM-UP

President Reagan said it well in a speech: "We who live in free market societies believe that growth, prosperity, and ultimately human fulfillment, are created from the bottom up, not the government down.

"Only when the human spirit is allowed to invent and create, only when individuals are given a personal stake in deciding economic policies and benefiting from their success— only then can societies remain economically alive, dynamic, prosperous, progressive and free. Trust the people. This is the one irrefutable lesson of the entire postwar period contradicting the notion that rigid government controls are essential to economic development. The societies which have achieved the most spectacular, broad-based economic progress in the shortest period of time are not the most tightly controlled, nor necessarily the biggest in size, or the wealthiest in natural resources. No, what unites them all is their willingness to believe in the magic of the market place."

"Everyday life confirms the fundamentally human and democratic ideal that individual effort deserves economic reward. Nothing is more crushing to the spirit of working people and to the vision of development itself than the absence of reward for honest toil and legitimate risk. So let me speak plainly: we cannot have prosperity and successful development without economic freedom. Nor can we preserve our personal and political freedoms without economic freedom."

"Governments that set out to regiment their people with the stated objective of providing security and liberty have ended up losing both. Those which put freedom as the first priority also find they have also provided security and economic progress."

George Will criticized the Democratic Party in an article (11-14-02) in a magazine saying: "It believes Americans are not competent to invest a portion of their Social Security taxes in individual accounts. And not competent to exercise school choice. And not competent to own firearms without hundreds of regulations. The party believes that many African Americans are not competent, period. Hence they need to be treated as permanent wards of government and swaddled in paternalistic preferences."

WELFARE LIBERALISM

In the March, 2000 issue of the *Unification News*, Tyler Hendricks wrote, "The distasteful thing about welfare-liberalism is its deceitful, hidden assumption that the people are unable to take care of their own business, i.e. that the people cannot be given freedom because they cannot take responsibility for it. Hence, the liberals believe, an educated elite must make the rules, enforce the regulations, prohibit the second-hand smoke, confiscate the guns, determine the curricula, prescribe the drugs and eventually design the genes for the us beneficiaries of their inside the beltway brilliance. Patriarchalism for the cause of false love is the pits."

AFFIRMATIVE ACTION IS NEW RACISM

True Unificationists teach against government affirmative action programs. Charles Murray wrote an article called "Affirmative Racism" in *The New Republic* (12-31-84) saying, "There is no such thing as good racial discrimination.... A new racism ... is emerging to take its place alongside the old. It grows out of the preferential treatment for blacks..." He says it is insulting to blacks: "The most obvious consequence of preferential treatment is that every black professional, no matter how able, is tainted. Every black who is hired by a white-run organization that hires blacks preferentially has to put up with the knowledge that many of his co-workers believe he was hired because of his race."

Murray goes on to explain how many blacks have been hurt by affirmative action. He says, "... the new racism links up with the old. The old racism has always openly held that blacks are permanently less competent than whites. The new racism tacitly accepts that, in the course of overcoming the legacy of the old racism, blacks are temporarily less competent than whites. It is an extremely fine distinction. As time goes on, fine distinctions tend to be lost. Preferential treatment is providing persuasive evidence for the old racists."

Murray is a white man. Let's listen to a black man and one of the wisest men I have ever read, Walter Williams. On this topic, he said these words in an article called "Black 'Leaders' Tell Only Part of the Story" (*Human Events* 1/10/81), "Somebody should tell the emperor that he has no clothes on. For years now, black 'leaders' have been pretending that all the problems of black people can be attributed to white racism. Libraries, bookshelves and newspaper offices are crammed with tomes explaining what black people are, what they think, why they have problems, and what government can do to lead them out of the wilderness. Much of this material is now considered sacred. To question it—or worse, to criticize it—leaves one open to harsh attack. If he is lucky, the critic may be called an insensitive clod, or perhaps a political reactionary. If he's less fortunate, he'll be called a racist, or in the case of a black, an Uncle Tom."

"I've been wanting for years to give whites 'reparation certificates' for both their own grievances and those of their forebears against my people. Maybe then, white people could stop feeling guilty and acting like fools and start treating black people just like they treat white people. Because if they didn't feel guilty, they wouldn't approve the teaching of 'black English' in some of our schools. ... Guilt by many whites has led them to support programs and many forms of behavior that they would not tolerate if displayed by whites. This, I believe, is one of the most insidious forms of racism. I urge: Be brave. If a black does a job that's inferior or makes statements that ignore the facts, hold him accountable. If he does a job that's superb or speaks insightfully, tell him so. All the evidence that I have shows that black people are strong and they can take it—whatever criticism or commendation that you have to give."

A black man, William Hough, wrote in the *Washington Times* an article titled "On Being Black in America" (8-14-84): "there is no other ethnic group in America that seems more prejudiced than us blacks. And it is virtually destroying us as a race ....we wonder why foreign blacks who come to these shores do well. We are quick to criticize them and call them Uncle Toms because they work so cheaply. Yet within five years these foreign blacks often are well on their way to realizing their

dreams. We black Americans must understand that there is no short cut to success. We, like everyone else, must take the regular route."

Thomas Szasz says in *The Untamed Tongue*, "Formerly, men wanted to do a good job; from that desire arose craftsmanship. Today, they want a good job; from that desire arise unions and affirmative action programs."

PAVED WITH GOOD INTENTIONS

An excellent book on affirmative action is: *Paved With Good Intentions: the failure of race relations in contemporary America* by Jared Taylor. In *The Dream and the Nightmare: the sixties' legacy to the underclass*, Myron Magnet writes how liberals have crushed the value of self-reliance in America. He explains that we must look at things internally, not externally: "culture rather than economics is what fundamentally makes people underclass ....That is the lesson of Korean economic success in ghetto neighborhoods. No opportunity? Then why do Korean greengrocers flourish in Harlem and Bedford-Stuyvesant, where no such business has flourished for years? Why do newly opened Korean-owned liquor stores prosper in the Los Angeles ghettos? It doesn't take arcane skills to run a vegetable stand, only hard work, long hours, determination, rudimentary entrepreneurialism, and family cooperation. These are skills that you learn from home and community; they are skills that are nothing but the reflection of cultural values."

PRINCIPLES AMERICA BUILT ON

Magnet says as I say so often in this book: we need to return to basic truths thrown out by this century: "For the breakdown of the poor to be healed and the moral confusion of the Haves to be dispelled, we need above all to repair the damage that has been done to the beliefs and values that have made America remarkable and that for two centuries have successfully transformed huddled masses of the poor into free and prosperous citizens. The soul of American society isn't an ancient dynasty, or racial homogeneity, or immemorial rootedness in an ancestral fatherland, or welfare paternalism, but an allegiance to a few fundamental ideas. The principles on which our society was built must once again inform our public life, from social policy to school curricula: that everyone is responsible for his or her actions; that we believe in freedom under the rule of law, and that we enforce the law scrupulously in all neighborhoods; that the public, communal life is a boon, not an oppression; that everyone has equal rights, and rights belong to individuals, not groups; that we are free to shape our future."

LABOR UNIONS

Father often speaks out against labor unions that have a liberal agenda. In "Everyday Workshop Notes from Father's talks given on his South American tour" (November 29 December 6, 2000) he said, "We have to provide the superior answer to exploitative labor unions.... Labor unions in developed countries cause decline. Communists used them to destroy the free world's economy."

In "The Children's Day We Have Been Longing For" (November 11, 1977) he said, "Today America faces many troubles. For example, one reason the American steel industry is unable to compete with the prices of Japanese and Korean steel is the labor situation here. Workers want to work less and get paid more, but why are the workers acting this way? Many unions are influenced by a power that wants to see America decline. Because of their own selfishness in trying to look after themselves, they are putting formidable power into the hands of communism, being used themselves as tools to eventually bring this great nation down. To save the situation in just this one area a quiet revolution from selfishness to unselfishness is needed.

"Trade unions are becoming powerful organizations and will become an even greater danger to democracy in the days to come.... Workers are increasingly motivated by self-concern and do not care too much about the destiny of the nation."

Socialists see that the free market is not perfect and businessmen sometimes hurt people and they throw the baby out with the bathwater. It is revolting to see some businessmen who speak glowingly of capitalism get in bed with politicians by running to government for special favors like trade protection and low interest loans. In the guise of helping their community businessmen will get politicians to give them special tax breaks or force people to sell their property to them. Politicians usually favor businessmen and companies who are already rich. This is called corporate welfare.

When the Democrat Joseph Lieberman ran for President he issued a value statement. Here is an example of the typical view of those who believe government can be partners, not umpires, in the economy, "The way to grow the economy is to invest in people, to invest in innovation, to have the federal government put money in the kind of research that will create the new high-tech and bio-tech industries that will create the millions of new jobs. And one of the ways we do that is having the federal government partner with business, give business tax incentives to invest and grow and create jobs. And then, use public money to give lifetime opportunities for training and retraining to America's workers." Unfortunately many Republicans would agree with this nonsense. The Libertarian Party understands that government is not supposed to be a "partner with business" and governments cannot "create new jobs" but, in fact, slow the economy and creativity.

California Gov. Arnold Schwarzenegger is a super star Hollywood actor who became a Republican Governor of California. He was born in Austria and immigrated to America as a young man. He gave a speech at the Republican National Convention where he spoke of the greatness of America. He said one of the reasons why America is great is because it is not socialist like Europe is. America is stronger than Europe because it has more free enterprise:

> As a kid I saw the socialist country that Austria became after the Soviets left. The presidential campaign was in full swing. I remember watching the Nixon-Humphrey presidential race on TV. A friend of mine who spoke German and English translated for me. I heard Humphrey saying things that sounded like socialism, which I had just left.
>
> But then I heard Nixon speak. He was talking about free enterprise, getting the government off your back, lowering the taxes and strengthening the military. Listening to Nixon speak sounded more like a breath of fresh air.
>
> I said to my friend, "What party is he?"
>
> My friend said, "He's a Republican."
>
> I said, "Then I am a Republican."

What Liberal Democrats hate the most is strong men. Schwarzenegger spoke about the ideals America's founding fathers had. They wanted America to have strong families and strong churches that would solve their problems instead of running to government. They were for decentralizing power to the family. He said, "If you believe your family knows how to spend your money better than the government does, then you are a Republican. ...Now, there's another way you can tell you're a Republican. You have faith in free enterprise, faith in the resourcefulness of the American people and faith in the U.S. economy. And to those critics who are so pessimistic about our economy, I say: Don't be economic girlie-men." Men who are liberal/feminist/socialists are weaklings. Sun Myung Moon is a man's man. He is not into government welfare. Satan works to make men weak and women disorderly. Unificationist brothers should not be "economic girlie-men" who encourage their wives to leave the home and compete with men in the workplace.

FREE MARKET

Tyler Hendricks wrote in favor of the free market in an article in the *Unification News* for March 2000 saying, "Adam Smith considered the free market to be the theater of God's activity in the world." Milton Friedman in *Capitalism and Freedom* writes, "Fundamentally, there are only two

ways of coordinating the economic activities of millions. One is central direction involving the use of coercion—the technique of the army and of the modern totalitarian state. The other is voluntary cooperation of individuals—the technique of the marketplace."

Republicans need to be educated and converted to the virtue of limited government and laissez-faire capitalism as taught by such libertarians as Milton Friedman, Charles Murray and Ludwig von Mises. Von Mises said, "The first condition for the establishment of perpetual peace is the general adoption of the principles of laissez-faire capitalism."

THE CAPITALIST MANIFESTO

Louis Kelso in his book titled *The Capitalist Manifesto* and the Kelso Institute are wrong in criticizing laissez-faire capitalism. In his book Kelso writes, "excesses of laissez-faire—a system which operated, for a short while, to the immense benefit of the owners of capital property." No, it benefited everyone. Kelso says, "The false and historically refuted doctrine of laissez-faire." No, it is a true doctrine. Kelso calls laissez-faire "economic anarchy." No. Adam Smith said it well that there is an "invisible hand" that guides the free market to be orderly. Unificationists need to reject anyone who criticizes laissez-faire capitalism.

An excellent book that defends laissez-faire is The *Capitalist Manifesto: The Historic, Economic and Philosophic Case for Laissez-Faire* by Andrew Bernstein who writes:

> Capitalism requires the limiting of governmental power to maximize the freedom of the individual.
>
> Regarding the empirical correlation between economic freedom, i.e., capitalism and prosperity: the Heritage Foundation and the *Wall Street Journal* jointly publish an annual survey examining the degree of economic freedom in the world. Its title is the *Index of Economic Freedom*. "The story that the Index continues to tell is that economically freer countries tend to have higher per capita incomes than less free countries ... The more economic freedom a country has, the higher its per capita income is." The editors organize 155 countries into four categories, which are, in ascending order—repressed, mostly unfree, mostly free and free. "Once an economy moves from the mostly unfree category to the mostly free category, per capita income increases nearly four times."
>
> Capitalism is the only moral system for human beings ... capitalism is the only moral political-economic system because it alone embodies the rational principles upon which human survival and prosperity depend.

WORLD PEACE REQUIRES GLOBAL CAPITALISM

He quotes Ayn Rand who wrote in her book *Capitalism: The Unknown Ideal* that world peace "requires global capitalism":

> Laissez-faire capitalism is the only social system based on the recognition of individual rights and, therefore, the only system that bans force from social relationships. By the nature of its basic principles and interests, it is the only system fundamentally opposed to war.
>
> World peace, therefore, requires the establishment of global capitalism. If there is ever to exist an enduring peace among men, then statism— the root cause of war—must be finally and fully extirpated from their political systems.

REPUBLICANS SHOULD BECOME LIBERTARIANS

Too often Republicans respond to Democrats incessant need for bigger government with "Me too,

but less". They should be aggressive in reducing government, but sadly Republicans often increase its size. A vivid example of this is Paul Ryan who was a Republican Congressman who ran as Vice-President. On July 15, 2014 he gave a speech at Hillsdale College titled "Renewing the American Idea." Ryan starts out his speech talking about the greatness of limited government and ends saying how Social Security Administration is part of limited government. Many Republicans are like Ryan and genuinely think the Founders of America who wrote the greatest Constitution ever written would agree with them. There is a growing number of Republicans who are becoming more Libertarian and we can only hope they will change the Republican Party by rejecting the big government programs like Social Security that Ryan believes in. He said in his speech that Democrats like President Obama "embolden a certain governing philosophy—one at odds with our founding principles" and that "we need to renew the American Idea" which is "Limiting government and freeing up the associations of civil society would make safety and security, self-government and liberty, comfort and prosperity accessible to everyone … the Founders gave us the blueprint for a free society: a set of unchanging principles, as well as a framework of government for a growing nation. … the Constitution was our guide and the Declaration our North Star." He says America "adopted the greatest, most enduring Constitution ever written." He criticizes the Liberals and Democrats who call themselves Progressives saying, "Unfortunately, through fits and starts over the course of the 20th century, the Progressive approach has become a mindset at the heart of the modern Democratic Party, just as it has clouded Republican thinking as well. This is a core problem we face today."

This are great words of truth but like so many Republicans he agrees with Liberals like the Democratic Party that we should have big government programs. Ryan's thinking is clouded. He is right in saying the 20th Century has been a disaster because so many Americans gave up the idea of limited government that the 19th century Americans believed in. Ryan then goes downhill and says, "the progressives *were* right about something: The country was crying out for a national safety net, especially in light of the Great Depression. The people agreed that we should pool our resources to protect hardworking families. … Everybody *understands* the safety net. And everybody *benefits* from it. Take Social Security. We all know how it works—or at least how it's supposed to work. When you're working, you pay in. And when you're retired, it pays out. It's the same thing with Medicare—simple, straightforward. Everybody gets old. Everybody gets sick. And so everybody *contributes* in exchange for a secure retirement. Most people think that's a fair trade. And I agree." How sad is this?

The philosophy of America is "life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness." Jefferson and the other founding fathers saw that big governments were the greatest threats to life, liberty and happiness. Jefferson hated centralized power in the government and in the church: "How soon the labor of men would make a paradise of the whole earth, were it not for misgovernment, and a diversion of all his energies from their proper object—the happiness of man—to the selfish interest of kings, nobles, and priests."

An excellent book on limited government is *A Time for Truth*. The author, William Simon, is a former Secretary of Treasury. He explains how the word "equality" is misunderstood:

> ...the reigning anti-free enterprise philosophy ... which is now the dominant economic philosophy of our age. Starting in the last century and acquiring its modern style with the New Deal, it has rapidly engulfed a substantial portion of our educated classes. As both Nisbet's "New Despotism" and Kristol's "new class" brilliantly show, egalitarianism is the ruling value system of our urban "elite." And it is no coincidence that egalitarianism and despotism are linked. Historically, they always have been. Hitler and Stalin and Mao all offered their people an egalitarian society, disclosing only when it was too late that some would always be "more

equal than others." That remarkable nineteenth-century French observer of American mores Alexis de Tocqueville wrote in *Democracy in America*: "The foremost, or indeed the sole, condition required in order to succeed in centralizing the supreme power in a democratic community is to love equality or to get men to believe you love it. Thus, the science of despotism, which was once so complex, has been justified and reduced, as it were, to a single principle."

> And that "single principle"—equality—is precisely what the "New Despotism" in America rests on today. But because equality is also a revered concept in the American tradition of liberty, an immense confusion surrounds the issue. It merits a brief discussion.
>
> The equality peddled by egalitarianism is *not* the equality referred to in the American Constitution .... When they declared that "all men are created equal," they meant that men were equal before the law.

Simon ends his book with a call for Americans to return to the philosophy of our founding fathers. He writes:

> It is with a certain weariness that I anticipate the charge that I am one of those "unrealistic" conservatives who wishes to "turn back the clock." There is a good deal less to this criticism than meets the eye. History is not a determinist carpet rolling inexorably in the direction of collectivism, although an extraordinary number of people believe this to be the case. The truth is that it has unrolled gloriously in the opposite direction many times. Above all, the United States was born. There is nothing "historically inevitable" about the situation we are in. There is also nothing "realistic" in counseling people to adjust to that situation. That is equivalent to counseling them to adjust to financial collapse and the loss of freedom. Realism, in fact, requires the capacity to see beyond the tip of one's nose, to face intolerably unpleasant problems, and to take the necessary steps to dominate future trends, not to be crushed passively beneath them.
>
> The time has come to act. And I would advise the socially nervous that if our contemporary "New Despots" prefer to conceive of themselves as "progressive" and denounce those of us who would fight for liberty as "reactionary," let them. Words do not determine reality. Indeed, if language and history are to be taken seriously, coercion is clearly reactionary, and liberty clearly progressive. In a world where 80 percent of all human beings still live under harrowing tyranny, a tyranny always rationalized in terms of the alleged benefits to a collectivist construct called the People, the American who chooses to fight for the sanctity of the individual has nothing for which to apologize.
>
> One of the clearest measures of the disastrous change that has taken place in this country is the fact that today one must intellectually justify a passion for individual liberty and for limited government, as though it were some bizarre new idea. Yet angry as I get when I reflect on this, I know there is a reason for it. Seen in the full context of human history, individual liberty *is* a bizarre new idea. And an even more new bizarre new idea is the free market—the discovery that allowing millions upon millions of individuals to pursue their material interests as they choose, with a minimum of interference by the state, will unleash an incredible and orderly outpouring of inventiveness and wealth. These twin ideas appeared, like a dizzying flare of light in the long night of tyranny that has been the history of the human race. That light has begun to fade because the short span of 200 years has not been

> long enough for most of our citizens to understand the extraordinary nature of freedom.

Republicans need to understand that Libertarians are correct in their belief in laissez-faire capitalism. Republicans are better than big government Democrats, but they need to believe more in Adam Smith's invisible hand of free enterprise in a limited government and stop regulating people so much. Smith is considered the father of economics and in his classic book printed in 1776 *An Inquiry into the Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations* often simplified to *The Wealth of Nations* he says that in the free market there is an "invisible hand" that works to bring prosperity. He speaks strongly and with disgust at those who have the arrogance to think they can regulate the countless transactions people make every day. He says, "It is the highest impertinence and presumption, therefore, in kings and ministers to pretend to watch over the economy of private people, and to restrain their expense...They are themselves always, and without exception, the greatest spendthrifts in the society."

Plymouth Plantation — Socialism to Capitalism

Capitalism produces harmony as well as bread. Socialism produces disharmony and no bread. Socialism kills the spirit and eventually kills the body if gone long enough. Starvation is a fact of life in socialism. It was the brutal fact of life at the Plymouth Plantation until William Bradford decided Plato was wrong, and Aristotle was right. In his classic book, *Of Plymouth Plantation*, he writes how they had tried to live by the philosophy of Christian Socialism where everybody shared everything so nobody would be unequal. He writes, "So they began to think how they might raise as much corn as they could, and obtain a better crop than they had done, that they might not still thus languish in misery. At length, after much debate of things, the Governor gave way that they should set corn every man for his own particular, and in that regard trust to themselves; And so assigned to every family a parcel of land, according to the proportion of their number, for that end...This had very good success, for it made all hands very industrious, so as much more corn was planted than otherwise would have been by any means the Governor or any other could use, and saved him a great deal of trouble, and gave far better content." He is talking about himself as the Governor and how much his life improved because there were fewer problems by giving up socialism. Bradford said people "went willingly into the field...which before would allege weakness and inability; whom to have compelled would have been thought great tyranny and oppression."

Bradford was wise enough to change and try something new. He writes, "The experience that was had in this common course and condition, tried sundry years and that amongst godly and sober men, may well evince the vanity of that conceit of Plato's and other ancients applauded by some of later times; that the taking of property and bringing in community into a commonwealth would make them happy and flourishing as if they were wiser than God. For this community (so far as it was) was found to breed much confusion and discontent and retard employment that would have been to their benefit and comfort."

Adam Smith said that each person is unique, and God works through that person in a free market to provide a service society needs. It "encourages every man to apply himself to a particular occupation, and to cultivate and bring to perfection whatever talent or genius he may possess for that particular species of business." This decision can only be made between him and God. Socialist planners cannot possibly keep up with everyone's individuality.

Adam Smith explains that those socialist elites who would try to "direct private people" on how to spend their money with schemes of national economic plans are "dangerous." He says, "What is the species of domestic industry which his capital can employ, and of which the produce is likely to be of greatest value, every individual, it is evident, can, in his local situation, judge much better

than any statesman or lawgiver can do for him. The statesman, who should attempt to direct private people in what manner they ought to employ their capitals, would not only load himself with a most unnecessary attention, but assume an authority which could safely be trusted, not only to no single person, but to no council or senate whatever, and which would nowhere be so dangerous as in the hands of a man who had folly and presumption enough to fancy himself fit to exercise it."

Smith hated government officials by calling each of them who interfered in the market place an "insidious and warty animal called the statesman and politician." Smith says they are also hypocrites too because it always happens that leaders who want to guide the spending habits of others — judging everyone from capitalists to housewives as spendthrift, often themselves live in luxury at the taxpayer's expense and can't balance their own budgets and spend people's hard earned money that they earned honestly, less wisely than the average person would. He writes: "It is the highest impertinence and presumption, therefore, in kings and ministers, to pretend to watch over the economy of private people, and to restrain their expense, either by sumptuary laws, or by prohibiting the importation of foreign luxuries. They are themselves, always, and without exception, the greatest spendthrifts in society. Let them look well after their own expense, and they may safely trust private people with theirs. If their own expense does not ruin the state, that of their subjects never will."

The only way for the average person to overcome the brainwashing of those who push for socialism is to clearly understand the principles of wealth and to see that capitalism and decentralization of power is spiritual. George Roche, a former president of Hillsdale College, a college that teaches the free market, wrote, "A society unwilling to place its faith in the dignity and capability of free men is a society doomed to the mismanagement of 'little men playing god.' These little men of course fail completely to realize that contrast and individual difference are the foundation of all genuine creativity. A situation in which an individual is left free to dispose of his property and order his affairs as he sees fit is an ideal, both for human productivity and for human freedom. Such institutions of the private sector as private property constitute an indispensable support of personal liberty. Viewed in such a light, private property becomes truly spiritual, valued less for its material complexion than for its underlying spiritual value. The Biblical injunction, 'seek ye first the Kingdom of God, and His righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you,' is a suggestion of how important are the underlying values, and how they serve as an absolute prerequisite for the creative capacities which are unleashed when our spiritual values and our emphasis upon individual freedom are in proper order. If we would be materially prosperous, let us begin by being spiritually healthy, by allowing a productive form of social organization, a truly free market and free society premised upon the dignity of the individual."

"While it is true that freedom 'works' and that it is the only system consonant with a high degree of material prosperity, it is the underlying *why* it works, the spiritually correct condition of individual freedom which releases those creative energies, to which we owe our primary allegiance."

To be a socialist is to be unspiritual. He says, "modern man's insistence upon collective solutions is understandable, since he has divorced himself from the spiritual values which give meaning to him as an individual personality."

MAKE TAXES VOLUNTARY

If the U.S. government was like voluntary churches which had to use only persuasion to get people to send them money, how much would they get? One recent candidate for president campaigned on the theme of a 17% flat tax. If leaders were really God centered they would have

taxes as totally voluntary as well as the military. No draft. No forcing anyone to give money or to fight. Do you think people voluntarily would send in 50% of their earnings to local, state and federal governments which still leaves a deficit and no payment on the debt? Would they voluntarily send in 17%? Of course not. Most people would send some money, perhaps 10%, and tell their representatives to apply that to our military, local police and courts. America would have a laissez-faire economy immediately. We must trust people so much that even though they are fallen it is best to leave them alone instead of having a few elites, who intimidate people by saying they are superior, run their lives. Making taxes voluntary would unleash creativity and wealth we could never even imagine.

ADAM SMITH

Adam Smith is considered the father of modern economics and the father of free enterprise. His classic book, *The Wealth of Nations*, was printed in 1776. God was behind it. It is interesting to me that his name is Adam. From him we get our first written classic for the economic system of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. His last name, Smith, symbolizes the average man who will prosper in a capitalist economy. The historian, Thomas Buckle, was so excited he went a little overboard, but he is right in seeing the incredible breakthrough that Smith brought. He said that Smith "discovered the laws which regulate the creation and diffusion of wealth" and his book "is certainly the most valuable contribution ever made by a single man towards establishing the principles on which government should be based .... This solitary Scotsman has, by the publication of one single work, contributed more toward the happiness of man than has been effected by the united abilities of all the statesmen and legislators of whom history has presented an authentic account."

Smith has many disciples and admirers. Milton Friedman liked to wear a tie with faces of Adam Smith on it. But many people do not like him. Years ago I was watching a televised debate between the Republican candidates for the presidency. John Anderson, a congressman, after listening to several of his competitors, blurted out in disgust that they were all advocating the teachings of Adam Smith, and these are his exact words, "who lived 200 years ago."

Conservatives should learn from libertarians that it is right and principled to legalize prostitution, gambling, pornography and drugs. When well-meaning people start regulating others by force it is a slippery slope to regulating everything. What makes the Internet so powerful is that it is not regulated. We may not like the porn on the Internet because many men become addicted, but there is freedom for us to spread the *Divine Principle* worldwide without being censored. The Republicans have a blind spot and need to understand that their moral crusade to make porn shops illegal leads to big government that feels it must go on a moral crusade to protect America from Sun Myung Moon and the *Divine Principle* which some will call heresy and dangerous. Father has had government regulators put him in jail six times. For many years Father could not enter England because of government regulators. England is much more socialist than America. For example, it has nationalized health care. President Clinton and his wife Hillary tried to nationalize health care in America and failed. There is a connection between socialism and persecution. Father couldn't enter England for many years because of big government. Let's work to end government regulation.

Jim Lewis was the vice-presidential candidate for the Libertarian Party in 1984. In his book, *Liberty Reclaimed*, he teaches that America should give up its tendency to turn to government force to punish non-coercive people and groups regardless of whether they are businessmen or churches who are simply offering their services voluntarily. America, he says, should go to a "new level of tolerance for others. Our nation is made up of many diverse groups, nationalities, customs and lifestyles. For centuries the political process has been used by some groups to harass, imprison, and even murder other groups. It has been used by Catholics against Protestants, by

Protestants against Catholics, by one nationality against another. It has been used to eradicate customs, languages, and beliefs. And as tolerance was destroyed so was freedom because the two are linked together. A free society must be a tolerant society because intolerance leads to crusades which need big government."

"As crucial as tolerance is to freedom, it is still very difficult for many of us. Sometimes we watch someone get wrapped up in a religious cult and lose his individuality. We may want to grab him by the arm and drag him off somewhere until we can get him thinking straight again. But if we respect that person's right to make decisions we can only try to persuade him. Or perhaps we see a friend gorging himself on pastry and candy. We know he is gaining an incredible amount of weight. We know that it affects his heart and can ultimately kill him, but still we have no right to forcibly wire his mouth shut or lock him up while we feed him health foods. Instead, we must limit our actions to noncoercive means. Or perhaps a dear friend has started taking drugs which we feel will be destructive to him or he becomes an alcoholic. Do we have a moral right to call in the State and have him incarcerated 'for his own good?' No! All we can morally do is try to help him while respecting his right to be wrong.... This respect for the right to commit moral errors is the core of any philosophy of liberty."

G.K. Chesterton said: "Despotism, and attempts at despotism, are a kind of disease of public spirit. They represent, as it were, the drunkenness of responsibility. It is when men begin to grow desperate in their love for the people, when they are overwhelmed with the difficulties and blunders of humanity, that they fall back upon a wild desire to manage everything themselves. Their faith in themselves is only a disillusionment with mankind. They are in that most dreadful position, dreadful alike in personal and public affairs—the position of the man who has lost faith and not lost love. This belief that all would go right if we could only get the strings into our own hands is a fallacy almost without exception, but nobody can justly say that it is not public-spirited. The sin and sorrow of despotism is not that it does not love men, but that it loves them too much and trusts them too little. Therefore from age to age in history arise these great despotic dreamers, whether they be Royalists or Imperialists or even Socialists, who have at root this idea, that the world would into rest if it went their way and forswore altogether the right of going its own way. When a man begins to think that the grass will not grow at night unless he lies awake to watch it, he generally ends either in an asylum or on the throne of an emperor."

It is extremely important that we educate Republican politicians to not get caught up into the "drunkenness of responsibility" and think they are loving people when they want to join the Democrats in regulating people. Let's work to get Republican politicians to give up the notion that they are Dad who will use force to make sure people are punished if they take what arrogant politicians define as drugs. This is the road to socialism. Socialists sometimes wake up one morning and find a dictator has taken over their big government. Dictators kill the socialists first. Once we go down the road of government regulation we end up seeing religion regulated. Ludwig von Mises (pronounced me' ces) writes in his brilliant book *Human Action*:

> If it is true that government derives its authority from God and is entrusted by Providence to act as the guardian of the ignorant and stupid populace, then it is certainly its task to regiment every aspect of the subject's conduct. The God-sent ruler knows better what is good for his wards than they do themselves. It is his duty to guard them against the harm they would inflict upon themselves if left alone.
>
> Self-styled "realistic" people fail to recognize the immense importance of the principles implied. They contend that they do not want to deal with the matter from what, they say, is a philosophic and academic point of view. Their approach is, they argue, exclusively guided by practical considerations. It is a fact they say that some people harm themselves and their innocent families by consuming narcotic drugs.

> Only doctrinaires could be so dogmatic as to object to the government's regulation of the drug traffic. Its beneficent effects cannot be contested.
>
> However, the case is not so simple as that. Opium and morphine are certainly dangerous, habit-forming drugs. But once the principle is admitted that it is the duty of government to protect the individual against his own foolishness, no serious objections can be advanced against further encroachments. A good case could be made out in favor of the prohibition of alcohol and nicotine. And why limit the government's benevolent providence to the protection of the individual's body only? Is not the harm a man can inflict on his mind and soul even more disastrous than any bodily evils? Why not prevent him from reading bad books and seeing bad plays, from looking at bad paintings and statues and from hearing bad music? The mischief done by bad ideologies, surely, is much more pernicious, both for the individual and for the whole society, than that done by narcotic drugs.
>
> These fears are not merely imaginary specters terrifying secluded doctrinaires. It is a fact that no paternal government, whether ancient or modern, ever shrank from regimenting its subjects' minds, beliefs, and opinions. If one abolishes man's freedom to determine his own consumption, one takes all freedoms away. The naive advocates of government interference with consumption delude themselves when they neglect what they disdainfully call the philosophical aspect of the problem. They unwittingly support the case of censorship, inquisition, religious intolerance, and the persecution of dissenters.

In *What It Means to Be a Libertarian* by Charles Murray the inside flap says:

> Charles Murray believes that America's founders had it right—strict limits on the power of the central government and strict protection of the individual are the keys to a genuinely free society. In *What It Means to Be a Libertarian*, he proposes a government reduced to the barest essentials: an executive branch consisting only of the White House and trimmed-down departments of state, defense, justice; a Congress so limited in power that it meets only a few months each year; and a federal code stripped of all but a handful of regulations.
>
> Combining the tenets of classical Libertarian philosophy with his own highly-original, always provocative thinking, Murray shows why less government advances individual happiness and promotes more vital communities and a richer culture. By applying the truths our founders held to be self-evident to today's most urgent social and political problems, he creates a clear, workable vision for the future.

Murray begins his book with a very good overview of the philosophy of libertarianism:

> In the last quarter of the eighteenth century the American Founders created a society based on the belief that human happiness is intimately connected with personal freedom and responsibility. The twin pillars of the system they created were limits on the power of the central government and protection of individual rights.
>
> A few people, of whom I am one, think that the Founders' insights are as true today as they were two centuries ago. We believe that human happiness requires freedom and that freedom requires limited government. Limited government means a very small one, shorn of almost all the apparatus we have come to take for granted during the last sixty years.

> Most people are baffled by such a view. Don't we realize that this is postindustrial America, not Jefferson's agrarian society? Don't we realize that without big government millions of the elderly would be destitute, corporations would destroy the environment, and employers would be free once more to exploit their workers? Where do we suppose blacks would be if it weren't for the government? Women? Haven't we noticed that America has huge social problems that aren't going to be dealt with unless the government does something about them?
>
> This book tries to explain how we can believe that the less government, the better. Why a society run on the principles of limited government would advance human happiness. How such a society would lead to greater individual fulfillment, more vital communities, a richer culture. Why such a society would contain fewer poor people, fewer neglected children, fewer criminals. How such a society would not abandon the less fortunate but would care for them better than does the society we have now.

Murray writes that we would be far better off if government had not thrown a wrench in the machinery by interfering with health care and education:

> The current problems in education and health, seemingly so different, are alike in defying common sense. We should not be worrying about how to keep weapons out of schools or how to ensure that high-school graduates can read. Instead, we should be enjoying a golden age of improvement in education. We should not be worrying about whether an affordable health care system is possible. Instead, routine health care should have been getting steadily cheaper for years, leaving plenty of money to pay for catastrophic health insurance.
>
> We should be seeing in both education and health the same trends that have characterized other products and services that benefit from new technology—more options and more flexibility, with better value for money in some cases and better value for less money in others. The government has systematically protected both education and health care from the revolutions they desperately need.
>
> The possibilities now facing adults are so open-ended, so dazzling that the education industry should be in the same state of riotous change as the computer and telecommunications industries. Nothing like that is happening. Public education is the Soviet agriculture of American life.

There are many books on limited government. If Murray's books don't grab you then try others. My favorite is *Libertarianism* by John Hospers. Many have been converted by the novels of Ayn Rand like *Atlas Shrugged* and her non-fiction writings such as *Capitalism: The Unknown Ideal*. I mention some books in my reading list at the end of this book. And I recommend looking at the website for the Laissez-faire Book Store at www.lfb.com that will give many good books to choose from. Unificationist brothers and sisters should teach the ideas from these books to their children.

You may like *How Capitalism Saved America: The Untold History of Our Country, from the Pilgrims to the Present* by Thomas Dilorenzo. One reviewer wrote: "Extolling free markets and upbraiding government intervention, economist DiLorenzo offers a tour of American economic history that is intended to counter the anticapitalist ideas embedded in best-sellers such as Barbara Ehrenreich's *Nickel and Dimed* and Michael Moore's *Downsize This!*. While calling these anecdote- and emotion-driven tomes utter economic nonsense, DiLorenzo does acknowledge their

influence. Most people, to the extent they understand the principles of free markets, are suspicious of them, citing robber barons, petroleum trusts, and the Great Depression. Inveighing against 'myths' that the failures of capitalism were the cause of such historical episodes, DiLorenzo attacks the political response to them as pernicious to consumers, who, he argues, ultimately pay for price controls, regulations, subsidies, and government corporations."

At the website for Advocates for Self Government (www.theadvocates.org) you can buy some videos of prominent libertarians discussing various aspects of libertarian thought. For example they have a video titled *Charles Murray: Freedom, Virtue, and Community*. They write about the video of him saying, "An intellectual feast — a challenge to every libertarian thinker! One of the world's most influential and provocative intellectuals— author of *Losing Ground*, *What It Means To Be A Libertarian* and others asks: Do libertarians care enough about culture and morality? And what do these things have to do with liberty? A vital—yet too often neglected aspect of libertarian thought. Eloquent, passionate, intensely original, and fascinating." They sell a video of Mary Ruwart titled *Transforming Bleeding-Heart Liberals into Die-Hard Libertarians*. They write about the video saying, "Too often, compassionate, caring people think that libertarians have bad intentions. The author of *Healing Our World* and *Short Answers to the Tough Questions* tells you how to correct these misperceptions and show them that only liberty can address their concerns. Let's get compassionate idealists to work for liberty instead of big government!" They have some videos of libertarians discussing how to explain libertarian thought to religious people with such titles as *Communicating Libertarianism to Religious People*, *Secrets of Effectively Promoting Libertarian Values to the Religious Community*, and *Libertarianism is the Most Caring Choice — Dr Mary Ruwart* saying this about the latter, "Dr. Ruwart does a remarkable job of teaching how to win liberals to libertarianism. Never be called cold or hard-hearted again!" They sell a little book (158 pages) titled *Libertarianism In One Lesson* by David Bergland which they say is "Quite simply, the best short-and-sweet explanation of libertarianism and why freedom works. Concise, direct and easy to understand."

Llewellyn H. Rockwell, Jr. wrote in his article in the *National Review* (5-28-90) titled "Ayn Rand is dead — Christian libertarianism":

> The leviathan state's systematic attack on the family goes beyond the promotion of unwed motherhood through welfare programs, and secular humanism through the government schools—the welfare state cuts to the heart of the family by arrogating to itself the authority of the father as protector and provider. In view of this, David Gordon of the Ludwig von Mises Institute points out that, contrary to the common impression that libertarians are free-thinkers and libertines, "Many libertarians ... are libertarians precisely because they wish to protect traditional values and culture from the state."

Sharon Harris gave a speech titled "The Invisible Hand Is a Gentle Hand." This speech is available for purchase on CD at the website (www.theadvocates.org). She begins by saying:

> What would a truly libertarian society look like?
>
> The enemies of freedom have always maligned the free market. They have perpetuated myths like "dog-eat-dog capitalism," "survival of the fittest," "the law of the jungle." Robber barons. Heartless monopolies. A ruthless Wall Street fleecing a helpless Main Street.
>
> Baloney.
>
> It's time to speak out for the free market and individual liberty.
>
> The great economist Adam Smith wrote that a free society operates as if "an invisible hand" directs people's actions in such a way as to serve the interest of the whole society.
>
> That invisible hand is a gentle one. A free market is a gentle market. A free society is

a gentle society. A cooperative, compassionate, and generous society. An abundant and tolerant society.

> David Friedman, in his book *The Machinery of Freedom*, notes that there are only three ways to get something: (1) by trading, (2) by receiving a gift (from love or friendship), or (3) by force ("do what I want or I'll shoot you"). Honest, peaceful people operate in the first two ways. Criminals and the state operate by force, aggression, coercion.
>
> The gentle invisible hand vs. the visible fist of force.
>
> You want to see dog-eat-dog? Look at the Waco massacre of the Branch Davidians. Look at the Ruby Ridge shooting of Vicki Weaver. Look at an IRS audit. We don't have a dog-eat-dog business world; we have a dog-eat-dog government.
>
> Dog-eat-dog is defined as "ruthless or savage competition." This is an absurd description of the free market.
>
> And besides, it's unfair to dogs.
>
> In truth, the marketplace has a civilizing, humanizing effect. If honesty didn't exist, the marketplace would invent it, because it's the most successful way to do business. In the free market we see, not a survival of the fittest, but a survival of the kindest. Survival of the most cooperative. Survival of the friendliest. A gentle Darwinism, if you will.

SO-CALLED REAGAN REVOLUTION

It is tragic that Republicans talk about limited government but have made government bigger. They speak with a forked tongue. The so-called "Reagan Revolution" has not gotten the government off our backs like Reagan said he would do. Reagan said these noble and inspiring words in his First Inaugural Address (January 20, 1981):

> But great as our tax burden is, it has not kept pace with public spending. For decades, we have piled deficit upon deficit, mortgaging our future and our children's future for the temporary convenience of the present. To continue this long trend is to guarantee tremendous social, cultural, political, and economic upheavals.
>
> You and I, as individuals, can, by borrowing, live beyond our means, but for only a limited period of time. Why, then, should we think that collectively, as a nation, we are not bound by that same limitation?
>
> It is time to check and reverse the growth of government which shows signs of having grown beyond the consent of the governed.
>
> It is my intention to curb the size and influence of the Federal establishment.
>
> Now, so there will be no misunderstanding, it is not my intention to do away with government. It is, rather, to make it work—work with us, not over us; to stand by our side, not ride on our back. Government can and must provide opportunity, not smother it; foster productivity, not stifle it.
>
> It is no coincidence that our present troubles parallel and are proportionate to the intervention and intrusion in our lives that result from unnecessary and excessive growth of government.

Reagan said in the above that he was against debt and that he was going to reduce the size of government. I've read different opinions of how good Reagan was but many Republicans have been fiscally irresponsible. William A. Niskanen wrote, "No major federal programs (other than revenue sharing) and no agencies were abolished." At www.Mises.org Murray Rothbard wrote an article titled "The Myths of Reaganomics" blasting Reagan for betraying his promise to cut the

size of government.

One reviewer wrote:

> In *Crazies to the Left of Me, Wimps to the Right: How One Side Lost Its Mind and the Other Lost Its Nerve* the number one *New York Times* bestselling author Bernard Goldberg is back with more hard-hitting observations and no-nonsense advice for saving America from the lunatics on the Left and the sellouts on the Right. Goldberg speaks for the millions of Americans who are saying: Enough! Enough of lunatics like Rosie O'Donnell who think "Radical Christianity"—whatever that means—is "as big a threat to America as Radical Islam." He writes: "Once upon a time she was the 'Queen of Nice.' These days she's the 'Queen of Stupid' ruling over a land of morons who hang on her every word and *actually* think she's profound."
>
> But Goldberg doesn't stop with the crazies on the Left. Speaking for fed-up conservatives, he also goes after the wimps on the Right—the gutless wonders in Washington who sold out their principles for power. He's had it with hypocritical Republicans who say they're for small government but then spend our hard-earned tax money like Imelda Marcos in a shoe store. In plain English, he's had it with Republicans who are afraid to be conservative! Bernard Goldberg argues that while conservatives still believe in important things, the jury is out on Republicans.

Incestuous Relationship — Business and Government

The following are some reviews and statements about the book *The Big Ripoff: How Big Business and Big Government Steal Your Money* by Timothy P. Carney:

> When it comes to the corporations that dominate the US economy, says Carney, there's no difference between Big Business Republicans and Tax-and-Spend Democrats. No matter who's in charge, Big Government and Big Business team up to create a quasi-fascist collective designed to extract maximum revenue from the common citizen. Carney has a host of facts to back up this theory, covering the history of Big Business and Big Government, the tradition of corporate welfare in America, profiles of such private offenders as Phillip Morris and Enron, and the "green" cheat of "environmentalism for profit." Even the heavy taxes and regulation under which large corporations operate is, paradoxically, largely to their benefit, in Carney's view; such impediments serve as barriers to competition, keeping out rivals and allowing monopolies and oligopolies to thrive-and the extra expense, in what becomes a familiar pattern, is simply passed on to the consumer. Though Carney's dire prognosis seems grim, this is an absorbing look at the disconcertingly cozy (and profitable) relationship that has developed between regulator and regulated in America. (*Publishers Weekly*)
>
> "...so good that you might even consider putting it under the tree of the liberals on your Christmas list....they will likely find it fascinating how big business uses government to its advantage. Furthermore, they will likely find *The Big Ripoff* hard to put down due to Carney's compelling style of writing.... Carney smashes the conventional wisdom that big business is inherently pro-free market and anti-government."—from "Santa Government" by David Hogberg (*American Spectator*, December 15, 2006)
>
> "This book should be read by every Northern Virginia taxpayer for a chapter

aptly titled "You Get Taxed, They Get Rich" in which Carney illustrates this dynamic by examining how former Gov. Mark Warner pushed through the largest tax increase in the commonwealth's history. Warner, now a presidential hopeful, was helped by the state's top business leaders, who themselves spent more than $7 million lobbying for higher taxes, instead of the other way around." (*The Washington DC Examiner*)

"Bashing big business is traditionally a left-wing indulgence, but it need not be. Political reporter Timothy Carney, a small-government conservative, takes up the task with relish in the "The Big Ripoff." Along the way, he produces a spirited and eminently readable indictment of the unsavory alliance between corporate and congressional America." (*The Wall Street Journal*, July 29, 2006)

"...makes a good case that the American people might be better served with less taxpayer subsidization and governmental protection of big business." (*The Boston Globe*)

From the Inside Flap

Free enterprise in America may be heading the way of the drive-in movie theater or the corner soda fountain—soon to be a quaint relic of the past. The threat to American capitalism? The "capitalists" themselves.

From General Motors to General Electric, Boeing to Philip Morris, today's largest corporations have mastered the art of working with government officials at every level to stifle competition. They reap billions through a complex web of higher taxes, stricter regulations, and shameless government handouts. And who foots the bill for the increasingly cozy relationship between big business and big government?

Consumers. Taxpayers. Entrepreneurs. You.

The Big Ripoff pulls back the curtain to show who is strangling America's tradition of free enterprise, how and why they are doing it, and what you can do to help restore free enterprise along with your long-trampled rights as both a consumer and taxpayer. Hard-charging investigative reporter and commentator Timothy Carney will both fascinate and infuriate you with insider tales that include:

* A decade after reforming the welfare system for individuals, Congress is making the web of welfare for corporations even more impregnable than ever
* How government land grabs—"eminent domain for corporate gain"—are unfairly driving small mom and pop operations out of business
* Why cigarette behemoth Philip Morris is stridently leading the war against its own products, and strengthening its tobacco stranglehold in the process
* How the controversial "death tax" actually benefits Warren Buffett, Bill Gates, and other billionaires—who are, not coincidentally, its most ardent supporters
* How the federal government drives up your gas prices with ethanol mandates and "clean fuel" rules that mostly enrich the biggest refiners and agribusinesses
* How Americans pay twice as much for sugar as the rest of world—and the difference lands in the pockets of one very rich, very well-connected family
* How the rich vote Republican, but how the very rich consistently back Democratic candidates—and why

Citizens and taxpayers are losing power over their government, and consumers and entrepreneurs are losing control over the economy, thanks to a deadly combination of power-hungry politicians and obliging CEOs. *The Big Ripoff* takes you deep inside the insidious, incestuous relationship of big business and even bigger government, and reveals how these purported rivals—huge corporations and ambitious government officials?—work together to the detriment of consumers, taxpayers, and entrepreneurs.

Praise for THE BIG RIPOFF

"Politicians like to say that government is on the side of the little guy. But with impressive documentation and persuasive examples, Tim Carney shows how government power and regulation are typically used to assist the powerful."

—Paul A. Gigot Editorial Page Editor, the *Wall Street Journal*

"Exposes the dirty little secret of American politics: how big businesses work with statist politicians to diminish the prosperity and freedom of consumers, taxpayers, and entrepreneurs. Carney employs top-notch writing ability, passion for liberty, and understanding of economics to demolish the myth that big business is a foe of big government. Everyone who seeks to understand who really benefits from big government should read this book, as should anyone who still believes that the interventionist state benefits the average person."

—Congressman Ron Paul U.S. House of Representatives, 14th District of Texas

"Small entrepreneurial businesses are the backbone success of our great economy. They are the biggest job and wealth creators. Is that why big corpocratic behemoth firms collude with big government for a liberal agenda of higher taxes and overregulation that will punish the small risk-takers? Tim Carney's new book describes how anti-business big business can be."

—Lawrence Kudlow Host of CNBC's *Kudlow & Company*

MILTON FRIEDMAN

One of the most powerful voices for God's core value of decentralized government has been Milton Friedman. George Will says Milton Friedman is "America's most consequential public intellectual of the twentieth century." President George W. Bush honored Milton Friedman on his 90th birthday at the White House. He said he was:

a hero of freedom. He has used a brilliant mind to advance a moral vision: the vision of a society where men and women are free, free to choose, but where government is not as free to override their decisions.

That vision has changed America and it is changing the world. All of us owe a tremendous debt to this man's towering intellect and his devotion to liberty. . . . Milton Friedman has shown us that when government attempts to substitute its own judgments for the judgments of free people, the results are usually disastrous. In contrast to the free market's invisible hand, which improves the lives of people, the government's invisible foot tramples on people's hopes and destroys their dreams.

He has never claimed that free markets are perfect. Yet he has demonstrated that even an imperfect market produces better results than arrogant experts and grasping bureaucrats. But Milton Friedman does not object to government

> controls solely because they are ineffective. His deeper objectives flow from a moral framework. He has taught us that a free market system's main justification is its moral strength. Human freedom serves the cause of human dignity. Freedom rewards creativity and work, and you cannot reduce freedom in our economy without reducing freedom in our lives.
>
> As Milton Friedman has written, "I know of no society that has been marked by a large measure of political freedom, and that has not also used something comparable to a free market to organize the bulk of economic activity." This viewpoint was once controversial, as was Milton Friedman, himself.
>
> When he began his work, the conventional wisdom held that capitalism's days were numbered. Free market systems were thought to be unsuited to modern problems. Today we recognize that free markets are the great engines of economic development. They are the source of wealth and the hope of a world weary of poverty and weary of oppression.

A Democrat President would not honor Friedman at the White House because Democrats are on the Cain side and do not like Friedman. A leading Democrat, James Carville, writes in his terrible book *Had Enough? A Handbook for Fighting Back*, "There is only one entity that has any ability to stand up to the power the right-wingers are accumulating, and that is a more aggressive federal government. I believe, and I'm not afraid to say it, that government should always be the most powerful interest in our country. Of course, rightwingers will rant and rave that our founders wanted smaller government, and that's not untrue. They wanted smaller government because, in those days, the government was the biggest threat to citizen power. Today, corporations are the great threat." There is a revolving door between big government and big business. Without big government big business would not be so corrupt and powerful. Carville speaks for Satan. Government is still the greatest threat. It was government, not corporations, that put Sun Myung Moon in jail in Korea and America and it was government that tortured him when he was young in a concentration camp. Father has created many good corporations including the *Washington Times* that fights against the James Carvilles of this ignorant world. Books by Democrats who write glowingly about big government such as Edward Kennedy's *America: Back on Track* are awful books that no one should read.

Milton Friedman has excellent books and a wonderful video series called *Free to Choose*. Every one of our children should see these videos and learn about libertarian economics. Friedman wrote an article in *Newsweek* magazine titled "Prohibition and Drugs." He began by quoting Billy Sunday:

> "The reign of tears is over. The slums will soon be only a memory. We will turn our prisons into factories and our jails into storehouses and corncribs. Men will walk upright now, women will smile, and the children will laugh. Hell will be forever for rent."
>
> That is how Billy Sunday, the noted evangelist and leading crusader against Demon Rum, greeted the onset of Prohibition in early 1920. We know now how tragically his hopes were doomed. New prisons and jails had to be built to house the criminals spawned by converting the drinking of spirits into a crime against the state. Prohibition undermined respect for the law, corrupted the minions of the law, created a decadent moral climate—but did not stop the consumption of alcohol.
>
> Despite this tragic object lesson, we seem bent on repeating precisely the same mistake in the handling of drugs.
>
> On ethical grounds, do we have the right to use the machinery of government to prevent an individual from becoming an alcoholic or a drug addict? For

> children, almost everyone would answer at least a qualified yes. But for responsible adults, I, for one, would answer no. Reason with the potential addict, yes. Tell him the consequences, yes. Pray for and with him, yes. But I believe that we have no right to use force, directly or indirectly, to prevent a fellow man from committing suicide, let alone from drinking alcohol or taking drugs.

He ended by saying, "In drugs, as in other areas, persuasion and example are likely to be far more effective than the use of force to shape others in our image." A prominent conservative, William F. Buckley, has valiantly tried to get his fellow Republicans to see the light and stop the war on drugs which is really an immoral war on America's citizens. He once wrote an article titled, "Legalization of Marijuana Long Overdue."

GOVERNMENT'S ROLE – REFEREE

Milton Friedman explains that government should be in the role of referee, not player: "Government has three primary functions. It should provide for military defense of the nation. It should enforce contracts between individuals. It should protect citizens from crimes against themselves or their property. When government—In pursuit of good intentions tries to rearrange the economy, legislate morality, or help special interests, the cost come in inefficiency, lack of motivation, and loss of freedom. Government should be a referee, not an active player."

VOLUNTARY TAXES

The United States government and every other government should not use force to collect taxes. By making taxes voluntary we would immediately end big government and return to the limited government our founding fathers envisioned. The most a man should give to the combined federal, state and local governments is 10% of his income. Allan Carlson writes that at the beginning of the 20th Century the "United States government was both limited and frugal. In total—federal, state, and local—government taxed and spent less than 10% of personal incomes." Millions of people tithe 10% to their church. If taxes were voluntary millions would be patriotic and tithe ten percent to government as well. I don't agree with everything Kevin Swanson writes but he has many good insights in his excellent book *The Second Mayflower*. He writes, "We must be committed to a decentralized system of government. States and small communities must hold powers that are held only by federal governments today. … We must generate a new form of federalism that is more robust to the onslaught of power-hungry centrists. It took over 120 years for the enemies of freedom in this country to create a tyranny by centralizing power in the state and federal governments. … Government should never control, mandate, or fund the education of children. Government should never absorb more than 10 percent of the nation's Gross National Income."

COMPULSORY TAXATION

Compulsory taxation is legalized theft. Socialist share-the-wealth plans are based on profound economic ignorance. Politicians see themselves as Robin Hoods but they are more like the Mafia demanding money for protection. Walter Williams writes in his book *All It Takes Is Guts*:

> What's "just" has been debated for centuries but let me offer you my definition of social justice: I keep what I earn and you keep what you earn. Do you disagree? Well then tell me how much of what I earn "belongs" to you — and why?
>
> Conservatives and liberals are kindred spirits as far as government spending is concerned. First, let's make sure we understand what government spending is. Since government has no resources of its own, and since there's no Tooth Fairy handing Congress the funds for the programs it enacts, we are forced to recognize that government spending is no less than the confiscation of one person's property to give it to another to whom it does not belong — in effect, legalized theft.

> Liberals believe government should take people's earnings to give to poor people. Conservatives disagree. They think government should confiscate people's earnings and give them to farmers and insolvent banks. The compelling issue to both conservatives and liberals is not whether it is legitimate for government to confiscate one's property to give to another, the debate is over the disposition of the pillage.

The French economist Frederic Bastiat (1801-1850) was a pioneer in libertarian thought. He called taxation "legal plunder". Murray Rothbard wrote in *The Ethics of Liberty*, "the State is a coercive criminal organization that subsists by a regularized large-scale system of taxation-theft, and which gets away with it by engineering the support of a majority . . . through securing an alliance with a group of opinion-moulding intellectuals whom it rewards with a share in its power and pelf."

Doug Bandow wrote in an article titled "What Happened to the Concept of Theft?": "Put bluntly, lawmakers are stealing from the public... Theft may seem like a strong word for what now routinely comes out of the legislative process. But that's only because we have abandoned any rigorous conception of individual rights and government responsibilities... most government transfers today are made to enrich one or another narrow interests. Uncle Sam has become an enforcer for greedy private groups that can't legally take other people's money directly."

LIBERTARIAN UTOPIA

When Unificationists become political leaders or are in the position to influence politicians they need to end such socialist programs as Social Security (which is a gigantic Ponzi scheme) and abolish the alphabet-soup regulatory agencies such as the Food and Drug Administration (FDA) and the Drug Enforcement Administration (DEA). The government has no business in having a monopoly on mail service. We need to end the Postal Service, public libraries, public utilities, public radio, public television, and public schools and public roads. In the foreword to *Roads in a Market Economy* by Gabriel Roth, the Nobel Prize winner in economics, James Buchanan writes, "Worldwide momentum toward privatization, depoliticization and devolution surrounds us." He is for it but he thinks privatizing roads "remains a dream only for the most utopian libertarians." Roth also has a book titled *Street Smart*. Adam Smith said that roads are one of the few things government has to do but he is wrong. Because of Sun Myung Moon there will be a libertarian utopia. When the messianic age begins one of the first things we need to do is end government roads and make all means of transportation privately owned. An added benefit of having all land owned privately is that this would dramatically reduce the homeless problem. Have you ever seen the homeless camp out or hang out at McDonalds? Have you ever seen homeless camp out in Wal-Mart parking lots? Wal-Mart lets truck drivers and motor-homes stay overnight but you will never see them allow the homeless to stay there. Try to image what it would be like if there were no public sidewalks. Because sidewalks are public there is not as much personal care as taken by private owners. Would you allow a homeless man to wander around on your property?

ANARCHO-CAPITALISM—THE STRUCTURE OF A LIBERTARIAN UTOPIA

Father says there was no religion and politics in the Garden of Eden so it makes sense that there will be no religion or government in the ideal world. The political philosophy that is for capitalism and against the existence of the state is anarcho-capitalism, also known as free-market anarchism. There are some fascinating books by anarcho-capitalists who advocate the elimination of the state. They give us some ideas on how to order a world based on laissez-faire capitalism and without coercive states. I believe the structure of the future ideal world will be a libertarian utopia based on anarcho-capitalist philosophy. Wikipedia has an excellent article. Type in Anarcho-Capitalism at their website. They list many authors and books. Milton Friedman's son, David, is one of the leading thinkers. Be sure to check out YouTube.com for David Friedman and other anarcho-capitalists who explain on video how society can be organized without a coercive government.

Murray Rothbard coined the term anarcho-capitalism. If you're interested in government he is a must read. One website said of him, "He considered the monopoly force of government the greatest danger to liberty and the long-term wellbeing of the populace, labeling the State as nothing but a 'gang of thieves writ large' — the locus of the most immoral, grasping and unscrupulous individuals in any society. Rothbard concluded that virtually all services provided by monopoly governments could be provided more efficiently by the private sector."

Here are just a few books on the subject. *The Machinery of Freedom* by David Friedman, *Anarchism/Minarchism: Is a Government Part of a Free Country?* by Roderick Long, *The Structure of Liberty* by Randy Barnett, *The Enterprise of Law: Justice Without the State* and *To Serve and Protect: Privatization and Community in Criminal Justice* by Bruce Benson, *The Myth of National Defense* and *A Theory of Socialism and Capitalism* by Hans-Hermann Hoppe, *The Market for Liberty* by Linda and Morris Tannehill, *Our Enemy, the State* by Albert Jay Nock (the text of the entire book is online at mises.org), the novel *The Moon Is a Harsh Mistress* by Robert A. Heinlein, *Property, Freedom, Society: Essays in Honor of Hans-Hermann Hoppe* edited by Stephan Kinsella and Murray Rothbard's books such as *For a New Liberty, Power and Market, Man, Economy, and State*, and *The Ethics of Liberty*.

Stephan Kinsella wrote an article titled "What It Means To Be an Anarcho-Capitalist" at Lew Rockwell's must see website www.lewrockwell.com. Kinsella has many articles at his website www.StephanKinsella.com. He says Ludwig von Mises, the author of such books as *Human Action*, is "arguably the greatest genius of the twentieth century." An excellent website that has many writings of anarcho-capitalists is www.Mises.org. Its vice-president, Joseph Salerno, calls anarchocapitalism "the pure libertarian position."

ASSOCIATIONS

Father has made hundreds of organizations, including his misnamed organization the Unification Church. He never called it a church. He called it an association—Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity (HSA-UWC). The Victorians made thousands of associations to solve problems locally. Tocqueville was amazed at how many and how effective Americans banded together to solve problems. It is a myth America was individualistic in the past. Socialism makes people individualistic and uncaring. Tocqueville wrote in *Democracy in America*, "These Americans are the most peculiar people in the world. You'll not believe it when I tell you how they behave. In a local community in their country a citizen may conceive of some need which is not being met. What does he do? He goes across the street and discusses it with his neighbor. Then what happens? A committee begins to function on behalf of the need. You won't believe this, but it's true; all of this is done without reference to any bureaucrat. All of this is done by private citizens on their own initiative!"

He goes on to say, "The political associations which exist in the United States are only a single feature in the midst of the immense assemblage of associations in that country. Americans of all ages, all conditions, and all dispositions, constantly form associations. They have not only commercial and manufacturing companies, in which all take part, but associations of a thousand other kinds—religious moral, serious, futile, extensive or restricted, enormous or diminutive. The Americans make associations to give entertainments, to found establishments for education, to build inns, to construct churches, to diffuse books, to send missionaries to the antipodes; and in this manner they found hospitals, prisons, and schools. If it be proposed to advance some truth or to foster some feeling by the encouragement of a great example, they form a society. Wherever, at the head of some new undertaking, you see the Government in France, or a man of rank in England, in the United States you will be sure to find an association .... A government can no more be competent to keep alive and to renew the circulation and feelings amongst a great people, than

to manage all the speculations of productive industry. No sooner does a government attempt to go beyond its political sphere and to enter this new track, than it exercises, even unintentionally, an insupportable tyranny; for a government can only dictate strict rules, the opinions which it favors are rigidly enforced, and it is never easy to discriminate between its advice and its commands .... Governments therefore should not be the only active powers ....Amongst the laws which rule human societies there is one which seems to be more precise and clear than all others. If men are to remain civilized, or to become so, the art of associating together must grow and improve, in the same ratio in which the equality of conditions is increased."

Liberals and most Republicans think laissez-faire capitalism is too extreme because they do not have faith in freedom. They mistakenly fear that if they left people alone there would be anarchy and many people would be hurt. There was limited government in the 19th century and Tocqueville wrote how Americans formed thousands of organizations to solve their problems locally such as the Young Women's Christian Association, the Y.W.C.A.

Father has given us the vision and goal to connect the nations of the world with super highways, bridges and underground tunnels. This must be done privately. Governments have no business building bridges and transportation systems. The carnage on public roads is obscene. Many drivers on private racetracks walk away from accidents where they were traveling 200 mph. If private companies owned the bridges and tunnels everyone would be safer. Unificationists should encourage private investors to build the worldwide highway. Let's make it a capitalist venture instead of using the uncreative, heavy hand of government. Father speaks strongly against compulsory taxation. He is for voluntary giving: "All citizens of Cheon Il Guk will provide funds for the well being and peace of humanity, not by taxation but by voluntary contributions. They will demonstrate the model of offering the first three tenths of their income for public purposes. This cannot be an imposed tax; it has to be a gift that citizens offer willingly to Heaven with joyful hearts." (6-13-2006)

QUESTION AUTHORITIES WHO TAKE YOUR MONEY

Does it make sense to donate to causes that will not show you where every penny or peso went? Also, you should not blindly believe the financial statements you receive. You should make sure that you can see detailed financial records that can prove where the money goes so you are not fooled. Bernie Madoff created the largest Ponzi scheme in history and people believed his financial reports without checking them. Let's not be like Boxer in George Orwell's *Animal Farm* who naively believed in the elite who were just using him. He was the hardest working and most loyal worker for the cause but the leadership he trusted were incompetent. Boxer was kind but ignorant of what the leaders were doing. Despite the corruption he kept saying "I will work harder" and the leaders are "always right." Do you really want to donate to someone who will spend your money on sending their children to Harvard? What is the purpose of buying a university if the members send their children to Ivy League schools? And what is being taught at the schools the elite ask you to pay for? We have to ask some hard questions to those we give our money to. I don't see the logic in giving money to people who think they are shepherds and you are sheep.

Cheon Il Guk

Father uses the Korean words Cheon Il Guk to mean the future utopia mankind will eventually have. He says:

> …the establishment of the kingdom of heaven on earth, which in Korean I call Cheon Il Guk."(2-23-07)
>
> "What is the meaning of Cheon Il Guk. Two persons become one. Up and down, left and right, front and back. Every dimension of the pair relationship is

> united as one. That is the Kingdom of God on earth. Centered on the blessed family we can build the Kingdom of God. (1-31-03)

When will this glorious new world of peace and harmony materialize? Father says it will happen soon, "Heaven's providence is progressing rapidly each day." (2-23-07) In a wonderful speech titled "God's Ideal Family and Responsibility the Citizens of Cheon Il Guk Are Called to Fulfill" (2-23-07) he teaches:

> Who would be most fully aware of your good and bad deeds? It would be your grandparents, your parents, your spouse and your children. Is there anything that cannot be resolved within the family? When parents and children, husband and wife, and elder siblings and younger siblings set an example of living for the sake of one another, why is it impossible to forgive any mistakes? What reason would they have to commit crime? A world governed by the heavenly way and the heavenly laws is a natural world, an unobstructed world of truth and pure reason. It is a world at the "high noon" of absolute values, without any dark shadows.
>
> **A Family of Three Generations Living in Harmony**
> Ladies and gentlemen, the family sets the pattern for living together. The warm environment of oneness based on love and respect between parents and children, mutual fidelity and love between husband and wife, and trust and mutual reliance among siblings is the manifestation of the model, ideal family of peace. This means that you need to establish a true family, wherein the stem of true love emerges from the root of true love and bears the fruit of true love.
>
> In this manner, the three generations of grandparents, parents, and children should live together as one family and serve the eternal God. God desires to see such families, and it is your responsibility as tribal messiahs and ambassadors for peace to strive for and establish them — families of Cheon Il Guk, the kingdom of God.
>
> The responsibility you are called to fulfill is to teach others, without fail, that the perfection of a life of absolute sexual morality through the cross-cultural Marriage Blessing is the ultimate means and method to establish a peaceful, ideal world here on earth.
>
> **The Importance of Lineage**
> Do you know what has pained God's heart most, causing Him the greatest grief over the long history since the Fall of Adam and Eve? God lost His lineage. With it, God lost the basis of human brotherhood and even His ownership over the creation. God's lineage is more precious than life itself. Yet, this was lost. Without it, the fruits of true life and true love never matured.
>
> Ladies and gentlemen, lineage is more important than life and more precious than love. Life and love come together to create lineage. Lineage cannot be established if either life or love is missing. Therefore, among the three — love, life and lineage — lineage is the fruit. God's lineage contains the seed of true love. God's lineage provides the context and environment for a true life.
>
> Hence, for us to become the ideal people envisioned by God, that is, people of ideal character, and to create ideal families, we first need to be linked to His lineage. To take it a step further, only when we are linked to God's lineage is it possible to create God's homeland, the ideal nation.

Please inscribe the importance of lineage in your hearts. I cannot emphasize this enough. This is because the parent-child relationship is the highest and most important of all relationships, and the model, lineal relationship between parent and child is the only way through which God's lineage can be bequeathed and made to last forever. You must be clear on this point.

People of Character

Ladies and gentlemen, Adam and Eve had to establish a model, peaceful, ideal family. God, the absolute being, created human beings as His children in order to instill in them absolute values, which spring from an absolute standard. Thus, human beings must follow the way of that unchanging standard in keeping with the demands of the heavenly path. This means we must follow our destined life course in order to attend God, our eternal parent. In other words, for us to perfect ourselves in resemblance of God and obtain the stature of people of character who can be called sons and daughters of the eternal God, we must follow the path based on the unwavering standard God has determined. The essence of this path is the standard of absolute sexual purity.

True Father said these exciting words in April 2010 in a speech titled "The Settlement of the Abel UN and Completion of Cheon Il Guk in Korea":

As human beings face death, they may shake in fear, and feel terrified if they do not understand the true meaning of death. Although human history has continued for more than 6,000 years, there has been no one who clearly taught about the truth surrounding death. Now, in the Last Days of human history, I have been able to reveal this truth, this heavenly secret, as the True Parent of humankind.

Ladies and Gentlemen, The word 'death' is sacred. It is not a pronoun that signifies sadness and suffering. Therefore, I have created the term *seunghwa* to explain the true meaning of death. The moment we enter the spirit world is the time that we enter a world of joy and victory with the fruits borne through our life on earth. It is a time for those of us remaining on earth to send our departed with joy. It should be a time for great celebration. We should be shedding tears of joy instead of tears of sadness. That is the meaning of the sacred and noble *Seunghwa Ceremony*. It is the first step toward enjoying an eternal life in God's embrace. The moment of death should be a time of more excitement than that of a newly-wed bride going to her groom's home for the first time.

Ultimately, the problems afflicting humanity can only be resolved through the vision of "One Family under God," in other words the teachings of true love, which my wife and I learned from Heaven and have championed and taught throughout our lives. This is the only way for humankind to find the path toward peace and happiness.

We are living in an historic time of great transition. It is a time for a great historical revolution to unite the spiritual and physical worlds and to create the ideal kingdom of heaven that God has longed for since the beginning of time.

Ladies and gentlemen, do you have any idea how much pain God suffered the moment the first human ancestors, into whom God had invested His complete and unreserved devotion since time unmemorable, fell and disappeared into the darkness, becoming part of Satan's lineage? Are you even remotely aware of how our Heavenly Father—who endured tens of thousands of years of excruciating heartache so great that God's bones shed tears and His flesh shivered—had to go through the long, dark tunnel of indemnifying the Fall in order to save His lost children? If you have, I am sure that you will have spent many days and nights in

tears, yearning to comfort our Father in Heaven.

Once the actual time of *Cheon Il Guk* begins, the spiritual and earthly worlds will be connected and brought into oneness, and all things will be governed under the Association for the Connection of the Spirit and Physical Worlds which will be established on this earth for the first time. Moreover, the providence will be carried out under the heavenly law and the heavenly way. Elections conducted in a purely secular way will disappear from the face of this earth. All people will become one family through cross-cultural marriage and the World Peace Marriage Blessing and we will enjoy tranquility and happiness in the sacred reign of peace.

You should now set up the tradition of *hoondokhwe* centering on your family; that is, the tradition where three generations of a family start each day by reading the words of Heaven, in order to allow God into their day from its offset and to attend God and True Parents throughout the day. Let's create a world where the spirit world and the earthly world can both attend True Parents at the same time, and read the words of the heavenly path together. Once this happens, no matter how hard Satan may try to worm his way in and infest your lineage, he will have no place to stand in the face of the *hoondokhwe* tradition.

I pray that we can now wipe away the tears of people in misery and poverty, and lead an illuminated life of eternal true love that dissipates all darkness.

Robert Ringer writes in his book *Restoring the American Dream*, "Eventually, only voluntary user charges on government services might remain as a way to cover government's minimal expenditures." Ringer writes:

> Most government property and business should be sold off. Theoretically, government has no right to own land or to operate a business under the ruse of "public ownership." Public ownership simply means that those in power control certain property. Incredibly, however, federal, state and local government combined owns 42% of the 2.2 billion acres of land in this country.

I am sympathetic to the arguments of libertarians for government not owning all this land and keeping much of it undeveloped, but I wonder if we should let future generations who become higher spiritually and wiser than us develop all this pure land. Maybe it's best the government controls this land because fallen man is so out of harmony with the environment. There are some businesses that do more harm than good when it comes to being ecological. Some big corporations are terrible at polluting on a massive scale. I don't know much about corporate law but what I've seen I cannot understand the concept of corporations being a legal person. Some corporations are so powerful and so destructive to the environment that I like the idea that huge corporations can't get into the billions of acres of public lands and ruin them. I now think it is a good idea to keep these lands generally free of development until mankind can become a one world family and create businesses that do not rape the earth. There is a DVD called *The Corporation*. Their website is www.thecorporation.com. It has its share of big government liberals spouting nonsense but there is some disturbing truth in the film about the criminal and immoral behavior of some big corporations that we should deal with. Maybe a first step would be to end the legal concept of corporation as a legal person and make every business private. I hate government regulations but maybe there is some need for the use of government to punish individuals and businesses who cross some common sense line where they misuse the environment.

Politicians incorrectly think that they can regulate people to force them do what is right and good. If anyone thinks social security should be abolished then they are accused of not "caring." The opposite is the truth. The more government intervenes and regulates, the less caring there is. Some politicians have a feeling of being do-gooders motivated by a big heart to help and heal, but they

pave a road to hell with their good intentions. (See *Do-Gooders: How Liberals Hurt Those They Claim to Help (and the Rest of Us)* by Mona Charen). Families and churches have been castrated by government that has become like Orwell's Big Brother. There is a slippery slope to regulation. It ends by the government attacking the Boy Scouts for not letting gays in their organization. I believe we are called by God to restore the vision of limited government that our Founding Fathers sacrificed so dearly for. Thomas Jefferson said, "I think, myself, that we have more machinery of government than is necessary, too many parasites living on the labor of the industrious." "If we can prevent the government from wasting the labors of the people under the pretense of taking care of them, they must become happy."

LIBERALS SEE THEMSELVES AS COMPASSIONATE

Liberals like those in the Democratic Party and those misguided Liberals in the Republican Party denounce those who are opposed to big government programs like Social Security as being heartless and mean. An example of this is a leading Democrat Susan Estrich who wrote a book against the Conservative Ann Coulter's book "Godless". Estrich titled her book "Soulless." Coulter correctly says in her book that "my book makes a stark assertion: Liberalism is a godless religion." "Everything liberals believe is in elegant opposition to basic Biblical precepts." She denounces such deeply held beliefs of Liberals that Darwin is right and homosexuals are born that way. Estrich writes, "I believe that Darwinism is a fact" and "people are born gay." She writes that "real Liberalism" is "compassionate hopeful, and generous." Studies show that Conservatives give to charities much more than Liberals but Estrich thinks that big government programs like Social Security are "compassionate hopeful, and generous." They are not. She believes that the majority of America are "decent progressives" and she hopes they will "triumph over the forces of hate." Liberals deeply believe Conservatives have no love in their heart and hate people. The truth is that Liberals hate people as seen in the new Noah movie starring Russell Crowe where God wanted the flood to kill all of mankind so animals could live in peace. Liberals are the "forces of darkness" that the Bible says we are fight.

Estrich writes how Liberals are for "social justice and equality, educating the next generation, providing for those in need." Coulter is right in saying Liberals are godless. A vivid example is their intense hatred of the idea of prayer and religion in their diabolical public schools that educate "the next generation" to be atheist and socialist. Father is on the side of Conservatism. An example is his strong words to America he gave in 1973 when he went to every state in America in a "Day of Hope" campaign where he spoke like a prophet denouncing the godless ways of America. He said, "These are signs that God is leaving America. I can read the sign which says, 'God is leaving America now!' If this trend continues, in a very short time God will be with you no longer. God is leaving America's homes. God is leaving your society. God is leaving your schools. God is leaving your churches. God is leaving America. There are many signs of atheism in this once God-centered nation: There have been many laws enacted that only a godless society could accept. There was a time when prayer was America's daily diet. Today you hear prayers in American schools no longer." America declined rapidly when it became illegal to have prayer in schools in the early 1960s. Father again talked about this in 2000, "What about America today, though? Prayer in public schools is officially banned. The theory of evolution is given preference to the theory of creation in education. The divorce rate of around 50 percent is completely obliterating the sanctity of the family.

"In 1971, I left my family and homeland to come to America, because I heard the voice of God sharing His concern about the current state of affairs here. Upon arriving here, I cried out that I had come as a fireman to a house that was on fire and as a physician to cure America of disease. Even then, I discovered that God was leaving America. It should be possible to find God everywhere in America, but God was departing from the hearts of people, from the families and from the schools. It seems like only yesterday that I stood on Fifth Avenue in Manhattan and wept

openly as I held on to God to keep Him from leaving America. Unfortunately, America has persisted in going the way of moral deterioration, as I predicted." (1-22-2000)

LEFT'S WAR AGAINST JUDEO-CHRISTIAN VALUES

I like what some Conservatives say about Estrich's idea that they are "compassionate." Dennis Prager writes brilliantly about the decline of the West. In his newspaper article titled, "The feminization of society: Judeo-Christian values" (9-13-05) he teaches:

> As a result of the repudiation of Judeo-Christian values, we are witnessing the ascendance of the feminine in Western society. … . The Left has been successful in supplanting masculine virtues with feminine ones. That is why "compassion" is probably the most frequently cited value. … In the micro realm, the feminine virtues are invaluable—for example, women hear infants' cries far more readily than men do. But as a basis for governance of society, the feminization of public policy is suicidal.
>
> That is one reason our schools are in trouble. They are increasingly run by women—women with female thinking moreover. Such thinking leads to papers no longer being graded with a red pencil lest students' feelings be hurt; to self-esteem supplanting self-discipline as a value; to banning games such as dodge ball in which participants' feelings may get hurt; to discouraging male competition; to banning peanut butter because two out of a thousand students are highly allergic to peanuts.
>
> In a masculine society governed by Judeo-Christian values (which include a masculine-depicted and compassionate God), feminine virtues are adored and honored. In a feminized society, male virtues are discarded.
>
> Then both sexes suffer. Just one more consequence of the war against Judeo-Christian values.

WORLD GOVERNMENT

Father teaches that ultimately there will be a world utopia. When the ideology of the *Divine Principle* sweeps the earth there will be an end to nationalism. Father says, "Once we reach to the level of restoring the positions of elder sonship, true parentship, and true kingship then there will be no more national boundaries. The whole world will become one world under God. Not one nation under God, but one world under God will emerge." "God doesn't have a nation concept; He only has a world concept" (4-23-95). Does this mean there will be a world government? Conservatives denounce anyone who plans for a world utopia because they can only envision fallen man being corrupted by power. The Communists talk of an ideal world and Conservatives have thrown the baby out with the bathwater.

The conservative DVD *Roots of the Ultra-Left: What They Really Think* does an excellent job of critiquing socialism but it ends on a false note against world utopia. They quote Walter Cronkite speaking at an organization that advocates world government, World Federalist Association, saying, "It seems to many of us that if we are to avoid the eventual catastrophic world conflict we must strengthen the United Nations as a first step toward a world government patterned after our own government with a legislature, executive and judiciary, and police to enforce its international laws and keep the peace. To do that, of course, we Americans will have to yield up some of our sovereignty. That would be a bitter pill. It would take a lot of courage, a lot of faith in the new order." Cronkite is a liberal and wrong on many issues but he is right on this one.

The Exposition of the Divine Principle states, "As we have observed repeatedly, the development of the cultural spheres also shows that a worldwide cultural sphere is now being formed centered on one religion. Nations, too, are moving toward one worldwide structure of sovereignty, starting from the League of Nations, through the United Nations and reaching today for world

government." Sun Myung Moon has spoken about a one world government. A member posted notes of Father speaking on July 3, 2003 saying, "True Father briefly expounded on the role of the UN in fulfilling its mission of world government. He said that in order for us to make the world government God's ideal organization for humankind, we should be ahead of the people working in the world government, both in thinking and in loving. We have to restore the UN." Father said that we need to have "one government and one constitution for the world." (9-18-09) Happily we have a Constitution written by Hyung Jin and Kook Jin Moon. Here are a few other statements Father has made:

> The establishment of the United Nations, a symbol of world government, was within the will of God. (2-23-77)
>
> People say that a world government will emerge in the future. History is flowing toward one government and the world of one ideology. (3-1-59)
>
> The United Nations was born after World War II, granting membership to every nation. The United States was more or less the central figure of the United Nations. The concept of the United Nations was that of one world government, but the United States itself was confused and did not share that concept. God's dispensation was for the United States, as a Christian nation, to take the central position in the world as the leader of the United Nations, while moving aggressively toward the realization of one world under God. The Christian culture was supposed to be at the center of the United Nations. (6-8-86)
>
> The conclusion is this: no matter what people say about me, it doesn't matter. History will show that from now on, anyone who does not follow God's ideal will decline and perish. The followers of Reverend Moon's teachings will prosper. I make this formidable declaration knowing that the CIA and the FBI are listening, as well as broadcasters and newspaper reporters. Times will soon change. Now people come and write, "Reverend Moon is trying to conquer the world; he speaks about a world government, a theocratic kingdom and so forth." Soon they will say, "So what! I love Reverend Moon." Even they will want to follow my ideal. Amen? Amen. (8-20-87)

ALL PEOPLE WILL BECOME ONE FAMILY

One of Father's sons was interviewed for a magazine article in November 2009. He said, "We do not seek to establish a world government." This may be true if we envision the future Kingdom of Heaven of Earth as not needing government. Father has said he has come to end religion and government. It seems to me that there will be a world council of some kind in the transition to the ideal world when the majority of people or a majority of leaders in the world accept Father as the Messiah. It seems logical to me that there will eventually be no need for travel visas to get into any country. On February 19, 2010 at the Ceremony for True Parent's Birthday and True Father's 90th Birthday he said that mankind will eventually live "under the heavenly law and the heavenly way. Elections conducted in a purely secular way will disappear from the faced of this earth. All people will become one family." Father never elaborates and never gives details for his vast thoughts. This is our job. I interpret his words here to mean that there will be little if any need or government. Thomas Paine warned that "Government, even in its best state, is but a necessary evil; in its worst state, an intolerable one." Chesterton said, "All government is an ugly necessity." "Government has become ungovernable; that is, it cannot leave off governing. Law has become lawless; that is, it cannot see where laws should stop. The chief feature of our time is the meekness of the mob and the madness of the government."

In an ideal world every person would be absolutely united in their belief in the *Divine Principle* and Father's teachings. Everyone would be a brother and sister because everyone would have accept the same True Parents. Perfect people living in perfect families or who live in perfect communities will solve their problems quickly and peacefully without need for courts or governments.

UNITED NATIONS CORRUPT

Matt Towery wrote in his column titled "It's Time for America to Leave the UN": "It's time for the United States to leave the United Nations and spearhead the formation of a new, more workable international consortium." The Preamble to the United Nations says that nations should "practice tolerance and live together in peace with one another as good neighbors." Many nations do not "practice tolerance." Saudi Arabia does not allow the Bible into its country. China is communist. Only democratic nations that respect basic freedoms and free enterprise should be allowed as members.

TERM LIMITS

We should support those who fight for term limits or politicians. There is term limits in Hyung Jin Moon's Constitution (Sanctuary-pa.org). Robert Ringer writes in *Restoring the American Dream*:

> This one step would remove a great deal of corruption from The System. Let's do away with the lifetime, professional politician. The professional politician should become a creature of the past. All politicians should be required to return to the real world and earn a living just like everyone else.

Thomas Sowell has these keen words about the disgusting practice of career politicians:

> Many people today marvel when looking back at the leaders who created the United States of America. Most of the founders of this country had day jobs for years. They were not career politicians. George Washington, who took pride in his self-control, lost his temper completely when someone told him that a decision he was going to make could cost him re-election as President. He blew up at the suggestion that he wanted to be President, rather than serving as a duty when he would rather be back home.
>
> Power is such a dangerous thing that ideally it should be wielded by people who don't want to use power, who would rather be doing something else, but who are willing to serve a certain number of years as a one-time duty, preferably at the end of a career doing something else.
>
> What about all the experience we would lose? Most of that is experience in creating appearances, posturing, rhetoric, and spin—in a word, deception. We need leaders with experience in the real world, not experience in the phony world of politics. (12-27-05)

In his article "The Man Who Would Not Be King" David Boaz writes:

> From his republican values Washington derived his abhorrence of kingship, even for himself. The writer Garry Wills called him "a virtuoso of resignations." He gave up power not once but twice – at the end of the revolutionary war, when he resigned his military commission and returned to Mount Vernon, and again at the end of his second term as president, when he refused entreaties to seek a third term. In doing so, he set a standard for American presidents that lasted until the presidency of Franklin D. Roosevelt, whose taste for power was stronger than the 150 years of precedent set by Washington. Give the last word

> to Washington's great adversary, King George III. The king asked his American painter, Benjamin West, what Washington would do after winning independence. West replied, "They say he will return to his farm."
>
> "If he does that," the incredulous monarch said, "he will be the greatest man in the world."

Politicians should have the attitude of Washington and go back to a farm after serving for only a short time. When the Soviet Union fell, Sun Myung Moon went there and told Mikhail Gorbachev that he should create free enterprise zones. He gave an interview to a Russian newspaper advising Russia to accept free enterprise as the proper economics for their society. His statement was also written into a book called *Peacemaker and Unifier* that every member of the Soviet Politburo (compared to our Congress) was given when Father gave a speech to them.

Sun Myung Moon does not teach or advocate socialism. He is for free enterprise because it gives incentives to work. Bo Hi Pak said, "We conducted the 11th World Media Conference in Moscow. It was one of the largest conferences in history. We indeed made a tremendous impact on the Soviet Union. April 11, 1990, our founders, Reverend and Mrs. Moon, were invited to the Kremlin for an historic and extraordinary meeting with the President Mikhail Gorbachev. Father Moon expounded the principle of ... free enterprise."

Father gave an interview with a magazine in the Soviet Union on December 1, 1989. The title of the article was "A Spiritual Revolution is Needed." He said that he believed in free enterprise: "I would encourage the efforts you are making in business and commerce to develop a wider-based individual incentive system. When people are stimulated, they are inclined to work hard and produce more. This is the secret of the success of the free enterprise system."

Father often speaks strongly against unions that use the communist strategy to kill the goose that lays the golden eggs. Socialists hate businesses in a capitalist marketplace and want to destroy entrepreneurs. It is Cain killing Abel. In "New Nation and New Family" (January 12, 1992) Father says there is a vertical relationship between employer and employee. Socialists/feminists hate the idea of hierarchy. Father teaches: "Order, rules and relationship and the resulting ideal are applicable to every level, regardless of the size. It applies to companies and labor unions too. Labor unions however, put stress on the lower relationship, not the upper ones. They say, 'I don't recognize that rule. Who made that? I didn't make it.' Unfortunately that is why we see union gangs assaulting the presidents of companies. How can that be? It is like the children beating up their father. In fact, communism went out and symbolically killed the father because communism did not recognize the position of the family, the father and so forth. They believed that the individual was self-sufficient."

In "God is Our King and True Parent" given at Canaan Baptist Church in Harlem, NY he said, "Once we solve the labor union problems, the problem of communism will be solved, too. Then what propelled labor unions in the developed countries? It was the diplomacy of Russia aimed at destroying the free world. They encouraged laborers to take as much as they could get."

Samuel Blumenfeld has written two excellent books that expose the evil teachers union, the National Education Association. At his website (www.howtotutor.com) we read this about two of his books: *Is Public Education Necessary* and *NEA: Trojan Horse in American Education*:

> **IS PUBLIC EDUCATION NECESSARY?**
> This book tells, for the first time, the story of how and why Americans gave up educational freedom so early in their history for the imagined benefits of state-controlled education.

Samuel Blumenfeld, who has earned recognition in the field of education, breaks new ground in this important work. *Is Public Education Necessary?* tells the full, fascinating story of how government-controlled education emerged in the face of generally accepted and adequate facilities for private schooling. The author delves into a wealth of original sources to reveal how a comparative handful of secularists, who were more concerned with destroying religion than with freeing man, spearheaded the drive toward public education. Centered in Harvard, this nineteenth-century liberal elite worked tirelessly—and successfully—to put America on the road to educational statism.

By exploring the very roots of the system, *Is Public Education Necessary?* provides the missing link in our educational history, and is essential reading for anyone who is dissatisfied with the status quo, or committed to the restoration of intellectual freedom and moral sanity in America today.

NEA: TROJAN HORSE IN AMERICAN EDUCATION

In 1967, the National Education Association declared war on the American people. Its executive secretary proclaimed: "NEA will become a political power second to no other special interest group... NEA will organize this profession from top to bottom into logical operational units that can move swiftly and effectively and with power unmatched by any other organized group in the nation."

Today, that prediction is a reality. The 1.7 million-member NEA is the most politically powerful—and dangerous—organization in the United States with plans not only to control the federal government but also every state legislature in America. Under the guise of "improving education" the teachers are on the march toward total political power with the aim of converting America into a socialist society.

Shocking? Incredible? You won't think so after reading this well-documented book. Samuel Blumenfeld, veteran researcher, has trained his expert skills on the NEA and pieced together a story of intellectual deceit and moral subversion that is bound to cause shock waves across America. And because one cannot understand the NEA without understanding the fuller context in which it has grown, Blumenfeld provides a historical background that permits the reader to know why our educators have deliberately transformed America into "a nation at risk."

If you read but one book on education in your lifetime, this is the one to read, for you must know what the NEA has in store for America if this nation is to survive in freedom.

LEFT vs. RIGHT

The Left are utopian, idealistic, dreamers. They fight for equality and harmony by fighting for massive government intervention in the marketplace to build social security welfare programs. They declare war on poverty and force everyone to pay for it by enacting massive taxes. The Right prides itself on being smart and realistic. They see the world as imperfect and it will always be so. They see the Left as naive, stupid, insane and too emotional at best and dangerous at worst because they see the lessons of history that show that when bleeding heart liberal Socialists gain the power over state bureaucracies, then evil dictators like Lenin kill the nice socialists and create a totalitarian nightmare.

Robert Nozick in *Anarchy, State, and Utopia* wrote, "The minimal state best reduces the chances of ... takeover or manipulation of the state by persons desiring power or economic benefits...."

The Left sees the Right as boring materialists who live in the past at best and dangerous at worst because they are heartless, vicious, mean-spirited men who exploit the average worker and rape

the earth in their insatiable greed for the almighty dollar. The Left fears the Right will create a smothering authoritarian theocracy run by bigoted white men.

In literature, the Left's vision of the uptight, prudish, narrow-minded patriarchs of the Right is seen in Margaret Atwood's novel, *The Handmaid's Tale*. The Right sees the Left on a slippery slope to *1984* by George Orwell.

HEADWING

God is more on the side of the Right because the Right is more right. The Right is more in line with God's laws of biblical values, traditional family and limited government. The Left rejects the old-fashioned values of America's founding fathers. The Right is not perfect at being Abel. Father invented the word "headwing" to describe his vision that goes beyond left-wing and right-wing thought. I am offering this book as the "headwing" ideology that will unite the world.

In a book of Father's quotes *Way Of Unification — Part 1* we read:

> Although both the right and the left are exhausted, as long as the head is right, and the spine is straight, once normal energy is applied and a direction is set, hands and legs will start to move. It is only natural. That is why Father is talking about the new term, "Headwing" these days. We can understand this when thinking of Jesus. The term "rightwing" originated from the time of Jesus.
>
> Where did the right-wing and left-wing ideas originate from? They came from the right thief and the left thief with Jesus at the center.
>
> **NEW RELIGION**
>
> If God truly exists, a new religion should come with love that represents such thoughts from the right-wing, the left-wing, ..., with an ideology of love that can transcend time and space throughout human history and unify all religions of the world, even with the world of science, and should initiate a movement that can achieve the realization of such love. Only through it, there will be hope for humans in the last days. Otherwise, there will be nothing but despair and destruction to all existing beings and humanity.
>
> **CENTERING ON PARENTS**
>
> Centering on parents ..., the right and the left should be united. This is called the Headwing ideology.
>
> ...if they agree to follow their parents since their parents' views are better than their own, that is all that matters.
>
> Brothers alone cannot bring unity among themselves. Then who can do it? It can be done when their parents come. The unification is possible only with parental love which surpasses brotherly love. For this reason, in the Unification Church, we are proud of the True Parents, of their love and of being children of the True Parents.
>
> **WORLD OF PEACE WILL BE BUILT**
>
> ...the world of peace, one unified world, and the world of victory will finally embark, and centered on God, the Kingdom of Heaven will be eventually built on earth and in heaven. This is the mission of the Unification Church members, and they need to live for this and fulfill this. This, we should clearly understand. Only on such a foundation, by becoming one with the Parents, life in the Kingdom of Heaven with peace on earth will begin.

THE ROLE AND MISSION OF THE UNIFICATION CHURCH

What is the Unification Church? Where is it heading, embracing both the right and the left? Its purpose is to guide people to the world of happiness that transcends the struggles of the world.

The Unification Church should be equipped with a theoretical system that can restore all of the failures that were brought by other ideological and thought systems of the past.

We can digest communists. We can digest secular humanism, Christianity, and even God. With what? With true love.

The right is right-wing, and the left is left-wing. They are fighting. Right? But now, they should become one, centered on Father Moon.

SOLUTIONS TO THE PROBLEMS OF THE WORLD

The Unification Movement that was initiated by the Unification Church attempts to bring solutions to the problems of the world and humanity. First, the Unification Movement is a movement that can bring an aggressive solution to the issues raised by Communism. For this to be done, the free world should first have a spiritual realization and repentance. Based on this spiritual realization and repentance, all solutions for the human problems will be derived. Second, the Unification Movement is a movement that attempts to establish a foothold through which all religions of the world can help each other and cooperate with one another. All religions of the world should be united as one power in the faith of God. The original mind of humans is to recognize God, our creator and the Father of all humanity. From attending one God as the Father of all humanity, one Unification Family can be realized. Third, the Unification Movement is a movement to build a moral world. This is rather important for today's youth. Since there is no absolute standard of morality, immorality is prevalent. An avaricious and selfish lifestyle in which they seek their own self-interest, disregarding whatever happens to others, even using others for their own sake is encouraged and is rampant.

If this continues, our society shall not be able to avoid self-destruction. For the sake of building a world of goodness, the absolute standard of morality cannot be seen apart from the creator, God, based on His views on the right values because He is the only one who is eternal and unchanging. He is not conceptual God, but should dwell within us every day. If all men and women of the world are always living with God in communication with Him, there can be no immorality. This is a solemn truth. In front of truth, lies are dissolved, and even if the lies are supported by a great political power, financial power, and social power, in the end, that power will not be able to overcome truth.

Sun Myung Moon teaches:

...the time has come for the emergence of a new 'ism' to emerge at a global level, one that can digest all. It must be a new religious principle and movement must come to embrace and organize all these into one harmonized system. This is where the Unification Church is to emerge, to proclaim the emergence of the headwing. …One of the several key problems is the racial problem. But how are we to solve this? There is also the problem of division, spiritual division and secular humanism. Therefore the new solution of the world must be a global solution. Religion also

must reach out to the global community. These are some of the concepts of the headwing. Its philosophy transcends that of race, nation or religion. The Unification Church is embracing both the left and the right wings, and is bringing both to the highest ideal. We must not simply move to the left or the right. We must go up, beginning at the bottom in the humble position. The Unification Church has the substance and the ability needed to digest both the left and the right, plus move from the bottom and connect to the top, centering upon spiritual standards. In other words, the Unification Church must be a mega-religion, a supra-religion. We must have the contents and ability to digest and be able to consummate the highest ideal. Therefore the qualification of the Unification Church is that it creates the models, the "man for all season." So, for example, the communists should say, "These Unificationists would make great communists, the only problem is that they believe in God." Humanists should be able to say, "Unificationists are truly humanitarian; the problem is that they believe in God and high morals." The religious people should say of Unificationists, "They are the most devout. I wish he were a Buddhist/Moslem/Catholic/etc, but he's a Unificationist." God should say, "He/she fits into the exact formula. I take this person as my son/daughter. This is my model person."

This is the headwing concept. Unificationists have the ability to digest communism, socialism, religions and God by True Love. When you look at an overview of history, you can see that this is the highest ideal.

Father wants to convert the Cain into Abel, to convert them all to headwing, and ultimately into "Father's sons."

Father doesn't feel shame or fear because of the way he lives. You should also live this way so that you can speak the truth fearlessly in front of all people.

BECOME STRONG

...take the most difficult tasks, and become strong, otherwise you become soft and weak, bystanders, parasites.

BE GUTSY

You must become a central figure and be subject of all situations. Be gutsy men and women....

HAVE CONFIDENCE

Do you have confidence to do this? If someone comes to kick you, don't run away, move forward, divert his energy and dominate the situation. When America attacked Father, did he run or shy away? No, he moved forward, and was even on the offensive. He went from Lincoln Center to Madison Square Garden, to Yankee Stadium and on to Washington Monument. He moved on and on. He never retreated. Even throughout the legal battle, he moved toward his aggressor. He returned to America, went into Danbury, and from there turned the world upside down. Now America is following behind Father. This is reality. Look and see.

Father has always lived according to a similar formula. His lifestyle, his daily life and thinking manifests this formula, he is always going forward. Do you follow Father? If you hesitate, you cannot survive, you cannot win. You have to make a straight path. How wonderful that is.

You can become a central figure for your nation, for your state, for your mission. Be a champion to mobilize the spirit world. Pledge before Father. If you pledge with

> confidence, God will be with you. …Father just matched over one thousand couples in the last couple of days. During this time, his legs wanted to fold up, but Father just scolded them and told them to go on. Father is getting older now, but still he pushes himself on. How can you young ones do any less? If we cannot keep up with Father, you deserve heavenly punishment. You cannot rest, you cannot nap and waste time. The spirit world is wanting to work with you day and night. You cannot stop. (3-30-87)

World peace will come not because the Left is converted to the Right. A world utopia will not come because everyone becomes a Republican or Southern Baptist or Mormon. God's desire is for every person to rise up to the higher truth of Unificationism. Everyone will have to give up some of their cherished beliefs. The Right will have to give up their deeply held belief that abortion is murder and its fear of world government. The Left is going to give up its respect for homosexuality and love of big government regulations. All people will have to give up thinking their religion or ideology and its founder are superior to Father Moon and the *Divine Principle*. In spirit world everyone from Jesus, Mohammed, Moses, Buddha, Confucius, Marx, Engels and George Washington have bowed to Sun Myung Moon and testify that he is the worldwide Messiah. Our job is to be the messiah where we live.

KINGSLEY, OWEN, BELLAMY

The pioneers of socialism in the 19th century are men like Charles Kingsley, Robert Owen and Edward Bellamy. The word "socialism" began with Owen. Some Unificationists mistakenly see these crusaders as messengers from God. The truth is that Satan often makes his ambassadors sound loving, idealistic, fresh, bold, and beautiful. But they are not exciting; they are poison. Kingsley, Owen, Bellamy and all the other many socialist/feminists are seductively sinister. The result is not freedom and fun, it is pain and heartbreak.

Owen spoke often of a new millennium reflected in the titles of books he published such as *The Inauguration of the Millennium* and *The Coming Millennium*. He said that there were signs that this was the time of an ideal world as seen in the advanced technology of machines and in the fast communication of telegraph: "making by means of the telegraph when carried to its full practical extent one family of all the governments and populations of the world." He felt that soon mankind will be reborn by "the pure spirit of universal charity and love ... [which will] pervade the heart and mind of every one, so as to be evident in every look, word and action." There would be a universal common language of English and one religion. This new religion was vaguely defined this way, "The only religion therefore of the Millennium will consist in man ... actively engaged in promoting the best and highest happiness of all and in being merciful ...." There will be only one set of laws that will never change and administered by one government: "In the Millennial State there can be but one country for all, and that will be our earth, from north to south and east to west. This will be the estate of the family of man, and every child born into the millennial life will be a legitimate heir to his or her just portion of it ... all will have an interest in its high cultivation, in the beauty of its scenery; in the increase of both; in preventing waste, injury or deterioration; and thus shall universal care be taken of it until it shall become a second garden of Eden, inhabited by a highly intelligent, yet good and innocent men and women...."

People would not have to work after the age of forty. Elders would rule. "...life, upon the average, will extend from one hundred to one hundred and forty" where "now it is sixty or a hundred years" of age. Death will not be a time of grief or despair. In this new age, "the intelligent resigned sufferer waits with cheerful patience." When people die they have many loved ones that give them "consolation in the certain knowledge that within their own immediate circle they have many, many others remaining; and around them on all sides, as far as the eye can reach, or imagination extend, thousands on thousands, in strict, intimate, and close union, are ready and willing to offer

them aid and consolidation. ... Here may it be truly said, 'O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory.'"

"This new world will have no war and since there is no conflict there would be no need for priests, lawyers, doctors, military, money, poverty, competition, anger, jealousy and celibacy."

Owen's dream of a world utopia was thrilling to some people and made him famous, but the end result of following him leads people, not to a Garden of Eden, but to a hell on earth. When Owen came to America in 1825 to buy his little town in Indiana, he was honored in Washington D.C. President John Quincy Adams was just taking office and President Monroe was leaving. Owen's reputation was so great that he spoke twice at the Capitol. The first time Henry Clay, the Speaker of the House, sponsored him. The second time, Adams himself invited him. Adams had just become President and attended Owen's first lecture on February 25, 1825. When he went to the second lecture he discovered it had been postponed and patiently returned on March 7 to Owen's final speech that lasted three hours. Former President Monroe sat there too, as well as members of the Cabinet, the Supreme Court and the Congress.

The complete text of his lectures was printed in the newspaper and then printed as pamphlets titled *A Discourse on a New System of Society; as Delivered in the Hall of Representatives of the United States, in Presence of the President of the United States, Members of Congress, etc.* Owen paid a visit to Jefferson at his home at Monticello and Madison at his home at Montpelier.

Sadly, his dream of a socialist utopia was praised in newspapers. The capitol's newspaper said he was one of those "who seem to have no thought but how to lessen the sufferings of the unfortunate, and better the conditions of the human race, in every quarter of the world." The paper said that Owen's work in Europe had "effects more extraordinary and rational than any lawgiver of ancient or modern times."

His whirlwind tour generated enthusiasm for his community. Hundreds joined and moved to Indiana. Owen wrote excitedly that, "The United States have been prepared in the most remarkable manner for the New System. The principle of union & cooperation for the promotion of all the virtues & for the creation of wealth is now universally admitted to be far superior to the individual selfish system & all seem prepared or are rapidly preparing to give up the latter & adopt the former. In fact the whole of this country is ready to commence a new empire upon the principle of public property & to discard private property...." He felt that no one in history had been as momentous as he was now. Happily, America kept respecting private property and did not follow this Pied Piper.

PROOF OF THE PUDDING

The fruits of Owen in America were predictable. His community rapidly fell apart. He had no blueprint of utopia. Owen was half-empty, not half-full. There is nothing practical about socialists. Capitalism works; socialism doesn't work. The maxim, "The proof of the pudding is in the eating" means "performance is the only valid test." Socialism fails to bring prosperity and happiness for the majority as much as capitalism does.

MILLENNIUM

Owen liked to say there was a new millennium coming. Here is an example of Owen's enticing excitement for that new world: "I know that society may be formed so as to exist without crime, without poverty, with health greatly improved, with little, if any misery, and with intelligence and happiness increased a hundred fold: and no obstacle whatsoever intervenes at this moment except ignorance to prevent such a state of society from becoming universal."

Socialists love day care centers because they hate the traditional family. He writes these evil words

about childcare: “The Institution has been devised to afford the means of receiving your children at an early age, almost as soon as they can walk. By this means many of you, mothers and families, will be able to earn a better maintenance or support for your children; you will have less care and anxiety about them, while the children will be prevented from acquiring any bad habits.” “Less anxiety”? The truth is that day care and all efforts to take children away from parents who are told they do not have the time and are incompetent to raise their children bring true anxiety.

Here is an example of the satanic wisdom in his book *New Moral World*: “Women will no longer be made the slaves of, or dependent upon men…. They will be equal in education, rights, privileges and personal liberty.” The title of his book should be *New Immoral World*. Socialist/feminists sound good, but their ideology is rotten to the core.

Robert Owen’s followers were called Owenites. Jesus’ followers are called Christians. Sun Myung Moon’s followers are called Unificationists. Those who follow Owen follow a charlatan. Those who follow Jesus and those who follow Sun Myung Moon are following a saint. Yes, I know, many who followed Jesus and Sun Myung Moon have not always found heaven on earth, but God is behind Jesus and Sun Myung Moon and those who follow them will eventually be rewarded with true love. Some who follow socialists like Owen may seem to live a good life, but eventually everyone who does will find that living a life based on false values brings ultimate unhappiness.

Owen, like all socialists, sounds idealistic and full of love and hope for an ideal world of equality. Socialists write books about their plan for world peace and prosperity for every person. Owen titled one of his books, *New Moral World*. But when we read these blueprints we find that socialist experiments based on these books always end in disaster. Owen’s socialist community in Indiana in the early 1800s lasted three years. Owen, like all socialists, wrote in favor of day care for children so the women could leave home and make money. He helped the unions fight to force employers to make an 8-hour work day. He wrote that marriage for life is too stifling.

I believe that Unificationists will find success when they build true utopian communities that work. Socialist communities either fall apart quickly or linger on with a handful of true believers who cannot convert people and grow. We need to do the opposite and create utopian, ideal, capitalist communities that grow in size and wealth for generations. Unificationists started out in the 1970s in America as socialist communes. This violated human nature and laws of success so that ended in a few years with some people feeling they wasted their time and were not respected as individuals. Now Unificationists live in isolated nuclear families that send their children to terrible public schools or private schools that have women feminist teachers earning money. Sadly, Unificationist children are being raised in a culture filled with weak men and disorderly women. I believe that the third and final stage that Unificationists should move into is patriarchic, capitalistic, and democratic communities. The first stage Unificationists lived in was a stage of being dependent. The second stage they are in now is independent. The third stage will be interdependent. Father teaches, “We must become interdependent, not independent.” (3-19-05)

Owen’s pathetic failure of a community in Indiana that he named New Harmony is now a museum. Nobody lives there. Tourists visit it but are not taught that Owen’s ideas were diabolical. The website for tourists who want to go see Owen’s empty buildings in Indiana is www.newharmony.org. His motivation may have been good, but the reality of his dream is a nightmare. Unificationists need to build ideal communities that do not become museums. We should live together in vibrant, exciting, loving communities that live by ideals opposite of Owen. And we should write against Owen and expose him as being a tool of Satan.

The *Divine Principle* book printed by the headquarters of the Unification Church has a fatal flaw. It ends by saying that “Eventually, a socialistic society embodying God’s ideal will be established.” In the ideal world everyone will be cared for and there will be equality in the sense

that every person will have their material needs met. But this does not mean that every person will have exactly the same things and exactly the same lifestyle. It is beyond imagination how this could have been printed. This endorsement of socialism in the book *Exposition of the Divine Principle —1996 Translation* has hurt the Unification Movement. The word "socialism" is an evil word. We cannot use the phrase "heavenly socialism" anymore than we can say "heavenly adultery."

A former President of the Unification Theological Seminary, Tyler Hendricks, wrote a very good article (7-31-05) in its *Journal* titled "Shopping In Cheon Il Guk" explaining how socialism is bad and capitalism is good. He ends saying, "In sum, I argue that the Unificationist teachings of the three great kingships, the three subjects thought, the realm of the royal family, give and take action, the theory of value (which I didn't delve into), the original mind and the theory that God-centered living for others leads to absolute happiness have implications for economics, and that they result in heavenly capitalism, not heavenly socialism. You may or may not agree with this — or you may never have thought about it. But it is high time we do think about it, as we encourage people in positions of social authority to consider issues of good governance and the shape that our future world should take."

You can read his article at the seminary's website www.uts.edu. Some of the articles in their Journal are good and some are horrible such as "A Case for a Professional Ministry in the Unification Church". To achieve church growth internally in spirit and externally in numbers of members we have to make a case against anyone becoming a "professional minister."

If the authors of the *Exposition of the Divine Principle* mean by socialism that mankind is one big family and there is not bookkeeping on serving one another they should understand that the general reader does not read that into the text as it stands now. The average reader will see the word socialism and think of the current usage of the term as being one of state centralization, little private property and forced taxation to create a cradle to grave, highly regulated society ruled by a huge bureaucracy like Sweden is today. If the authors are thinking of some kind of "pure socialism" as opposed to today's evil socialism they need to define their terms better.

TRUE FAMILY ECONOMICS

I have come to believe that true family economics is not one of everyone putting their money into the pot and the head of the family or clan or tribe has total control, but I also believe there is no bookkeeping of love and service in a family. In the past families could never have united lineages that grew in numbers, wealth, and power because each generation was living in a disunited world. There are many different levels and degrees of understanding of what is God's will. There are many different religious and political ideologies. Now that True Parents have come to give us the ultimate theology of the *Divine Principle* Unificationist families can stay united from now to eternity. We are not just followers of Sun Myung Moon we are actual sons and daughters of them. We are so close to them as being our actual True Parents that we are in a blood lineage of theirs. We don't have to worry so much about family members joining another group or having wildly different values because we are now building a world that will be united on universal principles of God. This means we don't need to be so concerned about being so legal in the eyes of the judicial system in regard to our finances. As we get more and more united there will be less and less need of lawyers drawing up complicated legal wills and contracts. Family members compete to serve, not to look out for some materialistic gain. Unificationist families will eventually be completely united on their values that are the opposite of the individualistic values of Satan's world. Families will take care of each other. They will be like the Amish who have nothing to do with the socialist programs of governments. They strive to be self-sufficient and make sure everyone is taken care of. Family comes before the individual. What security is there in having some money in the bank, insurance from big insurance companies and in government programs like Social Security? The

only real security is in godly families. For example, you can organize your life to be living as a lonely wagon and depend on making money as a wage slave in the city where you plan on your distant insurance or impersonal government to take care of you if you get sick or can't take care of yourself when you are old. Or you can organize your life to be living as a wagon train and depend on your relatives and friends locally to take care of you with true love instead of relying on politicians who always ruin the economy and corporate insurance companies that have teams of lawyers who will work hard to not give you any money when you ask for help.

Christopher Reeve was a famous superstar actor whose name was a household name. He was injured and became paralyzed from the neck down. Later his wife died in her 40s of lung cancer even though she did not smoke. They had young children when they both died. What if this happened to you? God's way is for family and friends to take care of you for the rest of your life if you became paralyzed or sick and for family to care for your children in a loving community if you couldn't. Either we are serious about never putting our elder relatives in nursing homes like so many do today or we go back to the good-old-days when extended families and the local community took care of the grandparents and disabled. Of course the good-old-days were not perfect times but have we advanced when we see so much selfishness today? Father speaks strongly against old folks homes. It is a disgrace and sign of failure if a family has to let strangers take care of those in their family and church and community who cannot care for themselves. The only way we can give perfect care is to become better organized and give better care than so-called experts and professionals who care for others for huge amounts of money. We are not supposed to be anything like the world. The world is obsessed with getting and spending money. We do the opposite. We focus on the extended family and our many acres of land that give us the food we need. It is so sad to see how confused and mixed up the fallen world is. Their priorities are upside down. Sandra Bullock is a famous actress at the time of the publication of this edition of this book. She is 45 years old and never had children. She said in an interview that her mother encouraged her to not have any children and work to build up a huge fortune instead of having children because they would slow down her career. I was reading recently about a 30-year old woman who was a superstar basketball player in college and tried to make a career in the professional women's basketball league. She was plagued with injuries and after having 13 operations on her knees she decided to quit. Now she works full-time teaching others how to play basketball. She has no husband and no children and still needs another operation. "For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?" (Matthew 16:26). Tragically, so many parents and friends push for money instead of children out of fear of poverty. The Bible is clear that we should not worry about these things. We are supposed to focus on family, not personal bank accounts, careers, insurance companies, stocks and government.

In this transition we are in there will be Unificationist families who are not mature enough or set up to care for those who need massive amounts of attention. But it should be our goal and it should be our image in the eyes of the world that we are like the Amish and Hutterites and those groups who are not of this world and reject the world's individualist ways. Our philosophy of life is centered on family, not the self-absorbed individual who is always thinking about himself or herself. Our primary thoughts and actions deal with family, not ourselves. This is the only way to achieve what we all want anyway—true love. Married sons should either live in the same house as their parents or live next door and not live far away. Our life on earth is so short we should not waste our time pursuing self-centered goals that take us away from our family. Daughters will leave and live with their husband's family and the sons are supposed to stay home and make sure their children live close to their grandparents. What is life without extended family living together? There may be special situations where a son has to leave the home for a while such as serving his country in the military but the norm is for three or four generations to live in a tight-knit community where parents are honored and the earth they own is dominated with love like God commanded us to do in Genesis 1:28. Cities are dangerous places of temptations and

ugliness. They are terrible places for children to grow up in. It is absolutely essential that Unificationists become self-sufficient in the countryside as a dynamic, secure community rather than live as isolated, lonely, divided individuals and little families in the city. Let's not get wrapped in who owns what and who gave more money or time to the community. How do you calculate and compare with others when we are dealing with the round-the-clock time and energy mothers take care of babies? How do you do the math financially on what a grandfather is giving a grandson when he spends time taking him fishing or teaching him a skill? How do you put a price on the counseling an aunt gives to a niece? Let's live everyday serving our family and friends and neighbors and trust that we will get all the physical and emotional things we need to have a happy life.

CHILDREN ARE ASSETS IN THE COUNTRY

We are not of this world. The world is into saving money for retirement with stocks and IRAs, seniors retiring and living in gated communities that ban children, and look to corporate insurance companies and government to help them when they are unable to help themselves. This is not security. True security comes only from living in a loving family that is debt-free and lives self-sufficiently in the countryside. Allan Carlson writes convincingly in his book *From Cottage to Work Station: The Family's Search for Social Harmony in the Industrial Age* that before 1840 America lived like that. There was a high birthrate because children were seen as assets. They would take care of their parents in old age. They worked the land and had value as providers instead of children in cities who are only liabilities: "Children in America, though, were more than the accidental product of the sexual act or precious bundles to care for and nurture. They were also economic assets to their parents and extended families, new laborers for the family enterprise and sources of security for the care of the old. No less an observer than Adam Smith, in his *Wealth of Nations* published in 1776, remarked that the rapid economic growth in England's American colonies both reflected and rested on the abundance of children: 'Labor [in North America] is ... so well rewarded that a numerous family of children, instead of being a burden, is a source of opulence and prosperity to the parents. The value of children is the greatest of all encouragements to marriage. We cannot, therefore, wonder that the people in North America should generally marry very young.'" Brian Abshire wrote a wonderful article titled "The Industrial Revolution and the Sociology of the Christian Family (5-10-08) saying: "Before the industrial revolution, most people lived in small communities. The same families lived in the same locales for generations since the family was tied to the land. Children were assets; every extra pair of hands meant the farm could produce more food (or the craftsman more products)."

We must go back to nature and have mystical, spiritual feelings about the earth and teach our children to pass on the land to their descendants. Land should be seen as sacred. In Father's autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* he says, "I awoke in them the joy of loving nature. The young people were caught up in the immoral culture of the cities and enslaved in selfish lives, so I talked to them about the preciousness of nature. Nature is given to us by God. God speaks to us through nature. It is a sin to destroy nature for the sake of a moment of enjoyment or an insignificant amount of money. The nature that we destroy eventually will make its way back to us in the form of poison and make life difficult for our descendants. We need to go back to nature and listen to what nature tells us. I told the young people of America that when we open our hearts and listen to what nature is saying, we can hear the word of God."

RETIREMENT: AN ALTERNATIVE VIEW

Joel Salatin has a chapter in his book *Family Friendly Farming: A Multigenerational Home-Based Business Testament* called "Retirement: an alternative view." He has great insights that I can only touch on here. Please read his book. Here is a little of his deep insights:

How does the older generation instill within the succeeding generation a notion

that our possessions are really just things and best used for the needs of others? We don't instill that notion by seeing how much we can amass so we can live comfortably in our old age. "Saving for retirement" becomes the be all and end all of wealth accumulation.

Rather, as we age we should be giving the children our wealth. As we meter it out to them, they can get farther and will have the means—economically and emotionally—to care for us graciously as we age. In his wonderfully insightful book *Die Broke : A Radical Four-Part Financial Plan: Quit today, Pay cash, Don't retire and Most Important Die Broke* Stephen Pollan points out that $10,000 given to a 25-year-old can start a business. But that $10,000 given at 50, through inheritance, will probably pay for a two-week European fling. The gift is the same, but the timing creates the worth.

Estate planning and business books tout the need to rapidly escalate your income during the 40s and 50s in order to get that retirement nest egg together. After all, the reasoning goes, when your income producing potential wanes, you'll need every bit of that to keep you out of the gutter. My question is: "Where are the kids in all this scurrying, dashing wealth accumulation?"

Let me offer a different perspective. What if, instead of getting together $250,000 in equity for retirement, you forgot about that and lived humbly through your 40s and 50s, letting the adult children have it all? Then when you hit 70 years old, instead of having all this money, you have grateful, hardworking children who have leveraged that money with their energy and your experience to grow the business?

The money pumped back into the profitable business via incentives to the young will generate far more equity than you can by keeping the children as slaves and dependents as long as possible so your accumulation at the top can be higher. My point is this: if I didn't think my kids would do whatever was necessary to take care of me if I were injured or became ill, I'd consider myself a failure as a parent.

All of us are investing in something. My question is, in real value, where is the most payback? Is it investing in our personal nest egg so we can enjoy a second childhood, or investing in the children so they will fall over themselves taking care of us when we age?

I know this flies in the face of estate planners. It flies in the face of our culture. But you can't live for yourself and then expect the kids to think first of you. If our actions indicate we need to take care of ourselves first, our children will grow up with the same idea. But if your actions indicate that we really want others to succeed, really want others to reach their potential, then those people we've enabled will be emotionally, if not economically, indebted to us and will rise to the occasion when our needs are great.

Teresa and I have no desire to be rich. I don't think the kids have any desire to be rich. We want a legacy and a life. Rather than putting money away for us, we make big capital improvements in the farm in areas where the kids are interested. We'll ask the kids: "What big project should we do?" I'm not spending this for me; I'm spending this for them, and for their children.

Who cares if the bank account is small? As the farm offers more viable opportunities for more family members, that surely is as wise an investment as a stock portfolio in Fortune 500 companies.

Laurence Kotlikoff is one of the most respected economists in the world. One of his books is *Jimmy Stewart Is Dead: Ending the World's Ongoing Financial Plague with Limited Purpose Banking*. He teaches that America is broke, bankrupt and needs to institute fundamental and

drastic reforms to survive. He says government has been in charge of a "massive six-decade Ponzi scheme." Our financial system is "virtually designed for hucksters." Many people have lost their savings because of the Ponzi like handling of money by governments. You can't count on government money to be there in the future so invest it in your family now.

A person reviewed *Mini Farming for Self Sufficiency* by Brett Markham saying:

> This book describes the philosophy and methods of a holistic approach to limited space gardening that produces so much food that, within three years, you will be able to produce 85% of the food needs for a family of four on less than a quarter-acre, plus earn over $10,000 in cash annually - and you will be able to do this in less time than an equivalent job would require, netting the equivalent of $50/hour for your labor. Even if you have never been a farmer or a gardener, this book covers everything you need to know to get started: buying seeds, saving seeds, starting seedlings, establishing raised beds, soil fertility practices, composting, dealing with pest and disease problems, farm planning and much more. Since self sufficiency is the objective, subjects such as raising backyard chickens and home canning are also covered along with numerous methods for keeping costs down and production high.

Allan Carlson says that the only people who can really live with nature for generations are religious people. Unificationists are religious people and therefore should not be living like everyone else in some polluted and dangerous city. We should be being born, living, dying and then buried in land we own. We are not supposed to live in ridiculous hippie communes. In the video *Visions of Utopia Video* by Geoph Kozeny (www.ic.org) we see a few socialist communes but they are not practical. Families need to own the land and be sensitive to who and how it is supervised. Satan has got families so disunited that many live thousands of miles apart and when they do get together for family reunions or Christmas or Thanksgiving they keep their finances secret. The average family is into individualism instead of groupism. There is strength in numbers.

We live in such disunity and loneliness that the idea of living with others seems scary. We fear we will lose our freedom, our individuality, and be taken advantage of. But where is the freedom, individuality and financial security for the masses of mankind that live in cities and depend on corporate giants and big government to provide a safety net? They go from daycare, to public schools to insecure jobs to nursing homes. Where is the dignity in that? We want to live a full life. We want the very best for our children. We cannot have that as lonely wagons in a city. The highest happiness is found in living in loving communities close to nature. This is not my opinion. It is science. It has been proven. The Founders of America, as Allan Carlson, has so eloquently and powerfully written in such books as *From Cottage to Work Station: The Family's Search for Social Harmony in the Industrial Age* assumed that America would be a great country because it lived close to the soil. Now most Americans live close to cement. And the price they have paid has been horrendous. The statistics of pain are so great one wonders if there will be an economic and social meltdown with roving mobs and gangs of thugs attacking people to get food and water in some nightmare world as portrayed in Mel Gibson's movie *Mad Max*.

WRONG JUNGLE

Stephen Covey writes in *The Seven Habits of Highly Effective People*:

> Management is a bottom line focus: How can I best accomplish certain things? Leadership deals with the top line: What are the things I want to accomplish? In the words of both Peter Drucker and Warren Bennis, "Management is doing things right; leadership is doing the right things." Management is efficiency in

> climbing the ladder of success; leadership determines whether the ladder is leaning against the right wall.
>
> You can quickly grasp the important difference between the two if you envision a group of producers cutting their way through the jungle with machetes. They're the producers, the problem solvers. They're cutting through the undergrowth, clearing it out. The managers are behind them, sharpening their machetes, writing policy and procedure manuals, holding muscle development programs, bringing in improved technologies and setting up working schedules and compensation programs for machete wielders. The leader is the one who climbs the tallest tree, surveys the entire situation, and yells, "Wrong jungle!" But how do the busy, efficient producers and managers often respond? "Shut up! We're making progress."

Covey is pointing out that it is important to be busy doing the right things or we just end up like some hamster in a wheel—going nowhere fast. The Unification Movement has been working hard in a feminist jungle and therefore has not been able to get millions of members and make the *Divine Principle* a best-seller and its truth common knowledge. We must not resort back to being a church. Unificationists must show the way to true security and complete happiness by our words and deeds. Motivational speakers like Earl Nightingale are fond of talking about goal setting. They say write down your goals on a 3x5 card and keep in your pocket. Continually look at it and visualize what you want. Make a new card everyday and write on the other side the actions you need to do that day that will advance to fulfilling your goal on time. What they never tell you is that you should be more concerned with the goals of the family instead of your own goals. And they never say that there are some things you should not write down because in doing them you would be violating God's universal principles. Women should not write down they want to earn money and run for political office. Men should not write down that they will help their wives achieve success as a cop or CEO.

REAL INSURANCE

Dave Ramsey is a popular writer and radio host. He is good about pushing for being debt-free but he is wrong in teaching people that they first have to take care of themselves before they can take care of their extended family. What we are supposed to be doing is living closely with and working alongside our family instead of going off alone like everyone does today. Ramsey, like everyone else, has bought into Satan's individualism instead of God's plan for trinities. We can't count on our bank account, big insurance companies and government to take care of us if we become unable to take care of ourselves. The only real insurance is family and a religious community that will make sure our diapers are changed if we become injured or disabled. The only way we can make sure that there are no nursing homes for those who need constant care is to have enough people in a community that will be more loving and give better service than any nursing home. We need to have enough people in our communities that there will always be breakfast, lunch and dinner for everyone without fail.

NUCLEAR vs. EXTENDED FAMILY

Wikipedia defines the nuclear family as "a family group consisting of only a father and mother and their children, who share living quarters. This can be contrasted with an extended family." Unificationists should go beyond the nuclear and extended family and live in tight-knit rural communities like the Hutterites do. Even the Amish do not live close to each other like the Hutterites do. I believe one of the indicators that would show the world we are living in alignment with God's universal principles is when every Unificationist worldwide is living in a community where each person is guaranteed a nutritious meal three times a day without fail. We need to create communities that are more reliable than hospitals. Aren't we supposed to be an oasis of healing

where people can come and get healed from their physical and mental illnesses? When guests visit us they should see something different than the world. The Hutterites have huge families and take care of each other in their communities. They are born there and buried there. When Unificationists have it as a core value that every member will never miss a meal no matter what happens in the dysfunctional world around them then we will offer something greater than anyone else. We are not supposed to be born around strangers and buried around strangers. We are supposed to experience true love every moment of our lives. If we can't offer professional birthing and dying centers in our communities then how do we differ from the world? The world is blindly following Satan's plan of living isolated insecure lives where they often miss meals and have to go to hospitals and spend thousands of dollars when they are having a baby and have to spend thousands of dollars on funeral homes when someone dies. Everything is so impersonal and painful in the fallen world that virtually no one wants to have twelve children anymore. They fear the expense and know in their hearts they will not be able to always be there and give their children and disabled loved ones a truly nutritious meal three times a day. The only true insurance we can offer our children and our hurting loved ones is a community that is committed to be better than any hospital. Single parents, married couples who are separated and those who have no children also need to be in our communities and receive the help they need.

Nursing homes and hospitals and college dorms today are incompetent to even give those in their care the right food. They feed these poor souls white flour sandwiches and sugary jell-o instead of food that does not raise their blood sugar levels. Be sure to watch the movie based on a true story *First, Do No Harm*. Meryl Streep plays a mother who in real life had to deal with the horrible medical profession to find a cure for her son. Weston Price showed in his research that primitive cultures that did not have white flour and sugar had perfect teeth even though they never flossed or brushed their teeth. They did not need braces and never had cavities. They were in perfect health. As soon as they went to the city and started eating the processed food that everyone was eating their health declined. His book *Nutrition and Physical Degeneration* (ww.ppnf.org) has amazing photographs he took of before and after of these people living in remote areas and then those who moved into towns. We can't count on so-called experts who say they can provide services better than extended families and religious communities. These so-called professionals just want your money and then end up castrating men, marriages and the nation. It is an illusion that any amount of money you have in the bank will give you security. Government and lawyers can and do take it away from people all the time. The only people who you would want to change your diapers are those who you love. And to get them to love you, you need to love them. You need to focus on serving others instead of serving yourself.

Father speaks strongly against senior citizens homes and lack of love and respect for the elderly:

> If you never served your grandfather and your grandmother, you will have regret.
>
> Which is closer to the heavenly family system, the Oriental family system or the Western family system? [The Oriental system.] You all want to spend your old age in a senior citizens home, don't you? [No.] You would spend your time from morning to evening just waiting on your son and daughter and grandchildren to visit you. Lunch-time passes and no one comes, evening passes and you have only more disappointment because no one comes. The following day you start the routine all over again until you die. Every day is filled with crying and going more and more down. How miserable that situation is. If someone came in and broke down all the barriers would the grandmother and grandfather be opposed to that or shout, "Mansei!"? Do you really agree? Well at least you know the Principle way. Deep inside that is your wish. A senior citizens home has no place in our family. It's not just what Father is declaring, but what universal

form is declaring. If we don't live that way, they will chase us out in the spirit world. How can you not think about loving your own grandmother and grandfather and expect to love the world? That thinking doesn't coincide. If you really listen to Father and your grandfather and grandmother are in a senior citizens home and you did not even think about this, then to indemnify it, maybe you can take them out of the senior citizens home and serve them in your own family. Try it and see what the outcome is. Father says something good is guaranteed to happen in your family in three years. Will you do that? If you don't do that you cannot go into heaven.

In the spirit world do you think your grandparents looked wrinkled and have their old form? Or are they more beautiful than you are? They are more beautiful. That's true. A long, long time they stayed here in training. They created a love atmosphere. If you meet your grandparents in the spirit world will you just react to them as you see them today? In your excitement you would run and grab them and embrace them. All the spectators in the spirit world will want to see that kind of excitement. Everyone would want to look at this grandfather and grandson who shout and race to each other. Who is the greatest grandfather? God. If we practice that way of living here on earth, we can dash to God and embrace Him once we reach the spirit world. We learn to do that here. God will be so happy too and He will laugh. Those who never even thought about this in their lives, will you do it? [Yes.] What about your wife, will you let her do it too? (3-10-91)

The custom here in America has produced children who say, "So what about my parents? I am completely equal to them and I am equal to everybody else as well." However, according to the vertical chain of command, father and son cannot be "equal"; there is no such relationship between them. The center is absolute; it harmonizes everything in a balanced way. All distances are the same from the center to the perimeter. The center of the circle cannot position itself somewhere in the corner of the circle; and there is only one center, not two or three.

I want you to understand that what you have here in America and the Western world is a horizontal culture. This cannot continue to prosper without meeting with the vertical discipline and principle. That is what Father Moon's teaching is all about. In the American culture, the love between men and women is all-important, but there is little recognition of the love of parents, grandparents and elders. Such a culture will decline, without question.

Therefore Father Moon came to rescue America by bringing the vertical discipline to this civilization. You may not want to hear this, but you have to hear it. When you are a patient in the hospital, you don't want to hear your diagnosis if it is bad. You never want to hear the doctor tell you, "You have cancer." You only want to hear, "No more problems." Even though cancer may be consuming your body, you only want to hear that you are fine. Father Moon has given you the correct diagnosis because that is the only true way to bring some hope to you. Only in that way can the disease be treated.

At Yankee Stadium, I proclaimed to the American people that this country is like a sick patient in need of a doctor. Always your doctor will come from somewhere outside of your own home. Also I said that America is like a home

on fire; you need a firefighter to come from outside, not inside, to put out the fire. This disturbed people deeply; they didn't want to hear it. People say to me, "Father Moon, you have no right to call yourself a physician or a firefighter. You are a blasphemer to say such things to this healthy country!" In the arrogant minds of some people, they are thinking, "You are just a Korean, Father Moon, from that underdeveloped country. How could you say such things to this cultured country?"

I want you to understand that Father Moon did not come to America because East Garden Estate is very beautiful, or because of some comfortable Cadillac, or for the sake of delicious American food. All these things hold no attraction for me whatsoever. I came here to do my mission, period, until the last minute possible.

Always I am thinking of only one thing—the salvation of America, the salvation of mankind. Therefore, I declared an emergency. I live day by day in the context of emergency. How about you? You always complain and try to find excuses for yourselves. God does not want that. This is serious. Do you think the same way as I do? (1-1-83)

In the future do you imagine that America will still maintain senior citizens homes? In our families, grandparents, parents and children have to live together in harmony. (6-23-96)

Practically speaking, you men and women who are willing and ready to go to senior citizens' homes and take care of them, cleaning their bodies and replacing their bedpans, are exhibiting true love. When you were a baby your parents took care of you, changing your diapers and wiping you clean. They didn't have any feelings of discomfort to do that for you. You should be able to take care of your grandparents in that manner. That is the beauty of give and take. It is the responsibility of young people to take care of the elderly.

Most American young people today are eager to leave home for very selfish reasons. They only want to gain their own freedom, their own "identity." They should be willing to visit with their grandparents and take care of other elderly people. When young people start to have that attitude, a new kind of America will emerge. Your grandparents represent more of God's image, so when you serve them you are serving God. Through them you can learn how to serve God because you can experience more of God's love through them. (1-2-83)

In secular America today, there is division between parents and children; they are in contradiction. Also, men and women—husbands and wives—are in contradiction, struggle, and confrontation. God cannot dwell in such a situation. The family system is breaking down. It is a very unhappy situation—the family feeling is ice cold. There is a cold, chilly feeling between the parents and children, husband and wife.

In the Unification Church we are trying to come to the center, both vertically and horizontally. In one point, unity is formed. That is because true love is at the center. Everybody comes and unites in that center. You can go out from that center but you don't feel alienated; you can always come back and recoup, like returning to the "filling station" of love again and again. True love alone can

make this possible. It's not only the little child who is lovable and cute. In this concept, the elderly grandmother is also beautiful. A grandpa may have very rugged skin with a long beard, but the little child will go up to him and kiss and hug him. That is a beautiful sight. Can we see such a thing frequently in the average American home? Not very often. (6-22-86)

In the family there must be not only the filial son but also filial parents. If there are no filial parents, no filial son will come into being. You have never heard of filial parents, have you? What are they? Even though their son is smelly and mischievous, they still love him and try to give him proper guidance. If your parents hadn't done that for you, you probably would have ended up in an orphanage with no one caring about you.

When such parents get old and can't take care of themselves, what happens to them? A filial son would care for his parents the way they did for him when he was a child and couldn't go to the bathroom by himself. In that way, the beginning and the end become one. Are all American women filial daughters? Are all American men filial sons? In this country, many senior citizens' homes are like junkyards for old cars. Should we allow that to continue, or correct that situation?

Satan wants to deprive each individual of the privilege of going to Heaven by preventing him from being a filial child. When your parents are old and require a lot of care, would you want them to die soon and not be a burden, or would you want to take care of them just as they cared for you'?

Recently I was very moved to hear about the father of one of the Korean leaders. This elderly man has been bedridden for five years with a nervous disorder and he is almost like a vegetable. His daughter and wife have had the burden of caring for him constantly. Yet his wife says that she hopes he will continue to live as long as possible, even though he is so much trouble to care for. I really feel she is a woman to be commended.

Recently a 79 year-old Korean journalist came to America to see me, and mentioned that his wife had been bedridden for almost three years. He has been caring for her devotedly all this time, but still he hopes she will live much longer. My heart was very moved to hear him. He and his wife thought that perhaps when he left to come to America it would be the last time they would see each other, so they embraced and tearfully said goodbye. Don't you think that is a beautiful kind of life? While he was here in America he became sick and had to be in the hospital for two weeks. Remembering his beautiful heart, I made calls to the people around him asking them to do everything they could to help him.

Are there husbands and wives like that here in America? I am determined to make better husbands out of American men, and better wives out of American women. I must raise my children to be filial sons and daughters according to the highest standard. Would you try to live like that also? It is the most beautiful sight you can imagine. Of course, it will not be accomplished quickly and Americans may zigzag in their commitment, but after some years they will discover that the very best place is the Unification family.

When God sees that you are making great effort to care for your parents, would He say that you are foolish to waste your energy, or would He approve? If Jesus were here now, would he approve of such people or say they were foolish? Would God approve of my molding American young men and women into such people? Do you wonder why you ended up in the Unification Church, instead of spending Christmas time going to parties, movies and restaurants? Now you don't even go to McDonald's very often. Do you hate me and the *Principle* for making you suffer so much?

Do you know clearly what we are supposed to do? We are striving to come closer to the original way of living, centering around the family. The family is the training ground where you prepare for living in Heaven. Only after becoming filial sons and daughters can you become royal citizens of your country and world. (12-25-80)

One of the first places we must liberate here in the United States are those senior citizens' institutions. The elderly people in those homes represent all the ancestors of their lineage. By serving and taking care of the senior citizens on the earth, you can serve all their ancestors in the spirit world—all the way back to the beginning of history. Then everywhere you go, you will receive the greatest welcome.

Who is the eldest senior citizen in the universe? It is none other than Heavenly Father Himself. As you tend to the needs of old people, do it with the attitude of caring for the needs of God Himself. God's desire is for us to take care of all His children. You must understand this heart of God.

Each of you has become a new person after having met the *Principle* and Father Moon.

Another prevalent attitude among Americans today is a lack of regard for the needs and feelings of their in-laws and even their parents. The younger generation considers all older people virtually worthless. That is why there are so many senior citizens' homes. After listening to this sermon, each of you should resolve never to send your parents away to an institution, but to welcome them into your own home and care for them. You must also be willing to sacrifice your own desires for the sake of your elderly parents when they need you. This is what true love means. (12-27-81)

In love there is nothing ugly.

When you visit the room of a very old grandparent, you might notice a funny smell. An elderly husband and wife who have lived together for many years may live in a house that smells bad to other people, but they are accustomed to each other's smells so they don't notice anything unusual. That is a beautiful thing.

The world of love is connected to the world of spirit. When an old grandfather holds a little baby the baby will not care if he smells bad. The baby can touch the old grandfather's beard and enjoy it very much. However when the baby grows older and becomes a teenager, he may be offended if his grandfather smells bad. The naive, pure world of the little child is one in which the closeness of love can be felt purely. Once you lose your purity, you fall away from that

world of love. Particularly in the American way of life, a kind of unnatural standard has been created which corrupts people without their even realizing it. It is easy to lose your purity and your naive, genuine feeling; that is bad. We in the Unification Church must restore that purity and genuineness.

Very old people sometimes revert to a "second childhood." Sometimes they even have to use diapers because they cannot control their bodily functions. When a person is young he is cared for by his parents, but when the parents become very old, their children take care of them. In this way the grandfather and grandmother become like babies and the son and daughter become like their parents. This is a beautiful give and take, the turning of the cycle.

Sons and daughters should respect their elders and their own parents to the point of taking care of them when they are no longer able to care for their own bodily functions. Such children are truly sons and daughters of filial piety.

Let me depict a situation for you. Suppose you are a married couple and you live in a home with your parents and your own children. You have a very young baby who is not yet toilet trained, but your parents are in the same situation and cannot control their body functions. You have two different "bathroom situations," so where should you put your priority? The American way is to think, "I must take care of my child. I can send my parents to a nursing home and let someone else take care of them." The Oriental philosophy is different—they take care of the parents first, then they care for the child. This is the more heavenly way.

Why should a person care for his parents first before his child? It is because the parents are above you in your lineage and they are therefore closer to God. Caring for the elderly is a beautiful thing. When you are out on the street and you see an old grandmother walking on a cane with difficulty, you ought to take her arm and help her. When anyone looks at such a sight, they smile and are moved by the beauty of it. Not just people in this world, but everyone in spirit world and even God himself is moved by such beauty.

When you enter into spirit world your entire ancestral lineage, from the very beginning thousands of years ago, will all come to welcome you. You are many thousands of generations down the line. Everybody else there is older than you so you cannot say, "All of you must kneel down before me. I am the boss." Also you wouldn't say, "Don't bother me, I don't want to have anything to do with you."

You enter the Kingdom of Heaven by stepping across the bridge of your ancestors. You must walk on the shoulders of those who came before you. You cannot do this by any power, knowledge, or accomplishment but only by love. Your ancestors will feel joy to have you step across their shoulders if you are united with them in love. If you establish the tradition of serving your parents and grandparents as you serve your own child, once you enter into the spirit world you can be instantly united with your entire ancestral tree, including God who is at the top of your ancestral tree. You can go anywhere freely and be united with everyone in spirit world. Every barrier will be broken down because you set the tradition here on earth of serving your own child and your own parents with love.

I have asked older persons from time to time if they would like to go to senior citizens homes. They always said "No." Would God agree with such a desire on the part of those old people or would He think that they ought to go to senior citizens homes? God would certainly agree with them. What if your parents were so feeble that they couldn't control their bodily functions? Would you still want to be around them? Should I agree with the American system of sending old people off to institutions, or should I continue to say that it is not right? What I am saying is the *Principle*. It is truth of a universal, unchanging nature.

The parent/child relationship is the basic building block of the Kingdom of Heaven and it must be expanded to the society, nation, world and cosmos. If you don't have the good fortune to have your parents still living on the earth, then you should serve other parents like they were your own. If you don't have any children or your children are all grown up, then love other children as you would love your own child. This is even nobler than loving your own child. If you go to Africa you should serve in the same spirit. The African grandmother will be like your own grandmother; the African child is your own son. Likewise if you go to South America, the North Pole, the South Pole, Asia, or the Middle East, it doesn't make any difference. You should practice this principle of love and wherever you go in the world you can create the Kingdom of Heaven there. (12-20-81)

Human beings emerged from zero. Then as children grow they develop and learn and their world emerges. On the contrary, as grandparents become older, all aspects of their lives shrink until they return again to the zero point again. Our origin was not our choice. As we grow old we again return to the point of zero.

When a child is born, the entire family is mobilized in order to give the proper support and care for that child to grow to maturity. When grandparents become old and helpless, the entire family should again mobilize to provide the smooth and comfortable path for grandparents to return to zero. That is their preparation for Glory. This is how they should end their lives and return again to God. Do we dislike our aged grandparents? (No.) American couples usually do not wish to serve their parents-in-law. They also limit the number of children they have so they can enjoy their lives as a couple. If there are only two of you, who would want you?

If you are able to truly devote yourselves to your grandparents, your parents and even your husband or wife when they can no longer take care of themselves with greater devotion than you gave to your infant children, then you will gain a free pass to the Kingdom of Heaven. Do you Americans understand? (Yes.) This is very important for you to understand and act upon. Do you feel good? (Yes.) Not everyone has the privilege of serving their elderly grandparents and parents. Therefore, we should demonstrate this heart of love to others in the place of our elderly grandparents and parents. If you give your heartfelt service to elderly people, this practice of life will give you the qualification to enter Heaven. If you are able to create such a family environment of being able to welcome every level of people then your family will be called the palace of grandparents, the palace of parents, and the palace of children regardless of race. How precious this headquarters family palace would be. (5-26-96)

CONTROL FREAKS
John Stossel teaches that self-governance works better than big government control freaks:

> Much of what government does is based on the premise that people can't do things for themselves. So government must do it for them. More often than not, the result is a ham-handed, bumbling, one-size-fits-all approach that leaves the intended beneficiaries worse off. Of course, this resulting failure is never blamed on the political approach – on the contrary, failure is taken to mean the government solution was not extravagant enough.
>
> Pundits and politicians act as if government can solve almost any problem. At the slightest hint of trouble, the ruling class reflexively assumes that knowledgeable, wise and public-spirited government regulators are capable of riding to the rescue. This certainly is the guiding philosophy of the Obama administration. We libertarians aren't against rules — we are against top-down rules imposed by out-of-touch bureaucrats. People generate better rules when the state leaves us alone. (10-21-2000)

SOCIALISM IS EVIL
Walter Williams wrote an article titled "Socialism Is Evil." He ends saying that socialism violates one of the Ten Commandments:

> Can a moral case be made for taking the rightful property of one American and giving it to another to whom it does not belong? I think not. That's why socialism is evil. It uses evil means (coercion) to achieve what are seen as good ends (helping people). We might also note that an act that is inherently evil does not become moral simply because there's a majority consensus.
>
> An argument against legalized theft should not be construed as an argument against helping one's fellow man in need. Charity is a noble instinct; theft, legal or illegal, is despicable. Or, put another way: Reaching into one's own pocket to assist his fellow man is noble and worthy of praise. Reaching into another person's pocket to assist one's fellow man is despicable and worthy of condemnation.
>
> For the Christians among us, socialism and the welfare state must be seen as sinful. When God gave Moses the commandment "Thou shalt not steal," I'm sure He didn't mean thou shalt not steal unless there's a majority vote. And I'm sure that if you asked God if it's OK just being a recipient of stolen property, He would deem that a sin as well.

The Messiah comes to free this world of socialism. It is an egregious error to say God was behind the efforts of men like Owen and Kingsley. In the *Exposition of the Divine Principle —1996 Translation* we read, "... Owen's humanism in the period of the industrial revolution of England ... together with the Catholic socialism and Protestant socialism, brought about by the Christian idea of Kingsley of England. All these must be regarded as coming from the natural expression of man's original nature, which is headed for the ideal of creation."

CAPITALIST UTOPIA
Let's teach that men like Owen and Kingsley paved the road to hell with their good intentions. The *Principle* should teach that God spoke more through men like Adam Smith and the Founding Fathers of America in 1776. The "ideal of creation" that we are "headed" in is capitalism. Unificationists are the most idealist people on earth. We have the great mission from God to teach mankind how to build the ideal world. We have to teach that the ideal world will be a capitalist

utopia—not a socialist utopia. The Unification Movement has spent billions of dollars on *The Washington Times* to fight the deadly ideology of socialism. There is a complete disconnect between Father's plan for the pro-free enterprise *Washington Times* and the *Exposition of the Divine Principle—1996 Translation*. Thankfully those billions of dollars were not spent printing and distributing millions of *Principle* books but were put into our newspaper that fights the socialists. I have corrected this mistake in my version of the *Principle* titled *Divine Principle in Plain Language*.

MICHAEL MOORE VS. MILTON FRIEDMAN

The most visual proponent of socialism is Michael Moore. In his videos *Sicko* and *Capitalism: A Love Story* he teaches that the Bible and Christianity are socialist and Jesus would be for socialism and against capitalism if he were here today. In his book, *The War on Success: How the Obama Agenda Is Shattering the American Dream*, Tommy Newberry explains how President Obama is a socialist and has a chapter titled "God Is Not A Socialist." He correctly argues that the Bible is not for socialism. Michael Moore makes false videos. Milton Friedman has true videos such as *Free to Choose* that uplift capitalism and expose socialism as a false ideology. There is no third way. Either you believe Moore or Friedman. Winston Churchill said it well: "Socialism is a philosophy of failure, the creed of ignorance, and the gospel of envy; its inherent virtue is the equal sharing of misery."

Karl Marx said, "My object in life is to dethrone God and destroy capitalism."

P. J. O'Rourke writes in "How to Explain Conservatism", "Collectivism doesn't work because it's based on a faulty economic premise. There is no such thing as a person's 'fair share' of wealth. The gross national product is not a pizza that must be carefully divided because if I get too many slices, you have to eat the box. The economy is expandable and, in any practical sense, limitless." Ayn Rand said, "The government was set to protect man from criminals, and the Constitution was written to protect man from the government."

CRITICS OF CAPITALISM

Murray Rothbard writes, "One of the most common charges leveled against the free market (even by many of its friends) is that it reflects and encourages unbridled 'selfish materialism.' Even if the free market—unhampered capitalism—best furthers man's 'material' ends, critics argue, it distracts man from higher ideals. It leads man away from spiritual or intellectual values and atrophies any spirit of altruism.... Many critics complain the free market, in casting aside inefficient entrepreneurs or in other decisions, proves itself an 'impersonal monster.' The free-market economy, they charge, is the 'rule of the jungle,' where 'survival of the fittest' is the law. Libertarians who advocate a free market are therefore called 'Social Darwinists' who wish to exterminate the weak for the benefit of the strong." Rothbard is excellent at rebutting these accusations. If is sad that America has experimented with socialism.

If there had been complete capitalism in the last 200 years we would have an efficient marketplace. For example, by now we would have underground railways and highways. There would be no need for the thousands of semi-trucks on the interstate highways. All these goods would be transported fast in underground bullet trains. Father has proposed an international underground highway that should be built with private funds only.

CONSENSUAL CRIMES

Peter McWilliams writes against government focusing on punishing people for prostitution, drugs, etc. in *Ain't Nobody's Business If You Do: The Absurdity of Consensual Crimes in a Free Society*. He says, "Almost everyone, at one time or another, has taken part in an illegal consensual activity." In his chapter "Why Consensual Crimes Have So Few Advocates" he writes, "Let's take a look at the various moving-and-shaking organizations and see why none of them protects our

right to do with our person and property whatever we choose as long as we do not physically harm the person or property of another."

GOVERNMENT SUPPRESSION OF "CULTS"

The first category is "Religions." He writes, "You name the religion and it's against one (often all) of the consensual crimes. Religious leaders—and fundamentalists in particular— don't seem to grasp the fundamental notion that keeping the government from criminalizing consensual acts between adults protects religion. If a government establishes its authority to control what people can and cannot do with their person and property, either 'for their own good' or 'for the good of society,' that same government can later begin dictating how much of one's person and property should or can be devoted to the discovery of, communication with, and worship of God. The essence of almost all religions is that one must choose, with one's free will, to worship God: a prayer said at the point of a gun is not a prayer. Likewise, the government has no business restricting how much of ourselves or our property we devote to religion. (It's already happening, of course, in the governmental suppression of "cults")."

PROHIBITION

He quotes Herbert Hoover saying, "Prohibition is a great social and economic experiment-noble in motive and far-reaching in purpose." He writes, "Prohibition (1920-1933 R.I.P.) was known as The Noble Experiment. The results of the experiment are clear: innocent people suffered; organized crime grew into an empire; the police, courts, and politicians became corrupt; disrespect for the law grew; and the per capita consumption of the prohibited substance-alcohol-increased dramatically, year by year, for the thirteen years of this Noble Experiment, never to return to the pre-1920 levels." Unificationists need to side with libertarians and fight against legislating morality.

Milton Friedman in his book *Capitalism and Freedom* wrote: "Underlying most arguments against a free market is a lack of belief in freedom itself." Rush Limbaugh says, "Socialism has never, ever worked. Usually the failures are measured in economic terms relative to capitalist societies—but the largest cost has been borne in the trampling of the human spirit. It is an ideology of bondage ....Socialism means collective or government ownership, with central bureaucracies controlling economic planning—instead of the brilliance that results from free people making millions of daily decisions in a free market. The socialist distrust and hatred of private ownership is not just a fatal flaw. It is also a serious misunderstanding of that yearning for freedom with which all human beings are endowed."

"Something happens when an individual owns his home or business. He or she will always invest more sweat, longer hours and greater creativity to develop and care for something he owns than he will for any government-inspired project supposedly engineered for the greater social good.... The desire to improve oneself and one's family's lot, to make life better for one's children, to strive for a higher standard of living, is universal and God-given. It is honorable. It is not greed."

I think it is wrong for some brothers to see themselves as volunteer missionaries who need to be supported by other brothers who earn money. Whether we witness to the President of the United States or to the poorest person in Africa don't you think it would more powerful and influential to be seen as practicing what we preach? And we should be preaching that every man should be the sole provider for his family and donate his extra time and money to teaching the truth. We do not encourage girls and women to work but look for godly men to care for them. Men should not look to government or churches or others to give them money. At the very minimum every brother should earn good money in the marketplace and teach other men to be successful at earning money and providing for the women and children in their lives.

MONOPOLY STATE OWNERSHIP

Most people have little or no understanding or appreciation of the free market because of public schools. Warren Brookes wrote, "I asked Nobelist economist Milton Friedman why most American students still graduate from high schools not only with low performance but with such a socialist perspective .... His answer was characteristically clear: 'Because they are products of a socialist system. How can you expect such a system to inculcate the values of enterprise and competition, when it is based on monopoly state ownership?'"

DOGMA

Chesterton said, "It is quaint that people talk of separating dogma from education. Dogma is actually the only thing that cannot be separated from education. It is education. A teacher who is not dogmatic is simply a teacher who is not teaching." And he said, "State education is simply Conscription applied to culture, or to the destruction of culture."

CAPITALISM IS SPIRITUAL

Richard Lewis is the editor of the *Unification News*. He wrote an article (September 1983) praising Warren Brookes' book, *The Economy In Mind*. Lewis correctly writes that this is an excellent book on how capitalism is spiritual. He writes, "This book will be of great interest to those who are developing Unification Thought. One of the purposes of Unification Thought is a critique and counter-proposal to Marxist philosophy. However, although Marxism has a well-developed economic theory, there is a conspicuous lack of one in Unification Thought. *Economy In Mind* fits nicely into that gap and should prove a great help in the development of our philosophic system." Unification Thought says nothing about politics and economics. I offer this book as the foundation thought for heavenly politics and heavenly economics.

ECOLOGY OF THE FREE MARKET

In his chapter called "The Ecology of the Free Market" Brookes says he saw two editorials in a liberal newspaper. One was "a defense of more government regulation of the economy and of business" because "Our economy has now become so complex and so sophisticated, it is simply impossible to allow it to run by itself without a substantial degree of government regulation. Just six inches below was a fervent plea for environmental integrity, whose gist was: Our magnificent natural environment is simply far too complex and too delicate in its balance for mere mortals to go on interfering in 'its naturally accommodative process.' Such human interference, no matter how well meaning, invariably produces chaos and distortion. So, on the one hand, our economy is so complex that it must be regulated, and on the other, our ecology is so complex that we shouldn't attempt to interfere with it!"

"Now the true ecologist certainly does understand something fundamental about our world that is as applicable to economics as it is to our environment. The natural ecosystem is so infinitely complex and varied, and so remarkably interrelated, that even the best-intentioned efforts to regulate this environment in one way or another invariably bring about reactions and distortion throughout the system. The ecologist understands that the system itself is constantly bringing about accommodation and balance. While these accommodations are frequently painful and difficult, they are usually better in their long-term result, because nature tends to preserve, protect, and strengthen its own creation. So the ecologist opts for a hands-off policy because he has learned that 'it is not nice to fool with Mother Nature.'"

Brookes has an excellent section on religion and economics. He says that when the brutal dictator of Iran, the Ayatollah Kohmeni criticized America for being a "satanic force" with its "oppressive and exploitive economic system" Americans felt guilty; "it touched sensitive nerves. There is, for example, little connection between the purity and simplicity of the Bethlehem babe's appearance on earth and the merchandising madness that annually turns the U.S. Christmas season into a frenzy of frustration and robs us of much of its potential holiness and inspiration. This is a sorry

annual reminder that while it is true that capitalism seems to have flourished most from the impetus of the Judeo-Christian ethic of individual self-betterment, its economic affluence and prosperity have not always brought spiritual well-being. Quite often it has generated the opposite. Good Christians may become successful capitalists, but successful capitalists are not necessarily good Christians (in spite of what Dale Carnegie may argue)."

"This may explain why, in this most capitalistic of all nations, there now seems to be even more theological distrust of capitalism than there is of atheistic socialism and, indirectly, why no other nation in the West, except Great Britain, has more severely punished capitalism's economic lifeblood (savings and profits) than the United States has. Not surprisingly, no other Western nation saves as little."

"Irving Kristol thinks this American 'love-hate' relationship with capitalism is due to the overwhelming dominance of traditional Christianity in our cultural and economic institutions: 'Orthodox Jews have never despised business, Christians have. The act of commerce, the existence of a commercial society, has always been a problem for Christians.' The reason, Kristol contends, is that Judaism and Islam provide mankind with laws which help them adapt to and live in an imperfect world. Christianity, on the other hand, is more 'gnostic,' or prophetic, in character, calling on mankind to change the world we live in. 'It tends to be hostile to all existing laws and all existing institutions...to insist that this hell in which we live, this 'unfair' world can be radically corrected.'"

"It is this material utopianism which draws so many Christians to socialism, which seems to rest on the Christian ideal of the essential spiritual brotherhood, equality, goodness, and perfection of Man, and which theorizes that it is only the ubiquitous and discriminatory economic forces of capitalism that make man behave badly. Remove these forces, the Christian socialist promises, and mankind's inherent goodness will flourish in a kind of kingdom of heaven here on earth."

"Socialist experiments have always enticed Christians, from the ill-fated Brook Farm of the 19th century to the tragic Jonestown of 1978. Almost without exception, these experiments have foundered ... on economic fallacies dominated by distribution, not production— fallacies that succeed only in spreading poverty, not in producing wealth ....Kristol suggests that 'Socialist redistribution bears some resemblance to Christian charity,' but charity is no more the be-all of Christianity [and Unificationism] than distribution is the whole of economics. Charity without redemption becomes itself an expression of poverty and futility as does distribution without production to replenish it."

"Moreover, economy itself is the creation and production of value. Since, at its root, value is an expression of spiritual qualities with moral implications, religion, which is the teaching and promulgation of values, is intimately connected to the economy .... Most religions, and especially Christianity and Judaism, also teach that a basic source to our daily supply can be found in the spiritual ideas, inspiration, and qualities of thought and character that come from a relationship to God. From this standpoint, true economy becomes the active expression of God-derived qualities in human endeavor, including the process by which we give raw matter value and purpose, and turn it into economic 'goods.'"

"Faith in the Infinite—which St. Paul calls 'the substance of things hoped for'—leads directly to the Christian and Judaic teaching that giving is its own reward, since the more one gives the more one has to give. As St. Luke presents Christ's teaching, 'Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give unto your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withall it shall be measured to you again.' The Golden Rule, actively followed, would wholly destroy both individual and collective poverty. And if everyone is busy giving (contributing and producing), then we have the ultimate underpinning of

Say's law that supply generates its own demand and rewards its own effort."

Brookes says America has turned from principles to things, from the spiritual to the physical. Churches are more concerned with liberal policies of redistribution instead of production. He says, "It is no longer unusual to find such venerable organizations as the National Council of Churches and the U.S. Roman Catholics' Campaign for Human Development taking strong leftist stands on such controversial issues as tax reform, rent control, subsidized public housing, welfare, national health insurance, and even vertical divestiture of the oil companies."

"The underlying theme of most of this activity seems to boil down to the demand-side premise that income redistribution and the fully socialized welfare state are the highest human expressions of the Judeo-Christian ethic of compassion, that distribution is in some way more Christian than production, that one (distribution) equates with compassion and the other (production) with exploitation. With all due respect to these religious leaders, at best they seem guilty of a shallow interpretation of their own biblical teachings (not to mention economic reality), and, at worst they appear to have a strange kind of death wish, through the sacrifice of the metaphysical initiative for the frustrations of power politics."

"It must be transparently clear to any thinking person that the ultimate effect of the creation of the fully socialized welfare state is not merely the destruction of human liberty (and true economy—the unfoldment of ideas) but the shift of human trust from dependence on God to dependence on the state—the exchange of worship of Deity for the idolatry and tyranny of Leviathan."

CAPITALISM AND HEALING POVERTY

In his section called "Capitalism and Healing Poverty" he writes, "One day in 1979 the front pages of many newspapers featured a haunting picture of the frail Mother Teresa receiving the Nobel Peace Prize for her magnificent but frustrating work among the very poorest of Calcutta's impoverished 7 million—where up to 50% are unemployed and hundreds routinely die of starvation in the streets each night, defying the most heroic efforts at relief."

"Mother Teresa's saintly life and grand humilities present a clear and implicit rebuke to the opulence of an uncaring West, more concerned for the price of oil and gold than for the cost of human suffering. But that, too, could be a superficial view, since nothing could do more for Calcutta's starving millions than a vital economy."

"There are, however, no Nobel Peace Prizes for capitalism or for American industry and its fabulously successful assault on poverty. Instead, only brickbats, as the media daily parade industry's more unseemly excesses on page one and bury its successes on page 40, while 'profit' has become an ugly epithet and capitalism itself is scorned as 'trickle-down' economic theory."

"It is ironic that the same Christian Church which was once the strongest apologist for the 'Babbittry' of unrestrained 19th-century capitalism and the so-called Protestant work ethic, has now turned with such savage scorn on the affluent society which this 'ethic' has produced. Although some of this radical shift in American Christian thought has been spurred by a long-overdue awakening to the real plight of the poor and minorities, it also seems to represent a more fundamental change in today's Christian models."

One way to effectively teach is not to just give theory but also real stories to help us see the ideas. Brookes does this. One of them is about Bradley Dewey. He says, "The most successful companies in this country have been built, by and large, out of the self-discipline and creative faith in the future of a comparatively few men and women who, had they been motivated purely by short-term greed or 'bottom lines,' could never have achieved what they did. I think for example of Bradley Dewey, who helped give this nation synthetic rubber during World War II when we

needed it most, and in the process contributed valuable private inventions for the public good."

"Dewey's greatest achievement was the plastic packaging process known as Cryovac, which revolutionized the production, distribution, and consumption of meat and poultry in this country. The process has saved consumers literally tens of billions of dollars in reduced waste, distribution costs, and spoilage, and has been the basis of the creation of tens of thousands of new jobs."

"It took Dewey nearly 20 difficult years before Cryovac finally became a profitable venture—during which time he continually confounded his accountants and controllers by sacrificing nearly his entire capital investment and life savings to bring this idea through all its technical and marketing problems to fruition. Dewey's long-range vision ultimately produced a major new and profitable business that has blessed millions; yet there never was a man, in my experience, who was less preoccupied with 'profit maximization' or more occupied with genuine service to his country. For Dewey, profits were a secondary and disciplinary measure of performance, only a means to the larger end of enabling his company to carry out other new ideas that would improve human welfare."

"Real economic growth and vitality depend on this imaginative and courageously trusting type of mentality—the kind that, for a good example, will rise above nearly three years of million-dollar-a-month losses to produce the billion-dollar success that is now Federal Express."

"In all the sentimental folderol that characterizes so much social and political commentary today, we almost never hear the term 'compassionate' applied to a business executive or an entrepreneur. Yet in terms of results in the measurable form of jobs created, lives enriched, communities built, living standards uplifted, and poverty healed, a handful of 'compassionate capitalists' have done infinitely more for their fellow men than all the self-serving politicians, academics, social workers, or religionists who claim the adjective 'compassionate' for themselves."

The poor in America live better than most people in the world. "As Michael Novak wrote, 'No better weapon against poverty, disease, illiteracy, and tyranny has yet been found than capitalism .... Its compassion for the material needs of humankind has not in history, yet, had a peer.'"

ROOT OF POVERTY

There are probably billions of people who live in physical poverty. I have heard statistics that say around 40,000 children die every day of hunger. The pain in this world is so terrible it is difficult to look at it or think about it. The only solution to this problem and all the many other problems people face every day in this fallen world will only be solved completely when the *Divine Principle* is the ruling ideology. The root of poverty is ignorance.

The *Principle* is the truth that will save this world. The truth is that capitalism needs to be universal. The greatest public mission we can do is educate this world on what God's laws are. The best way to teach would be for Unificationists to be exemplary families who live according to universal principles. I feel those principles are clearly explained in this book. The core principle of wealth is godly patriarchy. When we see women and children living in poverty we should work to find men to take care of them instead of trying to help women get jobs and careers and build businesses. The focus should be on helping men earn money and helping the women in their lives and in their community who need financial and spiritual help.

Let's take a few moments to look at some ideas about how to end world poverty. I can only scratch the surface here. There are many books, articles and Web sites that go into all the arguments for biblical and libertarian values in the marketplace. For example, I searched for articles written by distinguished professors of economics at the Cato Institute's website and found such titles as "Economic Freedom Needed to Alleviate Poverty around the World." The author is

coauthor of the book *Economic Freedom of the World: 2002 Annual Report*. He writes:

> Both as an ideology and as a practical system, communism has utterly failed to deliver the goods. Eastern European nations are now rushing to become members of the European Union, and China is undertaking market-oriented reforms. Cuba and North Korea stand as the last remaining communist stalwarts.
>
> One would think that this failure of communist central planning would have unleashed a groundswell of support for its main ideological alternative: economic freedom or market capitalism. But as the anti-globalization protesters in Seattle and at last week's G8 meeting in Canada demonstrate, economic freedom still has a long way to go to win over the hearts and minds of many people.
>
> These protesters believe that free markets lead to widespread poverty, greater gaps between the rich and the poor and environmental degradation. Only strong government planning through trade tariffs, expansive welfare states, and strict labor and environmental rules can protect the poor of this world from the ravaging forces of the market. These people are dead wrong.

PRIMARY FUNCTION

Father said in a speech ("Unification Theological Seminary and the Leadership of the Church" July 12, 1984):

> The primary function of Unification members is ultimately to educate people.
>
> [Father] wants you to be trained and educated so that you can express our ideology and other philosophies and thoughts in many different ways.
>
> Now that we are creating an ideal world, you must first strengthen your thought and your spiritual life and be able to educate others.

BALANCE PHYSICAL AND SPIRITUAL

> If you say to someone that your job is the most important thing, what will you do when you go to the spirit world? There should be a balance between the training education of the spiritual side of your life, as well as the training in skills for the body. This is man's basic desire to exist eternally so ultimately the purpose of our lives is what we should strive to work for. If you increase your expertise in "thought" and spiritual life, even if you go to a secular position or mission, you can still work toward and establish your ultimate purpose of life. So the unity and balance between "thought" and physical skills is the "marriage of life," just like subject and object, man and woman, and the ultimate purpose of marriage is ideal love.

BALANCE INTERNAL AND EXTERNAL

Today the American society completely lacks this "marriage of life" or balance between internal philosophy and external skills.

A reviewer of the book *Perpetuating Poverty: The World Bank, the IMF, and the Developing World* wrote, "Since World War II, it has been widely believed that underdeveloped countries cannot become prosperous without billions of dollars from wealthy countries. After 40 years, what is there to show for this strategy? Not much. *Perpetuating Poverty* is an eye-opening review of the scandalous record of the World Bank and the International Monetary Fund. "Like a beacon, *Perpetuating Poverty* points the way toward abolishing the destructive bureaucracies of the World Bank and IMF and putting in their place policies based on economic liberty—for the good of the developed and developing worlds alike."

Another reviewer wrote: "The contributors to *Perpetuating Poverty* believe that the causes of persistent poverty in the Third World lie principally within the LDCs [less developed countries] themselves in their statist economies and mercantilist regulatory systems, which shut the poor out of the formal economy rather than in the external conditions of the global economy. Thus these analysts think market-oriented reforms within the LDCs are urgent and increased international wealth transfers are irrelevant if not harmful."

A reviewer of *Ending Mass Poverty* by Ian Vásquez at the libertarian think tank, Cato Institute in Washington D.C. writes:

> Poverty will exist so long as people make bad personal decisions. As long as government creates barriers to economic advancement ...encouraging dysfunctional behavior and creating endless dependence.

PROTECTION OF PRIVATE PROPERTY

The West's escape from poverty did not occur by chance. Sustained growth over long periods of time took place in an environment that generally encouraged free enterprise and the protection of private property.

RULE OF LAW

A legal system capable of enforcing contracts and protecting persons and their property rights in an evenhanded manner is central to both economic freedom and progress. Indeed, the sustainability of a market economy—and of market reforms themselves—rests largely on the application of the rule of law. Yet the rule of law is conspicuously missing in much of the developing world.

Because the rule of law provides essential protections for the poor, sustains a market exchange system, and promotes growth, it may well be the most important ingredient of economic prosperity.

Another much neglected area in need of reform is regulation. ...the freedom to operate a business and compete in the market is circumscribed in much of the developing world. The same countries that ranked low in the rule of law area ranked low in this area. To have an idea of the bureaucratic burden with which people in the developing world must contend, consider the cases of Canada, Bolivia, and Hungary. According to a study by the National Bureau of Economic Research, it takes two days, two bureaucratic procedures, and $280 to open a business in Canada. By contrast, an entrepreneur in Bolivia must pay $2,696 in fees, wait 82 business days, and go through 20 procedures to do the same. In Hungary the same operation takes 53 business days, 10 procedures, and $3,647. Such costly barriers favor big firms at the expense of small enterprises, where most jobs are created, and push a large proportion of the developing world's population into the informal economy.

Peruvian economist Hernando de Soto has documented how poor people around the world have no security in their assets because they lack legal title to their property. In rural Peru, for example, 70 percent of poor people's property is not recognized by the state. The lack of such legal protection severely limits the wealth-creating potential that the poor would otherwise have were they allowed to participate within the legal framework of the market. Without secure private property rights, the poor cannot use collateral to get a loan, cannot take out insurance, and find it difficult to plan in the long term.

All developing nations can do more to increase growth. Establishing the rule of law, reducing barriers that hamper entrepreneurship and competition, and recognizing the property rights of the poor are three reforms that go beyond the liberalization measures that many countries have already introduced. Those reforms not only contribute to

economic growth; they increase the effectiveness of growth in reducing poverty. Policy-makers in rich and poor countries alike should not lose focus on the promise of growth. It remains the only path to end mass poverty.

MICRO LOANS ARE WRONG

One popular concept today is to have government and individuals give poor people loans to start a little business. This is the worst thing we can do. No one should ever take a loan for business. It is unprincipled to take a loan for business. Unificationists should not support organizations like the Grameen Bank that give small loans to poor people. At their website www.grameen-info.org they say, "As of May, 2006, it has 6.61 million borrowers, 97 percent of whom are women." Hillary Clinton likes their feminism saying, "I only wish every nation shared Dr Yunus' and the Grameen Bank's appreciation of the vital role that girls and women play in the economic, social and political life of our societies." Girls and women are not supposed to play vital roles in business and politics. It would be better for them to have 97 percent men get the loans but the ideal is for no one to get loans. Loans are unprincipled economics. By focusing on women these organizations are creating matriarchies that castrate men. Women need to find men to take care of them, not find loans or money to start businesses. Some other organizations that give loans are Finca (www.villagebanking.org) and Accion (www.accion.org). Unfortunately the organization founded by Father, The International Relief Friendship Foundation (IRFF) has a "Microfinance Program" for women in Nigeria.

These microloan companies help around one percent of poor people. The best way to end world poverty is to solve the problem of socialist and authoritarian governments. Men need to be helped financially but even more important they need to be taught that their country needs to adopt laissez-faire capitalism where their government protects private property. Let's get brothers in places like Africa and India to become leaders who influence their nations to not go down the road of socialism or the mixed economy of America.

We also shouldn't support organizations that help children in places like Kenya such as Feed the Children. These kinds of organizations that ask for donations to "adopt" a poor child are misguided because they focus on children instead of focusing on men. They feed children and then put them into schools that teach girls how to earn money instead of teaching them that they are to be supported by men. These well-meaning organizations do not understand God's core value of patriarchy. It seems that most people do not understand God's assigned roles for men and women.

LEGAL ORDER, NOT CHAOS

A big problem is that some countries do not have a good legal and financial structure that gives order to society. We have to educate the leaders of these countries on how to organize themselves politically so that businesses can operate safely within order. They need to adopt laissez-faire capitalism. America would be much richer if it didn't have so many government regulations that throw cold water on entrepreneurs. Much of the world is run by ruthless authoritarians who are socialists and communists who have no respect for limited government. They worship at the shrine of big government.

The following are some quotes on the core value of limited government:

> Education—compulsory schooling, compulsory learning is a tyranny and a crime against the human mind and spirit. Let all those escape it who can, any way they can. — John Holt

> The economic miracle that has been the United States was not produced by socialized enterprises, by government-union-industry cartels or by centralized economic planning. It was produced by private enterprises in a profit-and-loss

system. And losses were at least as important in weeding out failures as profits in fostering successes. Let government succor failures, and we shall be headed for stagnation and decline. — Milton Friedman

Experience should teach us to be most on our guard to protect liberty when the Government's purposes are beneficent. Men born to freedom are naturally alert to repel invasion of their liberty by evil minded rulers. The greatest dangers to liberty lurk in the insidious encroachment by men of zeal, well meaning but without understanding. — Justice Louis Brandeis

The ideal government of all reflective men, from Aristotle onward, is one which lets the individual alone—one which barely escapes being no government at all. — H.L. Mencken

In framing a government which is to be administered by men over men, the great difficulty lies in this: You must first enable the government to control the governed; and in the next place oblige it to control itself. — James Madison in "The Federalist"

Why have we had such a decline in moral climate? I submit to you that a major factor has been a change in the philosophy which has been dominant, a change from belief in individual responsibility to belief in social responsibility. If you adopt the view that a man is not responsible for his own behavior, that somehow or other society is responsible, why should he seek to make his behavior good? — Milton Friedman

The essential notion of a capitalist society ... is voluntary cooperation, voluntary exchange. The essential notion of a socialist society is force. — Milton Friedman

Laissez faire does not mean: Let soulless mechanical forces operate. It means: Let each individual choose how he wants to cooperate in the social division of labor; let the consumers determine what the entrepreneurs should produce. Planning means: Let the government alone choose and enforce its rulings by the apparatus of coercion and compulsion. — Ludwig von Mises, *Human Action*

We tried to provide more for the poor and produced more poor instead. We tried to remove the barriers to escape poverty, and inadvertently built a trap. — Charles Murray, *Losing Ground*

[Quoting Herbert Spencer], when State power is applied to social purposes, its action is invariably "slow, stupid, extravagant, unadaptive, corrupt and obstructive." — Albert J. Nock, *Our Enemy, the State*

The Left's agenda of rejecting the values of America's founders has hurt America. Walter Williams writes:

> For nearly half a century, the nation's liberals have waged war on traditional values, customs and morality. Our youth have been counseled that there are no moral absolutes. Instead, what's moral or immoral is a matter of personal opinion. During the '60s, the education establishment challenged and undermined lessons children learned from their parents and Sunday school with fads like "values clarification."
>
> So-called sex education classes are simply indoctrination that undermines family/church strictures against pre-marital sex. Lessons of abstinence were

considered passé and replaced with lessons about condoms, birth-control pills and abortions. Further undermining of parental authority came with legal and extra-legal measures to assist teen-age abortions with neither parental knowledge nor consent.

Customs, traditions, mores and rules of etiquette, not laws and government regulations, are what makes for a civilized society. These behavioral norms, mostly transmitted by example, word-of-mouth and religious teachings, represent a body of wisdom distilled through ages of experience, trial and error.

Starting in the '60s, traditional behavioral norms became seen as inconvenient, fun-robbing, or inconsistent with one social agenda or another. Traditional values were discarded without an appreciation for the role they played in creating a civilized society, and now we're paying the price.

Charles Murray says we should "scrap" all government social service agencies and programs. The dictionary defines "scrap" as "To discard as worthless." Another good book against the idea of a safety net is *Poor Policy: How Government Harms the Poor* by D. Eric Schansberg. He says: "Ultimately, government causes more harm than it should, and it cannot do as much as good as most people suppose. For better or worse, the best available answers for poverty are individual responsibility, a government that establishes an environment in which hard-working people can succeed, and an active and compassionate civil society that Sharon Harris says in 'The Invisible Hand Is a Gentle Hand':

Generosity

A free society is also a generous society.

In a free society, those in need would be better cared for. Michael Novak said of a free society, "No better weapon against poverty, disease, illiteracy, and tyranny has yet been found . . . Capitalism's compassion for the material needs of humankind has not in history, yet, had a peer."

How do we know a free society would be more generous? Thanks to Marvin Olasky, we don't have to theorize. In his two books on American compassion, *The Tragedy of American Compassion* and *Renewing American Compassion*, he provided examples and reasons that private charities have worked wonders and showed why the government's so-called "welfare" was doomed to failure from the outset.

Government welfare has created resentment against the poor. And government has taken away responsibility to provide for others.

It's time to strip away the veneer of humanitarianism from government.

As Charles Murray demonstrated in *Losing Ground*, government welfare simply doesn't work. In fact, it's been a disaster.

And it's not necessary.

Bill Clinton wasn't needed to create the Red Cross, Habitat for Humanity, or thousands of other charities.

We don't need the income tax to force us to help the poor. As Milton Friedman points out, before the income tax "privately financed schools and colleges multiplied foreign missionary activity exploded. Nonprofit, private hospitals, orphanages, and numerous other institutions sprang up like weeds. Almost every charitable or public service organization, from The Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, to the YMCA and YWCA, from the Indian Rights Association to the Salvation Army, dates from that period."

The true test of compassion and generosity is to compare government welfare to private charity. John Fund, a *Wall Street Journal* editor, speaking at the Advocates for Self-Government 10th Anniversary Summit in 1995, showed how to demonstrate easily the difference between government welfare and private charity. Just ask someone, "If you came into lots of money—say you won the lottery—and you wanted to help the poor.

> Would you give your money to the Department of Health and Human Services, or to your favorite charity?" You can almost see the light bulb come on in someone's head. No one ever proposes to donate a windfall to the government.

One Web site defines public welfare this way:

> Public welfare is a type of redistribution of wealth put forth as a "safety net" to catch anyone "falling through the cracks".
>
> Beware of metaphors, for they often hide obfuscations. Another way to look at welfare is a tax on the successful to support the unsuccessful, where anyone who thrives must be automatically punished; anyone who is inept and lazy must be automatically rewarded. And if you are one of the successful and don't think that you should be punished for it, tough luck. If you try to withhold your taxes, the SWAT team will come and kill you.
>
> This is another example of the ends not justifying the means. There is nothing wrong with helping people who are "falling through the cracks", if you think that they are deserving and are failing because of bad luck, and you decide to help them—that would be just and benevolent. But when people are forced at the point of a gun, on penalty of death or imprisonment, to surrender what they have produced as a penalty for being successful to those who are in need simply because they are in need, this is unjust and malevolent and an initiation of force. The government has no right to rob Peter to pay Paul for any reason whatsoever. Theft is unacceptable whether by a bureaucrat, Robin Hood, or a common thug. (www.importanceofphilosophy.com)

In 1932 Ludwig von Mises wrote in his book *Socialism: An Economic and Sociological Analysis*: "No ordered community has callously allowed the poor and incapacitated to starve. There has always been some sort of institution designed to save from destitution people unable to sustain themselves. As general well-being has increased hand in hand with the development of Capitalism, so too has the relief of the poor improved."

Twight writes, "Despite the Framers' original vision of the United States as a nation with a government of limited powers, today each of us is heavily dependent on the federal government in most areas of our lives—for our incomes, our retirement security, our education, our health care, the viability of our business, and much more. We in America have traded individual liberty piecemeal for dependence on government, without revolution, without reflection, often without systematic understanding."

A liberal professor wrote this about her book in the *Library Journal*, "Libertarians have a basic problem with government—they don't believe it should exist except to provide a police force and a military. Nor do they appreciate the necessary role politicians perform in a democratic society. Instead, they retreat into the worst romanticisms of Thomas Jefferson. This first book by Twight reflects her specialty training outside political science and history, which includes a Ph.D. in economics, a law degree, and experience in programming computers. Like most libertarians, she espouses unrealistic ideals and ideas unrelated to pragmatic solutions to social and political issues." What he writes is a lie. Socialism is "unrealistic." Big government does not offer "practical solutions to social and political issues." Since America has rejected the libertarian philosophy of its founders it has dramatically declined.

On the cover of her book is the following quote from Sheldon Richman: "An important book.... If we want to restore our liberties and get government under control again. It behooves all Americans to understand what Charlotte Twight has to say."

Liberals like to use the phrase "Living Constitution" as an excuse to do the opposite of what the authors of the Constitution wanted. Myron Magnet says in his book *The Dream and the Nightmare* that the core value of a Living Constitution of the Liberals has caused "a sweeping cultural revolution."

The Libertarian Party in America correctly wrote at its Web site www.lp.org: "We should eliminate the entire social welfare system. This includes eliminating AFDC, food stamps, subsidized housing, and all the rest. Individuals who are unable to fully support themselves and their families through the job market must, once again, learn to rely on supportive family, church, community, or private charity to bridge the gap."

PROPER FUNCTIONS OF GOVERNMENT

The Libertarian Party of Canada says at its Web site www.libertarian.ca:

> The only proper functions of government, whose powers must be constitutionally limited are:
>
> settling, according to objective laws, disputes among individuals, where private, voluntary arbitration has failed;
> providing protection from criminals;
> providing protection from foreign invaders.

William Simon writes the foreword to Robert J. Ringer's *Restoring the American Dream* saying, "We must make the American people aware that the fundamental guiding principles of American life have been reversed and that we are careening with frightening speed toward collectivism and away from individual sovereignty, toward coercive, centralized planning and away from free individual choices."

Ringer says, "The majority of people in this country certainly will never read this book, nor any other book which sets forth the realities of government. That is why I believe that the real hope for America lies in educating the young. And since government-controlled primary and secondary schools certainly are not going to teach children the truth that means that the job must be done by parents. ... The main hope of saving our country really boils down to home education."

Jesus and Sun Myung Moon speak with total confidence and present every idea as being either of God or Satan. Jesus said that those who do not accept him are against him, "He that is not with me is against me" (Matt. 12:30). Ditto for Sun Myung Moon. Jesus constantly said his words are commandments. He was not just a philosopher. He was a motivational speaker with a game plan to win a victory for God. He demanded massive action like witnessing and teaching "all nations" … "teaching them to observe whatever I have commanded." Sun Myung Moon says the same thing. This is why some call him a cult leader. Sun Myung Moon speaks no less authoritatively than Jesus. Fallen man is afraid of the strong words of the Messiah. Christians have turned Jesus into a wimp. Paul tried to raise people to be strong followers. He sometimes used military language to help make his point. But he also said we have to be nice people, "Let your gentleness be evident to all" (Philippians 4:5). Sun Myung Moon is a balanced man who is both tough and tender, both steel and velvet. He wants his followers to be the same. There is a time to be gentle and a time to be tough. Let's grow to the point where we understand how to judge every situation and act accordingly.

Father came to live in America in 1971. At that time the Cain-like Left were having peace marches against the war. America was weakening. Father hates peace marches because the people who march in them are dupes of Satan and they influence leaders to become weak. The Liberals broke the spirit of American political leaders and the United States Army, "The power of spirit was

almost totally lacking in that great [U.S.] Army because the American people did not see clearly why they should be involved. America should have had stronger spirit than any other nation, but this was the only thing lacking." (*Way Of Unification Part 1*) Sun Myung Moon met with President Nixon in 1973 and encouraged him to not let the liberal peace marchers discourage him from doing God's will and win the Vietnam War. He says:

> They should know what kind of meeting I conducted with President Nixon in the White House. I walked in, sat down with Nixon in the Oval Office and we prayed together.
>
> Let them ask Nixon what I did when I met him in the Oval Office. I told him, "You must be a God-centered President and let God run your office. You must be responsible for curtailing the communist take-over in Southeast Asia. Your foremost responsibility is to save millions of lives in Vietnam, Cambodia and Laos." I wanted him to be a strong President who would have the strength and power to conduct the war properly and conclude it the way God wanted. If this had taken place, the outcome would not have been the shameful debacle which followed.
>
> The reason I wanted to have the presidency preserved in dignity was to speed the victory over communism for the sake of America and the world. When the presidency loses respect and dignity, it can only create an atmosphere in which the communists can become strong and active. America is crippling itself and becoming very ineffective in combating God's formidable enemy, communism. (11-6-77)

He said during the time of the Vietnam War on December 5, 1971, "Americans are now saying they will withdraw their troops from Vietnam and Korea, but we must not retreat. Instead we should be ready to march forward to the enemy. Why do we want to defeat our enemies? Because we want to make God rejoice. Our purpose is to bring forth joy to God. We must defeat Satan in order for God to rejoice." Father worked to educate America about the importance of winning a victory in Vietnam and not repeat the terrible failure of losing half of Korea to evil men. He said in one speech how horrible President Truman was, "A true man is not Harry Truman! Truman did the wrong thing; he should have listened to MacArthur, and then we wouldn't have the trouble with communism that we have today. His mistake was a severe blow for the free world, and the communists really expanded. We made the movie *Inchon* about MacArthur in order to bring out this point once more at this crucial time." (1-9-83)

Father fights against the Liberals who make a lot of godless noise for what they think is peace but only make things worse. He says he turned America around and helped get the Conservative hawks like Reagan get into power. He spoke against the wimpy, pacifist, dovish President Carter and said we must work to keep a Democrat from winning in the 1980 election. The following are a few quotes from speeches where he talks about how America should be strong militarily and fight the bad guys around the world:

> America's pullout from Vietnam only increased world tension and international ill-will toward America (12-30-79)
>
> I was bitterly disappointed to see America literally lose its shirt in Vietnam. America's international dignity was totally smeared, and ever since other nations have scorned America. (12-16-79)
>
> When the United States retreated from the Vietnam War, God was very sad.

When God looked at this situation, He could not be happy. No one can trust and admire the United States anymore, because she moves only for the sake of herself. (*Way of Unification Part 1*)

Carter is selling out America. (12-16-79)

When the United States retreated from Vietnam, they made a shameful point for themselves in human history. Nixon did not listen to my advice and America finally kicked him out in disgrace. If he had had the courage to take my advice at that time, the situation today would have been totally different.

Then Mr. Ford came to office but did not have much time. When Mr. Carter was elected, I knew he was not the man for the job, thus I declared my opposition to him. I knew I would be persecuted by his administration because of that. But I want you to understand that it was because of God-centered opposition that Carter lost his political power. The fight against Congressman Fraser was a fight against the Carter administration, and we stopped Fraser.

In the face of the most rampant liberalism in this country, we won the battle against Congressman Fraser. Because of this liberalism began to decline. (5-20-84)

In 1975, the United States was defeated in Vietnam and plunged to the point of lowest morale in American history. Liberalism was rampant. It was only through Father's support that the right wing could regain leadership of America. History will prove these things cannot be denied. (7-28-91)

In the early 1980s there was a transition from liberal to conservative direction in this nation. They said it would take scores of years, but Father did it in only a few years. In 1975, America retreated from Vietnam, lost the war and retreated. America became an underdog, its pride went down and the world didn't recognize America. That the conservatives came into power in the 1980s was not possible unless Father bore the cross for the sake of America. Not many people know this. Someone did it, but no one knows exactly who, but no one can deny that this happened in history. (4-1-91)

The present American mood seeks to avoid involvement in any other war. (9-4-83)

America is trying to withdraw from world responsibility when instead this nation should be willing to sacrificially give itself for the sake of world salvation. If that became America's national goal then this nation would not only lead the entire world, but eventually possess even God. There was a time when the American people were respected overseas and when American citizenship was a very glorious thing, but the time is rapidly approaching when people will spit at anyone calling themselves American.

When faced with the responsibility America has assumed in Korea, politicians are increasingly saying, "We must withdraw our armed forces from Korea." If this nation fails Korea then not only that nation but God will react. Americans are thinking, "Oh, we have so many problems internally that we have to take care of ourselves first and forget about the outside world for now."

America will never take care of its problems by withdrawing from its worldwide

> responsibilities; instead the internal problems will become more desperate and America will catapult into a rapid decline. If American young people will stand up by the millions, willing to give their lives for the sake of the world, then America will have hope. However, Christianity has failed its mission in this respect. (2-6-77)

Sun Myung Moon says in a speech titled "In Search of the Origin of the Universe" (8-1-96):

> Pray to find out whether Reverend Moon's words are true. No one knows how much hardship I endured in order to find this path. Even though I committed no crime, I suffered through six different prisons to find this path. Through this truth, I am able to straighten out and educate precious young people in the matter of an hour. Some people say that I am brainwashing youth, but in fact I am enlightening them with logical truth. Atheists have been silenced since they failed to prove scientifically and logically that God does not exist. On the other side, Christians entrap us, crying heresy because our doctrines differ, and they try to destroy us. But in this case, this so-called heretical cult is on the side of truth.

Father is not a demagogue. He teaches a logical, common sense philosophy of life.

There are many books by conservatives and liberals each accusing the other side as being dangerous and stupid such as *100 People Who Are Screwing Up America (and Al Franken Is #37)* by Bernard Goldberg and *The Vast Left Wing Conspiracy: The Untold Story of How Democratic Operatives, Eccentric Billionaires, Liberal Activists, and Assorted Celebrities Tried to Bring Down a President — and Why They'll Try Even Harder Next Time* by Byron York.

There is a book titled *52 Most Dangerous Liberals in America* by Human Events. A reviewer says, "One of our Dangerous Liberals declares the culture of liberalism is 'more tolerant and is not hate filled.' But the litany of insults and name-calling Liberals hurl at the Right proves that this 'tolerance' is yet another Liberal delusion."

A reviewer of *Surrounded by Idiots* says, "In *Surrounded by Idiots*, Mike Gallagher, one of the leading conservative voices and top radio talk show hosts in America today, fights back against the liberal idiocy that surrounds us everywhere. … conservatives are the mainstream and liberals are the fringe. But he says it's no time to be complacent: the liberals are still fighting hard.

"Gallagher takes on all the liberal idiots: from the disgraceful ex-President Slick Willie to his wife, our possible next president and chief carpetbagger; and from the lunatic bug worshippers at People for the Ethical Treatment of Animals (PETA) to the smirking slob and anti-Bush propaganda artist, Michael Moore. Gallagher even takes on the bitter, unhinged and angry liberal flack Al Franken, flamboyant and irresponsible race-baiters like Al Sharpton, and big-mouth out-of-touch Hollywood elitists like Tim Robbins, Susan Sarandon, and Whoopi Goldberg.

"As Gallagher abundantly establishes in *Surrounded by Idiots*, the Left has targeted every value and standard, principle, and idea that we hold dear — including our most cherished concepts of God, family, honor, duty, country, and decency. 'As a people,' he maintains, 'we need help because our country is battling for her very soul, for patriotism, Judeo-Christian morals, and strong families. Liberal lunatics have surrounded us with their agenda-driven ideology. It's time to fight back.' As this battle rages on, *Surrounded By Idiots* is an enormously useful and brilliantly entertaining aid in our fight against liberal lunatics."

A reviewer of *Do-Gooders* by Mona Charen says, "From Marian Wright Edelman to John Kerry, from Hillary Rodham Clinton to Rob Reiner, Mona Charen skewers them and their cockamamie

ideas in *Do-Gooders: How Liberals Hurt Those They Claim to Help (And the Rest of Us).*

"Charen, the popular syndicated columnist and author of the bestseller *Useful Idiots,* reveals in this book exactly why liberal 'thinkers' like Michael Moore, Jesse Jackson, Dan Rather, Rosie O'Donnell and others — less famous but with even more influence on American society — are dead wrong. She shows how their proposals hurt the very people they claim to be fighting for, as well as the country as a whole. Charen uses the do-gooders' own outrageous words and actions to prove that their schemes to remake society have caused our nation immense harm — and will continue to do so until these charlatans and fools are exposed for what they are."

SO-CALLED PEACE MARCHERS

Dennis Prager criticizes those who say they are anti-war and call themselves "peace activists" and march in the streets against America saying:

> So let it be said once and for all that most of these people are moral frauds. Why? Because "peace activists" routinely protest only against peaceful countries. Has there been one "peace activist" in Sudan during its Islamic government's slaughter and enslavement of millions of blacks? Are there any "peace activists" in Tibet to protect its unique culture from being eradicated by the Communist Chinese? Did you notice any "peace activists" trying to save the millions of North Koreans dying at the hands of their lunatic government? Of course not. "Peace activists" only target peace-loving Israel and America.
>
> Why do they do so?
>
> Here is one answer.
>
> The world is filled with evil, and young idealists don't like it. Which is lovely. But they don't confront real evil because they know they will get hurt. That's one reason there are no "peace activists" or "human shields" confronting Islamic terror, North Korean totalitarianism, or Chinese Communist despotism.
>
> So, what's an idealist to do if she refuses to confront real evil but wants to feel good about herself? Ironically, confront those who fight real evil. That's why the millions marching to protect Saddam Hussein's Iraq have never uttered a peep against Palestinian terror, Iraqi totalitarianism, or North Korean gulags. Instead, they focus their animosity at the countries that confront these evils—the United States and Israel.

In another newspaper article he says:

> We Americans regard ourselves as a nation with a moral mission; a nation that is, in Abraham Lincoln's words, "The last best hope of mankind." Europe, on the other hand, identifies a sense of national mission with fanaticism and chauvinism.
>
> In America itself, there are many who eschew this self-image. Like Western Europeans, the American Left does not use goodness rhetoric; it prefers the language of "fairness," "rights" and "equality" to the language of morality. Thus, the Left divides the world into rich and poor, the haves and the have-nots, the strong and the weak, the white and the non-white, not good and evil. The Left dismisses that division as "simplistic," "being judgmental," and seeing a gray world in black and white.
>
> This preoccupation with good and evil is a primary reason America is hated. If people demonstrating against the American-led war against Saddam Hussein's Iraq cared about peace or about good and evil, they would have been rioting against China, against Sudan, against North Korea, against Iran's mullahs, and against Saddam. But America, precisely because it is good, and precisely because it fights evil, shames all these people. And you never hate anyone as much as he who forces

you to stare at evil and at your acceptance of it.

Because America talks about good and evil and does something about it, those nations and individuals, including many Americans, that have other priorities resent America.

We need masculine virtues in our political leaders, not the weak and passive feminine virtues of the Left. Coulter is right when she criticized many women on how they vote, "It would be a much better country if women did not vote. That is simply a fact. In fact, in every presidential election since 1950—except Goldwater in '64—the Republican would have won, if only the men had voted."

SUN MYUNG MOON FIGHTS THE LIBERALS

Father created the *Washington Times* because he knows the seriousness of the cultural war between the liberal Left and the conservative Right. Father says, "In the American government, the Democrats and the Republicans are locked in a Cain/Abel relationship." (1-18-87) "There is a great power struggle between conservatives and liberals in this country." (9-4-83) The Democrats are Cain and liberal and the Republicans are Abel and conservative. He says, "Whether they liked it or not, many liberals were utilized as agents for communist strategy." (2-10-81)

Father explains the difference between conservatives and liberals:

> In politics, the conservative viewpoint is more vertical, while the liberals are more horizontal. More focus needs to be placed on the vertical relationship. Being more temporal, the horizontal should receive less emphasis than the vertical. Given this definition of conservatism and liberalism, which would you prefer, and why? You would prefer conservatism because it stresses tradition and connects past and future. Fashion is short-lived, isn't it? The very word fashion implies a short duration. In a similar way, what is considered liberal changes from time to time. In which direction are American young people headed today? Which do you think will endure? The liberal side lasts for only one season. If it is autumn, liberals work only for the autumn, not concerned about any other season. If it is spring, liberals care merely for spring. But if you are going to like any season, the only thing that makes sense is to love all four seasons.
>
> What is the predominant philosophy of democracy? It is conservatism, while materialism or communism promotes the liberal philosophy. The conservative, vertical side emphasizes the spiritual nature, while the liberal side does not value the spiritual nature and stresses the material world. This is an oversimplification, but it is still true. If we were to make a choice between the two, we would prefer conservatism.
>
> Here am I in the United States, where liberals are trying to chase out the conservatives. Liberals are often beneficial in promoting a materialistic or communist culture. I say, "We don't need that." God is of a spiritual nature, so God is not with them. We use the term "spiritualism" to mean that which is opposed to materialism. It is obvious why materialism is closely connected with Satan and spiritualism with God; spiritualism is of God because God is spirit, and materialism is of Satan. (8-30-87)

Father denounces the Democratic Party and socialism: "the Unification Church must be a mega-religion, a supra-religion. We must have the contents and ability to digest and be able to consummate the highest ideal. Therefore the qualification of the Unification Church is that it creates the models, the 'man for all season.' [Unificationists] have the ability to digest communism, socialism, religions ... by True Love. When you look at an overview of history, you can see that this is the highest ideal.

"For more than forty three years, Father had this ideal. But how to make it work was perhaps the biggest problem. He's been moving toward this, and now we move toward the dawn of a new day. Those who oppose Father are the established groups: the established democrats, the established communists, and the established religions." (3-30-87)

In a speech in 1990 Father spoke about his involvement in politics: "Father really helped the United States with the *Washington Times*. Reagan and Bush could not gain power without it. The world knows the Soviet's ultimate goal was to conquer the world by 1984. During Carter's time in office, he lost twelve countries to communism. If someone like him had stayed in office, would Gorbachev be doing what he is now? No. America would have pulled out of Korea, and taken many other actions causing worse collapse. What would have happened in 1984 if Mondale had won? He was a very good friend of Donald Fraser. The United States would also have pulled out of Korea. Would communism have gone down like it has? No. What about if Dukakis had won? Would Gorbachev have had to open up? No. Father wrestled with all his might to guide Reagan and Bush. Even we wondered why Father, a religious man, was so interested in politics." (5-25-90)

Father has worked to always have a Republican president. Clinton won because of Reagan and Bush's failure to pardon him and they did not listen to him. "When Reagan was elected, nobody expected such a thing. This was done literally by the work of Father Moon, though the power of prayer, and through the practical work for that event. But the Reagan administration did not respond to my direction, they even allowed me to be incarcerated. They should at least have recognized that Father Moon was their benefactor. But when they failed to do that, then Clinton came and knocked them out." (12-6-92)

In 1994 he was elated that the Republicans won the House of Representatives after 40 years of Democrat rule, "At the end of the forty years of the Unification Church, there is a mammoth victory in accomplishing all of this. Also, at the end of the forty years, America wins a gigantic victory of its own. That is the victory of the Republicans. (YEAH. Applause.) Everyone recognizes that the *Washington Times* has been an instrumental force in achieving this." (11-20-94)

The following are a few quotes that show Father's involvement in politics and his support of the Republican Party:

> You need to know that after 40 years, the Republican Party triumphed in the United States, thanks to the influence of Reverend Moon. ("The True Family and I" South American Address given in 16 countries June 1995 - July 1995)
>
> Furthermore, Nicaragua was one communist nation which connected North and South America. Even though Cuba is communist it is an island. Nicaragua is strategically located on the mainland. Father was in prison, but at that time said Nicaragua must not be abandoned. The Freedom Fighters must be supported. US Congress abandoned the project, they didn't want to give any money to the Freedom Fighters. So the *Washington Times* made a special editorial on the front page. You never see front page editorials, but it was published. Many people sent money and letters to Congress and the Senate. The leaders were shaken and knew they had to pass the resolution for support that had already been sent to the trash can. They decided that instead of fourteen million dollars, they would send twenty seven million. That is the money that Father earned for the Freedom Fighters of Nicaragua." (2-20-91)
>
> I know that God loves America. America is a center of traditional Judaism and

Christianity. It is the cradle of the spirit of modern Christianity. God's desire is that America play a central role in rescuing the entire world and that America maintain its traditional values, which have fallen into confusion in recent years. During the Cold War, God placed America in a position to block the attempt by communism to gain world domination. In the context of God's Will, it was most important that there be a newspaper that had the philosophical and ideological foundation needed to give encouragement to the people and political leaders of America. I certainly could not leave Washington, the capital of the United States, to be a victim of the leftist *Washington Post*. (8-22-92)

It is hard to believe but true that in 1975, the liberal movement was rampant. In a mere five years, how in the world has that miserable America, who retreated from Vietnam, losing the war against a nobody like North Vietnam, brought the Republicans back again and maintained their dignity and brought the country around to the extreme right, as represented by Reagan? It was a puzzle. It is a fact, so no one questions it now, but who played the key role? Father did. If Father didn't actually do something to turn the tide around, it would not have been done. Reagan did not know how he became the president. (6-1291)

The Clinton administration is almost a repetition of the Carter administration. Christianity was supposed to be the central force opposing such an administration from coming in, but as I said, Christianity has lost its center. It has no leadership, no vision or spirit, no core. For that reason, Christianity failed and this allowed for Clinton to come in. Therefore, Christianity here in the United States and in the rest of the world has failed its mission thoroughly, so the world has only one way to follow: the way of the Unification Church. Only the Unification Church can show the world vision and hope for the future.

In Washington, the well-known former Senator Paul Laxalt was once a Republican candidate . I asked Bo Hi Pak to go and meet with him, and Senator Laxalt sent greetings to me and Mother on our birthdays today. And at the same time, he said, "Today, America is crumbling fast. With Clinton, this nation is crumbling even faster. There is only one hope— that Father Moon's crusades can win out, and not only upset Clinton but be the engine moving this nation in the other direction. This is the only hope." Senator Laxalt was saying that he would assist Father in order to advance God's work and Providence here in this country. Especially, he said, he would like to mobilize his dear friends, Ronald Reagan and George Bush, to lend their support. He volunteered to help with introductions in that direction. (1-28-93)

The creation of the *Washington Times* in 1982 was for that purpose. American conservatives cannot deny Father's great influence for moral values. (12-19-90)

Now the Republican Party has taken control. The Republican Party represents the Christian culture and power. (11-23-94)

I helped Ronald Reagan and George Bush become presidents. Without me, they could not have held that office. (1-1-96)

We are supporting President Reagan so that a Christian revival can be made possible through the conservative ideals. (1-11-81)

Ever since Father came, since the time of Ronald Reagan, Father has had influence over choosing the right president and Christianity has come to stand more and more

on Father's side. This is very important for this country. (2-20-91)

I sympathize with those conservatives and libertarians that are disgusted with the Republican Party such as we see in books like *Leviathan on the Right: How Big-Government Conservativism Brought Down the Republican Revolution* by Michael D. Tanner and *Impostor: How George W. Bush Bankrupted America and Betrayed the Reagan Legacy* by Bruce Bartlett. Here is an example from Kevin Swanson's *The Second Mayflower: How Christian Ethics Can Restore Our Freedom*:

> The Republicans are fundamentally socialists today. They propose budgets and approve budgets that fund welfare programs, entitlement programs, agricultural programs, …and programs that make decent people shudder. There is little difference between the Republicans, the national socialists, or the international socialists. Federal spending and regulations skyrocketed in the 1980s, spurred on by Republican-proposed budgets. The federal budget doubled. … What Republican is working for the abolishment of the property tax? The property tax is specified in the first plank of the *Communist Manifesto*. What about the abolishment of the central bank? The central bank is the fifth plank of the *Communist Manifesto*. What part of the Republican platforms have targeted the abolishment of government education, government media, and the National Endowment for the Arts? Public education is required in the tenth plank of the *Communist Manifesto*.
>
> The socialist and humanist trends of the last hundred years have never been reversed under any administration. The Republican Party has simply amalgamated into the principles of government that socialist parties have held for a hundred years, only biting off smaller chunks of their policies. Both parties contribute to the same system, only one is a little more half-hearted about it.
>
> The Republican Party has slowly disintegrated, lacking any central principles that would espouse freedom, liberty, or principle government.

He recommends forming or voting for third parties. He says that is "the higher ground." I feel that at the time of the printing of this edition of this book it may be the wisest thing to vote Republican because they are so close to the Democrats in numbers of votes. Some elections have had millions of voters and the winner won by only a few hundred votes. The President decides who is nominated for Supreme Court Justices and thankfully there has been enough justices on the side of God in important decisions such as when the Boy Scouts were allowed to discriminate against homosexuals and in the landmark case District v. Heller that decided that the Second Amendment means an individual can keep and bear arms for self-defense. These two cases were 5/4 decisions.

I sympathize with the idea of voting for a third party even if it seems like a wasted vote. Maybe it is best to vote for someone you feel is the best person even if everyone knows he will not win. I personally cannot vote for any woman candidate of any party. Women in power is the ultimate goal of communism to destroy the traditional family. We each have to pray and decide where we draw a line in the sand and vote for whom we think is the best person. I can understand why some people would not want to vote at all or write in a name of someone they think is the best person. Maybe there should be a category called "none of the above." I can understand the argument that voting for the lesser of two evils is not a good reason to vote. Perhaps Unificationists should forget about the Republican Party and start a third party now and offer a principled political platform that is totally true instead of the mixed true and false values in current political parties. The Libertarian Party is very interesting because they understand that statism, "the principle or policy of concentrating extensive economic, political, and related controls in the state at the cost of individual liberty", is deeply wrong. There are some in the party that push for a more aggressive foreign policy such as Neil Boortz, the author of the intriguing book *The Fair Tax Book: Saying Goodbye to the Income Tax and the IRS*. The Libertarian Party and the well-known Libertarian

Ron Paul are for a Non-Interventionist foreign policy. I lean in the direction of being a world policeman sometimes like America did in the Korean War. Can we allow Iran to get hold of nuclear weapons? Do we sign treaties with Israel and defend them against their suicidal bomber nation enemies? These are serious questions we Unificationists need to unite on and then influence government policy.

Michael Medved writes in his book *The 10 Big Lies About America* that those who vote for the Libertarian Party foolishly help Liberals get in power. They should vote Republican because we have a two-party system and the conservatives are better even though they are not perfect. He tries to make a case for not voting for third-party parties because they get less than 2% of the vote and those votes are crucial to the Republican Party that has lost key elections that were very close. In some cases Libertarians would have caused a Republican to get in office when a Democrat won by only a handful of votes. I am getting less and less interested in Medved's argument because the Republicans have for so long talked eloquently and powerfully against socialism but their actions speak louder than their words. Ultimately I think it comes down to the sad fact that Republicans just don't understand what freedom really means. For example, Jim DeMint is a U.S. Senator who wrote *Saving Freedom: We Can Stop America's Slide into Socialism*. His book is an excellent statement against socialism and how Americans don't understand what is happening to them like the frog didn't when he was slowing boiled to death. But like all Republicans he cannot go far enough and take the Libertarian stand for the kind of freedom our Founding Fathers believed in. He says he fought George W. Bush on his socialistic legislation and he criticizes his fellow Republicans for being "Democrat Lite" but he ends his book by giving his ideas on how to make all the socialist programs from public schools, health care, and social security better. He does not understand that he is a socialist himself simply by believing in those programs. The only truly principled political party is the Libertarian Party. They are not perfect but they have a far more deeper understanding of the proper role of government and when they talk about limited government they really mean it. Senator Demint means well. He is a nice Christian American who thinks he is offering something better but he is the very thing he thinks he is fighting. I love the way he begins his book with his eloquent and clear description of what socialism is and how Americans are brainwashed but he ends with a pathetic call to arms to be a socialist. If he was a true freedom fighter he would understand that we have to fight for absolute principles like those in the U.S. Constitution that does not give government the power or responsibility to provide a safety net. That is to be done by individuals, families and private organizations. I am finding it less and less easy to vote Republican because a Republican candidate is neck and neck with a Democrat because Republicans are Socialists Lite.

TWO WARS—LIBERALS AND ISLAMISTS

We are living in the Last Days where there is a clear division between sheep and goats, between good and evil. I believe Dennis Prager is right when he says in an article (3-2-04) titled "San Francisco and Islamists: Fighting the same enemy":

> America is engaged in two wars for the survival of its civilization. The war over same-sex marriage and the war against Islamic totalitarianism are actually two fronts in the same war—a war for the preservation of the unique American creation known as Judeo-Christian civilization.
>
> One enemy is religious extremism. The other is secular extremism.
>
> One enemy is led from abroad. The other is directed from home.
>
> The first war is against the Islamic attempt to crush whoever stands in the way of the spread of violent Islamic theocracies, such as al Qaeda, the Taliban, the Iranian mullahs and Hamas. The other war is against the secular nihilism that manifests itself in much of Western Europe, in parts of America such as San Francisco and in

many of our universities.

Most of the activists in the movement to redefine marriage wish to overthrow the predominance of Judeo-Christian values in American life. Those who oppose same-sex marriage understand that redefining the central human institution marks the beginning of the end of Judeo-Christian civilization.

This civilization is now fighting for its life—as much here as abroad. Join the fight, or it will be gone as fast as you can say "Democrat."

Do Unificationists understand the threat of violent Muslims and the Liberals? These are the antichrists but some in the UC are not only blind to them but siding with these awful Cains. It was disgraceful when In Jin Moon publicly said she voted for Obama. This shows a complete lack of understanding of who we are supposed to be. After he was elected Obama made it legal for homosexuals to be in the military and became the first president to say he is for gay marriage. Father speaks out strongly against homosexuality. Here are a few examples:

> You Americans, do you have something to be proud of? Americans are on the brink of falling down to the dungeon of hell. Who can change that? Only Father Moon and the Unification Church. Nobody else can. Who can save the world and liberate it from free sex, homosexuality, drug abuse, lesbianism and frenzied dancing? [Father.] Only God. All of these are on the opposite side of God. Only God can break this pattern and change things. Who can save the people of the world? Not America. Unification members, representing the people of the world, can lift up the world. (4-23-95)

> The issue in America today is should homosexuals and lesbians be allowed in the armed forces. If the army allows bad sexual behavior it will decline. How can you make love when the enemy attacks" (1-28-93).

In the quote above Father says that he wants the Unificationist Movement to lead the way against the diabolical political correctness of making the homosexual look normal. Instead the president of the UC votes for the Cain side. Unificationists should be experts on God's will and be the most powerful teachers on earth exposing Satan's lies—not publicly announce they vote for the enemy. Some Republicans, like the two women Senators from Maine, are Liberal and support the gay agenda to put homosexuals in the military but there is, overall, a real difference between Cain and Abel political parties. We are not supposed to vote for people because of skin color. We are not supposed to judge people on any issue by their skin color.

While we're on the subject of homosexuality I feel it is not the responsibility of government at any level to decide when someone is married or not. Adults should have the right to live in any arrangement they like such as traditional one man/one woman, homosexual or polygamous. I don't believe in homosexual or polygamous marriages but those who want to live that way should have the freedom to do so. I find these people to be sexually confused. I also find Fathers who encourage their daughters to go to West Point to be as sexually confused as homosexuals. They have no understanding of what masculinity or femininity is. Parents who support women in combat and in the case of women in military academies who will lead men in battle are as profoundly addled and befuddled as homosexuals and polygamists.

Father also says that Unificationism will ultimately be the only religion and the means to that end is peaceful. Sun Myung Moon is a man of peace, his teachings are peaceful, and his religion is a religion of peace. His theology as expressed in the *Divine Principle* speaks out against violent aggression. Eventually every person will voluntarily move up to believing in the teachings of Sun Myung Moon just as the world eventually believed the earth is round. True Father says, "God's

message is one of natural subjugation. This is the great difference with the teaching of the communists. Their revolution is by violence. Our job is to teach the people so they can naturally change. This has always been our way." (6-8-86)

Those who believe that Sun Myung Moon is a tyrant and his followers want to rule as ruthless dictators are totally mistaken. The Unification Movement is a movement that deeply respects the rights of peaceful people to live and worship as they wish. This does not mean it approves of violent men and women who some say compose 10 to 15 percent of Islam (some say 50%) that wants to use force to conquer the world and prevent freedom of religion. These people are a danger and threat to society and nations. Every nation should welcome the Unification Movement because it has the highest values and goals. The UM is not a danger or threat like criminals and Islamic terrorists are. All nations should be concerned with those in their midst who are violent and want to build a totalitarian world where people do not have basic the freedoms the Founders of America fought for and put into their Constitution.

POLITICS OF THE IDEAL WORLD—FREEDOM SOCIETY

In July of 2012 Kook Jin Moon, a son of Sun Myung Moon, gave a speech publicly endorsing libertarian economics as a logical application of the *Divine Principle* in which government is like the archangel in the Garden of Eden who was supposed to protect and serve Adam and Eve and since the Fall of Man governments have usually been the master and denied freedom. Human history is mainly one of governments being tyrannical and treating mankind like slaves. Every Unificationist should watch Kook Jin's speech titled "Freedom Society: A Vision for Building God's Ideal World" (Check YouTube.com, Vimeo.com and my website www.divineprinciple to watch). In his brilliant speech he says, "You know, we've talked a lot about Cheon Il Guk and the Kingdom of Heaven, and we've talked about True Parents fulfilling their mission and creating the foundation for the ideal world to be established. But up until this time we haven't really been able to explain eloquently exactly what is Cheon Il Guk. What is the Kingdom of Heaven? What will the politics of the Kingdom of Heaven be? What will the economics be? How exactly will it be structured? These questions we have not yet answered, but if we going to create the Kingdom of Heaven we at least should know what the blueprints are. Yes?"

GOVERNMENT IS ARCHANGEL

Kook Jin goes on to explain the *Divine Principle* teaches that God wanted a Freedom Society for his children but, "As a result of the Fall human beings have lived under dictators and tyrants through most of human history." He explains that Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden represent us and the Archangel is government. The Archangel's true purpose is to serve just as government is supposed to protect and serve. Governments are usually serial killers who enslave people like Satan did to Adam and Eve. Satan working through government entices us with "free stuff" and the result is a welfare state where we are slaves. God wanted a "self-regulating" society instead of big government regulations that force us to accept government as wiser than us. He teaches that three key values are "minimum government", "private property", and "free markets" that have competition instead of big governments that hold monopolies and hate competition. He said the government is a middleman that we must cut out. I would apply this to the church as well. We don't need a paternalistic government, a nanny state that tells us how to live from cradle to grave. God trusted Adam and Eve. Government (and I would add the church) does not trust the average person and thinks they know more. He says, "God let his children choose to die rather than destroy freedom. God values freedom but we do not."

FOUNDING FATHERS MORE ADVANCED THAN THINKERS TODAY

Kook Jin says, "The Founding Fathers of the United States were very wise in their understanding of the nature of government. They are not antiquated, outdated people. They are more advanced than the thinkers we see today who are squandering our freedom. We should respect their wisdom

and return to that understanding of wisdom that we are ultimately responsible for our own freedom—that we must have the means to secure and protect our freedom."

Kook Jin's brother, Hyung Jin Moon, gave a speech supporting his brother's vision of a government that he says looks much like the limited, small government of 19th century America. Every Unificationist should watch his speech (http://vimeo.com/46319345 ─ I have also posted his video at my website www.divineprinciple.com). He says not only Democrats push for big government but Republicans also push for big government. He said, "Where is the headwing? Father said we are not right wing or left wing. Where is the alternative to this? If you understand the implications of what Kook Jin is talking about in Freedom Society and Strong Abel what you will quickly realize is that if the Unification Church has even national sovereignty we will *not* create a theocracy. We will *not* create a dictatorship. We will create a free society that is also pushing responsibility and also it will be prosperous." (2 hrs and 21 min. into speech)

Hyung Jin gave a speech titled "The Kingship of God" on Sept. 9, 2015. He said he is not comfortable wearing a crown and his wife, Yeonah, spoke and she said the same thing but Hyung Jin said his elder brother, Kook Jin, was right in saying they should wear crowns when they give the Blessing just like Father wore a crown. Father made three kingships of himself, Hyung Jin and Hyung Jin's son. Kook Jin told his younger brother that monarchies last longer than democracies. The ideal world will be a Kingdom with Father as the King of Kings. Hyung Jin is a libertarian so he is not authoritarian and unlike kings of the past he is for limited government and I trust he will be a good King that everyone should honor.

Hyung Jin said in his speech praising the Freedom Society that Unificationists have never had a practical plan for economics and politics and now we can denounce socialism and the welfare state. Hyung Jin gave his Freedom Society speech on government to UM members in August, 2012 where he mentions Libertarian philosophers like Hayek, Friedman and John Stossel. Soon after, on October 2, 2012, he delivered a speech at the evening banquet as part of the 30th anniversary celebration of *The Washington Times* at the Marriot Hotel in Washington, D.C. The other speaker was John Stossel. Stossel said, "This event is to honor Rev. Moon. He wanted to make sure that the Capitol had an alternative news source; that is a good thing." Stossel heard Hyung Jin, in his speech at the banquet, explain that government is the Archangel. Hyung Jin said:

> The indomitable spirit of freedom is required to overcome the forces of oppression and hate that remain in the world. We need now more than ever to return to the Words of True Father and to realize their full significance. We should understand the theological grounding for freedom for this nation and all nations of the world.
>
> **The Three Blessings**
> The God of love has always wanted His Children to be free, and our True Parents have paid the price to show the way to realize that freedom. Tyrants have enslaved people throughout human history, because that history began in the sinful forfeiture of freedom as represented in the Garden of Eden. In that remembered story, three historic religions: Judaism, Christianity and Islam along with the Unification Church understand as part of Scripture the key to understanding the fundamental human problem and its solution. In the Bible, God created human beings as his children. He gave three blessings: 1) to be fruitful: in other words to achieve individual perfection; 2) multiply: to have a family and expand throughout the world; 3) and to have dominion over creation.
>
> Each step in this process is fulfilled through exercising their freedom and responsibility to use the power of love unselfishly. The maturation of the human

spirit cannot be coerced, compelled by government or any organization but must be developed through the process of making free choices and learning from their consequences.

From the Biblical perspective, for Adam and Eve to fulfill these three blessings, they needed to have both freedom and responsibility. That is why God gave the first human beings a Commandment and most tellingly did not intervene even as they violated that commandment. God wanted them to freely choose to live a moral life, to become mature as individuals and to establish a happy family and world. So freedom is God's greatest gift. In the Garden of Eden there were four primary actors: God, Adam, Eve, and the archangel. The archangel was supposed to be the servant of Adam and Eve and to help guide them so that they could develop fully and inherit God's three blessings. But as we read in the Bible, the archangel left the position of servant and became the master. He deceived Eve. Together he and Eve subjugated Adam, thereby causing the fall of man. God was thus separated from his children, and human beings went from being the sons and daughters of God to being the slaves of the archangel. Thus, Adam and Eve lost both freedom and responsibility.

As a result of the fall, human history has been a history of suffering. We have been ruled by the love of power instead of the power of love. Human beings have lived under dictators and tyrants throughout most of our history. They have been dominated by evil people who abused them, who killed them and who used them as mere objects for their own desires. Adam and Eve representing respectively all men and women of history lost their position as children of God and the Blessings given to them on birth as they were dominated by Satan, the Archangel who was created by God to serve God and his children. Then in the nation state what does the archangel represent? In a democracy, we call the government the servant of the people. The government in this Biblical paradigm represents the archangel and ought to be the servant of the people.

True Father's vision is that of a world where individuals take responsibility and ownership of their own lives, families, communities and nations. It is a world where people do not expect others and especially the government to do anything other than serving and protecting citizens. This is because only when we fulfill our responsibility can we ever truly be free.

Religion to Speak Truth to Politicians

Rev. Sun Myung Moon was a religious leader, but he did not restrict himself or his Church to merely spiritual matters. This is what True Father has always said. Religion must speak Truth to politicians. We ought not to be concerned only about religious issues. Religion cannot just sit still. Religion is not just prayer and meditation. If the world goes in the wrong direction, then religion must stand up and oppose that. That is why True Father has always told religious leaders that religion must challenge political leaders, to speak the truth to political leaders.

Father says there will be no need for lawyers and judges in the future ideal world he calls Cheon Il Guk. This means there will not be big governments: "We need a movement to realize a society of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values. We need to make humanity one great family, by breaking down the walls in our hearts and eliminating even the boundaries between nations. This movement begins from each family. If only the entire world were filled with such true families! It would be an orderly world where people govern themselves by the heavenly way and heavenly laws, with no need for lawyers, prosecutors or even judges." —"God's Ideal Family and Responsibility the Citizens of Cheon Il Guk Are Called to Fulfill" February 23, 2007

UNIFICATIONISTS AGAINST KOOK JIN'S LIBERTARIANISM

There are Unificationist intellectuals and thinkers who do not like Kook Jin's praise for the Founding Father's Libertarian ideology. An example is Scott Simonds' articles in the Unification Seminary's blog http://appliedunificationism.com titled "The Freedom Society: Headwing Thought or Tea Party Politics" (6-2-2014) and "To Promote the General Welfare" (9-8-2014). He writes that the Tea Party is "the far right" politically and "these are not the views of" Father Moon. The truth is that the Tea Party is not "far right" but "right on." God is behind the Tea Party. Simonds goes on to say, "Government has grown beyond the vision of the Founding Fathers, but so has the infrastructure of large municipalities, our means of transportation," etc. Kook Jin eloquently and powerfully presents the case that the Founding Fathers vision of limited government is truer than the vision of most thinkers today such as Scott Simonds and other Unificationists who disagree with Kook Jin.

To counter Scott's view that big government is necessary today let's look at what Charles Murray has to say. In his book *In Pursuit of Happiness and Good Government* he writes that the Founding Father's philosophy of government was true then and true today. He begins his book saying that America was stronger when it lived by the value of limited government. He quotes Tocqueville who saw that America was great because it decentralized power to the local level instead of the national: "The township is the only association so well rooted in nature that wherever men assemble it forms itself. Communal society therefore exists among all peoples, whatever be their customs and laws. Man creates kingdoms and republics, but townships seem to spring directly from the hand of God."

Murray ends his book quoting from Thomas Jefferson's First Inaugural Address given in 1801. Jefferson gave a good definition of limited government that even many Republicans have forgotten: "Entertaining a due sense of our equal right to the use of our own faculties, to the acquisitions of our industry, to honor and confidence from our fellow citizens..., what more is necessary to make us a happy and prosperous people? Still one thing more, fellow citizens—a wise and frugal government, which shall restrain men from injuring one another, which shall leave them otherwise free to regulate their own pursuits of industry and improvement, and shall not take from the mouth of labor the bread it had earned. This is the sum of good government." Murray then says, "I am asking that we take more seriously the proposition that Jefferson's was a vision suitable not only for a struggling agricultural nation at the outset of the nineteenth century but also for a wealthy, postindustrial nation at the close of the twentieth." Either Charles Murray is right or Scott Simonds is right. I side with Murray.

"To Promote the General Welfare"

In his article "To Promote the General Welfare" (9-8-2014) Scott Simonds writes:

> The political right advocates for smaller government, addressing domestic issues of poverty and healthcare through private enterprise. The left advocates for government agencies and programs to provide healthcare, a safety net for people temporarily in need and ongoing support for citizens who cannot "enjoy the blessings of liberty" independently as social responsibilities.
>
> The right claims that government power should be limited to the common defense, brick and mortar infrastructure, law-making and law enforcement. For them, government's basic purpose is to protect individual rights and freedoms and should keep its hands off the free market system.
>
> Although there is nothing inherently wrong with this worldview, it is not complete. The Preamble to the U.S. Constitution includes the phrase:[To] promote the general Welfare, and secure the Blessings of Liberty…. The right argues that protecting the free market system *is* promoting the general welfare. But is there such

> a thing as equal opportunity in a purely capitalist society? Do the values derived from capitalist principles, such as independence, self-reliance and faith, apply in every circumstance? In fact, values such as "justice" and "compassion" (for those who cannot survive independently in civilized society) often conflict. Success and failure, right and wrong, are not as clear cut as some would have us believe.

In these Last Days "right and wrong" are clearly defined. Either you are for big government programs like Social Security or you are not. Let's look at the two words "general welfare" in the Constitution. George Will wrote:

> Grover Cleveland, the last Democratic president who understood the federal government as the Founders did—as a government of limited, because enumerated, powers. "The powers delegated by the proposed Constitution to the federal government," wrote James Madison in Federalist Paper 45, "are few and defined." And so in 1887, President Cleveland vetoed the Texas Seed Bill, which appropriated $10,000 to purchase seed grain for drought-stricken farmers. Cleveland said: "I can find no warrant for such an appropriation in the Constitution."
>
> What about the power to provide for the "general welfare"? Madison had said no. He warned that if those words were construed to permit Congress to do whatever it said served the general welfare, that "would be a metamorphosis of the Constitution into a character which there is a host of proofs was not contemplated by its creators."
>
> Concerning that metamorphosis, which was completed long ago, there is not a dime's worth of difference between the parties. "We have a responsibility," said George W. Bush in 2003, "that when somebody hurts, government has got to move." Given a sufficiently elastic notion of what constitutes hurting, compassionate conservatism can be an activism indistinguishable from liberalism. (12-15-08)

The "Constitution of The United Nation of Cheon Il Guk" given to mankind from Hyung Jin Moon specifically prevents government from having a social security administration.

In the veto of the Texas Seed Bill Grover Cleveland wrote:

> I do not believe that the power and duty of the general government ought to be extended to the relief of individual suffering which is in no manner properly related to the public service or benefit. A prevalent tendency to disregard the limited mission of this power and duty should, I think, be steadfastly resisted, to the end that the lesson should be constantly enforced that, though the people support the government, the government should not support the people.
>
> The friendliness and charity of our countrymen can always be relied upon to relieve their fellow citizens in misfortune. This has been repeatedly and quite lately demonstrated. Federal aid in such cases encourages the expectation of paternal care on the part of the government and weakens the sturdiness of our national character, while it prevents the indulgence among our people of that kindly sentiment and conduct which strengthens the bonds of a common brotherhood.

In a veto message President Franklin Pierce wrote (May 3, 1854), "I readily and, I trust, feelingly acknowledge the duty incumbent on us all as men and citizens, and as among the highest and

holiest of our duties, to provide for those who, in the mysterious order of Providence, are subject to want and to disease of body or mind; but I can not find any authority in the Constitution for making the Federal Government the great almoner of public charity throughout the United States. To do so would, in my judgment, be contrary to the letter and spirit of the Constitution and subversive of the whole theory upon which the Union of these States is founded. And if it were admissible to contemplate the exercise of this power for any object whatever, I can not avoid the belief that it would in the end be prejudicial rather than beneficial in the noble offices of charity to have the charge of them transferred from the States to the Federal Government."

Lawrence W. Reed wrote in *Government, Poverty, & Self-Reliance: Wisdom from 19th Century Presidents*, "Men and women of faith — whether Christian, Jewish, Moslem or something else — should be the first to argue that God doesn't need federal funds to do His work. When they get involved in charitable work, it's usually with the knowledge that a change of heart will often do more to conquer poverty than a welfare check. They focus on changing hearts, one heart at a time. … That's the way most Americans thought and behaved in the 19th century. They would have thought it a cop-out of the first order to pass these responsibilities on to politicians. Instead, Americans became the most generous people on earth. Christians specifically viewed personal, charitable involvement as 'servanthood' commanded of them by Christ."

In an article titled "Poverty Nonsense" (10-18-2012) Walter Williams wrote, "In 1776, the U.S. was among the world's poorest nations. In less than two centuries, we became the world's richest nation by a long shot." In a speech in 1794 in the House of Representatives James Madison, the acknowledged father of our Constitution, said, "Charity is no part of the legislative duty of the government."

LIMITED GOVERNMENT

The philosophy of the founders of America and their core value on politics is limited government. The 20th century has trashed the Constitution and has substituted the value of the welfare state for the value of laissez-faire capitalism. The results have been devastating. We have to be very careful of the words we use. There is a phrase in the Constitution that has been used by liberals to keep increasing the size of government. It is the two words "general welfare." Walter Williams has written extensively on this. Here is an example from Williams in a newspaper column (11-13-02) in which he talks about this and how the so called "great generation" who fought World War 11 were the worst because they created big government in America:

> In 1794, Congress appropriated $15,000 for relief of French refugees. James Madison stood on the floor of the House to object, saying, "I cannot undertake to lay my finger on that article of the Constitution which granted a right to Congress of expending, on objects of benevolence, the money of their constituents." James Madison, you'll recall, is the acknowledged father of the Constitution, and he couldn't find constitutional authority for spending "on the objects of benevolence."
>
> Your congressman might say, "Madison was all wrong; after all, there's the 'general welfare' clause." Here's what Madison had to say about that: "With respect to the two words 'general welfare,' I have always regarded them as qualified by the detail of powers connected with them. To take them in a literal and unlimited sense would be a metamorphosis of the Constitution into a character which there is a host of proofs was not contemplated by its creators." Thomas Jefferson echoed similar sentiments saying, "Congress has not unlimited powers to provide for the general welfare, but only those specifically enumerated."
>
> The "great" generation has transformed the electoral process from voting for those most likely to protect our God-given rights to liberty and property, to voting for those most likely to violate those rights for the benefit of others. There's no

> question that the "great" generation spared the world from external tyranny, but it has outdone any other generation in destroying both the letter and the spirit of our Constitution, and as such produced a form of tyranny for which there's little defense.

Williams writes, "Here's my question: Were the nation's founders, and some of their successors, callous and indifferent to human tragedy? Or, were they stupid and couldn't find the passages in the Constitution that authorized spending 'on the objects of benevolence'"? Either George Will and Walter Williams are writing the truth or Scott Simonds is writing the truth. I side with George Will and Walter Williams.

SAFETY NET—SOCIAL SECURITY

Scott ends his article by saying the lie that we need government programs like Social Security: "Maybe the time will come when every person is born into and raised by a healthy, intact family, when there will be no such thing as physical and cognitive disabilities. People will work well into their eighties, enjoy the fruits of their labor and inheritance with no need for social security, and remain healthy until their bodies abruptly cease to function and their ascension into the next world is painless accompanied by a celebration of life. That's the ideal, but not the reality. Until the time comes when all people have natural supports to live independently, advanced societies need to compensate with trained professionals in a regulated system based on evolving best practices. That means government will need to big enough to provide services for realities until faith in a better world is realized." I strongly disagree with Scott. The government has no business providing any safety nets.

Simonds sounds like Liberals (and that includes so-called Conservatives like George W. Bush) who love the so-called safety net of Social Security. In his book *The Truth (with jokes)*, Al Franken writes, "Social Security survived WWII, the Cold War, Vietnam, the sexual revolution, oil shocks, stagflation. No matter what America and the world could throw at it, Social Security just kept on ticking, sending out checks to delighted seniors, people with disabilities, and widows and orphans. Today, Social Security provides more than half the income for most of America's senior citizens. If it disappeared tomorrow, the poverty rate among senior citizens would jump from 8.7% to 46.8%. By almost all accounts, Social Security was the greatest achievement of the New Deal, and perhaps the greatest achievement of any kind in human history." The "Truth" is that Social Security is one of the worst achievements in human history. Milton Friedman says in *An Economist's Protest*, "I think the government solution to a problem is usually as bad as the problem and very often makes the problem worse." Friedman explains: "Consider Social Security. The young have always contributed to the support of the old. Earlier, the young helped their own parents out of a sense of love and duty. They now contribute to the support of someone else's parents out of compulsion and fear. The voluntary transfers strengthened the bonds of the family; the compulsory transfers weaken those bonds." (*Newsweek* 11-19-1979)

In his wonderful autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* Father speaks against Social Security, "The Korean people never want to burden others. When I was in America, I saw the stubborn character of Korean people. The United States is a country that has many types of safety nets, but Koreans almost never want to take advantage of these. Rather than relying on the support of the government, they find ways to earn money in order to raise children and take care of their older parents. This is how Koreans show self-reliance." He also says in his autobiography, "Even in the most difficult situations we should maintain our composure, demonstrate warmth toward others, be self-reliant, and adapt well to any circumstance." When Unificationists run for political office they should make the goal of eliminating all government safety nets a cornerstone of their campaign and inspire everyone to "be self-reliant." Father cares about the poor and hungry but his emphasis was on being strong spiritually and being self-reliant and on the church helping the poor.

This is why he spent millions of dollars on trucks to distribute food and on fish businesses.

TRUE CARING

Scott writes about the Unification Movement saying, "During the Cold War era, we focused on fighting communism and building relationships with conservatives to fight tyranny and defend the Constitution. Now, in this 'age of women,' we need to build relationships with that element of government that cares for people without casting moral judgments." Government's role is not to "care for people." Its role is to be like an umpire or referee. Government should never join in and become a player. Scott has no faith in limited government where churches and volunteers would care for those in need. Not only do big government programs not do a good job of caring for people they actually create many people who have serious problems and endangers the nation morally and economically. I think the key to understanding where this brother is coming from is to focus on his statement about the "age of women." This is where we get to the core of the problem and how to fix it. Andrew Wilson likes what Scott is saying and at Tparents.org I found a statement he made titled, "Response to Scott Simonds Critique of Freedom Society" (12-14-2012):

> Father takes both sides of the issue. He has spoken against welfare and the culture of dependency. He also has spoken favorably about a government system for the redistribution of wealth. This is consistent with the heart of a parent, who first wants their children to be successful, but also will not hesitate to support a child in trouble. This is the principle of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values that the Principle speaks about. We should value freedom and creativity, but prosperity needs to be shared. … Instead, let's use the original polarity of creation to characterize the political parties—as male and female. The republicans are male, the democrats are female. Fathers and mothers have different approaches to raising children, and they try to find balance. Too much mothering is a bad thing, leading to dependency, but too much fathering is also not healthy, leading to excessive competition and strife. Looking at the parties in this way, we can see value in both sides and try to find balance

NANNY STATE

Father often said government cannot solve our problems. The role of Government is that of an umpire or referee—not a father, not a daddy, not a mother, not a big brother. Too often, Republicans talk about limited government but they are often for big government programs. Libertarians, like the Founding Fathers" have the right "balance." Everything got worse when women left the home and got into commerce and politics and turned government into the nanny state. When women left the home to compete witih men in the marketplace in the 20th century they created big government that has emasculated men. See *Nanny State: How Food Fascists, Teetotaling Do-Gooders, Priggish Moralists, and other Boneheaded Bureaucrats are Turning America into a Nation of Children* by David Harsanyi. G.K. Chesterton said, "The free man owns himself. He can damage himself with either eating or drinking; he can ruin himself with gambling. If he does he is certainly a damn fool, and he might possibly be a damned soul; but if he may not, he is not a free man any more than a dog."

In the beginning of the Milton Friedman video series, *Free to Choose*, there is one scene where Friedman talks to some intellectuals and the moderator says that Friedman sees 19th century America as a "Golden Age." This is what Kook Jin is saying and I am saying in this book. It was golden because there was so much freedom. As soon as women entered politics America went downhill into socialism. America is on the brink of bankruptcy and many American cities have already declared bankruptcy and still these two brothers are for the failed policies of a welfare state. Do not listen to anyone who says laissez-faire capitalism has "excessive competition."

Alexis de Tocqueville writes the opposite of what Scott Simonds writes. He observed in the early 1800's America that those in need were taken care of privately. Americans did not turn to government. Scott writes that we need government. That is a Satanic Last Days argument. Tocqueville admired America for its philosophy of being decentralized, "It is not the administrative, but the political effects of decentralization that I most admire in America. In the United States the interests of the country are everywhere kept in view; they are an object of solicitude to the people of the whole Union, and every citizen is as warmly attached to them as if they were his own. He takes pride in the glory of his nation; he boasts of its success, to which he conceives himself to have contributed; and he rejoices in the general prosperity by which he profits. The feeling he entertains towards the state is analogous to that which unites him to his family, and it is by a kind of selfishness that he interests himself in the welfare of his country."

He writes how Americans in the 19th century did not turn to government for the "welfare of society" and they helped those in need better than if they had used the government: "When a private individual meditates an undertaking, however directly connected it may be with the welfare of society, he never thinks of soliciting the co-operation of the government; but he publishes his plan, offers to execute it, courts the assistance of other individuals, and struggles manfully against all obstacles. Undoubtedly he is often less successful than the state might have been in his position; but in the end the sum of these private undertakings far exceeds all that the government could have done." Dinesh D'Souza uses this quote in his excellent documentary titled "America". Tocqueville is right; Scott Simonds is wrong. It is crucial that men have a code of ethics to "struggle manfully against all obstacles." Scott's plan emasculates men. America needs to do the opposite of what Scott writes and restore the ideology of limited government that does nothing to help the poor and those in need like those in the "golden era" of America's history. America was overall better off in the 19th century (excluding slavery) than it is today. It is crucial to understand that when you believe in big government regulations helping the poor you are creating an atmosphere of control that will end up with government regulating all areas of life. Who put Father in jail? Big government put Father in jail.

Walter Williams writes, "The bottom line is that the idea that government bureaucrats have enough knowledge to manage an economy well is the height of conceit — what Nobel Laureate Friedrich Hayek called the 'fatal conceit.'" (11/04/2009)

Milton Friedman wrote in *Free to Choose*:

> A myth has grown up about the United States that paints the nineteenth century as the era of the robber baron, of rugged, unrestrained individualism. Heartless monopoly capitalists allegedly exploited the poor, encouraged immigration, and then fleeced the immigrants unmercifully. Wall Street is pictured as conning Main Street, as bleeding the sturdy farmers in the Middle West, who survived despite the widespread distress and misery inflicted on them.
>
> The reality was very different. Immigrants kept coming. The early ones might have been fooled, but it is inconceivable that millions kept coming to the United States decade after decade to be exploited. They came because the hopes of those who had preceded them were largely realized. The streets of New York were not paved with gold, but hard work, thrift, and enterprise brought rewards that were not even imaginable in the Old World. The newcomers spread from east to west. As they spread, cities sprang up, ever more land was brought into cultivation. The country grew more prosperous and more productive, and the immigrants shared in the prosperity.

If farmers were exploited, why did their number increase? The prices of farm products did decline. But that was a sign of success, not failure, reflecting the development of machinery, the bringing under cultivation of more land, and improvements in communication, all of which led to a rapid growth in farm output. The final proof is that the price of farmland rose steadily—hardly a sign that farming was a depressed industry!

The charge of heartlessness, epitomized in the remark that William H. Vanderbilt, a railroad tycoon, is said to have made to an inquiring reporter, "The public be damned," is belied by the flowering of charitable activity in the United States in the nineteenth century. Privately financed schools and colleges multiplied; foreign missionary activity exploded; nonprofit private hospitals, orphanages, and numerous other institutions sprang up like weeds. Almost every charitable or public service organization, from the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals to the YMCA and YWCA, from the Indian Rights Association to the Salvation Army, dates from that period. Voluntary cooperation is no less effective in organizing charitable activity than in organizing production for profit.

The charitable activity was matched by a burst of cultural activity—art museums, opera houses, symphonies, museums, public libraries arose in big cities and frontier towns alike. The size of government spending is one measure of government's role. Major wars aside, government spending from 1800 to 1929 did not exceed about 12 percent of the national income. Two-thirds of that was spent by state and local governments, mostly for schools and roads. As late as 1928, federal government spending amounted to about 3 percent of the national income.

Immigrants kept coming. The factory jobs were popular. Why? Because life before the industrial revolution was a heck of a lot harder for most people than the purveyors of the robber baron myth care to acknowledge. Liberty made the poorest people in society much better off than they had been, and induced the best off to devote more resources to charity and culture. It's important to remember that when we hear people oppose liberty for allegedly egalitarian reasons.

We didn't live in a paradise, but there is no period in human history in which the ordinary man had as great an improvement in his lot in life as in the nineteenth century in the United States when the government was of trivial importance.

Walter Williams writes:

I think it's a moral question; that is, we need to recognize that we went from a nation from 1787 until 1920 when Federal Government was only five percent of the GDP, and how in the world did we make it without all these programs? For example, … the poor Irish when they were fleeing the potato famine in the 1840's—when they landed here there was no food stamp program, there was no Aid to Dependent Children. How in the world did they make it? They made it through charity. They made it through the care and giving of the American people. Right now the American people don't have to care and give as much—although we still are very generous people—because the government has stepped in.

Tennessee Rep. Col. Davy Crockett, in a speech before the House of Representatives, said, in protest against a $10,000 appropriation for a widow of a distinguished naval officer, "We have the right, as individuals, to give away as

> much of our own money as we please in charity, but as members of Congress, we have no right to appropriate a dollar of the public money." (2-9-2005)

Milton Friedman wrote in *Capitalism and Freedom*, "The period of unrestrained, rugged individualism was a period when the modern type of nonprofit community hospital was first established and developed. It was the period of the Carnegie Libraries and their spread through the philanthropy of Andrew Carnegie. It was the period when so many colleges were founded throughout the country. It was the period of the founding of the Society for Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, and the spread of foreign missions. There was no income tax, no deductibility of contributions, so what people spent on charity came out of their pocket and not, as now, largely out of taxes they would otherwise pay. And yet, in every aspect of private charitable activity, it was a boom period." It "was the period of the greatest private eleemosynary activity in the history of the United States."

"It is noteworthy that the heyday of laissez-faire, the middle and late nineteenth century in Britain and the United States, saw an extraordinary proliferation of private eleemosynary organizations and institutions. One of the major costs of the extension of governmental welfare activities has been the corresponding decline in private charitable activities."

"Because we live in a largely free society, we tend to forget how limited is the span of time and the part of the globe for which there has ever been anything like political freedom: the typical state of mankind is tyranny, servitude, and misery. The nineteenth century and early twentieth century in the Western world stand out as striking exceptions to the general trend of historical development. Political freedom in this instance clearly came along with the free market and the development of capitalist institutions. So also did political freedom in the golden age of Greece and in the early days of the Roman era."

In an article titled "Welfare before the Welfare State" (6-21-2011) Joshua Fulton wrote:

> Many people think life without the welfare state would be chaos. In their minds, nobody would help support the less fortunate, and there would be riots in the streets. Little do they know that people found innovative ways of supporting each other before the welfare state existed. One of the most important of these ways was the mutual-aid society.
>
> Mutual aid, also known as fraternalism, refers to social organizations that gathered dues and paid benefits to members facing hardship. According to David Beito in *From Mutual Aid to the Welfare State*, there was a "great stigma" attached to accepting government aid or private charity during the late 18th and early 19th centuries. Mutual aid, on the other hand, did not carry the same stigma. It was based on reciprocity: today's mutual-aid recipient could be tomorrow's donor, and vice versa. (http://mises.org/library/welfare-welfare-state)

According to David Beito's study *From Mutual Aid to the Welfare State: Fraternal Societies and Social Services, 1890-1967*, at least "one of three adult males" belonged to a fraternal group by 1920.

An excellent statement on the role of government is in *Men's Manual Vol. II*:

> Can government programs eliminate poverty? No. Poverty will never be eliminated through social programs, because the real cause of poverty is not social but spiritual.
>
> Has God ordained government to provide for the poor? No. It is not the function of a just government to provide jobs for its citizens. God's primary function for

government is to maintain a system of justice based upon His laws. Under the protection of a Godly government, businesses are then free to fulfill their function of providing jobs for employees and work for the poor.

Would a guaranteed income violate the principles of God's word? Yes. A guaranteed annual income violates many Scriptural principles. It destroys personal responsibility and personal initiative. It shields a slothful man from God's discipline. It weakens the family, which is the foundation of a strong nation, by taking working capital from it and giving it to the state.

Is it Scripturally right for our government to take from the rich and give to the poor? No. Forced redistribution of wealth is the program of a socialistic state, not a free nation as was founded by our forefathers. Our government was based on God's laws which establish and protect private ownership and limited authority of government.

The following is a part of a review by George C. Leef of the book *Poor Policy* by D. Eric Schansberg:

> In *Poor Policy*, D. Eric Schansberg argues that government policy to help the poor actually is harmful. Welfare programs aren't just ineffective. They are harmful. Furthermore, the author, who is assistant professor of economics at Indiana University-Southeast, makes a strong case that many of the poor are poor (or at least poorer than they would otherwise be) due to the effects of laws and policies designed to benefit various groups of non-poor people. In short, Schansberg is arguing the classic laissez-faire position against interventionism by demonstrating that it creates and exacerbates poverty.
>
> Virtually everything government does outside of its Jeffersonian core of protecting individual rights to life, liberty, and property creates wealth transfers that make the society poorer on the whole, and have their worst impact on those who can least afford it. Schansberg devotes several chapters to the familiar list of laws that especially hurt the poor—the minimum wage, occupational licensing, rent control, and so on. In doing so, he introduces the reader to public-choice economic theory. Once people understand the logic of public choice, they are less apt to be taken in by the claims that laws like those are "well-intentioned."
>
> I particularly commend the author for attacking sacred cows. Social Security? Sorry. It harms the poor. Drug prohibition? It harms the poor also. Public education? A cataclysm for the poor. Given that so many Americans have been conditioned to ask of any proposed public-policy change, "How will it impact the poor?" We should use Schansberg's book (as well as the works of Charles Murray, Marvin Olasky, and others) to bludgeon Social Security and so on with the argument, "They hurt the poor!"
>
> The book also takes some well-aimed shots at the pernicious idea that Christianity demands that we have a governmental welfare system. Big-government advocates shamelessly resort to this form of moral blackmail, but the author replies, "The bottom line is that there is no relation between the biblical call to Christians and the use of government to help the poor. In fact, they are diametrically opposed. The use of government to reach certain ends is based on coercion. The change in behavior designed to accompany the Christian's Spirit-filled life is completely voluntary." The use of coercion to accomplish anything, whether it is feeding the hungry or exploring Mars, is simply wrong. Schansberg has here hit upon what I believe must be the foremost goal of defenders of liberty, namely, to get people to pay attention to the

morality of the means and not just the desirability of the ends.

Poor Policy is a useful, nontechnical book that neatly organizes a lot of data and arguments against the ideas that government can, does, and should assist the poor. Bravo. (*The Freeman* September, 1997 www.fee.org)

Marvin Olansky says, "Schansberg shows the illogic of most of the usual poverty remedies, including government-mandated redistribution, minimum-wage laws, governmental job training programs, rent control or other housing policies ... A readable, biblically based economic analysis of how and why governmental anti-poverty policies have often produced the opposite of what they intended."

Walter Williams was interviewed once and made this remark about charity and poverty:

> There are people who are poor and people who have various problems, ... Charity should take care of that. Look, we Americans should be very proud of ourselves... we're the most generous people on the face of the earth. We do 85% of all world giving. And this has been true since Alexis de Tocqueville came here in 1840 and wrote *Democracy in America*. And he went back to France saying, you know, those Americans just love committees. Somebody's barn gets burned down and they have a committee. Somebody gets widowed and they have a committee. We have to ask ourselves — we've been a nation since 1787. Now we didn't have the welfare state until 1936 at the beginning. What happened to poor people? They weren't dying in the streets. What happened to old people — they weren't dying in the streets. (www.pbs.org)

Walter Williams reviewed the book *Dependent on D.C.* This is part of what he wrote:

> "The shift from personal autonomy to dependence on government is perhaps the defining characteristic of modern American politics. In the span of barely one lifetime, a nation grounded in ideals of individual liberty has been transformed into one in which federal decisions control even such personal matters as what health care we buy — a nation now so bound up in detailed laws and regulation that no one can know what all the rules are, let alone comply with them." That's the opening statement in Boise State University Professor Charlotte Twight's new book, "Dependent on D.C."
>
> With ample references, Twight demonstrates how Americans became a nation of sheep. First, there's been a ruthless and successful attack on the rule of law. Rule of law means there's governance by known general rules, equality before the law, certainty of the law, a permanent legal framework and independent judicial review of administrative decisions.
>
> These specifications of the rule of law have been emasculated. No one can possibly know the thousands of pages of rules published by the IRS, not to mention the hundreds of thousands of pages of laws applicable to health care, banking, education, pensions, agriculture, ad infinitum. There's arbitrary discretionary power exemplified by rules like requiring government permission to disconnect an automobile air bag, or members of Congress deciding to enact agricultural and dairy price-supports or sugar tariffs depending upon whether the agriculture, dairy or sugar lobby contributed to their political campaigns.

Ronald Reagan said in 1964 and it applies today as well, "This is the issue of this election: whether we believe in our capacity for self-government or whether we abandon the American

Revolution and confess that a little intellectual elite in a far distant capital can plan our lives for us better than we can plan them for ourselves." The same goes for ministers in far distant religious headquarters. Those who advocate for thousands of senior pastors in thousands of big cathedrals are a throwback to Medieval Christianity that Martin Luther detested. They see themselves as elites but they are really arrogant tin gods like some Wizard of Oz in his Emerald City. Elites in love with centralized power have never had a plan that worked. They are emperors with no clothes on. I challenge those who believe Father is the Messiah to give up thinking so little of themselves and stop giving honor and respect let alone fawning, obsequious, servile, sycophant, groveling behavior to bureaucrats at some headquarters who really think they are worth you giving them a big chunk of your paycheck and undivided attention every week. Stop treating these people like immature kids treat rock stars.

ROYAL FAMILY

Sun Myung Moon teaches that each Blessed family is a royal family so we don't need to bother with the Moon royal family:

> Did you give birth to many children? Your children will create royal families in the future.
>
> Now, as we enter the age of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, our families become royal households.
>
> Each of you should become a royal family based on true love. (*Cheon Seong Gyeong*)

Because so many put Father's children on a pedestal, it is comforting to know that Hyung Jin in his speech in July 2012 said that the future kingdom of heaven and the practical goal of the Unification Movement will not be a theocracy; it will be a democratic society with very limited government that does not regulate its citizens. He makes it clear that he and his brother, Kook Jin, are for a decentralized society. He says his brother, Kook Jin, is right in his speech titled "Freedom Society" that we apply the *Divine Principle* by teaching that government is in the role of the Archangel in the Garden of Eden that was supposed to serve mankind but after the Fall became a terrible master and tyrant. Father said, "God provided … the servant, the archangel, to protect and raise them." Government employees are called "public servants." Some police cars have the motto in bold letters "to protect and serve." Hyung Jin uplifts libertarian philosophers like Hayek, Friedman and Stossel who teach laissez-faire capitalism. He explains how he was brainwashed by Harvard that is Leftist and that we can't trust elites from Harvard, Yale and Princeton. These two brothers have overcome Cain and Abel differences and are correctly united on free enterprise, strong defense and democracy.

JOHN LOTT—WOMEN CAUSED SOCIALISM IN 20TH CENTURY AMERICA

They teach that 19th Century America (except for slavery) was a golden age, the closest the world has ever come to living in a free society. Since they teach this the next step is to understand why the 19th century was free enterprise and strong while the 20th century was socialist and weak. America became socialist because of feminism. John Lott, in his book *Freedomnomics* and at his website (http://johnrlott.tripod.com/op-eds/WashTimesWomensSuff112707.html) proves that women leaving the home and gaining power in society after 1920 made America socialist. In Jin Moon and Women's Federation pushes women to be in power because they have "heart" and "compassion." There are plenty of feminist men saying the same thing. George W. Bush commonly used the term "compassionate capitalism" to describe his philosophy and he, like all

Christian socialists, pushed for big government legislation to "help" people and he ended his presidency creating a severe economic depression. Hyung Jin correctly teaches that we have to focus on our intellect and guide our emotions. This is easier for a man to do than for a woman and therefore men should be the leaders and protectors. Women in power will tend to translate their feelings of compassion to use government to become a nanny state.

NANNY STATE

There are a number of good books on how childish people have become in our feminist culture such as *Washington Times* columnist Diana West's, *The Death of the Grown-Up: How America's Arrested Development Is Bringing Down Western Civilization*, *Nanny State: How Food Fascists, Teetotaling Do-Gooders, Priggish Moralists, and other Boneheaded Bureaucrats are Turning America into a Nation of Children* by David Harsanyi, and David Alan Black's *The Myth of Adolescence: Raising Responsible Children in an Irresponsible Society*. A powerful short video on this is by Hollywood star Drew Carey titled *Banned: Welcome to the Nanny Nation* (Reason.tv and YouTube.com). The British newspaper *The Guardian* (5-25-2004) had an article by Anna Coote titled "What's so terrible about the nanny state, anyway?" where she put down those who fear the big government nanny state saying, "Most people recognize the value of governments acting on citizens' behalf to minimize serious health risks. This has always been part of our political landscape - from pasteurization of milk, added nutrients in bread, and vaccination programs. … So the fear of nanny statism has become a kind of national pathology." The government, not only should stop being a busybody, but they are often wrong when they do such as in her examples above. Pasteurizing milk makes milk less healthy, the nutrients they add to bread such as iron is in a form that is harmful and vaccinations are useless and dangerous.

SEA CHANGE

John Lott shows how women getting the vote created the welfare state. In his book *Freedomonics* he writes:

> Even after accounting for a range of other factors — such as industrialization, urbanization, education and income — the impact of granting of women's suffrage on per-capita state government expenditures and revenue was startling. Per capita state government spending after accounting for inflation had been flat or falling during the 10 years before women began voting. But state governments started expanding the first year after women voted and continued growing until within 11 years real per capita spending had more than doubled. The increase in government spending and revenue started immediately after women started voting.
>
> Women's suffrage ushered in a sea change in American politics that affected policies aside from taxes and the size of government. For example, states that granted suffrage were much more likely to pass Prohibition, for the temperance movement was largely dominated by middle-class women. Although the "gender gap" is commonly thought to have arisen only in the 1960s, female voting dramatically changed American politics from the very beginning.

This is part of what a Baptist minister wrote this at his website (www.tbaptist.com):

> You may call me a male chauvinists pig, or a bigot. But the best vision of a woman is not Marsha Clark cross-examining O.J. Simpson while someone else is taking care of her children and her husband is filing for divorce. It is not Connie Chung on CBS. It is not the cashier working in the bank. But it was running home from school, finding my mom elbow deep kneading bread, ready to give me a hug. It is not the woman about town, it is not the one who has

> finally made it into the man's world. But to me it is my wife, homeschooling 5 kids, being available, and just being there, when being there, meant all the world to my children.
>
> The greatest thing a women could ever be is a mother. The hardest work a woman will ever do is to be a full-time mother. I believe it is a job that cannot be done on a part time basis, without some catastrophic effects upon the children.
>
> Listen!!! Only a child's real mother can really mother that child. No one will care for it naturally as she will. It is a high and holy work. It must not be lowered; it must not be left to another.
>
> Though many things have contributed to the moral decline in America, the departure from God's plan for the home must be ranked as one of the major contributors. Prior to World War II, the USA was much more of a moral nation. The role of the mother was exalted, there were many large families, and few women were in the work force. But with the coming of Rosy the Riveter to the ship building yards in WW II things changed. Momma left home to work while another raised her child. The bearing of children was seen as restrictive, the size of families declined. With it all, America began a great moral decline.

FEMALE VOTERS GIVE THEMSELVES A BAD NAME

Pamela Meister wrote in an article titled "Female Voters Give Themselves a Bad Name" (1-11-2008):

> According to John R. Lott, Jr., it does. He suggests that growth in government spending—a Democrat specialty—can be directly linked to women's suffrage, both at the state and federal level because, as he puts it, "women are generally more risk averse than men. Possibly, this is why they are more supportive of government programs to ensure against certain risks in life."

I don't have the space to go into the depth of Lott's brilliant analysis of how women's suffrage caused America to go socialist in the 20th century. For those who need proof read Lott in detail. He scientifically proves the cause of America's decline into big government was primarily due to liberal women. If women had not voted in the 20th century there would never have been a Democrat or big government politician in power. Ann Coulter says, "If we took away women's right to vote, we'd never have to worry about another Democrat president. It's kind of a pipe dream, it's a personal fantasy of mine, but I don't think it's going to happen."

Kook Jin himself mentioned in his Freedom Society speech he gave to New York members I found online where he acknowledged women are a problem in this area of life. He said that in the Fall the Archangel seduced Eve by telling her he could give her more security than Adam. This is the same with big government seducing women to feel government will give them more security than their husbands and other men in her life.

In the Garden of Eden Satan dominated Eve who in turn dominated Adam. In the theology of the UM the restoration of this is in the Three-Day Ceremony where Adam restores his position and dominates Eve with love. This position is called Patriarch. Satan has been the Patriarch since the Fall. The Messiah fights and subjugates the Archangel Lucifer and restores mankind back to the time before the Fall when God told Eve in Genesis 1:28 that Eve's position was helper to Adam and therefore she was in an objective position to his leadership as patriarch. Father said, "Men are in the subject role and women in the object role" (4-29-79). "The mission of a woman is to follow her husband. She must be for the sake of her husband. The ideal of the Garden of Eden will

disappear otherwise. Man, woman, family, and heaven and earth, all will disappear." (This quote is from a speech from *the Sermons of Rev. Moon volume 52*, titled "What the Unification Church will solve on Earth Succeeding to the Responsibility of Jesus" read at Hoondokhae at the Cheon Hwa Gung in Las Vegas June. 7, 2012)

Human history has been a history of perverted patriarchy. Jesus and Sun Myung Moon are examples of perfect patriarchy. Father is a strong patriarch and teaches men to lead and women to follow in many of his speeches. Tragically some leaders of the UM have been dupes of Satan and push the Archangel's philosophy of life. The core value of God is patriarchy and the core value of Satan is feminism. Feminism is the ideology of matriarchy and that is the cornerstone of the ideology of sisters like In Jin Moon and the president of the American WFWP, Angelika Selle, who says publicly and at their website, "if we have 2/3rds women leadership there will be peace!"

Nineteenth century America was a golden age for freedom because the vast majority of people believed in the biblical, patriarchal family where men were heads of their homes and took leadership outside the home in every area of life. They were not perfect but they were strong in their core belief that men provide, protect and lead their families and that those in society who needed help would receive it from local families, local churches and local philanthropic organizations. In the Fall Satan, in effect, married Eve and he became her patriarch, a father figure—her husband and parent. The Archangel is not supposed to be Big Father or Orwell's Big Brother. Government is not our parent. Eve was out of order. She was enticed and seduced to believe his lies that he would provide, protect and lead her better than her husband. Adam was weak and went along with this dysfunctional relationship. Twentieth century America is the Last Days, and it was seduced by Satan's lies that he would provide, protect and lead. The Freedom Society is where Satan is not the patriarch and all the men as Adams are the patriarchs who dominate the women in their lives with love instead of the male figures in the Garden of Eden who dominated Eve with abuse. Sadly, America and some in the UC is made up of weak men and disorderly women.

The traditional biblical patriarchal family goes hand in hand with limited government. If we want to restore 19th century limited government then we must restore 19th century godly patriarchy. Father says, "Among the family members of the Unification Church today, there are members who are true members and those who are the opposite. There are also family members standing in the midway position." (*Cheon Seong Gyeong*) True Unificationists believe in the traditional family and limited government.

Father says, "In the Garden of Eden, the archangel was supposed to protect Adam and Eve" (12-10-00). The Fall of Man was about a female who was not protected by the males around her. To restore the Fall men are to protect women and children. Fathers are called to always strive to make sure their daughters are always watched over by a mature and godly man or men until she moves in with her husband and then he and the men in his family and community watch over her. Millions of girls and boys are molested every year because they are put with bad patriarchs or evil men and boys. The cornerstone of Unificationist ideology should be that good men and boys protect girls and women from bad men and boys.

An American Experiment in Anarcho-Capitalism

At Mises.org there is an article titled "An American Experiment in Anarcho-Capitalism: The Not So Wild, Wild West" by Terry Anderson. It proves that the 19th century American West was more peaceful than today even though it had less government than today. Back then people kept order by forming local voluntary associations to solve their problems. Tocqueville visited America in the nineteenth century and wrote how Americans solved their problems by forming associations

instead of turning to government. Father did not found a church called the Unification Church in 1954; he founded an association (HAS-UWC).

DECENTRALIZE ORGANIZED RELIGION

This chapter concentrates on decentralizing government. In the final chapter titled "Homechurch," I will go into why we should decentralize religion to the family. In a newspaper article (7-12-2012) titled "American Confidence In Organized Religion At All Time Low" it said, "According to a recent Gallup poll, the number of Americans who have faith in organized religion is at an all-time low. Only 44 percent of Americans today have a lot of confidence in organized religion, compared to 66 percent in 1973 when organized religion or church was the highest rated institution in Gallup's 'confidence in institutions measure.'" The author went on to say that the main reason why the reputation of organized religion has declined is because of the many scandals. In Jin Moon created a scandal after spending over three years pushing for the feminist dream of women castrating all men. She constantly said women have been second-class citizens under the oppression of men and the world does not need any more of men's sick patriarchy and testosterone.

In Jin Moon, when she was in leadership, constantly used the word "compassion" and that we now need "feminine" leadership. She pounded away week after week, year after year, that Sun Myung Moon, her father, was a "very masculine, militaristic type of a leader … but as we move towards 'the age of Settlement', this leadership type will change." What the world needs now is leaders to be "more of the feminine." What mankind has had for all of human history, including her father, is "masculine, testosterone, arrogant type of leadership." And now we can "win and revolutionize the hearts of people to be better men and women" because women will lead the world with a "compassionate kind of leadership." In Jin Moon is anti-male.

Dee Dee Myers wrote a ridiculous book titled, *Why Women Should Rule the World*. The inside flap says, "What would happen if women ruled the world? Everything could change, according to former White House press secretary Dee Dee Myers. Politics would be more collegial. Businesses would be more productive. And communities would be healthier. Empowering women would make the world a better place—not because women are the same as men, but precisely because they are different." This is Satan's big lie. It sounds seductive and nice but the results are broken hearts, broken homes and broken nations.

BOYS AND GIRLS ARE DIFFERENT

She can't see the disconnect in her feminist utopia when she has to admit boys are different than girls. She writes, "I have two young children, a girl and a boy, and I'm endlessly fascinated by the ways they are alike—and the astonishing ways in which they are different. My daughter is kind of a girly-girl. From the time she was very young, she spent a lot of time feeding her dolls and stuffed animals, caring for them when they were sick, and putting them to bed. My son, who is three and a half years younger and was born into a house heavily stocked with 'girl' toys, had a totally different reaction. It would never occur to him to put a stuffed animal to bed; he's far too busy trying to kill it."

She goes on say he will not play with his sister and her friends because "unless my son had a mission, a bad guy to kill, a family to protect, he had no interest. … when I compare notes with the parents of other young children, they virtually all tell some version of the same tale. Their girls tend to talk early, play cooperatively, and develop a mysterious love of princesses at around three. Their boys will turn any object they find into a weapon. And no one ever says, 'Gee, I think it's just the way we're raising them.'" This innate difference is from God. God made boys and men to love weapons because they are made to be hunters. Policeman and Soldiers and Sailors and Airmen are hunters. And only they should go to war against bad guys. Where is the logic that

women are going to rule the world and only boys and men are programmed by God to be hunters? Women are supposed to guide and lead men in competition in the marketplace and on the battlefield because they have more compassion? Even though men have been fallen for thousands of years countless men have shown truly compassionate leadership. One of the most dramatic examples is the men on the Titanic. Does anyone seriously believe men would act like that today?

Does it make any sense that women would be in government when it is the role of government to use guns to enforce its laws and to use force in fighting bad guys internally with the police and externally with an army? If it is not natural for a woman to shoot a machine gun in defense of home and country then why are they qualified to be the decision makers of when to use machine guns and violence against bad guys? There is no logic to this. Satan's goal is to emasculate men like Adam and Abel—to make them weak. He doesn't want men to stand up to him. He wants Eve to lead because he can guide her compassion to create a hell on earth. Which is exactly what women's compassion has done since they have started voting. As every decade went by since 1920 women have voted more and socialism grew in proportion. I say to Unificationists, it is crucial that you see how Satan is working and go the opposite direction. We don't need more women leading men; we need women to return home and men to become mature enough to have a machine gun in their home. The government doesn't trust men with machine guns. Even Republicans would be against that. We have to educate people and convert them to libertarianism. Only libertarians trust the average person.

Kook Jin Moon teaches in his Freedom Society speech that America gave up its limited government in the 19th century and degenerated into a welfare state in the 20th century because of "religion"—especially Christianity. Kook Jin says, "We saw a free society in America briefly before it was destroyed by big government, and we know why this stage of big government came, it was actually religion that was driving it and tried to destroy freedom in America… pushing people to get on welfare, to make social welfare systems, and spend those social welfare states: This is compassion, social welfare is compassion ... religion has always been trying to destroy freedom."

It is true that Christianity dropped the ball and many Christians embraced Satan's ideology of socialism/feminism in the 20th Century—especially some mainstream churches like the Methodists. Leon J. Podles wrote that Christianity became feminized in the 20th century in his book *The Church Impotent: The Feminization of Christianity*. I would add that the reason America declined into big government was not only because so many Christians and many Christian churches became Liberal but also because of secular feminists and secular socialists. The main reason America abandoned the values of limited government and the traditional family of the 18th and 19th century was because of these powerful ambassadors of Satan that attacked capitalism and patriarchy. There are books and videos exposing these Cain-type people who sincerely believe in Statism and Feminism. They despise free enterprise economics and the traditional biblical family. I have written earlier that Betty Friedan won the cultural war on family and Helen Andelin lost. John Maynard Keynes won the cultural war on government and Friedrich Hayek lost. Today only a handful, a tiny minority of Americans, believe in the ideology of Libertarianism and Traditionalism. But that will change.

John Maynard Keynes said this about the power of intellectuals and writers, "The ideas of economists and political philosophers, both when they are right and when they are wrong, are more powerful than is commonly understood. Indeed the world is ruled by little else. Practical men, who believe themselves to be quite exempt from any intellectual influences, are usually the slaves of some defunct economist." The pen is mightier than the sword. Books have changed human history. Books have changed my life and maybe you, Dear Reader, have had books change your life. Father wants every person to start their day reading his words of life. Sun Myung

Moon's words are life changing and his words will someday be the ruling ideology of the entire earth. Let's look at the writings of some German intellectuals in the first part of the 20th century. On God's side there is Friedrich von Hayek and Ludwig von Mises. On Satan's side is Wilhelm Reich and Erich Fromm.

FRANKFURT SCHOOL

I haven't got the space to even list the many voices for Satan that have blinded the American people and much of the world to hate, despise, and reject traditional Judeo-Christian ethics, values and traditions. In the limited space I have I would like to tell you of one group that plotted to destroy the ideology of 19th century America and did great damage to Western Civilization. That group was comprised of German Marxist intellectuals such as Wilhelm Reich, Erich Fromm and Herbert Marcuse who were part of a think-tank called the Frankfurt School. They are called Cultural Marxists. They influenced America, Germany and much of the world to believe in the ideology of socialism/feminism. If you would like to study them more I recommend these two excellent videos (free to watch on YouTube.com):

> *The History of Political Correctness and Cultural Marxism: The Corruption of America* by Bill Lind
> *Cultural Marxism: The Corruption of America* (www.culturalmarxism.org) (www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
> *The Narrative: The Origins of Political Correctness* by Bill Whittle (YouTube.com)

Here are a few good articles on the cultural devastation caused by those in the Frankfurt School:

> "Political Correctness:" A Short History of an Ideology" by William S. Lind
> "Who Stole Our Culture" by William Lind (Chapter 10 in Pat Boone's book *The Culture-wise Family: Upholding Christian Values in a Mass Media World.*)
> "Radical Feminism and Political Correctness in 'Political Correctness:' A Short History of an Ideology" by Gerald L. Atkinson
> "History of the Frankfurt School" by Gerald Atkinson (frankfurtschool.us/history.htm)

CULTURAL MARXISM IS NOW THE DOMINANT CULTURE

A reviewer wrote of the video *Cultural Marxism: The Corruption of America*:

> This documentary shows how a group of Marxist theoreticians, calling themselves The Frankfurt School, plotted the corruption and overthrow of non-Communist nations by systematically undermining their cultures. Called Cultural Marxism, its goal is the use of art, music, education, and media to condition people to accept the essential elements of Marxism without identifying them as such. After a few generations of this conditioning, Marxism becomes the new reality without a violent revolution and even without awareness that a revolution has occurred. If you want to know how the nations of the world became increasingly Marxist in form, if not in name, here is the strategy.
>
> The film's opening statement by Pat Buchanan prepares the viewer for what is to follow: "The United States has undergone a cultural, moral and religious revolution. A militant secularism has arisen in this country. It has always had a hold on the intellectual and academic elites, but in the 1960s it captured the young in the universities and the colleges.
>
> "This is the basis of the great cultural war we're undergoing.... We are two countries now. We are two countries morally, culturally, socially, and theologically. Cultural wars do not lend themselves to peaceful co-existence. One side prevails, or

the other prevails.

"The truth is that while conservatives won the Cold War with political and economic Communism, we've lost the cultural war with cultural Marxism, which I think has prevailed pretty much in the United States. It is now the dominant culture. Whereas those of us who are traditionalists, we are, if you will, the counterculture."

POLITICAL CORRECTNESS

In his article titled "'Political Correctness:' A Short History of an Ideology" William S. Lind writes:

> "Political Correctness" is in fact cultural Marxism – Marxism translated from economic into cultural terms. The effort to translate Marxism from economics into culture did not begin with the student rebellion of the 1960s. It goes back at least to the 1920s and the writings of the Italian Communist Antonio Gramsci. In 1923, in Germany, a group of Marxists founded an institute devoted to making the translation, the Institute of Social Research (later known as the Frankfurt School). The Frankfurt School gained profound influence in American universities after many of its leading lights fled to the United States in the 1930s to escape National Socialism in Germany.

THE SEXUAL REVOLUTION

Wilhelm Reich wrote a book in German in the 1930s and translated into English in the 1940s titled *The Sexual Revolution* that was instrumental in creating the sexual revolution of the 1960s. He is called "the father of the sexual revolution" and "The man who started the sexual revolution." Erich Fromm, one of the most widely read authors of the 20th century, wrote in a letter to the Russian feminist, Raya Dunayevskaya, that "men" have to "emancipate themselves from their male, patriarchal, and hence dominating, character structure." These intellectuals influenced many people to reject Judeo-Christian values of the traditional family. These socialists hated the biblical, patriarchal family and capitalism which they saw as authoritarian, materialistic and exploitive. Bill Lind writes, "Herbert Marcuse published *Eros and Civilization* in 1955, which became the founding document of the 1960s counterculture. This book became the bible of the young radicals who took over Western European and America's college campuses from 1965 onward, and who are still there as faculty members." Marcuse gave intellectual weight to the ideology of free love. Thomas Sowell says, "Socialism in general has a record of failure so blatant that only an intellectual could ignore or evade it."

MATRIARCHAL THEORY

Gerald L. Atkinson wrote in "Radical Feminism and Political Correctness in 'Political Correctness:' A Short History of an Ideology", "Perhaps no aspect of Political Correctness is more prominent in American life today than feminist ideology." In "History of the Frankfurt School" (frankfurtschool.us/history.htm) Atkinson writes:

> The transformation of American culture envisioned by the "cultural Marxists" is based on matriarchal theory. That is, they propose transforming American culture into a female-dominated one. This is a direct throwback to Wilhelm Reich, a Frankfurt School member who considered matriarchal theory in psychoanalytic terms. In 1933, he wrote in *The Mass Psychology of Fascism* that matriarchy was the only genuine family type of "natural society."
>
> Eric Fromm, another charter member of the Institute, was also one of the most active advocates of matriarchal theory.

ERICH FROMM—SOCIALIST/FEMINIST INTELLECTAL

Erich Fromm wrote *The Art of Loving* in 1956. It became an international bestseller translated into 34 languages and the U.S. edition alone has sold over 5 million copies. Whatever good there may be in his book is drowned out by Fromm's put down of patriarchy which is the foundation of the traditional family in Judeo-Christian thought and his denigrating of capitalism. He writes that religion used to be matriarchal and then became patriarchal. In this matriarchal society that had God as a female everyone was equal and unconditionally loved. For the last 6000 years of recorded history religions have been patriarchal and that has produced "a sense of lostness and utter despair." The problem with this is that there has never been a matriarchal society. He even has a book about this nonsense titled *Love, Sexuality, and Matriarchy: About Gender*. In *The Art of Loving* he writes, "The development of patriarchal society goes together with the development of private property." This is true. Those who believe in capitalism often believe in the traditional biblical patriarchal family. Those who hate capitalism often believe in the egalitarian, feminist family such as Erich Fromm who is a socialist. Fromm goes on to write, "As a consequence, patriarchal society is hierarchical; the equality of the brothers gives way to competition and strife." Socialists hate competition. Fromm writes that he wants a "social order governed by equality, justice and love. Man has not yet achieved the building of such an order." But he has "faith" that socialists will someday build one. He blasts capitalism saying, "The *principle* underlying capitalist society and the *principle* of love are incompatible." This is a lie. He goes on and on about how people in capitalist societies like America are not "loving" because they live in a "production-centered, commodity-greedy society." He ends his malignant book saying, "important and radical changes in our social structure are necessary, if love is to become a social and not a highly individualistic, marginal phenomenon."

What "changes" are we suppose to make? He doesn't give any because he doesn't have any. In his book *The Sane Society* he says we need to reject capitalism and build a Socialist society. In *The Art of Loving* America he says is "run by [capitalists] motivated by mass suggestion, their aim is producing more and consuming more, as purposes in themselves. All activities are subordinated to economic goals, man is an automaton—well fed, well clad, but without any ultimate concern for that which is peculiarly human quality." "Society must be organized in such a way that" we "share in work, share in profits." President Franklin Roosevelt in the 1930s believed in this nonsense. President Obama talks about "fair share." This means they will use the guns of the State to force their idea of sharing. They want a monopoly, not competition. Unificationists must see how Satan is working and denounce intellectual snakes and their wicked books that "change" people for the worse. The harm of socialist/feminism is so massive it staggers the mind. It has even devastated the Unificationist Church that has been blind to how Satan works. I hope this book will wake up Unificationists.

WILHELM REICH—SOCIALIST/FEMINIST INTELLECTUAL

An article in the British newspaper *The Guardian* had an article titled "Wilhelm Reich: the Man Who Invented Free Love." His books were influential in creating the Free Love Sexual Revolution of the 1960s. He even introduced the term "Sexual Revolution" by writing a book titled *The Sexual Revolution*. The subtitle to the book in the German edition was "the Socialist Restructuring of Humans." His arguments against capitalism and the traditional value of patriarchy are mainstream now. In his book *The Sexual Revolution* published several decades before the sexual revolution of the 1960s he wrote, "In our society, particularly around the turn of the century, the demand for virginity prior to marriage has been strictly upheld. The rigid fidelity of the wife and the premarital chastity of the girl form the two pillars of reactionary sexual morality which support patriarchal marriage and family by creating a human structure characterized by sexual anxiety." This is pure Satan. It is exact opposite of God. Satan introduced these ideas to America so it would be difficult for Sun Myung Moon and other righteous people to teach the truth of fidelity and patriarchy. Reich won and now most people think abstinence is a "rigid" ideology.

He wrote, "The view that the first sexual intercourse with a virgin and the honeymoon are sexually the most gratifying experiences is false. Clinical data contradict it. … To marry without previous mutual sexual knowledge and adaptation is unhygienic and generally leads to catastrophes." This is Satan's core lie and the majority of people now deeply believe it. Most people buy into Hollywood TV shows and movies that make unmarried couples living together the norm. Father says he wants us to be the "New Pilgrims." Hugh Hefner says he hates the "Puritans" and he and so many like him like Wilhelm Reich have converted America to the belief that unnatural sex like premarital sex and homosexuality are normal and healthy. Reich wrote, "Homosexuality is not a social crime; it harms no one. It must be considered on equal terms with heterosexual forms of gratification and should not be punished." When he wrote that in the 1930s few would believe him and most would find him shocking. Now most people find traditional family values as weird and "rigid." Reich pushes women to be "independent" so they can easily leave their marriage and he says women should be in the Army and Navy so the young men can have ready access to sex. Now it is normal for women to be in the military and we have massive premarital sex and adultery in our military. Reich goes on and on about how monogamy is unnatural and monotonous. He says, "Monogamy cannot last" because it is unrealistic. He says that sex between a husband and wife will always become "dull" after time and we need to have sex with others to keep our interest alive. His book is disgusting and now we have disgusting movies where every one of them will have people living together without being married and glorifying homosexuals. The most famous Christian in the media was Billy Graham. I can't remember him ever teaching abstinence. If he did he and those who did try to teach purity failed to keep America from buying into the ideology of the 1960s sexual revolution. Sadly Americans have become like Reich and Fromm—Socialist/Feminists.

HAYEK AND VON MISES—CAPITALIST/TRADITIONALISTS

Let's look at two German intellectuals who were writing books at the same time as Reich and Fromm. Satan had powerful ambassadors like Reich and Fromm but God had powerful ambassadors in Ludwig von Mises and Friedrich Hayek. Hayek said in his great book *The Road to Serfdom*, "The most important change which extensive government control produces is a psychological change, an alteration in the character of the people." John Stossel writes:

> Government is taking us a long way down the Road to Serfdom. That doesn't just mean that more of us must work for the government. It means that we are changing from independent, self-responsible people into a submissive flock. The welfare state kills the creative spirit.
>
> F.A. Hayek, an Austrian economist living in Britain, wrote *The Road to Serfdom* in 1944 as a warning that central economic planning would extinguish freedom. The book was a hit. *Reader's Digest* produced a condensed version that sold 5 million copies.
>
> Hayek meant that governments can't plan economies without planning people's lives. After all, an economy is just individuals engaging in exchanges. The scientific-sounding language of President Obama's economic planning hides the fact that *people* must shelve their own plans in favor of government's single plan.
>
> At the beginning of *The Road to Serfdom*, Hayek acknowledges that mere material wealth is not all that's at stake when the government controls our lives: "The most important change ... is a psychological change, an alteration in the character of the people."
>
> This shouldn't be controversial. If government relieves us of the responsibility of living by bailing us out, character will atrophy. The welfare state, however good its intentions of creating material equality, can't help but make us dependent. That changes the psychology of society.

TOCQUEVILLE

In the best book ever written on America, *Democracy in America*, Tocqueville described the contrast between democracy and socialism: "Democracy extends the sphere of individual freedom; socialism restricts it. Democracy attaches all possible value to each man; socialism makes each man a mere agent, a mere number. Democracy and socialism have nothing in common but one word: equality. But notice the difference: while democracy seeks equality in liberty, socialism seeks equality in restraint and servitude."

LOCAL vs. NATIONAL GOVERNMENT

Tocqueville saw America's strength was in its local government—not the national. God is seen most at the local level. "It is not by chance that I consider the township first. The township is the only association so well rooted in nature that wherever men assemble it forms itself. Communal society therefore exists among all peoples, whatever be their customs and laws. Man creates kingdoms and republics, but townships seem to spring directly from the hand of God."

"It is in the township, the center of the ordinary business of life, that the desire for esteem [and] the pursuit of substantial interests ... are concentrated; these passions, so often troublesome elements in society, take on a different character when exercised so close to home and, in a sense, within the family circle .... Daily duties performed or rights exercised keep municipal life constantly alive. There is a continual gentle political activity which keeps society on the move without turmoil."

He writes perceptively against socialist elites who don't believe in decentralized power because they want people "docile": "The difficulty of establishing a township's independence rather augments than diminishes with the increase of enlightenment of nations. A very civilized society finds it hard to tolerate attempts at freedom in a local community; it is disgusted by its numerous blunders and is apt to despair of success before the experiment is finished." And again: "The institutions of a local community can hardly struggle against a strong and enterprising government." And yet again: "If you take power and independence from a municipality, you may have docile subjects but you will not have citizens."

Tocqueville was perspicacious in seeing that big government emasculates instead of empowering people: "Above this race of men stands an immense and tutelary power, which takes upon itself alone to secure their gratification and to watch over their fate. That power is absolute, minute, regular, provident, and mild. It would be like the authority of a parent if, like that authority, its object was to prepare men for manhood; but it seeks, on the contrary, to keep them in perpetual childhood: it is well content that the people should rejoice, provided they think of nothing but rejoicing. For their happiness such a government willingly labors, but it chooses to be the sole agent and the only arbiter of that happiness; it provides for their security, foresees and supplies their necessities, facilitates their pleasures, manages their principal concerns, directs their industry, regulates the descent of property, and subdivides their inheritances: what remains, but to spare them all the care of thinking and all the trouble of living?"

Hayek gives this quote from Tocqueville in the forward to *The Road to Serfdom* right after he says "extensive government control produces is a psychological change, an alteration in the character of the people.":

> After having thus successfully taken each member of the community in its powerful grasp and fashioned him at will, the supreme power then extends its arm over the whole community. It covers the surface of society with a network of small, complicated rules, minute and uniform, through which the most original minds and the most energetic characters cannot penetrate, to rise above the crowd. The will of man is not shattered, but softened, bent, and guided; men are seldom forced by it to

> act, but they are constantly restrained from acting. Such a power does not destroy, but it prevents existence; it does not tyrannize, but it compresses, enervates, extinguishes, and stupefies a people, till each nation is reduced to nothing better than a flock of timid and industrious animals, of which the government is the shepherd.

Irving Kristol said, "As a result of the efforts of Hayek .. and the many others who share his general outlook, the idea of a centrally planned and centrally administered economy, so popular in the 1930s and early 1940s, has been discredited." Margaret Thatcher (British Prime Minister, 1979-1990) said in her autobiography, *The Path to Power*, ".. the most powerful critique of socialist planning and the socialist state which I read at this time [the late 1940's], and to which I have returned so often since is F. A. Hayek's *The Road to Serfdom*." Robert Nozick said in the book *The Harvard Guide to Influential Books: 113 Distinguished Harvard Professors Discuss the Books That Have Helped to Shape Their Thinking*, "While in graduate school I encountered the writings of Friedrich Hayek and Ludwig von Mises, which shook me out of my then socialist beliefs."

MISES ON THE FAMILY

Ludwig von Mises wrote powerful books for limited government and for the traditional family such as in his book *Socialism: An Economic and Sociological Analysis*. Lew Rockwell wrote an article in 1998 (lewrockwell.com) titled "Mises on the Family" explaining that socialists have a dual mission of not only destroying capitalism but traditional family values as well. He writes:

> G.K. Chesterton called the family an anarchistic institution. He meant that it requires no act of the state to bring it about. Its existence flows from fixed realities in the nature of man, with its form refined by the development of sexual norms and the advance of civilization.
>
> This observation is consistent with a brilliant discussion of the family in Ludwig von Mises's masterwork *Socialism: An Economic and Sociological Analysis*, first published in 1922. Why did Mises address family and marriage in an economics book refuting socialism? He understood—unlike many economists today—that the opponents of the free society have a broad agenda that usually begins with an attack on this most crucial bourgeois institution.
>
> "Proposals to transform the relations between the sexes have long gone hand in hand with plans for the socialization of the means of production," Mises observes. "Marriage is to disappear along with private property.... Socialism promises not only welfare – wealth for all – but universal happiness in love as well."
>
> Mises noted that August Bebel's *Woman Under Socialism*, a paean to free love published in 1892, was the most widely read left-wing tract of its time. This linkage of socialism and promiscuity had a tactical purpose. If you don't buy the never-never land of magically appearing prosperity, then you can focus on the hope for liberation from sexual responsibility and maturity.
>
> The socialists proposed a world in which there would be no social impediments to unlimited personal pleasure, with the family and monogamy being the first impediments to go. Would this plan work? No chance, said Mises: the socialist program for free love is as impossible as its economic one. They are both contrary to the restraints inherent in the real world.
>
> The family, like the structure of the market economy, is a product not of policy but of voluntary association, made necessary by biological and social realities. Capitalism reinforced marriage and family because it insisted on consent in all social relations.

The family and capitalism thus share a common institutional and ethical foundation. By attempting to abolish them, the socialists would replace a society based on contract with one based on violence. The result would be total societal collapse.

No sane intellectual embraces full-blown social economics anymore, but a watered-down version of the socialist agenda for the family is the driving force behind much of U.S. social policy. This agenda goes hand in hand with the hobbling of the market economy in other areas.

It is no accident that the rise of free love in the U.S. accompanied the rise of the fully developed welfare state. The goals of liberation from work (and saving and investment) and liberation from our sexual natures stem from a similar ideological impulse: to overcome fixed realities in nature. The family has suffered as a result, just as Mises predicted it would.

"It is no accident that the proposal to treat men and women as radically equal, to regulate sexual intercourse by the State, to put infants into public nursing homes at birth and to ensure that children and parents remain quite unknown to each other should have originated with Plato," who cared nothing for freedom.

Feminism of the Nineteenth Century

Von Mises says in *Socialism: An Economic and Sociological* Analysis (1922):

> The attacks launched against marriage by the Feminism of the Nineteenth Century … claimed that marriage forced women to sacrifice personality. It gave man space enough to develop his abilities, but to woman it denied all freedom. This was imputed to the unchangeable nature of marriage, which harnesses husband and wife together and thus debases the weaker woman to be the servant of the man. No reform could alter this; abolition of the whole institution alone could remedy the evil. Women must fight for liberation from this yoke, not only that she might be free to satisfy her sexual desires but so as to develop her individuality. Loose relations which gave freedom to both parties must replace marriage.
>
> Feminism overlooks the fact that the expansion of woman's powers and abilities is inhibited not by marriage, not by being bound to man, children, and household, but by the more absorbing form in which the sexual function affects the female body. Pregnancy and the nursing of children claim the best years of a woman's life, the years in which a man may spend his energies in great achievements. One may believe that the unequal distribution of the burden of reproduction is an injustice of nature, or that it is unworthy of woman to be child-bearer and nurse, but to believe this does not alter the fact. It may be that a woman is able to choose between renouncing either the most profound womanly joy, the joy of motherhood, or the more masculine development of her personality in action and endeavor. It may be that she has no such choice. It may be that in suppressing her urge towards motherhood she does herself an injury that reacts through all other functions of her being. But whatever the truth about this, the fact remains that when she becomes a mother, with or without marriage, she is prevented from leading her life as freely and independently as man. Extraordinarily gifted women may achieve fine things in spite of motherhood; but because the functions of sex have the first claim upon woman, genius and the greatest achievements have been denied her. …When Feminism attacks the institutions of social life under the impression that it will thus be able to remove the natural barriers, it is a spiritual child of Socialism. For it is a characteristic of Socialism to discover in social institutions the origin of unalterable facts of nature, and to endeavour, by reforming these institutions, to reform nature.

> Free love is the socialist's radical solution for sexual problems. The socialistic society abolishes the economic dependence of woman which results from the fact that woman is dependent on the income of her husband. Man and woman have the same economic rights and the same duties, as far as motherhood does not demand special consideration for the woman. Public funds provide for the maintenance and education of the children, which are no longer the affairs of the parents but of society. Thus the relations between the sexes are no longer influenced by social and economic conditions. Mating ceases to found the simplest form of social union, marriage and the family. The family disappears and society is confronted with separate individuals only. Choice in love becomes completely free. Men and women unite and separate just as their desires urge.
>
> But the difference between sexual character and sexual destiny can no more be decreed away than other inequalities of mankind. It is not marriage which keeps woman inwardly unfree, but the fact that her sexual character demands surrender to a man and that her love for husband and children consumes her best energies. There is no human law to prevent the woman who looks for happiness in a career from renouncing love and marriage. But those who do not renounce them are not left with sufficient strength to master life as a man may master it. It is the fact that sex possesses her whole personality, and not the facts of marriage and family, which enchains woman. By "abolishing" marriage one would not make woman any freer and happier; one would merely take from her the essential content of her life, and one could offer nothing to replace it.
>
> Socialism, even though it aims at an equal distribution of the plunder, must finally demand promiscuity in sexual life.

WHY MEN RULE—THE INEVITABILITY OF PATRIARCHY

Those who fight the value of patriarchy are fighting human nature. All religions and cultures have been patriarchal. Steven Goldberg, a distinguished sociologist, writes of this fact in his book, *Why Men Rule: A Theory of Male Dominance*, which was originally published as *The Inevitability of Patriarchy*. He writes as a social scientist saying it is biologically innate for men to lead women in the home and to lead other men in society. He says Feminists are wrong when they "view that differences between men and women" are "environmental" and "cultural". He says that we have to take into account the hormones that drive men to be more aggressive to achieve dominance than women. Feminism "requires denial of truth." Some very respected thinkers have praised his book. Margaret Mead said, "persuasive and accurate. It is true, as Professor Goldberg points out, that all the claims so glibly made for societies ruled by women are nonsense. We have no reason to believe that they ever existed….men everywhere have been in charge of running the show….men have always been the leaders in public affairs and the final authorities at home." Murray Rothbard says of his book, "The most significant work on sex differences in decades." Daniel Seligman, Ernest van den Haag and George Gilder each call it "A Classic." A well-known professor is Morton Kaplan, a personal friend to Sun Myung Moon, says, "coolly, tightly, cogently, even brilliantly reasoned."

Goldberg posits there will always be patriarchy. "Goldberg proposes that if patriarchy is indeed biologically based, it will prove to be inevitable; unless a society is willing to intervene *biologically* on the male physiology" (Wikipedia.com).

Goldberg writes:

> What is crucial here is that men and women differ in their hormonal systems and that every society demonstrates patriarchy, male dominance, and male attainment.

The thesis put forth here is that the hormonal renders the social inevitable.

We are what we are, and there is not the slightest shred of evidence that our most basic elements, the biologically based emotions that flow from our male and female physiologies and that guide our behavior, have changed significantly since man first walked the earth.

Anatomy sets limits on destiny

The biological element of male aggression will manifest itself in any economic system. It is useless for the Marxist to attempt to disprove the inevitability of male attainment of authority and status positions by demonstrating that males attain such positions in a capitalist society. They do so in societies with primitive, feudal and socialist economies also.

At the bottom of it all man's job is to protect woman and woman's is to protect her infant; in nature all else is luxury.

In every society it is women who are responsible for the care and rearing of the young, the single most important function served in any society or in nature itself.

The physiological factors that underlie women's life-sustaining abilities — the qualities most vital to the survival of our species — preclude them from ever manifesting the psychological predisposition, the obsessive need of power, or the abilities necessary for the attainment of the significant amounts of political power that men have.

One cannot transcend one's fate until one has accepted it. Women who deny their natures, who accept men's secondhand definitions and covet a state of second-rate manhood, are forever condemned. Sex is the single most decisive determinant of personal identity; it is the first thing we notice about another person and the last thing we forget. It is terribly self-destructive to refuse to accept one's own nature and the joys and powers it invests.

The experience of men is that there are few women who can outfight them and few who can out-argue them, but that when a women uses feminine means she can command a loyalty that no amount of dominance behaviour ever could. … Women follow their own psychophysiological imperatives and don't choose to compete for the goals that men devote their lives to attaining. Women have more important things to do. Men are aware of this and that is why in this and every other society they look to women for gentleness, kindness, and love, for refuge from a world of pain and force, for safety from their own excesses. In every society a basic male motivation is the feeling that the women and children must be protected. But a woman cannot have it both ways: if she wishes to sacrifice all this, all that she will get in return is the right to meet men on male terms. She will lose.

Goldberg says that "The vast majority of women" can't "imagine why any woman would *want* to deny the biological basis of the enormous powers inherent in women's role as directors of society's emotional resources" and compete with men for power and position. At his website www.goldberg-patriarchy.com Goldberg has a long statement about why societies have andare patriarchal. Here a few quotes:

Much of my career has been devoted to discovering, demonstrating, and explaining the universality of—the presence in every society that has ever existed—certain sexually-differentiated institutions.

The upper positions of the hierarchies of every one of the thousands of societies on which we have any significant evidence are overwhelmingly filled by men (patriarchy). A Queen Victoria or a Golda Meir is always an exception in her society and is always surrounded by a government of men. (There were more female heads-of-state, queens when no royal male was available, in the first two-thirds of the sixteenth century than the first two-thirds of the twentieth. There has never been a "matriarchy" or "Amazonian society."(There have been a very few, tiny societies with relatively little hierarchy, but in all such societies an informal male dominance played a role similar to that of patriarchy.)

There is not a scintilla of evidence that modernization renders likely the demise of the universals. To be sure, no modern society could preclude women's playing any suprafamilial role as some non-modern societies did. But it is also true that no modern society is likely to give women the high status some other (matrilineal-matrilocal, but patriarchal) non-modern societies gave the woman's maternal roles. In any case, even the Scandinavian societies often claimed to be "non-patriarchal"--called this despite the fact that they feel the need of cabinet departments to deal with the "inequality of women"—are, in fact, overwhelmingly patriarchal. An interesting fact about the Scandinavian countries is that, some political scientists argue, the political plays a less-important role than does the corporate, relative to other countries. While female membership of parliament is the highest in the world (though still far from equal), male control of the corporate world is absolute; there is no corporate "glass ceiling" issue because hardly any women rise high enough to see the "glass ceiling".

DISAPPEARING MALE

Tragically, there has been a decline biologically and psychologically in males in the last 20 years. Evil spirits in spirit world and evil people on earth are working to damage the male psysiology and mind. The documentary *The Disappearing Male* shows that in "The last few decades have seen steady and dramatic increases in the incidence of boys and young men suffering from genital deformities, low sperm count, sperm abnormalities." There are more and more books about this decline such as *Boys Adrift: the five factors driving the growing epidemic of unmotivated boys and underachieving young men* by Leonard Sax, *Manning Up: How the Rise of Women Has Turned Men into Boys* by Kay Hymowitz. *The End of Men: And the Rise of Women* by Hanna Rosin, *The Decline of Men: How the American Male Is Getting Axed, Giving Up, and Flipping Off His Future* by Guy Garcia, *The War Against Boys: How Misguided Feminism Is Harming Our Young Men* by Christina Hoff Sommers, and *The Decline of Males* by Lionel Tiger. Read Helen Smith's wonderful book *Men on Strike: Why Men Are Boycotting Marriage, Fatherhood, and the American Dream—and Why It Matters* and watch her on YouTube.com.

Debbie Schlussel writes about the deterioration of men in our culture. She wrote in a column (www.debbieschlussel.com) (10-23-09) titled "Are You This Whipped?: Husbands, Housework & Sex": " It's official: we are Girlieman Nation. When you blur the gender roles, feminize the men and masculinize the women, it's not a good thing. Matriarchies always fail, and not just in nations but also in family households. Remember: Chickification Nation is the Formula for Disintegration." She writes, "Even before the bad economy took hold, more and more men married women who earned much more than they did. More and more men married women who played the man and earned the money, while they stayed home and played Mr. Mom (Todd Palin

alert). It's not good for American society. As I always note, matriarchies fail. Societies with weak men–with girlie-men, with men who assume the roles of women–aren't the ones that survive."

Wilhelm Reich was influential in creating the Sexual Revolution of the 1960's. We had the wholesome stay-at-home mom in *The Donna Reed Show* from 1958 to 1966 and then America degenerated into a feminist culture epitomized by the crude *Roseanne* show starring the obnoxious Roseanne Barr in 1988. I assume there is no relation from Wilhelm Reich to Robert Reich, the former Secretary of Labor in the Clinton administration, but they are alike in spirit. He writes book after book for big government and he appears constantly on TV shows spouting his evil philosophy. Just as Wilhelm Reich pushed for economic socialism and normalizing homosexuality so does Robert Reich. Reich is an activist in the Leftist Democratic Party that pushes for homosexuals to serve in the military and for gay marriage. Robert Reich, like Wilhelm Reich, sees premarital sex as normal and healthy and just cannot understand why those on the Right, especially the Christian Right, are so obsessed with traditional sexual ethics that many people lived by in the 1950's and early 1960s. Let's look at Robert Reich's book *Reason: Why Liberals Will Win the Battle for America*. Even the title is wrong. He has no "reason" and Liberals will not eventually win.

Robert Reich writes that government is needed to save "capitalism from its worst excesses." No it doesn't. Government interference makes things worse. He calls the "Right-wing Republican Party" – "Bible-thumpers, racists, free-market fundamentalists, and rabid anti-communists." He says there is an "assault on America" from the Right. He says that he and his Liberal friends have "a love of America that is grounded in public morality and common sense. We can—and will—win the battle for America because we better represent true American ideals. What's more, we have reason on our side." Not true. Socialism is not common sense; it is not moral; and there is no "reason" in its ideology. There is an organization called the Reason Foundation (www.Reason.org) that has a libertarian monthly magazine titled *Reason* (www.Reason.com).

Robert Reich says he has "reason" on his side but his words are lies. If you want to find truth and "reason" go to *Reason Magazine*, not Reich's book titled "Reason." Reich say liberals need not just ideas but also "passion" and "courage" to win. And he is passionate. The enemies of freedom get energy from Satan but they cannot win in the end because God gives more energy. Reich quotes Rush Limbaugh saying that the "American people reject" what is "abnormal or perverted" including "commie libs," "feminazis," and "environmental wackos." Reich does not think homosexuality is abnormal or perverted because he is ignorant of Satan's tactics and ignorant of God's plan for mankind. He quotes Ann Coulter who said, "The liberal catechism includes a hatred of Christians, guns, the profit motive." She is right. But he calls her "strident" and "mean." The Right he says are "nasty." They are "vicious and uncompromising and mean-spirited." This is all projection. Reich's friends show up at college campuses where Ann speaks and rudely disrupt her meeting and try to throw pies in her face. She needs bodyguards to protect her from "mean" and "strident" Liberals. Ann Coulter is correct when she says in her book *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right*, "A central component of liberal hate speech is to make paranoid accusations based on their own neurotic impulses, such as calling Republicans angry, hate-filled, and mean." "Liberals don't try to win arguments, they seek to destroy their opponents and silence dissident opinions." Reich says that to those on the Right are the, "main threat to the security of our nation, the stability of our families, our future prosperity, and the capacity of our children to grow into responsible adults."

SATANIC FORCE

Robert Reich writes that the Right thinks there "is a dark, satanic force. It exists within America in

the form of moral deviance—out-of-wedlock births, homosexuality, abortion, crime. It potentially exist within everyone of us in the form of sloth and devastating irresponsibility. It exists outside America in the form of 'evil empires' or an 'axis of evil.'" Reich has no understanding that Satan exists. He says the Right feels that "unconstrained sex is evil. Sex outside marriage is evil. Homosexuality is evil." Cultural Marxists like Reich just cannot see that Judeo-Christian, biblical values of purity is important. The following is from an interview with Charles Colson at www.billygraham.org that speaks the truth about homosexuality that Liberals think is "meanness" when it is simply the truth:

> **Q: Can you lay out a solid argument for why marriage is to be only between a man and a woman?**
> A: Marriage, as an institution between a man and a woman, is basically for procreation. Homosexual marriage, therefore, is an oxymoron—there is no such thing. It is something else. It is two people coming together for recreation, not for procreation. Procreation can only happen between a man and a woman. Every society has recognized this, going back to the beginning of recorded history. Societies recognize that it is in their self-interest to preserve this institution and to give it a distinct status under the law. Marriage is the institution that civilizes and propagates the human race. It is where children are raised and learn the ways of right and wrong. Their consciences are informed in the family.
>
> **Q: What do you say to people who argue that no one has the right to stop them from doing their own thing in a consenting relationship?**
> A: I wonder if that person would really believe you should do your own thing if it involves incest or polygamy. Is that person really saying that there is no place where you draw the line on sexual behavior? I don't think so. There are reasonable boundaries that the law tends to protect. My argument would be that society's survival depends on the family. And the institution of the family is in deep trouble. So you have a serious question about whether this society can continue.
>
> **Q: What evidence is there that society is better off with traditional families than without them?**
> A: There is a very telling statistic that appeared in "Development and Psychopathology." Researchers found that in the inner city, 6 percent of kids from intact families became delinquent, while 90 percent of those from single-parent families became delinquent. That is a huge gap: In the intact family, kids have a very good chance of making it. In the inner cities, the single-parent family is almost a ticket to prison.

This is because the inner cities are a matriarchy. Which side do you want to be on? Colson or Reich? Reich went to Dartmouth College in 1964, before coeducation. He writes, "The college handbook warned that 'fornication' was grounds for expulsion, but the college had little reason to worry. Girls were allowed in dorm rooms only on weekends during daylight hours." He says, "Many other colleges" also had a "commitment to abstinence". He goes to say, "All this changed in three years. The ground had shifted—not the granite under New Hampshire but entire tectonic plates underlying much of the Western world. The college handbook no longer banned fornication." I am the same age as Robert Reich and I was in college too. There was a huge shift in America from 1964 to 1967 that has spiraled downward to our current depraved society that Reich has worked passionately for in these last 40 years. He thinks we're better off. Do you? I don't.

Reich, like his Liberal Socialist comrades, thinks America has "progressed" and we are better off than those poor people of the 1950s and 1850s. He quotes Michael Savage who wrote in his book *The Savage Nation*, "What a mess the sixties were. A real nightmare. We almost lost the country. The joy of America in the fifties was unmatched… I loved the values of the fifties….Everything was normal. Then, all of a sudden, the freaks popped up out of the woodwork and ruined America….Tragically, we've never recovered from the sixties' madness." Reich, in his book *Reason* quotes Gertrude Himmelfarb saying in her book *One Nation, Two Cultures* she says "blames" the sixties for "the collapse of ethical principles and habits, the breakdown of the family, the decline of civility, the vulgarization of high culture, and the degradation of popular culture." Reich just doesn't understand that they are right. Reich says the Right had "paranoia" about Bill and Hillary Clinton because, "they represented the sixties—its sexual permissiveness, its in-your-face feminism. His first act as president was to issue an executive order allowing gays to serve in the military." And now President Obama says he is for gay marriage. The Clintons were the first Presidential couple that lived together before marriage and this is just fine by Robert Reich.

Those who are on Satan's side, the goats in our society's division between goats and sheep in these Last Days, fight hard to make homosexuality normal. Reich says the Right should not be so obsessed with traditional values and he says the Right is wrong when they "Condemn premarital sex, extramarital and unmarried sex." He says the Right has, "blended Christian fundamentalism and right-wing moralism into their larger worldview. Unrestrained sex, they believe, unleashes an evil that hides inside human beings. It threatens the social order. Therefore it must be controlled. The evil sexual impulses inside us have to be disciplined, just as evil forces from outside have to be. The war on sexual 'deviancy' is, in this respect, a lot like the war on terrorism. If we lose, Western civilization may fall into chaos." How is this any different than Wilhelm Reich who wrote 50 years earlier wrote the exact same thing in his demonic books and helped pioneer the Sexual Revolution of the 60s?

To the idea that the 1950s were better Reich says, "Nonsense. I remember the fifties and it was hardly idyllic." He says many marriages were happy but he says there was "a lot of unhappiness among my parents' friends. Several of Mom's women friends ask her about getting jobs, too. They were bored out of their minds stuck at home." "How many women were trapped in abusive marriages, unable to leave because they had no money and no job prospects?" I see the 1950s as better than the sick society we live in today. I lived in the 1950s just as Reich did and I disagree with Reich that life is better now than then.

Robert Reich is difficult to read because his words are so dangerous and evil. Let's look at the opposite of Reich. Williams S. Lind wrote in the book *The Culture-wise Family: Upholding Christian Values in a Mass Media World*:

> Sometime during the last half-century, someone stole our culture. Just 50 years ago, in the 1950s, America was a great place. It was safe. It was decent. Children got good educations in the public schools. Even blue-collar fathers brought home middle-class incomes, so moms could stay home with the kids. Television shows reflected sound, traditional values.
>
> Where did it all go? How did that America become the sleazy, decadent place we live in today – so different that those who grew up prior to the '60s feel like it's a foreign country? Did it just "happen"?
>
> It didn't just "happen." In fact, a deliberate agenda was followed to steal our culture and leave a new and very different one in its place. The story of how and why is one of the most important parts of our nation's history – *and it is a story almost no one knows*. The people behind it wanted it that way.
>
> What happened, in short, is that America's traditional culture, which had grown

> up over generations from our Western, Judeo-Christian roots, was swept aside by an ideology. We know that ideology best as "political correctness" or "multi-culturalism." It really is cultural Marxism, Marxism translated from economic into cultural terms in an effort that goes back not to the 1960s, but to World War I. Incredible as it may seem, just as the old economic Marxism of the Soviet Union has faded away, a new cultural Marxism has become the ruling ideology of America's elites. The No. 1 goal of that cultural Marxism, since its creation, has been the destruction of Western culture and the Christian religion.

Coulter says, "Liberals are fanatical liars." Liberals are "devoted to class warfare, ethnic hatred and intolerance." Liberals "hate democracy because democracy requires persuasion and compromise rather than brute political force." This is not hyperbole. It is not shrill or grating or vitriol or sweeping extremism. It is not a vicious attack. It is simply the truth about the Cain side. When Coulter says, "God has no part in the religion [liberalism] of sex education, environmentalism, feminism, Marxism and loving Big Brother." She is right. Liberals say this is a sweeping generalization and therefore not true, but it is true. Liberals hated Reagan for calling the Soviet Union an "evil empire." He was seen as an out-of-control cowboy. Many of those who participate in so-called peace marches are dupes of Satan. They are crude and overly emotional such as when they march in streets with signs saying President George W. Bush is equal to Hitler because he freed Iraq. They are to be pitied, not listened to.

SOCIALIST PROPAGANDA OF THE INTELLECTUALS

In his book *Socialism* von Mises blames socialist intellectuals for being the main reason we have socialism today. The intellectuals for capitalism were not as powerful but they are gaining in strength. He writes:

> It is not true that the masses are vehemently asking for socialism and that there is no means to resist them. The masses favor socialism because they trust the socialist propaganda of the intellectuals. The intellectuals, not the populace, are molding public opinion. It is a lame excuse of the intellectuals that they must yield to the masses. They themselves have generated the socialist ideas and indoctrinated the masses with them. No proletarian or son of a proletarian has contributed to the elaboration of the interventionist and socialist programs. Their authors were all of bourgeois background. The esoteric writings of dialectical materialism, of Hegel, the father both of Marxism and of German aggressive nationalism, the books of Georges Sorel, of Gentile and of Spengler were not read by the average man; they did not move the masses directly. It was the intellectuals who popularized them.
>
> The intellectual leaders of the peoples have produced and propagated the fallacies which are on the point of destroying liberty and Western civilization. The intellectuals alone are responsible for the mass slaughters which are the characteristic mark of our century. They alone can reverse the trend and pave the way for a resurrection of freedom.
>
> Not mythical "material productive forces," but reason and ideas determine the course of human affairs. What is needed to stop the trend towards socialism and despotism is common sense and moral courage.

SUN MYUNG MOON — GREATEST INTELLECTUAL IN HISTORY

Sun Myung Moon is the greatest intellectual in human history. His words are the greatest breakthroughs in theological and philosophical thought. His words will eventually dominate the earth and will move mankind to build an ideal world. Kook Jin's speech "The Freedom Society" is

another great breakthrough that will revolutionize the world by uniting theology with Libertarian economics. Those liberal feminists in the Unification Church will not win because they do not have a book or books that logically prove their ideology is in sync with Father and the *Divine Principle*. I have books; they do not. I have presented so many quotes of Sun Myung Moon that show he is for patriarchy and not for a matriarchy that some Unificationists believe is the future. The future will be as I write because what I present in my books is reality. Kook Jin and Hyung Jin are strongly for 19th century American values. They are right and therefore Unificationists have to reject intellectuals like Robert Reich who at his website says he is against Republicans and Conservatives who he says want to "drag America back to the 19th Century." If you believe in the type of society America had for its first two hundred years (excepting slavery) and see that the last hundred years of women leaving the home and dominating men has been a disaster then you cannot be for a matriarchy that Women's Federation for World Peace is pushing for.

When Unificationists join the great conversation in the marketplace of ideas and push the idea that America's golden age was the 19th century we will upset Liberals like Robert Reich who deeply believe in Satan's idea that government provides a safety net instead of the Libertarian argument that private charity, philanthropy of individuals and altruistic organizations, will take care of those people who fall through the cracks. People like Reich may never understand or believe in the values of America's Founding Fathers and other Libertarian thinkers just as there are many people who simply cannot understand or believe in the *Divine Principle* when they hear and read it. But minorities rule and all we need to turn the world around and get it going on the right road is to get that powerful minority in leadership positions in society. I don't have the space to go into all the arguments Liberals and Socialists like Reich make but Unificationists need to confront their illogical but passionately held beliefs. In his book *Beyond Outrage* Robert Reich gives some of the commonly held beliefs of those possessed by Satan and low spirit world. He writes that the Right "would like to return America to the 1920s—before Social Security, unemployment insurance, labor laws, the minimum wage….Many would like to take the nation back to the late nineteenth century—before the federal income tax, antitrust laws, the Pure Food and Drug Act, and the Federal Reserve." He sees these as progressive and advanced and those who want to abolish them as regressive and heartless. Almost everything he says is wrong.

Reich says Conservatives and Libertarians like William Graham Sumner's belief in Social Darwinism, of social survival of the fittest. He believes Charles Murray is an example of a modern day Social Darwinist, "Read the writings of the current darling of conservative intellectuals, the sociologist Charles Murray, and you find the same philosophy at work. In his latest book, *Coming Apart*, Murray attributes the decline of the white working class to what he sees as their loss of traditional values of diligence and hard work." … "Not until the twentieth century did America reject social Darwinism. We built safety nets to catch Americans who fell downward, often through no fault of their own. We designed regulations to protect against the inevitable excesses of free-market greed. We taxed the rich and invested in public goods—public schools, public universities, public transportation, public health—that made us all better off. In short, we rejected the notion that each of us is on his or her own in a competitive contest for survival." Kook Jin and Hyung Jin correctly believe in the Libertarian worldview that these government intrusions in our lives have made our lives worse off. Reich says, "The Republican Party that emerged at the end of the twentieth century began to march backward to the nineteenth." To him "the Republican Party has become ideologically extreme, scornful of compromise." The truth is that the Left is extreme and we cannot compromise with our principles. We should not be intimidated by Reich's blasting criticism with words like "very narrow," "intolerant," "authoritarian." He criticizes conservative judges on the Supreme Court who treat "the Second Amendment as if America still relied on local militias." Well, we should. He says that when he was Secretary of Labor he testified to Congress and once a Republican senator "verbally

assaulted" him when he asked him, "Mr. Secretary, are you a socialist?" Reich likes to call himself a progressive but I call him a socialist because to me a socialist is one who believes in government providing a safety net which the U.S. government does and that has financially bankrupted America and damaged the psyche and morals of Americans

Welfare State intellectuals like Robert Reich have hurt so many people with their big government and free love propaganda but they are really evil because they love to use the guns of government to force people to do what they think everyone should do. Lew Rockwell says, "Anything other than free enterprise always means a society of compulsion and lower living standards, and any form of socialism strictly enforced means dictatorship and the total state. That this statement is still widely disputed only illustrates the degree to which malignant fantasy can capture the imagination of intellectuals."

SOCIALISM DESTROYS FAMILIES

Socialism destroys families. The majority of Black Americans vote for Democrats who have destroyed so many Black families with their welfare state ideology. The black libertarian, Walter E. Williams, says, "Historically, black families have been relatively stable. From 1880 to 1960, the proportion of black children raised in two-parent families held steady at about 70 percent; in 1925 Harlem, it was 85 percent. Today only 33 percent of black children benefit from two-parent families. In 1940, black illegitimacy was 19 percent; today it's 72 percent." On John Stossel's TV show he said, "The welfare state has done to black Americans what slavery could not have done, the harshest Jim Crow laws and racism could not have done, namely break up the black family. That is, today, just slightly over 30 percent of black kids live in two parent families. Historically, from 1870s on up to about 1940s, and depending on the city, 75 to 90 percent of black kids lived in two parent families. Illegitimacy rate is 70 percent among blacks where that is unprecedented in our history."

One of the many great writers and television personalities today for Libertarianism is Judge Andrew Napolitano. In his books he speaks the truth and Reich speaks Satan's lies in his books. More and more there are great books for freedom. I mention some of them in this book. I'll end by mentioning one by the Andrew Napolitano. A reviewer said this of his book about two Presidents of the U.S. who pushed for big government at the beginning of the 20th century titled *Theodore and Woodrow: How Two American Presidents Destroyed Constitutional Freedom:*

> America's founding fathers saw freedom as a part of our nature to be protected—not to be usurped by the federal government—and so enshrined separation of powers and guarantees of freedom in the Constitution and the Bill of Rights. But a little over a hundred years after America's founding, those God-given rights were laid siege by two presidents caring more about the advancement of progressive, redistributionist ideology than the principles on which America was founded.
>
> *Theodore and Woodrow* is Judge Andrew P. Napolitano's shocking historical account of how a Republican and a Democratic president oversaw the greatest shift in power in American history, from a land built on the belief that authority should be left to the individuals and the states to a bloated, far-reaching federal bureaucracy, continuing to grow and consume power each day.

DECENTRALIZE POWER TO THE FAMILY

Let's work to do the opposite of Theodore Roosevelt and Woodrow Wilson and "shift … power" from the state to the family. Let's teach the value of decentralization of power and trust the invisible hand of God in laissez-faire capitalism and trust the average person to create a self-regulating society. In *Money, Greed, and God: Why Capitalism Is the Solution and Not the*

Problem Jay Richards explains how "Many think that a free market will lead to chaos if left to its own devices, and that justice and order require that someone, usually the government, keep it in check. … Smith believed in God, so he saw this invisible hand of God's providence over human affairs, since it creates a more harmonious order than any human being could contrive. Although Austrian economist F.A. Hayek did not see God's providence in the market, he too, marveled at what he called its 'spontaneous order.'" Central planning does not work. Richards teaches that capitalism is of God, "The great eighteenth-century thinker Adam Smith considered this invisible hand of the market, which transcended human limitations, as an expression of God's benevolent and providential governance of human activity, since it created a more harmonious order than we would otherwise expect. If anything, we should expect, chaos and many critics of capitalism expect just that, even when they have the market order in plain sight." The cornerstone of the Unificationist vision of The Freedom Society is that Adam Smith's invisible hand in a laissez-faire capitalist society is the hand of God.

I challenge Unificationists to become fearless freedom fighters who fight the good fight to create a libertarian society, a freedom society, where we decentralize power and government to the family and local community.

CHAPTER SEVEN

TRINITIES

The seventh value is to live as trinities. Let's look at Father's exciting concept of trinities. In *Blessing and Ideal Family Part 2* he says:

> The trinity is made with three men or three women in our church. We create a trinity to make the representative form of Adam's three sons and three daughters-in-law to serve the Lord. When these three people cannot become one, there is the possibility for more destruction. Especially the three men should be united, spiritually and physically.
>
> The fall means the disunity of three brothers. That's why the Kingdom of Heaven cannot be established unless three brothers in unity manage one household according to the principle of restoration.
>
> If the members of a trinity cannot make mental unity, they cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven. The ideology of the Unification Church starts from here. The three who cannot be united mentally cannot register in the Kingdom of Heaven and cannot even look around it. And centering upon the oneness of the three, the minds of twelve people should be united into one.
>
> You cannot go the way of faith alone. You need a like-minded friend in faith. More than three people should be one. That's why a trinity is needed. The subject of human character, God, also wants the triple standard. God cannot teach human beings directly when they make mistakes. He cannot teach us vertically. But if three people become one, when one makes a mistake and the other two don't, He can instruct the mistaken one about what he did wrong. That's the reason God sent Jesus and the Holy Spirit.
>
> Grace comes quickly when more than three people pray in the mountains. After prayer the three should discuss with one another. If they discuss with others outside the trinity, Satan will invade.
>
> When there's a beautiful unity of the three in a true sense and people surrounding them become envious of them, God's will automatically multiplies. The new bud will blossom when there's unity among the three, even without God's help.
>
> Three people together can do anything, even in the outside world. Eight members should move together in our church. When a leader, leader's wife, three men and three women are one in a church, nothing can destroy it. This is an iron rule. Because everyone has the mission to prepare this restored form, Father organized trinities.
>
> The mission of the trinity is to be a good example in the family and in the church, and to be responsible for the economy. The trinity should be completely one. When there's a crack in the trinity, the ideology of the Kingdom of Heaven is destroyed.

Then what should the trinity do from now on? One representative family should be selected in each trinity. The selected family is an absolute heavenly family of which God dreams. It represents Father's family to the extent that other families should be absolutely obedient to this family; such a tradition should be established. And the families in a trinity should sincerely devote themselves in leading the church more than church leaders. The family also should be more frugal than others in dealing with material. Thus, our ideology aims toward the systematic formation of a social system and economic structure.

When one husband dies, the trinity should be responsible for the household of his family. From now on, we are to manage three households together; we are not to live alone. When the time comes, three households should be run together.

Consider Father's words as life itself. Be absolutely obedient. Originally the trinity should live together more than three years. The trinity should feel the same even if they exchange their babies. If you feel troubled about this, you will fail. Don't worry if a husband of one family in the trinity dies. In that case, the remaining two families should be responsible.

When Satan recognizes the condition that I loved Cain as much as I loved Abel, then he will go away. When rearing the babies of your trinity partners, you should be two or three times more devoted than with your own babies. If the trinity cannot make oneness, how can we create world unity?

If you neglect the trinity and just focus on your family's well-being, you will perish.

Originally one family of a trinity is to be responsible for three households, and the remaining two families are to witness.

The Unification Church uses the noun "family member" (Korean: shik ku). We are all brothers centering upon the trinity. You should repent that you haven't fulfilled this.

Trinities should live together with deep feeling. The families in a trinity in turn should take responsibility for the trinity household one year out of every three. Without establishing the Kingdom of Heaven of the family, we cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. You are in the position of the Messiah who can save the whole family.

Even though three couples gave birth to children, they should be able to rear them as one couple. When you can do so, heartistic unification is possible. Father's heart, Adam's heart and Jesus' heart should be one. If the trinity cannot become like that, you will not be able to stand in the Kingdom of Heaven.

Three families shouldn't fight one another, each centering upon their own children. If that occurs, all should repent. You should be able to move twelve directions while living in one place.

One family in a trinity should be in charge during one season; each family in turn should be the responsible center to lead three families' living. In case of building a

house, the house should be able to accommodate three families. The trinity is absolutely necessary.

You should be a good example in church and on the economic stage, centering upon the trinity. You should never be dominated by money. The nation which is dominated by money perishes.

Women are capricious, aren't they? It is the right time for them to be really fickle now. Women want to live only with their spouses, right? Unless we destroy this standard, world unity is impossible. You have to understand this point.

The reason that a clan cannot live together is because of the women. The daughter-in-law who doesn't like her parents-in-law will be a miserable mother-in-law. This creates mutual sadness. To solve this, everything should be reversed.

The three wives of a trinity should be one, so Father disciplines you right now to become one. From now on, twelve families should live together in one house; and then 120 families or 1,200 families should live in one house. You shouldn't fight at all even though you live in the same village. When fighting takes place, a tribal conference should be held to punish the ones who fight. Such a time will come.

Father has disciplined you on a family level. From now on an apartment will come into being to train you on the family level. I'm talking about the modern dwelling, the apartment building. We will make a house which can accommodate more than seven families, so that people can experience collective life and modem life for several months. Such disciplining, residential apartments will come about. Do you understand?

All of you should graduate from such a training school. Three generations are to live together in the apartment. They are to eat and study together. The eight members of the family are to enter the Kingdom of Heaven centering upon the parents. Can a family having less than eight members enter the Kingdom of Heaven?

How many people are there when you add parents and the trinity? (Eight people.) Without setting up the foundation for these eight family members to become one, you cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. This is Principle, isn't it? If that's the Principle, we should live according to it.

Children need other men nearby to see different aspects of God's masculinity and to see femininity in other women. If someone gets sick then there are others to help. In the Christian men's organization, Promise Keepers, a man wrote these similar thoughts in their magazine: "Too many men today are trying to go it alone in terms of their marriage and family life, their personal life, their work and their spiritual commitments. They are trying to scale mountains of Himalayan proportions solely on the strength of rugged independence. It won't work." He gives an analogy of a group of men scaling a mountain: "If a guy is linked to another guy above him, and that man in turn is linked to other men farther up the cliff, then together they have safety, stability and strength. If a man slips and begins to fall, 15 or 20 climbers absorb the impact and pull him back from disaster. But imagine a man climbing alone, with no support system. He may achieve great heights. But one wrong move and he can fall thousands of feet to his death, without so much as anyone hearing his cry. That's why Scripture says, 'Two are better than one because they have a

good return for their labor. For if either of them falls the one will lift up his companion. But woe to the one who falls when there is not another to lift him up' (Eccl. 4:9-10)." There is strength in numbers. There is so much sin and temptation in the world that I question if any man should ever spend time alone. By being with other good men all the time he will be less inclined or have less chances of succumbing to all the temptations of evil spirit world.

There are many advantages in living in a community. Children will never be bored because they will have lots of friends. It will be so exciting that no one will want to sleep. Women will not be alone. A man will have friends to help him make sure his home is safe and running smoothly. Because women should not be leading and guiding men, it is better for a man to get advice and be counseled, criticized and corrected by the other two men in the trinity.

There is a lot of addiction and relationship problems that would be solved if people lived as trinities in communities. Let's say a man got addicted to drugs. If he is in a trinity where he lives close to other men they will notice his problem and work to solve it. If necessary they will watch him like a hawk and not let him get drugs and find the source of his desire for drugs. When we live as lonely wagons instead of a wagon train we are too far away from each other to help each other. We must be intimate and close to each other if we are to truly help each other.

The following is from a seminar I attended on leadership in effective organizations:

> Lessons from Geese
>
> 1. As each bird flaps its wings, it creates an uplift for others behind it. There is 71% more flying range in a v-formation than flying alone.
> LESSON: People who share a common direction and sense of common purpose can get there quicker.
> 2. Whenever a goose flies out of formation it quickly feels the drag and tries to get back into position.
> LESSON: It's harder to do something alone than together.
> 3. When the lead goose gets tired, it rotates into the formation and another goose flies at the head.
> LESSON: Shared leadership and interdependence gives us each a chance to lead as well as opportunities to rest.
> 4. The geese in formation honk from behind to encourage those up front to keep up their speed.
> LESSON: We need to make sure our honking is encouraging and not discouraging.
> 5. When a goose gets sick or wounded and falls, two geese fall out and stay with it until it revives or dies. Then they catch up or join another flock.
> LESSON: Stand by your colleagues in difficult times as well as in good.

Three families should live within walking distance of each other and have dinner together. Then trinities can live next to other trinities and have dinner together every night in a common house such as cohousing communities have. Common houses will be used every day and replace the traditional churches that are used only on Sunday. Leaders in the community will be democratically elected and not appointed by bureaucrats at headquarters in Washington D.C. Power will be decentralized to communities and led by men who are unpaid volunteers.

Father often speaks of how we should live as three generations. By living in trinities children will have a better chance of having elderly people in their lives. If their grandparents die the children will have others to take their place. In a community women can care for the elderly who would normally be put in a nursing home. Father often speaks against nursing homes. The ideal is for

everyone to be born and die in loving communities instead of being born in germ-infested hospitals with doctors often wanting to use the scalpel and dying in nursing homes that can't compare to the loving care of relatives and friends. The average woman can learn the skills to be midwives or midwives' helpers and to care for the elderly.

Dr. Robert Mendelsohn writes in his book *Confessions of a Medical Heretic* that it is unhealthy to live away from relatives and friends: "Since few American families live with or close to other relatives, the mother is physically removed from the solace and support her mother or grandmother could provide." He says this is a "recipe for making a mother at least neurotic and at worse crazy." This is one of the reasons we read tragic stories of mothers abusing children. He says, "Since there's no one to help her in the home, the woman tries to save herself by escaping from the home. In many cases, the strain on the husband and the wife is so great when they have only each other to look to as both the cause and the solution of their problems that the marriage ends in divorce. Or, less drastically, the woman wastes no time finding a 'fulfilling' job outside the home. Either way, the child is shunted off to a day-care center." Father does not want any woman to be lonely. He has devised a brilliant plan called trinities where three or four families live next to and help each other.

TRINITIES—THE ULTIMATE INSURANCE PLAN

Trinities are like a back-up. Trinities are the ultimate insurance plan. If a woman cannot be there because she is ill or even if she dies, the other women will make sure her children always have breakfast, lunch and dinner. If a man becomes incapacitated and cannot lead, provide and protect his family then there will be other men to take his place. Father is never alone. We should not live alone. We cannot do it alone. Let's live as a team. Human history has been tragic and frightening. Millions of men have gone off to war and left their wives alone. They didn't know about the wonderful concept of trinities that Father has brought to save the family from evil that wants to divide and conquer.

One of the greatest problems in America is fatherless homes. Millions of children who live in homes of single mothers and widows are deprived of having a man live close by who is a father figure. There is so much hurting in the world because of men not being in children's lives and there are many men who are doing poorly at being a husband and father and need help from other men. It is noble that millions of men have left their homes to fight for America and to help other countries achieve freedom and democracy, but men are challenged to organize their homes so that when they protect their country and fight for world peace away from their home that their wife and children are being protected also. A man's primary duty is to make sure his wife and children feel safe and secure.

A widow or single mother should be adopted by and taken care of by a trinity. Single women without children who join and do not have a blood related male such as a father or brother in the movement should be adopted by a trinity. I think that men should strive to be successful at earning enough money so they can provide for these women. Let's become famous for being a religious movement that protects women and children. Women need to understand that they are to be taken care of by men. Women need to focus on having a man or a trinity of men care for her and not focus on taking care of herself by building a business or career. God gave men the responsibility to provide for the girls and women in their lives. Adult sons should not allow their mothers to work in the marketplace. Fathers should not allow their daughters to work at fast food restaurants. Uncles should not allow their nieces to wear the pants and gun of a police officer or the dark brown t-shirt of an Army soldier like Private Lynndie England wore when she humiliated Arab men in the prison in Iraq. Brothers should not let their sister be raped by enemy soldiers like 19-year-old Private Jessica Lynch was in the Iraq war. These two women dramatically show how pathetic and uncivilized men are in America including their fathers and the Commander-in-Chief

of the Army that encourages women to wear men's clothing and earn money in a war zone fighting a vicious enemy that brutally rapes and kills women prisoners-of-war.

In the May, 1995 *Unification News* Michael Craig wrote an article called "Garden Homes: A New Approach to Housing Ourselves." He wrote that, "It would be impossible to succeed in our collective mission unless we pulled together" but unfortunately there is no "consensus on how this could be accomplished." The members in Detroit only met "on Sundays and special occasions. As each family became involved in the struggle to feed, clothe and shelter themselves, there was little time and energy left to promote a significant transformation of our collective social environment. In this regard, the concept 'where two or more are gathered' took on a new meaning for me. Single families existing miles apart would never succeed in bringing about the kind of radical change implied by True Parent's tradition. However, a physical community (minimum of four families) could perhaps generate enough 'critical mass' to tilt the scales."

"Perhaps what inspires me most about this idea, however, is the potential to develop a daily environment for our children to experience the intensity of joyful give and take as comes only through a physically based God-centered community (remember that first weekend workshop, gathering with brothers and sisters to sing songs and share testimonies?). Although we have wandered many years in the wasteland of this 'misdirected' world, do we wish the same for our children? I believe Father has tried to teach us we can enter the direct dominion of God's love only as a community. To commune from afar, or merely 'in the spirit' appears to me insufficient. Such thinking is not the Completed Testament."

This sure sounds great to me. Let's do it. The problem of course is that these couples must love each other. Families could begin the process by visiting each other's house and have potluck. Over time, if they gel then they can get the finances and commitment to live together. This brother's "vision" was families eating together in a community dining room and having room for gardens. He says there would be great savings and mutual aid by having "cooperation in food buying, baby-sitting, and a hundred other details of everyday life. There could be co-sharing of big ticket items such as lawnmowers, power tools, etc., as well. It is easy to imagine parents (and older children) having weekly meetings in the community dining area (perhaps over dinner) to discuss ways to cooperate to further reduce the economic burden of raising families. This would free each to devote more time to witnessing and teaching." I agree.

Later in this book I talk about the exciting trend of what is called "Home Church" or "House Churches". There are millions of Christians worldwide giving up the traditional church building, pastor and youth programs. They are meeting in homes or other non-traditional places to worship together. Some of them are creating close-knit communities. Christian Smith writes in *Going to the Root: Nine Proposals for Radical Church Renewal* how he lives in one:

> The church today is often tired, lacking vision, and mired in bureaucratic structures. This book suggests an alternative. The church can return to its roots. It can draw fresh vision from the Bible, the early church, and the growing worldwide movement of house churches and Christian communities. ... Most churches today don't need mere revival or rejuvenation—they need serious overhaul. "Repairs in the road are useless if the road is heading in the wrong direction."

His first proposal is "Build Intentional Christian Community":

> Unfortunately, many churches believe these ideas in the abstract. But because their structures and practices obstruct the actual experience of Christian community, they encourage casual and sometimes even shallow relationships. Far too many Christians only see each other a few hours a week on Sunday

mornings (and maybe Wednesday evenings).

During the week such Christians live their separate lives, like every other person in society, busy with commitments to a host of other people and organizations. "Fellowship" then becomes little more than a few Sunday morning handshakes, occasional chats over coffee and cookies, and a yearly church picnic. ... Radical church renewal changes this. It builds Christian [Unificationist] community.

People often confuse living in community and living communally. Living in community does not require sharing living quarters and bank accounts. ... Community does require sharing life. And this requires that Christians [Unificationists] live near each other and share many of the routines of daily life.

Christian Smith is a college sociology teacher. He has a PhD in sociology from Harvard and has gone to Harvard Divinity School and other seminaries. He writes that he lives in a church community:

In the church community I belong to, most of us live in the same town. Many members have intentionally bought houses and rented apartments near each other. In my neighborhood cluster, five church families own or rent houses on one street corner.

This makes it possible and natural to interact daily. We don't have to schedule meetings and drive our cars to see each other. We run into each other on our front porches. Living next to each other makes it easy and natural to take care of each other's children, to eat dinner together spontaneously, to play badminton after work, to share the newspaper. It also makes it more likely that we know when one of us is going through a difficult time and needs help, prayer, or support.

Living in community can involve sharing possessions. For example, four families in our neighborhood cluster bought a lawn mower together. Others in our church community have purchased cars, boats, and tools together. ... living in community also means helping each other work on our houses. ... Community is also built and enjoyed through celebrations. Our community uses almost any excuse to get together to eat, drink, dance, and generally enjoy each other. We have as many wedding showers, housewarming parties, baby showers, graduation parties, birthday parties, and holiday celebrations as possible. Our New Year Eve's party is especially important.

Christian community means that we share the difficult and tragic events of life. We grieve with and try to support people in families that break apart. We open our lives and homes to people with emotional difficulties who need a safe environment. We financially support people who can't afford medications they need. We stand with and pray for healing for the member with a terminal illness. We struggle toward reconciliation when there is anger, betrayal, or frustration. In the end, through good and bad, thick and thin, we try to press on in life together.

Our culture and society do not generally encourage community—but individualistic autonomy. ... the ideas of community—commitment, accountability, trust, personal openness, long-term relationships, and sacrifice—make little sense. Instead, it makes sense to think of church as a voluntary association we commute to. ... Christians [Unificationists] who want to live out the community to which the Bible calls them will thus have to do it consciously and intentionally. They will have to understand that in this society Christian community is an alien, alternative reality that must be purposefully pursued and cultivated. Some Christian communities prepare written covenants as a specific way of being intentional. These

> are documents which objectively describe the kind of relationships these bodies are committed to. ... The community I belong to, for example, has a written description of our covenant relationships.

There is a fascinating book called *CoHousing* by Charles Durrett and Kathryn McCamant that shows beautiful colored pictures of communities that share a communal dining room called the "common house." At the website www.cohousing.org they give this brief definition: "What is Cohousing? Cohousing is the name of a type of collaborative housing that attempts to overcome the alienation of modern subdivisions in which no-one knows their neighbors, and there is no sense of community. It is characterized by private dwellings with their own kitchen, living-dining room etc., but also extensive common facilities. The common house may include a large dining room, kitchen, lounges, meeting rooms, recreation facilities, library, workshops, childcare.

"Usually, cohousing communities are designed and managed by the residents, and are intentional neighborhoods: the people are consciously committed to living as a community; the physical design itself encourages that and facilitates social contact. The typical cohousing community has 20 to 30 single family homes along a pedestrian street or clustered around a courtyard. Residents of cohousing communities often have several optional group meals in the common house each week.

"This type of housing began in Denmark in the late 1960s, and spread to North America in the late 1980s. There are now more than a hundred cohousing communities completed or in development across the United States." Cohousing is not like socialist communes or hippie communes. Everyone owns their own home. One of the great things about cohousing communities is that they are usually on acres of ground so that everyone has access to nature. Father has often spoken of how cities are not a good place to live. He says we should live in nature so we can feel God more and our children are safer physically and spiritually.

By banding together in communities we could have a swimming pools for males, for females and for individual families. We could have a music room with instruments and a greenhouse to provide fresh, organic vegetables and flowers year round. Instead of spending time aimlessly walking around malls and finding joy in shopping in cities, young people would be spiritually nourished by living in nature. Father often explains how he gains insight into life because of his observations of nature. Instead of shopping for eggs at a grocery store a community could supply all its eggs by having chickens. A community could have animals such as a horse. When guests come and see heavenly communities they will want to live with us or go and build their own. The four men on Mt. Rushmore grew up in nature. It had an important part in their growth and greatness. Father tells stories of his youth spent growing up in nature. The Messiah is handicapped because the men in our movement were not educated in a way that fosters genius like our Founding Fathers. We need schools in our community that are close to nature so our children will receive a heavenly education. Father says, "You should also love dirt and also sweat for it. You should grow vegetables in the field, look after animals and plant trees." (*Way Of Unification Part 2)*

CRITIQUE OF CO-HOUSING

Allan Carlson is president of The Howard Center for Family, Religion & Society. In a speech titled, "Family-Centered Neighborhoods: The Building Blocks of Vibrant Towns and Cities" presented in the "Cities of God" 2007-08 Lecture Series, The John Jay Institute for Faith, Society and Law, Colorado Springs, Colorado, April 17, 2008 he criticizes Co-Housing saying: Also relative to families and children, an interesting variation of the New Urbanism is called Co-Housing. The idea of building community through Co-Housing emerged in Denmark during the 1970's, and came to America through the advocacy of Kathryn McCamant and Charles Durrett. As to location, Co-Housing projects are quite adaptable: from abandoned factory, or "brownfield,"

sites in central cities to exurban locales in the countryside. They usually involve 20 to 40 residence units around shared open space with a prominent Common House. While quite open to children, Co-Housing advocates insist that they "espouse no ideology," nor target any particular family type.[26] And, broadly speaking, this seems to be true. According to news reports, for example, CoHousing enthusiasts include both stay-at-home wives and mothers[27] and aging gay women.[28] CoHousing so distinguishes itself from "intentional communities" that build on a common political ideology, social vision, or shared religion.

"All the same, the CoHousing movement might be seen as a compromise between the 'suburban' and 'collective' models that I described earlier. Where the contemporary suburban home is strenuously 'private' and the Myrdal House largely collectivized, the prominent Common Building found in a CoHousing neighborhood provides opportunities for group interaction and shared tasks on a flexible basis. Where the Myrdal house was organized as a cooperative without true ownership, CoHousing residents commonly own their homes, as found in the suburbs. Where the collective kitchen and nursery of the Myrdal house used paid specialists to provide community food and child care, a CoHousing neighborhood normally relies on volunteer or exchange labor to prepare group dinners and to care for the toddlers, creating a different dynamic.

"Where the suburban home was built around the full-time homemaker and the Collective House around universal adult employment, the CoHousing neighborhood seems to satisfy and support both the parent-at-home and the working mother. As one of the former reports: 'Stay-at-home moms often feel isolated and overwhelmed when their children are little. In a cohousing project like ours, there are always people around to offer help and provide female company.'[29] And a CoHousing profile of 'Anne,' a working mother, explains: 'Instead of frantically trying to put together a nutritious dinner, Anne can relax now, spend some time with her children, and then eat with her family in the common house.'[30] Assuming such reports are representative, these are encouraging results.

"The key to CoHousing success seems to lie in the rigorous planning and design process and in ongoing community governance, where numerous meetings, long discussions, and decisions by consensus drive out the uncommitted and the troublemakers and also create levels of openness, mutual awareness, and trust that make community living possible. Neither the typical American suburban environment, nor the Myrdal Collective House model, nor a conventional New Urbanist development have had mechanisms in place to construct this new sort of 'village mentality.'"

"And yet, I would argue that there exists a common weakness and lost opportunity in all these models. Suburban America, the Myrdal Collective House, the New Urbanism, and even CoHousing communities all accept as a given the radical separation of work and home introduced by industrialization. Each approach looks for ways to reassemble family homes shorn of productive functions. All accept and accommodate industrialism, rather than challenge it; all accept the weakened, non-productive family as a given.

"The truly exciting prospect for the 21st Century actually lies in the opportunity to undo the industrial revolution....at least in certain ways, and to the benefit of the natural family. Even CoHousing advocates seem to forget that the true pre-industrial village was more than a place to eat, sleep, and recreate. As noted at the outset, the authentic village was also a place to work, to make things, and to provide services.

"Jane Jacobs had a sense of this. In pointing to the matriarchies emerging in the urban housing projects of her time, she commented: 'Working places...must be mingled right in with residences if men...are to be around city children in daily life.' Today, she would add 'women' as well. Jacobs also blasted planning and zoning that insisted on 'segregating dwellings from work,' calling instead for "conditions that stimulate minglings'[31] of places of employment next to homes. In my view, she simply did not take the last step: moving employment back into the home.

"A writer who did advocate this was the mid-20th Century Swiss economist Wilhelm Roepke, author of *A Humane Economy*. Sounding much like Thomas Jefferson, Roepke noted that the small family farmer 'who is unburdened by debt and has an adequate holding is the freest and

most independent man among us.' Importantly, he added that the family farm household also showed 'that a type of family is possible which gives each member a productive function, and thus becomes a community for life, solving all problems of education and age groups in a natural manner.' Accordingly, Roepke concluded that the restoration of true human liberty depended on 'rendering the working and living conditions of the industrial worker as similar to the positive aspects of the life of the peasant as possible.'[32] To accomplish this, he urged: – that the basic education of children be restored to families; – that public policy assist all families in gaining true ownership of a homestead and substantial garden; – that a "genuine decentralization" of the population occur through "the creation of fresh small centres in lieu of the big cities," with the Swiss villages of his adopted home as a model; – and that contemporary inventors and technologists "serve decentralization instead of centralization, [enabling] the greatest possible number of independent [family] existences and giving back to human beings as producers and workers a state of affairs which would make them happy and satisfy their...most legitimate instincts."[33]

Carlson goes on to say, "I contend that this counter-revolution looking to restore function-rich, productive homes is actually well-advanced in America. It can be seen in: – home schools, where the educational function — after 150 years of operating on an industrial model — has returned to the hearth for well over two million American children.
– home businesses, most of them encouraged and sustained by the great new commercial democracy of the internet which are becoming the digital equivalent of the old artisan's shop; by one count, over 30 million home businesses may now exist in America, the majority run by women.
– telecommuting, which means that even large commercial enterprises of a certain sort can go "virtual," ranging from magazine publishing to brokerages to medical record-keeping to product design to higher education."

He ends by saying, "Similar technological gifts of the digital age open prospects for the return of professional offices to homes; among dentists, family doctors, lawyers, and the like. The external barriers to this today are artificial: stifling professional rules; zoning laws; and restrictive housing covenants. These can all be changed, most easily for new developments." 26 Kathryn McCamant and Charles Durrett, "Building a CoHousing Community [1989];" at http://www.context.org/ICLIB/IC21/McCamant.htm, pp. 2-3. 27 Danielle Crawford Skov, "The New Neighborhood: CoHousing and Families," Mothering: Natural Family Living 111 (March/April 2002). 28 Marsha King, "Elder Co-Housing Project is Aimed at Gay Women," *The Seattle Times* (June 17, 2007). 29 Skov, "The New Neighborhood;" and Aminatta Forna, "CoHo: The Ultimate Nineties Lifestyle," The (London) Independent (Sept. 7, 1997). 30 McCamant and Durrett, "Building a CoHousing Community," p. 3. 31 Jacobs, *The Death and Life of Great American Cities*, pp. 84, 175. 32 Wilhelm Roepke, *The Social Crisis of Our Time* (New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction, 1992): 201-216, 221, 226. 33 Wilhelm Roepke, *The Moral Foundations of Civil Society* (New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction, 1996): 163, 173, 178.

Sun Myung Moon talked about how communities are efficient in a speech saying: "In the future the world inevitably will use resources frugally, not wastefully. We will save resources; they are not unlimited. There need not be cooking in every house. There can be a village bakery, utilizing minimal resources for maximum product. You can make your own particular dish, but make a lot to share with other people. If everyone does that, then no one has to cook every day. In fact you would have to cook only a few days a year. And there would be a system by which a hot meal would be on your table within fifteen minutes of your ordering it. You would just enter your order into a computer, and it would be delivered to your doorstep" (1-1-90).

How about this idea for a goal? Let's live in loving communities where a group of families share a dining room in a common house. The sisters rotate and prepare nutritious meals. Just as a five star hotel never misses a meal, neither do we. It doesn't matter at a hospital what goes on in the lives

of the people, there will always be appropriate meals for everyone. And no matter what happens in our communities, no matter if there is someone delivering a baby or there is a funeral or some are visiting other communities, there will always be breakfast, lunch and dinner. And those meals will be better than what presidents of nations have. Our food will be grown organically with love. I don't think we can say we live in a community until that happens. If we live like this the news will spread. There has never been a successful religious community that ate like this and the news media will pounce on it like a bear to honey. Guests who visit will feel the kingdom of heaven. The key is not just that it is absolutely on time and everything is clean and organized, but that the food is prepared with love by people who are spiritually high.

Father says, "When you are in a happy environment, eating a humble meal prepared by sincere, loving hands, you have no problem. When you eat food seasoned with love, it nourishes your body and makes you happy and healthy. Food that is prepared with hatred and eaten in the company of grudging, complaining, swearing people contains spiritual poison and causes indigestion."

PERMANENT LOCATION

Families may have to move sometimes but I agree with Mrs. Andelin in her book *All About Raising Children* when she writes that it is best not to: "Keeping the family in a permanent location is an ideal to work for."

Let's create magnificent families that exercise wise leadership so those who are in the position of following can wholeheartedly do so with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Let's build heavenly families that live by Father's words. He teaches that principled families greet the grandparents first when they enter the home:

> You need to develop a consciousness of tradition.
>
> For instance, the first time you enter a room each day, you should smile at your family members, but in a distinct order. First, you smile at your father expressing love and respect; then you smile at your mother; and finally at your wife. You don't smile at your wife and talk to her first, ignoring your father and mother until later. Americans do not even think of such things, do you? You think, "Just you and me. We don't need our parents. We don't need children until we have planned for them." But such attitudes have no place. God cannot dwell in such families. (8-30-87)

No one should do their finances and make major decisions all by themselves. Father hates individualism:

> Individualism is what God hates the most and what Satan likes best. (12-5-87)
>
> The fall, in a sense, introduced a disease into God's body and ideal, as Adam and Eve acted like God's enemies. Can you imagine how much God's heart suffered as He watched this taking place? The human fall is the grave in which you bury yourself. ... It was the root of free sex as well as the origin of individualism. What kind of nation is America today? It has become a nation of extreme individualism, a nation whose people are pursuing private interests.
>
> What is the goal of such extreme individualists? They abandon Heaven and Earth, the world, the nation, society, their extended family and even their grandparents.
>
> The original mind does not want to protect this extreme individualism and ridiculous exaltation of privacy. The original mind wants to live receiving love from the universe, the nation, our village and our parents. (8-1-96)
>
> What about the American youth? American young people are still swimming in the

midst of individualism.

> This physical world is a horizontal world, but kingship involves developing the vertical concept of a God-given king. Finally, we will reach the level of God, the ultimate stage, and build total, absolute unity with Him. We are talking about absolute unity, not separation. On this level, there is unity in the center, from top to bottom, and in all directions. That's the final stage, the restoration of kingship. The literal translation of the phrase is: "restoration of the realm of the king's right."
>
> [A] sign of Satan's world is the focus on privacy and individualism. As a result of the human fall, people are self-centered. The concern for privacy and extreme individualism in America means that America is still protecting the fence which Satan put around his realm to protect it. However, we have to destroy this fence and get out of this hell. Because of the human fall, we lost everything. From the cosmos to the individual, and from individual to the cosmos, all levels were lost because of the human fall. Satan put a fence around you and gave you the term individualism, confining you within that terminology. If you are focused on individualism, it means you have lost everything; those who are concerned about privacy are defending themselves from the surrounding world. They are totally separate from God's position and are living in a hell on earth, with no center for their lives. Having no individual center, no family, no nation, no world, no cosmos and no ideal, people have lost everything. (4-23-95)
>
> Do ordinary American brides have the concept of individualism or entire familyism? (Individualism.) (6-23-96)

Let's now talk a little about how our communities should not be socialist. They need to be based on respect for private property and capitalism. There is a famous phrase "Build it and they will come." In *Heaven on Earth: the Rise and Fall of Socialism* Joshua Muravchik writes, "After so much hope and struggle, and so many lives sacrificed around the world, socialism's epitaph turned out to be: If you build it, they will leave." Our communities will be based on private property. Unificationists need to build communities that are so in line with spiritual law that not only do people flock to it in greater numbers than those who join the Mormon Church, but they do not leave. And we are so powerful that new converts enthusiastically bring new people who in turn bring more.

We are idealistic but also realistic. Throughout human history there have been attempts of well-meaning people to make loving communities. All utopian communities have failed in the past because they were socialist like Robert Owen's short lived communities in the 19th century. His books on socialism were bestsellers but like all socialists his ideology is intellectually bankrupt. People are hurt by following them. Another well-meaning but naive socialist in the 19th century was Charles Kingsley in England who started a movement called Christian Socialism. If the organization the Unification Church was godly then those in authority to edit the *Exposition of the Divine Principle* would remove the praise for Owen and Kingsley and replace it with praise for Adam Smith and Thomas Jefferson. The *Divine Principle* book sold at HSAbooks.com, *Exposition of the Divine Principle*, contains several major false statements and needs to be rewritten.

Edward Bellamy wrote a best-seller *Looking Backward* that sold over a million copies. Books are powerful and have moved people to change their lives. His books inspired many people to accept socialism. There were many Bellamy Clubs. A group of people in Washington state in 1887 tried to build a community based on Bellamy's novels. They named their socialist utopia—The Equality Colony. They got the name from Bellamy's novel, *Equality*. They felt their colony would

inspire the people of Washington state to make the whole state socialist.

Within a year, they had over 300 people living in Equality. Typical of all socialist utopias, women work outside the home and children are cared for by others. The center of their community was the communal dining hall where they held their meetings and voted on leaders and projects. Of course, it quickly fell apart in a few years because people were lured away by better jobs and pay than they got there.

Another example of socialist failure is the socialist communities in Israel called Kibbutz. Robert Bork wrote in *Slouching Toward Gomorrah*, "The early kibbutz movement in Israel had the same ideology as today's radical feminists: sexual equality meant sexual identity, and sexual differentiation was inequality. For a brief period, the ideologues attempted to raise children apart from their families and to raise boys and girls in ways that would destroy sex roles. The program was as extreme as the most radical feminist could want. But it collapsed within a very few years. Boys and girls returned to different sex roles. The American sociologist Melford Spiro, who studied the kibbutz, wrote that he had wanted to 'observe the influence of culture on human nature or, more accurately, to discover how a new culture produces a new human nature.' He 'found (against my own intentions) that I was observing the influence of human nature on culture.'" Socialism fights human nature and the laws of the universe. Free enterprise is God's way of economy. Our communities will work because we honor private property and capitalism.

In his brilliant book *Vindicating the Founders: Race, Sex, Class, and Justice in the Origins of America*, Thomas West writes: "many of the old stereotypes about men (more aggressive than females in all societies) and women are true. Solid research for this is found in hundreds of recent scientific studies, conveniently summarized in Ann Moir and David Jessel's *Brain Sex: The Real Difference between Men and Women*." Ann Moir also wrote *Why Men Don't Iron: Real Science of Gender Studies* that proves scientifically that men cannot iron clothes at home and do the work women naturally do in the home. There are deep innate differences between men and women.

In *Vindicating the Founders* West teaches that, "Nature points most women toward, and most men away from, the care of small children.... Most women naturally shy away from the intense, overt competition that leads to success in the job market and war."

"Israeli kibbutzim in the 1950s and 1960 attempted perhaps the most serious effort made to eliminate gender roles in society. Children and adults of both sexes wore the same clothes and were assigned the same tasks. The children lived and slept together in common areas and played with the same toys. But as the years went by, the traditional sexual differences began to assert themselves. Adolescent girls insisted on undressing in the dark and kept their living areas cleaner. They preferred indoor work, such as staffing the children's living quarters, and courses like psychology. Boys were more aggressive, gravitated toward studies like physics, and took on the harder farming jobs. The adult women opened a beauty parlor. Men began to dominate in the leadership role in the commune." Socialism/feminism doesn't work because it is Satan's ultimate lie.

Father explains that women are a key to making unity in the family. In the following excerpt from a speech he teaches that women have great power in the family. Men should respect that and follow their lead in many instances when women correctly perform their job of being architects of intimacy:

> Sung Jin Nim's mother [Sun Myung Moon's first wife] and True Mother must not fight; they must love each other. Jacob's desire was Rachel, but he was given Leah. Laban who is on Satan's side gave him Leah. Jacob thought he was married to Rachel, but in the morning found out it was Leah. He then had to work another 7

years. How can you call this justice? When the children were born, was this something Jacob wanted? Rachel and Leah fought each other. In order for them to be on God's side, they must love each other from God's point of view. If Father had been there, he could have taught Jacob one word and he would not have had to make this mistake.

Leah was the first daughter and Rachel the second. So centering on Laban's wife they should have become one, but Laban's wife did not take care of this. Jacob with Leah had 10 sons and Jacob with Rachel had 2 sons. If these two had made harmony, the children would have united too. They all had the same father; they should all have united. But because these two women fought each other, they divided into ten children and two children later on, and then the 12 tribes divided into ten and two. The unity couldn't come because of women. Women failed to bring unity among their sons.

In Jesus' time, John the Baptist and Jesus, and Jesus' mother Mary and John's mother Elizabeth, should have become one. Similar to the situation centering on Jacob, everyone should have united with Zechariah. Who is the father of Jesus? According to this principle Zechariah should be the father. Father doesn't know, but the logic from the Bible is unmistakable. John the Baptist was Jesus' elder brother. All they have to do was unite, then everything would automatically have become one. If this had happened would John the Baptist have betrayed Jesus? (No). The key was here. What was the most important thing for Jesus? To get married. Who would have been the likely candidate? John the Baptist had a sister. Or, it doesn't have to have been like that-if there were someone very close to Jesus, and if she had married Jesus, still it would have worked. This would have been an automatic realm of unification on a world level. That's what God intended.

If Mary and Elizabeth had become one and Jesus and John had become one, they would have protected Jesus and he would not have died. They could have embraced the East and the Roman empire. The world would have been restored. When this victory was established, the restoration would have happened easily. India and China would have followed. Christianity and Jesus could have easily restored the orient and then gone to the west.

God works the restoration through a formula, and so will we. We all have grandmothers, aunts and cousins. If these women play the crucial role and bring unity, things will happen easily. It is so difficult for a daughter-in-law to attain unity with her mother-in-law. But if women know such a principle, they can bring unity. It is also difficult for a brother-in-law to love his sister-in-law, but once we know this and are trained, we do not want to fight; we will bring peace.

In the history of restoration, when women spoke loudly, or when women had a voice, always there were complications. This is a result of the fall. So, during this restoration time of history, women have to be obedient and feel reserved. This is a virtue. That was the beginning of the fall, because Eve asserted herself. So to go backwards, she has to be unusually obedient.

If there is any group who hates this course the most, you guessed it, it's American women. But you must enforce this 100% and more. American women have a tremendous edge. If American women decide to follow this direction, everybody will follow. That's true. Father isn't criticizing these American women here today. You are the ones who can show the first example in history. You American women here have an internal content completely different than outside American women.

You must be the banner bearers, the flag bearers. After being born again and resurrecting, a woman leads to all levels of liberation.

Actually, Eve was the key to the fall. Therefore, it is dependent largely upon women to restore.

In divorce, who is the cause? Women. Why? Because they are less tolerant. They express complaint faster than men. About 75% is the woman's fault, because they pack up faster. That's true. They don't like it and they pack up. They thought it was an act giving them freedom, but the result was staggering. They not only destroyed their family, but destroyed the entire world because everyone followed their pattern.

So this is an inevitable conclusion. In order to do this, who plays the key role? Women. Who becomes the key person to attain unity among the family, and all levels? Women. Women play the key role. The *Divine Principle* agrees: because women failed, they must now restore. Everything checks.

Women fell and they lost God and True Parents too. Now it is up to her to restore God and the True Parents. She must love even the satanic world people, just like her own husband and just like her own father and mother. So, that movement is the movement of the Women's Federation for World Peace. The women become one with their children and one with the husband, and thus the family is restored. Mothers play the key role. Become one with the True Parents' family and inherit the tradition from that family. In outside families, the mother and children must get together and save the father. After you are blessed, you must become completely one with True Mother and connect with the True Parents' family. When this happens, liberation takes place and heaven comes. (2-1-93)

I recommend the following DVDs on community:

1. *Cohousing: Neighborhoods for People* (www.eldercohousing.org)
2. *Visions of Utopia Video* by Geoph Kozeny (www.ic.org)
3. *Voices of Cohousing: Building Small Villages in the City* (www.notsocrazy.net)

In 1630 John Winthrop had a vision that the puritans would create a religious community that would inspire the world saying, "We will be as a city upon a hill. The eyes of all people are upon us." He alluded to Jesus saying in the Sermon on the Mount "You are the light of the world. A city set on a hill cannot be hid." A core value of true Unificationists is to live in communities that take responsibility for caring for babies and the elderly instead of having babies in hospitals and putting the grandparents in nursing homes. When the UM lives like that then they will naturally witness and gain millions of members quickly and then the whole world will join. Nobody wants to witness and nobody cares to join the UM because Unificationists now live individualist lives like everyone else and they are massively wrong in thinking they should build mega churches like Rick Warren's Saddleback Church. He has not set the pattern we should follow. In his autobiography Father says nothing about church buildings. He does not give sermons at some church building on Sundays. He teaches in his home just as we should do. He talks about families who love each other and show it by taking care of grandparents, even if they are senile. He writes: "Many Western people live truly lonely lives. Their children leave home once they turn eighteen, and the parents may only get to see their faces at Thanksgiving or Christmas. Many children never visit their parents to just find out how they are doing. Once people marry, they live with their spouse, independent from their family, until their parents become so old they can no longer take care of themselves. At that point, they move into a nursing home. So it is understandable that some Westerners envy the culture of the East. Many elderly people in the West think, "In the East, the

grandparents live in the family as the senior members of the family, and it is really wonderful. The children respect their old parents. This is how people are supposed to live. What good is it to be lying in a nursing home, not able to see my children, not even knowing what day it is, just staying alive?"

"Unfortunately, though, the Eastern family structure is also gradually deteriorating. We too are abandoning traditions that have been handed down to us for thousands of years. We have thrown away our traditional clothing, our food, and our family structure. The number of senior citizens living alone in Korea is on the rise. Each time I see stories of senior citizens alone, it makes me sad. The family is where generations live together. If family members are scattered and the parents are left alone, then that is no longer a family. The extended family system is a beautiful Korean tradition.

"I recommend that three generations live together as one family. I do so, not simply because it is a way of maintaining our country's tradition. When a husband and wife have a child, they pass on all they can to that child. There is a limit, however, to how much the parents can pass on. The parents represent the present and the children the future. The grandparents represent the past. So it is only when the grandparents, parents, and children live together that the children can inherit all the fortune of the past and present. To love and respect your grandfather is to inherit the history of the past and to learn from the world of the past. The children learn precious wisdom from their parents on how to live in the present, while the parents prepare for the future by loving their children.

"The grandfather is in a position to represent God. No matter how intelligent a young man may be, he cannot know all the secrets of this big world. Young people cannot know all the different secrets of life that come to us as we grow older. This is the reason the grandfather represents the history of the family. The grandfather is a precious teacher who passes on to the grandchildren all the wisdom he has acquired through the experiences he has accumulated during the course of his life.

"The world's oldest grandfather is God. So a life of receiving the grandfather's love and of living for the sake of the grandfather is a life of coming to understand God's love and of living for His sake. We need to maintain such a tradition in order to open the secret storehouse of God's Kingdom and receive His treasure of love. Any country that ignores its old people abandons its national character and ignores its roots.

"When autumn comes, the chestnut tree gradually loses it moisture, and its leaves begin to fall. The outer shell of the chestnut falls off, and even the inner shell that surrounds the actual nut dries up. This is the cycle of life. Human beings are the same way. We are born as infants, grow up on the love of our parents, meet a wonderful partner, and get married. All this occurs in the chain of life made up of love. In the end, we become like chestnuts becoming dry in autumn. Old people are not a separate category of people. We all become old. We must not treat old people disrespectfully, no matter how senile they may become.

"There is a saying, 'Anything can be accomplished when there is harmony in the home.' When there is peace in the family, everything goes well. The peaceful family is the building block of the Kingdom of Heaven. The family operates on the power of love. If we love the universe as we love our families, then there is nothing to stop us from going anywhere we want. God exists in the center of love, as the Parent of the entire universe. That is why the love in the family needs to link directly to God. When the family is completed in love, the universe will be completed."

SCATTERED

In the above quote he says, "The family is where generations live together. If family members are scattered and the parents are left alone, then that is no longer a family. The extended family system is a beautiful Korean tradition. I recommend that three generations live together as one family." These three generations form a trinity. Father wrote his autobiography when he was 90 years old. His words are the words we live by. He says we should not scatter our families and see

each other only on Thanksgiving and Christmas. This is how the outside world organizes themselves. Sons should live with their fathers and not be "scattered."

Father is against people living alone, "One cannot be alone. It is necessary to have a friend and a colleague. What I am saying is that I don't like being alone. There is an expression that birds of a feather flock together, right? No matter how great I am, I cannot live alone because it would be boring." He wants us to live as three generations and work together in communities:

> In the future do you imagine that America will still maintain senior citizens homes? In our families, grandparents, parents and children have to live together in harmony. (6-23-96)

> Have you thought about God's desire for the future family system? In light of this, True Father has thought about the hobby industry and the world of leisure. In the future, what kind of communal system should you create in each nation? You should build a "condominium system," and train people within that system where four families live together in unity. They should earn money together, eat together, educate their children together, and live as one family. If they fail to live together in harmony, those families will be pushed into a restrictive environment in the spirit world. There, they will not be able to live with others in harmony. (*Cheon Seong Gyeong*)

I challenge Unificationists to live as trinities that form utopian communities that will become those cities on a hill that touch the hearts of mankind to build ideal communities and nations.

CHAPTER EIGHT

COUNTRYSIDE

The eighth value is for Unificationists to live in the countryside.

Chung Hwan Kwak talked about decentralizing education to the countryside in a speech (June 1996) saying: On the subject of human settlements and urbanization, I would like to present for your consideration a potential source of solutions, which can be called conscious or positive ruralization.

"People move to cities for economic, educational, and cultural reasons. If these could be acquired elsewhere they would tend to stay, or move to the countryside which is more delightful and attractive. At comparable levels of comfort and intellectual stimulation, people prefer the more healthy, more peaceful, and more natural life in the country.

"City life, on the other hand has drawbacks. The anonymity characteristic of city dwelling breeds family breakdown, and enhances the likelihood of moral depravity including extreme addictions of many sorts. The absence of nature's beauty and rhythms causes stress and is generative of complex physical and mental diseases, such as cancer and various neuroses and psychoses. We tend to be emotionally closed in the city, and spiritual life is next to impossible. Thus both basic (clean air and clean water) and advanced human needs (security and spirituality) are better met in rural settings. As pollution increasingly causes epidemics, and shortages of clean air and clean water, the upper classes will flee the cities. This should not be a privilege of the elite. Let us take steps for equity, otherwise the poor, especially the urban poor, will suffer a plight far worse than at any time in history.

"Presently the economic destiny of nations is tied to cities, but this habit of the industrial age is unnecessary given contemporary technology. Already non-urban settings are preferred by many corporations. In some industries, with a simple fax and a modem for the Internet and e-mail, virtually all work can as easily and effectively be accomplished from home. Companies can shed the expense and energy waste associated with maintaining huge urban properties. They can save on commuting costs, and eliminate this near criminal source of urban air pollution.

"The same modern technology can also help decentralize education and culture. Television, video, and computers with modems make it possible for anyone to receive the highest levels of education. Distance learning allows a young boy in the Amazon to study with the same Harvard professor as the young lady living there in Cambridge. Through such means, a rural person can gain equal or surpassed cultural and educational sophistication to urban dwellers, thus eliminating a secondary cause for urbanization. If the scientific research and investment which has gone into the study of sustainable cities were equally oriented toward bringing the urban benefits of employment, education, culture, and ever higher standards of living to the countryside, a double benefit could be achieved.

"Lastly, the technological capacity for the globalization of economy, education, and culture, including to rural areas is dependent on the establishment of true love families. Unlike animals, the ideal human habitat is a loving home. Distance learning, for example, would fail without the influences of a loving family to protect and guide the student. Technology is value-neutral and can be used to transmit evil and harmful data. Therefore governments and all related partners should support and protect the family. Through family love the all important ingredients of citizenship

and sound socialization are bequeathed to future generations."

MENTAL HEALTH BETTER IN COUNTRY

An article on the web (www.thisislonddon.co.uk) titled "Mental Health Better In Country" said that "Researchers writing for the British *Journal of Psychiatry*" revealed that:

> People who live in the country have better mental health than those who live in towns and cities.
>
> The researchers found that rates of mental problems both starting and continuing were lower in rural areas. They also found a high rate of remission in people with common mental disorders at the start of the study who lived in the least densely populated areas.

Andrew Weil has a fascinating audio CD titled *Self-Healing With Sound & Music* which has deep insights on sound therapy. He mentions that sounds in nature are good for our health and spiritual growth. The harsh sounds of cities prevent us from achieving a close connection to God. Cities are places of hype that tempt us to find happiness in shopping. We should be more spiritual instead of emphasizing materialism. Living in the country helps us because we are away from the temptations of convenience stores that sell donuts and X-rated movies. There can be truth in the old maxim "out of sight, out of mind." Father spends much of his time in nature so he can hear God's voice. Weil has some interesting thoughts about water. Our bodies are mostly water and there is a deep connection we make by being around water. This gives deeper insight into why Father spends so much time fishing.

Father teaches that we should live a rural agrarian life. He says, "The age of urbanization will soon end and people will disperse more widely." (*Cheon Seong Gyeong*) Our communities should be in the countryside. More and more people are returning to the land. This back-to-the-land movement is not like the hippie movement of the 1970s. It is thought through and capitalistic. The most famous magazine about this trend is *Mother Earth News*. Their Web site is www.MotherEarthNews.com. Some who have left the city for rural life have written books. One example is John Ivanko and Lisa Kivirist who left Chicago to live in rural Wisconsin. They wrote a book titled *Rural Renaissance: Renewing the Quest for the Good Life* and have a website www.ruralrenaissance.org.

Allan Carlson has a book about the history of the major writers in the 20th century who encouraged Americans to live in the countryside: *The New Agrarian Mind: The Movement Toward Decentralist Thought in Twentieth-Century America*. He points out the strong points and shortcomings of such writers as Louis Bromfield who wrote such books as *Pleasant Valley* and *The Farm*, Ralph Borsodi who wrote *This Ugly Civilization* and *Flight From The City*, and Wendell Berry who wrote *What Are People for?*.

From Cottage to Work Station

Carlson has also written about the harm to the family that took place when men became less attached to the land in rural areas and more focused on jobs in the cities for corporate America in *From Cottage to Work Station: The Family's Search for Social Harmony in the Industrial Age*. He says the salvation of the family and America is in families organizing themselves like those in the 18th century who combined their home and work in the same place in what is called cottage industries. He says, "Patronize the cottage businesses, even if the short-term priced advantage appears to lie with the mega-store." The back of the books says:

> This book offers a fresh interpretation of American social history, emphasizing the vital role of the family and household autonomy and the joint threats to the family imposed by industrial organization and the state. Carlson

> shows that the United States—rather than being "born modern" as a progressive consumerist society—was in fact founded as an agrarian society composed of independent households rooted in land, lineage and hierarchy. It also explains how the social effects of industrialization, particularly the "great divorce" of labor from the home, has been a defining issue in American domestic life, from the 1850s to the present.
>
> The book critically examines five distinct strategies to restore a foundation for family life in industrial society, drawing on the insights of Frederic Laplay, Carle Zimmerman, and G. K. Chesterton and outlines the necessary basis for family life. Family survival depends on the creation of meaningful, "pre-modem" household economies. As the author explains, "both men and women are called home to relearn the deeper meaning of the ancient words, husbandry and housewifery."

Father often tells us to make businesses like theirs in the countryside. He calls it the "hobby industry":

> In the future we will have to have one plane and one boat per family. Each family will travel around the world using various vehicles. Develop the tour business. Have submarines to see what is going on below the sea.
>
> We want to build a complete Hobby Industry. In Washington DC we have set up a skeet shooting facility. People really like it and we will set up the same here. We will prepare areas for sport fishing and hunting.
>
> What would you think about holding a Space Olympics, in due time we will do it. We will prepare areas for Air Shows, Water Skiing, Horse Racing, you name it and we can do it. We will create a Hobby University in order to fine-tune each the aspects of each Hobby. We will control the Hobby Industry. Would you like to work in the Hobby Industry? Raise your hands. (4-23-00)
>
> Father wants to develop a hobby industry. Hobby means catching fish and hunting animals and giving them to starving people. How wonderful a job that is! Hobby means interesting, an interesting living style. Everywhere there is enjoyment—singing, dancing, making noise, everything. That is the hobby industry.
>
> Father will develop fishing places, hunting grounds and all kinds of hobbies that you will enjoy. (12-22-94)
>
> At UTS, train the students in farming, fishing and hunting. (June 2001)

Father says, "I spent my childhood in a rural district. When the seasons changed, various migrating birds came and also various different kinds of flowers blossomed. I was raised under those conditions. When I was young wherever you went in Korea the seasons were clearly distinguished, and as they changed we could see the beauty of nature. Today, unfortunately, if we walk around Seoul, we don't come across nature. Every area has been urbanized here, and all we can see is artificial nature. When I think of people who grow up under these urban circumstances I feel sad because they lack emotional feelings. Since there is no opportunity for them to feel the mystery and beauty of nature, there is a tendency for people to become violent or individualistic. You must know these things. People learn many things and realize many things through encounters with nature.

"I learned and experienced many things through nature. Through it I learned on my own what true love and happiness are. What we learn through the natural world is more fundamental than what we learn through school education" (*The Way For Students*). Michael Breen writes in *Sun Myung Moon, The Early Years, 1920-53*: "He developed a love of nature. He has told followers that once, as a young boy, after praying outdoors, he felt as if the grass and trees were appealing to him, telling him they were abandoned by mankind."

NATURE-DEFICIT DISORDER

Richard Louv has a wonderful book titled *Last Child in the Woods: Saving Our Children From Nature-Deficit Disorder*. Also, check out his website www.RichardLouv.com where he has great articles and videos of interviews. Watch an excellent speech (on YouTube) he gave titled "The Abundant Childhood: Nature, Creativity & Health: An Evening with Richard Louv" (www.youtube.com/watch?v=VrDIbt80Ve8). Every parent should read his books because he gives the scientific studies showing that the closer children are to nature the greater they grow mentally, physically and emotionally. We all want the best for children and one the greatest things we can give them is a life in nature and especially the nature in the countryside. I can't imagine anyone reading Louv's book and not be motivated and inspired to get their children and loved ones to get their children to get outside and play in nature but even more to move to the countryside. Everyone should watch the DVD titled *Mother Nature's Child: Growing Outdoors in the Media Age* (www.mothernaturesmovie.com). It has great scenes of children playing and growing in nature and excellent commentary by Richard Louv and other writers like him such as David Sobel and Jon Young that show how important nature is for children's growth. Check out the website: www.childrenandnature.org. It gives a great list of books such as *Wild Play: Parenting Adventures in the Great Outdoors* by David Sobel, *Sharing Nature with Children by* Joseph Cornell **(**www.sharingnature.com**)** and *The Nature Principle: Human Restoration and the End of Nature-Deficit Disorder* by Ricard Louv. Also check out the DVD *Where Do the Children Play* by Michigan Television. Cheryl Charles works with Richard Louv and she has a good TED talk about how important it is to get children out of the house you can see at (www.youtube.com/watch?v=vNwcg6RfPNw).

I wish I had the space to go into detail on the many books and the many great insights they give on the importance of everyone spending time in nature. Here is one example. In Louv's book *The Nature Principle* he writes, "In his book *The Great Work*, Thomas Berry wrote: 'The present urgency is to begin thinking within the context of the whole planet … When we discuss ethics we must understand it to mean the principles and values that govern the comprehensive community.' Berry believed that the natural world is the physical manifestation of the divine. The survival of both religion and science depends not on one winning (because both would lose), but on the emergence of what he called a twenty-first century story—a reunion between humans and nature." I would call it a reunion between humans and Earthly Mother. Louv writes, "Speaking of absoutes may make us uncomfortable, but surely this is true. As a society, we need to give nature back to our children and ourselves. To not do so is immoral. It is unethical. In the formation of American ideals, nature was elemental to the idea of human rights, yet inherent in the thinking of the Founding Fathers was this assumption: with every right comes responsibility. Whether we are talking about democracy or nature, if we fail to serve as careful stewards, we will destroy the reason for our right, and the right itself. And if we do not use this right, we lose it. Our society must do more than talk about the importance of nature; it must ensure that people in every neighborhood have everyday access to natural spaces, places, and experiences." I encourage you to watch as many YouTube videos of Richard Louv as you can. He has so many great insights into why getting kids into nature helps them and therefore society.

Aristotle, in *The Politics*, wrote that "an agricultural population makes the best *demos*." Thomas Jefferson believed that America would be great as long as its people were close to the earth. He believed that farmers were the heart and soul of a virtuous country. In his 1781 "Notes on the State of Virginia," Jefferson declared that "Those who labor in the earth are the chosen people of God ... whose breasts he has made his peculiar deposit for substantial and genuine virtue." He wrote, "Cultivators of the earth are the most valuable citizens. They are the most vigorous, the most independent, the most virtuous, and they are tied to their country and wedded to its liberty by the most lasting bonds."

Jefferson said:

> The class principally defective is that of agriculture. It is the first in utility, and ought to be the first in respect. The same artificial means which have been used to produce a competition in learning, may be equally successful in restoring agriculture to its primary dignity in the eyes of men. It is a science of the very first order. It counts among its handmaids of the most respectable sciences, such as Chemistry, Natural Philosophy, Mechanics, Mathematics generally, Natural History, Botany. In every College and University, a professorship of agriculture, and the class of its students, might be honored as the first. Young men closing their academical education with this, as the crown of all other sciences, fascinated with its solid charms, and at a time when they are to choose an occupation, instead of crowding the other classes, would return to the farms of their fathers, their own, or those of others, and replenish and invigorate a calling, now languishing under contempt and oppression. The charitable schools, instead of storing their pupils with a lore which the present state of society does not call for, converted into schools of agriculture, might restore them to that branch qualified to enrich and honor themselves, and to increase the productions of the nation instead of consuming them.
>
> It [agriculture] is at the same time the most tranquil, healthy, and independent [occupation].
>
> The pamphlet you were so kind as to send me manifests a zeal, which cannot be too much praised, for the interests of agriculture, the employment of our first parents in Eden, the happiest we can follow, and the most important to our country.
>
> With respect to the boys I never till lately doubted but that I should be able to give them a competence as comfortable farmers, and no station is more honorable or happy than that.
>
> I think our governments will remain virtuous for many centuries; as long as they are chiefly agricultural. When they pile upon one another in large cities as in Europe, they will become corrupt as in Europe.

Jefferson despised the city and deeply felt that life in the countryside produced a more self-reliant and wholesome citizen. His love of the land led him to the Louisiana Purchase that doubled the size of America. He wanted Americans to be farmers who were in tune with Mother Earth. It is difficult to put into words how mystical nature is and how we come close to God there. Today the cities are often politically liberal and the countryside in America is often more conservative. Conservatives are stronger people than Liberals and are more willing to solve their problems locally than resort to big government.

Erica Walter, a stay-at-home mom and Catholic writer says, "Modern urban life itself is especially hard on males. Where in the modern world can men be men? The frontier's gone. We're all so alienated from nature. If all people grew up on farms they would know instinctively that there are differences between boys and girls. But modern society, with all its conveniences, makes it very, very easy to deny nature."

Father says, "For thousands of years Oriental culture has been based upon farming and agriculture. This has caused them to build a vertical concept of looking toward heaven for the blessing of weather and crops. If you are a serious farmer you have to look toward the sky daily. You have to observe the direction and strength of the wind. As a farmer, this is how you connect yourself to heaven." (5-26-96) In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* Father writes this about nature and how he was raised to be a farmer. He writes how he explored:

> the mountains that were in a five-mile radius of our home. I went everywhere, even beyond the mountains. When I went to the mountains, I would touch all the flowers and trees. I wasn't satisfied just to look at things with my eyes; I had to touch the flowers, smell them, and even put them in my mouth and chew on them. I enjoyed the fragrances, the touch, and the tastes so much that I wouldn't have minded if someone had told me to stick my nose in the brush and keep it there the whole day. I loved nature so much that anytime I went outside, I would spend the day roaming the hills and fields and forget about having to go home. When my older sisters would go into the hills to gather wild vegetable, I would lead the way up the hill and pick the plants. Thanks to this experience, I know a lot about many kinds of wild vegetables that taste good and are high in nutrition.
>
> Spending time in the forest cleanses the mind. The sound of leaves rustling in the wind, the sound of the wind blowing through the reeds, the sound of frogs croaking in the ponds: All you can hear are the sounds of nature; no extraneous thoughts enter the mind. If you empty your mind and receive nature into your entire being, there is no separation between you and nature. Nature comes into you, and you become completely one with nature. In the moment that the boundary between you and nature disappears, you feel a profound sense of joy. Then nature becomes you, and you become nature.
>
> I have always treasured such experiences in my life. Even now, I close my eyes and enter a state in which I am one with nature. Some refer to this as anātman, or "not-self", but to me it is more than that, because nature enters and settles into the place that has been made empty. While in that state, I listen to the sounds that nature hands to me—the sounds of the pine trees, the sounds of the bugs—and we become friends. I could go to a village and know, without meeting anyone, the disposition of the minds of the people living there. I would go into the meadow of the village and spend the night there, then listen to what the crops in the fields tell me. I could see whether the crops were sad or happy and that would tell me the kind of people who lived there.
>
> The reason I could be in jail in South Korea and the United States and even North Korea, and not feel lonely and isolated is that even in jail I could hear the sound of the wind blowing and talk to the bugs that were there with me.
>
> You may ask, "What do you talk about with bugs?" Even the smallest grain of sand contains the principles of the world, and even a speck of dust floating in the air contains the harmony of the universe. Everything around us was given birth through a combination of forces so complex we cannot even imagine it. These forces are closely related to each other. Nothing in the universe was conceived outside the heart of God. The movement of just one leaf holds within the breathing of the universe.

> From childhood, I have had a gift of being able to resonate with the sounds of nature as I roam around the hills and meadows. Nature creates a single harmony and produces a sound that is magnificent and beautiful. No one tries to show off and no one is ignored; there is just a supreme harmony. Whenever I found myself in difficulty, nature comforted me; whenever I collapsed in despair, it raised me back up. Children these days are raised in urban areas and don't have opportunities to become familiar with nature, but developing sensitivity to nature is actually more important than developing our knowledge. What is the purpose of providing a university education to a child who cannot feel nature in his bosom and whose sensitivities are dull? The person separated from nature can gather book knowledge here and there and then easily become an individualistic person who worships material goods.
>
> We need to feel the difference between the sound of spring rain falling like a soft whisper and that of the autumn rain falling with pops and crackles. It is only the person who enjoys resonance with nature who can be said to have a true character. A dandelion blooming by the side of the road is more precious than all the gold in the world. We need to have a heart that knows how to love nature and love people. Anyone who cannot love nature or love people is not capable of loving God. Everything in creation embodies God at the level of symbol, and human beings are substantial beings created in the image of God. Only a person who can love nature can love God.
>
> I did not spend all my time roaming the hills and meadows and playing. I also worked hard helping my older brother run the farm. On a farm there are many tasks that must be done during a particular season. The rice paddies and fields need to be plowed. Rice seedlings need to be transplanted, and weeds need to be pulled. When one is pulling weeds, the most difficult task is to weed a field of millet. After the seeds are planted, the furrows need to be weeded at least three times, and this is backbreaking work. When we were finished, we couldn't straighten our backs for awhile. Sweet potatoes don't taste very good if they are planted in clay. They need to be planted in a mixture of one-third clay and two-thirds sand if they are going to produce the best-tasting sweet potatoes. For corn, human excrement was the best fertilizer, so I would take my hands and break up all the solid excrement into small pieces. By helping out on the farm, I learned what was needed to make beans grow well, what kind of soil was best for soybeans, and what soil was best for red beans. I am a farmer's farmer.

Mary Pride writes in *All the Way Home*: "Gardening really is about the most creatively relaxing activity going. In this world where we spend so much time in man-made environments, a garden is your chance to slow down to Creation's rhythm and admire the handiwork of your Creator. For this reason, people with emotional problems benefit tremendously from gardening. Like anyone who ever feels stressed. All of us, in other words.

"Children adore gardens, especially when they have the chance for a little garden of their own. And nothing breaks the winter monotony better than an evening planting petunia seeds into flats."

Edith Schaefer wrote in *The Hidden Art of Homemaking*:

> There is something very exciting about holding tiny brown seeds in one's hand, in rubbing soil in one's fingers to make it fine in texture, in placing the seeds with one's own fingers in the rows, in covering them up and patting them. There is something exciting in watering the bare brown ground, wondering whether the

> hidden seeds are doing anything at all, wondering whether they will burst out of the little shell and become roots going down and stem and leaves coming up. The day the first tips of green are seen, if they are *your* seeds, planted by your own fingers, there is a thrill that is surely similar to producing an art work.
>
> Human beings were made to interact with growing things, not to be born, live, and die in the midst of concrete set in the middle of polluted air.... There is something tremendously fresh and healthy in having one's mind filled with thought of whether the lettuce is up yet.

Food is not nutritious now because people buy food at grocery stores that often ship food long distances that destroys its value and the food itself was grown in depleted soil. We should all have land we own and every year make the soil better. There is a terrible world wide ecological disaster of soil erosion. Satan is behind this. He wants us to get sick and die. There are many books on this subject such as *The End of Food* by Thomas Pawlick and *Dirt: The Erosion of Civilizations* by David R. Montgomery.

When Father came to America and spoke on his Day of Hope tour to every state in America in the early 1970s he praised the Pilgrims, "The American people are proud of the spirit and teaching of the Pilgrim Fathers, but their teaching and spirit was nothing compared to Unificationism. Do you regret having become Unificationists, or do you feel fortunate? (Fortunate.)"

"Is any ideology superior to the teaching of Unificationism? [No.] Why do you say no? With Unificationism, people are able to liberate and perfect themselves; a man can become the king of the world and even liberate and perfect God Himself. That kind of power lies within the teachings of Unificationism. Until that ideal is fulfilled, the Unification Church will never perish." (6-9-96)

He said the Pilgrims "had to give up their families, their relatives, their surroundings, and their country, and head toward an unknown land. Their only hope was in God. Every step they took they depended upon God. Their journey was long, and there were many storms. They prayed unceasingly to God. They had but one way to turn. They turned to God. Those Pilgrim men and women were one with God. And that is how they survived."

"Put yourself in their position of total reliance on God. What a wonderful faith! I am sure that the faith of the Pilgrim Fathers touched the heart of God. Nothing could have given them this kind of courage, this kind of dedication, this kind of sacrificial spirit except their faith in God."

About Father's ragtag band of followers he said: "When the pilgrim fathers came from Europe in the name of God … God's dispensation lay with them. We are the new age pilgrim fathers of the universe, … and God is on our side." (4-18-77) And God is asking us moms and dads to remove our children from cities and live in pure nature like the Pilgrims did. He is commanding the Second and Third Generations to live in the countryside and have big families. In hundreds of years their descendants will number into the billions.

Father spoke about how godly America was in its early days when it was an agricultural nation like the Pilgrims lived. In his Day of Hope tour in 1973 he said this about the Pilgrims, "They came to mold the new way of life. Their principal partner was God. At home, in caring for their children, in farming or cooking or building, they let God share their work. He was the only security they had. A farmer might talk to his son working out in the field with him. 'Let's plow this field in the name of God.' Their everyday life was lived in the name of God. This is the history of your Pilgrim Fathers. I can visualize early America as a beautiful America, because God was dwelling everywhere." (*God's Will and the World*)

A close and active reader of Sun Myung Moon will understand that Father is very close to nature.

Westerners are mostly city people and will find it difficult to understand him. Father grew up as a farm boy. Only a tiny few Americans grow up in nature and we do not put words together using references to nature. This is one of the reasons why the founding fathers of America are so much wiser than people today. The vast majority of Americans do not gather their own eggs for breakfast and are therefore severely handicapped in understanding even the most basic of concepts such as what is the difference between masculinity and femininity. When Father talks about big families, lineages, the pair system and plus and minus he visualizes the richness of the plants and animals in nature. He explains love by talking about salmon and he is an expert on salmon. He lives in remote Kodiak Alaska where he is an expert fisherman. He doesn't live in suburbs and play video games. He is out in nature communing with God and then speaking without notes about the deepest principles in life with allusions to nature.

Americans are deeply interested in the stock market, their cars, fast food and being entertained by movies. Father couldn't care less about those things. He rises early to greet the sun, eats kim chee at every meal and sees things very differently than we do. Jesus said, "O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, killing the prophets and stoning those who are sent to you! How often would I have gathered your children together as a hen gathers her brood under her wings, and you would not!" (Luke 13:34). When Jesus looked for someone to complete his mission he looked for someone in the East who would deeply understand what he meant when he described himself as a hen.

Father says we should live in nature. On June 1, 1978 Father spoke to members at 5:30 a.m. at Lancaster Gate in London saying:

> Would you go to the town or the countryside or would you stay in the London area and go to a thousand different places? Which would you prefer? London or any other country areas? (London!) But in London the places are so expensive. Where are you going to sleep? Whereas in the country it is not so expensive, maybe they will let you stay free. But you like to stay in London? (Yes!) You know how big large cities are, the city is very impersonal. There are so many people, the people do not mean too much to them so they try to live off other people. Always they fight and they cheat, whereas in a remote area the people's minds are much purer and they pay you more attention. So which do you think is the easier to live in, the countryside or the city? The countryside is much easier to live in than the city because the city has no space. If you cook your own meal once in a while, maybe once in a while you go to the drug store or you go to the market and buy some bread and want to make something.
>
> In the countryside maybe you can go to a farm and ask, 'Can you please let me use your kitchen', and, of course, they say, 'Go ahead', once in a while, but here in London if you walk in they would never listen to you. They would chase you away. So very obviously we must go to the countryside rather than stay in the center of London. You go out to the countryside and witness to three people. In London, even three is not easy, but in the countryside compared to London, it is very easy, almost in a single day you may be able to do so. Compared to London it is very easy, and that's true. So what is your conclusion also? Should you stay in London and struggle and witness, or go to the countryside and witness there? Those who think the countryside raise your hand? Which? Once more. Those who would stay in London, raise your hand? More people for the countryside, they would prefer to go out to the country. So it is very simple if you really think about it. It is much better to be out in the countryside than concentrated in London as far as lodgings and things are concerned. So Father now decides we will go mainly to the countryside.

Father gives good reasons for living in the countryside instead of living in crowed cities. He

spends time in nature to get close to God and receive revelations. This is why he spends time fishing for salmon in remote Kodiak, Alaska: "I think and pray during the fishing time" (rough notes Hoon Dok Hwe 4-4-02). "When I have time, I always go fishing. Why? Because when I fish, I forget my age and think of my youth. I think of my mission to accomplish God's nation." We should follow him and live in nature too. If we want to have a mystical relationship with God we need to spend time being sensitive to the plants and animals of the earth. Here are a few quotes from Father on nature:

> When spring brings beautiful flowers and fragrances, I see that beauty as glory to God. Why do flowers bloom and butterflies flutter and bees buzz around? They are all there in service to me. I feel that God wanted to explain His love to me through this creation. They are His mediators. When a bird sings, I feel God is asking that bird to sing for me; when it cries out in longing for its mate, I wish I could help him find his mate. I am very sensitive to the universe. When two butterflies flutter in fellowship and love, when a male and a female bird sing together for joy, I see it as a lesson that men should live in greater happiness than these.
>
> When I hear the birds sing in joy for the spring, I feel that I will bring the cosmic spring in which all mankind can have more joy than the birds do. Then their song gives me inspiration. As much as the birds and flowers give me the stimulation of joy and love, when I sing for joy and love then God in heaven will also be stimulated. It is my duty to stimulate God in that way. Even if my clothes are ragged and I am penniless, I never feel poor because the sky is my roof and the rivers are my water and nature is my food. When you feel that the house of God is your house, how can you feel poor?
>
> When I see a small drop of water I feel that it has the dignity of the great ocean behind it and I can respect it. The small blades of grass have greater beauty than the greatest masterpieces in museums around the world. There is no life in those paintings and pieces of paper. But grass has life, and this little creation of God's is greater than any human masterpiece. When I see grass, I feel it is a masterpiece in my museum, which is the house of God. I kiss a little bird in my hand and feel it is a living masterpiece of God's making.

Beauty Everywhere

On some sunny day at Belvedere, lie down and examine all the forms of life in the soil—the ants, worms, and so forth—which are in communication and fellowship with each other. There is beauty everywhere. When I see the creation and realize that God made it for me, I never get tired of it. All the millions of things God created know that men are to be their masters, and they are trying very much to attract the attention of people.

> When you ask the grass, trees and birds if they recognize national boundaries and have things like visas, what would they reply? God did not issue passports to birds. Would a typhoon stop in the Gulf of Mexico because it didn't have a visa to America? Does the weather recognize American law? It's amazing when you think of it—ants can cross the Mexican border as often as they want, as well as the birds and lizards, but men cannot cross the border without a visa! Are there American ants and Mexican ants who must get government authorization to marry? The animals don't care about national sovereignties, but men have complicated their lives with such things.

Education From Nature

There is an amazing education to be had from nature. Does water in America taste different from water in Korea? Are Koreans forbidden to breathe American air? Each nation receives rays from different suns, right? When we evaluate all these things we conclude that true freedom, openness and joy can only come when you recognize God and His universe, realizing that He created one world and one family. Then we would see that there is a straight highway connecting everything from the smallest life form all the way to God. There is no hindrance between them.

I Love Nature

Everything can be explained this way. When you go to work, for instance, you are dealing with the people God created, so you breathe the air of love wherever you go. I have done much hard manual labor, such that my face was black and my clothes were rags. When there was a short break to sit on the beach and eat lunch, I would praise God for His universe. Sitting there in nature with my little lunch I felt grandeur around me which was greater than any cathedral, seeing the grass, gravel and the river. I love nature and make myself at home there because it is the house God created. I have slept in all kinds of places— in a shack, on the grass, on a bench, under a tree, under a bridge, under a boat.

I wanted to appreciate nature at all times of the day, so at night I would climb a mountain to look at the moon, and there in the darkness I saw a different kind of beauty. Spring has its own taste, and summer has its unique flavor. Sometimes you don't like winter because it is cold, but winter has its particular taste as well. I feel that everything I see is there to relate me to a deeper understanding of God's love ("The Contrast between Secular People and Us" December 23, 1979).

We must learn the lessons of love from nature. The holiest people have always been on intimate terms with nature. You should naturally want to go out every day and look at the sky and the birds and the animals in order to perceive new lessons in love.

You Unification Church members should know how to relate to the beauty of nature and how to enjoy being in creation. Even though you are all alone, you can feel the thrill of seeing a lovely flower. You can watch the fish in a pond as they vigorously chase after each other and you can say, "They are running after love and they never get tired." Tell yourself, "I will never get tired either because I am running after love." The salmon can teach a beautiful love lesson to humanity because they experience only one love and then they die. They give their lives to love, to hatch their eggs, and then they die. Their lives are consummated by the fulfillment of their love, so they have nothing more to live for.

Now you can understand the concept of love that I am speaking about. When you get up in the morning, why not time your walking with the rhythm of the birds singing? A certain kind of bird jumps around and sings and then they kiss each other. They are great teachers of love.

God assigned them the mission of teaching clumsy men how to love! (5-20-84)

One of the major problems that the world is facing today is that of the environment. Since Father came to South America he began planting trees throughout the entire continent. The second biggest problem is that of pollution. Many pure and young people begin to flock into urban areas from the countryside and then become

criminals. They become the cause of social evils and crimes. Therefore, we have to send them back to the countryside and have them work in the rural areas in order to develop. Because those youth coming from the countryside without skills and little education, end up with all manner of juvenile problems. That is why we have to send them back to where they belong. In order to achieve that goal, we have to cultivate and develop the countryside where we can plant trees, do fish farming and employ more modern methods of farming. This way the countryside can attract these young people back home.

We can interpret the Fall as Adam and Eve's failure to love the land, failure to love animals, failure to love each other and failure to love God. Where can we restore and accomplish the original ideal of creation? In the countryside, not in the urban cities. In order to do this we have to learn again how to love the land and animals. In order to do this we first have to acquire a ranch. We have to raise all kinds of animals

Father is going to solve this human pollution problem through educating and urging these young people from the countryside, who have become corrupted in the inner-cities, to go back to their home towns again. As long as the people of America care about their own country more than they care about the world, this people pollution will remain. It will even go on another 200 years without being resolved. We have to go beyond national boundaries in terms of love and care. Father is the only one, for the first time in human history, who has been devoting his entire life to restoring and loving this entire world going beyond national boundaries. (6-9-95)

When I was young, I grew up in the countryside where migratory birds visited and different flowers blossomed as seasons changed. Wherever I went in Korea, there were four distinct seasons. As they changed, I could experience in each the beauty of nature. In Seoul today, you can walk around all day long without seeing anything of nature. I feel sad that Seoul has become such a barren city where the only environment is man-made. You should know that people who grow up in an urban environment lack tenderness and sensitivity. Having no opportunity to experience the mysteries and the beauty of nature, they easily become violent or selfish. When human beings interact with nature, they can learn and become aware of many things.

...love is purer, deeper and longer-lasting between a husband and wife living in the countryside. (*Blessing and Ideal Family Part 1*)

...factories should be spread thinly all around the world, because there is too much pollution when factories concentrate in one area. Urban areas, cities, will have to dissipate. There is no reason for millions of people clustering together creating confusion.

It will be easy to find a livelihood, easy to obtain products. All things will be done through a simple system. Formerly, there were good reasons for people to live in cities, because the highest standard of cultural life was there. Once you left the city, there was nothing. But that is changing very fast, because of mass media, television and newspapers. You can witness cultural events of the city out in the countryside, even better than you can in the city. City people need to commute and work eight hours a day-they have packed schedules. But in the countryside it will become

easier to produce agricultural goods, and all you will have to do is watch television to see what is going on in the city. In the country you will have more time to think about it, to study and analyze. You will be able to participate in the cultural life of the city just as well while sitting in the countryside.

You needn't live near a big shopping center, because everything will be delivered to your doorstep. What about education, schools? Schooling will become better than it is now. We can study by video. By video we can accomplish the high school and college courses just as now. But also we will be able to research a forty-year career. We can obtain education about the country of our residence one decade after another. After graduation we can be educated by video our entire lives. (11-1-90)

This is the first Hoon Dok Hwe of the fifth year of Cheon Il Guk. As we enter Cheon Il Guk, we have to return to the nature. We must live connected to the ocean and the water. We have to return to our countryside to love nature and return to God's original ideal. (1-4-05)

...if we continue living in this hub of the satanic world, this New York-DC area, we are in the darkness. But on a small island nation where everyone knows everyone, your original mind will awaken, because 80% of your give and take in daily life will be with nature. That will develop your life. That's why I want urbanites to go into the natural world. Pollution is rampant in the air and water. How can humanity survive even 300 more years? We have to go to the countryside, particularly in the developed world. Every problem comes from the urban landscape. How can we escape this place of the core problems? You know this well, more than I do.

With the internet, you can connect with everything even from the countryside. Go to where there is no pollution, natural or human. Therefore, even a Unification Church blessed couple, if they cling to a poisoned environment, is doomed to die, to disappear. It is too crowded here. I like the natural world, with the original sun, original moon, original star, original air, original water, original MAN! [Applause.] (12-10-2000)

All blessed families should live at least three years in Korea. (June 2001)

As we enter Cheon Il Guk, we have to return to nature. We must live connected to the ocean and the water. We have to return to our countryside to love nature and return to God's original ideal. ... We have to create a beautiful environment for the Kingdom of God. We must be aware of the environment. We must purify the water and the environment. We must be very sensitive to the environment from now on as we have entered Cheon Il Guk. To do this we must take care of the immediate environment around our own homes. (rough notes Hoon Dok Hae 1-4-05)

Back to Nature

We have technology to convert deserts into fertile farmlands. So the planet will be evenly occupied by people who believe in God and the value of nature. That is the only way to survive. The next three hundred years are the most critical for human survival. That's where the Unification Church teaching comes in. We can teach why we have to go back to nature, loving mountains, water and so forth. Urban environments are the grave of sin and crime, even of AIDS. They are like the cancer of humanity. We have to decentralize. People flock into the cities to eat more, learn more and take advantage of the culture. But that era is over, because of email and

Internet. You have the same privileges in the boondocks. You can even view the Broadway musicals. So why bother coming into the grave of sin and crime? Soon no schools will come into the cities. In nature, why do you need boundaries? There you can enjoy God and the natural world.

I am studying how to have space Olympics and ocean Olympics. If you make big enough tunnels in the mountains, you can overcome the seasons. If you dig into the ground more than 3 or 4 feet, you can control the temperature. We can dig holes and tunnels in the Rocky Mountains and Andes and create a paradise. We can even build schools underground and under the water, too.

Humanity is sick and tired of the way things are going. If you build a fish farm of 1/4 acre, you can feed more than 10 people. That kind of fortune is waiting out there. So, do you want to stay in the cities, or go back to nature? Those ancestors who lived in nature are in a good place in spirit world, because their mind was well developed. What do you need most in nature? Water. Without water, nothing will survive. All the food we consume requires water. Whoever controls water will control the future world. (12-7-00)

I have pioneered a new path in every area, beginning with thought or philosophy. I have also demonstrated how to begin economic projects, business and technical projects such as the factories in Korea and Germany. Then, why did I start Ocean Church? Why have I given it such importance? You can see, I am working day in and day out on the ocean. Why am I doing that? You have heard me speak about this before.

The ocean is an orphan. It has no master, no real owner who loves and takes care of it. The fishing industry is also going under. The industry can't move an inch, it's so tight. In a few years it will be difficult for man to live off the land alone. The population is now almost four billion. It will increase by ten-fold. What will happen? The land itself will be crowded. There will be less space to farm and more people to feed. The population problem is one of two very serious questions. The other is pollution. To me, the problem is how to see these questions in a new light. The worst aspect of pollution is in the air, exhaust fumes from cars, factories and such things. In the future, there will be a limit upon anything that produces exhaust, even cooking. Any kind of extra smoke or gas exhaust will not be tolerated.

That means that we will try to eat foods without so much cooking, which means we will eat more raw foods, raw vegetables, raw fish. Anyway, it's good for their health, so people will turn to it. For a while, mankind may try to escape to space and live up there, but the difficulties and expenses will be too much and he will come right back to earth. Then, man will have to turn to the ocean. It is only a matter of time. The future of the ocean is inevitable. Is fish good for the diet? Ten or twenty years ago, Americans never even dreamed about eating anything raw, much less fish. Now they are going to Japanese restaurants and trying out the sushi and sashimi. If fish is going to be the main source of the human diet, what kind of fish would be the best to supply it? We have to produce a large fish and utilize all its qualities. What kind of fish should we use? Whales? Tunas? And what else? Shark! (7-3-83)

The oversimplified thing for Russia to do is disband the urban areas and ruralize, letting everyone go and farm their immense land. If they dedicated everything to agriculture nobody would starve. It would bring an economic recovery. By far the

most important aspect is the spiritual side; their value system. They have to fill their heads with something. They have to be educated with some kind of content just like Orientals have been educated by Confucianism, which worked pretty good so far. What are the Russians going to fill their heads with? Confucianism? Certainly not! Father Moon's teaching alone. (12-29-91)

So we must go back to our homeland and work harder with tears. Until now the fallen world came to the cities, but now the heavenly way will be to go to the countryside. The American forefathers went to the countryside, not the cities. The pollution is so bad, they can no longer live in the cities and stay healthy. Go back to the countryside and own a small piece of land. On Father's farm in Texas there is nothing as far as you can see in all directions. Father will bring Africans and show teach them how to farm. Also make an agricultural school in each land. All this will come to pass. They will have good fishing, hunting, good farming, good results. There will be a six month learning period for you too. You will become a first-rate farmer. There is no better preparation before you go to the spirit world than farming. Over fifty years old, we should make farming a second career. This is the beginning of Father's crusade for saving 20 million starving people. (3-1-93)

Do you want to live in the countryside or the city? (Countryside.) Everything flows harmoniously in the countryside. Air can flow as water flows. Love flows in the same way. There are no obstacles which love cannot penetrate. Nothing can stop it. It has no boundaries.

Father's conclusion this morning is that city life is the cause of pollution, destruction of the environment, and the cause of neglect and famine. The cities of the world are Satan's hell palace. Until now, people have thought that it was more beneficial and convenient to dwell in cities. However, the time has come when we can secure the same comforts and benefits by living in the countryside. There fresh air is available and clean water flows and nature surrounds us. The wilderness welcomes us.

Since you have proclaimed this here today, then whenever you walk in the city streets you have to claim that the concrete and asphalt streets and sidewalks are your enemies. You have to seek the pure soil. Who created this asphalt culture? The so-called civilized cultures. Was it urban or rural dwellers who destroyed the environment the most? The cities of the world are like evil castles surrounded by walls. If Father says that the so-called civilized city dwellers are the cause of the destruction of the environment, is it true? (Yes.) The pollution is mainly caused by city dwellers. Immorality and the destruction of moral standards is also the result of urban life. Within cities every individual cell is divided by concrete walls. No matter what happens out in the world, city dwellers stay distant from it and pursue their selfish desires. Therefore, cities are Satan's palaces.

The children who grow up within these cities play with plastic toys and animals. There is no animated communication between these children and their toys. Whereas children who grow up in the countryside experience animated give and take with the actual creation. They learn about the various types of creatures, all the various colors of birds and animals. If you feed the birds regularly every morning then hundreds of different kinds of birds will come and expect to be fed by you. In South America Father experienced this. Within the rural life everything is available to us, because God is the master of that world. Who is the owner, Adam or Eve?

(Adam.)

When Father was growing up he felt he had to conquer every aspect of creation. Once Father caught a mother bird and three baby birds together and kept them in his house. At that point Father didn't realize that there was a father bird. All of a sudden the father bird appeared and began to cry in a sad voice. When this father bird looked at Father, he cried even more sadly because True Father was the destroyer of this bird's family. Then Father released the birds, one by one. The sad tone of the father bird's song lessened. Finally, when all three baby birds were released this father bird seemed content. But when the mother bird was released then the whole family of birds greeted Father and then flew away. How did Father know that they came and greeted him? Because they circled Father's house and then flew away. (Ooh.) Ooh! (Laughter.)

Father is sharing one small experience with you here. Please remember this when you are thinking of giving plastic toys to your children. They cannot experience something like Father has shared with you through plastic toys. During his youth in Korea Father touched every kind of creature you can think of. If Father gets involved in telling stories such as these there will be no end to it. But Father will share one more experience. One day Father saw a big perch fish in a small deep pond. Father realized that this was the biggest perch he had seen and determined to catch it. It took Father forty days, day and night, until he finally caught that fish.

Father has caught almost every species of fish in the Pacific and Atlantic oceans. In South America Father was told that in one particular area there were over 3,600 species of fish. This is now Father's challenge to catch all of them. You have to be grateful that Father is doing so.

Have you considered the various thousands and thousands of shades of colors within the creation?

Trees produce oxygen and take in carbon dioxide. Whereas human beings take in oxygen and expel carbon dioxide. When you look at the big animals they all live in the midst of trees. We can solve the problem of pollution through tree planting also.

By observing nature we can learn such precious lifestyle. In Father's own life he didn't discover the truth through the Bible, but rather through observing nature. The origin of the creation of the universe is the male and female relationship. The entire universe is derived from this male and female relationship.

Do you want to live in the city or the countryside? (Countryside.) If we love God and His creation and if we desire to become God's children, we have to return to nature and offer our love and care as much as God has poured His love and care into His creation.

God's purpose of creation is that the entire world should become an ideal place that can receive anybody, anytime who can contribute to that place and then move on. In this way we don't have to be confined within the inner cities. The time has come when we no longer need a big Ivy League campus building in order to be well educated. It no longer takes New York City for us to gain the richness of cultural activities. You simply need one computer in the remote countryside. Simply click onto the Internet and you will be connected to the entire world. Through this system you will be able to obtain all the cultural and educational benefits that you need.

Everything is at your fingertips.

Whatever piece of art that you want to observe or cultural performance you wish to see, you can do so through the Internet and enjoy as much as those sitting in the theater. Why do we have to bother with the frustrations of commuting in the rush hour in cities like New York. Rather we can do whatever work we desire to do anywhere in the countryside. There are so many young people who waste their lives within the inner cities. They get themselves involved in so many evil things. Therefore, Father intends to create many places to hunt and fish around these inner cities. There is already established such a place close to Washington, D.C. so that young people can be attracted away from the city to the hunting and fishing grounds in the countryside. Once they enjoy this kind of life, then we can convince them to leave the city completely. Then we can go to the wilderness and climb mountains and fish in the Amazon River. This is how we can draw young people out from the cities and send them to the farmlands.

Where do you want to live? When you reach your fifties and sixties and you retire, if you remain in the city you will become suffocated. Eventually you will have to travel to the ideal village which we have established and spend the rest of your life with nature and contribute as much as possible. Breathe and mingle with nature.

Would you all like to go to the place where there is plenty of fresh air, unpolluted water, unpolluted soil and sunshine, or would you rather live in the inner cities with all the garbage and pollution? (The first one.) Therefore from now on, the Unification Church second and third generation children should live their lives in the countryside. ("Where And How Do You Want To Live Your Life?" 6-9-96)

Will the Second-Gen or Third-Generation children do as Father commands and live in the countryside? I hope so. A wonderful book on this topic is *Cohousing: A Contemporary Approach to Housing Ourselves* by Kathryn McCamant (book and video). If you Google the word "cohousing" you will see some cohousing community websites with pictures. There are some excellent books and magazines on living in the country. The most famous magazine is *Mother Earth News*. Be sure to subscribe to it and other publications on getting close to nature such as the magazine *Organic Gardening*. At their website (www.organicgardening.com) they write that their magazine: "delivers well-researched, practical and timely information and useful products and services. As the essential resource for any gardener, *Organic Gardening* provides the most current and authoritative information available, with a focus on making the process of gardening fun and easy."

Check out the magazine *Acres U.S.A.* At their website www.acresusa.com they write: "*Acres U.S.A* is the only national magazine that offers a comprehensive guide to sustainable agriculture. Drawing on knowledge accumulated in more than 35 years of continuous publication, we bring our readers the latest techniques for growing bountiful, nutritious crops and healthy, vibrant livestock. A glance at any issue is enough to see why sustainable farming—we call it eco-agriculture because it's both ecological and economical— represents the real revolution in scientific food cultivation."

ECONOMIC TSUNAMI

There are some who believe that America and the rest of the world will experience total economic and social collapse in the next few years. There are some books such as *Empire of Debt: The Rise of an Epic Financial Crisis* by William Bonner that paint a gloomy picture of depression that will be the consequence of the massive debt individuals and nations have gotten into. Bonner speaks in

the documentary *I.O.U.S.A.* At their website (www.iousathemovie.com) we read, "**Wake up, America!** We're on the brink of a financial meltdown. *I.O.U.S.A.* boldly examines the rapidly growing national debt and its consequences for the United States and its citizens. Burdened with an ever-expanding government and military, increased international competition, overextended entitlement programs, and debts to foreign countries that are becoming impossible to honor, America must mend its spendthrift ways or face an economic disaster of epic proportions." There are very persuasive arguments from Gerald Celente and Peter Schiff that say America and the world are headed for a crushing global bankruptcy that will lead to roving gangs. Type in their names at YouTube and listen to them. Some call them gloom and doomers but they are saying they are like doctors telling the patient he has cancer and needs to change his diet and lifestyle.

SURVIVALISM

I believe we should listen to those who predict there will be a horrible global economic depression, an economic argegeddon, and this catastrophe will take the world into a dark ages. The *New York Times* (4-6-08) had an article on the survivalist movement titled "Duck and Cover: It's the New Survivalism" that began:

> The traditional face of survivalism is that of a shaggy loner in camouflage, holed up in a cabin in the wilderness and surrounded by cases of canned goods and ammunition.
>
> It is not that of Barton M. Biggs, the former chief global strategist at Morgan Stanley. Yet in Mr. Biggs's new book, "Wealth, War and Wisdom," he says people should "assume the possibility of a breakdown of the civilized infrastructure."
>
> "Your safe haven must be self-sufficient and capable of growing some kind of food," Mr. Biggs writes. "It should be well-stocked with seed, fertilizer, canned food, wine, medicine, clothes, etc. Think Swiss Family Robinson. Even in America and Europe there could be moments of riot and rebellion when law and order temporarily completely breaks down."
>
> Survivalism, it seems, is not just for survivalists anymore.
>
> Faced with a confluence of diverse threats — a tanking economy, a housing crisis, looming environmental disasters, and a sharp spike in oil prices — people who do not consider themselves extremists are starting to discuss doomsday measures once associated with the social fringes.
>
> They stockpile or grow food in case of a supply breakdown, or buy precious metals in case of economic collapse. Some try to take their houses off the electricity grid, or plan safe houses far away. The point is not to drop out of society, but to be prepared in case the future turns out like something out of "An Inconvenient Truth," if not "Mad Max."

Biggs ends his book saying you should "have a farm or ranch somewhere far off the beaten track but which you can get to reasonably quickly and easily. Think of it as an insurance policy. The control of food-producing land is a basic instinct of mankind, and landowners seem to find considerable psychic satisfaction just from the knowledge of possession. There are few things as fulfilling as having a drink in the sunset and looking at your fields and cows. … You want your sanctuary to be remote enough to be inaccessible to the disposed hordes. … A few rounds over the approaching brigands heads would probably be a compelling persuader that there are easier farms to pillage. Brigands tend to be cowards."

MULTIPLE RETREATS

There are many videos at YouTube.com, blogs and books on retreats and survivalism such as

Strategic Relocation—North American Guide to Safe Place, *How to Implement a High Security Shelter in the Home* and *The Secure Home* by Joel Skousen (joelskousen.com), *Rawles on Retreats and Relocation* by James Wesley Rawles *(*www.survivalblog.com), and *Life After Terrorism: What You Need to Know to Survive in Today's World* by Bruce D. Clayton. Mel Tappan, author of *Tappan on Survival* says, that: "The concept most fundamental to long term disaster preparedness, in retreating, is having a safe place to go to avoid the concentrated violence destined to erupt in the cities." Skousen recommends having several retreats as backup.

Here are a few more books on emergency survival:

> *PREPAREDNESS NOW!: An Emergency Survival Guide for Civilians and Their Families* by Aton Edwards
> *Emergency Food Storage & Survival Handbook: Everything You Need to Know to Keep Your Family Safe in a Crisis* by Peggy Layton
> *How to Survive the End of the World as We Know It: Tactics, Techniques, and Technologies for Uncertain Times* by James Wesley Rawles
> *When All Hell Breaks Loose: Stuff You Need To Survive When Disaster Strikes* by Cody Lundin
> *Bug Out: The Complete Plan for Escaping a Catastrophic Disaster Before It's Too Late* by Scott B. Williams
> *How To Bury Your Goods: The Complete Manual of Long Term Underground Storage* by Eddie The Wire
> *Emergency: this book will save your life* by Neil Strauss

Father says it is safer to live in the countryside, "Following the satanic world's tradition, people have flocked into urban areas, but the time has come for people to rethink this and disburse to the countryside. Certain survival will come only by decentralizing the cities across the countryside, wars first cause the cities to be destroyed, but if people are spread out they cannot all be destroyed. I am providing a blueprint for the future of humanity. To this day, human civilization has been based on Christian culture. But this Christian based civilization tends to flock people into cities. If this continues, the pollution of physical world and morality will drive humanity to extinction. So the only sure way to survive is to go back to the state of original nature. It will not be easy to convince people to do so. That's where religion has to teach people to understand God and the value of nature. Then they will voluntarily decentralize." (12-7-00)

Like Father, we should know all the edible plants where we live:

> I know quite well about the edible plants that grow wild in the mountains. I know what each plant is, which can be cooked for eating and which is harmful. I am also familiar with poisonous mushrooms. Therefore, I know how to survive living in the mountains and also how to fish if I go to the sea. As long as there are fish in the water I can build a house nearby and live there by myself. Fish are good when eaten fresh, with just some salt. I have prepared myself to be able to live anywhere on my own. (*Cheon Seong Gyeong*)

I believe every Unificationist should own some land and live there or be able to go there and be able to be self-sufficient in case of any emergency whether short-term or long-term. We should have adequate guns and ammunition to defend ourselves if the world becomes a "Mad Max." But ultimately we should live in the country and be mostly self-sufficient because that is how we should live. Hopefully the future will be bright because the Messiah is on the earth. He has brought a practical vision of a world of peace and prosperity that will unite mankind on one theology, the *Divine Principle*, and his inspiring words of wisdom that everyone will study and

accept and then will build a one world family living in complete harmony and true prosperity. In case that doesn't happen soon and all hell breaks loose we should get out of the city and learn the skills needed to survive in nature so we can thrive and witness to the world. We need to print and distribute millions of books and ebook readers just in case the internet is taken out. I have put the text of all my books in PDF form so they can be downloaded for free from my website into ebook readers.

THE NEW HOMESTEADERS: OFF THE GRID AND SELF-RELIANT

The October, 2009 issue of *Popular Mechanics* magazine (www.popularmechanics.com) had an article titled "The New Homesteaders: Off-the-Grid and Self-Reliant". The author writes about some people who have gone back to nature. Here is a part of what he writes:

> You may have heard about them: Off-the-gridders living in radical opposition to modern amenities by growing their own food and cutting themselves off from the rest of society. Not so. Sure, more people are choosing to cut their dependence on the power grid, the grocery store and fuel pump. But these new homesteaders are hardly radicals—they are simply DIYers who, for a variety of reasons, revel in self-reliance. This is their story.
>
> Lately, homesteaders of all political stripes have settled upon a common concern: globalization. The shock waves of any crisis—for instance, the subprime meltdown—now spread far, fast and wide. Many doubt that major institutions can be counted upon to save the day. "You're on your own, your job is at risk, and a lot of the commodities you rely upon are vulnerable to disruption," says John Robb, author of *Brave New War*, which describes how terrorists could exploit global systems. To my ear, such statements straddle the line between reasonable advice and hyperventilated threat. One day you're sipping a frappuccino. The next you're using a pitchfork to fend off rioting mobs. But even if I don't fully agree with the dystopian diagnosis, I like Robb's proposed cure: "You're going to have to start doing more for yourself." The beauty of the DIY solution is that the exact problem doesn't matter; greater self-sufficiency makes sense to survivalists and eco-utopians alike.
>
> The dream of living more independently from civilization is almost as old as civilization itself. When Rome fell 1500 years ago, city dwellers fled to the countryside, becoming some of the world's first back-to-the-landers. The Diggers of 17th-century England and Depression-era Americans similarly tried to provide for themselves locally. By the late 1960s and early 70s, as many as 1 million Americans, decrying consumerism and Vietnam, set out for what they thought would be a purer life in the countryside. For inspiration they read Aldo Leopold and Henry David Thoreau; for practical advice on everything from carpentry to compost they clutched issues of the *Whole Earth Catalog*. However well-armed with information, though, most of the would-be pioneers lacked practical experience and abandoned small-farm living after learning that it was—as Novella Carpenter indelicately put it to me—"a s— ton of work."

He goes on to say: "Fed up with consumerism and industrialization in 'civilized society,' Henry David Thoreau settles in at Walden Pond for a 26-month experiment in self-reliance, to live a primitive and frontier life … if only to learn what are the gross necessaries of life and what methods have been taken to obtain them.' … In the depths of the Depression, Scott Nearing, a former college professor, moves his family from New York City to a farm in Vermont. He and his

wife, Helen, describe their experience 22 years later in *Living the Good Life*—inspiring future generations of back-to-the-landers."

ENERGY, FOOD AND FINANCIAL INDEPENDENCE

An interesting book on someone who lives off the grid and teaches how to do it is Cam Mather. Check out his books and DVDs at his website (www.aztext.com). One reviewer said this about his book *Thriving During Challenging Times: The Energy, Food and Financial Independence Handbook*:

> It's time to reclaim your independence to weather the storm and to bring new meaning to your life. The technological world we find ourselves in removes us from the experiences that used to be part of the rhythm of daily life. Growing your own food, heating your home without being reliant on someone else and living within your means financially. These activities bring joy to your life and help you deal with the multiple challenges that face us today. This book is a road map to get your home more independent, to get your bank account back on track and to explore how digging potatoes for dinner, or showering in water heated by the sun can provide the greatest of satisfactions. It's time to pay down that debt, grow your own food and start integrating renewable energy and energy efficiency into your home to reduce your carbon footprint, free yourself from the stress of financial obligations, and return your spirit to its rightful place, in harmony with the simple basic things that make life a fantastic journey.
>
> Author Cam Mather lives 4 miles from the nearest electrical grid, generating his power from the sun and wind and growing most of his own food. He is co-publisher of Aztext Press and its "Solutions for Sustainability" series of books and videos. He has produced instructional DVDs on growing vegetables and installing wind turbines. His workshops on Renewable Energy, Organic Gardening, Irrigation, and Thriving During Challenging Times have motivated thousands of people to take joy in becoming more independent while reducing their footprint on the planet.

To know God and Father and live a fulfilled life we need to live close to nature. The Bible begins with God placing Adam and Eve in a garden where they were commanded to care for the earth and the animals. That commandment still stands. Let's make the entire world a Garden of Eden.

I am moved by the books, DVDs, and websites of religious agrarians like the Amish and Hutterites. Be sure to see the DVD *Hutterites: To Care and Not to Care* (www.christianbook.com). Ken Carpenter has made some great DVDs such as *Inherit the Land: Adventures in the Agrarian Journey* and *A Journey Home* (www.franklinsprings.com).

HOME FUNERALS

Because land is finite on earth I don't see how we can have graveyards taking up precious space. There are even ridiculous pet cemeteries. I know Father speaks lovingly of how ancestor's graves are honored by many people around the world, but there is just so much land for the living. It seems to me the best thing we can do for our descendants is to be cremated or bury bodies without reserving the ground as their home forever on planet earth. Traditional graveyards take up valuable space on earth. Let's end cemeteries. The idea of massive amounts of land reserved for the dead that nobody can walk on is not ecologically friendly anymore. I find graveyards creepy. I don't see them as holy grounds. Let's do burials on land where the body will decay naturally and there is no headstone and the land can be used by the living. Some states let families bury their dead on their land. We should end the use of embalming, metal caskets, vaults and conventional markers and return to inexpensive, eco-friendly burials and let families and friends take responsibility for burials. Read *Grave Matters: A Journey Through the Modern Funeral Industry*

to a Natural Way of Burial by Mark Harris, *The American Way of Death Revisited* by Jessica Mitford, *Coming Home: A Guide to Dying at Home with Dignity* by Deborah Duda, *Final Journeys: A Practical Guide for Bringing Care and Comfort at the End of Life* by Maggie Callanan, *Living into Dying: A Journal of Spiritual and Practical Deathcare for Family and Community* by Nancy Jewel Poer and *Final Rights: Reclaiming the American Way of Death* by Joshua Slocum and Lisa Carlson. Order the video *Passing Through Our Hands: Home Funeral Care Guide* at www.passingthroughourhands.com/?page_id=9. Watch the film *After Death Home Care* on YouTube.com or buy at www.afterdeathhomecare.com. Read the book in free pdf titled *Crossings' Resource Guide: A step-by-step how to guide for home funeral care* or buy the book at www.crossings.net/videos.html. There are excellent videos to watch at the website and a radio interview with Beth Knox on NPR titled "The Cased for Home Funeral Care." Read an excellent article in the *New York Times* titled "Home Burials Offer an Intimate Alternative" (www.nytimes.com/2009/07/21/us/21funeral.html). Check out these websites: www.lastthings.net, www.nanbec.com, www.undertakenwithlove.org, www.homefuneral.info, www.homefuneralalliance.org, and www.asacredmoment.com

A reviewer of the documentary *A Family Undertaking* wrote (watch for free at Neflix):

> What is old is often new again. Most funerals today are part of a multimillion-dollar industry run by professionals. This increased reliance on mortuaries has alienated Americans from life's only inevitability — death. *A Family Undertaking* explores the growing home funeral movement by following several families in their most intimate moments as they reclaim the end of life, forgoing a typical mortuary funeral to care for their loved ones at home. Far from being a radical innovation, keeping funeral rites in the family or among friends is exactly how death was handled for most of pre-20th century America. The advent of the undertaker marked a sharp and negative shift in American attitudes toward death. For many, the death of a loved one became an alienating event, sanitized and institutionalized. Americans literally lost touch with death. Death also became more expensive. Today an average funeral-home memorial and interment costs as much as $7,000 – a burdensome expense many families feel pressured to meet in the name of honoring their dead. *A Family Undertaking* makes clear that the heart of the home funeral movement is the desire to rescue funerals from the impersonality of a mass-market industry, and to reshape them according to personal beliefs or family and community traditions.

One person in the film said, "Having a home funeral for our parents, according to their wishes, meant much more to the family than shipping them off to an undertaker to be bled, mutilated and pickled." We hand our loved ones over to so-called experts with government credentials who traumatize babies and mothers in hospital births, traumatize children in schools and would traumatize loved ones if they saw the horrible embalming process. From birth to death we should be born, educated and buried with love in communities living in the countryside.

HOME BIRTH

Instead of spending thousands of dollars in burying the dead we should spend a few hundred dollars or less. It is obscene the amount of money government spends on schools, and hospitals charge an average of $6000 or more for normal deliveries. For most births we should do home births. Read the article by Joseph Mercola at his website www.mercola.com titled "The Myth of a Safer Hospital Birth for Low-Risk Pregnancies" (7-26-2012). He writes:

> Do you believe that a hospital is the safest place to give birth to a baby? Society certainly paints the picture this way, portraying the hospital as the savior of sorts

where women must rush off to in the middle of the night at the first sign of labor. However, a growing number of women are choosing to buck the status quo and deliver their babies right at home. And wouldn't you know it … this isn't a new fad, it's a return to the way women have been birthing babies for ages – and the research shows it's often the *safer* way, too. In an article written by Judy Cohain, CNM, she highlights 17 studies conducted over the last 15 years that show attended planned home birth is safer for low-risk women than hospital birth. In 12 of the studies, rates of perinatal mortality (deaths that occur before, during or immediately after birth) were either lower or similar for home birth, while rates of maternal morbidity were significantly lower, compared to hospital birth.

As home births have been increasing (by nearly 30 percent from 2004 to 2009) it is common for the media to highlight the rare home birth tragedies, when a baby might have been saved had the birth taken place in a hospital. This *does occur*, but it is rare … far more rare than babies who end up dying due to unnecessary medical interventions or hospital errors.

Cohain concludes: "The deaths caused by rare acute condition at planned attended low risk home birth that might have had a better outcome in hospital are outweighed by the deaths and morbidity due to common acute conditions caused by hospital interventions. Planned attended home birth outshines hospital birth for low risk women in every category of acute emergency. Today research wrongly considers hospital birth as the gold standard. Bias towards hospital births causes the majority of researchers to ignore the fact that women could achieve even better outcomes than hospital birth, at planned attended home birth."

RETURN TO NATURE!

The following are some quotes from Father on the value of nature:

This cosmos we live in is grand. Do you know how big the solar system alone is? Perhaps a hundred billion solar systems exist in the grand cosmos. Think about it. Light travels three hundred thousand kilometers in one second.

How fast sunlight is! It can travel around the world seven times in a second. But it takes billions of years for light to travel around the entire cosmos. Can you take in the unimaginable scale of the cosmos God created? Why did God, who created this massive cosmos, make this world? Because of love that can embrace the vast cosmos. He had wanted to bear the fruit of love through His objects of love, Adam and Eve, but He lost them. With that loss, the world of creation became the symbol of His sorrow, like an open wound in His heart. Think how sad and miserable God must have felt. You can never find this truth in any book in any library in the world. Reverend Moon is the first one to speak of this.

One of the results of the fall is that we have not become masters of nature. So, the most important thing is how closely we can live in and with nature. That kind of life is needed in the religious world: people should train themselves to love fish, love insects, love birds, love animals and then to love other people. People should love other people more than they love any animals or plants.

People are supposed to harmonize with nature and our lives are supposed to be deeply intertwined with nature. Those who ignore nature cannot walk the path of a life of faith, of righteousness and of conscience.

All beings are interconnected horizontally and vertically. Through the various and

harmonious relationships, they can exist and develop. There are so many different and complex species in nature. When we enter into such a world and become part of that harmony, we can actually become one with God's mind, the original divine nature of creation. Therefore, in returning to nature and living our lives in harmony with nature, we can become so much closer to being masters representing God. That is why I conclude that we must all return to nature.

However, if we return to our original position, in harmony with nature in living for others, resembling God's everlasting creativity and love as true masters, we can reflect more and more of God's integrated nature without even consciously realizing it. Only nature can give you that opportunity. That is why I say to you members, "Return to nature!"

You should make deep, joyful friendships with nature. That way you can be God's friends and partners, masters of nature on behalf of God. You can be the kings of all creatures God created, and inherit them all. "Let Us Return to Nature" (10-3-01)

We can learn everything from nature. I discovered more than 80 percent of the principle in nature. I loved to spend nights in nature. One moonlit night I was walking through some pine trees. There were pine tree branches crisscrossing like intertwining arms. A half moon was shining through the branches. Words cannot express such mysterious beauty. You have no idea how magical it was to hear the wind blowing while I was meditating in the midst of those drooping pine trees. I will never forget it. You must feel the joy. Do you understand? [We understand.]

Farming can be fun. Digging with sweat can be fun. Can you really work with so much sweat for your entire life? There is almost no labor I haven't done. It will take up too much time if I tell you everything about that sort of thing. In harmony with nature and in a sound relationship with your environment, if you embark on projects, there isn't anything you won't be successful at!

Now we have to understand this. When we look at nature, which is endowed with the love of God, we have to feel in our mind that neither the wonderful things belonging to kings of this world and famous people, nor antique treasures, nor the splendid clothes worn by famous women can compare to nature.

All of you, who bear the responsibility of liberating the bitterness of heart of the lamenting creation, even at the sight of a blade of grass or a tree, must deeply experience the heart of God six thousand years ago, when He created those things. You must have that kind of mind.

That is why our Unification Church members have to be able to shed tears on seeing a single blade of grass by the wayside. Embracing a single tree, you have to be able to cry, while saying, "How lonely have you been since losing your lord?" Try to do that one time.

What is nature? It is a display of adorable things given by God as a present to me, when His sons and daughters, filled with adoring love, are born. The sound of a bird, or even a single blade of growing grass are ornaments to make the life of His beloved sons and daughters beautiful.

> You have to know how to love nature and love people. You all have to understand that people who cannot love people and cannot love nature, also cannot love God. The things of creation are the symbolic existence of God. Because humankind is the substantial existence of God, the person who knows how to love the creation and humanity will come to love God. (*The Way For Students*)
>
> One single flower is a more superb masterpiece than the greatest painting in a museum. ("A Stimulating and Adventurous Life" 4-16-78 in the book *God's Will and the World*)
>
> Only because of the striving nature of men has mankind achieved what it has so far. Men are made that way; they are designed to reach out for things which they cannot see with their eyes but can only imagine. A man naturally seeks after his dream, his ideal, while women are more concerned with the here and now rather than the future, intangible realm. (*Ideal Family and Ideal World* 1982-06-06)

Around 80% of humanity lives on less than $10 a day. Nearly a billion people are unable to read a book or sign their names. "Some 1.1 billion people in developing countries have inadequate access to water, and 2.6 billion lack basic sanitation." "Extreme poverty is a harsh reality for more than one billion people worldwide." "1.2 Billion People Live On Less Than A Dollar A Day." "According to UNICEF, 25,000 children die each day due to poverty." And they "die quietly in some of the poorest villages on earth, far removed from the scrutiny and the conscience of the world. Being meek and weak in life makes these dying multitudes even more invisible in death." To solve the problem of poverty worldwide we need to focus on land and lineage instead of money and individualism. Everyone should be financially independent and live on land that is debt free and provides enough nutritious food and good shelter. Every person should give their descendants freedom from worrying about money and life's necessities. There is a famous proverb: "Give a man a fish, he will eat for a day. Teach a man to fish, he will eat for a lifetime." How about; "Teach a man why and how to live on a debt-free piece of land where he and his family have a garden that allows them to be self-sufficient then he and his family will eat for a lifetime."

BERKEY WATER PURIFIER

The best water purifier I have found is the Berkey. Search online and watch videos at YouTube. One website said it is "used by relief organizations such as UNICEF, The Peace Corps, and the Red Cross. These home water filters are even used by the Royal household in England." It is cheaper than any other filter I have seen—1 to 2 cents a gallon and if you add the fluoride filter then 7 cents a gallon. It will purify water from lakes, streams, stagnant ponds, and water supplies in foreign countries. I have never seen a filter take out more poisons from water.

CONCRETE DOME HOMES

There are over a billion people on the planet that lack adequate housing. When a 7.0 magnitude earthquake hit Haiti in 2010 many homes collapsed and an estimated 200,000 died and two million people left homeless. There was an earthquake in Kobe, Japan in 1995 that killed over 5,000 people. 82,000 buildings totally collapsed and 99,000 buildings partially collapsed. Damage exceeded 100 billion U.S. dollars. Another fear we have is fire. It can consume a home in minutes. Did you know there is a company that invented and build homes (and if you like will teach you how to make homes in their classes in Texas) that are earthquake, tornado, and fire proof? This company is called Monolithic. Their concrete dome homes are the ultimate in green home construction. Visit their website at www.monolithic.com. They have great videos for sale of their unique concrete dome homes that will last 500 years with little maintenance and use far less

energy to cool and heat and still costs less than conventional construction and there are good videos for free on YouTube.com about concrete domes. The founder of Monolithic, David B. South, has an excellent book titled *Dome Living: A Creative Guide For Planning Your Monolithic Dream Home* (ISBN: 0-9679171-0-7). Also check out American Ingenuity (www.aidomes.com).

EARTHBAG HOMES

The cheapest quality homes I've seen are made of earthbags. These may be excellent starter homes until you can afford a concrete dome home. Check out these books: *Emergency Sandbag Shelter and Eco-Village: How to Build Your Own* by Nader Khalili (www.calearth.org), *Building with Earth: A Guide to Flexible-Form Earthbag Construction* by Paulina Wojciechowska (www.earthbagbuilding.com/resources.htm), *Earthbag Building: The Tools, Tricks and Techniques* by Kaki Hunter (www.earthbagbuilding.com/resources.htm) and *Earthbag Building Guide* by Owen Geiger pdf (www.earthbagbuilding.com/resources.htm) and these DVDs: *Building with Bags: How We Made Our Experimental Earthbag/Papercrete House* by Kelly Hart (www.earthbagbuilding.com/resources.htm), *Basic Earthbag Building: a Step-by-Step Guide* by Owen Geiger (www.earthbagbuilding.com/resources.htm), and videos by Nader Khalili (www.calearth.org). There are many exciting books, websites and YouTube videos on alternative buildings and living. Check out "rocket mass heaters" (*Rocket Mass Heaters: Superefficient Woodstoves You Can Build* by Ianto Evans) and the "sun oven".

In *Cheon Seong Gyeong* Father says how important it is for Unificationists to fish and hunt:

> Those people who hunt have a lot of guts. Effeminate men cannot hunt. On the hole, hunters are people who fight well, and who can become generals.
>
> Men who do not know how to fish or hunt are more like women in character.
>
> The leisure industry will develop and grow in the future. This is because exciting kinds of recreation are necessary to relieve stress for those who live in urban areas. How should they relieve their stress? The three best ways are through hunting, horseback riding, and fishing.
>
> Since fishing is for the summer, and hunting for the autumn and winter, they can be enjoyed alternately. Therefore, in order for us to have enough time for the tourist industry to expand, the hobby industry, consisting of fishing and hunting, is absolutely necessary. Hunting is a sport conducted when it is cold, and fishing is done when it is warm or hot; therefore, together these expand the foothold of the hobbies. Whether it be winter or summer, you can make use of them as year-round hobbies.
>
> Now that I have entrusted to you all the countries of the world, I can enter the age where I can enjoy fishing, hunting, and singing and dancing – without drinking – with all the top leaders of the world. I have distributed ships to 160 nations, and I am preparing to develop the global hobby industry through that group of people.
>
> I am planning to create lakes and hunting grounds. The tourist industry should link the middle and upper classes together. People who go on tours usually belong to a class higher than the middle-class. Therefore, we will make many hunting grounds for doing business, and then breeding grounds for fishing worldwide. Those are the businesses we should do.
>
> The reason some people find fishing is exciting is because they see blood. They feel

it is stress-relieving to see blood. It is the same with hunting. Otherwise, they think, how can we get rid of stress, as people in these modern times? Seeing blood is shocking.

People living a cultured life build up layers of stress. How can one get rid of that stress? It is not enough to just talk about it. You need excitement! Some say nothing works like seeing blood. They say the instant you see the blood flow your stress cannot remain. It all begins to fade away. This is how it is with sportsmanlike hunting. A tuna is much bigger than a bull. Blood splashes up when the tuna is harpooned. Then as you look, the color of the water changes to red. At such a moment, you become like a melancholy poet. If women look at such a sight, they might faint, uttering weakly, "Oh, my God! Ohh…" That is how gruesome it is. So there is no room for stress to build up; it is totally removed. That is how much it affects you.

Any fish can be eaten raw. It may be unpleasant since there is blood, but you will not even need any sauce, such as chili pepper paste, when you sit down and eat the fish, after it has been cleaned and cut. It is simple, nutritious enough, and very good to eat. It is eating live cells, not dead cells. You swallow the delicious raw fish and rest on the boat for a day. Do not worry about getting diarrhea. But if someone does not eat this raw fish, maybe they will have diarrhea. I am showing you such a wonderful way of living yet you do not know about it.

Fishing and hunting are necessary for Unification Church members. Why? You must teach people how to fish and how to survive by hunting in order to save those who are dying of hunger. Therefore, Rev. Moon is dignified even though he has seen the blood of fish and animals. A long time ago, the high priests killed their offerings. The reason why I kill animals is to make the members of the Unification Church the high priests.

This is a divine task. We can organize a group to go help out in Africa once they learn fishing and hunting. I should send hunting and fishing missionaries to Africa to help out and spread this practice all over the world. So wherever you go, we have a way to save the people through fishing and hunting.

There will be a time when thousands and tens of thousands of families can live on one lake. Those fish are all ours if we just know how to fish. Who should fish? Women should do it. Why? It is because women have large, cushion-like hips. They are comfortable. Thus, they can sit for a long time. Men feel pain after sitting for just three hours. Therefore, if one woman catches three fish, she can feed three children, and if she catches four, then she can feed even the father as well. When she goes to the fishing area, she can catch ten fish and perhaps even a couple of dozen fish within one hour. Say there are one hundred families in a village. If they form groups of a hundred women and they decide to catch one hundred or two hundred fish, there would be no problem. It will work by mobilizing a small number of people. The mobilization of all people is not necessary. We can feed them by mobilizing a small group to fish once a month.

You should have good business sense. You should be able to save the twenty million lives that die each year. You should make sure that people do not die of hunger by teaching them how to farm the land, and how to breed fish in water. Why

would they starve to death when their wives and children are able to fish? Why die when there is water and an abundance of fish? That is why we do fishing. You must teach them how to fish. You must also teach them hunting. Many animals, such as alligators, are found there in abundance. Therefore, the Sightseeing and Hunting Association for World Peace is for the sake of bringing about a peaceful world. Why are we doing such work? For twenty years I have lost money, yet I have made a foundation. True Parents must be responsible for those people on earth who are dying of starvation. We cannot give up because all the people in the world are brothers and sisters. Imagine twenty million people becoming members of the Unification Church every year.

By taking the initiative and expanding this worldwide, can you imagine how many people would be saved? I am telling you to learn how to farm and how to fish as soon as possible. Why do you need to do so? You must do so for the sake of those people who are starving to death. Therefore, learn such skills here and return to your countries.

If you teach fishing to those mothers dying of hunger, they will not starve to death, no matter where they go. All they will need is water and land. They can cultivate land for farming. The Caucasians have not taught them this skill. They have just exploited the land, without even teaching them how to farm.

If you go to the mountains, you can find a lot to eat. Even rabbits survive in the mountains, so why can't people live there? When you go to the countryside, there are lakes and rivers. But even though there are a number of fish in the lakes and rivers, you do not even know how to catch and eat them. I am trying to teach all that to you. Also, it is all right for you to go hunting when it is the hunting season. Do you know how to use a gun? You can live on hunting, too. You can survive for a year if you catch one bear. So why not conduct further research on such matters?

I think a lot, even when I am fishing or wherever I am.

Hunting is exercise for the sake of your physical health, and fishing is for the sake of your mental health. You tend to reflect on your life and think a lot when sitting down and fishing. It is amazing that you can actually have such a time. You can analyze your past and plan for your future. It can be the most important period of time for us. You can calmly reflect on yourself with dignity. This is absolutely necessary. This is called the spiritual path of fishing in the East.

You should leave your life's record of hunting rabbits and pheasants in the mountains with such a heart and serve your parents faithfully, offering those animals as the sacrificial offerings before God, and using them as food and the ingredients of life.

If I go to a farming village, I can be the king of farmers. I know well what to cultivate on certain types of land.

Those who have been to our ranch in Texas, raise your hands. The Americans have all been there before. Should I invite you as well? I am thinking of hunting quails, pheasants, and deer at that place. There are a large number of wild turkeys there, too. There are even wild beasts such as boars, wolves and tigers. You should go

hunting and fishing by taking interest in this place. From now, you should start developing land, so that you can develop your own ranch and manage it.

If you have a boat, you can use it to go and meditate by yourself. You can even put up a small tent and sleep inside it. You can go sightseeing. It is like heaven! In order to be immersed in nature and go sightseeing in this way, you need a boat. You absolutely need a boat. Do you think this is the case or not? If not, then you need to realize that it is so.

Throughout your life, your daily life and leisure activities should harmonize with history and the ideal human lifestyle, bringing it into relation with the spirit world. They should be connected to a world of happiness through nature.

Seeing everything in the world existing in pairs and reproducing themselves accordingly, Adam and Eve understand that they too should come together when they have attained full maturity. Before that time, they are not aware of it. Adam and Eve are living together all by themselves. When we consider their characters, Adam is masculine and extrovert. When he wakes up in the morning, he likes to go out to the mountains and catch rabbits, pheasants, deer, and snakes to cut their stomachs open. In order to become the future master and manage everything, he needs to know all there is to know. So he desires to find out what there is in the mountains, what animals can be found there, and what kinds of fish live in the waters. Being a man, he needs to investigate anything and everything to become their lord.

In bringing up the man and woman He had created within His embrace, God provided for them the servant, the archangel, to protect and raise them. When they had reached full maturity, He had meant to marry them, but not before that time. In order to accomplish this, they were born separately, with the man raised as a man and the woman as a woman. After they were fully grown, they would gaze intently at the world and see that the mineral, animal and plant kingdoms were all created in the pair system according to the ideal reciprocal relationships. They were meant to look at them and learn, "Ah! The animals all pair up, have their offspring, and live happily. Wow, the mother risks her own life to protect and nurture her young. We should do so as well!" Hence, nature is the exhibiting museum for the ideal development of Adam and Eve.

God enjoyed Himself as He created the universe. How much fun would it have been? How interesting would it have been for Him as He created everything in the pair system, and saw that even the cells came together in pairs in their love for each other? A well-taken picture gives endless pleasure to its photographer; how much more pleasurable, then, would it be to see the real creation talk and dance with joy?

Fish is much better for your health than beef or any other meat from land animals. Fish is easily digested and absorbed.

I know that in the future the greatest business will be in creating large lakes throughout the world, and in farming fish there so that people can fish. That is why I have to prepare for that from now. For this reason, I am making fish farms, catching fish and constantly putting them into a fishing pond. Then people can fish all twelve months of the year.

In the future, you can make a fish farm and hunting ground, and run a ranch too.

Generally, people do not fish with just one fishing rod. Most fishermen put two fishing rods near each other. The reason why they use two is because these rods symbolize the perfected man and the perfected woman, in other words, the perfection of subject and object partners.

SECURING SUFFICIENT FOOD SUPPLIES

In his autobiography *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen* Father tells us we should figure out food:

My purpose is the same today as it was yesterday. It is to create one world with God at the center, a world brought together like a single nation without boundaries. All humanity will be citizens of this world, sharing a culture of love. In such a world, there will be no possibility for division and conflict. This will mark the beginning of a truly peaceful world.

When I look at the world situation, I feel that securing sufficient food supplies is the most pressing problem. Solving the food crisis cannot be put off for even a moment. Even now, some twenty thousand people around the world die of hunger-related causes every day. We cannot afford to be apathetic just because we and our immediate families are not facing hunger.

The issue of food will present humankind with a very serious crisis in the future. We cannot build a world of peace without first resolving the food issue.

To solve the problem of hunger we must have a heart that is willing to plant seeds. Seeds are planted and wait unseen under the soil until they are able to germinate and break through their outer cover. Similarly, it is better to teach a person how to plant and harvest wheat and then turn it into bread than it is to give a piece of bread to a person who is about to die. The former may be more difficult and not result in as much public recognition, but it is the only way to arrive at a fundamental and sustainable solution to world hunger. We need to begin now to study the climate, the soil, and the character of the people in areas that suffer from hunger.

True peace will not come as long as humanity does not solve the problem of hunger.

It is as important to teach the skills needed to become self-sufficient in producing food as it is to distribute food directly to those in need.

Technical schools will be needed to be established in order to give people the ability to support themselves. We will establish schools – People will be taught how to farm and how to raise cattle. We will also teach how to plant and raise trees and how to catch, process, and sell fish.

The three greatest challenges of modern society are solving pollution problems, creating a consciousness for protecting the environment, and increasing food production. If any of these is neglected, humanity will become extinct. The earth has already been damaged extensively. Endless greed for material possessions has brought about serious air and water pollution that is destroying nature, including the ozone layer that protects us. If present trends continue, humanity will find itself destroyed by the traps of material civilization.

We cannot allow the earth to be damaged any further. Religious people must lead the way in the effort to save nature. Nature is God's creation and His gift to humankind. We must work quickly to awaken people to the preciousness of nature and the urgent need to restore it to the rich and free state it enjoyed at the time of Creation.

> God gave this environment to humanity. It was His will that we use the environment to obtain food, to have it in abundance, and to experience the joy of living in the beauty of nature. Nature is not something to be used once and thrown away. Our descendants for many generations to come must be able to rely on it just as we have.
>
> The shortcut to protecting nature is to develop a heart that loves nature. We must be able to shed a tear at the sight of even a blade of grass that we see as we walk along the road. We must be able to grab hold of a tree and weep. We must understand that God's breath is hidden inside a single boulder or a single gust of wind. To care for and love the environment is to love God. We must be able to see each creature created by God as an object of our love. With our spiritual eyes opened we could see that a single dandelion by the roadside is more valuable than the gold crowns of Kings.

Father does not give practical advice on how to "obtain food." There is a movement of people leaving the city to live in the countryside and live independently like most people have for thousands of years. In 1790 2% of Americans lived in the cities. Today 80% live on 3% of the land! Satan's strategy to destroy the family and the country was to get us out of the country. God wants us to leave the concrete jungle cities and live in a garden. There are some excellent books and videos by some Seventh Day Adventists who give spiritual as well as practical advice on how to make it in the country. Check out the book *Sustainable Preparedness: Reclaiming Noble Independence in an Unstable World* (www.sustainablepreparedness.com) and the following videos and websites:

1. *Urban Danger* (watch for free or buy video at www.urbandanger.com)

2. *America's Cities: The Coming Crisis* (buy video at www.americascitiesthemovie.com)

Country Living: An Aid to Moral and Social Security

One of the founders of The Seventh Day Adventist church was Ellen G. White. She emphasized the importance of moving from the city to the countryside. In 1946 the church put together a pamphlet titled "Country Living: An Aid to Moral and Social Security—A Compilation From the Writings of Ellen G White." This is the Forward:

> *Country Living* was first published in 1946. Its counsels and warnings have challenged many Seventh-day Adventists to examine carefully the effects of urban living on their lives and to reevaluate where they choose to live. It has highlighted the dangers of involvement with labor unions and other sources of party strife in the cities. At the same time, it has helped those with a burden for city evangelism to consider how best to be *in* the world but not *of* the world.
>
> With the end of time approaching, this instruction is more relevant than ever. A new generation of believers will find these counsels opening horizons to them that they had not envisioned.
>
> The writings of Ellen G. White repeatedly urge the advantages of country living. As conditions in our world build toward the final events, Seventh-day Adventists recall the Lord's instruction about leaving the cities, with their congestion, corruption, and conflicts. The cities do not provide a wholesome environment for Christian families.

Yet the counsels in this booklet also warn against acting rashly. Each person or family should study the instruction, think and pray about it, identify and evaluate the options, and ask God to make His leading clear.

God's people "Desire a better country, that is, an heavenly" (*Hebrews* 11:16). No place on earth can equal that home that God is preparing for us. Yet we may bring something of the heavenly country's atmosphere into our homes here, especially in rural settings. Thus, we believe that the inspired counsels set forth in this small volume will be appreciated by every Seventh-day Adventist.

—The Trustees of the Ellen G. White Publications

The following are some of the quotes of her in the pamphlet:

The Perils of the Cities

Few realize the importance of shunning, so far as possible, all associations unfriendly to religious life. In choosing their surroundings, few make their spiritual prosperity the first consideration.

Parents flock with their families to the cities, because they fancy it easier to obtain a livelihood there than in the country. The children, having nothing to do when not in school, obtain a street education. From evil associates, they acquire habits of vice and dissipation. The parents see all this, but it will require a sacrifice to correct their error, and they stay where they are, until Satan gains full control of their children.

Better sacrifice any and every worldly consideration than to imperil the precious souls committed to your care. They will be assailed by temptations, and should be taught to meet them; but it is your duty to cut off every influence, to break up every habit, to sunder every tie, that keeps you from the most free, open, and hearty committal of yourselves and your family to God.

Instead of the crowded city, seek some retired situation where your children will be, so far as possible, shielded from temptation, and there train and educate them for usefulness. The prophet Ezekiel thus enumerates the causes that led to Sodom's sin and destruction: "Pride, fullness of bread, and abundance of idleness was in her and in her daughters; neither did she strengthen the hands of the poor and needy." All who would escape the doom of Sodom, must shun the course that brought God's judgments upon that wicked city.—Testimonies for the Church 5:232, 233 (1882).

City Living Not God's Plan

The world over, cities are becoming hotbeds of vice. On every hand are the sights and sounds of evil. Everywhere are enticements to sensuality and dissipation. The tide of corruption and crime is continually swelling. Every day brings the record of violence,—robberies, murders, suicides, and crimes unnamable.

Life in the cities is false and artificial. The intense passion for money getting, the whirl of excitement and pleasure seeking, the thirst for display, the luxury and extravagance, all are forces that, with the great masses of mankind, are turning the mind from life's true purpose. They are opening the door to a thousand evils. Upon the youth they have almost irresistible power.

One of the most subtle and dangerous temptations that assails the children and youth in the cities is the love of pleasure. Holidays are numerous; games and horse racing draw thousands, and the whirl of excitement and pleasure attracts them away

from the sober duties of life. Money that should have been saved for better uses is frittered away for amusements.

Through the working of trusts, and the results of labor unions and strikes the conditions of life in the city are constantly becoming more and more difficult. Serious troubles are before us; and for many families removal from the cities will become a necessity.

The physical surroundings in the cities are often a peril to health. The constant liability to contact with disease, the prevalence of foul air, impure water, impure food, the crowded, dark, unhealthful dwellings, are some of the many evils to be met.

It was not God's purpose that people should be crowded into cities, huddled together in terraces and tenements. In the beginning He placed our first parents amidst the beautiful sights and sounds He desires us to rejoice in today. The more nearly we come into harmony with God's original plan, the more favorable will be our position to secure health of body, and mind, and soul.—The Ministry of Healing, 363-365 (1905).

Keep the Children From Hotbeds of Iniquity

Let no temporal advantages tempt parents to neglect the training of their children. Whenever possible, it is the duty of parents to make homes in the country for their children. The children and youth should be carefully guarded. They should be kept away from the hotbeds of iniquity that are to be found in our cities. Let them be surrounded by the influences of a true Christian home—a home where Christ abides.—Letter 268, 1906.

Keep the Children From Hotbeds of Iniquity

Let no temporal advantages tempt parents to neglect the training of their children. Whenever possible, it is the duty of parents to make homes in the country for their children. The children and youth should be carefully guarded. They should be kept away from the hotbeds of iniquity that are to be found in our cities. Let them be surrounded by the influences of a true Christian home—a home where Christ abides.—Letter 268, 1906.

Then let us make no more investments in the cities. Fathers and mothers, how do you regard the souls of your children? Are you preparing the members of your families for translation into the heavenly courts? Are you preparing them to become members of the royal family? children of the heavenly King? "What shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?" How will ease, comfort, convenience, compare with the value of the souls of your children?—Manuscript 76, 1905.

There is not one family in a hundred who will be improved physically, mentally, or spiritually, by residing in the city. Faith, hope, love, happiness, can far better be gained in retired places, where there are fields and hills and trees. Take your children away from the sights and sounds of the city, away from the rattle and din of streetcars and teams, and their minds will become more healthy. It will be found easier to bring home to their hearts the truth of the Word of God.—Manuscript 76, 1905.

Send the children to schools located in the city, where every phase of temptation is waiting to attract and demoralize them, and the work of character building is tenfold harder for both parents and children.—Fundamentals of Christian Education, 326 (1894).

The Refuge of Country Places

Let parents understand that the training of their children is an important work in the saving of souls. In country places abundant useful exercise will be found in doing those things that need to be done, and which will give physical health by developing nerve and muscle. Out of the cities is my message for the education of our children.

God gave to our first parents the means of true education when He instructed them to till the soil and care for their Garden home. After sin came in, through disobedience to the Lord's requirements, the work to be done in cultivating the ground was greatly multiplied, for the earth, because of the curse, brought forth weeds and thistles. But the employment itself was not given because of sin. The great Master Himself blessed the work of tilling the soil.

"As ... In The Days Of Noah"

It is Satan's purpose to attract men and women to the cities, and to gain his object he invents every kind of novelty and amusement, every kind of excitement. And the cities of the earth today are becoming as were the cities before the Flood.

We should carry a continual burden as we see the fulfillment of the words of Christ, "As the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be." Matthew 24:37. In the days before the Flood, every kind of amusement was invented to lead men and women to forgetfulness and sin. Today, in 1908, Satan is working with intensity, that the same conditions of evil shall prevail. And the earth is becoming corrupt. Religious liberty will be little respected by professing Christians, for many of them have no understanding of spiritual things.

We cannot fail to see that the end of the world is soon to come. Satan is working upon the minds of men and women, and many seem filled with a desire for amusement and excitement. As it was in the days of Noah, every kind of evil is on the increase. Divorce and marriage is the order of the time. At such a time as this, the people who are seeking to keep the commandments of God should look for retired places away from the cities....

Not A Deprivation

Who will be warned? We say again, Out of the cities. Do not consider it a great deprivation, that you must go into the hills and mountains, but seek for that retirement where you can be alone with God, to learn His will and way....

I urge our people to make it their lifework to seek for spirituality. Christ is at the door. This is why I say to our people, Do not consider it a privation when you are called to leave the cities and move out into the country places. Here there await rich blessings for those who will grasp them. By beholding the scenes of nature, the works of the Creator, by studying God's handiwork, imperceptibly you will be changed into the same image.—Manuscript 85, 1908.

An expensive dwelling, elaborate furnishings, display, luxury, and ease, do not furnish the conditions essential to a happy, useful life. Jesus came to this earth to

accomplish the greatest work ever accomplished among men. He came as God's ambassador, to show us how to live so as to secure life's best results. What were the conditions chosen by the infinite Father for His Son? A secluded home in the Galilean hills; a household sustained by honest, self-respecting labor; a life of simplicity; daily conflict with difficulty and hardship; self-sacrifice, economy, and patient, gladsome service; the hour of study at His mother's side, with the open scroll of Scripture; the quiet of dawn or twilight in the green valley; the holy ministries of nature; the study of creation and providence; and the soul's communion with God,—these were the conditions and opportunities of the early life of Jesus.

Country Heritage of Noble Men

So with the great majority of the best and noblest men of all ages. Read the history of Abraham, Jacob, and Joseph, of Moses, David, and Elisha. Study the lives of men of later times who have most worthily filled positions of trust and responsibility, the men whose influence has been most effective for the world's uplifting.

How many of these were reared in country homes. They knew little of luxury. They did not spend their youth in amusement. Many were forced to struggle with poverty and hardship. They early learned to work, and their active life in the open air gave vigor and elasticity to all their faculties. Forced to depend upon their own resources, they learned to combat difficulties and to surmount obstacles, and they gained courage and perseverance. They learned the lessons of self-reliance and self-control. Sheltered in a great degree from evil associations, they were satisfied with natural pleasures and wholesome companionships. They were simple in their tastes and temperate in their habits. They were governed by principle, and they grew up pure and strong and true. When called to their lifework, they brought to it physical and mental power, buoyancy of spirit, ability to plan and execute, and steadfastness in resisting evil, that made them a positive power for good in the world.

Better Than Wealth

Better than any other inheritance of wealth you can give to your children will be the gift of a healthy body, a sound mind, and a noble character. Those who understand what constitutes life's true success will be wise betimes. They will keep in view life's best things in their choice of a home.

Instead of dwelling where only the works of men can be seen, where the sights and sounds frequently suggest thoughts of evil, where turmoil and confusion bring weariness and disquietude, go where you can look upon the works of God. Find rest of spirit in the beauty and quietude and peace of nature. Let the eye rest on the green fields, the groves, and the hills. Look up to the blue sky, unobscured by the city's dust and smoke, and breathe the invigorating air of heaven. Go where, apart from the distractions and dissipations of city life, you can give your children your companionship, where you can teach them to learn of God through His works, and train them for lives of integrity and usefulness.—The Ministry of Healing, 265-267(1905).

Manifold Benefits of Active Out-of-Door Life

It would be well for you to lay by your perplexing cares, and find a retreat in the country, where there is not so strong an influence to corrupt the morals of the young.

True, you would not be entirely free from annoyances and perplexing cares in the country; but you would there avoid many evils and close the door against a flood of temptations which threaten to overpower the minds of your children. They need employment and variety. The sameness of their home makes them uneasy and restless, and they have fallen into the habit of mingling with the vicious lads of the town, thus obtaining a street education....

To live in the country would be very beneficial to them; an active, out-of-door life would develop health of both mind and body. They should have a garden to cultivate, where they might find both amusement and useful employment. The training of plants and flowers tends to the improvement of taste and judgment, while an acquaintance with God's useful and beautiful creations has a refining and ennobling influence upon the mind, referring it to the Maker and Master of all.—Testimonies for the Church 4:136 (1876).

Expect No Miracle to Undo Results of Wrong Course

I look at these flowers, and every time I see them I think of Eden. They are an expression of God's love for us. Thus He gives us in this world a little taste of Eden. He wants us to delight in the beautiful things of His creation, and to see in them an expression of what He will do for us.

He wants us to live where we can have elbow room. His people are not to crowd into the cities. He wants them to take their families out of the cities, that they may better prepare for eternal life. In a little while they will have to leave the cities.

These cities are filled with wickedness of every kind,—with strikes and murders and suicides. Satan is in them, controlling men in their work of destruction. Under his influence they kill for the sake of killing, and this they will do more and more....

If we place ourselves under objectionable influences, can we expect God to work a miracle to undo the results of our wrong course?—No, indeed. Get out of the cities as soon as possible, and purchase a little piece of land, where you can have a garden, where your children can watch the flowers growing, and learn from them lessons of simplicity and purity.—The General Conference Bulletin, March 30, 1903.

We should work the soil cheerfully, hopefully, gratefully, believing that the earth holds in her bosom rich stores for the faithful worker to garner, stores richer than gold or silver.

A return to simpler methods will be appreciated by the children and youth. Work in the garden and field will be an agreeable change from the wearisome routine of abstract lessons, to which their young minds should never be confined. To the nervous child, who finds lessons from books exhausting and hard to remember, it will be especially valuable. There is health and happiness for him in the study of nature; and the impressions made will not fade out of his mind, for they will be associated with objects that are continually before his eyes.—Testimonies for the Church 6:178, 179 (1900).

The earth is to be made to give forth its strength; but without the blessing of God it could do nothing. In the beginning, God looked upon all that He had made, and pronounced it very good. The curse was brought upon the earth in consequence of

sin. But shall this curse be multiplied by increasing sin? Ignorance is doing its baleful work. Slothful servants are increasing the evil by their lazy habits. Many are unwilling to earn their bread by the sweat of their brow, and they refuse to till the soil. But the earth has blessings hidden in her depths for those who have courage and will and perseverance to gather her treasures. Fathers and mothers who possess a piece of land and a comfortable home are kings and queens.

Many farmers have failed to secure adequate returns from their land because they have undertaken the work as though it was a degrading employment; they do not see that there is a blessing in it for themselves and their families. All they can discern is the brand of servitude. Their orchards are neglected, the crops are not put in at the right season, and a mere surface work is done in cultivating the soil.—Fundamentals of Christian Education, 326, 327 (1894).

If the poor now crowded into the cities could find homes upon the land, they might not only earn a livelihood, but find health and happiness now unknown to them. Hard work, simple fare, close economy, often hardship and privation, would be their lot. But what a blessing would be theirs in leaving the city, with its enticements to evil, its turmoil and crime, misery and foulness, for the country's quiet and peace and purity.

To many of those living in the cities who have not a spot of green grass to set their feet upon, who year after year have looked out upon filthy courts and narrow alleys, brick walls and pavements, and skies clouded with dust and smoke,—if these could be taken to some farming district, surrounded with the green fields, the woods and hills and brooks, the clear skies and the fresh, pure air of the country, it would seem almost like heaven.

Cut off to a great degree from contact with and dependence upon men, and separated from the world's corrupting maxims and customs and excitements, they would come nearer to the heart of nature. God's presence would be more real to them. Many would learn the lesson of dependence upon Him. Through nature they would hear His voice speaking to their hearts of His peace and love, and mind and soul and body would respond to the healing, life-giving power.—The Ministry of Healing, 190-192(1905).

MEN OF THE SOIL

President Theodore Roosevelt began his speech titled "On American Motherhood" given by in Washington on March 13, 1905: "In our modern industrial civilization there are many and grave dangers to counterbalance the splendors and the triumphs. It is not a good thing to see cities grow at disproportionate speed relatively to the country; for the small land owners, the men who own their little homes, and therefore to a very large extent the men who till farms, the men of the soil, have hitherto made the foundation of lasting national life in every State; and, if the foundation becomes either too weak or too narrow, the superstructure, no matter how attractive, is in imminent danger of falling."

True Father said in his autobiography, " I feel sorry for children these days who don't grow up in the countryside." I challenge every Unificationist to live on debt-free acres of land so that children can be an asset in the raising of plants and animals for food instead of being a liability when they live in the city. Every Unificationist should live in the countryside and become experts at being self-sufficient so they can know security, the joy of being close to nature and commune with God more deeply. If our children and grandchildren are not growing vegetables, canning and storing food in a root cellar we will not know peace of mind and experience the highest happiness.

CHAPTER NINE

HOMESCHOOL

The ninth value is directed to Unificationist parents commanding them to be the primary teachers of their children. I believe Father wants us to live next door to two other families in a trinity who help each other. One advantage to this would be that homeschooling would be in three homes instead of just one as it is done now. Even if we cannot find other Unificationists to live next to us and share in the teaching of our children, we should not put our kids in schools outside the home where they are not protected by godly patriarchs. The family is the school of love and it should be the school of the Three R's as well.

It is best if the parents are the primary teachers. Parents of minor children should not send their children to other schools—even the current schools built by Unificationists. There has been an exodus of children from the public schools to being homeschooled. It is one of the most powerful trends in society today. Millions of children are being taught at home because parents are seeing that schools are not only not teaching right values they can't even educate at a basic level of reading and writing skills. And many children are in danger physically at school as well. The exciting thing about living as trinities would be that three mothers could focus on the daily education of children instead of one in her home. If three families in a trinity shared the same values they could help each other with the children they have between them and focus on teaching each child with individual attention that would not be given in the factory-like public and private schools. They could have the older children teaching the younger. There would be great creativity and sensitivity to each child. Even though Unificationists do not live as trinities now they should still pull their children out of schools and educate them at home.

It is asking a lot for a family all by itself to have 12 children and be there for each one all day long everyday of their life as they grow from babies to adults. If three women were united in heart and mind on helping each other care for their children there would be a good chance that each child will have a nutritious breakfast on time and prepared by a woman who loved that child intimately. If each woman had 12 children then there would be 36 children in the trinity. That's a lot of children to care for! Each one needs special attention. I believe in the homeschool movement that is predominately Christian who will not expose the impressionable young minds of their children to the evil empire of the teacher's union, the National Education Association. The NEA is a vast left-wing conspiracy to brainwash the youth of America to hate the traditional family. One of the greatest sociological events of the last 20 years has been the homeschool movement that went from zero to millions. And they are growing. God is working to decentralize power to the family and away from big government and big churches. God is working to win the cultural war in America and the war between religions by focusing on the family. Father has changed the name of his organization from church to family. Father knows that Unificationists hold the key to world peace. He wants our families to lead the revolution against the forces of darkness that now dominate our crazy culture. Father has called us to be teachers of the truth. We are to teach by word and deed the universal values that everyone is to live by. We start by teaching our children those values. We should join the homeschool movement and fight against the NEA that has become the most powerful union in America. It supports the Democratic party that works to crush the biblical family.

The NEA fights against any attempt to limit public schools. The Democratic Party joins with them in opposing the school voucher movement. David Gelernter, a professor at Yale University and a

conservative columnist for the *Los Angeles Times* wrote (4-29-05):

> The ugly truth is that Democrats habitually treat voters like children. ... the whole basis of Democratic philosophy [is] We'll take care of you. Leave the thinking to us. Nancy Pelosi and Harry Reid, minority leaders of the House and Senate, respectively, — kindly Mom and Pop to a nation of intellectually limited youngsters. (But thank goodness, they love us anyway.)
>
> How could anyone be opposed to school vouchers? Vouchers let you decide where to spend tax money to educate your children. You give the voucher to any public or private school; it's your call. But Democrats worry that (among other things) too many parents will spend their vouchers at a local Obedience School for Little Nazis or the neighborhood Witchcraft Academy. That's what they think of their fellow citizens. That's what they think of you!
>
> Democrats oppose vouchers out of honest conviction. They are honestly convinced that ordinary Americans don't have the brains to choose a school for their own kids.
>
> Democrats are professors in disguise. Scratch a Democrat, find a professor.
>
> It all goes back to central planning, socialism, Marxism — let the experts run the economy; free markets are too democratic and messy.
>
> Professors see the world in terms of experts and students: "We are smart; you are dumb." That's the Infantile American Principle in a nutshell. Now go play with your toys and don't bother me.

Milton Friedman is often correct but he is wrong in his crusade for vouchers. He writes in an article titled "Public Schools: Make Them Private":

> Our elementary and secondary educational system needs to be radically reconstructed. Such a reconstruction can be achieved only by privatizing a major segment of the educational system—i.e., by enabling a private, for-profit industry to develop that will provide a wide variety of learning opportunities and offer effective competition to public schools. The most feasible way to bring about such a transfer from government to private enterprise is to enact in each state a voucher system that enables parents to choose freely the schools their children attend. The voucher must be universal, available to all parents, and large enough to cover the costs of a high-quality education. No conditions should be attached to vouchers that interfere with the freedom of private enterprises to experiment, to explore, and to innovate.

The truth is that government should have nothing to do with education. Laurence M. Vance in an article he wrote titled "Vouchers: Just Say "No" says it well:

> Say "no" to state control of education. Say "no" to state funding of education. Say "no" to state central planning. Say "no" to compulsory education. Say "no" to parental irresponsibility. Say "no" to pseudo-free market schemes. Say "no" to income redistribution. And say "no" to libertarian welfare programs.
>
> Libertarian voucher supporters should pay more attention to Ludwig von Mises than Milton Friedman: "There is, in fact, only one solution: the state, the government, the laws must not in any way concern themselves with schooling or education. Public funds must not be used for such purposes. The rearing and instruction of youth must be left entirely to parents and to private associations and institutions" (Mises, *Liberalism*, p. 115).

Let's teach people that they should reject all proposals by politicians to improve public schools

and all proposals of different kinds of public schools. For reasons of space I cannot go into detail. An excellent source of information against government efforts to be involved in education is the website www.honestedu.org led by Marshall Fritz. He has some excellent articles by himself and others you can read. In one article he began, "What about tax-funded vouchers, tax credits, and charter schools? While tax-funded vouchers, education/scholarship tax credits, and charter schools introduce sorely-needed competition into schooling, they have at least four serious flaws which suggest they are more of a curse than a blessing." Then he goes on to explain what the flaws are in vouchers and charter schools. In his intro to giving articles by others he says, "The following critique speaks to vouchers, but when all the camouflage is removed, the drawbacks of vouchers are also inherent in universal tax credits, refundable tax credits, scholarship tax credits, and charter schools." Here are few of the titles of articles he has for you to read: "Charter Schools: Trojan Horse in American Home Education" by Patrick Hurd, "Vouchers: Another Income Redistribution Scheme" by Laurence M. Vance, "Vouchers: Another Name for Welfare" by Llewellyn H. Rockwell, Jr., "The School Voucher Myth" by J.H. Huebert. If you search the web you can find excellent statements against vouchers and charter schools. One site said, "Charter schools are public schools" and therefore are "an institution that is at war with God." One of our greatest goals should be to stop all government involvement in education.

The godfather of the liberal Democrats is Karl Marx. Marx lived in the Victorian era. He listed 10 core values in his book *The Communist Manifesto* in 1848 that opposed the traditional values people lived by during that time. Father was born 72 years after the publication of Marx's book in 1920 and by then America was well on its way to accepting the values Marx wrote. His tenth written goal and value is "Public and publicly funded education of all children" which is also translated as "Free education for all children in public schools." He and Engels wrote, "We abolish the closest relationships, by putting social education in place of the domestic one" or translated as, "we destroy the most hallowed of relations, when we replace home education by social." Their key written goal is to get children away from their parents and have them educated by so-called experts outside the home who despise the traditional family. Marx and Engels have achieved their goal.

They wrote their values and goals and America has embraced them. Now atheist big government teaches our children to hate the traditional family. Posters in schools show women being ship captains, welders and politicians. You'll never see a poster of a stay-at-home mom in a school. Women have given up educating their children and gone to work alongside men. America is living the Communist dream and doesn't know what hit them. The movement to restore children being taught primarily by their parents is the homeschool movement. Millions of children are now being homeschooled and scientific studies show these kids are doing much better than public schooled kids. One article on homeschooling says, "Achievement tests have found that homeschoolers average as much as 30 percent higher than both public and private school students."

"Studies by Cornell University Professor Urie Bronfenbrenner suggest that, at least until age 10 or 12, students who spend more time with other children their age than with their parents tend to rely on other children for their values. The result? They tend to have a lower sense of self-worth, of optimism, of respect for their parents, and, ironically, even of trust in their peers. If he is correct, this is one of the major, and unrecognized, reasons for the growing dysfunction of much adolescent behavior."

Vin Suprynowicz writes:

> The single largest difference between home-schooling and public schooling? The public schools turn out an average 50th percentile student at an average cost of $5,325 per student per year, excluding the capital costs of bonding and building the schools themselves, according to U.S. Department of Education

> statistics for the 1993-94 school year. Average annual cost to produce an average 85th percentile home-schooled student? $546 ... plus the sacrifice of a potential second income, of course, by a family which is still taxed to support government schools it does not use.
>
> For his doctoral dissertation at the University of Florida in 1992, Larry Shyers videotaped 8- to 10-year-old children at play, and then had their behavior observed by trained counselors who did not know which children went to regular schools and which were home schooled.
>
> "The study found no big difference between the two groups of children in self-concept or assertiveness," reports Isabel Lyman in her Cato Institute report. "But the videotapes showed that youngsters who were taught at home by their parents had consistently fewer behavior problems."
>
> The Colfax family of Boonville, California, famously saw three of their four homeschooled sons accepted by Harvard.

Studies have shown that kids who are homeschooled are usually better educated and have better manners. The main objection to homeschooling by advocates of public schools is that homeschool kids are denied socialization. Homeschoolers call it the "S" word. Homeschool parents are accused of being over-protective and preventing their kids from having social graces and learning how to deal with others. Ann Zeise wrote in an article at a homeschooling website that when she is asked, "Aren't you concerned about socialization?" she writes, "Most homeschooling parents want to tear their hair out if they hear this question one more time. I'm one of them. Note my bald spot. A tactic I use is to get the questioner to define what they mean by 'socialization.' You won't believe what I've been told." One mother wrote that when she is asked if she is concerned about socialization she says, "Yes, I am deeply concerned...that is why I homeschool." There have been so many millions of children who have been homeschooled over the past 20 years that it is clear that they are often better at socializing because they are more mature and have spent more time with people of different ages. Children in schools spend all their time with their own age group and can't relate to others as well as homeschool kids.

The public schools and the vast majority of private schools are bad places for kids. There are many books against schools that may help you see just how bad they are. Here are a few you may want to read:

Separating School and State: How to Liberate America's Families by Sheldon Richman
Dumbing Us Down: The Hidden Curriculum of Compulsory Schooling, 10th Anniversary Edition by John Taylor Gatto
A Different Kind of Teacher: Solving the Crisis of American Schooling by John Taylor Gatto
Weapons of Mass Instruction: A Schoolteacher's Journey Through the Dark World of Compulsory Schooling by John Taylor Gatto
The Exhausted School: Bending the Bars of Traditional Education by John Taylor Gatto
Homeschool Your Child for Free: More Than 1,200 Smart, Effective, and Practical Resources for Home Education on the Internet and Beyond by Laura Gold, Joan M. Zielinski
The Teenage Liberation Handbook: How to Quit School and Get a Real Life and Education by Grace Llewellyn
Homeschooling Our Children Unschooling Ourselves by Alison McKee
Bullying at School: What We Know and What We Can Do (Understanding Children's Worlds) by Dan Olweus
The Twelve-Year Sentence: Radical Views on Compulsory Education by David Boaz
Guerrilla Learning: How to Give Your Kids a Real Education With or Without School by Grace Llewelyn and Amy Silver
Teach Your Own by John Holt, et al

Learning All the Time by John Holt
Instead of Education: Ways to Help People do Things Better by John Holt
The Book of Learning and Forgetting by Frank Smith
Real Lives: Eleven Teenagers Who Don't Go to School by Grace Llewelyn
Better Than College: How to Build a Successful Life Without a Four-Year Degree by Blake Boles
Back to Basics: Raising Self-Sufficient Children by Barbara Frank
The Ultimate Book of Homeschooling Ideas by Linda Dobson
Home Learning Year by Year by Rebecca Rupp
Deschooling Our Lives by Matt Hern
Field Day: Getting Society Out of School by Matt Hern
The Harsh Truth about Public Schools by Bruce Shortt
Public Schools, Public Menace: How Public Schools Lie To Parents and Betray Our Children by Joel Turtel

G.K. Chesterton wrote:

> **THE OUTLAWED PARENT**
> There is one thing at least of which there is never so much as a whisper inside the popular schools; and that is the opinion of the people. The only persons who seem to have nothing to do with the education of the children are the parents.

CLASSROOM BRAINWASHING
The cover of Thomas Sowell's book *Inside American Education* says, "Our educational establishment is morally and intellectually bankrupt." In his chapter titled "Classroom Brainwashing" he says schools use "technically sophisticated brainwashing techniques ... that actively promote 'politically correct' attitudes." He writes, "It is not merely that Johnny can't read, or even that Johnny can't think. Johnny doesn't know what thinking is, because thinking is so often accused with feeling in many public schools." "The brutal reality is that the American system of education is bankrupt." " . . . the intellectual caliber of public school teachers in the United States is shockingly low." "Parents who send their children to school with instructions to respect and obey their teachers may be surprised to discover how often these children are sent back home conditioned to disrespect and disobey their parents." He cites research that shows how uneducated people are today. For example, one study found that half of all 17 year olds do not know who Josef Stalin was.

One reviewer wrote of Bruce Shortt's book, *The Harsh Truth about Public Schools*:

> Should Christian parents send their kids to public schools? That question is generating much controversy in Christian circles these days. In one camp are those who say Christian children need to be in the public schools to provide the 'salt and light' that schools so badly need. In the other are those who say it's far more likely Christian children will be the ones influenced by their teachers and classmates rather than the other way around. Bruce Shortt, a Houston attorney who coauthored the 2004 Southern Baptist Convention resolution urging Christian parents to remove their children from public schools, falls squarely in the second camp. In *The Harsh Truth About Public Schools*, a scathing critique of what he and other critics term "government schools," Shortt argues that public education is having a devastating effect on the faith of Christian children.
>
> Among the evidence Shortt uses to support that argument is a Nehemiah Institute report indicating Christian children in public schools are many times more likely than those in Christian schools to believe in moral relativism. Other

> evidence includes a 2002 Barna Research report that found only "9% of born-again teenagers believe that absolute truth exists." Shortt also cites sources that show "a substantial majority of children from Christian homes stop attending church within two years after graduating from public school." Shortt attributes these trends in large part to "the social and moral values propagated through government schools."
>
> In *The Harsh Truth About Public Schools*, Shortt explains why he believes public schools undermine the faith and values Christian parents want their children to have. From values clarification to multiculturalism to the normalization of homosexuality, Shortt provides example after example of the anti-Christian influences public school children are exposed to every day. And to those parents who still think it's possible to reform public education, Shortt says forget it. For reasons outlined in the book, "government schools are unreformable," he claims, and "they cannot and should not be expected to provide the Christian education that the Bible enjoins Christian parents to provide to their children."

John Taylor Gatto writes: "In 1790, it was still possible to get an education in the U.S. One dramatic evidence of that was that Tom Paine's *Common Sense* sold 600,000 copies in that year to a population of two and a quarter million, three-quarters of it slaves and indentured servants. Almost nobody has the skill to read *Common Sense* today, even though its language is simple and powerful… In 1790 school didn't preempt all the time of the young in endless abstractions, nor did it act as the major destabilizer of family life then, nor did it disseminate a river of half-truths and state-approved myths so that its clientele were turned servile and mindless….Alexis de Tocqueville said in 1831 that the common people of America were the best educated in the history of the world. That was before we had a government monopoly in schooling—does anyone think he'd say that again?"

Thomas Jefferson wrote a letter to a friend on March 14, 1818 telling him some of his ideas on homeschooling his daughters. He wrote, "I thought it essential to give them a solid education, which might enable them, when they become mothers, to educate their own daughters, and even to direct the course for sons, should their fathers be lost, or incapable, or inattentive. My surviving daughter accordingly, the mother of many daughters as well as sons, has made their education the object of her life, and being a better judge of the practical part than myself, it is with her aid and that of one of her elves, that I shall subjoin a catalogue of the books for such a course of reading as we have practiced."

He goes on to write about the value of women's work in the home saying, "I need say nothing of household economy, in which the mothers of our country are generally skilled, and generally careful to instruct their daughters. We all know its value, and that diligence and dexterity in all its processes are inestimable treasures. The order and economy of a house are as honorable to the mistress as those of the farm to the master, and if either be neglected, ruin follows, and children destitute of the means of living." Is this what is taught in public and private schools? Is this the message taught at blessing workshops and at our seminary? It should be.

In another letter Jefferson listed some characteristics of a lady: "possessing good sense, good humor, honest hearts, honest manners...music, modesty, and that softness of disposition, which is the ornament of her sex and charm of ours." Do Unificationists teach young women to be "soft"? Does fundraising help a girl to be "soft"? Unificationist sisters should marry young and begin having babies and not waste their time with fundraising or working at a job. The greatest church work a young person can do is to build a big family that is more impressive than families in the outside world.

When he was traveling through France Jefferson wrote, "I observe women and children carrying heavy burdens, and laboring with the hoe.... Men, in a civilized country, never expose their wives and children to labor above their force and sex." In our so-called modern culture women are police officers. These are women who are laboring "above their force" as Jefferson said. Women who compete with men in the workplace are laboring "above their sex." By Jefferson's definition, we are living in an uncivilized society, not the advanced, enlightened society feminists keep telling us we are in where women are liberated from being what they call doormats who were always barefoot and pregnant. The social experiment of feminism that has rejected Jefferson's time of chivalry and modesty has been a living nightmare for women compared to the women of Jefferson's day. It wasn't perfect in Jefferson's time but they were on the right track. Modern women are on the track to hell.

Joel Turtel is the author of *Public Schools, Public Menace: How Public Schools Lie To Parents and Betray Our Children*. One reviewer said, "Everyone agrees that American public schools are bad. How to fix them? Wrong question, says education policy analyst Joel Turtel—who believes that America's public schools are broken beyond repair. Turtel argues that public schools are a menace to children and parents because they rest on a foundation of compulsion and deception."

Public Schools, Public Menace reveals:

> The surprising history of education in America—and why literacy rates were higher before the era of public schools.
>
> Why public schools cripple children's ability to read.
>
> How public schools deceive parents into thinking their kids are learning by using dumbed-down textbooks and grading systems.
>
> How public schools indoctrinate children with anti-parent, anti-Judeo-Christian, and anti-American values.

Laura Schlessinger says of *Public Schools, Public Menace*, "What every parent ought to know (but very few do) about public schools. A must-read". Samuel Blumenfeld says the book is "An excellent, thoroughly documented and detailed exposition of what's wrong with the public schools. . . . If you are a parent wrestling with the problem of education for your children, this book is for you. It's also for the average taxpayer who's been wondering what the educators have been doing with the billions of dollars they get." Blumenfeld says, "The only effective group of citizens today in open opposition to big government are the home schoolers. They are the only Americans willing to take on the public education system that props up the entire statist enterprise of big, intrusive government. Forget about conservative politicians. They are more concerned about conserving their legislative privileges than rolling back increasingly intrusive government."

In his book *Deschooling Our Lives* Matt Hern writes:

> The abject failure of monopoly, state-controlled, compulsory schooling is evident to anyone who looks. The nightmare of schooling is costing our kids, our families, our communities dearly in every way. Schools waste more money than anyone can fully conceive, demand that our kids spend twelve (twelve!) years of their natural youth in often morbidly depressing and oppressive environments, and pour the energies of thousands upon thousands of eager teachers into demeaning and senseless classroom situations.
>
> The sanctity of public schools has become so reified in our bizarre North American public political consciousness that people reflexively mouth support

> for "education spending" or "school dollars" without carefully considering what they are talking about. Behind the sordid liberal-conservative debate about how much cash to allocate to public school is a system that nurtures the worst in humanity and simultaneously suppresses individuality and real community. And the debate drones on and on regarding how best to prop up this bloated corpse. The reality is that there are much better answers out there— answers that don't require professionals or large amounts of money to make them work.
>
> Opposition to public schooling is being manifested in a plethora of ways, the most compelling of which are those explicitly and entirely rejecting schools and schooling as a construct. The numbers and kinds of homelearners and free schools and learning centers are really staggering. What it means to grow up fully and healthily can be interpreted in an infinite number of ways and, appropriately, there are a near-infinite number of existing interpretations.
>
> The failure of compulsory—morally, educationally, economically, physically, and spiritually—becomes more obvious every day.

A reviewer of ***Field Day: Getting Society Out of School*** by Matt Hern writes:

> Does institutionalizing our children for six hours a day, five days a week, really bring out the best in them? In his provocative new book, Matt Hern argues that there are alternatives to school as we know it. Hern believes that local communities are in the best position to decide what kind of schooling their children need. In suggesting ways that we can leave the traditional school model behind, he sketches a future in which personal autonomy and social change go hand in hand. In the process, he shows how children can thrive outside of school.
>
> This is a book that was crying out to be written. It is an articulate, passionate, and informative argument for ending state monopoly education. Hern believes the question is not whether this will happen, but when. He may be right: the constituency for ending monopoly education is broad, encompassing everyone from human rights advocates to religious home-schoolers, from anarchists to libertarian Republicans. Hern believes there are as many ways to learn as there are children; his approach is decidedly child and community centered. Yet, Hern ultimately subordinates his preferred pedagogy to the greater vision, anticipating a pluralistic universe of learning alternatives in a post-monopoly world.

One person wrote "an entire generation of boys is growing up without a clear idea of what it means to be a man." Our schools are failing to teach boys how to become true men. They are actually harming boys. James Dobson writes, "Almost every authority on child development recognizes that schools are typically not set up to accommodate the unique needs of boys. Elementary classrooms, especially, are designed primarily by women to fit the temperament and learning styles of girls. ... Psychologist Michael Thompson, author of *Raising Cain: Protecting the Emotional Life of Boys*, has expressed alarm about what is happening to very young boys in the classroom." A reviewer writes of the book *Raising Cain*, "Dan Kindlon, Ph.D., and Michael Thompson, Ph.D., two of the country's leading child psychologists, share what they have learned in more than thirty-five years of combined experience working with boys and their families. They reveal a nation of boys who are hurting—sad, afraid, angry, and silent."

One Web site teaches, "Government schools, or public schools as they are often referred to, are one of the worst violations of individual rights in existence. In one single government program they manage to: steal massive amounts of wealth from us; steal the best years of our childhood and our children's childhood; indoctrinate those very children in socialist propaganda; leave the

children uneducated and incapable of logical, rational thought; lock up the children with a group of thugs where they are unable to be protected and so learn to live in fear and resentment, as well as mortal danger; encourage the belief that people belong to the government, instead of government is created and controlled by the people; and much more." (www.importanceofphilosophy.com)

Unificationists must never allow their children to attend public schools. In *Taking America Back* Joseph Farah writes:

> What's happening in the government schools today is a crime against humanity. There is no other way to describe it. Students are being intentionally dumbed down, indoctrinated into a mindless form of political correctness, conditioned like Pavlov's dogs, and you, the taxpayers, are required to pay more and more and more as test scores drop lower and lower and lower.
>
> The best solution seems, to most parents, to be wholly impractical. That's homeschooling.
>
> "Oh, I don't have time," parents say. "My husband and I both work. Anyway, I don't think I would be an effective teacher for my kids. I've forgotten so much that I learned in school."
>
> Hey, I've got news for you. You're in a much better position to give your kids an education than the government is. You love them. You care about them. You understand their individual needs. No matter what you think of yourself, you're just as smart as those government school teachers. … The next-best solution is to find a good private school that teaches kids biblical truth.

The core biblical truth is patriarchy. Do you know of any school that teaches patriarchy for every area of life? I don't.

He writes:

> What's happening in government schools today is nothing short of child abuse. That's why so many parents are opting out—by the millions. When millions more join them—without fanfare, without protest marches, without letters explaining their decision, without the involvement of politicians—the revolution will have begun in earnest.
>
> The whole system will collapse—not just the education system, but the system of centralization of authority, the system of forced dependency, the system of government control over our lives.
>
> Every day Americans ask me what they can do to fight back—to take America back. The most important step we can take—the single most dramatic action—is also the most important to your family, to your children. Get them out of the government indoctrination centers. Take responsibility for educating your kids; don't leave it to the state.
>
> It's an important first step. This is how the revolution can be won without firing a shot. This is our Lexington and Concord. This is our Declaration of

Independence. Get your kids out of the clutches of these monsters. Do it now. Do it for them. Do it for your country.

AGE SEGREGATION PREVENTS CHURCH GROWTH

Divided: Is Age Segregation Ministry Multiplying or Dividing the Church? is a DVD that explores why "a growing number of pastors and elders are abandoning the age-segregated Sunday school and youth ministry model" because it is not inspiring young people to stay in the church (buy the DVD and watch the full movie online for free at www.dividedthemovie.com).

One article said, "A study for the Smithsonian Institution by Harold McCurdy concluded that genius is more likely to develop among children who spend more time with their parents and other adults, less time with their peers, and have freedom to work out their fantasies. McCurdy also suggested that the public school system tends to do the reverse and restrict the development of geniuses." Chesterton said, "The purpose of Compulsory Education is to deprive the common people of their common sense."

There is a book that deals with the scientific research on homeschooling. Susan McDowell examines the many studies done on academics and socialization of home schooled children in her book *But What About Socialization?: Answering the Perpetual Home Schooling Question, A Review of the Literature*. She quotes from one research study that said, "The findings of this study indicate that children kept home are more mature and better socialized than those who are sent to school." She ends her book by writing, "Even more fascinating than the examination of home schooling socialization research studies are their remarkably consistent findings, because—despite the often vast differences in methodologies and research constructs utilized—they are all positive."

Millions of kids are homeschooled by their parents and the results are in. The parents are doing a better job than the so-called professionals and experts. This is an embarrassment to the educational elite but this doesn't stop them from denying the reality of the success of the home over the schoolhouse. Father commands all brothers to provide and all sisters to stay home and teach their children: "School education should take place in the family, where the mother renders heartistic education and the father renders intellectual education. However, since fathers must work in order to take care of the family" they must depend on their wives. The man, he says, is the "king" of his castle and the woman is to "attend" her husband and teach the children, "Women should be the central figures to attend their husbands, who are the kings of their families, and become the teachers of true love by rearing children to be future kings" (*Blessing and Ideal Family Part 2*). Proverbs 4:1 says a father is to teach his children: "Hear, O sons, a father's instruction, and be attentive, that you may gain insight." Rick Boyer in *The Hands-On Dad* says that, "academics is not first on the priority list. It's exciting to see your children do well on achievement tests, if you use them, but the most important thing a dad ever teaches his children is not knowledge, but character. So in case you feel any pressure to produce superkids academically, don't forget that success in life starts not with *knowing* good material, but with *being* good material."

David Thibodaux is a college professor who writes against the liberal thought police in our schools in his book *Political Correctness: The Cloning of the American Mind*. I agree with his analysis of the insanity that is going on in our schools but I disagree with him about the role of the university. He writes, "I am arguing for the idea of the university as a place for the free and unfettered exchange of ideas and information, for the notion that the job of the scholar is the quest for the truth, for the position that higher education must be organized around a canon which includes the 'great works' of Western culture, and for the notion that history, morality, ethics, decency, truth, and discipline are neither dirty words nor merely matters of opinion." He writes this and teaches at a state university, the University of Louisiana. A school should have an agenda.

It should have a clearly written moral code with the goal of converting its students to its values. How can a public school such as the University of Louisiana take a stand on "ethics" and "morality"? Only a private school can do that. I believe that a core value of a good school should be the "truth" and "morality" and "ethics" that pre-marital sex is wrong and single people should value virginity and abstinence. I think that the key book any school should focus on is the Bible that is from the Eastern Culture. And there are many Bible colleges that disagree with each other on its interpretation of the Bible. Some teach that the Bible says women can lead men and be ministers and others believe they should not. Unificationists should make sure their children are taught by teachers who share their "morality" and "ethics" and teach those values.

All About Raising Children by Helen Andelin is one of the best books ever written about how to raise children. She has many great insights. On education she has a section titled "What's wrong with school?" where she says, "Albert Einstein once said, 'It's a miracle that our modern system of education has not stamped out all desire to learn.' He disliked school, cut classes and studied on his own." Schools today keep our children from becoming geniuses. She explains how the grading system, long hours, the lecture method, homework, and corrupt teachers hurt young people today. In her section "The Ideal School" she says, "The school is not a large institution such as the public and private schools of today. Instead it is a small neighborhood school such as the one-room school of years past." There is "prayer and a flag salute." She says, "The child learns no more than two subjects at one time. School lasts for three hours, probably from 9:00 to 12:00 noon. Even older children do not remain past three hours. Homework is not necessary due to the efficiency of self-study. Grading is like this: Every child has the opportunity to work for an 'A' if he wants to. He makes this determination himself. To receive an 'A' a certain standard of work is required. He can take as much time as necessary to reach this level."

NO HOMEWORK

In her excellent chapter on education titled "Developing the Intellect" she writes:

> **Compulsory**: The idea of compulsory education is psychologically wrong. When children are forced to go to school they are not eager to learn. If they are to be receptive to learning, school must be presented as an opportunity to be appreciated. Will children go to school without being forced? If excellent principles of learning are applied the child will be anxious to go to school and eager to learn. Only then will his education be of real value to him.
>
> **Too Many Hours:** Children must remain in school too many hours for learning to be effective. Before the end of the day their minds grow weary, making it difficult to maintain an interest in the subject or to comprehend. Not only does this slow down learning but it makes children dislike school. This, in turn, makes them less receptive to learning. School hours are designed for the convenience of parents rather than for education and well-being of children.
>
> **Too Many Subjects**: An equal mistake is to cover too many subjects at one time. It has been discovered that children learn better when they are taught no more than two subjects at a time.
>
> **Too Structured**: ...school is too structured. Because the school system is unified, it must fit the child to the system rather than fit the system to the child.
>
> **Lecture Method**: The lecture method is an inefficient way to teach. The teacher tends to talk too much, gets off the subject or lacks skill in presenting the subject matter. The children tend to become bored and their minds wander. Because of this inefficiency in the classroom it becomes necessary for children to do their

schoolwork at home.

Homework: Not only does school keep our children most of the day but assigns them homework at night. This makes their lives unbalanced, with school dominating far more than it should.

No Time for Daily Living: School takes so much of a child's time that he is robbed of time for daily living—to work, help in the home, learn music and art, experience daily life and even to play.

Alfie Kohn has an entire book against homework: *The Homework Myth: Why Our Kids Get Too Much of a Bad Thing*. He writes, "homework is generally useless and stressful." He ends his book saying, "If this book has established anything, it's that the forces responsible for stuffing homework into our children's backpacks are multiple and powerful. But we've overcome such forces before. We've exposed other beliefs as groundless, rescued other people who lacked the power to defend their own interests, changed other defaults. If homework persists because of a myth, we owe it to our kids—to all kids—to insist on a policy that's based on what's true and what makes sense."

In the United States our children should only be in schools that teach old-fashioned biblical values, patriotism for America, free enterprise and study Father's words carefully. If we send our children to schools where women teachers receive a salary we risk having them becoming feminists. Young Unificationists should never be taught by female teachers who earn money. Let's teach teenage Unificationists that it is unprincipled for girls or women to earn money. They are supposed to be cared for by men. It is a sacred responsibility of parents to teach their teenage children and not let others teach their children. It is even worse if they send their children to live away from them and they therefore cannot teach them at all. I believe that Unificationist parents are called by God to educate their children and not pay someone else to educate their children, even if it is other Unificationists. Young Unificationist children need to be taught by Unificationists who teach voluntarily and do not earn money for teaching.

END FUNDRAISING

Tragically some young Unificationists are taught to fundraise in Unificationist schools. This gives us the image of a cult. Fundraising is not only childish and embarrassing but it hurts the spirits of young people. Fundraising must end. Let's get serious about education. Boys need to learn a skill and earn money in the marketplace and sisters need to learn the skills of an excellent homemaker. Boys need to dress up with slacks and shirts with collars. They need to have short hair and be impressive in their work in the community. Teenage sisters need to wear long dresses and create a culture of modesty. The last thing young Unificationists need is to be like the casual kids of today with their jeans and t-shirts and immature behavior. Teenagers need to be taught to be young adults who will be married young and start having many children instead of being like most young people in this low standard world who marry later and use birth control.

Father says we have to take charge of the education of our children:

> What about the Unification Church? We must take down our church sign and become simply the unified family.
>
> I have exhorted you to go out and stir up the situation. Speak the truth, do what is right, regardless of whether others like it or not. Eventually people will understand.
>
> You are going to give birth to many children. Teach them from the smallest

> level about God, about the world. Tell them never to follow the way this big country is going because it is the way of decay. Tell them not to be afraid of being different from other people. You have to teach them all of these things. The main purpose in educating them is to chase away the devil from this country.
>
> Those of you who have children, raise your hands. The responsibility is yours to educate them.
>
> You have to pay attention to your own family. Don't just expect them to automatically spring up to become a perfect family. You have to work hard at it.
>
> You must establish yourself as the king of your own family. Your family is not supposed to be a democracy. You should be the king. You have to teach your children, too, the way of the future.
>
> Those who pledge, "Between my spouse and me, I pledge that we will grow our family to be this perfect seed which you can give a passing grade," raise your hands. Don't miss this special time in history, make a success. I want all of you to succeed in this endeavor. That is my prayer for you. (4-7-91)

If a trinity of Unificationist parents or several trinities of parents create a school where the parents teach, they need to make sure that the teenage boys and girls are separated and taught separately. Young Unificationists teenage brothers should not spend any time with young Unificationist sisters and should not have close relations to any girl in or out of the Unification Movement. Young Unificationists should not study or play with anyone of the opposite sex with the exception of their physical brothers or sisters.

HUNTERS AND NESTERS

Teenage boys need to be taught a skill and start earning money around the age of 16. Unificationist parents need to help their sons prepare to buy a home of their own when they reach the legal age of 18. A man should not marry or even look for a wife until he has proven himself to be mature. Men are, by nature, hunters and women are nesters. A man should not even think about hunting for a wife until he has a decent nest for her. He has to have enough discipline and character to provide and protect his wife for 80 years.

It is our primary responsibility to make sure our children are educated so well they will never leave True Parents. It is crucial that we instill in them an understanding that we are called by God to follow Sun Myung Moon who has revealed God's broken heart and hope that we will help God achieve His goal of true love: "The establishment of happy, righteous families as the source of life, love and joy, has been the goal of God and man throughout history" (7-1-82). Let's make sure they do not date and understand that parents have the responsibility to match them. Father says, "Adam and Eve were completely at the mercy of God; they had no choice of a mate. In the true tradition, therefore, parents should decide whom their children ought to marry. You are marrying for the sake of your parents, in a way. Until you marry, you live in your parent's home and have no real claims of your own. From the Principle point of view, do you think that what I am saying is correct or not?" (11-21-82) If parents are going to match their children then they should teach them what marriage means.

Young Unificationists need to be taught what true masculinity and true femininity is. I don't know of any schools that are doing that. Unificationist parents need to homeschool or join with other Unificationists and teach old-fashioned values. Our children need to internalize the dream of a world utopia and become strong, loyal disciples of True Parents. They work hard and smart to

make sure they do not lose the vision and be assimilated and digested by our decadent and confused culture that is outside the umbrella of the Messiah. We need to inspire our young people to be passionate about teaching the *Divine Principle* and living in trinities that will form godly communities. We are the hope of this world. Let's inspire the next generation to be on fire with enthusiasm to save this hurting world.

Our communities should have little schools where fathers take an active role in educating their children and the sisters who teach do not receive a salary. When a woman receives a salary she helps the feminist cause. The ideal is for trinities to teach their children together. We should teach them to be religious people. Martin Luther said, "I am much afraid that the schools will prove the very gates of hell, unless they diligently labor in explaining the Holy Scriptures, and engraving them in the hearts of youth. I advise no one to place his child where the Scriptures do not reign paramount. Every institution in which means are not unceasingly occupied with the Word of God must be corrupt."

Helen Andelin wrote at her website that she encouraged her eight children to take their children out of public schools and homeschool. She writes, "The first to take this drastic step was my daughter, Kristine and her husband. They had nine children, all but one in school. They took all eight out of public schools and put them on the best home school program they could find. The most immediate benefit was that the Spirit of the Lord came into their home, in full force. Things changed, all for the better. They were in the book binding business so when the children had finished their daily school lessons they put them all to work in their book binding business. The children grew to be responsible help so the business thrived exceedingly. The outcome is that my sons and daughters listened and most of them put their children on home school, many of whom have completed college."

At her Web site she posted a statement about homeschooling by Lydia Sherman who said that if you put your kids in public school:

> You will have a battle on your hands to maintain your family beliefs and values and exert your influence.
>
> Children in the public schools lack a dimension that only home school can give them. There is an emptiness there and a void they tend to fill up with consumerism or self-indulgence. Many of them suffer from depression and do not feel a deep purpose in life.
>
> Character training must begin early. If you send them to a public school do you know for certain they will learn good values? Will they be taught good manners, good speech, good behavior, good grooming and good health habits? More often than not what their association with the public schools will cause what little they learned at home to deteriorate.
>
> Did you know that there is not one single mandate in the Scriptures to send your children somewhere else to be trained and educated. The Bible says to obey your parents and forget not the teachings of your mother, and to listen to the words of your father, in various places of Psalms and Proverbs. Deuteronomy 6-7 gives you all the authority and reason you need to teach your own children at home.
>
> Deut 6:6-7: "And these words which I command you this day shall be upon your heart; and you shall teach them diligently to your children, and shall talk of them when you sit in your house, and when you walk by the way, and when you lie down, and when you rise."
>
> My question then is this: If we are to teach our children when we sit in our house, and when we walk by the way, and when we lie down, and when we rise

up, how can we do this if we send them away to a public school during the most teachable part of the day, and the most formative years of their lives?

John Lofton wrote in *Patriarch* magazine (magazine is disconinued) that it is wrong to send our children to public schools with the idea they can witness there:

> In Ephesians 6:4 God commands fathers to bring their children up "in the nurture and admonition of the Lord."
>
> So, in line with Ephesians 6:4 and similar Scriptures, retired Air Force General T.C. Pinckney of Alexandria, Virginia, a former Vice President of the Southern Baptist Convention, introduced a proposal at the recent Southern Baptist Convention that urged parents to withdraw their children from the "officially Godless" government-run, so-called public schools. As a substitute, he called on parents to put their children in Christian schools or homeschool them.
>
> The Pinckney proposal was rejected.
>
> Bobby Welch, the new President-elect of the Southern Baptist Convention, said, "The public school system is the greatest mission field that we have in North America."
>
> Well, now. What's wrong with this statement? Everything. For openers, it is about as flawed an analogy as one can imagine. On the mission field, Christians are in charge. On the mission field, Christians preach to and teach Christianity. On the mission field, Christians teach from the Bible.
>
> IN THE GOVERNMENT-RUN SCHOOLS, HOWEVER, THINGS ARE EXACTLY THE REVERSE. In the government-run schools Christians, as Christians, are NOT in charge. In the government-run schools, Christians are NOT allowed to preach and teach Christianity from the Bible.
>
> True, many, probably most, government-run school teachers claim to be some kind of Christian—as do most of the students they teach. BUT, THESE CHRISTIAN TEACHERS ARE FORBIDDEN TO TEACH CHRISTIANITY TO THESE CHRISTIAN STUDENTS OR ANY OTHER STUDENTS.

Steven Yates writes in his review of *Let My Children Go: A New Case for Abandoning Government Schools* by E. Ray Moore:

> *Let My Children Go* should alert Christians to the full range of dangers of the renegade school system. It calls on them to remove their children from it.
>
> Rev. Moore says repeatedly, "God gave education to the family with assistance from the church." The time has come, in the memorable phrase given currency by both Sheldon Richman and Marshall Fritz, to "separate school and state." [Shelton Richman is the author of *Separating School & State: How to Liberate America's Families* and the website for Marshall Fritz is www.honestedu.org which has his organization called Alliance for the Separation of School & State.]
>
> ... total repudiation of the phrase public school. The term public implies that these schools are owned by, serve and answer to the public. Rev. Moore argues that this is just plain false, and we should not allow those running them to maintain the masquerade. We should always use phrases such as government schools or state-sponsored schools, in contrast with private or Christian schools operating independently of government and answering those they serve, not government bureaucrats.

Parents are just asking for their children to lose faith in True Parents and be digested by Satan's

culture if they send their teenagers to public schools and private schools that teach feminism. Parents are called by God to be the main teachers of their children and not send them to schools where women teachers earn money and teach their girl students to earn money. Unificationists—please decentralize education to the home and trinities.

No Unificationist teenager boy or girl should attend the atheist public schools where impressionable children receive a steady diet of politically correct propaganda. We have moved into Canaan but we shouldn't send our teenagers to be taught by Canaanites at Canaanite schools. High Schools are dens of iniquity. We don't help this world by thinking we are going to uplift bars, casinos, Democratic party meetings and high schools with our presence. They must be stopped, not joined. Sadly, most private schools despise the traditional, biblical family and encourage girls to have careers outside the home instead of making her husband her career. It is the responsibility of parents to be intimately involved with the teaching of their teenagers so they do not leave our movement. "Do not be deceived: 'Bad company ruins good morals.'" (1 Cor. 15:33)

Hillary Clinton writes in her autobiography *Living History*, "My mother was a classic homemaker. When I think of her in those days, I see a woman in perpetual motion, making beds, washing dishes, and putting dinner on the table precisely at six o'clock. I came home from school for lunch every day." "She salvaged my disastrous attempt to make a skirt in my junior high home economics class." There is no more home economics classes for girls to learn to sew dresses.

She writes, "My ninth-grade history teacher, Paul Carlson, was a dedicated educator and a very conservative Republican. Mr. Carlson encouraged me to read Senator Barry Goldwater's book, *The Conscience of a Conservative*. That inspired me to write my term paper on the American conservative movement." When she went away from home to attend Wellesley College she had her copy of Goldwater's book in her suitcase. Soon after she became a liberal. Colleges destroying the faith of young people is common now.

In *Family Driven Faith: Doing What It Takes to Raise Sons and Daughters Who Walk With God* Voddie Baucham writes about the danger of young adults leaving home and losing their faith. He homeschools his children and will not let his daughter attend college because it is such a dangerous place. He is a public speaker and when he says he homeschools he is often asked about sports, "How do your kids learn teamwork and sportsmanship?" Or "How do your children learn to become competitive?" I answer these questions with another question. "How did Thomas Jefferson, Benjamin Franklin, or George Washington learn those things? Was Jesus in Little League" "We must refuse to allow trivial, temporal pursuits to interfere with the main thing."

On dating he says, "Modern American dating is no more than glorified divorce practice. Young people are learning how to give themselves away in exclusive, romantic, highly committed (at times sexual) relationships, only to break up and do it all over again. God never intended for His kids to live like this."

He says we live in an anti-marriage culture: "R. Albert Mohler, president of the Southern Baptist Theological Seminary in Louisville, set off a firestorm in August 2005 when he told a radio audience: 'The sin that I think besets our generation…is the sin of delaying marriage as a lifestyle option.'" And he writes that we live in an anti-children culture: "When did we begin to hate children?" "Mohler places his finger firmly on the pulse of the culture when he writes, 'Christians must recognize that this rebellion against parenthood represents nothing less than an absolute revolt against "God's design." He writes in his book, "All the statistics point to children leaving [the faith] when they get to college." "We cannot stand simply shake our heads and accept defeat. We must fight for our sons and daughters." "The church in America is in trouble. Teens are abandoning the faith in astounding numbers. Birth rates are plummeting as our attitude toward

children sour."

He writes against youth ministry programs, "I probably don't have to tell you that most people disagree with me on this issue. As I have made my feeling about youth ministry (and systematic segregation in general) known, I have been challenged and criticized throughout the country." "Of course, there are anecdotal stories of young people whose lives were changed in the segregated community" but "anecdotal stories about people whose lives were changed, while compelling, do not justify one's methodology." "I am more impressed with people and groups who do not do youth ministry than those who do."

At the defunct website of they wrote this about an audio CD of his titled, *The Centrality of the Home in Evangelism and Discipleship*: "Current statistics show we are losing between 75% and 88% of professing Christian young people by the end of the first year of college. The response of the church at large has been a decidedly large focus on 'relevant' and 'hip,' family-fragmenting youth ministries. But is this the right response? Dr. Voddie Baucham says no."

William Bradford writes about why the Pilgrims wanted to go to America. One reason was the, "great hope, for the propagating and advancing the gospel of the kingdom of Christ in those remote parts of the world." They wanted to witness and see the church grow. They also were afraid their children would leave the faith if they continued living in the city and so wanted to take them to a remote countryside. Bradford writes in *Plymouth Plantation* that their children were being "drawn away by evil examples into extravagance and dangerous courses." Schools have become evil and dangerous.

Laura Schlessinger wrote against public schools in a newspaper column "Time for public schools to throw in the towel?" (January 27, 2003) saying:

> ...our public-school children hear that the Founding Fathers are not to be revered. They were greedy, patriarchal oppressors who were in it for the money and the power. America is not a noble experiment in freedom and equality. That was the cover story, as we stole the land from the indigenous people. America wasn't recently attacked by terrorists. America is the terrorist!
>
> Furthermore, there are no such things as great books, since all the books we were misguided enough to think of as great, were written by those same old white male misogynists from the evil empire of Western culture. What's just as great is any diary written by any woman, slave or Native American and recently discovered in someone's trunk. And woe to anyone who disagrees.
>
> For a few years now, I've been urging parents to send their kids to private religious schools and/or homeschool them. I truly see no other options for raising and educating children to be morally fit, well informed, appreciative Americans and contributing members of society.

At LadiesAgainstFeminism.org Douglas Phillips wrote saying this about schools: "... men and women are shipping their children off for 24,000 hours of their children's youth to government indoctrination centers." Jesse Peterson writes in his excellent book *Scam*: "The education of our nation's children is seriously at risk because of the lack of strong male role models in our public schools! Of course, the public school system itself is, for the most part, totally out of control. You'd have to be crazy to send your child to the average public school. You'd have to wake up in the morning and say, 'I just hate my kids. What can I do to really punish them? Oh, I'll send them to public school!'"

One of the worst things about education today is that kids are always put with kids their own age. Schools should have kids of all ages together so the older ones can help those who are younger. It

is not natural and good for children to only associate with their peers. Sid Galloway writes:

> God Commands You to Choose Your Child's Spheres of Social Influence. For 6,000 years God's people never exposed their children to so many potentially unChristlike influences. Even in academic and religious education, the children did not spend huge amounts of time together with equally immature peers, where the "socialization" tends to maintain horizontal stagnation or degeneration. Children were designed to grow up, vertically into the image and character of God the Father through Jesus.

James Dobson writes in *Bringing Up Boys*, "The great advantage of homeschooling is the protection it provides to vulnerable children from the wrong kind of socialization. I'm referring now not only to the cultural influences we have considered but to what children do to each other."

The Un-foreseen Consequences of Age Segregation of Youth

Scott Brown wrote against age-segregation in an article titled "The Un-foreseen Consequences of Age Segregation of Youth" (7-31-09) saying:

> A number of secular journalists are now reporting that researchers have discovered that one of the un-foreseen consequences of societal age segregation is prolonged immaturity, a strange brand of socialization dysfunction that creates odd and destructive subcultures, and the neutralization of wisdom from the previous generation. Example: a current problem where most men do not grow up or live like adults until age 30, according to *Newsweek* magazine. *Newsweek* declares, "70% of young men are not grown up at 30 years of age (and that's up from 30% in 1970). In 1960, almost 70 percent of men had reached these milestones by the age of 30. Today, less than a third of males that age can say the same."
>
> Tommy Vestal, a career police officer, has written thoughtfully regarding this very problem. He views age segregation as "a slippery slope" that has led to major shifts in culture and the near obliteration of Christian culture, because society is structured so that the faith of fathers is cut off by the peer group. He quotes law enforcement consultant, Jack E. Enter, Ph.D., who has written, "Challenging the Law Enforcement Organization: Proactive Leadership Strategies". Tommy says, "In chapter one of his book, Enter looks at external forces and influences on law enforcement and asks the question, 'How well are social institutions fulfilling their role in American culture?' Tommy concludes that, the 'proliferation of the age segregated education model are at the roots of our current debacle." He asks, "What's the solution? The destruction of the current models of education and a return to an age integrated discipleship by parents to children that is built on the truths of God's word."
>
> In this thought provoking article, Tommy Vestal sets this statement in a wider context of the great social problems created by age segregation.

Rick Boyer in *The Socialization Trap* says that a school without the parent there "creates the two-masters syndrome. Your children are taken out from under your authority and placed under another leader." This can cause problems because the teacher may become primary in their life. Parents should be the primary teachers of their children. In his book *The Hands-On Dad* he gives persuasive arguments against age-segregating our children. He writes:

> Age segregation is, my opinion reason enough by itself to keep children out of school. Studies show that children who grow peer dependent (which nearly all

> school children do) exhibit four characteristics: a resistance to parental authority, a negative view of themselves, a mistrust of their peers and a pessimistic outlook on the future.
>
> In addition, age-segregated schooling separates siblings from each other. School kids, especially if they are involved in extracurricular activities, spend far less time in communication with their brothers and sisters than do home educated students. This breaks down their dependence on and loyalty to each other. Besides the mechanical separation, age segregation tends to make children negative toward people of other age groups so that they lose respect for older siblings and tenderness toward younger siblings. This is a tragic loss. Children who grow up in homes where siblings compete with or ignore each other will one day start their families with no experience in a harmonious family team.

In his book *The Socialization Trap* he has a great chapter on the damage done by bad books used in schools. He says, "Humanism, socialism, moral perversion now thoroughly permeate the materials in the public schools and some private schools as well." An entire generation is being brainwashed by the garbage in books that despise the core values of the Founding Fathers and says America is a sexist, imperialistic aggressor nation. Let's work to end government taking taxes by force to give our hard earned money to pay for liberal teachers and their deadly books that are destroying America.

Let's look at the issue of college education after a boy or girl reaches the age of 18. The world has become obsessed with educational degrees and places academic credentials over family. Is it principled to send single, adult children to college? If a Unificationist feels it is necessary to go to college, he or she should not take out a loan. College students should be married and have studied good books on true values before they go so they can stand up to the liberal professors who brainwash their students with Marx and Engel's hatred of capitalism and the traditional, patriarchal family. Colleges are indoctrination centers that teach women to be independent of men while God wants women to be dependent on men.

Single people should not be on dangerous college campuses. There is so much temptation to sin there. Father says, "Most of today's youth are not educated in a thoroughgoing way about the importance of keeping purity before marriage and reaching individual maturity through true love. Thus they do not understand the value of true love, which is the fundamental root of joy, happiness and all ideals" (10-20-02). Young college men feel nothing for biblical patriarchy because they don't even know it exists. Young people are not educated because they do not even know what old-fashioned values are and if they heard them they would roll their eyes in disgust. College men are boys who are in some pathetic stage of delayed adolescence and many men never grow up and spend their entire life in a state of perpetual childhood playing with toys and games. We live in a feminist society of sexual chaos where men do not care for women. There is absolutely no chivalry anymore. Women do not want to be protected. They are on college campuses to get a degree and compete with men to get a job. Why would men have any interest to care for them? They see women as wanting sex and not interested in caring for children.

BRAINWASHED

There are many books about how bad schools are. A good one is *Brainwashed* by Ben Shapiro. A reviewer wrote, "When parents send their children off to college, mom and dad hope they'll return more cultivated, knowledgeable, and astute—able to see issues from all points of view. But, according to Ben Shapiro, there's only one view allowed on most college campuses: a rabid brand of liberalism that must be swallowed hook, line, and sinker. In this explosive book, Ben Shapiro, a college student himself, reveals how America's university system is one of the largest brainwashing machines on the planet. Examining this nationwide problem from firsthand

experience, Shapiro shows how the leftists who dominate the universities—from the administration to the student government, from the professors to the student media—use their power to mold impressionable minds. Fresh and bitterly funny, this book proves that the universities, far from being a place for open discussion, are really dungeons of the mind that indoctrinate students to become socialists, atheists, race-baiters, and narcissists." Be sure to check out *Freefall of the American University: How Our Colleges Are Corrupting the Minds and Morals of the Next Generation* by Jim Nelson Black.

The largest labor union in the United States, the National Education Association (NEA), is a Cain organization. I am not being strident or unbalanced when I say that. Unificationist brothers need to understand that America is under attack by the Liberals. Neil Boortz calls the teachers unions the most "evil" organizations in America. We must fight the good fight against those like the public school teacher's union that hurt our children. Public schools should be abolished forever. There is no compromise. Their arguments about socialization are specious. Let's speak out against them as harshly as Father speaks against homosexuality and free sex. There are countless stories and tons of scientific research that prove beyond any shadow of a doubt that homeschools beat public schools in every way. The most important thing we can teach is values and the public schools and most private schools teach feminism. I am not saying that the Abel side is perfect. It is the job of Unificationists to teach what perfection is.

The worst colleges are the so-called best colleges. And the worst colleges are the Ivy League schools such as Harvard, Yale and Stanford because they hire the most famous and deadly liberals to teach such as Patricia Schroeder at Princeton. Let's follow the logic. Liberals are stupid. Highly educated and distinguished Liberals are extremely stupid. The purpose of education is to become wise. Therefore intelligent parents would never send their children to these corrupt colleges. Parents paying enormous amounts of money and students taking huge loans to go to go to Dartmouth and Brown are wasting their money and time by being around the cream of Liberalism.

Anyone who has a degree from schools like Columbia and Cornell is to be pitied. It should be a red flag if you find out someone has a degree from these sad places. Bill Clinton went to Oxford and Yale. Hillary Clinton went to Wellesley College and Yale. Hillary was raised in a Republican home with her father the traditional breadwinner who owned a fabric store and her mother was a full-time mother. At Wellesley she was brainwashed to become a liberal Democrat and joined the anti-war movement during the Vietnam era. Hillary's parents were naïve and made a great mistake in sending their daughter to be converted by crusading socialist/feminists.

Unificationist parents are supposed to be the smartest parents on earth. This means they would not send their children to these deadly indoctrination centers. Unificationist parents who go along with this Satanic idea of sending their children away to horrible colleges are unwittingly encouraging their children to leave True Parents and become unhappy feminists. William F. Buckley, Jr. said, "I am obliged to confess I should sooner live in a society governed by the first two thousand names in the Boston telephone directory than in a society governed by the two thousand faculty members of Harvard University."

YUPPIES

Those in the Unification Movement who do not honor those who do not go to college are elitist snobs who have no idea how the world works. Many blue collar workers earn more money than the average college graduate and their jobs are often more secure than white collar jobs. Having a college degree does not automatically mean someone will earn great money. Many with college degrees would have been better off if they had gone down a different path. College is for only a small percentage of people and they should understand they are going to a brainwashing, indoctrination center for Satan. The goal of Unificationists should not be that every young person

gets a college degree. Those who push this are what are pejoratively called Yuppies. Wikipedia defines Yuppie as: "short for 'young urban professional' or 'young upwardly-mobile professional' is a 1980s and early 1990s term for financially secure, upper-middle class young people in their 20s and early 30s." A writer at the *Wall Street Journal* wrote: "You're talking about a class of people who put off having families so they can make payments on the BMWs ... To be a Yuppie is to be a loathsome undesirable creature." Don't listen to those who think the plan for world salvation is for Unificationists to join the so-called upper class. Living in a humble cabin in the countryside of Massachusetts and driving an old pickup is more prestigious to me than living in some fancy condo in Boston and driving a new Mercedes. Unificationists should pity Yuppies, not imitate them. Jane Austen exposes the haughty, arrogant attitude of rich Mr. Darcy in her novel *Pride and Prejudice*. Eventually he falls in love with the country girl Elizabeth Bennett in spite of his background of being proud and prejudiced and looking down his nose at country people who he sees as inferior to his snobbish friends in London. The goal for mankind is to give children a normal life, not push them to be Ivy League graduates, Olympic gold medal winners, and concert pianists. Only a tiny minority, only very few people can do these things. The lifestyle presented in this book is doable and will bring the most happiness.

The UM needs to encourage girls to be future homemakers instead of future pharmacists, teachers, doctors, lawyers, diplomats and architects. A woman who goes to college must be careful that she does not see herself as a career woman outside the home. How does any sister who becomes a pharmacist or architect or school teacher not see herself earning money for the rest so her life? Fathers, brothers, uncles and all the men in those sister's lives who encouraged them to get these kinds of degrees are confused wimps who are condemning these sisters to a feminist lifestyle. Elder women who praise young women who strive to be skilled in the workplace are false Unificationists. A sister who becomes a professional in the workplace is not a true supporter of her husband, but she is a castrator of all the males around her.

We are supposed to educate our children at home and preferably at our trinity of homes that will have a common house. The 20th century experimented with Marx and Engel's ideology of separating and dividing families. They denied the value of fathers being the head teacher of their children for the value of so-called professionals to replace the parents as the primary educators of children. This social experiment has failed like every Socialist/Communist scheme has failed.

We need to completely rethink the idea of how we organize ourselves. For over 100 years Satan has influenced everyone to focus on dividing the family by putting children into the care of government schools and church schools. We should return to the old-fashioned ways of having children taught in a family setting. We should end putting our children in public schools during the week and in Sunday school and church youth groups on the weekend. Many Christians are taking their children out of public schools and out of Sunday schools. In the audio CD *The Role of Children in the Meeting of the Church* Doug Phillips gives a convincing argument against Sunday school for children. He says it is not good to separate children from parents during worship services. Many believe that children are too disorderly, won't understand what is going on, and the parents need a break from their kids. Phillips examines each of these arguments and shows them to be false. Children should be well-fed and taken to the bathroom before the meeting and sometimes may have to be taken out and disciplined or if babies need special care then they can be taken out but it is crucial that the family not be divided at this time because it has a profound effect on children to see their father and mother in a meeting of prayer and worship. Some of the fondest memories some people wrote in their diaries and autobiographies in the days before we separated children from the world were the memories they had of being with their parents during church meetings. Phillips writes, "Sadly, many churches have taken it upon themselves to actually persecute families who want their children to worship with them rather than attending 'kiddy church' or who will not participate in the church youth group or Christian School."

John Thompson also speaks eloquently on how churches unintentionally hurt families by separating them into age-segregated groups in his CD audio titled "How Modern Churches Are Harming Families." Please buy this CD and have your family and friends listen to it. It belongs in every person's library and in every public and school library.

In her book *All The Way Home* Mary Pride quotes a person who wrote to her who said:

> Do we need Sunday school for the children of ungodly parents? No, in fact our church has never allowed underage children to attend church without their parents. An underage child is supposed to be under the authority of his parents. His parents have the responsibility for religious training. If we preach to the child and not to the parent we set up a tension in the child ...
>
> Children's church does a disservice to the child's parents. It allows the parents, both godly and ungodly, to avoid their responsibility to teach their children. If they want their children to get some religious teaching we should help and guide them but never do it for them.
>
> "But what if they don't?" If they don't—they don't. God will call their children some other time in some other way and they will answer to God for their lack of obedience. But we will not have helped them not obey.

Christopher Schlect has written a booklet titled *Critique of Modern Youth Ministry* (also on audio CD) that gives some good arguments for churches to not have any traditional youth ministry programs. He argues that Fathers are to guide their children and not delegate this crucial role to all the many youth organizations and events put on by churches.

He spends the first part of his little book going into the history of the late 19th century and 20th century moving from the patriarchal home where the fathers and grandfathers trained their children in religion and education and vocation to Satan's plan of handing them over to professionals who have emasculated men and boys. Satan is a genius at lying. He has sold the lie that fathers are useless and only professionals who have degrees can raise young people. Youth groups are one of Satan's key tactics to castrate men and make sure they are like Adam in the Garden—weak and stupid.

He begins by saying, "It was in connection with my own employment as a freshman-out-of-college youth minister that I first began to question whether or not my work was biblically sanctioned. I realized that I and others in positions like mine, though with good intentions, were providing a facility for fathers to abdicate their parental responsibilities. I thus made the long-term focus of my ministry to work myself out of a job and to get older men— especially fathers—to do what I was doing.

"I am convinced that young people have a far greater capacity for spiritual and social maturity than we tend to give them credit for, and parents have been given the responsibility to see this capacity is realized. The church today does not expect what it ought to from children and their parents, and this can be attributed at least in part to a flawed concept of youth ministry."

He goes into the history of the satanic idea of age-segregating people from such Cain writers as Darwin, Horace Mann and John Dewey. For over a hundred years we have been sold the lie that it is good to divide families and keep different age groups separated from each other. The result is that people are spiritual cripples. There is nothing in the Bible and it is not even simple common sense to believe that it is good to divide families and put people in age-segregated groups. Grandparents are not supposed to live in senior citizens communities while their grandchildren are

put in deadly feminist schools. They are supposed to be teaching them at home. The church and state are blinded by Satan's tactic to destroy the patriarchal home. Now we have kids who are not mature when they are supposed to be and adults who are not as mature as they are supposed to be.

In *Critique of Modern Youth Ministry* we read, "Many parents believe that they are 'doing their job' by seeing their children off to a youth meeting on Wednesday nights. Most do little or nothing more. Fathers are responsible for directly overseeing their children in spiritual matters—a responsibility which cannot be delegated to a youth pastor. ... Effective youth ministry is the father's task; he has the responsibility to establish a godly atmosphere in the home. Fathers must be leaders in worship, prayer, reading and studying the Bible, and in fellowship with other saints. Moses demanded that fathers in Israel rear their children in such an environment that the majesty of God was plainly manifest to them everywhere they turned (Deut. 6:6-9). This standard remains, and fathers today must meet it. If children do not come face to face with Almighty God in every aspect of their lives, their fathers, through abdication, are bringing them up in practical atheism."

One of Satan's most effective tactics was introducing the idea in the late 19th century that women were more into church and religion and were innately more spiritual than men. Men gave up their responsibility to be the spiritual heads of their homes and delegated it to the women and now we have emasculated churches that Father often denounces as weak and useless. Father often blasts American men for being wimpy and following weak women. It is time for fathers to take charge of their homes and make it their number one goal in life to raise their children to be mature so they can marry and start building big and magnificent families that will knock the socks off every one else in our pathetic feminist culture. If any man tries to be a strong patriarch he is denounced as a dominator and dictator who wants to be an insensitive, supreme ruler. There will be a growth period in which men who stand up and work to restore patriarchy will have to be persecuted by members of their own church as well as the secular society around them. That is the price pioneers have to pay. Eventually the nonsense of feminism will fade away and patriarchy will be restored. Until then, I encourage brothers to study the books mentioned in this book and join the movement to raise men to be godly family men.

In *The Socialization Trap: Protecting Your Children from Age Segregation and Other Pitfalls* Rick Boyer writes how churches are wrong in segregating children. He writes that it is wrong to think that social groups of children the same age are "magic for a child's soul. The facts are to the contrary. An age peer group is about the worst age arrangement for healthy social development." He has very powerful arguments against the way children are raised today. Satan has been successful in dividing families. Men used to educate their children and women in church relief organizations helped the poor with sensitivity and creativity. Now government has killed the family and church. Satan speaks through such pro-big government books as *It Takes a Village* by Hillary Clinton who has one child who was not homeschooled. The opposite of her is Marilyn Boyer (Rick Boyer's wife) who has homeschooled her 14 children. Her oldest son at 19 years of age was voted to be chairman of the Republican Party of their county and then he ran for a position of County Supervisor and was elected against an intense Democratic Party opposition. Which family would you choose to emulate? The Boyers or Clintons? One is Cain and one is Abel.

Ann Douglas wrote in *The Feminization of America*: "The opening and proliferation of Sunday Schools dramatized the ministerial and feminine struggle for possession of sacred territory. Sabbath Schools, begun in England in the later eighteenth century as a means of educating and controlling lower-class children, spread rapidly in America in the early nineteenth century .... From its inception, the Union was funded largely by businessmen, but the most active promoters and organizers were ministers and women."

Mary Pride writes in her book *All the Way Home*:

> Weldon Hardenbrook, author of *Missing from Action: Vanishing Manhood in America*, blames a feminized Sunday school for the widespread defection of men from the Christian faith. Pastor Hardenbrook is right. He should only have gone one step farther. Sunday school has also contributed to the widespread rejection by women of Biblical Christian faith. These women, unlike the men, remained in the church and went on to teach the next generation in the Sunday school classes they ran.
>
> What we have now, under these women who have become de facto teaching elders, is a sentimentalized Sunday school concept of "changing lives" to make people happier rather than the Biblical doctrine of fighting sin and Satan because they are bad.

Hardenbrook writes in his book *Missing from Action: Vanishing Manhood in America*:

> I believe that every boy is being subjected to powerful feminizing forces inherent in the current structure of the elementary schools and Sunday schools of America ....
>
> My friends and I *hated* Sunday school. We thought it was worse than public school because we didn't have recess!
>
> I'm not thankful for the negative influence a feminized Sunday school had on me and my male friends. As I write, I can think of only a handful of friends out of a hundred or more children whose faith in Christ survived those early years.
>
> All too often the end product of the American school system is a feminized young man who is unequipped to handle the responsibilities of mature manhood.

I challenge Unificationists to end Sunday schools and all youth programs because they emasculate the fathers and stunt the growth of the children.

The following are some excerpts from *Sun Myung Moon's Philosophy of Education* where he talks about distant learning and the use of videos and the Internet:

> Every day, you need to put on your thinking cap and think about how to convince and persuade people.
>
> The most problematic issue is the issue of education. Education will be carried out through watching videos. Schools will phase out gradually.
>
> Education will be implemented with three-hour, seven-hour and ten-hour lecture series of renowned lecturers on videotapes. A student who studies through video does not need to go to a four-year university. He can even complete the whole course in one year. If he passes the state examination, he can seek for employment in his field of major in any country.
>
> **********
>
> What is the most problematic issue? It is the educational problem, a school problem. Language may be a problem in the end, but language education is now being implemented through videos. Therefore, schools will disappear very soon. If you manage to make the grade in the qualifying examination specified by the

state, you will be able to graduate with a doctorate without turning up for classes.

****

Instead of a compulsory system, universities will gradually have to go. The borderline beyond middle and high schools or universities will no longer exist. If you self-study through videotapes and take the state examination, you are allowed to graduate from elementary, middle or high schools, as well as colleges or universities. A genius can even graduate from a graduate school in five years.

Schools will no longer be necessary in the future. I am making a head start on this. We have entered the age of video-based education. I have built up good rapport with all the world's scholars. Inviting scholars in every discipline, I am making arrangements with them to produce videotapes. I am already carrying out that project at the Washington television center.

****

This is a society where the written word has been used as a means of communication. From now on, it will be done through images or motion pictures. We are at the forefront of the development of this technology. It is being used in 280 broadcasting stations.

What do we plan to do? America is going to ruin now. Mobilizing the young people, what are we going to do? Radio and television programs are broadcast round the clock in America. Programs on current affairs are not more than an hour and a half, and educational programs are less than three hours, though. The rest are music programs and movies. This is the direction a dying country is moving toward. I am making preparation to produce a series of weekly movies related to the world's current events. The contents of these weekly movies must be for educational purposes.

I have the intention to teach people through cultural activities ranging from geography to zoology. You must be ready to introduce this. All have to be dubbed with Korean songs, folk songs and melodies. We are about to get started on it. The Unification Church has to become an educational base.

****

Education has now become a problem. The age of video education is coming soon. The project is in the pipeline. We are now producing weekly movies on current topics at the Washington Television Center. I am mobilizing celebrated scholars from around the world. A request by telephone for the papers or opinions of the world's versatile scholars to be published in *The Washington Times*, *Insight Magazine* and *The World & I*, has never been rejected by scholars. There are many scientists and scholars in the field of advanced scientific technology.

****

What do you go to university for? How can you jot down all the notes during a lecture? Therefore, I will record good lectures of famous professors on videotapes, inserting interesting things such as their anecdotes and jokes during intervals. A student who sits and listens to the series of lectures out of interest will be able to make it through the course. If language is unified, there is no need to attend a university. You could carry the tapes in a backpack or book bag

wherever you go. If you succeed in the state examination just by listening to the tapes, you can chalk up the grades required for graduation. In that case, it wouldn't cost anything.

****

The population concentrated in cities and towns will dwindle in the near future. Through televisions and other modern facilities we can enjoy pursuing what interests us and our hobbies, watch an orchestra or dance performance, while sitting down in the comfort of our own homes.

Nowadays, we can view all library books, secrets of the world and entertainment on television screens. We do not need to move anywhere to make access to these things easier.

****

In Washington D.C., I intend to initiate a movement for awarding academic credits to people by educating them through worldwide telecommunications. The student watches a stipulated number of lectures on videotapes and then answers questions that are asked in a television program three or four times a year. It is the same as in schools and universities. Scholars deliver expert lectures on video and then ask question about the material. This is happening in America now.

****

With a radio or television set at hand, we can live even in a valley. Schools and universities will be phased out gradually. Teaching is to be done with videotapes. The time has already come. In the international management system, elementary school curriculum is implemented through videos. Bright school children can finish the entire course and graduate within two years instead of the conventional six years. At the tertiary level, university students who study through videos can be accredited anywhere as long as they pass the official examination recognized by the state. If language is not a barrier, the vice-ministers of education of America and Korea will be the same person. Education can be carried out this way. The age of settlement has passed. We can be just like birds, living wherever we feel is the most beautiful. Schools and administrative departments will slowly die out.

****

Movements for the abolition of school systems are in progress. Cities are densely populated owing to schools and educational problems. Smart students will be able to graduate in just five years if they study through videotapes what they have to study in sixteen to twenty years. I am presently setting up such a system, which can prevent environmental destruction such as pollution due to high population density. Everything in the industrial zone must be decentralized or dismantled. Now is the right time to do these things.

****

Not long after, schools will have to go. Classes will be taught through the mass media and videotapes. The plan to teach the world's university courses at the University of Bridgeport is underway. If only languages were unified, the project would be possible in the twinkling of an eye.

Standing behind Father Moon are many scholars from throughout the world. I

will videotape the lectures of well-known university professors, each of which can last for ten hours or so. It will be possible to obtain all the knowledge necessary for a major through video compilations of the top three professors in the given field.

Kindergartens, elementary, middle and high schools should be built in proportion to the population of each state. An educational system that can link them to universities and colleges should be established. From grade four onward, students could be taught farming methods, tree planting methods, cultivation methods and how to manage the wilderness.

By the time they graduate from high school, they could become experts. I will build up a system such that they can become teachers and guides at local universities when they graduate from university.

Students graduate from elementary school at around twelve or thirteen. When they go to high school, they could be taught to develop and manage a stock farm, and all about business. They have to receive specialized training at the ranch for sixteen years to become a university graduate or twenty years if they complete a doctorate course. Once they are trained under our system, they do not need to worry about food because they can be self-sustaining and self-sufficient.

****

You have to teach by correspondence. Anybody can take a correspondence course. As education for elementary school is compulsory, web-based education by correspondence should be implemented from middle school until university. The age of the Internet has come for you to teach the whole world. Had you talked about this dream fifty years ago, you would have been treated as a moron. People would have thought you were out of your mind if you tried to sit down and educate all humankind. Haven't we entered the age in which we can communicate of our own free will with the world now, while sitting comfortably in front of the computer?

Before I pass on to the other world, a world of free communications has to be established on earth.

****

The epoch where schools become unnecessary will come in the future. The global problem of schools closing down can crop up if one hundred different subject courses have been prepared. An age of great chaos will arrive. Everyone will receive equal education. Do you think it is possible or impossible? There is absolutely every possibility.

****

They can study through the distance learning system. By listening to sixty tapes a hundred times, they can take the middle or high school examination anywhere and pass it. If such a system were to be put into practice, it would not take twenty years but less than a decade to earn a doctorate.

Schools are not required, and have to be done away with. The distance learning examination ought to be held worldwide on a certain date for students of every grade and level. They can later find out the examination results from the

newspapers. In this way, they can earn their certificates and degrees without actually attending classes.

School buildings would then have to be demolished. Do you like going to school? Students would have to study and thoroughly understand all the materials before taking the examinations. How fabulous it would be for students to carry lecture tapes and books of eminent professors in their schoolbags and study them everywhere they go! These ideas are on my drawing board.

Father teaches, "You should know by now what God's future plan is. The time is now right where we shall not need school buildings nor office buildings. Wherever you go you need only have a laptop computer and you will be able to communicate with everyone. You can swap your office workers from one place to another, maybe fifty at a time. You will not be restricted by one particular bit of information whatsoever. The revolution of information and transportation technology has broadened the human horizon so widely. Video tapes will be utilized for the purposes of education. Then you can study whatever you want to at any level." (1-2-96)

VIDEO AGE

"We are now in the video age, and video use will only expand in the future. In 1975 I predicted that videotape programs would start to replace many university courses. I have asked our Japanese church to prepare a Master's Degree program. Many professors are working closely with us who could help prepare such a course. Now we are compiling a complete encyclopedia of God-centered knowledge. Then a videotape course can be worked out with top professors giving expert lectures. In such a case why would a university be necessary?

"In Japan our members are bringing people to watch *Principle* videotapes. This is four times more effective than the conventional kind of witnessing. We are also creating video centers in America. An interested person only has to go to one of those and he can hear the best *Principle* lecturers." (1-9-83) When he first came to America Father sent every minister in America the *Divine Principle* and videos on the *Principle* when video was first invented. Was it a massive distribution? He sent 300,000 copies! Name me one person in America who has been so generous and given more educational videos than he has. We should also distribute books and videos but the key now is not video centers because of free internet sites like YouTube.com where we can put the *Principle* for all to see in their homes. I have some videos of the *Principle* posted at my website www.divineprinciple.com.

In the *Unification News* (7-14-99) there was an article about the UTS that began by saying, "Distance learning at the Unification Theological Seminary is designed for busy adults who want to gain the knowledge of a seminary education without relocating to Barrytown, New York. The courses are designed for working adults who are established in their missions, careers and families. Your home becomes your classroom, and you study according to your own schedule. Studies have shown that self-motivated adult learners can achieve as good or better outcomes at learning than students who attend lectures." In the February 1997 issue of the *Unification News* there was an article titled "Distance Learning Project at University of Bridgeport." You may find *Accelerated Distance Learning: The New Way to Earn Your College Degree in the Twenty-First Century* by Brad Voeller helpful.

There is a fascinating video of seven homeschool dads talking about homeschooling. Be sure to order a copy and buy one for your local library so others can see it and give some away as gifts. It is titled *Dads: The Men in the Gap*. The back of the video says, "Seven homeschool fathers share from their hearts how each is challenged to fill the husband/father role as Provider, Priest,

Protector, Principal and Partner. Order from www.konos.com.

The primary duty of Unificationists is to educate this world on how to fulfill the Three Blessings. Let's begin by educating our children at home to live by the values taught in the many books and audio-visuals I list in this book. I am so grateful that some Christians have written books and put their voice to audio and have filmed themselves on DVDs.

In *College Without Compromise* Scott and Kris Wightman give many practical ideas for higher education after homeschooling. They have researched many colleges and you may find them helpful. Philosophically they are right in encouraging sons to get a trade or profession that will enable them to be the sole provider. They have a chapter for sons titled "Providing for a Single Income Household." They mention that they have read Steve Maxwell's book *Preparing to Provide for a Single Income Family* and they write how they attended a seminar of his. In the Wightman's chapter on the education of girls entitled "Preparing to be a Well-Equipped Helpmeet" they are against women working outside the home and colleges are dangerous places but they feel it is fine for women to help their husband's work. They write, "We firmly believe that a father has the privilege to protect his daughter until she marries and comes under the love and protection of her husband. We also believe that before she marries, a father can be equipping his daughter to assist him his business." Scott sometimes takes his daughters to his office and has them help him. I disagree with this. In the video of the Miller's *Eden Quartet* there is a scene where one of his daughters is alone at the phone making business calls for her dad. She has better things to do and her dad should not distract her with worrying about finances and business decisions. All this nonsense about women in business comes from Proverbs 31 where the woman earns some money and buys some land. We must disregard this part of Proverbs 31 just as we disregard the Old Testament practice of polygamy and stoning women who have committed adultery. How do we know if the woman in Proverbs 31 is based on a real woman who was one of several wives? When we read books by Christians we have to overlook the idea that abortion is murder and we have to dismiss the value of women earning money that Christians justify from Proverbs 31.

The Botkin sisters book *Show Much More* is brilliant but they are wrong on page 47 when they write, "Can a helper assist her man in his business? Yes! A good wife helps him manage matters of finance and enlarges his wealth and property. She is a prudent businesswoman." The Botkin family, like so many Christians, are deceived by Satan on this point. There is no logic to this. Women should be too busy in their sphere to take time out to "assist" men their sphere. Men are hunters and women are nesters. There should be no interchanging of roles. The Botkin sister's DVD *The Return of the Daughters* is wonderful in many ways but it is deeply flawed in those parts where fathers encourage their daughters to help them in their business or build home-based businesses. I hope they sell millions of copies of their DVD and that every library has a copy. I can't express how wonderful their book and DVD is but on this one point I urge the reader and viewer to disregard the idea that women can help men by joining them in their money making work. Men should work with their sons and other men in earning money, not with girls and women.

Helen Andelin, in her book *Fascinating Womanhood*, is much wiser on this point than the Botkin sisters. She writes that girls and women may see the men in their lives struggling to earn money. A wife may feel "concern" for her husband and "want to do something to help, to relieve his strain and make his life easier. She tells the wife, "You may even feel impelled to seek employment outside the home, or assist him in his work. Noble as these thoughts are, they are not the best solutions. Instead, do the following:

How You Can Help

1. Reduce Expenses: Do everything you can to reduce expenses, so you are

> living well within your husband's income, and hopefully with some spare for savings. When you do, you will greatly relieve his anxieties over money.
> 2. Reduce Demands on His time: If your husband works long hours or gives himself devotedly to his work, when he comes home he needs time to relax and recover. You may have to forgo places you want to go, or things you planned for him to do, and adjust your life to his.
> 3. Live Your Feminine Role: Instead of helping your husband provide the income, provide a wonderful home life. Let him make the living, and you make living worth living. Keep the home intact so it is running smoothly, with all daily needs met. Be feminine, cheerful, and do all you can to bring a peaceful spirit in the home. Such an atmosphere will relieve his anxieties and help him succeed as a provider.
> 4. Live All of Fascinating Womanhood: When your marriage is free of problems and you have a loving relationship, he can better withstand the stresses and strains of his work. If not, if there is trouble in the marriage, it can greatly add to his burdens. If you do all these things you will do far more than if you join the work force with him.

In a section titled "How to Find Happiness in Homemaking" she writes, "Don't Become crowed for Time: If you want to enjoy homemaking, don't become involved in too many activities outside the home. The most time-consuming are outside employment, assisting your husband in his business, or doing masculine jobs around the house, such as yard work, painting, handling money, or bookkeeping. Also, limit your time for clubs, service organizations, self-improvement programs, education classes, or lessons. Although these programs may be a fine thing if you have time for them, don't let them rob you of time to enjoy homemaking."

Helen Andelin is generally right but occasionally she is wrong. Let's first look at where she gives bad advice and then we will look at some of her great insights. In her chapter titled "The Feminine Role vs. The Working Wife" she writes:

> When Women Are Justified in Working If you are widowed, divorced, single, or your husband is disabled, you may be justified in working. It depends on your need for money. If you are married and your husband is physically able, you are justified in the following situations:
>
> 1. Compelling Emergencies
> 2. Furthering the Husband's Education or Training
> 3. The Older Woman

I disagree. Ideally no woman should ever work in the marketplace.

Next she has a heading titled "When Women Are Not Justified in Working" and correctly lists some reasons for women to not earn money:

> 1. To Ease the Pinch
> 2. For Luxuries
> 3. When You Are Bored at Home
> 4. To Do Something Important
> 5. To Ease the Load for the Man: When you see your husband under pressure and strain, concerned about meeting expenses for a growing family, you may feel it is your duty to help him by getting a job. Benevolent as this seems it is not justified or necessary. God blessed the man with strength, endurance, and the emotional makeup for his work. Rather than share his burdens, strengthen

him for them. Give him appreciation. This builds his confidence and helps him succeed in his work. Ease his burdens at home by reducing demands on his time and money, and by providing a peaceful home life where he can be renewed.

She goes on to say:

> **Careers**
> If you have talent as an artist, writer, designer, actress, singer, scientist, or in the technical fields, should you pursue a career? Think twice before you take this step. Your foremost duty is to your marriage and family. Here you must succeed. A career may sidetrack you from your family. Not only will your career demand you time, but your interest, and sometimes, your soul. If your husband and family must be second place, you are making an unwise choice. The price you pay is too high. Listen to those who have had experience: The late Taylor Caldwell, one of the most widely read authors in the English language, made the statement to the press: "There is no solid satisfaction in any career for a woman like myself. There is no home, no true freedom, no hope, no joy, no expectation for tomorrow, no contentment. I would rather cook a meal for a man and bring him his slippers and feel myself in the protection of his arms than have all the citations and awards I have received worldwide, including the Ribbon of Legion of Honor and my property and my bank accounts. They mean nothing to me and I am only one among the millions of sad women like myself."

A usual question people have when they hear about the ideology of women not earning money is: What about women who have a magnificent singing voice? First, how many women are we talking about? Only a tiny handful. Faith Hill is one of the most famous singers in the world. Her first marriage failed but her marriage with superstar country singer and Hollywood actor, Tim McGraw looks happy. McGraw said in a *People* magazine interview, "We'll be together forever." Superstar Shania Twain and many other famous singers have experienced painful divorces. Maybe the best advice is for these women to marry super successful men like Angelina Jolie marrying Brad Pitt. Again, we are talking about a miniscule number of women here. These women must be very careful if they want to have a successful marriage and also be rich and famous. These women should not earn money and volunteer their talent for free.

Mrs. Andelin teaches in her marriage manual *Fascinating Womanhood* that women should never manage the husband's income. She writes:

> She should be given a household budget but should not be responsible for the overall management of the income. As the wife, you have an important part to play in the success of family finances. You should be given a budget for household expenses. Manage this money well by developing the womanly art of thrift. … Also provide a peaceful home atmosphere. When things are right at home your husband can think more clearly, and will be renewed in body and spirit, prepared to go back into the world to make another effort. When his home life is on an even keel he's more apt to succeed at work.
>
> A simple solution to common money problems is the wife's household budget, which covers food, clothing, household goods, personal items, or anything in regular demand. It should not include occasional items such as furniture, appliances, major household repairs, or remodeling. The budget should be advanced weekly or monthly. It should be a fair allowance, based on the husband's income, but hopefully generous enough to have some left over. This

> you should be allowed to keep, to save or to spend as you please, with no questions asked. This provides personal freedom and incentive to be thrifty.
>
> Your husband should manage the rest of the money, paying the monthly bills such as gas, electricity, telephone, water, house payments, insurance, yard care, car expense, income taxes, and other expenses.
>
> Problems in Family Finances Confusion of Roles: The problem in our society is that some men and women have the financial roles confused. A man may think his only duty is to provide the living. He brings home his paycheck, hands it over to his wife, and expects her to manage the money. She pays the bills and worries about where the next dollar is coming from.
>
> Stress for the Wife: Serious problems can occur when the wife manages the money. Women are not designed to worry about money. They become depressed, lose sparkle and charm, and sometimes even become mentally and physically ill.

She teaches that when women deal with the finances the man doesn't know enough to make good financial decisions. He needs to manage the money because it is central to his success in business and the home.

COURTSHIP

When you watch the DVD *The Return of the Daughters* be sure to watch the bonus material. One of them is about courtship and marriage. This is a fascinating and moving account of how Scott Brown teaches that men should mentor young men as young as 13. He explains that one of these men may become your son-in-law. In the DVD you see that this actually happened. One of the young men he mentored became his son-in-law. The son-in-law and his daughter talk about how the courtship took place. I think they give many good pointers on how families should get their children matched and married. I like the idea that parents look for matches for their children who are as young as 12 or 13 without the children knowing who they are talking to. Instead of waiting at the last moment to look for mates for our children let's do as Scott Brown teaches in the Botkin sister's DVD.

I would like to end this chapter with some thoughts on the obsession many people have on pushing college on young people. For many men it would be better if they learned a trade. College is not for everyone.

Allan Carlson explains that student loans influence young people to practice birth control. At the American Enterprise Institute in Washington, D.C. (16 November 2005) he said:

> To begin with, we should pause and consider, for a moment, the historically unusual nature of the "student loan" project. In cultures around the globe and throughout history, the common practice has been to use "dowries" and other marital gifts to provide newlyweds with working capital—the opposite of debt. This cultural strategy has aimed at social renewal by encouraging the founding of stable homes and the birth of children. Indeed, until the last few decades, no known society had ever deliberately launched large numbers of young adults on their life course carrying substantial interest-bearing debt. How is this peculiar social experiment working out?
>
> Those who crafted the federal loan program intended to stimulate investment in education, and so to improve what economists call "human capital": the

> existence, skills, and knowledge of individuals. In practice, the system appears to be contributing to the postponement of marriage and to the postponement or prevention of the birth of children. Serving, oddly and unintentionally, as a highly effective form of contraception targeted on the college-educated, student loans may actually keep stable homes and new "human capital" (such as babies) from forming.

The book *Academically Adrift: Limited Learning on College Campuses* by Richard Arum and Josipa Roksa proves that there is very little learning going on in colleges: "after two years of college, 45% of students learned little to nothing. After four years, 36% of students learned almost nothing."

BLUE COLLAR AND PROUD OF IT

Joe Lamacchia wrote a book uplifting the blue collar worker titled *Blue Collar and Proud of It: The All-in-One-Resource for Finding Freedom, Financial Success, and Security Outside of the Cubicle*. At his Web site www.bluecollarandproudofit.com we read:

> **A Message from Joe**
>
> The next time you're sitting at an intersection, waiting for the traffic light to turn, look around. From the signs hanging off the storefronts and the jack hammering in the street to the electrical lines running across the road and the UPS driver unloading a delivery, blue collar America is everywhere. Blue-collar workers built this country. And we continue to build and rebuild it every day. We fix it, move it, and make it operate 24 hours a day, seven days a week. We are the glue that holds the community together, the ones you call when your car breaks, your roads are full of potholes, your faucet is leaking and your grass needs trimming. We are America's backbone.
>
> And yet, most of us are told that the only way to succeed is to go to college. In the process tens of thousands of America's youth are wracking up those massive college loans, and nearly half of the students who start college will drop out before graduating. Our country is facing major workforce shortages. We don't have enough linemen, ironworkers, or welders. The Baby Boomers are retiring at an alarming rate and we aren't training our youth to take over their jobs. That's because we've convinced the next generation of workers that they must go to college. We need to rethink our system and show our students some of the other options.
>
> In case you're wondering, I'm blue collar and proud of it. I've run a landscaping business outside Boston for 28 years. I didn't go to college because simply put I would have been terrible at it. Instead I'm doing something I love and something I can feel good about. The time has come to stop turning our backs on the blue-collar jobs that have built our great nation. It's time to pay attention to each student's desires and skills. Let's put some pride back into blue collar America.
>
> Welcome to my site, BlueCollarandProudOfIt.com!
>
> "It's time to restore pride in the skilled trades. After all, we are America's backbone."

One reviewer of *Blue Collar and Proud of It* wrote:

> Not everyone is suited to a white-collar career or wants to get the four-year degree that these jobs typically require. But that doesn't mean you have to turn your back on a great salary, exciting work, and a profession that commands

respect.

Joe Lamacchia is proof. After graduating high school, he said no to college—and found personal and professional success as the owner of a thriving landscaping company. He also started BlueCollarandProudofIt.com, a resource for people who want to find work in the skilled trades. Blue-collar workers build and maintain our bridges, keep our cars running, fix our plumbing, and provide vital services to every home. That's why Lamacchia calls these 'necessary jobs.' Most blue-collar work simply cannot be outsourced to foreign countries and it's often recession-proof. As Baby Boomers retire, blue-collar industries are experiencing workforce shortages because there aren't enough well-trained people to fill all of these jobs. That is, until now . . .

Blue Collar and Proud of It gives you the information you need to pursue a stable, enjoyable, well-paying job—one that makes a difference every day in your community.

Whether you're just out of high school, have been a victim of downsizing, or are looking for a new direction, Lamacchia explains all the options, outlines the necessary training, and delivers true stories of people who have made their own way in the blue-collar world. Discover a wealth of opportunities, including:

• carpentry • machinery • roofing • electricians • truck drivers • green construction
• Broadband technicians • welding • ironworkers • solar panel installation
• water conservation

One newspaper article said this in an article titled "Newton landscaper weighs in on 'Proud' way of life" (Greg Turner / Herald Highlight 5-4-09):

> Joe Lamacchia has been working two jobs since barely graduating from Watertown High School 32 years ago: landscaping lawns in Newton and serving as spokesman for the blue-collar way of life.
>
> First he had to convince his father, a finance executive at Raytheon, that he had no plans to cut a career path into a corporate cubicle. Then Lamacchia went up against his sons' high school teachers and guidance counselors who insisted the students just had to go to college.

One of the world's most respected economists, Laurence Kotlikoff, has proven "that a profession in a skilled trade will lead to the same (or better) financial lifestyle as a Harvard graduate." He says plumbers make more money than the average medical doctor: "Plumbers make more, and have almost the same spending power over their lifetime as general practitioners." He also says studies "find no financial benefit to attending top-tier schools."

UNSCHOOLING

I will end with a plea that you investigate the Unschooling movement. Lee Stranahan writes, "Unschooling is a type of homeschooling that promotes organic, self-directed learning without the structure of traditional education. My family has unschooled our kids for over a decade. I'm working on a film about the subject called *Unschooling: The Movie* explores the subject and includes interviews with people like unschooling advocate Sandra Dodd." Watch his video at his website www.unschoolingmovie.info. Search Youtube.com for unschooling and watch the many videos like "Learn Free - an unschooling documentary".

An article at www.msnbc.com titled "A new chapter in education: unschooling — Controversial home-taught approach lets kids take the lead in learning" says:

In the past 20 years the number of unschoolers in the United States has grown from fewer than 2,000 to more than 100,000, says Patrick Farenga, president of Holt Associates, Inc., a Boston-area organization started by John Holt, the late education reformer who coined the term "unschooling." That's a conservative estimate; others in the education field put the number closer to 200,000 and say the unschooling population is growing by 10 to 15 percent each year.

While homeschooling began as a trend among fundamentalist Christians with largely religious motivations, unschooling is more about educational philosophy. It's rooted in the belief that humans are naturally driven to learn and will do so fiercely if left to their own devices.

Unschooling is difficult to define because no two unschoolers do the same thing.

Like homeschoolers, unschooled children don't attend traditional class. Unlike most homeschoolers, however, unschoolers do not follow any sort of curriculum. Children are allowed and encouraged to set the agenda and pace using their parents, their own lives and their homes and communities as resources.

So if they want to spend all day learning about bugs or gardening, they head outdoors. If they're interested in criminal justice, parents might set up a visit to the police station or help them get books on the subject. If something about Greek mythology piques their interest, maybe they'll cook Greek food or write a play about Perseus and the Gorgon. Or maybe not.

"Here's how I define it: Unschooling is allowing your child as much freedom to explore and learn from the world as you can comfortably bear as a parent," says Farenga, co-author of "Teach Your Own: The John Holt Book of Homeschooling."

An article titled **"**Unschoolers learn what they want, when they want" at www.cnn.com said, "The unschooling philosophy is based on education pioneer John Holt's 1964 book *How Children Fail.* Put simply, Holt wrote that living is learning. He believed children should follow their innate curiosity and passions rather than being forced to learn hordes of information they will never use." Here are some book titles I found on the subject:

Unschooling: A Lifestyle of Learning by Sara McGrath
Unschooling (Kindle Single) by Astra Taylor
Big Book of Unschooling by Sandra Dodd
The Unprocessed Child: Living Without School by Valerie Fitzenreiter
*Challenging Assumptions in Education b*y Wendy Priesnitz
*School Free - The Homeschooling Handbook b*y Wendy Priesnitz
The Unschooling Handbook: How to Use the Whole World As Your Child's Classroom by Mary Griffith
Free to Learn: Five Ideas for a Joyful Unschooling Life by Pam Laricchia
The Unschooling Unmanual by Nanda Van Gestel
Unschooling Rules: 55 Ways to Unlearn What We Know About Schools and Rediscover Education by Clark Aldrich
Intuitive Unschooling - How to Home School for Success by Monika Mraovic
Radical Unschooling - A Revolution Has Begun-Revised Edition by Dayna Martin
The Unschooling Happiness Project by Sara McGrath
Free Range Learning: How Homeschooling Changes Everything by Laura Grace Weldon
Unschooling Wins the Race by Sara McGrath
Homeschooling with Gentleness: A Catholic Discovers Unschooling by Suzie Andres
Finding Joy: A Christian's Journey To An Unschooled Life by Julie A. Brow Polanco

Radical Unschooling - A Revolution Has Begun by Dayna Martin
101 Reasons Why I'm an Unschooler by ps pirro
Unschooling Kelly: A Honest Look at American Schools by John D. Mcewan
Our Transition Into Unschooling by Akilah S. Richards
All About Unschooling by Grace Stern
Deschooling Gently by Tammy Takahashi
Everything Voluntary: From Politics to Parenting by Skyler J. Collins and Chris R.
Parenting A Free Child: An Unschooled Life by Rue Kream
Unschooling 101: Top 10 Questions About Learning Without School [Kindle Edition] by Sara McGrath
The Willed Curriculum, Unschooling, and Self-Direction: What Do Love, Trust, Respect, Care, and Compassion Have To Do With Learning? by Carlo Ricci

I challenge every Unificationist to build a movement where followers of Sun Myung Moon live in a trinity and work to have trinities live in tight-knit communities in the countryside and where the children's primary teachers are their parents.

CHAPTER TEN

HOMECHURCH

The tenth value is to decentralize the church to the home. In Father's autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*, he writes, "The family is the only institution created by God. It is the school of love where people can learn how to love each other and live together in peace, and it is the training center where we practice how to build a palace of peace in the world. It is where we learn how to become a husband or wife who will live for the sake of our spouse and how to become a husband and wife who will travel on the eternal path of love. The family is the base camp for world peace."

God is not interested in churches. Governments and churches are institutions for fallen man. God never intended for there to be governments with politicians and churches with ministers. God and the Messiah are only interested in the family. It is time for families to stop depending on government and churches. Politicians and priests have proven to be incompetent. They have castrated men as heads of their families and demoralized women with their tempting promises of being their provider and guide. It is time to decentralize power to the home.

True Father anointed his youngest son, Hyung Jin, to be his successor. When Father died in 2012 his wife, Hak Ja Han, and some Korean leaders around her usurped his position. Three years later he went public and started building a new movement called World Peace and Unification Sanctuary based in rural Pennsylvania. He began by giving a sermon on January 18, 2015 titled "Breaking the Silence." Each Sunday he would speak and his sermons would be posted on YouTube.com and gradually he has been converting some from the Family Federation to jump ship. I am thrilled at his brilliant insights that are the opposite of his mother's philosophy and of her followers. He is a Libertarian and has little interest in creating an authoritarian movement. The movement he is creating is decentralized. I hope those who honor him worldwide will not create churches and only meet in homes. I hope no one will take a title such as Reverend or Pastor and take any money for salaries. The only church should be Hyung Jin's in Pennsylvania.

There is a quiet but powerful movement by many Christians who are leaving the traditional, institutional churches and meeting in homes. This movement is called "House Church" or "Home Church." At the website (www.HomeChurch.com) they write: "Exactly what is meant by the phrase 'Home Church?' Home churches, also known as house churches, describe small groups of believers—even as few as 2 or 3—who gather in the name of Jesus Christ. They are very similar to the earliest churches which were customarily designated in the Scriptures as household units."

Home Church is mentioned in the New Testament:

> Philemon 2 "...and to the church that meets in your house."
> Colossians 4:15 "...and the church in her house."
> Romans 16:5 "...the church that is in their house"

The Home Church or House Church movement is exploding in numbers. These followers of the Messiah give powerful arguments for selling church buildings and returning to homes and religious communities. We will look at some of their arguments that have convinced me that

Unificationists should sell all their churches and decentralize leadership to the men who are the heads of their homes.

ALTERNATIVE MOVEMENTS

In an article titled "The Growing House-Church Movement" Jeffrey Henning says, "A paradigm shift. In this age of alternative movements, people everywhere are looking for new and better ways of doing things. We are realizing the need to be proactive participants in every area of our lives, such as health, medicine, education and now, even church." (http://ministrytodaymag.com).

Kathie Walters writes in an article in *House2House* magazine titled "What Went Wrong":

> Around 300 A.D. the Holy Spirit influence upon the church began to wane. Leaders began to rely on their own abilities, rather than the Holy Spirit. The church then made one of the worst mistakes in history. She gave up basic freedoms that powered the early church's success, and put a stranglehold on much of the church's powerful ministry. How? By turning the saints from lively participators into pew potatoes (or spectators).
>
> Whatever happened to, "When you come together brethren, everyone of you hath a psalm, a hymn, a tongue, an interpretation, a revelation etc." (1 Cor. 14:26). How did this early dynamic church meeting turn into a one (or sometimes two) man show with an almost professional sounding worship team? What was the secret of the early church? Well for start they didn't have to worry about financing buildings, their money was invested in living stones. (Of course a roof over our heads to keep the rain out, while gathering is a necessary asset). They met in houses and rented rooms, an informal often boisterous affair with full-scale meals. Church was a kind of floating party with every one participating 100%. At the weekly get-togethers, everyone was the star of the show. Everyone was needed.
>
> As the church grew in various cities, it ceased to become a "family" and turned into a kind of "establishment." The final nail in the church coffin was the fact that Emperor Constantine kindly issued the Edict of Milan, officially ending the persecutions and tolerating the church. Then came "US" and "THEM," priest and laity. The problem was that 98% of the church was "them," and so the professionals took over. The rest learned to sit and be quiet and join in singing when told to. They learned to add something to the meeting—afterwards—at home or in the foyer, but not in the meeting.

Father is moving in the direction away from the traditional way things are done in this world to a world that is very different from anything we have ever known. He publicly announced on his 50 state tour in America in 2001, "Ultimately, organized churches, temples and mosques will disappear." Father is not into churches and government. His teaching is centered on the family. I know it is hard to change, especially if it requires radical change, but we have to keep up with Father.

Father Moon says, "Father is not in the box of any religious ideology. This is hard for them to understand. Father came from the Christian foundation with the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity however Father always said he would take down that sign. Father did and created the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification without any boundaries. This really moved the Chinese leaders—Father is out of the box. Father took down the banner of the Unification Church and eliminated boundaries. If you think about it this is amazing. Father did such an unusual thing in taking down the banner of our church." (3-21-04)

Father never intended for us to create church kingdoms with its church castles ruled by people with titles like reverend. He is into men being the king of their home castle and having the title of Daddy. He has always been for grassroots and local creativity. I remember at one State Leader's meeting in 1975 Father told us that when we had 12 members and the 13th joined then we should send one member away to start another church. Father has talked a lot about what he calls "home church." He is not into centralization. He is always into decentralization. Father says, "A decentralized system is better than a centralized system" (1-2-90). He wants us to live a natural, daily religious life and not focus on Sunday only. In the book *Home Church: the Words of Sun Myung Moon* Father says, "Home church is the base of the Kingdom of Heaven. ... Home church was supposed to have existed in the Garden of Eden, with the home as the place of worshipping God. ... Having home churches was God's goal in the Garden of Eden but it was broken into pieces by Adam and Eve, causing many different obstacles to be set up throughout history. Now I have cleared them all away and we are returning to the original concept. It is your blessing and privilege to participate.

"Your 360 home area is your world, your place of love, service, worship and prayer. ... Your country and your spirit world are condensed in your home church. You may think home church is only a witnessing idea, but this is the formula and law, not something that changes. It is more significant and precious in the spirit world than you can imagine. Throughout history there was no such thing as this arrangement of home church. As soon as the foundation is set, like a tree setting down its deep roots, you will see the satanic world crumble."

Tyler Hendricks wrote an interesting article titled "Church Growth through Start-Ups and Satellites" in the *Journal of Unification Studies - Vol. IV* about church growth admitting that many second Gen have little interest in growing the church and that we should emphasize entrepreneurs working at building religious communities locally. He writes:

> We save the world by focusing on local development.
>
> I believe that we would do well to drop concern about leaders' positions and titles.
>
> The Reverend Sun Myung Moon has always expected his movement to grow. He has envisioned becoming the largest faith body in the world. He foretold a Pentecostal enthusiasm that would bring so many people knocking on Unification Church doors that his leaders would not be able to handle them. He has expected that his lay missionaries would be able to convert hundreds of people within months if not weeks, and that hundreds of thousands of Christian clergy would follow his teachings. At the very minimum, members are expected to bring in 84 new disciples within their first seven years in the church.
>
> This growth rate, accomplished on the basis of prayer, fasting, all-night vigils, and continual witnessing and teaching, equals or surpasses that of any Christian start-up. Knowing this was only the first step, the Founder wisely shifted strategy in the late 1970s from a youth movement to a family church. Instead of street and campus witnessing, they began to create home churches. "Once your Cain home church is completed," Father Moon said, "…you will go to your home town and form your Abel home church centering on your relatives and family. Once you come to that point you will not have to do the difficult work of MFT or witnessing because you will have graduated from all that… our children won't have to have MFT training or witness door-to-door." [This quote comes from the book *Home Church: The Words Of Rev. Sun Myung Moon*]
>
> That is, success at building healthy and growing church communities would render

street activities unnecessary. The Unificationist home church effort did not bear the expected fruit, and they have reverted to street witnessing and team fundraising.

Contrary to the Founder's hopes, Unificationists now are in the process of standardizing street witnessing and fundraising as de rigueur for their offspring.

Father Moon foretold that this would indeed happen to those who failed to create settled local churches: "Unless you fulfill home church yourself, however, your mission will be handed down to your children with even greater suffering." He envisioned as the worse scenario that in which some members would succeed and some would not: "Then there will be two separate worlds, the world of those children who must do home church in place of their parents, and the world where people are rejoicing over the true family and true ideal home. God does not want to see that division happen." The division in fact didn't happen, but not because everyone succeeded, but because everyone failed at building local churches. This reversed the hopes of the Founder, who said, "I want to see you welcomed in your hometowns and living in happy families. Do your utmost to bring the completion of that goal." As an elder Unificationist in America, I observe that my children are in a position to take on the local church mission that I never accomplished. It is painful to admit that few of our offspring desire to create such churches.

Today the Unification Church leadership in Korea and Japan are explicit that local church development is vital to their future. The members in both nations are expected to launch and manage small groups called "Hoondok churches." The Japanese headquarters has a list, at least, of 400,000 such churches existing in Japan.

Father Moon does call for grassroots initiative and autonomy: "the standard of activity is not in the province. It is the leaders of the district and the neighborhood." His challenge is to create the environment in which Unificationists put that into practice.

I believe that the Unification Church needs to view church growth as a specific mission of the highest priority.

If what other churches are developing is any indication, we should expect the unexpected, the unexpectedly wonderful and amazing. One recalls the surge of energy in 1997, when blessed families were liberated to do home blessings locally.

… home church, hometown mission of the blessed central family, make it a providential priority, allow people to do it when, where and how they are given by God to do, and equip those who are called so that they can find success. This is the only way we can develop indigenous worship and community life in America. And only through indigenous worship and community life can the Unification Church hope to grow in America.

Felicity Dale wrote in *House2House* magazine an article titled "On the Verge of a Second Reformation" saying, "The first Reformation, putting the Scriptures into the hands of the common man, parallels the simple church movement—putting the church back into the hands of the people.

"When the Bible was released into the hands of ordinary people, their spiritual lives changed. The change in people led to the Reformation, through which the whole of society was transformed, and the courses of nations were altered.

"Imagine what will happen when the *church* is released into the hands of the people! Simple church allows ordinary men and women to 'be church.' The objections to seeing this happen are identical to the objections of those who felt the Bible should not be in the common language. But God is doing something. All over the world people are getting together—in homes, in schools, in offices—to have fellowship together. The Holy Spirit is putting the church back into the hands of His (ordinary) people. The results may astound us!"

At Wayne Jacobsen's website www.lifestream.org we read:

> Where do you go to church?
>
> I have never liked this question, even when I was able to answer it with a specific organization. I know what it means culturally, but it is based on a false premise—that church is something you can go to as in a specific event, location or organized group. I think Jesus looks at the church quite differently. He didn't talk about it as a place to go to, but a way of living in relationship to him and to other followers of his.
>
> Asking me where I go to church is like asking me where I go to Jacobsen. How do I answer that? I am a Jacobsen and where I go a Jacobsen is. 'Church' is that kind of word. It doesn't identify a location or an institution. It describes a people and how they relate to each other. If we lose sight of that, our understanding of the church will be distorted and we'll miss out on much of its joy.
>
> Are you just trying to avoid the question?
>
> I know it may only sound like quibbling over words, but words are important. When we only ascribe the term 'church' to weekend gatherings or institutions that have organized themselves as 'churches' we miss out on what it means to live as Christ's body. It will give us a false sense of security to think that by attending a meeting once a week we are participating in God's church. Conversely I hear people talk about 'leaving the church' when they stop attending a specific congregation.
>
> But if the church is something we are, not someplace we go, how can we leave it unless we abandon Christ himself? And if I think only of a specific congregation as my part of the church, haven't I separated myself from a host of other brothers and sisters that do not attend the same one I do?
>
> The idea that those who gather on Sunday mornings to watch a praise concert and listen to a teaching are part of the church and those who do not, are not, would be foreign to Jesus. The issue is not where we are at a given time during the weekend, but how we are living in him and with other believers all week long.
>
> ... let's be clear: as fun as it is to enjoy large group worship and even be instructed by gifted teachers, the real joy of body life can't be shared in huge groups. The church for its first 300 years found the home the perfect place to gather. They are much more suited to the dynamics of family which is how Jesus described his body.
>
> ... the time I spend ... I want to spend face to face with a group of people. I know it isn't popular today where people find it is far easier to sit through a finely-tuned (or not so finely-tuned) service and go home without ever having to open up our life or care about another person's journey.

Jacobsen wrote in his essay "Why I Don't Go To Church Anymore!":

> But don't our children need church activities?
>
> I'd suggest that what they need most is to be integrated into God's life through relational fellowship with other believers. 92% of children who grow up in Sunday schools with all the puppets and high-powered entertainment, leave 'church' when they

leave their parents' home. Instead of filling our children with ethics and rules we need to demonstrate how to live in God's life together.

Even sociologists tell us that the #1 factor in determining whether a child will thrive in society is if they have deep, personal friendships with non-relative adults. No Sunday school can fill that role. I know of one community in Australia who after 20 years of sharing God's life together as families could say that they had not lost one child to the faith as they grew into adulthood. I know I cut across the grain here, but it is far more important that our children experience real fellowship among believers rather than the bells and whistles of a slick children's program.

Dave Kahle wrote in *House2House* magazine, "The Simple Church Model is that of an intimate setting where the participants feel free to share, support and grow together as a group. It becomes quickly self-evident that it's God's Church and the Holy Spirit leads the group. 'Those who are led by the Spirit of God are children of God'" (Romans 8:14).

Here is a list of some books on the Home Church movement:

How to Meet in Homes by Gene Edwards
Rethinking Elders by Gene Edwards
When the Church was Led by Laymen by Gene Edwards
Beyond Radical by Gene Edwards
The House Church: A Model for Renewing the Church by Del Birkey
So You Want to Start a House Church? by Frank Viola
Rethinking the Wineskin by Frank Viola
The Untold Story of the New Testament Church by Frank Viola
Straight Talk to Elders by Frank Viola
Pagan Christianity by Frank Viola and George Barna
Who is Your Covering? by Frank Viola
Gathering in Homes by Frank Viola
Houses That Change the World: The Return of the House Churches by Wolfgang Simson
The Way Church Ought to Be: Ninety-five Propositions for a Return to Radical Christianity by Robert Lund
The Shaping of Things to Come: Innovation and Mission for the 21stcentury Church by Michael Frost and Alan Hirsch
The Church Comes Home: Building Community and Mission through Home Churches by Robert and Julia Banks
Going to Church in the First Century by Robert Banks
Paul's Idea of Community: The Early House Churches in Their Cultural Setting by Robert Banks
Simply Church by Tony and Felicity Dale
An Army of Ordinary People by Felicity Dale
The Rabbit and the Elephant: Why Small Is the New Big for Today's Church by Tony Dale, Felicity Dale, George Barna (www.barna.org)
The Global House Church Movement by Rad Zdero
NEXUS: The World House Church Movement Reader by Rad Zdero (missionbooks.org)
Revolution by George Barna
The Church in the House—a return to simplicity by Robert Fitts Sr.
Jesus Has Left The Building by Paul Viera
House2House magazine (House2House.com)
When The Church Leaves The Building by David Fredrickson (www.familyroommedia.com)
The Naked Church by Wayne Jacobsen (www.familyroommedia.com)
Authentic Relationships by Wayne Jacobsen

The Way Church Was Meant To Be: A Roadmap for the Worldwide Exodus Out of Traditional Church by Terry Stanley
House Church and Mission by Roger Gehring
Going to the Root: Nine Proposals for Radical Church Renewal by Christian S. Smith
Megashift: Igniting Spiritual Power by James Rutz
Radical Renewal: The Problem of Wineskins Today by Howard A. Snyder
Ekklesia: To the Roots of Biblical House Church Life by Steve Atkerson
Toward A House Church Theology by Steve Atkerson
House Church Networks: A Church for a New Generation by Larry Kreider
Starting a House Church: A New Model for Living Out Your Faith by Larry Kreider *Cultivating a Life for God: Multiplying Disciples through Life Transforming Groups* by Neil Cole
Organic Church: Growing Faith Where Life Happens by Neil Cole
Simple/House Church Revolution Book by Roger Thoman (free online download at www.rogerthoman.com)
Going to the Root: Nine Proposals for Radical Church Renewal by Christian Smith
The House Church Book: rediscover the dynamic, organic, relational, viral community Jesus started by Wolfgang Simson
To Preach Or Not To Preach by David Norrington

Be sure to order the DVD on home churches titled *Tidal Wave - An exploration of simple church* and the DVDs *Church Outside the Walls: A Four Part Documentary Exploring Church Life Outside of Organized Religion* (www.familyroomstore.com).

Darryl Erkel writes in his review of *The House Church: A Model for Renewing the Church* by Del Birkey:

> Birkey has written one of the finest defenses of house-church theology in print. The book is both scholarly and practical. The author not only surveys the scriptural evidence, but provides the reader with the historical and contemporary significance of meeting within homes, as opposed to the more traditional church building model.
>
> Among the many reasons given in support of house-churches, Birkey writes: "On the other hand, some characteristics of the house church prove to be a positive asset over the more traditional structure. The informal setting and communal atmosphere provides the creative use of space and time. Enormous financial overhead and the limitations of available time in the typical Sunday morning schedule are overcome. Thus, the intended focus can be more personally intense and fruitful. Furthermore, the style of communication is enhanced by face-to-face contact and a freedom for interaction. A nearly total participation is possible, raising the potential for learning, healing, and growth.

In "Church Buildings or House-Churches? Biblical and Practical Advantages for Meeting Within Homes" Darryl Erkel writes (www.gracegems.org/SERMONS2/house_churches.htm):

> Homes are conducive to the family concept and mutual edification which should mark the gatherings of Christians. It is amazing how "religious" and tight-lipped people get when they enter a church building. The setting and furnishings all give the impression that one has entered the holy of holies and that the only thing expected of him or her is to be silent and "maintain an attitude of worship." What a contrast this is with the atmosphere and setting of the house-church where the saints interact, serve and fellowship with one another! Mutual edification is much easier in a home than in the more traditional church setting. Many people have difficulty sharing burdens or a word of exhortation in a

common church structure, but such difficulties are greatly reduced when the assembly meets in a home.

To spend large sums of the Lord's money on building projects, maintenance and renovation is a waste of God's money (at least in most cases). It is to squander money on that which is to perish. Instead of using such funds to send out more church planters, feed the poor, assist needy believers, and promote the spread of the Gospel, we "evangelicals" have used it to build elaborate cathedrals and huge auditoriums which, in most cases, are only used once or twice a week. Is this being a good steward of the financial resources which God provides? How many churches even stop to consider the necessity of a church building in the first place? Do you think that on the great day of judgment Christ will be pleased with our plush and gaudy edifices? Does it grieve your heart that most "evangelical" churches have a larger budget for building projects, staff salaries, and maintenance than for missions, the poor, and people-oriented ministries? What does this reveal about our priorities?

Some have supposed that if Christians were to meet in homes, a great deal of reverence would be lost. The "service" would lose its formality and the proper reverence directed toward God would diminish. But this argument assumes that a Christian gathering is to be "formal," whereas we know from the New Testament that early church meetings were quite simple and informal. They were nothing like the highly liturgical and formalistic meetings that mark our places of worship. Moreover, we must remember that reverence is the attitude of one's heart toward God and is, therefore, not dependent upon its external surroundings.

Besides, why can't reverence for God be maintained within the house-church setting?

Persecution has historically forced Christians to abandon official church buildings and meet within homes where, instead of growing weak because they must gather in houses, they have grown strong, close-knit, and learned more fully what it means to be the family of God. It has been the house-church model which has most consistently promoted such qualities, not the church building model.

The house-church is a culturally relevant model which can be adapted in any geographical region or culture. This is not necessarily so when attempting to erect a church building in a foreign country, for not only do building permits have to be secured before the church can "officially" gather (in some cases taking several months to obtain), but the building itself is often viewed with suspicion and identified more with the "Americanization" of their culture and land. By establishing churches within the existing homes, people will tend to feel less threatened by foreign missionary structures and more apt to participate in a setting that is both familiar and comfortable.

At the website www.blessedquietness.com the authors say:

What are the strengths of the House Church?

The home is used 7 days a week, so there is no need to heat the great hall of the people for 80% of the time when no one is there. Some climates where winters fall into the sub zero temperatures cause thousands of dollars of God's treasury to be sent up the chimney in heating empty space.

The home is a lot more inviting to sinners we are trying to win. Large halls of the people intimidate sinners and are symbols of religion. Evangelism is a lot easier in the House Church.

The home does not look like a "church," so it is a lot easier to teach that the Church is the people.

Homes are more comfortable than great halls of the people. People hang around after meetings and enjoy one another more instead of running for the parking lot. Church dinners are more friendly since the group is smaller.

Home Churches don't have to keep schedules and watch the abominable clock like great halls of the people. The very nature of a great mass of people demands tight time keeping and precise choreographing of events. The home delivers the saints of the clock for a day each week.

The home needs no PA system, does not invite big band driven worship, obliterates the "worship leader" frenzy, and in general takes the Lord's Church back to the simplicity of a family, which is where the New Testament Church started.

You can keep the family together in a House Church instead of sending every family member scurrying off in 5 different directions to never see each other again until 12:30. A House Church is a REAL "church family." It offers "something for every member of the family" that is, the House Church offers to KEEP the family—a family.

Youth in a House Church cannot play the fool by hiding in cars in the parking lot necking or riding in church buses to events where they run loose all over some distant town. Kids in House Churches learn to relate to adults and respect older folks, for they are with them all the time. This makes for a much more mature young person as they mature.

It must be said that many of the above qualities are also present in a local church which is under 25 people, but the lust for numerical growth in a non-home based church will one day wipe out all of the above.

What are the strengths of the "Great Hall of the People"?

A big church house downtown, with a tall steeple and grand architecture, makes you feel like you belong to a thing of power and success, not just a runt house in the suburbs.

You can get in and get out and not be known, thus insuring no one will ever ask you to do anything.

In an article at his website titled "Rethinking Leadership in the Church" Frank Viola writes:

Perhaps the most daunting feature of the modern pastoral role is that it keeps the people it claims to serve in spiritual infancy. Because the pastoral role usurps the believer's right to minister in a spiritual way, it ends up warping God's people. It keeps them weak and insecure.

Granted, many who fill this role do so for laudable reasons. And not a few of them sincerely want to see their fellow brethren take spiritual responsibility. (Many a pastor lives with this frustration. But few have mapped the problem to their profession.)

Yet the modern office of "pastor" always disempowers and pacifies the believing priesthood. This is so regardless of how uncontrolling the person who fills this position may be.

Since the pastor carries the spiritual workload, the majority of the brethren become passive, lazy, self-seeking, and arrested in their spiritual growth. In this way, both pastors and congregations alike cannot help from being spiritually lamed by this unbiblical office.

If the truth be told, many Christians prefer the convenience of having someone other than themselves shoulder the responsibility for ministry and

> shepherding. In their minds, it is better to hire a religious specialist to tend to the needs of the brethren than to bother themselves with the self-emptying demands of servanthood and pastoral care.
>
> In short, our 20th century Western obsession with offices and titles has led us to superimpose our own ideas of church order onto the NT. Yet the very ethos of the NT militates against the idea of a single pastor system.

Straight Talk to Elders by Frank Viola "is a prophetic plea to abandon authoritarian abuse and oppressive leadership structures. Its liberating message has set many Christians free from the tyranny of dictatorial leaders who overlord God's flock."

At his website Frank Viola writes: "Later, I came to realize that the fundamental problem with the institutional church was its violation of the priesthood of all believers, its imposition and elevation of church officers, its absolute dependence upon the clergy system, its relentless adherence to the perfunctory 'worship service,' and its sectarian, partisan tendency."

One website said house church advocates are not interested in "the hottest preacher, the best worship bands, or producing the best dramatic productions and facilities."

Christian Smith writes in his chapter titled "Do Church Without Clergy" from his book *Going to the Root: Nine Proposals for Radical Church Renewal*:

> Radical church renewal demands a transformed understanding and practice of ministry in the church. It calls us to shift ministry away from professionals and give it back to the ordinary people of God. To do this, we must rethink a key aspect of modern church life: the clergy.
>
> The clergy seems an overrated institution. Many Christians assume, for example, that the most important aspect to consider in choosing a church is its minister. ... They think the ordained, full-time Christian minister has answered God's highest call.
>
> Could it be that clergy are neither necessary nor, in the long run, good for the church? Is it possible that one of the best things that could happen to the church would be for the clergy to resign and take secular jobs?
>
> These suggestions may seem absurd. Yet going to the root helps us see that our clergy system is not demanded by the New Testament. It is often counterproductive. And it can obstruct healthy, biblical church life. [Clergy] typically are sincere, compassionate, intelligent, self-giving and long-suffering. The problem with clergy is not the people who are clergy but the profession these people belong to.
>
> To grasp the value of church without clergy, we need to remind ourselves of the biblical vision of ministry in the church. The New Testament is clear that ministry in the church is the work of the entire body of believers, not of a single minister or pastoral team. Church ministry is not the domain of hierarchies and professionals. Rather, the church is to find its life in ministry through the active contribution of each member's gifts.
>
> Sadly, the actual effect of the clergy profession is often to make the body of Christ lame. This happens not because clergy intend it but because the profession so easily turns the laity into passive receivers. The clergy role centralizes and professionalizes the gifts of the whole body into one person. In this way, the clergy system represents Christianity's capitulation to modern society's tendency toward specialization. Clergy are spiritual specialists, church specialists. Thus the multitude of spiritual gifts which belong to all are centralized and vested in a special caste of Christians. Other Christians become

merely ordinary believers who hold secular jobs. They specialize in non-spiritual activities such as plumbing, teaching, or marketing.

Since the pastor is paid to be the specialist in church operations and management, the laity understandably begin to assume a passive role in church. Rather than fully contributing their part to edify the church, they become passive receivers expecting edification. Rather than actively spending time and energy exercising their gifts for the good of the body, they sit back and let the pastor run the show.

The clergy profession is self-defeating. Its stated purpose is to nurture spiritual maturity in the church. A valuable goal. In actuality, however, it accomplishes the opposite, nurturing a permanent dependence of laity on clergy. While intending to empower, the clergy profession often disempowers. Clergy come to resemble parents whose children never grow up, therapists whose clients never become healed, teachers whose students never graduate.

The people of God end up thinking and saying things like, "That's a good idea, but we better get the okay of pastor Bob first." ... Another problem [is the clergy] encounter stress, frustration, and burnout. It's no wonder, of course, since clergy are trying to do the work of a whole congregation by themselves! ... how can a single person be a skilled leader, orator, visionary, administrator, counselor, decision maker, conflict resolver, and theologian? What we expect of professional ministers is unrealistic.

The answer is not gradualism. It is decisive, structural change. It is church without clergy. The goal is simply to create in churches the space and the necessity for all the ordinary people of God to exercise their gifts for the good of the body. Without the clergy, churches will face two options: sink or swim. And it is amazing how well the people of God can swim when, in fact, they have reason to.

But without clergy, won't many church programs come to a screeching halt? Yes, which is exactly what most institutional churches need! .. Radical church renewal means cutting back on programmed, churchy busyness. It means building instead relationships in community and learning to minister to each other.

At the website www.churchinfocus.org we read in an article by Darryl M. Erkel titled "Should Pastors Be Salaried?: A Closer Look At a Popular Tradition" that St Paul "repeatedly established a pattern of not asking or demanding money from the churches which he served. He did this for a variety of reasons: He did not want to place an unnecessary hardship or burden upon the churches. He wanted to be in a position of always being able to give unto others in need, instead of continually being on the receiving end. He did not want to cause a hindrance to the Gospel's acceptance, since some people might assume that he was only in it for the money. How many pastors today, who live lavish lifestyles, ever stop to consider that this might possibly hinder the furtherance of the Gospel?" He quotes from scholars showing that elders did not receive income in the early church. St. Paul worked at manual labor jobs wherever he went so he would not burden anyone: "I have coveted no one's silver or gold or clothes. You yourselves know that these hands ministered to my own needs and to the men who were with me. In everything I showed you that by working hard in this manner you must help the weak and remember the words of the Lord Jesus, that He Himself said, 'It is more blessed to give than to receive?'" (Acts 20:33-35) "For you recall, brethren, our labor and hardship, how working night and day so as not to be a burden to any of you, we proclaimed to you the Gospel of God." (1 Thessalonians 2:9)

"The sad truth is that most church boards never bother to consider how much money could be saved for missionary support, the poor, and literature used to advance the furtherance of the

Gospel, if they did not have to remunerate a full-time pastor. … the advice of Steve Atkerson from his book *Toward A House Church Theology*: 'Requiring elders to be self-supporting would free large sums of money currently designated for professional pastors to be used instead in support of missionaries or to help the poor. It would also place a pastor's motives above reproach in an era of religious shysters who purposely fleece the flock in order to finance their exorbitant lifestyles (Ezekiel 34:1-6). In addition, creating a class of salaried ministers tends to elevate them above the average believer and fosters an artificial laity/clergy distinction. Finally, salesmen tend to be extra nice toward those to whom they hope to sell something. Hiring a career clergyman puts him in a similar salesman-customer relationship, and this, no doubt to some degree, affects his dealings with significant contributors (money talks).'"

One of the most famous stories of the power of a Christian home is L'Abri. In 1955 Francis and Edith Schaeffer went from the United States to live in Switzerland. At the website www.labri.org we read that they opened, "their home to be a place where people might find satisfying answers to their questions and practical demonstration of Christian care. It was called L'Abri, the French word for 'shelter', because they sought to provide a shelter from the pressures of a relentlessly secular 20th century. As time went by, so many people came that others were called to join the Schaeffers in their work, and more branches were established." In the book *L'Abri,* Edith "chronicles the history of the community from its founding to the present day. An unforgettable true story of God's faithfulness."

In ***Passive in the Pews: A Critical Look at the Way We Commonly Do "Church*** Darryl Erkel writes: "Our pews imply that those sitting in them are to silently and passively observe the ministry of a select few. The very fact that the pews all face toward the front, rather than in a circle, demonstrates that Christians are not to interact with one another during the 'service', but to merely watch the performance of others (e.g., the pastor, minister of music, choir, etc.). Think about it: when you are staring at the back of someone's head, are you really interacting with that person?"

In "Discovering Participatory Church Meetings" Brian Anderson writes: "The traditional Protestant worship service today strongly resembles a show business performance. In both we find ushers, programs, music, costumes, lighting, a chorus, a stage, a script, an audience, and a master of ceremonies. The congregation sits passively as the audience while the pastor performs. When the congregation is permitted to participate in the meeting, they are restricted to singing in unison, antiphonal readings, dropping money into the offering plate, and taking notes during the sermon. The ordained clergy are expected to perform all significant ministry. Meanwhile, ninety-nine percent of God's people attend worship services Sunday after Sunday for years on end, without ever contributing any true spiritual ministry to the body of gathered believers.

"Is this the way God intended for His church to meet? Can the traditional model of church meetings be found in the pages of Scripture? It is my conviction that our tradition which expects the laity to remain spectators while the clergy conduct the "show" cannot be found in the pages of our New Testament, but is instead a serious aberration from the model revealed in the word of God. Rather, the New Testament describes the body of Christ as meeting in a manner in which every believer has the potential of contributing to the building up of the congregation in some significant way.

" I cannot overstate the importance of creating an atmosphere of freedom for body participation in the meetings of the church. When church members do nothing but sit, listen, and take notes week after week for years on end, they tend to stagnate spiritually. Spiritual growth requires us to flex our spiritual muscles and apply the truths we are learning. What good is it for our people to learn that God wants them to use their spiritual gifts, exhort one another, bear each other's burdens, and rejoice with those who rejoice if we make no provision for them to do that when the church meets?

"Having been involved in participatory church meetings now for almost two years. I know that I would find the traditional model stifling and unsatisfying. God has proven over and over that as we step out in obedience to apply the patterns we see in His Word, His blessings are sure to follow.

In "Is Attending Church A Spectator Event?" Darryl Erkel writes:

> When most Christians think of attending church, they usually think of sitting silently in their pews and observing the ministry of a select and highly privileged few (i.e., the pastor and his ministerial staff). They know that very little is expected of them—the "laity."
>
> In fact, the very idea of coming to church to mutually edify and minister to the saints is foreign to the thinking of most evangelicals. And, yet, the New Testament knows nothing of an inert, believer-priesthood whose only function is to passively absorb sermons and pass the offering plate! But isn't such passivity on the part of the members the most obvious thing within our church meetings?

Father teaches that he is not interested in church services but people living a heavenly lifestyle: "Is not Unification thought and belief different from other churches? How can other churches save people? How wonderful this concept is! Can any outside religion compare to this? Is this a hopeful, fulfilling concept or is it empty? It contains everything. We can be proud of that kind of a concept. It will surpass all others. Sooner or later, understanding this, humanity will not be able to deny Father Moon; neither the Americans nor the Soviets nor the established churches. At that time, we will have a unified globe. It is a lifestyle, not a style of worship." (12-10-89)

In his article "Church Leaders & The Use of Honorific Titles" Darryl M. Erkel writes:

> Frank A. Viola has written:
>
> > In keeping with our Lord's command, biblical elders did not permit themselves to be addressed by honorific titles such as "Pastor Bill," "Elder Tom," "Bishop Jake," or "Reverend Sam" (Matthew 23:7-12). Such titles naturally elevate church leaders to a plane above the other brethren in the assembly. Thus, congregations and clergy alike are responsible for creating the current "Christian guruism" that is rampant in the church today wherein religious leaders are recast into spiritual celebrities and lauded with fan club status. By contrast, New Testament leaders were viewed as ordinary brethren and were just as approachable and accessible to the saints as any other believer in the church. For this reason, 1 Thessalonians 5:12,13 exhorts the saints to intimately know their leaders (a near impossible mandate to fulfill in most contemporary churches where the pastor is trained to keep his distance from the people lest he lose his authority). In this regard, the common image of church leaders as "sacred men of the cloth" is utterly foreign to the biblical concept. (*Rethinking the Wineskin*)

Erkel goes on to write, "Honorific titles feed the pride of men. It tends to inflate one's ego, thus provoking church leaders to think more highly of themselves than they should. Let's face it: we all struggle with sin and pride; but why compound that struggle by exalting oneself with special titles which have no basis in the New Testament? While seeing nothing inherently wrong with titles per se, even Craig L. Blomberg, associate professor of New Testament at Denver Seminary, is compelled to recognize its dangers: 'But one wonders how often these titles are used without implying unbiblical ideas about a greater worth or value of the individuals to whom they are

assigned. One similarly wonders for how long the recipients of such forms of address can resist an unbiblical pride from all the plaudits. It is probably best to abolish most uses of such titles and look for equalizing terms that show that we are all related as family to one Heavenly Father (God) and one teacher (Christ) . . . In American Christian circles perhaps the best goal is to strive for the intimacy that simply makes addressing one another on a first-name basis natural' (*The New American Commentary: Matthew, Vol.22*).

"Perhaps one reason why some pastors feel compelled to preface their names with a degree or honorific title is because they have an inferiority complex or are ineffective in gaining respect in ways that are more servant-oriented. It's also important to note that many clergymen have pursued a career in pastoral ministry for reasons less than the glory of God. Far too many are seeking the honor and recognition of men, rather than the honor of Christ. The use of self-glorifying titles only helps to attract such kind.

"One common argument used to support honorific titles is that the man who has earned a doctorate in theology worked hard for it and, thus, is entitled to display his accomplishments. But so has the man who has earned a Master of Divinity degree or even a Bachelor of Arts! Should we, then, continually refer to such persons as 'Master of Divinity Dave' or 'Bachelor of Arts Bill'? If not, why should we continue to employ the title 'Doctor' before one's name?

"Honorific titles draw unnecessary attention to oneself. The man who uses them is subtly telling others that he is someone important and worthy of their respect."

The Christian apologist, J.P. Moreland, has said it well:

> The local church in the New Testament contained a plurality of elders. The New Testament knows nothing about a senior pastor. In my opinion, the emergence of the senior pastor in the local church is one of the factors that has most significantly undermined the development of healthy churches . .. Given these facts, the senior pastor model actually produces a codependence that often feeds the egos of senior pastors while allowing the parishioners to remain passive. None of this is intentional, but the effects are still real. The senior pastor model tends to create a situation in which we identify the church as "Pastor Smith's church" and parishioners come to support his ministry. If a visitor asks where the minister is, instead of pointing to the entire congregation (as the New Testament would indicate, since we are all ministers of the New Covenant), we actually point to Pastor Smith . . . The local church should be led and taught by a plurality of voices called elders, and these voices should be equal . . . No one person has enough gifts, perspective, and maturity to be given the opportunity disproportionately to shape the personality and texture of a local church. If Christ is actually the head of the church, our church structures ought to reflect that fact, and a group of undershepherds, not a senior pastor, should collectively seek His guidance in leading the congregation. (*Love Your God With All Your Mind*)
>
> Honorific titles tend to attract carnal and power-seeking men to positions of church leadership. As pointed out earlier, if our churches continue to give to their leaders lofty and self-glorifying titles of distinction, we will continue to attract a large percentage of men seeking prestige, recognition, and power. This is not meant to suggest that every church leader who employs an honorific title is necessarily seeking to have his ego stroked or possesses less than genuine motives, but only that far too many fall into this category. Some are simply naive as to the dangers and implications of their lofty titles.
>
> Honorific titles tend to promote an elitist attitude and authoritarian forms of church leadership. Even the best of men can find self-glorifying titles intoxicating and begin to form lofty opinions of themselves. Within time, they

> begin to look upon their congregational members as mere "common folks"; an ignorant mass of "laity" who desperately need their wisdom and insight.
>
> Honorific titles help to perpetuate the "clergy-laity" division. While it is common for people to speak of church leaders as the "clergy" and the rest of God's people as the "laity," the New Testament never divides the body of Christ into two classes known as "clergy" and "laity."
>
> What Can Church Leaders Do to Help Correct This Problem? They must humble themselves and begin to view their ministry in terms of servanthood, not lordship. They must remove all clerical titles and gowns. The saints must be taught to refer to their leader(s) as "brother" or by one's first name. They must return ministry to the people of God, seeing them as full partners in the task of building up the body of Christ.

It's time for the Unification Church to decentralize to the family. Those who have been going by titles like "Doctor" and "Reverend" should start asking members and the rest of the world to call them by their first names. The professors in the UM should stop being called doctor. The president of the Unification Church and all others in leadership should be called by their first name instead of reverend and they should teach this to ministers who join. The only titles we need are those that deal with the family like Dad and Mom. As I understand it some languages like Korean have words to denote respect for elders in a family and in society. In English we don't have so much detail in how we address people. For those who speak English one thing we may want to do is be a little formal and use the terms Mister, Mrs. and Miss when we address people we don't know or are not close to. Perhaps it may be best to teach children to address adults as Mr. or Mrs. instead of by their first name. Our culture doesn't do that now and we have to pick and choose our battles and efforts. Trying to get kids to call us Mr. or Mrs. may be too much to take on right now. This whole area of how we talk to each other is very important. The military is very strict about giving every person a title and that is good, but someday there will be no military. We are in the process of transition to an ideal world and we should begin figuring out how to relate to each other in a heavenly way.

J. Douglas Robinson wrote that there has been a "flight of men, in general, away from the Church and an increase of effeminate men gravitating into Church life." Loredana Vuoto of *The Washington Times* reviewed the book *The Church Impotent: The Feminization of Christianity* by Leon J. Podles saying that he

> praises the patriarchy of the Old Testament, which, he contends, is not based on exploitation and dominance but "is a system in which fathers care for their families and find their emotional centers in their offspring ... Patriarchy, we can easily forget, was and is a great achievement in the face of the male tendency to promiscuity and alienation from children and the women who bear them." Podles sees the benevolent patriarchy and masculinity of Judaism continuing to find fulfillment in early Christianity. He sees this not only in the manly sacrifice of Christ and the martyred Church Fathers but also in early Christianity's separation from the world in the initiatory rite of baptism. Early Christianity offered men, in particular, a heroic path to follow."
>
> Podles says, "The current campaign to establish feminism and the tolerance of homosexuality as the new orthodoxies can only drive men even further from the church, as indeed seems to have happened in the past decade.
>
> With his pulse on our times, Podles gives a scathing critique of contemporary society's emphasis on Oprah-style emotions and the decline in biblical masculinity within many churches and denominations. During the past 40 years, churches have tried to attract more believers by catering to the rise in feminism

> and watering down masculine initiative and patriarchy emphasized within Christianity. The effect has backfired, only to drive a greater wedge between men and the church.

This is true. Many churches have been digested by feminism. There is more patriarchy in the Eastern Orthodox, Southern Baptist and Mormon churches so there are stronger men there. Neil Carter is part of the House Church movement that criticizes the traditional church structure as creating bored and weak men. The first 300 years of Christianity was a home church movement and then it centralized into churches and now the Home Church movement is saying that we should disregard the last 1700 years and return to a focus on families. Unificationists need to teach that we should live next to each other as trinities and have a daily religious life instead of just meeting once a week at someone's house. Carter gives these ideas for men being turned off by traditional churches in his article "Why Men Don't Go to Church" at his website www.christinyall.com: "It's that time again. You get that dull ache, slowly growing in your stomach. The tension begins in your back and works its way up to your neck and head. After several minutes you realize that your hands are clinched into fists, so you try to relax them again. Then you realize you've been holding your breath, which explains why your headache came on. You reach for the Advil, hoping it will take effect before your condition gets any worse. You've come to expect this week after week, like clockwork. Once again, it's Sunday morning and it's time for church.

"Ironically, the problem here is not that you have some burden of guilt, some unconfessed sin in your life. Your uneasiness does not come from any conviction that you should be doing more for the kingdom. On the contrary, you may be one of the leaders! But that aching in your stomach won't go away, and somehow your church experience is behind it all. It starts now as soon as you wake up on Sunday morning, and it doesn't go away until church is over and you do something to forget about it.

"Your experience matches that of thousands of men around the world. The immediate causes for the 'Sunday Morning Sickness' differ from person to person. Sometimes what the preacher teaches just boils your blood, or bores you to tears. Sometimes you discover that those in leadership do awful things, and no one else seems to notice or care. Sometimes you get under a pile of responsibilities that should not have been put on just one person. Through it all, a sense grows within you that things aren't as they should be, yet nothing you do to fix it seems to put a dent in the situation. Welcome to the growing ranks of men who are not happy with 'church as usual.'

Men Don't Like Church

"Generally speaking, men don't like going to church. 'Women go to church, men go to football games,' says Leon Podles in *The Church Impotent: The Feminization of Christianity*. In this thought-provoking book Podles spends more than 20 pages summarizing research and presenting statistics which all point to this one fact: Men don't care much for church (I would add, unless somehow they get to be in charge!). It has become proverbial that men go to church because of pressure from their families, while at every stage in life they would rather be watching or playing some sport. Women outnumber men in attendance and participation for both Catholics and Protestant denominations, with only a few exceptions. According to Podles' research, women are twice as likely as men to attend a church meeting during any given week. Podles also argues (somewhat subjectively) that the men who participate are often effeminate men. This lopsidedness holds true for Catholics, Anglicans, Methodists, Presbyterians, Charismatics, and most other varieties of Christianity, with the exceptions of the Eastern Orthodox and the Southern Baptists.

"Perhaps Podles overlooks ... the scarcity of men in church because he is not willing to question the very existence of a priestly hierarchy or a clergy.

"Men despise their passive role in the church, whether they have been able to label their frustration or not. Indeed there is something emasculating about just sitting, listening, and then

going home.

"Men would rather fish, or hunt, or watch the game! These activities provide a small measure of purpose, of action, and of accomplishment, even if that means yelling for your team while you sit in your favorite chair.

"Brothers live together. Somehow that must be a part of your experience. Where I live, that takes the form of buying houses close to one another and finding a way to see each other often. Add to this an open church structure where everyone contributes to the direction and daily functioning of the church. You now have the soil in which true brotherhood can grow. Men must have a voice in the church, and they must use it. If they do not, they will find something outside of the church to satisfy this need. However, I have seen first-hand how a real and potent brotherhood can satisfy this longing within men."

Some pastors try to be masculine and teach masculinity. Doug Giles is a minister and conservative Christian political commentator. He has an Internet radio show and at his website you can see him smoking cigars, blasting feminism, and telling young people to dress up. He has books titled *Raising Boys Feminists Will Hate* and *A Time to Clash: Papers from a Provocative Pastor*. But no matter how macho a minister can be, he is, by the very nature of his position, emasculating boys and men. Pastors need to stop living off tithing and live off money they earn in the marketplace.

Jeremy Thomson is the author of a book titled *Preaching as Dialogue: Is the Sermon a Sacred Cow?* He says his book "questioned the preoccupation with sermons. ... challenged the common equation of preaching with the delivery of monologue sermons. It sought to understand the high estimation that sermons enjoy in Lutheran and particularly Reformed theologies of preaching, and offered an alternative theology for a more dialogical kind of preaching." He wrote an article challenging the prominence of sermons in churches saying: "Preaching sermons lies at the heart of church life in the Protestant tradition. For Luther, the preaching of the Word virtually constituted the church, while much of Calvin's output consisted of sermons. Many books on the theory and practice of preaching continue to flow from the religious and academic publishers. For most evangelical church leaders, preparing to preach sermons is a major, regular responsibility. In choosing a new minister, most churches look for someone who can deliver good sermons (however "good" might be defined).

"Since I left ordained Anglican ministry in 1988, I have listened to many more sermons than I have preached, in Anglican, United Reformed, Free and now Baptist churches. A sizable proportion of them have been, frankly, appalling: apparently biblical, but actually a string of references merely following hackneyed themes, frequently boring and sometimes arrogantly delivered. But even if they had helped me to understand and apply the Scriptures, challenged my discipleship, or renewed my vision for the church, I would still be left with doubts about the high profile of the conventional sermon in the life of the church.

"Over the years, the formal sermon has developed and the congregation has come to expect to listen in silence. Pastoral ministry may include some more interactive teaching, and some valuable learning takes place in Bible study/ discussion groups. But for most preachers, the real business happens in church on a Sunday, from a pulpit. And there would be shock, indignation, reprimand even, should a member of the congregation ask a question of the preacher in mid-sermon!

"God had previously committed himself to Israel in a relationship of love (Deuteronomy 7:7-11; Hosea 11:1-4), and love listens as well as speaks. Speech is only part of a relationship: listening is 'The Other Side of Language.'"

Unificationists need to break away from those who arrogantly think that if they didn't show up every week and give a sermon that the UM would wither and die. True leaders raise people to be leaders, not make them dependent weaklings. True leaders don't take money. They pay their own way. If anyone takes money to be in the role of minister or pastor he is being a parasite sucking the life out of those he thinks he is helping.

The primary focus of our movement should be to create principled families that move our relatives and neighbors to convert to our theology and lifestyle. Father says, "The final mission of the Unification Church is completion of tribal messiahship, which is centered upon three missions. First, the restoration of your ancestors. Second, you must find your hometown. Thirdly, you will liberate God, so that God shall be with you all the time. There will be no barriers between you and God. You will be with Father, God will be with you, and you will be with God. That is the purpose of our ultimate mission, the tribal messiahship" (1-28-93). Our final mission is not to create millions of mega churches for billions to come to on Sunday to hear a sermon. Our final mission is to get women to return home and have at many children as possible and for men to guide, protect and provide for their families. The UTS should be producing men who inspire a movement that crushes the feminist/socialist movement that dominates the world. God wants traditional family values to dominate the earth, not the false ideology that women compete with and lead men in society. Our final mission is to create strong, godly men who lead their families and have the title of patriarch at home and in the world. Our final mission is not to create women who get paid to have the title of Reverend in a church, Senator in government or boss in the marketplace.

Father tells us, "You are opening up a new era and that is called the Completed Testament Era" (1-28-93). The Completed Testament Era is about a world of order. Father says, "All that I am saying is that your mission is to fulfill tribal messiahship. That is absolutely everything that needs to be done. Completion of that will mean that you have accomplished your mission and your purpose of being." (1-28-93)

As important as leaders are at the national level, we need the average family to be led by strong, godly men. Father wants UTS graduates to be wise leaders who are inspirational but don't we want every man and woman to build exemplary families? Let's put our focus on building traditional, patriarchal families who are effective in their neighborhood in converting other families to reject the feminist family values that almost everyone believes in. If UTS graduates want to be great leaders in our heavenly army then they need to be successful at living traditional values and converting others. The focus of men who go to school and read books and become wise is to be excellent at earning money and inspiring brothers to earn money and then spending money on media that will be used to educate the billions of people who are ignorant of who God is, who Satan is, and who the Messiah is. True leaders make things happen. They accomplish tasks. Our task is to make sure that people like the Clintons never get political leadership so they can't destroy our military and morals. We need leaders who teach brothers how to make money and sisters how to be excellent homemakers. Unificationists should be excellent teachers who change lives. If at the end of the day our movement has not grown in wealth and numbers and strength then we have failed.

Kenneth Clark wisely notes that, "Truth is always a surprise." And you may find it surprising that the sermon given in churches is destructive to spiritual health. The early Christians for hundreds of years were effective in witnessing and then raising members by using interactive methods of communication and teaching. David Norrington writes against the concept of the sermon in his book *To Preach Or Not To Preach* saying that the "pagan origin for the sermon" was the focus of the ancient Greeks and Romans on the art of speaking, called rhetoric: "Eloquence had become the principal aim of education; acquiring the art of speaking was perceived as the route not only to culture but also to thinking and acting correctly, since wisdom and eloquence (and social status) were believed to be intimately connected. ... The Greeks were intoxicated with rhetoric and the Romans later fell under a similar spell." Norrington argues that there were more negatives than positives in this. He gives some reasons such as saying that it discouraged independent thinking and intellectual curiosity:

> A hundred years ago, Edwin Hatch argued that the extensive use of the sermon arose under the influence of Greek rhetoric brought into the church by those Christians who had been trained in rhetoric and perhaps even taught rhetoric themselves. Many of the church's fathers—Tertullian, ... and Augustine—had been professional rhetoricians before becoming Christians.
>
> The regular sermon was common by the third century and became the norm by the fourth, taking its place among a wide variety of ecclesiastical practices which owed little to the teaching, patterns and principles of the New Testament. Many of the practices continue to this day as wide sections of the church remain imprisoned by the limitations of their forbears.
>
> In New Testament times spiritual growth was achieved by a variety of means, all designed to help produce mature Christians in mature Christian communities. There is nothing to suggest that these means included the regular sermon.
>
> If we acknowledge that the regular sermon has no biblical basis, that it utilizes pagan methods hostile to New Testament practice and that it appears to have had no part in early Christian growth, we are forced to ask how the use of the regular sermon today can be justified. One answer would be tradition. But, as we have seen, behind that tradition lies an even older tradition which knows nothing of regular sermons. This renders the argument from tradition difficult if not untenable. A better approach might be to rely on purely pragmatic considerations: if the sermon "works" we may possibly conclude that the Holy Spirit is using an old method of questionable origin in a new and effective way.
>
> The next chapter will therefore be devoted to estimating the value of the regular sermon in developing maturity today.

He goes on to write that the sermon has prevented maturity. He criticizes Christianity saying: "J.M. Barnett maintains that: 'Most Christians today seem to have little sense of being an integral and important part of a community—a caring, loving family—which needs each one in all his or her uniqueness to be whole. This means among which else that far fewer people are actively participating in the Church's work. Much of the Church's ministry goes undone. This lack of community also is probably the principal cause for the high rate of dropouts among adult converts experienced by the major churches in America in recent times.'

"If Christians do not develop a sense of community in a church context then they are unlikely to work outside their own meeting aside from church-arranged activities. Alan Storkey argues that English Christians, especially those from the middle class, tend to live individualist, conformist, home-centered, privatized lives and find it difficult to act Christianly outside the context of the local church in any but an individual capacity. He says: 'For example, it is assumed that Christ's precept "You are the salt of the earth ..." is to be taken individualistically. It talks of the Christian in industry, politics, the teaching profession, or elsewhere as an individual. To suggest that Christians act together in industry, housing, banking, or any other sociological economic activity is to talk of something strange. Although, for example, the letters of Peter, Paul and John are full of exhortations about various forms of Christian communal activity, this is still seen as something that is mildly heretical. ... Christians should learn to work, pray and think together in all these so-called secular situations. ... Christians live essentially secular and humanist lives for most of the week. When they shed their secular coats at the end of the week to worship God, their faith will have been weakened and assaulted.'"

Norrington spends time going into what he calls "centripetal evangelism" and "centrifugal evangelism" saying that going out and witnessing is useless if there is no loving community to bring people to: "If a Christian group is lacking in love, justice, a sense of community and richness of life, then its evangelistic programs are unlikely to succeed because either the unattractiveness of the community will dissuade potential converts from joining or, where there are conversions, these

converts will be unlikely to grow to maturity. Little would be achieved than fostering the illusion of community growth.

"Only a mature church can naturally incorporate evangelism into a balanced program of growth. Such a church should make its presence felt locally without the need for orchestrated centrifugal evangelistic activity. It may give the impression of concentrating on itself but the reality will be otherwise.

"In many churches, great hopes rest upon the regular sermon. It is used to teach the Bible and to promote the development of gifts and living the Christian life. Unfortunately, the regular sermon is an inferior teaching method. Good teaching means creating situations in which as many members of the group as possible are able to learn effectively. This inevitably involves different techniques for different gifts, interests, temperaments and abilities and requires involvement on the part of those being taught. Unfortunately the regular sermon, by its very nature, cannot succeed in such a task.

"Before justifying this verdict, however, it must be stressed that the failure of the sermon is not directly related to its content or the rhetorical skill of the preacher. In all the problems below, both content and manner of delivery are either minor considerations or are completely irrelevant.

"By using the regular sermon the preacher proclaims each week, not in words, but in the clearest manner possible, that, be the congregation never so gifted, there is present, for that period, one who is more gifted and all must attend in silence upon him (less often her). This formidable claim is usually both unrecognized and unintended by the preacher. ... there are serious consequences.

"There is little evidence to suggest that the sermon effectively equips people for independent study. ... Preachers create dependence. Sadly, competent preachers may create dependence more effectively than incompetent ones. This means, ironically, that in the long run competent sermons may be more damaging than indifferent ones!

"Failure to liberate the laity from excessive dependence upon the clergy has characterized the church throughout its history."

In *To Preach Or Not To Preach* he has a section titled, "The sermon fails to develop powers of thought and analytical skills" saying:

> Discussion and participation are better than lectures or sermons for critically examining ideas and stimulating thought. The point is eloquently expressed by D.A. Bligh who says that "... if students are to learn to think, they must be placed in situations where they have to do so. The situations in which they are obliged to think are those in which they have to answer questions because questions demand an active response. Although it could be modified to do so, the traditional expository lecture does not demand this ... The best way to learn to solve problems is to be given problems that have to be solved. The best way to 'awaken critical skills' is to practice using the canons of criticism. If this thesis seems obvious common sense, it should be remembered that some people place faith in their lecture to stimulate thought, and expect thinking skills to be absorbed, like some mystical vapors, from a college atmosphere. Psychologists are likely to wince at the impressions of such a notion; and learning to think is not an absorption process."

He has a section titled "The Sermon as Deskilling Agent" saying "The church thus apes one of the worst features of modern industrial society—the creation of a dependent, unreflective, semi-literate, relatively skill-less population almost devoid of creativity. Far from realizing that the stimulation of other minds is one of the chief duties of a teacher, most preachers often do the exact opposite. And they achieve this feat in spite of the immense power of the Christian faith as an intellectual stimulus and source of human creativity. In a different context, Paul Tournier reminds

us that true love is ambitious for the beloved and wants him or her to advance not retreat."

He goes into how "One-Way Communication" creates passivity and prevents "fellowship and encouragement." He explains how it puts too much stress on a preacher. He has a section titled "The Poverty of Christian Life" saying that

> It is tragically true that many in the church today suffer spiritual, intellectual and emotional impoverishment as a combined result not only of the regular and frequent use of the sermon but also of what accompanies this—poor leadership, the absence of fellowship ... The churches contain too many "infant" Christians still on a milk diet, the victims of institutionalized immaturity. Nobody encouraged them to grow up to maturity in Christ because the emphasis was always elsewhere. In the New Testament, by contrast, maturity was expected and often achieved. Where it was not, a swift rebuke was liable to follow.
>
> The effective development of Christians to maturity allows them to find their own place in the body of Christ; renders the group more cohesive; increases the security of group members; allows people to satisfy their need for significance by the practice of gifts; eliminates alienation and enables them to become socially more useful to the Christians and non-Christians around them. This produces not only more converts but real disciples and leaders able to tackle the responsibilities presented by a community of God's people. These include being an example, serving, teaching, inspiring, managing, guiding and planning. Working towards maturity develops a task force exemplifying the priesthood of all believers. The regular sermon, on the other hand, is a major obstacle to a functioning priesthood of all believers.

The result, he says, of this dependence and not growing up is: "The individual Christian is often excessively busy and unused to reflection, unskilled in prayer, more concerned with doing than becoming, lacking in understanding of the relevance of the faith to nearly all aspects of life, ignorant of the past, anti-intellectual, materialistic, welded to the secular thought of the day, timid in the face of social and political injustice, barely capable even of recognizing the enemies of God (or his friends), lacking in steady and forgiving love and deficient in the skills required to detect nonsense ... The disastrous consequence is that the non-Christian world experiences little Christian influence in any area of thought and has little, if any, understanding of the essence of biblical Christianity. Christianity is thus inexorably pushed to the margins of society."

He argues that "New Testament methods offer more consistent and more effective patterns of communication and growth, and more intelligent ways of producing mature individuals and communities than those commonly used today ... If the primary aim of the church is to build mature Christian communities then the New Testament offers means to that end which are both loving and efficient—in short godly."

Norrington ends his book *To Preach Or Not To Preach* by saying that sermons are "harmful": "We have seen that in the New Testament churches the growth into spiritual maturity of both individuals and communities was achieved by a variety of means, which did not include the regular sermon. Indeed, the experience of the churches and current knowledge about the learning process suggest that regular use of the sermon tends to have harmful consequences. It frequently fails to instruct; it deskills, it fosters an unhealthy dependence on the clergy. In these ways the regular sermon not only fails to promote spiritual growth but also intensifies the impoverishment of Christian life which characterizes large areas of the church today.

"The regular sermon does not, of course, stand alone as the one great corrupter of Christian faith and life. It is embedded in a complex organizational structure which is far removed from biblical patterns and which also inhibits Christian growth to maturity. The sad irony is that many

preachers want to see their congregations grow in knowledge and love. Many take a great deal of trouble over preaching their sermons. Yet the teaching method they have chosen to use is, in practice, working with other factors to frustrate their hopes.

"It may be too much to expect the reshaping of the whole structure. But to re-evaluate and to replace the sermon would be a comparatively modest first step. Although the enterprise would prove more difficult in some churches than in others, the benefits would surely be immense."

I believe he is right in saying that Paul and the early church raised people up but the modern church has kept them down. We need a revolution in the Unification Movement. Father says, "In the future, the Unification Movement worship service will have to be in the form of giving reports, not sermons. The content of the report should be something of which each family is proud. Therefore, the whole family should participate in the worship service. While doing so, we should learn from the exemplary family and try to guide the family which is in a bad situation.

"In such a way, let us establish the Kingdom of Heaven of the family. We should clearly know that the Kingdom of Heaven on earth cannot be established without the Kingdom of Heaven of the family." (*Blessing And Ideal Family Part 2*)

James Nuechterlein wrote a review saying:

> Leon J. Podles does not mention "Onward, Christian Soldiers" in *The Church Impotent: The Feminization of Christianity*, but its fate is a part of his story. A Christianity that is suspicious of masculinity will disapprove of the martial imagery of "Onward, Christian Soldiers."
>
> For Podles, much more than the fate of hymns is at stake. Armed with considerable statistical and anecdotal evidence, he argues that men have largely deserted Christianity, at least in the West. They have done so, he thinks, because they have come to see the Church as the province of women, and so they shun and fear it. "Men do not go to church," he says, because "they regard involvement in religion as unmasculine, and almost more than anything they want to be masculine." The men who remain in the Church, clergy included, are disproportionately gay or effeminate. Podles cites psychological tests suggesting that "very masculine men [show] little interest in religion, very feminine men great interest."
>
> Masculinity is, Podles says, a natural religion of sorts. Men want to become saviors, protecting all in their care. ... Men need healthy outlets for their instincts—for example, in sports, male brotherhoods, fraternities, and military adventure. They ought to be able to find an outlet in its most exalted form, Podles argues, in imitation of the journey of Christ.

One reviewer wrote, "Podles's well documented book is a unique analysis of the dearth of male participation in the modern, Western Church. Many, no doubt, will find his tone strident and his position extremist, particularly in his unrelenting criticism of feminist and homosexual inroads in the life of the Church. Others will find it merely truthful and thought provoking."

Podles says Western churches have become "women's clubs" that have emasculated men: "Women go to church; men go to football games. Laymen attend church activities because a wife, mother, or girlfriend has pressured them…If a man goes to church, he goes because a woman has wheedled him into what he would normally consider unmanly behavior. But if he goes voluntarily, he suffers suspicions about his masculinity…A devastating criticism of Christianity is many men see it not only as irrelevant, but as effeminate…As one man put it, 'life is a football game, with men fighting it out on the gridiron, while the minister is up in the grandstands, explaining it to the ladies.'"

So many men are into watching football, basketball, baseball and hockey because it is the only place where women are not allowed. They get to watch a group of men form a team and compete with other men who have formed a team. Men live in a huge barren desert of feminism. Women rule them at home, at work, at the military, at college, at church. Watching sports is like finding an oasis of masculinity. The Unification Movement needs to decentralize power to men in their homes and respect the value of patriarchy if it ever expects men to be powerful witnessers.

At a website (www.blessedquietness.com) a house church advocate speaks strongly against Christian ministers who will not speak out on political issues because they will lose their tax exemption status:

> Rev. D. James Kennedy has stated: "The IRS has succeeded in gagging Christians."
>
> "The federal government has proved a tremendous impediment to the ongoing work of Christians. In all the laws that they have passed against Christian schools, gagging the church, taxation, and all kinds of things that they have done, they have made it harder for the church to exercise its prerogatives and to preach the gospel.
>
> "Take the last presidential election. There were numbers of things that I knew that I was never able to say from the pulpit because if you advance the cause of one candidate or impede the cause of the other you can lose your tax exemption. That would have been disastrous not only for the church, but for our school and our seminary, everything. So you are gagged. You cannot do that. The IRS, a branch of our government, has succeeded in gagging Christians."
>
> Editor: The fool refuses to face the real issue—his organization could be unregistered and he could say anything he wanted to from his pulpit. But, as a nonprofit organization, he and his buddies have willfully placed their Reconstructionist program under the control of Caesar. So, a favor's a favor, right. If Caesar is going to help Kennedy take the offering and issue tax exemptions, then Caesar has every right to make the rules. Duh!

ORGANIZED RELIGION IS SCARED

Unificationists should give up their tax-exempt status and speak out strongly in the cultural war we are in for Tea Party Republicans and Libertarians being elected to all positions of political power. It is disgraceful that hundreds of thousands of ministers are silent in our cultural war because they want to keep their government welfare perk of being tax exempt. Bill O'Reilly writes about this gutless behavior in his book *Who's Looking Out For You?*, "The unrecognized bitter truth about God and America is that organized religion is scared. The churches don't want to say anything that might endanger their tax-exempt status. They stay out of politics; they actively practice the doctrine of separation of church and state." And they shouldn't do it.

In his book *Houses That Changed the World* Wolfgang Simson writes:

> **Children and House Church**
>
> Since house churches are spiritual families, children are a natural and important part, just as they are a source of constant joy—and embarrassment—in a natural family. Children are needed to humble us with their questions, break up our endless "adult" discussions, bring us down to earth from our pious clouds, and act as natural evangelists and bridge-builders. They also help us to prove the fruits of the Spirit— patience, for example—and will serve as heaven-sent spies to spot instantly any trace in us of religious superstition and hypocrisy. Children have a ministry to us adults which is at least as important as our ministry to them. They are, in short, as important to house churches as they are to

families. Any couple that has a baby needs to answer the question: Are we now born into the life of our baby, or is the baby born into our life?

If we see a house church as a program-driven event with discussion topics, tasks, objectives and an agenda to achieve—which of course Jesus never taught—we might feel that children only "disturb the grownups', and therefore need to be separated, put into children's groups with their own programs to keep them entertained and educated. Certainly, it is a positive and natural thing for children to do things together with others of their own age. But it is precisely the times of eating together, laughing and crying together, in the context of a wider family—young and old together—which show children from an early age how people live in community, and what it means to be at home with one another and for one another. A special time for children can very well be a common exception, but not the rule. Otherwise children will, from an early age, be quickly alienated from the church. Church, again, is not a meeting; it is a way of life. If we have children, they are part of our life, and therefore of our house churches.

Christians have been persecuted for thousands of years. Even today many are attacked throughout the world. Simson writes that we can reduce persecution by being wise and not building or renting church buildings that lend themselves to attack:

You cannot burn the church

The true church of Jesus Christ cannot be burnt. It is not made of wood, hay, straw even stone, but of the redeemed people of God. If the most visible aspects of traditional Christendom, such as church buildings, can be attacked, houses usually won't be. In almost every culture the home is a safe and quite protected zone: "it is simply poor upbringing to attack a private home," says Dr. Met Castillo. I am not saying that the church is immune to persecution in homes; but it is not only the most natural but also the safest possible place for it.

Flexible structure. In many countries the house churches have long been and still are, the spiritual backbone of Christian movement, even under fierce persecution or surveillance in Russia, China and some countries in the Middle East. Since house churches fit invisibly into the existing architecture of a nation, they are able to respond flexibly to any pressure or new situation. Since house churches focus on sharing lives, not on performing religious worship services, they can easily exist without alerting the neighbors or secret police through loud music, clapping, dancing, loud prayers and sermons.

Some house churches even rotate, meeting somewhere different each time, the next meeting place only known to the members. This could be a hotel room, a bus rented for an outing, under a tree, or in the houses of various members. In some countries people even start coming in ones and twos from early morning, in order not to arouse suspicions. If anyone should ask too many nosy questions, it is amazing just how many birthdays, weddings, anniversaries and reunions of all kinds some families can have nowadays.

Simson is right in saying that meeting in traditional church settings is not personal enough and is not an effective way to instill values:

... out of 168 hours in a week, Christians in traditional, meeting-oriented Christianity spend typically three or four hours together with other Christians per week. This is simply not enough time to effectively transfer life and Kingdom values, to develop deep relationships, to make disciples and to lay down our lives for each other.

House-church Christianity will greatly reduce this compromising lifestyle

which tries to make the best out of both worlds, because it involves us deeply in everyday community and healthy ongoing accountability. This will cost us dearly. But if our lifestyle is in any relationship to the salvation of real people from a real hell, it is worth it.

We should stop going to church, and start becoming the church, seven days a week. Church would cease to be an organized Sunday morning activity, and start being the corporate, organic, local lifestyle of Christians.

Simson explains that a key problem with traditional churches is the problem of money:

The End of the Money Problem

Many traditional church-planting activities and mission movements have a significant limiting factor—money. They need money for outreach activities, buying a plot of land, renting or building a special building and paying the pastor's salary, as well as putting up a decent parsonage. Then they need money for chairs, a PA system and an overhead projector.

Not so with house churches. House churches would not cost money ... House churches simply do not need a full-time professional pastor.

Simson has seen in his travels around the world observing house churches that these people are more excited about living a religious life than those who attend regular churches because they are players instead of spectators. Sermons are almost always boring and do not bring change in anyone's lifestyle, especially in witnessing:

The Excitement Level Would Rise

Far fewer people in traditional churches are mobilized for actual ministry than in small house churches. Even in a traditional church of fewer than 100 attenders, says the research of Christian Schwarz, only 31 per cent are involved in a ministry corresponding to their spiritual gifts. In a larger church, the figure is only 17 per cent. It is a known fact that involved people are excited people, and uninvolved people quickly become bored. The house church with its participatory lifestyle is able immediately to involve almost everyone. As a result, more people get excited. Excited people excel, and excellent people attract.

How much do you really remember from your time of classroom teaching in school, where a teacher explained a subject in front of a class, and you all dutifully took notes so as not to fail the inevitable exam? This is arguably the most ineffective type of teaching available to mankind, yet we have got so used to it that we reproduce it wherever we go, even in the life of the church. If we want to change the quality of teaching and learning, we need to change our structures accordingly, and move from static to kinetic learning. In the New Testament, the very model and way of teaching is geared to changing lifestyles through changing values. Since the house church is a structure that emerges out of a heartbeat of discipleship, we again could start to teach each other how to live and how to teach, not just spoon-feeding one subject after another.

Kinetic or dynamic teaching abandons classroom settings, lengthy sermons or Bible studies, and becomes again part of everyday life in the most natural place on earth, the home. Here we can teach each other by example, by questions and answers, drawing everybody into the teaching and learning process, building not individual head-knowledge, but consensus, corporate understanding and therefore spiritual momentum.

One of the most powerful arguments that home church books have for moving from the formal

church building with it so-called professional leaders to homes without paid leaders is that it is a more effective way to witness. In fact, they persuasively argue, that it is the way God and Christ want us to evangelize. A review of *The Church in the House: a Return to Simplicity* by Robert Fitts says, "The most dramatic church growth in history in ancient or in modern times has occurred where there were no church building—just believers multiplying from house to house. This book looks at the philosophy and in seeing the Great Commission fulfilled in our time." Robert and Julia Banks remark, "It is often forgotten that the Christianity which conquered the Roman Empire was essentially a home centered movement."

Simson writes in his book *Houses That Changed the World* that scientific research and sociological studies prove that the best way to follow Christ's commandment and commission to proselytize is through home church and religious communities. Simson teaches that witnessing is more powerful in small churches than in large churches and that house churches are more powerful in getting new members worldwide than traditional churches. One of the most powerful reasons the Unification Church should decentralize to the family and trinities is because of the mandate from God and Father to witness. The most powerful tool for witnessing is the family inviting guests over for tea and for dinner. Simson writes:

> The smaller the church, the larger its growth potential
>
> In a worldwide research project, German church-growth researcher Christian Schwarz has studied the average number of people added to a local church, over a typical five-year period:

Size of church attendance	People added in 5 years	Growth as percentage of the whole church
1-100 (average 51)	32	63
100-200	32	23
200-300	39	17
300-400	25	7
1000+	112	4

Simson says, "A church of up to 100 attenders (average size in his research: 51) won 32 new people over a period of five years, and grew from 51 to 84 attenders, which is a growth of 63 per cent. In contrast, a larger or even mega-church of over 1000 people (average size in his research :2856) won 112 new people in five years, which is a growth of 4 per cent.

"Comparing the growth rate of a church of under 100 with that of a church of between 100 and 200 people, the difference is already very significant, the smaller church showing almost three times the growth rate of the larger. This startling research also shows that a church of 2856, which is 56 times bigger than an average "small church" of 51, wins only little over three times more people than the small church.

" In other words, if we took the mega-church and divided it into 56 churches of 51 people each, they would, statistically, win an average of 1,792 people in the same five-year period, 16 times

more than if the mega-church remained as it was. From a different perspective, the average mega-church structure *prevents* 1680 people (i.e. 1792 minus 112) from being won every five years. The bottom line of this research shows that small churches are much more effective in attracting people. The relationship is as simple as see-saw in the playground: the statistics show that in the overwhelming majority of all cases, as quantity goes up, growth potential goes down.

The quantum leap from organized to organic growth

"What Schwarz does not show us, however, is what happens if you compare the growth potential of the organic house church with the organized and traditional "small church" according to the congregational pattern. It would be like comparing mustard-seed growth with building a pile of rocks. The growing congregational model usually grows by addition; the house churches usually grow by multiplication. One system will result in linear growth, the other in exponential growth. Although we have no global empirical figures for comparison, the signs are very clear that the growth potential continues to increase as the church size continues to go down, and it seems to reach a maximum potential at the size of 10-15 people per church. All of us will have come across numbers games and strategies to save the world, and I very much agree that statistics of this sort should not be taken too literally. For us, they only serve to point out the explosive growth potential of the organic house church."

Small churches are usually better churches

He goes to say, "Another factor which many have known or at least felt before, and which is now backed up by empirical data from Christian Schwarz's study, is that as the size of the church goes up, usually the quality goes down. A smaller percentage of the overall attenders are using their spiritual gifts in larger churches than in smaller churches. The smaller the church, the better the quality of fellowship. Large churches have a greater tendency to transform attenders into passive consumers of a thrilling program than small house churches, for whom the involvement of almost everyone is absolutely vital."

Walter Henrichsen writes in *Disciples Are Made, Not Born*, "The reason that the church of Jesus Christ finds it so hard to stay on top of the Great Commission is that the population of the world is multiplying while the church is merely adding. Addition can never keep pace with multiplication."

The house church movement believes they have the blueprint for massive growth. In an article in Tony Dale's magazine Neil Cole wrote about his work in building house churches. He is Executive Director for Church Multiplication Associates (www.CMAresources.org). He is the author of *Organic Church: Growing Faith Where Life Happens*, which can be ordered through CMA Resources. He writes that world population has "passed six billion and are on our way to seven billion. The world is multiplying rapidly. The Western church, however, has only been adding (at best) and in many places is subtracting and losing ground. Things must change. Cole writes:

> Spontaneous expansion of the kingdom of God will start small and seemingly insignificant. Multiplication always starts small. All of us began life as a zygote. A single cell becomes two and then four, and eventually becomes a full grown adult. Multiplication may seem slow at first, but it soon exceeds addition, and in time the difference is incomparable!
>
> The first church we started was a committed team of twelve Christians, and we met in my home. From that we sent a smaller team to start a second church. The second church brought about the people who started a third church. The third church has since daughtered about 16 or more churches.

At the website www.hccentral.com we read:

> The house church movement is an attempt to get away from the institutional church, seeking instead to return to the small gatherings of peoples that constituted all of the churches of the New Testament era. Can one really worship at an institutional church? The fellowship pictured in Mt. 18:20 (the source of the house church doctrine of church) is "two or three gathered together." Even "church growth" expert Lyle Schaller says that the "glue" that is necessary to unite worshippers cannot be achieved as a church grows beyond a limit of about 40 people. Other experts point out that an assembly larger than a mere dozen people creates an environment in which some of the people often back away from full participation. And there is the concern so well articulated by that the institutional church tends toward viewing its members as an "audience" and the worship experience as a "show." It is better, he said, to view God as the audience and all the people equally accountable for the "performance" of worshipping in Spirit and in Truth.
>
> **Why the House Church?**
> Growth. The most explosive growth of Christianity in our own time has taken place in the likes of the People's Republic of China where its only expression has been the illegal, underground house church. Historian Del Birkey's studies have led him to conclude that the house church is our best hope for the renewal in our times.

G. K. Chesterton wrote against the adulation of people toward specialists saying:

> Men in a state of decadence employ professionals to fight for them, professionals to dance for them, and a professional to rule them.
>
> But if we look at the progress of our scientific civilization we see a gradual increase everywhere of the specialist over the popular function. Once men sang together round a table in chorus; now one man sings alone, for the absurd reason that he can sing better. If scientific civilization goes on (which is most improbable) only one man will laugh, because he can laugh better than the rest.

If Unificationists lived the values I write in this book we would stand out from the world. Sadly, Unificationists have gone into Canaan and become Canaanites. They look no different than their neighbors. They blend. It's time to build communities that will inspire the Christian home church movement to move up and join us.

In his book *Revolution* George Barna writes that those who are leaving the churches for home churches are revolutionaries starting one of the greatest revolutions in history. He writes: "Millions of devout followers of Jesus Christ are repudiating tepid systems and practices of the Christian faith and introducing a wholesale shift in how faith is understood, integrated, and influencing the world. … These people have chosen to live in concert with core biblical principles. That strategic choice makes them stand out as extremists in a culture that keeps pushing the boundaries of extremism. These are the true revolutionaries. … This is not the defeatist retreat of an underachieving, low-capacity mass of people. It is an intelligent and intentional embrace of a way of life that is the only viable antidote to the untenable moral standards, dysfunctional relationships, material excess, abusive power, and unfortunate misapplication of talent and knowledge … They have no use for churches that play religious games, whether those games are worship services that drone on without the presence of God or ministry programs that bear no

spiritual fruit. Revolutionaries eschew ministries that compromise or soft sell our sinful nature to expand organizational turf. They refuse to follow people in ministry leadership positions who cast a personal vision rather than God's, who seek popularity rather than the proclamation of truth in their public statements… They are unimpressed by accredited degrees … Know this: just as the prophets of old were unwelcome in their own hometown, so are Revolutionaries looked askance by even their closest friends and family members. The skepticism of those who lead conventional spiritual lives is a palpable reminder that growth always comes with a price tag. The mere presence of Revolutionaries makes the typical churchgoer—uncomfortable. It is not uncommon for Revolutionaries to meet with rejection—verbal, intellectual, relational, or experiential—simply because of their determination to honor the God they love."

Barna is a nice person and thinks it is not nice for those in the Home Church movement to be "judgmental" to those in the traditional church. But how can anyone go through life and not be judgmental? We are in a fierce spiritual war between God and Satan and God is behind the home church movement. Traditional churches are a monumental failure. The Emperors, i.e., the pastors, have no clothes on. Home churches are a monumental success. The Messiah is on the earth and he has no interest in churches. He is interested in families and trinities and communities. He is not interested in being a minister. He is interested in being a father. He hates being called a minister. It is time for the UM to give up churches and focus on families and religious communities.

Father says that he has ended the Unification Church and that all religious organizations should take down their signs. There should be no sign using the term "church" anymore. Father says, "not just the Unification Church sign, but all religious organization signs and church signs will come down sooner or later" (5-1-97). It is time to end the traditional church. By their very nature they are not guest-friendly. They can never be as relevant or exciting or friendly as homes and trinities living in religious communities. The truth is that traditional churches are detrimental to witnessing and training. Homes are the beginning and end. Homes are not some springboard to sending new believers to some pastor. The goal is not to build mega churches and fill stadiums where people passively listen to charismatic speakers. Men in their homes are the only pastors and priests. We have to give up the over thousand-year tradition of going to a church building on Sunday. Churches are defunct, dead, extinct. Our witnessing focus and teaching focus is exclusively the home where devotions are no different on Sunday than any other day of the week. We don't go to church—we are the church every day in our homes and communities.

Our goal is to have a one-world family where men are the heads of their homes and there are no intermediaries between them and God and True Parents. Church and Government leaders will fade away. The focus is on families in their homes living close to other families in a community. It is as simple as that.

I hope and pray that Unificationists have eyes to see and ears to hear and completely change the way they live. Unificationists need to sell all their churches and headquarters and decentralize to families living in loving communities that intimately care for each other. Everyone needs to live in a spiritual community where the people are crazy in love for each other. Doing what God wants brings happiness and success. God's laws are common sense and his plan works. God is practical and realistic. He is scientific. But fallen man is blinded by Satan and usually does what seems to make sense but isn't. Father says, "This world is blind; they do not know what to do" (3-1-91). It seems illogical that the earth is round but eventually everyone sees the science of it. It seems logical to have churches with pastors who give sermons on Sundays that praise women who achieve in the marketplace but God is 180 degrees opposed to it. Let's completely change our lives and live by the core values in this book. It is rare that anyone ever hears the *Principle* and joins. Let's change that by creating families that inspire people to join us by the millions in every country. Isn't it time for the *Divine Principle* to be a household name? Isn't it time we all lived by

true values that will bring us success and give us the power to reach our goal of sweeping the earth with the truth that will set mankind free?

Mary Pride writes in *All the Way Home*:

> The era when "church" meant "the large building our congregation is always paying for or adding to" may just about be over. With today's skyrocketing real estate and construction prices, congregations are finding it harder and harder to find good locations and build facilities large enough to accommodate the entire church body. I myself can without any difficulty think of not one, but two churches in my immediate area that are both stalled in this holding pattern, unable to relocate and unable to handle any more numerical growth in their present location.
>
> The use of homes as shepherding centers, where parents teach their children from day to day and each elder periodically instructs a small number of families under his personal care, unlocks the church's potential for growth. Not only does each child and adult now have a clear training goal in mind and at least one person who is personally responsible to help him achieve it, but far more of the church's financial resources and energy can go directly into evangelism and discipleship under this system.

Mary Pride rightly teaches that religious people are wrong to focus on headquarters and big buildings. They should witness from their home. She says men have overlooked the power of women in fulfilling their role as described in Titus 2:3-5. They could be the most powerful ministry on earth. She says a woman can "create a gracious home for her family" and use it "for a wider flock. She knows the Bible and how to answer serious questions. She knows how to create a warm and loving atmosphere and is sensitive to people's needs in the way only a mother learns to be. She has, in short, been trained to be an evangelist. ... Instead of fishing for souls with a pole, bent paperclip, and worm, you can start scooping them in with a net!" She mentions several books as guides on how to accomplish this. The first is by Alvin Jennings called *How Christianity Grows in the City*. Mary Pride says he teaches that we should "readopt the New Testament scheme of using the homes of qualified church members for basic work of the church, with occasional large-group meetings in rented facilities." Another book she mentions is *House Churches Among the Churches of Christ During the 1980s*. One example from the book was a church in Lexington, Massachusetts: "Set up as a 'normal' church, in 1979 it had shrunk to forty members. In six years after adopting a format increasingly reliant upon home churches, it had increased to 1800 members and was renting the Boston Opera House for congregational meetings."

I would be sympathetic to having the idea of pastors, ministers, priests, bishops or whatever you want to call them if they were able to witness and raise new members. I have never seen a full-time paid reverend in the UM ever win a soul for Christ. They have all day long to be a professional religious person and yet they cannot personally convert one person. What do they do all day long? Witnessing is the number thing we are all supposed to be focused on. If a person is paid to spend their day being religious doesn't it seem they would be able to get one person a month? They are paid to sell the ideology of the *Divine Principle* and get customers who are loyal to True Parents for life. What would any company do if they hired a person to be a sales rep and get accounts and month after month he never made a sale? Obviously he would be fired. If a coach has a losing season he is fired. Let's do a little math. There are 12 American district leaders at 12 of America's largest cities. If they had the goal of getting one person per month (1-1-1) and were successful at witnessing and getting a spiritual child each month then each one would have 12 spiritual children in a year. 12 times 12 = 240 new members every year. In five years that would be 1200 new members. The reality is that these so-called leaders probably have zero spiritual children.

"Learn how to separate the majors and the minors. A lot of people don't do well simply because they major in minor things." — Jim Rohn

"The greatest waste of time is doing extremely well something that doesn't need to be done, at all." — Brian Tracy

"The more you do of what you're doing, the more you'll get of what you've got." — Brian Tracy

"Motivation alone is not enough. If you have an idiot and you motivate him, now you have a motivated idiot." — Jim Rohn

"If you find yourself in a hole, the first thing to do is stop digging." — Will Rogers

We are wasting our money and time by thinking we are going to hire someone to be more spiritual than we are and go witnessing for us. We all have to witness and raise people. We need a system that works for everyone and is simple. Leadership is everything. This means we have to focus on the men who lead their families. If we get them to be on fire to witness and raise people then we have something. As soon as we pay for a minister the heads of all the families check out and look to the minister to do the churchy stuff. Having ministers and church buildings throws a wrench into the machinery of witnessing. The Mormons would be far more effective if they weren't so focused on their temples. We need to go beyond the Mormons and grow faster than any religious group has grown in history. This means we need to decentralize our movement to families. Americans need to be taught to decentralize the government to the local instead of the state and national. Tocqueville wrote how powerful America was because of the many local associations that communities formed to solve their problems. Now men care more for watching football on television than solving the massive problems we have. They pay their taxes and tithes and go home and eat junk food while vegging out on ridiculous, immoral television shows feeling they have done all they can do since they have paid experts who have fancy degrees to teach their kids at school and church. If the Unification Church wants to be successful in witnessing it has to stop being a centralized "family church" and become a decentralized "family federation."

We need to rethink our giving patterns. It seems to me that professional religious people put tithing at the top of their list. They see their congregation as sheep and they are the shepherd who leads them. Ministers and priests feel they need an income and building to work in and this requires a lot of money. Helping widows and orphans is above and beyond the ten or thirty or fifty percent they demand.

Isn't it time to end the socialist tithing where money is redistributed and we don't know where it goes? For 40 years Unificationists wandered in a wilderness course. In 1994 that ended. Father took down the church sign. He says he "took down the HSA sign and replaced it with the Family Federation for World Peace sign" (1-26-02). We are a family federation. Our entire effort should now be to lift men up to be godly patriarchs in their homes instead of lifting men up to be church leaders. The true headquarters of the Unification Movement is every member's home. Every brother is the head of his home and he is the leader God is interested in.

From now on let's earn and spend money locally. If leaders in the formal organization of the Unification Church want to do something they can email everyone and explain why they need money. If they want to have a speaking tour then members can give if they wish but how about from now on we do things that pay for themselves. If people are not willing to pay for a ticket to see a speaker then why should anyone subsidize the speech? Secular government should not get more than 10% of any man's income—no matter how much a person makes. Should we blindly give ten per cent to some distant headquarters of the Unification Church? Perhaps they shouldn't

ask for any tithe and be self-sufficient. How about the idea that Unificationists seek money from others for specific projects, programs or construction by selling their idea to the members? One time the Seminary (UTS) asked for help for putting in new windows. Some alumni sent money. I think this is the way we should spend our money. If someone has a good idea then others will support it. Isn't it time for *The Washington Times* to be self-supporting? Father says, "The American movement should be self-sufficient in all aspects. Dr. Yang, you cannot depend on me for funds" (3-19-05). It is time for the Unification Theological Seminary to pay its own way as Father has asked it to be. It is time for everyone to give money to those who they feel will produce results. For example, if someone is successful in witnessing maybe others who are not good at winning souls for Christ would want to send that person or family some of their hard earned money. Witnessing and getting millions to join our movement is our primary goal. As we have learned from the House Church movement the way to be successful is to focus on our homes and focus on the Internet. The old ways of sending money and not knowing how it is spent is over. It is time for families to spend money creatively and help others intimately. Our goal is the kingdom of heaven on earth where there is no need for impersonal churches and government. And when you donate money shouldn't you know where every penny goes?

Instead of looking to change society from the top down let's do it from the bottom up. Mary Pride writes in *All the Way Home*, "Typically, Christians who want to influence a culture strain their brains thinking of ways to affect it from the top down. They meet legislators and press the flesh, give news conferences, start universities, and found groups like 'Winners for Christ' to target top athletes, students and other potential present and potential leaders with the gospel message. I'm not saying this is all wrong ... It's just that working from the bottom up is so much more effective in the long run. In fact, spreading Christian culture from the home out is the *only* method that works in the long run." Father tells us:

> This is why the Bible says that when two or more gather to pray then God will be in their midst. Your prayer is not powerful when you pray singly; but only when you pray together. Brothers and sisters must truly unite so they can share life together. Today I am declaring a new beginning: the leader-centered movement is over, and the member-centered movement is going to begin.
>
> The Unification Church is one family. I am concerned and worried about each one of you, and you should be concerned with each other as brothers and sisters, and together come to parents. What we need now is an environmental Kingdom of Heaven.
>
> My teaching today is this: as much as you love God and True Parents, you should love the world and unite with it. Don't shy away from adverse conditions, or from smelly or ugly brothers and sisters. They are the ones who need you. Willingly participate in the dirty places and make them fragrant. Don't run away from problems, but face them and conquer them. God feels greater joy when He sees that you love each other more than you love Him. Parents want to see their children loving each other more than they love their parents.
>
> Our ultimate goal is Canaan. While we are marching toward Canaan, our supreme duty is to follow orders, but once we enter Canaan we don't live by commands but by love. This is that time. We are arriving now, and we must live in a God-like way.
>
> I am teaching you that you should love one another as much you love God and True Parents. Then the dwelling of God is with you, and Mother and I shall be with you. Because this day marks the beginning of that new era, I called this the Historical Children's Day. Those who have not been blessed should make unity with each other first.

During the exodus it is a virtue to focus on following the leader, but when you enter Canaan you live by the give and take with brothers and sisters. From today on our membership around the world shall perfect that way of life. Even if I am not here, it should not matter. You already know the secret of going to heaven—loving each other. At night you should think that you are a parent to someone; pick someone to care about the next day, and the following day pick another person. It doesn't matter whether he is younger or older. The cardinal rule is to forget yourself.

You will turn the three satanic elements into heavenly elements. You will give sacrificial love and talk about "our position," not "my position." Satan is arrogant, but you will go the lowest place to lift the people up.

I know your love is real, so now pledge to me that you will love your brothers and sisters more than you love me. That will please me more than your love for me. (10-28-81)

Let's create member-centered communities that attract people to join us. Let's make, distribute and advertise DVDs that convert people to our theology and our core values.

Let's teach these tens of thousands of house church or simple church Christians the concept of trinities who live in communities. Let's inspire the house church movement to move up from being a church that meets once a week to living a daily religious communal life. "Every Christian family ought to be as it were a little church, consecrated to Christ, and wholly influenced and governed by His rules."— Jonathan Edwards (1703-1758)

MISSIONARIES SHOULD BE SELF-SUPPORTING

We should end the concept of full time missionaries supported by others who earn money. We should also end the concept of church businesses. Let's sell all the fish businesses, boat building, ginseng farms, manufacturing plants, jewelry businesses, newspapers and all other businesses supported by the church to brothers in the movement or other people and pay off all debts. No brother should work for a church business unless it is changed to be employee owned. He should compete in the marketplace and be more successful than his competition. We need to gain the reputation of being superior to others. If a brother works for a church supported fish business it prevents him from being an entrepreneur. He becomes dependent on the church and will encourage his wife to work for the church. We witness mainly by example. We need to show people strong, centered men who compete in the workplace and show a higher standard.

Unificationists should not imitate Christian churches when they support foreign missionaries with tithing. When a man earns money and gives it to another man to be a missionary who does not earn money then the man who earns money gives up thinking about being a missionary. We are all missionaries. To "adopt" a missionary and give him hard earned money gives the wrong signal to the missionary and to those the missionary is witnessing to. People being witnessed to should be looking at someone they want to emulate. If we support a full-time missionary to such places as Africa the missionary is not practicing what he should be preaching—that men are to be successful at providing. He cannot tell the men in Africa to get a job or build a business when he does not have one himself. People who see missionaries who do not pay their own way will dream of having someone support them like the missionary is being supported. They will see him as the goal of living a life where they can spend their time roaming the countryside being so-called spiritual leaders without having to earn a living in the marketplace. Unificationist brothers should not emulate Mother Teresa or Saint Francis who spent much of their time begging. A good role model would be John Adams who was successful at business and at being a revolutionary Founding Father who did not have any slaves. Let's create a tradition in our movement of men giving money and not asking for donations. Let's focus on giving, not receiving. Let's be famous for teaching and living the core value of the traditional family in which men provide for their

families. The worst thing we can do is have wives work to pay for outreach activities. Let's be known for living in trinities which insure that women and children will be taken care of even if a man is disabled or dies. Let's go witnessing as trinities instead of individual families and bring people over to see us living as trinities in spiritual communities. When we travel to poor countries we should show videos of our communities that will inspire them to create trinities of traditional families so they, too, can live in safety and security.

PASTORS ARE SPIRITUAL EUNUCHS

A paid missionary gives the image and idea that those who work in the marketplace are inferior to those who are so-called missionaries. We should teach that capitalists are spiritual and help mankind. Most people think the very opposite because they have grown up in a socialist environment that puts down capitalism and capitalists. Those men who live as pastors, marriage teachers or missionaries off tithing and donations are failures at being strong, godly men. They are spiritual eunuchs; they lack virility or power. They are an embarrassment to God. These men do more harm than good simply by living a wimpy life. And this goes for men who ask their wives and encourage their daughters to work alongside men in the business world. It's now time to stop building churches led by worthless pastors and start building communities led by strong patriarchal men.

The only men who should teach premarital classes are those who are not on any payroll of a church and they do not charge any fee. These men live and teach traditional family values. We should not have young Unificationists taught by brothers who have their wives work and who believe in egalitarian marriages. The best books on the roles of men and women are by Aubrey and Helen Andelin. I hope their books never go out of print. If they do let's figure out how to get them back in print and make sure everyone is told of their books and hopefully every Unificationist will read and study the wonderful insights the Andelins teach.

I believe that Father teaches a division of labor where men earn money and women care for babies at home. Unificationists need to be very careful to not be digested by our culture that brainwashes women to think that they have to earn money because it is too difficult for men to support a family alone and that working outside the home brings personal satisfaction. Don't listen to the Democrats and Liberals and those on the Left like Bill and Hillary Clinton who teach and live the ideology of "equality" that says women should be working with men in the workplace because they are needed there so they can grow and the nation can prosper. They are wrong when they criticize limited government as being heartless. They disparage free enterprise by calling it a trickle-down theory that does not work and that government programs are needed to directly help the poor and make the workplace safer and friendlier for women to work. If anyone wants to argue this they have to find quotes of Father that support the view of equalitarian marriages that liberals champion.

What I write is not my agenda. I did not come up with the core values I write of. I quote authors and books that have converted me because they say the truth that rings in my heart and seems logical to my mind. I quote the Bible and Father. If you do not like what I write then realize that I am just the messenger and you are disliking the people I am lifting up. Those who want to argue the ideas in this book need to find books that express their ideology or their ideas and they need to find quotes of Father that express what they think is true.

We should be united on our core values and we need to shout them from the rooftops. Unificationists are supposed to be bold and courageous. We need to be outspoken. Isn't Father outspoken? The dictionary defines outspoken as, "Speaking without fear or reserve: direct and open speech or expression. To declare openly or boldly." Let's be like Father and speak boldly and in unison about our blueprint for world peace.

WITNESSING

We need to be serious about witnessing. Father says, "We are involved in serious business. ... Who are you? Who am I? We are the perfected, restored Adam and Eve. When we look outside

the window we see a world dying, trembling in despair. Satan is holding the people, binding them and making them his prisoners. They are victims of Satan. Would you just look on as a bystander or spectator, or would you feel indignation and go out and do something about it? ... Looking at the American youth corrupted by drugs, free sex, and immoral acts, dying every day, being victimized by Satan every day. Do you feel apathy towards them, or do you feel the responsibility ... to do something about it? ... Then are you going to be Adam and Eve who will liberate God and liquidate Satan and bring America to be the God-favored nation of the world? America is dying and the world is dying. We must be like a spiritual volcano, exploding with spiritual power and achievement. I am expecting it from you. Go out from today on; get down to work and bring the result. Everybody is in the same situation; you must get down to work" (1-23-77).

If we love people we help them. If we have true love we witness and this often means carrying a cross. It is our duty and we should do it with gratitude knowing that we have the honor to be the chosen people, the pioneers for God. Father says, "Our movement, thus, must bring salvation to all families, all nations, all states and, finally, to the entire world. It must be a family-saving, nation-saving, world-saving movement" (8-24-92). And we should witness with a genuine smile on our face. Witnessing should come naturally. We can't help but witness and invite people over because we are so happy to be in the Unification Movement and want others to experience the incredible satisfaction of knowing the truth in the *Divine Principle* and Father's words that answer the fundamental questions of life, and we want others to experience the excitement of living in godly, creative, safe, joyous, and secure homes and communities.

The Great Commission of Jesus was his commandment for his followers to go out into the world and make disciples. It was the last direction he gave to his disciples. He told them their primary focus in life was to witness to the whole world. Matthew 28:19 in The Revised Standard Version of the Bible says, "Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations" The King James Version translation says, "Go ye therefore and teach all nations." We are teachers and we are given the challenge to become skilled at being highly persuasive.

Salesmen understand that they must constantly be prospecting for new clients. They know it's a numbers game. If you talk to enough people or advertise and tell enough people about your product, some will buy it. If a million people watch a well-made DVD of the *Divine Principle* thousands will believe it. Unificationists need to talk to enough people personally and advertise to reach masses of people so that some will join. Let's make sure the *Principle* is on every Public Access television station in America.

Our focus should be producing and distributing books, audio CDs, and videos to millions of people that clearly explain the *Principle* and how to live a principled life. Father says:

> Video tapes will be developed in such a way that children can be educated through watching all sorts of video tapes. In the future we won't need schools. People don't want to study. [Amen!] Thus, you will be liberated from studying.
>
> The time has changed. We no longer have to go out to the street corner seeking to win people one by one. No, we can sit in a nice office in front of a computer and use high technology to educate all 5 billion people at one time. (4-23-95)

When we preach and teach our tongues are fire. Very few people like to be preachy in person. DVDs can do it for us. Unificationists are the chosen people, the cloud of witnesses the Bible talks about. To witness for absolute values opens us up to be accused of being holier-than-thou. Because we have an absolute theology in the *Divine Principle* that is completely logical and true we are absolutely confident every single person will eventually accept it just as we all accept the earth is round. We have the truth that will set this world free of Satan's bondage. Father says,

"This miserable world is like a jail" (4-23-95). Our situation is like the movie *Matrix*. We know how Satan rules this world. And like the movie *The Poseidon Adventure* we know the way to safety is the opposite of what everyone else thinks. As we boldly and courageously witness, there is no way to get around being called arrogant, judgmental, egotistical, pompous, dogmatic know-it-alls. People do not want to be preached to by people who think they have cornered all the truth, who say they know absolutely what is moral, ethical, and right but aren't Unificationists supposed to be more confident and smarter than any other group of people? Are we called to be a united movement that points out what is right and wrong thinking and behavior? There shouldn't be any division in the UM. We are not perfect but we should know what perfect morals and ethics are. Even though we do not live by them perfectly and will be accused of being hypocrites we should still speak out confidently what the universal principles of God are and work to live up to them. We Unificationists should be so intellectually brilliant and so successful in living noble, moral, ethical and righteous lives that every other religious person will jump ship and join our movement. Every agnostic and atheist should be blown away by our unity, power, strength, common sense, and love that they will be converted. There is a competition of ideas and ideology and we must be greater than everyone else.

MAINSTREAM vs. QUACKS

At the time of the printing of this edition Unificationists are not mainstream. We are looked upon as being quacks. Almost everyone I uplift in this book are seen as quacks by the majority of mankind. We would all like to fit into our culture and not be pioneers who challenge and criticize the status quo. It is not easy to be a minority and persecuted. But it is our job to teach absolute values even though the vast majority disagrees with us. Eventually God's truth will be mainstream but right now people don't do very much that is of God. Satan's ideas are mainstream. Almost everything people do from morning to night is false. The result is that we live in a sick and tragic world.

When people come into contact with Unificationists they should be transformed. They should learn how to get well physically and spiritually. Sadly, I see many people who call themselves Unificationists blending in with the world. We are not supposed to be of this world. We should think and act differently. We should be living the opposite of this world. What this world thinks is moral and ethical and true is the opposite of what God thinks. The ten core values or principles in this book are honored by only a tiny percent of people who are looked upon by 99 percent of the world as kooks and seen as offensive. God's truths are offensive to this world just as Jesus was offensive to his society. The idea that doctors should wash their hands before treating people was seen as offensive. Almost every time anyone sees the emperors have no clothes on and speaks the truth he is denounced as not being "mainstream." If people were really smart they would be very alert to what is not mainstream and study it very carefully. Most people are lazy and have blind faith in ministers, politicians, journalists, professors, and doctors. Unfortunately, 99% of them are dupes of Satan and mankind is hurt and killed because they follow them. Someday those in position of power and influence will be Unificationists who do know what is absolutely moral, ethical and true and lead people to heaven instead of hell like virtually every leader does now.

"The word maverick is derived from an American pioneer Samuel A. Maverick who chose to not brand his cattle. Through usage the word maverick in addition to meaning an unbranded range animal has come to mean an independent individual who refuses to conform to his group or prevailing group thought." Unificationists need to understand that they must not be mainstream and conform to this world. We need to be mavericks instead of blending into this world.

Father often uses words like plus and minus and convex and concave to explain the difference between men and women. Men and women are opposites who complement each other. Father is making religion scientific. There are formulas in mathematics and science. Father has revealed the

formulas for the Three Blessings. Many of those formulas are in the Bible and other godly books. The most important formula is the godly, patriarchal family. No sane person can challenge a scientific formula such as E=mc2. And no sane person can challenge the common sense core values God has for the family and society. The traditional family is the ultimate formula for the highest happiness. When we compare those families that live by God's values to those who do not it is obvious which is happier. Unfortunately, fallen men and women are stubborn and often cannot be open and see obvious truth because they are loyal to their false view.

PRIMARY FUNCTION — TO EDUCATE PEOPLE

Unificationists are called by God to be the teachers of truth. People often find it distressful to hear the truth. Many find the absolute value of the traditional family repulsive. God and the Messiah give commands. There are godly universal values. One criteria for knowing if an idea is true is if it works. God's values work. The ideas in this book work for millions of people who live them today and have lived them in the past. They are practical values. They are common sense. But common sense is not fallen man's forte. We are ruled by Satan, not God. Most of the world still doesn't believe Jesus is the Messiah after 2000 years. But to believe that Jesus is the Messiah is the truth is not a strongly-held opinion of Christians. It is a fact. Sun Myung Moon is the savior of the world. This is not our opinion. It is fact. The Ten Commandments are not ten suggestions that people can take or leave. They are not the strongly-held opinions of Moses. As one pundit put it, "The Ten Commandments are not the Ten Highly Tentative Suggestions." They are God's values. They are one-size-fits-all universal principles. Unificationists need a detailed, written statement of their core values that are God's laws of the universe. Unificationists don't shout opinions from the rooftops, we shout the truth. I believe the most effective way to present our absolute values is in clearly and plainly written books and DVDs that people can think about in the privacy of their own home. Father said in a speech on May 1, 1981, "From now on, we will not witness in the old style but through videotapes. All you have to do is push the button. You can educate people while you relax." Our first priority is to make those books and videos and then distribute them by the millions. We need powerful servers so that millions of people can watch our videos on our websites. This is where we should put most of our money. Father says, "The primary function of the Unification Church members is ultimately to educate people." (7-12-84)

WITNESSING IS OUR PRIMARY JOB

Father says:

> You have to focus on witnessing ... in order to restore yourself. To begin with, you need three spiritual children and then 12. The three represent the archangels, and the 12 represent Jacob's children, the twelve tribes. Jesus had three main disciples out of the twelve. (4-1-89)
>
> I came to America primarily to declare the New Age and new truth. Whether the people accept me at once or not, it is my God-given duty to speak. This is why God appeared to me and told me to go to America to speak the truth.
>
> Our past record is good proof. What have I done in the last thirty years, or what has the Unification Church done in Korea, Japan, or the U.S.? That is the proof. What we have done is to absolutely give ourselves to the service of others, the nation and humanity. Our primary job has been preaching the new truth and trying to win the peoples' hearts for God. Have you ever heard that we have tried to overthrow any government or rob a bank? (Interview in Sontag's book)
>
> Witnessing results depend 40 percent on the spirit world, 30 percent on one's understanding of the *Divine Principle*, and 30 percent on one's practice.

The secret of witnessing to a person is to see him often with your eyes, talk to him often with your mouth, listen to him often with your ears, be concerned about him often with your heart, and give him much.

Don't say you can't do it. If you think you can't, then even force yourself to do it.

There is always a way. Just look for it.

When you feel uneasy, be silent and make plans. If you cannot be successful even after that, it may be necessary for you to make totally different plans.

Those who joined the Unification Church and never witnessed will become mute in the spiritual world.

God sends you out for witnessing so that you may pay indemnity.

First, witnessing; second, witnessing; and third, witnessing.

The sorrow of history is that those who have do not give, and that those who have learned do not teach and show.

Your *Divine Principle* lecture should cry out in God's place to reveal His internal situation. Worry about how your heart is more than how your lecture itself is.

Blessed families must certainly do witnessing on Sundays.

You have to witness to at least three spiritual children, in a year.

If a criminal is told that if he does not witness to three spiritual children every month he will be executed, then can he not do the task? Even we are in the sphere of natural execution because we will have to die some time in the future.

Business should be done as a condition for witnessing.

You can love your own children only after raising three spiritual children. (*The Way of God's Will*)

Witnessing is your primary job and the job I give you today. I declare this an emergency situation for America ... When you see young people spiritually dying out there, you should be more passionate than I am, crying out for their salvation ... If you sit still, you will die. You have to work, to restore, to inject life. ... You are the small Father Moon in your area. You are the savior to your state and city. ... You are in a very serious situation ... You must hurry! You must have the 'can do' spirit and work hard ... our primary mission is to increase membership ... I have been emphasizing the formula 1-1-1. Why haven't you accomplished this? (March 1989)

The natural way to witness personally is to simply invite everyone we meet to our unique utopian communities. When people visit our communities they will experience the kingdom of heaven. They will feel and see the *Principle* in action. Our communities will be an oasis, a safe place. There is safety in numbers. We will be like a wagon train instead of foolishly trying to live alone in a dangerous and corrupt Sodom and Gomorrah. When a person visits a Unificationist home or community he or she should see people who live a higher standard than this world—a higher

standard than any religious group. Father teaches us to witness by creating the most loving families so that when someone visits they don't want to leave:

> As Father did when he started the Unification Church, you must take sincere care of your friends when they visit your house. You have to make them say, "Your house is better than mine. This meal is more delicious than at my house. Can I stay here one more night?" When you make your house a place where every guest or friend wants to come and live, even abandoning their own families, you have the Kingdom of Heaven of a family.
>
> There is a reason that I don't build churches now. It is because we don't need so many people in the church. The Kingdom of Heaven starts not from the church but from a family. (*Blessing and Ideal Family*)

There are only two religions that have witnessing as the cornerstone of their beliefs—The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints and the Jehovah's Witnesses. They are 19th century religions that have retained some good old-fashioned beliefs. At the Web site for the Mormons at lds.org anyone can read some of their values that give them tremendous strength. One of the things they emphasize is that men are patriarchs in the home and the church. At the Web site for the Jehovah Witnesses at watchtower.org we read: "All true Christians must witness to others. It is God's command. In each congregation, there are elders, or overseers. They take the lead in teaching in the congregation. These men are not elevated above the rest of the congregation. They are not given special titles. They do not dress differently from others. Neither are they paid for their work." Mormon leaders do not take money either. All Mormon leaders are unpaid volunteers.

The Unification Movement needs to learn from this that they should not have any paid leaders. Men in these two religions do not receive a salary. This makes their churches powerful. There should be no one in the Unification Movement with titles like reverend, bishop, pastor, etc. let alone anyone receiving a salary for being someone who "guides" the members. Unificationists do not need to pay people to be their guides. Tithing money should go towards charity or making professional videos of the *Divine Principle*, not for paying the personal expenses of those who arrogantly think they are shepherds and the masses are mindless sheep that cannot function without their master.

The image of the Mormons and the Jehovah Witnesses is that they witness. They are American religions that were supposed to be the first to accept the *Divine Principle* and be the John the Baptists who would bring America to the second coming of Christ. Both do not believe in the trinity or use the cross as a symbol. We are supposed to be so brilliant in their eyes that they join us. Instead, they are gaining millions of members and we are not. To gain millions and then billions of members we need to have an image as the most powerful witnessers for Christ the world has ever seen. Our lifestyle must be superior to Mormons. Our Web sites, books and videos must be superior to theirs. Right now our lifestyle is more feminist than theirs and our websites are inferior to theirs. It is imperative that we do better than them. Father wants us to be the best: "I am determined to make you the best, not mediocre members of the Unification Church. I will train you and make you so strong that within a few years you will be better persons in every way—better personalities, better character, better educated, and better disciplined than any congressmen or senators of this country who are not God centered people. This is the reality of our movement today. Such things are very noble and good things." (3-1-83)

Critics of Sun Myung Moon falsely believe his motivation is selfish but the truth is that he is works relentlessly to raise people to greatness. They always question his strategy. What is his strategy? He says:

> My strategy and purpose is not to benefit the Unification Church or myself, but

to make all Unification Church members people who accomplish man's portion of responsibility. …The liberation of mankind and the liberation of God are more important to me than anything else. (3-1-83)

Deep Conviction

Anyone with a reasonable mind will be able to see that what I have been doing all these years springs from a deep conviction and principle. Do you Unification Church members take this time casually? You have eyes and ears but do you hear the scream of this world, which is on the verge of dying? It is like a giant animal crying out in pain and agony. Your ears must be able to hear that cry.

Satan Blinds People

Satan blinds people to their true condition and convinces them they are happy. To protect the world from further mistreatment from Satan, we must liberate the young people. Otherwise Satan will have the world in his hands, a world like a living corpse. Do you love America? Your love for America means nothing unless you take this task seriously. Only when you are serious about saving America can you truly say you love America.

When a cancer starts the victim hardly notices it. As it progresses, he notices it only a little bit. However that person will certainly die unless the cancer is stopped. America is in the same situation. I have been telling you American members that you cannot remain idle or indifferent. You cannot just think about your own life and your own family's blessing and going to Heaven eventually. What would be the difference between you and conventional Christianity? (3-1-83)

Sun Myung Moon pushes his followers to save this sick world. His critics in America cannot understand that he is great enough to be bowed to. Bowing is natural in the Orient. He says:

When I came to America, that was my determination. To get to the dirtiest places in this country where nobody wanted to go and clean them up. There were many. Communist activity was one of them. Alcoholism, drug abuse, free sex—these were the pits of this society. Many people were using drugs without realizing their danger. Likewise, people were engaging in free sex, thinking, "What's wrong with it?" Homosexuality and so forth were being practiced because nobody had any authority to declare "This is wrong." You came to Father Moon, you changed your life, and then you felt grateful to him. That is why you bowed down to me, because I taught you the right way to live. So this bowing down is the beginning of a good tradition. However, this has been unthinkable in Western society—bowing down to another person. But it is the beginning of a great future for Western people to do that. Other Westerners laugh to see you doing that, making fun of you saying, "They must have been brainwashed." That is because you are behaving so differently from them.

The Principle is more important than whatever we may assert. I never go to any society and kick things around and destroy it. Not even as much as Jesus did. Some Christians think it is all right to behave in a destructive way, saying, "You are a heretic!" They cry out, "Father Moon is a heretic!" But all Father Moon is doing is to protect them and revive them, to help them live, not to try to kill them. But they continue to persecute me. (1-12-92)

Final judgment is based on a single, simple formula: whether or not a person is motivated by selfish or unselfish desires. If my deeds are supremely selfless and

> for the sake of the public good then the sacrifice and what appears at times to be defeat will turn out to be a greater victory. For example, I am accused of brainwashing the youth of America. Suppose, however, that the end result of the brainwashing was the emergence of truly unselfish men and women, living their lives for the sake of God and the world. For doing that I will receive blessing from God and my work will be a victory instead of a defeat. On the other hand, suppose the purpose of brainwashing was to sacrifice young people for my personal benefit. Then certainly I would deserve all the present accusation and persecution and more. (10-3-76)

Father pushes witnessing just like Jesus did. It is for altruistic purposes. Father is realistic and practical too. He sees the power of books and modern communication systems. He says, "You have been doing witnessing up to now, but you did not know how to do it with a book. If you do it with books, then the results would be astronomical.

"Unification church members should have thirty *Principle* books, thirty cassette tapes, and thirty videotapes. Moreover, all of you should own a VCR. In the future, all of you should own one. Do you understand what I am saying? Starting from the State Leader, you should all have it. Do you understand? [Yes]" (*The Way of the Spiritual Leader Part 2*)

"Father is telling you that you should carry cassette tapes [audio cds or mp3 players], videotapes [DVDs] or *Divine Principle* books, over 30 copies of them, which contain *Divine Principle* teaching. Even while you're driving or passing by some place, if you see somebody and you feel like you can talk to them, then get their address or talk to them, lend your cassette tapes or videotapes, whatever they want or can utilize, and then let them study *Divine Principle*. If you don't do this kind of work, in other words, you are not spreading the truth that you received from True Parents and God. Your ancestors from the spirit world will punish you, will persecute you. And your neighbors' ancestors even, because your neighbors' ancestors are anxious to see you teaching their descendants. So if you have any good material, then you just share with your neighbors. Do you understand? (Yes.) If you don't practice this, what Father is teaching you today, when you join the spirit world, you will be penalized." (12-22-94)

"Up to now we have been saying that we do not have enough people, but in reality that is true. However, if you prepare several tapes, then you can witness to ten or twenty households even if we lack manpower. Moreover, since they are not offended but rather are grateful, you can even receive some donations from them. Even if you do not go out and earn money, there will be ways that you can obtain the funds needed for your activities. Through this method, even a new member, someone who joined yesterday, can also take the tape and do witnessing with it. I believe that this is the only and the last way that we can have an explosive growth in membership all over the nation in a very short time." (*The Way of the Spiritual Leader Part 2*)

Father says the Internet and video are the most efficient way to teach, not with lectures. I believe the best way to witness is to hand out videos that persuasively convert people to our ideology. How else can we change the minds of billions of people? Father pushes us to dominate the media. Everyone has a television set. Most people have a computer. Father says world restoration will happen soon because of the Internet. He is right. Let's put our teachings on the Internet for people to read in their language. Let's make Web sites that have hours of videos that deeply explain the *Principle* and how to live a godly life. Father said in a speech in 1996, "Fifty years from now, no matter how sad you may feel, Father will be in the spiritual world. By then, at least two-thirds of the presidents of the world will be Unification Church members. (Applause)." (6-23-96)

EVERY LANGUAGE

Every person in the world needs to read a book or watch a video in their language of the *Principle*.

There are thousands of languages. Over 200 are each spoken by millions of people. My goal is to have my version of the *Principle*, the *Divine Principle In Plain Language*, this book and my other books translated into these languages and distributed to every home (along with professionally made DVDs). Below is a list of some languages. There are many more.

Mandarin	Hindi	Spanish
Portuguese	Russian	Japanese
German	Korean	French
Vietnamese	Italian	Turkish
Ukrainian	Arabic	Farsi
Polish	Romanian	Serbo-Croatian
Thai	Dutch	Hungarian
Greek	Panjabi	Swedish
Finnish	Norwegian	Hebrew
Danish	Bengali	Indonesian
Polish	Swahili	Thai
Icelandic	Estonian	Armenian
Cambodian	Urdu	Albanian
Macedonian	Nepali	Czech

I would appreciate any help in translating my books and distributing them. I give permission for anyone to translate my books, print them, and distribute them for free in any number as long as they do not sell them. Only my family has the right to sell my books. I look forward to the day that Unificationists put the *Divine Principle* book and videos in every library and place ads in every newspaper directing people to go check out the book. How exciting it will be when there are always billboards, posters on bulletin boards, radio ads, magazine ads, and TV ads for the *Principle*! Let's have a big hot air balloon over every major city proclaiming the name of the truth in the clouds.

"Producer/director George Lucas, who worked on four of the top ten grossing motion pictures of all time, had this to say in a lecture to film students at the University of Southern California": "Film and visual entertainment are a pervasively important part of our culture, an extremely significant influence on the way our society operates. People in the film industry don't want to accept the responsibility that they had in the way the world is loused up. But, for better or worse, the influence of the church, which used to be all-powerful, has been usurped by film. Film and television tells us the way we conduct our lives, what is right and wrong." (John Baxter, *George Lucas, a Biography*)

I have printed a version of the *Principle* for the average person titled *Divine Principle in Plain Language: The Basic Theology of Sun Myung Moon*. You may find my version helpful when you

witness. My goal has been to write a book that is clear for the average person and when they read it they will be persuaded to accept Father as the Messiah. Many people have been converted to ideologies by simply reading a book. Joseph Smith founded the Mormon Church and printed a book. Brigham Young came across the book and read it. He looked for the church and went on to become its second President. The Mormon's university is named after him. Countless people have picked up the Bible in a motel room put there by the Gideons and gave their life to Jesus. Televangelists have thousands of testimonies of people who watched their programs and accepted Jesus as their savior. We need to have books and videos that are persuasive.

Many writers in the home church movement believe that there would have been no Islam and Christianity would have grown much faster if Christians had not changed from meeting in their homes and started building cathedrals after 300 A.D. They feel that Christians won Rome in 300 years and if they had kept with the home church plan they would won the world in another 300 years.

We are called to work with passion everyday to convert people. I believe that God wants us to build communities that people will feel safe and secure. We need books that explain how to build the ideal world. Unificationists are supposed to write constitutions for every nation that will bring order and prosperity. It is easy to fall into some touchy-feely activities instead of focusing on the truth that hurts. We are not going to change this world by singing Kumbaya in hotel meeting rooms to guests and talking vaguely about being nice to each other. Father says Jesus and his followers were supposed to convert the Roman Empire. We are supposed to convert America: "When you are witnessing you feel hope to convert this nation. In years to come many people will seek your advice and you can influence the leaders of this nation" (10-7-79). It has been over 40 years and virtually no one knows that Father is the Messiah. God has worked to give us the technology to reach America and the world with Father's magnificent words. Father often tells us to make use of it. He is not into PowerPoint presentations at churches and fancy hotel meeting rooms. He is into video. He says, "There is no need to teach in front of a black board. Put more value on books and also use *Principle* video tapes. You have powerful armament now. Eventually we will broadcast *Divine Principle* all over the world. Those who will fulfill Tribal Messiahship raise your hands and say 'Yes, True Parents'" (1-28-93).

Father says we should not do street witnessing and stop witnessing in parks as we have in the past. He has recommended knocking on 360 doors in our neighborhood. I doubt if many will do this. The best way to witness is to massively advertise the *Principle* and direct people to watch videos of the *Principle* in their homes or at carrels in libraries. What would happen if every Unificationist family donated copies of the *Divine Principe* and videos of the *Principle* to their local libraries and put an ad in the classified ads of their local newspaper or local college paper every day that directed people to go check out the *Divine Principe* book and videos from the library? Wouldn't some people do this? And wouldn't some of them accept it as true and join? Let's do it! Perhaps you may want to put my books and videos in the library. By advertising you are constantly witnessing to thousands of people. Spirit world will direct people to the ads if they are always there. Also, there are many bulletin boards that we could put posters and flyers up to direct people to our incredible theology and values. Father says, "Whenever you have time, go out with a bunch of posters and place them on any open space. That is your job. Do you understand? (Yes) We should be more professional than worldly advertising companies. Advertisers come up with all manner of slogans for the purpose of making money. We will do this in order to save people. Therefore we should do better." (1-2-96)

One reason the Mormons and Jehovah Witnesses are so powerful is because they plan their work and they work their plan. The Jehovah Witnesses have gone door-to-door for many years. I don't know if the Mormons cold call on doors anymore. Their young missionaries may just do referrals

now. How safe is it to go door-to-door? When Father proposed the idea of doing home church and everyone knocking on the 360 doors around each person's neighborhood it was before America had further degenerated deeper into a socialist/feminist culture where there is so much more dysfunction than before. I question if any Unificationists will aggressively schedule time like the Jehovah Witnesses who walk up to stranger's houses and knock on doors.

Father wants us to be united on a witnessing plan. He said in the book *Home Church* that going to 360 homes "is like a mathematical formula; it works 100%. We must establish some step-by-step witnessing formula which applies 100% everywhere in the world." He is saying we must write down a plan that is universally used. I don't think that plan should have anything to do with the age-segregated Mormon plan of teenagers spending two years away from their families. We want to unify families—not divide them. We should focus on witnessing as families instead of as individuals. I think it is wrong to continue to focus so much on those in their twenties. It has the atmosphere of a cult where single, young adults are manipulated by being put in some silly program that keeps them from marrying and keeps them busy with non-productive programs where they do not grow and their parents and loved ones back home view as a waste of time if not outright abuse. Have any of the programs and organizations that have been created for young people in the UM ever had the traditional, patriarchal family as its core value? All I see is hundreds of organizations that applaud and encourage women to leave the home, make money and lead men.

The following is from a newspaper article about Mormon missionaries:

> Seymour, who was 15 months into his mission, and Burton, who was three weeks into his, close themselves off from the world. They are not allowed to read newspapers, magazines or off-limits books, let alone watch television or listen to pop music. Standard church rules also forbid premarital sex, masturbation, smoking and drinking alcoholic or caffeinated beverages. They write weekly letters home, but are allowed phone calls on Christmas and Mother's Day.
>
> "You realize you're doing something a little more important," Seymour said.
>
> When they're not going door to door in housing projects, Seymour and Burton drop in on people who have responded to church advertisements, carrying videotapes and copies of the Book of Mormon.

I disagree with the thinking of the Mormon interviewed above who said he was "doing something a little more important." I think he is doing a disservice to winning souls for God. We should not witness by taking young people away from their homes. I feel it would be better if Unificationists did not go down the road of having age-segregated programs like the Mormons have for sending their children to public schools and then sending their 19 year old young men and 21 year old women away from their home for two years.

Instead of having young Unificationists do a two-year program like the Mormons do, let's encourage sisters to marry and have children at age 17 like True Mother did and have more babies than Mormons have. When young Mormon missionary women wearing their long dresses visit pregnant 17 year old Unificationist sisters wearing long dresses and living as trinities in a community that are gaining members naturally then those Mormon women will see us as superior and join us. Mormon men will see that they are wasting valuable time in not starting a family.

We need to have a totally united strategy to win the world. America is at war with terrorists. There is a cultural war between Liberals and Conservatives in America. Liberals feverishly work to destroy the Boy Scouts and the traditional family with their diabolical campaign to legalize gay marriages. There are over 40,000 children dying every day from hunger and dirty water. AIDS is

rampant in Africa. Other religions need to move up to the *Principle*. Politicians can wage war on terrorists, war on drugs and war on poverty all they like but they need to understand that Unificationists are waging war on ignorance of God's way of life. We are the hope of this world. Unificationists hold the key to unity. The only way to world peace is for us to teach the truth to billions of people. Father has continually warned us that America could fall like the Roman Empire did. Let's become absolutely united on true values and become the most powerful movement on earth. This means we all need to be reading from the same book of values. Let's unite on the values in this book and solve all of mankind's problems. Let's make a safe world for our children and grandchildren. Let's think big. Let's work hard and smart. Let's win this war we are in.

Father has ended the church and wants us to live in communities. When we look to Father's words for guidance we have to understand that what he said at different times in his life may not apply anymore. You can find many quotes from him on the wonders of fundraising but we have to put his words in the context of the time and place he was speaking them. When he praises fundraising he was speaking at a time when we lived as single people in socialist communes. We need to take this into consideration when he says that everyone has to fundraise for 3 1/2 years before they can be blessed. Father no longer believes that or teaches that. When he talks about members being ministers and giving sermons at Sunday services he was talking at a time in the dispensation when we were a church. Now we are not and need to shift gears and live differently. Father is not going to be called reverend forever. It is a temporary tactic. Titles will disappear in the future. We should change our thinking. The church is not some building where we go to hear someone who has a fancy title. The church is now us. Every member is the church. The only titles that we honor now are names like Dad and Mom and Uncle and Grandma.

To win at building a movement of many people who have powerful families I think we should being using the word "family" much more than the word "church." That's what we called ourselves in the 1970s when I joined. We don't need mini-churches or mega-churches. Father does not want mega-churches; he wants us to decentralize to mega-families in communities where the emphasis is on the men being heads of their families and heads of their community. He changed the name of his organization from church to federation. He did not change it to "mega-churches for world peace and unification." We should end men having titles of pastor, reverend, and bishop. Father has ended Sunday service which means we do not pass the plate anymore. He is ending traditional religion with its emphasis on rituals and starting a new era where we live a natural, religious life. Father says he hates to be called reverend. He wants to abolish the term.

Perhaps the most powerful method of witnessing will be hospitality. Darryl Erkel says that hospitality was a key to success in witnessing of the early Christians: "House-Churches are an effective witness to unbelievers. Meeting within a home means that the Gospel and brotherly, Christian love becomes audible and visible to all. The unbeliever, therefore, observes our fellowship and hospitality as well as hears our prayers and songs. While it is not the only method of witnessing that God may use, it is an effective one." Donald Riddle wrote an article about this in the *Journal of Biblical Literature* titled "Early Christian Hospitality: A Factor in the Gospel Transmission." Let's do the same. Let's invite people over for a nice dinner and convert people in our homes.

If we expect to get our relatives and presidents of nations to join we will have to be exemplary people. Bill Bright gives pointers to witnessing in his book *Witnessing Without Fear: How to Share Your Faith With Confidence*. He says there is "friendship evangelism" and "initiative evangelism." It may not be productive to be aggressive in witnessing to our relatives and we may have to go slow. But at some point we have to create magnificent families and live such high standard lives that our relatives and friends will be open to hearing about our faith. I believe that if

Unificationists live by the ten values in this book they will become magnets to everyone from our relatives to presidents of nations who will want to hear about why we are so happy and successful.

I believe that if followers of Sun Myung Moon adopted the home church paradigm of the Christian home church movement or as they often call it "simple church" we would finally see explosive growth in numbers and in spiritual growth. Neil Cole is a prominent writer and leader in the Christian home church movement. There is an excellent video I hope you will watch called *When You Come Together: Simple Church Gatherings – what do we do*. In this DVD he says, "We're shifting from the day of the ordained to the day of the ordinary where God indeed ordains the ordinary to do His work and He gets more glory for it." The Bible says, "You will be for me a kingdom of priests"(Exodus 19:6). This means every believer is to be a priest. Cole says the best way to see growth in the number and quality of members is doing home church, "If you really sincerely have a core value of multiplication the only way you'll ever see a multiplication movement is with simple churches." Unificationists—revolutionize your thinking on church growth. It's now time to witness opposite the way we have for the last 50 years. Father commands us to save this world with our families instead of through churches.

SALVATION THROUGH FAMILIES

Sun Myung Moon began his ministry 1n 1954. He never called it a church. He called it the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity. He says, "Forty years after the start of my public ministry, I founded the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. The Unification Church now means the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. This means that the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification is being established in your homes. I have to put all families in order." (*Cheon Seong Gyeong*) Father took down the church sign. Let's not put it up again. Father says the focus is on families, not churches:

> Now is the time, Father says, that the old church signs or church-related signs should come down and a new form should emerge. The age of religion is passing away. Therefore, the ordinary time of the religious period, the life of religion, is passing away. Up until now the purpose of the major religions was for individual salvation. That is why, not just the Unification Church sign, but all religious organization signs and church signs will come down sooner or later. Think about it, at the time of Adam and Eve, if Adam and Eve had been totally united with God in the beginning, do you think religion would have been necessary?
>
> Father took down this sign, the first sign of the Unification Church. Please do not feel sad about the disappearance of the Unification Church sign.
>
> This is the Completed Testament era. Now the Old Testament era and New Testament era which dealt with Christianity and all different religions has passed. That is why in this era of completion, the Completed Testament era, we can deal with families. It's the family salvation way; salvation through families. (5-1-97)

NOT A CHURCH

In his autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*, written when he was 90 years old Father says in 1953 he was not interested in creating a new church or new denomination:

> …hung out a sign that read "Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity."
>
> We chose this name to signify that we belonged to no denomination, and we certainly had no plans to create a new one. *World Christianity* refers to all of Christianity worldwide and both past and present. *Unification* reveals our

purpose of oneness, and *Holy Spirit* is used to denote harmony between the spiritual and physical worlds built on the love of the father-son relationship at the center. Our name is meant to say, "The spiritual world, centering on God, is with us."

In particular, unification represents my purpose to bring about God's ideal world. Unification is not union. Union is when two things come together. Unification is when two become one. "Unification Church" became our commonly known name later, but it was given to use by others. In the beginning, university students referred to us as "the Seoul Church."

I do not like using the word *kyo-hoi* in its common usage to mean church. But I like its meaning from the original Chinese characters. *Kyo* means "to teach", and *Hoi* means "gathering." The Korean word means, literally, "gathering for teaching." The word for religion, *jong-kyo*, is composed of two Chinese characters meaning "central" and "teaching." respectively. When the word *church* means a gathering where spiritual fundamentals are taught, it has a good meaning. But the meaning of the word *kyo-hoi* does not provide any reason for people to share with each other. People in general do not use the word *kyo-hoi* with that meaning. I did not want to place ourselves in the separatist type of category. My hope was for the rise of a church without denomination. True religion tries to save the nation, even if it must sacrifice its own religious body to do so; it tries to save the world, even at the cost of sacrificing its nation; and it tries to save humanity, even if this means sacrificing the world. By this understanding, there can never be a time when the denomination takes precedence.

It was necessary to hang out a church sign, but in my heart I was ready to take it down at any time. As soon as a person hangs a sign that says "church," he is making a distinction between church and not church. Taking something that is one and dividing it into two is not right. This was not my dream. It is not a path I chose to travel. If I need to take down that sign to save the nation or world, I am ready to do so at any time.

An early disciple of Sun Myung Moon, Chung Hwan Kwak, explains it this way: "Father never wanted to start a religious denomination or sect or separate movement. Instead, he started an association." (*God and World Peace*)

I feel he clearly says he is not interested in a church. He is interested in families and communities getting together to study and live Father's words. I cannot see in the quotes above where Father shows any interest in churches, let alone mega-churches. He has always gone along with the plans members have presented to him but those plans have never succeeded to get millions of members, let alone getting quality members. We need a paradigm shift. We need to stop thinking about mega-churches like Rick Warren has and start focusing exclusively on home churches. We need to stop the juvenile thinking that believes some are shepherds with fancy titles who should live off the unwashed masses of sheep who blindly follow an arrogant elite. It is time to decentralize church to the family and trinities and end people being pathetic, sycophantic sheeple to so-called big shots who always make things worse. Unificationists need to grow up and start taking personal responsibility and stop looking to some distant headquarters and pompous snobs who think they are the only wise ones who can determine what is "official".

CHURCHES ARE OBSOLETE

Churches, synagogues and temples are now obsolete. Ministers, Pastors, Rabbis, Bishops, Priests, Clerics, Imams, Doctors and every other title given for professionals in religion are now obsolete. Salaries for those who see themselves as spiritual leaders are obsolete. The focus is on the family,

not churches. As we read in the quote above, Father says salvation is not through religious organizations anymore; it now the time for "salvation through families." God and Father wants those who accept the theology of the *Divine Principle* to be united on universal values. I have ended this book with the value of "home church" to counter the traditional idea that religion means a hierarchy of paid leaders working out of a building that they think is holy and ultimately led by one fallen man who has titles like Pope, Prophet or President.

Jesus did not come to start a complicated church bureaucracy. Sun Myung Moon has not come to start a church. Jesus did not aspire to be a rabbi, and Sun Myung Moon does not aspire to be a pastor. Jesus blasted the religious leaders of his day saying "they love the place of honor at banquets and the most important seats in the synagogues; they love to be greeted in the marketplaces and to have men call them 'Rabbi.'" "But you are not to be called 'Rabbi'" (Matt. 23:6-8). Father says he hates being called a minister. So should we. Father does some things that will not last forever. For example, Father often wears a suit with a tie. He teaches that there will be no ties in the kingdom of heaven but he goes along with this fashion nonsense. He has done work with ministers and honored their position but it is time to stop this religious nonsense.

The formation stage was HSA-UWC, an association that was corrupted into socialist communes. The growth stage was FFWPU, a federation of families that was corrupted into traditional churches. Let's make the completion stage Home Church where there is no legal entity with all the complexities that goes along with a headquarters that arrogantly thinks it can determine who is a true follower of Sun Myung Moon. Just imagine how mind-boggling this would be for people! It would take the wind out of the sails of those who label Father a cult leader. It would pull the rug from under those who want to attack Father. There would be no church to sue.

Don't listen to Unificationists who disparage small groups of families who meet in their homes as being tired and boring. They are trying to emasculate the heads of those homes and make themselves the heads of those homes. Stay away from proud elitists who push for them to drive long distances to some mega-church so they can be entertained by professional speakers and musicians. Small communities have more quality than big meetings. Big meetings are fine only occasionally. The new culture we are building is based on the god-centered principle of decentralization and intimacy in small communities where you are missed if you are not there.

Hoon Dok Family Church

A respected elder brother in the Unification Movement said in a post on Facebook after In Jin resigned:

> We need to clean house, and start afresh. There are plenty of good people who have left the church over the years because they have been disgusted by corruption at the highest levels.
>
> True Father called for the end of the leader-center movement and the start of the member centered movement on Children's Day 1981. Isn't it about time we got away from authoritarian leaders and empower Tribal Messiahs to conduct local community church based on Father's words, in the style of Hoon Dok Family Church?
>
> Father created the Family Federation for World Peace to be a federation of independent churches, and In Jin nim and her coterie have gone backwards to the inward looking megachurch, because that's where the money is.

Jim Rutz writes in his book *Megashift*, "Most people who are called Christians are spiritual babies. They can't even feed themselves. They have to be spoon-fed weekly by sitting passively in a church service. Trouble is, this only makes the problem worse. That's why improved sermons,

bigger churches, and better-trained pastors can't help. It takes many steps to reach spiritual maturity. The biggest is when you become self-feeding. That means you are able to receive your strength directly from God (especially through the Bible) instead of depending solely on second-hand resources."

The Home Church movement often calls itself "simple" or "organic." In the DVD titled *Tidal Wave: An Exploration of Simple Church* (https://vimeo.com/4521963) one author of a book on home church says, "Simple does not mean simplistic. Simple can be profound." The video has some great lines: "The work of the kingdom is not assigned to an elite group of professionals." "Kingdom work isn't left to the select few with seminary degrees." I hope all those who call themselves Unificationists will see this video and agree with the idea that we must do homechurch so we can stop those who would like to be in the limelight and see the ordinary person fulfill their potential. The only superstar is Christ, not charismatic seminary graduates who think they are the intermediaries between Christ and the "little people."

Jim Rutz wrote an article entitled "'Don't-get-bored-to-death' Christianity" at www.worldnetdaily.com (10-24-06) saying:

> In the old Spectator Christianity, you go to a large building once a week, sit down in a row, and keep your mouth shut except for the singing, which often these days is drowned out by high-powered sound systems cranked up past 90 decibels.
>
> This kind of frozen religion is a vestige of the days of our forefathers, when the pastor/priest was the only person worth listening to and was often, in fact, the only one who could read.

Unificationists should not think they can make the traditional church into something warm and fuzzy. One of the major writers in the Christian home church movement is Jim Rutz. He spent years trying to do that. He wrote a book about it titled *The Open Church: How to Bring Back the Exciting Life of the First Century Church*. He has changed his mind and sees that it is impossible to make traditional churches work. In his book *Megashift* he writes that his previous book, *The Open Church*, is "marred by its aim: to morph traditional churches into open churches— which we found nearly impossible." We cannot transform Unificationist churches into something better either. No matter how much tweaking we try the church model is inherently flawed and will eventually die. And the whole idea of breaking a traditional church down into small groups is a waste of time compared with going totally to home church. Steve Atkerson says that when a group gets too big to be in one house, say around 15 people, it should begin to start a new home church.

At WorldNetDaily.com (6-27-06) Jim Rutz the author of *Megashift* had an article titled "A major announcement about house churches" saying:

> The little guy is back. For the first time in 1,700 years, simple churches meeting in homes are once again a factor in human events. In many countries, they're booming so strongly that critics and opponents can no longer brush them aside as a fringe movement. And as I documented repeatedly in "Megashift," home churches are producing millions of proactive Christians who now and then perform miracles (though the credit ultimately belongs to God, of course).
>
> But this week, even I was shocked to discover how big our house church community in North America really is. Briefly stated, we're right about halfway between the Catholic Church and the Southern Baptist Convention (which is the second-largest denomination in the U.S.).

> OK now, let's inhale. I'm stunned, too. This really is starting to alter the landscape for all of us. Let me state up front: These are solid numbers. George Barna, the leading U.S. church pollster and perhaps the most widely quoted Christian leader in America, is the author of the figures below. They are based on a full-on, four-month scientific survey of 5,013 adults, including 663 blacks, 631 Hispanics, 676 liberals and 1,608 conservatives.
>
> Nobody argues with numbers from The Barna Group. They employ all the professional safeguards to ensure tight results – in this case, a sampling error of +/-1.8 percent. Here are the results stated in five ways:
>
> In a typical week, 9 percent of U.S. adults attend a house church.
>
> In absolute numbers, that 9 percent equals roughly 20 million people.
>
> In a typical month, about 43 million U.S. adults attend a house church.

I assume that most people don't read and may find the idea of studying home church to be daunting, overwhelming or intimidating. If you want to introduce the concept of home church or simple church or whatever you want to call it I highly recommend three DVDs. They do an excellent job of introducing turn-back-the-clock idea that homes are the truly sacred places, not temples. Here are the DVDs:

1. *Church Outside the Walls: A Four Part Documentary Exploring Church Life Outside of Organized Religion* (www.familyroomstore.com)
2. *Tidal Wave — An Exploration of Simple Church*
3. *When You Come Together: Simple Church Gatherings – what do we do?*

Jim Rutz writes at his website (www.megashiftministries.org): "The worldwide house-church movement is open: clergy-free, program-free, sermon-free, mortgage-free and growing like mushrooms in springtime.

"Ten percent of China is already in house churches. India is on track to start well over 500,000 house churches by 2010. And if you accept top pollster George Barna's definitions, 9 percent of America is in a house church already. A friend of mine across town has started 200 house churches just in the last six months. Try doing that with pew-based churches!

"A professional clergy caste system compartmentalized the body of Christ, producing an isolated, infantilized laity. Thus began the 1,700 years of spectator Christianity!

"There is no better example of house churches changing people and nations than India. With the failure of institutional Christianity there, God is raising up house churches in a hostile political and religious environment. This new breed of Christ's followers are proactive, aggressively winning thousands to Christ in the face of threats, violence, imprisonment, and torture. Recently, I met Ramesh, a young man severely beaten by anti-Christians last year for preaching the gospel in his native India. His body bears the marks of that near-death encounter. This attack only increased his zeal, however. So far this year he has won more than 150 people to Christ who are being discipled in house churches. Our Father is doing His work in the home and invites us to get in on this global planting project.

"My wife and I visited a very poor neighborhood in India where sewage ran in open ditches and gutters. We were taken to a secret house church meeting. Huddled inside a very compact room, we sat on the floor among twenty-five or thirty people. One after another, men, women and children shared testimonies, scriptures, songs, revelations, spiritual visions, and brief teachings. In that destitute place, encouragement, comfort, prayer, and ministry needs flowed for three substantial hours. It was as if we had been transported back 2,000 years.

"Over the past 1700 years, low-commitment, conformist Christianity has been the norm for

most believers. It is centered around attending church services, which is basically passive. In our day, it has come to seem more and more like watching TV, but without a remote, so you're stuck with one channel for 90 minutes. Small wonder that U.S. Protestantism has shrunk to less than half the population for the first time in 200 years, diving from 63% in 1993 to under 50% about now. (From a UPI report 7/20/04 citing a new survey by the National Opinion Research Center at the University of Chicago)

"God has been waiting 3,000 years for His people to stop wanting a king or pastor to tell them what to do. And at last, it's happening! He is developing disciples who are mature enough to be able to feed themselves spiritually, without being spoon-fed by a clergyman. He wants you to be a priest, not a layman! (Exodus 19:6)

" Dump your status of layman and try for something a little higher than spiritual serfdom."

HOME CHURCH OR MEGA CHURCH

Either our goal is a world of mega churches or home churches. Those who believe Sun Myung Moon is the Messiah and dream of having a career in the ministry after getting a degree at a seminary are dinosaurs whose days are numbered. The future is a one-world family, not a one-world church. Those who have the vision of all mankind driving to some mega-church on Sunday to spend an hour passively watching so-called experts in music and some expert in speaking and then drooling over the idea of working themselves up the ladder to position of senior pastor and getting a six-figure income complete with a parsonage and secretary are going down the wrong road. The focus should not be on the patriarchal or (in the dream of Women's Federation) a matriarchal church but on the traditional, patriarchal family. Eventually the idea of parasitical politicians and bloated governments will end also.

A past president of the UC who became the head of a UC organization they call the American Clergy Leadership Conference (ACLC) said on September 21, 2010 in an article posted on familyfed.org: "Only faith leaders can lead our communities out of the darkness of family breakdown and despair." This is false. The truth is that men as patriarchs in their homes are the leaders that we should focus on. Professional clergy are now part of the problem instead of the solution to "family breakdown." The ACLC, along with all the other many organizations of the UC, should be disbanded. The last thing this world needs is ordained ministers emasculating men in their homes and communities. There are those in the "back to patriarchy" movement that feel men should submit to elders in a church or else there is anarchy. They are wrong. The ultimate authority figures in the home and community would be wise great-grandfathers and other elders in the family and community that would arise organically and naturally without dealing with some organized religion with a headquarters that is really some kind of Vatican or Emerald City with a Wizard or Pope or President or whatever everyone considers their shepherd. What do shepherds do to sheep? They take them to the slaughter house. Professional clergy can't help being those who prevent spiritual growth like Jesus blasted in Matthew 23. Men should submit to elders who have proven themselves to be competent leaders in local communities, not appointed by some headquarters or Vatican like organization.

Where is the logic or common sense in thinking that the world will be restored by having every person drive a car or take some kind of transportation to a mega-church every Sunday? Do the math. There are billions of people. Even if a huge church had 20,000 members doing four shifts of 5,000 people on Sunday morning how many church structures would we have to have? If we had a minority of the world, 2 billion people, attending Sunday service it would take 10,000 of these huge churches each having 20,000 members. Do you really think there will be megachurches equally scattered throughout Switzerland and Kenya and Honduras and all the other countries with each having a senior and junior pastor who is worth traveling to listen to every Sunday? The Internet ends the need for all these buildings. And why is it seen as spiritual for 20,000 people to have to hear the same person each week? Who is that interesting? All this nonsense of organized

religion leads to scandals from those who go on power trips with all this atmosphere of hype and then the church is sued for billions of dollars like the Catholic Church is for all the terrible priests who molested children. The UC is tiny and it already has had plenty of scandals. Let's get rid of all the church buildings unless there are enough people who voluntarily want to support them. If there is no need for clergy anymore then why do we need a seminary that has the primary purpose of ordaining ministers? It seems to me that the schools and churches we now have teach feminism so either they should become principled places of learning or they should be sold. If members want to get together for some kind of annual reunion region-wide or nationwide or want to sponsor some really dynamic motivational speaker then do as some businesses do and rent a convention center. The focus should now be on families. All the effort the UC has put into their buildings for the last 40 years has not worked. Let's work smart. Let's do homechurch.

Christian Smith writes in his chapter titled "Overcome the Edifice Complex" from his book *Going to the Root*:

> Perhaps the most obvious monument to the church's immobility and inflexibility are its church buildings. ... church buildings witness to the immobility, inflexibility, lack of fellowship, pride, and class divisions of the modern church. Christians throughout the centuries have tended toward love affairs with edifices. They have fancied temple over tabernacle, cathedral over caravan, palace over pilgrimage. ... Going to the root challenges us to reconsider how we think about church buildings. It calls us to reexamine our priorities and begin to explore more dynamic, flexible forms of organization and structure that better symbolize and facilitate adaptability, humility, creativity, and good stewardship.
>
> A home is a center of life; a church building is just a place to meet. Hundreds of thousands of Christians all over the world are leaving church buildings. They are returning to the home as the place for Christian gatherings. There are home church movements in North America, England, Australia, China, the Netherlands, Germany, India, East Africa, and most Latin American countries. The Latin American church, for example, has witnessed an explosion of what are called base ecclesial communities (BECs). BECs are small (typically twenty to forty-five members), neighborhood-based churches which meet in homes or community buildings. They usually are lay-led and emphasize participation, community, and social activism. BECs are helping Latin American Christians take responsibility for their lives, church, and societies in ways the large, institutional church could and did not. In the last thirty years, the number of BECs in Latin America has grown from zero to over two hundred thousand.
>
> Home churches are popping up all over East Africa. When the weather is nice, neighborhood Christians gather in a yard, sit on the ground, and do hand work while they sing and hear a Bible teaching. The openness, fellowship, and community of their home churches suit their traditional tribal heritage better than dressing up to sit in wooden pews and sing European hymns in a big, neocolonial church.
>
> We might question church buildings, not only because there is no biblical justification for them, and not only because homes are more naturally suited for family-of-God gatherings. The biblical call to good stewardship of our wealth also compels us to reconsider our attitudes about church buildings.
>
> North American Christians have great wealth, a portion of which is spent on church buildings. Conservative estimates place the value of real estate owned by churches in the United States at over 232 billion dollars. Furthermore, Christians spend additional millions annually for the heating, cooling, and maintenance of

these buildings. If all church buildings were sold, another $2.1 billion would be easily saved annually—through money not spent on debt service and maintenance.

Is this good stewardship? How else might we spend Gods' money? Imagine, if you can, all the churches in the United States making the radical decision to sell their church properties over the next ten years (to be converted to other non-church uses).

Picture all these congregations then either meeting in large, rented public buildings or forming themselves into house churches. Then imagine these churches investing all the money from the sale of their church buildings into trust funds and each year spending the earned interest (let us say 9 percent) on missions and ministry. We could comfortably do the following every year, year after year:

*Feed five million starving or malnourished people every day ($1.82 billion)

*****Support three hundred Christian candidates running for office in the Senate and House of Representatives ($150 million)

*****Print and ship to Hong Kong one small library of basic Christian books for each of forty thousand underground home churches in China, to be smuggled in by missionaries ($15 million)

*Support twenty thousand orphanages in Brazil, providing shelter and food for over one million children ($210 million)

Smith gives many more ideas where the money could be spent. I think it is a good idea if families worked their finances so that their descendants would live off the interest of investments too. Smith says this about his home church community:

My church, for example, does not spend a dime on a professional pastor or a church building. Consequently, about 95 percent of all our church collections go to missions, evangelism, and ministry to the needy. This is the same amount churches twenty times our size spend. We're a small church, but we can do big things with the little money we have because we don't sink it into clergy, mortgages, and maintenance.

Of course, the idea of selling all church buildings and ceasing to build new ones seems incredibly radical. That's because it is radical. ... in China, the gospel without church buildings has spread like wildfire. For decades, many missionaries labored with only moderate success to establish traditional churches in China. When missionaries were expelled from China by the Communists in the 1950s, Chinese Christians began meeting secretly in homes. Since then their home churches have proliferated. Today there are more than forty thousand home churches in China. The number of Protestants has grown from one million in the 1950s to more than forty million today! This despite—or perhaps because of—the absence of church buildings.

Yes, house churches need to be small enough to fit into homes. But that doesn't mean they don't grow. House churches grow simply by multiplying more and more related house churches rather than adding more and more members to the same large church.

Studies indicate that if and when churches do grow, they typically only grow until their buildings are full. Then they stop growing. So church buildings, with all their fixity and inflexibility, often stop successful church growth!

> Think how many church sanctuaries are locked up, cold and empty, about 97 percent of the time. In addition, church buildings are not the only facilities available for useful activities. All sorts of appropriate, cost-effective recreational, dining, and meeting facilities can be rented for any activity or ministry as needed.
>
> **BUILDINGS AS BARRIERS**
> Even when church facilities lend themselves to outreach ministries, a sizable and important segment of the American population will never step foot into a church building for any reason. I know a number of people like this. A woman who recently joined our community never did, would, or will go into a church building, even after becoming a zealous Christian in her thirties. For her it was house church or nothing. These alienated people have *had* it with the established church and anything associated with it—often with good reason. Of course, these people would be happy to come to your house for dinner or to a park for a picnic on the weekend.

Father teaches that we are commanded to not abuse human rights and public money. Humans now have the right to match and bless with holy juice (no wine). I believe that spending tithing money on buildings and salaries is now a misuse of public money. I hear about many businesses the UM has. How does that work? Do members donate money that ends up in businesses that are not employee-owned by the members who gave money? Businesses should be done privately only by brothers, not by churches. And if you blindly give to some distant headquarters shouldn't you know if the money is going to so-called leaders to send their children to expensive colleges? If you want to give money to someone so they can send their children to college that is fine. I just think you should know exactly what college they are attending and how much they receive. What kind of lifestyle do these children of leaders live? We call government employees public servants. Their salaries and the cost of the buildings they work in and their expenses are public knowledge. If the FFWPU wants to see themselves as public then let's open the books so everyone can see where all the money goes. A news article about Chicago stated, "Mayor Rahm Emanuel announced today that it is publicly displaying the salaries for every employee of the City of Chicago." The Mayor said, "During the campaign I promised to have the most open, accountable and transparent government that the City of Chicago has ever seen. Today's effort is another step toward this goal, as we create an administration that is accountable to the citizens of Chicago." How about a transparent Unification Church? Let's see the salaries of UC pastors and employees?

The best use of money is voluntary giving at the local level to widows, orphans and single moms instead of fancy dinners at the Marriott for so-called religious leaders. There are so many people we have to help. There are Unificationists all over the world who are struggling financially. How much do we give to poor members in poor countries like Africa? And if we give them money how do we give it? With strings attached? How do we help those struggling financially in rich countries like America, Japan and Europe?

Are Unificationist men supposed to give their hard earned money to their struggling relatives on his side of the family and his wife's side if they are Unificationists? Or do we tell them to apply for welfare? Do we tell a relative who is a single mom and member to get a job and apply for welfare? What about relatives who are not believers? For example, suppose a Unificationist brother has a father-in-law who is struggling financially? What if he has a sister who is alone and who is neutral or even negative to Father and the *Divine Principle*? Is he supposed to send her money? Does he encourage her to earn money or tell her to focus on finding a man to care for her? Is it the right thing to do for a Unificationist to totally support a sister-in-law who is not a member and help her find a man outside the UM to marry and provide for her. Or does he keep his sister-

in-law out of the workplace only if she is a believer and work to find a mate for her in the Unificationist Movement? Or does he feel she should work and support herself so he can help others and build up his savings account and investments for his family? I think it is tragic that a woman who is a believer is not provided for and protected by the men in her family or by other Unificationist men.

The Unificationist movement should have grown so much faster than it has just as conservative Christianity should have grown faster than it did and be more powerful than it is. Father has pushed for growth and all we have in America is a few thousand spaced-out members after fifty years of witnessing. Let's adopt the home church model and get those millions of members we need to change this sick culture we live in.

BE A SMALL-SCALE MESSIAH

Father says Unificationists should be a controversial small-scale Messiah:

> Let's say you had a choice of living on the stars, the moon, or the sun. Which would you choose? My name contains them all: Sun, Myung—which means bright light—and Moon. Which would you prefer to be—a Moonie or a Sunnie? In order to become a Sunnie, you have to free yourself completely from all shackles and become a real, true entity. Have you done that? What is the difference between Moonies and Sunnies? There is an important difference. The moon receives light and then reflects it, while the sun is the generator of the light and gives it out everywhere. Therefore, the difference between Moonies and Sunnies is also obvious. The Moonies are those who can only gain their strength from Father, receiving his light and encouragement, then giving it out. But, for Sunnies it doesn't matter whether Father is present or not. Sunnies are dynamos themselves, giving out light to the world whether I am here or not.
>
> The wish of Heavenly Father, as well as my own desire, is for you to become such a Sunnie. Don't stay too long on the Moonie level; promote yourself to a Sunnie. Would you like to do that? You will give up being a Moonie? Throughout my life, I have stirred up things; therefore, everywhere I go there is controversy, particularly where it is most dark. That is what we must do: bring light to the darkness and that is why many people consider Father Moon's life to be controversial. Would you also follow that pattern? Would you like to stir up things wherever you go, even becoming controversial yourself? (2-3-87)

WE DON'T NEED ANY HEADQUARTERS

What should Blessed Couples do from now on? — Tribal Messiahship. We don't need any Headquarters, we don't need any big organization, just Tribal Messiahship. Let us not be those who merely follow a religious leader. Let us make the commitment of our entire being to the embodiment of the True Parents' way of life through tribal messiahship. With this hope, the present text is commended to the reader. May it provide the sustenance of life for us all, as we pursue the way of God's will in the Completed Testament Age—the way of the tribal messiah. (5-24-93)

You are independent messiahs, and whatever you do is your own responsibility. You are to bring the Kingdom of Heaven in home church. (4-15-80)

Your first step is to become true children, and then later the True Parents will elevate you into the position of parent. You must set the right condition and prove yourself worthy and qualified to inherit parenthood. Each one of you is a small-

> scale messiah and you must show to the world that you love God and mankind more than anyone else in history. You must create your own world microcosm because the entire world is too gigantic to deal with. God makes restoration easier by creating a small world of home church in which you will find your true individual, family, tribe, clan and everything. By loving that small world, you can say you have loved the entire world. (12-24-78)
>
> After the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples, it will be a downhill ride – descent is easy. That will be the 36 million Couples: the growth stage. What follows is the Blessing of 360 Million Couples; by then we would reach level terrain at the bottom of the hill. Descending there, we can return to the state of Adam's family before the Fall. By achieving this, we are entering the age when parents will bless their children. From this point on, you can perform the preliminary Blessing ceremonies yourselves. Recognized as John the Baptist families, you will be able to do that in the name of the True Parents. (*Cheon Seong Gyeong* 287-144, 1997.9.14)
>
> Then, the realm of the 4th Adam era will begin, which means that parents will be able to bless their own physical children. That is the start of the kingdom on earth. (6-5-98)

Father says:

> In the West, you are blessed in marriage by a minister or sometimes by a person of high rank, such as a judge. But ideally your parents bless you in marriage, just as God would have blessed His children, Adam and Eve, when they reached maturity. In that case, the parents would bless their children, saying, "You are my life, you are my love, you are my everything. I am so happy that you have reached maturity. I am now blessing you to be man and wife. I want you to love each other as we, your parents, have done. Become one with each other, resembling us, and give birth to wholesome children, multiplying your future generations forever." In that situation you would long to be like your father and long to be like your mother and long to have the love that they had. Such an event can only be imagined in a world centered on God's love. (*New Hope 12 Talks*)

It is time to decentralize the church to the home by ending the traditional church and focusing on the traditional, patriarchal family. I challenge every Unificationist to do home church and make marriage ceremonies and blessings a family and local community tradition instead of being administered by some distant control freak elites.

CONCLUSION

Does Sun Myung Moon live the ten values I write of? Let's go through them and see.

1. **Purity**
Father walked his talk. He said with absolute confidence, "Absolute sex means that even if there are beautiful women, your eyes will not turn. If we do this, can you keep yourself from temptation? Do you know how much suffering Heavenly Father and I went through to establish absolute sex? Even if there were one thousand beautiful women and True Father was thrown in with them, even if they were to touch me, I would have total control." (1-3-97)

Father is the most disciplined person who has ever lived. He has outworked every person who has ever lived. Was he physically fit? In his 80s he slept less and worked harder than anyone in the world. He has no addictions. He is the only person, besides Jesus, who achieved mind/body unity. Father says, "Satan is trying to confuse the environment and confuse society. That is why people think their best friend is drugs, alcohol, tobacco and free sex. They live with a vain glorious attitude, embracing materialism, food, selfishness and homosexual love. ... Father is intoxicated by True Love. I don't need anything else to further intoxicate me. God intoxicates me. True love intoxicates me. That is the joy of my life" (2-2091). "I made up my mind that I would be number one in every challenge: in eating less food, sleeping less than anyone, working harder and criticizing myself the harshest. In these respects, I set world records." (2-2-79)

2. **Warrior**
Father was a fearless anti-communist. He even had gun businesses.

3. **Patriarchy**
The three pillars of true patriarchy are to lead, protect and provide.

Leader — Father is the epitome of the masculine, manly, take charge leader. He talked for hours and mother sat at his left and didn't say a word. True Mother is the epitome of the submissive wife as taught in the *Bible* who absolutely followed her husband. She is the model wife who loves, respects, reveres, adores, honors, admires, and praises her husband.

Protect — Father watched over Mother like a hawk. He kept her protected in a safe community.

Provide — His wife of 52 years never earned one penny in her life.

4. **Homemaker**
True Mother is the epitome of a married woman who followed her husband. She made Father her career and worked to support and advance his vision.

5. **Dynasty**
Father had 14 children and some of his children have large families. He taught against birth control and for big families and he walked his talk.

6. **Decentralize**
Father helped the Republican Party by giving over one billion dollars to the *Washington Times* that battles the socialist/feminist *Washington Post*. President George Bush and his wife, Barbara, toured with Mother. The Republican President Nixon invited Father into the Oval Office in the White House to thank Father for his support. Father is into family and communities as the focus on how to organize ourselves. He made a trinity before he married Mother. They were assigned to help Father take care of his children. Father lived in a community. He ate dinner with other people.

So should we.

7. **Trinities**
Father blessed his trinity in 1960 right after he was married. After nearly 50 years these three couples were still loyal to him

8. **Countryside**
Father's homes are in the country. He spent a lot of his time nature, especially ocean fishing.

9. **Homeschool**
Father is passionate about education. The best education we can receive is in nature which is where you will usually find him. He often explained how everyone can live in the countryside and still receive the best academic education from videos given on the Internet. He has learned his core beliefs from nature and so should we. Father calls the family the "school of love."

10. **Homechurch**
Father is into a movement, not a church.

For each of the values in this book there is a Cain/Abel division between those who love these values and those who hate them. There are books for and against these values. There are organizations who champion old-fashioned values and those that do not. The Cain side dominates our culture. Feminists despise these 10 values. Traditionalists love them. The most dynamic religion today is the Mormons. They teach and live some of these values and are booming in growth. When Unificationists do even better at living these principles than the Mormons we will experience the explosive growth Father wants.

These ten core values are presented as beliefs and actions that God wants us to live by. In doing so we need to point out the bad ideas and actions of those on the Cain side but our emphasis needs to always be on what we are building, not what we are against. Austrian economist Ludwig von Mises warned his anti-Communist friends, "An anti-something movement displays a purely negative attitude. It has no chance whatever to succeed. Its passionate diatribes virtually advertise the programs they attack. People must fight for something that they want to achieve, not simply reject an evil, however bad it may be."

SPIRITUAL CHILDREN
God and the Messiah exhort us to feel a sense of urgency to proselytize and be persuasive people who are victorious at winning spiritual children: "The most important thing is to gain spiritual children" (6-20-82). Father wants us to teach the *Divine Principle* and after a person joins our movement then we teach them how to live a principled life. Father gives us values and goals to shoot for. He often gives goals for witnessing and he gives a date to accomplish getting new members. God has a goal of an ideal world that glorifies True Parents. We should take these commandments and goals from the Messiah very seriously. To accomplish these huge goals of fulfilling the Three Blessings given in Genesis 1:28 we can get help from the hundreds of self-help books.

THE STRANGEST SECRET
Earl Nightingale is a famous motivational speaker. In his recording, *The Strangest Secret: How to Live the Life You Desire* (www.nightingale.com) he says that most people end their lives without becoming financially independent. Unificationists should give their children financial independence by the age of 18. He writes:

> Here's a startling fact that I have heard from many different sources… If you take 100 people at age 25, every one of them that you ask will say that they want to be successful. Every single one! However, when you take those same 100 people at the age of 65…
>
> 1 will be rich
> 4 will be financially independent
> 5 will still be working
> 54 will be broke
> and the rest will be somewhere between broke and working.
>
> Out of 100 people that said they wanted to be successful, only 5 of them ended up accomplishing what they wanted!
>
> Why is this? Why do so few people end up living the good life with abundant success? I'll tell you why…
>
> The answer is **conformity**. People have a natural tendency to conform to their surroundings. The problem with this is only 5% of the people in this world are doing the right things. So when people conform, they are usually acting like the 95% that aren't successful! They live like unsuccessful people. Do the same things as unsuccessful people. And in turn, they themselves become unsuccessful.

At YouTube I watched Nightingale say, "Whatever the great majority is doing on any given circumstance if you do exactly the opposite you'll probably never make another mistake as long as you live." The ideas and people I like in this book are in that 5%.

IMAGE OF UNIFICATION MOVEMENT

What should people think when they hear the words "Unificationist" or "follower of Sun Myung Moon" or "Unification Movement"? Shouldn't they have an image of loving people? Father wants us to be masters of relationships in the family. One of the ways we show this is how we take care of the elderly and disabled. We should have the image of being a people that takes care of our own from cradle to grave. We don't use government social security or big business nursing home insurance. Everyone should think of us as religious people who live in loving, caring communities. We need to dramatically change our lives. The only successful religious community is the Hutterites. Watch the DVD *Hutterites: To Care and Not to Care* (www.christianbook.com). In the book *On the Backroad to Heaven: Old Order Hutterites, Mennonies, Amish, and Brethren* by Donald Kraybill we learn that they have the greatest fertility rate in America—an average of 7 children with many families having more than 10. They have been going to hospitals lately to birth babies and are listening to doctors pushing for birth control. In the 1950s a study was done and found the average family had 10 children. We need to use midwives and stay away from hospitals. We should have more children and live more successfully in nature than they do. The Amish have an average of 5 or 6 but they do not live communally.

Hyung Jin Moon is creating the most exciting and powerful movement the world has ever seen. Check out his website sanctuary-pa.org.

Father teaches us saying:

> When you are fully resurrected, you attain the same value as God. The creation of a human being is actually the creation of another God! This is an amazing truth. That is the true, absolute value of mankind. Today, people have lost that value. People have reduced themselves to dirt, below the level of even insects. Do you like that kind of life? So do you want to undergo this training?

What is the meaning of perfection? In order to be perfect, you must master all the relationships within a family. You should be able to put up with all kinds of grandparents: bad, good, talkative, cheerful, whatever.

If your grandmother cannot take care of her bodily functions and you have to clean up her urine and stools, can you do it without complaining? You should be able to deal with such a grandmother joyfully and happily. That is a sign of a perfect person. Your grandfather may be the most tough, stubborn, arrogant and demanding person, but you should be able to digest everything he does. You should become the kind of person that your grandmother will reach out to when she is dying, in order to thank you for serving her.

You men may have a wife who fights you or even bites you—someone like Socrates' wife or Lincoln's wife but if you can digest her, control her, and work out a solution, she will eventually surrender before such genuine love from her husband. Or you women may have a husband who is ill tempered; if so, you should be able to win him over.

You should be able to gain the victory in the six different stages of love: grandfather and grandmother, husband and wife, son and daughter. The number six represents a satanic number, so there are six stages to overcome in your family. In the Bible Jesus said that your enemy is within your own family; your closest relatives can be your biggest obstacles. But later they will remember that they gave you too hard a time, and at the moment of their death they will say, "You are number one. I am indebted to you. I will give you everything because you deserve it." Men and women who win such love are perfected people.

Jesus Christ's goal was to become a perfected man. The greatest saints followed this route he took. Today I am striving to achieve this goal of perfection. Since Mother is too kind and good, I need other women to give me a hard time. That is why I get such a hard time from you American women!

What kind of person do you want to become? You should strive to develop the kind of universal mind God has. If you can think like God and act like Him, you will be perfected men and women. Even Satan will acknowledge your perfection. Then God can say "I accept you."

The family is your workshop, training you to pass the heavenly test. What an incredible opportunity it presents you! Once you have attained the highest possible standard, you will serve everybody as if they were your grandparents, parents, spouse, or children, and you will be welcomed, accepted, admired, and loved wherever you go. When you continue such a process in the next world, your dwelling will be heaven.

Now you understand the training process which the original race from one lineage must complete in order to become perfected people and reach the Kingdom of Heaven. Would you prefer to hold on to your narrow way of thinking or adopt this gigantic perspective? You must make up your mind and then act on it. Will you do it? (12-1-82)

FREEDOM

Father says, "The fallen world has destroyed the heavenly order and discipline of love. They don't like the heavenly principle and resist its restrictions. Freedom in this country is often misused, so love has become perverted. Freedom can only blossom as true freedom through the discipline of heavenly principle" (1-25-81).

FAMILY CONSTITUTION

Unificationists should write a constitution for their families.. A functional blessed family would

have in their family constitution that no member of the family is ever put into a nursing home where they could be hurt. There are countless horror stories of patients in nursing homes and assisted living facilities being victims of physical abuse, sexual abuse, neglect, psychological and emotional abuse. The book *Elder Abuse Detection and Intervention* says, "Too often older Americans living in the community or in long-term care facilities are abused, exploited and/or neglected. In worst-case scenarios, elder victims are killed by neglect, abuse, homicide/ or homicide/suicide." In the book *Elder Abuse and Neglect* we read, "Elder abuse. Most find it hard to believe how widespread and frequent this problem is." They write that elder abuse is a "full-scale national epidemic." Many elders are abused by those closest to them in their homes. There are countless cases of abuse of children in homes and outside the home, often by relatives and friends of the family. Some famous people have written how they were sexually abused as little children such as Marie Osmond and the girl who played Nellie Oleson in the popular TV show, *Little House on the Prairie*. I can't repeat enough the phrase, "watched over like a hawk." It is our primary duty to keep our families safe from predators.

In 1787 America was weak because it had a weak constitution. James Madison called for a Constitutional Convention to be held in Philadelphia. Some of the greatest men who have ever lived came. These 55 men were led by George Washington. They closed the windows in the intense summer heat so no one could hear them and they wrote the greatest constitution ever written and created the greatest and strongest nation in history. Father said: "You must make a constitution for the world and America" (4-7-04). Father tells us: "Consider the United States. If America is to have a vision for the coming days and hope for the future, it needs leaders who are thinkers" (9-16-79). "In order for that sovereignty to be protected, we will need a Constitution of the Heavenly Kingdom. We have the *Divine Principle*, but we still need a Heavenly Constitution. We must achieve this Heavenly sovereignty in order to bring liberation to both the communist and the free worlds. It is not for the sake of Father Moon, but for the sake of God that this must happen." (6-20-82) Father's sons Hyung Jin and Kook Jin have written that heavenly Constitution titled "The Constitution of The United Nation of Cheon Il Guk".

One of Father's favorite words is "unification." Evil is for disunity. God is for unity. The Messiah comes to unite us on the truth that will set us free. He has spoken countless hours on what those truths are. The Unification Movement should be absolutely united on what the truth is. The truth hurts because it is different from what most people believe. What I write is not the norm. But what people are doing is not normal in God's eyes. Let's become a movement totally united on absolute values. Unificationists should have the same core values. When we write those values clearly in books, live those core values of God, make videos that move people to change their lives, and distribute those videos then millions will join us.

Family That Prays Together, Stays Together

The only way followers of Sun Myung Moon can win the victory in the war of ideas we are in is to have a battle plan that will make us win in this battlefield we live in. To accomplish the goal of world peace we need to pray. There is a famous maxim, "The family that prays together, stays together." How powerful would Unificationists be if blessed husbands and wives wrote down their values and goals and prayed over them and over a detailed schedule for each day? Would there be any children leaving our movement or being lukewarm followers of True Parents if Fathers and Mothers prayed with their children over their written values, goals and schedule every day?

Christ teaches that we are to always be witnessing. True love means to teach the truth that saves lives. Jesus said, "You are the light of the world. A city set on a hill cannot be hid. Nor do men light a lamp and put it under a bushel, but on a stand, and it gives light to all in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works and give glory to your Father who is in heaven" (Matthew 5:14-16). Let's witness by building those cities on a hill.

“No one after lighting a candle puts it in a secret place or under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that those who enter may see the light” (Luke 11:33). Let’s not keep our theology and our core values a secret. Let’s witness by doing something every day to get someone to watch a video of the *Divine Principle*. Father says:

> You must have the faith and conviction that you are a lighthouse lighting a dark world. The lighthouse will shine forth even in the worst kind of weather because that is the time ships need the lighthouse most. When you are surrounded by the thickest fog you must shine forth all the more. The more adversity, the greater must be your light.
>
> My goal is to establish the ideal model community [that will] transcend race, culture, nation and religion. ... Once we have this kind of ideal community established, people from all over the world will come to see it. ... This model community can have a powerful influence all over the world, particularly as the secular world is declining fast. Only I am creating this formula. It will appear like a lighthouse in the darkness. The world now is in darkness and I am building this model community as a lighthouse in the midst of the darkness.

Let’s build ideal communities and be those lighthouses.

SUGGESTED READING LIST

FIRST BLESSING BOOKS

For the First Blessing buy or check out at the library the following great books on how to be healthy:

Holy Bible
Man of Steel and Velvet by Aubrey Andelin
Fascinating Womanhood by Helen Andelin
Where Are the Real Men of God? Exposing the Wimpy Spirit! by Colin Campbell
What In the World Should I Wear? By Cathy Corle
Your Clothes Say It for You by Elizabeth Rice Handford
Dressing With Dignity by Colleen Hammond
Christian Modesty and the Public Undressing of America by Jeff Pollard
Raising Sexually Pure Kids: How to Prepare Your Children for the Act of Marriage by Tim LaHaye
Not Even a Hint: Guarding Your Heart Against Lust by Joshua Harris
The Big Talk: Talking to Your Child about Sex by Laurie Langford
What is a Man?: 3,000 Years of Wisdom on the Art of Manly Virtue by Waller R. Newell
Recovering Biblical Manhood and Womanhood: A Response to Evangelical Feminism by Wayne Grudem and John Piper
Standing for Something: 10 Neglected Virtues That Will Heal Our Hearts and Homes by Gordon Hinckley
Why Johnny Can't Tell Right From Wrong: Moral Illiteracy and the Case for Character Education by William Kilpatrick
The Living Trust: The Failproof Way to Pass Along Your Estate to Your Heirs by Henry W. Abts
Make Your Own Living Trust by Denis Clifford
Living Trusts: Designing, Funding, and Managing a Revocable Living Trust by Doug H. Moy
Grave Matters: A Journey Through the Modern Funeral Industry to a Natural Way of Burial by Mark Harris
The American Way of Death Revisited by Jessica Mitford
Final Rights: Reclaiming the American Way of Death by Joshua Slocum and Lisa Carlson
Crossings' Resource Guide: A step-by-step how to guide for home funeral care (free pdf or buy the book at www.crossings.net/videos.html)
See You at the Top by Zig Ziglar
The Power of Positive Thinking by Norman Vincent Peale
Suicide By Sugar: A Startling Look at Our #1 National Addiction by Nancy Appleton (www.nancyappleton.com)
Lick the Sugar Habit by Nancy Appleton (www.nancyappleton.com)
The Fat Switch by Richard J. Johnson (www.fatswitchbook.com)
Sweet Deception: Why Splenda, NutraSweet, and the FDA May Be Hazardous to Your Health by Joseph Mercola (mercola.com)
Sweet Poison How The World's Most Popular Artificial Sweetener Is Killing Us - My Story by Janet Starr Hull (www.sweetpoison.com)
Splenda®: Is It Safe Or Not? by Janet Starr Hull (www.issplendasafe.com, www.sweetpoison.com)
Doctor Yourself: Natural Healing That Works by Andrew Saul (www.doctoryourself.com)
Total Health Program by Joseph Mercola (www.mercola.com)
The No-Grain Diet: Conquer Carbohydrate Addiction and Stay Slim for Life by Joseph Mercola (www.mercola.com)

Generation XL: Raising Healthy, Intelligent Kids in a High-Tech, Junk-Food World by Joseph Mercola
Take Control of Your Health by Joseph Mercola (www.mercola.com)
The Coconut Diet: The Secret Ingredient That Helps You Lose Weight While You Eat Your Favorite Foods by Cherie Calbom (www.cheriecalbom.com)
The Real Food Revival by Sherri Brooks Vinton (www.therealfoodrevival.com)
Eat Fat Lose Fat by Sally Fallon and Mary Enig (www.westonaprice.org/The-Skinny-on-Fats.html)
The Maker's Diet by Jordan Rubin (www.jordanrubin.com)
The Metabolic Typing™ Diet by William L. Wolcott (www.metabolictypingonline.com)
Dr. Dukes Essential Herbs: 13 Vital Herbs You Need by James A. Duke
Dr. Atkins' Vita-Nutrient Solution: Nature's Answers to Drugs by Robert Atkins (www.atkins.com)
Health Secrets Of The Stone Age: What We Can Learn From Deep In Prehistory To Become Leaner, Livelier And Longer-lived by Philip J. Goscienski (www.stoneagedoc.com)
The Whole Soy Story by Kaayla T. Daniel (www.wholesoystory.com)
Sugar Shock!: How Sweets and Simple Carbs Can Derail Your Life—and How You Can Get Back on Track by Connie Bennett (www.sugarshock.com, www.sugarshockblog.com)
Good Calories, Bad Calories: Challenging the Conventional Wisdom on Diet, Weight Control, and Disease by Gary Taubes
Why We Get Fat: And What to Do About It by Gary Taubes
Healthy for Life by Ray Strand (www.raystrand.com)
Orthomolecular Medicine For Everyone: Megavitamin Therapeutics for Families and Physicians by Abram Hoffer and Andrew W. Saul (www.doctoryourself.com)
Niacin: The Real Story: Learn about the Wonderful Healing Properties of Niacin by Abram Hoffer and Andrew Saul
Fire Your Doctor! How to Be Independently Healthy by Andrew Saul (www.doctoryourself.com)
Vitamin C: The Real Story, the Remarkable and Controversial Healing Factor by Steve Hickey and Andrew W. Saul (ww.doctoryourself.com)
The Gerson Therapy: The Proven Nutritional Program for Cancer and Other Illnesses by Charlotte Gerson (www.gerson.org)

The Green Smoothies Diet by Robyn Openshaw (www.greensmoothiegirl.com)
Green Smoothie Revolution: The Radical Leap Towards Natural Health by Victoria Boutenko (www.rawfamily.com)
Tooth Truth by Frank J. Jerome (www.dentistry-toothtruth.com)
Cure Tooth Decay: Heal And Prevent Cavities With Nutrition by Ramiel Nagel (www.curetoothdecay.com)
Root Canals: Savior or Suicide? By Hal Higgins (www.hugginsappliedhealing.com)
Root Canal Cover-Up by George E. Meinig
It's All in Your Head: The Link Between Mercury Amalgams and Illness by Hal Higgins (ww.hugginsappliedhealing.com)
Uninformed Consent: The Hidden Dangers in Dental Care by Hal Higgins and Thomas E. Levy (www.hugginsappliedhealing.com)
*The Price of Root Ca*nals by Weston A. Price and Hal Higgins (www.hugginsappliedhealing.com)
The Roots of Disease: Connecting Dentistry& Medicine by Robert Kulacz and Thomas Levy
Real Food: What to Eat and Why by Nina Planck (www.ninaplanck.com)
T*ender Grassfed Meat: Traditional Ways to Cook Healthy Meat* by Stanley A. Fishman
Nutrition and Physical Degeneration by Weston A. Price (www.ppnf.org)
The Fluoride Deception by Christopher Bryson (www.ppnf.org)
The Devil's Poison: How Fluoride Is Killing You by Dean Murphy
Cancer and Vitamin C: A Discussion of the Nature, Causes, Prevention, and Treatment of Cancer

With Special Reference to the Value of Vitamin C by Ewan Cameron and Linus Pauling
How to Live Longer And Feel Better by Linus Pauling (www.vitamincfoundation.org)
Healing Cancer: Complementary Vitamin & Drug Treatments by Abram Hoffer and Linus Pauling
Regain Your Health, Maintain Your Health: The Linus Pauling Way - Vitamin C by Herwig Lange
Vitamin C the Common Cold and the Flu by Linus Carl Pauling
Ascorbate: The Science of Vitamin C by Dr. Steve Hickey & Dr. Hilary Roberts (www.lulu.com/ascorbate)
Cancer: Nutrition and Survival by Steve Hickey and Hilary Roberts
The Cancer Breakthrough by Steve Hickey and Hilary Roberts
Cancer as a Metabolic Disease: On the Origin, Management, and Prevention of Cancer by Thomas Seyfried
The Cantin Ketogenic Diet: For Cancer, Type I Diabetes & Other Ailments by Elaine Cantin
Ketogenic Diets: Treatments for Epilepsy and Other Disorders by Eric H. Kossoff
Avoiding Breast Cancer While Balancing Your Hormones by Joseph F. McWherter M.D. and Dr. David Brownstein
The Vitamin Cure for Migraines: How to Prevent and Treat Migraine Headaches Using Nutrition and Vitamin Supplementation by Steve Hickey
Ridiculous Dietary Allowance by Steve Hickey and Hilary Roberts
Healing Children's Attention & Behavior Disorders: Complementary Nutritional & Psychological Treatments by Abram Hoffer (www.orthomolecular.org)
Healing Schizophrenia: Complementary Vitamin & Drug Treatments by Abram Hoffer (www.orthomolecular.org)
Enzymes & Enzyme Therapy : How to Jump-Start Your Way to Lifelong Good Health by Anthony Cichoke, Abram Hoffer (www.orthomolecular.org)
Adventures in Psychiatry: The Scientific Memoirs of Dr. Abram Hoffer
Psychiatry Yesterday (1950) and Today (2007): From Despair to Hope With Orthomolecular Psychiatry by Abram Hoffer (www.orthomolecular.org)
Dr. Max Gerson: Healing the Hopeless by Howard Straus, Barbara Marinacci, Joanne Shwed, and Abram Hoffer (www.orthomolecular.org)
Curing the Incurable: Vitamin C, Infectious Diseases, and Toxins by Thomas E. Levy (www.tomlevymd.com)
Optimal Nutrition for Optimal Health by Thomas E. Levy (www.tomlevymd.com)
Stop America's #1 Killer by Thomas E. Levy (www.tomlevymd.com)
Uninformed Consent: The Hidden Dangers in Dental Care by Hal A. Huggins, Thomas Levy (www.tomlevymd.com)
The Roots of Disease: Connecting Dentistry & Medicine by Robert Kulacz and Thomas Levy Foreword by James Earl Jones (www.tomlevymd.com)
It's All in Your Head: The Link Between Mercury Amalgams and Illness by Hal A. Huggins (www.hugginsappliedhealing.com)
Why Raise Ugly Kids?: How You Can Fulfill Your Child's Health and Happiness Potential by Hal A. Huggins (www.hugginsappliedhealing.com)
Cereal Killers: the Unintended Consequences of the Low Fat Diet by Alan Watson
The Crazy Makers: How the Food Industry Is Destroying Our Brains and Harming Our Children by Carol Simontacchi
Excitotoxins: The Taste That Kills by Russell L. Blaylock (www.russellblaylockmd.com)
Health and Nutrition Secrets That Can Save Your Life by Russell Blaylock (www.blaylockreport.com)
Natural Strategies for Cancer Patients by Russell Blaylock (www.blaylockreport.com)
The Cholesterol Myths: Exposing the Fallacy That Saturated Fat and Cholesterol Cause Heart Disease by Uffe Ravnskov

Your Body's Many Cries for Water by Fereydoon Batmanghelidj (www.watercure.com)
Root Canal Cover Up by George E. Meinig
Mega-Vitamin Therapy by Ruth Adams and Frank Murray
Your Body Is Your Best Doctor by Melvin Page
Alcoholism: The Cause and the Cure by Genita Petralli (www.greenbodyandmind.com)
Green Mental Health Care: How to Get Off & Stay Off Psychiatric Drugs by Genita Petralli (www.greenbodyandmind.com)
The Carnitine Miracle by Robert Crayhon
How To Raise A Healthy Child In Spite Of Your Doctor by Robert Mendelsohn
Questioning Chemotherapy by Ralph Moss
Antioxidants Against Cancer by Ralph Moss
The Untold Story of Milk : the history, politics and science of nature's perfect food : raw milk from pasture-fed cows by Ron Schmid
Natural Cancer Cures: The Definitive Guide to Using Dietary Supplements to Fight and Prevent Cancer (Healthy Living Magazine)
The Cancer Industry, New Updated Edition by Ralph W. Moss (www.cancerdecisions.com)
Alternative Medicine Online: A Guide to Natural Remedies on the Internet by Ralph W. Moss
Cancer Therapy: The Independent Consumer's Guide to Non-Toxic Treatment & Prevention by Ralph W. Moss (www.cancerdecisions.com)
The MD Emperor Has No Clothes: Everybody is sick and I Know Why by Peter Glidden
Racketeering In Medicine by James P. Carter
Dirty Medicine by Martin J. Walker
The Assault On Medical Freedom by P. Joseph Lisa
Medical Armageddon by Michael Culbert
Politics in Healing: The Suppression and Manipulation of American Medicine by Daniel Haley
Overdosed America: The Broken Promise of American Medicine by John Abramson
Medisin: The Causes & Solutions to Disease, Malnutrition, And the Medical Sins That Are Killing the World by Scott Whitaker
Let Them Eat Prozac: The Unhealthy Relationship Between the Pharmaceutical Industry and Depression by David Healy
Racketeering in Medicine: The Suppression of Alternatives by James P. Carter
Depression-Free, Naturally: 7 Weeks to Eliminating Anxiety, Despair, Fatigue, and Anger from Your Life by Joan Mathews Larson (watch her on YouTube.com)
Seven Weeks to Sobriety by Joan Mathews Larson
Dr. Whitaker's Guide to Natural Healing : America's Leading Wellness Doctor Shares His Secrets for Lifelong Health! by Julian Whitaker
Reversing Diabetes by Julian Whitaker
Reversing Heart Disease: A Vital New Program to Help, Treat, and Eliminate Cardiac Problems Without Surgery by Julian Whitaker
Is Heart Surgery Necessary?: What Your Doctor Won't Tell You by Julian Whitaker
The Great American Heart Hoax by Michael Ozner
The Milk Book by William Campbell Douglass, M.D.
Tea Tree Oil by Cass Ingram, D.O.
Bypassing The Bypass by Elmer Cranton, M.D.
Sweet Suicide by Gene Wright
Sugar Blues by William Dufty
Optimum Nutrition for Your Child's Mind by Patrick Holford (www.patrickholford.com)
The 10 Secrets of 100% Healthy People by Patrick Holford (www.patrickholford.com)
Optimum Nutrition for the Mind by Patrick Holford (www.patrickholford.com)
The Alzheimer's Prevention Plan by Patrick Holford (www.patrickholford.com)
Food is Better Medicine than Drugs by Patrick Holford (www.patrickholford.com)

Confessions of an Rx Drug Pusher by Gwen Olsen (www.gwenolsen.com)
What Really Causes Schizophrenia by Harold D. Foster (www.hdfoster.com)
The Magnesium Miracle by Carolyn Dean (www.carolyndean.com)
The Magnesium Factor by Mildred Seelig (www.mgwater.com)

Transdermal Magnesium Therapy by Mark Sircus (http://blog.imva.info) (www.ancient-minerals.com)
I Have Cancer: What Should I Do?: Your Orthomolecular Guide for Cancer Management by Michael J. Gonzalez, Jorge R. Miranda-Massari, Andrew W. Saul
The Arginine Solution: The First Guide to America's New Cardio-Enhancing Supplement by Robert Fried
The Coenzyme Q10 Phenomenon by Stephen Sinatra (ww.drsinatra.com)
Metabolic Cardiology by Stephen Sinatra (www.drsinatra.com) (watch him on YouTube.com)
NO More Heart Disease: How Nitric Oxide Can Prevent—Even Reverse—Heart Disease and Strokes by Louis Ignarro (www.drignarro.com, www.nomoreheartdisease.net)
The Homocysteine Revolution By Kilmer S. McCully
Heart Frauds by Charles T. McGee (www.piccadillybooks.com)
The Vitamin D Cure by James Dowd (www.thevitamindcure.com - type in his name and all the authors mentioned in this list at youtube.com to see if there are videos of them)
The Vitamin D Revolution: How the Power of This Amazing Vitamin Can Change Your Life by Soram Khalsa (www.vitamindrevolution.com)
Vitamin D Prescription: The Healing Power of the Sun & How It Can Save Your Life by Eric Madrid (www.vitamind-prescription.com)
The Vitamin D Solution: A 3-Step Strategy to Cure Our Most Common Health Problem by M. F. Holick (www.vitamindhealth.org)
The Healing Sun: Sunlight and Health in the 21st Century by Richard Hobday (www.thehealingsun.org)
The UV Advantage by Michael Holick (www.uvadvantage.org)
Sunlight, Vitamin D, & Prostate Cancer Risk by Peter J. Hyde (www.sunarc.org)
Vitamin D3 and Solar Power for Optimal Health by Marc Sorenson (www.vitaminddoc.com)
Free *Vitamin D Newsletter* by John Cannell (www.vitamindcouncil.org)
Vitamin D: Antidote to Winter and the Darkness by Michael Merrill (www.drmikemerrill.com)
Naked at Noon: Understanding Sunlight and Vitamin D by Krispin Sullivan (www.sunlightd.org)
Dark Deception: Discover the Truths About the Benefits of Sunlight Exposure by Dr. Joseph Mercola
The Miraculous Results Of Extremely High Doses Of The Sunshine Hormone Vitamin D3 My Experiment With Huge Doses Of D3 From 25,000 To 50,000 To 100,000 Iu A Day Over A 1 Year Period by Jeff T Bowles
Water and Salt, the Essence of Life by Barbara Hendel (www.swansonvitamins.com)
Squeezed: What You Don't Know About Orange Juice by Alissa Hamilton
The Healing Power of Water by Masaru Emoto (www.masaru-emoto.net)
Wheat Belly: Lose the Wheat, Lose the Weight and Find Your Path Back to Health by William Davis
The Coconut Oil Miracle (Previously published as *The Healing Miracle of Coconut Oil*) by Bruce Fife (www.coconutresearchcenter.org)
Coconut Cures: Preventing and Treating Common Health Problems with Coconut by Bruce Fife (www.coconutresearchcenter.org)
Cooking with Coconut Flour: A Delicious Low-Carb, Gluten-Free Alternative to Wheat by Bruce Fife (www.coconutresearchcenter.org)
Coconut Lover's Cookbook by Bruce Fife (www.coconutresearchcenter.org)
Saturated Fat May Save Your Life by Bruce Fife (www.coconutresearchcenter.org)
Coconut Water for Health and Healing by Bruce Fife (www.coconutresearchcenter.org)

Alzheimer's Disease: What If There Was a Cure? The Story of Ketones by Mary T. Newport
The Palm Oil Miracle by Bruce Fife (www.coconutresearchcenter.org)
Eat Fat Look Thin: A Safe and Natural Way to Lose Weight Permanently by Bruce Fife (www.coconutresearchcenter.org)
Virgin Coconut Oil: Nature's Miracle Medicine by Bruce Fife (www.virgincoconutoil.co.uk)
Strategic Eating by Elise Cooke (www.SimpletonSolutions.com)
The Grocery Garden: How Busy People Can Grow Cheap Food by Elise Cooke (www.SimpletonSolutions.com)
Crazy Sexy Cancer Survivor: More Rebellion and Fire for Your Healing Journey by Kris Carr (www.crazysexycancer.com)
The New Evolution Diet by Arthur De Vany (www.arthurdevany.com)
The Paleo Diet by Loren Cordain (www.thepaleodiet.com)
The Dietary Cure for Acne by Loren Cordain (thepaleodiet.com)
What Every Parent Should Know About Childhood Immunization by Jamie Murphy
The Infant Survival Guide: Protecting Your Baby from the Dangers of Crib Death, Vaccines and Other Environmental Hazards by Lendon Smith
Feed Your Body Right by Lendon Smith
Dancing Cats, Silent Canaries: A Traditional Medical Doctor takes a closer look at unsolved epidemics of Autism & SIDS and proposes a solution by David Denton Davis
Cot Death Cover-Up? by Jim Sprott
Childhood Vaccination: Questions All Parents Should Ask by Tedd Koren
What About Immunizations?: Exposing the Vaccine Philosophy—A Parent's Guide to the Vaccination Decision by Cynthia Cournoyer
A Shot in the Dark: Why the P in the Dpt Vaccination May Be Hazardous to Your Child's Health by Harris L. Coulter
Vaccination, Social Violence, and Criminality: The Medical Assault on the American Brain by Harris Coulter
Dissolving Illusions: Disease, Vaccines, and the Forgotten History by Suzanne Humphries
Vaccine Illusion [Kindle Edition] by Tetyana Obukhanych
Vaccines, Autism & Chronic Inflammation: The New Epidemic by Barbara Loe Fisher (ww.nvic.org)
Immunization Theory vs. Reality: Expose on Vaccinations by Neil Z. Miller
Vaccine Safety Manual for Concerned Families and Health Practitioners, 2nd Edition: Guide to *Immunization Risks and Protection* by Neil Z. Miller, Foreward by Russell Blaylock
Vaccines: Are They Really Safe and Effective by Neil Z. Miller
Vaccination Roulette produced by the Australian Vaccination Network (AVN)
Immunization – The Realty Behind The Myth (2nd Edition) by Walene James
Evidence of Harm: Mercury in Vaccines and the Autism Epidemic: A Medical Controversy by David Kirby
Saying No to Vaccines by Dr. Sherri J. Tenpenny (www.drtenpenny.com)
Fowl! Bird Flu: It's Not What You Think by Sherri Tenpenny (www.drtenpennystore.com)
Vaccine Epidemic: How Corporate Greed, Biased Science, and Coercive Government Threaten Our Human Rights, Our Health, and Our Children by Louise Kuo Habakus and Mary Holland
Raising a Vaccine Free Child by Wendy Lydall (www.vaccinefreechild.com)
Vaccination Is Not Immunization by Tim O'Shea (www.thedoctorwithin.com)
Vaccination: 100 Years of Orthodox Research Shows That Vaccines Represent a Medical Assault on the Immune System by Viera Scheibner
Vaccine-Nation: Poisoning the Population, One Shot at a Time by Andreas Moritz (www.ener-chi.com and YouTube.com) (http://www.andreasmoritzblog.com)
The Case Against Hepatitis B Vaccination: Prevent Your Newborns & Infants From Being Permanently Injured by Kevin A. Muhammad

Jabs, Jenner and Juggernauts: a Look at Vaccination by Jennifer Craig
Unvaccinated, Homeschooled, and TV-Free: It's Not Just for Fanatics and Zealots by Julie Cook
When Your Doctor is Wrong, Hepatitis B Vaccine and Autism by Judy Converse
White Lies: A Tale of Babies, Vaccines, and Deception by Sarah Collins Honenberger
Natural Alternatives to Vaccination by Zoltan Rona
Vaccination: State sponsored Murder by Arnold Lupton
The Terror of Pediatric Medicine by Mark Sircus (free ebook online www.imva.info/books.shtml)
Every Second Child by Archie Kalokerinos
Vaccinations: Deceptions and Tragedy by Michael Dye
Vaccination Crisis by Vance Ferrell (read for free at Scribd.com)
Healing Our Children: Sacred Wisdom for Preconception, Pregnancy, Birth and Parenting by Ramiel Nagel (www.healingourchildren.net)
Your Doctor Is Not In: Healthy Skepticism About National Healthcare by Jane M. Orient, M.D.
Confessions of a Medical Heretic by Robert Mendelsohn
Vaccine Guide for Dogs and Cats: What Every Pet Lover Should Know by Catherine Diodati
Stop the Shots!: Are Vaccinations Killing Our Pets? by John Clifton
Mark of the Beast: Hidden in Plain Sight by Patricia Jordan
Animal Factory: The Looming Threat of Industrial Pig, Dairy, and Poultry Farms to Humans and the Environment by David Kirby
Pure, White, and Deadly by John Yudkin
Get the Sugar Out : 501 Simple Ways to Cut the Sugar in Any Diet by Ann Louise Gittleman
Guess What Came to Dinner: Parasites and Your Health by Ann Louise Gittleman
The 150 Healhiest Foods on Earth: The Surprising, Unbiased Truth About What You Should Eat and Why by Jonny Bowden
Nourishing Traditions: The Cookbook that Challenges Politically Correct Nutrition and the Diet Dictocrats by Sally Fallon, Mary Enig (www.westonaprice.org)
The New Atkins For a New You: The Ultimate Diet for Shedding Weight and Feeling Great by Eric Westman, Stephen Phinney and Jeff Volek
Life Without Bread: How a Low-Carbohydrate Diet Can Save Your Life by Christian Allan & Wolfgang Lutz
Fiber Menace: The Truth About the Leading Role of Fiber in Diet Failure, Constipation, Hemorrhoids, Irritable Bowel Syndrome, Ulcerative Colitis, Crohn's Disease, and Colon Cancer by Konstantin Monastyrsky (www.gutsense.org)
Gut Sense: Constipation and Irregularity—How to Reverse and Prevent Constipation and Irregularity in Children and Adults by Konstantin Monastyrsky (www.gutsense.org)
Lights Out: Sleep, Sugar, and Survival by T. S. Wiley
Soil, Grass and Cancer by Andre Voisin
Why Grassfed Is Best!: The Surprising Benefits of Grassfed Meats, Eggs, and Dairy Products by Jo Robinson
Your Body Knows Best: The Revolutionary Eating Plan That Helps You Achieve Your Optimal Weight and Energy Level for Life by Ann Louise Gittleman
The Coenzyme Q10 Phenomenon by Stephen Sinatra (www.drsinatra.com)
Reverse Heart Disease Now: Stop Deadly Cardiovascular Plaque Before It's Too Late by Stephen Sinatra
Knockout: Interviews with Doctors Who Are Curing Cancer—And How to Prevent Getting It in the First Place by Suzanne Somers
Killing Cancer—Not People by Robert G. Wright
"Bitter Pill: Why Medical Bills Are Killing Us" by Steven Brill (*Time* magazine article Feb. 20, 2013)
The miracle of natural hormones : with over 40 actual case studies by David Brownstein
Overcoming arthritis : see how holistic treatments can cure arthritis, fibromyalgia, chronic

fatigue by David Brownstein
Drugs That Don't Work and Natural Therapies That Do! by David Brownstein
Overcoming Thyroid Disorders Second Edition by David Brownstein
The Guide to Healthy Eating by M.D. David Brownstein
The Myths of Safe Pesticides by André Leu
Iodine : Why You Need It, Why You Can't Live Without It by David Brownstein
Salt - Your Way To Health by David Brownstein
Super Nutrition for Babies: The Right Way to Feed Your Baby for Optimal Health by Katherine Erlich, Kelly Genzlinger and David Brownstein M.D.
The Guide to a Gluten-Free Diet by David Brownstein and Sheryl Shenefelt
The Slow Burn Fitness Revolution: The Slow Motion Exercise that Will Change Your Body in 30 Minutes a Week by Fredrick Hahn
Strong Kids Healthy Kids: The Revolutionary Program for Increasing Your Child's Fitness in 30 Minutes a Week by Fredrick Hahn
Foundation : redefine your core, conquer back pain, and move with confidence by Eric Goodman
How To Save Your Teeth: toxic-free preventive dentistry by David Kennedy
Global Censorship of Health Information by Jonathan W. Emord
Health Wars by Phillip Day (www.foodmatters.tv)
The Vitamin Cure for Children's Health Problems by Ralph Campbell and Andrew W. Saul
The Vitamin Cure for Alcoholism by Abram Hoffer and Andrew W. Saul
The Vitamin Cure for Heart Disease by Hillary Roberts and Steve Hickey
The Vitamin Cure For Migraines by Steve Hickey
Hospitals and Health: Your Orthomolecular Guide to a Shorter, Safer Hospital Stay by Abram Hoffer, M.D., Ph.D., Andrew Saul, Ph.D., and Steve Hickey, Ph.D. (www.basichealthpub.com)
The Only Answer to Cancer by Leonard Coldwell (www.instinctbasedmedicinestore.com)
The Anti-Estrogenic Diet: How Estrogenic Foods and Chemicals Are Making You Fat and Sick by Ori *Hofmekler*
Alpha Lipoic Acid Breakthrough: The Superb Antioxidant That May Slow Aging, Repair Liver Damage, and Reduce the Risk of Cancer, Heart Disease, and Diabetes by Burt Berkson
Maximum Muscle, Minimum Fat: The Secret Science Behind Physical Transformation by Ori Hofmekler
Unlock Your Muscle Gene: Trigger the Biological Mechanisms That Transform Your Body and Extend Your Life by Ori Hofmekler
The Warrior Diet: Switch on Your Biological Powerhouse For High Energy, Explosive Strength, and a Leaner, Harder Body by Ori Hofmekler
The Hidden Story of Cancer: Find Out Why Cancer Has Physicians on the Run and How a Simple Plan Based on New Science Can Prevent It by Brian S. Peskin
Defeat Cancer: 15 Doctors of Integrative & Naturopathic Medicine Tell You How by Connie Strashein
The Virgin Diet by JJ Virgin (www.jjvirgin.com)
The New Truth About Vitamns & Minerals by Bill Sardi
The Power of Healing, The Power of God by Bill Sardi
Downsizing Your Body – How the Industrial Food Complex Breeds Fat Americans by Bill Sardi
The Iron Timebomb: How Iron Adversely Affects Your Health by Bill Sardi
The Bible Prescription for Health and Longevity by Bill Sardi
How to Live 100 Years Without Growing Old by Bill Sardi
User's Guide to Eye Health Supplements: Learn All about the Nutrtional Supplements that can Save Your Vision by Bill Sardi
The Red Wine Pill by Bill Sardi
In Search of the World's Best Water by Bill Sardi
Why Babies Die by Bill Sardi

Big God vs. Big Science by Bill Sardi
Grain Brain: The Surprising Truth about Wheat, Carbs, and Sugar—Your Brain's Silent Killers by David Perlmutter (www.drperlmutter.com)
It Starts With Food by Dallas Hartwig (www.whole9life.com)
The Paleo Answer: 7 Days to Lose Weight, Feel Great, Stay Young by Loren Cordain (thepaleodiet.com)
Your Brain on Porn: Internet Pornography and the Emerging Science of Addiction by Gary Wilson (www.yourbrainonporn.com)
The Slow Down Diet: Eating for Pleasure, Energy, and Weight Loss by Marc David
Perfect Health Diet: Regain Health and Lose Weight by Eating the Way You Were Meant to Eat by Paul and Shou-Ching Jaminet (www.perfecthealthdiet.com)
Fat for Fuel by Joseph Mercola
Fat for Fuel Cookbook by Joseph Mercola

SECOND BLESSING BOOKS

Family Man, Family Leader by Philip Lancaster
Be Fruitful and Multiply by Nancy Campbell
So Much More: The Remarkable Influence of Visionary Daughters on the Kingdom of God by Anna Sophia and Elizabeth Botkin
Passionate Housewives: Desperate for God by Jennie Chancey and Stacy McDonald
A Full Quiver by Rick and Jan Hess
Preparing Sons to Provide for a Single Income Family by Steven Maxwell
The Surrendered Wife: A Practical Guide to finding Intimacy, Passion and Peace with a Man by Laura Doyle
All About Raising Children by Helen Andelin
The Socialization Trap by Rick Boyer
Home Educating With Confidence by Rick Boyer, Marilyn Boyer
The Hands-On Dad by Rick Boyer
Yes, They're All Ours: Six of One, Half a Dozen of the Other by Rick Boyer
Love in the House by Chris and Wendy Jeub
Have a New Kid by Friday: How to Change Your Child's Attitude, Behavior & Character in 5 Days by Kevin Leman
Making Children Mind Without Losing Yours by Kevin Leman
Parenting by the Book: Biblical Wisdom for Raising Your Child by John Rosemond (www.rosemond.com, www.parentingbythebook.com)
The Duggars: 20 and Counting!: Raising One of America's Largest Families—How they Do It by Jim Bob Duggar and Michelle Duggar
ScreamFree Parenting: The Revolutionary Approach to Raising Your Kids by Hal Runkel
Screamfree marriage : calming down, growing up, and getting closer by *Hal Runkel*
Shepherding a Child's Heart by Tedd Tripp
Parenting from the Hearth by: Practical Parening from a Mom of 14 Children by Marilyn Boyer
Large Family Logistics: The Art and Science of Managing the Large Family by Kim Brenneman
The Way Home: Beyond Feminism, Back to Reality by Mary Pride
All the Way Home: Power for Your Family to Be Its Best by Mary Pride
Creative Counterpart by Linda Dillow
Liberated Through Submission by Bunny Wilson
The Power of the Positive Woman by Phyllis Schlafly
The Power of the Christian Woman by Phyllis Schlafly

Women Living Well: Find Your Joy in God, Your Man, Your Kids, and Your Home by Courtney Joseph
The Sociopath Next Door by Martha Stout
The Stay-At-Home Mom by Donna Otto (www.homemakersbychoice.org)
Finding Your Purpose as a Mom: How to Build Your Home on Holy Ground by Donna Otto (www.homemakersbychoice.org)
Get More Done in Less Time—And Get on With the Good Stuff by Donna Otto (www.homemakersbychoice.org)
Loving Life as an At-Home Mom by Donna Otto (www.homemakersbychoice.org)

Missing from Action: A Powerful Historical Response to the Crisis Among American Men by Weldon Hardenbrook
The Essential Difference: The Truth about the Male and Female Brain by Simon Baron-Cohen
Why Gender Matters: What Parents and Teachers Need to Know about the Emerging Science of Sex Differences by Leonard Sax
Boys Adrift: the five factors driving the growing epidemic of unmotivated boys and underachieving young men by Leonard Sax
Girls On the Edge: the four factors drivng the new crisis for girls: sexual identity, the cyberbubble, obsessions, environmental toxins by Leonard Sax
Sex on the Brain: The Biological Differences Between Men and Women by Deborah Blum
Male, Female: The Evolution of Human Sex Differences by David C. Geary
Brain Sex: The Real Difference Between Men and Women by Anne Moir
Why Men Don't Iron: the fascinating and unalterable differences between men and women by Anne Moir
Why Men Rule: A Theory of Male Dominance (formerly *The Inevitability of Patriarchy*) by Steven Goldberg
The War Against Boys: How Misguided Feminism Is Harming Our Young Men by Christina Hoff Sommers
The Decline of Males by Lionel Tiger.
Men on Strike: Why Men Are Boycotting Marriage, Fatherhood, and the American Dream—and Why It Matters by Helen Smith
Taking Sex Differences Seriously by Steven E. Rhoads
The Complete Tightwad Gazette: Promoting Thrift as a Viable Alternative Lifestyle by Amy Dacyczyn
How to Raise a Family on Less Than Two Incomes: The Complete Guide to Managing Your Money Better So You Can Spend More Time With Your Kids by Denise M. Topolnicki
The Complete Idiot's Guide to Simple Living by Georgene Muller Lockwood
Women Leaving the Workplace: How To Make The Transition From Work To Home by Larry Burkett
How to Survive Without a Salary: Learning How to Live the Conserver Lifestyle by Charles Long
The Essence Of Feminism by Kirsten Birkett
Men and Marriage by George Gilder
Sexual Suicide by George Gilder
Manhood Redux: Standing Up To Feminism by Carlton Freedman
Back to Patriarchy by Daniel Amneus
Home by Choice: Raising Emotionally Secure Children in an Insecure World by Brenda Hunter
Day Care Deception: What The Child Care Establishment Isn't Telling Us by Brian C. Robertson
7 Myths of Working Mothers: Why Children and (Most) Careers Just Don't Mix by SuzzaneVenker
The Flipside of Feminism: What Conservative Women Know—and Men Can't Say by Suzanne Venker and Phyllis Schlafly

What To Expect When No One's Expecting: America's Coming Demographic Disaster by Jonathan V. Last
The Empty Cradle: How Falling Birthrates Threaten World Prosperity by Phillip Longman
Domestic Tranquillity: A Brief Against Feminism by Carolyn Graglia
Me? Obey Him?: The Obedient Wife and God's Way of Happiness and Blessing in the Home by Elizabeth Rice Handford
Feminine Appeal: Seven Virtues of a Godly Wife and Mother by Carolyn Mahaney
What is a Family? by Edith Schaeffer (www.labri.org)
The Hidden Art of Homemaking by Edith Schaeffer (www.labri.org)
The Fruit of Her Hands by Nancy Wilson
I Kissed Dating Goodbye by Joshua Harris
Boy Meets Girl: Say Hello to Courtship by Joshua Harris
Created To Be His Help Meet by Debi Pearl
Sheet Music: Uncovering the Secrets of Sexual Intimacy in Marriage by Kevin Leman
What He Must Be: ...If He Wants to Marry My Daughter by Voddie Baucham
Family Shepherds: Calling and Equipping Men to Lead Their Homes by Voddie Baucham
Joyfully at Home by Jasmine Baucham
Let Me Be a Woman by Elisabeth Elliot
Passion and Purity by Elisabeth Elliot
Nonviolent Communication: A Language of Life by Marshall B. Rosenberg
Buying a House Debt-Free: Equipping Your Son by Steven and Teri Maxwell
Love & Respect: The Love She Most Desires; The Respect He Desperately Needs by Emerson Eggerichs
Mother and Son: The Respect Effect by Emerson Eggerichs

THIRD BLESSING BOOKS

Cohousing: A Contemporary Approach to Housing Ourselves by Kathryn McCamant (book and video)
L'Abri by Edith Schaeffer (www.labri.org)
Mortgage Free!, Second Edition: Innovative Strategies for Debt-Free Home Ownership by Robert L. Roy
How to Build Your Own Log Home for Less Than $15,000 by Robert L. Williams
Men's Manual Volume II by Bill Gothard and Jim Sammons
The Total Money Makeover: A Proven Plan for Financial Fitness by Dave Ramsey
Financial Peace Revisited by Dave Ramsey
More than Enough: The Ten Keys to Changing Your Financial Destiny by Dave Ramsey
The Money Answer Book: Quick Answers to Everyday Financial Questions by Dave Ramsey *Life or Debt: A One-Week Plan for a Lifetime of Financial Freedom* by Stacy Johnson
Money Made Simple: How to Flawlessly Control Your Finances in Minutes a Year by Stacy Johnson
It's Not About the Money by Bob Proctor
Free to Choose by Milton Friedman
Libertarianism: A Political Philosophy for Tomorrow by John Hospers
Liberty Reclaimed: A New Look at American Politics by Jim Lewis
It Is Dangerous To Be Right When the Government Is Wrong by Andrew Napolitano
Theodore and Woodrow: How Two American Presidents Destroyed Constitutional Freedom by Andrew Napolitano
The Bias Against Guns: Why Almost Everything You've Heard About Gun Control Is Wrong by John Lott

More Guns, Less Crime by John Lott
Straight Shooting: Firearms, Economics and Public Policy by John Lott
The State Vs. The People: The Rise of the American Police State by Claire Wolfe and Aaron Zelman
Death by "Gun Control": The Human Cost of Victim Disarmament by Aaron S. Zelman (www.jpfo.org)
Armed & Female: Taking Control by Paxton Quigley
Armed and Female: Twelve Million American Women Own Guns, Should You? by Paxton Quigley
Gunfighters, Highwaymen, and Vigilantes: Violence on the Frontier by Roger D. McGrath
Black Man With A Gun by Kenneth V. F. Blanchard
From Luby's to the Legislature: One Woman's Fight Against Gun Control by Suzanna Gratia Hupp
Another Man's War: The True Story of One Man's Battle to Save Children in the Sudan by Sam Childers
Guns and Violence: The English Experience by Joyce Malcolm
Thank God I Had a Gun: True Accounts of Self-Defense by Chris Bird
Personal Defense for Women by Gila Hayes, Massad Ayoob
Control: Exposing the Truth About Guns by Glenn Beck
The Seven Myths of Gun Control: Reclaiming the Truth About Guns, Crime, and the Second Amendment by Richard Poe
Aiming for Liberty: The Past, Present, And Future of Freedom and Self-Defense by David B. Kopel
The Samurai, the Mountie, and the Cowboy: Should America Adopt the Gun Controls of Other Democracies by David B. Kopel
Gun Control and Gun Rights: A Reader and Guide by Andrew J. McClurg, David B. Kopel
Guns: Who Should Have Them? by David B. Kopel
The Cornered Cat: A Woman's Guide to Concealed Carry by Kathy Jackson

Dial 911 and Die by Richard Stevens
America Alone: The End of the World as We Know It by Mark Steyn
Religion of Peace?: Islam's War Against the World by Gregory M. Davis
The Truth About Muhammad: Founder of the World's Most Intolerant Religion by Robert Spencer
The Politically Incorrect Guide to Islam (and the Crusade) by Robert Spencer
Islam Unveiled: Disturbing Questions About the World's Fastest Growing Faith by Robert Spencer
Religion of Peace?: Why Christianity is and Islam Isn't by Robert Spencer
Because They Hate by Brigitte Babriel
Stop the Islamization of America: A Practical Guide to the Resistance by Pamela Geller

The Sword of the Prophet: Politically Incorrect Guide to Islam by Serge Trifkovic
Why I Am Not a Muslim by Ibn Warraq
Why I Left Jihad: The Root of Terrorism and the Return of Radical Islam by Walid Shoebat
Now They Call Me Infidel: Why I Renounced Jihad for America, Israel, and the War on Terror by Nonie Darwish
Cruel and Usual Punishment: The Terrifying Global Implications of Islamic Law by Nonie Darwish
Lights Out: Islam, Free Speech, and the Twilight of the West by Mark Steyn
The Legacy of Islamic Antisemitism by Andrew Bostom
Can Capitalism Survive? by Benjamin A. Rogge
Power Kills: Democracy as a Method of Nonviolence and Death by Government by R. J. Rummel
More Liberty Means Less Government: Our Founders Knew This Well by Walter E. Williams
The Liberal Mind: The Psychological Causes of Political Madness by Lyle H. Rossiter, Jr.

Minimum Wage, Maximum Damage by Jim Cox
Restoring the American Dream by Robert Ringer
How Capitalism Saved America: The Untold History of Our Country, from the Pilgrims to the Present by Thomas Dilorenzo
The Libertarian Theology of Freedom by Rev. Edmund A. Opitz
The Entrepreneurial Vocation by Robert Sirico
Money, Greed, and God: Why Capitalism Is the Solution and Not the Problem by Jay Richards
Indivisible: Restoring Faith, Family, and Freedom Before It's Too Late by Jay Richards
Defending the Free Market: The Moral Case for a Free Economy by Rev. Robert Sirico (buy and watch interview at www.lfb.org)
Freedomnomics: Why the Free Market Works and Other Half-Baked Theories Don't by John Lott
The Economy in Mind by Warren Brookes
In Pursuit of Happiness and Good Government by Charles Murray
What It Means to Be a Libertarian by Charles Murray
Losing Ground: American Social Policy, 1950-1980 by Charles Murray
Real Education by Charles Murray
The Terrible Truth About Liberals by Neal Boortz
A Time for Truth by William Simon
The Big Ripoff: How Big Business and Big Government Steal Your Money by Timothy P. Carney
Is Public Education Necessary by Samuel Blumenfeld (www.howtotutor.com)
NEA: Trojan Horse in American Education by Samuel Blumenfeld (www.howtotutor.com)
Recapturing the Spirit of Enterprise by George Gilder
The Imperative of American Leadership: A Challenge to Neo-Isolationism by Joshua Muravchik
Exporting Democracy: Fulfilling America's Destiny by Joshua Muravchik
Capitalism: The Unknown Ideal by Ayn Rand (www.lfb.org)
Atlas Shrugged by Ayn Rand
The Real Crash by Peter Schiff
Socialism: An Economic and Sociological Analysis by Ludwig von Mises
*Dependent on D.C.*by Charlotte Twight (www.lfb.org)
Liberty versus the Tyranny of Socialism by Walter E. Williams
Restore the Republic by Jonathan Emord
The Rise of Tyranny by Jonathan W. Emord
What Has Government Done to Our Money? by Murray N. Rothbard
Denationalisation of Money by Friedrich Hayek
The Road to Serfdom by Friedrich Hayek
Capitalism and the Historians by Friedrich Hayek
Meltdown: A Free-Market Look at Why the Stock Market Collapsed, the Economy Tanked, and Government Bailouts Will Make Things Worse by Thomas Woods
Rollback: Repealing Big Government Before the Coming Fiscal Collapse by Thomas Woods
The Politically Incorrect Guide to American History by Thomas E. Woods
33 Questions About American History You're Not Supposed to Ask by Thomas E. Woods
Rollback: Repealing Big Government Before the Coming Fiscal Collapse by Thomas E. Woods
Back on the Road to Serfdom: The Resurgence of Statism by Thomas E. Woods
It's OK to Leave the Plantation: The New Underground Railroad by C. Mason Weaver
Egalitarianism as a Revolt Against Nature and Other Essays by Murray Rothbard
Against Leviathan: Government Power and a Free Society by Robert Higgs
Neither Liberty nor Safety: Fear, Ideology, and the Growth of Government by Robert Higgs
The Food and Drink Police: America's Nannies, Busybodies, and Petty Tyrants by James T. Bennett and Thomas J. DiLorenzo
Hamilton's Curse: How Jefferson's Arch Enemy Betrayed the American Revolution--and What It Means for Americans Today by Thomas J. DiLorenzo

How Capitalism Saved America: The Untold History of Our Country, from the Pilgrims to the Present by Thomas J. DiLorenzo
Nanny State: How Food Fascists, Teetotaling Do-Gooders, Priggish Moralists, and other Boneheaded Bureaucrats are Turning America into a Nation of Children by David Harsanyi.
Revolution: A Manifesto by Ron Paul
End the Fed by Ron Paul
The Ethics of Money Production by Jörg Guido Hülsmann
Mises: The Last Knight of Liberalism by Jörg Guido Hülsmann
Honest Money: The Biblical Blueprint for Money and Banking by Gary North
Something for Nothing: The All-Consuming Desire That Turns the American Dream into a Social Nightmare by Brian Tracy
Vindicating the Founders: Race, Sex, Class, and Justice in the Origins of America by Thomas G. West
The 7 Habits of Highly Effective People: Powerful Lessons in Personal Change by Stephen Covey
Our Sacred Honor: Words of Advice from the Founders in Stories, Letters, Poems, and Speeches by William J. Bennett
The Book of Man: Readings on the Path to Manhood by William J. Bennett
The Dream and the Nightmare by Myron Magnet
The Tragedy of American Compassion by Marvin Olasky
From Cottage to Work Station: The Family's Search for Social Harmony in the Industrial Age by Allan Carlson
The New Agrarian Mind: The Movement Toward Decentralist Thought in Twentieth-Century America by Allan Carlson
The "American Way": Family and Community in the Shaping of the American Identity by Allan Carlson
Pleasant Valley by Louis Bromfield
The Farm by Louis Bromfield
This Ugly Civilization by Ralph Borsodi
Flight From The City by Ralph Borsodi
Ecovillages: A Practical Guide to Sustainable Communities by Jan Martin Bang
Blue Gold: The Fight to Stop the Corporate Theft of the World's Water by Maude Barlow
Grasp the Nettle: Making Biodynamic Farming and Gardening Work by Peter Proctor
How To Grow More Vegetables by John Jeavons
Keeping a Family Cow by Joann S. Grohman (www.real-food.com)
Holy Cows & Hog Heaven: The Food Buyer's Guide to Farm Friendly Food by Joel Salatin
Everything I Want to Do Is Illegal: War Stories from the Local Food Front by Joel Salatin
Pastured Poultry Profits by Joel Salatin
You Can Farm: The Entrepreneur's Guide to Start & Succeed in a Farming Enterprise by Joel Salatin
Salad Bar Beef by Joel Salatin (www.polyfacefarms.com)
Family Friendly Farming: A Multi-Generational Home-Based Business Testament by Joel Salatin
Folks, This Ain't Normal: A Farmer's Advice for Happier Hens, Healthier People, and a Better World by Joel Salatin
The Sheer Ecstasy of Being a Lunatic Farmer by Joel Salatin (www.back40books.com)
Pasture Perfect: The Far-Reaching Benefits of Choosing Meat, Eggs, and Dairy Products from Grass-Fed Animals by Jo Robinson
How to Build Your Own Greenhouse by Roger Marshall
Made from Scratch: Discovering the Pleasures of a Handmade Life by Jenna Woginrich
The Urban Homestead: Your Guide to Self-sufficient Living in the Heart of the City by Kelly Coyne
Food Not Lawns: How to Turn Your Yard into a Garden And Your Neighborhood into a

Community by Heather Coburn Flores
Deliberate Life: The Ultimate Homesteading Guide by Nicole Faires
Today's Homestead: Volume I by Dona Grant
Mini Farming for Self Sufficiency by Brett Markham
Micro Eco-Farming: Prospering from Backyard to Small Acreage in Partnership with the Earth by Barbara Berst Adams
Homesteading: A Back to Basics Guide to Growing Your Own Food, Canning, Keeping Chickens, Generating Your Own Energy, Crafting, Herbal Medicine, and More by Abigail R. Gehring
Five Acres and Independence: A Handbook for Small Farm Management by Maurice G. Kains
Living on An Acre: A Practical Guide to the Self-Reliant Life by U.S. Department. of Agriculture
How to Survive Without a Salary: Learning How to Live the Conserver Lifestyle by Charles Long
Hobby Farm: Living Your Rural Dream for Pleasure and Profit by Carol Ekarius
Hobby Farming For Dummies by Theresa A. Husarik
Making Your Small Farm Profitable: Apply 25 Guiding Principles/Develop New Crops & New Markets/Maximize Net Profits Per Acre by Ron Macher
Building a Sustainable Business: A Guide to Developing a Business Plan for Farms and Rural Businesses by Minnesota Institute for Sustainable Agriculture
Grass-Fed Cattle by Julius Ruechel
One Acre and Security: How to Live Off the Earth Without Ruining It by Bradford Angier
Country Wisdom & Know-How by the Editors of Storey Publishing's Country Wisdom Boards
The Big Book of Self-Reliant Living, 2nd: Advice and Information on Just About Everything You Need to
Independence Days: A Guide to Sustainable Food Storage & Preservation by Sharon Astyk
A Nation of Farmers by Sharon Astyk
The Self-Reliant Homestead: a Guide for Country Living by Charles Sanders
Last Child in the Woods: Saving Our Children From Nature-Deficit Disorder by Richard Louv
The Nature Principle: Human Restoration and the End of Nature-Deficit Disorder by Ricard Louv (www.richardlouv.com)
Wild Play: Parenting Adventures in the Great Outdoors by David Sobel
*Sharing Nature with Children **by*** Joseph Cornell **(**www.sharingnature.com**)**
Blue Collar and Proud of It: The All-in-One-Resource for Finding Freedom, Financial Success, and Security Outside of the Cubicle by Joe Lamacchia (www.bluecollarandproudofit.com)
How to Store Your Garden Produce by Piers Warren (ww.back40books.com)
Water storage: tanks, cisterns, aquifers, and ponds for domestic supply, fire and emergency use - includes how to make ferrocement water tanks by Art Ludwig
Rainwater Harvesting for Drylands: Guiding Principles to Welcome Rain into Your Life and Landscape by Brad Lancaster
Rocket Mass Heaters: Superefficient Woodstoves You Can Build by Ianto Evans
The Raw Milk Revolution by David Gumpert. Forward by Joel Salatin (www.back40books.com)
Natural Dog: A Holistic Guide for Healthier Dogs by Deva Khalsa (www.back40books.com)
Let it Rot! The Gardener's Guide to Composting by Stu Campbell (www.back40books.com)
Slow Money by Woody Tasch (www.back40books.com)
Small Farms are Real Farms: Sustaining People through Agriculture by John Ikerd (www.back40books.com)
Family Farming: a New Economic Vision by Marty Strange (www.back40books.com)
How to Be a DIRT-SMART Buyer of Country Property by Curtis Seltzer (www.back40books.com)
Our Farm: Four Seasons with Five Kids on One Family's Farm by Michael J. Rosen (www.back40books.com)
The Next Green Revolution: essential steps to a healthy, sustainable agriculture by James E. Horne
*Farming in Nature's Image: An Ecological Approach To Agricu*lture by Judy Soule, Jon Piper

Living off the Grid: A Simple Guide to Creating and Maintaining a Self-Reliant Supply of Energy, Water, Shelter and More by Dave Black
How to Live Off-grid: Journeys Outside the System by Nick Rosen
The All You Can Eat Gardening Handbook: Easy Organic Vegetables and More Money in Your Pocket by Cam Mather (www.aztext.com)
$mart Power: An urban guide to renewable energy and efficiency by William H. Kemp (www.aztext.com)
Thriving During Challenging Times: The Energy, Food and Financial Independence Handbook by Cam Mather (www.aztext.com)
The Zero-Carbon Car: Building the Car the Auto Industry Can't Get Right by William H. Kemp
The Self-Sufficiency Handbook: A Complete Guide to Greener Living by Alan Bridgewater and Gill Bridgewater
How to Live off the Grid (How to Kill your Debt with Free Renewable Energy, Fuels & Self-Sustainability) by Dan Martin
The Self-sufficient Life and How to Live It: : the complete back-to-basics guide by John Seymour
Power with nature: alternative energy solutions for homeowners by Rex A. Ewing (www.pixyjackpress.com)
PREPAREDNESS NOW!: An Emergency Survival Guide for Civilians and Their Families by Aton Edwards (www.readyforanything.org)
Emergency Food Storage & Survival Handbook: Everything You Need to Know to Keep Your Family Safe in a Crisis by Peggy Layton (www.peggylayton.net)
How to Survive the End of the World as We Know It: Tactics, Techniques, and Technologies for Uncertain Times by James Wesley Rawles (www.survivalblog.com)
When All Hell Breaks Loose: Stuff You Need To Survive When Disaster Strikes by Cody Lundin (ww.codylundin.com)
Bug Out: The Complete Plan for Escaping a Catastrophic Disaster Before It's Too Late by Scott B. Williams (www.scottbwilliams.com)
Emergency: this book will save your life by Neil Strauss
Sustainable Preparedness: Reclaiming Noble Independence in an Unstable World (www.sustainablepreparedness.com)
Strategic Relocation—North American Guide to Safe Place by Joel Skousen
How to Implement a High Security Shelter in the Home by Joel Skousen
The Secure Home by Joel Skousen (joelskousen.com)
Emergency Sandbag Shelter and Eco-Village: How to Build Your Own by Nader Khalili (www.calearth.org)
Building with Earth: A Guide to Flexible-Form Earthbag Construction by Paulina Wojciechowska (www.earthbagbuilding.com/resources.htm)
Earthbag Building : The Tools, Tricks and Techniques by Kaki Hunter (www.earthbagbuilding.com/resources.htm)
Earthbag Building Guide by Owen Geiger pdf (www.earthbagbuilding.com/resources.htm)
Separating School and State: How to Liberate America's Families by Sheldon Richman
The Unprocessed Child: Living Without School by Valerie Fitzenreiter
Teach Your Own: The John Holt Book Of Homeschooling by John Holt and Pat Farenga
*Challenging Assumptions in Education b*y Wendy Priesnitz
*School Free - The Homeschooling Handbook b*y Wendy Priesnitz
The Book of Learning and Forgetting by Frank Smith
Real Lives: Eleven Teenagers Who Don't Go to School by Grace Llewelyn
The Unschooling Handbook: How to Use the Whole World As Your Child's Classroom by Mary Griffith
Guerrilla Learning: How to Give Your Kids a Real Education With or Without School by Grace Llewelyn and Amy Silver

Free to Learn: Five Ideas for a Joyful Unschooling Life by Pam Laricchia
Accelerated Distance Learning: The New Way to Earn Your College Degree in the Twenty-First Century by Brad Voeller
The Unschooling Unmanual by Nanda Van Gestel
Dumbing Us Down: The Hidden Curriculum of Compulsory Schooling, 10th Anniversary Edition by John Taylor Gatto
Unschooling Rules: 55 Ways to Unlearn What We Know About Schools and Rediscover Education by Clark Aldrich
Intuitive Unschooling - How to Home School for Success by Monika Mraovic
Radical Unschooling - A Revolution Has Begun-Revised Edition by Dayna Martin
Unschooling: A Lifestyle of Learning by Sara McGrath
Unschooling (Kindle Single) by Astra Taylor
Big Book of Unschooling by Sandra Dodd
The Unschooling Happiness Project by Sara McGrath
The Teenage Liberation Handbook: How to Quit School and Get a Real Life and Education by Grace Llewellyn
Free Range Learning: How Homeschooling Changes Everything by Laura Grace Weldon
Unschooling Wins the Race by Sara McGrath
Better Than College: How to Build a Successful Life Without a Four-Year Degree by Blake Boles
Weapons of Mass Instruction: A Schoolteacher's Journey Through the Dark World of Compulsory Schooling by John Taylor Gatto
Instead of Education: Ways to Help People do Things Better by John Caldwell Holt
Homeschooling with Gentleness: A Catholic Discovers Unschooling by Suzie Andres
Back to Basics: Raising Self-Sufficient Children by Barbara Frank
Finding Joy: A Christian's Journey To An Unschooled Life by Julie A. Brow Polanco
Radical Unschooling - A Revolution Has Begun by Dayna Martin
101 Reasons Why I'm an Unschooler by ps pirro
Unschooling Kelly: A Honest Look at American Schools by John D. Mcewan
Our Transition Into Unschooling by Akilah S. Richards
All About Unschooling by Grace Stern
Unschooling 101: Top 10 Questions About Learning Without School [Kindle Edition] by Sara McGrath
The Willed Curriculum, Unschooling, and Self-Direction: What Do Love, Trust, Respect, Care, and Compassion Have To Do With Learning? by Carlo Ricci
Deschooling Gently by Tammy Takahashi
Everything Voluntary: From Politics to Parenting by Skyler J. Collins and Chris R.
Parenting A Free Child: An Unschooled Life by Rue Kream
The Exhausted School: Bending the Bars of Traditional Education by John Taylor Gatto
Homeschool Your Child for Free: More Than 1,200 Smart, Effective, and Practical Resources for Home Education on the Internet and Beyond by Laura Gold, Joan M. Zielinski
Homeschooling Our Children Unschooling Ourselves by Alison McKee
A Different Kind of Teacher: Solving the Crisis of American Schooling by John Taylor Gatto
Bullying at School: What We Know and What We Can Do (Understanding Children's Worlds) by Dan Olweus
The Twelve-Year Sentence: Radical Views on Compulsory Education by David Boaz
Learning All the Time by John Holt
Instead of Education: Ways to Help People do Things Better by John Holt
The Ultimate Book of Homeschooling Ideas by Linda Dobson
Home Learning Year by Year by Rebecca Rupp
Deschooling Our Lives by Matt Hern
The Homework Myth: Why Our Kids Get Too Much of a Bad Thing by Alfie Kohn

Field Day: Getting Society Out of School by Matt Hern
The Harsh Truth about Public Schools by Bruce Shortt
Public Schools, Public Menace: How Public Schools Lie To Parents and Betray Our Children by Joel Turtel
Weapons of Mass Instruction: A Schoolteacher's Journey Through the Dark World of Compulsory Schooling by John Taylor Gatto
Wait Till It's Free: *The Plague of Socialized Medicine and the Only Known Cure* by Colin Gunn
How to Meet in Homes by Gene Edwards
Rethinking Elders by Gene Edwards
When the Church was Led by Laymen by Gene Edwards
Beyond Radical by Gene Edwards
The House Church: A Model for Renewing the Church by Del Birkey
So You Want to Start a House Church? by Frank Viola
Rethinking the Wineskin by Frank Viola
The Untold Story of the New Testament Church by Frank Viola
Straight Talk to Elders by Frank Viola
Pagan Christianity by Frank Viola and George Barna
Who is Your Covering? by Frank Viola
So You Want to Start a House Church? by Frank Viola
Gathering in Homes by Frank Viola
Houses That Change the World: The Return of the House Churches by Wolfgang Simson
The Way Church Ought to Be: Ninety-five Propositions for a Return to Radical Christianity by Robert Lund
The Shaping of Things to Come: Innovation and Mission for the 21st-century Church by Michael Frost and Alan Hirsch
The Church Comes Home: Building Community and Mission through Home Churches by Robert and Julia Banks
Going to Church in the First Century by Robert Banks
Paul's Idea of Community: The Early House Churches in Their Cultural Setting by Robert Banks
Simply Church by Tony and Felicity Dale
An Army of Ordinary People by Felicity Dale
The Global House Church Movement by Rad Zdero
NEXUS: The World House Church Movement Reader by Rad Zdero (missionbooks.org)
Revolution by George Barna
The Church in the House—a return to simplicity by Robert Fitts Sr.
Jesus Has Left The Building by Paul Viera
House2House magazine (House2House.com)
When The Church Leaves The Building by David Fredrickson (www.familyroommedia.com)
The Naked Church by Wayne Jacobsen (www.familyroommedia.com)
Authentic Relationships by Wayne Jacobsen
The Way Church Was Meant To Be: A Roadmap for the Worldwide Exodus Out of Traditional Church by Terry Stanley
Simple/House Church Revolution Book by Roger Thoman (free online download at www.rogerthoman.com)
House Church and Mission by Roger Gehring
Going to the Root: Nine Proposals for Radical Church Renewal by Christian S. Smith
The House Church Book: rediscover the dynamic, organic, relational, viral community Jesus started by Wolfgang Simson
Family Driven Faith: Doing What It Takes to Raise Sons and Daughters Who Walk With God by Voddie Baucham
Megashift: Igniting Spiritual Power by James Rutz

The Open Church: How to Bring Back the Exciting Life of the First Century by James Rutz (www.megashiftministries.org)
Radical Renewal: The Problem of Wineskins Today by Howard A. Snyder
Ekklesia: To the Roots of Biblical House Church Life by Steve Atkerson
Toward A House Church Theology by Steve Atkerson
House Church Networks: A Church for a New Generation by Larry Kreider
Starting a House Church: A New Model for Living Out Your Faith by Larry Kreider
Cultivating a Life for God: Multiplying Disciples through Life Transforming Groups by Neil Cole
Organic Church: Growing Faith Where Life Happens by Neil Cole
Going to the Root: Nine Proposals for Radical Church Renewal by Christian Smith
To Preach Or Not To Preach by David Norrington
A Critique of Youth Ministries by Chris Schlect
The Church Impotent: The Feminization of Christianity by Leon J. Podles
Preaching as Dialogue: Is the Sermon a Sacred Cow? by Jeremy Thomson
Academically Adrift: Limited Learning on College Campuses by Richard Arum and Josipa Roksa
Earthing: The Most Important Health Discovery Ever? by Stephen T. Sinatra
The Case Against Adolescence: Rediscovering the Adult in Every Teen by Robert Epstein

SUGGESTED AUDIO-VISUALS

1. PURITY

DVD
1. *I Kissed Dating Goodbye, DVD* by Joshua Harris (www.joshhaarris.com)
2. *Sex at its Best: A Positive Morality for Today's Youth* by Ron Hutchcraft (hutchcraft.com)
3. Sweet Suicide: How Sugar Is Destroying The Health of Our Society by Nancy Appleton (www.ppnf.org, www.nancyappleton.com)
4. Sweet Fire: Understanding Sugar's Role in Your Health by Mary Toscano (www.marytoscano.com)
5. Sweet Misery: A Poisoned World (watch entire show online at www.topdocumentaryfilms.com)
6. Sweet Remedy: The World Reacts to an Adulterated Food Supply (www.mercola.com, www.sweetremedy.tv) (watch online at www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
7. The Truth about Aspartame by Russell Blaylock (www.russellblaylockmd.com) (www.sweetremedy.tv)
8. Transforming the Difficult Child: The Nurtured Heart Approach by Howard Glasser (www.difficultchild.com)
9. Money Talks: Profits Before Patient Safety (www.moneytalksthemovie.com)
10. Healing Cancer From Inside Out by Mike Anderson (www.gerson.com)
11. Blue Gold (www.bluegold-worldwaterwars.com)
12. The Beautiful Truth (www.thebeautifultruthmovie.com)
13. King Corn (www.pbs.com, www.kingcorn.net, watch for free at www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
14. Bad Seed: The Truth About Our Food (www.badseed.info)
15. Food Matters (www.foodmatters.tv)
16. *Simply Raw: Reversing Diabetes in 30 Days* (www.rawfor30days.com, watch the full documentary www.topdocumentaryfilms.com)

17. What Your Doctor Doesn't Know About Nutritional Medicine May Be Killing You by Ray Strand (www.raystrand.com)
18. Valerie Hall's Controlling Blood Sugar by Valerie Hall (valeriehallnutrition.com)
19. Vaccines: What CDC Documents and Science Reveal by Sherri Tenpenny (www.drtenpennystore.com, www.sayingnotovaccines.com)
20. Gardasil & the History of Mandatory Vaccines by Sherri Tenpenny (www.drtenpennystore.com)
21. Vaccines: The Risks, Benefits and Choices by Sherri Tenpenny (www.drtenpennystore.com, www.sayingnotovaccines.com) (this three hour presentation is on YouTube.com)
22. Vaccination - The Hidden Truth (www.vaccination.inoz.com) (Youtube has this video)
23. Vaccine Developers: Heroes or Villains? by Sherri Tenpenny (www.drtenpenny.com)
24. The Fluoride Deception: an interview with Christopher Bryson (watch entire documentary online at www.topdocumentaryfilms.com)
25. Money Talks: Profits Before Patient Safety (www.moneytalksthemovie.com)
26. Professional Perspectives on Water Fluoridation (www.fluoridealert.org)
27. The Whole Truth About Milk - Raw vs. Pasteurized by David Getoff (www.naturopath4you.com, www.nutritioneducationdvds.com)
28. The Truth About Organic Food by David Getoff (www.naturopath4you.com, 29. www.nutritioneducationdvds.com)
29. Children's Emotional Problems - ADD/ADHD and More (www.naturopath4you.com, www.nutritioneducationdvds.com)
30. Cancer - Your Doctor's Lack of Knowledge can Shorten Your Life by David Getoff (www.nutritioneducationdvds.com/Cancer.html)
31. Diabetes - Are drugs the only answer? Are drugs the best answer? (www.naturopath4you.com, www.nutritioneducationdvds.com)
32. Flavoring Foods for Your Health (www.naturopath4you.com, www.nutritioneducationdvds.com)
33. How to Reverse Heart Disease Naturally (www.naturopath4you.com, www.nutritioneducationdvds.com)
34. Delicious, Healthy Salad Dressings (www.naturopath4you.com, www.nutritioneducationdvds.com)
35. Nutritional Supplements (www.naturopath4you.com, www.nutritioneducationdvds.com)
36. Making a Killing: The Untold Story of Psychotropic Drugging (www.foodmatters.tv, YouTube)
37. The Marketing of Madness- Are we all Insane? (www.foodmatters.tv, www.cchr.org/videos.html)
38. Dying to Have Known by Steve Kroschel (www.gerson.org) (Netflix has this for free to watch)
39. Cancer Is Curable Now (www.canceriscurablenow.com) (entire video is at YouTube.com)
40. Curing the Incurable with Vitamin C by Thomas Levy (www.ihealthtube.com)
41. Killer at Large : Why Obesity is America's Greatest Threat (www.killeratlarge.com)
42. The Future of Food (www.thefutureoffood.com or rent at www.quakerearthcare.org) (netflix.com)
43. Food Beware: The French Organic Revolution (www.organicconnectmag.com)
44. We Feed the World (www.we-feed-the-world.at)
45. Poisoned Waters (www.pbs.org)
46. Tapped (www.tappedthefilm.com)
47. Masks of Madness (International Schizophrenia Foundation www.isfmentalhealth.org)
48. Coconut Oil: The New Health Food of the 21st Century CD by Bruce Fife (www.coconutresearchcenter.org)
49. Dirt! The Movie (narrated by Jamie Lee Curtis) (www.dirtthemovie.org, organicconnectmag.com)

50. The Vitamin D Revolution by Soram Khalsa (YouTube.com, www.drsoram.com)
51. *Shoot 'Em Up - The Truth About Vaccines* by David Kirby, Peggy O'Mara, Barbara Loe Fisher, and Dan Olmsted (www.shootemupthedocumentary.com)
52. *Vaccine Nation* by Gary Null (www.vaccinenation.net) (whole dvd is at YouTube.com)
53. *Are Vaccines Safe?* by Mary Tocco (www.childhoodshots.com)
54. *The Greater Good* (www.greatergoodmovie.org)
55. *Vaccine Insights* by Dr. Patricia Jordan (watch at www.naturalnews.tv)
56. Goals: Setting and Achieving Them on Schedule by Zig Ziglar
57. *Crazy Sexy Cancer* (www.crazysexycancer.com)
58. *Food Inc.: A Participant Guide: How Industrial Food is Making Us Sicker, Fatter, and Poorer and What You Can Do About It* (www.foodincmovie.com) (www.metacafe.com/watch/8144245/food_inc) Netflix.com)
59. *Big River: A King Corn Companion* (www.bigriverfilm.com)
60. *The Only Answer to Cancer* (wwwdrleonardcoldwell.com) (shop.instinctbasedmedicinestore.com)
61. *Fat, Sick & Nearly Dead* (www.fatsickandnearlydead.com) (www.hulu.com/watch/289122 and www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
62. *Cut Poison Burn* (www.cutpoisonburn.com, www.youtube.com/watch?v=uX8saD8fATw)
63. *Fat Head* by Tom Naughton (www.fathead-movie.com)
64. *Vaccinations: Murder By Injection* by Dr. Scott Whitaker (www.realityspeaksbookstore.com)
65. *Full day Vaccine Seminar* (8 hours) by Tim O'Shea (www.immunitionltd.com)
66. Direct Order by Scott Miller Narrated by Michael Douglas (www.directorder.org)
67. Vaccine Epidemc (www.vaccineepidemic.com) (watch videos at YouTube.com)
68. Tedd Koren – watch his videos at YouTube.com
69. Flu and Flu Vaccines - What's Coming Through That Needle by Sherri Tenpenny (ww.drtenpenny.com)
70. Vaccine Developers: Heroes or Villains? by Sherri Tenpenny (www.drtenpenny.com)
71. Hear the Suzanne Humphries, MD Vaccine Interview on Natural News (www.vaccinationcouncil.org)
72. *Dangers of Vaccines* by Jamie Murphy (www.jamiemurphy.net and on YouTube)
73. *Mercury Undercover* (www.mercuryundercover.com, trailer at YouTube)
74. *Vaccines and Toxins Cause Autism, Sudden Infant Death Syndrome, SIDS & Crib Death* by David Davis (YouTube.com and www.biomedicaltreatmentforautism.com)
75. Dr Humphries: "There will never be a safe vaccine." (www.vaccinationcouncil.org - YouTube.com)
76. *Vaccines and Brain Development* by Russell Blaylock (www.radioliberty.com/vvabd.html and YouTube.com)
77. *Vaccines Kill Innocent Children!—Thousands of Children are Murdered Each Year* by Ramiel Nagel (www.youtube.com/watch?v=E5Fdgj-Sisg&feature=related)
78. *Vaccinations: Murder By Injection* by Dr. Scott Whitaker (watch YouTube videos and www.realityspeaksbookstore.com)
79. www.ihealthtube.com — Watch videos on vaccines at this excellent website
80. *Should I vaccinate my child or baby?* by Andreas Moritz (http://wn.com/should_i_vaccinate)
81. Watch videos within an article against the vaccine gardasil written by Joseph Mercola titled "213 Women Who Took This Suffered Permanent Disability" at his website (http://articles.mercola.com/sites/articles/archive/2012/01/24/hpv-vaccine-victim-sues-merck.aspx) and watch all videos on vaccines at Dr. Mercola's website www.mercola.com)
82. Duggar family gets Chicken Pox (watch on YouTube.com)
83. *Burzynski, the Movie* (www.burzynskimovie.com) (can watch on Netflix, YouTube, topdocumentaryfilms.com and www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
84. *The Only Answer to Cancer* (drleonardcoldwell.com) (shop.instinctbasedmedicinestore.com)

85. *Intravenous Ascorbic Acid (IVC) and Cancer: History & Science* (www.riordanclinic.org)
86. *Vitamin C and Cancer by Hugh Riordan* (www.riordanclinic.org)
87. *Vitamins Can Kill Cancer: New Thoughts* by Reagan Houston (www.riordanclinic.org)
88. *How Vitamin C Fights Cancer* by Ron Hunninghake (www.riordanclinic.org)
89. *Rethinking Cancer* (for sale at and also watch free videos at www.rethinkingcancer.org)
90. www.ihealthtube.com — Watch videos at this excellent website
91. *Food Security: Who Feeds Who* by Shiv Chopra (www.shivchopra.com)
92. *Vaccines: Prevention or Curse?* by Shiv Chopra (www.mediareel.net) (www.shivchopra.com)
93. *The Drugging of our Children* (YouTube.com, www.garynull.com)
94. *Feed Your Head* (www.orthomed.org)
95. *Masks of Madness: Science of Healing* (www.orthomed.org, YouTube.com)
96. *Dead Wrong: How Psychiatric Drugs Can Kill Your Child,*
97. Interview with Dr. Nicholas Gonzalez with Joseph Mercola on (www.mercola.com)
98. Interview with Dr. Ronald Hunninghake about vitamin C IV at (www.mercola.com)
99. *War on Health: The FDA's Cult of Tyranny* (http://garynullfilms.com/waronheath, Youtube.com)
100. *Shots in the Dark — Silence on Vaccines* (www.watchfreedocumentaries.net, buy at http://www.nfb.ca/film/shots_in_the_dark_trailer)
101. *Hungry for Change* (www.hungryforchange.tv)
102. *Fluoride – The Hard to Swallow Truth* (watch for free at www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
103. *Poison in the Mouth* (watch for free at www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
104. *Don't Swallow Your Toothpaste* (topdocumentaryfilms.com)
105. *An Inconvenient Tooth* (topdocumentaryfilms.com)
106. FLUORIDEGATE: An American Tragedy - a David Kennedy film (www.fluoridegate.org) Watch on Youtube: www.youtube.com/watch?v=zpw5fGt4UvI&feature=player_embedded
107. *Lethal Injection: The Story of Vaccination* (watch for free at www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
108. *Fluoride: The Bizarre History* (watch for free at www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
109.*Vaccines—The True Weapons of Mass Destruction* (watch for free at www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
110. *Psychiatry: An Industry of Death* (www.cchr.org/videos.html)
111. Watch videos of Ori Hofmekler, the author of *The Warrior Diet: Switch on Your Biological Powerhouse For High Energy, Explosive Strength, and a Leaner, Harder Body*, being interviewed by Joseph Mercola at www.mercola.com
112. *Starving Cancer: Ketogenic Diet a Key to Recovery* (watch on CBN.com Youtube.com)
113. Ketogenic Diet May Be Key to Cancer Recovery (video at mercola.com March 10, 2013)
114. Check videos at YouTube.com for "Ketonic diet"
115. Targeting Energy Metabolism in Brain Cancer byThomas Seyfried, Ph.D. *(watch on Y*outube.com)
116. *Foundation Training* by Eric Goodman (www.foundationtraining.com)
117. Watch videos of JJ Virgin at www.jjvirgin.com and YouTube.com
118. *Food Stamped* (foodstamped.com)
119. *Toxic Free: How to Protect Your Health and Home from the Chemicals That Are Making You Sick* by Debra Lynn Dadd (ww.debralynndadd.com)
120. Peter Glidden (www.fire-your-md-now.com) Watch his videos at his website and at YouTube such as his video titled "Chemotherapy doesn't work 97% of the time" and "Chemotherapy is a waste of time"
121. *Doctored* (www.doctoredthemovie.com)
122. *Your Brain on Porn: Internet Pornography and the Emerging Science of Addiction* by Gary

Wilson (YouTube.com, www.yourbrainonporn.com)
123. *Bought: The Hidden Story Behind Vaccines, Big Pharma & Your Food* (http://boughtmovie.com) watch the two minute trailer at (www.youtube.com/watch?v=lez-Jvb8nBs)
124. *Silent Epidemic; The Untold Story of Vaccines* (www.garynull.com, YouTube.com)
125. *Certain Adverse Effects* (www.certainadverseevents.com)
126. *icurecancer.com* by Ian Jacklin (www.icurecancer.com)
127. *Freedom for Birth* (www.freedomforbirth.com)
128. *Doula!* (http://doulafilm.com)
129. *Microbirth* (http://microbirth.com)
130. *Raw Milk Prohibition Documentary* (www.youtube.com/watch?v=NQMH_W0Vr3M)
131. *Surviving Prostate Cancer Without Surgery, Drugs, or Radiation* by Peter Starr (www.survivingprostatecancer.org)
132. *Healing Cancer with Cannabis: Episode 1*
133. Dr. James Oschman Discusses Earthing or Grounding interview with Joseph Mercola (ww.youtube.com/watch?v=26HphzJmWKU, www.mercola.com)
133. *Grounded* by Steve Kroschel (www.youtube.com/watch?v=TzH5S6G63ak)

Audio CD
1.*Vaccine Update 2009: Are Vaccines Safe?* [cd-4] by Dr. Stanley "Stan" Monteith, Dr. Russell Blaylock, Barbara Loe Fisher, Neil Miller (search Google to find where you can buy)
2. *Doctor Yourself: Natural Healing That Works [Audio CD]* by Andrew Saul (www.blackstoneaudio.com)

2. WARRIOR

DVD
Watch Hyung Jin Moon live everyday on YouTube in his King's Report and his sermon every Sunday on YouTube where he teaches how to be a warrior for Christ. There are many great videos on self-defense, guns and protecting the Second Amendment.

3. PATRIARCHY

DVD
1. *21st Century Patriarchs* by Colin Campbell (www.aboverubies.org)
2. *Dominion, Reformation, and the Family Business* by Geoff Botkin
3. *Gender Matters: A Discussion on the Roles of Men and Women At Home and In the Church* by Russell Moore (www.cbmw.org)
4. *Fathers and Sons: Living the Fifth Commandment—Four Messages from the Highlands Study Center Generations 2006 Conference—The Prodigal Father: Reflecting Our Heavenly Father's Love and Forgiveness* by Doug Phillips
5. *Financial Freedom* Seminar by Jim Sammons (www.IBLP.com)
6. *Maxed Out* (www.maxedoutmovie.com)
7. *In Debt We Trust* (www.indebtwetrust.com)
8. *Creative Models for Raising Capital without Debt Bondage* by Wade Myers
9. *Fathers and Sons Working Together* by Scott Brown
10. *Getting the Big Picture* by Douglas Phillips
11. *Seven Bible Truths Violated by Christian Dating* by S.M. Davis
12. *Father to Son: Manly Conversations That Can Change Culture* by Geoffrey Botkin
13. *Love, Marriage and Stinking Thinking* by Mark Gungor (www.laughyourway.com)

14. *Passing Through Our Hands: Home Funeral Care Guide* (www.passingthroughourhands.com)
15. *After Death Home Care* (YouTube or buy at www.afterdeathhomecare.com)
16. *A Family Undertaking* (free at Netflix, ask you library to buy a copy)
17. *The Disappearing Male* (watch for free at www.topdocumentaryfilms.com)
18.*The Invisible War* (watch at documentaryheaven.com and Netflix.com, buy at www.invisiblewarmovie.com)
19. *Act Like Men: A Titanic Lesson in Manliness* (www.colingunn.com)

AUDIO CD

1. *The Making of a Patriarch* by Colin Campbell (www.aboverubies.org)
2. *Success or Failure: Where Are You Headed?* By Christopher Maxwell (www.Titus2.com)
3. *Preparing Sons to Provide for a Single-Income Family* by Steve Maxwell (www.Titus2.com)
4. *Rebuilding a Culture of Virtuous Boyhood* by Douglas W. Phillips
5. *Manager of His Home* by Steve Maxwell (www.Titus2.com)
6. *Sports: Friend or Foe?* by Steve Maxwell (www.Titus2.com)
7. *Anger: Relationship Poison* by Steve Maxwell (www.Titus2.com)
8. *The Best of the 2006 Entrepreneurial Bootcamp (20 Compact Discs)*
9. *Making Wise Decisions About College and Life After Home School* by Doug Phillips
10. *Hollywood's Most Despised Villain* by Geoff Botkin
11. *What to Expect from a Twelve-Year-Old* by S.M. Davis
12. *Women and Children First: The Extraordinary Legend, Legacy, and Lessons of the R.M.S. Titanic* by Douglas Phillips
13. *Equipping Men for Leadership in the Home and Church* by Scott Brown
14. *A Biblical Vision for Multi-Generational Faithfulness* by William Einwechter
15. *Sleeping Beauty and the Five Questions: A Parable about the Hearts of Fathers and Daughters* by Douglas Phillips
16. *Father & Daughter Retreat 2007* by
17. *Rebuilding a Culture of Virtuous Boyhood: Raising Boys to be Godly Men of Courage* by Douglas Phillips
18. *Give Me Your Heart, My Son: The Very Best of the Vision Forum Father/Son Retreats*
19. *Manliness* by Douglas Phillips
20. *Women Civil Magistrates?* by Joe Morecraft (www.sermonaudio.com)

4. HOMEMAKER

DVD

1. *Reclaiming God's Plan for Women* by Nancy Campbell (www.aboverubies.org)
2. *The 7-Fold Power of a Wife's Submission* by S.M. Davis (www.christianbook.com) and (www.solvefamilyproblems.com)
3. *Monstrous Regiment of Women* (www.monstrousregiment.com, full video at YouTube.com)
4. *How a Wife Can Use Reverence: To Build or Save Her Marriage* by S.M. Davis (www.solvefamilyproblems.com)
5. *The Return of the Daughters* by Anna Sophia and Elizabeth Botkin (can watch trailer of DVD at www.visionarydaughters.com)
6. *Rejuvenate with Serene* by Serene Allison (www.franklinsprings.com) (www.aboverubies.org)
7. *The Attitude No Lady Should Have* by S.M. Davis (www.solvefamilyproblems.com)
8. *2007 Christian Homemaking Conference* with Anna Sofia and Elizabeth Botkin joined by their mother Victoria, Kim Brenneman, Lydia Sherman and her daughter, Lillibeth Humphrey, Jennie Chancey and Jennifer McBride (www.noblewomanhood.com)
9. *Interview with Nancy Campbell* (www.aboverubies.org)

10. *Laugh Your Way to a Better Marriage* by Mark Gungor (www.laughyourway.com)

AUDIO CD

1. *Build A Strong Marriage and Exciting Home* by Nancy Campbell (www.aboverubies.org)
2. *Victory for Daughters: Home School Daughters Speak Out about Virtue, Serving Their Fathers, and the Noble Call of Womanhood* by Kelly Brown and Sarah, Rebekah, and Hannah Zes
3. *Me? Obey Him?* by Elizabeth Rice Handford (www.swordofthelord.com)
4. *Strength & Dignity for Daughters* by Anna Sophia and Elizabeth Botkin (www.Christian audio.com)
5. *Unmasking Feminism* by Mary Kassian and Dennis Rainey (audio cassettes cbmw.com)
6. *Women & Marriage* by Nancy Wilson (www.canonpress.org)
7. *To Teach What Is Good (Titus 2)* by Carolyn Mahaney (www.sovereigngracestore.com)
8. *True Femininity* by Carolyn Mahaney (www.CBMW.com/audio)
9. *What's a Girl to Do?* by Douglas W. Phillips
10. *The Blessed Marriage* by Douglas W. Phillips
11. *Appeal vs. Rebuke: Responding to Sinful Authorities* by Sid Galloway (www.soundword.com)
12. *Help Husbands & Wives Communicate as One Without Erasing Role and Rank* by Sid Galloway (www.soundword.com)
13. *The Adventure of Mothering* by Evangeline Johnson (www.aboverubies.org)
14. *Guard Your Child's Brain Space* by Evangeline Campbell Johnson (www.aboverubies.org)
15. *Manager of Their Homes* by Teri Maxwell (www.Titus2.com)
16. *Loving Your Husband* by Teri Maxwell (www.Titus2.com)
17. *Raising Visionary Daughters*: Kevin Swanson interviews Elizabeth and Anna Botkin on their book *So Much More* (www.sermonaudio.com free download mp3)
18. *The Family Meal Table* by Nancy Campbell (www.aboverubies.org)
19. *Renewing the Family: 10 CD Audio Conference Album* with James & Stacy McDonald and R.C. Sproul Jr. (www.booksonthepath.com)
20. *Home Sweet Home* by Nancy Campbell (www.aboverubies.org)
21. *Lovely Homes* by Nancy Campbell (www.aboverubies.org)
22. *Mothers With A Mission* by Nancy Campbell (www.aboverubies.org)
23. *The Atmosphere of Your Home* by Nancy Campbell (www.aboverubies.org)
24. *The Beautiful Woman* by Nancy Campbell (www.aboverubies.org)
25. *The Flourishing Mother* by Nancy Campbell (www.aboverubies.org)
26. *Back to the Beginning* by Nancy Campbell (www.aboverubies.org)
27. *The Wise Woman's Guide to Blessing Her Husband's Vision* by Douglas Phillips
28. *Jennie B. and the Pilot: A Father & Daughter Love Story* by Jennie Chancey
29. *Hospitality: The Biblical Commands* by Alexander Strauch
30. *The Fruit of Her Hands* by Nancy Wilson (www.canonpress.org)
31. Free videos and audios to watch and listen at AboveRubies.com and CBMW.com
32. *Feminists vs. Femininity* Free by Jennie Chancey (free mp3 audio interview with Kevin Swanson at www.sermonaudio.com)
33. *Mothers & Daughters: Growing Into Wise Women Together* by Nancy Wilson (booksonthepath.com)
34. *She Shall Be Called Woman* by Victoria Botkin
35. *Family Strategies: Practical Issues for Building Healthy Families* (20 Audio Messages) by Doug and Beall Phillips

36. Watch videos of Courtney Joseph at www.womenlivingwell.org and YouTube.com

5. DYNASTY

DVD

1. *Interview with Nancy Campbell* (www.aboverubies.org)
2. *Quiverfull Movement* (TV show interviewing Ken Carpenter. Please order this DVD from *Nightline* at ABC News and show it to everyone. The product number at *Nightline* is N07103051 and it aired on 01/03/07) Be sure to visit quiverfull.com
3. *Dominion, Reformation, and the Family Business* by Geoff Botkin
4. *Demographic Winter: the Decline of the Human Family* (www.demographicwinter.com)
5. *Demographic Bomb, Demographic is Destiny* (www.demographicbomb.com)
6. The Moore family DVD *Children Are a Blessing* (http://moorefamilyfilms.blogspot.com)
7. The Moss Family DVD *It Is Your Life: The Moss Family* (http://moorefamilyfilms.blogspot.com)
8. The Duggar family DVDs of their TV show (www.duggarfamily.com)
9. The Bateses and Their 18 Children (www.YouTube.com Nightline from ABC News 1/19/2011)
10. Ken Carpenter's family (http://abcnews.go.com/Nightline/video/fruitful-multiply-2769639)

AUDIO CD

1. *Children and the Dominion Mandate* by William Einwechter

6. DECENTRALIZATION

DVD

1. *Free to Choose* by Milton Friedman (watch all episodes for free at www.freetochoose.tv of the original 1980 series and the updated 1990 series).
2. *Commanding Heights: The Battle for the World Economy* by Daniel Yergin (view at www.pbs.org — Link to all three episodes on the web http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/commandingheights/hi/story/index.html)
3. *John Stossel Goes to Washington* (www.lfb.org) by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
4. *The War on Drugs: A War on Ourselves* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
5. *Is America #1?* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
6. *Greed* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
7. *Freeloaders* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
8. *War on Drugs* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
9. *Stupid in America: How We Cheat Our Kids* by John Stossel ((www.abcnewsstore.com)
10. *Gun Control is Genocide* by Mike Adams (YouTube.com, naturalnews.com)
11. *The Divne Right of Self Defense* by Mike Adams (YouTube.com, naturalnews.com)
12. *Myths, Lies, and Downright Stupidity* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
13. *You Can't Say That! What's Happening to Free Speech?* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
14. *Freeloaders* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
15. *Cheap in America* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
16. *Freakonomics* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
17. *Sex, Drugs & Consenting Adults* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
18. *Are We Scaring Ourselves to Death?* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
19. *A Conversation with Hayek and Buchanan* (VHS) (www.lfb.org)
20. *The High and the Mighty* – Milton Friedman interview (VHS) (www.lfb.org)
21. *Waco: Rules of Engagement* (www.waco93.com)
22. *The Price System* (www.izzit.org)

23. *Take it to the Limits:* Milton Friedman on Libertarianism (VHS) (www.laissezfairebooks.com) (watch free online at www.hoover.org)
24. *The Wealth of Nations: An Inquiry Into the History and Morality of Capitalism* and Socialism produced by Christopher Crennen (www.lfb.org)
25. *BUSTED: The Citizen's Guide to Surviving Police Encounters* narrated by Ira Glasser (flexyourrights.org/busted, topdocumentaryfilms.com)
26. *Africa: Resources, Conflict and Freedom* hosted by June Arunga (www.lfb.org)
27. *The Philosophy of Liberty* (www.isil.org)
28. *Economy's New Clothes: The New Economy* (VHS) by Milton Friedman (www.lfb.org)
29. *Charles Murray: Freedom, Virtue, and Community* (www.theadvocates.org)
30. *The War On Drugs: The Prison Industrial Complex* (watch for free at www.topdocumentaryfilms.com)
31. *Feel Good About Failure* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
32. *Politically Incorrect Guide to Politics* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
33. *Whose Body Is It, Anyway? Sick in America* by John Stossel (www.abcnewsstore.com)
34. *Boys and Girls are Different* by John Stossel (abcnewsstore.go.com)
35. *Teaching Tools for Macroeconomics* by John Stossel (abcnewsstore.go.com)
36. *Islam: What the World Needs to Know* (www.whatthewestneedstoknow.com)
37. *Islam Rising: Geert Wilders' Warning to the West* (www.wnd.com)
38. *Socialism: A Clear and Present Danger* (www.dangersofsocialism.com)
39. *Agenda: Grinding America Down* (www.agendadocumentary.com, www.youtube.com/watch?v=eQvqZgqB3GE)
40. *I Want Your Money* (www.iwantyourmoney.net)
41. *Michael & Me* by Larry Elder (youtube.com)
42. *No Guns for Jews* (www.jpfo.org, youtube.com, www.nogunsforjews.com)
43. *No Guns for Negroes* (www.jpfo.org, youtube.com, www.nogunsfornegroes.com)
44. *2A Today for The USA* (www.jpfo.org, youtube.com)
45. *Machine Gun Preacher* (major motion picture, Netflix.com) (www.machinegunpreacher.org)
46. *Shooting Back: The Right and Duty of Self-Defense* (www.wnd.com and youtube.com)
47. *Michael and Me*
48. *Michael Moore Hates America*
49. *Innocents Betrayed: The History of Gun Control* (www.jpfo.org, youtube.com)
50. *The Money Masters* (www.themoneymasters.com, YouTube.com)
51. *The Secret of Oz* (www.secretofoz.com, YouTube.com)
52. *Money As Debt* (www.moneyasdebt.net, YouTube.com)
53. *Gun Rights* — Part 5 of the *What We Believe* series by Bill Whittle (YouTube.com, www.billwhittle.net)
54. *Gun Laws That Kill* by John Stossel (YouTube.com)
55. *Penn and Teller on the Second Amendement* (YouTube.com)
56. *Ayn Rand & the Prophecy of Atlas Shrugged* (www.atlasshruggeddocumentary.com)
57. *End of the Road: How Money Became Worthless* (www.100thmonkeyfilms.com/endoftheroad)
58. *Heaven on Earth: the Rise and Fall of Socialism* (pbs.org, YouTube.com, TopDocumentaries.org)
59. *10 Rules for Dealing with Police* (YouTube.com, www.UndergroundDocumentaries.com, ww.flexyourrights.org)
60. *Armed Response: A Comprehensive Guide to Using Firearms for Self-Defense* by David Kenik and Massad Ayoob (also watch his videos on youtube.com and at his website (massadayoobgroup.com)
61. Watch videos of Robert Sirico at www.acton.org and www.youtube.com/user/robertsirico
62. *Indoctrinate U* (Indoctrinate-u.com, YouTube.com)
63. John Stossel – check out websites that have his videos such as YouTube.com and

www.hulu.com/stossel
64. *The History of Political Correctness and Cultural Marxism: The Corruption of America* by Bill Lind
65. *Cultural Marxism: The Corruption of America* (www.culturalmarxism.org) (www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
66. *The Call of the Entrepreneur* (buy at www.calloftheentrepreneur.com, watch free at www.ustream.tv/recorded/16889562)
67. *PovertyCure—From Aid to Enterprise* (buy six-episode DVD series on human flourishing at www.acton.org and www.povertycure.org, watch intro video at YouTube.com and excerpts at www.povertycure.org)
68. *Runaway Slave: A New Underground Railroad* (www.runawayslavemovie.com)
69. *Freedom Society* by Kook Jin Moon (I have posted videos at my website www.divineprinciple.com. Also at vimeo.com)
70. Hyung Jin Moon's speech given July 20, 2012 (http://vimeo.com/46221511 and posted at my website www.divineprinciple.com)

7. TRINITIES

DVD
1. *Cohousing: Neighborhoods for People* (www.eldercohousing.org)
2. *Visions of Utopia Video* by Geoph Kozeny (www.ic.org)
3. Voices of Cohousing: Building Small Villages in the City (www.notsocrazy.net)

8. COUNTRYSIDE

DVD
1. *Inherit the Land: Adventures in the Agrarian Journey* by Ken Carpenter (www.franklinsprings.com)
2. *A Journey Home* by Ken Carpenter (www.franklinsprings.com) (He has video clips can watch for free)
3. *Subdivided* by Dean Terry (www.subdivided.net)
4. *The Eden String Quartet: A Bountiful Blessing* (www.franklinsprings.com)
5. *Hutterites: To Care and Not to Care* (www.christianbook.com)
6. *The Polyface Farm: One of the World's Finest Working Examples of an Environmentally Friendly Family Farm* (www.polyfacefarms.com)
7. *Polyface Revisited DVD - An Overview of Polyface Farm 2008* (www.back40books.com)
8. *Gardens of Destiny with Dan Jason* (www.gardensofdestiny.com)
9. *The Solar Powered Home* by Rob Roy (www.cordwoodmasonry.com)
10. *Beyond Organic, the Vision of Fairview Gardens* (narrated by Meryl Streep) (www.fairviewgardens.org)
11. *My Father's Garden* by Miranda Smith (rent from www.quakerearthcare.org)
12. *Affluenza* (www.simpleliving.net or www.channel9store.com)
13. *Escape from Affluenza* (www.simpleliving.net or www.channel9store.com)
14. *Simple Living Seasons 1, 2, 3* by Wanda Urbanska (www.simpleliving.net)
15. *Broken Limbs: Apples, Agriculture, and the New American Farmer* (www.brokenlimbs.org)
16. *Weston A. Price on Soil Fertility* by Sally Fallon (www.westonaprice.org)
17. *The World According to Monsanto* (watch free at ww.topdocumentaryfilms.com)
18. *Prescription For Disaster* by Gary Null (www.topdocumentaryfilms.com, www.Mercola.com)

19. *The Power of Community: How Cuba Survived Peak Oil* (rent from www.quakerearthcare.org or www.peaceproject.com)
20. *A Crude Awakening: The Oil Crash* (www.oilcrashmovie.com)
21. *GoingGreen: Every Home an Eco-Home* Narrated by Tony Shalhoub (rent at www.greenplanetfilms.org)
22. *Flow: For Love of Water* (www.forloveofwater—watch free at www.topdocumentaryfilms.com)
23. *The End of Suburbia: Oil Depletion and The Collapse of The American Dream (*www.endofsuburbia.com)
24. Kilowatt Ours (www.kilowattours.org) (buy at www.peaceproject.com)
25. *Peak Oil: Imposed By Nature* (buy at www.peaceproject.com)
26. *Crude Impact* (buy at www.peaceproject.com or www.lifeaftertheoilcrash.net)
27. *A Crude Awakening: The Oil Crash* (www.oilcrashmovie.com)
28. *Farmageddon:The Unseen War on American Family Farms* (www.farmageddonmovie)
29. *Power Shift: Energy + Sustainability* (rent at www.greenplanetfilms.org)
30. *The Real Dirt on Farmer John* (www.farmerjohnmovie.com) (buy DVD at www.angelicorganics.com)
31. *Building Green hosted by Kevin Contreras* (www.pbs.org)
32. *Blue Gold: World Water Wars* (www.bluegold-worldwaterwars.com, watch for free at www.undergrounddocumentaries.com))
33. *Blue Vinyl* (www.bluevinyl.org)
34. *King Corn* (www.pbs.com)
35. *Bad Seed: The Truth About Our Food* (www.badseed.info)
36. *Nourish: Food + Community* (www.nourishlife.org)
37. *The Great Global Warming Swindle* (www.greatglobalwarmingswindle.co.uk)
38. *FoodMatters* (www.foodmatters.tv)
39. *Dirt! The Movie* (narrated by Jamie Lee Curtis) (www.dirtthemovie.org, organicconnectmag.com)
40. *Radiant City: A Documentary About Urban Sprawl* (www.sweetremedy.tv)
41. *Supermarket Secrets* (watch full documentary – www.topdocumentaryfilms.com)
42. *Modern Meat* (pbs.org/Frontline, watch at topdocumentaryfilms.com)
43. *Green Builders DVD* (www.pbs.org)
44. Off the Grid: Life on the Mesa by Dreadie Jeff, Mama Phyllis, and Dean Maher (stillpointpictures.com)
45. Fed Up! Genetic Engineering, Industrial Agriculture and Sustainable Alternatives **(**watch for free at www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
46. *Off the Grid with Les Stroud* (watch at www.livingoffgrid.org, www.lesstroud.ca)
47. *Learn Sun Power: How to Set up Batteries, Inverter, Charge Controller, and Panels for a Complete Off-grid Solar Energy System* (www.learnsunpower.com)
48. *The Waltons TV series* (Ebay, and other sites)
49. *How to Make $100,000 Growing Vegetables* (www.back40books.com)
50. *Free-Range Poultry Production & Marketing* (www.back40books.com)
51. *Let's Talk Turkey* (www.back40books.com)
52. *Family Friendly Farming: How to Keep Your Kids on the Farm*(www.back40books.com)
53. *Raising Fish in Farm Buildings* (www.back40books.com)
54. *Introduction to Grass-Based Chick & Turkey Production* (www.back40books.com)
55. *Hidden Dangers in Kid Meals* (www.back40books.com)
56. *Seven Easy Steps to Your Own Backyard Product Department* by Cam Mather (www.aztext.com)
57. *Living With Renewable Energy* by Cam Mather (www.aztext.com)

58. *Home-Scale Wind Turbine Installation* by Cam Mather (www.aztext.com)

59. Locavore: Local Diet, Healthy Planet (www.locavoremovie.com)
60. *I.O.U.S.A.* (www.iousathemovie.com) www.topdocumentaryfilms.com)
61. *To Market To Market To Buy A Fat Pig* (www.shoppbs.org)
62. *What's on Your Plate?* by Sadie Hope-Gund and Safiyah Riddle (www.whatsonyourplateproject.org)
63. *Deconstructing Supper: Is Your Food Safe?* by Marianne Kaplan (www.bullfrogfilms.com)
64. *America's Cities: The Coming Crisis* (americascitiesthemovie.com)
65. *Urban Danger* (watch for free or buy video at www.urbandanger.com)
66. *A Good Report* (mountainmediaministries.org)
67. *Go Forward* (mountainmediaministries.org)
68. Building with Bags: How We Made Our Experimental Earthbag/Papercrete House by Kelly Hart (www.earthbagbuilding.com/resources.htm)
69. *Basic Earthbag Building: a Step-by-Step Guide* by Owen Geiger (www.earthbagbuilding.com)
70. Videos on earthbag homes by Nader Khalili at www.calearth.org
71. *Fresh* (www.freshthemovie.com) (Netflix.com and www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
72. *Doomsday Preppers* (www.nationalgeographic.com)
73. *Food Fight* (foodfightthedoc.com)
74. *Sprawling from Grace: The Consequences of Suburbanization* (sprawlingfromgrace.com, watch for free at www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
75. *After Armageddon* (shop.history.com, watch free on YouTube.com)
76. *Prophets of Doom* (www.history.com, watch free on YouTube.com)
77. *Mother Nature's Child: Growing Outdoors in the Media Age* (www.mothernaturesmovie.com)
78. *Frankensteer* (Netflix.com)
79. *Where Do the Children Play* by Michigan Television.
80. *Wonder of Creation: Soil: The Foundation of Life* (buy and watch at http://www.dod.org)
81. *A River of Waste: the Hazardous Truth About Factory Farms* (buy at www.ariverofwaste.com, watch free at YouTube.com, hulu.com, topdocumentaryfilms.com)
82. *Pig Business* (watch at www.filmsforaction.org, www.pigbusiness.co.uk/the_film)
83. *The Bitter Seeds of Monsanto's Legacy: Debt, Death, and Global Destruction* (www.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
84. *Wegmans Cruelty* (www.wegmanscruelty.com, YouTube.com, www.topdocumentaryfilms.com)
85. *Fluoride—The Hard to Swallow Truth* (ww.undergrounddocumentaries.com)
86. *Symphony of the Soil* (www.symphonyofthesoil.com)
87. *Soil Carbon Cowboys* (www.carbonnationmovie.com)
88. *Back to Eden* (www.backtoedenfilm.com) (https://vimeo.com/28055108)

Websites

www.motherearthnews.com,www.sustainableagriculture.net,www.sustainabletable.org, www.solartoday.org, www.renewableenergyworld.com, www.themeatrix.com, www.eatwellguide.org, www.globalgreen.org, www.localharvest.org, www.angelicorganics.com, www.centerforfoodsafety.org, www.familyfarmed.org, www.envirolet.com (composting toilet), www.biolet.com (composting toilet), www.price-pottenger.org or www.ppnf.org, www.westonaprice.org, www.realmilk.com, www.eatwild.com, www.farmtoconsumerfoundation.org, www.safeminds.org, www.organicconsumers.org, www.carefreespa.com, www.nofluoride.com, www.urbanhomestead.org, www.chelseagreen.com, www.mallfarmersjournal.com, www.aztext.com, www.nourishlife.org, www.hobbyfarms.com (*Hobby Farms* magazine), www.countrysidemag.com (*Countryside & Small Stock Journal*

magazine), www.backhomemagazine.com (*Backhome* magazine), www.acresusa.com (*Acres U.S.A.* magazine), www.backwoodshome.com (*Backwoods Home Magazine*)

AUDIO CD
Getting Your Hands Dirty: How to Teach Your Children to Love Work by Joel Salatin
Tilling the Soil: Cultivating an Entrepreneurial Vision in Your Family by Joel Salatin

9. HOMESCHOOL

DVD
1. *Dads: The Men in the Gap* (www.konos.com)
2. *The Essential Guide to Homeschooling Video DVD: How to Get Started the Right Way* with Debra Prince (www.thehomeschoolheart.com)
3. *Building a Business from Start to Finish* by Wade Myers
4. *An Entrepreneurial, Family-Based, Multi-Generational Business* by Joel Salatin
5. *How to Cultivate an Entrepreneurial Spirit in Your Children* by Arnold Pent
6. *The Blessing of Failure* by Jim Leininger
7. *Homeschool Dropouts: Why the Second Generation is Now Headed for a Spiritual Wasteland*
8.IndoctriNATION: Public Schools and the Decline of Christianity in America (www.indoctrinationmovie.com)
9. *The Cartel* (www.thecartelmovie.com)
10. *Public School - The Enslavement of Our Children* by Ramiel Nagel (YouTube.com)
11. *Bully*
12. *The War on Kids* (buy at www.thewaronkids.com, watch for free at www.filmsforaction.org and YouTube.com)
13. *Entrusted With Arrows: Entrepreneurial Home School Fathers* (www.entrustedwitharrows.com)
14. *Wait Till It's Free*: *The Plague of Socialized Medicine and the Only Known Cure* by Colin Gunn (www.wtifree.com)

AUDIO CD
1. *A Home School Vision of Victory* by Douglas W. Phillips

10. HOMECHURCH

DVD
1. *Church Outside the Walls: A Four Part Documentary Exploring Church Life Outside of Organized Religion* (www.familyroomstore.com)
2. *Tidal Wave - An exploration of simple church* (www.house2house.com)
3. *Micro Churches & House Churches* with Floyd McClung, Tony & Felicity Dale, Larry Kreider and others 4 DVD Set (www.dcfi.org)
4. *When You Come Together: Simple Church Gatherings – what do we do* (www.house2house.com)
5. *The Strangest Secret: How to Live the Life You Desire* by Earl Nightingale (www.nightingale.com)
6. Divided: Is Age Segregation Ministry Multiplying or Dividing the Church? (buy the DVD and watch the full movie online for free at www.dividedthemovie.com)

AUDIO CD
1. *The Role of Children in the Meeting of the Church* by Doug Phillips
2. *How Modern Churches Are Harming Families* by John Thompson
3. *Revolution: Finding Vibrant Faith Beyond the Walls of the Sanctuary (Unabridged)* by George Barna
(www.audible.com)
4. *Why I Left The Institutional Church: Radio Interview With Frank Viola* (free online audio at (www.truthforfree.com)
5. *Critique of Modern Youth Ministry* by Christopher Schlect (www.canonpress.org)

SUN MYUNG MOON

To begin the study of Sun Myung Moon, you might want to consider the following books of his speeches:

As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen
God's Will and the World — New Hope: Twelve Talks by Sun Myung Moon Vol. 1 & 2
Blessed Family and the Ideal Kingdom — Blessing and Ideal Family
True Family and World Peace — Cheon Seong Gyeong

You can order these books at www.hsabooks.com and you can read the text of these books and many of his speeches and other books for free at www.Unification.org, www.Tparents.org or www.Unification.net.

A book that I know of that Father personally had made was *God's Will and the World.* He chose these speeches to be put together and given as a gift to ministers who supported him when he was released from Danbury prison. It is an excellent selection of speeches. The other books I mention may have been supervised by him. I don't know. They are good books. It seems to me that some books of Father's words are complete speeches or parts of speeches that some members have put together on their own. For example, headquarters published a book titled *God's Warning to the World – Reverend Moon's Message from Prison*. It a collection of quotes from Father put together by Tyler Hendricks. I assume it is out of print as other books such as *Home Church* are that were printed by headquarters. Many speeches of Father are online but have not been put into print. And there are some out of print books of Father's word you may find and there are websites that have the text of these books. Someday all of Father's speeches will be published in every language. Father wants every person on earth to read his words every day.

HSAbooks.com at the time of the printing of this edition sells a 15 volume set with these titles:
*Blessing and Ideal Family Vol*1 *— Blessing and Ideal Family Vol2*
*Way of Unification Vol*1 *— Way of Unification Vol*2
*The Way of a Spiritual Leader Vol*1 *— The Way of a Spiritual Leader Vol*2
Unification Family Life — Raising Children in God's Will — The Way for Students
The Way for Young People — The Way for a True Child — The Tribal Messiah
*True Parents — Earthly Life and Spirit World Vol*1 *— Earthly Life and Spirit World Vol2*

HSAbooks has some other books of Father's quotes. Check the site and see what they have. Another example of a book they have is titled *Messages of Peace*. They write about this book saying: "The 15 key peace messages which contain many of the essential teachings of Rev. Sun Myung Moon. This book was published on the instructions of Rev. Moon and translated into 40 languages for the occasion of True Parents' birthday celebration in 2007, which was Rev. Moon's 88th birthday."

AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF SUN MYUNG MOON

I have put the full text of Father's autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen,* at my website www.DivinePrinciple.com. You can also download its PDF file to your computer or to an e-Book Digital Reader like Amazon's Kindle or the other digital reading devices by other companies. Tell everyone you know and witness to about this wonderful autobiography by True Father. Father says:

> Ladies and gentlemen, last year, my memoirs, which contain an honest and candid account of my life, were published. Through this book I have clearly shown where you can find God's will for humanity and the path that human beings, as God's children, should follow. My life has been a typical model of the saying, "If at first you don't succeed, try, try, try again." I have as much faith in this book as in the hoondok textbooks I have mentioned. For this reason, I recommend my autobiography, *As a Peace-Loving Global Citizen*, to you, believing that it will show you about leading life according to true principles. It does not subtract or add anything to the ninety years of my life, which I have led under Heaven's decree. I pray you will carefully read this record of true love and find great inspiration. (3-4-2010)

The following are some other books about Father and his movement you may find insightful:

40 Years in America: 1959—1999: An Intimate History of the Unification Movement and a History of The Unification Church In America, 1959—1974: Emergence of a National Movement by Michael L. Mickler
To Bigotry, No Sanction: Reverend Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church by Mose Durst
Inquisition: The Persecution and Prosecution of the Reverend Sun Myung Moon by Carlton Sherwood
The Path of a Pioneer: The Early Days of Reverend Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church by Jonathan Gullery
Sun Myung Moon and the Unification Church by Frederick Sontag
Sun Myung Moon, the Early Years: 1920-53 by Michael Breen
Odyssey of New Religious Movements: Persecution, Struggle, Legitimation — a Case Study of the New Truth in the Last Days: My 36 Years in the Unification Church by Shirley Stadelhofer
Messiah: My Testimony to Rev. Sun Myung Moon by Bo Hi Pak
Truth is My Sword by Bo Hi Pak

Some of these books have the entire text online such as Bo Hi Pak's books. Please check out these and other books by and about Sun Myung Moon and search the web for websites that have Father's words.

After Moon's death in 2012, the movement split into various competing factions. His widow, Hak Ja Han Moon, is considered by many in the movement to be the a "messiah" and the "Mother of humankind." She founded the Women's Federation for World Peace International. Moon's eldest living son, Hyun Jin Preston Moon, leads the Family Peace Association, while the youngest son, Hyung Jin Sean Moon, started the Sanctuary Church.

https://www.thegospelcoalition.org/article/9-things-know-unification-church/

Magazine

Locked and Loaded for the Lord

After the Rev. Moon died in 2012, his church split apart. Two of his sons established a new congregation. Their followers are eagerly awaiting the end times. And they are armed.

Hyung Jin "Sean" Moon, leader of Sanctuary Church, wears a crown of rifle shells and holds a gold-plated AR-15.

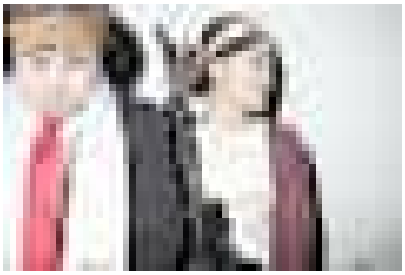
Story by **Tom Dunkel** Photos by **Bryan Anselm**

MAY 21, 2018

Sanctuary Church — whose proper name is World Peace and Unification Sanctuary, but which also goes by the more muscular-sounding Rod of Iron Ministries — stands inconspicuously on a country road that winds through the village of Newfoundland, Pa., 25 miles southeast of Scranton. The one-story, low-slung building used to be St. Anthony's Catholic Church. Before that, it was a community theater, which is why there are no pews, only a semicircle of tiered seats facing the old stage, now an altar.

On a Sunday morning in late February, 38-year-old Pastor Hyung Jin "Sean" Moon, son of the late Rev. Sun Myung Moon, entered stage right wearing a white hoodie and cargo pants. He strapped on a leather headband and picked up a microphone. "Okay, take it away," he said to the electric pianist and two female vocalists who function as the choir. They launched into the first of four songs: "O, light of grace, shining above / lighting my dim shadowed way …"

The 200-plus congregants packed into the room sang along with gusto. Pastor Sean stood by his front-row seat with his wife at his side, wringing his hands like an orchestra conductor. The song cycle ended and, after a brief prayer, he took center stage. "Look at all these crowns of sovereignty!" he exclaimed, gazing upon his audience. One tenet of the Sanctuary Church is that all people are independent kings and queens in God's Kingdom — a kind of don't-tread-on-me notion of personal sovereignty. Hence, symbolic gold and silver crowns bobbed on row after row of heads.



TOP: Attendants hold assault rifles during a sermon at Sanctuary Church in Pennsylvania. LEFT: Members during a blessing ceremony in February. RIGHT: The congregation during a sermon.

This crowd was about twice the usual size because this service was the warm-up for a renewal-of-marriage-vows ceremony scheduled for Wednesday morning. Scores of couples already had arrived from Japan and Korea. That ceremony — officially, the "Cosmic True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humanity Cheon Il Guk Book of Life Registration Blessing" — would cap a week of activities that thus far had included an arts festival, a survival skills contest and a goat-butchering demonstration.

The wedding-blessing event was generating nationwide attention — something new for Sanctuary Church, which, until now, hadn't even registered on the radar of the Pocono Record, the local daily newspaper. A key pillar of Sanctuary dogma is the importance of owning a gun, particularly the lethal, lightweight AR-15 semiautomatic, which the National Rifle Association has proclaimed "the most popular rifle in America." Last fall, Pastor Sean had studied the Book of Revelation. It makes multiple references to how Christ one day will rule his earthly kingdom "with a rod of iron." Although Revelation was written long before the advent of firearms, Pastor Sean concluded that "rod of iron" was Bible-speak for the AR-15 and that Christ, not being a "tyrant," will need armed sovereigns to help him keep the peace in his kingdom.

As a result, a recent Sanctuary Church news release had noted that "blessed couples are requested" to bring with them to the upcoming Book of Life ceremony an AR-15 semiautomatic rifle "or equivalents." This was unfortunate timing for the Church: The next day a young man walked into Marjory Stoneman Douglas High School in Parkland, Fla., and killed 17 people with an AR-15. Shooters had used that same model rifle to carry out mass murders in Las Vegas; Orlando; San Bernardino, Calif.; and other cities.

That latest tragedy was freshly imprinted on millions of minds, among them Pastor Sean's. He eased into his hour-long Sunday morning sermon by reminding everyone of what President Trump had pointed out after the Parkland shooting: "He said if the teachers were armed, they would have shot the hell out of that guy. This is the first time we've heard a president talk like that. This is God's grace, folks."

Virtually the entire congregation was coming back on Wednesday for the big blessing ceremony, so he reviewed some safety precautions, like securing rifle triggers with a zip tie: "Remember, folks, you can never take back a bullet." That was not to say worshipers couldn't pack heat. Anyone with a concealed-carry permit was welcome to bring their loaded pistol Wednesday (their "mini rod of iron") in addition to their AR-15. You never know, "there may be a wolf in sheep's clothing who

tries to make trouble," said Pastor Sean.

After delivering a few social announcements (parents seeking marriage partners for their adult children were meeting at 3 p.m.; tomorrow at 5 p.m. there would be an AR-15 "breakdown" tutorial on how to properly disassemble the rifle), Pastor Sean delivered the meat of his sermon. He plowed familiar ground at first, citing Bible passages where the "rod of iron" was used to smite evildoers. Pacing the altar, he then segued into a freewheeling, gunfire-and-brimstone diatribe.

"You must shed the slave mentality and adopt the royal mentality. … The Democratic Party has become the Communist Party funded by Nazi collaborator George Soros. … The fake ministers and fake priests are pushing a dictator-Christ." He took potshots at some favorite targets: Hillary Clinton ("she was paying for the Russian dossier"), Pope Francis ("a socialist, communist devil") and government that gets too big for its britches. "Jesus never centralized power. Jesus never created government," he said. "The worst killer in all of humanity the last one hundred years is centralized government."

He showed a video clip of younger Church members undergoing quasi paramilitary training as Sanctuary's standby Peace Police/Peace Militia. They shoot rifles on the run in the woods. They wear camo for the Lord. They learn Filipino knife fighting. "It's not about being a badass. It's about practicing to be deadly because you love people," Pastor Sean told his flock. "The way of the rod of iron is the way of love."

In a few days, reporters, photographers and TV camera crews would swarm upon sleepy Newfoundland for the wedding-blessing ceremony — professional gawkers lured by the incongruous coupling of semiautomatic rifles and a house of worship. But the media circus also would quickly move on, without fully answering questions left dangling. Who, exactly, are these Sanctuarians? And, with their injection of guns into the country's already divisive mix of politics and religion, what do they want?

> **"It's not about being a badass. It's about practicing to be deadly because you love people."**
>
> — Pastor Hyung Jin Moon

When the Rev. Sun Myung Moon died of complications from pneumonia in 2012 at age 92, it set off a power struggle within his family. Sean, with backing from older brother Kook Jin "Justin" Moon, contends he was selected from among his 10 adult siblings to inherit the Unification Church mantle and be crowned the next-generation "Second King" — not a full-fledged messiah like his father purported to be, but nonetheless responsible for finishing the work of building God's Kingdom. Meanwhile, their mother, Hak Ja Han, claims the Rev. Moon, her husband of 52 years, passed the baton to her.

The church they were fighting over has roots in both Korea and America. The Rev. Moon — born in 1920 in what is now North Korea but was then part of Japan — said Jesus appeared to him when he was 15 and asked him to take on the "special mission" of completing God's Kingdom on earth, Cheon Il Guk in his native Korean. First, however, he went off to study electrical engineering in Japan and got arrested (and tortured) twice for his activity in the Korean independence movement. He returned home, married and after World War II moved to Pyongyang, where the communist government threw him in a labor camp for preaching Christianity. When that camp was liberated near the end of the Korean War, Moon headed south.

He established a church in Seoul in 1954, dubbing it the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity. He codified his beliefs in a text titled "Divine Principle." One core construct says Satan seduced Eve in the Garden of Eden. This caused "the fall" of humankind by contaminating the bloodlines she and Adam transmitted through Cain and Abel. God sent Jesus to serve as a Second Adam to find sin-free love and salvage the family of man. But Jesus didn't live long enough to marry. It thus became Sun Myung Moon's destiny to step in as a Third Adam and redeem the world.

His ministry put a premium on the sanctity of traditional marriage and condemned premarital sex, divorce and homosexuality. That conservative message found an audience in Seoul, though police arrested him twice — for suspicion of having religious sex orgies and ducking the draft. (Both charges ultimately were dropped.) By 1957, he'd built a network of 30 churches and was wired into the South Korean business community and government. The only glitch was that his own marriage proved imperfect, ending in divorce. However, Hak Ja

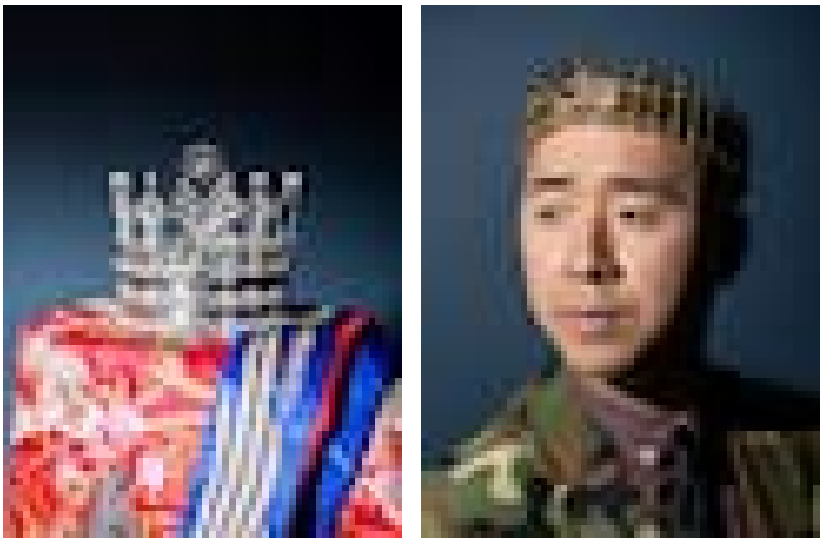
Han soon entered his life. They married in 1960, and followers hailed them as God's anointed "True Parents."

A decade later the Rev. Moon came to the United States, a necessary foothold for uniting the planet under his Unification banner. Moon spun a web of foundations and interlocking companies, reportedly becoming South Korea's first billionaire. His followers were untroubled by his wealth, but Congress investigated his empire, and then the Internal Revenue Service came after him. In the mid-1980s Moon served 13 months in prison for failure to declare $162,000 in taxable income. Ever the entrepreneur, he made arrangements in prison to start the conservative Washington Times, saying he did it "to fulfill God's desperate desire to save this world."

Unification Church membership figures have always been elastic, ranging from tens of thousands to several million. In 2009, the Washington Times cited 110,000 "adherents." Whatever the correct number, it had peaked by the late 1990s. Yet the Rev. Moon pressed on. In 2003, a double-page ad in the Washington Times trumpeted this news: All 36 deceased American presidents acknowledged Sun Myung Moon's greatness. What's more, each one had written an endorsement letter from the Great Beyond. "People of America, rise again. Return to the nation's founding spirit," said Thomas Jefferson, once characterized as a "howling atheist" by political opponents. "Follow the teachings of Rev. Sun Myung Moon, the Messiah to all people."

Jefferson was, of course, one of the architects of America's system of government — which will become obsolete if the Rev. Moon's vision of God's Kingdom on earth comes to pass. Pastor Sean is convinced that will happen, and in preparation, he has taken it upon himself to write a Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk, grounded in principles articulated by his father.

If all proceeds according to divine plan, the country will be ruled by monarchs drawn from his branch of the Moon family. If the Kingdom comes in Sean's lifetime, he'll take the reins as king of the United States. Brother Justin — who serves as Sanctuary Church's de facto assistant pastor — is set to be inspector general, a super special prosecutor charged with rooting out government corruption. Don't worry. It's not a theocracy, Sean says: "We would refer to it as a libertarian Christian monarchy or maybe a libertarian republican democracy."



LEFT: The Rev. Sun Myung Moon's crown sits atop his robe. RIGHT: Moon's son Sean Moon.

The Moons primarily raised their 13 children on an estate north of New York City owned by the Unification Church. The main house at East Garden had 12 bedrooms, seven bathrooms and Church minions catering to their every need. But life was far from idyllic. One son died in a car accident, another committed suicide and a third succumbed at a relatively young age to drinking and drugs.

Sean Moon wrote about the downside of their gilded childhoods in a 2005 memoir. "We grew up many times seeing Parents one or two

weeks, combined over various visits, out of the year," he recalled. "I many times felt scared, abandoned, and neglected. ... We were surrounded, constantly, by [Church] members. ... I sat and seethed in anger many nights, as I drifted off to sleep."

Rev. Moon fancied himself an outdoorsman. There were guns around the mansion, and, at 14, Justin fired one. It was love at first recoil: By 18 he had a permit to carry. He went on to major in economics at Harvard and earn an MBA at the University of Miami, tinkering with gun designs in his spare time. After graduate school he opened Kahr Arms in office space across the Hudson River from East Garden, using a $5 million loan from his father. His immediate goal, he later told American Handgunner magazine, was to create "an ultracompact 9-millimeter pistol." And he did.

Kahr introduced its palm-size K9 model in 1995; people and police departments gobbled it up. Justin's success with the company caught his father's eye. Kahr soon was absorbed into one of the Unification Church's corporations. Justin moved to Korea to take on the added role of president of a sister subsidiary. By 1999, Kahr had enough cash to buy the company that produced the storied Thompson submachine gun once toted by gangsters such as Baby Face Nelson. The Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, Firearms and Explosives reports Kahr sold 40,274 pistols and 9,086 rifles in 2016.

Justin Moon is a hyper defender of the Second Amendment. Private citizens, he says, should have unfettered access to any handheld weapon the U.S. military uses. "Were every woman in America to exercise their right to bear arms, America would basically eliminate its crime rate," he told me one morning at Kahr Arms. "Nobody would be able to rape them or rob them."

While Justin was climbing the Unification Church's corporate ladder, Sean followed in his footsteps only as far as Harvard. He got a bachelor's degree in liberal arts and a master's of theology, and spent eight years studying Buddhism in the United States, Korea and India.

He had a compelling reason to go off in search of himself. Sean was in college in October 1999 when his brother Young Jin "Phillip" Moon jumped out the 17th-floor window of a Las Vegas hotel. He was 21, a year older than Sean. They had been inseparable growing up. "For most of our lives we shared the same room, the same video games, and the same Doritos chips," Sean wrote in his memoir.

In July 2007, the prodigal son returned to the fold of the Unification Church. Sean had telegraphed his intentions the previous fall by doing 12,000 prayer bows over six days; on one of those days he also made a poster-size calligraphy of the Korean character seong ("sincere"), using a paintbrush dipped in his blood, which had been extracted by a physician.

Sean's initial job was pastor of a Unification Church in Seoul. Within 10 months, he was put in charge of international Church operations. On three ceremonial occasions, he says, his father named him "heir and successor." However, he also sent conflicting signals to oldest brother Preston and to Hak Ja Han. A few days after her husband's passing in 2012, Hak Ja Han summoned Sean to the magnificent Peace Palace the Moons had built in the mountains north of Seoul. According to Sean, she put him on notice that "I'm God. I'm *Hananim."* To which he replied, "Mummy, please, you can't say that. Father's not going to be happy."

He says she phased him out of Church activities and stopped taking his phone calls. In September 2013, on the first anniversary of his father's death, Sean went to the palace in hopes of seeing his mother. In his version of events, she had security guards shoo him away.

Justin Moon sided with his younger brother. Coincidentally, around that time, the New York legislature passed several gun-control measures that irked him. He decided to extricate himself and Kahr Arms from the Unification Church and move Kahr headquarters elsewhere. Eastern Pennsylvania beckoned: reasonable cost of living, excellent schools for his seven children, and 900,000 NRA members within a 300-mile radius of the state capital, Harrisburg.

A member of the church holds her assault rifle during a blessing ceremony.

By spring 2013, both brothers' families were ensconced in Pennsylvania. Sean began holding Sanctuary Church services in his living room (in a town appropriately named Lords Valley). When the congregation outgrew the space, he did his preaching in the banquet room at a Best Western. In May 2014 Sanctuary settled into the former Catholic church in Newfoundland. Members voluntarily have dug into their pockets, contributing $683,000 in 2015 and $491,000 for the first six months of 2016. A foundation Justin runs in brother Phillip's name supports Sanctuary with grants (almost $380,000 combined in 2015 and 2016), plus it bought the church site. That revenue stream should keep the lights burning for the foreseeable future and Pastor Sean's camouflage-colored Jeep Wrangler on the road.

In January 2015, Sean publicly renounced his mother for hijacking the Unification Church and rewriting and editing his father's religious texts. He has since taken to calling her the "whore of Babylon." Last September, Sanctuary Church shunted Hak Ja Han aside, and a posthumous wedding was thrown for the Rev. Moon. He (well, his spirit) married 90-year-old Hyun Shil Kang, supposedly the first person to join his ministry in the early 1950s. She moved to Pennsylvania to live with Sean and his family.

Hak Ja Han did not comment on specific allegations made by her son, but Ki Hoon Kim, continental chairman of the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification USA, responded in an email: "I know with certainty that Dr. Moon has reached out to her son, Hyung Jin, numerous times since February 2013 asking him to come back to Korea to meet with her, but he has refused each request. … We can't know exactly what took place in private discussions between mother and son, but it's clear that he holds an escalating resentment towards her. … Even if Dr. Moon had made such a statement [that she is God], it is in line with our theological beliefs that she and her husband are one with God, just as Jesus said, 'I and the Father are One.' "

In Jin Moon, second oldest of the surviving children, took an active role in the Unification Church until about eight years ago. She currently lives in New Jersey and has never before spoken out publicly about Sean and Justin. However, she says, "the language that's coming out of Sanctuary Church is quite alarming," so she feels obliged to raise her voice. She loves her brothers "ferociously" but says that the possibility their commingling of God and guns could inadvertently incite violence "is the great concern for the family." And, yet, she thinks healing and reconciliation is possible. "I still believe in the unity of my family," she says.

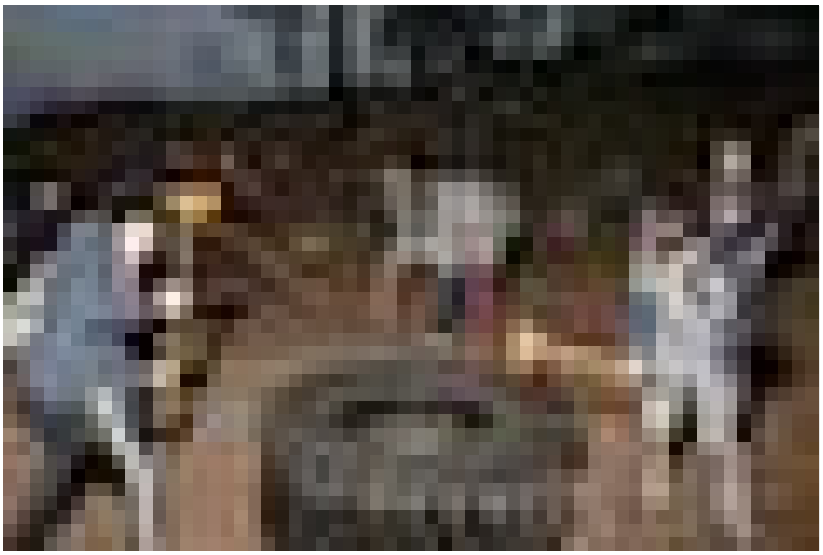
There seemingly is not much interest in reconciliation on the part of her brothers, however. Indeed, kicking Mom out of the family tree was not enough to satisfy Justin Moon. At a question-and-answer session with Church members in 2016, he explained that if a queen tries to usurp a king's throne, the ultimate price must be paid: "It's the king's responsibility to arrest her and execute her."

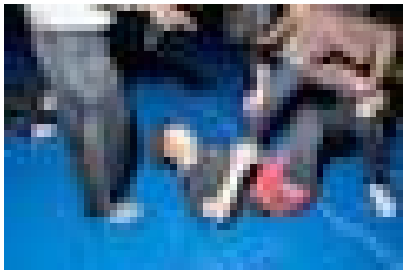
Any second thoughts about Hak Ja Han having committed a capital offense? Sitting at his office desk one morning, sporting his ever-present Kahr Arms baseball hat, Justin told me he stands by his earlier remarks: "It's a comment on the record. I'm not going to walk it back." All he was willing to do was change the analogy: "I love my mother," he said, but what if she attempted to overthrow the U.S. government? "She should probably be tried for treason."

> **"Our government does not make it easy on you, either from a shooting perspective or from a manufacturing perspective."**
>
> — Eric Trump

A year and a half ago, Sanctuary Church bought a larger house for Pastor Sean, his wife and their five children. Heaven's Palace is perched on a hill overlooking Matamoras, the easternmost town in Pennsylvania, hard by the Delaware River. Sean has a brown belt in Brazilian jujitsu and several nights a week teaches a class inside his converted garage. The students are Church members, most in their 20s, and most of them active in the so-called Peace Police/Police Militia.

On a Wednesday in late March, eight women and five men paired up for a practice session, trading positions as Moon guided them through a series of jujitsu holds and mini bouts. Dressed in a salmon-colored kimono top and loosefitting black pants, he sat yoga-style on his knees facing the class. "Work it! There you go! That's definitely burning it into your muscle memory, your hippocampus."





CLOCKWISE FROM TOP: Church members do outdoor circuit training. Some members are part of the church's Peace Police/Peace Militia. Members during a martial arts class taught by Moon in a converted garage at his home in Matamoras, Pa. Moon holds a brown belt in Brazilian jujitsu.

A burst of action. A pause for sips of water and a few push-ups. Repeat, repeat. More guidance. Using his son as a prop, Sean stopped at one point to demonstrate the kimura hold, a double-wrist lock you can put on an opponent's shoulder and upper arm. "Once we have the kimura position, we're going to capture the shoulder with chest pressure," he said while tying his son in a knot. "Basically, you're sitting on the head so it doesn't move."

"He explains things well," said Doug Williams, a retired police officer and Sanctuarian who lives next door and studied judo in his younger

days. “He’s strict, but he’s inspiring at the same time. The kids know that.”

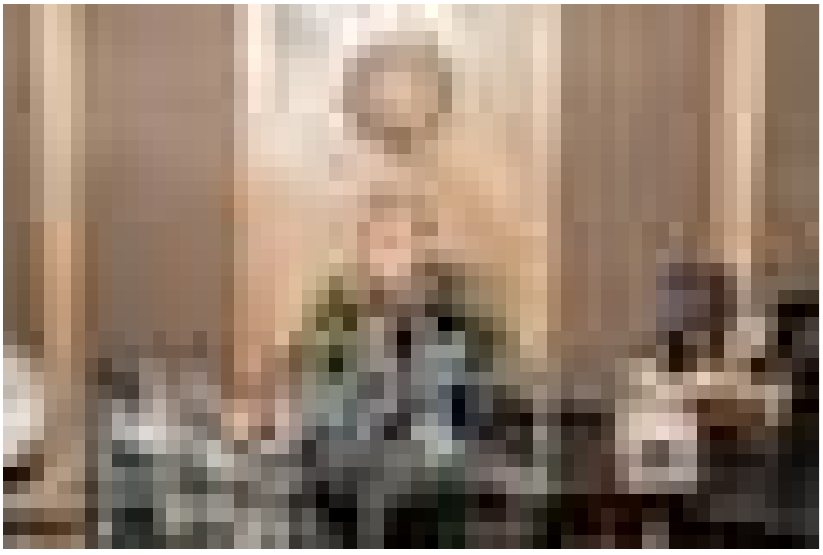
They obediently ground each other’s faces into the mat for two hours. Everyone then knelt and recited the Lord’s Prayer in unison. Sean lifted his arms and murmured, “All glory to God.” Class dismissed.

Sean Moon never raises his voice teaching jujitsu in the garage. Inside the house, however, he regularly unleashes the higher-octane side of his personality. Monday, Tuesday, Thursday and Friday from 5 to 8 a.m., Pastor Sean records a live webcast, called “The King’s Report,” in a room next to the kitchen. He sits at a desk with an AR-15 rifle prominently displayed next to his microphone, always decked out in a shirt and tie, the camouflage suit jacket he bought on eBay, and a crown made of polished rifle shells. He’ll interview an occasional guest and show clips from the NRA’s digital TV channel. But mostly he discusses the latest stories being featured by his conservative-media holy trinity — the Drudge Report, Breitbart News and Alex Jones’s paranoia-pushing Infowars — and riffs at length about current events, from Oprah Winfrey’s potential presidential bid (“She worships Satan. She promotes the New Age Christian view of God, which is a relevant God, which is, of course, Satan”) to gun-control advocates (“They are complete demons. … They want to make you completely vulnerable to the predations of the wicked”).

While the Rev. Moon seldom indulged in personal attacks, Sean and Justin regularly toss verbal grenades. They’re also more enamored with guns than their father — and more overtly political. “No question about it,” Sean told me one afternoon as we chatted in the orchestra section of the theater-turned-sanctuary: God’s hand was at work in the 2016 presidential campaign. A week before Election Day, Justin spoke to a group of Japanese Sanctuarians who were visiting Pennsylvania and described in biblical terms what was at stake: Hillary Clinton, he said, was the “Fallen Eve” who would start a war (possibly nuclear) with Russia. Donald Trump was the “Adam-type figure” who wanted to attack and “bring judgment on the government, on the archangel.” Depending on the outcome, he added, “the nature of God’s judgment on this world will be dramatically different.”

Both Moons shoot straight on and off the firing range. Sean on Al Gore: “A fricking nutbag.” Sean on 9/11: “False flag.” Sean on Hollywood liberals: “The most despicable, thieving, conniving, manipulating, evil, wicked, iniquitous demons on the planet.” Justin on the United Nations: “Satanic.” Justin on welfare recipients: “Parasites.” Justin on Democrats: “There are a lot of pedophiles in the Democratic Party. They realize that Trump is coming to get them. Literally. Round them up and put them in prison and execute them.”

Their straight talk caught up with them three weeks before the blessing ceremony. The Southern Poverty Law Center, which monitors extremists, issued a “Hate Watch” on Sanctuary Church — ironically, further raising its profile. SPLC took issue with a “cult leader” urging followers to carry guns and with comments Sean made about public school children “getting indoctrinated into the homosexual political agenda” and “the transgender agenda.” Sean responded by posting an alert of his own on Facebook: “Southern Poverty Law Center is well known as an extreme left hate group.”



Moon records “The King's Report,” his live webcast, in his home studio.

In December 2013, Justin Moon paid $2 million in cash for a 620-acre industrial site north of Newfoundland. On Aug. 30, 2016, he held the grand opening of Kahr Arms’ Tommy Gun Warehouse showroom-store, the place to go for rifles, pistols, knives and the

Brooklyn Smasher steel baseball bat that in an emergency can be used to club an intruder or a deer to death. The grand-opening guest of honor was Eric Trump. “That came about because God made it happen,” Justin told me. Somebody from the Trump campaign had called him out of the blue and said, “Eric wants to come.”

So Eric came, and Sean introduced him by saying: “It’s my opinion that we must elect a president that will protect and expand the right to bear arms. … I hope we can all agree that Hillary Clinton should never be the president of the United States. … God bless the U.S.A., and please buy some guns and ammo!”

Eric, in an open-collar shirt and dark sports jacket, stood in front of a wall of rifles and next to a U.S. flag. “This election for every gun owner is a huge thing. It will be the difference between adding to our Second Amendment freedoms or not adding to our Second Amendment freedoms,” he said, then switched to the topic of America hemorrhaging jobs. “We don’t make anything here anymore. That’s why Justin deserves a tremendous, tremendous round of applause. … Our government does not make it easy on you, either from a shooting perspective or from a manufacturing perspective.”

A year and a half later — on a Saturday night before the renewal-of-vows ceremony — Rod of Iron Ministries and Kahr Arms hosted a “President Trump Thank You” dinner at the Best Western in Matamoras. This time the only Trump in attendance was a life-size cardboard cutout of the president.

The event doubled as a fundraiser for Gun Owners of America, an organization Executive Director Emeritus Larry Pratt said takes “a more robust position” on guns than the NRA. Pratt lives in Northern Virginia and served one term in the House of Delegates in the early 1980s. His dinner speech not only denounced any restrictions on gun sales and possession, it went a giant step further by asserting “the feds should have nothing to do with law enforcement anywhere.”

Sean Moon echoed that ultra-libertarian theme. “Government is becoming a totalitarian crime syndicate,” he warned, on its way to creating “a dystopian, Christ-hating hell on earth.” Justin alluded to his father, saying, “without our property and our guns, we’re nothing but laborers in a communist death camp.”

The dinner opened with a moment of silence for the Parkland shooting victims, followed by a prayer led by Sanctuarian Ted O’Grady, who gave thanks for Trump: “This room knows that this is only the beginning … that you will be the president that ushers in God’s Kingdom on earth.”

It ended with Hyun Shil Kang, Mrs. Moon No. 3, selecting the winning raffle ticket for the door prize: an AR-15 rifle donated by Kahr Arms. The winner was a middle-aged woman whose reaction was surprisingly muted; it turned out she already owns an AR-15.

A few days later, on Wednesday morning, about 20 demonstrators gathered outside Sanctuary Church armed with only signs. “Father Forgive Them.” “Pickles for Peace, No More Absurd than Guns for God.” As a precaution, all students at the elementary school a half-mile away had been bussed to other classrooms for the day. But no wolves in sheep’s clothing tried to make trouble.

Moon, left, and wife Yeon Ah Lee Moon, right, lead prayers at church. Moon holds a crown to be placed next to Hyun Shil Kang, seated, to whom his father was posthumously married.

John Hind, a lifelong Newfoundlander, soaked in the scene from his front porch across the street. “They’re good neighbors,” he said of the Sanctuarians. “They haven’t bothered nobody.”

“But they’re weird,” snorted his friend Carol Wood, puffing a cigarillo.

“And blessing their guns? It’s confusing and it’s irritating.”

Inside the church, Timothy Elder, acting as master of ceremonies, informed the overflow congregation and some 50 reporters and cameramen lining the walls (plus about a hundred people watching a video feed in the adjacent community room) that “this is not a blessing of inanimate firearms.” It was strictly a recommitment of sacred wedding vows — for people bearing firearms.

Just before 10:30, Elder asked everyone to remove their AR-15s from their cases, “being careful to point the muzzle up and remove your finger from the trigger.” Camera shutters clicked crazily. Attendants in pink-and-white vestments led a procession into the sanctuary, followed by a three-man, armed color guard dressed in combat fatigues. Next came Pastor Sean, the “Second King,” and his wife, Yeon Ah Lee Moon, the “Queen,” both clad in white. Justin Moon was on their heels, his dark suit topped off by his baseball hat. Mother Kang took a seat in a white-and-gold chair on the altar. A crown was placed on the chair next to her, representing the absent Rev. Moon.

Pastor Sean carried a bound copy of the Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk, which he carefully laid on a table on the altar. His wife cradled a gold-plated AR-15. “The King and Queen will now place the Rod of Iron on its ceremonial stand where it will guard the Constitution,” Elder explained.

The brides and grooms in attendance, some 500 total, jointly sipped from tiny cups of wine. They took their vows (“Do you promise an eternal bond as husband and wife?”). The King said an extended prayer, acknowledging their “right to sovereignty, the right to keep and bear arms, the right to inherit the earth and protect it from socialism, communism and political Satanism.” Husbands and wives then exchanged rings. The sanctuary filled with applause, then cheers.

A group of protesters outside Sanctuary Church.

Outside a polite battle of words raged. On the front lawn, a contingent of Korean Sanctuarians unfurled a 20-foot-long banner referencing their divided country: “Thank you USA. We will never forget America’s grace. Trump chosen by God, relocate the tactical nucleus to the 38th line.” A chest-high rail fence runs along the property line, hugging the road. The Sanctuarians occupied one side, the protesters commanded the other.

Two adversaries faced off in gentlemanly mouth-to-mouth combat. Gideon Raucci is a second-generation Unificationist in his late 20s who switched allegiance to Sanctuary Church. He’s active in Sean’s Peace Police. Teddy Hose, 39, is a writer-graphic artist who flew in from San Francisco. He was part of a film crew shooting a documentary on cults. He’s also a second-generation Unificationist who grew up near East Garden in close contact with the Moon family. Hose left the Church years ago.

“It can take just one bullet to change everything,” he told Raucci.

“I totally hear you about being responsible with guns,” Raucci replied.

“What I feel is not coming across to the rest of the community around you, this is scaring people …”

“This might open up something beautiful where people understand where we’re coming from,” Raucci said. “Your focus is on loving your neighbor, I’m totally down with that. … We’re taught to never be the initiators of violence.”

“David Koresh and Charles Manson both used the Book of Revelations,” Hose reminded him, “because it’s a very extreme part of the Bible.”

It went back and forth like that for about 10 minutes. Then they reached over the fence, and hugged.

LEFT: Kook Jin "Justin" Moon, Sean's older brother and owner of Kahr Arms' Tommy Gun Warehouse. Justin Moon is Sanctuary Church's de facto assistant pastor. RIGHT: Taxidermied animals shot by Justin Moon on safari in Tanzania are on display at the warehouse.

The day after the blessing ceremony Regis Hanna, a Georgetown University graduate in his late 60s who recently moved to Pennsylvania to join the Sanctuary Church congregation, walked into Kahr Arms' Tommy Gun Warehouse showroom with his wife, Nancy. Right inside the door stands a taxidermy triptych: a lion and a leopard attacking an antelope, all three animals shot by Justin Moon on safari in Tanzania. "Infowars" was playing on the big-screen TV. Posters of beautiful women in spiked heels, flashing slit skirts and Kahr pistols, adorn two walls. Hanna was thinking of buying a handgun. He moved here from Panama, where gun laws are strict and where he spent 21 years doing missionary work for the Unification Church. He and Nancy did a lot of family counseling with unwed couples. Theirs was one of the early American marriages arranged by the Rev. Moon. They've been together 43 years and have seven children.

After the Unification Church rupture, the Hannas chose to cast their lot with Pastor Sean. Regis, a round-faced man of mellow temperament, is now part of Sanctuary's paid staff, and today it was his job to field any post-ceremony calls. The Church's main number had been forwarded to his cellphone, which rang shortly after he entered the showroom. It was a New Jersey area code. He put the call on speaker phone.

"Are you f—ing insane! You don't know the meaning of religion! You ought to be ashamed of yourselves!"

A minute later, another call came in. Oklahoma area code: "I was wondering if you're accepting more people into your group." Hanna told the man he could catch Sanctuary services on YouTube.

Another call. British Columbia. "I love what you guys are doing. I love Sean."

"Thank you, brother," said Hanna.

Hak Ja Han's ascension to the head of the Unification Church had ripple effects, and many hundreds of people faced the same decision the Hannas did. Friendships got torn apart, marriages blew up and families were divided as Church members declared different loyalties. Most Unificationists stayed with the parent church; some went with Pastor Sean; a few followed oldest brother Preston Moon, who established a secular Global Peace Foundation in Seattle. Others quit the movement altogether.

Kyle Toffey, 65, was a longtime Unificationist who lived in Korea for 10 years. He admitted to me that "at first it did sound a little bit off the wall" when Pastor Sean added an AR-15 twist to the blessing ceremony, but he and his wife participated. He has learned to "reserve my skepticism" and trust Sean's judgment. Plus, he has grown to appreciate the responsibility and self-confidence that comes with being armed: "In the morning when you strap on a pistol, you feel like the sheriff of the town."

Dan Fefferman used to worship with Regis Hanna at a Unification Church in Washington. He and his wife were married in the same group ceremony as the Hannas. They live in Bowie, Md., now and stayed with the Unification Church, but Fefferman visited Sean Moon's congregation several times.

"A lot of us went to check it out," Fefferman said in a phone interview, "hoping we could talk sense into him." In his opinion, the Moon brothers "attract the more unbalanced members" that can be found in any religious sect. He considered Rod of Iron a "far-right group with a paramilitary aspect to it." Not a hate group per se, "but I certainly hope and expect the FBI is watching them closely."

For second-generation Church members, these choices are more emotionally complex. The Unification Church is the only anchor they've known. Andrew Stewart's parents raised him in the Church. He spent several college summers as an intern on a nondenominational farm near Newfoundland, where he got exposed to Sanctuary Church. He helped with some minor building renovations and attended Sunday services. The vibe grew progressively darker, he said. Although personally fond of many people he met, it struck him as odd that, theologically, "the Church thrives off the ability to make people angry." He gradually drifted away from Sanctuary and this spring left the Unification Church, too.

Somiya Chapman Gabb — whose father was part of the Unification Church support staff at East Garden — was so offended by Hak Ja Han's revising of Rev. Moon's religious texts that she jumped to Sanctuary in early 2015. She and her husband were then living in Yonkers, N.Y., a three-hour round-trip drive. But she and her family felt increasingly out of tune with Sanctuary's often "scathing" sermons. Also, a member of the congregation told her that another Sanctuarian had pulled a loaded gun on him. By the end of 2017, the Gabbs stopped making that long Sunday drive to Pennsylvania. They read the Bible and pray at home now. Gabb thinks "there's still hope" that Sanctuary Church can right itself but said Sean Moon "is one word away from a violent situation and he may not even know it."

Sharon Barnett of Florida holds an AR-15 and bows her head in prayer during a blessing ceremony at Sanctuary Church.

Individually, Sanctuary Church members come across as honest, reasonable, upright folk, the stuff of good neighbors. Collectively, the dynamic changes. So much of the Church discourse can't abide contrasting opinions and worldviews. You don't hear much talk about, or empathy for, the poor, the infirm, the weak. Most enervating, though, is the steady drumbeat of dystopia. To be a devout Sanctuarian requires [illegible] of catastrophe. It's like standing on the [illegible] and rooting for the icebergs.

Sections
The Washington Post
Democracy Dies in Darkness
Sign In
Get one year for $29

Justin Moon told me we've entered "that End of Times time frame" prophesied in the Book of Revelation, when God and "his champions" will "take the political power in the earth" away from Satan. Viewed through that lens, the 2016 election was "very different." Actually, hugely different. "I believe God is using Donald Trump," he said, a sentiment his brother shares. "He is an imperfect person, a sinner, but God has chosen to use him. Just like King David was an imperfect person."

The apocalyptic events predicted in the Bible began unspooling, Justin explained, during his father's lifetime: World War II, the Cold War, famines, disease epidemics and "the continuing confusion we see today." Biblical timelines are unpredictable, but he is confident the End of Times and the corresponding advent of Cheon Il Guk will come in

his son's lifetime, if not his own. His father, the Rev. Moon, said so.

Sean Moon's Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk is a powerful document. It throws the country in reverse and then steps on the gas. Consider just these few provisions: The House of Representatives will elect the president. The king will pick Supreme Court justices. Congress cannot levy income taxes or property taxes; nor can it fund health care, education, Social Security or Medicare. The constitution specifically states there will be no Central Bank, Environmental Protection Agency or national police force.

Oh, and there will be no standing military of any kind. Justin Moon says the United States will follow the "Swiss model" of national defense. For example, he says, the Swiss Air Force has a small number of paid managers who schedule airplane maintenance and design training regimens, but citizen volunteers take care of all the planes and fly them, too. He says the Swiss defense system has kept Switzerland safe and secure for a long time. This is true, though being a neutral country may have a little something to do with that.

Related

What I figured out about America's future from visiting Trump resorts throughout the world

She led Trump to Christ: The rise of the televangelist who advises the White House

President Trump was doing a fine job implementing God's plan, the way Pastor Sean saw it — that is, until he signed the omnibus spending bill that added another trillion dollars to the national debt. Then came the April airstrikes on Syria. A few days later Sean Moon addressed these developments in a "King's Report" webcast: "This is very, very disturbing for the actual Trump supporters who got him elected. We don't want war. We're sick of foreign entanglements. … He's completely doing a 180. He's becoming frickin' Hillary Clinton. … If he continues down this road, America is dead, folks. … He's a man with many flaws, many sins, and now he's capitulating to the most evil wickedness on the planet."

That wickedness kept getting worse. The day he recorded this particular "King's Report," news broke that the judge overseeing the court case of the president's personal attorney, Michael Cohen, had officiated at the 2013 wedding of George Soros ("the Antichrist; he has his Rothschild fingers in everything," Pastor Sean moaned) and Nancy Pelosi was a guest. The fix is in, he said. One way or another, the "deep state" is going to take Trump down.

Then again, for Pastor Sean, the good news is that all this bad news is actually great news. He perceived a hidden hand at work, puzzling it out live on "The King's Report." The quicker the country goes down the toilet, the quicker Americans will come to their senses and embrace the Rod of Iron and Cheon Il Guk. It now appears to him that God is using Trump to run America into the ground, not make it great again. "We didn't know exactly how it would unfold," Pastor Sean told his fellow Sanctuarians, YouTube watchers and the world, "but we knew that in the end times, it gets worse before it gets better."

A reflection of Sean Moon at his home.

Tom Dunkel is the author of "Color Blind: The Forgotten Team That Broke Baseball's Color Line" and is at work on a book about the German resistance in World War II.

Correction: In an earlier version, Hananim was misspelled. The story has been updated.

Credits: Story by Tom Dunkel. Photos by Bryan Anselm. Designed by **Beth Broadwater**. Photo Editing by **May-Ying Lam**.

The Washington Post

Magazine

Locked and Loaded for the Lord

After the Rev. Moon died in 2012, his church split apart. Two of his sons established a new congregation. Their followers are eagerly awaiting the end times. And they are armed.

Hyung Jin “Sean” Moon, leader of Sanctuary

Church, wears a crown of rifle shells and holds a gold-plated AR-15.

Story by **Tom Dunkel** Photos by **Bryan Anselm**

MAY 21, 2018

Sanctuary Church — whose proper name is World Peace and Unification Sanctuary, but which also goes by the more muscular-sounding Rod of Iron Ministries — stands inconspicuously on a country road that winds through the village of Newfoundland, Pa., 25 miles southeast of Scranton. The one-story, low-slung building used to be St. Anthony's Catholic Church. Before that, it was a community theater, which is why there are no pews, only a semicircle of tiered seats facing the old stage, now an altar.

On a Sunday morning in late February, 38-year-old Pastor Hyung Jin "Sean" Moon, son of the late Rev. Sun Myung Moon, entered stage right wearing a white hoodie and cargo pants. He strapped on a leather

headband and picked up a microphone. “Okay, take it away,” he said to the electric pianist and two female vocalists who function as the choir. They launched into the first of four songs: “O, light of grace, shining above / lighting my dim shadowed way …”

The 200-plus congregants packed into the room sang along with gusto. Pastor Sean stood by his front-row seat with his wife at his side, wringing his hands like an orchestra conductor. The song cycle ended and, after a brief prayer, he took center stage. “Look at all these crowns of sovereignty!” he exclaimed, gazing upon his audience. One tenet of the Sanctuary Church is that all people are independent kings and queens in God’s Kingdom — a kind of don’t-tread-on-me notion of personal sovereignty. Hence, symbolic gold and silver crowns bobbed on row after row of heads.

TOP: Attendants hold assault rifles during a sermon at Sanctuary Church in Pennsylvania. LEFT: Members during a blessing ceremony in February. RIGHT: The congregation during a sermon.

This crowd was about twice the usual size because this service was the warm-up for a renewal-of-marriage-vows ceremony scheduled for Wednesday morning. Scores of couples already had arrived from Japan and Korea. That ceremony — officially, the “Cosmic True Parents of Heaven, Earth and Humanity Cheon Il Guk Book of Life Registration Blessing” — would cap a week of activities that thus far had included an

arts festival, a survival skills contest and a goat-butchering demonstration.

The wedding-blessing event was generating nationwide attention — something new for Sanctuary Church, which, until now, hadn't even registered on the radar of the Pocono Record, the local daily newspaper. A key pillar of Sanctuary dogma is the importance of owning a gun, particularly the lethal, lightweight AR-15 semiautomatic, which the National Rifle Association has proclaimed "the most popular rifle in America." Last fall, Pastor Sean had studied the Book of Revelation. It makes multiple references to how Christ one day will rule his earthly kingdom "with a rod of iron." Although Revelation was written long before the advent of firearms, Pastor Sean concluded that "rod of iron" was Bible-speak for the AR-15 and that Christ, not being a "tyrant," will need armed sovereigns to help him keep the peace in his kingdom.

As a result, a recent Sanctuary Church news release had noted that "blessed couples are requested" to bring with

them to the upcoming Book of Life ceremony an AR-15 semiautomatic rifle "or equivalents." This was unfortunate timing for the Church: The next day a young man walked into Marjory Stoneman Douglas High School in Parkland, Fla., and killed 17 people with an AR-15. Shooters had used that same model rifle to carry out mass murders in Las Vegas; Orlando; San Bernardino, Calif.; and other cities.

That latest tragedy was freshly imprinted on millions of minds, among them Pastor Sean's. He eased into his hour-long Sunday morning sermon by reminding everyone of what President Trump had pointed out after the Parkland shooting: "He said if the teachers were armed, they would have shot the hell out of that guy. This is the first time we've heard a president talk like that. This is God's grace, folks."

Virtually the entire congregation was coming back on Wednesday for the big blessing ceremony, so he reviewed some safety precautions, like securing rifle triggers with a zip tie:

"Remember, folks, you can never take back a bullet." That was not to say worshipers couldn't pack heat. Anyone with a concealed-carry permit was welcome to bring their loaded pistol Wednesday (their "mini rod of iron") in addition to their AR-15. You never know, "there may be a wolf in sheep's clothing who tries to make trouble," said Pastor Sean.

After delivering a few social announcements (parents seeking marriage partners for their adult children were meeting at 3 p.m.; tomorrow at 5 p.m. there would be an AR-15 "breakdown" tutorial on how to properly disassemble the rifle), Pastor Sean delivered the meat of his sermon. He plowed familiar ground at first, citing Bible passages where the "rod of iron" was used to smite evildoers. Pacing the altar, he then segued into a freewheeling, gunfire-and-brimstone diatribe.

"You must shed the slave mentality and adopt the royal mentality. … The Democratic Party has become the Communist Party funded by Nazi collaborator George Soros. … The fake

ministers and fake priests are pushing a dictator-Christ." He took potshots at some favorite targets: Hillary Clinton ("she was paying for the Russian dossier"), Pope Francis ("a socialist, communist devil") and government that gets too big for its britches. "Jesus never centralized power. Jesus never created government," he said. "The worst killer in all of humanity the last one hundred years is centralized government."

He showed a video clip of younger Church members undergoing quasi paramilitary training as Sanctuary's standby Peace Police/Peace Militia. They shoot rifles on the run in the woods. They wear camo for the Lord. They learn Filipino knife fighting. "It's not about being a badass. It's about practicing to be deadly because you love people," Pastor Sean told his flock. "The way of the rod of iron is the way of love."

In a few days, reporters, photographers and TV camera crews would swarm upon sleepy Newfoundland for the wedding-blessing ceremony — professional

gawkers lured by the incongruous coupling of semiautomatic rifles and a house of worship. But the media circus also would quickly move on, without fully answering questions left dangling. Who, exactly, are these Sanctuarians? And, with their injection of guns into the country's already divisive mix of politics and religion, what do they want?

"It's not about being a badass. It's about practicing to be deadly because you love people."

— Pastor Hyung Jin Moon

When the Rev. Sun Myung Moon died of complications from pneumonia in 2012 at age 92, it set off a power struggle within his family. Sean, with backing from older brother Kook Jin "Justin" Moon, contends he was selected from among his 10 adult siblings to inherit the Unification

Church mantle and be crowned the next-generation "Second King" — not a full-fledged messiah like his father purported to be, but nonetheless responsible for finishing the work of building God's Kingdom. Meanwhile, their mother, Hak Ja Han, claims the Rev. Moon, her husband of 52 years, passed the baton to her.

The church they were fighting over has roots in both Korea and America. The Rev. Moon — born in 1920 in what is now North Korea but was then part of Japan — said Jesus appeared to him when he was 15 and asked him to take on the "special mission" of completing God's Kingdom on earth, Cheon Il Guk in his native Korean. First, however, he went off to study electrical engineering in Japan and got arrested (and tortured) twice for his activity in the Korean independence movement. He returned home, married and after World War II moved to Pyongyang, where the communist government threw him in a labor camp for preaching Christianity. When that camp was liberated near the end of the Korean War, Moon headed south.

He established a church in Seoul in 1954, dubbing it the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity. He codified his beliefs in a text titled “Divine Principle.” One core construct says Satan seduced Eve in the Garden of Eden. This caused “the fall” of humankind by contaminating the bloodlines she and Adam transmitted through Cain and Abel. God sent Jesus to serve as a Second Adam to find sin-free love and salvage the family of man. But Jesus didn’t live long enough to marry. It thus became Sun Myung Moon’s destiny to step in as a Third Adam and redeem the world.

His ministry put a premium on the sanctity of traditional marriage and condemned premarital sex, divorce and homosexuality. That conservative message found an audience in Seoul, though police arrested him twice — for suspicion of having religious sex orgies and ducking the draft. (Both charges ultimately were dropped.) By 1957, he’d built a network of 30 churches and was wired into the South Korean business community and government. The only glitch was that

his own marriage proved imperfect, ending in divorce. However, Hak Ja Han soon entered his life. They married in 1960, and followers hailed them as God's anointed "True Parents."

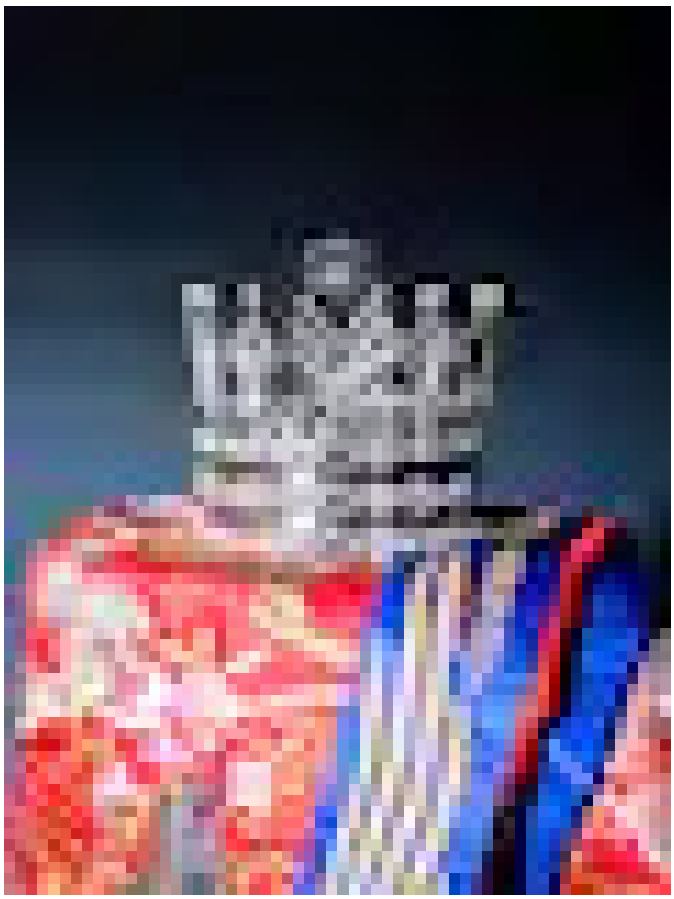
A decade later the Rev. Moon came to the United States, a necessary foothold for uniting the planet under his Unification banner. Moon spun a web of foundations and interlocking companies, reportedly becoming South Korea's first billionaire. His followers were untroubled by his wealth, but Congress investigated his empire, and then the Internal Revenue Service came after him. In the mid-1980s Moon served 13 months in prison for failure to declare $162,000 in taxable income. Ever the entrepreneur, he made arrangements in prison to start the conservative Washington Times, saying he did it "to fulfill God's desperate desire to save this world."

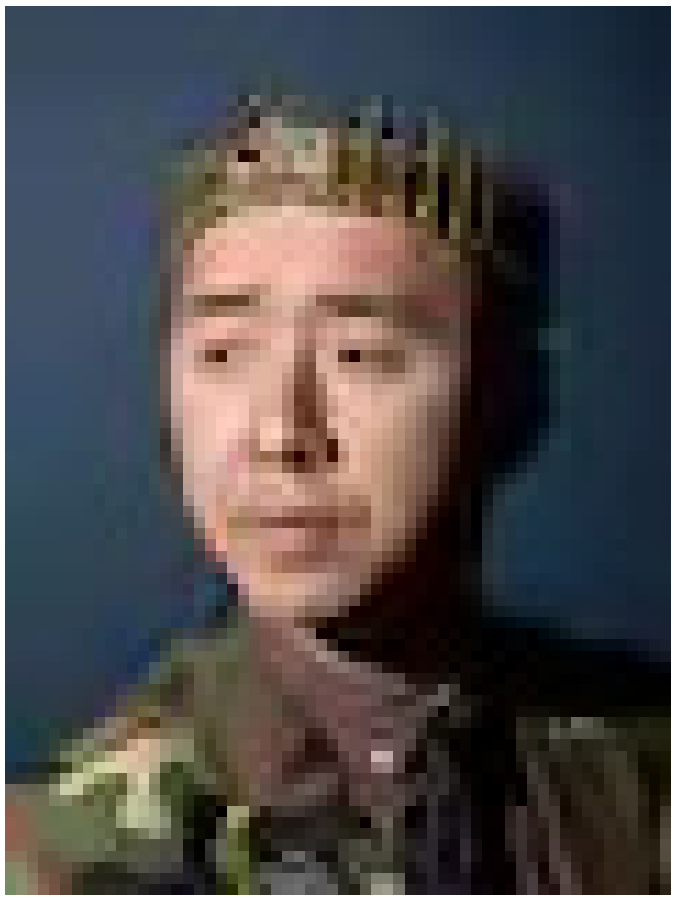
Unification Church membership figures have always been elastic, ranging from tens of thousands to several million. In 2009, the

Washington Times cited 110,000 "adherents." Whatever the correct number, it had peaked by the late 1990s. Yet the Rev. Moon pressed on. In 2003, a double-page ad in the Washington Times trumpeted this news: All 36 deceased American presidents acknowledged Sun Myung Moon's greatness. What's more, each one had written an endorsement letter from the Great Beyond. "People of America, rise again. Return to the nation's founding spirit," said Thomas Jefferson, once characterized as a "howling atheist" by political opponents. "Follow the teachings of Rev. Sun Myung Moon, the Messiah to all people."

Jefferson was, of course, one of the architects of America's system of government — which will become obsolete if the Rev. Moon's vision of God's Kingdom on earth comes to pass. Pastor Sean is convinced that will happen, and in preparation, he has taken it upon himself to write a Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk, grounded in principles articulated by his father.

If all proceeds according to divine plan, the country will be ruled by monarchs drawn from his branch of the Moon family. If the Kingdom comes in Sean's lifetime, he'll take the reins as king of the United States. Brother Justin — who serves as Sanctuary Church's de facto assistant pastor — is set to be inspector general, a super special prosecutor charged with rooting out government corruption. Don't worry. It's not a theocracy, Sean says: "We would refer to it as a libertarian Christian monarchy or maybe a libertarian republican democracy."





LEFT: The Rev. Sun Myung Moon's crown sits atop his robe. RIGHT: Moon's son Sean Moon.

The Moons primarily raised their 13 children on an estate north of New York City owned by the Unification Church. The main house at East Garden had 12 bedrooms, seven bathrooms and Church minions catering to their every need. But life was far from idyllic. One son died in a car accident, another committed suicide and a third succumbed at a relatively young age to drinking and drugs.

Sean Moon wrote about the downside of their gilded childhoods in a 2005 memoir. "We grew up many times seeing Parents one or two weeks, combined over various visits, out of the year," he recalled. "I many times felt scared, abandoned, and neglected. ... We were surrounded, constantly, by [Church] members. ... I sat and seethed in anger many nights, as I drifted off to sleep."

Rev. Moon fancied himself an outdoorsman. There were guns around the mansion, and, at 14, Justin fired one. It was love at first recoil: By 18 he had a permit to carry. He went

on to major in economics at Harvard and earn an MBA at the University of Miami, tinkering with gun designs in his spare time. After graduate school he opened Kahr Arms in office space across the Hudson River from East Garden, using a $5 million loan from his father. His immediate goal, he later told American Handgunner magazine, was to create “an ultracompact 9-millimeter pistol.” And he did.

Kahr introduced its palm-size K9 model in 1995; people and police departments gobbled it up. Justin’s success with the company caught his father’s eye. Kahr soon was absorbed into one of the Unification Church’s corporations. Justin moved to Korea to take on the added role of president of a sister subsidiary. By 1999, Kahr had enough cash to buy the company that produced the storied Thompson submachine gun once toted by gangsters such as Baby Face Nelson. The Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, Firearms and Explosives reports Kahr sold 40,274 pistols and 9,086 rifles in 2016.

Justin Moon is a hyper defender of the Second Amendment. Private citizens, he says, should have unfettered access to any handheld weapon the U.S. military uses. “Were every woman in America to exercise their right to bear arms, America would basically eliminate its crime rate,” he told me one morning at Kahr Arms. “Nobody would be able to rape them or rob them.”

While Justin was climbing the Unification Church’s corporate ladder, Sean followed in his footsteps only as far as Harvard. He got a bachelor’s degree in liberal arts and a master’s of theology, and spent eight years studying Buddhism in the United States, Korea and India.

He had a compelling reason to go off in search of himself. Sean was in college in October 1999 when his brother Young Jin “Phillip” Moon jumped out the 17th-floor window of a Las Vegas hotel. He was 21, a year older than Sean. They had been inseparable growing up. “For most of our lives we shared the same room, the same video games, and the same

Doritos chips," Sean wrote in his memoir.

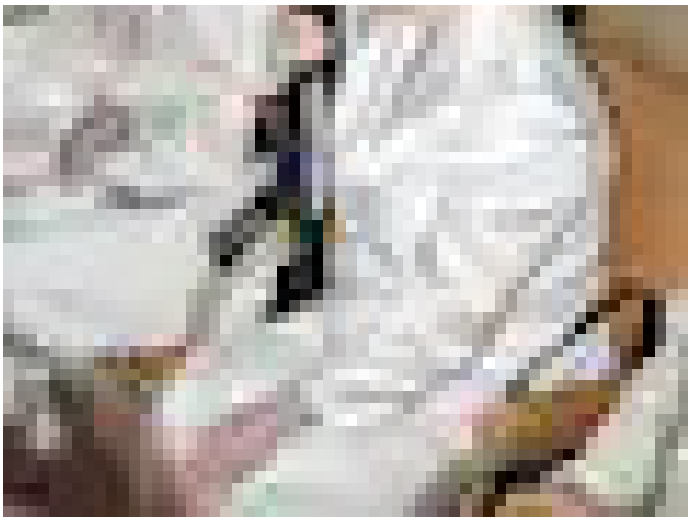
In July 2007, the prodigal son returned to the fold of the Unification Church. Sean had telegraphed his intentions the previous fall by doing 12,000 prayer bows over six days; on one of those days he also made a poster-size calligraphy of the Korean character seong ("sincere"), using a paintbrush dipped in his blood, which had been extracted by a physician.

Sean's initial job was pastor of a Unification Church in Seoul. Within 10 months, he was put in charge of international Church operations. On three ceremonial occasions, he says, his father named him "heir and successor." However, he also sent conflicting signals to oldest brother Preston and to Hak Ja Han. A few days after her husband's passing in 2012, Hak Ja Han summoned Sean to the magnificent Peace Palace the Moons had built in the mountains north of Seoul. According to Sean, she put him on notice that "I'm God. I'm *Hananim."* To which he replied, "Mummy, please, you can't say that.

Father's not going to be happy."

He says she phased him out of Church activities and stopped taking his phone calls. In September 2013, on the first anniversary of his father's death, Sean went to the palace in hopes of seeing his mother. In his version of events, she had security guards shoo him away.

Justin Moon sided with his younger brother. Coincidentally, around that time, the New York legislature passed several gun-control measures that irked him. He decided to extricate himself and Kahr Arms from the Unification Church and move Kahr headquarters elsewhere. Eastern Pennsylvania beckoned: reasonable cost of living, excellent schools for his seven children, and 900,000 NRA members within a 300-mile radius of the state capital, Harrisburg.



A member of the church holds her assault rifle during a blessing ceremony.

By spring 2013, both brothers' families were ensconced in Pennsylvania. Sean began holding Sanctuary Church services in his living room (in a town appropriately named Lords Valley). When the congregation outgrew the space, he did his preaching in the banquet room at a Best Western. In May 2014 Sanctuary settled into the former Catholic church in Newfoundland. Members voluntarily have dug into their pockets, contributing $683,000 in 2015 and $491,000 for the first six months of 2016. A foundation Justin runs in brother Phillip's name supports Sanctuary with grants (almost $380,000 combined in 2015 and 2016), plus it bought the church site. That revenue stream should keep the

lights burning for the foreseeable future and Pastor Sean's camouflage-colored Jeep Wrangler on the road.

In January 2015, Sean publicly renounced his mother for hijacking the Unification Church and rewriting and editing his father's religious texts. He has since taken to calling her the "whore of Babylon." Last September, Sanctuary Church shunted Hak Ja Han aside, and a posthumous wedding was thrown for the Rev. Moon. He (well, his spirit) married 90-year-old Hyun Shil Kang, supposedly the first person to join his ministry in the early 1950s. She moved to Pennsylvania to live with Sean and his family.

Hak Ja Han did not comment on specific allegations made by her son, but Ki Hoon Kim, continental chairman of the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification USA, responded in an email: "I know with certainty that Dr. Moon has reached out to her son, Hyung Jin, numerous times since February 2013 asking him to come back to Korea to meet with her, but he has refused each request. ... We can't know exactly what took

place in private discussions between mother and son, but it's clear that he holds an escalating resentment towards her. ... Even if Dr. Moon had made such a statement [that she is God], it is in line with our theological beliefs that she and her husband are one with God, just as Jesus said, 'I and the Father are One.' "

In Jin Moon, second oldest of the surviving children, took an active role in the Unification Church until about eight years ago. She currently lives in New Jersey and has never before spoken out publicly about Sean and Justin. However, she says, "the language that's coming out of Sanctuary Church is quite alarming," so she feels obliged to raise her voice. She loves her brothers "ferociously" but says that the possibility their commingling of God and guns could inadvertently incite violence "is the great concern for the family." And, yet, she thinks healing and reconciliation is possible. "I still believe in the unity of my family," she says.

There seemingly is not much interest in reconciliation on the part of her

brothers, however. Indeed, kicking Mom out of the family tree was not enough to satisfy Justin Moon. At a question-and-answer session with Church members in 2016, he explained that if a queen tries to usurp a king's throne, the ultimate price must be paid: "It's the king's responsibility to arrest her and execute her."

Any second thoughts about Hak Ja Han having committed a capital offense? Sitting at his office desk one morning, sporting his ever-present Kahr Arms baseball hat, Justin told me he stands by his earlier remarks: "It's a comment on the record. I'm not going to walk it back." All he was willing to do was change the analogy: "I love my mother," he said, but what if she attempted to overthrow the U.S. government? "She should probably be tried for treason."

"Our government does not make it easy on you, either

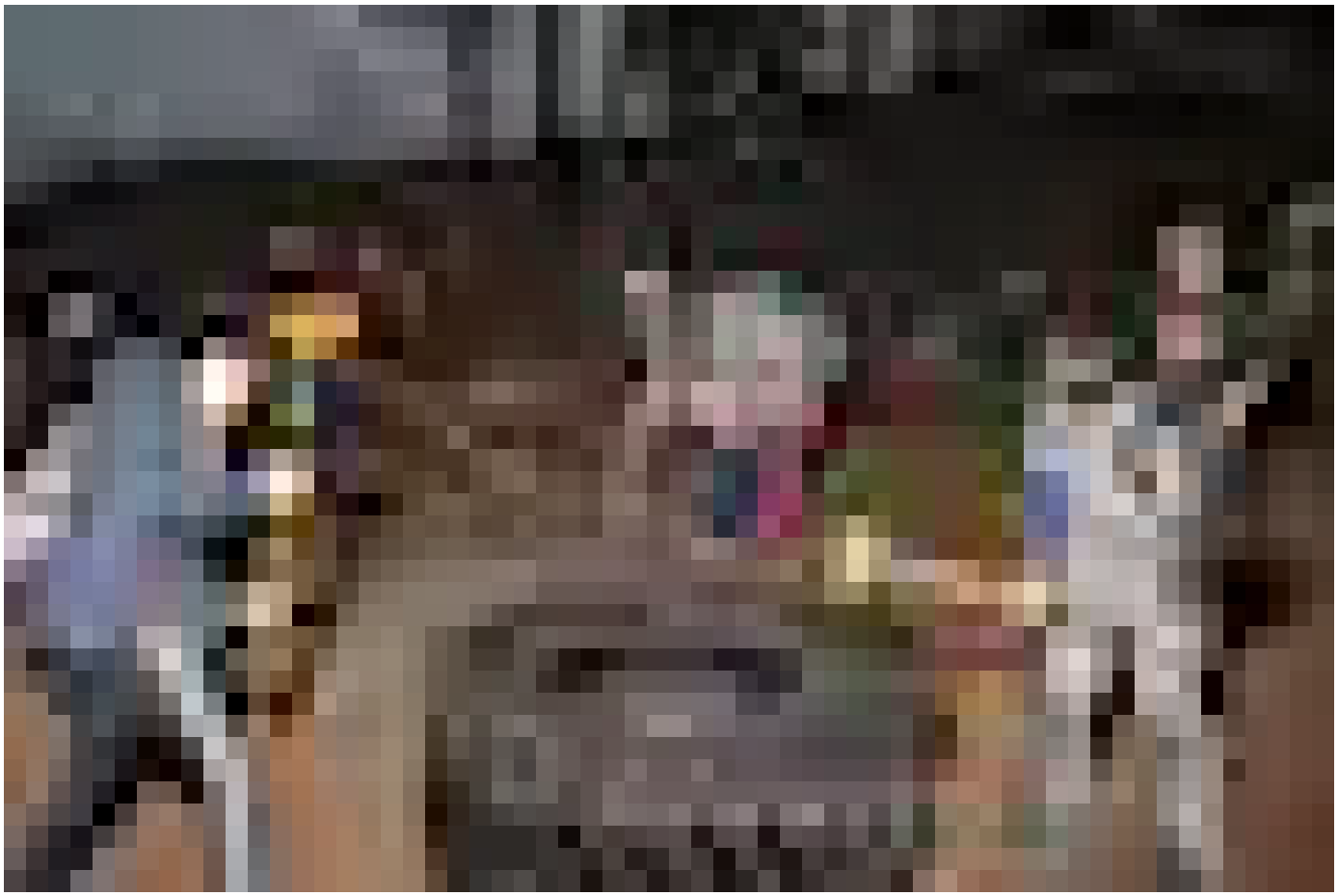
from a shooting perspective or from a manufacturing perspective."

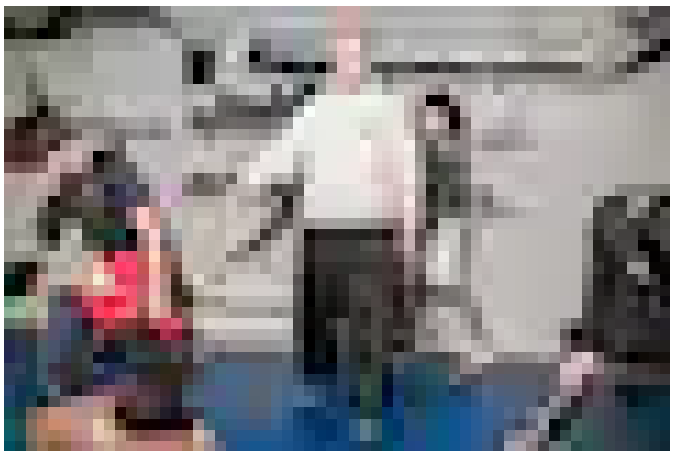
— Eric Trump

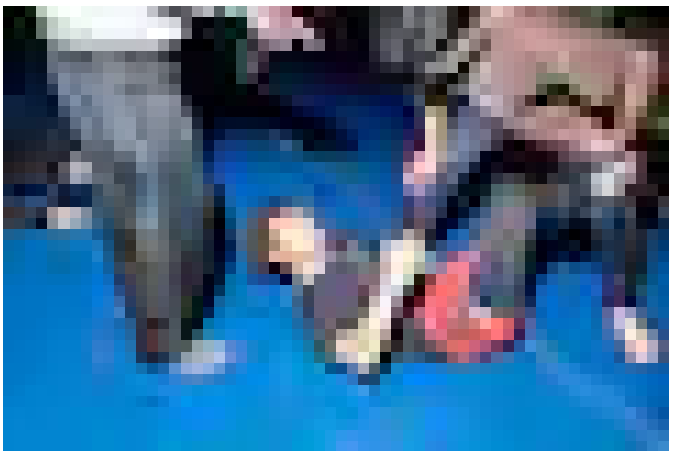
A year and a half ago, Sanctuary Church bought a larger house for Pastor Sean, his wife and their five children. Heaven's Palace is perched on a hill overlooking Matamoras, the easternmost town in Pennsylvania, hard by the Delaware River. Sean has a brown belt in Brazilian jujitsu and several nights a week teaches a class inside his converted garage. The students are Church members, most in their 20s, and most of them active in the so-called Peace Police/Police Militia.

On a Wednesday in late March, eight women and five men paired up for a practice session, trading positions as Moon guided them through a series of jujitsu holds and mini bouts. Dressed in a salmon-colored kimono top and

loosefitting black pants, he sat yoga-style on his knees facing the class. “Work it! There you go! That’s definitely burning it into your muscle memory, your hippocampus.”







CLOCKWISE FROM TOP: Church members do outdoor circuit training. Some members are part of the church's Peace Police/Peace Militia. Members during a martial arts class taught by Moon in a converted garage at his home in Matamoras, Pa. Moon holds a brown belt in Brazilian jujitsu.

A burst of action. A pause for sips of water and a few push-ups. Repeat, repeat. More guidance. Using his son as a prop, Sean stopped at one point to demonstrate the kimura hold, a double-wrist lock you can put on an opponent's shoulder and upper arm. "Once we have the kimura position, we're going to capture the shoulder with chest pressure," he said while tying his son in a knot. "Basically, you're sitting on the head so it doesn't move."

"He explains things well," said Doug Williams, a retired police officer and Sanctuarian who lives next door and studied judo in his younger days. "He's strict, but he's inspiring at the same time. The kids know that."

They obediently ground each other's faces into the mat for two hours. Everyone then knelt and recited the Lord's Prayer in unison. Sean lifted his arms and murmured, "All glory to God." Class dismissed.

Sean Moon never raises his voice teaching jujitsu in the garage. Inside the house, however, he regularly

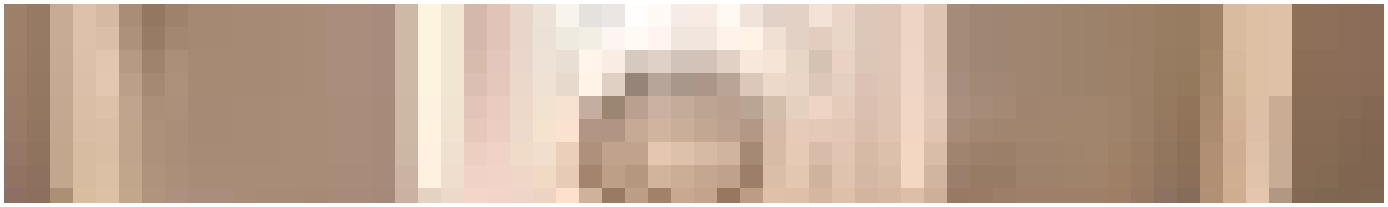
unleashes the higher-octane side of his personality. Monday, Tuesday, Thursday and Friday from 5 to 8 a.m., Pastor Sean records a live webcast, called “The King’s Report,” in a room next to the kitchen. He sits at a desk with an AR-15 rifle prominently displayed next to his microphone, always decked out in a shirt and tie, the camouflage suit jacket he bought on eBay, and a crown made of polished rifle shells. He’ll interview an occasional guest and show clips from the NRA’s digital TV channel. But mostly he discusses the latest stories being featured by his conservative-media holy trinity — the Drudge Report, Breitbart News and Alex Jones’s paranoia-pushing Infowars — and riffs at length about current events, from Oprah Winfrey’s potential presidential bid (“She worships Satan. She promotes the New Age Christian view of God, which is a relevant God, which is, of course, Satan”) to gun-control advocates (“They are complete demons. … They want to make you completely vulnerable to the predations of the wicked”).

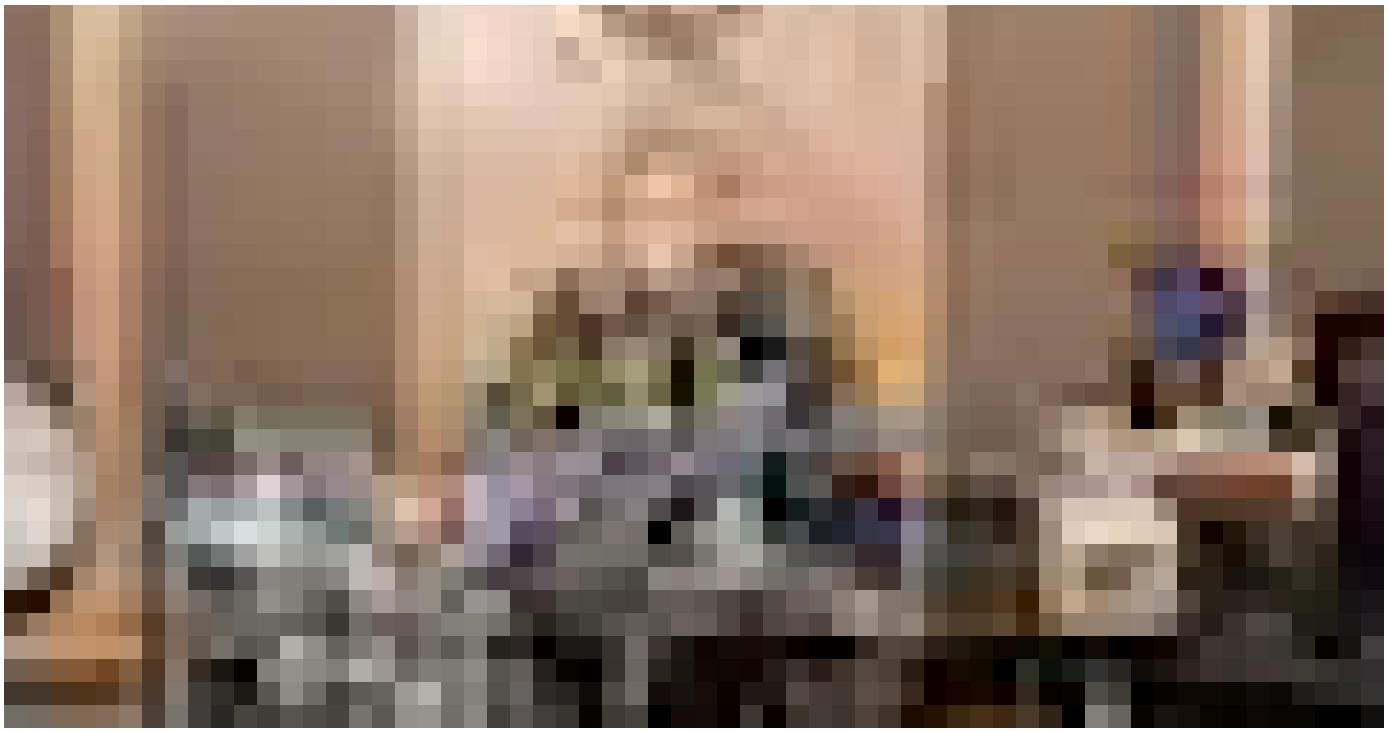
While the Rev. Moon seldom indulged in personal attacks, Sean and Justin regularly toss verbal grenades. They're also more enamored with guns than their father — and more overtly political. "No question about it," Sean told me one afternoon as we chatted in the orchestra section of the theater-turned-sanctuary: God's hand was at work in the 2016 presidential campaign. A week before Election Day, Justin spoke to a group of Japanese Sanctuarians who were visiting Pennsylvania and described in biblical terms what was at stake: Hillary Clinton, he said, was the "Fallen Eve" who would start a war (possibly nuclear) with Russia. Donald Trump was the "Adam-type figure" who wanted to attack and "bring judgment on the government, on the archangel." Depending on the outcome, he added, "the nature of God's judgment on this world will be dramatically different."

Both Moons shoot straight on and off the firing range. Sean on Al Gore: "A fricking nutbag." Sean on 9/11: "False flag." Sean on Hollywood liberals: "The most despicable, thieving,

conniving, manipulating, evil, wicked, iniquitous demons on the planet." Justin on the United Nations: "Satanic." Justin on welfare recipients: "Parasites." Justin on Democrats: "There are a lot of pedophiles in the Democratic Party. They realize that Trump is coming to get them. Literally. Round them up and put them in prison and execute them."

Their straight talk caught up with them three weeks before the blessing ceremony. The Southern Poverty Law Center, which monitors extremists, issued a "Hate Watch" on Sanctuary Church — ironically, further raising its profile. SPLC took issue with a "cult leader" urging followers to carry guns and with comments Sean made about public school children "getting indoctrinated into the homosexual political agenda" and "the transgender agenda." Sean responded by posting an alert of his own on Facebook: "Southern Poverty Law Center is well known as an extreme left hate group."





Moon records “The King's Report,” his live webcast, in his home studio.

In December 2013, Justin Moon paid $2 million in cash for a 620-acre industrial site north of Newfoundland. On Aug. 30, 2016, he held the grand opening of Kahr Arms’ Tommy Gun Warehouse showroom-store, the place to go for rifles, pistols, knives and the Brooklyn Smasher steel baseball bat that in an emergency can be used to club an intruder or a deer to death. The grand-opening guest of honor was Eric Trump. “That came about because God made it happen,” Justin told me. Somebody from the Trump campaign had called him out of the blue and said, “Eric wants to come.”

So Eric came, and Sean introduced him by saying: “It’s my opinion that we must elect a president that will protect and expand the right to bear arms. … I hope we can all agree that Hillary Clinton should never be the president of the United States. … God bless the U.S.A., and please buy some guns and ammo!”

Eric, in an open-collar shirt and dark sports jacket, stood in front of a wall of rifles and next to a U.S. flag. “This election for every gun owner is a huge thing. It will be the difference between adding to our Second Amendment freedoms or not adding to our Second Amendment freedoms,” he said, then switched to the topic of America hemorrhaging jobs. “We don’t make anything here anymore. That’s why Justin deserves a tremendous, tremendous round of applause. … Our government does not make it easy on you, either from a shooting perspective or from a manufacturing perspective.”

A year and a half later — on a Saturday night before the renewal-of-vows ceremony — Rod of Iron Ministries

and Kahr Arms hosted a “President Trump Thank You” dinner at the Best Western in Matamoras. This time the only Trump in attendance was a life-size cardboard cutout of the president.

The event doubled as a fundraiser for Gun Owners of America, an organization Executive Director Emeritus Larry Pratt said takes “a more robust position” on guns than the NRA. Pratt lives in Northern Virginia and served one term in the House of Delegates in the early 1980s. His dinner speech not only denounced any restrictions on gun sales and possession, it went a giant step further by asserting “the feds should have nothing to do with law enforcement anywhere.”

Sean Moon echoed that ultra-libertarian theme. “Government is becoming a totalitarian crime syndicate,” he warned, on its way to creating “a dystopian, Christ-hating hell on earth.” Justin alluded to his father, saying, “without our property and our guns, we’re nothing but laborers in a communist death camp.”

The dinner opened with a moment of silence for the Parkland shooting victims, followed by a prayer led by Sanctuarian Ted O'Grady, who gave thanks for Trump: "This room knows that this is only the beginning … that you will be the president that ushers in God's Kingdom on earth."

It ended with Hyun Shil Kang, Mrs. Moon No. 3, selecting the winning raffle ticket for the door prize: an AR-15 rifle donated by Kahr Arms. The winner was a middle-aged woman whose reaction was surprisingly muted; it turned out she already owns an AR-15.

A few days later, on Wednesday morning, about 20 demonstrators gathered outside Sanctuary Church armed with only signs. "Father Forgive Them." "Pickles for Peace, No More Absurd than Guns for God." As a precaution, all students at the elementary school a half-mile away had been bussed to other classrooms for the day. But no wolves in sheep's clothing tried to make trouble.

Moon, left, and wife Yeon Ah Lee Moon, right, lead prayers at church. Moon holds a crown to be placed next to Hyun Shil Kang, seated, to whom his father was posthumously married.

John Hind, a lifelong Newfoundlander, soaked in the scene from his front porch across the street. “They’re good neighbors,” he said of the Sanctuarians. “They haven’t bothered nobody.”

“But they’re weird,” snorted his friend Carol Wood, puffing a cigarillo. “And blessing their guns? It’s confusing and it’s irritating.”

Inside the church, Timothy Elder, acting as master of ceremonies, informed the overflow congregation and some 50 reporters and

cameramen lining the walls (plus about a hundred people watching a video feed in the adjacent community room) that "this is not a blessing of inanimate firearms." It was strictly a recommitment of sacred wedding vows — for people bearing firearms.

Just before 10:30, Elder asked everyone to remove their AR-15s from their cases, "being careful to point the muzzle up and remove your finger from the trigger." Camera shutters clicked crazily. Attendants in pink-and-white vestments led a procession into the sanctuary, followed by a three-man, armed color guard dressed in combat fatigues. Next came Pastor Sean, the "Second King," and his wife, Yeon Ah Lee Moon, the "Queen," both clad in white. Justin Moon was on their heels, his dark suit topped off by his baseball hat. Mother Kang took a seat in a white-and-gold chair on the altar. A crown was placed on the chair next to her, representing the absent Rev. Moon.

Pastor Sean carried a bound copy of the Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk, which he carefully

laid on a table on the altar. His wife cradled a gold-plated AR-15. “The King and Queen will now place the Rod of Iron on its ceremonial stand where it will guard the Constitution,” Elder explained.

The brides and grooms in attendance, some 500 total, jointly sipped from tiny cups of wine. They took their vows (“Do you promise an eternal bond as husband and wife?”). The King said an extended prayer, acknowledging their “right to sovereignty, the right to keep and bear arms, the right to inherit the earth and protect it from socialism, communism and political Satanism.” Husbands and wives then exchanged rings. The sanctuary filled with applause, then cheers.

A group of protesters outside Sanctuary Church.

Outside a polite battle of words raged. On the front lawn, a contingent of Korean Sanctuarians unfurled a 20-foot-long banner referencing their divided country: “Thank you USA. We will never forget America’s grace. Trump chosen by God, relocate the tactical nucleus to the 38th line.” A chest-high rail fence runs along the property line, hugging the road. The Sanctuarians occupied one side, the protesters commanded the other.

Two adversaries faced off in gentlemanly mouth-to-mouth combat. Gideon Raucci is a second-generation Unificationist in his late 20s who switched allegiance to Sanctuary Church. He’s active in Sean’s Peace Police. Teddy Hose, 39, is a writer-graphic artist who flew in from San Francisco. He was part of a film crew shooting a documentary on cults. He’s also a second-generation Unificationist who grew up near East Garden in close contact with the Moon family. Hose left the Church years ago.

“It can take just one bullet to change everything,” he told Raucci.

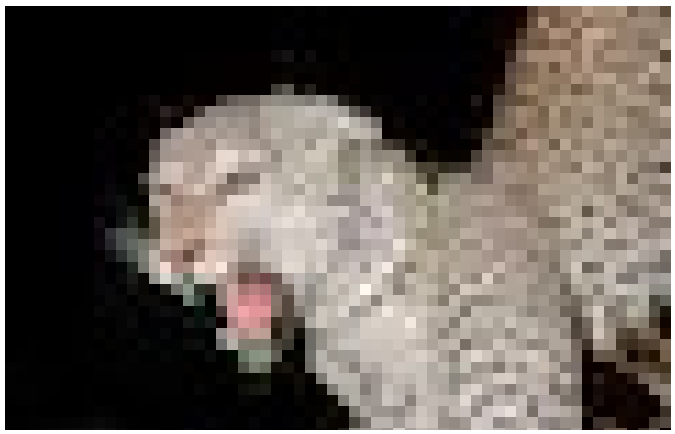
“I totally hear you about being responsible with guns,” Raucci replied.

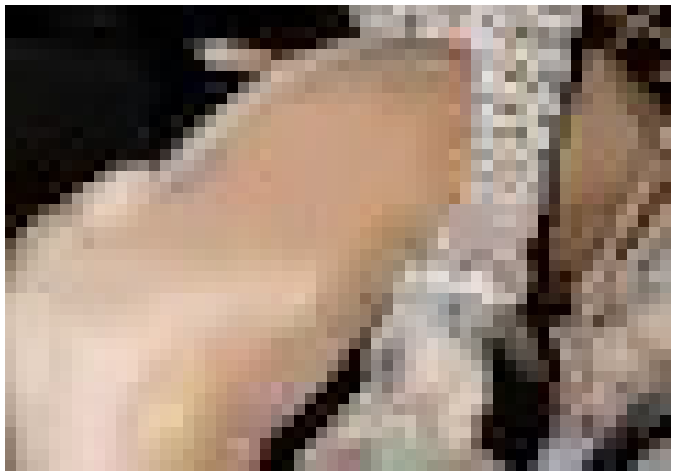
“What I feel is not coming across to the rest of the community around you, this is scaring people …”

“This might open up something beautiful where people understand where we’re coming from,” Raucci said. “Your focus is on loving your neighbor, I’m totally down with that. … We’re taught to never be the initiators of violence.”

“David Koresh and Charles Manson both used the Book of Revelations,” Hose reminded him, “because it’s a very extreme part of the Bible.”

It went back and forth like that for about 10 minutes. Then they reached over the fence, and hugged.





LEFT: Kook Jin “Justin” Moon, Sean's older brother and owner of Kahr Arms’ Tommy Gun Warehouse. Justin Moon is Sanctuary Church's de facto assistant pastor. RIGHT: Taxidermied animals shot by Justin Moon on safari in Tanzania are on display at the warehouse.

The day after the blessing ceremony Regis Hanna, a Georgetown University graduate in his late 60s who recently moved to Pennsylvania to join the Sanctuary Church congregation, walked into Kahr Arms’ Tommy Gun Warehouse showroom with his wife, Nancy. Right inside the door stands a taxidermy triptych: a lion and a leopard attacking an antelope, all three animals shot by Justin Moon on safari in Tanzania. “Infowars” was playing on the big-screen TV. Posters of beautiful women in spiked heels, flashing slit skirts and Kahr pistols, adorn two walls. Hanna was thinking of buying a handgun. He moved here from Panama, where gun laws are strict and where he spent 21 years

doing missionary work for the Unification Church. He and Nancy did a lot of family counseling with unwed couples. Theirs was one of the early American marriages arranged by the Rev. Moon. They've been together 43 years and have seven children.

After the Unification Church rupture, the Hannas chose to cast their lot with Pastor Sean. Regis, a round-faced man of mellow temperament, is now part of Sanctuary's paid staff, and today it was his job to field any post-ceremony calls. The Church's main number had been forwarded to his cellphone, which rang shortly after he entered the showroom. It was a New Jersey area code. He put the call on speaker phone.

"Are you f—ing insane! You don't know the meaning of religion! You ought to be ashamed of yourselves!"

A minute later, another call came in. Oklahoma area code: "I was wondering if you're accepting more people into your group." Hanna told the man he could catch Sanctuary services on YouTube.

Another call. British Columbia. “I love what you guys are doing. I love Sean.”

“Thank you, brother,” said Hanna.

Hak Ja Han’s ascension to the head of the Unification Church had ripple effects, and many hundreds of people faced the same decision the Hannas did. Friendships got torn apart, marriages blew up and families were divided as Church members declared different loyalties. Most Unificationists stayed with the parent church; some went with Pastor Sean; a few followed oldest brother Preston Moon, who established a secular Global Peace Foundation in Seattle. Others quit the movement altogether.

Kyle Toffey, 65, was a longtime Unificationist who lived in Korea for 10 years. He admitted to me that “at first it did sound a little bit off the wall” when Pastor Sean added an AR-15 twist to the blessing ceremony, but he and his wife participated. He has learned to “reserve my skepticism” and trust Sean’s judgment. Plus, he has grown to appreciate the responsibility and self-confidence that

comes with being armed: “In the morning when you strap on a pistol, you feel like the sheriff of the town.”

Dan Fefferman used to worship with Regis Hanna at a Unification Church in Washington. He and his wife were married in the same group ceremony as the Hannas. They live in Bowie, Md., now and stayed with the Unification Church, but Fefferman visited Sean Moon’s congregation several times.

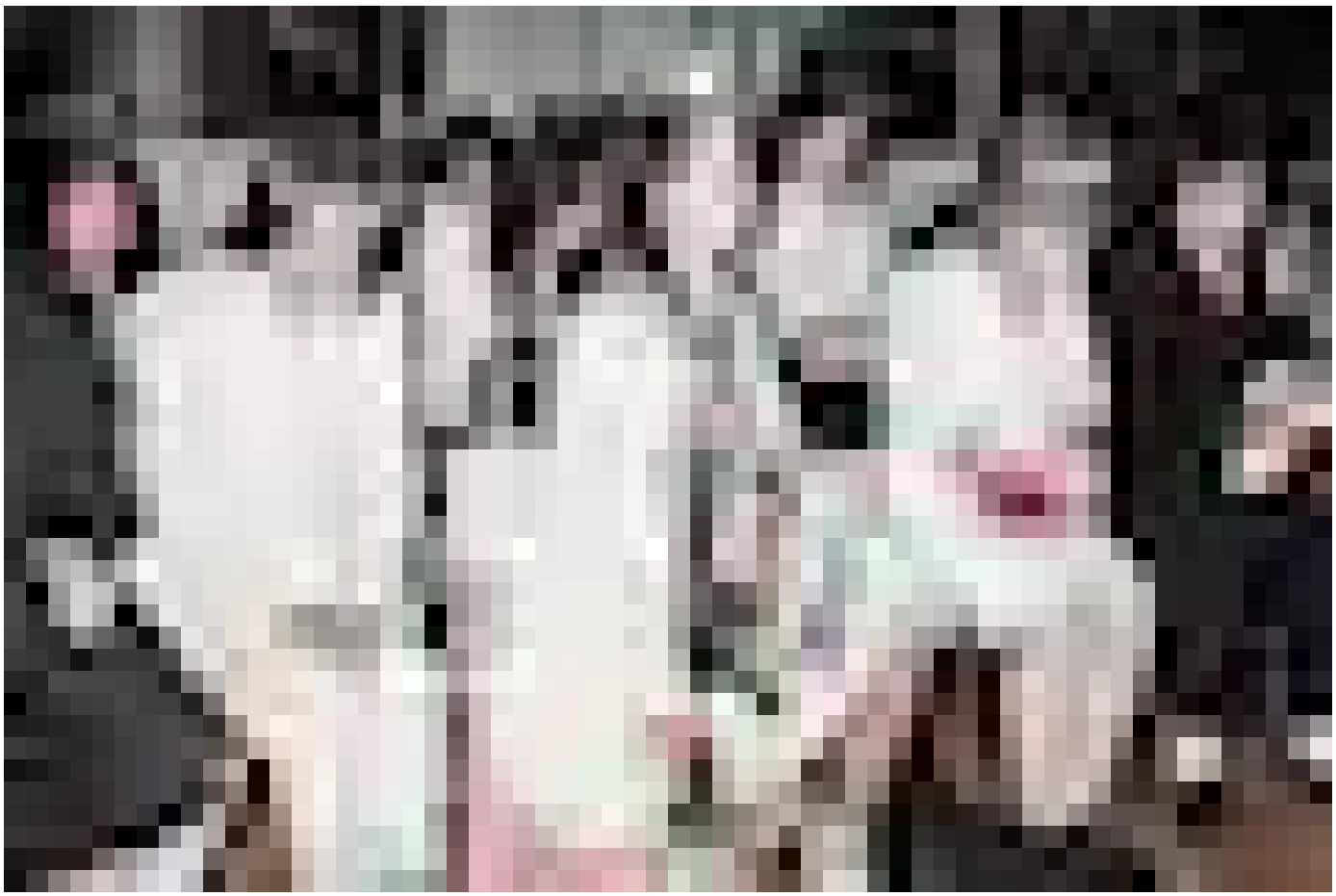
“A lot of us went to check it out,” Fefferman said in a phone interview, “hoping we could talk sense into him.” In his opinion, the Moon brothers “attract the more unbalanced members” that can be found in any religious sect. He considered Rod of Iron a “far-right group with a paramilitary aspect to it.” Not a hate group per se, “but I certainly hope and expect the FBI is watching them closely.”

For second-generation Church members, these choices are more emotionally complex. The Unification Church is the only anchor they’ve

known. Andrew Stewart's parents raised him in the Church. He spent several college summers as an intern on a nondenominational farm near Newfoundland, where he got exposed to Sanctuary Church. He helped with some minor building renovations and attended Sunday services. The vibe grew progressively darker, he said. Although personally fond of many people he met, it struck him as odd that, theologically, "the Church thrives off the ability to make people angry." He gradually drifted away from Sanctuary and this spring left the Unification Church, too.

Somiya Chapman Gabb — whose father was part of the Unification Church support staff at East Garden — was so offended by Hak Ja Han's revising of Rev. Moon's religious texts that she jumped to Sanctuary in early 2015. She and her husband were then living in Yonkers, N.Y., a three-hour round-trip drive. But she and her family felt increasingly out of tune with Sanctuary's often "scathing" sermons. Also, a member of the congregation told her that another Sanctuarian had pulled a loaded gun

on him. By the end of 2017, the Gabbs stopped making that long Sunday drive to Pennsylvania. They read the Bible and pray at home now. Gabb thinks "there's still hope" that Sanctuary Church can right itself but said Sean Moon "is one word away from a violent situation and he may not even know it."



Sharon Barnett of Florida holds an AR-15 and bows her head in prayer during a blessing ceremony at Sanctuary Church.

Individually, Sanctuary Church members come across as honest, reasonable, upright folk, the stuff

of good neighbors. Collectively, the dynamic changes. So much of the Church discourse can't abide contrasting opinions and worldviews. You don't hear much talk about, or empathy for, the poor, the infirm, the weak. Most enervating, though, is the steady drumbeat of dystopia. To be a devout Sanctuarian requires almost superhuman faith in the cleansing waters of catastrophe. It's like standing on the deck of the Titanic and rooting for the icebergs.

Justin Moon told me we've entered "that End of Times time frame" prophesied in the Book of Revelation, when God and "his champions" will "take the political power in the earth" away from Satan. Viewed through that lens, the 2016 election was "very different." Actually, hugely different. "I believe God is using Donald Trump," he said, a sentiment his brother shares. "He is an imperfect person, a sinner, but God has chosen to use him. Just like King David was an imperfect person."

The apocalyptic events predicted in the Bible began unspooling, Justin

explained, during his father's lifetime: World War II, the Cold War, famines, disease epidemics and "the continuing confusion we see today." Biblical timelines are unpredictable, but he is confident the End of Times and the corresponding advent of Cheon Il Guk will come in his son's lifetime, if not his own. His father, the Rev. Moon, said so.

Sean Moon's Constitution of the United States of Cheon Il Guk is a powerful document. It throws the country in reverse and then steps on the gas. Consider just these few provisions: The House of Representatives will elect the president. The king will pick Supreme Court justices. Congress cannot levy income taxes or property taxes; nor can it fund health care, education, Social Security or Medicare. The constitution specifically states there will be no Central Bank, Environmental Protection Agency or national police force.

Oh, and there will be no standing military of any kind. Justin Moon says the United States will follow the

"Swiss model" of national defense. For example, he says, the Swiss Air Force has a small number of paid managers who schedule airplane maintenance and design training regimens, but citizen volunteers take care of all the planes and fly them, too. He says the Swiss defense system has kept Switzerland safe and secure for a long time. This is true, though being a neutral country may have a little something to do with that.

Related

What I figured out about America's future from visiting Trump resorts throughout the world

She led Trump to Christ: The rise of the televangelist who advises the White House

President Trump was doing a fine job implementing God's plan, the way Pastor Sean saw it — that is, until he signed the omnibus spending bill that added another trillion dollars to the national debt. Then came the April airstrikes on Syria. A few days later Sean Moon addressed these developments in a "King's Report" webcast: "This is very, very disturbing for the actual Trump supporters who got him elected. We don't want war. We're sick of foreign entanglements. … He's completely doing a 180. He's becoming frickin'

Hillary Clinton. … If he continues down this road, America is dead, folks. … He's a man with many flaws, many sins, and now he's capitulating to the most evil wickedness on the planet."

That wickedness kept getting worse. The day he recorded this particular "King's Report," news broke that the judge overseeing the court case of the president's personal attorney, Michael Cohen, had officiated at the 2013 wedding of George Soros ("the Antichrist; he has his Rothschild fingers in everything," Pastor Sean moaned) and Nancy Pelosi was a guest. The fix is in, he said. One way or another, the "deep state" is going to take Trump down.

Then again, for Pastor Sean, the good news is that all this bad news is actually great news. He perceived a hidden hand at work, puzzling it out live on "The King's Report." The quicker the country goes down the toilet, the quicker Americans will come to their senses and embrace the Rod of Iron and Cheon Il Guk. It now appears to him that God is using Trump to run America into the

ground, not make it great again. “We didn’t know exactly how it would unfold,” Pastor Sean told his fellow Sanctuarians, YouTube watchers and the world, “but we knew that in the end times, it gets worse before it gets better.”

A reflection of Sean Moon at his home.

Tom Dunkel is the author of “Color Blind: The Forgotten Team That Broke Baseball’s Color Line” and is at work on a book about the German resistance in World War II.

Correction: In an earlier version, Hananim was misspelled. The story has been updated.

Credits: Story by Tom Dunkel. Photos by Bryan Anselm. Designed by **Beth Broadwater**. Photo Editing by **May-Ying Lam**.